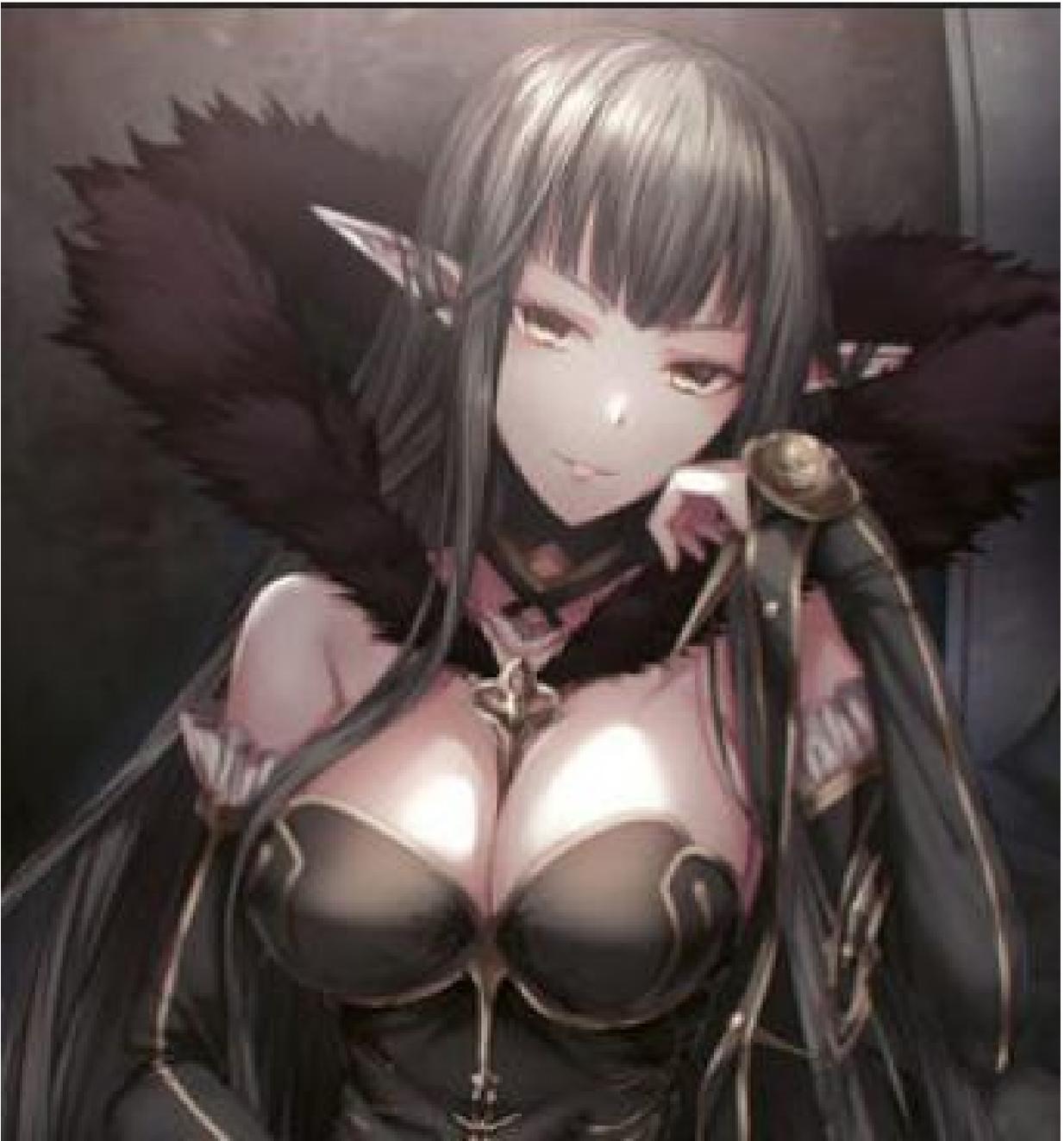




# Supreme Harem God System

Sleepdeprivedsloth





Source: <https://meownovel.com/novel/supreme-harem-god-system>

Generated by [Lightnovel Crawler](#)

# Supreme Harem God System c1-664

## 1. [Volume 1](#)

1. [Chapter 1](#)
2. [Chapter 2](#)
3. [Chapter 3](#)
4. [Chapter 4](#)
5. [Chapter 5](#)
6. [Chapter 6](#)
7. [Chapter 7](#)
8. [Chapter 8](#)
9. [Chapter 9](#)
10. [Chapter 10](#)
11. [Chapter 11](#)
12. [Chapter 12](#)
13. [Chapter 13](#)
14. [Chapter 14](#)
15. [Chapter 15](#)
16. [Chapter 16](#)
17. [Chapter 17](#)
18. [Chapter 18](#)
19. [Chapter 19](#)
20. [Chapter 20](#)
21. [Chapter 21](#)
22. [Chapter 22](#)
23. [Chapter 23](#)
24. [Chapter 24](#)
25. [Chapter 25](#)
26. [Chapter 26](#)
27. [Chapter 27](#)
28. [Chapter 28](#)
29. [Chapter 29](#)
30. [Chapter 30](#)
31. [Chapter 31](#)
32. [Chapter 32](#)
33. [Chapter 33](#)

34. [Chapter 34](#)
35. [Chapter 35](#)
36. [Chapter 36](#)
37. [Chapter 37](#)
38. [Chapter 38](#)
39. [Chapter 39](#)
40. [Chapter 40](#)
41. [Chapter 41](#)
42. [Chapter 42](#)
43. [Chapter 43](#)
44. [Chapter 44](#)
45. [Chapter 45](#)
46. [Chapter 46](#)
47. [Chapter 47](#)
48. [Chapter 48](#)
49. [Chapter 49](#)
50. [Chapter 50](#)
51. [Chapter 51](#)
52. [Chapter 52](#)
53. [Chapter 53](#)
54. [Chapter 54](#)
55. [Chapter 55](#)
56. [Chapter 56](#)
57. [Chapter 57](#)
58. [Chapter 58](#)
59. [Chapter 59](#)
60. [Chapter 60](#)
61. [Chapter 61](#)
62. [Chapter 62](#)
63. [Chapter 63](#)
64. [Chapter 64](#)
65. [Chapter 65](#)
66. [Chapter 66](#)
67. [Chapter 67](#)
68. [Chapter 68](#)
69. [Chapter 69](#)
70. [Chapter 70](#)

71. [Chapter 71](#)
72. [Chapter 72](#)
73. [Chapter 73](#)
74. [Chapter 74](#)
75. [Chapter 75](#)
76. [Chapter 76](#)
77. [Chapter 77](#)
78. [Chapter 78](#)
79. [Chapter 79](#)
80. [Chapter 80](#)
81. [Chapter 81](#)
82. [Chapter 82](#)
83. [Chapter 83](#)
84. [Chapter 84](#)
85. [Chapter 85](#)
86. [Chapter 86](#)
87. [Chapter 87](#)
88. [Chapter 88](#)
89. [Chapter 89](#)
90. [Chapter 90](#)
91. [Chapter 91](#)
92. [Chapter 92](#)
93. [Chapter 93](#)
94. [Chapter 94](#)
95. [Chapter 95](#)
96. [Chapter 96](#)
97. [Chapter 97](#)
98. [Chapter 98](#)
99. [Chapter 99](#)
100. [Chapter 100](#)
2. [Volume 2](#)
  1. [Chapter 101](#)
  2. [Chapter 102](#)
  3. [Chapter 103](#)
  4. [Chapter 104](#)
  5. [Chapter 105](#)
  6. [Chapter 106](#)

7. [Chapter 107](#)
8. [Chapter 108](#)
9. [Chapter 109](#)
10. [Chapter 110](#)
11. [Chapter 111](#)
12. [Chapter 112](#)
13. [Chapter 113](#)
14. [Chapter 114](#)
15. [Chapter 115](#)
16. [Chapter 116](#)
17. [Chapter 117](#)
18. [Chapter 118](#)
19. [Chapter 119](#)
20. [Chapter 120](#)
21. [Chapter 121](#)
22. [Chapter 122](#)
23. [Chapter 123](#)
24. [Chapter 124](#)
25. [Chapter 125](#)
26. [Chapter 126](#)
27. [Chapter 127](#)
28. [Chapter 128](#)
29. [Chapter 129](#)
30. [Chapter 130](#)
31. [Chapter 131](#)
32. [Chapter 132](#)
33. [Chapter 133](#)
34. [Chapter 134](#)
35. [Chapter 135](#)
36. [Chapter 136](#)
37. [Chapter 137](#)
38. [Chapter 138](#)
39. [Chapter 139](#)
40. [Chapter 140](#)
41. [Chapter 141](#)
42. [Chapter 142](#)
43. [Chapter 143](#)

44. [Chapter 144](#)
45. [Chapter 145](#)
46. [Chapter 146](#)
47. [Chapter 147](#)
48. [Chapter 148](#)
49. [Chapter 149](#)
50. [Chapter 150](#)
51. [Chapter 151](#)
52. [Chapter 152](#)
53. [Chapter 153](#)
54. [Chapter 154](#)
55. [Chapter 155](#)
56. [Chapter 156](#)
57. [Chapter 157](#)
58. [Chapter 158](#)
59. [Chapter 159](#)
60. [Chapter 160](#)
61. [Chapter 161](#)
62. [Chapter 162](#)
63. [Chapter 163](#)
64. [Chapter 164](#)
65. [Chapter 165](#)
66. [Chapter 166](#)
67. [Chapter 167](#)
68. [Chapter 168](#)
69. [Chapter 169](#)
70. [Chapter 170](#)
71. [Chapter 171](#)
72. [Chapter 172](#)
73. [Chapter 173](#)
74. [Chapter 174](#)
75. [Chapter 175](#)
76. [Chapter 176](#)
77. [Chapter 177](#)
78. [Chapter 178](#)
79. [Chapter 179](#)
80. [Chapter 180](#)

81. [Chapter 181](#)
82. [Chapter 182](#)
83. [Chapter 183](#)
84. [Chapter 184](#)
85. [Chapter 185](#)
86. [Chapter 186](#)
87. [Chapter 187](#)
88. [Chapter 188](#)
89. [Chapter 189](#)
90. [Chapter 190](#)
91. [Chapter 191](#)
92. [Chapter 192](#)
93. [Chapter 193](#)
94. [Chapter 194](#)
95. [Chapter 195](#)
96. [Chapter 196](#)
97. [Chapter 197](#)
98. [Chapter 198](#)
99. [Chapter 199](#)
100. [Chapter 200](#)
3. [Volume 3](#)
  1. [Chapter 201](#)
  2. [Chapter 202](#)
  3. [Chapter 203](#)
  4. [Chapter 204](#)
  5. [Chapter 205](#)
  6. [Chapter 206](#)
  7. [Chapter 207](#)
  8. [Chapter 208](#)
  9. [Chapter 209](#)
  10. [Chapter 210](#)
  11. [Chapter 211](#)
  12. [Chapter 212](#)
  13. [Chapter 213](#)
  14. [Chapter 214](#)
  15. [Chapter 215](#)
  16. [Chapter 216](#)

17. [Chapter 217](#)
18. [Chapter 218](#)
19. [Chapter 219](#)
20. [Chapter 220](#)
21. [Chapter 221](#)
22. [Chapter 222](#)
23. [Chapter 223](#)
24. [Chapter 224](#)
25. [Chapter 225](#)
26. [Chapter 226](#)
27. [Chapter 227](#)
28. [Chapter 228](#)
29. [Chapter 229](#)
30. [Chapter 230](#)
31. [Chapter 231](#)
32. [Chapter 232](#)
33. [Chapter 233](#)
34. [Chapter 234](#)
35. [Chapter 235](#)
36. [Chapter 236](#)
37. [Chapter 237](#)
38. [Chapter 238](#)
39. [Chapter 239](#)
40. [Chapter 240](#)
41. [Chapter 241](#)
42. [Chapter 242](#)
43. [Chapter 243](#)
44. [Chapter 244](#)
45. [Chapter 245](#)
46. [Chapter 246](#)
47. [Chapter 247](#)
48. [Chapter 248](#)
49. [Chapter 249](#)
50. [Chapter 250](#)
51. [Chapter 251](#)
52. [Chapter 252](#)
53. [Chapter 253](#)

54. [Chapter 254](#)
55. [Chapter 255](#)
56. [Chapter 256](#)
57. [Chapter 257](#)
58. [Chapter 258](#)
59. [Chapter 259](#)
60. [Chapter 260](#)
61. [Chapter 261](#)
62. [Chapter 262](#)
63. [Chapter 263](#)
64. [Chapter 264](#)
65. [Chapter 265](#)
66. [Chapter 266](#)
67. [Chapter 267](#)
68. [Chapter 268](#)
69. [Chapter 269](#)
70. [Chapter 270](#)
71. [Chapter 271](#)
72. [Chapter 272](#)
73. [Chapter 273](#)
74. [Chapter 274](#)
75. [Chapter 275](#)
76. [Chapter 276](#)
77. [Chapter 277](#)
78. [Chapter 278](#)
79. [Chapter 279](#)
80. [Chapter 280](#)
81. [Chapter 281](#)
82. [Chapter 282](#)
83. [Chapter 283](#)
84. [Chapter 284](#)
85. [Chapter 285](#)
86. [Chapter 286](#)
87. [Chapter 287](#)
88. [Chapter 288](#)
89. [Chapter 289](#)
90. [Chapter 290](#)

91. [Chapter 291](#)
92. [Chapter 292](#)
93. [Chapter 293](#)
94. [Chapter 294](#)
95. [Chapter 295](#)
96. [Chapter 296](#)
97. [Chapter 297](#)
98. [Chapter 298](#)
99. [Chapter 299](#)
100. [Chapter 300](#)
4. [Volume 4](#)
  1. [Chapter 301](#)
  2. [Chapter 302](#)
  3. [Chapter 303](#)
  4. [Chapter 304](#)
  5. [Chapter 305](#)
  6. [Chapter 306](#)
  7. [Chapter 307](#)
  8. [Chapter 308](#)
  9. [Chapter 309](#)
  10. [Chapter 310](#)
  11. [Chapter 311](#)
  12. [Chapter 312](#)
  13. [Chapter 313](#)
  14. [Chapter 314](#)
  15. [Chapter 315](#)
  16. [Chapter 316](#)
  17. [Chapter 317](#)
  18. [Chapter 318](#)
  19. [Chapter 319](#)
  20. [Chapter 320](#)
  21. [Chapter 321](#)
  22. [Chapter 322](#)
  23. [Chapter 323](#)
  24. [Chapter 324](#)
  25. [Chapter 325](#)
  26. [Chapter 326](#)

27. [Chapter 327](#)
28. [Chapter 328](#)
29. [Chapter 329](#)
30. [Chapter 330](#)
31. [Chapter 331](#)
32. [Chapter 332](#)
33. [Chapter 333](#)
34. [Chapter 334](#)
35. [Chapter 335](#)
36. [Chapter 336](#)
37. [Chapter 337](#)
38. [Chapter 338](#)
39. [Chapter 339](#)
40. [Chapter 340](#)
41. [Chapter 341](#)
42. [Chapter 342](#)
43. [Chapter 343](#)
44. [Chapter 344](#)
45. [Chapter 345](#)
46. [Chapter 346](#)
47. [Chapter 347](#)
48. [Chapter 348](#)
49. [Chapter 349](#)
50. [Chapter 350](#)
51. [Chapter 351](#)
52. [Chapter 352](#)
53. [Chapter 353](#)
54. [Chapter 354](#)
55. [Chapter 355](#)
56. [Chapter 356](#)
57. [Chapter 357](#)
58. [Chapter 358](#)
59. [Chapter 359](#)
60. [Chapter 360](#)
61. [Chapter 361](#)
62. [Chapter 362](#)
63. [Chapter 363](#)

64. [Chapter 364](#)
65. [Chapter 365](#)
66. [Chapter 366](#)
67. [Chapter 367](#)
68. [Chapter 368](#)
69. [Chapter 369](#)
70. [Chapter 370](#)
71. [Chapter 371](#)
72. [Chapter 372](#)
73. [Chapter 373](#)
74. [Chapter 374](#)
75. [Chapter 375](#)
76. [Chapter 376](#)
77. [Chapter 377](#)
78. [Chapter 378](#)
79. [Chapter 379](#)
80. [Chapter 380](#)
81. [Chapter 381](#)
82. [Chapter 382](#)
83. [Chapter 383](#)
84. [Chapter 384](#)
85. [Chapter 385](#)
86. [Chapter 386](#)
87. [Chapter 387](#)
88. [Chapter 388](#)
89. [Chapter 389](#)
90. [Chapter 390](#)
91. [Chapter 391](#)
92. [Chapter 392](#)
93. [Chapter 393](#)
94. [Chapter 394](#)
95. [Chapter 395](#)
96. [Chapter 396](#)
97. [Chapter 397](#)
98. [Chapter 398](#)
99. [Chapter 399](#)
100. [Chapter 400](#)

5. [Volume 5](#)

1. [Chapter 401](#)
2. [Chapter 402](#)
3. [Chapter 403](#)
4. [Chapter 404](#)
5. [Chapter 405](#)
6. [Chapter 406](#)
7. [Chapter 407](#)
8. [Chapter 408](#)
9. [Chapter 409](#)
10. [Chapter 410](#)
11. [Chapter 411](#)
12. [Chapter 412](#)
13. [Chapter 413](#)
14. [Chapter 414](#)
15. [Chapter 415](#)
16. [Chapter 416](#)
17. [Chapter 417](#)
18. [Chapter 418](#)
19. [Chapter 419](#)
20. [Chapter 420](#)
21. [Chapter 421](#)
22. [Chapter 422](#)
23. [Chapter 423](#)
24. [Chapter 424](#)
25. [Chapter 425](#)
26. [Chapter 426](#)
27. [Chapter 427](#)
28. [Chapter 428](#)
29. [Chapter 429](#)
30. [Chapter 430](#)
31. [Chapter 431](#)
32. [Chapter 432](#)
33. [Chapter 433](#)
34. [Chapter 433.1](#)
35. [Chapter 433.2](#)
36. [Chapter 433.3](#)

37. [Chapter 434](#)
38. [Chapter 435](#)
39. [Chapter 436](#)
40. [Chapter 437](#)
41. [Chapter 438](#)
42. [Chapter 439](#)
43. [Chapter 440](#)
44. [Chapter 441](#)
45. [Chapter 442](#)
46. [Chapter 443](#)
47. [Chapter 444](#)
48. [Chapter 445](#)
49. [Chapter 446](#)
50. [Chapter 447](#)
51. [Chapter 448 - Sounds Like You Really Loved Your Brother.](#)
52. [Chapter 449 - Absolutely Not.](#)
53. [Chapter 450 - The First Prince Was The Culprit.](#)
54. [Chapter 451 - Stay Within Your Boundaries.](#)
55. [Chapter 452 - The Kiss Healed Me.](#)
56. [Chapter 453 - What If L Become The Ruler Of This Kingdom?](#)
57. [Chapter 454 - First, L Want You To Answer My Question.](#)
58. [Chapter 455 - Devouring Mist Is Different.](#)
59. [Chapter 456 - Devouring Mist.](#)
60. [Chapter 457 - What Do You Think L Should Give Heras A Meeting Gift?](#)
61. [Chapter 458 - We Were Going To Be Honest With Her!?](#)
62. [Chapter 459 - L Am Not Your Enemy.](#)
63. [Chapter 460 - Lady Astaria, L Hope You Answer My Question Honestly.](#)
64. [Chapter 461 - You Really Are Planning To Go After My Grandmother, Huh...](#)
65. [Chapter 462 - He Was Asking For It.](#)
66. [Chapter 463 - A Messenger?](#)
67. [Chapter 464 - L Do Not Wish To Serve Her Anymore.](#)
68. [Chapter 465 - What Is Master'S Real Name?](#)
69. [Chapter 466 - My Amaya Is Much More Important To Me Than Any Random Slightly Beautiful Woman.](#)

70. [Chapter 467 - Lt Is Nice To See You Without Amask,Thyra.](#)
71. [Chapter 468 - Riona Skadi](#)
72. [Chapter 469 - Do Not Touch My Wife.](#)
73. [Chapter 470 - That Mist...](#)
74. [Chapter 471 - She Loves Her More Than Her Own Life.](#)
75. [Chapter 472 - You... You Aren'T A Necromancer,Are You?](#)
76. [Chapter 473 - Don'T You Dare.](#)
77. [Chapter 474](#)
78. [Chapter 475](#)
79. [Chapter 476](#)
80. [Chapter 477](#)
81. [Chapter 478](#)
82. [Chapter 479](#)
83. [Chapter 480](#)
84. [Chapter 481](#)
85. [Chapter 482](#)
86. [Chapter 483](#)
87. [Chapter 484](#)
88. [Chapter 485](#)
89. [Chapter 486](#)
90. [Chapter 487](#)
91. [Chapter 488](#)
92. [Chapter 489](#)
93. [Chapter 490](#)
94. [Chapter 491](#)
95. [Chapter 492](#)
96. [Chapter 493](#)
97. [Chapter 494](#)
98. [Chapter 495](#)
99. [Chapter 496](#)
100. [Chapter 497](#)
6. [Volume 6](#)
  1. [Chapter 498](#)
  2. [Chapter 499](#)
  3. [Chapter 500](#)
  4. [Chapter 501](#)
  5. [Chapter 502](#)

6. [Chapter 503](#)
7. [Chapter 504](#)
8. [Chapter 505](#)
9. [Chapter 506](#)
10. [Chapter 507](#)
11. [Chapter 508](#)
12. [Chapter 509](#)
13. [Chapter 510](#)
14. [Chapter 511](#)
15. [Chapter 512](#)
16. [Chapter 513](#)
17. [Chapter 514](#)
18. [Chapter 515](#)
19. [Chapter 516](#)
20. [Chapter 517](#)
21. [Chapter 518](#)
22. [Chapter 519](#)
23. [Chapter 520](#)
24. [Chapter 521](#)
25. [Chapter 522](#)
26. [Chapter 523](#)
27. [Chapter 524](#)
28. [Chapter 525](#)
29. [Chapter 526](#)
30. [Chapter 527](#)
31. [Chapter 528](#)
32. [Chapter 529](#)
33. [Chapter 530](#)
34. [Chapter 531](#)
35. [Chapter 532](#)
36. [Chapter 533](#)
37. [Chapter 534](#)
38. [Chapter 535](#)
39. [Chapter 536](#)
40. [Chapter 537](#)
41. [Chapter 538](#)
42. [Chapter 539](#)

43. [Chapter 540](#)
44. [Chapter 541](#)
45. [Chapter 542](#)
46. [Chapter 543](#)
47. [Chapter 544](#)
48. [Chapter 545](#)
49. [Chapter 546](#)
50. [Chapter 547](#)
51. [Chapter 548](#)
52. [Chapter 549](#)
53. [Chapter 550](#)
54. [Chapter 551](#)
55. [Chapter 552](#)
56. [Chapter 553](#)
57. [Chapter 554](#)
58. [Chapter 555](#)
59. [Chapter 556](#)
60. [Chapter 557](#)
61. [Chapter 558](#)
62. [Chapter 559](#)
63. [Chapter 560](#)
64. [Chapter 561](#)
65. [Chapter 562](#)
66. [Chapter 563](#)
67. [Chapter 564](#)
68. [Chapter 565](#)
69. [Chapter 566](#)
70. [Chapter 567](#)
71. [Chapter 568](#)
72. [Chapter 569](#)
73. [Chapter 570](#)
74. [Chapter 571](#)
75. [Chapter 572](#)
76. [Chapter 573 We Are Fucked...](#)
77. [Chapter 574 Lt Was Not 4V8, It Was 4V9! No, Lt Was 3V9 Now!](#)
78. [Chapter 575 You Are Too Weak For That.](#)

79. [Chapter 576 Who Should We Kill?](#)
  80. [Chapter 577 Nux'S Shadow.](#)
  81. [Chapter 578 Flag](#)
  82. [Chapter 579 The Search Team Was Wiped Out.](#)
  83. [Chapter 580 He Would Not Fall For This Bitch'S Tricks Again.](#)
  84. [Chapter 581 You Two Are In This Together, Aren'T You?](#)
  85. [Chapter 582 Meh, It Was Nothing.](#)
  86. [Chapter 583 Anyways, Shall We Visit Father-In-Law?](#)
  87. [Chapter 584 Eardwolf Skadi, Are You Willing To Be My Slave?](#)
  88. [Chapter 585 Now This Is Nostalgic](#)
  89. [Chapter 586 Uhhh... Fuck.](#)
  90. [Chapter 587 He Changed His Battle Style.](#)
  91. [Chapter 588 You Did Well.](#)
  92. [Chapter 589 What The Hell Is Happening!?](#)
  93. [Chapter 590 L Will Not Lose.](#)
  94. [Chapter 591 As Expected Of My Daughter.](#)
  95. [Chapter 592 I'Ll Defeat You The Next Time We Spar.](#)
  96. [Chapter 593 We Have To Go To The Emperors'Meet](#)
  97. [Chapter 594 Wait! L-Leander?](#)
  98. [Chapter 595 Polite Greetings.](#)
  99. [Chapter 596 You Dare!?](#)
  100. [Chapter 597 Did You Really Think A Weakling Like You Could Defeat Me?](#)
7. [Volume 7](#)
1. [Chapter 598 L, Herms Lysander, Declare War.](#)
  2. [Chapter 599 L ... L Have A Question.](#)
  3. [Chapter 600 The First Real War](#)
  4. [Chapter 601 For The Skyfall Kingdom!!!](#)
  5. [Chapter 602 Mother Found What Herms Was Hiding.](#)
  6. [Chapter 603 The Solid Earth Kingdom Has 2 Emperors.](#)
  7. [Chapter 604 Ls It A War Or A Beauty Show?](#)
  8. [Chapter 605 Alright, Fuck It.](#)
  9. [Chapter 606 Do You Really Think You Can Win?](#)
  10. [Chapter 607 Herms, Let Me Introduce You The Trump Card I Was Hiding,](#)
  11. [Chapter 608 Fuck. Did I Go Too Far With My Teasing?](#)
  12. [Chapter 609 Luck Or Skill?](#)

13. [Chapter 610 There Are Quite A Lot Of Things We Have To Talk About.](#)
14. [Chapter 611 Tsk, I Can'T Believe He Killed His Opponent Faster Than Me.](#)
15. [Chapter 612 W-What Is That?](#)
16. [Chapter 613 It Seems You Had Quite The Fun When You Were Fighting Him.](#)
17. [Chapter 614 Do Youâ€¦ Have Any Plans?](#)
18. [Chapter 615 That Boy Can'T Live.](#)
19. [Chapter 616 You Really Are Underestimating Me, Aren'T You?](#)
20. [Chapter 617 Even A Mere King Stage Cultivator Dares To Shout At Me? Heh.](#)
21. [Chapter 618 Ha... Haha... Hahahaha...](#)
22. [Chapter 619 But What If I Torture Him?](#)
23. [Chapter 620 I... I Am... Afraid...?](#)
24. [Chapter 621 A Waste](#)
25. [Chapter 622 You Aren'T Scared Of A 'Mere' King Stage Cultivator, Are You?](#)
26. [Chapter 623 W-What Have You Done...?](#)
27. [Chapter 624 Burning Your Life Force Has A Fatal Weakness.](#)
28. [Chapter 625 Let Her Do It.](#)
29. [Chapter 626 The Mastered Devouring Mist Demon Physique](#)
30. [Chapter 627 Yrniel.](#)
31. [Chapter 628 L Would Appreciate It If You Give Usa Little Personnel Space.](#)
32. [Chapter 629 Pick.](#)
33. [Chapter 630 Lt Doesn'T Matter If The Barrier Is Weakening Or Not.](#)
34. [Chapter 631 Hear Me Out...](#)
35. [Chapter 632 You Are A Hurdle In My Way.](#)
36. [Chapter 633 She Was Better Than He Thought.](#)
37. [Chapter 634 The Sadist Inside Astaria Was Born.\\*](#)
38. [Chapter 635 How About You Give Me My Turn To Make Things Even? \\*](#)
39. [Chapter 636 Are You Ready? \\*](#)
40. [Chapter 637 L Love You, Star.\\*\\*](#)
41. [Chapter 638 L-Lf It Can Help You Reach The Emperor Stage...](#)

42. [Chapter 639 How About L Not Punish You This Time?](#)
43. [Chapter 640 Turns For What?](#)
44. [Chapter 641 You Don'T Trust Me, It'S Fine, Trust Him,](#)
45. [Chapter 642 Alright, I-If You Are Being So Sincere](#)
46. [Chapter 643 No One But L Has The Right To See You Like This.\\*](#)
47. [Chapter 644 P-Please, C-Continue \\*](#)
48. [Chapter 645 Now Then, Shall L Start Wiping Your Body As Well?\\*](#)
49. [Chapter 646 A Long, Long, Long Night Followed.](#)
50. [Chapter 647 Your Cultivation...](#)
51. [Chapter 648 See? You Are Still Tired, You Should Rest More](#)
52. [Chapter 649 Oi Oi, Stand Up, We Don'T Have All Day.](#)
53. [Chapter 650 Who Told You That L Was Using Mana?](#)
54. [Chapter 651 L Am An Emperor Stage Body Cultivator As Well.](#)
55. [Chapter 652 We Are All Wrong...](#)
56. [Chapter 653 How!?!?!?](#)
57. [#657](#)
58. [Chapter 654 Along With Love, She Also Has His Acknowledgment.](#)
59. [#659](#)
60. [Chapter 655L Am Fucked...](#)
61. [#661](#)
62. [Chapter 656 You Don'T Want To Play More?](#)
63. [#663](#)
64. [Chapter 657 Nux Would Do It.](#)

# **Volume 1**

# Chapter 1

Author's Note: Please read the 'Please Read before you start the 1st Chapter' Auxiliary chapter before reading it.

Thank you~~

...

“HONK! HONK!”

\*Tires Screeching\*

\*Bam\*

The driver tried to apply breaks, but it was already too late. He never expected a random man to appear in front of his truck on a clear road.

“Ugggh! Truck-kun, though I did request you to hit me in a few of my comments, I just did that because I thought it would make me look funny and cool... you weren't supposed to take it seriously...”

“Fuck! It hurts!”

Nux, the 35-year-old man who was hit by the truck felt his whole body searing in pain, it did not take much of a time for his body to fall limply on the ground, his eyes turned heavy, he did try to keep them open but couldn't bear it anymore, and soon, his consciousness faded away.

...

“Hwa!” Nux's whole body flinched as he woke up.

“That was a scary dream...” He sighed, his forehead still sweating but suddenly, he furrowed his brows.

“Where is this place...?” He looked around and found himself in an unknown room.

Unlike the normal rooms made from cement and bricks, this room was built from wood, though it was clean, it was clear from the furniture that the living condition of the person living in this room wasn't very good.

Of course, Nux didn't have the time to think about all this since he was already panicking due to the weird circumstances.

‘Was I kidnapped?’

No, it doesn't make sense, there is no way someone would kidnap me since I don't have any value at all. There is no merit...

Wait, does that mean it wasn't a dream and I was really hit by that truck?’

He thought about several things that can lead him to his current situation. He raised his hand to touch his forehead and could feel an unusual bump on his head.

‘Was I saved by someone?’

Hmm, that must be it...

Damn, now I would have to pay for hospital bills, haah... if I knew this would happen, I would have bought health insurance...’

Nux cried inwardly, already thinking about different ways to pay the bill and was ready to say goodbye to all his games and novel for the next few years since he would have to work overtime.

However, he suddenly felt something was different.

Due to all that confusion, he might not have noticed this earlier, but now that he is thinking clearly, his hands were whiter and thinner than before. He looked down and noticed that he was wearing completely different clothes from what he is normally used to.

He touched his face and noticed his beard was completely gone and even his face felt different than before...

Hold on...

# Chapter 2

He touched his face and noticed his beard was completely gone and even his face felt different than before...

Hold on...

Suddenly, a whole new theory appeared in his mind and a strange excitement welled within him.

‘Hehe, is this what I think it is?’

Ignoring the pain he felt, he quickly ran towards the door and as soon as he opened it, he took a deep breath, his eyes shining brightly and a big smile appeared on his face.

“Yup! It’s definitely what I think it is!” He exclaimed.

The air is different, the scenery is different, there is no doubt about it. He was in another world.

“Hahaha! I transmigrated!”

“Truck-kun, my friend! I was definitely serious when I said I wanted you to hit me! Hahaha!” He laughed loudly and after taking another deep breath, he returned to his room and sat on the ground with an excited look on his face.

“According to the script, now is the time for my cheat to make an entry right!?” His eyes shined in excitement as he waited for his cheat to appear.

...

5 minutes passed...

...

10 minutes passed...

...

30 minutes passed...

His excitement dimmed down...

His cheat did not appear...

“Okay... it’s alright, some cheats like to play with mc’s feelings and only appear when mc is in danger... yes it must be like that...” thinking that, he looked around and his eyes fell on a slightly sharper rock lying on the floor.

Without hesitation, he picked the rock up and stabbed it right through his abdomen.

...or not.

“Nope. No no no no no Nope! Not doing that!

I can’t hurt myself based on a fantasy story now, can I? That makes no sense.

Not that I am scared or anything... this is just not practical... Haha...”

He chickened out and decided to wait a little longer.

...

Time passed, nothing happened...

Finally, Nux gave up on receiving his cheat.

‘As expected, ain’t no way will lady luck ever be beside me...’

...

‘Truck-kun, you weren’t supposed to take my comments seriously...’

He sighed as he accepted his fate and decided to find a way to live yet another normal life.

His eyes then fell on a small mirror in the corner of the room, he walked towards it and as soon as he looked at his reflection, he cursed.

“Fuck! I am Handsome!”

He instantly threw away the thoughts he had about living a normal life.

“Alright, Imma become a Gigolo and find a Sugar Mama to take care of me! Yay!”

An instant decision!

# Chapter 3

“I am Handsome indeed”

Nux spoke in delight as he glanced at his face from different angles, the more he watched the more he liked it. His long thick raven hair, combined with his smooth white skin with a perfectly carved face. His golden eyes had a unique shine within them. His sword-like eyebrows, thin nose and sharp jawline made his face immortal-like even though it was a little bruised.

“With this face, combined with this frail-looking body, I am indeed the best quality gigolo anyone can ever have! I have to work hard to find a customer worthy of me!”

Nux nodded to himself but then furrowed his brows.

‘But why am I bruised?’ He thought.

After his transmigration, nothing was going according to the script, he didn’t get his cheat, and neither did he have his predecessor’s memory.

‘Were they jealous of my overly handsome face? Hmm, that should be the case... Hmph! Losers! Wait till I find a good sugar mommy, I’ll have my revenge then. Hmph! Hmph!’ Nux snorted inwardly as he hypothesised.

\*Growl\*

Just as he was thinking about his revenge, he heard his stomach growling, only then did he realise that he was very hungry. He looked around and found some peach-like fruits on his table.

‘It should not be poisonous since it is in my house...’

Thinking that, he quickly took a bite. They tasted like green apples, finding them delicious, he devoured them all without wasting any time.

Though that little amount of fruits could not satisfy his hunger completely, it was not as bad as before.

However, if he learned that what he just ate was equal to 2 days meal of his predecessor, he would not complain about not being satisfied at all.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\*

\*Smash\*

Suddenly, he heard a knock on the door but just as he was about to answer, the door was slammed open and 3 rough looking guys came in.

‘Why did you even bother knocking if you wanted to slam open the door...’ Nux thought inwardly but he knew it was not the time to ask questions like these.

“Have you decided to come with us?” the scar-faced man, who Nux presumed was the leader of this group asked.

“...”

Nux took a deep breath as he glared at them without saying anything, however, there was no trace of fear on his face.

The leader frowned as he glanced at his subordinates, only when he confirmed that they had the same confused look on their face did he turn to Nux and raised his eyebrow.

“I asked, have you decided to come with us?” He asked again, this time, his tone a little heavier than before.

“Of course!”

# Chapter 4

“I asked, have you decided to come with us?” He asked again, this time, his tone a little heavier than before.

“Of course!” Nux quickly answered without even knowing where they would take him.

His logic was simple, he knew he stood no chance against them if they fought, so if they wanted to harm him, they could have done it here. They would not bother taking him somewhere where they have set up a trap just to deal with a weakling like him.

Mmmhmm, he agreed after thinking it logically, not because he was scared of the scar-faced man in front of him. Not at all.

The leader, the scar-faced man was shocked by his answer but his face quickly returned to normal as he nodded and threw a glass bottle containing a weird purple coloured liquid in it.

“Drink it”

Without asking anything, Nux quickly emptied the bottle, although it was a little bitter, as soon as it travelled down his throat, he felt warm energy coursing throughout his body and his face, which was bruised, was healed without any mark left!

Though surprised, he didn't have the luxury to think what kind of godly thing he had just drunk as he quickly followed the men.

...

After walking for a while, he appeared in front of a building, which was completely in contrast with his worn-out wooden house. It was a large building made from white coloured marbles which gave the building a holy

feeling. There were a few words written on it, but Nux couldn't recognize the language so he ignored them.

Soon, the party entered the building and walked towards a specific room, although he could not read what was written on the door, by the design and others' attitude, it was clear that the room belonged to someone important.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\*

After a knock, the door was opened by a beautiful girl wearing a classic maid costume, she nodded to the scar-faced man before glancing towards Nux, a little surprise could be seen on her face before it went back to her normal, expressionless face.

She walked into the room and the party followed her trail, there they saw a man wearing expensive-looking robes who was sitting on a chair with a leisurely attitude. The man had blonde hair with a French moustache, making him look like a classic merchant.

He then glanced at Nux before asking, "You know why you are brought here, right?"

Countless thoughts ran wild inside Nux's mind,

'Should I tell him I do not know anything?

But from that scar-faced man's attitude, it is clear that he had told my predecessor about the situation. Won't they know that I am not who they think I am?

But this is my only chance to know what is happening, I should not waste it...'

Due to all these quick thoughts, Nux panicked a little and nodded and shook his head at the same time, looking quite funny.

The man raised his eyebrows at his response as he glanced at the scar-faced man before turning back to Nux.

“My name is Elton Peyton, I am the head of this Merchant guild.

You, my friend, are a lucky man who caught the eyes of Viscount Felberta.”

Nux’s eyes opened wide as he looked at Elton to see if he was joking.

“Yes, my friend, Viscount Felberta wishes to take you as her personnel boy toy,” Elton revealed and Nux’s eyes couldn’t hide the shock he was experiencing.

‘Fuck Yes!’

# Chapter 5

Seeing Nux's shocked look, Elton nodded in satisfaction and questioned,

“Well, are you ready to meet Viscount Felberta?”

“Of course! But shouldn't I first prepare myself and buy some suitable clothes to look my best possible?” Nux questioned, already thinking about ways to get on Viscount Felberta's good side.

He was a good Gigolo.

As good as a natural.

Hearing what Nux said, Elton glanced at Nux's stunning face and his lips twitched.

Still, as a professional merchant, he hid his expression and replied, “No, I don't think you should do that. A woman like Viscount Felberta has a thing for weak boys, you know what I mean? Your frail-looking body combined with those worn out loose robes will make her more excited.”

“I see” Nux nodded solemnly. His expression looked like he was contemplating something serious.

“Alright, let's not make viscount wait for longer than we already have” Elton said as he clapped his hand and rushed everyone to get ready.

...

An hour-long carriage ride later, Nux found himself in front of a woman.

As the lady's gaze fell on Nux, her eyes brightened and a big smile appeared on her face.

“Hello, Nux, My name is Felberta Alveye, I was the one who bought you from the merchant guild. From now on, you will stay here with me and will do whatever I say, alright?”

Whatevveerrr~ I say, okaaaay?”

Nux on the other hand stood still as he gazed ahead with a dumbstruck look on his face.

Noticing his intense and kind of lost gaze, Viscount blushed a little before she asked, “Do you have any questions?”

“...” Nux remained silent.

Seeing this, everyone in the room furrowed their brows but it didn’t matter to Nux at all.

He didn’t bother about anyone present in the room, not even Viscount Felberta. Right now, he was busy examining the screen that appeared in front of his eyes along with a ding sound inside his head.

[Ding]

[First Target Detected]

[Initializing Supreme Harem God System]

[Connecting the Supreme Harem God System to host’s Soul]

[Connection completed]

[Character Information]

[Name: Nux Leander ]

[Age: 18 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Talent: Low]

[LVL:1]

[HP: 100/100]

[STR: 6]

[AGL: 8]

[VIT: 10]

[STM: 7]

[INT: 9]

[DEF: 5]

[Blank Points: 10]

(Limit of a normal Human:10)

[Ability: Craving Touch]

[Craving Touch: Your touch will make a woman crave for more and she will never be sexually satisfied by anyone else. The more time you spend with a woman the stronger the effect gets.]

[Harem Members: None]

[As a starting bonus, the System will provide the host with 10 blank points that he can add to any of his stats]

[The Supreme Harem God System has been successfully installed. From now on, the host can gain the power, talent, physique, and bloodline of the

woman he fucks. The stronger the Target, the more benefits the host gains...]

The more he read, the better it got, an unusual glint shone in his eyes.

‘Finally, finally, I got my cheat! Now I don’t have to live a normal life anymore!’

# Chapter 6

‘Finally, finally, I got my cheat! Now I don’t have to live a normal life anymore!’

He rejoiced inwardly.

“Nux!”

Suddenly, he heard someone shouting his name and his thoughts quickly returned to earth.

“Ah, wha- what?” he asked as his gaze finally fell on Viscount Felberta.

“What are you thinking that is so important that you had the galls to ignore me?” Viscount questioned as she glared at Nux.

“Ah, U-Um , S-Sorry, I-I am sorry. I-I just never saw someone as beautiful as you s-so I was lost...” He replied awkwardly with a slight blush on his face.

Real Smooth.

His answer worked like a charm as Viscount’s gaze changed from glare to a warm gaze.

‘Haah! This game’s on easy mode’

Nux thought inwardly as he noticed the change in her expression.

But he wasn’t lying, he was really surprised when he saw her.

He thought that she would be like some fat ugly lady, but she... Man, she was a classic example of a MILF!

Her perfect hourglass figure was as enchanting as it could ever get, Nux couldn't help but glance at those milky breasts that were enough for a normal weeb to die from a nosebleed. Her raven hair matched Nux's, while her black eyeballs were as deep as an abyss. Her thin eyebrows, small nose and cherry-like red and luscious lips made her look like an alluring succubus.

He even wondered why a woman like her wants a boy toy and why would she even pay for it? Heck! People would pay themselves if they can have a chance to be her boy toy.

“It's not a problem, just be careful from now on.

Okay, I will ask you again, are you ready to abandon your normal life and stay with me for the rest of your life?”

“Of course!”

Though this reply was the same as before, if one looks deeply, there was a different glint in his golden eyes.

A look of a predator.

Earlier, he just wanted to be a boy toy so that he can live a stable life while he spends some time with someone but now...

Now he wasn't here just to be a boy toy or a gigolo, now he wanted to conquer this woman called Felberta.

He glanced at his ridiculously overpowered ability, the [Craving Touch], and thought of different ways to get more women and increase his power.

‘Truck-kun, my friend! I was definitely serious when I said I wanted you to hit me! Hahaha!’

# Chapter 7

“Haahh...”

Nux sighed in relief as he sat on a soft bed and looked around, right now he was in a new room that was completely different from his previous worn out room. It was clear that Viscount treated him quite well.

Nux shook his head as he glanced at the system screen in front of him.

[Memory fragment detected, would you like to retrieve it?]

[Cost: 10 Blank points]

[Y/N]

‘This should be my predecessor’s memories... Should I retrieve it? Mmm, but is it really worth it? I mean he was just a nobody what could he know that can help me? Sure it would be more convenient but should I spend 10 Blank points? That is all the blank points I have right now.

Also, I don’t know what is the drop rate of these blank points, so I don’t know their value...

But according to the system, a normal human’s limit for a certain attribute is 10, which means if I add all the blank points on strength, it can directly double my strength compared to normal humans. That’s definitely a huge gain, yup, I can’t waste these precious blank points on something I am unsure about.

Now technically, I should save these blank points and not add them to any other attribute so I can grind more points while being weak and add these points when I can’t gain them anymore.

But this only sounds good if it is a video game, and my life is certainly not one.

Okay, I have decided, I'll add these points right now and will preserve the points I will gain later.

Alright, there is nothing much to think about it, 6 points on Agility, 4 on Stamina.'

Nux felt a unique stream of energy flowing through his body, suddenly, he felt that his body was a lot lighter than before, He felt like he could easily overtake the world's faster runner in a race. It felt weird and good at the same time.

[Name: Nux Leander ]

[Age: 18 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Talent: Low]

[LVL:1]

[HP: 100/100]

[STR: 6]

[AGL: 14]

[VIT: 10]

[STM: 11]

[INT: 9]

[DEF: 5]

[Blank Points: 0]

He nodded in satisfaction as he glanced at his stats.

‘With this, I can run away easily if I ever get stuck in a difficult situation.’

Security is important, after all.

After settling the matter of his stats, he shifted his attention to his system as he started reading about its features to get a better understanding of it.

# Chapter 8

Time passed and evening fell, Nux noticed that it was time for the Viscount to return from her office. He didn't know the exact time she would return but since he didn't have anything else to do he stood up and walked towards the viscount's room.

He had done some research and learned that the viscount's husband died and her only son lives in Royal Academy and rarely comes home.

Yup, a clear path ahead.

Chuckling inwardly, he appeared in front of the viscount's room, noticing that she hasn't returned, he decided to sit in front of the room and wait for her.

...

"Nux? What are you doing here?"

It didn't take a long time for Viscount to return along with 2 maids, she had a surprised look on her face when she saw Nux sitting in front of her room and she questioned.

"O-Oh nothing m-mam, I-I just thought that you would be tired after working for so long, so I decided to come here and check if there is anything I can help you with..." Nux stuttered as he answered, of course, he didn't forget to glance at her face before lowering his gaze in shame and a slight blush.

Seemingly pleased by his answer, Viscount smiled and questioned, "Oh? What would you help me with?"

"I-I can m-massage your shoulders... it will help you r-relax..." Nux answered, keeping his gaze down.

Viscount chuckled as an intense urge to tease this boy welled inside her. She walked towards Nux with an enchanting smile, her face, half a finger away from Nux's as she questioned.

“Why are you looking down? Am I too ugly for you to look at?”

“No! You are just too beautiful! AHH! I m-mean no, that's not it, no I mean you are beautiful but but um mmm” Nux panicked when he looked up and noticed that her face was too close to his, he tried to back away but slipped and fell to the ground, unable to come up with an explanation, he decided to keep his gaze on the ground.

Seeing this, not only Viscount, even the two maids following her chuckled, the Viscount smiled as she crouched in front of Nux as she questioned.

“Are you telling me I am not beautiful?”

“N-No”

“Then you think I am beautiful?”

“Yes”

Viscount's smile widened as she questioned,

“Are you hitting on me?”

“N-No! I didn't mean it like t-that! I-I-”

“Hahaha!” Seeing the flustered look on his face, the Viscount laughed out loud before she flicked her finger on his forehead to gain his attention and replied.

“Alright, you don't need to be so flustered, I was just teasing you. As for you massaging me, well, what are you waiting for? Follow me”

Saying that, the viscount stood up and she entered her room with a very satisfied look on her face, Nux also followed her back to her room obediently.

Of course, nobody noticed that small, imperceptible smile on his face.

A Predator's Grin.

# Chapter 9

Viscount Felberta's room was much more elegant and well furnished than Nux's but he didn't bother looking around as his gaze was fixed on that ripe ass that is swaying left and right as she is walking. Combined with the red gown she is wearing that does nothing to hide her hourglass figure, and even enhances it, she looked as if she is teasing her just by being there.

A really enchanting woman.

[Ding]

Suddenly, a sound rang inside Nux's head.

[Mission: Fuck Felberta Alveye ]

[Description: Well, Fuck Felberta Alveye]

[Reward: Eye Of Discerning.]

[Warning: If the mission fails, the Ability [Craving Touch] will be disabled.]

[Time Limit: 30 days ]

'Huh? A mission? Wow, it really is like an RPG game huh... The punishment is quite scary though... as for the reward, I don't know what that is'

'Eye Of Discerning'

'Discerning Eye'

"Eye Of Discerning"

Nux tried to say the ability name in his mind, he even tried touching the screen, not only that, he even called it out loud even though he was near Viscount Felberta.

‘ ... ’

But even after all this, nothing happened.

‘Yoo? Mr. System? Do I not get any description??’

Nux tried to call the system but again, nothing happened.

The system was ignoring him...

‘Hm? Is it one of those systems that do not have consciousness? Well, to be honest, I do prefer it that way... I don’t really want a talking system, that’s too annoying...’

Oh well, whatever. As far as I know, this mission is very easy. I mean, this woman bought me as a Boy Toy right? Won’t it be stupid not to fuck the boy toy she spend her money on?

This mission is a freebie. Hehe~ I am looking forwards tot he rewards though...’

“Hmm? What are you standing there for? C’mon, start with my shoulders.” Viscount who was sitting on the huge bed ordered. Nux came out of his reverie and his eyes fell on Viscount Felberta sitting on the huge bed and his heartbeat quickened.

The contrast between the Viscount’s red gown and white bedsheets was really great, combined with how she was sitting there defencelessly while looking at him with her overly charming face, he couldn’t help but gulp and blushed.

This time, he wasn’t acting, it was his natural reaction.

Viscount Felberta was too beautiful.

Seeing him blushing like that, a smile appeared on Viscount Felberta's face.

Who doesn't want their beauty to be appreciated by others? Of course, as a Viscount and a beautiful one to boot, there are many people who admire her beauty but there was a difference between Nux and them.

Others always had some sort of hidden intentions behind their praises. She was a noble, she knows how two-faced other nobles can be, so she never let her guard down in front of them.

Nux however, was different, he was just a powerless little boy. He can't do anything to her, therefore, his praises were honest. This added to the fact that he isn't really praising her and is just blushing uncontrollably, Felberta was even surer.

# Chapter 10

As a Viscount and a beautiful one to boot, there are many people who admire her beauty but there was a difference between Nux and them.

Others always had some sort of hidden intentions behind their praises. She was a noble, she knows how two-faced other nobles can be, so she never let her guard down in front of them.

Nux however, was different, he was just a powerless little boy. He can't do anything to her, therefore, his praises were honest. This added to the fact that he isn't really praising her and is just blushing uncontrollably, Felberta was even surer.

Of course, this wasn't the only reason why Nux and the others were different.

This boy Nux was really handsome!

A little too handsome!

Just looking at his perfectly carved face combined with that beautiful golden eyes, Felberta felt her heart racing.

All of this combined with the frail-looking weak body he has...

Felberta was really happy with her find.

Yup, good looks really helps with many things.

"C'mon, Nux, why are you not coming here? Do you plan to make me wait for so long?"

"N-No mam, I-I am c-coming"

Nux then walked towards the bed, the closer he walked the more his face blushed, then without waiting, he climbed onto the bed and then moved behind the viscount.

“I-I will be s-starting m-mam...”

“Yes, do it”

Nux’s hand then touched Felberta’s shoulders. His gaze then turned focused and he started massaging them.

His massaging skills, however, were anything but good, the viscount wanted to say something but when she turned her head a little and noticed his immersed gaze on his stunning face, she ignored the bad massage and just closed her eyes.

However, as she remembered the concentrated look and compared it to the flustered look he had a while before, a mischievous smile appeared on her face. She then turned her head and questioned.

“It must be difficult for you to massage without direct contact with the skin right? Wait, let me remove this gown”

She then stood up, deliberately forming an arch between her back and ass to tease Nux before she grabbed her gown and with one move, the whole thing fell on the floor.

She stood in the room wearing nothing but a black pair of bra and panty. She quickly glanced at Nux and seeing the flustered look on his red face, her smile widened.

“M-Mam it was a-alrigh-” Nux wanted to persuade her but she cut him between his words and replied.

“Don’t worry, I am not an unreasonable person, I know that massage should be done with direct skin contact. Now don’t worry and continue what you were doing.”

The Viscount sat back on the bed and quickly placed Nux's hands on her shoulders, urging him to continue.

Nux, of course, couldn't go against her orders and continued with the massage.

This time when Viscount turned her head, she saw the same focused gaze but she didn't miss the tinge of red that he was trying hard to hide. Not only that, even his hands were shaking a little.

'Hahaha! He is so cute and innocent~'

# Chapter 11

‘Hahaha! He is so cute and innocent~’

Viscount laughed inwardly as she admired her past self for deciding to buy and have him all to herself.

Nux, on the other hand, smiled inwardly when he saw the satisfied look on her face. He then glanced all over her body and he had to admit, she has the best body he has ever seen. Adding it to the fact that she was already in her black undergarments...

Nux already had a boner.

‘Alright, let’s advance to the second part’

With that, Nux shifted his body a little and the tent that was formed on his crotch directly touched Viscount’s lower armpit.

“Hmm?” Startled, Viscount quickly glanced at the thing poking her and was shocked to find what it was.

She then glanced at Nux and seeing his same focused and flustered look, she understood that Nux has no clue about what is happening.

Thinking that, she smiled and directly cupped his balls with her fair, tender hand.

“Oh? What is this, Nux?”

Nux’s eyes opened wide when he saw her cupping his thing, he jumped back in shock and apologized.

“M-Mam! I am really sorry! I don’t know h-how it happened!”

He tried to hide his boner with his hands as he tugged it between his thighs and stuttered.

‘Just as I expected’

Seeing him responding just like how she expected, Viscount Felberta smiled before she grabbed his hand and smiled,

“It’s alright, it’s a perfectly natural thing. To be honest, I would have lost my confidence if you didn’t have this sort of reaction after seeing my body.

Hmm, let’s see, how should we take care of this?”

“I-It is alright mam. It w-will go away quickly” Nux replied in a very low voice. The tinge of red that was on his face turned a little brighter.

“What are you talking about? Do you take me as someone selfish? You waited in front of my room so that you can help me relax when I was tired, now that you are in this situation, do you think I will leave you alone?”

“B-But that is my duty”

Hearing that, Viscount grabbed his chin, forcing him to look into her eyes, and she replied softly,

“You are mine now, it is my duty to take care of you as well, now don’t waste time and lie down on the bed. I’ll help you out”

Her voice was a lot more seductive than it was normal. Nux didn’t argue and quietly did as she told her.

Smiling, the Viscount removed his pant and underwear gently and a 6-inch rod popped out.

Let alone the Viscount, even Nux himself was surprised by his size, mind you, it was still not completely hard yet.

‘Damn, I never thought my weapon was this strong...’

“Oh? That’s quite a size you have here” Viscount nodded, clearly surprised that such a cute boy has such a huge rack.

Not that she complained, rather, she was happy since she knew it was all hers.

With that thought, she grabbed Nux’s rod with her soft and tender hand gently. As soon as she touched his shaft, Nux felt a huge electric bolt coursing through his body, starting from his tailbone and ending near his neck. He bit his lips and grabbed the bedsheets, trying to contain his moan.

Seeing his reaction, the countess smiled before she started stroking his rod gently.

‘OOhhhh! FUCK! This is good! Way too good compared to masturbation’

Mind you, Nux was a 2 times Virgin, this bit of a simulation was enough for him to climb to cloud nine, especially when the one doing it was such a beautiful milf and a viscount to boot.

His whole body flinched in pleasure but he still controlled and stopped himself from letting out a moan.

As if seeing through his intention of not moaning, the viscount took the challenge and sped her stroking.

‘AAHHH! FUCK!!’

Thick veins bulged on his dick, his rod now as hard as a rock and an 8-inch sword stood tall and proud even though the owner’s body was quivering since the simulation was too much for a 2 time virgin like him.

Feeling that he was about to cum, Nux tilted his body a little and without telling her anything, his load burst out covering the viscount’s whole face with his hot, thick jizz.

“AAhhh~~”

Nux sighed in pleasure as he glanced at the viscount, and seeing her face covered with his thick and slimy jizz, he smiled and admired himself inwardly before he put on a panicked expression and shouted.

“AH!, Mam I am sorry! I can’t believe I did that! I am so sorry!” He tried to stand up but his body, which was relishing the aftertaste of the frighteningly good feeling denied his command and he was forced to lie down.

On the other hand, viscount Felberta still couldn’t believe what happened, in a daze, she used her finger to gather some jizz that was on her face before she put it in her mouth and tasted it. Finding it quite pleasant, her eyes brightened as she spoke,

“Hooh? Now, why didn’t you tell me that you were cum? Huh?”

“I-It just felt really good and everything happened very quickly... I-I never experienced this before so I didn’t know it would happen...” Nux replied apologetically and emphasized the last part.

“It’s alright, next time warn me when you are about to cum okay?” The Viscount had a big smile on her face when she heard him.

Nux nodded embarrassedly.

“Alright, now go outside and the maid will take you to the bathroom, take a bath before sleeping,” She replied gently.

“Y-Yes, I’ll do it after I clean this ro-”

“There is no need for that, we have maids to do all that. You just have to take care of yourself and return in time.” Viscount smiled gently.

“R-Return?”

“Of course, from now on, you will be sleeping with me, the room you have is just for you to spend time in when I am busy in my office, after I return, you have to stay here with me. Am I clear? Do you have any questions?”

“N-No, none at all”

“Good” The viscount nodded before she walked into the bathroom that was attached to her room, hiding her embarrassed look.

This is the first time someone came on her face. It was a new experience for her as well and... she did not hate it since she got to see his embarrassed expression.

Of course, the major part of the reason was that Nux's jizz wasn't smelly or sour. Rather, it was somewhat pleasant.

...

Nux on the hand smiled widely as he saw the viscount walking into the bathroom. He achieved his today's goal and the whole process was even easier than he imagined. The viscount's Shota-con nature is stronger than he thought.

Of course, he wasn't actually a shota but his body style matches one for sure.

As he recalled the Viscount's face smeared in his jizz, he grinned wickedly and after recalling the effects it would have, his grin widened even more.

It had other effects? Of course, it did. Nux wasn't foolish enough to risk offending the viscount just because of his satisfaction. He can't afford to do that, at least not at this stage.

When he was reading about his system and his abilities, he found out that the closer and more erotic the contact between him and his target, the stronger the effects of his [Craving Touch] gets. The viscount getting smeared with his jizz would make her crave for him even more.

And obviously, the more the craving, the faster he will achieve his goal.

His smiling face looked like a handsome demon who just tricked another innocent person do to his bidding. He quickly stood up and walked outside and entered the bathroom the maid pointed to.

He wanted to bathe with the viscount but he controlled his urges and calmed down. He knew if he plays his cards well, the viscount will be the one to ask for this instead.

...

After taking a long bath, Nux returned to the room and saw the viscount lying on the bed, glancing at him with a seductive smile. She was wearing a sky blue coloured, loose nightgown, her hairs were still wet, making her look more captivating than normal.

Nux didn't forget to continue his act as he blushed and glanced down.

“After smearing all your jizz on me, you still dare to blush in embarrassment?” The viscount chuckled.

“N-No I didn't mea-”

“Hahaha~ It's so fun to tease you~ Alright, now don't keep standing there, come over, I am already very sleepy.” Seeing him panicking, the viscount chuckled.

Nux walked over with an embarrassed look before he lay down beside her.

“Okay, good night~” Viscount muttered as she closed the lights and hugged Nux from behind like a body pillow, her ample chest touching his frail back, causing him to have a slight reaction in the lower part of his body.

“G-Good night” Nux replied.

He knew this night would be a sleepless one since there is no way he can sleep while an alluring woman like Felberta hugs him from behind and her long legs crosses over his.

She was practically glued to him. Not that he hated this feeling; he could have never gotten someone as beautiful as the viscount to hug him while she sleeps in his previous life so, currently, he was fully satisfied.

Thinking about how potent his [Craving Touch] will be after this night, he got even more excited.

He noticed that even his previous calculations were wrong.

He didn't need 5 days at all; 2-3 days would be enough to complete this mission.

It was an error on his part.

Of course, such Errors were warmly welcomed by him.

# Chapter 12

Jolts of pleasure forced Nux to wake up from his sleep, he then subconsciously glanced at his dick, which was somehow out in the open while his pants were down. He then saw a jade white hand stroking his rod lovingly.

He didn't need to think twice and instantly knew the culprit who was behind this, he slowly turned his head and saw Viscount Felberta with a slightly red face, smiling at him.

“Oh, you are awake. I noticed your little brother was quite excited about this new morning so I decided to give him a hand”

“M-Mam i-it happens every morning, you don't have to trouble yo-”

“It's alright, as I said before, you belong to me, it's my duty to take care of you” Viscount Felberta replied. Though she said the thing as before, this time, her breathing was a little erratic while her face had a tinge of red.

‘The [Craving Touch] is absurd’

Nux thought inwardly while he blushed and nodded meekly.

Bolts of pleasure assaulted him wave after wave but it wasn't as bad as yesterday. Last time, he was someone inexperienced, but now that he had already experienced it once, he will try his best to hold out for as long as possible.

As if she knew what he was thinking, Viscount Felberta instantly changed her strategy as bent her body and she crawled towards his crotch.

“Alright, I'll show you something good today~”

Saying that, she pulled her gown down, only enough for her large milky breast to pop out, standing upright, as they were being supported by the

gown. Seeing those white twins with a pink cherry on the top could make any man drool.

Nux dreamt of squeezing those soft mounds of flesh as much as he wanted, it took all his willpower to not stand up and grope those juggers.

But moments later, he thanked himself for not giving in and staying where he was since what happened next was something he never imagined would happen, at least not in the recent future.

Viscount Felberta positioned herself carefully and then her two huge mountains engulfed his huge rod, and a soul-stirring pleasure assaulted his mind. Thousands and thousands of bolts of pleasure ran throughout his body and he felt this weird numbing sensation all over his body.

‘The legendary Titfuck!!~’

“Ahhh~” Despite trying his very best not to, he couldn’t help but release a satisfied moan.

His whole body twitched, and the pleasure he felt as his dick rubbed her cleavage while being mushed by two soft and beautiful pair of breasts was a thousand times better than the handjob she gave him yesterday. His eyes rolled back and his back arched up, trying to resist the enormous pleasure he was feeling.

Satisfied by his reaction, Viscount Felberta smiled and increased her speed, further intensifying the pleasure he was feeling.

However, Nux still resisted. He still fought the urge to cum right away. As if provoked by this, Viscount Felberta’s eyes met his, while maintaining eye contact, she lowered her head, and licked her luscious red lips, before she kissed the tip of his dick that popped out of her breasts.

“OOhhh~” Stimulated by this heavenly scene, Nux wasn’t able to hold it any longer and his jizz burst out, once again spreading all over Viscount Felberta’s face and her milky breasts, this time though, it was more concentrated near her mouth.

“Haah... Haah... Haah...”

Nux breathed heavily, his chest moving up and down in quick successions. This time, there were no thoughts about how this would help him with his goal, or how should he act to please the viscount. His mind was already numb because of all the stimulus it has received.

“You really like to spread your milk all over my face, don’t you?” Viscount Felberta teased.

“It haah... it just felt too good... haah...” Nux replied without thinking.

Seeing him like that, Viscount Felberta smiled as she shook her head.

“You don’t take my orders seriously, do you? I told you to tell me before you cum but you ignored it”

This time, Nux’s head cleared up and he quickly replied, “I-I am extremely sorry mam! I-” he thought he somehow offended Viscount Felberta but soon he noticed that teasing smile he had on her face.

Although that smile looked more like a foolish smile with his milk spread all over her enchanting face.

But that too gave her a different kind of a charm and was enough for Nux to feel a slight reaction in his lower body even though he had just cum a moment ago.

“Heh~ I never said I don’t like it... Although you still require some punishment for listening to my order” Viscount Felberta muttered.

“I-I will go through any punishment mam gives me to without fail!” Nux nodded seriously.

“Hahaha! Look how serious you are. It’s like I will punish you with death or something. Don’t worry, it will just be a light punishment...”

You might even enjoy it a little bit~” Viscount Felberta replied as she licked her lips sensually and at the same time she tasted Nux’s milk again.

A different kind of satisfaction washed over her body as she noticed the jizz all over her and that handsome boy lying on her bed with a tired look.

‘My money is not wasted at all~’ she nodded inwardly before she smiled.

“Alright, it’s time for me to go to work after I take bath, I will see you after I return. Okay?”

“I-I will wait for your return in front of your room like yesterday...”

‘I really did not waste my money at all~’

...

With an unusually bright mood, Viscount Felberta walked toward her office to start the day. As a viscount, most of the matters are handled by her subordinates, of course, that does not mean she does not do anything.

She is more like a CEO who takes care of everything around and manages everything. However, these few days, she is exceptionally busy.

This is the last week of the 8th month, and also the week in which the viscount has to work harder than normal since she can’t ignore the tax collection and leave it to her subordinates.

She has to read reports about the amount of tax collected, how to deal with those who haven’t paid the taxes and all that.

She settled down on her chair and a few minutes later, a man wearing a black coat over a white shirt walked over and bowed.

“Greetings, Viscount Felberta” He was Joyab, the butler of Viscount Felberta.

Felberta nodded and Joyab started.

“The farmers are unable to pay the taxes this month due to the draught. They say that they spent all their saving on paying the tax last month and can barely afford food to eat right now. I had some men check the situation,

and confirmed that what they say is true and the farmers are really having a hard time.”

Felberta nodded before she closed her eyes, Joyab stayed silent without interrupting her thoughts and a few minutes later, Viscount Felberta spoke.

“Alright, take their lands and free them from taxes for the next whole year.”

Joyab’s eyes widened when he heard that and he countered, “But Viscount, the land they own has a lot more value than the tax they owe us. Aren’t we just extorting them?”

“Of course not, those farmers are fools, if we force them to pay tax, they will sell their land to someone else at cheaper prices just to pay the taxes for the next few months and then will become homeless without anything to do.

This will lower the food production and reduce our taxes as well, therefore, it is better to take their lands, of course, we aren’t really taking them, we will just have them on paper. We will allow the farmers to farm on them and if they pay 10% higher taxes for the next 12 years, we will return their lands to them.

As for the taxes, use the treasury to pay for it”

Joyab was enlightened and inwardly praised Viscount Felberta for coming up with this plan, but soon, he furrowed his brows and questioned,

“But what if the draught reappears within the next 12 years? What shall we do then?”

“We will just increase the number of years they will have to pay extra taxes, no big deal” Felberta waved her hands nonchalantly and Joyab couldn’t help but be more impressed by her vision.

“I believe I can leave this matter to you now?”

“Yes, Viscount Felberta! I’ll give you the report within the next two days!” Joyab nodded, as efficient as ever.

...

The meeting continued, and the more time passed, the more uncomfortable the viscount felt. She sneakily lowered her head and felt a weird twitching inside her little sister.

She rubbed her thighs with each other, trying to calm this weird feeling but nothing happened. Feeling helpless, she ignored this and continued listening to the reports.

“Viscount Florence Reids has asked if 9 in the morning is a good time to meet up”

“Hmm? Meet up? Did we plan on meeting tomorrow?”

Joyab furrowed his brows in confusion before he replied,

“Viscount, it’s Marques Eduart’s daughter’s 21st birthday and they plan to celebrate it. We have received the invitation a week ago; I believe it would be disrespectful to the Marques if we don’t go there”

Felberta then recalled reading the invitation letter and nodded. Being a mere viscount, she can’t afford to offend someone like Marques so she has to go there. Also, this party will have some sort of political importance since many nobles who haven’t decided which prince they would support will appear there, so it is speculated that even the princes will join the party.

“Alright, tell her that I will be ready by 9 and we shall leave before 9:30. We can’t afford to be late. Also, have you thought about the gifts?”

“Viscount need not worry about that, I have already prepared it”

Felberta nodded as she said, “Alright, you can take a break now. We will discuss the rest after 2 hours”

“As you command,”

Joyab, even though he noticed that today’s break was a little early and longer than usual, didn’t think too much and bowed before he left.

As soon as Joyab left, Viscount's solemn face changed and she quickly lifted her gown before plunging her finger into her canal and started pleasuring herself.

'Haah~ What is happening... What is this tickling feeling? This never happened before...'

Although it felt really good as she masturbated, she still felt something was missing. Suddenly, a face that has been appearing in her mind, again and again, appeared once more.

She then calmed down, fixed her gown and called her maid.

"Call Nux"

The maid bowed before she left.

A while later, a boy with an otherworldly face entered the office and greeted in a low voice,

"Good afternoon mam"

Viscount smiled as she signalled him to sit on the chair beside her.

"Now Nux, do you remember how I helped you this morning?"

Nux's face turned red as he nodded embarrassedly.

"Now I want you to help m-"

"Of course! You can order me to do anything! I will surely do my best to satisfy you!" Before Felberta could even complete her sentence, Nux stood up and replied quickly.

Felberta chuckled seeing him like that as she replied,

"Good, now touch me here~"

# Chapter 13

“Good, now touch me here”

“Wha- What?”

Nux stood there, dumbfounded. He could not believe that she was being so direct.

“What? Didn’t you say you would do anything I say, are you going back on your words?”

“N-No, I’ll do it...” Nux’s face turned red, and then even redder before he quickly got on his knees as he glanced at the red coloured gown.

\*Gulp\*

He gulped inwardly.

Viscount Felberta is really too beautiful...

He then held the lower part of the gown before pulling it up, revealing her slender, long legs. His movements were very slow, It might look like it was because he was embarrassed, but Nux was just relishing and appreciating the feeling of unclothing a beautiful lady like her.

He felt like he living a dream...

A dream he would never want to wake up from...

On the other hand, the slower his movements, the more Felberta anticipated what was about to come as her heart started beating loudly.

The tingling sensation which she barely suppressed burst out, this time more potent than the last.

Soon, Nux's hand reached her little sister before he glanced at her. She nodded, signalling him to continue.

Nux smiled seeing her rushing like that, he wanted to tease her a little, but he knew he was not in a position to play it like that.

He needs to be careful and act as an obedient boy toy. Time was in his favour, he just needs to wait for a while and then he will be able to do what he wanted.

Without any delay, Nux directly shifted her black panties aside, revealing her gorgeous pink pussy with a little to no hair around it, and seeing a clear way, he immediately plunged the tip of his middle finger into her canal.

“Anh~”

Getting the reaction he wanted, Nux smiled inwardly before he pushed forward.

“Annh~”

Jolts of pleasure assaulted the Viscount's body, somehow, the pleasure was a lot more powerful than when she did it herself. Not finding anything to hold, she directly clasped Nux's head and pushed his face right into her plump breasts.

Nux noticed that she was a lot more sensitive than normal, he then smiled as he slipped his index finger inside as well.

“Anh~”

He felt her grip getting tighter around his head as she pushed him deeper into her cleavage, her legs also crossed around his, as if afraid that he will go away. Although this position might look like it was a little uncomfortable, her body's softness made it one of the most comfortable positions he can ever be in.

With his two fingers, he teased her wet, squishy insides without rest.

Her moans sounded like blessed music to his ears.

“Anh~ Anh~ Anh~”

The more she moaned, the faster he moved his finger, and as soon her moans decreased; he would reduce his speed, forcing her to moan louder.

“Anh~ Anh~ Anh~”

Noticing the pattern, the viscount continued to moan with all her might while she also tightened her grip around Nux, as if trying to merge his body with hers.

Soon, Nux felt her insides twitching uncontrollably and he knew she was about to cum, without warning he increased his speed even further, his movements, a lot rougher than before.

“Anh~ Anh~ Anh~ Anh~ Anh~”

“AAAnngghhh~”

Felberta's body twitched uncontrollably before she arched her body and her juices gushed out without pause.

Nux's whole hand was covered in her juices, he felt her grip around him weakening, he stood up and questioned.

“M-Mam, was my performance satisfactory?” He sounded very nervous.

Viscount Felberta, on the other hand, was breathing heavily before she slowly raised her eyes to meet his and replied,

“Haah... Satisfactory? It was Haah... as if you have done Haah... this countless times...”

Hearing that, Nux shook his head in panic as he replied, “N-No I d-did not! I... I just thought that I will be doing something like this soon, so I started reading about it so that I can do my very best...” His last sentence was almost inaudible as he lowered his voice in shame.

Viscount Felberta chuckled hearing that, but then she was surprised by the unexpected action Nux did.

He sat down on the chair, before patting his thigh, with a face as red as a tomato, he spoke,

“I-I also read that after the woman cums... it would feel better if she sits on the man’s lap...”

“Haha... a man, huh...” Felberta chuckled weakly as she saw him sitting there with a red face but then, she stood up and walked towards him before sitting on his lap.

“What the book said is really true... it does feel better than before...”  
Saying that, Felberta leaned her back on Nux’s chest before she closed her eyes.

Nux smiled as he rolled his arms over her thin waist and placed his chin on her shoulder.

‘Maybe one more day, and she will be mine’ He thought inwardly.

What Viscount didn’t notice was how she turned from someone who was always in control of the situation to someone who is sitting on his lap, tired and unable to move, and how scarily quick this whole transition was.

Of course, even if she does notice this, she wouldn’t care about this since right now, she was too tired and was busy enjoying the Nux’s cuddles.

Nux also wanted to knead her breasts but he knew his limit. He will wait a little more. Viscount Felberta’s mind is clearing up little by little, he needs to act meek right now and just have a blush on his face...

...

Nux and Felberta stayed like that for a little longer, but Nux knew that they couldn’t continue like this for a long time and muttered shyly.

“M-Mam, I think your break is about to end, you should stand up now”

“Mm? No need, let me stay here like this, we still have an hour”

“But we also have to get this place cleaned, and...” Without saying any further, Nux started fixing her panties, and then her gown. There was no way he was going to let go of this chance to make her more dependent on him.

“You can’t do your work like this, can you?” He muttered.

A small smile appeared on Viscount’s face; she waited for him to fix her clothes before she finally opened her eyes and stood up lazily.

“You are right, let me go to the bathroom, you ask a maid to clean this place. Okay?”

Nux nodded, this time, although his face was still red, it was not to a degree where his movements were slow and stiff, showing that he is adapting to all the changes. It was also his way of slowly gaining control over the whole situation.

Not noticing anything, the viscount left and then Nux called the maid and got everything cleaned.

15 minutes later, Felberta returned, she had already fixed her makeup; looking at her giving off a strong and independent woman’s aura, nobody could imagine she was the same lady who sat on Nux’s lap powerlessly.

“Hmm? There are still around 40 minutes before my work resumes, what should we do by then?” She asked.

“Y-you still haven’t eaten your lunch yet, mam... so you should eat it first.”

“Ah! I completely forgot about that...”

I wonder why is that? Hmm, maybe it’s because I have been having nutrients through some other means that I don’t feel hungry anymore, what do you think?” She smiled mischievously as she glanced at Nux’s crotch and licked her lips.

Nux's face turned red as he lowered his gaze in embarrassment. To divert her attention, he ordered the maid to bring lunch and acted as if nothing happened, however, he did not look very convincing with that red face of his.

“Hahaha~” Felberta laughed out loud when she saw him acting like that.

The maids in this palace were efficient as ever.

As if they were just waiting for the order, delicious and sizzling food was brought into the office.

After the maids left, Felberta smiled before she glanced at Nux and teased, “Now Nux, where should I sit? Does your lap sound good?”

Nux blushed and Felberta laughed,

‘It is really fun to tease him... Hahaha’

Just as she was about to sit on her seat, Nux's voice was heard,

“Y-You can if you want to”

She glanced at Nux who was sitting on his chair with a red face, patting his thigh while avoiding her gaze.

Viscount was surprised by his response, she just wanted to tease him a little, she never thought he would take it seriously. She wanted to shake her head and deny but when she glanced at his lap, something inside her stopped her.

‘It is very comfortable there...’

She walked towards him and sat on his lap, her face had a tinge of red which she desperately wanted to hide from Nux. Noticing this, Nux smiled inwardly while he pretended that he didn't notice the red face at all.

‘Just wait... it is still not the time yet...’

He was very patient.

The viscount made herself comfortable on her new seat before she hid her embarrassment and replied.

“Alright, now feed me”

Expecting something like that from her, Nux shook his head inwardly while he nodded with a red face.

...

By the time the two of them were done with the lunch, it was already the time for the break to end.

“Okay, it’s time for you to leave, but don’t miss me too much okay? I’ll return soon.” Felberta teased as she stood up from his lap.

“I’ll wait for mam in front of her room” Nux nodded and left the office.

After he left, a smile appeared on his face as he thought about today’s gains.

He got one step closer to his goal, if he wished, he could complete his tonight but he decided not to rush things and be a little more patient.

A few good things happened today, the first one being that he touched her little sister. He also got her to sit on his lap and then the last one was where he got her to feed him.

Yes, after he was done feeding her, the viscount offered him to do the same, which he of course accepted with a ‘blush’.

He thought about tonight and decided that he would let her decide the pace for today. If he is the one deciding everything, he might give her a feeling of not being in control which he did not want, not until she is more attached to him.

At the same time, he was also surprised by the monstrous ability he had, the [Craving Touch]. He still remembered her slightly red face when he entered her office and when he touched her canal, it was already wet.

‘She might have masturbated but after noticing it did not work, she called me.’

That was straight-up scary...

...

On the other side, as Joyab entered the office he saw an unusually energetic Viscount Felberta sitting with bright, shiny eyes as she declared.

“Alright, let’s end what’s left so that we can leave and go back home as soon as possible!”

# Chapter 14

The next day, Nux and Fleberta were in a rush since it was already 8 in the morning and Felberta has to get ready by nine.

“Ugghh! This is all because of you, who told you to have morning boners every morning? Not only that, you even had the galls to rub your tent on my ass!”

Viscount Felberta exclaimed in frustration.

Nux on the other hand froze when he heard that and complained inwardly,

‘What the hell are you talking about woman? How the hell do I control myself when I am hugging you? And I am rubbing my tent on you? Who are you kidding? Who was the one who was wiggling her fat ass in front of my dick and started teasing me? HUH?’

Of course, he can’t say that out loud so he continued his act as his face turned red,

“I-I am sorry... I w-would make sure I don’t get like that in the morning...”

“Ah! No, you don’t have to do that... it’s a good sign that you get hard every morning, don’t change it”

Viscount Felberta felt that she lost something precious when she heard him and quickly corrected him.

“O-Okay, I’ll make sure to get as hard as I can get every morning then...”

This time, it was Viscount Felberta’s turn to turn red, she was dumbfounded by his answer but in the end, she could only nod.

“G-Good”

The chaotic morning continued, maids were called to clean the bed which had Nux's milk spread all over. Felberta rushed into the bathroom while Nux continued staring at the maids cleaning his jizz with an expressionless face.

It was as if they were trained to not show any expression in any situation.

Noticing that, an uncontrollable urge to see some lewd expressions on these maids' faces welled inside Nux's head.

At that moment, the maids' bodies quivered for some unknown reason, it was as if they were locked onto by some wild beast.

...

Around 45 minutes later, Viscount Felberta entered the room, ready to go to the party, she was wearing an eye-catching black gown which was made from silk, and her hair was combed into a bun while she only had light makeup on. Combining all of this with her beautiful face and a succubus like body, she looked really captivating.

"How do I look?" She glanced towards Nux and questioned.

"..." Nux stood where he was, frozen.

She furrowed her brows and waved her hand, "Hello? Nux?"

"Ah! Huh?"

"How do I look?"

"Beautiful... too beautiful...." He muttered softly before he came out of his reverie and replied, "Ah! I mean, you look really good, Mam"

Satisfied by his reaction, the viscount nodded and smiled, "Alright, I will take my leave now. You take care of yourself, ask the maids if you want anything, okay?"

Nux does not have the status to go with her, in the end, he was just a boy toy. Even though Viscount Felberta might not see him like that, in others' eyes, he is just that. Of course, Nux wasn't too bothered either, it has just been 2 days since he came to this world, he isn't in a rush to rise in position.

Who knows? Maybe at the next party like this one, he might be called as a chief guest?

Of course, Nux didn't forget to take advantage of this situation and deepen his impression in Viscount's mind.

"Y-Yes, c-come back soon..." Nux muttered softly.

"Oh? Why should I come back soon? Would you miss me if I don't?"

"Ye- No! No! I mean, take your time and please enjoy the party to its fullest extent... I'll wait for you..." Nux replied with a red face.

"Hahaha~ Don't worry, I was just teasing you. I will come back as soon as possible." The viscount smiled as she left.

...

As she entered the living room, Felberta saw two women, wearing red and purple silk gowns sitting in front of her chatting with each other with smiles on their faces.

These two were Florence Rieds and Willa Harte, both of them were viscounts and Felberta's close friends.

There were two men wearing the same suit as Joyab standing behind them. These two were their butlers.

Willa noticed Felberta coming and stood up as she greeted, "Morning, Sister Fel"

Florence also stood up and her eyes brightened when they fell on Felberta.

“Oh ho, someone is looking really charming today? What’s the matter? How come your face is looking so bright and lively?”

“Huh? What do you mean? Don’t I always look bright and lively?”

“Ha! There you go again with your narcissism.” Florence rolled her eyes.

“But Flor is right, although you are always a charmer, you do look a little different today...” Willa muttered.

Although Flor and Willa were not as beautiful as Fel, they could still be called beauties in their own right. Flor had a petite body, blonde hair, and a small nose, combined with her energetic attitude, she looked lively and cute and was the youngest of the three, being only 24 years old.

Willa, on the other hand, was the opposite, her breasts were larger than Fel’s, combined with her black hair with brownish texture, she had a motherly charm and was the oldest of the group, being 31 years old.

“C’mon sister Willa, I know she is a lost cause, but why are you teaming up with her?” Felberta complained.

“Haah!? Who are you calling a lost cause!? You wanna fight!?” Flor snapped.

“Hahaha!” The two others started laughing and then Willa muttered, “Alright, we can talk in the carriage, let’s go, we can’t be late for this party”

Felberta and Florence nodded as the three women entered the carriage.

...

After a 1 hour ride on the carriage, the three appeared in front of a large mansion where different people wearing expensive-looking clothes were roaming around.

Seeing the lively atmosphere, Flor took a deep breath as she rejoiced, “Haah! This feels good! Finally! I don’t have to stay in my stinky mansion doing stinky work!”

Fel and Willa rolled their eyes when they heard her. The three of them were accompanied by their respective butlers and Flor's butler couldn't help but shake his head inwardly as he lamented.

'Why are you even complaining, I am the one doing all the work...you just sit there and complain...'

Nobody knew his troubles...

While the three were looking around excitedly, a voice was heard which caused the three of them, along with their butlers to furrow their brows, especially Joyab.

"Viscount Felberta, I see you are looking as stunning as always"

"Yes, that is true, I do look stunning even if I do say so myself, but Viscount Heydon, I must stay, you are still as uncreative and ever. This is the 13th time I have heard you repeating the same line to start the conversation."

Felberta turned around as she saw a man standing behind her, his face twitching due to her reply.

He was Heydon Youngee, a Viscount who fancies Fel but was rejected and now he pesters her everywhere they meet hoping to win her heart.

Appearance-wise, although he couldn't be called ugly, he wasn't handsome either. Blonde hair, refined attire, pointy nose combined with that mole on his cheek, gave him a cunning look, which, actually isn't far from his actual personality.

Of course, no matter how cunning he is, he never dared to use any tricks on Viscount Felberta.

No, it was not because he was scared of some rules or something like that, but because he was scared of Felberta herself.

A beautiful woman with a dead husband, a mother of one, and a noble Viscount to boot; who won't be charmed by her and would want to make her his? Many tried but they all failed.

Her being able to survive in these conditions proves that although she may look like a mere viscount, she was not as simple as that.

Heydon, considering this factor searched her past and learned a piece of shocking news.

A few years back, there was an Earl who fancied Felberta and wanted to make her his concubine, after being rejected, he raged and decided to drug her and force himself upon her.

Not only did his plan fail, but Felberta even demanded compensation, thinking that it should be solved with this payment, Earl agreed.

But ‘coincidentally’ the day after he delivered the compensation, all his crimes were exposed to the public along with their proofs.

Of course, there is no noble in this world who hasn’t committed any crime.

But as they say, cheating is not an act worth punishing, getting caught is.

The king was forced to take action and the Earl was demoted to a mere baron.

Of course, the punishment wasn’t as simple as it looked, how could an ex-earl now a baron, survive while being in the bad books of one Viscount and countless other enemies he created while being an Earl?

Unable to take the pressure, the Earl sold all his properties and left the kingdom.

What happened to him later was unknown.

Knowing this, Heydon dared not play any tricks. Even an Earl was unable to escape, how could he, a mere viscount take this risk? Although he liked beauties, he liked his life even more.

“Alright, if you have nothing else to say, we will be taking our leave, since we have to meet a few of our friends later”

Seeing that he was thinking about something, Felberta took this chance and walked away without giving him another glance.

Heydon gritted his teeth, and then his eyes fell on another woman. Fixing his hair, he smiled and walked toward her,

“Viscount Friede, I see you are looking as stunning as ever...”

...

The party started, in truth, normal birthday parties are only held in the evening, but Marques Eduart really adores his daughter and therefore launched this grand party which covers breakfast, lunch, and dinner for the whole day.

In these types of grand parties, only low ranking nobles like barons and viscounts are required to arrive by the morning. Actually, in the past, it was these low ranking nobles who arrived in the morning to build connections, but as the time passed, it became a trend and it was considered disrespectful if a baron or a viscount doesn't arrive in the morning.

So right now, all the people here were either barons or viscounts. Of course, the noteworthy thing was that Marques Eduart personally greeted all the guests without caring if they were barons or viscounts. This made everyone happy, and they even felt lucky that they joined this party.

After the Marques left, the barons tried to get into Viscount's good books, some introduced their children to each other, and some formed relationships in other ways.

Of course, as experienced nobles, Fel and her friends didn't bother with viscounts and barons, they just greeted their friends before the three sat together and started chatting, catching up with each other.

Although Fel, who was enjoying the conversation had already started missing a certain someone.

...

Time passed and afternoon fell, this was the time for the Earls to make their entry.

One by one, all the Earls entered the hall, and after greeting each other; they were greeted by viscounts and barons. Even Fel and her friends greeted the Earls they knew before everyone sat at the table and had their lunch. This time, Fel and her friends didn't sit alone, they were with a few Earls along with some other Viscounts.

Fel, however, was already feeling that familiar sensation inside her little sister. She closed her legs tightly and straightened her back as she suppressed the feeling before she smiled and continued eating.

...

After lunch, the garden was opened, Fel and her group excused themselves as they walked towards the garden, getting some fresh air.

Time passed and it was time for the main party to start, starting with Marquess, then the four Dukes of the kingdom, and finally the 3 princes, all these big faces appeared one by one.

After another round of greetings, Fel finally couldn't take it any longer as she spoke, "Willa, Flor, I need to go the bathroom, I'll be quick, okay?"

"Kay~" Flor replied and waved her hand nonchalantly while Willa nodded.

Felberta walked away elegantly but when she detected no one around her, she quickened her pace and rushed into the bathroom before sitting on the seat and plunging her finger into her little sister.

"Ahh~ The relief~"

# Chapter 15

After a quick session of self-care, and suppressing the tingling feeling to a great extent, Felberta fixed her hair and her dress before walking out of the bathroom and joining Florence and Willa.

“Hah? What took you so long?” Flor questioned as she raised her eyebrows.

“Nothing, I was just fixing my makeup a little.”

“Hmph! Then why don’t I see any changes? Your face just got a little red like a monkey!” Flor Snickered.

“Yo-”

“Alright, alright, stop fighting, there are dukes and princes here, think about your image.” Willa, as mature as always stepped in before the two could embarrass themselves.

“Also Fel, you came at the right time, the Marques daughter is about to appear”

“Oh right! Have you seen the Marques daughter before? I once got a chance to and I can tell that she is prettier than Fel!” Flor chimed.

“Hmm? I also saw her before, although she is indeed beautiful, I can say for sure that she is at best, on par with our Fel, why would you say she’s prettier than her?” Willa questioned.

“Tsk Tsk, Fel is already an old woman, in just a few more years, her face will be full of wrinkles, how can she be on par with the girl who is in her prime right now” Flor snickered.

Felberta’s lips twitched when she heard that.

Noticing that, Willa quickly changed the topic, “Oh, I also heard that Candice, the Marques’s daughter is one of the strongest students in the Royal Academy. It is said that she’s one of the most talented individuals in the empire right now and has a bright future ahead.

Not only that, even the Empress asked her hand for marriage for her son, the first prince. Although the Marques rejected, saying that she would be the one deciding who she marries.”

“What? The first prince? How can someone reject him? Just look at his face, he is so handsome! Money, Power, and, face; what does he not have? He is a perfect man!” Flor glanced at the prince with stars in her eyes.

Although Felberta would have agreed with her in the past, now when she glances at the prince’s face, another face, which is a lot more attractive than his appeared in her mind and she shook her head with a smile.

She then glanced at Flor and furrowed her brows.

‘I have to keep this bitch in heat away from him. Otherwise, she’ll find all sorts of ways to pester me to get hands on him’

A few minutes later, Candice Waters, the star of the party appeared. And though unwilling, Fel admitted she was indeed a beauty.

She had blonde hair just like her father, fair, delicate skin, beautiful blue irises, wearing a sky blue coloured gown with a dark blue design, she carried herself with elegance and a smile on her cherry-like lips.

A beauty who is talented and has a bright future ahead of her.

Felberta subconsciously compared herself with her, and couldn’t help but shake her head.

Flor is right, although she was beautiful, in a few more years, wrinkles would start appearing on her face. It could have been avoided if she had cultivated since young, but she, like many other lower-level nobles thought

that creating more contacts is much more important than cultivation and ignored it.

By the time she matured and realized its importance, it was already too late.

This was also her biggest regret in her life and also the reason why she forced her son to join the Royal Academy even though he had the same thought as the past her.

Sigh...

Felberta sighed deeply before she shook her head to get rid of these useless thoughts.

A face appeared in her mind as she smiled,

‘I am sure he is missing me right now. I wonder if he is crying sitting in a corner with his face on his knees~ Fufufu~’

She was eager to go back home.

...

The party continued, many boys tried to impress Candice, even the princes but she, like an untainted flower rejected them all with a smile.

On the other side, the political war between the three princes had already started.

Right now, three princes each have a Duke supporting them, as for the fourth duke, who should have been the breaking point and the deciding factor of this game, he decided to stay neutral since the one he supports is the second princess who, for some reason has no wish to participate in this battle.

Of course, although a woman becoming a queen is rare, it was not like it did not happen in the past. Not only that but it was noticed that every time a woman ascends to the throne, the kingdom has seen unprecedented glory.

But when he learned that the Second princess has no desire to fight for the throne, he declared his neutrality and stayed back.

This caused the other princes to focus on other nobles, the Marquees and the Earls, so they started securing the support of these nobles while the viscounts and barons readily tried to ‘support’ any prince so they could rise in ranking.

This game continued till dinner.

Felberta, on the other hand, was already getting impatient and uncomfortable since the suppressed tingling feeling inside her little sister has already started acting.

Flor and Willa also noticed her weird attitude and asked in worry, she just shook her head, saying she was not feeling well and continued eating dinner.

The dinner ended, and many nobles still stayed talking about various things, mostly discussing which prince to support or how to win the heart of Candice Waters, who might be the next pillar of the kingdom.

This time, Felberta didn’t wait any longer and as soon as the dinner ended, she rushed back to her mansion.

Seeing her walking figure, Florence couldn’t help but mutter.

“It looks like she really is sick...”

# Chapter 16

Author Notes:

I had 2 major things to address, I know that after reading the chapter, you wouldn't bother reading author notes and would rush to the s, so I will write about it here.

1st, Spam Reviews.

DaoiseCxRH5L, look my friend, I really appreciate how much you like and love my novel but think about it from my side,

I promise you guys extra chapters for your reviews because I want more readers to read my novel and then give a genuine review. It would raise my novel rankings, reading time, valid reads, in the end getting more views and reaching more readers, and you guys will get your extra chapter, but now you have posted around 40 reviews, making my total reviews reach 50, but I only have around 15 genuine reviews.

That isn't really fair to me, right? Isn't that the same thing as me reducing chapters length from 1000 to 250 words and then posting 16 chapters a day? You guys will be disappointed as well right?

So let's do this, since you have posted 40 reviews, with 3 different reviews saying different things, I will treat them as 3 reviews and give you guys extra chapters calculating that.

I hope you understand my plight and please don't get offended, I really value all my readers, especially readers who love my work!!

If you guys still feel I am in the wrong, comment here, and I will try to post more than 20 chapters... but please think about it from my side as well...

Now the second issue, the readers are divided into 2 parts, some wanting 1st option, some the 2nd (chapter 5's Author's note)

So what I will do is I will take DespairHope's suggestion and divide the girls into two categories, 1st, being the main harem, the girls with real personalities and characters.

The 2nd one will be combat maids or maid assassins, you can choose between these two options.

Thank you <3

...

As soon as Viscount Felberta reached her mansion, she jumped out of her carriage and rushed towards her room, although the servants were surprised by her actions they didn't dare ask anything and her two maids started following behind her silently, keeping up with her with ease.

Seeing a familiar figure sitting in front of her room, Felberta smiled and shouted excitedly,

"Nux!"

"Ma-"

Nux wanted to act like he was excited seeing the viscount again but he didn't expect her to rush into him and hug her without thinking about anything.

He then noticed the unusual stiffness in her legs and understood what happened.

Again, surprised by the ridiculously overpowered ability he has, he glanced at the maids and ordered,

"I'll take care of Viscount Felberta from here; you can excuse yourself for the day"

The maids noticed the change in his tone in just two days but seeing the viscount acting like that, they shook their heads and bowed before leaving.

Nux on the other hand, smiled as he held Felberta's plump butt and carried her into her room. Though surprised by his actions, the viscount didn't complain and let him do what he wanted to.

Nux then gently placed her on the bed before he said in a soft tone, "Mam, you must be tired, let me massage your body and help you relax"

This time, there was no stutter in his words, his tone only carried a gentle but a compelling tone.

"Mm," Felberta nodded before she closed her eyes.

"Then shall I help you remove your gown?"

Surprised by his words, Felberta opened her eyes and glanced at Nux.

Nux blushed before he explained, "You know how difficult it is to massage without direct skin contact, since I want you to feel the best, I request you to remove your gown"

Finding his explanation logical, she nodded and allowed him to remove her gown.

A small smile appeared on Nux's face before he quickly removed her gown and glanced at Felberta lying on the bed wearing nothing but a sexy black coloured bra and panties, with her back facing him. He also opened her hair since he liked open hair rather than the bun.

With everything ready, he rubbed his hands together before she started with her shoulders, and slowly started moving down, her back shoulders, to her back, then her lower back, before he started kneading her plump ass with extra care and gentleness.

"Anh~"

Jolts of pleasure assaulted Felberta's body, she wanted to question what he was doing but when his hands kneaded her butt, the tingling feeling which had been suppressed after she hugged erupted, and this time, it was far

stronger than before. Combined with how good it felt when he touched her butt, she completely forgot all her questions and gave up.

However, before she could thoroughly enjoy the feeling, Nux's hand continued down to her plump thighs and then to her legs and feet.

Feeling frustrated, she wanted to tell him to continue massaging her buttocks and thighs, but she then felt his hands coming back to her legs, noticing the pattern, she stayed silent and enjoyed the massage.

Nux smiled widened seeing her acting like that.

Of course, this time, he wasn't here to just massage her body, he was here to complete the mission and make Felberta his. Thinking it was time to jump to the next step, he massaged her butt before moving up.

As his hands moved towards her back, Felberta shook her head inwardly before her eyes widened when she felt something touching her little sister.

She quickly turned her head and saw a huge tent right in front of her little sister, she then glanced at Nux who was still massaging her back. Then he leaned forwards to massage her shoulders and his tent started rubbing her canal.

"Anh~"

She released a soft moan, Nux however 'wasn't able to hear it'.

Her little sister started trembling, the tingling sensation this time was incomparably stronger than before.

\*Gulp~\*

An image appeared in her mind and she gulped thinking about that possibility.

"Haah... Nux," She called out.

"Yes?"

"I Haah... I want you to massage me down there..."

Nux then stood up before he touched her butt and questioned, "Here?"

"No, there"

Nux's face turned red before he touched her little sister and questioned, "Here?"

"Yes..."

"Okay..." Nux nodded before he started 'massaging' around her canal, enhancing her sensitivity.

"Mmnh~ N-No, not with your hands,"

"Then how should I do it?" Nux questioned, perplexed.

Felberta glanced at his crotch as she answered, "W-With that..."

"Wha- What?" Nux stuttered as he blushed.

He couldn't believe what she just asked.

"J-Just do it!" Felberta ordered, her tone stern, although it would have been better if she wasn't stuttering.

"A-As you s-say..." Nux nodded with a face as red as a tomato before he lowered his pant and a big, 8-inch monster popped out.

\*Gulp\*

Felberta gulped audibly, her anticipation and excitement, both were on another level.

Nux also didn't waste much time, he skillfully removed her panties, and his rod directly entered her canal.

"Ooohhh~"

"Annnhhh~"

With her insides already wet from all the teasing and stimulations, Nux's dick directly slipped into her deepest part without any resistance whatsoever.

"AAnnhh~"

Felberta moaned in delight. All the tingling she felt the whole day finally subsided and was replaced with the immense amount of pleasure, the pleasure so extreme that her eyes rolled and she took a deep breath before she let out a loud moan.

She felt as if she was finally full. It has been 7 years since her husband died, well, though she did call him her husband there was no romantic feeling between them. So after they had a son, they never had sex.

Also, his weapon was a little small so she can't really say she felt very good when they did it, which, is completely different from now, where she was on cloud nine in just a single thrust.

"Ugghhh~"

Of course, Felberta wasn't the only one feeling good. The two times virgin who finally lost his virginity felts jolts of pleasure assaulting his body as her warm and squishy insides clustered around his dick while her womb was already sucking his dick deeper and deeper as if it wanted to engulf the whole thing.

If not for the training that he had been through in the last two days, he would have just cummed in this single thrust.

Taking a deep breath, he collected his thoughts as he pulled back his dick before plunging it even deeper than before.

"AAnnhh~"

"Ugghhh~"

Relishing the otherworldly feeling, Nux paused for a moment before he drilled her again, then again, and again, before he lost in pleasure and continued.

"AAnnhh~ AAnnhh~ AAnnhh~"

"Ugghhh~ Ugghhh~ Ugghhh~"

The two moaned as they mated like animals. Nux tried to go deeper with every thrust. Felberta clenched the bedsheets hard as she bit her lips so that she can control her moans, but it was clear that she failed miserably.

Noticing that he was about to come, Nux slowed his thrusts before,

\*Click\*

With a single click, he unplugged her bra and removed it. He then turned her body, making her face him.

Felberta opened her eyes and seeing his naked body and otherworldly face covered with sweat, she smiled.

She wasn't alone, even Nux was enjoying the view of her raven hair spread all over, a smile that was on her cherry-like juicy looking lips while her delicious looking twins moved up and down as she breathed.

He did not waste any more time as he bent down and started licking her pink nipple while he kneaded her other breast with his hands.

Another jolt of pleasure assaulted the viscount,

"AAnnhh~"

She moaned in pleasure before she grabbed his head and forced it deeper into her chest.

Her lower body twitched in pleasure, her canals tightened, squishing and crushing his dick with her soft insides.

"Ugggggnnhhh~"

Unable to cope with sudden pleasure, his milk burst out and he came.

As his thick milk filled her insides, it was as if her last wall was broken and she moaned in ecstasy before her juices gushed out as well.

"AAnnnnnnhhhh~"

Suddenly, Nux felt some weird power flowing into his body, he wanted to check what it was but he was too tired to, also, he wanted to relish this heavenly feeling without any sort of interruptions.

Nux then let his body fall on top of Felberta's, both of them didn't have the power to think about anything and stayed in the same position for the time being.

...

After a while, when Nux finally had the power to move, he moved to the right of the viscount. Noticing the movement, she opened her eyes, and when her black irises looked into his golden eyes, she smiled sweetly as she nodded.

"It felt really good..."

Nux didn't answer, he just moved his weak body close to her and sealed her lips with his own.

He didn't use his tongue since he was tired, so he just sucked her juicy lips for a while before he returned to his original place and nodded.

"It really did"

Felberta on the other hand was dumbfounded and couldn't react to his sudden action at all. She just felt something amazing on her lips before the feeling disappeared, confusing and shocking her at the same time.

"You are quite bold..."

She commented.

"I-I read it in the book..." Nux blushed as he tried to avoid eye contact.

Viscount smiled as she lifted her head and kissed his lips.

"I would really like to see the book you are reading~"

This sentence caused Nux to sweat uncontrollably.

Did he read any book? Of course, he did not!

Heck, he didn't even know how to read!

Of course, as a professional actor, he continued his acting without panic and nodded with a red face.

A few more minutes later, he finally removed his little brother out of her little sister before he moved her body a little hugged her from behind.

He also did not forget to place his dick in the second most comfortable position which was between Felberta's plump thighs while slightly touching her canal.

The viscount's body trembled a little but she was too tired to say or do anything, so she directly closed her eyes and enjoyed Nux's gentle kneading of her breast with a smile on her face.

Seeing her like that, Nux chuckled inwardly but just as he was about to close his eyes, he heard a sound in his mind.

[Ding!]

[Mission Accomplished!]

# Chapter 17

[Ding]

[Mission: Fuck Felberta Alveye ]

[Description: Well, Fuck Felberta Alveye]

[Reward: Eye Of Discerning.]

[Warning: If the mission fails, the Ability [Craving Touch] will be disabled.]

[Time Limit: 30 days ]

[Status: Completed]

[Would you like to receive the rewards?]

[Y/N]

Excited, Nux pressed yes quickly.

[Ding!]

[Fusing Eye Of Discerning into host's body]

Suddenly, Nux felt unbearable pain in his eyes, but noticing Felberta sleeping soundly beside him, he gritted his teeth and used all his willpower to not scream in pain.

Veins popped on his forehead while his whole body trembled.

“UUggghh...”

Suddenly, drops of blood trailed out of his eyes and it continued for a while.

After a while, the pain finally subsided and a message popped out.

[Ding!]

[Eye Of Discerning fused successfully]

Nux breathed heavily before he wiped the blood and opened his eyes. If one looked closely, different golden coloured patterns could be seen moving inside his golden irises, making him look more mysterious.

His eyes then fell on Felberta and suddenly, a screen popped out.

[Name: Felberta Alveye ]

[Age: 28 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Occupation: Viscount of Skyfall Kingdom]

[Race: Human ]

[Talent: Low]

[LVL: 3]

[HP: 100/100]

[STR: 7]

[AGL: 8]

[VIT: 10]

[STM: 8]

[INT: 7]

[DEF: 7]

‘I can see others’ status with this ability! Damn, that’s convenient!’

Nux rejoiced inwardly before he recalled that weird feeling he felt after he came and checked his status.

‘Status’

As soon as he thought about it, a screen appeared in front of him.

[Name: Nux Leander ]

[Age: 18 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Talent: Low]

[LVL: 2]

[HP: 120/120]

[STR: 8]

[AGL: 16]

[VIT: 12]

[STM: 13]

[INT: 10]

[DEF: 7]

[Blank Points: 3]

[Ability: Craving Touch, Eye Of Discerning]

[Harem Members: Felberta Alveye]

He levelled up!

He calculated and concluded that with each level up, he gains 2 stat points for every attribute other than the intelligence stat, which he only gains 1 point for and 3 blank points.

That means, he gets a total of 14 points with each upgrade. That's fucking overpowered!

He thought about why he didn't get 2 points for intelligence stat but was unable to come up with an explanation so he shrugged.

'Wait, will my stats increase if I work out?'

'Wait... why did I not think about this when I arrived in this world!? Ahh! I was too busy finding ways to fuck Fel!'

Hmm? Is this what they call post nut clarity?

Okay, let's not think about this nonsense. Let's sleep; I'll wake up early in the morning, and test my theory out.'

Thinking this, he tightened his hug around Felberta and entered the dreamland.

...

The next day, Felberta woke up with a satisfied smile on her face, she turned around before her eyes widened as she couldn't find Nux!

All her drowsiness disappeared as she called the maids, "Skyla! Lane!" There was a tone of urgency in her voice.

"Master," two women quickly rushed into the room as they bowed.

“Where is Nux?”

The two maids glanced at each other before one called Skyla replied, “Master, Nu- Um, Master Nux is in the garden” She didn’t know how to address Nux after the... night the Viscount and he had so just called him master.

“Hmm? What is he doing in the garden?” Fel questioned.

“H-”

“Leave it, I’ll go check it out myself” Before they could answer, Fel quickly stood up and just as she was about to leave, Skyla shouted.

“Master! At least wear some clothes!”

Fel looked down before she blushed a little, clearing her throat; she quickly wore a normal gown and walked towards the garden with two maids following her.

As she walked into the garden, Felberta saw a handsome man, drenched in sweat doing pushups on the ground.

Although Fel could see his arms quivering, he continued and after a few more, his body finally fell. Fel wanted to rush towards him but when she saw a satisfied smile that suddenly appeared on his face, she stopped and decided to look at him a little more.

...

[Name: Nux Leander ]

[Age: 18 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Talent: Low]

[LVL: 2]

[HP: 120/120]

[STR: 8]

[AGL: 16]

[VIT: 12]

[STM: 13]

[INT: 10]

[DEF: 8]

[Blank Points: 3]

[Ability: Craving Touch, Eye Of Discerning]

[Harem Members: Felberta Alveye]

Nux who was now lying on the ground smiled as he saw his status. His experiment was proved successful, although he didn't receive many stats, his defence still improved by one point and he could feel that if he continued for a few more days, his strength would increase as well.

He was regretting his decision of adding some of his points to his agility and stamina but he didn't think too much about it. He can't play with his life, he was sure he could gain many points in future.

This was not his only gain though, he experimented a little and found out that unlike his [Craving Touch], [Eye Of Discretion] was an active skill that would activate whenever he thought about it.

It was a good thing, it would be weird if he was in front of a large group and all he could see is the system screen.

He chuckled as he stood up and just as he turned, he saw Felberta looking at him with a smile on her face. He smiled back before he activated his [Eye Of Discretion] and his eyes widened in surprise.

[Name: Skyla Hale ]

[Age: 25 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Advance.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 24]

[HP: 280/280]

[MP: 390/390]

[STR: 29]

[AGL: 34]

[VIT: 28]

[STM: 32]

[INT: 39]

[DEF: 27]

...

[Name: Lane Wynee ]

[Age: 26 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Advance.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 23]

[HP: 270/270]

[MP: 370/370]

[STR: 33]

[AGL: 28]

[VIT: 27]

[STM: 29]

[INT: 37]

[DEF: 34]

...

‘They can crush me with their fingers...’

He gulped inwardly and swore that he would treat them with respect.

Now that he thinks about it, he realized that a viscount like Felberta can’t possibly be left around unprotected. If not, then even random cultivators could destroy a noble’s whole house and chaos would ensue. He also noticed that MP stat which he did not see on his own, or Felberta’s status, thinking that it may appear after he levels up a little, he ignored it.

“Why the sudden need to exercise?” While Nux was lost in his thoughts, Fel questioned with an amused smile.

“I just thought I should start exercising a little now that...”, he blushed midsentence and stopped.

“Now that what?”

“Nothing...” Nux replied as he sneaked a few glances towards Fel’s crotch area.

Understanding what he was thinking Fel blushed and just as she was about to say something, Nux continued.

“By the way, you look really beautiful today, Lady Fel”

He also subtly changed the way he addressed her. He can’t stay in this weak position forever, right? Nux had decided to initiate his second plan. Of course, he will still be patient with everything since he knew he should not rush things.

Surprised by the sudden compliment, Fel didn’t know how to react and retorted,

“Huh? What do you mean? I didn’t even take a bath yet”

“So what? Just look at your face, other women can’t have this beauty even if they bathe 100 times a day” Nux hushed and before she could even react he walked towards her and continued.

“Of course, after you take bath, you will look even more attractive and also, you are getting late for the office so let’s get going. Sister Lane, please prepare bathwater for Lady Fel”

Saying that, he took Fel’s hand as they walked toward her room.

Lane on the other hand was confused, ‘How did he know my name?’

...

“You changed” As she was walking with Nux, the viscount muttered.

“Huh?”

“I said you changed. You are bolder than usual...”

“W-Well, I did transform into a Man from a Boy...” Nux replied as he blushed.

“A man?” Fel muttered before she thought about a possibility.

“Wait, is that the reason you were working out this morning?”

“...” Nux didn’t reply as he continued walking while he tried to hide his red face.

“Hahaha~ So that’s why~ Now I know why you were acting so weirdly, you became a man! Hahaha~” Fel laughed out loud while Nux continued walking without responding.

As they walked inside her room, Fel smiled mischievously as she questioned,

“But Nux, what if I want you to stay how you were?”

“I can’t do that” Nux replied instantly.

“Oh? But didn’t you say you will do whatever I want you to?”

Fel questioned with an amused smile when suddenly, Nux stopped walking before he cornered her to a wall and placed his hand in front of her shoulder, cutting all her escape routes.

His movements were so fast that Fel couldn’t react to them.

“I did say that, Lady Fel. But I won’t do anything that you might be sad about in the future even if it is you who tells me to”

Although surprised and a little excited for some reason, Fel kept her calm as she questioned,

“Oh? Why would I be sad if you stay like the cute little boy you are?”

Nux smiled at her question before he closed his eyes, tilted his face and moved closer to her.

Fel’s heartbeat quickened, she closed her eyes and moved her lips a little forward but suddenly, she felt Nux’s lips moving past hers and they arrived in front of her right ear as he whispered seductively.

“Oh you will~ You will definitely miss out on a lot of things if I stay like the cute little boy I was. Why don’t you trust me with this one? Kay?”

Felberta’s heart raced and her face turned red, and as if compelled by some force, she nodded weakly.

She only opened her eyes when she felt Nux had moved away from her.

But unexpectedly, instead of his confident look, she thought he would have, she found a Nux with a bright red face as he muttered,

“I-I am still not very e-experienced with this... g-give me some time...”

“...” Felberta didn’t know how to act. Her emotions were in turmoil, she found the ‘man’ Nux extremely attractive but she also found this ‘boy’ Nux extremely cute. She was confused about who was better.

But just as she thought about this question, the image of Nux cornering her into a wall popped into her mind, she felt her little sister tingling and she quickly came to an answer.

She then glanced at Nux who was blushing and avoiding her eye contact and couldn’t help but laugh out loud.

“Hahaha~ Alright, I am getting late. I’ll go and have a bath while um... you do whatever you want.”

Nux nodded and Fel quickly walked towards the bathroom.

Her heart was still beating rapidly as if she ran a marathon.

Her face was red as she recalled her being pushed into a wall.

“Dangerous... that was too dangerous... My heart nearly exploded”

She muttered.

# Chapter 18

Author's Note: Alright, you guys, from now on, the chapters will have the normal length, 1000 words.

Thank you for bearing with me on this weird rollercoaster-like ride.

I hope you Enjoy the future chapters.

...

Right now Viscount Felberta was sitting inside her big bathtub wearing absolutely nothing, her face was red and her movements were stiff. At the moment, her mind was occupied by a single person, and that was Nux.

Remembering how he pushed her to the wall her face turned even redder as she snorted, "Hmph! How dare he talk to me like that! He has become a 'Man' he says..."

Suddenly, the images of him drilling his hard dick into her appeared in her mind and her movements stopped,

"But it did feel good though..."

"What felt good? Lady Fel?" Suddenly she heard a familiar but unfamiliar voice, she turned back and saw Nux standing in front of her, completely naked other than a towel covering his crotch.

"W-Why are you here?" She questioned with a flustered look on her face. She did not expect him to appear in front of her like that just when she was thinking about him.

"Hm? I figured that I should help you take bath and decided to come here" saying that, he walked into the bathtub and sat beside her as if it was completely normal.

In reality, even Nux was feeling a little embarrassed and shy about this, he was worried that his actions might backfire but then he shoved all his worries away.

He had to take the risk, he can't stay too passive or he will stay like a boy toy forever. He needs to be bolder and more unrestrained.

Of course, he could only do it now because he was sure that the Viscount can't live without him anymore. So although she might punish him if she was dissatisfied, she won't kill him.

And since the rewards were enough, he decided to take this risk.

“Ha? When did I say I needed your help to take bath?” Felberta questioned.

“How can someone as intelligent and beautiful as you need someone's help to take bath? I just thought that it would be more convenient for you if I did that. After all, I was brought here so you can relax, wasn't I?” He says that as he picked her up and placed her on his lap. He then positioned his chin on her shoulder and questioned seductively.

“I am sure you prefer it that way, don't you?”

And before she could reply, he offered,

“Of course, if it's uncomfortable for you in any way. Just say a word and I'll leave as quickly as possible”

He even slightly pushed her away as he said that.

“No! I-It's okay. You can do it if you want to...”

She couldn't win against this 'man' Nux...

Nux smiled and picked up the soap as he replied,

“Then I believe I should start it quickly since viscount must be getting late”

He picked her a bit and then placed her in a more comfortable position, for him of course. He placed his dick right between her thighs and pussy as he interlocked his legs with her.

Then he started from her thin waist, before avoiding her beautiful bare breasts as he cleansed her shoulders and arms.

He then moved down, avoiding her breasts again before cleaning her thighs, of course, he gave special care to her inner thighs, going marginally close to her little sister before pulling back. Filling her with anticipation and disappointment at the same time.

“Mmhm~~”

A soft moan came out of Felberta’s mouth.

Deciding that he teased her little sister enough, he returned to her waist, but this time, he circled around her lower breasts without touching her before moving to the shoulders and repeating the same with her upper breasts.

Viscount Felberta on the other hand felt different sensations as his hands moved, her little sister quivered in frustration while her breasts felt some weird itch and her soft, light pink nipples hardened.

The smile that appeared on Nux’s face when he saw her reaction made him look no less dangerous than a scheming demon who traps maidens with his plans.

At the same time, his rod also hardened as he started moving it a little, experiencing pleasure from her plump thighs and at the same time teasing her little sister more and more.

The Viscount’s breathing quickened as her body started trembling in frustration, finally, she gave in to the temptation and requested,

“C-Clean there as well...”

“Where, lady Fel?”

“M-My breasts...”

“As you say”

Saying that, he suddenly grabbed her squishy breasts and started ‘cleaning’ them roughly.

“Anhh~” The viscount yelped in pleasure and surprise, causing her to tighten her fleshy thighs, which suddenly increased the pleasure Nux was feeling.

“Ughhh!!”

The sudden stimulus forced him to leak his milk as he stained the viscount’s thighs and her little sister with her jizz.

“Oops, looks like I have to clean that area again...”

Saying that, his hands moved towards her thighs as he washed them again before his fingers moved towards her canal which was already twitching uncontrollably after his jizz fell on top of it.

His finger circled around her entry for a little while before he pinched her erect clitoris, causing her to moan in ecstasy.

“AAnngg~~”

“Hmm? I think it somehow went inside, let me clean it thoroughly then”

Without waiting for confirmation, his middle finger directly entered her pussy followed by his index finger. His two fingers rubbed her wet and mushy insides, finding all her weak points.

“AAnnhh~ AAnnhh~ AAnnhh~”

Felberta kept moaning in pleasure as he played with her pussy, suddenly, a weird idea popped in Nux’s mind as he brought his lips closer to her left ear and

“Fhwoo~~”

He blew some air into her ear softly.

Felberta’s body jerked weirdly before her canal tightened and,

“AAnnnhh~”

She came.

Her juices gushed out without stopping, staining her thighs all over again.

“Haa... it looks like I have to clean it again...”

# Chapter 19

After what could be called the longest bathing session she ever had, Viscount Felberta walked out of the bathroom with a satisfied yet strict expression.

“We are late and this is all because of you. What do you have to say in your defence?”

“I deeply apologize for the inconvenience I have caused although I will say, It felt really good, did it not?”

Viscount Felberta’s lips twitched when she heard his remark. She wanted to reprimand him but when she thought about it,

It really felt good!

‘Agghh! I am being led astray by him!’

She clenched her fist in frustration but when she remembered the pleasure she felt a few minutes ago, she decided to let him go.

‘Haah, I am really weak against him...’

“Alright, no point complaining since we are already late, let’s move quickly so we can save some time,” She stated as she quickened her pace.

“Wait, I am going with you?” Nux questioned.

“Yes, I decided to take you as my butler from now on”

“But I don’t know anything butlers do”

“You don’t have to worry about it. Joyab will take care of that, you just have to follow me. You can’t keep staying here, can you?”

“Lady Fel, you don’t have to go through this roundabout way, just tell me that you can’t bear to stay away from me and I’ll follow you even if you walk into hell”

Felberta’s lips twitched, she wanted to retort to that but deep down, she knew what he said was true.

‘Ugh! He is annoying! Where the hell did my cute Nux go!?’

“You sure have a glib tongue, don’t you?”

“I believe Lady Fel knows more about it than I do” He purposefully glanced at her firm breasts before he licked his lips seductively.

Understanding what he meant, Felberta’s face flushed before she sighed...

“Haah... I really miss the past Nux... he was so sweet and cute, unlike the now you, you are just a rude person”

“Do you really, really mean what you said? Lady Fel? Why don’t you ask your pus- heart and see what it says?”

“...” Felberta used her right to remain silent.

Although she did miss the ‘boy’ Nux a little, if she were given a choice, she would choose the ‘man’ Nux any day.

After all, no matter how much thick faced she has, whenever she ordered Nux to do anything, she always felt like she was manipulating a little boy, although it felt good, in some part of her mind, she felt a little weird.

Nux now, on the other hand, steps up and seduces her on his own accord. His playful words feel good and his little forceful methods get her heart racing.

After all, in the end, she bought him as her boy toy, someone who would satisfy her sexually.

Of course, what Felberta doesn't realize is that Nux's importance in her heart has long passed what any random 'boy toy' has. If she was given a choice to choose between her close friends and Nux, she might not be able to choose her friends even if she was given enough time to think.

...

As the two of them entered Fel's office, they saw a middle-aged man standing inside the office, wearing a black suit.

Without wasting any time, Nux activated the Eye of Discretion and this man's information appeared in front of him.

[Name: Joyab Frey ]

[Age: 59 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Occupation: Butler of Viscount Felberta]

[Race: Human ]

[Talent: Low]

[LVL: 31]

[HP: 350/350]

[MP: 550/550]

[STR: 36]

[AGL: 41]

[VIT: 35]

[STM: 39]

[INT: 55]

[DEF: 35]

...

“Joyab, let me introduce him to you, he is Nux, he will be my new butler from now on”

Hearing that, Joyab frowned as he questioned, “Viscount Felberta, isn’t he the b-”

“Yes, he is. But from now on he is my butler”

Joyab couldn’t help but notice the defensive tone she had when she cut him off mid-sentence.

‘What kind of magic has this kid done on her?’

He couldn’t help but doubt if Nux was some sort of evil cultivator who somehow hypnotized Viscount Felberta. If it wasn’t for how he could not feel even an ounce of energy coming out of his body, he would have attacked him already.

“But Viscount, does he know what he has to do as your butler?” He questioned.

“You don’t have to worry about it”

“Then what about his cultivation? How would he protect you if he is so weak? You know that a butler is also a bodyguard who guards his master with his life”

“Oh yes, thank you for reminding me, I have decided to provide him with our house’s best cultivation technique, he is still young, and I believe he can catch up with others.”

“But...” Joyab wanted to argue further but he couldn’t find any points.

Noticing that he was acting weird, Felberta thought about it and quickly understood his dilemma and smiled,

“Butler Joyab, you have taken care of me ever since I was a child. You don’t have to worry; I won’t treat you or your family badly. I know you have been training your son to become my butler after you retire, this won’t change after Nux’s appearance. I am not firing you or your son”

Joyab glanced at viscount before he tried to avoid her gaze, embarrassed that he was seen through easily. Also, a sense of relief washed over his body when he heard her and he sighed.

“Yes, although I have appointed Nux as my butler, he is not exactly my butler, he is more of an assistant, no wait, you are kind of my assistant as well. Umm... forget it, just remember you two have different jobs.”

Viscount’s words not only confused Joyab but even she couldn’t understand what she was saying.

Behind her, Nux snorted inwardly when he heard her words,

‘Tsk tsk, what’s the point of covering up? Just tell him that we both are your assistant the only difference being that while he works on the papers, I work on your body’

# Chapter 20

Author's Note: Again, I will warn you, if you don't want to get blue balled, wait for the that I will post in 2 hours~~

Read at your own risk \*Skeleton Face\*

...

After introducing Nux to Joyab, the viscount continued with her work. However, soon she noticed that her speed and efficiency has improved a little. It was only a little but it couldn't be hidden from the viscount's eyes.

Also, now that Nux was standing right behind her, even after working for a long time, she didn't feel that tingling feeling she was so annoyed by.

Of course, that doesn't mean that they wouldn't have their fun during the break time. The viscount smiled, looking forward to the lunch break.

On the other hand, seeing her working so efficiently and elegantly, Nux was thoroughly impressed. He was awed by how she solved the farmers' problem, her fast decision-making skill was something very hard to have.

She looked like a perfect, empowered lady.

And when he thought about how he had this empowered lady sitting on his lap, he smiled evilly and waited for the lunch break.

...

"Alright, this is enough. You can take your lunch break now, you have 2 hours"

"As you say, Viscount"

After a bow, Jayob quickly left and noticing that Nux was still inside, he finally understood what kind of ‘assistant’ he was.

Nux didn’t know what Joyab was thinking about, even if he knew, he wouldn’t care. He just smiled as he walked towards Viscount Felberta, placing his hands on her shoulders, he smiled.

“Lady Fel, you must be tired after working for so long”

Knowing that she wouldn’t need to ask what she needed, Felberta smiled inwardly, looking forward to how he will turn this situation to his advantage and do something lewd.

“Mmhm” Of course, she didn’t forget to help him with his script and nodded.

“Your whole body must be stiff, is it not?”

“Mmhm. My whole body is veeryy~ stiff”

“I understand, I could help you with some massage, but I believe that would make you a little too relaxed, affecting your work in later hours.”

“Hmm, that’s certainly true.”

“Then how about I help you with some stretches?”

“Stretches?”

“Yes, then Lady Fel, since we are tight on time, let’s start it as quickly as possible”

Though she couldn’t understand what he wanted, she nodded then stood up and let him do whatever she wanted.

“Alright, first, let’s get rid- I mean, let’s remove your Gown”

Then without waiting for her response, Nux quickly and skillfully removed her gown. Today, she was wearing a purple coloured bra and panties. The

contrast between her pure white skin and these dark purple undergarments made her look really alluring.

‘Damn, she has a very irresistible body’

No matter how many times he has seen her, he would always get enraptured by her. Her perfect hourglass figure that he could only imagine in the past fantasies, even those film stars or models did not have a body like hers...

“Alright, now sit down, straighten your knees and open your legs as wide as possible”

Felberta did what he told, she stretched her legs as wide as possible and though it was not a straight line, it was still very close to it.

Nux was impressed by how flexible her body was, he also did not miss the chance to rub her inner thighs, ‘helping’ her to stretch more.

“Now bend down, and try to touch your toes with your hand~” Nux whispered as he supported her back.

She bent down, feeling the stretch on her thighs but she couldn’t really focus on it since that demon was still kneading her inner thighs while teasing her little sister again and again.

“Alright, now do the same with another toe”

Completely ignoring her frustrations, Nux continued to take advantage of her body as he ‘helped’ her with her stretches.

...

“Okay, now to the next stretch”

He then made her sit in the classic Japanese position, (the Seiza position) and then told her to slowly push her back backwards.

Felberta’s body was very flexible, her head nearly touched the floor while being in this position. Of course, Nux still supported her head on his lap, as

he kneaded her soft and fleshy breasts without removing her bra.

“Annh~” She moaned in delight and seeing her face flushed in red, Nux felt his little brother twitching.

“Alright, a little more... yes, that’s enough. Breathe a little as we move to the next one.”

He then made her sit on all fours, though embarrassed; Viscount still did as he told.

Smiling, Nux instructed,

“Now arch your back, lift your butt and head and stay in the same position till I say otherwise”

Nux smiled evilly as he placed his hand on her firm but juicy ass, teasing her as much as he wanted.

He felt her body twitching and was sure it was not due to the stretching she was doing.

Felberta felt the familiar tingling sensation inside her little sister. His hand circled around her ass, teasing her little sister from time to time. Her pussy twitched in frustration, the viscount could feel her little sister was missing something.

Something big...

Satisfied after groping her for a while, he instructed,

“Alright, this should be enough, now to the ne-”

“It’s enough, I think my body is fine now...” knowing full well that he only wants to tease her, Felberta interrupted him. Her body was screaming in frustration within just 10 minutes, she didn’t know what would happen if she continued to let him do whatever he wanted.

Nux smiled, thinking that he couldn't tease her more, although it was fun, he still wanted to jump on cloud nine together with her, thinking about it, he smirked as he questioned.

“Are you sure? Because I can definitely feel this part of yours is very stiff”

“AAnh~”

Viscount's body jolted when Nux boldly grabbed her little sister.

“Trust me; I know a very good exercise to heal this stiffness~”

# Chapter 21

“Trust me; I know a very good exercise to heal this stiffness~”

Nux then rubbed his tent on her butt as he whispered seductively,

“Would you like to try it?”

“I’ll give you one chance” Felberta replied with a red face.

She was just too weak against him. Even though she had decided to end this, with just some of his whispers and teasings, she gave in again!

She could not decipher how she ended up like this...

“I promise it would be worth it” Nux smiled before he lowered his pants and his large dick appeared.

He then used his dick to slap the viscount’s firm ass a few times before he removed her already wet panties and started rubbing his dick on her entry.

“Anh~”

This was already too much for Felberta to handle and a moan leaked out of her mouth.

“AAAnnnhh~”

Completely drenching his rod with her love juice, he slammed it right into her insides without any warning, making her moan in pleasure.

After all that teasing she has been through for the past 10 minutes, her body, especially her pussy was already very sensitive to touch. Thus, as soon as he rammed his cock into her, Viscount’s whole body quivered in ecstasy and her arms felt weak.

Since she was still on her fours with her arm weakening like that, she was about to fall but soon, a pair of hands gently grabbed her waist, supporting her from behind.

“I believe that my method is already working, is it not? Lady Fel?”

She then heard a soft voice from behind, the voice so hypnotic that she couldn't help but go with the flow and she nodded in reply.

Nobody could have guessed that the viscount who was so noble and elegant half an hour ago, would be down on all her fours, being drilled by an unknown man, inside the office she works in.

On the other hand, Nux could also feel her insides trying to engulf and merge with his dick. Feeling the squishy insides squirming around his rod, he closed his eyes and moaned inwardly.

‘Uugghhh~’

He was sure that he would need a lot of time before he could get used to this lovely sensation.

Tsk, who was he kidding? He might not be able to get used to this his entire life!

He then bent down as he placed his head on her back, her sweet perfuming assaulted his nostril, inhaling deeply, he gazed at her purple bra before unplugging it with his teeth, freeing her two giant and firm mountains.

He moved his hands from her thin waist to her firm Breasts, kneading them with love and care. He could feel her body twitching every time he rubs the area close to her nipples.

‘Her nipples are sensitive’

He smiled before he gently flicked her nipples and as if confirming his thoughts, her canal narrowed, clenching his dick harder and the viscount moaned out loud.

“Annnhh~”

The pleasure Nux felt soared instantly, he moved his head towards her right shoulder, and he gently kissed her nape before he whispered.

“I’ll start moving now”

Under the intense suction from her womb, he pulled back his dick to the entry slowly, before ramming it back in one thrust.

“AAnnnhh~”

His hands played with her breasts, sometimes flicking her hanging nipples, while he kissed her nape and her cheek gently, and drilled his huge dick inside her roughly.

“AAnngh~”

His different approaches to different parts of her body sent countless jolts of pleasure into The viscount’s body, weakening it even further.

She had long given herself to the pleasure, her whole body was handed to Nux for him to do with it as he sees fit.

He, of course, didn’t disappoint, supporting her body with his arms, he continued drilling his dick into her, making her moan in delight as she asked for more.

“AAnngh~ AAnngh~ AAnngh~”

“Don’t Stop AAnngh~ Continue what AAnngh~ you are AAnngh~ doing AAnngh~”

AAnngh~ This feels so goooood!”

It was already afternoon, the sun was shining strongly; their bodies were already drenched with sweat. The sweat mixed with perfume and love juices forming a weird but pleasant scent that spread in the whole room.

If someone walked into this room right now and sees them, he would instantly compare them with two dogs mating together on the street without caring about anything else.

Viscount Felberta's eyes were opened but there were no eyeballs there, her tongue was hanging outside, she couldn't even speak properly but she was still moaning and asking for more in her whole language. She looked like she had already lost her senses.

Nux wasn't any better either; he kept drilling his huge rod that was drenched with her love juice into her repeatedly, his one hand was holding and squeezing her bare breast, while the other was pinching the other breast's nipple.

His handsome face rested on her upper back as it kisses her back and nape sometimes before he bites his lips, seemingly trying to prevent himself from moaning but was unable to notice that the grunts he released were even worse than her moans.

“I AAnngh~ I am cummingggg~ AAnngh~”

Unable to take the pleasure anymore, Felberta's pussy contracted before a huge amount of love juices come out of her pussy. Spraying all of it on Nux's already drenched dick.

As if finally achieving his goal, Nux's eyes opened wide before he finally let go as he grunted,

“UUggghh~ Fel! I am cumming as weeelll~”

From Lady Fel, to Fel... but nobody noticed...

Fresh milk burst out from his, his body quivering in the pleasure of releasing his jizz after holding it for such a long time. Weird energy entered his body but he was already too tired and fell beside Felberta.

The two stayed like this for quite some time, their bodies twitching in pleasure as they relished the aftertaste of their orgasms without any words.

“Haah... I believe haah... this cured all your stiffness... did it not? Lady Fel?”

“Haah... The stiffness Haah... has spread all over my body Haah... but Haah... but since it felt so good Haah... I’ll forgive you Haah...”

“Many thanks...”

# Chapter 22

After the intense session and a few minutes of rest afterwards, Nux and Felberta finally woke up and came to their senses. Felberta quickly wore her clothes and rushed towards the bathroom while Nux called the maid and told her to clean everything.

However, this time the maid wasn't as expressionless as before, as she had a tinge of red that she desperately tried to hide but couldn't do it.

Nux smiled when he saw her acting like that, this little missy was peeping on them when she heard Viscount Felberta moaning like that. Nux noticed it but didn't say anything because this was essential for the next mission the system gave him.

[Mission: Fuck Skylia Hale]

[Description: Well, Fuck Skylia Hale]

[Reward: 10 System Points.]

[Warning: If the mission fails, the Ability [Craving Touch] will be disabled.]

[Time Limit: 15 days ]

...

[Mission: Fuck Lane Wynee]

[Description: Well, Fuck Lane Wynee]

[Reward: 10 System Points.]

[Warning: If the mission fails, the Ability [Craving Touch] will be disabled.]

[Time Limit: 15 days ]

...

He received these two missions when he saw these two maids in the morning. Not that he needed the system to give him any mission since they were already his targets when he discovered their cultivation level.

He did not know what the System Points were, but he shrugged, thinking there was no harm in getting extra rewards for something you were already going to do.

Skyla quickly left in embarrassment after she cleaned the office, Nux also went to the other bathroom, cleaned up and returned before Felberta.

Felberta then returned, the two had a quick lunch before Joyab entered.

...

Joyab who just entered the office smelled the strange scent before he glanced at Viscount and then looked at Nux.

Felberta blushed a little, while Nux completely ignored his gaze. Shaking his head, Joyab forced himself to focus on the work.

...

After the work was over, Viscount Felberta walked towards her room while Nux followed her from behind, suddenly Felberta questioned without stopping her walk.

“Did you learn anything today?”

“I did, I learned that your nipples are the most sensitive part of your body second only to your pussy. Also, I noticed that slowly pulling back my cock before ramming it deep into your pussy in one go excites you the most”

Felberta paused as she turned around glaring at Nux with a completely red face.

“No matter how much you glare, your face won’t look scary if you are blushing like that. You will only look cuter and cuter.” NUX complimented.

He knew the risk he was taking when he was talking about things like these, but as he had thought before, the risk-reward ratio is favourable for him.

“You... You are really rude!”

“You talk as if you dislike it”

“I do dislike it!”

“You are not very convincing when you are blushing so hard, My beautiful Fel~”

Nux replied with a smile.

“What did you call me?”

Suddenly, Felberta’s gaze narrowed and all the redness that was on her face disappeared.

“My beautiful Fel?”

“You can’t call me that. I have an image, a servant can’t call me as my friends do or it will affect my authority” She corrected in a serious tone.

Nux quickly bowed as he replied in a formal tone, “It was too presumptuous and daring of me to call you like that, Viscount Felberta. I apologize for my mistake and swear that it will not be repeated in the future.”

He did not even call her ‘Lady Fel’ anymore and directly addressed her as other servant does.

Seeing him acting like that, Felberta frowned and felt some sort of weird sensation in her heart. It was as if she lost something she shouldn’t have.

“You don’t have to bow and act all formal like that...”

Without raising his head, Nux replied, “Viscount Felberta, I believe that as a servant I was indeed going a little too far with the way I addressed and talked to you. So I decided to change myself and talk to you like this so that I can become a better servant and someone who doesn’t affect your image”

“I said don’t bow your head.”

“As you say, Viscount Felberta”

He raised his head and looked at her with a serious face. No signs of previous playfulness could be seen on his handsome face, there was just a submissive look that said, ‘I will do whatever you tell me to’

Felberta’s heart ached when she saw his face but it was still better than when he was bowing. She believed that she should take it step by step.

“Good, now stop acting formal”

“Viscount Felberta, forgive me for being ignorant, but I cannot seem to understand how should I act as a servant without being formal”

“Uggh! Just act like how you previously did!” Felberta yelled in frustration.

“I apologize but I cannot do that, Viscount Felberta. I am just a mere servant; it will affect your image if I act like that”

“You don’t have to worry about that! Image is just a stupid concept, we don’t have to restrict ourselves just so we could impress people we don’t even know”

She quickly contradicted herself without a single change in her expression and even made it sound enlightening. Nobles really are thick-skinned.

“But this will still affect your authority, Viscount Felberta.”

“Haah? How can that be? I am still me, Viscount Felberta! If someone has a problem with the way I handle things, they can come and talk to me!” Felberta declared proudly.

“Heh! As expected of my beautiful Fel, I knew you couldn’t bear to see me like this~” Nux’s serious expression crumbled in an instant as he smiled playfully.

“You... You were acting!”

“Huh? Of course, I was. What do you take me for? How can I change my character so quickly?”

“Y-You... Hmph!” speechless, Felberta snorted and turned around.

“Oh c’mon, don’t be angry. How about this, you cheer up and I’ll kiss you?”

Felberta continued walking, treating him like air.

“On the lips” Nux continued.

Suddenly, she stopped and replied.

“Combine it with another night session and we will talk”

# Chapter 23

For the next 5 days, Nux spent most of his time with Fel. They started the morning with a beautiful bath session, at the lunch break, they have office sex, and at the night, they have bedroom sex.

As for his mission with the maids, Nux decided to postpone it for now as he focused on Felberta.

Why? It was because of [Craving Touch].

No, he did not want to increase its effect, it was quite the opposite.

He wanted her body to get used to him, with that, her body would be able to adapt to the craving of the [Craving Touch], he did not want her to just start masturbating like crazy when he was not around. She was a refined and elegant lady, not a horny slut.

No, that did not mean the craving will end. If left unattended, it will be back with the effect 2 times stronger than normal, rendering her unable to do anything.

Of course, Nux would let that happen no matter what.

This was not the only reason, the other one being that he wanted to increase his stats through his hard work, even if it was just a little increase. He knew that once he had sex with the maids, he would jump levels at a tremendous pace, making it a little harder for him to gain some stat points.

Of course, that did not mean that having sex with Felberta had no benefits, he got even closer to her and also, he levelled up to Level 3! He also gained a few stat points from the exercise he did. He also noticed that the exercise became too simple for his current body so he increased the intensity.

From,

100 push-ups

100 sit-ups

100 squats

10 km run

To

300 push-ups

300 sit-ups

300 squats

30 km run

No, his hair did not fall off, that information was wrong. A shocker right? Even Nux was shocked.

Of course, this doesn't mean that he completely ignored the two maids. He teased them whenever he had a chance to, making them comfortable in his presence. This will make it easier for him to complete the mission when he starts it.

The failure of this mission would cost him the best ability he has, Nux wouldn't dare to take it lightly. Although he was confident that he can complete the mission within 5 days, it does not mean that he will only start when there are only 5 days left. That would be just plain stupid.

Accidents can happen.

It would be laughable if he somehow failed this easy mission due to his overconfidence.

[Name: Nux Leander ]

[Age: 18 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Talent: Low]

[LVL: 3]

[HP: 140/140]

[STR: 11]

[AGL: 18]

[VIT: 14]

[STM: 15]

[INT: 11]

[DEF: 10]

[Blank Points: 6]

[Ability: Craving Touch, Eye Of Discerning]

[Harem Members: Felberta Alveye]

...

After he did his last push up, his stats appeared in front of him. Nodding in satisfaction, he turned around and saw Felberta standing there accompanied by her two maids. He smiled as he walked towards them before Felberta sighed,

“I can’t believe you improved so quickly and you haven’t even started cultivating the technique I gave you.

Look, I can notice that you have a talent for cultivation; you can achieve heights unachievable by others. Don't waste it. I can even release you from your duty as my butler; just don't end up like me."

There was a tinge of regret when she said her last sentence.

Nux smiled gently as he patted her head to comfort her.

"Don't worry, I won't slack off but I have a different plan in my mind. Although I will need you to release me as your butler"

"Wha- Why?"

"Oh C'mon now, don't make that face. I will make sure I come when it's a lunch break, I can't miss the chance to taste you, now can I?" Nux chuckled as he fondled her ass.

"Wha- What are you talking about!?" She then glanced at her maids before she blushed, "They are still here"

"Hah! It's not like they don't know what we do. The two of them peek at us all the time! Heck, you can even ask them what's your favourite position and they will tell you in a jiffy."

Hearing him, the two maids blushed as they looked down, avoiding the Viscount's shocked gaze.

"What!? You two peek at us!?" Felberta questioned in shame and anger. She couldn't believe that her two maids would do something like that.

"Now Now, you can't blame them, it is your fault for moaning so loudly, you can't blame them for taking a peek or two."

Felberta glared at Nux as she snorted, "If you weren't that good at sex, I would have killed you for being so annoying!"

"Hahaha~ Alright calm down, anger doesn't suit your beautiful face. Come, let's go to the bathroom, I'll help you relax. Skyla, Lane, prepare the water.

I'll give you another chance to peek at us and see your viscount moaning cutely.”

Felberta blushed in shame but before she could retort, Nux picked her up and walked towards the bathroom. Before going, he did not forget to glance at the two maids and wink at them.

Why?

Just for fun.

The maids also smiled seeing him act like that. Although at first, they were wary of him as he got close to Viscount Felberta abnormally quick but now that they have seen him for a long time, they lowered their guards. Since they were sure that he wasn't going to hurt Viscount Felberta.

Why?

Because he already had many chances to do so and get away successfully.

Also, they lowered the bars for him to get in their good books because he was a little too handsome, but they would never admit it openly.

So forget I said that.

# Chapter 24

After a warm and cosy bathroom session, Nux and Felberta walked out of the bathroom with a smile on their faces.

However soon, Felberta's smile disappeared when she realized that she had to go without Nux today.

“Oh C'mon. Don't make that face my lovely viscount, I promise you that I will come when it's lunch break. Don't you trust me?”

“You promise?”

“You really think I'll let go of the chance of spending time with such a beautiful woman like you? I am sure that no man is willing to do that, if there is, then he is gay”

“Okay, then remember, if you don't come on time, I will declare you a gay”

“ ... ”

Nux used his right to remain silent.

“Hahaha~” Felberta laughed as she walked towards her office.

Seeing her walking figure as her ass jiggled right and left, Nux shook his head, he still couldn't believe that he actually managed to have sex with a beauty like that, and she's a viscount to boot.

...

On the other side, in the bathroom, Skyla was washing Viscount Felberta's clothes when her eyes fell on Felberta's panty, she blushed before she picked them up, she looked around sneakily before she placed it on her nose and inhaled deeply.

She then blushed even more as she muttered.

“Uuuu! Her panty is wet yet again.”

Then Felberta’s ahego face when she was being fucked by Nux appeared in her mind and she blushed again.

“AAhh! this is so indecent, but from the looks on her face, sex feels really good... I wonder if it’s true”

“Hmm? Of course, it is true” Suddenly she heard a familiar voice behind her and she panicked.

She quickly turned around and saw a 1.75 meters tall man with a devilishly handsome face standing behind her. He had a teasing smile on his face as he questioned.

“Little Skyla, what are you doing with Viscount Felberta’s panty I wonder?”

“N-Nothing! A-And how dare you call me Little Skyla, I am older than you! It should be I who should be calling you little Nux!” Skyla retorted as she did a wasteful attempt to hide the panty behind her back.

Skyla was a beautiful fair-skinned woman; she was 1.68 meters tall, with short auburn hair, big green coloured eyes, a cute small nose, and pouty red lips. Her breasts weren’t really big but they weren’t small either. They were what they call, ‘they would perfectly fit in my hands’ type. She had a perky bottom and although she might appear serious, if one gets to know her, she was a clumsy type.

Although she wasn’t as beautiful as Felberta, she was wearing a classic French maid costume so that increased her charm to another level.

“You can call me whatever you like, but first tell me, what were you doing with Fel’s panty?” Nux replied as he walked towards her.

“Wha- What panty are you talking about? I don’t know anything”

Nux chuckled as he held her chin before lifting her face and bringing his face dangerously close to hers.

“Then what are you hiding from me?” He whispered seductively, his lips really really close to hers.

Skyla felt her heart beating quickly, although she was 25 years old, she has never interacted with any man before, let alone someone as charming as Nux. Seeing him standing so close to her, holding her chin like that, how can her maiden heart not beat uncontrollably?

However, she quickly came back to her senses as she cried inwardly.

‘This man is too dangerous, he almost fooled me. I mustn’t let him see the panty!’

Nux’s other hand moved towards her back but before he could get the panty, she shifted her arms a little.

Of course, Nux didn’t care, his target wasn’t the panty, to begin with.

He then grabbed her perky bottom and suddenly, Skyla’s whole body twitched as she perked up and she moved back.

‘Hm? What happened to her?’ Nux thought inwardly before he glanced at her red face and smiled knowingly.

‘It might be easier than I expected’

He didn’t expect to learn about her weak point so randomly.

He slowly walked toward her, the smile on his face didn’t disappear as he questioned.

“C’mon, tell me what you are hiding, I promise I won’t tell anyone.”

“You promise?”

“Don’t you trust me? Do I look like someone who betrays others’ trust?”

Skyla slowly glanced at his handsome face and suddenly she felt guilty that she doubted someone so handsome-looking person like him.

She then slowly moved her hands from her back as she showed Fel's purple panty that was in her hand.

“What were you doing with it?”

“I will not tell you!” Skyla rejected firmly.

“Oh C'mon~ Sister Skyla, aren't you like my big sister? Will you really hide this from your younger brother?” Nux questioned with a sad look on his face.

Skyla wanted to ask when she became his big sister but seeing the sad look on his face, she couldn't bear to.

“O-Okay, I will tell you, b-but you have to promise that you will not tell anybody”

Nux's face brightened as he quickly rushed towards Skyla and hugged her tightly.

“Yay! Sister Skyla, I knew you were the best!”

Skyla was unable to react to his sudden outburst, but since it felt really good, she allowed her 'younger brother' to hug her.

“So, sister Skyla, what were you doing with Viscount Felberta's panty?”

Skyla blushed when she heard her question, but since she already agreed to tell him, she admitted,

“I-I was wondering i-if s-sex felt a-as good as others say...”

“Hmm? Just that? Then why were you so confused and shy about it?”

“Why not confirm it yourself?”

# Chapter 25

Author: same warning, proceed with caution \*skeleton face\*

...

“Why not confirm it yourself?”

“Huh? What?”

“If you are so interested in knowing that, then why not confirm it yourself?” Nux repeated, his face showing utmost confusion as if he couldn’t believe that she hasn’t thought of such a simple solution.

“H-How do I do that?” Skyla questioned in confusion.

“By having sex, of course,” Nux answered as if it was a matter of fact.

“S-Sex? But I don’t know who to ha- have it with...” Skyla muttered shyly, her last part of the sentence barely audible.

“Huh? Don’t you have me? You can do it with me”

“Yo- You? B-but aren’t you doing it with Viscount Felberta?”

“Who says that if I am doing it with Viscount Felberta, I can’t do it with anyone else?”

“Isn’t that wrong?”

“Oh C’mon, there are many noblewomen who share their husband with other women”

“B-But they are nobles... and I am just a servant...”

“Haah? What do you mean? Am I not a servant as well? If noblewomen can share their nobleman partner with other women; then why can’t normal women have the same partner who is also a normal man?”

“T-That makes sense.”

That made no sense at all.

Nux smiled brightly as he replied, “Riigght? We are both servants, so there is nothing wrong with having sex together”

“B-But I don’t know anything about s-s-sex”

“Don’t worry, I know all about it. After all, it is the only thing I am good at~”

Nux whispered into her ears seductively before he grabbed Fel’s panty, and put it aside before picking Skyla into his arms as he walked towards the empty bathtub.

“Huh?” It was only after he placed her inside the bathtub did she finally reacted and questioned in panic,

“Wha- What are you doing?”

“Hmm? Did you not want to try having sex?”

“R-right now!?”

“The earlier the better, isn’t it?”

“B-But I am not ready yet!”

“You don’t have to do anything, just trust your body to me.”

He then smiled gently, and whispered like a demon enticing a person to form a contract with him,

“You trust me, don’t you?”

Skyla felt her heart beating faster and faster the closer he got to her, she blushed deeply before she nodded with a soft “mm”

Nux smiled as he moved forward before planting a soft kiss on her forehead.

“You can’t do it with a tense body like that, let me help you calm you down. Just close your eyes.” He instructed.

Something inside Skyla told her to do what he said and she closed her eyes. With that, her other senses increased, she could feel Nux’s every move even though her eyes were closed.

Then Nux’s lips moved down before he planted the same, gentle kiss on her eyes before moving towards her small nose.

The closer he got to her mouth, the faster her heart started to beat. Her body was trembling in fear and... expectation.

And soon, she felt a pair of soft lips touching her own. Her body shuddered; she even felt that her heart would burst out in that instant.

Their lips parted and a weird sense of loss welled inside her heart.

She then felt his soft lips on her chin, then her neck and then it moved down.

Skyla waited in anticipation, she wanted to open her eyes but her body didn’t listen to her command. Suddenly, she felt the clothes covering her breasts being removed and fresh cool air stroking her bare breasts.

“Your breasts are beautiful, Skyla”

She then heard a gentle voice, hearing him calling her name with such gentleness, Skyla’s little heart bloomed in happiness and a smile appeared in her small mouth.

She then felt a pair of soft lips touching her right nipple before they sucked the whole thing inside and a wet tongue started licking it.

It was as if a jolt of pleasure was released into her body, and her pussy started trembling in excitement as if knowing and fully accepting what was about to come.

Then a hand started kneading her other breast, sending another jolt into her body.

Her body started to get a hang of this foreign feeling but suddenly, another wave of pain and pleasure assaulted her body as she felt her left nipple being pinched by his fingers.

Her back straightened up but before she could think more about this weird painful but pleasurable feeling, she felt his hand sliding down her waist through her clothes before it entered her skirt and suddenly it grabbed her bare butt.

“Anh~”

Her body jolted in pleasure, she wanted to move but suddenly, she felt something biting her right nipple that was in Nux’s mouth.

It was as if he was telling her not to move. Her body followed his command and he continued stroking her butt, His other hand also joined in the fun and they started playing with her ass, moulding it into various shapes, the more he played with her, the stronger the pleasure she felt.

“Anhh~”

She felt her pussy trembling in joy as it released her love juices continuously; she couldn’t believe that her pussy was already this wet before he even touched it.

As if hearing her thoughts, his right hand started moving before it arrived in front of her entrance and directly pushed his middle finger into her.

“Anhh~”

She moaned in pleasure, but before she could get used to it, another finger entered her canal and the two fingers started stroking her inner walls,

making her moan in ecstasy and forcing her pussy to keep releasing her juices to welcome them.

“Anhh~ Anhh~ Anhh~”

She moaned out loud, her body twitching in pleasure. She never felt this good when she did it herself.

Her canals tightened and just as she was about to cum, she felt his fingers stopping, cool air stroking her wet right nipple, his other hand stopped kneading her butt, and she heard a voice,

“Since the side dish is over,

I believe you are ready for the main course now”

# Chapter 26

“I believe you are ready for the main course now”

‘T-This was just s-side dishes!?! How good would the main course be!?’  
Skyla thought inwardly before the images of a huge rod, drilling Viscount Felberta as she screamed in pleasure appeared in her mind.

Her face blushed and her little sister, that was already very sensitive twitched even more.

She finally opened her eyes and saw that Nux was removing her white coloured panty.

She may be clumsy, but she wasn't stupid. She knew that this was her last defence, once he succeeds, there was no turning back.

Her little sister, on the other hand, had no such thoughts. It trembled uncontrollably as if reprimanding her that she was thinking too much.

Her eyes moved up and met Nux's gaze, he smiled gently and suddenly, all the thoughts about her panty being her last defence left her mind.

‘It will happen eventually, why not do it now...’

Confirming her thoughts, she smiled and nodded, ready and anticipating what was about to come.

Nux was taken aback by her smiling like that, his smile widened before he removed her panty and finally saw her clean and beautiful vagina, with an erect, pink clitoris on the top.

He then removed his pant and his huge dick popped out, already excited about the new and untouched cave he going to explore.

When Nux noticed Skyla's eyes widening in surprise, he smirked inwardly.

It boosted his ego. Any man would feel proud if he saw a reaction like that.

He placed his little brother's head in front of the canal, glistening it with her overflowing juice, he pushed it in and then glanced at nervous Skyla.

“Don't be nervous, I am here.”

Skyla nodded, trying to calm her body as well as her excited and nervous heart.

Nux then moved his head closer to hers as he instructed.

“Just focus on me”

He then sealed her lips with his own.

\*Smooch\*

He didn't move his tongue; instead, he started sucking her lower lip.

\*Smooch\*

He then left it alone before started sucking her upper lips, and a few moments later, he started sucking her lower lips again.

Her lips felt soft and tasted sweet, Skyla soon understood the pattern and reciprocated with her sucking.

\*Smooch\* \*Smooch\* \*Smooch\*

The smooching sound echoed throughout the bathroom, when Nux noticed that she was busy sucking his lips, he directly pushed his dick inside her tight canal, breaking her hymen in one go.

“Uunnghh~~”

Skyla bit his lower lip, before he felt her already tight canal tightening even more, her mushy insides squirmed around his body tightly for a few seconds before they finally relaxed and his dick was drenched in love juice.

Nux furrowed his brows, he stopped kissing and distanced his face before he questioned,

“Did you just cum?”

Skyla’s face turned red, her body was already too stimulated by his ‘side dishes’, the kiss she just had also felt very good, her pussy was already twitching in frustration since his dick just stayed there without moving while her lips relished unknown amount of pleasure.

Therefore, just as he slammed his dick into her, rather than the pain she expected, her already sensitive pussy reacted differently and she came.

“mm” Skyla nodded embarrassedly.

“In just one thrust?” Nux was dumbfounded.

“mm” Skyla nodded again, this she could feel smoke rising from her head. She was too embarrassed.

Nux on the other hand couldn’t decide how to react, in the end, he sighed and questioned.

“Do you want to continue?”

If she refused, he would just control himself and leave unsatisfied, it was her first time, he wasn’t going to force her to continue for another round if she wasn’t ready.

“Hm? O-Of course I want to. W-wait, you don’t want to do it with me anymore since I came without telling you? I am sorry, I-I will make sure not to repeat this mistake”

Nux now frowned even more before he recalled that although clumsy, this girl in front of him is still a cultivator. There is no way she’s going to get tired with just one thrust!

He smiled seductively as he replied,

“Of course not! I was just teasing you! Do you think I will let you go now?”

You wanted to know how good sex felt right? I’ll show you!”

Saying that, under the suction of her pussy, he moved his dick back before slamming right into her in one go!

“AAnnggh~” Skyla moaned loudly, her body twitched in pleasure.

“Shh~ You can’t moan loudly like that, here, let me help you”

Nux sealed her lips with hers, this time, he wasn’t as gentle as before and his tongue invaded her mouth as he continued his thrusting.

“Mmmnngghnn~ Mmmnngghnn~ Mmmnngghnn~”

Skyla’s muffled moans were heard inside the bathroom. The pleasure was starting to get over her head as she couldn’t think straight. Her body was already numb with pleasure, Nux tongue dominated hers in the battle easily, while her eyes had already rolled back in delight.

Her body completely submitted to Nux with no resistance whatsoever.

If Skyla could think straight, she would match her current condition with Viscount Felberta and would find many similarities, but of course, those types of thoughts were too high level for her current state of brain to think about.

Her mind had already given itself to pleasure and the only thing she could think of was ways to keep this pleasure going on and on and on.

Nux was also very satisfied as he fucked her silly. Her pussy was very welcoming, her walls squirming around his dick, sending jolts of pleasure into his body.

Suddenly, a thought appeared in his mind as he smiled evilly. His hand moved before grabbing her ass cheeks roughly.

Skyla's body suddenly arched up, he could feel his canal tightening to another level as if wanting to suck him dry.

“Uuuggghhhh~”

Her pussy walls managed to achieve their goal as Nux grunted and his white jizz burst out, filling her insides without stopping.

“Aannnhhhh~ I am cummiiinnnggg~”

Skyla also moaned loudly as her body twitched and she came again.

Nux's tired body fell beside Skyla's, as he was enjoying the aftertaste, an enormous amount of energy gushed into his body and a screen appeared in front of him accompanied by a sound in his mind.

[Ding!]

[Mission Accomplished]

# Chapter 27

[Mission: Fuck Skylia Hale]

[Description: Well, Fuck Skylia Hale]

[Reward: 10 System Points.]

[Warning: If the mission fails, the Ability [Craving Touch] will be disabled.]

[Time Limit: 15 days (10 days left)]

[Mission Status: Completed]

[The reward will be sent to System Inventory]

...

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Talent: Low]

[LVL: 9]

[HP: 260/260]

[STR: 23]

[AGL: 30]

[VIT: 26]

[STM: 27]

[INT: 17]

[DEF: 22]

[Blank Points: 33]

[Ability: Craving Touch, Eye Of Discerning]

[Harem Members: Felberta Alveye, Skyla Hale]

...

After Nux relished the aftertaste of the intense session he just had, he hurriedly glanced at his status and was pleasantly surprised.

He directly jumped from Level 3 to Level 9!

It was a huge gain!

He also noticed that other than his intelligence stat, his other stats were already close to Skyla and Lane and he wasn't even level 20 yet!

'Doesn't that mean that my foundation is peerless?'

He smiled inwardly, he then noticed that his blank points had shot up to a whopping 33!

He can already recover his predecessor's memory!

Just as he thought about it, he threw that thought out of his mind.

'Hmph! He was only a commoner, what could he possibly know? I am gaining levels quickly for now, I don't know how long will this continue. It

is completely illogical to waste my precious blank point on this memory I might have no use for.

If I want to know something, I will directly ask Fel. I refuse to believe that a mere commoner will know something a viscount does not!

I will only accept his memory if I have more than 1000 blank points, that way, I won't feel too bad even if they are wasted a little. Who knows, I might get something out of it'

Nux then clenched his fist, he could already feel a vast amount of strength boiling inside his body. He was very eager to test it out but he soon calmed his emotions and glanced at Skylia who was lying beside her and questioned.

“So? How was it? Was sex as good as you thought it would be?”

“It was a thousand times better~” Skylia answered with a bright smile.

Nux smiled back as he replied, “Alright then, be ready tomorrow, I'll meet you here at the same time, kay?”

“W-We can do it again?” Skylia questioned in surprise, her breathing quickened.

“Huh? Of course, now that we had sex, you are my woman now, why should we not do it again?”

“Your w-woman? But you said that no-” before she could complete, Nux sealed her lips with a short kiss.

“We had sex, so you are my woman now, kay?” he whispered into her ears seductively.

Skylia's face turned red, her body moved on its own as she nodded.

“Good, now be here on time tomorrow, kay? Unless you don't like having sex, of course, I won't force you if that's the case”

“No! N-no, I- I’ll be here on time...” Skylia nodded embarrassedly.

Nux chuckled before planting another kiss on her lips before he questioned,

“Good, now Skylia, can I leave cleaning this up to you? Please?”

“O-Of course, you don’t have to worry, I also have to wash viscount’s clothes so I’ll clean this up as well”

“Thank you~”

“mm”

“Alright, I will be leaving now, kay?”

“mm”

“Okay, love you~”

Saying that, Nux walked out of the bathroom, eager to test his strength, Skylia on the other hand just stood there, her face as red as it could get before she finally muttered in a mosquito voice.

“L-Love you too”

Embarrassed, she covered her face with her hands.

...

Nux quickly rushed into his room, excited by the sudden power-up he gained.

It had been 6 days since he last entered this room since he has been spending his time with Felberta and is often staying in her room. To be honest, this room was only there for show, his actual room was the room where he and Fel lived and fucked together.

Of course, though he didn’t use this room, it did not mean that it wasn’t cleaned by the servants. Nux quickly sat on the bed and sat cross-legged.

He had seen a new term on the system screen and wanted to check them out.

‘System Inventory’

He thought inwardly if it was what he think it is, then it would be very convenient for him. Just thinking about it made him excited but soon, his excitement dwindled as he read the message in front of him.

[System Inventory: Locked]

[This feature is locked; level up to unlock this feature]

‘What!? Then what about my reward for this mission!? Didn’t you say they were sent directly to system inventory? How do I get them?’ Nux questioned but no one replied.

‘At least say something! Hey! Hello!?’

Again, no one replied.

‘What an annoying fucking system!!’

Nux cursed, but he knew he couldn’t do anything about it. He calmed his agitated emotions and closed his eyes.

‘I will level up eventually; I think I will get my rewards then. I should not think too much about all this and should just check my strength.’

He clenched his fist again, feeling the power surging into his body, he looked around to find his target. He glanced at the wall of the room and then glanced at his fist.

‘No no no no no! I am still too agitated, I can’t hit the wall, it will be too painful- er, I mean, it will cause a commotion if the wall breaks’

He hurriedly shook his head, he then glanced at the wooden comb that was placed on the table. He picked it up before putting some pressure.

\*Crack\*

The comb broke into two without any resistance.

‘Am I too strong or is this comb too fragile?’

# Chapter 28

Author: same warning, proceed with caution \*skeleton face\*

...

In the end, Nux gave up on the idea of testing his strength for now. He decided that he will ask Felberta about this. He reckoned that since this is a world based on strength, they might have better ways to test someone's strength.

With that, he lay down and relaxed his body for some time since he was a little tired after having sex twice in a short interval. Not that he was complaining, no man would ever complain about having too much sex if it was with a woman or women of his own choice.

...

After a few hours of rest, he right now was sitting in front of Fel's office waiting for the lunch break.

"Alright, that will be enough for now, we will continue this after the break"

He didn't have to wait for a long time as heard Fel's sweet voice, announcing the start of lunch break.

"As you say, Viscount Felberta"

Moments later, Joyab walked out of the office but when he saw Nux sitting on the floor as if waiting for something, his face twitched.

When he noticed that Nux did not come with Viscount Felberta today, he thought that maybe viscount Felberta have had enough fun and was bored of Nux, but seeing him here, he knew he was wrong.

Of course, he didn't have anything against Nux; he just thinks that it is not good for Viscount Felberta's image to have a boy toy following around her all the time. If they want, they can have all the fun they want in the night, but doing it so openly might affect her influence as a noble.

Neither Nux nor Felberta bothered about his thoughts, seeing him exiting the office, Nux stood up before he entered the office with a smile.

Felberta's eyes brightened when she saw Nux walking inside the office,

“Nux!”

She hurried over and jumped on him in excitement.

“Hahaha~ What are you? A monkey?” Nux laughed as he carried Fel into his arms.

“Haah? Who are you calling a monkey? Do you want to die!?”

“Hoh? How are you going to kill me?”

Fel smiled seductively as whispered into his ear, “I can suck you dry, till you die.”

“Hmm, you know, that's actually not a bad way to die at all. Dying with beauty in hand.” Nux joked.

“Alright, then I'll let you have that honour today”

“Talk after you don't lose your mind with just one thrust.”

Felberta's face turn red as she muttered, “You are really shameless...”

“Hahaha” Nux laughed as he walked towards her chair, he sat down and placed Fel on his lap as he questioned.

“So, Miss dominant one, how would you like to start our afternoon session”

“Hmph! You don’t have to worry about it, since I am one in charge, I’ll do everything”

Viscount snorted, last night, she noticed that every time they have sex, she ends up as a weaker one, the one being drilled while moaning like a whore whereas Nux was always the one who controlled the pace.

She then decided that from now on, she will be the dominant one, controlling the pace while Nux will be at the receiving end.

But the reality is often disappointing...

She tried to take control of the things this morning, but that ended with her being drilled mercilessly.

“Alright, Miss dominant one, I’ll wait patiently to see what you got” Nux smirked provocatively.

“Hmph!” Fel snorted again before she got on her knees, she removed his pants and a semi-hard 6-inch rod popped out.

She grabbed it gently before giving it a few jerks, she then smiled seductively before kissing its head. All the while, she did not break the eye contact between them.

She had already noticed that though he feels good with her breasts as well, a blowjob works wonders if she wants to turn him on.

“Ugh...”

Nux’s body shuddered when he saw her kissing his dick with her red juicy lips like that.

The Viscount continued licking his shaft before slowly sucking his balls, when he saw his dick lying on top of Fel’s face like that, a weird sense of satisfaction washed over him and his semi-hard dick turned hard.

The scene was just too stimulating!

He then saw the viscount smiling at him, she kissed the head again before gobbling up the whole thing in one go.

“Ahh~”

Nux moaned in pleasure as jolts of pleasure assaulted his body. The inside of her mouth felt warm and squishy, the viscount slowly moved her head back and then she started sucking.

“AAangghh~”

The suction force was too much for Nux to bear and he moaned out loud. The viscount’s tongue moved all around his cock as if it was the tastiest thing she ever had.

All this while, Fel never broke the eye contact, she noticed his reaction when her tongue licked different parts of his dick and quickly figured out all his weak points.

She smiled in satisfaction when she saw him moaning like that, she could feel thick veins bulging out of his dick when she licked it. She moved her head back and forth, increasing and decreasing the pace whenever she wanted.

“Ahh~ Fel! It feels too good!” Nux moaned again, his legs quivering in pleasure. He had long since closed his eyes to relish this otherworldly feeling to the greatest extent.

Just as he was about to cum, he felt Felberta slowing her face before she stopped.

He frowned as he opened his eyes and he saw Felberta smirking at him.

“Should I continue?” She asked playfully.

“W-What do you mean should you continue, Of course, you should!”

“Then why aren’t you admitting your wrongdoings and apologizing for teasing me so much?” She smirked.

“My beautiful Fel, I deeply apologize for everything I have done, please be the bigger and kind person you already are and continue what you were doing”

An instant reply!

Fel was taken aback by his sudden reply and was a little disappointed, she wanted to see him struggling a little before saying what she wanted but the instant reply didn't satisfy her.

Still, she smiled and engulfed his whole dick in one go, resuming the blowjob.

# Chapter 29

“Ugghhh! Fel, I am cumming~”

Nux grunted in pleasure, this time, he held her head so she couldn't pull the trick she did earlier. Fel's tongue moved around his dick quickly, waves and waves of pleasure assaulted his body before he finally let go and fresh milk burst out from his dick.

“Mmmnm!”

Felberta's mouth was filled with Nux's jizz, she wanted to move but with Nux's newly gained strength, she couldn't. Her cheeks bloated before she slowly started swallowing his cum.

\*Gulp\* \*Gulp\* \*Gulp\*

“Aanh~ That felt good” Nux moaned in relief after he unloaded all of his cum inside her lovely mouth and finally released her head.

“How could you do this to me, I nearly choked to death!” Felberta complained.

“It's not my fault, you were just too good. Also, we need to keep your office clean, don't we?”

“You!”

“C'mon, at least control your pussy if you are going to act that you are angry. I can smell your juices from here, that's how wet you are right now. Who gets wet when they are angered? You horny woman”

Felberta blushed; she couldn't believe her little sister gave her away, still, now that she had won the first round, she did not want to let him take the lead as she continued.

“Don’t act like you know everything. As I said, just stay put and let me do everything.”

She completely ignored the fact that she was the one who blamed him. Of course, Nux did not mind, he found it rather cute.

Also, it satisfied his ego seeing such a beautiful girl trying to satisfy him with everything she has.

Fel stood up, removed her black panty before she lifted her gown to her waist and sat on Nux’s lap facing him.

She then held his still hard dick as she gave it a few strokes up and down.

“You dare call me horny when you are still hard after coming just a few moments ago?”

“I would doubt my sexuality if I don’t get hard seeing a beautiful girl like you trying so hard to seduce me”

“Hmph! At least you have this much sense” Felberta smiled sweetly before snorting, she then placed his perfectly hard dick in front of her little sister and inserted it in one go.

“Aanh~” She let out a moan of pleasure.

“Uughh~” Nux didn’t have it any better either and he grunted in pleasure.

After having so many rounds of sex with Felberta, her insides have already taken the shape of his dick, it was as if her vagina was specially made for him.

Her squishy insides surrounded every part of his rod, sending him to cloud nine just after entering it.

Suddenly, Felberta hugged him tightly, his face stuck between her two giant but soft mountains that were still covered with her gown.

The sweet scent of her lavender perfume assaulted his nose, Nux even wondered if it was an aphrodisiac because he could feel the sudden urge to just grab her and start pounding her like crazy.

Of course, since he promised to play by her rules, he controlled that urge.

He also wanted to see how far she could go to ‘dominate’ him.

Felberta then lifted her butt before slamming it down again, sending jolts of pleasure inside his body.

He could feel her soft and perky but hitting his thigh, jiggling after the collision.

“Ugghhnhh~~”

“Aanh~”

Felberta also couldn’t resist the pleasure and moaned out loud. Her pussy has already been moulded into the shape of his dick, which means that with just one thrust, Nux can hit all her weak points making her body shudder in pleasure.

The viscount bit her lips and continued moving,

“Ugghhnhh~~”

Nux continued moaning in pleasure, but Felberta had it worse.

The more she moved, the more pleasure assaulted her body and soon, it was clear that her body was too numb and weak to continue.

Nux smiled before he raised his head that was buried in her cleavage and whispered.

“Oh? Tired already? It’s okay, just entrust your body to me like you always do.”

He then grabbed her perky butt, before lifting it up and as soon as he released it, he moved his crotch up as well, his dick exploring the area it couldn't do before when Felberta was 'in charge'.

“AAngnhh~” Felberta shuddered in pleasure as his dick directly entered her womb. She grabbed his head tightly to cope with the pleasure, still trying hard to remain in control.

Nux smiled before he lifted her butt again, thrusting in the same way he did before and sending another wave of unbearable pleasure into her body.

“AAnnghh~ AAnnghh~ AAnnghh~”

\*Phat!\* \*Phat!\* \*Phat!\*

The sound of moans and flesh meeting flesh echoed throughout the office.

Felberta's grip over Nux's head had already loosened, the only reason she was not falling was Nux's hand supporting her back from time to time.

Her body was already numb; again, she completely entrusted her body to Nux to do as he see fit.

Her mission to dominate him and be the one deciding the pace has failed miserably but she didn't care, the pleasure she felt right now marginally surpassed any pleasure she could ever feel after dominating Nux.

Her whole body moved rhythmically with Nux's and her moans. Her ahego face has long appeared.

“Aannnggghhhh~”

Suddenly, she felt Nux biting her nipple through her gown, her body jerked due to sudden stimulation, her canals tightened and a huge amount of love juice was released by her little sister.

She came.

Having his dick showered by her fresh juice, accompanied by her canals tightening around his dick trying to suck it dry, the pleasure he felt rose exponentially and,

“Ugghh! I am cumming again!!”

His milk spread all over her insides.

# Chapter 30

Right after he came, Nux felt an almost negligible amount of energy entering his body, he quickly understood that after levelling up, in the future, the amount of energy he gains from Felberta would not help him with anything.

Of course, that does not mean that he will stop having sex with her. He had other plans in his mind; he then glanced at Felberta, before activating his [Eye Of Discerning].

[Name: Felberta Alveye ]

[Age: 28 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Occupation: Viscount of Skyfall Kingdom]

[Race: Human]

[Talent: Low]

[LVL: 5]

[HP: 120/120]

[STR: 9]

[AGL: 10]

[VIT: 12]

[STM: 10]

[INT: 9]

[DEF: 9]

...

Just as Nux came into her, Felberta felt a huge amount of energy entering her body, normally, she would have ignored it as she was too busy enjoying the aftertaste of their session but this addressed something she was very concerned about right now.

She felt her strength increasing, and it was not by a little. She even felt she was hallucinating since she has been thinking too much about this issue but Nux's words confirmed that she was indeed not hallucinating.

“Do you feel your strength increasing?”

“Hah? Wha- How?”

Nux smiled as he kissed her forehead and explained,

“Do you remember when you told me to cultivate the technique you gave me and I said I have my ways to get stronger?”

“Y-Yes? What about it?”

“Well, this is the way. I have this ability that whenever I have sex with a woman, weird energy is released and is distributed between the couple. Of course, the weaker one gets the most shares. I call this Dual Cultivation”

Fel's eyes opened wide in shock, she couldn't believe that such an absurd ability actually exists.

“T-Then-”

“When we started, I was just a weakling; you on the other hand were stronger than me, that is also the reason how my strength grew so quickly, that is also the reason why you couldn't feel any changes since the energy

you got was too minimal for you to notice while you relish the aftertaste of our session.”

“B-But that still doesn’t describe how you got stronger so qui- wait,” Felberta realized something, her expression turned black as if she was still processing what she learned. She was so shocked by what she learned that she started contradicting her brain, trying to find ways to prove her theory wrong.

However, after thinking for a while, nothing came up and she glanced at Nux with unconcealed anger.

It wasn’t playful anger she always had, she was really angry this time.

“I will not hide it from you, I did have sex with another woman.”

“You! How dare you!? Do you think that just because he got a little stronger, I can’t kill you!? I have countless ways to have you die without even getting my hands dirty!” Felberta roared as she grabbed his collar in anger and hatred.

“...” Nux on the other hand, stayed silent. He knew he was in the wrong, but he also knew that this is his only way to survive and live a good life in this new world.

Not getting any reply from him, the viscount’s anger soared, tears threatened to leak out from her eyes, she then took a deep breath, stood up from his lap and ordered.

“Leave.”

“Fe-”

“I said, Leave.”

Nux nodded before he walked out of the office.

Outside the office, Skyla was there and glanced at him, she looked especially worried and wanted to talk to him but Nux shook his head.

Lane was out for some work today, so no one would be here to tend to Felberta's needs if she left.

...

After Nux left, Felberta wore her panty, fixed her gown before she walked into the bathroom and washed her face.

She then returned to her office and sat on her chair, all this while, there was no expression on her face.

...

An hour later, Joyab arrived. He frowned when he noticed the unusual atmosphere and questioned,

“Viscount Felberta, is something bothering you?”

“No.”

Joyab realized that this no meant yes, he then thought about it and noticed that Nux wasn't here anymore. His eyes suddenly turned cold before he questioned.

“Viscount Felberta, if it is that boy toy who has hurt you in any way, we can get rid of him.”

Viscount frowned when she heard him and muttered, “Boy toy...?”

Joyab furrowed his brows as he asked, “That is what he is, right?”

Suddenly, Felberta thought about something and her brows furrowed even more. Unable to take it anymore, she stood up and announced, “Today's work is over, we will continue what's left tomorrow”

Then without waiting for his answer, she stood up and left the office.

“Where is Nux?” She questioned.

“I believe he is in his room” Skyla replied, there was a tinge of fear in her tone but the viscount failed to notice that.

Felberta nodded as she increased her pace and rushed towards Nux’s room.

...

\*Bam\*

Nux turned towards his door that was slammed open by someone and saw a familiar figure entering before closing the door with another \*Bam\*. He stood up to receive his guest as he heard her question.

“Why did you do it?”

“Do what?”

“Why did you have sex with me instead of just running away after you completed your goal here? You know me, I might send someone to search for you, I wouldn’t have hurt you.”

“And then what would I do later?”

“With your looks, I don’t think you would have difficulties finding and seducing any other woman. You could have kept increasing your strength that way”

“Do you think that I don’t have control over my ability? If I wanted to hide, I would have just disabled the dual cultivation ability and stayed here as if nothing happened; but...”

“But what?”

“But if I did that, then what about you?”

# Chapter 31

“But if I did that, then what about you?”

Nux questioned, of course, his talk about him controlling his ability was all bullshit, he didn't have that level of control yet.

Heck, he didn't even know if he could control it in the future.

“W-What about me?”

“Look, Fel, my goal is a lot bigger than you think. You might be a beautiful woman right now, but in a few years, your age will catch up to you, your body wouldn't be able to handle all the pleasure and we wouldn't be able to have sex as we do now.

You are the first woman I fell in love with, there is no way I would let that happen. You are just a 28-year-old woman right now, 28 can be considered young if you are a cultivator. You might not be able to cultivate now that your 'prime' is over, but that does not mean I cannot help you.

I plan to force you to be with me in all my adventures from now on, and not just for a few years, but for many many years to come ahead”

Felberta's anger soothed a little when she heard that, her age was her biggest worry right now, seeing him thinking about her and also finding ways to help her warmed her heart a little.

Also, the words, 'you are the first woman I fell in love with' filled her heart with an immense sense of satisfaction and delight. She had long since stopped considering him as her boy toy. She felt happy that he felt the same way.

Of course, that doesn't mean she will forgive him so easily, she kept a tough front and questioned.

“Then what would you have done if I had ordered to get you killed in a fit of anger?”

“Hmph! As if you can bear to see me get killed” Nux snorted.

“You! How would you know that!?”

“Isn’t me standing here in front of you enough proof?” Nux smirked arrogantly.

“You!” Felberta wanted to strangle him to death after seeing his arrogant expression.

“Okay, now calm down. How about I apologize with my body instead?” Nux smiled as walked toward her before embracing her lovingly.

“...mm” Felberta nodded weakly.

Nux’s smile widened as he picked her up and placed her on his bed to start another round of lovemaking.

...

“Annggh~ Annggh~ Annggh~”

“AAAnnnngggghh~”

Hearing the loud moaning sound coming out of the room, Skylia couldn’t help but widen her big green eyes.

‘Wasn’t the viscount angry? Why is she moaning like that? What did Nux do?’

...

[Name: Felberta Alveye ]

[Age: 28 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Occupation: Viscount of Skyfall Kingdom]

[Race: Human]

[Talent: Low]

[LVL: 6]

[HP: 130/130]

[STR: 10]

[AGL: 11]

[VIT: 13]

[STM: 11]

[INT: 10]

[DEF: 10]

“My strength increased again”

While being in Nux’s warm embrace, without wearing anything, Felberta muttered, still surprised by how absurd his ability was.

“It did, but not as much as before” Nux nodded.

“How do you know?”

“I can see others’ strength with my eyes,” Nux pointed at his hypnotic golden eyes. Felberta stared at them before noticing some sort of golden patterns moving around as if they were alive.

“I wonder how many more surprises you have for me”

“Oh just wait, your future journey would be nothing sort of fantasy. I promise you”

“Mmhm.” Felberta nodded with a smile.

“Nux...” suddenly, Felberta called out.

“Hmm?”

“Can you tell me who is the other woman y-you spend time with...?”

“Do you promise not to say anything to her?”

“That’s not it, I have already accepted that you will meet and spend time with a lot more amazing women in the future. Many of these women would be even better than me, I-I am just thinking that since I have the advantage of meeting you the earliest, I would create a faction under me to increase my influence over you”

“Hahahaha~ I can’t believe you thought this far ahead. You really are a viscount, aren’t you? Hahaha~” Hearing her words, Nux laughed out loud. The more he laughed, the redder Felberta’s face got as she pinched his waist in anger.

“Ouchh! I give up! I give up! Don’t do that anymore!” Nux cried in pain. Of course, with his defence right now, it didn’t hurt him that much but it was still fun to see her reactions. Moments later, Nux turned serious as replied,

“Fel, remember it, no matter how many women I meet, no matter how amazing they are. You, as my first love will always have a special place in my heart. I will always love you, kay?”

Felberta’s heartbeat quickened, her face turned redder every second and she replied in a voice as low as a mosquito,

“I will always love you as well...”

Seeing her acting like that, Nux tightened his embrace around her. His hand played with her soft breasts while his limp rod stood up again.

Sensing a hard and very familiar thing poking her ass, Felberta's face reddened even more before she threw away her bashfulness and returned to her previous viscount mode.

“Tsk Tsk, you got hard again, what kind of horny animal are you?”

“Hmph! You don't sound very convincing when your ass is moving like it is trying to get my rod closer to your canal”

“In your dreams! I would neve- Annh~”

Felberta wanted to retort but just as Nux placed his dick right in front of her entrance, she moaned.

“Tsk Tsk and you had the galls to call me a horny animal”

Nux snorted before he drilled his rod right into her canal.

“AAAnnnngggghh~”

# Chapter 32

[Congratulations to the host for rising to a Beginner Stage Mana Cultivator from a Mortal Stage Mana Cultivator.]

[INT: +5]

[Blank Points: +10]

[Congratulations to the host for rising to a Beginner Stage Body Cultivator from a Mortal Stage Body Cultivator.]

[STR: +3]

[AGL: +3]

[VIT: +3]

[STM: +3]

[DEF: +3]

[Blank Points: +5]

[System Shop: Unlocked]

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: Beginner.]

[Body Cultivation: Beginner. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Talent: Low]

[LVL: 9 -> 13]

[HP: 370/370]

[MP: 170/170]

[STR: 23 -> 34]

[AGL: 30 ->41]

[VIT: 26 ->37]

[STM: 27 -> 38]

[INT: 17 -> 26]

[DEF: 22 -> 33]

[Blank Points: 33 -> 60]

[Ability: Craving Touch, Eye Of Discerning]

[Harem Members: Felberta Alveye, Skyla Hale]

...

Countless messages appeared in front of Nux as he released his jizz inside Skyla. A large amount of energy that gushed into his body felt great. He slowly removed his dick from her body as he smiled,

“It felt really good”

“It felt g-good for me as well” Skyla muttered shyly.

Nux kissed her forehead before he hugged her from behind as the two stayed in the same position for a while.

Since lane was back today, they couldn't have sex in the bathroom, therefore, Nux sneakily brought her to his room after Skyla asked Lane to

do her part of work as well for a while.

Though confused, Lane nodded in agreement and Skyla quickly sneaked away with Nux without letting anyone know about this, not even Lane.

Skyla enjoyed his embrace as she snuggled even closer to his body, which has now gained some muscles, making him manlier than before.

...

After a few hours, outside Felberta's office, Joyab's mouth was twitching uncontrollably after he saw Nux entering viscount Felberta's office with a smile on his face.

Nobody will know how he will react if he was told that his words were the ones responsible for their relationship getting back on track and getting even stronger than before.

However, Nux wasn't here to have sex with Felberta like before, today, they were on a mission.

Nux and Fel smiled when they glanced at each other as Nux remembered the time after they had sex last night.

"Nux"

"Yeah?"

"You still haven't told me who the other woman is yet"

"It's Skyla."

"It's her! But how did you know that she was a cul- oh, your eyes..."

"Mmhm."

"Then what about Lane, what do you plan to do with her?"

“Of course, I plan to have sex with her as well, but I still can’t think how” Nux replied honestly. He might’ve ignored her since she and Skyla had around the same level of strength, but he had that mission with the penalty of him being stripped of his [Craving Touch].

He can’t afford that.

“Hmm, but tricking Lane won’t be as simple as it was with Skyla.”

“Huh? Why do you sound like I always trick women to get under their skirts?”

“Huh? Isn’t that what you do?” Felberta did not waste the chance to retort to him.

“...” Nux thought about it a little and decided to remain silent. He knew himself well, heck! He even tricked this woman in front of him. How can he retort back?

“Hmph!” Felberta snorted before she continued, “As I was saying, Lane isn’t that easy to deal with, Skyla is a little clumsy so it was easy to trick her but Lane is too serious about her work. She would shun you away before you could even touch her”

“Hmm, this will be a little trickier then” Nux muttered.

“I can help you if you do what I told you to do for the rest of the night. What do you think?” Felberta offered.

“You’ll help me? Aren’t you against me spending time with other women?” Nux questioned in surprise.

“I am, but I also know that with a weird ability like that, it will benefit you greatly. Also, Skyla and Lane are different, I know them already so I can bring them to my faction.”

“Hahaha! I can’t believe you are still thinking about it~”

“You don’t have to worry about that, just tell me, do you accept or not!?”  
Fel snapped.

“I will be under your care for the night then, master~”

Felberta smiled seductively before she brought her hand in front of his mouth and just like an obedient servant, he gently kissed her hand, showing his submission.

...

“Skyla! Lane!” Felberta called out.

Moments later, two beautiful women wearing French maid uniforms entered the office.

“Lane, I want you to go out and buy grains and some spices for this month.”

“Viscount Felberta, I have already bought everything for this month when I left yesterday”

“O-Oh is that so, good, you are as efficient as ever. Oh right! I think it’s time we buy a new set of utensils, don’t you think? Lane, I’ll leave it to you. Go and buy some new set of utensils, I want to see them by today evening.”

“As you command, Viscount Felberta” Lane bowed though she thought that the Viscount was acting weird, she did not think too much about it and nodded.

“Oh right, Fel, you see, I have gained some muscles after exercising for so long, don’t you think I should buy some new clothes for myself? Should I go with Sister Lane, I can also protect her if someone dares to bully her, what do you think?”

“Hmm. Okay, you do that. Lane, I will leave him in your care. Okay?”

“Haah? Why would you leave me in her care, you think I am a child? Sister Lane should be left in my care” Nux complained.

Of course, Fel completely ignored his words like they were nothing.

Skyla and Lane smiled when they saw them acting like that.

“Alright, Sister Lane, let’s go. Don’t worry, I’ll protect you”

Nux grabbed her hand naturally before the two left the office.

Felberta then glanced at Skyla, being stared at her like that, Skyla panicked before she questioned,

“V-Viscount F-Felberta, is there anything I can help you with?”

“You still dare to act ignorant after stealing my Man like that? Hah?”

# Chapter 33

“You still dare to act ignorant after stealing my Man like that? Hah?”

Felberta snapped.

Skyla’s face turned pale when she heard that, she then quickly bowed and apologized,

“I-I am very sorry, Viscount Felberta, I-I was the one who s-seduced him, it was not Nux’s fault. If you are angry, then p-please punish me!”

“Pfft” Seeing her acting like that, Felberta couldn’t help but laugh out loud. She just wanted to tease her a little; she didn’t expect her to react so strongly.

Skyla on the other hand got even more confused when she saw her laughing like that.

“Don’t worry, I won’t punish you. It’s not your fault, that Nux is a scoundrel. Once he lays his trap, no one can escape it”

“That’s not it! I am really telling the truth, I was the one who seduced him. It was not his fault”

Felberta was dumbfounded when she saw her acting like that. She felt like she was a tyrant of a love story of a couple and is forcing them apart.

“I said I am not angry, not at you, neither at Nux. So don’t worry” Felberta clarified.

“Wha- what?” Skyla stuttered. She was already panicking when she learned that the Viscount learned about her and Nux. Although she wondered how she learned about it, she did not have the time to think about it.

She only wanted to protect Nux by taking the blame on herself. She knew that if she wasn't curious about sex, Nux wouldn't have shown her.

Not only that, she then even got addicted to how good it felt and they both continued doing it...

It was all her fault...

She did not want Nux to suffer because of her but when she heard that the viscount wasn't angry at them even though she knew what they did, she could not believe it.

"Yes, so don't worry about unnecessary things since we don't have time for that. Come here, I need your help with something"

"As you say, Viscount Felberta" Seeing Felberta confirming her words, Skyla smiled brightly as she quickly walked towards her.

Felberta wanted to change the way she called her since they were both the woman of the same man, but deciding that it was Nux's headache, she did not bother with it.

"Do you know why I sent Lane and Nux together?" Felberta questioned directly.

"What? Wait... Viscount Felberta, you don't mean..."

"Yes, it is exactly as you think it is. I want Lane and Nux to be together and for that, I need your help. Okay?"

As Felberta confirmed her doubts, Skyla couldn't help but get even more confused, she clearly remembers how mad she was when she learned that Nux had sex with another woman yesterday, but today, not only she's not mad anymore, she is even helping him get another woman!

What kind of magic did Nux do on her? Was she really the Viscount Felberta she knew?

“What are you thinking about? Do you agree or not?” While she was still wondering about it, she heard Viscount Felberta’s question and quickly nodded.

“Good, now remember, when Lane comes back...”

...

On the other side, Lane was being dragged by Nux as he held her hand tightly.

“Sister Lane, don’t leave my hand till I say, okay? I can only protect you if you stay with me.”

Although she was stronger than Nux, or she believed, Lane nodded lightly. She did not dislike this foreign feeling that arose in her heart.

Sister Lane, or Lane Wyne, was a beautiful and serious woman. She had dark brown colour hair and eyes, she had a well-carved face, with sharp brows, a thin nose and soft pink lips. Nux’s favourite part about her was her big but firm breasts which were even larger than Fel’s. Her body curves were wonderful, coupled with her maid uniform; she was an ideal dream maid girl in any teen’s fantasy.

“Why didn’t you and Viscount Felberta hav- err I mean, stay together today like you two always do?”

“Hmm? What do you mean?”

“I m-meant that why did you and Viscount Felberta not have your a-afternoon s-session like you always do?”

“Hahaha~”

“Why are you laughing!?” Lane glared at Nux.

“Sorry~ I just find it funny how you are so ashamed of saying the word ‘sex’ Hahaha~”

“T-That’s not it! That’s not it at all!” Lane quickly retorted.

“Oh? What it is then?”

“Y-You are too young to understand that so there is no point explaining”

“Hahaha~ Look how flustered you are. Sister Lane, although you are older than me, you are still too immature. Even Sister Skyla is more mature than you”

“Huh? Skyla? What do you mean?” Lane frowned.

“Nothing~” Nux snickered inwardly.

...

After a long walk, the two finally entered the market. Nux also understood why Fel said that she was not easy to deal with.

During the whole journey, she didn’t utter a single word. Of course, Nux also did not allow her to free her hand. The two walked hand in hand without saying any word.

Nux sighed, he realized that if he did not initiate the conversation, she would not speak at all.

“Sister Lane, why do you work as a maid?” He questioned whatever came to his mind.

“Hm? What kind of question is that?”

“I mean, why do you work as a maid for Viscount Felberta? Why not other nobles? Is there any reason for it?”

“Viscount Felberta’s father picked me and Skyla up from an orphanage, not only did he provide us with a decent place to live and food, he even gave us cultivation techniques to cultivate. We are both indebted to him for changing our lives and decided to work as his daughter’s maids.”

“Hmm? You are Sister Skyla are orphans? Then you two must be really close, huh?”

“We are.” A small smile appeared on her face when she talked about her,  
“Skyla is the only person I am close to”

“Sister Lane, would you mind if I ask a personnel question?”

“You can ask, whether I will answer or not depends on the question”

“Sister Lane, do you have someone you love?”

“L-Love?”

# Chapter 34

“L-Love?”

“Mmhm, do you have someone who makes your heart race just with a mere mention of his name?”

“Huh? Of- Of course not! A maid doesn’t need love”

“Haah? What kind of logic is that? Who said that? Who doesn’t need love?”

“Why would anyone even need love? Won’t that just waste their time?”

“Then do you plan to be a maid even after you get old? Don’t you wish to have anyone who is there with you at all times? Anyone, who you can share your joy and sadness with?”

“Don’t I have Skylia for that? She is there for me whenever I need her, and I can share anything I want with her” Lane countered.

“But you can’t have sex with Sister Skylia now, can you?” Nux snickered.

“Wha- What?”

“Err, I mean, then what if Sister Skylia found someone she loves? She definitely won’t have much time for you if that happened, will she?”

“Huh? Skylia finding someone she loves?” Lane frowned.

“Of course, you can’t be thinking of forcing Sister Skylia to live your way, are you? Finding someone you love is natural, even if you force yourself not to, it doesn’t mean Sister Skylia won’t. What will you do after Sister Skylia isn’t there for you anymore?” Nux questioned.

“That would never happen! Skylia would never do that!” Lane retorted.

“Who knows? Nobody knows what the future holds. What if Sister Skyla found someone she loves? Would you want her to force her heart and continue living the boring life you two are living right now?”

Isn't that a very lonely way to live?”

Nux's words had a huge impact on Lane. She looked back and noticed that their life was true as Nux said, boring.

Since they both cultivate, they are different from other servants and are treated differently, this caused other servants to avoid them.

Of course, it did not matter to Lane because that was how they were used to live to begin with.

As long as they were together, everything was fine.

But that's where another problem came in. The two of them had the same job in the same place, no matter how close they were, they didn't have any topic to talk about. The two of them just eat and sleep together without having anything to talk about.

She has seen other servants talking with each other about their respective spouses, some complained, some bragged, but in the end, they still had something to share but she and Skyla did not.

When she imagined them living like that for the rest of their lives, Lane shuddered.

But when she imagined Skyla finding someone she loves and leaving her behind, Lane shuddered even more!

‘I-I have to talk about this with Skyla’ she thought inwardly.

Just as she was about to contemplate even more, she felt Nux pulling her somewhere. She then glanced at his face and seeing the excited look on his face, she smiled unconsciously.

“Sister Lane, look! A gift shop!” Nux exclaimed, his eyes gleaming in excitement.

He then picked up 3 simple looking black coloured bangles and bought them.

“Why did you buy this?”

“This one for Viscount Felberta, this one for Sister Skyla, and this,”

She saw him smiling before she felt something on her hand, she looked down and saw a black bangle on her wrist.

“And this is for you. This is also my way of saying that I will be there for you. If you ever feel lonely, you can come to me.”

Lane felt her heart racing like never before as a warm feeling filled her heart but the feeling soon disappeared when she heard his next words.

“We can also have sex if you want”

“You!” Lane glared at him angrily.

“Hahaha~ I am joking, I am joking! Even though I am actually not~”

“You are really shameless!”

“C’mon, you need to have some sort of fun in life, don’t you? Or else you would die of boredom!”

“Hmph!”

Lane snorted outwardly but inside, she had a little smile on her face as she glanced at the bangle in her hand.

The two bought everything Felberta said, Nux let her choose clothes for him and Lane did it excitedly.

Of course, Nux did not forget to tease with every chance he gets and their shopping trip that continued throughout the afternoon ended.

...

[Name: Felberta Alveye ]

[Age: 28 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Occupation: Viscount of Skyfall Kingdom]

[Race: Human]

[Talent: Low]

[LVL: 8]

[HP: 150/150]

[STR: 12]

[AGL: 13]

[VIT: 15]

[STM: 13]

[INT: 12]

[DEF: 12]

...

“My strength increased again” After their night session, Felberta muttered as she clenched her fist.

“Mmhm, a few more sessions before you will finally step into Beginner Mana Cultivation Stage.”

Felberta nodded with a smile, she couldn't believe the problem she thought so deeply and gave up was will be solved so easily and... the process will be so pleasurable.

“Did you succeed in the mission today?” She suddenly questioned.

“Are you doubting my skills? The two of them should be talking about it right now!” Nux affirmed.

“Yeah yeah, how can you fail when it comes to seducing an innocent woman? I myself am a victim.”

“You are really thick-skinned enough to say that when you are grabbing my little brother in your hands, huh...”

...

Nux was right, just as Skyla and Lane were done with the work and returned to their room, Lane questioned.

“Skyla, do you have someone you love?”

“Wha- What?”

“Do you have someone you love, someone whose mere mention of his name fills your heart with joy?”

Suddenly, Skyla blushed.

Lane's eyes widened in surprise as she questioned,

“Do you have one?”

Skyla nodded embarrassedly.

“S-Sister Lane, w-why are you asking about it?”

“Who is it?” Lane questioned without answering her question.

Skyla slowly glanced at the black coloured bangle she was wearing. Matching her gaze, she glanced at the bangle on Skyla’s hand and her eyes widened.

“Is it Nux!?”

# Chapter 35

“Is it Nux!?”

Skyla slowly nodded her head without raising it; she was too embarrassed to face her.

“Skyla! You mustn’t!” Suddenly, Lane shouted as she grabbed Skyla’s shoulders.

“Skyla, I know Nux is extremely good looking and...” She blushed midsentence as she glanced at her bangle, “...and very caring as well. Although he acts like a pervert sometimes, that also has its charm. He might as well be the most perfect person you could have as your partner...”

Nobody knew if she was convincing Skyla, or just confirming her own thoughts as she continued, “...but you mustn’t fell in love with him! He belongs to Viscount Felberta”

“Bu-”

“No buts, remember, he belongs to Viscount Felberta. I know it will break your heart, you must have already fallen in love with him by now and must be continuously thinking about him while you work, but you mustn’t make a move on him or it will hurt Viscount Felberta.

I’ll give you a tip, remember all the things Sir Alveye has done for us, he is the reason why we have a roof on our heads and good food to eat every day. With how much he has done for us, how can we hurt his beloved daughter like that? No, we are not that selfish! Do you understand?”

Nobody knew where the ‘we’ come from.

“But Sister Lane, Viscount Felberta has already agreed!”

“Good, I knew you wo- What!?”

“Yes, Viscount Felberta already knows about our relationship and has given her approval!”

“A-Are you sure?”

“Of course, why would I ever lie to you?”

Lane was so shocked by her words that her mouth opened wide.

“N-not only that, but I... I already belong to Nux” Skyla dropped another bomb.

“W-What do you mean?”

“M-My body a-already belongs to him now...” Skyla answered with her face so red that she looked like a tomato.

“Oh my lord! How? When?” Lane shouted in shock as she questioned.

“Y-Yesterday was the first time and today morning w-was the second...” Skyla replied shyly.

“You did it twice!?” Lane screamed in surprise, somewhere in her heart, a sense of disapproval and dissatisfaction welled in.

She wanted to be happy for her sister but she couldn't... instead, she was jealous of her. She wanted to throw this feeling away, but she couldn't.

“S-Sister Lane, w-why don't you consider Nux as your partner as well?” Skyla dropped another bomb as she questioned.

“Huh? No, of course not! I would dare not go after your man. We are sisters after all” Lane placed a huge stone on her heart as she replied.

“No, it will not hurt me... On the contrary, it will make me feel good. Sister Lane, you see, I have spent my whole life with you.

From what I know, Nux will leave this mansion sooner or later and I would have to choose between you and him, which will put too much pressure on

my heart.

Both of you are irreplaceable parts of my life; please don't make me choose one of you.

Sister Lane, just imagine, we two sisters having the same man, we can live together forever along with the man we love! Won't that be so amazing!?" Skylia suggested, her eyes glimmering with hope.

'And this is for you. This is also my way of saying that I will be there for you. If you ever feel lonely, you can come to me.'

Suddenly, Nux's words echoed inside her mind and Lane blushed. She considered Skylia's suggestion and couldn't help but think that it was too attractive.

"Sister Lane, tomorrow morning, I will be going to Nux's room, why don't you come with me?" Skylia questioned.

Suddenly, Lane glanced at Skylia as she questioned seriously, "You will have sex with tomorrow as well?"

"Of course, we w-will have s-sex e-everyday"

A sudden emotion welled inside Lane's heart.

'I mustn't miss out! I have already lost too much!'

"Okay, I'll go with you!" Lane decided.

"Yay! Sister Lane, you are the best!" Skylia jumped in joy as she hugged her tightly.

'I am not the best, my little Skylia, I am just a selfish person... ' Lane muttered inwardly, clearly disgusted by herself.

...

The next morning, after sending Felberta off to her office, Nux returned to his room, waiting for someone, or some people.

He didn't have to wait for too long as the door opened and Skyla walked in.

“Oh! Skyla! You are he- Hmm? Sister Lane? What are you doing here?” Nux questioned in surprise.

Hearing his question, Lane blushed before she pinched Skyla's waist, signalling her to explain it to him.

“AAhh! N-Nux, I had a request” after screaming in pain, Skyla started.

“You can ask me anything, love,” Nux replied gently.

Skyla and Lena blushed a little before Skyla continued,

“Nux, you see, Sister Lane and I have always been together. When I was thinking about it, I couldn't seem to choose between you two. S-So that's why; I want you to accept S-Sister Lane together with me.”

“So in other words, you want me to have sex with both of you at the same time?”

Before Skyla could even answer, Lane nodded readily.

“I am very excited and happy about this offer, but I am sorry, I can't do that” Nux directly shook his head.

Skyla opened her eyes wide in shock.

Lane however had it worse, her heart plunged into despair. She thought that everything Nux said to her yesterday was fake and her whole world crumbled, tears welled up inside her eyes but just before they could fall, Nux's next words pulled her from despair and brought her to heaven.

“This should be Sister Lane's first time right? A woman's first time is very precious. I have to give her special attention. Skyla, my love, would you

mind leaving the room for a while? You can come back in an hour and I promise I will make up to you”

# Chapter 36

“This should be Sister Lane’s first time right? A woman’s first time is very precious. I have to give her special attention. Skyla, my love, would you mind leaving the room for a while? You can come back in an hour and I promise I will make up to you”

“Okay!” Skyla sighed in relief before she nodded readily and left the room.

After Skyla left, Lane’s heart started beating faster. She was now alone with Nux inside his room. She felt a sudden need to say something and opened her mouth.

“I... I d-don’t know anything about s-sex...”

“Oh! So you can indeed say the word sex” Nux nodded in realization.

Lane’s face blushed in embarrassment, she then saw Nux walking towards him. The closer he came, the faster her heartbeat rose.

“You don’t have to worry, just leave your body to me, okay?”

She heard Nux’s gentle voice and nodded. She felt Nux’s hand on her butt before he carried her in his arms and placed her on the bed.

‘It’s really going to happen!’ Lane thought inwardly.

Suddenly, she felt something soft on her lips. She glanced below and saw Nux’s lips touching her. She moved her lips a little forward, feeling his lips even more.

She then felt his right hand moving down before directly entering her skirt before reaching her sacred place.

The closer it got, the stiffer her body got. She then heard a calming voice that seemed to ease all her insecurities.

“You do not have to be so tense. Just relax, kay?”

Lane nodded as she took a deep breath and calmed her body.

She soon felt his fingers moving her forbidden area sensually, her body trembled and she could feel her juices building inside her.

Then suddenly, a long finger entered her canal sending a jolt of pleasure into her body.

“Mnhff!!”

She wanted to moan but at the same time, a wet something entered her mouth and started fighting her tongue for dominance. Since she was already facing so many attacks at the same time; her tongue lost without much of a fight.

Soon, another finger entered her cave.

“Mmhggnh~” Again, she wanted to moan but her mouth was already dominated by his, so only a muffled moan was released.

The two fingers started exploring her cave. The pleasure she felt already surpassed the pleasure she even thought was humanly possible to feel.

Unable to moan, her body found another way to show how good it felt, her back arched up and her eyes rolled up.

“AAnnggh~ It feels so good~~”

As if understanding her plight, he freed her already defeated mouth, allowing her to moan to her heart content.

Soon, she felt her giant mountains getting freed. She felt an otherworldly wave of pleasure assaulting her body as soon as his wet tongue then started licking her already erect nipple. Her canals tightened and she moaned even more!

“AANnggh~”

She felt his tongue stopping for a second before it continued to assault her nipple, sending waves of pleasure all over her body.

It didn't a long time before her body finally gave up, her canal tightened more than ever and she screamed,

“I am cummmiinnnnggg~~~”

\*Spurt\*

She came, drenching his hand with her cum.

Moments later, her arched back fell, her eyes balls that weren't visible returned, and her large breast moved up and down as she started breathing heavily.

“Haah... Haah... Haah...”

Just as she thought that pleasure couldn't get any better; she felt something that was not his hand or fingers touching her canal.

She slowly opened her tired eyes and saw a huge dick, which she has seen being drilled into Viscount Felberta's pussy, standing proudly in front of her entrance.

“Alright, next jump to the next stage” She heard a voice but before she could reply, his little brother's head already entered her little sister and she moaned.

“Anh~”

“It might hurt a little, be brave, kay?”

Lane's mind wasn't really clear, her body just knew that had to nod at whatever this man said, and it did that.

Lane was then jolted awake by the sudden pain she felt, but before she could even register it, another wave of pleasure entered her body through her breast, more specifically her nipple.

She glanced down and saw Nux biting her nipple, sending shivers to her body.

“AAhnnnnhh~~”

With this weird combination of pleasure and pain she was feeling, Lane moaned weirdly but soon, the pleasure overwhelmed her pain as she could feel her nipple being sucked on by Nux while being licked by his tongue inside his mouth.

“AANnggh~~”

Her body quivered in pleasure as her pussy released her love juice uncontrollably; her tight cave loosened a little, allowing his dick to move.

Soon, she felt the dick that has invaded her pussy moving, after a few little back and forward moves, his rod moved back, nearing the entrance before directly drilling into her deepest parts.

“AAhnnnnhh~~”

She could feel him repeating the same move, drilling it even deeper this time.

“AAhnnnnhh~~”

The process started getting smoother as Nux increased his pace while exploring deeper and deeper.

“Annggh~ Annggh~ Annggh~”

Lane continued to moan in delight, the pain she felt was long since overwhelmed by the huge amount of mind-numbing pleasure that assaulted her body. Her back arched up again, eyes rolled back and she continued to moan while being drilled by his rod mercilessly.

“Annggh~ It Annggh~ feels so Annggh~ gooooodddd~~ Annggh~ Annggh~”

“UUgghh~”

Nux was also trying his best to not moan in pleasure, her pussy was unusually tight, and his both hands played with her plump and large breasts, while he drilled deeper and deeper.

He could then feel his dick twitching, knowing that he was about to cum, he pinched and pulled her nipples,

“Annggggghhhh~ Am cumminggg agaiinnnn~”

She moaned loudly, her pussy walls tightened to a ridiculous degree and her love juice drenched his dick. Not able to take the pleasure anymore Nux grunted and his milk burst out.

“Uugghhh~~”

[Ding!]

[Mission Accomplished]

# Chapter 37

Just as he painted her walls white, a huge amount of energy entered his body, revitalizing his body.

A screen appeared in front of him, announcing the mission being accomplished.

[Mission: Fuck Lane Wyne]

[Description: Well, Fuck Lane Wyne]

[Reward: 10 System Points.]

[Warning: If the mission fails, the Ability [Craving Touch] will be disabled.]

[Time Limit: 15 days (8 days left)]

[Mission Status: Completed]

[The reward will be sent to System Inventory]

...

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: Beginner.]

[Body Cultivation: Beginner.]

[Race: Human ]

[Talent: Low]

[LVL: 17]

[HP: 370/370]

[MP: 250/250]

[STR: 42]

[AGL: 49]

[VIT: 45]

[STM: 46]

[INT: 29]

[DEF: 41]

[Blank Points: 72]

[Ability: Craving Touch, Eye Of Discerning]

[Harem Members: Felberta Alveye, Skyla Hale, Lane Wyne]

...

Since Lane was still tired, he did not force her to go for the second round. There was still some time before Skyla returned, Nux sat cross-legged before he looked at another feature he got a day ago.

[System Shop]

[Cultivation Techniques]

[1 Star Cultivation Techniques – 100 System points]

[2 Star Cultivation Techniques – 200 System points]

[3 Star Cultivation Techniques – 500 System points]

[4 Star Cultivation Techniques – 1000 System points]

[5 Star Cultivation Techniques – 2000 System points]

[6 Star Cultivation Techniques – 5000 System points]

[7 Star Cultivation Techniques – 10000 System points]

There were still more, but Nux quickly decided to ignore them and moved to the next columns.

[Skill Books]

[1 Star Skill Books – 10 System points]

[2 Star Skill Books – 20 System points]

[3 Star Skill Books – 50 System points]

[4 Star Skill Books – 100 System points]

[5 Star Skill Books – 200 System points]

[6 Star Skill Books – 500 System points]

[7 Star Skill Books – 1000 System points]

[Weapons]

[1 Star Weapons – 10 System points]

[2 Star Weapons – 20 System points]

[3 Star Weapons – 50 System points]

[4 Star Weapons – 100 System points]

[5 Star Weapons – 200 System points]

[6 Star Weapons – 500 System points]

[7 Star Weapons – 1000 System points]

[Abilities]

[1 Star Abilities – 100 System points]

[2 Star Abilities – 200 System points]

[3 Star Abilities – 500 System points]

[4 Star Abilities – 1000 System points]

[5 Star Abilities – 2000 System points]

[6 Star Abilities – 5000 System points]

[7 Star Abilities – 10000 System points]

[Current System Points: 20]

Nux could see a few other sections but they were locked and he couldn't even read what they were so he decided to ignore them as well.

'Ahh... so this is where I can use my system points...' Nux realized but when he saw the price, he quickly backed off.

He didn't even have enough money for a 1-star cultivation technique or ability.

Not that he needed a cultivation technique since he already had this cheat but damn, it was expensive.

The skill books and Weapons aren't any better either; he would have nothing left if he bought two 1 star skills or weapons. Nux then shook his head and decided that he would just talk to Felberta and get whatever skills and weapons she had.

That way, he would be able to save some System Points and buy something good later.

Of course, that did not stop him from reading about some skills books and abilities, thinking of different ways to use them.

He learned that these 'skill books' were like spells a magician has, while these 'abilities' are more like innate power or something like his [Craving Touch] and [Eye Of Discerning].

Of course, his two abilities were very high levelled; at least he didn't find something of similar use in the 1, 2, or 3-star abilities section. He didn't dare venture deeper as 1000 System points were still a pipe dream for him.

Time passed, and soon, Skylia entered the room with a big smile on her face.

"Sister Lane is sleeping, huh? I guess she was too tired just after one session" She muttered.

"Heh, it is not like you are anything better. You always pass out after I cum inside you" Nux teased.

"I-I was inexperienced back then... I can guarantee I have improved now"

"Hmm? What back then are you talking about? Didn't you pass out just yesterday?"

"Yesterday was yesterday, today is different"

"Heh~ we'll see about that"

Skylia blushed a little before she walked towards the bed before she fell on top of Nux. Nux then quickly turned around, lying on top of Skylia.

Without wasting any time, his hand moved towards her pussy and when he touched her entrance, he noticed that she was already wet.

"Hmm? Were you peeping?"

"I... I only looked a little before I went back to my room..."

"And what did you do in your room?"

“N-Nothing...” she tried to avoid his gaze.

“Hahaha~ You so cute, Skyla~”

Skyla blushed in embarrassment.

“Alright, since you are already ready, shall we start with the main dish directly?”

“mm”

Nux did not wait any longer, he quickly removed her white panty before he inserted his half-hard dick inside. Her warm insides wrapped around his half-hard dick, caressing him as if eager for it to grow up.

After enjoying the pleasure for a while, Nux started moving rhythmically.

Skyla on the other hand bit her lips, she wanted to control herself and not moan like she always does.

Some maids working in the mansion have already heard her moans. She could hear when they about it and it made her too embarrassed.

Nux then lowered her uniform, freeing her cute breasts as he played with them to his heart’s content.

It did not take a long time for his dick to harden; its veins bulged out, going deeper and deeper with every thrust.

“Ah...”

“Annh... So good~”

“AAAnngghh~”

“Anngghh~ Anngghh~ Anngghh~”

Skyla tried to keep her voice down, it started with a little moan, then with a bigger one, and then even bigger, before she finally decided that it would be

too difficult to complete her task and decided to let go.

Her mind was already numb with pleasure as Nux drilled her rhythmically; she was too busy enjoying the pleasure to think about these minor things like her moans.

Yes, she will regret it later.

Nux continued his drilling, Skyla's pussy was way too soft and since it had already taken his shape, no point of his rod wasn't tended by her walls, pushing him to cloud nine, his body and mind numb with pleasure.

“Uuggghh~~”

It didn't take a long time for fresh milk to build up, he then grabbed her perky butt before filling her insides with his jizz.

“AAAnngghh~ So gooooodddd~”

Skyla shouted, her canals tightened before her pussy drenched his long rod with its juices.

Nux took a deep breath and felt familiar energy entering his body, just as he was about to lie down, he heard another voice calling him.

“Hey... Don't leave me out...”

# Chapter 38

“Hey... Don’t leave me out... I want to join as well...”

Lane said sleepily as she crawled towards the pair. She was sleeping soundly when she started hearing loud moans, her dreams turned into wet dreams and soon, she woke up.

The moment she woke up, she saw Skyla being drilled by Nux mercilessly as she moaned in ecstasy.

Lane also noticed that Skyla’s face was very close to Viscount Felberta’s. The sight turned her on while she pondered how could Skyla show such an indecent face.

Of course, she didn’t know that she had a similar expression just an hour ago.

Seeing her crawling towards him while her huge breasts hanging down, swaying back and forth, Nux felt his dick twitching again. It didn’t take a long time for his rod to stand proudly again, ready for another round.

“Since you want it so badly, why not?”

Of course, even he was tired after ejaculating so many times, but the energy he received after he came inside Skyla helped him recover a bit.

Also, seeing her huge mountains swaying like that, as if needing attention was another boost to his will, he believed he shouldn’t turn her down no matter what.

“I-I want to join as well...” suddenly, he heard another voice.

He glanced at Skyla who was lying on the bed as he questioned,

“Aren’t you tired?”

“Didn’t I say that I was too inexperienced back then? I can go for another round without a problem now”

Skyla replied with a smug smile.

Nux glanced at her before he glanced at Lane and suddenly, a thought made him excited.

‘Am I going to have the legendary threesome!?! Damn! I became one of those characters that my previous virgin self was jealous of!’

Thinking that, he smiled as he replied, “Then you are welcome to join as well. Alright, from now on, you two shall listen to me and I promise I will fuck you to the 9th heaven!”

The girls blushed in embarrassment, they couldn’t believe how bold he was to say indecent things like that out loud. However, when they saw him waiting for their reply, the two of them nodded.

“Alright, now the placing!”

As a certified virgin and a man of culture, Nux had watched enough hen-Ahem, source materials to know what he can do to make them feel the most pleasure.

Of course, since this was his first time as well, he was a little nervous as well but he quickly hid it and continued confidently.

“Lane, now crawl over here, place your ass on Skyla’s face and place your mouth in between her thighs” Nux ordered.

Lane blushed before she nodded with a determined look and crawled over to them. The sight of her breasts jiggling was a huge turn-on for Nux. Even though her movements were a little stiff, she quickly placed herself as Nux told. All this while, hers and Skyla’s faces were red like a tomato.

“Alright, now continue licking your sister’s little sister until I tell you to stop, kay?”

Lane nodded before she licked Skylia's pussy for the first time. Her body was trembling in nervousness and... some excitement. She imitated Nux's fingers as she licked the surroundings slowly before she inserted her tongue inside.

“Anh~” Skylia's pussy was already a little sensitive since she had just cum, therefore she moaned in pleasure when Lane's tongue entered her cave.

“Good, don't forget to tease and knead her butt from time to time, do it just like I knead your milky breasts~”

Lane did as she was told as her hands grabbed Skylia's perky butt. Skylia's moan already filled her with some weird sense of satisfaction, right now, she was even more excited to continue what she was doing, her nervousness transformed into excitement and thrill.

“AAng-”

Skylia's moan was abruptly stopped as a huge rod was placed on her forehead, nose, and lips. As if controlled by some force, her lips moved forward automatically, planting a small kiss that looked more like a kiss of submission.

“Mmnnfff~”

The dick's strong scent assaulted her nose; she closed her eyes and took a deep breath.

“Look closely how it enters and pleasure's your sister's little sister, kay?”

Skylia nodded as she opened her eyes. The sight of a huge dick placed right above her eyes made her tremble in excitement. Her pussy leaked her juices endlessly.

“!!!”

By the sudden influx of fresh juice, Lane was surprised, but then she started drinking her sister's juices greedily as if it was the most delicious thing in

the world. Her hand movement quickened, sending waves and waves of pleasure inside Skyla's body.

“Mmmnn~”

Skyla wanted to moan but since her lips were busy kissing Nux's dick, she couldn't and let out a weird sound instead.

Nux then started rubbing his dick in front of Lane's entrance. Lane's body trembled in excitement; she wanted to stop her tongue and moan but was stopped as she heard Nux's order.

“Don't stop your tongue till I say otherwise, kay?”

Lane nodded without stopping, showing how obedient of a girl she was.

Her fresh juice leaked out of her pussy, and Nux smiled as he glistened his dick with her juices, preparing to enter and conquer her insides. Suddenly, he felt a jolt of pleasure coursing through his body and he looked down.

Skyla, since she couldn't kiss and lick his dick anymore, she shifted her mouth to the next target.

His balls.

She kissed and licked them a little before she gobbled them up and started sucking.

“Good~”

Nux smiled as he praised before he turned to Lane's ass and drilled his dick right into her in one go.

“Mmnnhhhh~”

# Chapter 39

Lane's body jolted in pleasure as Nux drilled his dick into her. Since she wasn't allowed to stop licking her sister's little sister. She let out a muffled moan and tightened her grip around Skyla's perky butt.

This sends another jolt of pleasure into Skyla's body as she intensified her sucking, increasing Nux's pleasure.

Impressed by the cycle of pleasure he created, Nux smiled before he pulled his dick backwards, and then smashed it right into her. He then repeated this again, then again, and again, before his movements turned smoother and caught a rhythm.

The more he pounded Lane, the more pleasure she felt and she tightened her grip around Skyla's ass, sending more pleasure inside Skyla's body, causing her to suck even more.

“Uuggghh~ This feels so good” Nux grunted in pleasure before his eyes fell on Lane's huge breasts swaying back and forth in rhythm with his drilling.

They looked extremely soft, it was as if they were enticing him to grab them.

He bent down, placed his head on her back and grabbed her mountains as he started playing with them.

“AANnghhh~” as the pleasure she was feeling exploded, Lane stopped her licking and squeezing, and moaned out loud.

This caused the cycle to stop, Nux, of course, wasn't exactly happy with it. He smiled as he slowed his thrusting before stopping.

Lane's body trembled in frustration, she wanted to ask why he stopped but soon heard her answer.

“I said don’t stop until I tell you to”

Lane nodded before she quickly started licking Skylas pussy and kneading her butt. She didn’t waste time telling him how good it felt or anything; she just wanted him to start his pounding as soon as possible.

Nux, of course, did what she wanted and the cycle continued.

As he kneaded her breasts, he remembered that her weak point was the same as Felbertas, he wondered if the women who have larger breasts have the same weak point but he quickly threw that thought out as another, far better thought entered his mind.

He smiled evilly before he pinched Lane’s nipples.

“Mmnnhffhh~”

This time, Lane did not repeat her mistake and continued licking while her canals tightened, but Nux wasn’t done. He quickly started pulling her nipples as if he wanted to tear them apart.

Lane’s body jolted due to this weird sense of pain and pleasure, her canals tightened more than ever. To not moan out loud, she started sucking Skylas pussy intensely, causing Skylas to suck on Nux’s balls even more strongly.

“Uugggh~ I am cummingggg~”

The stimulation was too much for Nux to bear, his milk burst out, painting all Lane’s insides in white while he pinched her pink nipples even harder.

“Mmmmmnnnnhhhhhh~”

As if her last defence was broken, Lane orgasmed like there is no tomorrow. Her whole body trembled before turning weak and she passed out.

Nux’s face twitched when he saw her passing out like that, he wanted to pass out too but he still had to go for another round. He glanced down and when he saw Skylas licking and sucking on his dick, trying to keep it as hard as possible and his heart turned warm.

‘So what? It’s just one round. With the energy I received from Lane, I believe I can make it’

He thought inwardly as he glanced at Skyla again.

He had to admit, Skyla licking and sucking his dick’s head drenched with his and Lane’s juices while his balls laid on her hairline, his dick laid on her forehead, her nose, all the way to her mouth was really turning him on.

He enjoyed her service a little more before he chuckled,

“Skyla, my love, don’t worry, I am not leaving you behind and unsatisfied.”

Skyla stopped her sucking and her face turned red, “T-That’s not it”

Nux chuckled again before he placed the sleeping Lane to the side before he turned and placed his hard and sensitive dick right in front of Skyla’s entrance. He looked at her face before smiling as he directly shoved his dick inside.

“AAAnngghh~”

Skyla moaned as her body twitched in pleasure. After all the teasing and licking Lane did, her body was a lot more sensitive than Nux thought.

With just one thrust, her body arched up, her eyes rolled back, and her small tongue popped out.

Nux smiled as he pulled his dick before shoving it again.

“AAAnngghh~”

Nux then thought of something and placed her legs on his shoulder and shoved his dick into her again.

This way, he entered her deepest area, the one that he never entered before.

“AAAnllgggggghhhhh~”

Skyla was jolted awake by the sudden influx of pleasure, but before she understand what happened, Nux started his pounding, fucking her to the ninth heaven.

“Annggh~ Annggh~ Annggh~”

She moaned uncontrollably, her body was already numb, especially her thighs.

Nux didn't have it any better either, his dick was already sensitive after cumming so much. As he entered deep inside her cave, the tightness made him feel numb.

Then Skyla's pussy tightened even more as the pleasure she was feeling increased.

He was already trying his best to hold out for a second longer. Right now, he wanted nothing more than to feel her cave tightening signalling that she was about to cum. His mind moved as he thought of different ways to make it happen before an idea came into his mind.

He raised his hand high in the air before,

\*Pat\*

He slapped her butt.

Feeling her butt tightening, he slapped again, then again, and then again.

\*Pat\* \*Pat\* \*Pat\*

Skyla, who was already on cloud nine, felt another wave of painful but immense pleasure assaulting her body. Her body jolted as her walls tightened before,

“AAnnllgggggghhhh~”

She came.

Right, when her juices drenched his dick, he let go and another burst of milk was shot from his little brother.

“AAAnngghhh~”

“UUUnngghhhhhhhh~”

This was doubtlessly one of the best orgasms he ever had.

# Chapter 40

Right after he came, streams of energy entered Nux's body and a bunch of messages appeared in front of him but he was too tired to bother with them and directly passed out in Skyla's embrace.

Of course, Skyla wasn't any better either, right after she came, she passed out as well.

...

“..ux”

Time passed quickly, and Nux heard a voice as he slept.

“Nux”

“Nux!”

“NUX!!”

Slowly, the soft voice turned into a shout that pierced his ears as he retorted in anger.

“What!?”

But when he saw who was calling him, his anger turned down, he smiled wryly and questioned in a sleepy voice.

“Fel, what happened?”

Yes, the one who was calling him was the Viscount, Felberta. Skyla and Lane were already standing behind her, their faces tinged with red.

“Do you know what time it is?” Fel questioned.

Nux glanced at the window and saw the sun shining brightly, he smiled wryly as he understood that it was already afternoon.

“Fel, my love, I am really too tired for our afternoon session. Please forgive me this one time; I will definitely make it up to you in the future. How about this? Tomorrow is your day off, right? How about I spend my entire time with you tomorrow?” Nux offered.

Felberta on the other hand frowned before she quickly understood that he misunderstood her intention for coming here. Although she did come here to complain here initially, she understood what happened and just wanted to ask if he wanted to have lunch. She didn't come here to get compensation.

Of course, she was a little disappointing since she missed her afternoon session; but she has already made up her mind and knew something like this might happen in the near future.

Of course, her mood improved when she heard his offer, she had no intention to clear this misunderstanding. Having him all to herself for a whole day was an offer worth lying.

“Hmph! Since I am so gentle and forgiving, I will let you off for today but do remember your promise tomorrow. Also, lunch is ready, eat before going back to sleep.”

Nux nodded with a smile, he then planted a kiss on Felberta's face before he walked towards the dining room.

After he had his lunch, he walked back into his room and slept.

Seeing him like that, Felberta glanced at the two maids as she chuckled,

“You really dried him out huh...”

The two of them blushed in embarrassment, seeing this, Felberta smiled before she continued,

“Tell me? How was it? Did you feel good? How did it feel to suck each other's love juices?”

The more she questioned, the more they blushed.

The viscount enjoyed teasing her ‘new sisters’ and her future faction members.

...

A few hours later, Nux finally woke up, he still felt a little tired but it wasn't as bad as before. He then looked at his body and could see that his muscles were more defined than before. He clenched his fist and felt an enormous amount of power welling inside his body.

He suddenly remembered the bunch of messages that appeared in front of him right before he passed out. He thought about it and those messages reappeared again accompanied by his favourite \*Ding\* sound.

[Congratulations to the host for rising to an Advance Stage Mana Cultivator from a Beginner Stage Mana Cultivator.]

[INT: +5]

[Blank Points: +10]

[Congratulations to the host for rising to an Advance Stage Body Cultivator from a Beginner Stage Body Cultivator.]

[STR: +3]

[AGL: +3]

[VIT: +3]

[STM: +3]

[DEF: +3]

[Blank Points: +5]

[System Inventory: Unlocked]

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: Advance.]

[Body Cultivation: Advance.]

[Race: Human ]

[Talent: Low]

[LVL: 17 → 20]

[HP: 540/540]

[MP: 370/370]

[STR: 42 →51]

[AGL: 49 →58]

[VIT: 45 → 54]

[STM: 46 →55]

[INT: 29 → 37]

[DEF: 41 → 50]

[Blank Points: 72 →96]

[Ability: Craving Touch, Eye Of Discerning]

[Harem Members: Felberta Alveye, Skyla Hale, Lane Wyne]

...

‘Damn! I am strong!’

Nux exclaimed in surprise and excitement.

Just as he was about to stand up and leave, another message popped up.

[Quest System Unlocked]

[Current Quests]

[Kill a 1-star beast]

[Reward: 1 System point]

[Accept: Y/N]

[Kill a 2-star beast]

[Reward: 2 System points]

[Accept: Y/N]

[Kill a 3-star beast]

[Reward: 5 System points]

[Accept: Y/N]

[Kill a 4-star beast]

[Reward: 10 System points]

[Accept: Y/N]

[Kill a 5-star beast]

[Reward: 20 System points]

[Accept: Y/N]

[Kill a 6-star beast]

[Reward: 50 System points]

[Accept: Y/N]

[Kill a 7-star beast]

[Reward: 100 System points]

[Accept: Y/N]

[Note: There is no limit to how many Star Beasts you kill, you will keep gaining the rewards mentioned above. Also, there is no penalty or time limit for these quests]

‘A quest system... hmm, this is just like missions but more convenient... cool.’

Then, Nux began thinking.

‘Should I accept these quests?’

I can gain system points if I complete this.

Not only that, but I will also gain some fighting experience. Right now, I am just a brute with strength without any skill to back it up. If it comes to real fights, I might even lose to someone weaker than me.

Although I don’t need much strength now since I am very safe right now, the same can’t be said for the future. This is a world that revolves around strength, being weak here is a crime.

I should not take it lightly even if I have this cheat. Rather, now that I have this cheat, I should use it to the best of my abilities and live a longer, happier life.’

Thinking about all this, Nux decided to accept this quest.

Of course, he wasn’t planning to leave until he strengthens Felberta’s cultivation to the Advance stage.

# Chapter 41

Author Note: I am sorry about this; I have been trying to avoid this chapter for a long time now. I wanted to minimize the info dump as much as possible, but I can't do it anymore. We are already at chapter 41 and I still haven't told you anything about the world background and other kingdoms.

So this chapter will be some information dump. I will not write more about the cultivation levels but I will give some world background today, so please bear with it. >\_ Medium]

[LVL: 20 → 24]

[HP: 620/620]

[MP: 410/410]

[STR: 51 → 59]

[AGL: 58 → 66]

[VIT: 54 → 62]

[STM: 55 → 63]

[INT: 37 → 41]

[DEF: 50 → 57]

[Blank Points: 96 → 108]

[Ability: Craving Touch, Eye Of Discerning]

[Harem Members: Felberta Alveye, Skyla Hale, Lane Wyne]

...

[Name: Skyla Hale ]

[Age: 25 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Advance.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 24]

[HP: 280/280]

[MP: 390/390]

[STR: 29]

[AGL: 34]

[VIT: 28]

[STM: 32]

[INT: 39]

[DEF: 27]

...

[Name: Lane Wynee ]

[Age: 26 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Advance.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 23 -> 24 ]

[HP: 280/280]

[MP: 380/380]

[STR: 34 ->35 ]

[AGL: 26 -> 27]

[VIT: 27 -> 28]

[STM: 29 -> 30]

[INT: 37 -> 38]

[DEF: 34 ->35]

...

Of course, the one with the highest progress was Felberta; even she was surprised how quickly she rose to a level that others spend their whole life reaching.

[Name: Felberta Alveye ]

[Age: 28 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Advance.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Occupation: Viscount of Skyfall Kingdom]

[Race: Human]

[Talent: Low]

[LVL: 6 ->22]

[HP: 290/290]

[MP: 360/360]

[STR: 10 ->26]

[AGL: 11 ->27]

[VIT: 13 ->29]

[STM: 11 ->27]

[INT: 10-> 36]

[DEF: 10->26]

...

‘With this, I can finally leave and go to the Blood Hill Wilderness.’

He has learned quite a few things about this world.

This world only has one continent which was around 6000 km far if you match the two opposite ends, four kingdoms ruled this continent, namely,

The Sky Fall Kingdom, where Nux lives.

The Kingdom Of Skadi.

The Solid Earth Kingdom.

The Woods Dynasty.

There were a few cultivation sects, but they were too weak in front of these large kingdoms and could only continue to exist if they submit to one of the

kingdoms.

These four kingdoms were surrounded by the Blood Hill Wilderness, no one knew how deep or wide it was, but from what little information people of this world had gained, they divided it into 3 levels.

The outer area, the inner area, and the forbidden area.

The outer area was occupied by 1-3 star beasts.

The inner area was occupied by 3-5 star beasts.

As for the forbidden area... well it was forbidden to enter so no one knows about it.

100 years ago, the King of Solid Earth kingdom thought that there must be some sort of treasure in the forbidden area and he prepared a huge army to find it.

The army was accompanied by two strongest experts of the kingdom, but the only survivor of this expedition was the bloody soldier who returned with a torn arm and a bloody note that said,

‘Never enter the forbidden area’

The king tried to talk to the survivor, but he was already psychologically affected and wasn’t able to answer anything at all.

He just mumbled a few muffled sentences, only a few words could be recognized. 2 of these were,

‘Killed’

‘Too Strong’

The whole incident had a major impact on the Solid Earth Kingdom, from being the second strongest, it fell to the last and is still not able to recover.

After that, no one dared to enter the forbidden area anymore.

Of course, Nux wasn't even planning to enter the inner area let alone the forbidden one. Thinking about this, Nux stood up as he walked out of his room.

Just as he exited his room, he saw Felberta, Skyla, and Lane looking at him worriedly.

“Do you really have to go to Blood Hill Wilderness?” Felberta questioned.

“You know I have to, I may be strong, but I still don't have any fighting experience. You know how this world is, the stronger you are, the more freely you live. So I have to do this to fulfil my dream” Nux replied gently.

“Take care of yourself. Don't do anything rash and endanger your life, okay?” Skyla muttered.

“Don't worry; I am too much of a coward to do something rash. I will run away as soon as I notice that I can't handle the situation. I am really confident in running away” Nux smiled.

Lane didn't say anything but you could see that she was really worried.

The three ladies wanted to come with him, but he directly rejected them. He wouldn't be able to use his strongest skill (running away) if they followed him.

# Chapter 42

“Have you kept everything I gave you? Your sword, your armour, healing potions, mana potions, and the skill books?” Felberta questioned.

“Don’t worry, I have kept everything, although I will repeat what I said before, the armour you gav-”

“Yeah, I don’t care. Nothing is more important than your life. If you came back with broken armour, rather than being mad, I would be happy that it could be used to save you. I can always buy new armours, no problem.”

“But that is a 3-star armour! That’s your family treasure; you can’t buy it with money!”

“Yeah yeah, the same thing” Felberta completely ignored his words and waved her hands nonchalantly before her expression turned serious.

“Just come back safely okay?”

“Mhm,” Nux smiled as he kissed her soft lips. He then repeated the same thing action with Skyla and Lane.

“I’ll be back soon”

The three nodded as they accompanied Nux outside the mansion.

Nux waved his hands as a farewell sign as he walked away.

...

As Nux was walking toward the wilderness, he smiled when he remembered their worried looks and shook his head.

He was really lucky to have them.

He then sorted the other things he gained in these last few days.

First, the skill books.

As a viscount, Felberta had four 1 star skill books, each belonging to different elements. These skill books were given to her most loyal and trusted subordinates, as for what element skill they receive, it depends on their elemental affinity.

Skyla, for example, had a medium rank Wind affinity, and Lane had a medium rank Earth affinity. Therefore the two of them received the Gale Steps and Earth Fists techniques respectively.

When Nux's talent was examined, it showed that he had a low level with all the basic elements, which was not enough for him to cultivate any of these skill books.

However, two days later, Nux requested to test himself again and surprisingly, it showed that now he had a medium level affinity with every basic element.

Nux understood how it worked.

The 'talent' in his system doesn't represent the cultivation speed, it shows the level of affinity a person has with a certain element.

At first, he indeed had low-level talent but after a few sessions with Skyla and Lane, he gained their talent as well.

He first concluded that the talent drop rate was low therefore he didn't get it in just one session, but now he learned that it was not that the drop rate was low.

He was receiving their talent from the first time they had sex, but the system was distributing it to all his elements simultaneously, hence slowing the process.

So right now, he had four 1 star skill books, a 2-star sword, a few mana and Healing potions, and a 3-star armour in his system inventory, this all would

have cost him 110 System points (he cannot buy potions from the shop yet) if not for his Felberta.

Of course, he also used all his System points to buy a 2 star Body Cultivation Skill, The Nine Strikes Of Sword, from the system.

Yes, he bought a body cultivation skill because his body was 2 times stronger than a normal cultivator. Also, body cultivation skill books were already very rare in this world, so he would be able to surprise his opponent at the last moment.

Not only that, but he also found that, unlike the normal skill books where he has to read and decipher everything on his own, the skill books bought from the system could already be cultivated to the beginner stage after buying it.

The levels of mastery of a skill book go by, Novice, Beginner, Small Achievement, Big Achievement, Master, Perfection, and finally, Assimilation.

And he was already at the beginner stage.

Nux smiled as he again realized how awesome his system is, he then activated his Steps Of Gale, and increased his speed.

The Blood Hill Wilderness was on the outskirts of the kingdom, where they live in the capital city. The journey was roughly around 700 km far. If he took the carriage, it would take him about a day to reach there, but he wasn't planning to.

He was planning to train his speed using this chance and wanted to reach there within 3-4 hours while running nonstop. Of course, it wouldn't be too hard on himself if he failed to achieve it but he would try his best.

“Alright! Let's start!”

Nux roared excitedly after he left the capital city, he stretched his legs, and then his back before jumping a little.

He then looked above, It was already 4 pm, the sun was still shining brightly but he knew in just an hour or so, it would set. He sighed as he started running.

...

“Haah... Haa... Haah...”

Nux breathed heavily as he finally reached the last town before his destination. It was already 10 when he reached here and he wasn't dumb enough to directly enter this dangerous forest without any rest.

And yes, he failed to achieve his goal by two hours but that wasn't his fault.

He completely ignored the time he would have to line up to enter the city gates. He even felt that he had to stay in a city for a night before coming to the wilderness but the farther away he moved from the capital city, the lesser and lesser the city gates appeared.

In the end, he didn't even have to stop and crossed 4 cities in one go before reaching here.

This town was called Clover Town. Since this town was closest to the Blood Hill Wilderness and was constantly attacked by star beasts, the people have already abandoned it, and the only people staying here were adventures that came here to hunt the star beasts.

Nux walked towards an inn, he booked a room before taking a bath since he was too sweaty after running.

“Haah~” He sighed in relief as he jumped into the bed and slept.

Author Notes: Yeah, I know, kind of a boring chapter, I felt the same...

I just rushed it since it wasn't important. I wasn't planning to extend his trip for 3-4 chapters or something. Let's just get over the boring part...

# Chapter 43

“Grrr...”

The next day, Nux was standing frozen stiff in front of a ferocious-looking Tiger with fresh blood dripping from its mouth.

He was wearing a silver colour Armor that covered his chest and was holding a long sword in his hands that were shaking nonstop. From his pale expression, it was clear that he was frightened out of his wits.

What happened?

Well, nothing in particular, after checking out of the inn, he entered the forest in high spirits, but soon, he encountered this ferocious looking Tiger that was glaring at him with menacing eyes and he was frozen in fear.

It wasn't that the Tiger was too strong or something, rather, this Tiger was one of the weaker creatures in this wilderness, a 1-star beast, but Nux was still frightened by how scary it looked.

You can't blame him either, just a few days ago, he was just a normal man who would be scared even if a street dog barked at him. How can someone expect him to fight against these scary looking monsters?

He was stronger and learned a few techniques, right, but you don't go fighting animals in a jungle after learning some martial arts right?

When it saw how scared this human in front of him was, the tiger smiled even more menacingly. It would have a delicious meet today as its breakfast. Without thinking any further, he quickly dashed towards Nux with its eyes shining brightly.

\*Roar\*

A huge mistake.

What the tiger did was a huge mistake on its part. It might have been better if it had walked towards Nux slowly and intimidatingly, but now that he dashed towards Nux, his expression changed a little.

‘Too slow...’

Nux thought inwardly, slowly starting to gain some confidence.

He quickly activated his [Eye Of Discursion] and all the information about this tiger appeared in front of his eyes.

[Gale Tiger]

[Cultivation: 1 Star Beast.]

[LVL: 13]

[HP: 180/190]

[STR: 20]

[AGL: 21]

[VIT: 19]

[STM: 20]

[DEF: 19]

...

‘Hmm? I am at least 3 times stronger than this beast’ Nux thought inwardly before his eyes fell on the beast. Seeing the delight and mockery in its eyes, he panicked a little before he quickly regained his confidence as he looked at its stats.

“What are you acting so confident for?”

The tiger then jumped at Nux, Nux also raised his sword before stabbing it down in a crude way. There were no traces of his Nine Strikes Of Sword that he practised before.

The sword stabbed right through the tiger's nape, pinning it on the ground.

**\*Roar!!\***

It roared in pain, it still did not have any idea how or when this weak human stabbed his sword through his body. He glanced up and looked into Nux's eyes to make sure if it was him or someone else who sneak attacked it from behind.

Another big mistake.

Seeing that the beast still hadn't died, Nux panicked, he did not think about removing his sword and stabbing it again, instead, his most primal instincts kicked in, he raised his leg and stomped on the poor beast's face mercilessly.

“Roar!!”

“Rooaaarrr!!”

“Roar...”

“Grr... Grr...”

“...”

The translated version,

“How dare you kick me!?”

“You dare kick me again!?”

“Please don't kick me...”

“Please, I am begging you, just stab your sword and end me... why to humiliate me like that...”

“ ... ”

Of course, Nux didn't know what it said or wanted to say, neither did he care. He kept attacking until he could hear him roaring or growling.

[Ding]

[It is detected that the host has killed a 1-star beast]

[Reward: 1 System point]

[Wind Affinity: +1]

‘Damn... it was harder than I thought...’

Nux thought inwardly, his heart felt like it was about to burst out by how fast it was beating.

“Haah...”

He took a deep breath as he calmed his racing heart before glancing at the messages that appeared in front of him.

‘Wind affinity? Was it because I killed the Gale Tiger? Does that mean I will gain more affinity to a certain element if I kill a star beast of a certain element? That's cool!’

‘But I need to calm down, I was lucky that this beast I encountered wasn't that strong, or else I would have been in trouble. I should find some 1-star beasts and practice the skills I have learned and... also get used to this blood...’

Of course, as a normal human, he hasn't witnessed this huge amount of blood before, let alone the being the cause of it.

He then glanced at the Gale tiger's body; he picked up his sword and waved his hand as the body disappeared into his inventory.

Although the body isn't that valuable, he wasn't dumb enough to leave free resources. No sane man would reject extra cash.

He then moved forward and soon, he found another beast.

[Earth Bear]

[Cultivation: 1 Star Beast.]

[LVL: 12]

[HP: 160/180]

[STR: 20]

[AGL: 18]

[VIT: 18]

[STM: 17]

[DEF: 21]

...

'Another one-star beast, this should be easy since I can make the first move'

Right now, this bear was enjoying its prey, not knowing its impending doom.

Nux activated his Steps Of Gale, it was the technique which he had most control on other than the Nine Strikes Of Sword, he could feel it reaching closer to Beginner Stage after yesterday's run.

Nux disappeared before he appeared right before the bear, and without wasting any time, he slashed his sword according to Nine Strikes Of Sword, cutting its head off.

The poor bear didn't even know how it died. He couldn't even enjoy its last meal before his head got slashed.

[Ding]

[It is detected that the host has killed a 1-star beast]

[Reward: 1 System point]

[Earth Affinity: +1]

Nux stood there, frozen still as the blood flowed out of the bear's body like a fountain and fell on his face. He felt nauseating; he wanted to vomit but controlled himself. He knew this would happen, he knew that he will have to face blood one day or another.

He wiped the blood on his face and stored the bear's body in his inventory.

# Chapter 44

To be honest, even Nux was surprised by how quickly he killed the bear. He finally understood why skills were so important to a cultivator. With just 1 star and 2-star skills, his power increased so much.

Nux felt a little excited, he wanted to get stronger and stronger.

Thinking about it, he then started his search.

[Ding]

[It is detected that the host has killed a 1-star beast]

[Reward: 1 System point]

[Fire Affinity: +1]

...

[Ding]

[It is detected that the host has killed a 1-star beast]

[Reward: 1 System point]

[Water Affinity: +1]

...

[Ding]

[It is detected that the host has killed a 2-star beast]

[Reward: 2 System points]

[Earth Affinity: +2]

...

He continued killing beasts nonstop, some were sneak attacks, some were one on one fights, and sometimes, he was even sneaked attacked by a beast but Nux continued fighting and continued growing stronger at a frightening rate.

It is said that experience can help you learn what books cannot. As he continued using his skills, he could feel how frighteningly quick he was mastering them.

After his 23rd fight, his Steps Of Gale was already at the beginner stage and his other skills were at peak novice stage. He was also very close to the small achievement stage in his Nine Strikes Of Sword.

He did not stay at 1-star beasts either, he found that once he was a little experienced he didn't even need to use his skills to kill them so after killing around 14 1 star beasts, he shifted to 2-star beasts.

[Gale Tiger]

[Cultivation: 2 Star Beast.]

[LVL: 24]

[HP: 320/320]

[STR: 33]

[AGL: 34]

[VIT: 32]

[STM: 33]

[DEF: 31]

...

Right now, he was fighting a 2-star beast, Gale tiger, that sneaked attacked him. Well, one can't call it a fight. It was more like a training drill.

This gale tiger was just a bigger version of the first beast he killed.

Right now, Nux was just practising his fire-based skill, Fire Ball, on it, increasing his accuracy and lowering his MP cost. He wanted to increase his mastery of the skill to the beginner stage

However, things never go as one plan. The Gale Tiger's body was already covered with burns and black marks, it already knew that it wasn't this human's match and it had no intention of becoming his practice partner. It quickly turned around and ran away.

Or it tried to, when Nux noticed that it was trying to run away, he activated his Steps Of Gales and appeared in front of it before slashing its head.

“Haah... you could have lived longer if only you had decided to be obedient and become my training partner.” He sighed before he stepped back. After killing so many beasts, although the blood didn't bother him that much, he still wasn't a fan of it and would not allow it to spray on his face if he could avoid it.

[Ding]

[It is detected that the host has killed a 2-star beast]

[Reward: 2 System points]

[Wind Affinity: +2]

Nux stored its body in his inventory before he frowned; he noticed that the sneak attacks he was facing has increased a lot. He was planning to spend the night in the wilderness, but if it continued like this, he would tire himself out and would certainly die.

A thought appeared in his mind and he sniffed,

“Smnf Smnf”

His eyes lit up in realization as he nodded.

“So that’s how it is...”

He was covered in blood, no, he was practically bathing in blood, especially his silver armour which was now red.

The beasts had strong senses, when they smelled the scent of blood, they would treat him as an injured or a dead person, no beast would leave that chance.

Nux quickly removed his armour, before washing dried blood from his face. He was thinking about saving water until he found a river or something but now it seemed that he had to use it. If he couldn’t find any water sources by the end of the day, he would just leave the wilderness and come back tomorrow.

After washing his face and armour, Nux also changed his clothes.

He then walked around for a while and as expected, there were no sneak attacks anymore. Nux smiled and continued his killing but this time, he avoided getting blood on his clothes. For that, he had an ingenious idea of using his Water-based skill, the Water Shield to cover his body with a thin water shield that does not take much MP and it worked!

There was not a single drop of blood on his body!

This was much better than being covered in blood. He was not a brawny bloodthirsty man, he was a handsome refined man, being covered in blood did not suit him at all.

He even thought that this Water Shield skill was created just so a person could avoid the blood falling on his body.

If the creator of this technique heard his words, he would probably rise from the dead to hunt him down.

[Ding]

[2-star beast Killed] (I am changing the notification, it takes too many words)

[Reward: 2 System points]

[Fire Affinity: +2]

...

As Nux walked after killing another beast, he heard a sound.

‘A river.’

Nux was pleasantly surprised; he quickly walked towards the direction where the sound came from.

“Did you see how I single-handedly killed that beast?”

“Yeah yeah, Alden, we know you are strong, why don’t you just sit down and relax? It’s still our first day here, we have to stay here for more than a month.”

“Yes, now sit down and fill your water reserves”

“Hmph! You guys are no fun”

After a while, when he walked closer to the sound of the river, he heard some people talking. His steps quickened before he saw 4 people, 1 woman and 3 men sitting beside the river talking to each other.

He quickly hid behind a tree but before he could observe them with his [Eye Of Discerning], a series of notifications rang in his mind.

[Ding]

# Chapter 45

e the leader of the team carried a huge shield and ordered.

“I will fight with the leader of this pack, Alden, you take care of the two wolfs following the leader, Osker, you fight with the rest of the wolves, don’t worry, Annice would help you from behind”

“Haah! Finally some action! Although I want to fight that leader, I will follow your order and finish these two weaklings first.” Another muscular looking man, Alden, answered as a giant Axe appeared in his hand. He then slashed his axe at the two wolves, mercilessly.

His attacks carried huge momentum with them, even the ferocious-looking wolves had to back off and stay defensive under his attacks.

The silent looking man just gave a nod before a sword appeared in his hand and he rushed toward the rest of the wolves without any fear. His movements were nimble as he didn’t give any chance to any of the wolves to attack him.

“Yes leader!” A bow appeared in the hands of the only girl in this group. She was the deciding factor in this group. Her arrows were sharp and precise; it was as if each arrow released from her bow had a meaning.

Her arrows were merciless as they attacked the weak points of those wolves, their eyes, their ears, their nose, their mouth, no arrow missed. She was so confident in her shots that she didn’t even look at the result before shooting another arrow.

“GRrrr!”

“Graarr!!”

Her arrows greatly lessened the pressure the silent man was facing as he quickly started killing these wolves.

[Your party member, Osker Fieldse has killed a 1-star beast]

[Reward: 1 system point]

[Your party member, Osker Fieldse has killed a 1-star beast]

[Reward: 1 system point]

[Your party member, Annice Fishmane has killed a 1-star beast]

[Reward: 1 system point]

The more notification appeared in front of his eyes, the brighter his eyes got.

‘I can gain system points even if I am not the one killing!

This is ridiculous!

A bug!

An absolute Bug!’

[Your party member, Alden Stuarts has killed a 2-star beast]

[Reward: 2 system points]

As Nux was excited, another message appeared in front of his eyes, he glanced at the battlefield and saw that the muscular man with the axe had already killed one of the wolves and was attacking the other one without stopping.

He then glanced at the leader of the group and saw him defending against the attacks of the leader of the pack without much difficulty. It was clear that he only intended to prolong the fight as his team deals with the rest of the wolves.

“AAuuuuu!!”

The wolf leader howled in anger when he saw so many of its subordinates dying and its attack turned ferocious, although it didn't affect the leader that much.

[Your party member, Alden Stuarts has killed a 2-star beast]

[Reward: 2 system points]

After Alden killed the remaining wolf, he quickly rushed toward the weaker wolves and started slaughtering them with a wide smile.

[Your party member, Alden Stuarts has killed a 1-star beast]

[Reward: 1 system point]

[Your party member, Alden Stuarts has killed a 1-star beast]

[Reward: 1 system point]

[Your party member, Annice Fishmane has killed a 1-star beast]

[Reward: 1 system point]

...

Countless messages appeared in front of Nux, and his eyes brightened in joy. He was really cheering for the team from his heart.

His cheering worked as they quickly dealt with the remaining wolves, and then focused on the leader of the pack. The situation turned around so quickly that even if the wolf leader wanted to retreat, it couldn't.

[Your party member, Alden Stuarts has killed a 3-star beast]

[Reward: 5 system points]

[Total System Points: 68]

# Chapter 46

After killing all the wolves, every member of the team took out a dagger and started skinning the dead bodies, before storing the meat, fur, and teeth. It was clear that they were very experienced by how fast their hands moved.

‘A tank, a warrior, a marksman, and an assassin, a perfect RPG team’

Nux praised inwardly.

“Move your hands! We don’t have much time; too much blood has been spilt. Quickly wash and let’s get out of here.” The leader of the team ordered after they took all the loot.

The rest of the team nodded and within 5 minutes, they moved out.

As if on cue, four 2 star beasts appeared in the area, Nux raised his eyebrows in surprise and admiration.

‘Damn, this is what they call experience.’

He then smiled before he waited for the beasts to leave.

...

After filling his water reserves, Nux left the area as well. This time, his goal was not to hunt any beasts; he had killed enough for the day. His goal was to find humans he can form parties with.

Just now, he got 18 system points without even lifting his finger. It was important to note that he had only collected 50 System points after hunting beasts for a whole day.

There is no limit to the number of humans he can form a party with and the range is 100 km long.

If he could form a party with around 10 more teams like the ones he found, how many points would he gain!?

Many, many points!

That's why he called the party system an absolute bug!

Because that's what it was!

Excited, he ran around the wilderness searching for other humans. Since it was already evening, he knew he couldn't wander around for long. After finding and secretly partying with 1 other party, he found a safe area and lay down.

...

The next day, he woke up with an eager look. He started his journey to find other humans. Of course, he didn't miss the chance to one-shot any lonely 1 or 2-star beast he could find. They were free system points; he wasn't going to leave them.

[Your party member, Gage Uptone has killed a 2-star beast]

[Reward: 2 system points]

[Your party member, Lynden Rake has killed a 1-star beast]

[Reward: 1 system point]

[Your party member, Kenelm Brokee has killed a 1-star beast]

[Reward: 1 system point]

...

By the afternoon, he had already partied with 5 more teams, he had noticed that this range of 100 km is like a radius with him as a centre, if used correctly, the range is around 200 km.

Nux was very happy with the huge influx of notifications but afraid that he might get complacent; he decided to ignore these messages.

As if reading his thoughts, no more messages appeared. He frowned and then opened his system to glance at his system points, noticing that they were still increased, he knew that the system decided to be generous and had hidden these notifications for him.

Nux smiled at the thought and continued finding his new points sla- team players.

“AAhhh!! Someone! Save me!”

While Nux was walking around, he heard a scream and frowned. He then rushed towards the sound and found a boy who should be around his age, sitting on the ground, his eyes filled with horror as he glanced at the dead body lying beside him.

The body was still twitching, indicating that it died recently.

He also saw two men surrounded by 8 two-star wolves, by their wounds, it was clear that they were in a bad position.

‘Should I save them?’

Nux thought about it and decided to act. He wasn’t a cold-blooded person, if he can save them without getting into trouble, he will help them.

Also, they will be his future points sla- teammates, he wasn’t going to let them die.

He then activated his Steps Of Gale and appeared behind a wolf, slashing its head with one slash before fighting the other.

The guards’ eyes widened when he saw him appearing out of nowhere.

With all his skills on the beginner level, combined with his peak beginner level Sword skill, Nux was already strong enough to deal with these wolves

alone, and with the two guards holding some of them, he quickly killed all the wolfs without any problems.

“T-Thank you! My name is Wybert Longe, the son of Marquis Longe of the Sky Fall kingdom” Wybert introduced.

Of course, Nux already knew about it due to his Eye Of Discerning.

“A Marquis’s son? What are you doing here in the wilderness?”

“I am here to gain some fighting experience... but I didn’t expect someone to die because of me” Wybert replied in a sad tone as he glanced at the dead body of his guard.

“You came into the wilderness with just 3 guards?” Nux questioned in surprise.

“No, I have more guards, it was just that the head guard heard some sound coming from there and he took some men to check it out, we were then attacked by the wolf pack and this happened...”

“Oh?” Nux raised his eyebrow as he heard that.

“Ah! Mr Savior I still don’t know your name”

“It’s me, Dio”

Nux replied.

The head guard, who had the duty to protect the son of marquis left because he heard a sound? Not only that, right after he left, the son was attacked by a pack of wolves. If this didn’t sound shady, Nux didn’t know what did.

There was no way he was going to tell his real name to him.

“Oh, Mr Dio, why don’t you join-”

“Ah, I am extremely sorry, young master, but I am about to leave this wilderness so I can’t join you but I do hope you have a safe and fulfilling

adventure.”

Saying that Nux ran away.

# Chapter 47

Nux ran away, or so the guards thought...

After a while, he returned and hid behind the trees.

No, he didn't have any intention to help the boy.

Someone was planning to get the son of a marquis killed.

On one side, there was a Marquis and on the other, was someone who dared to kill Marquis's son. Both of them aren't someone he could afford to offend.

Not only him, but even Felberta also might not be safe he offended them. He was even regretting his decision to help the boy initially.

Well, what's done was done; he couldn't change it and just sighed.

If he doesn't want to help, why was he back here then?

Of course, that is to form a party with the rest of the guards who should be returning soon. Who knows, he might earn some extra points.

He didn't have to wait for long as the head guard along with the other guards appeared. If the head guard was surprised to see the boy alive, he didn't show it on his face, he just showed his concern and asked if the boy was safe and acted calmly.

Nux was even more scared seeing that, he quickly formed a party and ran away.

This time, he ran away for real.

...

Nux continued his search for the whole day as he killed some beasts while he was at it. After forming parties with around 14 teams, he found a relatively safe place and rested for the night.

The next day, Nux stood up with a fresh smile. Today, he wasn't going to find any humans anymore; of course, it was a different case if he found them by chance. He would be stupid if he didn't party with them.

‘Status’

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: Advance.]

[Body Cultivation: Advance.]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 24]

[HP: 620/620]

[MP: 410/410]

[STR: 59 → 61]

[AGL: 66 → 69]

[VIT: 62]

[STM: 63 → 64]

[INT: 41]

[DEF: 58]

[Blank Points: 108]

His stats rose again, and this time, it wasn't due to a level up. This was all due to his Sword Skill, being a body cultivation skill, it didn't require mana, only raw strength, therefore, the stronger his mastery over it, the stronger his strength will be. Therefore, he decided that he was going to raise his mastery of the skill to a small achievement stage within the next few days.

He walked towards a group of four 2 star bears he found and fought them while only using his Nine Strikes Of Sword. Of course, he also used his Water shield to prevent blood from falling on him.

The more he fought, the more he could feel his mastery over his sword was increasing. His movements turned smoother and smoother and even his speed increased.

His improvement speed was frightening.

After defeating the bears, he found another group of 2-star beasts and continued fighting them in the same way.

Of course, he wasn't unscathed as well since he wasn't experienced enough right now, but his wound wasn't that serious since his armour was very tough.

There were just a few scratches here and there which quickly vanished after he drank the Healing Potion.

For the next few days, Nux continued fighting the same way, from four 2 star beasts, he fought more than ten 2 star beasts at the same time without many injuries.

Even a 3-star beast cannot do that. He was now sure that he can fight any 3-star beasts without any problem but he didn't fight right away and continued fighting 2-star beasts.

His Nine Strikes Of Sword has already reached the mid-level small achievement stage. As he has already achieved his goal, he had decided to fight these beasts with just his 4 basic elements skills to train them.

However, the more he fought, the quicker he found out that training his 4 skills wasn't as simple as his Sword skill.

He had a limited amount of MP, although he can force himself with his sheer will if he was low on stamina, he can't do the same with his MP because he would pass out if his MP reaches 0.

Of course, he can use Mana Potions, but Felberta warned him not to use them too much since they contained impurities and might affect his body in the future so he avoided them as much as possible.

This was annoying. Although he can feel his skills improving, the process was really slow compared with his sword skill.

It took him 15 days to raise all his skills to the small achievement stage, among which, only his Steps Of Gale was at a mid-level small achievement stage.

However, even with that, he still wasn't able to defeat more than five 2 star beasts since these beasts run away as soon as they feel that they cannot fight him anymore.

Unlike his sword skill, which has the power to deal significant damage in one attack, his attacking skills, Earth Fist and Fire Ball weren't as strong.

The time it took him to defeat one beast is enough for the rest of them to run away.

Nux shook his head, dejected.

He had to give up.

No matter how much he tried, the skills he has are still just 1-star skills, it is difficult to kill 2-star beasts with them. Also, MP wasn't his strong point either.

Nux sighed as he returned to his safe point and rested for the day.

He has decided to fight with 3-star beasts from tomorrow.

# Chapter 48

Using Steps Of Gale, Nux appeared behind a star bear, he slashed his sword, but unlike how previously, the head is hacked off without any resistance, he could only leave a deep wound on its neck.

However, Nux wasn't how he used to be either.

After 20 days of continuous fighting, his instincts and experience were better than the last time.

He quickly stomped his foot and jumped back, not only that, he even created a water shield in front of him, in case the bear reacted faster than he expected and attacks him.

His worries, however, were unfounded, only when he landed on the ground, did the bear finally turn back and attacked.

“Roarr!!”

‘Damn, a 3-star beasts defence is really something... my sword isn't strong enough to defeat it in one move...’

Nux muttered as he glanced at the 2.5 meters huge Earth Bear in front of him.

[Earth Bear]

[Cultivation: 3 Star Beast.]

[LVL: 33]

[HP: 210/430]

[STR: 44]

[AGL: 42]

[VIT: 43]

[STM: 41]

[DEF: 46]

...

‘I just need another strike to end him but... I don’t think it would be that easy...’

Nux thought as he glanced at the earth bear that was looking at him with red eyes and a maddened look. It was as if it was ready to fight to the death.

Nux looked into its eyes and threw a fireball toward it. Of course, he wasn’t trying to hurt it with it, he just didn’t want to give him time to rest, even a second.

While the bear dodged the fireball, Nux’s figure blurred; the bear knew that Nux was too fast for him and he couldn’t block his attacks very well, so he directly covered its wounded neck with its paws.

“Hmph! In the end, you are just a brainless beast.” Nux then appeared right in front of it as he stabbed his sword right through its heart.

Nux was merciless with his moves, even though he understood that now that he pierced its heart, he won’t live for long. He still activated his Earth Fist and punched its nose continuously.

\*Bam\*

A few seconds later, he retrieved his sword and the bear’s huge body finally fell to the ground.

[Ding]

[3-star beast Killed]

[Reward: 5 System points]

[Earth Affinity: +5]

Nux felt overjoyed.

It was a 3-star beast! A beast that can rival and even defeat a normal Master Rank Cultivator and he defeated it without a scratch!

He has indeed grown stronger.

However, he didn't get complacent, he had a big advantage in this fight since he was the one who attacked first and dealt with so much damage.

He will now take on a 3-star beast one on one and later, he will fight a group of beasts, just like the wolf pack his first party members encountered a few days ago, alone.

...

Five days later, Nux sat on top of a huge rock, breathing heavily. Even after wiping it, again and again, the traces of beasts' blood on his face still weren't gone.

Although he wasn't injured since he had Recovery Potions, the same can't be said about his armour.

The original thick looking silver armour had many dents on it. There were many deep cuts on it as well, although there were no holes, these deep cuts weren't any different from them either.

After washing his face, and getting rid of the blood scent, Nux changed his position again and directly lay down on the ground. He was very tired...

He just fought three 3 star beasts alone. That was the reason why his armour was damaged. Or else, even when fighting with a 3-star beast accompanied by some lower-level beasts, he didn't face many problems.

Of course, he gained a lot from this fight.

His sword technique rose to the peak level small achievement stage.

‘The harder you fight, the more you grow...’

Thinking that he glanced in the direction of the inner area of the Wilderness.

‘A 4-star beast... I should be able to defeat them...’

Nux smiled inwardly before he stood up and returned to his temporary base and called off the day early.

If he was going to do what he was thinking to do, he needs to rest well and do it when he is at his peak.

...

The next day, Nux woke up and stepped into the inner area.

Three-star beasts were the weakest here, he has just walked into the area and could already see a group of five 3 star beasts sitting together.

Nux walked further and before long, he found his target.

[Fiery Flame Lion]

[Cultivation: 4 Star Beast.]

[LVL: 43]

[HP: 210/430]

[STR: 56]

[AGL: 59]

[VIT: 52]

[STM: 58]

[DEF: 55]

...

A beast with the same size as the lion, but its aura was a lot stronger; its mane was covered with flames which gave off an imposing look.

Nux used the same old tactic, activating his Steps Of Gale, he appeared behind the lion and slashed his sword.

This time, however, the beast sensed his attack and moved a little. The attack which should have hit its neck only grazed its shoulder.

Nux was surprised, not because the beast sensed it but because the damage his attack caused was very low. It was like a deep scratch.

“Roar!”

The lion attacked with its paws, Nux tried to defend it with his sword but,

\*Clang\*

His sword broke.

‘Fuck! I am doomed!’

...

Author’s Note: Okay, I know some of you might think that mc is weak since he couldn’t even defeat a beast that has lower stats than him, but you have to understand that he has very low-level equipments.

A 2-star sword can’t hurt a 4-star beast.

His best skill is only a 2-star sword skill. While the rest of the skills are even worse. Mc is strong, okay? If he had a better sword, he could defeat the beast easily.

If your question is that how can a beast be so strong without a weapon or whatever?

Then please understand that they have their claws, teeth etc as weapons and they are definitely better than a 2-star sword.

Also, remember he has only been here for around 30 days, he can't become a Mr. know it all with such a limited amount of time.

So please bear with it, next time, you will see mc defeating opponents whose stats are even higher than his.

Thank you <3

# Chapter 49

The lion attacked with its paws, Nux tried to defend it with his sword but,

\*Clang\*

His sword broke and he was sent flying. His body clashed with a tree before stopping.

“Cough...”

He coughed blood before he glanced at the lion that stood in front of him with a wary look.

‘Uggh... it hurts...’

He then looked below and sighed,

‘A hole finally appeared on it...’

Yes, there was a 10 cm hole in his armour, he then glanced at his broken sword that now looked like a dagger.

However, before he could think about anything else, a fireball was shot at him; the fireball was a lot stronger than the little 1-star parlour trick he uses.

It was dangerous.

He dodged the fireball and saw the fiery flame lion rushing toward him.

‘Heh... its fighting style is similar to mine...’ Nux chuckled before he pushed his body to the limit as he activated his Steps Of Gale and appeared beside the beast. He crouched and,

Earth Fist.

He punched its balls.

“Rooaarrrrr!”

The lion roared in pain, but Nux wasn't done, he moved and stabbed his broken sword, and the horn of the 3-star Rhino beast into its eyes.

“Rooaaaaaarrrr!!”

The Lion howled in agony as he moved its limbs randomly hoping to hit Nux but the said person had already jumped back and was staring at him.

The lion had sensed that Nux was not around him, it quickly gave up and decided to run away.

‘Haah... did you really think I will fight fairly after losing my weapon? No way! How do you think I defeated three 3 star beasts alone?’

Nux didn't have any plan to let it go, he dashed towards the beast as another rhino horn appeared in his hand and he directly stabbed it into its leg.

“Rooaaarr...”

The lion fell, crying in agony.

Losing its sight, and the ability to run, it knew its end was near. Still, it dragged its body, trying to get away if it can.

Nux then removed the rhino's horn from its eyes and stabbed it toward its heart. He knew his sword wasn't strong enough to pierce through its skin, so he directly used a better alternative.

“Roar...”

The fiery flame lion took his last breath before its consciousness fell into darkness. The flames surrounding its mane died down, signalling its end.

“ ... ”

[Ding]

[4-star beast Killed]

[Reward: 10 System points]

[Fire Affinity: +10]

Nux sighed; he then took out the horns and his broken sword, before storing the lion's body in his inventory.

This was his last fight in this wilderness for now. With his weapon gone, he had decided to go back home.

But he promised in his heart that he will return, with better skills and weapons and defeat all the beasts present in this wilderness.

Of course, even though he decided to go back, this did not mean that he would get complacent. He quickly left the area and washed his face before getting rid of the bloody scent as much as it was possible.

...

15 minutes later, he appeared in the outer area and after another hour of walking, he left the Blood Hills Wilderness and walked into Clover Town.

However, he soon noticed that people here were avoiding him. Nux frowned but then he ignored them. He was too tired to care about others.

He then entered the same inn he used before and walked towards the counter. The counter has the same person taking care of it, and when his eyes fell on Nux, they widened in surprise.

“W-Wow... are you that person who booked a room a month ago?”

“You remember me?” Nux questioned in surprise.

“Of course, I remember every customer's face”

The man lied right through his teeth, he sees countless new people every day, how can he remember every one of them? It was just that Nux's face was hard to forget that he remembers that 'handsome dude that booked a room before'.

"Nice" Nux nodded.

"But man... you really changed in a month, huh..." the man muttered.

"Changed?" Nux frowned.

"What? Didn't you notice how people are avoiding you?"

"I did, but I just thought something happened and ignored it"

"So you really didn't notice the bloodthirsty aura surrounding you huh..."

"Hahaha! The same thing happened to me when I first entered the Blood Hills Mountains but man, your aura surpasses mine by a huge margin. How many beasts did you kill in there?" Another man laughed as he joined the conversation.

"A bloodthirsty aura?" Nux muttered in confusion.

"Yes, when you take too many lives in a small amount of time, some changes happen to your aura without you knowing. It becomes more overbearing and lethal. Of course, how much your aura change depends on your experiences and the number of lives you have taken, and judging by your aura, it must be around 500 if not more." The man explained.

"Hmm, I understand." Nux nodded in understanding. He did kill quite a lot of beasts in these 30 days.

"But kid, you look really young, how did you get strong enough to enter and survive in Blood Hills wilderness alone for a month in such a short time?"

Nux smiled at his question as he smiled,

“I ploughed real hard.”

‘Well, that’s a weird way to say you worked hard...’

Nux chuckled at his reaction and then booked his room after taking a bath, he then walked in front of the mirror while only wearing underwear.

‘Damn... would you look at that...’

Nux praised himself.

This trip was really beneficial to him; his frail body was now lean and muscular. His height had increased to 1.81 meters; his muscles were tightly packed and dense, without any ounce of extra fat around them.

His posture was also a lot better than it was before, giving him an aura of a natural-born fighter.

His face looked more chiselled, improving his looks by another level.

He was most definitely a charmer.

After admiring his looks and muscles for a while, Nux smiled in satisfaction before jumping into the bed as he called,

‘Status’

# Chapter 50

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: Advance.]

[Body Cultivation: Advance.]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 24]

[HP: 620/620]

[MP: 410/410]

[STR: 61 → 64]

[AGL: 69 → 74]

[VIT: 62]

[STM: 64 → 67]

[INT: 41]

[DEF: 58 → 61]

[Blank Points: 108]

...

Satisfied by his progress, Nux nodded before he smiled in excitement and looked at the biggest gain he got in this trip to the Blood Hills Wilderness.

‘System Shop’

[System Shop]

[Cultivation Techniques]

...

[Skill Books]

...

[Weapons]

...

[Abilities]

...

He directly scrolled over everything before his eyes fell on the most important thing.

[Current System Points: 15,748]

‘More than 15 thousand! Holy Fuck!’

Nux’s eyes widened in surprise and he smiled widely.

“Ha... Haha... Hahaha”

“HAHAHAHAHA!!”

He couldn’t control himself and laughed out loud. He then moved his eyes towards the [Abilities] section.

[1 Star Abilities – 100 System points]

[2 Star Abilities – 200 System points]

[3 Star Abilities – 500 System points]

[4 Star Abilities – 1000 System points]

[5 Star Abilities – 2000 System points]

[6 Star Abilities – 5000 System points]

[7 Star Abilities – 10000 System points]

[8 Star Abilities – 100000 System points]

He didn't think much and directly jumped into 7 Star Abilities.

To be honest, he did calculate a bit and had a rough idea that he might get enough points to buy a 7-star ability, of course, the results still surprised him, but he calmed himself and directly scrolled to the ability he had his eyes on.

[Conceal]

[7 Star Ability]

[Description: When activated, no one will be able to sense the user's presence or see him if the user doesn't wish for it. Only a cultivator with 3 times more MP than the user can detect the user's presence. Or else, the user can only be detected if he touches or is touched by the user.]

[Note: If the user's killing intent is detected by a cultivator, the effect of the ability, [Conceal], would wear off]

[Price: 10,000 System Points]

This ability was really good, not only that, but Nux has also found another ability that would help him turn this ability from good to overpowered.

[Professional Killer]

[3 Star Ability]

[Description: A passive skill that controls a user's killing intent to such an extent that it could only be released after the user's attack has landed, or has failed to land on the target.]

[Price: 500 System Points]

‘A perfect combination.’

Nux thought inwardly as he smiled and quickly bought the two abilities, he felt a weird power entering and then blending into his body.

Nux then suddenly learned how to activate his [Conceal] ability, and it felt as natural as breathing or moving an arm.

The best part and the reason why Nux bought abilities instead of skills or weapons was that just like [Craving Touch] or [Eye Of Discerning], he didn't need MP to activate them.

Yes, if Nux wanted, he could use [Conceal] for as long as he desired without feeling anything.

That is how scary his ability was.

Wanting to test it, Nux activated his newly gained ability and left the room.

He went towards the cafeteria, and as expected, no one noticed him. He then picked up a fruit, he thought that he would be like an invisible man eating a fruit, scaring everyone here but to his surprise, no one noticed it.

He then walked towards the table where two men were sitting, he then picked up the spoon that was there on the man's plate and although the man frowned a little, he didn't notice anything and picked up another spoon before continuing eating.

He then disabled the ability and appeared in front of someone, however, even after activating [Conceal] again, he was still visible to him.

He concluded that if someone has already seen him, then unless he moves out of his sight, he will not be able to activate his ability again, of course,

Nux didn't complain about it since disappearing in front of someone would be a little too ridiculous.

'This... this is great!

As expected of a 7-star ability!'

He walked around and did some tests, and double-checked the description of the ability. He even tried to talk to people but no one replied. He waved his hands, lowered his pants, and even danced in front of others but no one noticed him at all.

He was now sure,

As long as he didn't touch or get accidentally touched by someone, no one would be able to see him if he doesn't want it.

'My days in the wilderness would have been much more comfortable if I had this...'

Nux thought inwardly as he sighed. Of course, he wasn't planning to return either.

He was missing his Fel, Skyla, and Lane.

He then returned to his room and lay down as he closed his eyes.

But soon, he sat up as a thought appeared in his mind.

His ability was scary, how tragic was it that you died without even knowing who killed you? How tragic was it that you died while you were sleeping?

Or worse, how tragic was it that you died while having sex and were just about to cum?

Nux shivered as he thought of the last possibility and started searching his ability section.

After an hour of intense search, he finally found something he needed.

[Sense]

[5 Star Ability]

[Description: When activated, the user will be able to sense everything around him. The range will depend on the user's MP (1 MP = 1 meter).]

[Note: The ability will be activated automatically if someone is deliberately hiding his/her presence and is in the detection range of the user.]

[Note: The ability will fail to detect the presence of a cultivator who is concealing his presence and has 2 times more MP than the users]

[Price: 2,000 System Points]

Nux quickly bought the skill and just like before, he knew how to activate it as if it was the most natural thing to do.

He then quickly activated the skill, and suddenly, images of everything less than 400 meters around him appeared in his mind. He could even see an ant carrying something huge on its back while walking towards its hole.

The images he was seeing were clear, as if he was seeing them with his own eyes, he could zoom in or zoom out however he wanted and it would still be as clear as it was before.

Not only that, he can even hear the images if he wants. That means, if he is spying on someone and that person is talking to someone else, he can even hear their conversation as if he is present there.

What Nux found even more ridiculous was that he could use his [Eye Of Discerning] along with this skill! That means he doesn't have to see the cultivator even if he wants to see his stats!!

“Holy shit... how is it just a 5-star ability? It's so cool!!”

# Chapter 51

The next day, Nux woke up at 7. He paid at the counter and checked out.

He then activated his [Conceal] skill and after some stretching, he dashed towards the capital city. This time, since no one could see him, he didn't have to stop and wait at any of the city gates, therefore within just 3.5 hours, he appeared in front of Felberta's mansion.

He then directly walked towards the bath and took a long comfortable bath before he walked into his room and lay down.

All this while, no one knew he has returned. Not even the maids who he passed through while he was walking towards his room.

He decided not to meet Fel, Skyla, and Lane since he wanted to surprise them. He then closed his eyes and looked at his gains.

2 hours later, he stood up, stretched his body and walked into Felberta's office.

He saw the familiar scene of Joyab reporting while Felberta nodding and answering when necessary.

He sat on the chair that was placed at the corner of the office and waited for the meeting to end.

Since he appeared at the time of lunch break, he didn't have to wait for too long and he quickly heard Felberta's voice.

“Alright, we will continue this after the lunch”

“As you command, Viscount Felberta” Joyab bowed and walked out of the room.

This month, he had been given a lot of surprises.

Viscount Felberta's cultivation level suddenly entered the Advanced stage and the speed was so fast that he felt that she was hiding her cultivation through some methods and finally decided to show it.

Not only that, even that boy, Nux, had suddenly disappeared but seeing how calm Viscount Felberta was, Joyab knew that she knew where he was so he didn't care much about that boy. Although he will say, now that he wasn't here, Viscount Felberta was getting increasingly better at her work so he was very happy and satisfied.

Right after Joyab left, Skyla and Lane walked into the office and they placed the food on the table.

"Viscount Felberta, please eat your food" Skyla spoke in a serious tone.

"Haah... how many times should I say it? We both belong to the same man now, can you not call me so stiffly? If not by my name, just call me Sister Felberta, or Sister Fel"

"I cannot do that, at least for now. You still have your image as a Viscount."

"Ima-"

"No, image is important for a noble like you. It won't be good if other nobles learn about your servants calling you by your name. They might look down on you and it will affect your position and influence."

"Alright alright, just keep the food here. I'll eat it in a while" Felberta shook her head and gave up. She knew it was too difficult to convince these two maids.

Especially Lane who was standing behind her and was staying silent. If it was Skyla alone, she might be able to do it, but with Lane standing behind her... The difficulty was just raised by a few levels.

The two maids then left the office, of course, they weren't gone anywhere, they were just hiding and protecting the viscount from the shadows.

Felberta then stood up and stretched her body, suddenly, Nux smiled mischievously as he stood up.

He walked towards the viscount and grabbed her from behind before pulling her into his embrace, sitting on her chair and making her sit on his lap.

His movements were so fast that the viscount couldn't react in time but when she did, she boiled in anger, "Wha- You Bastard! Who are you!? How dare you touch me!?"

She used her full strength to struggle out of his grip, but this person was too powerful, she was completely helpless against him.

Felberta continued struggling, she wanted to call for help but before she did, Skyla and Lane had already appeared.

However, right after entering the room, the two just stood there on spot and did nothing.

"Skyla! Lane! What the hell are you two doing!? Hurry and help me! No wait! Call Joyab, you two aren't strong enough to deal with him!" Felberta ordered but the maids completely ignored her and continued staring in her direction in a daze.

"Hey! Why aren't doing anything!? Hurry and call Joyab I can't stand his touch anymore!"

"Oh? Then should I not touch you then?" suddenly Felberta heard an extremely familiar voice, a voice she was longing to hear for the past month. She slowly turned around and saw a familiar and extremely handsome face and was shocked.

"Nu- Nux?"

"What? Did you forget me in just a month?" Nux smiled playfully.

"Nux!" Felberta exclaimed in surprise before hugging him tightly. Nux stood up, carrying Felberta in his arms as he glanced at the two maids.

“What? Are you two just going to stand there? Where is my welcome back hug?”

The two maids finally came out of their reverie and dashed towards him at the same time.

“Nux!”

Nux smiled in contentment as he was hugged by 3 beautiful girls.

This was pure bliss.

The true heaven.

Getting stronger and gaining new abilities might feel good, but that feeling is nothing compared to this one.

After hugging him for a good 5 minutes, Felberta finally regained her senses and questioned.

“Wait, when did you get behind me? No, when did you even enter the office?”

“I have been here for a while now,” Nux replied.

Felberta rolled her eyes, not believing him. She soon forgot her question and asked another, a more important one.

“You sure got muscular huh... I wonder if your weapon changed as well”

“Oh, he has been craving for your little sisters for a long time and is aching to meet them” Nux smiled seductively.

“What a coincident, our little sisters is the same as well”

“Sooo... shall we begin?” Nux questioned.

“Why not” The three of them answered simultaneously.

# Chapter 52

“Wait!”

Just as Nux was about to grab Felberta’s butt, Lane exclaimed.

“Hm? Is there something troubling you? Lane?” Nux questioned.

“No... you have just returned and must have worked hard for so long, I just thought that why not we three help you relax...” Lane replied.

Suddenly, Felberta’s eyes brightened as she exclaimed, “Lane you are a genius! We can use this opportunity to try and test the thing we were talking about before!”

“The thing you were talking about?”

“You don’t have to worry about it, just sit back and let us do all the work” Felberta pushed Nux and forced him to sit on the chair.

She then pulled the two maids and walked towards the corner of the office, as if trying to hide something from Nux.

“So, which one should we choose? The first one or the second one?” Felberta questioned, her voice was a little low since she was trying to hide it from Nux.

Lane blushed a little but Skyla was bolder, “Both.”

“Both?”

“Yea, both is good.” Skyla nodded.

Felberta nodded, the more they talked, the redder Lane’s face turned.

“Okay, we’ll do both, we will start with the second one since the food will turn cold and won’t taste good later.”

Skyla and Lane nodded, and Felberta nodded back.

As if on cue, the three of them turned towards Nux at the same time.

Nux smiled, he found their interaction quite funny.

Although he could hear what they were talking about if he wanted, he respected their privacy and didn’t use his [Sense].

The three of them walked towards him and suddenly, Felberta and Lane fell on their knees as they started removing his pants, freeing his little brother.

Felberta then held it in her hands gently before giving it a few gentle strokes, under the stimulation, Nux’s rod reacted and turned hard.

“Fufu~ Look at how lively he is...”

“He has been missing you for a while now” Nux replied.

Then he noticed Skyla walking towards him with a plate in her hand, as she sat on the chair’s handle.

“Alright, you must be tired after fighting so many beasts, here have some food made by me and regenerate your energy.” She then moved the fork carrying a piece of meat towards his mouth and fed him.

“Mm, your cooking as delicious as before”, Nux praised while his hand moved towards her butt.

“Ahh~” Skyla’s body jerked due to the sudden touch.

Suddenly, Nux felt something incredibly soft touching his dick, he turned to look at it and the sight he saw would never leave his memory.

Never.

Felberta and Lane had freed their large mountains, and surrounded his rod from all four directions, giving him a double boob job.

The softness he felt was on another level, countless bolts of pleasure were released into his body, when the two of them started moving, the pleasure intensified even more and his body twitched.

The sight of their erect nipples touching each other was so good that he wanted to burn it in his memory.

“Ooonhh~” Nux couldn’t control himself and moaned in pleasure.

Seeing his reaction, Felberta grinned, Lane, whose face was a little red since she was ashamed smiled as well.

They have been planning this for a while now. The one leading it was Felberta of course.

Since she has already accepted that Nux would have many more incredible women around him, she decided to keep Skyla and Lane in her faction.

The double boob job was one of the carefully thought out moves she and her faction members created after intensive research.

The two of them nodded at each other and increased their speed.

“Ooohhhhhh!!”

The sensation was too much for Nux to handle and he moaned without stopping.

As Nux moaned in pleasure, Skyla moved another bite in front of his mouth. He ate it obediently while he felt an otherworldly pleasure down below.

“Anh~” To feel more of their breasts, Nux tilted his body a little, the head of his dick touched Lane’s nipple and she moaned.

Nux felt good as well and he started moving his body a little, feeling the soft and mushy breasts surrounding his dick as much as he wanted.

His left hand played with Skyla's firm butt while she fed him lovingly.

Nux felt like he was the luckiest man alive.

He felt like a king! An emperor who was surrounded by otherworldly beauties, all loving him with their hearts.

A picture of him sitting on a golden throne, surrounded by Felberta, Skyla, Lane, and many other beauties whose faces weren't clear, appeared in his mind.

Nux's heartbeat quickened.

A thought appeared in his mind but he was then brought back to the real world by Felberta and Lane as they increased their speed. The pleasure he felt intensified even more and his rod started twitching.

Veins bulged out on his rod, Nux's back arched up, he tightened his grip around Skyla's firm butt and,

“Uuggghhh~”

\*Squirt\*

He came.

Fresh milk exploded from his dick, covering Felberta's and Lane's faces and breasts.

Felberta then licked and moved her finger throughout her face, collecting all his jizz before swallowing it all in one go.

“My my, what a huge amount~”

Although Lane didn't say anything like Felberta since she was too embarrassed, she too quickly gathered all his milk and swallowed it.

“Heyyy, I am the only one left...” Skylia pouted.

“Oh don’t worry~ Just look at his weapon, does it look like it is satisfied to you?” Felberta pointed towards Nux’s veiny erect rod with a mischievous smile while still sucking her finger that collected Nux’s milk.

“Hehe~ With how lively it is, we don’t even need to do any foreplay to start the second round”

Skyla snickered.

# Chapter 53

“Hehe~ With how lively it is, we don’t even need to do any foreplay to start the second round”

Skyla snickered as she quickly placed the empty plate on the table before rushing and kneeling between Felberta and Lane.

She then glanced at the two and they all nodded to each other, Skyla was clearly the most excited among them.

Nux was amused by the way they are acting. He was even looking forwards to what they were going to do; he felt that if it is even a little closer to how good it felt compared to the double boob job, he would be very, very satisfied.

\*Smooch\*

He didn’t have to wait for long as Skyla started the performance with a kiss on the tip of his dick.

She then started licking and cleaning it diligently, when his whole rod was drenched in her saliva, she smiled and opened her mouth, gobbling the whole thing inside.

“Oohh~”

Nux moaned in pleasure, but he then noticed that the other two haven’t even started yet.

“AAnnhhh~~”

However, before he could look down, his body shuddered in pleasure and he moaned out loud.

He barely opened his eyes and saw Felberta and Lane sucking his balls.

Combining with the blowjob he was given by Skyla, the pleasure surged up. His back arched up, and he closed his eyes. His hand held Felberta's and Lane's heads while his body kept twitching.

“T-This is too gooooodddd~ Fuckkkk~~”

Even though he just came a few minutes ago, his dick twitched uncontrollably and at the same time, Skyla intensified her suction.

“Uughhhhh~ I am cumming~~”

\*Squirt\*

As the pleasure he was feeling increased again, Nux couldn't control himself anymore and came again.

‘What!?’

He couldn't believe it himself! How did he cum so soon!? This only happened when Felberta gave him a handjob on the first night he spent with her! And that was because he was still inexperienced!

How did they manage to make him cum so quickly!?

Nux wondered inwardly.

Felberta smiled as she saw his face. This was her faction's other move, the triple blow job!

And just as she thought, its effect is even stronger than the double boob job.

“It felt really good... I am really glad to be back” Nux muttered with a smile.

“Heh, you believe our service is for free?” Felberta chuckled.

“Of course not, don't worry, I'll personally come to you all in due time to pay you all” Nux replied as he smirked.

Lane and Felberta nodded, Skylar also nodded, but she was busier swallowing all the milk she had received.

...

A few minutes later, Felberta and the others had already changed their clothes and had washed their faces, right now, the four of them were sitting inside Felberta's office as if having a meeting, then, Felberta started,

“So, let's start in a better way. Nux, how was your trip?”

“It was good; I gained a lot of things and have become a lot stronger”

“Well, I can see that...” Felberta smiled seductively, she was talking about Nux's newly gained muscles, she really liked them.

Then she turned serious and questioned.

“So, what's your next goal?”

“To get even stronger”

“And how will you do that?”

“You already know the answer to that question, Fel” Nux smiled.

“Yeah... I do...”

Hmph!” Felberta snorted.

She knew he was going to fuck some new chicks.

Of course, albeit not happy, she had already accepted it.

“So, do you want my help with anything?”

“I do, I want to ask where can I find stronger girls?”

“Yeah, I thought you would ask me that, I thought about it before and have some suggestions...”

The maids of Marquis Lana should be stronger tha-”

“Wait wait wait, How am I supposed to get maids of this Marquis Lana you are talking about?” Nux questioned and let alone Felberta, even Skyla and Lane glanced at him with a deadpan expression.

“Wha- What?”

“Do you really want me to answer that? How did you get mine, Viscount Felberta’s maids?”

“So you want me to enter this Marquis Lana’s mansion and get those maids?”

“Of course, also, unlike Viscount and Baron, one cannot become a Marquis without having cultivation; the minimum requirement to become a Marquis is Master Level, so even Marquis Lana is a good target for you.”

“I get that, but I will not repeat the thing. What after I am done with her and her maids? Enter another noble’s mansion? It’s too long, and I won’t have much time to spend with you three. We can’t do that” Nux directly shook his head.

“Then what do you want to do?”

“Tell me a place where there are a lot of strong female cultivators. It will be a lot more efficient that way.”

“Hmm... there are those cultivation sects, but if you want to get the best of the bests... The finest place would be the Royal Academy.”

“The Royal academy...” Nux muttered.

“Yes, I can provide you with a recommendation letter and you join it as a student... the students there are strong, and of course, the teachers are even stronger. If you are careful, your gains will be immeasurable.”

“Who is the strongest female cultivator there? And what’s her level?”

“After the headmaster of the Academy, the strongest person there is Consort Lauren, she is also the strongest female cultivator in the academy, as for her cultivation, she should be at Expert Stage”

“Hmm... An Expert Stage cultivator huh...”

The cultivation levels in this world were as follows:

Mortal

Apprentice

Beginner

Advance

Master

Grand Master

Expert

King

Emperor

However, this world hasn’t seen an Emperor Level Cultivator for a long while, the strongest person, the king of the Sky Fall Kingdom is a King Level Cultivator.

Nux then noticed something and couldn’t help but question,

“Wait, you said Consort Lauren, consort as in...”

“Yes, the king’s consort, but their relationship wasn’t the best so she left the palace and entered the Royal Academy.” Felberta nodded.

Suddenly, the picture of him sitting on a throne and surrounded by different beauties appeared in his mind again, he thought about it... and then took a deep breath as he questioned.

“What about the King’s wives? The Royal Harem? How strong are they?”

“...huh?”

Title: What About The King’s Wives? The Royal Harem? How Strong Are They?

# Chapter 54

“What about the King’s wives? The Royal Harem? How strong are they?”

“...”

“Fel?”

“...huh? Wha- What did you say?” Skyla, Lane, and Felberta were all shocked by his question.

“I asked how strong king’s wives are, also don’t look at me like that, I am just curious”

Felberta sighed and then answered,

“They are strong of course; I heard the strongest consort is at King Stage.”

A smile appeared on Nux’s face as he asked another question,

“Fel, what do you think about the current king?”

Not liking his tone and that smile on his face one bit, Felberta’s face turned solemn,

“Nux, it does not matter what I think about the king. He is the king, the strongest person in this kingdom. Don’t think something unrea-”

“Fel, do you really think I will do something I am not confident in? You know how scared of dying I am, right?”

“What confidence are you talking about!? How strong are you, huh!?”  
Felberta snapped in anger.

“I am very strong”

“How strong!? You might be the strongest person in the Advance stage! There are countless people stronger than you out there! Heck, even my butler is stronger than yo-”

“I am strong enough to defeat 5 Joyabs without breaking any sweat,” Nux replied, Felberta, Skyla, and Lane, were stunned but Nux wasn’t done yet.

“Not only that,

I can fight against a Grand Master Stage cultivator if we fight without weapons or have the same level star weapons.”

“ ... ”

“I can even assassinate an Expert Stage Cultivator. ”

“ ... ”

“That is how strong I am.”

“ ... ”

The three of them were dumbfounded by his words...

Just what did he do there to get so strong?

Suddenly, a thought appeared in Felberta’s mind but before she could even question, Nux answered.

“No, it is not what you are thinking. I will not touch other women without telling you.”

“... Then how did you get so strong? At what cultivation level are you right now?”

“I am still at the Advance stage”

Hearing his answer, Felberta boiled in anger, she thought that he was teasing her.

“So you are telling me that while being an Advance stage cultivator, you can defeat an Expert stage cultivator!?”

“I never said I can defeat an Expert Stage Cultivator, I said I can assassinate him. It is not the same”

“Th-”

\*Bam\*

Felberta wanted to say something but turned silent when a beast corpse appeared in front of her.

“Fiery Flaming Lion, a 4-star beast, which should have the same strength as a Grand Master Stage cultivator.”

She then heard Nux’s words and was dumbfounded.

“...Did you kill it?”

“Of course. It was so simple that I couldn’t believe it myself”

“...”

“How about this, I will fight Joyab right in front of you, then you can decide for yourself if I am lying or not” Knowing that she still did not believe him, Nux offered.

“We’ll do that then”

Felberta nodded in agreement.

Although she wanted to believe him, she just couldn’t do it! This man in front of him was twisting all her logic! How can an Advance stage cultivator defeat a Grand Master stage cultivator?

...

Half an hour ago, the break ended and Joyab returned, but when he entered and saw Nux sitting on Felberta's chair with a smile on his face, his lips twitched in frustration.

'He returned...'

"Joyab, I want you to have a friendly spar with Nux" Felberta ordered.

"Huh? Viscount Felberta, isn't he just an Advance Stage? What if I hurt him?"

"Butler Joyab, you don't have to worry about it. Let's just start. Don't worry, I won't hit you too hard" Nux chuckled.

"..."

Joyab lips touched even more.

"Yes, Viscount Felberta, I will do as you said and will have a spar with him" Joyab bowed as he glared at Nux.

How dare a mere Advance Stage boy act arrogant in front of him?

I won't hit you too hard!? Should you not beg me not to go too hard on you instead!?

'I will punch that arrogant face yours...'

Joyab was angry.

"Alright, let's move to the garden" Felberta nodded.

...

In the garden, Nux and Joyab stood in front of each other.

Joyab was very eager to start and he didn't have to wait a lot as Viscount Felberta announced,

“Start”

Joyab then activated Steps Of Gale and disappeared from his spot.

Of course, that was only for Fel and the two maids, Nux on the other hand could clearly see Joyab running towards him with a pathetic display of Steps Of Gale.

He wasn't even at the beginner stage.

A few seconds later, Joyab appeared in front of Nux and tried to punch his face. Nux just dodged lazily and slapped his face.

\*Slap\*

\*Bam\*

Joyab's body was sent flying and he passed out.

The fight ended.

Felberta, Skyla, and Lane couldn't react in time and when they did, they couldn't believe their eyes.

They only saw Joyab dashing towards Nux at an incredible speed before flying back at an even faster speed.

What in the hell happened?

That was the only question that ran through their mind.

Skyla quickly woke up from her reverie and rushed towards Joyab.

Her eyes widened when she saw his state and she shouted,

“He passed out!”

“What!?” Felberta and Lane exclaimed in surprise.

“I told you right? Even 5 Joyabs won’t make me sweat, let alone one. Do you believe me now?”

Then they heard Nux’s words and couldn’t help but believe them.

Nux was a monster.

An anomaly.

They can’t judge him with logic.

“So, My Darling Fel, I will ask you again,”

“What do you think about the current king?”

~~~Volume 1 End~~~

Author Note: This is it, folks, the 1st volume ends today,

Thank you to everyone who supported me through this journey, and I hope you will keep supporting me in the future as well~

# Chapter 55

“So, my dear Fel, I will ask you again, what do you think about the current king?”

“...are you really sure you want to do it?” Felberta questioned.

“Don’t worry, as I said, I am very scared of death. I will not act restlessly. Also, you can be sure about one thing, if I want to run away, even a king stage expert won’t be able to catch me” Nux assured with a confident smile.

Of course, he was lying with a straight face. He has no clue if a king stage or even an expert stage could detect his conceal or not.

However, he knew that he would get stronger at a never seen rate and someday not that far away, even the legendary emperor stage cultivator won’t be able to detect and defeat him.

“...mm” Felberta nodded, though she thought it was a ridiculous notion for a king stage cultivator to not be able to catch an advance stage cultivator, Nux was an anomaly.

“Fel, you still haven’t answered my question” Nux reminded gently.

Then, Felberta’s sighed in defeat as she answered,

“The current king... he is not a good king, but he is not a bad one either. He is just an average king, nothing special really.”

“Hmm? We can’t have an average king leading us, can we? How about I become the new king?” Nux spoke with a smile.

Felberta’s lips twitched as she thought inwardly, ‘Why are you even asking me? No matter what I think about the king, won’t you still plan to replace him?’

“Yeah yeah, we can’t have an average king... you should really become our new king...” Felberta replied bland tone.

She couldn’t believe she was saying it. If someone else heard her, they would be scared shitless.

What she said was nothing less than treason!

She would die if her words were heard by someone.

However, when she saw Nux’s face, she smiled inwardly,

‘It might not be a bad thing to die for him...’

Love really makes one blind and stupid...

“Fel, do you have some information about the royal harem? Some good information, a consort I can get my hands on for example.” Nux asked seriously, as if he was talking about something very important and not about cucking the king of the kingdom he lived in.

“Not really, but I can find it if you want”

“Hm? Can a normal Viscount get information like this?” Nux questioned.

“Of course not! But I have my ways” Felberta smiled.

“Can it be traced back to you?” Nux asked seriously.

“Hmm... it can” After thinking about it for a while, Felberta replied.

“Then forget about it” Nux directly shook his head. He wasn’t going to let Felberta take such a big risk.

“Fel, who do you think would know more about the royal harem?” Nux questioned.

Felberta thought about it but couldn’t come up with an answer; everyone who knew something more about the royal harem is someone important and

can't be offended. They couldn't target him/her right now.

"The head maid!" Suddenly, Skyla's eyes brightened as she replied.

"The head maid?"

"Yes, the head of all the maids working in the Royal Palace. She should know a lot of things about the royal harem!" Skyla nodded.

"Hmm... but the head maid won't leave the Royal palace easily right? How do I contact her?"

"That... I do not know" Skyla lowered her head, embarrassed.

"It shouldn't be that difficult to contact her" Felberta replied.

"No, we can't use your name" Nux shook his head.

"You don't have to. You just have to disguise yourself as a merchant from another kingdom and introduce some items to meet her. Then you can perform your magic on her later."

Nux stayed silent for a while before his eyes brightened,

"Fel, you are a genius!"

"Hmph! Of course, I am!" Felberta snorted but a small smile appeared on her face.

"Umm... but... how can any random company merchant meet the head maid of the royal palace? Won't we need some authentication...?" Lane interjected.

"..." the room turned silent.

Lane was right, how could any merchant meet the head maid? if that was possible, the head maid would have been long dead due to overwork.

“Umm... what if the merchant was introduced to her by a maid of a royal palace? Would that be enough?” Skyla questioned.

“That should be enough for the head maid to take a look” Felberta answered.

“T-Then I know a maid who works in the royal palace. We’re not that close, but I can introduce you to her... then...” Skyla suggested.

“Are you talking about Annice?” Lane questioned to which Skyla nodded.

“That might work, for Nux, it should be easy to convince that Annice you speak of, isn’t that right?” Felberta glanced at Nux. “After all, fooling innocent girls is what you are best at”

Nux didn’t know how to respond to the jab which was completely uncalled for.

He decided that it would be best to stay silent in this position and didn’t reply.

“Hmph!” Felberta snorted seeing him acting like that. She then glanced at Skyla and questioned.

“How and when will you introduce her?”

“According to her holiday schedule, her next time off would be a week later, I can introduce you to her then”

“Okay, so it’s decided, we will meet her and decided what to do later next week. Till then, Nux is all ours, enjoy to your heart’s content~” Felberta announced without even asking the man they were talking about.

Not that the man minded or anything.

# Chapter 56

“So, my dear Skyla, did you miss me when I was gone?”

Nux whispered seductively into Skyla’s ears.

Right now, he was inside his room with Skyla sitting on his lap facing him. He was caressing her whole body gently and slowly as if preparing his meal.

“I did” Skyla replied as he enjoyed his touch.

“How much?”

“A lot- Anh!” Skyla replied before she moaned out loud as Nux grabbed her butt.

She does not know why, but whenever he touches her there, the pleasure she feels instantly heightened.

“Aren’t you a lot more sensitive than normal?” Nux chuckles as he started kneading her firm but soft butt.

“T-That’s all your fault... it has been a long time since you touched me, so I am a little more sensitive than usual...”

Skyla complained with a cute pout. With her childish face, her pout looked lovable and could melt any man’s heart.

“Did you not touch yourself when I was away?”

“I did, but... but it didn’t feel as good as when you do it so I wasn’t very satisfied...”

That is also your fault!”

Skyla blamed him again.

“Hoh? How is that my fault then?”

“I used to feel good whenever I touched myself before, it is only when you started touching me, I... it felt so good that I can't satisfy myself anymore...”

Skyla replied honestly, her face was a little red, but that wasn't because she was embarrassed, it was because she felt good under his touches.

She was a simple girl, now that she has given her heart to this man in front of her, she won't be embarrassed talking about her masturbating in the past or anything like that.

“Then isn't your fault that you are a horny little girl who can't even pleasure herself?” Nux questioned in amusement.

“It is not! It was you who made me like this! I could easily satisfy myself before I didn't meet you- Anhh!” Skyla pouted even more but then Nux smiled as he tightened his grip around her butt, making her moan again.

“That makes sense. I will admit that it was my fault for making you like this but since we can't change it, how about I compensate you differently?” Nux questioned as he stood up and carried her in his arms.

“H-how will you compensate me?” Skyla questioned with a red face. She didn't really need to ask since she already knew the answer, and to be honest, she won't have anything else for the compensation.

“I will help you relax this perverted body of yours~” Nux whispered into her ears before placing her on the bed.

Skyla then felt something soft on her lips, knowing what it was, she didn't waste any more time and started the attack with her tongue. Her tongue then knocked on his teeth before entering and mingling with his tongue.

She then circled her hands around Nux's neck before pulling him even closer to her. Nux's hand didn't stay idle either; they first lowered her

uniform to free her lovely breasts before removing her skirt.

His one hand then gently kneaded her soft breasts, while his other hand travelled down and entered her panties.

Without wasting any more time, his middle finger entered her squishy canal, exploring her already familiar insides. His index finger didn't wait for long either, and once her little sister was wet enough, it penetrated in as well.

“MMnnfgg~”

His two fingers created a mess in her insides, stimulating all her weak points without any mercy.

Skyla's body shuddered in pleasure.

‘Yes! This is itttt! It feeellls soo gooddd~~’

‘I would never be able to pleasure myself like this. Only he can do it’

Skyla thought with whatever little sense she has left before giving it to pleasure and continuing moaning.

It was as if Nux knew everything about her body, the amount of time and intensity he should rub her certain weak spot, where should he touch gently, and where he should be a little rougher, everything he did ensure that Skyla feels most pleasure out of it.

“Mmmmmngggfhh~~”

Under the intense stimulation, Skyla couldn't hold any longer, her canals tightened and her body twitched before she came.

Right after she came, Nux parted their lips, allowing her to regain her breath.

“Haah... Ha... Haa...”

“Hehe, look at how tired you look, my dear Skyla, don’t forget, the real part is about to begin”

‘The... the real part is about to be- begin...’

Skyla thought inwardly and when her eyes peeked at Nux’s weapon that was standing tall, ready to march inside her canal, her breathing quickened even more.

Satisfied by her reaction, Nux sat up, placed his rod in front of her canal, and started stroking her pussy’s entrance with his dick.

Skyla’s body shuddered due to his teasing, then as if having mercy on her, Nux stopped his teasing and plunged his rod right into her canal.

“Aahh~ So good~”

Skyla moaned out loud. Her expression showed only one thing at the moment, and that was pure bliss.

Nux too felt a wave of pleasure assaulting his body, after not being boned for a month, Skyla’s vagina was tighter than usual, Nux needed some time to get used to the tightness and once he did, he pulled out his dick and then plunged it again.

“AAnnhg~”

His movements quickly turned smooth and the drilling started.

“Annhh~ Annhh~ Annhh~”

“So Annhh~ so gooodddd~”

Skyla moaned in pleasure, jolts and jolts of pleasure were released into her. Her body soon turned numb, she clenched the bedsheets hard and accepted the drilling wholeheartedly.

She felt like she was finally full.

The pleasure she felt continued increasing, she could feel that Nux was wilder than usual but she didn't complain. In fact, it felt even better.

“Annhh~ Annhh~ Annhh~”

She continued moaning, her back arched up in pleasure, eyes rolled back, and canals started to tighten. She was already sensitive since she came just now, and the pleasure she felt was already too much for her to bear.

She wanted to orgasm, but somewhere inside her mind, she knew that the moment she did, the pleasure that was assaulting her body will stop so she forced herself not to cum.

This, however, caused her canals to tighten even more, Nux, was surprised by the sudden tightness and felt that he was about to cum.

He then increased his speed even more and grabbed her juicy butt tightly.

“AAannhhhhgghhh~”

“Uggghh~ I am cumming~~”

This action caused all her efforts to be in vain and Skyla squirted like there was no tomorrow. Nux also let go and painted her walls white before falling on her body.

“It Haah... felt really Haah... good~”

Saying that, Skyla closed her eyes and passed out.

# Chapter 57

Seeing her sleeping so soundly, Nux smiled as he gently kissed her soft lips before lying right beside her.

Streams of energy entered his body after he came inside but this time, the amount wasn't enough for him to level up. Nux shook his head as he closed his eyes and relished the aftertaste of their intense and delightful session.

...

2 hours later, Nux opened his eyes; he then turned around and glanced at Skylia who was still sleeping soundly and with a small smile on her face.

Nux smiled as well and stood up, he didn't wake her up and directly left his room.

After exiting, he activated his [Sense] and quickly found her next target. He then activated his [Conceal] and started walking towards her.

After a while, Nux could see Lane walking towards the corridor and decided to follow her. A mischievous smile appeared on his face.

Lane kept walking without knowing how the person who she was thinking about right now was following her.

However, suddenly, she stopped and glanced toward the three maids who were talking happily.

Nux frowned and followed her gaze and quickly found those three maids.

“What!? Edric proposed to you yesterday!?” One of the maids questioned.

The other maid, who was a little shorter than the two nodded with a blush on her face.

“Took him a long damn time!” the first maid snorted.

“Hey hey, did you have your first time yet?” The third maid questioned excitedly.

The other maid’s face turned even redder as she nodded, “...last night”

“Kyaa!! Quick! Tell me the details!”

The maid’s face was now as red as a tomato as she shook her head cutely, “I won’t...”

“Wha- What? That’s so mean!” The third maid complained.

“Alright alright, don’t tease her now. Oriel, tell me, when are you two getting married?” The first maid questioned.

Oriel smiled a little as she answered, “A month later...”

“You will invite us to the marriage right?” The first maid teased.

“Of course... you two are my best friends after all...” Oriel nodded with a red face.

Nux then turned his head and glanced at Lane. He was surprised to see that her eyes were gleaming with excitement and jealousy as she glanced at the trio.

Nux frowned, excitement was okay but jealousy?

What was she jealous of? Wasn’t her man the most handsome and the most caring person in this world?

However, soon Nux realized.

What was different in the thing the maids were talking about?

Marriage.

Nux has confessed to his women many times, but he noticed that he hasn't proposed to marry any one of them yet. Of course, he was happy to marry them anytime, but it won't make difference if he just thinks about it in his mind.

Could they read his mind?

No.

He has to tell them himself.

Nux nodded inwardly, he promised himself that he would propose all three of them personally.

The three maids then continued talking; the third maid was persistent and continued asking Oriol about her first time. Oriol blushed each time and continued denying it.

As if remembering something, Lane quickly shook her head, she then walked towards the maid and congratulated her.

“Congratulations”

Then before Oriol could reply, Lane quickly rushed away awkwardly.

Nux chuckled seeing her acting like that and quickly followed her. A while later, Lane entered the bathroom and Nux finally decided to reveal himself.

With a mischievous smile, Nux walked in front of her, letting her bump into him.

“Huh? Lane? What are you thinking about that you are so lost in your thoughts that you can't even see your man walking in front of you?” of course, he also took the opportunity to take her in his embrace.

“Nux?” Lane didn't mind being hugged by him but she was shocked. She was sure that she didn't see him standing there. When did he appear? Was she really so lost thinking about marrying Nux that she couldn't even see him standing in front of him?

“Were you thinking about me?”

Being caught like this, Lane panicked as she replied, “N-No”

“Oh? Then were you thinking about another man?”

“No! Not at all! Why would I think about another man!?” Lane panicked even more.

She then heard Nux chuckling before picking her up. Knowing what he was going to do, Lane quickly shook her head as she replied.

“Nux, we can’t do that yet, I still have work to do”

“You can always do it later, right?”

“N-No I cannot, I still have to was-” Suddenly, Lane felt something soft on her lips and saw Nux kissing her gently.

“You can always do it later, right?” He questioned gently.

“N-no, I ha-” Again, Nux sealed her lips.

“You can always do it later, right?” he repeated, his tone even gentler.

Lane’s face turned red and her heart started beating quickly, however, as a serious person, she quickly came back to her senses and replied, “Nux, I cannot do it ri-”

He sealed her lips again.

“You can always do it later, right?” he repeated, this time, his voice so gentle that it was almost seductive.

Lane’s will to fight disappeared as soon as it appeared, however, his kisses felt good so she tried to deny it again, “I can-”

“Right?” After sealing her lips again, Nux questioned before kissing her lips a few more times without letting her answer.

“Right?” He then questioned again.

‘I can always do it later, right?’

Lane thought inwardly as she nodded with a red face. She then let Nux carry her to the bathtub and place her inside.

# Chapter 58

Lane's heart was already beating very fast due to his kisses, but now that he placed her in the empty bathtub, she felt like it will burst out.

She wasn't stupid, she clearly knew where this is going, and was inwardly very happy and excited thinking about it. It's been so long, she missed him a lot.

“You really like it when I kiss you on your lips huh...” Nux muttered.

Lane nodded shyly.

She then felt him kissing her lips again, however, this time; it wasn't just a gentle peck. Soon, something wet entered her mouth and started mingling with her tongue.

While she was enjoying the kiss, she felt Nux's hands moving. He soon removed her skirt and proceeded to do the same with her top.

He freed her soft but firm milky white breasts and after giving them a soft kneading, he removed her bra entirely and then did the same with her panty.

He then ended his kiss and stepped back. She could see him glancing at her completely naked body with his enchanting golden eyes and her heartbeat quickened.

“You are really beautiful” she then heard his voice.

Her heart beamed in joy when she heard him, her joy was then felt by her mouth and a smile appeared on it.

“And when you are naked like this, you are explosively beautiful. Ha! I am glad that I am the only man who could see this seductive sight”

Her face turned red in embarrassment hearing him.

“R-Remove your clothes... I c-can't be the only one naked here...” She then muttered.

“Mmhm, someone's getting naughty”

Hearing him chuckling like that, Lane felt even more embarrassed, however, seeing him removing his clothes, she felt better.

Nux first removed his robes, revealing his muscular body, with every muscle looking strong and divine. He then removed his pants and Lane saw his rod that was already half-awakened, perhaps aroused due to seeing her body.

Lane smiled thinking about it before her gaze returned to his whole body.

‘You are also really dashing when you are naked like that’ she thought inwardly.

She then saw him walking towards her and felt excited.

He then moved his rod and placed it on the top of her right breast, or to be more specific, her nipple.

“Anh~”

Lane didn't know what he was doing, but she felt a strange jolt of pleasure assaulting her body and she let out a moan.

Then, he started sliding his dick up and down.

Seeing the round head of his rod crushing her nipple again and again filled Felberta with a weird sense of excitement, not only that, she even noticed his dick turning even harder the more it moved.

Her little sister trembled in excitement and anticipation but Lane's eyes were glued on how his huge penis and her erect nipple collided.

“Heh... look how your pussy is crying for attention”

Lane was brought out of her reverie when she heard her voice. She glanced below and saw her juices leaking out of her canal, she blushed in embarrassment.

“You don’t need to be so embarrassed; I am your man after all. Isn’t it normal for your body to crave my body? Even my body craves your body. Look how hard and ready to go my little brother is.”

Lane nodded, still a little embarrassed.

She then felt Nux’s dick moving towards her little sister.

He then started sliding his dick up and down on her entrance, drenching his dick with her juice.

“Annhhh~”

Soon, Nux entered her insides. Lane’s body shuddered in pleasure.

Her little sister moved its wall around his dick, feeling and gobbling up the entire thing like a very hungry person gobbling the food he received.

Soon, Nux pulled his dick backwards and Lane’s insides started trembling they only calmed down when he plunged it inside again.

“Annhhh~”

Lane moaned in satisfaction, every time Nux thrusts his dick inside her.

The waves of pleasure that assaulted her body numbed her mind, and her body shuddered.

While the pleasure she was feeling was already too much to handle, she saw Nux bending down, he then lowered his head and started licking her left nipple with a seductive smile on his face.

Not having enough, he gobbled up her erect nipple before sucking it intensely as he continued licking it with his tongue.

“Aannnhhhh~”

Lane’s body was assaulted by yet another wave of pleasure. Her back arched up as she held her head and pulled her close to her body.

Nux’s other hand also started playing with her other nipple, intensifying the pleasure even more.

“Annhh~ Annhh~ Annhh~”

Lane moaned uncontrollably, her body was already numb due to pleasure while Nux kept drilling her insides.

Suddenly, Nux bit her nipple at the same time when he pinched her other nipples, the sudden and intense feeling of painful pleasure jolted her awake.

Her Vaginal walls tightened and started twitching hysterically.

“I Annhh~ I a-am Annhh~ cummmingggggg~~ Annhh~”

She then finally let go and her pussy squirted.

Being sucked by her walls and drenched by her juices, the pleasure Nux was feeling heightened to another degree, he couldn’t hold on any longer and,

“Take it all in!! Uggghhh!”

He filled her insides with his milk. His body felt weak as he lay beside Lane before kissing her lips.

“I Haah... really missed Haah... you...”

Lane muttered as she enjoyed the aftertaste.

A smile appeared on Nux’s tired face as he replied,

“I missed you as well~”

# Chapter 59

“Okay, that’s enough for the day. You can take your leave!” Felberta announced.

Joyab, who was now conscious and was reporting everything to Felberta, felt his mouth twitching.

There was still an hour before the office hours ended and he still had a few reports to make.

As expected, that man’s return is bad news, it was so good seeing Viscount Felberta working seriously but now that he has returned, she’s announcing early offs again.

What’s worse, he has become so strong in such a short time that he can’t even say anything to him now. What a frustrating and annoying man!

Of course, he didn’t dare say any of this out loud and just bowed before leaving.

Felberta smiled before she quickly stood up and rushed towards her room. She knew that Nux would be in her room, waiting for her right now. She was eager to spend time with him after so long.

However, just as she was imagining doing this and that with him, her two maids, now sisters, appeared in front of her and spoke,

“Viscount Felberta, the dinner is ready”

“What?”

“The dinner is ready”

Felberta frowned, these two should know what and where was she going. They shouldn’t disturb her right now but when she saw the sly smile that

leaked out of Skylia's serious expression for a second, she quickly understood what they were up to.

'After having your fun, you dare stop me from having mine!? How vicious!'

"Viscount Felberta, don't look at us like that, we only mean your well. As someone who has already experienced what you are about to experience, I believe you will require a lot of energy. Thus, having dinner before doing the deed is advisable" Skylia advised, barely able to hold her laugh.

"You..." Felberta was speechless.

"You dare talk like you are more experienced than me!? Mind you, while you were just peeking through the wall, I was experiencing the real thing!"

How could Felberta take it lying down!? She retorted viciously as well.

Skylia blushed, this was her dark memory, she was just teasing her, why would she be so vicious to bring that up...

Felberta was satisfied by her reaction and then replied, "You don't need to worry about me not having energy since I am more experienced in this matter than the two of you who were virgins just a month ago."

With another sly jab, Viscount Felberta walked towards her room. Skylia and Lane on the other hand just blushed in embarrassment; they decided in their heart that they would never listen to his words and tease Viscount Felberta ever again.

...

Nux, who initiated everything, was chuckling as he witnessed this scene with his [Sense]. He had to admit, the two maids were nothing in terms of wordplay when compared to the Viscount. She handled them like a boss.

He chuckled and then waited for Felberta to enter the room.

**\*Bam\***

The door was then slammed open and Felberta appeared, she then saw Nux smiling at her gently as he patted his lap.

“Hmph!” She then snorted before walking towards him and sat in his embrace before questioning, “How dare you ask Skyla and Lane to hinder me from coming? Do you not want me anymore?”

“What are you talking about?”

Seeing him acting ignorant, Felberta snorted again as she replied, “Stop acting! Do you think I don’t know my own sisters? Skyla is too clumsy to come up with something like that, while Lane is too serious to do it. The two of them would never do it until someone tells them to”

“Haah... you can’t really win against an extremely beautiful and intelligent noblewoman huh...” Nux sighed, not forgetting to compliment her ‘unknowingly’ through his words.

“Hmph! Of course, you can’t!” Felberta snorted and then smiled a little. She missed bantering like this while he caressed her body all over.

“Hey Fel, I had something to ask you about...”

Suddenly, Nux muttered.

“What is it?”

“Why did you look for a boy toy? I mean, with your looks, I won’t be surprised if you found any person to become your boy toy. Heck, some might even pay for it!”

Suddenly, Felberta blushed before replying,

“It wasn’t really my idea...”

“Hmm?”

“I actually did not need any man. After my husband died, I raised my child alone without anyone’s help. Many nobles, even Marquees asked me to be

their concubine but I rejected them all. Then my friend, Flor, told me that I was a dominant type and advised me to keep a boy toy.

I felt it was an interesting concept and agreed. I wasn't really planning to have sex with you... or at least till I was not ready for it but..."

"Hehe~ But I was too hard to resist huh~" Nux whispered into her ears.

Felberta nodded with a red face, she looked extremely cute right now.

"But the way you acted that day looked like you have done that several times... you can't underestimate a noble's acting, can you?"

"Heh! You are one to talk!" Felberta scoffed.

"Huh? What do you mean?"

"C'mon, stop acting dumb, 'V-Viscount F-Felberta, y-y-you are really beautiful' to 'My dear Fel, you look really amazing today~' do you think this is a transition one can have in just a few days?" Felberta questioned as she glared at Nux.

"Hahaha~ You caught me" Nux laughed, he decided to be honest.

"You fooled me!" Felberta stated.

"I did, however, that was the only way I could have you all to myself and you were just too beautiful for the greedy me to leave you~" Nux whispered into her ears softly.

He then picked her up and placed her on the bed before asking, "How about I compensate you with my body?"

Felberta smiled before she rolled over, changed the positions as she sat on him,

"Don't worry; I wasn't planning to let you go without compensating me with your body"

# Chapter 60

“Don’t worry; I wasn’t planning to let you go without compensating me with your body”

Felberta smirked as she rolled on top of Nux.

She might be a little mud-headed when Nux was still there with her, but last month when Nux left to go to the Blood Hills Wilderness, she thought about it with a clear mind and deduced that the change in Nux’s behaviour wasn’t natural.

He was fooling her.

The revelation wasn’t exactly a joyful one for her. Being tricked by someone you love isn’t a very good feeling and Felberta felt sad about it.

But after thinking about it a little more, she realized that Nux didn’t want to harm her, on the contrary, she benefitted a lot while being in a relationship with him.

If Nux wanted, he could have left her after she outlived her use, but he did not. Not only that, he even helped her become an Advance Stage cultivator.

Thinking a bit more, she realized that if Nux has chosen any other way to woo her, the result might not be what they were now and she would have missed out on having an amazing partner like him, who embraces her with love.

She then remembered how cheeky he was and smiled.

She will forgive him, she was very happy now, and she would like to keep it that way.

Of course, since no one knew her thoughts, nobody mentioned that her thoughts were heavily biased towards her wanting Nux to be with her but

since the conclusion she got was correct, there was no need to mention it either.

Although Nux was acting before, now he loved her and very deeply at that. So everything was fine the way it is.

However, forgiving him was one thing, using it as a chance to get her compensation was another.

Felberta quickly removed his pants and freed his little brother that was already half erect.

“Tsk Tsk, would you look at that, I haven’t even started anything and this filthy thing is already soaring to go.” Felberta snorted.

“Heh, don’t forget, this ‘filthy’ thing was in your mouth a few hours ago, and you were licking it as if it was the most delicious thing in the world”

‘H-Has he swore not to let me play the dominator role!?’ Felberta cried inwardly as her face blushed.

“Y-You are the one compensating, you are not allowed to speak!” She then ordered in a strict tone.

“As you command, my dear Fel~”

Felberta felt shivers coursing throughout her body when he called her like that.

I-It felt really good.

“Y-Yes, now stay silent...” she ordered, this time, her tone was a little weaker than before.

Nux smiled and obeyed.

Felberta’s hand moved towards his dick as she stroked the ‘filthy’ thing gently, feeling her soft hands, it didn’t take a lot of time for his half-erect dick to turn hard, ready and flaring to explore the cave.

Felberta then removed her seductive black panty, before she lifted her gown and then sat on top of him in a cowgirl position.

She then held his rod and stroked it on her entrance for a little while, jolts of pleasure assaulted her body when she did that.

‘Anhh~’

She moaned inwardly as her insides screamed in frustration and anticipation. She then glanced at Nux, who had his usual smile on his face and her lips twitched.

She knew she cannot win against him like this and would end up moaning out loud. She then ceased the game she couldn’t win and directly sat down, allowing his dick to enter her cave.

“Anhh~”

Felberta was unable to hold back and she moaned.

“Ugghh!”

However, when she heard his grunt, she felt a little better.

At least she wasn’t the only one to moan.

She then stopped thinking about these weird things and enjoyed the feeling of his dick entering her vagina. Her insides were overjoyed as they sucked his rod intensely.

When Felberta enjoyed the feeling to her heart’s content, she lifted her butt before slamming it down again.

“Ugghh~”

This time, Nux was the only one who moaned, and this brought a smile to Felberta’s face.

However, inwardly, she wasn't any better either. Jolts and jolts of pleasure assaulted her body, numbing her mind. She waited for a little to get used to the pleasure before she repeated the process.

“Uggghh~ Fuck! So good~”

Nux muttered and then grabbed her giant breasts without removing her gown.

“Annh~ D-Don't touch t-them! Y-you are the one compensating!” Felberta complained.

She was already finding it hard to control her moans, if Nux kneaded her breasts like he always does, how will she ever control herself and dominate him?

Nux chuckled at her childishness but finding it quite cute, he pulled back his hands, and placed them behind his head, glancing at her with a leisure attitude.

Felberta nodded and then moved again, and again, and then again.

“Uggghhh~ Fel, that felt good~”

Nux moaned in pleasure, he thoroughly enjoyed the sight of Felberta trying so hard to please him while her giant breasts move up and down with her momentum.

That sight was gorgeous.

Felberta, on the other hand, did not have it so simple, although her movements were now smoother and faster than before, the same could be said for the pleasure she felt.

The waves of pleasure kept assaulting her body continuously, her body was already numb and she was finding it hard to move. Her eyes were barely open at this moment.

“Aannhh~”

She couldn't hold back and moaned in pleasure. She wanted to lift her body again but she was already at her limit.

She then glanced at Nux who was looking at her with the same, enchanting but annoying smile and gave up.

It was too hard to dominate him. Also, the feeling was too good and she did not want to stop at all. She opened her mouth and ordered.

“You move now”

“But di-” Nux wanted to tease her a little but she interjected.

“You are the one compensating, listen to what I say!”

# Chapter 61

“You are the one compensating, listen to what I say!”

Nux chuckled and then quickly rolled over; the one on the top was now him.

Then without giving her any time to react, he pulled his rod out before thrusting it deep inside her without any mercy.

“Oooohhhh~~”

Felberta’s body jerked in pleasure as he smashed his rod inside her so roughly.

“My dear Fel, do I now have the permission to touch your beautiful breasts?” Nux teased.

Felberta on the other hand was already on cloud nine and wouldn’t allow the pleasure to stop in any way.

“D-Do whatever you want...” she nodded.

Nux smiled as he didn’t tease her anymore. He removed her gown and then her black bra as he bent down and started licking her beautiful nipple.

At the same time, he moved his rod out before slamming it in.

“Annnnnhh~ So So gooooodddd~”

Waves of pleasure assaulted her body from two different places, the feeling was too much for her already sensitive body and she moaned out loud.

Pleased by her reaction, Nux increased the speed of his hips moving while he started sucking on her erect nipple.

“Annh~ Annhh~ Annghh~”

Felberta kept moaning in pleasure as Nux drilled her mercilessly and at the same time, he played with her beautiful breasts.

Her body twitched uncontrollably as her back arched up and her eyes rolled back.

With what remaining strength she was left with, she used it to hug his head that was sucking her nipple before pulling it towards her mouth and forcing a kiss on him.

Nux, of course, did not refuse the lovely offer and his tongue moved quickly as it entered her mouth.

Their tongue fought for supremacy as they exchanged their saliva with each other. The scene was incredibly alluring.

Her saliva felt sweet and just as Nux was enjoying the taste; he felt her walls tightening as her legs started trembling. He then felt her grip around his head tightening.

The pleasure he was feeling also increased, knowing that they both were at their limit, Nux decided to speed things up.

“Mnnghh~ Mnnghh~ Mnnghh~”

His hips started moving at a faster rate, while his hand moved towards her erect nipple and he pinched it.

“Mmmnnhhffghhh!!”

The pleasure shot up through the roof, and Felberta’s whole body twitched uncontrollably before her juices gushed out.

“Uggghhhh!!”

Nux also performed one last thrust before he filled her insides with his jizz.

He then felt Felberta's grip weakening, he kneaded her soft breasts gently as he lay right beside her.

"That felt good~~" He muttered softly as he grabbed her from behind and touched her body all over.

"mm"

Felberta let out a soft 'mm', too tired to say anything else.

Feeling that she was tired, Nux decided to stop touching her but just as his hands were about to move away, Felberta grabbed his hand before placing it on her breast.

"mm"

She let out a small 'mm' again, letting Nux guess what she wanted to say.

Nux, of course, did not disappoint and he smiled before he started caressing her breast gently.

The two of them cuddled for a long time before they slept.

...

The next day, Nux and Felberta woke up. There was a big smile on Felberta's face.

Suddenly, Nux remembered something and apologized.

"Fel, I am really sorry"

"What happened?"

Nux didn't say anything and directly brought out the 3-star armour she gave him.

"I destroyed your family treasure..." Nux muttered guiltily.

Felberta's eyes widened in disbelief when she saw that huge hole in the armour, she touched Nux's chest in panic as she questioned.

“Are you okay? Were you hurt somewhere?”

“I am okay, but your ar-”

“Don't worry about it; it's just armour after all. It was made to protect someone, and it did.” Felberta waved her hand nonchalantly.

Nux nodded and smiled a little, he knew that she was just trying to act nonchalant, how can the armour not be precious if it was treated as a family treasure by a viscount's family?

“But how did it get damaged so badly? Even a 3-star beast can only dent it, how can there be such a big hole like that?”

“Didn't you see the 4-star beast's corpse?”

“Right, Wait! But you said that you can defeat a 4-star beast easily, how did this happen then?”

“Ahem... I said I can easily defeat a 4-star beast now; I wasn't that strong back when I fought it. Also, this did not happen because I was weak,”  
Saying that, Nux took out his broken sword.

“My sword broke when I was defending against its attack. If it weren't for that, I could have defeated it easily”

Felberta widened her eyes in horror!

How strong must an attack be to break a 2-star sword and then a 3-star armour!

What if that attack had landed on Nux!?

She then glanced at Nux with a worried look. Knowing what she was thinking about, Nux smiled as he patted her head.

“Don’t worry, as I said, I am strong. I mean, I did defeat a 4-star beast without a weapon right?”

Only then did Felberta realise that even after losing his sword and armour, he still defeated a 4-star beast and came back uninjured.

Although he had the healing potion, it can’t heal if the injury is very deep.

‘He is really amazing...’ Felberta thought inwardly.

“Hmm, now that I have destroyed your family treasure, how about I compensate you with my body?”

“Hahaha~ Why not~” Felberta laughed out loud as the two rolled over each other and started another round of pure bliss~

# Chapter 62

For the next whole week, Nux spent his blissful days under the skirts of Felberta, Skyla, and Lane.

He was really happy to get back to his previous schedule. Although he did not gain any decent improvement in his strength, the pleasure he felt and the happy smiles his women had the whole time was enough for him.

However, this did not mean that he didn't work.

A day ago, he activated his [Conceal] and left the kingdom to enter the Woods Dynasty, he then entered one of the most renowned merchant companies before sealing a few of their products.

No, he did not buy them, and he did not feel even the slightest guilt in his heart while stealing them.

'It won't affect a big company like this one if I steal some of their goods.'

Thinking that, he stole whatever he found was good and returned it.

It took him 2 days to leave, steal, and return.

After that, he spends another blissful day before it was time to meet Annice, the maid of the Royal palace who is out on her week off.

...

Right now, Nux was wearing an expensive-looking purple coloured robe. Combined with his raven hair, his hypnotic golden coloured eyes, and exquisitely carved face, he looked amazingly charming.

"Looking like that, would you even need to bribe that Annice girl at all? She might even agree to do anything for you say just so she could talk to you for a little longer. Hmph! Hmph!" Felberta snorted.

Although they didn't say anything, from the way they were nodding, Skyla and Lane completely agreed with her.

"I can bribe her with my body, can't I?" Nux chuckled, Felberta just snorted in answer, neither agreeing nor disagreeing.

"Haha~ You are so cute~ Now tell me, do I look good?" Nux questioned with a charming smile.

The three women nodded, Lane even had a blush on her face.

"Then why don't you three give me a good luck kiss on my lips?"

The three of them nodded again with bright eyes before coming forward one by one and sealing his lips.

After tasting all of their lips, Nux turned towards Skyla and nodded, "I will be counting on you today"

Skyla nodded with a determined look as if she was going into a war. With her child-like face, her expression looked very adorable.

...

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

An hour later, Skyla knocked in front of a door of an unknown house.

The door opened and a girl in her twenties appeared.

She was Annice Welche, a 27-year-old girl who works as a maid in the royal palace. She had blonde hair, crystal blue eyes, a small nose, and cherry red lips. She had cute freckles on her face and a thin body.

She was definitely above average in terms of looks, but when compared to the likes of Skyla, Lane, or Felberta, she was greatly overshadowed.

"Annice! Long time no see!" Skyla greeted with a smile.

“...” However, Annice, right now, was busy glancing at the charming man with an exquisite face standing right in front of her and didn't reply.

“Annice!” Skyla then patted her shoulder and she finally came out of her reverie.

“O-Oh! S-Skyla! Long time no see! What are you doing here?” She questioned, however she kept sneaking a few glancing at Nux as she said that.

“Nothing, I was just buying something for Viscount Felberta when this gentleman approached me and questioned the way he can get in touch with a maid working in the royal palace. I instantly remembered that it must your off right now and brought him here” Skyla explained.

“Oh! I understand” Annice nodded to Skyla before her eyes glanced at Nux and she smiled brightly, “What can I help you with, gentleman?”

“Hello, beautiful lady, my name is Dio Brando, the leader of Brando Merchant Company from the Woods Dynasty. Can we talk inside?”

Nux replied with the most charming smile he could make, of course, he did not forget to use his [Eye Of Discerning].

[Name: Annice Welche]

[Age: 27 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Advance.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 25]

[HP: 280/280]

[MP: 390/390]

[STR: 29]

[AGL: 34]

[VIT: 28]

[STM: 32]

[INT: 40]

[DEF: 28]

...

His smile seemed to have worked as Annice's face turned a little red as she replied,

“O-Oh I am so sorry! Ple- please come inside”

“T-Then I'll take my leave” Skylia muttered.

“Miss, I am thankful for your help”

“D-don't mention it” Skylia replied.

“Skylia, don't forget to meet your best friend later, come over tomorrow, we will catch up”

“Yeah, I'll come” Skylia wondered when she became her best friend but since she didn't want to sound rude, she nodded before leaving.

‘Looking at her expression, I think the first step will be easy’ she thought inwardly as she continued searching a few shops to continue her act before leaving.

On the other hand, Nux entered Annice's house and sat on a chair.

“I-I am really sorry, I don’t live here often so the furniture isn’t well maintained.”

“I understand, to work so hard that you don’t even have the time to furnish your house, you are a hardworking lady.” Nux complimented with a smile.

Annice blushed when she heard that and a small smile appeared on her face. Although he misunderstood what she meant, she did not have any intention to correct him.

“Oh! Where are my manners, let me bring something for you to eat”

“You don’t really-”

“I can’t do that; I have to treat my guests well”

Nux gave up and nodded. Of course, he used his [Sense] to see if she was doing or thinking anything weird but seeing that she was just making tea with a blush, he smiled and shook his head.

...

A few minutes later, Annice returned with tea and some cookies.

“I am sorry for the wait”

“It’s not a problem” He then drank a sip before his eyes lit up, “Delicious! Waiting for a few minutes? I can even wait for hours to drink this tea. Your hands are simply magical!” Nux praised wholeheartedly.

# Chapter 63

Annice blushed under his praises and smiled. This man in front of him was really pleasing to the eyes, not only that, he was even polite and respectful to her, unlike all other rich men who treat her like nothing.

Annice had a good impression of him.

She then sat on the other chair and questioned,

“Sir Dio, may I know your purpose for coming here?”

“You see, my Brando Merchant Company is new but I can guarantee you that the products we have are all high quality. The competition we faced in the Woods Dynasty is too much, so I decided to come here and test my luck believing that products from another kingdom might sell faster here and have more demand.

I also wanted to sell my products to the royal harem and learned that the best way to do that is through the head maid. Since I can't directly contact the head maid, I came to you.

I hope you can help me with this.”

Annice nodded in understanding, this wasn't the first time someone came to her like this, but unlike others, this person treated her politely and is good looking. She wanted to help him to the best of her abilities.

Seeing that she didn't reply, Nux continued, “Of course, I will not ask you for this favour without giving you anything-”

“Mr. Dio, please don't say that, you don't need to give me anything. Today was my last day off; I will return to the royal palace tomorrow and tell the head maid about you.

Don't worry, I guarantee you that you will be talking with the head maid day after tomorrow at the same place, at the same time. I just request you to not be late since the head maid is strict when it comes to time"

"Ah, thank you very much." Nux then took out a bottle of perfume and spoke, "Miss Annice, this is my little gif-"

"Mr. Dio, as I said, you don't need to give me anything-"

"This is not for you helping me meet the Head maid; this is for the delicious tea you served me. Miss Annice, please take it. Consider it me gaining some points so that I can come back here again someday and drink the tea" Nux replied with a smile and placed it in her hands.

Annice did not deny it this time; she blushed a little before keeping the perfume in front of her mirror.

The two then talked a little more before Nux left.

...

"Tsk Tsk, last day off my foot! According to Skyla, she should still have at least 4 days off. Tsk Tsk, to think that she would choose to annul her week off just so she could help you quicker. Having a good looking face really helps huh..." Felberta snorted in annoyance.

"Oh, c'mon, it wasn't due to my face, it was because I was gentle and respectful with my approach"

"Do you even hear yourself? Gentle and respectful? If only it was that easy!

Hmph! Won't she will be willing to sleep with you if you asked her more 'gently and respectfully'!?"

"..." Nux stayed silent.

"...she might, huh..." Felberta understood what his silence met.

“Having a good looking face really helps” Skyla muttered from behind and Lane nodded.

Nux’s lips twitched seeing the three of them acting in sync, he then calmed himself and smiled,

“C’mon girls, isn’t that a good thing? The faster we meet the head maid, the faster our plan progresses, right?”

“...That’s what the problem is.” Skyla and Felberta replied at the same time while Lane nodded in agreement.

Nux just shook his head and chuckled.

“Alright, alright, doesn’t act like this; don’t we still have two days before I meet the head maid? Shouldn’t we enjoy the time we have rather than talking about this?” Nux suggested.

Felberta’s eyes brightened as she snorted,

“Hmph, you don’t have to tell us that! We know what to do!”

...

“Miss Annice, I believe I have been honest with you and did not offend you in any way; then why are you still trying to cheat me?” Nux questioned as he glanced at the woman in front of him and Annice following her.

“W-What do you mean, Sir Dio?” Annice questioned in panic and confusion. She didn’t cheat him at all! Why would she ever try to cheat such a han- gentle man?

“I have obviously done some research before coming here and know that the head maid is a woman who is over 40 years old, how is this lady you brought here is no older than 25?

Even if you wanted to cheat me, you could have at least brought an older woman, rather than bringing this beautiful girl here”

A smile appeared on the ‘young girl’s’ face when she heard him and she replied.

“Mr. Dio, you have misunderstood. Annice did not cheat you in any way, I am indeed the head maid of the royal palace, Edda Osburn”

“Wha- What?” Nux put on a surprised expression before he completely changed his expression into an appologatice smile and turned towards Annice.

“Miss Annice, I am really sorry for not believing you”

“N-No, it’s alright...” Annice nodded with a smile.

Nux then turned towards Edda and smiled, “Miss Edda, I must admit, you have maintained yourself well. You look stunning”

He was still surprised that this girl who looked no older than 25 was a more than 40 years old head maid of the palace... well, not really.

He already knew the truth, he just wanted to compliment her and get on her good side.

[Name: Edda Osburn]

[Age: 43 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Head Maid of the SkyFall Kingdom’s Royal Palace]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 33]

[HP: 280/280]

[MP: 390/390]

[STR: 40]

[AGL: 42]

[VIT: 41]

[STM: 40]

[INT: 58]

[DEF: 37]

# Chapter 64

“Miss Edda, I must admit, you have maintained yourself well. You look stunning”

Nux praised.

Edda was a 1.65 meters tall woman, she had white coloured hair with shades of pink on the tips, this combined well with pink-violet eyes, and her tanned skin gave her a different charm than others.

Her small nose, and rosy red lips, combined with the perfect hourglass physique that rivals Felberta made her an extremely beautiful and alluring woman.

She was indeed a beauty that could be compared with Skyla and Lane, adding it with her tanned skin, she delivered a lethal blow to Nux.

Suddenly, a sound chimed inside Nux’s head.

[Mission: Fuck Edda Osburn]

[Description: Well, Fuck Edda Osburn]

[Reward: 10 System Points.]

[Warning: If the mission fails, the Ability [Craving Touch] will be disabled.]

[Time Limit: 15 days ]

Nux smiled and shook his head,

‘Mr. System, as always, you are a step too late. I have already decided to do it so your mission is pointless, Of course, I am not complaining, it’s free System Points after all’

“Thank you, Mr Dio. You look dashing as well”

Edda smiled and complimented back.

Nux then turned towards Annice and smiled,

“Miss Annice, would you please allow me to drink the tea made by your hands again?”

“O-Of course, you two, have a seat and talk, I’ll prepare the tea.” Annice nodded and rushed into the kitchen with an excited look.

“Alright, Mr Dio, although I would love to talk with you more, I still have some work to attend so let’s cut to the chase”

“I understand,” Nux didn’t waste time and a bottle of perfume appeared in his hand.

“Miss Edda, can I please have your hand for a second?” Nux asked gently as he moved his hand towards her.

A tinge of red appeared on Edda’s face before it disappeared within a second and she nodded.

Nux then gently grabbed her hand and sprayed some perfume on her wrist.

Edda moved her hand close to her nose and sniffed. The fresh scent of Gardenia entered her nose and she smiled.

“It smells really good” She praised.

“As they say, you are never fully dressed without a perfume.

This perfume is called, Fragrant Memories, one of our best products.”

Of course, he wasn’t creative enough to introduce the perfume like that; he was just imitating the person who was selling it back in the Woods Dynasty. All he did was that he changed the name, but even that was given by Felberta.

Yes, not only did he steal their products, he even stole their introduction.

Nux then boldly walked over as he touched her shoulder and sprayed the perfume on her neck.

“This is my first product and, my gift to you~”

Nux smiled charmingly as he returned to his seat. Edda was still in a daze due to his smile, but she soon pulled herself out of her reverie and replied.

“You don’t have to give anything to me”

“That is not possible. One should always appreciate beauties, and giving you this perfume is just me doing so”

“You sound like an experienced playboy”

“I am just being honest with my thoughts.”

Edda smiled a little, Nux then brought out a purple coloured gown and introduced.

“Next is this beautiful, made of pure silk, Gown. It will add 2 extra stars to the beauty of any girl who wears it.”

Nux then kept introducing a few more items as they drank the tea made by Annice.

...

An hour later, Nux decided that it was enough and stated,

“I still have a few more items with me but I know that Miss Edda is a busy person, how about we two meet tomorrow? The Silver Moon Restaurant is really popular here, how about we meet there at the same time?”

“Mr Dio, I still have some time, we can finish this today”

“We don’t need to rush it, do we? Or is it that you don’t like spending some time with me? Did I do something that offended you?” Nux questioned with a slightly sad look.

“No, of course not. Rather, meeting you was a really pleasant experience. Alright, we will do as you say and I will meet you tomorrow.” Something inside Edda forced her to agree when she saw his sad look.

She had a good impression of this man. Although she had dealt with many merchants, and many of them praised and bootlicked her a lot, most of them only saw her as a golden egg-laying hen.

Nux on the other hand looked genuine with his compliments and treated her with respect as well. Not only that, he was very pleasing to the eye.

“Then it is decided, we will meet tomorrow then.” Nux stood up and offered his hand to her

Edda smiled as she grabbed his hand and stood up, “I will make sure to free enough time and sit with you for a longer period.”

Nux smiled as he walked her to the door and answered, “I would be grateful for that”

“It was pleasant meeting you, Mr Dio”

“Pleasure’s all mine, Miss Edda.”

As Edda walked away, Nux sighed before he glanced at Annice.

“What do you think? Did I manage to get on her good side?”

“Don’t worry Mr Dio, I can guarantee that she had a good impression of you” Annice replied with a smile.

“Oh? How are you so sure?”

“Do you remember Head Maid Edda saying that she was busy and has some work to do?”

Nux nodded.

“She wasn’t just saying it for the sake of just saying it. She really had something to do. She told me that she had to leave in half an hour. However, she sat here and talked with you for an hour and was even ready to sit for a longer time.

She is a person who is very strict with time, she never does what she did unless the person she is talking to is a high ranking noble or she has a very good impression of the person in front of her and trust me, no one has managed to get into her good books in just one meeting”

Nux smiled when he heard it and muttered,

“Guess I got a little lucky then”

# Chapter 65

“Ah, Head Maid Edda, you are here, this way please”

A waiter bowed respectfully and pointed at a certain room. Edda raised her eyes when she saw that.

Although she was treated with respect everywhere she goes, it wasn't to this point.

She shook her head to shake off these useless thoughts as she walked into the room the waiter pointed to.

Entering the room, she saw 'Mr. Dio', wearing magnificent black coloured robes as he sat on the chair. When 'Mr. Dio's' eyes fell on her, they brightened as he quickly walked toward her with a smile.

“Miss Edda, you look even more stunning than you did yesterday”

He complimented as he offered his hand to her, Edda held his hand and a small smile appeared on her face. She put up some make-up on today and was glad that he noticed it.

“Mmhm, you smell really good as well,”

Nux complimented again, this time, with a meaningful smile. Edda smiled back as she replied,

“I tried your perfume today”

“As they say, a gem would only shine if it is in the right hand. I am very proud of my yesterday's self for finding the right gem for my perfume”

“Please have a seat, Miss Edda.” Nux then pulled the chair like a gentleman and offered it to her. Edda took the offer with a smile and sat down.

“Since I don’t know much about this place, I will let you order the food for us; I believe that your judgment would be the most accurate one I can get.” Nux smiled softly.

Edda ordered the food and Nux brought out a pink coloured gown and introduced,

“This is one of the items I failed to introduce yesterday, just like yesterday’s gown, this one is also made from pure silk, however, it’s designed by one of our finest tailors, the combination of the pink coloured gown and purple designs match your eyes as well. I am especially proud of this product”

“It is amazing indeed...”

...

Nux then took out a few more items and introduces them, Edda liked them all however, when Nux was about to take out another item, she stopped him and questioned.

“Mr Dio, please be honest, do you intend to sell your products to the Royal Palace through me?”

At her question, Nux smiled and answered,

“That was the initial plan, yes”

“Initial?”

“Yes, the goal is still the same but I found a more important goal right now”

“Is that goal perhaps me?” Edda guessed and asked honestly. She wasn’t stupid, although she liked the items he introduced, half of them, including the pink gown suited her, a lot.

The way Nux talked with her, the way he acted in front of her, it was as if he was giving some signals to her.

“As expected, beauty with brains, Miss Edda is sharp.” Nux smiled.

“Since you have already guessed, there is no point hiding it anymore.

I want you to be mine, Edda”

Nux declared with intense passion burning in his golden eyes. Edda was taken aback by the intense look in his eyes, her heart jumped in excitement but when she thought about something, she sighed and answered.

“Mr Dio, I am very pleased to learn about your feelings, but you have to understand that although I might look young, I am more than 40 years ol-”

“It does not matter.” Nux interrupted.

“As I said, I want to make you mine, Edda. The moment my eyes fell on you, that was the first thought that appeared in my mind. It does not matter how old you are. As long as you are not against me, I never back down”

“...”

Edda remained silent, she was too overwhelmed by the sudden emotions that welled inside her. Pleasure, happiness, doubt, insecurity... myriads of emotions attacked her mind and she was unable to come up with an answer on the spot.

And as if knowing about it, Nux continued, “Of course, I do not expect you to accept me just because I said it and I know that you will need time to think about all of this.

How about this, 2 days later, we will go on a date. We will spend a full day together, we will go shopping, watch some plays if you like, have breakfast, lunch, and, dinner together, and after that, it will be up to you.

Of course, if you still can't decide by then, we can go on another date next week and will keep on doing it until you make up your mind.”

“W-We can do that...” Edda muttered quietly.

“However, I will warn you before,” Nux then walked towards her before he moved his face closer to her and lifted her chin.

“I am a very possessive man. Once you accept me, you will be mine. I won’t let you get away from me” He whispered seductively.

Edda’s heartbeat quickened and her face turned red.

Too close!

He was too close!

As if hearing her thoughts, Nux moved away and smiled.

However, Edda, who should feel better now that his face was away, felt a tinge of disappointment welling in her heart.

“Hmm... now that we have talked about this, I think it’s time to end the meeting?” Suddenly, she heard Nux muttering and felt more disappointed.

\*Pat\*

But then she heard a sound and saw Nux bringing his chair next to her,

“But since we still have time, why don’t we spend it together? I am still hungry, shall we order food?” He also grabbed her hand as if it was the most natural thing to do. However, for some reason, Edda didn’t reject him either.

The two then spend some time together before Edda suddenly remembered,

“Ah! Mr Dio, I am very sorry that I forgot about it, I can’t go on a date with you 2 days ago. As I am head maid, if I want a day off, I need to apply it a week ago. So we will have to postpone it for a week.”

Nux did not take it to his heart and smiled, “Don’t worry, Edda, we will take it with your pace. I have already told you where I live, you can always send me a message even if you want to postpone it for another week”

“N-No, I won’t postpone it more... I-I want to go on a date as quickly as possible as well...”

Edda muttered with a blush.

# Chapter 66

“So, how did it go with the head maid?”

Felberta questioned as she sat beside Nux and stroked his large dick with her soft hands.

“Anhh~ It was good... I asked her out on a date... Annh~”

Nux replied as he moaned in pleasure. He then picked her up, placed her on his right thigh grabbed her large breasts.

“So quick?”

“Well, your man is an incredible man after all” Nux smiled as he removed her clothes and started kneading her breasts before flicking his finger on her sensitive nipples.

“Annhh!” Felberta’s body jolted in pleasure before she questioned, “So... when are you... going?”

“She told me to meet after a Oohh~ ...a week, but I believe I will receive a message to change that and I will go with her two days later”

Nux replied.

“How are you so sure?”

“Because your man is an incredible man” Nux smiled as he answered.

“Hmph! You are no incredible man, you are just good when it comes to fooling innoc- AAnnhh~~”

The Viscount wanted to complain, but her words were exchanged with her moan as Nux’s finger’s entered her cave.

“Tsk Tsk, who’s innocent? The one who was going around finding boy toys because she was bored?”

Nux teased.

“AAAnnhhh~” Felberta wanted to retort, but Nux’s fingers were causing chaos inside her walls, touching all her sweet spots, causing her little sister to shiver in pleasure.

However, she has already been with him for more than two weeks, how could she take his jab while doing nothing in answer?

“Uuggghh~” She increased the speed of her hand and used another hand to cup his balls, the pleasure Nux was feeling increased and his fingers slowed down.

“Hmph! At least I am not shameless enough to become someone else’s boy toy!”

She retorted back with an expression that expressed her victory, however, she couldn’t keep it for long. Nux already knew everything about her body, not only that, the [Craving Touch] makes her body much more sensitive to his touch.

How could she possibly resist him?

“AAAnnhhh~~”

Nux’s fingers moved again, this time, a lot faster than last time and Felberta’s body trembled in pleasure. Nux then placed her body on the bed before sliding his penis in front of her entrance.

“Unnhhh~ Don’t tease me anymore!!”

Felberta’s body twitched while her little sister screamed in frustration.

“Do you believe that your man is incredible?”

“I do! I do!” Felberta quickly accepted her defeat.

No, it was not her defeat; it was just a tactical retreat. She will give in to pleasure this one time and would soon plan another attack and think of another way to dominate him.

“Good girl~” Nux smiled before he slammed his dick right into her pussy!

“AAnnhhh~~~”

This way, another night filled with alluring moans passed.

(Author’s Note: Should I add small sessions like these as well? It will not affect the pace of the story and will also give every girl their respective screen time. What do you guys think? To be honest, I think I am a genius for coming up with an idea like this.)

...

“Alright, I am going to the Crown Plaza”

The next day, Nux told everyone, ready to leave.

“Is it really important to leave? Can’t you just stay here for 2 days?” Skyla questioned.

“Hmm? Didn’t I visit you yesterday afternoon and you were too tired to continue after 1 round? Since you send me off like that, what’s the use of staying here?” Nux chuckled.

Skyla blushed in embarrassment, she knew Nux was just teasing her but she still felt bad.

“Don’t worry, I will return in one or two hours and will visit you first, okay?”

Skyla nodded excitedly as her eyes brightened. Felberta has already had her bathroom session so she was satisfied, Lane, however, pouted.

“Heh, you should speak more if you want more, my dear Lane. If you don’t speak, how will I know how much you love and miss me?” Nux chuckled.

Lane's face turned red as she muttered, "... visit me first next time." Her face then turned even redder and she lowered her head.

"Okay~" Nux smiled seeing her like that and patted her head.

"Alright, I will be leaving now"

Nux then activated his [Conceal] and left.

Crown Plaza was an inn he booked and stayed in as Dio, this is also the place where Edda would send a message if she had a change of plans.

He then appeared in front of the inn before deactivating his [Conceal] and walked in.

"Ah! Sir Dio, someone sent a message to you"

The receptionist informed him before passing a closed envelope to him.

Nux smiled, he thanked the male receptionist before walking into his room and opening the letter.

'As expected'

Nux thought inwardly.

It was Edda's letter that told him to be ready for their date tomorrow.

Nux had already expected this.

No, it was not because he thought that he was so handsome that she couldn't resist meeting him, but because of his most overpowered ability.

The [Craving Touch]

He has been using every chance he gets to touch her, yesterday, he even spend an hour holding her hand as they talked and ate food.

Although the effect might not be as potent as with Felberta since she practically slept hugging him like a pillow and had his jizz all over her face, she would still think about him oftentimes a day while her little sister tingles in anticipation.

Then when she thinks that it will take a week for her to meet him, just the thought would be too much for her to bear, and she will send this message.

His [Craving Touch] was as overpowered as always.

# Chapter 67

The next morning, Nux smiled as he saw Edda standing right in front of him wearing the Pink coloured dress he gifted her two days ago.

The dress matched well with her pink-purple eyes, and the contrast between her white-pink hair and her tanned skin made her look very enchanting.

“I don’t know how many times I have told you this already, but Edda, you look gorgeous, especially in that dress.” Nux complimented.

He was very proud of his choice when he stol- bought the dress since it matched her eyes so well.

He then extended his hand towards her with a gentle smile, a small blush appeared on Edda’s face before she grabbed his hand and replied.

“You also look as dashing as always...”

“Thank you~ Then shall we enter the carriage?”

“Carriage?” Edda muttered in surprise.

“We can’t enjoy our date here in this city, Edda. There are many eyes here” Nux replied.

Thinking about it for a while, Edda nodded as well and the two walked towards the carriage Nux had prepared.

Like a gentleman he was, Nux first helped Edda get into the carriage before climbing in as well. Of course, Edda was a Master Stage Cultivator so she didn’t need his help, but Nux wasn’t going to miss the opportunity to get into her good books.

The two of them sat inside and the carriage started moving. Of course, Nux did not forget to hold her hand, which she allowed with a slight blush on her

face.

‘His hand feels warm...’

Edda thought inwardly before her attention was grabbed by Nux’s question.

“So Edda, although I want you to be my woman, I recalled that I don’t know anything about you, so while we are waiting to reach our destination, how about you tell me something about yourself?”

“Well, there’s nothing really special about me. My mother was the previous head maid of the Royal Palace, as for my father... I don’t know who he is...”

Her face was full of disgust when she talked about her father however; a thin smile appeared on her face as she continued.

“My mother worked very hard, starting from a normal maid, she rose and became a head maid. She then put all her efforts to train me as the next head maid. She made sure that I live a comfortable life ahead.”

Nux smiled as he recalled his mother from his past life,

“Mothers are the best huh...” there was a bit of melancholy in his voice.

He was missing his previous family...

However, he had already accepted that he had died and won’t be able to see them anymore, he shook his head and a mischievous smile appeared on his face.

“So, how is my mother-in-law right now?”

However, a sad look appeared on her face as she replied,

“She isn’t here in this world anymore...”

“ ... ”

Nux turned silent and didn't say anything more, he just tightened his grip around her hand to show her that he was here with her.

“Oh c'mon, it's our date! We shouldn't have this environment right now. My mother must be watching me from afar, she would kill me if she sees me being all emotional on my date”

Edda then smiled brightly as she chimed.

Nux smiled as well, he knew that she was sad, but he respected her for thinking about this date and trying to lighten up the room. He moved closer to her as he held her waist and smiled seductively.

“You are right, you can't be sad right now since I need to prove to my mother in law that I am indeed the best person his daughter can be with. How am I supposed to do that with you being all emotional? Huh?”

Edda blushed in embarrassment as she lowered her head.

Nux was too close to her, but since it felt really good, she allowed it.

A small smile then appeared on her face, Nux's eyes brightened up and he chimed.

“Nice! That's what I was talking about, look how beautiful you look with that lovely smile of your~ Smile more~ Moar~”

Edda smiled more as he requested, her face turned even redder than before.

...

Their carriage then entered the Lucky Spring city, their date continued as they first had breakfast and then did some shopping before having their lunch.

They also watched some plays and then entered a fate to play some games.

After they had dinner in a famous restaurant and were walking around at the night, hand in hand, Edda was looking at Nux with a weird look.

Feeling strange due to her gaze, Nux furrowed his brows as he questioned,

“Why are you looking at me like that? Am I too handsome?”

“No...”

Nux then made an exaggerated expression as he replied,

“What? Are you telling me I am not handsome!? How is that possible? You must be the first girl who thinks that! Are you sure your eyes are okay? C’mon, c’mon, tell me how many fingers are these??”

“Pfft! You are a narcissist!” Edda chuckled.

Nux then fixed his hair as he replied, “Of course I am, gods won’t bless everyone with a face like this~”

“Hahaha~” Edda laughed out loud seeing him acting like that.

“Still, why were you looking at me like that?” Nux questioned.

“I just find you weird...” Edda muttered.

“What? How?”

“Hmm, I just thought that you would drug the dinner we had and then take me to an inn and... ravish me... but you didn’t...” Her voice was very low when she said her last sentence and there was already a blush on her face.

She even looked a little...

Disappointed?

Nux halted his steps when he heard her and looked at her weirdly,

“Woman! What kind of sick thoughts run wild inside that head of yours!?”

...

Author's Note:

Okay... I have read all your comments, and we have a mixed response yet again...

So hear me out.

As our Daoist friend said (It's very hard to take your full name, the one with a great review, m talking abt you) It is completely idiotic to act all hubby hubby with an enemy, That is what I call a simp who thinks with his other head when he faces a woman, I hate that kind of MC.

But I also understand that most people don't like forceful things.

Then again, since I am a genius, I came up with another genius Idea.

\*A little Spoiler ahead\*

MC will have slaves, through the contract, he will be able to control their bodies but he will not have sex with them.

This way, he will not be a simp to the enemy and he will not \*\*\*\* his enemies as well, I believe this will satisfy the guys who do not want forceful sex.

As for cultured men with different fetishes, the next few chapters are for you~~

So Enjoy~~

# Chapter 68

“Woman! What kind of sick thoughts run wild inside that head of yours!?”

Nux couldn't help but exclaim out loud when he heard her. Is this woman okay? That thought didn't even cross his mind.

Where are they? In a novel? And why the hell does she look disappointed!?

Seeing his reaction, Edda's face turned red in embarrassment and she lowered her head. If it was an anime world, smoke would have come out of her head. That was how embarrassed she was.

Nux didn't know what she was thinking, but what he knew was that he had a chance and a big chance at that.

“Hahaha!” He laughed out loud seeing her face, causing her to get even more embarrassed.

“S-Stop! Don't laugh...” She requested.

“I can't help it! Hahaha~ I can't believe you were thinking that!”

“S-Stopp!” Edda nearly cried out.

Suddenly, she felt 'Dio' pulling her and pinning her to a nearby wall in a nearby alley.

Her heart started beating quickly and her face turned even redder. She looked at 'Dio's' face which was very close to hers in excitement and... anticipation...

“Edda~” Nux called out as he moved his face even closer to hers. Gaining her attention, he continued.

“I think you have misjudged me. When I said I want you to be mine, it did mean your body but I want your heart to be mine as well~ I want all of you~

I am not stupid enough to cheat you for a moment of pleasure and then leave you for any other stinky man to have you. I won't allow that.”

Edda's heartbeat quickened even more, she could feel that her heart was so excited that it might even burst out. She felt unusually happy when she heard 'I want all of you' and a small smile appeared on her face.

She then felt a finger lifting her chin up, she looked at 'Dio' and noticed that his face was moving even closer to her and his red lips were moving forward into a pout.

Although she looked young, she was a 40-year-old woman, she wasn't someone innocent, and she knew where this was going.

She felt different emotions assaulting her mind, fear, excitement, nervousness, and... anticipation.

Her pink-purple eyes looked into Nux's golden eyes that were filled with unconcealed desire and passion. Just as she noticed his gaze, her anticipation won and dominated all other emotions.

She closed her eyes and decided to let him do whatever he wanted.

She did not have to wait for long as she felt an extremely soft pair of lips touching her own.

As if they had their own will, her lips moved forward and mingled with his.

Nux's lips sucked her lower lip while hers sucked his upper one before they exchanged the targets.

They shared a long kiss before Edda felt 'Dio's' lips moving away. In that instant, her mind was filled with disappointment. She didn't want things to end this soon.

She wanted more~

“That being said,”

She then heard ‘Dio’s’ voice.

“Although I did not plan to drug your food and force you into my bed, I did book an inn for a night to ‘ravish’ you~”

Edda’s face turned red as she opened her eyes in surprise.

“You booked an inn!?”

“Of course, a man should always be ready, in case he gets his chance. Of course, it all depends on you. If you don’t want it, I won’t force you” Nux left the decision to her.

Edda’s thoughts moved quickly, she was really confused, she felt that everything was going too fast and she should wait for a little more time, but she also anticipated how it would feel and her heart burned with excitement, she wanted to grab her hair and pull them!

She was just too confused...

However, before she could think too much, Nux’s voice sounded in her head.

“Although I will say, if you miss today’s chance, you will regret it in the future because I can promise you that if you accept it...” Nux’s face moved closer to her as he whispered into her ears.

“These next few hours would be the best few hours in your whole life~”

Edda’s felt her entire body shuddering.

She had decided, although it was a little faster than usual, it was just because the two of them bonded well.

Her heart feels happy when she is with 'Dio'. She even wished that the time slow down so she could spend more time with him.

Yesterday, when she was working in the palace, his face was constantly appearing in her mind.

She wanted to see and meet him quickly. The feeling was so intense that she used some of her connection to force the person looking over all the holidays of palace maids to give her a holiday today.

She then glanced at 'Dio' who was looking at her with eyes filled with desire and felt a twitch inside her vagina. She then took a deep breath and finally made her decision.

She would do it!

She would experience her first night today!

# Chapter 69

Author's Note: Hehe~ the Same warning, don't read it and wait for tomorrow.

Muahahah~ I love cliffhanger~

MUAHAHAHAH!

...

Right now, Nux was standing in front of Edda and from her stiff movements and the redness that never left her face, he knew that she was nervous and excited at the same time.

He smiled and walked toward her with a smile and picked her up in his arms.

“Anh!” Edda exclaimed in surprise due to his sudden movement.

Nux then placed her stiff body on the bed and smiled in satisfaction. Looking at how she was avoiding his gaze, he chuckled as he promised inwardly to make this her best night.

Nux's hands moved towards her gown, and he then started removing it slowly. Whenever his hands touched her skin, Edda's body jerked, showing how nervous she was.

“Calm down, I am not going to eat you...” He spoke gently as he patted her head.

Then, as if he thought about something, he corrected himself.

“Well, I am going to eat you up, but you don't have to be nervous about it”

His face had the same, gentle smile as before.

Edda's lips twitched, 'Can you not contradict yourself!? I am already very nervous here!'

However, since his head pats felt good, she allowed him to do what he wants.

What she didn't notice was that her body had calmed down as she was thinking about all this.

Nux's then removed her gown and muttered in surprise,

"Hoh? A serious head maid of the Royal Palace wears a sexy black coloured bra and panty..."

That's surprising~"

Edda blushed but before she could say anything, Nux continued.

"Of course, it's a warmly welcomed surprise~ You look very alluring... Especially this combination of untanned and tanned skin of yours"

Nux complimented before he bent down and sealed her lips. This time, however, his tongue took the charge and moved into her mouth. What surprised him was that though timid, Edda's tongue responded to his tongue and the two started mingling with each other.

His hand didn't stay idle as he quickly removed her panty and the bra, freeing her large, milky breasts.

He then ended the kiss as his lips travelled down, kissing her chin, then her neck, and her shoulder before moving to her breasts.

"Anh~"

Just as he kissed her nipple, he felt her body twitch. He then kissed her pink nipple again before he started licking it.

"AAnnh~"

‘Hmm?’ Seeing her moan like that, Nux thought about something.

‘Was my theory correct? Do all large breasted women have nipples as their weak point?’

He then shook his head inwardly as his hand moved towards her little sister. He circled his finger around her entrance, teasing her to his heart extent.

“Annhh~”

Her body twitched even more, she tried moving her body a little so she could get his finger inside her pussy, but Nux just smiled and moved his finger away.

“D-Don’t do it...”

“Do what?” Nux questioned innocently.

“D-Don’t t-tease me... I beg y-you...”

Nux frowned as he glanced at her. He then noticed that her eyes had tears gathered in the corner, ready to fall at any moment.

‘Why is she so sensitive? Is it because of [Craving Touch]’

Nux shook his head and hurriedly plunged his middle finger into her pussy.

“AAAnnnnhhh~”

Edda’s body twitched a little and...

She came.

She came just after Nux’s finger entered her vagina.

“... You came?”

Nux questioned in surprise.

Holy! How is this possible!? Was his teasing a little too much for her? Was it because of [Craving touch]?

Did its effect get stronger with him as well?

But that shouldn't be the case at all. He had read everything about his abilities, and nothing like this was mentioned.

“I-I am fine... you can continue”

He was pulled out of his reverie by her voice. He then glanced at her face, and rather than looking tired after coming, her face screamed anticipation and her want for more!

This woman is a little weird... Of course, Nux did not complain about it at all.

He smiled evilly as he plunged his index finger inside as well.

“Annhh~”

His fingers then moved into her canal slowly, as he noticed the changes in her face.

“Annh~”

Every time she moans or her expression changes, he noted that spot before touching the same spot a while later and confirming his thoughts.

“Annh~ Annh~ Annh~”

Within just a few minutes, all her weak points were saved in his mind and he specifically teased those spots causing Edda to moan uncontrollably.

Our 2 times virgin has become a professional now.

After he explored her cave like an experienced adventure, Nux lowered his head and started licking her another weak point, her nipple.

“AAnnhhhh~”

Edda’s body jerked in pleasure as her cave tightened.

Nux however, didn’t show her any mercy, on the contrary, he increased his speed and his fingers created a blissful havoc inside her vagina.

“AAaaannnnhhhhhh~”

Edda’s back arched up, her eyes rolled back as her caves tightened even more.

Nux took this chance and bit her nipple,

“I ANnhh Am cumminngggggg~~~”

As if a button was flipped, her tight cave loosened and a large amount of fresh juice gushed out.

Then her body fell on the bed, breathing heavily.

Nux however, stood up as he placed his already large dick on her entrance and slide it up and down.

“By any chance, you aren’t thinking that this is it, are you?”

# Chapter 70

Author's Note: New week New Goals, right?

No.

I am too tired, plus, I already have a lot of extra chapters to give, so no goals this time.

However, I will still be counting on your support. I need the motivation to work, you know? So even though we don't have any goals, keep the power stones, comments, and reviews coming.

Kay?

Thank you~~

Gimme POWAA!!

...

By any chance, you aren't thinking that this is it, are you?"

"This haah... this is haah... not?" Edda muttered as she breathed heavily.

An evil smirk appeared on Nux's devilishly handsome face as he replied,

"Of course not!"

With that, he plunged his dick, which was drenched in her juices, inside her in one go.

"AAh-Mmhhmm!!"

Soon, however, he faced incredible tightness, and he felt that he broke something.

‘S-She was a virgin!?’

Nux exclaimed inwardly.

‘How could a Royal Palace Maid be a virgin!?’

He has learned a lot about this world and knew that although Skyla and Lane were safe because they were Felberta’s maids, not every maid was so lucky.

Most of the maids have to ‘serve’ their masters and sometimes, their master’s guests without complaining.

This was especially true for the maids of the Royal Palace which has many visitors.

Although a head maid might be able to stay safe due to her status, Edda wasn’t a head maid from the start. She started as a normal maid and her mother’s identity as a head maid wasn’t enough to protect her!

That was the reason why Nux was so surprised.

As for her initial stiffness, he just thought that it might be her first time with someone she has taken a little liking to.

However, feeling her tight walls clenching around his dick, as if wanting to engulf it, he knew he was wrong.

He wanted to hit himself for being so inconsiderate.

“Are you hu-”

He wanted to ask if she was hurt, but seeing her arm covering her eyes as she bit her lips, he knew she was trying her best to hide the pain.

He felt even guiltier but respected her decision of not letting him know and acted ignorantly.

He then bent down and started licking her pink nipple, trying to overshadow pain with pleasure.

“Mmhhmm~”

His method seemed to have worked as he heard a little moan, he continued licking her nipple as he kneaded her other breast with his hand.

“Mmhhmmmm~”

However, as soon as he touched her breasts, she moaned even louder.

‘Hmm? Is her weak point not her nipple but her breasts?’

To test his theory, he kneaded her breasts even more and felt her vagina starting to twitch and release more juice.

‘So that’s how it is’

Confirming his theory, Nux continued kneading her two breasts and soon felt her walls loosening a bit.

He stayed like that for a little more time before he pulled his dick and slammed it deeper.

“AAnnhhh~”

Edda moaned as her walls tightened around his dick.

“Ugghh~” Nux grunted in pleasure as well.

Her tight walls felt amazingly good.

It took him a while to get used to her tightness before he pulled his dick outside and thrust it inside again.

“AAnnhhh~”

After getting used to her tightness, Nux's movement turned smoother and he increased his thrusting speed slowly.

“AAnnhhh~ AAnnhhh~”

“AAnnhhh~ AAnnhhh~ AAnnhhh~”

The more he drilled into her, the more Edda moaned. Her body twitched uncontrollably and accepted his thrusts without any resistance.

She was too tired to resist it anyway and since she can't do anything, she decided to trust her body to him.

Of course, the waves and waves of pleasure that kept assaulting her mind and body continuously further strengthen her thoughts.

‘It feels too good~’

She never thought that she could feel this good~

And it was increasing even more!

‘He was right! I would have regretted it my whole life if I had rejected it today~~’

“AAnnhhgghh”

Suddenly, a jerk of pleasure assaulted her body; she then noticed that ‘Dio’s’ grip around her breasts had tightened which filled her body with a weird feeling of pain and pleasure.

Nux felt her walls tightening and her pussy twitching, knowing that her body was already sensitive and was about to cum again, he lifted her legs and placed them on his shoulder before drilling his huge red even deeper.

“AAnnhhh~ AAnnhhh~ AAnnhhh~”

His movements turned a little rougher but Edda didn't care as she moaned in pleasure.

Her thoughts were already a mess. This just felt too good!

Too good that she was unable to think straight!

She just knew that she had to keep moaning so that the pleasure would never stop.

Never.

So she just moaned.

Nux felt her cave tightening to the limit before it suddenly loosed, her body arched up, eyes rolled back, and her tongue popped out.

She came.

“Ugghh~ I am cummingggg~”

Seeing her perfect ahego face, Nux’s dick twitched and it painted her walls white.

His body then fell beside Edda’s and a huge wave of energy entered his tired body along with a very familiar sound which sounded inside his head.

He knew very well what this energy was very excited.

He finally levelled up and completed his mission.

[Ding!]

[Mission Accomplished]

[Mission: Fuck Edda Osburn]

[Description: Well, Fuck Edda Osburn]

[Reward: 10 System Points.]

[Warning: If the mission fails, the Ability [Craving Touch] will be disabled.]

[Time Limit: 15 days (11 days left)]

[Mission Status: Completed]

[The reward will be sent to System Inventory]

Just as he was about to open his status he heard a weak voice...

“H-How about you t-tie my hands to the corner of the b-bed for the next round...?”

“W-What!?”

# Chapter 71

“H-How about you t-tie my hands to the corner of the b-bed for the next round...?”

“W-What!?”

Nux just couldn't believe what he was hearing. He felt like he was just hallucinating but when his eyes fell on Edda who was looking at him with a tired and excited look, he knew he wasn't.

What the hell is this woman talking about?

Is she okay?

What kind of weird woman did he entangle himself with?

Just to be sure that he wasn't dreaming, he questioned.

“C-Can you repeat what you said? I believe I misheard it”

“I a-asked if y-you could t-tie my hands to the c-corner o-of the b-bed for the n-next round...?” Edda answered, her voice shaking this embarrassment.

‘Woman! Do you still have the galls to look embarrassed!?’

Nux exclaimed inwardly.

He was now sure he wasn't dreaming...

‘Alright... let's not act pure and shocked anymore...’

Suddenly, Nux smiled inwardly as he replied.

“A-Although t-this is a weird request... i-if you really like it then... why not?”

Who was he kidding? As a true man of culture in his last life, how could he not know there were people with weird tendencies and fantasies?

Although he was initially shocked due to her request, after he registered it completely, his mind was filled with joy.

Who doesn't have the fetish to tie their partner up and have sex with them!?

He did!

Of course, he couldn't do it with Fel, Skyla, and Lane since they wouldn't like it and he wouldn't force them.

Edda, however, was different; she was the one who requested it of her own free will!

Nux would be an idiot to let go of this one in a thousand chance!

Although he did not have a rope with him, he quickly took out one of his old robes and tore it.

He then held Edda's hand before tying them up against the wooden pole that was there in the corner of the bed (It might not be easy to imagine so here's the picture of that bed).

Edda's heart started beating faster when he tied her hands like that.

She still couldn't believe that she asked something like that... It was only not Nux who was surprised, she was surprised as well.

She didn't know what happened, she just felt that she wanted to try it out and something in her body compelled her to say it out loud.

With both her hands tied to the poll, Nux forced Edda to sit on her knees, in a doggy position with her ass facing him.

“Aaaannhnnh~~”

Then without giving her any time to rest, he plunged his dick into her pussy.

She had already orgasmed 2 times, so her body, especially her little sister was extremely sensitive. Just this one thrust was enough for her pussy to convulse and have a minor orgasm again.

Her body lost all her strength but since her hands were tied to the poll, and she was on her knees with Nux standing behind her, she couldn't do anything and was forced to accept everything Nux drilled into her.

However, rather than being lost or feeling bad about this situation, a weird sense of pleasure assaulted her body, this pleasure was a lot more potent compared to the pleasure she felt during the last session.

‘H-He is treating me like an object!’

A sudden voice rang inside her mind and she couldn't believe that it was hers.

She just cannot believe she would feel so much pleasure with something like this.

However, there was no trace of any of her confusion on her face, instead, there was a big smile pinned on it. Seeing her smile, Nux confirmed something.

‘She’s a closet pervert and she doesn’t even know it!’

He was excited, so excited due to this thought that he increased his speed and slammed his dick inside her without any mercy.

“Hahaha~ I didn't know Edda, the head maid was a pervert who feels pleasure when others treat her like an object!”

“Aannhh~ Aannhh~ Aannhh~”

Even if Edda wanted to retort or disagree, the pleasure she was feeling was too much and she was too busy moaning so she didn't reply.

However, seeing that wide smile on her face, she didn't look like she disagreed either.

'I will make her accept her perverseness'

Nux swore inwardly. His face looked very determined.

Who didn't want a serious-looking, but a pervert inside, big breasted beautiful woman?

Everyone did!

Nux then grabbed her butt but then,

“AAannnnnnhh~”

She suddenly moaned loudly and her walls, which were already numbed due to pleasure and weren't moving much tightened.

'Is her actual weak point her butt?' Nux questioned inwardly.

'Wait... could it be...?'

Suddenly, he thought about a possibility.

To test it out, Nux raised his hand and,

\*Slap\*

“AAannnnnnhh~”

Slapped her butt, Edda moaned in ecstasy, as her walls tightened even more and the smile that was on her face widened.

Nux then raised his hand again,

\*Slap\*

And he slapped even harder, and this time, Edda moaned even more loudly and her walls tightened even more.

A big smile appeared on Nux's face as he confirmed his thought.

'She's a masochist!'

\*Slap\*

He spanked her ass again.

“AAannnnnnhh~”

Edda's pussy convulsed as she came again...

This time, she was very tired and didn't look like she could continue.

However, just as her eyes were about to close,

\*Slap\*

“AAannnnnnhh~”

Nux spanked her again and she was jolted awake due to pleasure that coursed throughout her body.

“How can you sleep while I have yet to cum?”

Nux snapped angrily.

“I-I am sorry!”

Edda's cave tightened when Nux scolded her, she didn't know why, she felt pleasure assaulting her body as he screamed at her.

She... She really liked that feeling...

Nux also smiled as he continued drilling and spanking her tired body.

He used her as an object without caring about her feelings and she relished that feeling, even though she knew that she could pass out at any moment now.

She had already orgasmed around 7 to 8 times, even though she was a cultivator, she couldn't continue any more. Nux also sensed it as he spanked her one last time before unloading all of his milk inside her pussy.

“UUgghh! Here, take it all!!”

After he unloaded all his jizz inside her, Edda came again and then passed out from pleasure.

Another wave of energy entered Nux's body as he finally freed her hands before lying beside her and opening his stats.

# Chapter 72

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: Advance.]

[Body Cultivation: Advance.]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 24 → 28]

[HP: 700/700]

[MP: 450/450]

[STR: 64 → 72]

[AGL: 74 → 82]

[VIT: 62 → 70]

[STM: 67 → 75]

[INT: 41 → 45]

[DEF: 61 → 69]

[Blank Points: 108 → 120]

...

His strength increased again, Nux smiled as he saw that. He then glanced at Edda who was lying beside her, her breathing was calm, and there was a small smile on her face.

She looked like a dignified lady right now.

Nux couldn't even believe that this beautiful and serious looking woman was a perverted masochist who gets off from pain but then he smiled as he realized that he will be the only person who will see this lovely sight.

Who didn't want a serious-looking outside, but a pervert inside, big breasted beautiful woman, who is also a masochist?

Everyone did!

Nux chuckled inwardly as he closed his eyes.

...

“Ahhh! I am late! I am late!!”

The next morning, Edda was roaming around the room, panicking.

“Oh c'mon, you are a head maid, so what if you are a little late? Does it really matter? Just ask your subordinates to lie and cover for you” Nux waved his hand nonchalantly.

“It doesn't work like that! Many maids are eyeing my position, I have already made an exception after leaving the duty without prior notice and now I am late! I am sure there will be many maids who will take advantage of this”

Nux shook his head and sighed.

‘I guess there is competition everywhere...’

Then a mischievous smile appeared on his face as he replied.

“To be honest, I would be happy if you lose your position as a head maid, then you could quit your job and become my maid-wife”

“Hmph! Can you even pay me as much as the Royal Palace do?”

“Do you think that Royal Palace of yours can provide you the pleasure I can?”

Do you think they can tie you up and make you orgasm so many times that your whole body turns numb?”

Edda’s face turned red and her little sister trembled in delight as she remembered yesterday night.

“My, little pervert~”

“I am not a pervert!”

“Do you even believe what you say yourself?”

“...yes I do...” She replied in a meek voice, clearly not very confident in herself.

“H-How about you t-tie my hands to the corner of the b-bed for the next round...?”

Nux mimicked her words and questioned again,

“Do you really, really believe what you just said before?”

“...” Edda just lowered her head and decided to ignore him. However, soon she recalled the previous problem and panicked again.

“I am late! I am late! I am late!”

“Alright, Alright, don’t act like this is the end of the world. Trust me, just get ready, I will make sure you return in time”

Although she didn’t know how would he help her, Edda decided to believe him and nodded. She then quickly washed her face before she wore her maid uniform and was ready to leave.

“Although you do look gorgeous in this as well, the gown you wore yesterday is still the second best”

Nux complimented.

“Hm? Second best? What’s the best then?”

Nux looked at her as he could not believe that she asked that and replied,

“You being naked of course.”

He said as a matter of fact.

Edda blushed, Nux then stood up and extended his hand towards her, Edda smiled and grabbed his hand, two of them left the inn but rather than walking towards their carriage, Nux directly brought her outside.

“Why aren’t we sitting in the carriage? How are we going to leave?” Edda questioned with a frown.

“You are already late, we can’t use a carriage.”

He then picked her up and ran towards the capital city.

“!!!” Edda’s eyes widened in surprise when she saw his speed.

‘What level is this!? A Grand Master? No, an expert! T-This is absurd!’

The speed was so fast that she had to hold him tightly if she didn’t want to fall off.

Within just 15 minutes, the two of them entered the city.

“W-What stage level cultivator are you?” Edda questioned.

“Late Level Advance Stage”

“Hmph! If you don’t want to tell me, you don’t have to!” Edda snorted.

Advance stage? Advance stage my ass!

“Hmm? But I am not lying. Shouldn’t you be able to sense that?” Nux questioned.

After a moment, Edda’s eyes widened even more.

Advance Stage!

He was actually an Advance Stage Cultivator!

‘Then how did he run that fast!?’

‘Ahh! I don’t have time to think about this! I am late!’

It was a good thing that he was strong, she will ask how is he so fast even though he is just an Advance Stage Cultivator later.

Right now, she was Late!

She then quickly rushed towards the palace but suddenly, she was stopped by Nux’s next question.

“Edda, what time are we meeting today?”

A small smile appeared on Edda’s face as she replied.

“After 9 in the night”

“Oh? In the night? But what fun thing could we possibly do in the night?”

Then a perverted smile appeared on Edda’s face as she replied,

“The night is the best time if you want to have a fun time with a woman”

“Heh... you really are a pervert aren’t you?” Nux chuckled.

“...maybe I am”

Edda admitted.

She admitted that she might actually be a pervert...

# Chapter 73

Being a Head Maid of the Royal Palace comes with its own perks. Since you are a head maid, you aren't anyone's personnel maid and you don't have to be ready to serve them 24/7.

After 9 in the night, the head maid is free of her duties and is even allowed to leave the Royal Palace.

Of course, just like Edda, most of the head maids in the past had already given their life to the Palace and don't have anything to do even after they are free of their duties.

Therefore, they stay just in the room that is given to them by the Palace.

Today, however, it was different for the current head maid of the Royal Palace.

Just as her work ended, Edda rushed outside and left the castle.

Walking a little more, she arrived at the assigned site and a big smile appeared on her face when she saw the person she has been yearning to see for a long time standing right in front of her.

“As always, you look stunning, my perverted maid”

Nux complimented with a smile.

“I am not a per- thank you...”

Edda wanted to retort to his remark but she soon remembered what she did last night and just accepted the compliment, ignoring the pervert part.

Seeing that she was not refusing him calling her a pervert, Nux smiled before he extended his hands towards her.

Edda smiled as well and the two then sat inside the carriage Nux booked beforehand.

This time, their destination was The New Malia City, no, there is nothing special about the city, Nux just thought that he shouldn't book the same inn every day since his partner is the head maid of the Royal Palace.

Also, he still hasn't seen many places in this world so this was a good chance to see more.

However, unlike last time, when he was very excited when he left the capital, this time, his face had a solemn look.

Edda wanted to question what happened but he just raised his hand and told her to wait.

...

“Stop the carriage”

As the carriage entered a deserted alleyway, Nux ordered the driver to stop.

“What happened?” Edda questioned again.

“Two Master stage Cultivators are following us, both of them are stronger than you”

Nux informed, he had already sensed that these 2 people were following them, more precisely Edda as he only noticed them when Edda appeared.

He did not take action since they were still in the capital and the person behind them might send some more later.

Therefore, he waited...

Waited until he reached a deserted alleyway like this one...

Also, he will admit that it did feel really good acting all-knowing like those novel protagonists.

“Wait for me here, I will deal with them”

While Edda was panicking, she heard Nux’s voice.

“What can you do!? You are just an adv-”

She wanted to retort but then remembered the speed he showed her this morning and decided to stay silent.

She knew he was a lot stronger than a normal Advance Stage Cultivator.

Nux then activated his [Conceal] before he leisurely walked out of the carriage and walked into one of the houses.

Then he entered a room and saw a man covered in black, looking outside through a window, clearly having no idea that one of his ‘targets’ is standing right behind him.

[Name: Colby Wilton]

[Age: 55 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Assassin of Marquees Bannermane House]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 36]

[HP: 280/280]

[MP: 390/390]

[STR: 44]

[AGL: 44]

[VIT: 46]

[STM: 42]

[INT: 62]

[DEF: 39]

...

‘Bannermane House...’

Noting that name, he chopped the back of his neck with his hand, causing the man to lose his consciousness.

Nux then reactivated his [Conceal] and walked into another house, doing the same with another man.

He noticed that he was an assassin of another house, the Hardwick house which was also a marquee house.

He then dragged his body into the room where he dealt with another assassin before he walked towards the carriage and called Edda.

Edda just couldn’t believe how calmly and leisurely ‘Dio’ dealt with these two assassins, it was as if they couldn’t even see him!

“They are from Bannermane and Hardwick house; do you know why these two marquee’s houses are after you?” Nux questioned.

“How do you know these two are from those houses? I am sure that they would never tell you that even if they are dead” Edda questioned in shock.

Nux then pointed at his golden eyes as he muttered,

“I can see everything with these eyes, I don’t need them to tell me that”

In the darkroom, Nux's golden eyes shined, Edda was enchanted by their beauty and was brought back by Nux's question.

“So? Do you know why these two marquess' houses are after you?”

“I do, these two houses want to get close to the royal harem through me.”

Nux was shocked when he heard her, wasn't their goal similar to his? Nux felt weird when he thought about it as he muttered.

“You must be very loyal to the kingdom, huh... You are refusing them to the extent they even sent assassins after you. I am sure they must have promised you some benefits before.”

“Hmph! Loyal my ass!”

“Hmm? Didn't the palace provide you with everything you have right now? Shouldn't you be loyal to them?” Nux questioned.

“Things aren't as simple as you think, Dio. Did I not say I don't know who my father was? That was not because he died too early, it was just that...”

Edda didn't need to say anymore. Nux also understood what she meant and stayed silent, however, a question arose in his mind.

“Then how di-”

“I just rose in ranks too quickly. My body was still not fully mature so they decided to wait. They just failed to calculate that I would become a head maid so soon therefore I was saved” Edda replied.

“And could give my first time to you...” She then muttered with a small smile on her face.

# Chapter 74

“And could give my first time to you...” She then muttered with a small smile on her face.

“Hehe~ And thanks to that, I could get a perverted maid all for myself~~” Nux replied with a chuckle and Edda blushed.

“So, if you are not loyal to the palace, why are you not helping them? I mean, I am sure they must have offered you some benefits before using these methods right?”

“That is true, and I would have normally helped them, but I just don’t get a very good feeling about their house. I have this weird feeling that tells me not to trust them and since I was small, I have always trusted this type of feeling...” Edda answered.

“Hmm, I understand” Nux replied as he nodded continuously, at the same time, a big weight was lifted from his head.

“So? What do we do with them?” Nux questioned.

“Hmm? What else, let’s just burn their bodies” Edda muttered as if it was the most natural thing to do.

“Huh? What about the dro- I mean, the loot?”

“Loot?”

“Yeah? Won’t you take the things that belong to them? You didn’t even check their storage ring!”

“Hmm? Why would I do that?”

“Huh? Is it not normal to loot someone you killed?”

“...why would you do that?”

“Umm... so that we don't waste resources?”

“...you really are a merchant huh?”

‘No! I am just a perfectly logical man!’

Nux wanted to scream but he just smiled.

He then took their storage rings and his eyes widened in disbelief.

‘A 3-star sword and two 3 star daggers!’

What kind of rich assassins were they?

One had to know that a 3-star armour was a family treasure of a Viscount!

Nux then showed the weapons to Edda and seeing the normal look on her face, he knew these weapons were not as rare as he thought!

No, maybe a person who spent her entire life in the royal palace has a weird perception.

Nux nodded to himself before he stored the weapons and the money he got in his inventory. He also kept the storage rings in his pocket.

Yes, since the inventory and the storage rings were both space-related things, the storage rings couldn't be stored in the inventory.

Edda then slit the two assassin's throats and then burned their bodies. Nux thought that the scene might disturb him but was surprised that he didn't feel anything at all.

He then thought that it was maybe because he got used to blood when he was in the Wilderness and shrugged.

It was a good thing.

He knows that he has to get used to blood, and even killing humans with his own hands.

He has still not killed any human and has decided to avoid it till it was required.

He was not a bloodthirsty brawny man who is out for blood; he is a refined man who would not kill unless it is required.

As Edda dealt with the bodies professionally, the two of them then entered the carriage as it drove to the New Malia City.

...

The New View Inn, inside a room.

Right now, Nux was standing inside the room, waiting for Edda to return from the bathroom.

Since she directly came to him right after her duty ended, she was still sweaty and she requested to take a bath before they started their blissful night.

Nux told her that it was okay, but she was adamant about it and quickly walked towards the bathroom. Nux then shook his head in defeat as he walked into the room and waited for her obediently.

Half an hour later, Edda, whose hair was still wet entered the room wearing a white coloured bathrobe. Her cleavage was completely visible and the loose bathrobe did nothing to hide her perfect hourglass figure.

Her white-pink wet hair combined with her tanned skin looked very appealing.

Seeing her standing at the door with a blush on her face, Nux couldn't control himself any longer and quickly walked toward her.

“Hehe~ This might be your new second best look, wearing a loose bathrobe, combined with wet hair. Look how enchanting you look~”

He then quickly pulled her closer to him as he complimented her.

“What is the bes- oh...”

Edda wanted to question what her best look was if this was the second best but then she quickly remembered what he told her last night and stayed silent with a blush.

Nux smiled seeing her acting all shy, he couldn't control himself any longer and quickly sealed her lips with his own.

Her lips were still a little cold and wet since she had just taken a bath, this further improved the pleasure Nux felt as he sucked her juicy lips greedily.

Her sweet scent combined with the soapy scent assaulted his nose as he pulled her even closer to her.

Edda too sucked on his lips without thinking anything else. His strong embrace felt safe to her.

She sucked his lower lips when he sucked her upper one and then shifts to the upper one when he sucks her lower lip.

The more she kissed the better she felt, finally, she couldn't control herself any longer and her tongue entered his mouth to find its prey.

Finding it in an instant, Edda's tongue attacked Nux's tongue that was already prepared to receive the attack as the two tongues mingled together.

While they shared a deep kiss, Nux's hands moved towards her butt before he grabbed them roughly.

This sent a jolt of pleasure into Edda's body, causing her tongue to lose its advantage and fell into an unfavourable position.

Seeing his method working, Nux continued kneading her butt roughly, sending jolts and jolts of pleasure into her body.

Under the assault, Edda's tongue couldn't fight any longer and was quickly subdued by his tongue.

Satisfied with his victory, Nux ended the kiss as he picked her up before walking into the room and placing her on the bed.

He then lied on top of her and just as he was about to seal her lips again, her voice sounded.

“Wait!”

“Hmm? What happened?” Nux questioned with curiosity.

Suddenly, ropes appeared in Edda's hands and she replied with a blush.

“H-How about you t-tie a-all my limbs to the c-corner of the bed today...?”

# Chapter 75

“H-How about you t-tie a-all my limbs to the c-corner of the bed today...?”

Nux was dumbfounded.

After all that serious talk about her father and how things work in the royal palace, combined with how this woman was blushing in front of him just a few minutes ago, Nux somehow forgot how big of a pervert this woman is!

Seeing that this woman even prepared the ropes beforehand, Nux couldn't help but shake his head.

This woman is unredeemable.

A completely lost cause.

What a perverted fellow!

Nux shook his head again.

It seems like he would not have to use the ropes he brought today...

Hmm? Did he bring the ropes?

Of course, he brought them!

He might have forgotten about her being a pervert due to all their talks before, but he had still planned to make Edda accept her perverted nature openly and make her completely his.

Who wouldn't want a beautiful, serious-looking outside but actually a perverted masochist inside, big breasted woman all for themselves?

Nux for sure did!

An evil smile appeared on his face as he grabbed the ropes.

“Heh! I was looking forward to how long can you hide that perverted nature of yours but it seems that you can’t do it for very long”

Edda blushed a little but when she felt her right hand being tied with the pole on the corner of the bed, her heart started beating quickly.

Nux then tightened the ropes to the limit and Edda felt a weird jolt of pleasure being released into her body.

Her heartbeat then quickened even more when her left hand was tied to the other pole.

“Haah... Haa... Haa...”

A few minutes later, when all her limbs were tied to every corner of the bed, Edda was breathing heavily with a red face and a weird smile on her face.

“Tsk Tsk, look how happy you look, you perverted masochist!”

Nux then roughly removed her bathrobe, revealing her tanned and untanned body. Her milky white breasts moved up and down as she breathed even more heavily.

This woman wasn’t wearing anything under her bathrobe, meaning that right now, she was completely naked.

Nux felt his soldier twitching a little, but he controlled himself for the greater good and glanced at her little sister.

Since her legs were tied to the two corners of the bed, her pink cave had nowhere to hide even if she wanted to.

When Edda felt his gaze on her vagina, she tried to close her legs but since her legs were tied, she couldn’t.

Her breathing turned even heavier and her smile widened as well.

Nux saw her juices leaking uncontrollably, then without giving her any prior warning, he plunged his index, middle, and ring finger inside her pussy.

“Annhh!!”

Without waiting, Nux’s three fingers assaulted her weak points roughly, creating a mess inside her walls.

“Annhh! Annhh! Annhh!”

Edda’s body was already very sensitive when he tied her like that, her pussy had already started twitching when she felt Nux’s gaze on it, combining all this with his three fingers entering and creating havoc inside her insides, the pleasure she felt soared uncontrollably and she moaned without stop.

“Hmph! Look how are you moaning like a slut! A serious and elegant head maid? Pfftt! More like a slut in heat!”

Nux felt her canals tightening as he said these words, he quickened his fingers’ movement and her back arched up.

“AAannhhgghhh~~”

Her walls tightened to the limit before her juices gushed out uncontrollably.

“Tsk Tsk, you came just with that?”

Nux questioned as he glanced at her with eyes filled with disdain.

“Haah... Haa... Haa...”

Edda’s body twitched when she saw his gaze, she wanted to answer but was too busy breathing and gaining her breath.

“Hmph! Don’t think I am done with just this!”

Nux then lowered his pant and a huge 8-inch rod popped out. Seeing her breasts moving up and down while imagining all sorts of things he would

do to her later, Nux's weapon turned hard without him doing anything.

His deepest and the darkest fantasies are about to be fulfilled, how can his dick not be ready at such a crucial moment?

He then placed his hard dick in front of her entrance and rammed it inside.

If it were Skyla, Lane, or Felberta, he would have given them some rest because they had just come, and would have glistened his dick with their juices so that it would slide in without any difficulties.

With Edda, however, he did not need to do anything like that, the rougher he was with her, the better she felt. And it didn't take a long time for his theory to be proven.

“AAnnhhhhghhhhh~”

With just one thrust, Edda moaned in ecstasy as her back arched up, however, since her limbs were tied, she couldn't move any other part of her body.

This further increased the pleasure she felt.

After enjoying the feeling of her squishy walls tightening around his rod, Nux started moving his drilling without caring how Edda felt.

His pace quickened as his hips moved back and forth at a very high speed.

“Annhh! Annhh! Annhh!”

Although Nux didn't care how Edda felt, the woman was already moaning uncontrollably as waves and waves of pleasure assaulted her body, her mind was turning numb for pleasure, however, before she could lose her mind completely,

\*Pat\*

“Annhh!”

She was jolted awake as Nux slapped her breast.

She then felt Nux's movement slowing down before it turned frustratingly slow.

She glanced at Nux and seeing her smile that was filled with contempt and mockery, her heart raced.

She then saw him opening his mouth as he questioned.

“Hey, Edda, how about you become my personnel pleasure toy? A mere object whose sole purpose of existence is to satisfy all my sexual needs? Hmm? How about it?”

# Chapter 76

“Hey, Edda, how about you become my personnel pleasure toy? A mere object whose sole purpose of existence is to satisfy all my sexual needs? Hmm? How about it?”

Edda’s whole body twitched weirdly when she heard his words, but before she could think what to answer, Nux started increasing his speed again.

However, the rate at which his speed was growing was very slow.

This filled her with a sense of frustration and anticipation...

\*Pat\*

Soon, however, her mind was jolted awake as Nux slapped her nipple again. A weird pleasure assaulted her body but before she could relish it, she heard his voice.

“Haa? Do you think you can keep me waiting? Answer me quick! Are you willing to be my pleasure toy?”

Edda wanted to stay silent but she then felt Nux’s dick moving out of her cave.

Looking at his expression, it looked like he was really about to pull out his dick and end this session if she did not answer his question.

He only wanted an answer and a positive one at that.

He did not care about her feelings at all!

Being treated like that, Edda’s pussy twitched again, she didn’t know what was happening and was unable to understand her own body, but she knew one thing.

This man, standing right in front of her, was perfect for her.

A perfect partner...

And a perfect master...

As if having a will on its own, her mouth opened and,

“Y-yes, Haah... I am Haah... willing to be Haah... your pleasure toy...”

“Good” An evil smile appeared on Nux’s face as he rammed his dick into her pussy.

“AAnnhhhhghhhhh~”

Her pussy walls convulsed uncontrollably and with just one thrust, she squirted and drenched Nux’s dick with her juices.

“Uuggghhh!!”

The unusual tightness amplified the pleasure he felt, his hips twitched in pleasure and his milk burst out, painting her walls white.

“Haah... Haa... Haa...”

Nux then pulled out his dick as another wave of energy entered his body, he however did not care about it.

His weapon was still hard, he wanted to enter her pussy again but when he glanced at her body tied that way, he knew he could do anything he sees fit to her and won’t face any resistance.

Then his eyes fell on her milky breasts moving up and down as she breathed heavily.

An evil thought then appeared in his mind.

He then crawled towards her breasts before he sat on her waist and placed his dick on her right breast.

When Edda saw the smile he had on his face, her body twitched in anticipation of what is about to come and she couldn't help but look forward to it.

Nux then slides his dick into her cleavage before pressing her two large mounds of flesh on his dick.

“Uggghhh~~”

Nux grunted in pleasure as his back arched a little, after he got used to the soft sensation that surrounded his rod, he started moving his hips back and forth and waves after waves of pleasure assaulted his body.

“T-This feels too good!”

Nux moaned in delight as his speed increased. He then tried tilting his body and his dick's head rubbed on her left upper boob.

“Edda! Your breasts feel too good~”

Nux complimented in delight. Another idea welled inside his mind as he quickly moved his hands from her breasts to her erect nipples.

“Annhh!!”

He pulled her nipples roughly and a weird wave of pain and pleasure assaulted Edda's already sensitive body. Nux however, didn't care about it; he started rubbing her two nipples together and smiled.

He looked like a curious kid who got something to play with and was doing all sorts of experiments with it.

“Annhh!!”

Edda continued moaning in pleasure, her moans filled Nux with satisfaction, he then joined her two nipples before holding them with his right hand as he kept thrusting.

\*Pat\* \*Pat\* \*Pat\*

“Annhh! Annhh! Annhh!”

With his left hand now free, he started slapping her big breasts, making Edda moan in ecstasy.

Her little sister, that was already numb in pleasure, started releasing her juices again, an unbearable tickling sensation welled inside her pussy but since her legs were tied, she couldn't close her thighs to control it.

With her pussy lying bare, cold air assaulted it, amplifying the tickling sensation. A perverted smile appeared on her face as she started moving in what little ways her body can move.

A few minutes later, Nux too felt that he was about to cum, he released her nipples and grabbed her breasts, mushing them towards his dick tightly, and he then strengthened his thrusts.

“Uuggghhhh~~”

The pleasure overwhelmed his thoughts, his dick twitched before he released all his fresh jizz all over Edda's breasts and face.

With her tied hands, Edda couldn't do anything to clean the jizz that was on her face, she moved her tongue to clean the milk that was around her mouth but was helpless with the places where her tongue couldn't reach.

Powerless to do anything, she glanced at Nux who was smiling at her, when he noticed her gaze, his smile widened even more as he replied.

“Consider this your master's first gift to you. I will not allow to you clean my milk from your face for the entire night, this will constantly remind you of your position as my personnel pleasure toy.”

His words caused her pussy to twitch and a perverted smile appeared on her face as she nodded.

Nux then moved closer to her face before he placed his huge dick which was drenched in his cum in front of her mouth as he ordered.

“Now, kiss your master’s cock to show your undying submission and pure devotion”

As if hypnotized by his words, Edda lifted her head as she moved her lips forward, planting a soft kiss on Nux’s dick.

A satisfied smile appeared on Nux’s face as he ordered again.

“Now lick it clean”

Edda did as she was told as started licking his rod as if it was the most delicious thing in the world.

His half-erect dick stood up again, and when she was done with her cleaning, Nux moved towards her already tired pussy and rammed his cock inside.

“AAnnhhhhhhhhhh~”

# Chapter 77

A huge amount of energy entered Nux's body as he came inside Edda's already numbed pussy 5th time.

His eyes then fell on Edda who had finally passed out and he smiled.

He came a total of 6 times today, as for Edda, she lost count on how many times she came but it was well above 10.

This was very easily the most blissful night she had.

After around 8 orgasms, her little sister was so sensitive that with just a few thrusts, she would cum again.

With her hands and legs tied, she had no way to resist Nux's advance and couldn't help but continue taking in all his merciless drilling.

In the end, she couldn't even think, she just moaned and moaned while her body did whatever Nux commanded as if it was a Divine order.

Finally, after Nux unloaded another load of fresh milk inside her, she couldn't take it anymore and passed out.

Of course, after cumming 6 times, Nux was tired as well and even though his eyes noticed some new things, they felt heavy and closed down as Nux entered the dreamland.

...

The next day, after dropping Edda in front of the Royal Palace, Nux quickly returned to Felberta's mansion, he then took a nice bath before he returned to his room as he sat on his bed and sighed.

'Status'

[Congratulations to the host for rising to a Master Stage Mana Cultivator from an Advance Stage Mana Cultivator.]

[INT: +10]

[Blank Points: +20]

[Congratulations to the host for rising to a Master Stage Body Cultivator from an Advance Stage Body Cultivator.]

[STR: +5]

[AGL: +5]

[VIT: +5]

[STM: +5]

[DEF: +5]

[Blank Points: +10]

[Harem Seal: Unlocked]

[Slave Seal: Unlocked]

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Master.]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 28 → 30 ]

[HP: 790/790]

[MP: 570/570]

[STR: 72 → 81]

[AGL: 82 → 91]

[VIT: 70 → 79]

[STM: 75 → 84]

[INT: 45 → 57]

[DEF: 69 → 78]

[Blank Points: 120 → 156]

[Ability: Craving Touch, Eye Of Discerning, Conceal, Sense, Professional Killer, Harem Seal, Slave Seal]

[Harem Members: Felberta Alveye, Skyla Hale, Lane Wyne, Edda Osburn]

Several messages popped appeared in front of him however, he ignored them all as his eyes fell on his two new abilities.

As if understanding his intent, a screen containing the description of these abilities appeared in front of his eyes and Nux couldn't help but widen his eyes in shock.

[Slave Seal]

[Active Skill]

[Condition to apply: ]

[The Target has to agree to become the Host's slave. It will not matter if the target changes his/her decision later. The Slave Seal can only be removed by the target if the target's MP is 10 times higher than the Host's. The host can remove the Slave Seal whenever he wants]

[Effects: ]

[Once a Slave Seal is used on a Target, he/she will be unable to resist the host's commands. no matter what the commands are.]

[If the target even thinks about betraying the host, intense pain will assault his/her body until he/she stops thinking about it if he/she does not, the pain will keep on increasing continuously. The target will not die under this pain]

[The host can talk with the targets no matter how far they are]

...

[Harem Seal]

[Condition to apply: ]

[The Target has to agree to become the Host's woman wholeheartedly. If she changes her decision later, the Harem Seal will be removed. The host can also remove the Harem Seal whenever he wants]

[Effects: ]

[Once a Harem Seal is used on a Target, the host and the harem member can feel each other's emotions to a certain extent. The host can disable and disable this function any time he wants.]

[The harem members will gain resistance to curses or debuffs, and until the curse caster's MP is 2 times higher than the Host, the curse or debuff will not work]

[The Harem Members will be able to use any of the host's active abilities for 1 hour once a 1 day]

[The host can talk with the Harem Members no matter how far they are]

‘This... This is so amazing!!’

The more Nux read about these abilities, the wider his smile got!

These abilities are the perfect solution to the thing that worries Nux the most!

The [Craving Touch], his own ability.

Nux does not like the fact his women would turn into some sort of dick craving sluts if he isn't there for them for a while. Although having sex with them improves this a lot, it is still not the perfect solution.

Nux has been trying to find some sort of ability or cultivation technique to resist it but he couldn't, but now, the system gave it to him itself!

What a good system he has!

He then rushed towards Felberta's office and barged in.

“..?”

Joyab frowned when he saw his attitude, but when he remembered how he defeated him so quickly in the past, he knew that he couldn't do anything against him and shook his head in disappointment.

However, this time, even Felberta was just as confused as him. She knew that Nux wouldn't do something like barging into her office while she is working without any reason, but when she saw the excited look on his face, she sighed as she realised that it wasn't something bad.

However, she still looked forward to what made him so excited that he directly rushed into her office without caring about anything.

Nux didn't know what was going on in their mind, right now, he was so excited that he even forget that these were office hours, else, he would have surely waited a few more hours before coming here.

Nux then walked towards Felberta as he placed his hand on her table, looked into her eyes, and questioned.

“Felberta Alveye, Are you willing to be my woman with all your heart?”

# Chapter 78

“Felberta Alveye, Are you willing to be my woman with all your heart?”

“You basta-”

Joyab was about to burst out in rage when he heard what Nux said, however, Felberta raised her hand, signalling him to stop.

“Joyab, we will have an early break today”

Viscount Felberta commanded.

“But Viscoun-”

“Joyab, we will have an early break today”

Viscount repeated, her tone was stricter than before.

Joyab gritted his teeth before he glared at Nux, who from the moment he entered the room, treated him like air.

Joyab then bowed before he left the office, however, he was very disappointed.

He had no clue what kind of magic that boy toy had done on the Viscount. Not only that, now he had even dared to say something so outrageous to her face! How dare he!?

‘Willing to be my woman!? You are nothing but a Boy Toy!’

However, he knew that he wasn’t strong enough to face him, not only that, when he left the room, he noticed the change in that boy’s aura.

He was a Master Stage Cultivator now!

An 18-year-old Master Stage Cultivator was already a genius level, what would happen if the people knew that he was just a mere mortal 2 months ago!?

They might die due to shock!

Now that he thinks about it, that boy is indeed a suitable man for the Viscount.

He is handsome, he is powerful, and most importantly, he has monstrous potential!

When he thought about it, Joyab felt a little better in his heart and he walked into his room.

...

On the other side, Nux sat on Felberta's chair with her sitting on his lap as he questioned again.

"Now that the hindrance is gone, let me ask you again, Felberta Alveye, Are you willing to be my woman with all your heart?"

"I am"

Even though she was confused about what was happening, Felberta did not think too much and answered honestly.

"Good"

Suddenly, she felt peculiar energy entering her body, though the feeling she felt was similar to how she gained strength after their session, she knew it was something different.

Soon, the energy merged with her body, although she felt something change inside her, she wasn't sure what it was.

'How is it?'

Suddenly, she heard Nux's voice inside her head. She turned toward him and noticed that his mouth wasn't moving but she could still hear his voice in her head.

'Hehe~ Does it feel weird hearing my voice even though my mouth isn't moving?' Nux questioned jokingly and Felberta nodded.

'You can do it as well, try talking to me'

Nux replied.

"Hello"

'Don't open your mouth you dumbo, try talking in your mind while thinking about me'

Nux explained in the best way he could.

For him, using his every ability is as easy as using his limbs, he did not know about others, but he guessed that it shouldn't be that hard.

'Hello? Nux? Can you hear me?'

His thoughts were proven right when he heard Fel's sweet voice in his mind, he smiled as he replied.

'Yes, My darling Fel, I can hear you loud and clear'

'W-What is happening? How can we talk like this??'

Felberta questioned in surprise.

'Don't worry, I will explain everything in a while'

He then glanced at a certain area as he called,

"You two, come out, I have something important to discuss'

Skyla and Lane then appeared in front of him. Nux smiled as he asked the same question again,

“Skyla Hale, Lane Wyne, are you two willing to be my women with all your heart?”

“Yes, I am!”

“Mmhm”

The two of them replied simultaneously and felt the same energy that entered Felberta’s body entering their body.

...

It took Nux half an hour to explain to the three of them about his newly gained ability.

He also told them about his [Slave Seal] ability, Lane offered to test it out but Nux rejected her without any second thoughts.

Although he trust his system a lot, he was still scared about testing a dangerous ability like the [Slave Seal] on her.

He then made them practice all his active abilities and helped them whenever they needed.

Within the next hour, his women were capable of using, [Eye Of Discerning], [Conceal], and [Sense] without any problems.

Nux smiled in contentment as he saw that.

This [Harem Seal] is great. Now that the girls can use his abilities, they would be a lot safer than before.

Especially with the [Conceal], which can easily save their lives.

Just how cool is that??

Not only the ability to share, even the ability with which they can talk which each other no matter the distance is really helpful. Just imagine how easy information transfer will be in the future.

“Oh, right! I completely forgot about it, Fel, how much do you know about, Bannerman and Hardwick house?” After their training ended, Nux questioned.

Hearing his words, Felberta’s face turned serious as she questioned back,

“Why are you asking about them?”

“They sent assassins after Edda because she rejected cooperating with them with their plan, and before you ask, I’ll tell you that she and I don’t know what their plan is”

“This isn’t an information a normal Viscount should have, but I’ll tell you about i-”

“Wait, before you start, let me ask since I always forget to ask this question, why do you know something a normal Viscount shouldn’t?”

“Hmm? Cause I am special of course”

Felberta answered as a matter of fact.

“My Darling Fel, I know you are special, you are very special to me. But my question is, why do you know something a normal Viscount shouldn’t know? What is it that you are hiding from me?”

# Chapter 79

“What is it that you are hiding from me?”

Nux questioned as his golden eyes shined.

“Why would I hide anything from you? The only reason I know of some inside information is that I am the part of The Thousand Information Chamber”

Felberta easily revealed what others would label as high class certified information.

“The Thousand Information Chamber? What is that?”

“As the name suggests, it is an information association, nobody knows where its headquarters are, or who the leader is, however, everyone who knows about The Thousand Information Chamber also knows that if they want any sort of information, the Chamber would have it”

This was Felberta’s trump card, this is the reason why she survived as a beautiful lonely milf without being targeted by others.

She could easily find anything about anyone in this kingdom and could destroy him/her and all this was just when she is just a mere member of the chamber, she didn’t know the benefits the higher-ups receive but she didn’t care either.

She was happy where she was, she wasn’t that power-hungry. Just let her live in peace and she will live without disturbing anyone.

Now, however, the things are different, now she was with Nux, whose goals were... well, too high and ambitious.

“Then how did you join this Information Chamber?” Nux questioned.

“I did not join them, I was invited by them. Marques Everly who should be a higher up in the chamber invited me”

“T-That should be a classified information right?”

“What?”

“Marques Everly or whatever being a higher up in the chambers?”

“Well, yea, that, and the whole mention of the Thousand Information Chamber is a classified information”

“O-Oh...”

Nux nodded. Then a serious look appeared on his face as he questioned,

“Can it be traced back at you if you find the information about the Bannermane and Hardwick house?”

“Every time I search for information, it can be traced back to me. This time, however, you don’t have to worry about it. I had to pass this information to someone else a few months ago so I don’t need to search for anything about it.

I already know about these two houses. However, I don’t have any proof, no, actually, even the chamber doesn’t have any proof”

“What? Even the chamber doesn’t? Damn, they must be some big shots huh...”

“Well, that might be true... but according to the chamber, they are nothing but fools... however, they are dangerous fools. I suggest you do not go against them”

“Why is that...?”

“According to the information gained by the chamber, these two noble houses are spies that belong to another kingdom. Their forces are a lot

stronger than normal Marques, and the two of them plan to start a rebellion to usurp the throne.

Of course, since the kingdom doesn't have any proof, they can't do anything to them.

That is the reason the Chamber called them fools. If the king could be overthrown by some marquees, he would have long died.

However, their strength and the support they have from the other kingdom make them dangerous fools.”

Felberta replied with a solemn look.

“Haah... looks like Edda has some troublesome opponents...” Nux sighed as he shook his head.

“No, not really, Edda is the head maid of the palace. Though it might not seem like much, inside the Royal Palace, even a Duke won't be able to harm her”

“What!?”

“Of course, why else do you think she is alive after rejecting the two marquees? That's because she never leaves.

However, things are not the same as before, you two can't continue your sessions in the palace, so you would have to leave the place and as long as you leave, the Bannermane and Hardwick house won't let you two off.”

There was a trace of worry on her face, but when she remembered how strong Nux is right now, combining it with his [Conceal], she calmed down.

The Strongest Force in a Marquees' house is an initial Stage Grand Master, even if they are stronger than a normal Marquees house, the best they would have is a Late-Stage Grand Master which is already very unlikely.

The Expert Stage is already at the level of the dukes, so they shouldn't have an Expert in their ranks.

However, even if they have an Expert Stage cultivator as their strongest, they wouldn't send him/her to deal with Edda just because a normal assassin failed.

As for a Master or Grand Master Stage Cultivator, Nux could already defeat them when he was at the Advance stage, defeating a Grand Master Stage cultivator would be even simpler since he had risen to the Master Stage.

“Hmm, that won't be a problem, I will meet her again tonight, at the very best, they will send a few more assassins, I'll deal with them today and later when I put the [Harem Seal] on Edda, she would be able to use my [Conceal] and we won't face any major problems”

Nux nodded, thinking the same way as Felberta.

As for the two houses planning to go against the kingdom? He couldn't care less about it.

# Chapter 80

After spending the rest of the blissful day with Skyla, Lane, and Fel, Nux activated his [Conceal] as he left the mansion.

He then walked towards the Royal Palace, he was extra careful on his way and had already activated his [Sense].

Although Edda and he had decided to meet at a certain point, he scratched that idea and directly walked towards the Royal Palace. Edda was his woman now, there is no way he is going to let someone hurt her.

He appeared in front of the gates and waited for Edda to leave, 15 minutes later, Edda left the Palace wearing her Maid uniform and with a serious look on her face.

Nux compared that face with the one she had yesterday when she was tied up and couldn't help but chuckle. He felt happy that he was the only one who could see her hidden perverted side.

He then used his [Sense] and found that there wasn't anyone following Edda, he sighed and followed Edda all the way to the meeting point before appearing in front of her.

“Haah... you are making me repeat myself huh...” Nux sighed as he glanced at her.

“You look really stunning, My perverted maid~”

“It's you who made me a pervert...” Edda replied with a smile on her face, unlike last time, she readily accepted her identity as a pervert without any resistance this time.

To be honest, she didn't care about it now either, the pleasure she felt yesterday when she accepted being his 'Pleasure Toy' was so out of this world that she would do anything to experience that again!.

Not only that, this man treats her so well even though she was his ‘pleasure toy’ that she has nothing to complain about! She was really happy and thankful to the god that she met him.

“Let’s go?” Nux then extended his hand forward, just like how he did the first day she met her.

“Why do you still treat me like that?” Edda questioned with a confused look.

“Hmm? What do you mean?”

“W-Why do you treat me all gentlemanly like that?”

“Hmm? Because you are my woman?”

“W-Woman? B-But didn’t you say that I was your ‘P-Pleasure Toy’?” Edda replied with a deep blush.

Nux blinked his eyes in shock before he laughed out loud.

“Hahahaha~”

“W-Why are you laughing?”

“Hahaha~” Nux did not bother replying and continued laughing.

After laughing for a good 3 minutes, he calmed down before he moved toward Edda as he raised her chin seductively,

“My perverted maid, I just like to be gentlemanly with my ‘Pleasure Toy’ as well, do you have any complaints about it?”

Edda’s heartbeat quickened as she replied meekly, “N-No”

“Good”

Nux then grabbed her hand as the two of them entered the carriage Nux had prepared beforehand before they left the Capital City.

Inside the carriage, a serious look appeared on Nux's face as he grabbed her hand and questioned,

“Edda Osburn, are you willing to be my woman with all your heart?”

“I-I am already your object. I belong to you”

Her weird answer was somehow accepted as a yes by the system and a mysterious energy entered Edda's body.

“W-What is that?”

‘Don't worry, I'll explain everything one by one’

She heard Nux's voice directly into her mind and she jerked in surprise.

...

On the other side, in a hall that was a lot bigger than the one in Felberta's mansion, two men, one with blonde hair, a handsome face, wearing black robes with brown coloured patterns, and the other with a silver hair, equally or even more handsome face, wearing pure looking white coloured robes with golden patterns, were sitting on two thrones side by side, indicating that they had the same status.

These two were Heath Hardwick and Alger Bannermane respectively.

A woman was wearing skin-tight black clothes that covered all of her body, and a mask that concealed her face, kneeling in front of them, seemingly reporting something.

“So, can you tell me why that bitch Edda isn't dead yet?”

The silver-haired man, Alger Bannermane, questioned.

“Yes, what happened to 8 and 9, why haven't they reported back yet?”

Heath Hardwick questioned as well.

“We can’t find any traces of 8 and 9, we checked our secret meeting place as well, but they aren’t there either. I believe they are either killed or captured.”

“Captured!?” Alger shouted in surprise, there was a tinge of fear on his face.

The woman frowned when she saw his behaviour, but her face returned to normal and she continued.

“Don’t worry, Marquees Alger, even if they are captured, we have trained them not to say anything else. They will kill themselves the moment they get the chance”

The Marquees finally sighed in relief when he heard those words, as for caring about his subordinates’ life?

What villain does that?

Never read anything like that.

Suddenly, heath Hardwick frowned as he questioned,

“That Edda is a Master Stage Cultivator, 8 and 9 are both Master Stage Cultivators as well, even if they can’t beat her for some reason, running away shouldn’t be a problem? How were they defeated? Is someone helping her?”

Alger’s eyes widened as well before he clapped his hand and a man wearing a black coat over a white shirt appeared,

“Greeting, Marquees Alger”

He was Marquees Alger’s butler.

“Who was the person travelling with Edda?”

“Marquees Alger, he is the leader of some sort of merchant company that comes from Wood’s Dynasty and is here to sell some items.”

“I don’t care about his company or whatever, what is his name?”

“Dio Brando”

# Chapter 81

“Dio Brando”

“Dio Brando... how strong is he?”

“Not that strong, he is only an Advance Stage Cultivator, however, he looks younger than 20, even if that is not his actual age, he shouldn't be older than 30, so he must highly talented.” The butler answered.

“It doesn't matter how talented he is, he can't help Edda if she is surrounded by 2 master stage cultivators, which means there is someone else helping her! Is that person from the Royal Palace?”

“To defeat 2 Master Stage Cultivators, a Grand Master Stage Cultivator is required, although the Royal Palace has a lot of those, they are still considered elites. The Royal Palace won't send an elite to protect a mere head maid.” Heath muttered.

“Then do you think that Dio is strong enough to defeat 8 and 9?” Alger questioned.

“Hmph! Don't joke! How can an Advance Stage Cultivator fight against a Master Stage Cultivator? I believe it is someone protecting that man behind the scenes and he protected that bitch just because it was convenient”

Heath answered.

Alger nodded at his answer, finding it quite logical.

He then glanced at his butler and ordered,

“Search this man called Dio, I want to know everything about him by tomorrow, don't miss anything out”

“As you command, Marquees Alger.”

The butler bowed in agreement.

“Alright, since the discussions are over, I will be taking my leave”

Suddenly, the woman in black stood up and left the hall without waiting for their approval.

When Heath and Alger saw how rude her behaviour was, their lips twitched in frustration.

However, they could only grit their teeth in frustration, they can't do anything else to this rude woman, if they could, they would have already raped her a few times before killing her brutally.

Although it might look like they were the leaders here, they had no right to control or order this woman around. They can just make a request, if she feels like it, she will do it, or else she will ignore them completely.

This woman works for the kingdom that supports them and she only takes order from that kingdom.

Not only that, the two believed that this woman reports everything they do to the kingdom and keeps an eye on them.

The moment the two of them try to do anything funny against the kingdom, they would know about it and the two of them will be easily dealt with.

“Sigh...” Alger sighed in frustration and then shook his head in defeat.

...

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Master.]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 30 → 31 ]

[HP: 810/810]

[MP: 580/580]

[STR: 81 → 83]

[AGL: 91 → 93]

[VIT: 79 → 81]

[STM: 84 → 86]

[INT: 57 → 58]

[DEF: 78 → 80]

[Blank Points: 156 → 159]

[Ability: Craving Touch, Eye Of Discerning, Conceal, Sense, Professional Killer, Harem Seal, Slave Seal]

[Harem Members: Felberta Alveye, Skyla Hale, Lane Wyne, Edda Osburn]

[Slaves: None.]

The next morning, Nux smiled when he saw his status again, he then glanced at Edda who was wearing her uniform in rush.

Just like usual, the two of them were late, and Nux will have to carry her and run to the Royal Capital.

“Let’s go!”

After wearing her clothes, Edda exclaimed before she extended both of her hands towards Nux. Nux chuckled when he saw her acting like that before

he picked her up and the two of them checked out of the inn.

Nux then ran towards the Royal Capital and within 15 minutes, the two of them were in front of the Gates.

Of course, Nux wasn't carrying her in his arms anymore and the two of them were walking hand in hand.

When the guard's eyes fell on the two of them, he couldn't help but shake his head.

"It seems that our lovely Head Maid finally found someone for her, huh?" He muttered as he glanced at Nux before looking at Edda.

"No, you got it completely wrong, Brock, there is nothing like that between us."

Nux shook his head as he replied.

"Please, Mr Dio, do you think I am a 10-year-old kid you can fool that easily, it's the 3rd time you guys have spent your night out together. I know you have already stolen our Head Maid's heart, don't try to deny it"

"Oh c'mon, you know I am a merchant, right? I just have to show her a few of my items so I can get her approval and sell them to the Royal Harem"

"Haa? What kind of items are these that you can only show them at the night, why not do it in the morning. And why would you leave the city? Why not do it here?"

"My items are kept in different cities for safety purposes, as for the items, they are indeed the items that can only be shown at the night"

Nux replied with a weird smile.

Brock, the guard's mouth twitched when he noticed his tone and just as he was about to let them go, Nux's next words sounded.

“Not only that, Miss Edda really likes my items as well? Right? Miss Edda?”

“Yes, I do like your items, Mr Dio” Edda replied with a profound look.

Brock’s mouth twitched even more when he heard the two of them.

Since he couldn’t take it anymore, he shook his head in frustration and exclaimed.

“Yeah, whatever whatever, just pay the entry fees and get in! Don’t let others wait!”

Nux smiled gently as he paid the entry fees and the two of them entered the city.

# Chapter 82

“Did you look for what I ordered you to?” Marquees Alger questioned his butler.

“Report, I have searched everything about the man named Dio Brando, but wasn’t able to find anything. All the information about him is just recent. It was as if he was just born a few days ago.”

The butler replied in a confident tone.

Hearing the undesired answer but noticing the confident tone of his subordinate, the Marquees knew something was up and signalled him to keep going, “Continue”

“I then sent someone to the Woods Dynasty and learned that there is no company named Brando Merchant Company there. With that, I was sure that his name was a fake one.

Then I had some men draw what he looked like and found out that his actual name was Nux Leander, who is also Viscount Felberta’s boy toy. I even found out that the two of them were very close and were most definitely not the normal Master and boy toy.”

“Hmm, this Nux guy is quite lucky huh... not only that bitch Edda, he even has that Felberta with him...”

“That is correct, Marquees Alger”

“Hmm... Viscount Felberta... isn’t she the one who is connected with The Thousand Information Chamber?”

“Yes, that is correct,” The butler nodded.

“Hmm, the Head Maid Edda, the Viscount Felberta who has connections with the Thousand Information Chamber... are they planning to somehow

expose me? Are they laying a trap?"

Marquee's face turned solemn, after pondering for a while, although unwilling, he decided to use his trump card.

"Call One" Marquees Alger ordered.

Even his butler's face turned solemn when he heard him. A maid then left the hall and walked in a certain direction. The further she walked, the darker the place get.

Soon, she appeared in front of a simple, wooden door and she knocked.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

"Marquees Alger has called for Miss One." Without waiting for any response, the maid directly revealed her purpose of coming here before she walked away.

From how indifferent her face was, it was clear that she has done it quite a few times, however, when one would look at her closely, they would notice that her hands were trembling.

No matter how many times she comes here, the creepy vibes surrounding this place... she would never get used to it.

She rushed into the hall and when she saw the light, her beating heart calmed down and she took a deep breath.

...

A few minutes later, a woman wearing skin-tight black coloured clothes walked into the hall.

Yes, she was One, the woman who was kneeling in front of Alger and Heath yesterday, and also their trump card in this kingdom.

"One, I want you to help me with this"

He then told her everything he knew about Edda, Nux, and Felberta, and requested.

“I want you to kill that Felberta, and capture her boy toy, with him, we can lure Edda out and then deal with her as well. That will be three birds with one arrow”

“Haah? You want me to deal with a Master Stage, an Advance Stage, and a mere mortal? So you are telling me that you can’t even deal with this pathetic group of people by yourself?”

A strict and disdainful voice was heard.

“That is not the case, I don’t need you to go there personally, I just want you to send your team. Or are you telling me that your team isn’t even capable of doing something as simple as dealing with these bunch of losers?” Alger smirked disdainfully.

“Hmph! Don’t try acting smart in front of me, I know very well what you are thinking about” One snorted but she knew she couldn’t go against him.

Although she wasn’t required to accept his requests, Felberta wasn’t a simple woman, and if the head maid and Felberta are trying to expose them, this might affect her kingdom’s plans.

Therefore, she decided to help him.

“Alright, I’ll send 4, 5, 6, and 7 to deal with them” One agreed.

“Hmm? Why not send 3 as well?” Alger questioned with a frown.

“You want a Grand Master to go deal with an advance stage cultivator?”

“But isn’t Viscount Felberta’s butler a Master Stage Cultivator?”

“Hmph! Him? The person who has never even seen blood all his life is no better than that advance stage cultivator, don’t worry, even sending 4 peak Master Stage Cultivators is overkill for them”

One snorted before she walked out of the hall.

‘Hmph! What a bitch! I hope that one day, you will lose the Kingdom’s support and I can do whatever I please with you!’

Alger snorted inwardly, he always fantasized about raping this bitch while she begs for mercy.

Of course, he knew full well that his wish would never come true. One is very loyal to the kingdom, she is so loyal that she is even willing to die for it, therefore, the kingdom will never take away its trust and support from her.

And even if he was lucky, and somehow, the kingdom decides to take away its support, he won’t be able to do anything to her since she is a lot stronger than him.

Even though they were both Grand Master Realm Cultivators, she could easily defeat two of him without any problems. That is how wide the gap between them was.

However, no matter how impossible it was, there was one way to make it possible...

And that was in his dreams...

Therefore, he always dreams about it and relishes how it feels.

A man can always dream~

Don’t judge.

Alger then shook his head in disappointment before he walked into his beloved wife’s room.

# Chapter 83

At the moment, Nux was having dinner and was accompanied by three beauties, Skyla, Lane, and Fel.

The three of them were taking turns feeding; he could even feel some sparks flying around when their eyes met.

This caused him to have a wide smile on his face, a smile that was filled with immense satisfaction and contentment.

He was living the life we guys can only be jealous of, and he was enjoying it thoroughly.

“Hmm?”

A few minutes later, however, his brows furrowed as he glanced at the wall, it was as if his gaze pierced through the wall and he could see what others could not.

Nux's [Sense] activated and he saw 4 strangers lurking and hiding around Felberta's Mansion.

‘Assassins’

A thought appeared in his mind and he activated his [Eye Of Discerning] and their information appeared in front of him.

[Name: Nash Reve]

[Age: 51 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Assassin of Marques Bannormane House]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 36]

[HP: 460/460]

[MP: 620/620]

[STR: 45]

[AGL: 46]

[VIT: 46]

[STM: 41]

[INT: 62]

[DEF: 40]

...

[Name: Lona Wilk]

[Age: 46 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Assassin of Marques Bannormane House]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 37]

[HP: 480/480]

[MP: 630/630]

[STR: 45]

[AGL: 47]

[VIT: 48]

[STM: 48]

[INT: 63]

[DEF: 41]

...

[Name: Aldora Horne]

[Age: 48 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Assassin of Marques Bannormane House]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 37]

[HP: 470/470]

[MP: 640/640]

[STR: 46]

[AGL: 48]

[VIT: 47]

[STM: 48]

[INT: 64]

[DEF: 42]

...

[Name: Ash Winterr]

[Age: 47 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Assassin of Marques Bannormane House]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 38]

[HP: 490/490]

[MP: 640/640]

[STR: 47]

[AGL: 49]

[VIT: 49]

[STM: 49]

[INT: 64]

[DEF: 41]

...

‘Bannermane House again... that house is getting on my nerve now...’

Nux thought inwardly before he contacted Edda,

‘My Perverted Maid~’

‘Huh? O-Oh! Dio! What happened? Why did you contact me?’

‘Dio? Oh...’

Nux then realized that he hasn’t told her his real name yet, however, since there were more important things to deal with, he decided to postpone it a little.

‘My Perverted Maid, don’t leave the palace today since I won’t be able to meet you’

‘Hmm? Why? What happened?’

‘I have some guests that I need to entertain in my house’

‘Guests?’

‘Yes, the Bannermane house decided to send some assassins here’

Nux decided to be honest.

‘What!? Wou-‘

‘Alright, alright, you don’t need to panic, they are just some random Master Stage Cultivators, I can beat them with my eyes closed.’

Nux replied confidently.

However, Edda's mouth twitched when she heard his words...

What do you mean 'some random Master Stage Cultivators!?'

She was a Master Stage Cultivator as well!

No matter where they are, even in the royal palace, Master Stage Cultivators are still considered decent, they should be elites when it comes to a house that is on a Marquess level!

This shows how seriously Bannermane House takes you!!

And this was all because of her!

Edda felt guilty since she pulled him into her problem.

'Where do you live, tell me and I will come to help you'

She offered, no matter what, she was still a Master Stage Cultivator, she might be able to help him.

Nux thought about it and nodded, he might not need her help right now, but he will need her help later.

Also, it was time to meet Edda as Nux Leander, not Dio Brando.

'Hmm, come soon, also bring the strongest sword or dagger you have with you'

'Okay, but... where do you live?'

'Oh, right! Just come to Fel- Umm, I mean, Viscount Felberta's Mansion'

'Viscount Felberta?'

'Yes, just come here, I'll tell you everything soon'

‘Okay...’

Edda then kept the matter aside. The assassins were the priority right now.

...

On the other side, seeing the solemn look on his face, Fel knew something happened and she questioned.

“Why do you look so serious?”

“Hmm? Nothing really, I noticed that there are some uninvited guests here, you wait here, let me welcome them with a warm smile”

Then with a ‘warm’ smile, Nux activated his [Conceal] and walked towards Ash Winterr, the strongest assassin.

After a 1 minute long, leisurely walk, he appeared behind Ash, who was hiding behind a wall and positioned himself in a way that he won’t be located when his [Conceal] wears off.

\*Pat\*

A chop on her neck, and she’s down.

Nux dragged her body a little further; making sure her partners won’t see her. He then reactivated his [Conceal] and appeared in front of Aldora Horne, the second strongest of the group.

The same treatment, a chop on the back of the neck, and she’s down.

This time, however, the girl named Lona somehow saw him while he was dragging her body and she shouted.

“Four! Seven! Be careful! He has already dealt with Five!”

“What!?”

Nash spoke out loud, dumbfounded by how he appeared behind Five, but he wasn't given the chance to think about it.

Nux's eyes then fell on Nash who was hiding behind the tree and he dashed towards him at an unbelievable speed.

Nash wasn't able to react in time when he saw that scary speed, Nux quickly appeared behind him and...

Well, another chop.

Another one bites the dust~

'H-He's at the Advance Stage!? Bullshit!'

This was Nash's last thought before he lost consciousness.

Nux then glanced at the last woman, Lona and a charming smile appeared on his face.

Lona was taken aback by how handsome he was but she quickly recovered and glared at him.

However, before she could make any plans, the man suddenly walked behind the tree and did not come out.

Her body tensed up and was in a fully active state. She kept glaring at the tree, afraid that she would miss his figure and that won't be any good for her.

Suddenly, she felt someone patting her shoulder and she heard a voice.

"What are you looking at the tree all lost for? Were you charmed by my smile?"

Lona's eyes widened in horror, she turned her head back but before she could do anything,

A chop, and she fell unconscious.

‘W-Was I really charmed by his smile?’

# Chapter 84

Edda quickly activated [Conceal] and left the Palace. She ran the fastest she could as many thoughts ran into her mind.

‘I just hope that he won’t start fighting them! I am really scared about it. No matter what, they are still assassins of a Marquee’s house, they must be strong!’

She then increased her speed even more and a few minutes later, she appeared in front of Felberta’s Mansion and directly entered the place.

Since she had activated [Conceal], no one could see her entering so without any restriction or blockage, she quickly entered the dining room, however, the scene she saw dumbfounded her to a great extent.

Dio and 3 other women, one of them should be Viscount Felberta and the other two should be her maids, were sitting at the dining table having dinner.

The three girls competed to feed the next bite to him and Nux watched everything with a smile.

The atmosphere might seem lively, but when she noticed four bodies lying behind the table, her eyes widened.

‘They are the assassins he was talking about??’

She stood there in a daze and only came out of her reverie when the four of them ate their dinner and Nux muttered,

“Hmm? Why is Edda so late? Is she lost? Does she not know where you live?”

“No, as a Head Maid, though she may not be close to me, she must know where I live” Felberta replied.

‘Where are you? My Perverted Maid?’

Nux’s voice sounded in her head. She then quickly deactivated her [Conceal] and appeared in front of them.

“Oh! You’re here”

Nux muttered, however, he was inwardly surprised.

‘Why didn’t my [Sense] detect her? Is it because [Conceal] is a higher tier ability than [Sense]? Hmm, that may be the case...’

He then shook his head and with a gentle smile, he walked towards Edda and offered his hand.

Edda smiled back as she held her hand as the two walked over and sat on the chairs.

“Hmm, so let me start the introductions”

Nux smiled before he pointed at me.

“I am sorry to hide that from you, Edda, I’ll tell you my reasons later, but for now, just know that my name is not Dio, my real name is Nux Leander”

Although Edda was surprised, she didn’t care too much about it, right now, she was looking at Viscount Felberta who was smiling at her.

She was very, very curious about her identity, even though she had a rough inkling of what it was.

“Well, now moving to the one you are the most curious about, she’s Fel, you know her as Viscount Felberta Alevye, she is also the first woman I fell in love with”

A big smile appeared on Felberta’s face when she heard him, she then glanced at Edda, who was looking at her with some hints of dissatisfaction, a disdainful look appeared on Fel’s face before it was replaced by a sweet smile.

“Hello, Edda~ I am looking forward to having you as my sister~”

“This is Skyla, my sweet little cheerful maid”

“And this is Lane, my serious but shy maid”

“And you guys, this is Edda, a very perverted maid”

“Perverted?” Skyla questioned as she blinked her eyes.

“Yes, she’s very perverted” Nux answered with a smile while Edda’s face turned red in embarrassment.

Though she has already accepted her being a pervert, she was still embarrassed when it was known to others.

Skyla’s eyes brightened in understanding as she glanced at Edda, she couldn’t believe that the always serious-looking head maid was a pervert.

Since she was a maid as well, she was very curious about Edda, but she always forgets to ask Nux about her since she was too busy with other thoughts.

The same happened with Fel and Lane well, they were curious about Edda, but weren’t curious enough to ask Nux about it when they were busy with ‘other things’.

“I-I am n-not a pervert...” Edda muttered, trying to preserve whatever little dignity she has left as a head maid of the royal palace but when her eyes fell on Nux who was smiling at her playfully, her face turned redder as she admitted.

“I-I might b-be a little p-perverted...”

“Hahaha~” Seeing her acting like that, Nux couldn’t help but laugh out loud.

He then felt that it was unfair to Edda and started spilling all the secrets,

“Don’t be so shy Edda, everyone has a little something about them that only a few people know about, it is not embarrassing, rather, it adds to your charm.

For example, Fel here has an uncontrollable urge to be the ‘dominant one’ in the bed, but she always fails miserably.”

This time, Felberta’s face turned red but Nux wasn’t done yet, he then pointed at Skyla and continued.

“Skyla here has a weird tendency to smell panties after the night sessions. She says that she is curious about sex, however, I feel that she’s just a pervert.

Lane here is so weird that though she likes having sex, she is too shy to talk or ask for it. I always wonder how that is possible when she was the loudest one when it comes to moaning”

Skyla and Lane’s faces also turned red, the sight of 4 beautiful women lowering their heads in shame was amazingly alluring. Nux smiled inwardly as he patted Skyla’s head.

However, soon, Edda’s eyes fell on 4 bodies lying on the floor as she questioned.

“Umm... are these the assassins sent by the Bannermane House?”

Nux then blinked his eyes before he glanced at the bodies and muttered.

“Oh right, they were here as well...”

# Chapter 85

As assassins, they were tortured in countless different ways and were pretty much immune to it, but that did not mean that they liked getting tortured.

“You guys are awake”

Nux stated with a smile and seeing his charming smile, Lona remembered what happened before she lost consciousness.

‘He defeated all of us alone, and he didn’t seem like he was tired at all...’

She thought inwardly.

“Alright, I will not waste time and will question you directly. Are you guys willing to be my slaves?”

His question surprised the 4 assassins, and the strongest one, Ash, snorted.

“Hmph! We have already sworn our life to Bannermane House and will not betr-”

“Yeah, yeah, I can do my worse, but you guys won’t submit and whatever. I know all that.

Also, stop lying to me, you have not submitted to Bannermane’s house, your real master is the kingdom. You are just working for the Bannermane and Hardwick house.”

The assassins did not have any change in their expressions.

Nux shook his head as he continued, “Well whatever. You do whatever you want, however, I do have one question... Why are you guys so loyal to the king- I mean, the Bannermane house? What’s the point? You will die if you reject me, you might even get tortured to death.

The Bannermane house won't care about it, just like how they didn't care about the other 2 men who died a few days ago. I believe you will just be replaced and no one will remember you.

Then why die?

Why not be my slave, and then return to where you came from. Nobody will know what happened and you can continue living."

Suddenly, a strange glint was shown in Nash's eyes as he questioned.

"Will you really let us live?"

"Seven!"

Ash screamed in anger but Nash completely ignored her.

"Yup, I will let you leave if you become my slave" Nux nodded.

"Then how would you make sure that I will not betray you in the future?" Nash continued questioning.

"Hmm? Did I not save your life? Why would you even think about betraying me? However, if you do, I'll just tell the Bannermane House that you betrayed them, they would deal with you later" Nux threatened.

A weird smile then appeared on Nash's face as he nodded. Nux smiled as well and then he questioned.

"So, number Seven, are you willing to be my slave?"

"I am"

[Slaves: Nash Reve]

Suddenly, another section appeared on Nux's status right below his Harem Members Section. He smiled as he looked at Nash, who felt a weird power entering his body but since he did not see anything, he ignored it.

He was just too happy that he found someone so stupid and he would be able to leave this place quickly!

“Alright, number Seven, you can go now, remember, if I ever contact you, do come back. You promised” Nux smiled as he untied the ropes binding him.

“Of course, I always remember my promises” Nash then stood up and smiled before he walked towards the door, the closer he got to the exit, the wider his smile got before he finally walked through the door and left.

Seeing him leaving so quickly and easily, Ash, Lona, and Aldora exchanged glances as a single thought appeared in their mind.

‘This man is too Naïve, we might get out alive’

Ash nodded at the other two before she started,

“Will you really let us go if we become your slaves just like you did with Nash?”

“Of course, I am a very honest person, however, remember, if you do betray me, I will inform the Bannermane house about you becoming my slaves and they will do anything in their power to kill you. So don’t do that, okay?”

The three assassins nodded and a big smile appeared on Nux’s face as he questioned,

“So, number Four, Five, Six, are you willing to be my slaves?”

# Chapter 86

“So, number Four, Five, Six, are you willing to be my slaves?”

Although they felt that the smile he had on his face while he questioned was a little uncomfortable, the three assassins’ thoughts were too clouded with a chance to get out of here alive and did not think too much about this minor detail.

“We are”

[Slaves: Nash Reve, Lona Wilk, Aldora Horne, Ash Winterr]

A big smile appeared on Nux’s face when he saw their names on his Slave section.

The three assassins felt a peculiar power entering their body, then their eyes fell on Nux’s devilishly charming and wicked smile before they felt something was wrong.

This man doesn’t look like he is this Naïve and dumb...

He can’t possibly let them go like this...

Just as Ash was about to question Nux, his voice sounded.

“Alright, let’s call your partner back as well”

With that, he activated the telepathy skill the [Slave Seal] had and called.

‘Nash, return.’

With just two words, Nash, who was running back to the Bannermane house stopped.

‘What?’

Nash's eyes widened in horror when he realized his body had started running back to Felberta's Mansion.

He then remembered the voice that echoed in his mind and his body trembled.

'W-What has he done to me?'

A few minutes later, Nash returned and stood beside the 3 assassins.

"Good"

When Nash returned, her fear and uncertain feeling exploded. She knew something was wrong.

She was sure of it now!

That deal was too good to be true!

However, it was already too late.

"What have you done to us!?" Ash questioned in panic and horror.

"Hmm? Nothing?" Nux replied with a confused look.

"Nothing!? Then why is Seven back!?"

"Because I called him? Isn't a slave supposed to listen to whatever his master said?"

"Then how did you contact him when he was so far away!?"

"H-His voice sounded in my h-head..." This time, it was Nash who replied.

Ash and the other assassins' eyes widened in surprise, they don't know what was happening, but they knew it was bad.

"AAhhgghhhh!!"

Suddenly, Ash screamed in pain as she fell on her knees.

“W-What happened!?” Lona questioned in panic.

One had to know that they have been through intense torture and were used to it. So she knew that Ash would never scream like that...

“What did you do to her!?” She then questioned as she glared at Nux who was looking at everything with a curious look.

Actually, even he was surprised when he heard her screaming but he soon realized what happened.

“I think she was having thoughts about betraying me, her master”

Nux replied.

“This isn’t the time to jo-”

“AAGGHHhhhhhh!!!”

Lona wanted to continue but suddenly, Ash’s screams turned louder as she clenched her head tightly and she rolled on the ground.

“S-Stop i-it! I am b-begging you!! I’ll do anything you say!!” Ash begged in a hoarse voice.

The pain was too much for her to bear, and she could feel that it was increasing without any signs of stopping.

Lona and the other assassins’ eyes widened when they heard her.

She’s begging?

Is the pain that intense?

Their body shuddered in fear.

Even Nux felt a little weird seeing her rolling and begging like that, however, he still kept a tough front as he answered.

“Stop thinking about going against me and it will end”

This time, Ash took his words seriously, she quickly got rid of her thoughts about attacking him and muttered continuously.

‘I am loyal to him’

This worked seemed to have worked as soon, she felt the pain subsiding before it faded away.

“Haah... Haah... Haah...”

Ash lay on the ground, breathing heavily.

She didn’t want to experience that again... never.

“T-Thank you... Master...”

She then glanced at Nux as she crawled towards his feet and placed her forehead on his shoes.

Nux frowned when he saw her acting like that, he wanted to step back but Felberta placed her hand on his back secretly.

He glanced at her and saw her shaking her head.

Nux nodded and stood where he was.

“Good”

“W-What did you d-do to us?”

Seeing What Ash was doing, Lona knew the pain she experienced was a lot stronger than they thought and questioned. This time, however, her tone was a tamer than before.

“As I said, I did nothing, it is you guys who agree to become my slaves. Remember, I can see through your thoughts, the moment you guys think about betraying me, I’ll make sure you suffer the pain far worse than you can ever imagine and the pain would keep increasing till you throw that thought out of your mind

In other words, do what I tell you to do, be obedient, and you won’t face any problems. Is that clear?”

Nux replied and then questioned.

“Yes”

“That’s yes Master for you”

“Yes M-Master”

“Ash, now stand up”

No matter how tired she was as if his command was a divine order, Ash’s body stood up and stood beside the other assassins.

Seeing the four Master Stage Slaves standing in front of him, Nux smiled in contentment.

These weren’t normal Master Stage Cultivators, they were the strongest of the batch. With them, he can easily defeat an Earl House without even doing anything.

However, this time, his target wasn’t a mere Earl House...

His eyes then turned cold before he glanced at the assassins and questioned.

“Tell me everything you know about the Bannermane and Hardwick house.”

...

Author’s Note: My other book is already on the 3rd position!

Yeah!!

Here, I’ll start with the extra chapters!!

However, don’t rest!

Keep the PS coming there!!

WWAAAHHHH!!!

# Chapter 87

Author's Note: 60 more ps needed for second place, 90 more for the 1st one.

Of course, this might increase if other books get more, so yeah. i will count on you guys.

GIMME POWWAAA!!

...

...

“Tell me everything you know about the Bannermane and Hardwick house,” Nux questioned as his eyes turned cold.

First, they attacked Edda. That was already too much, and now they even dared to attack Fel!?

Now that is too too too much.

He needs to show them that he isn't easy to bully.

However, he would need to learn how strong the two noble houses are, he can't be rash.

“The leader of the Bannermane House, Alger Bannermane is at Initial Grand Master Stage, the same is for the Hardwick House leader. However, the latter is a little stronger.”

Before Lona could think how to reply, her mouth moved on her own and her eyes widened in horror.

‘T-This is too scary!!’ Lona thought inwardly... her thoughts about being loyal to her new master strengthened even more. e

“Hmm? Just an Initial Grand Master Stage? Heh, then it will be too easy” Nux smiled as he already formed different plans on how to deal with him.

Edda, Felberta, Skyla, Lane, and the other assassins’ lips twitched at his response.

What do you mean ‘Just an Initial Grand Master Stage’?

He a Grand Master!

A GRAND MASTER!!

Then they quickly remembered how abnormal he is and just shook their head.

‘Yup, as expected, he is an anomaly.’ Felberta confirmed her thoughts again.

She mustn’t think of him like a normal person.

“No, master. It isn’t that simple. The Kingdom of Skadi is behind the 2 houses and has sent a group of assassins for them to use. As you already know, we are the said assassins. If these houses are attacked, these assassins will fight with their life and it will be troublesome for you to fight them.”

Although she was not questioned about this, Ash decided to share extra and important information as a way to show her loyalty.

The immense pain that was way more painful than any torture she has ever been through had left a deep mark on her heart.

“Kingdom of Skadi”

Edda and Felberta muttered at the same time... They then glanced at each other and chuckled.

“Oh? Then who is the strongest amongst you assassins?”

Nux however, completely ignored the extra information.

He just did not care. He wasn't strong enough to care.

Also, he was more interested in the Assassins, Bannermane, and Hardwick Houses.

“I don't know her name but we call her 'One'. The strongest assassin amongst us, she is at the peak of Grand Master Stage, however, it would be a mistake to treat her as a normal Grand Master Stage Cultivator.

She is a Grand Master Stage Cultivator who has assassinated 3 Expert Stage Cultivators in the past so I believe it would best if we treat her as an Expert Stage Cultivator”

Ash replied, pouring out all her thoughts and betraying the teammates she once swore to never betray.

Although Lona, Nash, and Aldora felt a little weird, they quickly understood that they don't have a choice as well.

They weren't scared if Nux could or will take their life, however, they were scared of that hellish looking pain Ash has been through.

Also, their body moves on their own whenever Nux wants anything, so they can't really hide anything either.

And if that was the case, they might as well be loyal to him from their heart. At least they won't have to go through torture or be worried about their life.

“Hmm... an Expert Stage... this might be a little troublesome...” Nux muttered inwardly.

He was sure he could take on an Expert Stage Cultivator and might even defeat her, but if he was surrounded by other Cultivators at the same time, the odds weren't in his favour.

It seems like he has to wait before he could take his revenge.

Well, it was not like he was in a hurry either.

He wouldn't risk his life.

“I have something in my mind that might work.”

Just as Nux was about to give up and postpone the plan, Felberta's voice sounded.

Nux then turned towards her and seeing a weird light that was shining in her eyes, he questioned.

“What is it?”

“Well, I have 2 ways to deal with it actually but you might not want to use the 1st method.”

Felberta muttered.

A wry smile then appeared on Nux's face as he questioned,

“Is the 1st method you are talking about sneaking in and killing the ‘One’ she mentioned?”

Felberta smiled back as she nodded.

Nux then shook his head and continued,

“Leave it, tell me the second method, I am sure you must have thought something”

It was not like Nux can't deal with the Expert Stage Assassin, he could easily use his [Conceal] to follow these assassins, and once they meet ‘One’, he could kill her and then deal with other assassins.

However, Nux did not want to use this method.

He has just witnessed how scary and great his Slave Seal is. If used correctly, this ability can help him tremendously.

These assassins are a strong force...

If he could get them under him... he would be a step closer to his actual goal.

Of course, his main aim was that 'One'

A peak Grand Master Stage Cultivator, if he can get her as his slave, how much will his strength improve?

Also, who doesn't want an Assassin Slave, ready to do whatever he orders her to?

Nux did!

And seemingly seeing through his thoughts, Felberta came up with her 'Second' method.

"Do you remember when I told you that someone asked me for Bannerman House's information?"

Her words attracted Nux's attention and he nodded.

"I do"

"The actual information he wanted was about..."

# Chapter 88

In the Bannermane Mansion, Alger was walking around nervously while a woman wearing black clothes was standing in front of him.

“Ugghh! Why are they not here yet? How long will it take?”

This was the 11th time he asked that question and this time, the woman, who was always ignoring him couldn't hold out any more and snapped.

“What the hell is wrong with you!? Assassination is a work of patience, not to mention that they have to kidnap someone as well. Also, it has only been an hour since they left you idiot! Now stop moving around like a bug!”

Alger then paused as he glared at the woman in front of him,

“Don't talk to me like that, I am not your subordinate.”

He replied in a threatening tone.

“Oh yeah? Well I am not your subordinate as well, so stop annoying me”

The woman threatened back, her voice sending chills down to Alger's spine. However, he controlled his fear and gained some confidence as he replied.

“What would you do if I don't? No, let me rephrase, what can you do if I don't?”

The woman's gaze turned cold, her icy blue eyes glared at Alger and before he could react, a dagger was placed in front of his neck.

“Don't think you can talk to me like that just because you are a useful pawn for the kingdom. Remember, pawns are always the first ones to be sacrificed. Although a pawn dying without fulfilling his role hurts, it is not to the extent that the kingdom would take any action themselves.

So don't think I can not kill you because of the kingdom. Am I clear?"

Her threatening voice was so cold that Alger's scalp went numb.

The icy cold eyes that shined menacingly told him that she wasn't fooling around.

One more word and he will die.

\*Gulp\*

Alger gulped audibly and nodded.

"Good, and don't disturb me for today"

Saying that, the woman turned around and left.

Only after she left the hall did Alger's stiff body return to normal. He then took a few deep breaths to calm his racing heart.

Then his gaze turned cold and a green-black dagger appeared in his hand.

"Should I do it?" Alger muttered.

Soon, however, he shook his head and calmed down.

The woman wasn't alone, if anything happened to her, all those assassins might come after him.

He then stored his dagger inside his Space Ring and sighed.

"Let's just take a bath"

Alger muttered to himself before he walked into his bathroom.

...

After his bath, Alger was sitting at his dining table, along with his wife and 7 consorts. A servant then walked over before he put some food on the table

and ate it in front of everyone.

Alger nodded and the servant started putting food on everyone's plates.

“Alright, let's start”

Alger ordered and everyone started eating.

...

After the dinner, Alger wanted to spend some time with his harem, but when he remembered that the assassins still haven't returned yet, his mood worsened and he just walked into his room to have some rest.

He then jumped onto his soft bed and soon, he entered the dreamland at an astonishing quick speed.

...

While Alger was sleeping peacefully without the care of the world, he did not notice a pair of captivating golden eyes watching his every movement.

Suddenly, a figure wearing skintight black clothes and a black mask that covered his nose and mouth appeared in front of his bed. The figure then took his Space Ring and a green-black dagger appeared in the figure's hand.

\*Slap\*

He then walked towards Alger and slapped his face.

\*Bam\*

Alger's body flew out before it crashed with the wall. He quickly woke up and looked around, but he couldn't see anyone.

His brows furrowed as he stood up, just as he was about to call his servant, an intense pain assaulted him on his right leg.

‘AAAGGhhhhhH!’

He saw a big, deep cut on his calf as blood flowed out uncontrollably. He then finally saw a figure wearing black clothes, carrying a familiar dagger in his hands looking at him with his exquisite golden eyes.

“Wow, this dagger is really great. It’s already showing its effect”

Alger then heard his joyful voice and he quickly understood what that numbing feeling on his calf was.

That dagger in the man’s hand wasn’t just a familiar dagger, it was his dagger!

How did he get his hand on it!?

He then looked at his hand and noticed that his ring was gone! Alger then thought of a possibility and his eyes widened.

“Yes, you are right, I poisoned your food. The Strangler, if you know about it”

Alger’s eyes widened in horror when he saw the poison the man carried in his hand.

“Oh! It seems you know about it!

Maannan, it is really a ruthless poison huh... first it makes the target fall into a deep sleep, and when he wakes up, he won’t be able to speak anything for the next hour... Giving an assassin all the time he needs to kill the target...”

“Also... your dagger is pretty cool. A peak 5-star dagger, with a numbing effect on the target, with that slash on your calf, your whole leg must be numb now, closing all your paths for running away.”

“Hmmm? Bruh, I just noticed, you are in a really bad position, aren’t you? Can’t run away, can’t call for help... completely at my mercy... If I were you, I would pray to the god that I am not a bad person.”

The more the man spoke, the more fear Alger felt.

‘Who is he!?’

As if reading his mind, the man smiled and answered,

“Oh, you must be wondering who I am right?”

He then lowered his mask and Alger’s eyes widened.

‘Dio- No! He is that Nux!

Nux Leander!’

...

Author’s Note: Extra chapter number 2.

Give your Power Stones to my other book for moar chapters!!

We just need 100 Ps for 2nd and 10 more for the second position.  
YEAHHHHH!!!

Muahahaha!!

Yeah, i know it’s annoying but m desperate af!

Thank you~~

# Chapter 89

Outside the room, Alger's butler was rushing into Alger's room since he heard the sound of crashing, however, a servant then appeared in front of him.

"You can't go in there"

"Clif, what are you doing? Why are you stopping me? Also, as Marquees Alger's personnel guard, shouldn't you rush in and check what happened as well? Why are you still here?"

"Nothing is happening inside; I don't want to stop you. I am just fulfilling Marquees Alger's wish. He says he doesn't want to be disturbed.

Also, the voice you heard was him throwing around a fit, he seems really angry."

"Angry? About what?"

Clif then gave him a blank look as he replied,

"How would I know?"

"True..."

"Now look, I don't care about you, but I still want to live. So if you want to go inside, just knock me unconscious, else I won't let you"

"Uggh... okay, I will leave. By your expression, he must be really angry huh..."

"Yes, I don't know what happened bu-"

\*Smash\*

Another sound came out of the room and the Butler was sure that a vase must have been broken.

“Yeah... I don't want to go inside either...”

“Mmhm”

Clif nodded however, if the butler was a little observant, he would have seen a small sigh of relief he released.

...

If the butler had entered the room, he would see that rather than Marques 'throwing around a fit', it was the Marques who was being thrown around here and there.

After confirming who his assailant was, the Marquees gained some confidence and noticed that Nux was just a Master Stage Cultivator.

A big smile then appeared on his face.

Although he might be injured and his right leg might not be working properly, it was still easy for him to defeat a Master Stage Cultivator.

He was a Grand Master Stage Cultivator, after all.

With the newly gained confidence, he stumbled but then balanced his body as he dashed towards Nux.

\*Slap\*

However, what he foresaw did not happen, rather, Nux just sent him flying with one slap!

And he made it look so effortless!

\*Smash\*

\*Cough\*

His body then smashed at his favourite vase, and the Marquees coughed out some blood.

“Tsk Tsk, do you really think I would have appeared in front of you and then wake you up with a slap if I wasn’t sure enough to beat you? Use your brain, you idiot.

Oh, if you were expecting that someone would enter the room due to the sound, forget that. Everyone outside knows that ‘Marquees Alger is throwing around a fit in anger’” Nux spoke nonchalantly as he crushed his dreams.

Alger’s eyes widened in surprise in horror, although he believe that he could defeat this man alone, for double security, he still wanted his guards to enter the room.

However, Nux word’s poured cold water on his dreams.

He then saw Nux walking toward him with a smile, the dagger he was holding was shining brightly. (Oh, right, I will upload the dagger’s picture in the auxiliary chapter. Well, I will upload it here as well, so you lazy bums wouldn’t have to move too much)

Nux then appeared behind him and before he could react, he slashed his left calf.

‘AAAghhhhh’

Marquees let out a painful shriek in his mind, soon, however, he felt a numbing sensation all over his leg and the pain started to decrease. Of course, it wasn’t something to be happy about!

With this, both of his legs won’t work for a while!

He is completely helpless at the moment!

“Hehe~ Now let’s see, how do I start this...

First, you send someone behind my perverted maid, Edda. That calls for one limb.

Then, you were even bold enough to attack my beautiful Fel. That calls for 2 more limbs.

That means I will sever your 2 hands and 1 leg...

Ah, don't think I will use your dagger for it, I'll use a simple steel sword, since our body is really strong, it would need me quite a few moves to sever even one of your limbs, so let's not waste any more time, okay?"

Alger's eyes widened in horror and fear! His body started trembling, he wanted to beg for mercy, he wanted to say that he would do whatever he wants, but he could not.

However, Nux seems to know to mind-read as he quickly suggested his next offer.

"Well, if I am being honest with you and you can also judge it from my face as well.

I am a refined and handsome person; I don't like being a bloodthirsty maniac, so I will present you with another offer.

We can stop all of this torture if you accept being my slave. What do you say?"

Suddenly, Alger's movement stopped.

'Slave?

His slave?

How will he ensure my loyalty?

Will he poison me and then keep the antidote with him?

Yeah, that must be it!

No worries, I can find a potion maker who will make the antidote... right now, my life is much more important'

Seeing the determined light that showed in his eyes, Nux smiled as he questioned.

“So, Alger Bannermane, are you willing to be my Slave?”

Alger nodded with a determined face, and soon, he felt a peculiar energy entering her body.

‘Not good’

Although he did not know what this energy was, matching it with the timing, he knew it wasn't something good. However, before he could think much, Nux suddenly forced a potion into his mouth.

“This is the antidote of Strangler, now take your ring and find some antidote for this dagger”

Alger furrowed his brows, a few seconds later, he could feel that he could now speak, he wanted to scream and call for his guards, but just as that thought appeared.

An intense pain assaulted his head.

“AA-”

“Don't shout, shut your mouth”

Alger wanted to shout but his mouth closed automatically and even his throat refused to let out a muffled scream.

The intense pain continued to assault his head, and it kept increasing. However, the worst part was that he couldn't even scream!

‘AAAAGHHGGHHHHHH!!!’

Poor Marquees Alger...

# Chapter 90

“Remove the thoughts about betraying me out of your head and the pain will subside”

After torturing him for a good 15 minutes, Nux suggested.

After what could be said the worse pain he ever experienced, Alger heard Nux’s next words and quickly did as he was told.

Actually, Nux found out that once the pain starts, the target doesn’t have the time to think about betraying him or anything along those lines since the pain is already too much.

The requirement is to be loyal to him. Once the target thinks about being loyal to him, the pain will subside.

Of course, when assaulted with that level of pain, no one would be able to think about anything, and the pain will continue until someone tells the target to be loyal to Nux.

Nux could stop the pain, but he wanted to torture him a little as a punishment for attacking Edda and Fel.

‘Haah... haa... haahh...’

Alger breathed heavily after the pain subsided.

“Now stay loyal to me. If you even think about betraying me, the pain will return and it will be even more powerful than before. Remember that”

Alger’s whole body shuddered in fear when he heard him.

Betraying Nu- Master?

No way, he will become the most loyal servant the world has ever seen.

If his Master wants him to do anything, he would do it. Even if it costs him his life!

He just doesn't want to bear that horrifying pain again.

“Y-Yes Master”

“Good, now take the antidote and cure your numb legs”

“There is no antidote for this Master. The numbness will subside within 30 minutes”

“Haah... whatever. Just stay on the floor then”

Saying that, Nux took back Alger's ring again and stored everything in his inventory before throwing it back at him.

He then lay on Alger's bed comfortably as he questioned.

“So, where does that ‘One’ live?”

“One? She and her assassins live in the back of the mansion. However, master, I will warn you though, One has killed a few Expert Stage Cultivators, so be careful around her.”

Although Alger wanted to ask how he learned about One, as a loyal servant, he did not and just answered his question. However, he still warned his Master about how strong the woman he was asking about is.

Nux nodded before he closed his eyes and waited.

‘How was it? Success?’

Suddenly, he heard Fel's voice in his mind.

‘Yes, he is now under me’

‘Good, now let's discuss the second part again to make sure it doesn't fail’

‘Yes’

Nux smiled as he, Skyla, Lane, Fel, and Edda discussed the next plan. Well, only Fel and Nux were discussing, the other three were just silent and saying a few words a few times.

...

Half an hour later, Alger’s numb legs returned to normal. Since he had already taken a few healing potions, the cuts in his legs were almost healed as well.

At the very least, he could stand up and move around now.

However, seeing Nux ‘sleeping’ on his bed, he thought about dealing a killing blow, but the horrifying pain returned.

This time, however, he quickly removed the thoughts about betraying him and replaced them with him being loyal to him and the pain subsided.

He didn’t scream in pain since he did not want Nux to know about him thinking about betraying him. This also ensured him that whatever N-Master said before was right, the pain will return every time he thinks about betraying him even if the Master himself is sleeping.

This solidified his resolution to remain loyal even further.

“Master, I am healed now”

He then called him out politely.

Nux’s eyes opened as he woke up. He then glanced at Alger standing beside him with a respectful look on his face.

“Now, tell me about your personnel army, is it also under the control of the Kingdom of Skadi?”

Alger was surprised that his Master knew the name kingdom supporting him.

One had to know, even the Thousand Information Chamber doesn't know the name of the kingdom.

How did he know?

However, although he was surprised, his body moved on its own and answered the Master's question.

“No, my army is under my control”

Baron, Viscount, and Earl aren't allowed to keep their private armies, however, the same is not true for Marquees and Dukes, these two noble ranks have the permission to keep their private army that listens to their orders.

Of course, they are required to tell the name of every single soldier and his cultivation stage to the kingdom. If somehow, a soldier whose name is not mentioned is found, the punishments are very harsh.

“Alright, take me to your general or whatever is the highest position”

“As you command, Master”

...

The two of them walked towards the head of the Bannermane army's room.

Yes, since he was the Head of the army, he was required to stay in the mansion. Not that he complained either, the room he and his family was provided with was very lavish and safe, so he was happy to oblige.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Alger then knocked on the door, actually, he always calls him through a servant whenever he needs but since Nux has ordered him to take him there, he obliged to like the obedient servant he was.

“Hm? Marquees Alger? What brings you here in the night?”

The head of the army, Hawk Reed, opened the door as he questioned.

Nux could feel that he was a Late Master Stage Cultivator without using his [Eye Of Discerning] and nodded.

Then without wasting any time, he asked what he was here for.

“Hawk Reed, are you willing to be my Slave?”

# Chapter 91

“Hawk Reed, are you willing to be my Slave?”

Countless questions appeared in Hawk’s mind, but the first and the most prominent one was,

Who the hell is this person?

However, before he could ponder much about the things, Alger’s angry voice sounded.

“What the hell are you thinking about? Answer the damn question! Do you even know who the master is!? You are making him wait!”

‘Master?’

A new thought appeared inside Hawk’s mind. He already knew that there was someone powerful who supported Marquees Alger from the shadows. Is this person sent by them? That is the only reason Alger will respect him so much.

He then glanced at the masked man who looked more like an assassin but did not think too much about it.

“Hawk Reed, are you willing to be my Slave?”

Not willing to wait any longer, Nux questioned again. This time, his tone was stricter.

‘Is he asking me to work for him? Hmm, that’s a weird way to put it... Well, whatever.’

“Yes”

As soon as Hawk replied, he felt a peculiar energy entering his body. He then frowned and thought about what this energy was before he glanced at Nux. He did not what it was, but from the timing, he was sure that it has something to do with Nux.

“You don’t have to think too much about it, just be loyal to me and everything will be fine”

However, rather than explaining, Nux turned around and left.

...

Nux did the same thing with some other high ranking members of the Bannermane Army, and while he was at it, he questioned.

“Alger, do you have any enemy amongst the nobles? A Marquees or a higher rank would be better. A person who will give his all to get rid of you.”

“Master, I recently made an enemy out of Marquees Longe. He will do anything he can to kill me, even if it costs him his title as noble”

Nux frowned, he had heard this name before he just did not remember where. However, he soon shrugged his shoulders in nonchalance, it wasn’t important right now. He will think about it later.

“Why is he so adamant about killing you?”

“Well, I bribed his head guard and tried to kill his son in the bloodhill wilderness, but the boy was saved by someone and the Marquees learned about my plan.

“Ahh... so that’s him”

Nux quickly realized why it sounded so familiar. He was the father of that boy he saved in the wilderness.

“That boy actually survived huh...”

“Master?”

“Nothing, let’s just continue”

...

Two hours later, Nux prepared everything and his face turned solemn. It was now the time for the final step. Although he wasn’t really scared, he still wanted his plan to succeed.

His gaze then moved in a certain direction as he then glanced at Alger, who nodded his head as well.

The two of them walked in a certain direction of the mansion, and then a wide, dark hallway appeared.

It looked very spooky.

The further they walked, the darker it got, however, with his [Sense], Nux had no problem with his vision.

Alger has already told him that there are no guards here. It were the assassins who told him not to place any guards.

It affects their movement they say.

Soon, Nux and Alger appeared in front of a simple wooden door and the two of them nodded to each other.

\*Bam\*

Nux then wrapped his arm around Alger’s neck before he kicked the door open and entered.

As soon as the door was slammed open, more than 20 assassins wearing skin-tight black clothes and masks appeared in front of Nux and Alger.

“Soldiers of Bannermane House, don’t waste your life pointlessly and surrender. Your Markees dared to try and harm our young master in the

wilderness, he will have to pay.

But I know you are just soldiers and are innocent. I am a good man, surrender and I will let you live. However, I am warning you beforehand, don't try doing anything funny because you are already surrounded by our army..”

\*Stomp\* \*Stomp\* \*Stomp\*

“Hyaaaaa!!”

As soon as he said that, countless stomps and soldiers' excited roars were heard, signalling that they were indeed surrounded.

‘One’, the leader of these assassins, looked at Nux with her icy blue eyes. She was quick to notice a few words he said.

First, he called them soldiers, not assassins. So most probably, the man does not know about the kingdom supporting them.

She then glanced at Alger and his mouth moved.

‘I have a plan’

One's mouth twitched in frustration.

This man was using them to get rid of his enemies!

The thing about harming our young master, he must be talking about Marquee's son. Then this must be a Marquee's attack, and Alger knows that if he uses his army, the loss will be terrible. He was using them to avoid his loss.

However, she still did not understand one thing.

If they fight with these soldiers, the commotion will ensue, and after they win easily, the kingdom will learn about their strength, however, the names and cultivation of the soldiers they submitted weren't supposed to have this sort of strength...

This will put them under the eyes of the kingdom, and their movement will be severely restricted. What is this man thinking? Is he trying to betray the kingdom?

No, he cannot, he will be killed for betraying the SkyFall kingdom as well...

She then glanced at Alger and he repeated the same words he did before.

‘Trust me, I have a plan’

# Chapter 92

While 'One' was looking around, thinking about every possibility and also planning her next moves, Nux was also looking at her with his [Eye Of Discerning]

[Name: Thyra Cruse]

[Age: 44 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Grand Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Assassin of Bannermane House]

[Talent: High]

[LVL: 49]

[HP: 600/600]

[MP: 860/860]

[STR: 59]

[AGL: 66]

[VIT: 60]

[STM: 61]

[INT: 86]

[DEF: 53]

...

‘Thyra... She’s almost at the Expert Stage. Strong... I might be able to defeat her, but with all these assassins around, it will make things tougher...

‘I need high-level skills...’

Nux then shook his head; he was on a mission right now. He should not think about things like these.

“Soldiers of Bannermane house, surrender”

Thyra then glanced at Alger and he mouthed.

‘Do what he says’

‘He won’t be able to live if he betrays kingdom either... I don’t think he is stupid enough to risk offending both kingdoms at the same time.’

After thinking for while, Thyra decided to trust him and stepped forward with both of her hands in the air, signalling her surrender.

Seeing their leader, the other assassins also raised their hand in the air and surrendered.

“Good, now let me ask you guys again, are you all willing to be my slaves?”

Thyra frowned as she noticed the change in the question, she then glanced at Alger who was looking at her while nodding with a serious expression.

“Hey! What are you two signalling each other for!? You think you can fool me!? I will ask you again, are you all willing to be my slaves? If your answer does not please me, I will kill every one of you”

Suddenly, Nux ‘noticed’ Thyra and Alger talking with each other and then placed a dagger on Alger’s neck.

Alger's eyes widened as he glanced at Thyra, although he did not say anything, it was clear that he was requesting her to continue her act.

Thyra also did not want to fight the army surrounding them. Since she didn't have much time to think, she nodded and replied.

“Yes, I am”

“Yes, we are”

Seeing their leader, other assassins also nodded. Suddenly, the assassins felt some weird energy entering their bodies but before they could think what it was, Nux's was sounded.

“You, you and you, I didn't hear your approvals. Are you willing to be my Slaves?”

This time, Thyra felt something was wrong, but before she could say anything, she heard a voice in her mind.

‘Stay silent and do not do anything. Just stand there like others’

As if she had lost control of her body, Thyra was unable to move her body and just stood there.

The assassins Nux pointed at were first surprised that he noticed that they did not say yes in this crowd before looking at ‘One’ to ask what she wants them to do.

‘Nod’

Nux's voice sounded in Thyra's head, her body moved on her own and she nodded.

“Yes we are”

The three of them approved as well and then sensed the energy entering their body.

After accomplishing his goal, a big smile appeared on his face. Nux then released Alger and he stood straight with his head down.

Nux then glanced at his status and smiled even more. Today, he had gained more than 30 slaves.

“Good, now let’s see my gains”

He muttered out loud as he started counting how many assassins there were.

The assassins frowned when they saw that he released Marquees Alger.

Wasn’t he supposed to be his defence here? And why is Marquees Alger standing there like a servant? Why is he not running towards them so he can be safe?

“AAAGGHHhhhhh!!”

However, before they could think too much, 2 assassins fell to the ground as they howled in pain. Their screams send shivers down the other assassins’ spines.

Like the 3 assassins before, all of them were tortured and were pretty much numb to pain. They have never seen their partners scream like that for years and seeing them grabbing their heads, and rolling on the ground while screaming like that.

They felt fear.

Thyra, though not afraid, she was still surprised, her eyes then fell on Nux who was looking at the two of them with cold eyes.

Since this was not the first time he has seen people screaming and howling like that, Nux wasn’t as surprised as before and managed to keep a straight, cold look on his face.

“What have you done to them?”

Thyra questioned.

“Hmm? I was standing here from the start, what could I have done?”

“Just tell me what you did and don’t annoy me, or else your end won’t be good” She threatened.

Nux blinked in surprise when he heard her.

‘Why isn’t she feeling any pain?’

He questioned inwardly. Did his ability not work on Grand Masters? No, it worked on Alger. Then what is happening... Feeling that he should analyze it a little more, he continued.

“Oh? You think you can defeat me?”

“Don’t think hiding behind Alger will save you from me. If you annoy me too much, I will kill you even if that results in Alger getting killed”

“Haah, you really think you can kill me? I’ll like to you try” Nux challenged with a smirk.

Thyra’s icy blue eyes turned cold but just as her hand moved towards her dagger, agonizing pain assaulted her head and even her, a cold-blooded assassin, fell to the ground as he shrieked in pain.

“AAAGGHHHHhhhhh!!!”

Seeing their leader screaming in pain just like the other two assassins, the other assassin’s eyes widened in horror.

Thyra however, did not lose her mind like others, with whatever little thinking ability she was left with, she tried to bite the poison pill she had in her mouth.

“AAAAGGGGGHHHHHHHHHHHH!!!”

However, just as she thought about it, the agonizing pain increased to a horrifying degree as the poison pill fell out of her mouth and she kept shrieking in pain.

# Chapter 93

“AAAAGGGGGHHHHHHHHHHH!!!!”

Seeing her scream like that, and then noticing the pill that fell from her mouth, Nux quickly understood what happened.

She tried to kill herself, for a slave, killing themselves without their master’s permission is not different from betraying them.

Since she tried to betray her master, the pain she felt increased by several folds.

Nux did not know how terrible this pain was; he just walked toward her and muttered.

“Stay loyal to me and the pain will subside”

The words ‘pain will subside’ echoed inside Thyra’s mind, she quickly threw all the thoughts about killing herself or attacking Nux and finally felt the pain subsiding.

“Haah... ha... haa...” She then closed her eyes as her whole body trembled.

“All of you, throw the pills you have in your mouth and don’t try to kill yourself. Else you might be the next one suffering from this pain” Nux then glanced at the other assassins and ordered.

Seeing ‘One’ lying on that ground, completely defeated, the assassins felt weird, however, their body did as Nux ordered and they all spat out the poison pill they had in their mouth.

“Good”

Nux then glanced at the two other assassins who were screaming in pain and told them the same thing he did to Thyra.

A while later, Thyra stood up and she glanced at Nux with an expressionless and tired face, Nux glanced at her curiously as he questioned.

“What happened?”

“You are not with Marquees Longe. You did everything to trick us... even Alger was with you in this act”

“Hm? Why do you think so?” Nux questioned with a smile.

“If Marquees Longe had the power to command someone like you, Alger wouldn't be alive till now.”

“You are sharp”

“I still don't understand a few things”

“What are they?” Nux questioned.

“How did you manage to move your army so close to us without even letting us know?”

“I do not have any army, those were Alger's soldiers.”

Thyra's and the assassins' eyes widened in surprise as they glanced at Alger, who was still standing there with his head bowed. Thyra then shook her head and questioned.

“Why are you after us?”

“You people attacked my Edda and Fel”

“Edda and Fel?”

“The Head Maid Edda and Viscount Felberta”

Nux replied as he removed his mask.

“You are...”

“Nux Leander. The one you send ‘Four’, ‘Five’, ‘Six’, and ‘Seven’ after”

“You advanced to Master Stage.”

“I did”

“Okay, next question, what have you done to us?”

Alger’s ears perked up when he heard that question. He also wished to know what happened to him.

“I turned you all into my slaves. You can’t deny any of my orders from now on. Also, if you even think about betraying me, that intense pain will assault you again. In simple words, your life is mine now.”

Thyra’s body twitched when she thought about the pain she felt.

“How did you do it?” She questioned.

“I can’t tell you that”

“...”

Thyra stayed silent for a while before asking another question.

“Last question, You should know about the kingdom that supports us, are you sure you can go against it?”

“Kingdom of Skadi, I know that. And as for going against it, I don’t have those plans right now, but if we do clash in the future, I am sure that the kingdom won’t come out of it scratch less.”

Hearing his words, Thyra’s icy blue eyes turned cold as she replied,

“You won’t be able to do anything to the kingdom. Although you might control my body, my mind will remain loyal to the kingdom. I will find a way to get back at you and then...”

Kill you”

Again, Nux was surprised, she did not feel any pain when she said those words. Aren't those words equal to betraying the Master? Why isn't she feeling anything?

“Tell me, why aren't you feeling any pain?”

In the end, Nux decided to ask her.

“I don't know how the tortures activates, so I tried to remove the ‘intent’ from my words and it worked”

Nux stared at her blankly and ordered.

“Tell me in simpler words. I don't understand what you just said”

“I removed the ‘intent’ from my word, that means, though I said I will kill you, it is more like a statement, I am not actually thinking about killing you”

Although she did not want to answer him, Thyra's mouth moved on her own as she replied.

Nux blinked in surprise. Although she made it look like it was nothing special, it wasn't as simple as that. This hiding the ‘intent’ thing was not that easy.

Every time you say something, your subconscious mind would think about it. For example, the words, ‘I will kill you’. Your subconscious mind would think about killing even if you try not to. It is more like an involuntary action.

“Can you use this technique to betray me in the future?” Nux questioned.

Thyra screamed in her mind to not reply to it but again, her body moved automatically and she answered.

“I cannot, saying words without the ‘intent’ might be possible, but doing something without ‘intent’ is not. No matter how hard one tries, he can’t hide the ‘intent’ of what he is going to do.”

Thyra gritted her teeth after she answered and seeing the smile that appeared on Nux’s face after her answer, she gritted her teeth even more.

“Heh... then how are you planning to kill me?”

“Don’t worry, in the future, I will find a way to deal with this pathetic magic of yours and will kill you for sure. It’s not like a weak Master Stage cultivator like you can defeat me anyways”

“Wow, you are really good at this, aren’t you?” Nux chuckled; he was very impressed by this Thyra.

“I am not good, it is you who is really bad” Thyra answered with an expressionless face.

Nux’s face twitched at her response and he replied.

“Your mouth is really loud huh. Why don’t I shut that up and put it to good use?”

...

Author’s Note: 14 Hours left for the competition.

We are at the 1st, so you can get the 8 extra chapters, however, the second dude isn’t that far away, if he uploads a new chapter, he will surpass me so I don’t know if I will end up at the 1st, or the 2nd place.

However, no matter what place I end up in, I am very thankful to you all for the support you showed me in these past few days.

Thank you very much, and I hope you enjoy the Future chapters!

# Chapter 94

“Your mouth is really loud huh. Why don’t I shut that up and put it to good use?”

“What do you mean?” Thyra tilted her head in confusion.

Nux then smiled a little before he turned around and commanded,

“Thyra, follow me”

Thyra’s body moved on its own, but this time, she was surprised by another thing,

“How do you know my name?”

She was sure that not even other assassins and Alger knows her name, then where did he learn it from?

“I have my ways.”

Nux replied with a smile before he turned towards Alger and informed him.

“I will be using your room today, find another one for you”

He did not wait for his response and continued walking, Thyra, who was still wondering how he learned her name also followed behind him.

Seeing their departing figure, Alger couldn’t help but be jealous. He has always dreamed about doing what Nux was about to do to One. But not only will Nux be the one doing it, but he would also even use his bed to do it!

How shameful is that?

His eyes then fell on other assassins, trying to see if anyone is willing to spend a night with him, but when he saw them looking at him with a threatening gaze, his body shuddered.

“Why did you bring him here?”

An assassin stepped out and questioned in anger. If he had not brought that man here, they would still be free and would be working for their kingdom.

Now, not only they will betray their kingdom, they will even do it for a random nobody who is not even Grand Master Stage!

It is only a matter of time before they all get caught and then they will be dealt with.

“Yeah? Do you think you can defy his orders? Why don’t you try it then?”

Alger then retorted.

He was a Grand Master Stage Cultivator, these Advance and Master Stage Cultivators do not have any right to talk to him like that!

The assassin turned silent as well. He has seen ‘one’ screaming in pain, that scream still sends shivers down his spine. He can’t even imagine what sort of pain someone has to go through to scream like that. It easily surpassed all the torture he suffered.

He then glanced at the two assassins who suffered from the same fate of being tortured and noticed that their faces were still a little pale and they were unusually silent, this made him shiver and shivered even more.

“Hmph!” Alger snorted before he left the room and walked toward his wife’s.

However, he was still inwardly jealous of Nux. He do not how beautiful One is, but he was sure of one thing, her body was alluring. Plus that strict and rude attitude of her, he was sure that it would feel good to shut her mouth with his rod.

...

“Remove your mask”

Inside Alger’s room, Nux sat on the bed leisurely and ordered. Again, Thyra’s body moved on its own and she removed her mask. Nux then laid his eyes on her face and admired.

“Wow, to have such a beautiful Grand Master Stage Cultivator as my slave, and you are an assassin to boot. I struck it big huh...”

Thyra was a beautiful fair-skinned woman with short raven hair and Icy blue eyes. She had a small nose and cherry-like lips. She had a lean physique; her breasts were of the same size as Skyla.

Her black coloured clothes contrasted well with her fair skin and icy blue eyes. All in all, she was a really beautiful woman.

“That is true... to have me as your slave, this may have sucked all the good luck you will have in this and all the other lives you will live from now on. Heck, you might even be a lowly beggar in your next life.”

Thyra replied in her usual strict tone.

Nux’s lips twitched at her response as he replied,

“Wow, you are trying really hard to annoy me aren’t you?”

“Hmph!”

“Alright, I believe it is time for me to show you your position”

Then, Nux’s gaze turned cold and he ordered.

“Get on all fours”

Again, Thyra’s body moved on its own and he quickly knelt before placing her hands on the floor as well.

“You see that? On the floor, on all fours, just like a bitch, that is where you belong. That is what you are now, a bitch, my bitch, who will listen to whatever I will say from now on”

Humiliated, Thyra was extremely humiliated, she wanted to move her body and stand up but her body did not listen to her command.

After trying and failing several times, she threw that idea out of her mind and retorted.

“So what if you can command me? I will still not submit to you willingly”

Then a disdainful smirk appeared on Nux’s face and he replied,

“Do you think I care about you submitting me willfully or not? I can command you to do anything. I can ask you to tell me everything. What else would I need?”

Thyra glared at Nux with hatred, she still wasn’t willing to lose to him.

“Hmm? What’s with that gaze? Oh? Do you not believe what I said? How about I give you an example? So let me ask you, will you ever bark like a bitch in front of your previous master?”

“My master is a respectful and dignified person, I will never be ordered to do anything like that”

“Yeah, whatever in the end, the answer is no right? However, if I command you to bark like a bitch you are, you will do it without question.

Would you like to try?”

“ ... ”

“Thyra Cruse, bark like a bitch you are”

...

Author's Note: Yeah yeah, I know a lot of you will not like how Nux is acting rn, tbh, I agree, I do not like it as well.

So don't worry, just read.

You can trust me.

I believe after a ride of 90+ chapters, you guys know me well enough to trust me.

# Chapter 95

“Thyra Cruse, bark like a bitch you are”

“Wwarrf”

Thyra’s body moved on its own again and she barked.

However, at this moment, her whole body was trembling in shame and humiliation, and Nux’s next words did not help either.

“A cold, Grand Master Stage Assassin, who is capable enough to kill Expert Stage Cultivators, is barking like a bitch in front of a mere Master Stage Cultivator.

See that? If I can make you do what you will never do in front of anyone, why do I need you to submit to me willingly? There is no merit in that.”

Thyra’s eyes turned red in rage, however...

“AAAGGHHhhhhhH!!”

Just as she thought about attacking him, that intense pain assaulted her again and she fell to the floor.

‘I am loyal.

I am loyal

I am loyal

I am loyal’

Only after thinking about it continuously did the pain subside, and she sighed in relief.

“Alright, this is enough. I don’t have much time to waste. Come here, on all our fours of course” Nux ordered as he patted his thighs.

Thyra’s body moved and she crawled towards him and only stopped when her face was close to his crotch. However, her eyes were still red in rage and she had an extremely repulsed look on her face.

Nux completely ignored her expression as he patted her head and caressed her face with a smile.

“Good good, now lower my pant with your mouth.”

Thyra buried her face in his crotch as she grabbed his pant with her teeth and tried to remove them. All this while, Nux never stopped patting her head, and her repulsed expression never changed.

She tried very hard to deny his command and control her body, but it was all meaningless.

After a few more tries, Thyra finally managed to lower his pant and a huge 8-inch monster popped out.

Seeing a cold-blooded assassin on all her fours like a bitch, doing whatever he wanted, Nux’s emotions were stimulated and his little brother was already ready to go and explore a new cave.

After a blow job of course.

“What a filthy thing”

Thyra muttered in disgust, Nux’s lips twitched but he controlled his emotions and ordered.

“Start licking this ‘filthy thing’ then”

Nux slapped her cheek with his dick a few times before he rubbed it on her cheek. Thyra’s body trembled in disgust but a small tongue moved out from her mouth.

Nux then stopped moving and waited for her to do what he ordered.

With her eyes filled with hatred as she glared at Nux, Thyra started licking his shaft.

“Yes, just like that, lick everything, from the head to the body and then the balls as well, lick it like it is the most delicious thing in this world.”

Again, Thyra’s body started moving on its own and she moved her tongue quickly and continued licking.

The contrast between her licking his shaft greedily and the hatred in her eyes stimulated Nux even more. He doesn’t know why, but this felt amazing.

It was as if he was exploring something new.

It was exciting and thrilling.

“Ughhh~ You are good, I feel like you are a natural at this”

Thyra’s body trembled in anger, she wanted to cut his dick off but knew that if she even thought about it, that agonizing pain would return and torture her.

Her body then shuddered in fear as she continued licking obediently.

She can deal with anything...

Anything but that pain...

“This should be enough, now gobble the whole thing and start sucking”

Thyra’s body moved and she quickly gobbled up his shaft and started sucking.

“Ughhhh~ As I thought you are a natural. With just some training, you will become a fine blowjober.”

Nux praised as waves and waves of pleasure assaulted his body. Thyra on the other hand, did not feel any good from his praises, rather, she got even angrier.

Also, why is he patting her like she's some sort of pet!? She hates it!

“Don't just keep sucking, move your head up and down as well”

Another order was heard and her head started moving.

“Roll your tongue all around my dick, keep sucking, and keep moving your head”

Her body did as she told and a slurping sound echoed throughout the room.

\*Slurp\* \*Slurp\* \*Slurp\*

“Ugghhhhh~~”

Waves and waves of pleasure assaulted Nux's body as he grabbed her head with his hands and increased her speed.

\*Slurp\* \*Slurp\* \*Slurp\*

The slurping voice quickened, the pleasure he felt increased and he felt his milk forming up.

Nux couldn't control himself anymore, he stood up and started moving his hips as well, thrusting his dick deep inside her throat. He did not know any mercy with his thrusts, treating Thyra's mouth like an object.

\*Slurp\* \*Slurp\* \*Slurp\*

The slurping sound increased, and tears welled within Thyra's eyes as she choked.

“Ugghhhhh! I am cumming”

Nux also reached his limit, he moved his dick out of her mouth and sprayed all his jizz on her face.

Thyra's felt even more disgusted by this and was quick to try and clean everything...

However,

“Do not clean it, let my milk stay on your face for this whole night. This will help you remember where you belong and you won't use that worthless mouth of yours to say some useless stuff.”

Her hand that was about to clean her face stopped moving and returned to the floor.

Thyra glared at Nux with eyes full of hatred but that look combined with his jizz on her face only worked to turn him on and his rod stood up again.

# Chapter 96

“Heh! Glare all you want, I don’t care. I’ll show you where you belong, you bitch”

Nux’s smirk widened as he ordered.

“Now turn around and show me your ass!”

Thyra’s body trembled but as always, it did what he ordered and turned around before lifting its butt.

A single crystalline tear streamed down from her eyes, her shoulders trembled as she blinked a few times to get rid of the tears welling in.

She would not cry.

Nux however, couldn’t care less about her struggle, he stood up but just as he was about to slam his dick inside her pussy, he heard a voice.

‘What are you doing?’

‘Hm? ...nothing’

He lied.

‘Are you sure?’

Felberta questioned.

‘...Y-yes...’

‘Well, then it’s okay. Although I will say, if you are doing something that you feel you should hide from me, that might not be the best thing to do.’

She could feel his emotions to some extent due to the [Harem Seal] and she did not like what she felt.

Although she isn't planning to control his life, she will still give her advice if she feels he's doing something wrong.

Saying that, Felberta did not reply anymore.

Nux also paused his movements and then noticed Thyra's shoulder trembling. He walked closer as he saw her face and couldn't help but be shocked.

She was crying...

Nux was then assaulted by different emotions.

This was not the same as Edda, she wasn't enjoying it...

He was raping her!

He nearly became what he hated the most.

Nux then closed his eyes as tried to calm his racing heart.

“Sorry. I have gone too far”

A deep sigh came out of his mouth as he apologized.

Thyra turned back as she saw Nux standing with his eyes closed and couldn't help but frown.

‘What happened to him?’

She then saw him opening his eyes and the previous glint that shined inside was nowhere to be seen, there was even a hint of sadness there.

His excited dick had also calmed down. However, before Thyra could think more about it, Nux ordered.

“Go wash your face and clean up. You can take your time but after you are done, return, I still have some things to ask. Don’t worry; I won’t force you to do this again.”

Although his voice sounded calm, Thyra could notice something weird in it. However, since she was disgusted by the thing that was spread on her face, she did not think too much and rushed into the bathroom.

Nux also sighed as he fell on the bed and muttered.

‘Thank you...’

‘Don’t worry, I will always be here for you’

A small smile appeared on Felberta’s face before she closed her eyes and entered her dreamland.

Inside Alger’s room, Nux also closed his eyes as he thought about the past events and the reason why he did that.

‘Hmm... my stay as the Wilderness affected me more than I thought... combining with that rough plays with Edda...’

I have gone overboard...’

Nux then reflected on it a little more and realized that he was too hungry for power.

Thyra was a Grand Master Stage cultivator, if he could fuck her, his power will soar. However, instead of waiting and letting his [Craving Touch] work, he tried to outright \*\*\*\* her, now that is just shameful.

Nux then calmed his mind and breathed evenly as he waited for Thyra to return.

30 minutes later, Thyra returned, her expression was the same cold expression he saw the first time he met her.

Nux then stood up and started,

“I will apologize for what I did before.”

“ ... ”

Thyra did not reply.

Nux had already expected that and he did not really care what she thought either. No matter what, in the end, she was still a slave.

He won't treat her the same way he treats his women. He was just apologizing for his own heart.

Her feelings did not matter to him.

He should at least be this cold now that he was in this new, crueller world.

“Alright, let's get to the business. Are these all the assassins the kingdom sent here?”

Nux questioned.

“No, the kingdom sent a total of 55 assassins, 5 of them died so there are 50 left”

“How strong are these assassins?”

“Including me, there are 3 Grand Master Stage Assassins; I am at the Peak Grand Master Stage, the strongest amongst them. The other two are in the Middle and Early stages. We are named One, Two, and Three.

Then from Four to twenty, we have Master Stage Cultivators, the rest are at Advance Stage. In other words, the lower the number, the stronger the Assassin.”

Nux's eyes widened in surprise when he heard her.

50 Assassins!

3 Grand Masters.

17 Masters.

And 30 Advance Stage Cultivators.

What kind of force is that!?

This is way stronger than a Normal Marquess house. Only Dukes and the Royal Family can take this force on!

And this force will be under him after some time.

Nux smiled in contentment when he thought about it. He had now gained some standing in this world. Although he is still in the shadows, he was now stronger and had more power than an average noble.

Barons, Viscounts, and Earls?

He could take any Marquess' house with ease!

And that too without doing anything by himself.

With eyes filled with anticipation and desire, he turned to Thyra and questioned.

“Where are the rest of the assassins then?”

“They live in Hardwick Mansion.”

Although she knew what he was thinking, and did not like it one bit, she knew her thoughts would not matter and she would have to answer and even help him with what he is about to do.

Thyra sighed at her fate.

She really wanted to kill Alger for targeting this monster's women.

“Alright, we are heading to the Hardwick Mansion, now”

“W-What?”

# Chapter 97

“Alright, we are heading to the Hardwick Mansion, now”

“W-What?”

“Did you not hear me? Take me to the Hardwick Mansion”

“B-But, although I can deal with the Two and Three, that does not mean I can deal with every assassin alone, are you thinking about taking all the assassins we have and go for an all-out attack?”

“Huh? Do you think I am stupid? Why would I make my men fight each other and weaken themselves? I will just repeat what I did earlier. The only difference will be that with you here, the process will be a lot simpler.”

Nux shrugged before he stood up.

“What are you waiting for? Lead me”

Actually, even Thyra was curious about how he managed to turn Alger into his slave, now that she is about to witness it again, she couldn't deny that she was looking forward to it.

As for her comrades who were about to become this man's slaves. Well, she couldn't do anything about it no matter how much she thinks about it.

So as not to further torture herself, she decided that she will find some ways to get rid of him later.

He is just a mere Master Stage Cultivator after all.

She then nodded before she turned around and left the room. Nux followed her, and when the two of them left the Bannermane Mansion, he activated his [Conceal] with only Thyra being able to see him.

Thyra did not notice what he did, however, she was surprised by how easily Nux was matching her speed.

As an Assassin, speed was her strong part, she felt annoyed that a mere Master Stage Cultivator was keeping up with her, and he is a hateful one at that.

She then used her skills, and increased her speed to the maximum, however, she was horrified that although not completely, Nux still matched her speed to a great extent!

She was a Peak Grand Master, even a new Expert Stage Cultivator might not be her match in speed!

How is a Master Stage Cultivator matching up with her speed!?

What kind of freak was he!?

“Hmm, I feel like Steps Of Gale is too slow for me now...”

After they appeared in front of Hardwick Mansion, Nux muttered to himself and Thyra froze.

“A-Are you talking about the 1 Star Skill, the Steps Of Gale?”

“Yes, I got it from Fel, but I think it is too low levelled for me now.”

“...”

Thyra stayed silent, however, inwardly, she was having an existential crisis.

‘He is using a 1 Star Skill!? H-How is he keeping up with me then!? I am using a 4 Star Skill! How is he a Master Stage Cultivator!? Is he a hidden Expert Stage Cultivator!?’

A monster!

A complete monster!?’

“Alright let’s not waste more time and enter the Mansion. Lead the way”

Nux ordered and Thyra started moving. Although she did not know how he will enter the Mansion with her, she did not care and just walked into the Mansion.

She had covered her face, but it was not the first time the guards have seen her, so they did not stop her.

She wondered why the guards did not stop Nux but then she concluded that they thought of him as her servant and let him go.

Thyra shook her head as she walked into the mansion and then moved towards a dark hallway.

She noticed that the maids and other guards did not even look at Nux and couldn’t help but smile a little.

‘Hmph! How does it feel to be treated like air by everyone? Huh?’

The two of them then appeared in front of a wooden door that look very similar to the one in the Bannermane Mansion.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“It is me, One”

The door was then opened and the two of them entered.

However, soon, Thyra realized something.

Just like those maids and guards, the assassins were ignoring Nux as well, but she knows them well, they would never do that.

They might let him enter here since he was with her, but they would still look at them vigilantly, or at least question her about him, or something like that.

Anyways, they would never outright ignore his presence.

Just as she was thinking about what is happening, Nux answered.

“They can’t see me”

“What?” Thyra muttered out loud.

“What?”

‘Two’ questioned with a frown as he looked at Thyra.

“Hm?”

“What are you talking about?” he questioned again, feeling a little weird about her actions.

“Nothing” This time, Thyra was sure. It is as Nux said, no one can see him...

What kind of sorcery was this!?

He is standing right in front of everyone and no one can see him!?

Is he a ghost!?

Then why can she see him!?

“Alright, don’t think too much about it, gather all of them”

Thyra’s mouth moved on her own as she ordered. “Alright, everyone, gather up”

Two frowned when he noticed that she was acting strange but when since she was the strongest, and the leader of this group, he nodded and stood straight. Other assassins were also gathered here and more than 20 assassins assembled around.

“Now question something they would answer with a yes”

Thyra frowned due to the weird order but since she couldn't do anything to go against it, she started thinking and she questioned after some time.

“Have you guys eaten?”

The assassins looked at her weirdly.

Under their judgmental look, Thyra felt strange.

“Question in a stricter tone” Nux ordered.

“I asked have you guys eaten yet.”

Thyra felt even more weird asking a question like that in a strict tone but she felt even weirder when she heard Nux questioning something at the same time as her.

“Are you guys willing to be my slaves?”

# Chapter 98

“I asked have you guys eaten yet.”

“Are you guys willing to be my slaves?”

“Yes”

As the assassins answered, a big smile appeared on Nux’s face. Seeing that smile, Thyra also understood what happened. She remembered that they only answered with a yes before that weird energy entered their bodies and that was when everything happened.

‘Haah... I can’t believe such an absurd ability exists.’

Thyra sighed inwardly, however, she then noticed that his smile had faded and was replaced with a frown.

‘It did not work...’

Nux muttered inwardly as he realized that his plan did not work. This proves that he cannot cheat others with this. The target has to know what they are approving of. Just saying yes won’t work.

Nux took note of it and nodded inwardly.

Of course, Nux only treated this as an experiment and knew that it might fail. Therefore, he had already prepared the countermeasures.

Since Plan A failed, he started Plan B.

“Introduce them to me, tell them that I am...”

He then told everything to Thyra before he walked behind ‘Three’ and grabbed her before placing a dagger on her neck.

Why did he not do this with ‘Two’?

Well, who would like to touch a man if there is a woman next to him?

Nux wouldn’t.

As he touched ‘Three’ his [Conceal] wore off and he appeared in front of everybody.

Three couldn’t believe that someone had closed in on her and her body stiffened. The other assassins were also surprised but they quickly recovered and prepared to attack.

“Stop!”

However, before they could move, Thyra’s voice sounded and the assassins looked at her with a frown.

“He won’t harm her. If he wanted to harm us, he would have killed us all by now and we won’t be able to do anything... did you forget? None of you sensed his presence till now.”

Thinking about it a little more, ‘Two’ nodded and shuddered at the same time.

Who was this man?

Why was he unable to sense him?

However, though surprised, his condition wasn’t as bad as three.

She still couldn’t believe that someone sneaked behind her and placed his dagger on her neck and she was unable to do anything.

If this man had wanted to kill her, she wouldn’t have known how she died.

How scary was that!?

Seeing that the assassins had calmed down, Nux released 'Three' from his grasp before he walked in front of the group with his hands behind his back.

“Let me introduce him to you. He is Levi Ackerman, a veteran assassin sent by the Kingdom to train us, also, don't look down on him just because he is at Master Stage Cultivator. He is a lot stronger than that. If you do not believe me, you can challenge him.

Although I will say it beforehand, Master Levi will only fight any one of you, he doesn't have much time and has important things to attend to, so choose wisely.”

“I will fight”

'Three' stepped up.

She was very embarrassed when he appeared behind her and got her in such a helpless position, however, when she noticed he was just a Master Stage Cultivator, her embarrassment turned into anger.

Now that she has a chance to get back at him, she will do her very best to defeat him and wash her embarrassment.

“Alright”

Thyra nodded before she glanced at Nux who nodded back.

Then, a gold coin appeared in his hand as he glanced at Three.

“I will toss this coin up, the moment it falls on the ground, our fight will start.”

Three nodded as well and Nux tossed the coin.

Three then glanced at the coin that was tossed in the air for a second, however, that little second cost her the whole match.

Since her eyes were not on him, Nux quickly activated his [Conceal] and then waited for the coin to fall to the ground.

Three on the other hand panicked when she couldn't see Nux and started looking around vigilantly.

\*Kknn\*

The coin fell on the ground and Nux started moving towards Three who was still looking around.

He then appeared behind her and placed his dagger near her neck and grabbed her from behind.

“Well, I guess the fight's over”

Nux muttered before he released Three from his grasp.

Three, on the other hand, was frozen stiff as she couldn't believe that she lost so quickly.

“H-How...”

However, Three wasn't the only one surprised, the assassins who did not look at the coin were even more surprised than her.

All they saw was Three acting strangely, and when the coin fell, Nux leisurely walked towards Three before grabbing her from behind.

All this while, Three just looked around and did not move at all...

“T-Three... why didn't you fight him when he walked towards you?”

One of the assassins couldn't control himself and questioned.

“W-What are you talking about? How am I supposed to stop him when I can't even see him?”

“B-But wasn't he just standing right in front of you?”

“In front of me?” Now Three was even more confused.

What the hell was happening here? How could others see him when she could not? What kind of absurd ability is that?

“Alright Alright, stop talking. I don’t have time to waste here. I was sent here by the kingdom since Master thought you would need more training. So you all will be under my control. Is that clear?”

“Yes”

Every assassin answered simultaneously. This time, no one doubted his strength but they were still confused and wondered how he was doing all this.

“Good, now just for confirmation, let me ask you guys again,

Are you all willing to be Slaves?”

# Chapter 99

“Are you all willing to be Slaves?”

The assassins felt weird about the change in question but when they glanced at Thyra, who just stood there without saying anything, they did not think too much about it and answered.

“Yes”

Strange energy then entered their bodies and this time, their names finally appeared on the Slave column.

This put a smile on Nux’s face before he glanced at them and activated his [Eye Of Discerning]

While the Nux was examining every assassin, the assassin felt odd and doubted the energy that entered their bodies.

“Did you feel that as well?”

Three questioned Two.

“You did as well? I thought I was not feeling well today...”

“What was that energy?”

“No clue”

“Don’t worry about it, it’s normal”

Thyra assured.

The assassins then nodded, trusting Thyra.

However, the one who they were trusting, Thyra, felt bitter in her heart. She only assured them because she was ordered by Nux!

That energy is not nothing!

It is something that will change their life!

However, she then calmed a little and frowned, technically, these assassins should already be under him, so why is he avoiding talking about his power?

Nux's reasoning was simple.

He just did not want to waste time on this worthless talk since he found something much more interesting than this.

He then glanced at Thyra and questioned.

“Aren't you all spies sent by the Kingdom Of Skadi?”

“Technically, we are assassins, but you can say it like that”

Nux then pointed his finger at a female assassin and questioned.

“What about her? Is she any different than you?”

“Hm? Her? No, she's 'Eleven', she's an assassin just like us”

Thyra answered.

A frown then appeared on Nux's face before he glanced at Eleven and activated his [Eye Of Discerning] again.

[Name: Maida Ayers]

[Age: 54 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Spy sent by the Kingdom Of Skadi.]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 35]

[HP: 460/460]

[MP: 600/600]

[STR: 43]

[AGL: 46]

[VIT: 46]

[STM: 38]

[INT: 60]

[DEF: 37]

...

‘A spy? Why is her occupation different than these assassins?’

He then looked into Eleven’s eye and questioned.

“Are you different from these assassins in any way?”

Eleven frowned at this question, however, her mouth moved on its own and replied.

“Yes. I am a Spy”

Soon, Eleven's eyes widened in horror but before she could think too much, Nux questioned again.

“A Spy? What kind of Spy? Who do you Spy on?”

Even Thyra had a frown on her face. As a leader of these assassins, she knew everything about them. However, this was the first time she was hearing something like this.

“A Spy sent by the Kingdom to keep watch on ‘One’. I report every action ‘One’ takes to the kingdom”

Thyra's eyes widened in surprise, however, it wasn't over yet.

“Why do you keep eye on One? Isn't she working for the kingdom?”

“She is but the kingdom does not trust her.”

“An Orphan cannot be trusted with such matters”

Eleven's eyes widened in terror.

She wasn't going to say the last line, she just heard ‘Levi's ordering in her head to say it and her body moved on her own.

“W-What...?”

Thyra's eyes widened with shock...

The kingdom she was so loyal to does not trust her at all...

An Orphan cannot be trusted with such matters...

Was she really just that...? All the loyalty, devotion, and love she had shown for the kingdom just amounts to this much?

They actually send a Spy just to keep watch on her?

She was in dismay...

She couldn't believe what she was hearing...

When he saw her reaction, a smile appeared on Nux's face before it disappeared in an instant.

This woman was too loyal, although he used a Slave Seal, he still wanted to win her over so that she will give her all for his ambitions.

Therefore, he came up with a plan when he learned that 'Eleven' is a spy. He did not have to do anything. He just needed to add some fire.

He learned about Thyra being an Orphan when he asked about her background.

And then ordered Eleven to say that line so that it will leave a strong impact on Thyra; with this, he will be able to gain Thyra's loyalty little by little.

Actually, even other assassins, who were orphans as well, had different expressions on their faces, however, Nux did not care about them.

Maybe he cared a little about Two and Three. But the rest of them were just slaves, them having thoughts about betraying him doesn't matter.

He only needs the important ones.

He needs Thyra.

So he planned for it.

A perfect plan.

"W-What have you done to me!?"

While Nux was thinking and admiring how perfect his plan was, Eleven questioned in panic.

"Huh? What do you mean?"

“M-My body moved on its own! Why else do you think will I tell you that I am a spy even if I was one!?”

“Why else? Well, let me show you”

Nux then pointed at another assassin and questioned.

“You, tell me everything about yourself”

The assassin’s mouth moved on its own and he started telling his back story.

“My name is Afton Stonee, I came fro-”

“Yea, yea, that’s enough.”

Before he could even complete it, Nux waved his hand and he stopped.

However, the assassin’s eyes were wide in shock and horror.

“See that? You guys agreed to become my slaves, from now on, you will do whatever I tell you to. Got that?”

However, just as Nux replied, an Assassin fell to the ground and started screaming.

“AAAGGGHHhhhhh!!”

# Chapter 100

“AAAGGGHHhhhhh!!”

By now, Nux was already used to seeing this scene and did not feel anything.

“Oh yeah, I forgot to tell you, if you think about betraying me, you will suffer from an agonizing pain so... don't do it”

Thyra's mouth twitched at the laid back explanation, she then calmed her mind and walked towards the assassin who was shrieking in pain.

“Calm down, think about being loyal to him. Keep muttering, ‘I am loyal to him’ in your mind and the pain will subside”

A few seconds later, the assassin who was rolling all over the floor screaming in pain turned silent as he breathed heavily.

Thyra then turned towards assassins and instructed.

“Do not take this lightly; do not think about betraying him. This pain is no joke, trust me, I say it from experience”

“H-have you suffered from this pain?” An assassin questioned.

“I did, and I do not want to go through it again”

“...”

The assassins turned silent.

If even One says that she does not want to go through that pain again... there is no way any one of them would try something funny.

Also, that assassin who is now lying on the ground breathing heavily with a pale face ensured their thoughts.

“Okay, I do not have much time for all this. C’mon, let’s go. Two and Three, you follow me. As for the rest of you, carry on with whatever you were doing. You will get further orders from Two and Three” Nux ordered as he turned around.

However, he then stopped and glanced at Eleven,

“You too, report what you normally do. Just say everything is fine, don’t make them suspicious. Alright?”

She nodded in agreement and Nux turned around.

“Where are we going?”

Thyra questioned.

“To deal with Marquees Hardwick of course.”

Nux replied nonchalantly as he walked out.

When he entered here, he had already sensed his presence, so he knew where he was. Thyra and the other two assassins shrugged as well and followed him.

In their eyes, Marquees Hardwick was a weakling, an untrained brute without any techniques. They were sure that they could defeat him easily even if they fight one on one, let alone three of them together.

Four of them then stepped out as they walked towards Marquees Hardwick’s room. Soon, however, they stopped as they looked at the two guards standing in front of his room and Nux questioned.

“Do you people know the guards?”

“Well, we do but I don’t think they will let us in without alerting him first”

Two answered.

“Meh... too bothersome, wait here, I will deal with them”

Nux then casually walked towards the guards and appeared behind them,

\*Bam\*

A chop on their necks and... done.

The guards didn't even know how they lost consciousness.

“D-Did that how it looked like when he f-fought me?” Three questioned as she watched the scene in front of her.

She only saw him walking toward the guards, somehow, the guard failed to notice him even though he was right in front of them and he knocked them out.

“Y-Yeah”

Thyra answered, although she has seen this before, it was still as shocking as ever.

“It's ridiculous... he can kill anyone without any effort... He is a perfect assassin” ‘Two’ muttered as he glanced at Nux in a daze.

Nux then deactivated his [Conceal] and then kicked the door open before entering.

‘Damn! I always wanted to do this’ Nux thought inwardly before he shook his head and smiled.

Heath Hardwick, or Marquees Hardwick, who was sleeping calmly was jolted awake and his eyes widened when he saw a man wearing black clothes, with his face covered standing right in front of him.

‘An assassin’

His heartbeat quickened when he realized that the man was an assassin, however, he calmed down a little when he noticed three more familiar assassins entering the room behind him.

“Heath Hardwick, are you willing to be my slave?”

Suddenly, the unfamiliar assassin questioned.

“W-What?” Heath felt that he had heard him wrong and questioned.

“What? Are you deaf or something? I will ask you again, are you willing to be my slave?”

The man repeated, this time his tone was a lot stricter than before.

However, instead of getting afraid, Heath’s eyes turned cold as he roared.

“Who do you think you are!?”

Then without any warning, he took out his 4-star sword and attacked.

The three assassins rejoiced inwardly when they noticed that Nux hasn’t ordered them to defend him. They were hoping that he would get killed by Heath so that they could be free.

Nux of course, did not know their thoughts, if he wanted, he could have directly activated [Conceal] and have dealt with Heath as he did with Alger, but he wanted to take this opportunity to show his strength to his new slaves.

\*Clank\*

Just as Heath thought he will cut his head off, a green-black coloured dagger appeared in Nux’s hand as he blocked his attack.

“Meh... weak.”

Nux then forced his sword back before slashing Heath’s arm, leaving a deep cut there. The dagger’s paralysis effect triggered and Heath’s entire right

hand turned numb within seconds.

“T-This dagger!”

“Yeah, that’s your boyfriend’s. Oh right, he is also my slave, so you can enjoy his company after you become one as well”

\*Bam\*

\*Smash\*

He then kicked Heath’s chest and his body flew back before clashing with a wall.

One, Two, and Three, who were looking at this scene had wide eyes...

What is happening?

How is the defeating a Grand Master Stage Cultivator even though he is just a Master Stage Cultivator?

And why does it feel so effortless?

Heck, he hasn’t even used the ability where he turns invisible!

Marquees Heath could see him very well!

That means he is still holding back!

What kind of monster is he!?

“Alright, let’s not waste more time, Heath Hardwick, are you willing to become my Slave?” Nux did not seem to care about what these assassins were thinking, he casually walked towards Heath as he placed his foot on his head and questioned.

Heath then raised his head as he glared at Nux and replied.

“In your drea- Ugghh!”

Before he could even complete it, Nux kicked his head as if it was a football.

“Hmm, it feels like your willpower is stronger than Alger’s, he submitted when he lost 3 fingers, I don’t know if that was cowardly or smart...

But let’s see how many fingers would I have to cut off before you submit.

This should be an interesting experiment...”

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face.

# **Volume 2**

# Chapter 101

“Hmm, it feels like your willpower is stronger than Alger’s, he submitted when he lost 3 fingers, I don’t know if that was cowardly or smart...

Let’s see how many fingers would I have to cut off before you submit.

This should be an interesting experiment...”

Seeing the disdainful look in his eyes, Heath knew he wasn’t kidding. The dagger’s numbing effect has already started its effect and he can’t move his arm anymore.

Even if he could, there was no way he would have won against this man. He had somehow gained a little confidence when he saw his cultivation was only at Master Stage.

But this man is a monster!

Even though he was just at Master Stage, the way he fought and overpowered him made it look like he was an Expert Stage Cultivator!

What a Freak!

However, as a Marquee, how could Heath be willing to be someone’s slave?

His eyes then fell on the three assassins following this man and his eyes brightened.

“What are you three doing!? Why aren’t you saving me!? Although he might be a little strong, I believe with the three of you working together, you can deal with him!

One! You can even kill Expert Stage Cultivators right!? Then why aren’t you fighting him!? Could it be that you are afraid of a Master Stage Cultivator?”

“ ... ”

An unusual silence descended on the room after Heath's words.

“ ... ”

“...Are you... dumb?”

Nux questioned with a confused look on his face, did he hit his head too hard?

“W-What?”

“Can't you see they are following me? Look how they are standing, does it look like they even intend to stop me? No right? Of course not. Why would they stop me? They are my slaves as well”

“Y-Your Slaves?”

“Yes, One, Two, Three, all fifty of them, Alger as well, all of them are my Slaves. Only you are left.

Do you understand it now? Don't think I won't kill you because I want you as my slave, if worse come to worse, you will die while being tortured and I will find someone to replace you as the new head of this Marquees house.

Your greatest trump card is already mine, so it doesn't matter if you give up or not. You'll just increase my work a little, that's it.”

Seeing that nonchalant attitude, Heath's will to resist him dimmed.

It was true, his trump card, the assassins were already under him, and he was pretty much worthless.

His only worth was that he was needed as a 'face', the head of a Marquees house my ass, that was only a title and it is very easy to replace a 'face'.

“A-Are you from the kingdom?”

Heath questioned.

With the assassins on his side, he had already given up. He just wanted to confirm something.

“Yes. The kingdom send me since your progress wasn’t on par with our expectation.”

Then without wasting any time, Nux took out a normal dagger before placing it on his index finger.

“Well, this will be the last time I will ask this without hurting you, are you willing to be Slave?”

Heath’s face twitched, ‘Without hurting you my ass! I can’t move my right hand, and my head is still hurting from that kick! How dare you say without hurting me!?’

However, he did not say that out loud and quickly gave up.

“Yes, I am willing to be your slave”

“Good”

A smile appeared on Nux’s face when he heard him, he then finally removed his mask and took a deep breath.

“Haahh... it’s finally done. What a long night...”

“Y-You...”

However, just after he revealed his face, Heath was given another shock.

He recognized that face...

He was...

“Nux Leander. You sent your assassins after me and my Edda.”

“Y-you are not from the kingdom!”

“ ... ”

Again, silence descended on the room after his words ended.

“You really are dumb huh...” Nux muttered as he glanced at Heath with a blank look.

“One! He’s not from the kingdom! He fooled you! Atta-AAAGGGHHHHHHHGH!!!”

Heath wanted to stand up and attack Nux but then he was assaulted by the agonizing pain and fell to the floor.

“It’s getting really repetitive huh...”

While Heath was rolling on the floor, screaming in pain, Nux muttered with a nonchalant look.

Within just one night, he had already seen countless people screaming in pain like this...

Actually, he was getting bored with this, it would be a lot better if he was with his Fel, Skyla, Lane, or Edda.

Well, whatever, he was handsome and a responsible man, he needed to work hard to secure his future. This little sacrifice was needed.

Not that he wasn’t rewarded for his hard work, he now got control over 2 Marquees’ houses plus the Assassins which are a lot stronger than these Marquees’ houses.

However, that wasn’t his real gain, his real gain was Thyra.

With a peak Grand Master Stage Assassin as his slave, it won’t be long before he becomes a Grand Master.

With that, it would be easy for him to defeat an Expert Stage Cultivator and he might even be able to fight against a King Stage Cultivator.

However, he will not \*\*\*\* her.

He won't repeat that mistake.

He will use the approach he always had, combining it with his [Craving Touch], this will be easy peasy!

“Umm...”

While Nux was still thinking about all this, he felt someone patting his shoulder, he turned around and saw Thyra looking at him as she then pointed at Heath who was still rolling all over the floor, screaming in pain.

“Oh... I forgot about him...”

Nux muttered before he walked towards Heath.

Thyra's mouth twitched but deep inside her, she also liked seeing this piece of shit being tortured like this.

‘He deserves it’

After a while, Heath stopped rolling on the ground, he had learned how this worked and swore in his heart that he would never think about betraying his Master.

“Alright, get some rest, you have 10 minutes, after that, take me to your army head and other important members of your army.”

# Chapter 102

After putting the [Slave Seal] on the head of Hardwick Army and some other higher-ups, Nux and Thyra left the Hardwick House while Two and Three stayed there.

“An Orphan cannot be trusted with such matters... huh...”

While they were walking towards the Bannermane house, Nux muttered what ‘Eleven’ said.

“...”

Thyra’s movements paused a little before she continued like she did not hear him.

A smile appeared on Nux’s face as he realized that it was working.

“I can’t believe she said that... well, it’s not really her fault either, it’s the kingdom’s...”

“...”

Again, Thyra did not react.

“I really pity you... Thyra Cruse”

Thyra couldn’t take it anymore as she glanced at Nux and replied in a hoarse voice.

“I do not need your pity.”

“Of course, you do not. You are a strong woman. The kingdom you gave your all for does not trust you at all. If I had faced something like that, I would be broken by now”

“Hmph! That just means you are weak”

Thyra snorted, Nux’s face twitched a little but it quickly returned to normal as he shook his head.

“No, I am not weak, it is you who is just too strong. With your talent, you can easily live a lavish life without any troubles, but you chose to live a dark life for your kingdom.

However, even after such a big sacrifice, you did not even win their basic trust. I am impressed that you can talk normally right now”

Nux continued with a slight smile on his face, if Felberta was here, she would know it in an instance that he was enjoying it.

“The kingdom does not work on feelings, they have to make sure their plan does not fail. It is not wrong for them to have double security” “Thyra replied in monotone.

It felt like she was trying to convince herself rather than convincing Nux.

“I do not need any double security, I trust whoever I trust with my whole heart. If they betray me, that will be my fault for trusting them.”

“Hmph! Don’t act like you are any better. You literally control our bodies and just the thought about betraying you tears apart our body with agonizing pain.” Thyra snorted.

“When did I say that I trust you? Remember, you guys were my enemies, and you swore to get back get your revenge against me. I would be a fool to trust you.

I am honest about it, at least I do not create a fake image of trusting my subordinates only to send another subordinate just to keep eye on the former one.

I show what I am upfront, and I believe that alone makes me better them.”

Nux replied before he increased his speed.

Thyra too increased her speed as she followed behind him, however, she was lost in her thoughts as she pondered his words.

He was right, they were enemies...

She completely forgot about that...

She then remembered how guilty he looked after what he did to her, however, as soon as she thought about it, she shook her head in disgust.

‘Hmph! That was just an act!’

Images of her sucking his penis appeared in her mind and she felt slight twitching in her crotch area.

Feeling that twitch, Thyra’s eyes widened in shock, she couldn’t believe her body was acting like that.

Her eyes turned cold as she glared at Nux with hatred.

Of course, Nux did not know what was going on in her mind, nor did he care, he just needed to use the newly found hatred she has for the kingdom and make her completely loyal to him from there.

Step by step...

And he has achieved what he wanted for today.

“Alright, you can return to Bannerman House, we will meet at the meeting tomorrow”

Saying that, Nux rushed towards Felberta’s mansion before walking into her room and sleeping right beside her; while hugging her of course.

...

The next day, Nux and Felberta were sitting in the hall, however, this hall was a lot bigger than the one in Felberta’s mansion.

They were in Bannermane house, Alger and Heath were standing in front of them and they bowed their head.

“Greetings Master”

“To have two Marquees bowing in front of you, how does it feel, Master~?” Felberta chuckled.

“Meh, not that good, you feel better.” Nux looked at Felberta before glancing at her crotch with a meaningful smile.

Understanding what he meant, Felberta blushed, however, since she was already used to his ways, her face quickly returned to normal as she laughed before her voice turned seductive and she questioned.

“Then how about you feel me later~?”

“That’s an amazing idea. As expected of my beautiful and intelligent Fel~”

Alger and Heath, who were still standing there with their heads bowed, felt their lips twitching.

They were completely ignored...

Let alone them, even Thyra, who was hiding behind the hall looked weird when she saw Nux and Felberta acting all playful.

She noticed the smile on Nux’s face before she glanced at Felberta and she couldn’t help but be... jealous.

She then hurriedly shook her head to get rid of these stupid thoughts.

How could she be jealous of her, instead, she should pity that woman who has chosen such an evil person as her lifelong partner.

Felberta then glanced at the two nobles and continued.

“Then what are we waiting for, should we start what we came here for?”

“Have you brought what I asked?” Nux glanced at the two as well and questioned.

“Yes Master”

The two of them nodded at the same time before a few servants walked in carrying two huge tables in their hands.

One table had around 8 books and many weapons on top of it, while the other table was filled with weapons.

“These are all the Skill Books we have. However, we did not bring all the weapons here since that would be too many, but we have brought all our best weapons.”

“All of these weapons are above 3 star or above, with the best one at 5 star.”

Heath explained.

“Also, a Peak 5 Star Dagger, that is already in Master’s hand.”

Alger added hurriedly.

# Chapter 103

Nux ignored the weapons and quickly grabbed the 8 skill books, however, soon, a frown appeared on his face.

“Two Marquees house only have 8 Skill books?”

“Master, these are all 4 star Skill Books” Alger answered hurriedly.

“I can see that, but shouldn’t you guys have more? I am not asking about 4 star Skill books, but you guys should still have 3 star or lower-level books right?”

“Master, since we already have 4 Star books, we usually sell all the lower-level books in exchange for something more useful.”

“Huh? Why would you do that? I know that you can’t combine the skills to make a better one, but should you not at least keep more books? Lower-level books are easier to comprehend; some people might not have a high affinity, isn’t it better for them to use a low-level skill book?”

“The Star level of a Skill Book is absolute, Nux” This time, Felberta was the one who answered.

“Even if you comprehend a 3 Star Skill to a Beginner Stage, a Novice Stage 4 Star Ability is still stronger. So it’s always better to learn high levelled books.” She continued.

“Of course, there are people with low-level affinity, who can barely learn 1 star skills, however, people like them aren’t needed here so we don’t keep lower-level skills. Also, It’s not like we can’t get it. If for some reason we ever need it, we will just buy it” Heath muttered.

“Alright”

Nux nodded deeply.

He then glanced at the 8 books and read their titles with an excited look on his face.

[Fire Slash]

[Fire Arrows]

[Earth Shield]

[Rock Ray]

[Water Shelter]

[Water Shied]

[Wind Walk]

[Wind Lance]

‘They all seem good...’

Nux muttered inwardly before storing everything into his inventory.

“Now to the weapons, I already have the Dagger, now I want a Sword...”

Nux muttered before he picked a 5 Star black coloured with silver on the edges, Sword and stored it in his treasury.

Then he stored all the other weapons in the treasury as well.

Heath and Alger frowned as they looked at Nux with eyes filled with confusion.

“As you know, I will have a lot of subordinates from now on; So I will need to provide them with better weapons, right?”

Nux explained with a bright smile on his face.

“Ahahaha... Of course... Of course...” Alger quickly nodded with a laugh, Heath too nodded with a big smile on his face. However, inwardly, two of them were crying blood as their tears.

That was all of their Skill Books and weapons!

Their entire wealth!

And he took everything without batting an eye!

“Alright alright, you guys can leave now. I will be a little busy in a while”

Nux waved his hand nonchalantly before he glanced at Felberta with a meaningful smile.

Felberta smiled back as well before she glanced at his crotch and licked her lips seductively.

“Oh right, Alger, your room will be mine now, so find yourself another one. The same goes for Heath as well”

The two nobles wanted to cry in frustration!

This man isn't satisfied even after taking their weapons and skills!

Now he even wants their room!

What a greedy bastard!

“Yes, Master”

However, no matter how angry or frustrated they were, their life was in his hand, and they would die if they do not do what he says.

Therefore, they nodded like the good servants they were and left.

“What are you waiting for? You leave as well”

Nux then turned towards Thyra and the other servants and ordered them to leave as well.

When everybody left the hall, Nux turned towards Felberta, he then picked her up and placed her on his lap.

“Hehe~ This is much better~” He laughed.

“Indeed. This is much more comfortable.” Felberta laughed as well.

She then shifted her attention to the tables in front of her and muttered.

“I can’t believe we now have 2 Marquees houses under us.”

“You have to get used to it, My dear Fel, soon we will have a whole kingdom under us” Nux tightened his grip around her waist and muttered.

“Mmhm.” Felberta’s face turned a little red and she nodded.

But how can she remain in this passive position?

She looked around and thought about something before she questioned.

“So, which skill are you are you going to learn?”

“Is that even a question? Obviously, I will learn all of them~”

“A-All of them?”

“Of course, now that I am a Master Realm Cultivator, the skills I have now are too low levelled for me; it is time for me to upgrade and learn them all.”

“That is true, a master level cultivator using 1-star skills is a waste of his talent... So which one of them are you going to learn first?” Felberta questioned with a curious look on her face.

A mischievous smile appeared on Nux’s face as he answered, “Heh, I am too handsome, there might be some people who are jealous of my looks and go after me, so I need to be prepared.

Running away is the best option, so I will learn the [Wind Walk] first.”

Felberta’s face twitched in annoyance. Even after staying with him for so long, she still couldn’t get used to his shamelessness, however, when she turned around and glanced at that nigh perfect face, she felt that...

That he wasn’t wrong...

‘Ughh... what am I thinking...’

Felberta shook her head repeatedly. Her face had already turned red.

“Oh right, I will give all of these skills to you, distribute them to Skyla, Lane, and Edda. Of course, you can learn whichever you want as well”

A sad look appeared on Felberta’s face as she muttered, “I can’t learn any of them, I am one of the people with low talent that Heath mentioned earlier... my talent is too low... But these will be beneficial to others.”

“Heh, who said your talent is too low? You are a top-class” Nux chuckled.

Felberta furrowed her brows, she turned around to ask what he meant by that, however, she suddenly felt his hand entering inside her clothes and moving towards her special place.

Her little sister twitched in response and her juice started leaking.

“You are a top-class woman, Felberta. A top-class woman~”

# Chapter 104

“You are a top-class woman, Felberta. A top-class beauty~”

Nux whispered into her ears as he circled his finger around her canals.

Felberta’s body shuddered in anticipation, then a mischievous smile appeared on her face as she slapped his hand lightly.

“What are you doing, huh?”

“Haah? You act as if you don’t know what I am doing or what I am about to do.” Nux retorted.

“I really don’t know what you are going to do” Felberta replied with a slight smile on her face.

A sly smile appeared on Nux’s face as well, his other hand moved and grabbed her soft breast as he started kneading it.

“You really don’t know what I am about to do?”

“Why would I lie to you?” Felberta questioned back.

“Ohh, so tell me, are you enjoying what I am doing?” Nux quickly understood her play and started thinking of ways to end it well.

“I feel uncom-”

“Are you enjoying what I am doing right now?” Before Felberta could answer, Nux slightly brushed her cliterous as he moved his mouth close to her ear and whispered.

“Anhh~” a slight moan leaked out of Felberta’s mouth and a jolt of pleasure passed through her spine.

“My dear Fel, let me ask you one last time, are you enjoying what I am doing right now?” Nux’s soft and seductive voice entered her ear, and another jolt of pleasure was released into her body.

Combined with his caresses, Felberta had no way of going against him and she lost again.

“I-It feels amazing~”

Nux’s smile widened as he asked, “Then I should continue what I am doing right?”

“C-Continue” Felberta replied with a soft blush on her face.

She doesn’t know why, but she could see that her resistance today was a lot more fragile than before.

Nux has barely touched her little sister and she already lost.

How is this possible!

How is this happening!

While Felberta was thinking about all this, suddenly, Nux’s movements paused.

A frown appeared on her face, however, before she could think more about it, Nux picked her up like a princess and muttered.

“I think we should continue all this in our new bedroom, what do you think?”

Seeing that enchanting smile, and how her pussy was crying for attention, Felberta had no option but to agree, and that’s what she did.

Seeing her small nod, Nux smiled even more before he kissed her forehead and started walking towards Alge- his bedroom.

While walking towards the hallway, he walked passed a few maids, and the more maids he passed by, the redder Felberta's face got.

She was embarrassed by how Nux was carrying her, however, she didn't want to walk on her own either.

A conflicted feeling.

However, one thing was for sure, she wanted to stay like this forever. She hoped that Nux would carry her like this every once in a while.

She then tightened her grip around his neck and smiled. Nux smiled back at her and her smile widened.

However, as another maid passed by, Felberta realized something.

“Nux... isn't our relationship a secret? Wouldn't these maids spread rumours about us? Not only that, won't us taking over Marquees house be known to all if we walk around without Conceal?” She questioned with a frown.

The last thing she wants is their plans to be ruined because of a moment of pleasure.

Seeing the worried look on her face, Nux's smiled, “Ah, Fel, you are just too precious.”

He kissed her forehead again and then answered, “Don't worry, this is Alger's house. All the servants here are extremely loyal to him, and none of them is allowed to leave the mansion.

This mansion is very secure, Alger's personnel soldiers and even the assassins have made sure that there are no spies.

Also, even if there are one or two spies, it doesn't really matter if our relationship or us taking over Alger's house is leaked.

Things like these require solid proof. They can be suspicious of us, but as long as Alger doesn't say something himself, they won't be able to prove

anything on their own.”

“Hmm? Isn’t that weird? If a noble has taken over another noble’s house, a slight suspicion is enough for people to start investigating and even prove it. Why is Alger’s statement required in our case?” Felberta questioned in confusion.

“If it was a duke who had taken over a Marquee’s house, slight suspicion was enough to start the investigation, but how could a ‘mere’ viscount take over a Marquees’ house? How is that possible?” Nux replied with a sly smile on her face and Felberta’s eyes widened in realization.

Indeed, according to records, she was a mere Viscount, a little special one, but she was nowhere strong enough to take over a Marquees house.

They could investigate her and her house a little more, but since she doesn’t have people other than the ones she had already mentioned, she is still a weak viscount.

She can’t take over a Marquees house.

She doesn’t have the strength to do that.

As for her relationship with Nux, well, most of the nobles will just hear and forget about it.

This news was not spicy enough, she has bought Nux as her ‘boy toy’. News of her having a ‘good time’ with him isn’t tangy enough for the nobles to think or talk more about it.

Of course, it was a different story if she was the princess or the royal concubine.

Now that would have been news worthy of nobles’ attention.

“Hehe, we are too weak huh” Felberta smiled mischievously.

“Indeed, we don’t even have our own private army... we are too weak...” A similar smile appeared on Nux’s face and he continued walking.

A few minutes later, the two of them entered a lavish room, with a shiny wooden texture floor, peach-coloured walls, a huge, comfortable-looking bed with a dark red colour bedsheet, in the centre, two light lamps on either side of the bed, an exquisite mirror on the side and finally, an elegant chandelier on the top.

The room was leagues above Felberta's own bedroom.

"Beautiful," Felberta muttered.

"Not as beautiful as you~"

How could he possibly leave the opportunity to say such a cliché line?

That would be a sin.

A slight smile appeared on Felberta's face and she shook her head.

'Cheeky' She muttered inwardly.

Nux then entered the room with Felberta in his arms, then without much looking around, he directly walked towards the bed and gently placed Felberta on it.

He then took a deep breath before a sweet lavender smell entered his nose and he smiled.

"We can continue what we were doing here. No one will disturb us~"

"Heh, just get ready to moan like crazy. I'll not go easy on you like I always do" Felberta smiled disdainfully.

She had lost too easily before, that was not acceptable. The time it took them to walk into this room from the hall was enough for her to come back to her senses and gain back her footing.

She is not going to lose that easily.

She will be the one dominating this time!

She was sure of it!

“Haah... where did that sweet Fel go? How come you replaced her again?”

Seeing the glint in her eyes, Nux could easily determine what she was thinking and sighed dramatically.

“Huh? What do you mean ‘that sweet Fel’? Haven’t I always been the sweetest?” Felberta questioned.

“What are you doing, huh? No, I don’t know what you are doing?” Nux mimicked her words from before a little dramatically before a bland look appeared on his face and he continued,

“Heh, from acting ignorant to now talking about making me moan like crazy, how can you shift so quickly, huh?”

Felberta’s cheek flushed, however, she wouldn’t repeat the same mistake she did last time.

Since she couldn’t answer, since she couldn’t win with words, she is going to win with force and her charm.

She grabbed Nux’s hand and pulled him onto the bed and without giving him any chance to react, she rolled over and appeared on top of him.

She then lowered her head, her mouth moved close to his and their lips met.

However, Felberta didn’t give him much time to enjoy, after a small peck, she raised her head and broke the kiss.

She then lowered her head again and kissed before she raised her head back.

She continued this for a little while, before her hand moved towards Nux’s crotch, she then caressed Nux’s rod through his pants a little and smiled.

“Heh, look at this. Your little brother is soaring to go huh? And to think it happened with a few kisses. Tsk Tsk.”

Felberta then licked her lips seductively and smiled.

She had the momentum today.

She can win.

This was her moment.

This was her chance.

“Well, I can’t really blame you as well. It is natural to have such a reaction, after all, this time, I am not holding back like I used to.”

# Chapter 105

A/N: So this, and the next few chapters will be snu snu with his girls, Skyla, Lane, Felberta and Edda. You can skip the rest if you want, but don't miss the snu snu with Edda, it will be important for the plot.

As for me skipping these snu snu chapters, I can't do it. I can't just forget my other characters.

...

“Well, I can't really blame you as well. It is natural to have such a reaction, after all, this time, I am not holding back like I used to.”

“Indeed, in front of such a beautiful woman, I would consider myself gay if I didn't have this reaction.” Nux, who quickly understood what was in her mind, replied.

He would never give her the satisfaction she sought.

It is extremely enjoyable to see Felberta work so hard to 'dominate' him. However, it was even more enjoyable when she fails and starts moaning without considering anything.

He didn't enjoy that feeling enough yet.

“Yes... just stay where you are, and let me do everything...” Felberta muttered.

Normally, she should be happy about the praise, however, she has been with Nux for enough time to know that the smile he had on his face was not a good one.

Suddenly, she felt like her chance, her moment... they all faded away and this is going to end like it always does.

However, just as that thought appeared in her mind, she shook her head repeatedly to get rid of it.

A seductive smile appeared on her face and she repeated.

“Yes, just stay where you are and enjoy~”

She then swiftly removed his pant and a half-erect rod popped up.

Felberta grabbed the rod gently and started stroking it with a smile on her face.

She then shifted her body forward as she kissed Nux’s waist, then his chest, his chin and just as she was about to touch kiss his lips, she smiled and kissed his nose. She then continued her journey to his forehead, then she kissed his cheeks, the ears before finally,

She kissed his chin again.

Nux’s body twitched in frustration and this didn’t go unseen by Felberta.

However, she knew that she still had a long way to go.

She noticed that under her care, his half-erect rod was now searing to go. She kissed his chest, her waist and then trailed down to meet the fully erect rod.

“Haha~ Look how lively it is with just a few strokes~” Felberta laughed out loud.

“Indeed, he has been waiting for this for a long time” Nux had to admit, Felberta was getting good at teasing him.

Of course, it was far from enough.

He won’t lose that easily.

“Then I shouldn’t let him wait for long, should I?” Saying that, Felberta lowered her gown and revealed her smooth white skin along with the sexy

black coloured bra.

\*Gulp\*

No matter how many times he sees it, Nux would never get over how alluring her figure is. While Nux was momentarily lost in those black eyes, Felberta then lowered her head and,

Kissed the head of his penis.

All this while, she didn't break the eye contact between them.

Nux was then jolted out of his reverie when a weird jolt of pleasure assaulted his body.

He then glanced at Felberta, and seeing the smirk on her face, he knew he lost the first round.

However, Felberta wasn't someone who will give away the lead she had this easily, she grabbed his dick with one hand, adjusted its position and then without removing her black bra, she directly engulfed the whole thing into her cleavage.

“Ugghh...” Even though Nux already knew what was about to come, he couldn't control himself and groaned in pleasure.

Felberta's smirk widened as she raised her giant breast before lowering them again.

“Uuggghh~” Nux moaned again and closed his eyes.

Felberta has still haven't broken the eye contact yet, however, combining it with her boob job, the pleasure Nux experienced was too much, therefore, he closed his eyes and relished the pleasure.

He was the first one to break the eye contact.

Felberta won another round.

This time, Felberta was overjoyed, she started gaining her lost confidence.

2 rounds in a row, that was amazing.

However, she shouldn't be too overconfident right now, she should not let go of this opportunity.

She would end it once and for all.

With this newly gained confidence, she raised her breast again, before lowering it with more intensity.

Her movement turned smoother and she increased her pace.

“Ughhh! Aahhh~~ This feels so good~~” Nux moaned out loud as he placed his elbow on his head and relished the pleasure.

Felberta's soft breasts had surrounded his little brother, those mounds of softness...

The feeling was otherworldly.

Waves and waves of pleasure assaulted his body and he could feel his mind turning numb. Not only that, Felberta, who was keeping a close eye on every change of his expression, kept increasing and decreasing her pace accordingly.

Her style was similar to his, the more he moaned, the faster she would move.

He was completely at her mercy... he had to moan if he wanted to enjoy more...

Nux was trapped by his own trick.

“Aagghh~ Fel, you are the best~~” Nux continued moaning.

He had no thoughts of resisting, this was just too good.

He had lost another round.

However, he doesn't care about it at all. He's willing to lose more if it ensured that this pleasure would continue.

“Aaanhhh~”

Suddenly, a huge wave of pleasure assaulted his body and Nux was jolted awake from his thoughts.

He opened his eyes and saw that Felberta was kissing his dick's head and was using her hand to rub her breasts against his dick even more.

Every time she lowered her breasts, his dick's head would pop out and Felberta would give it a sweet kiss as if she was rewarding it for coming out.

Seeing this scene, Nux was even more excited, he could feel his milk was building up and with how Felberta was squeezing him dry, he was sure that he would burst out soon.

Felberta continued her boob job and continued to force him to moan, helpless, Nux could only do what she wanted and satisfied her ego.

“Ugghh!”

Several veins popped out on Nux's rod and as if sensing something, Felberta increased her speed.

“Aghhhh~ I am cumminggg~”

\*Spurt\*

Nux also couldn't hold it in anymore and his milk burst out.

“Haahh... Haahh... haa...”

Nux breathed heavily, he barely opened his eyes and saw Felberta's face and breasts covered with his jizz.

A wave of satisfaction washed over his body and his rod reacted again.

Seeing this, a seductive smile appeared on Felberta's face. She used her hand to collect all the milk spread over her face and started licking and sucking her fingers hungrily.

This scene simulated Nux even more and his rod hardened again.

“Oh? Looks like he's ready and excited for the next stage.” Felberta muttered as he stroked Nux's dick a few more times.

She wasn't going to give him any chance to recover. She removed her gown completely and without wasting any more time, she removed her black panty as well, revealing her lovely vagina.

She then sat on top of Nux in a cowgirl position, placed his rod in front of her entrance and engulfed his rod in one go.

“Ooohhhh~” Nux moaned out loud.

Felberta's insides were already blended into his shape, so when these squishy, soft and wet insides surrounded his rod, trying to devour it, waves and waves of pleasure sent him into cloud nine.

Felberta didn't give him much time and started moving.

“Ahhh~ So goodd~”

Again, the same pattern, the more he moaned, the higher Felberta's speed was and the more he enjoyed it.

He couldn't stop moaning.

He was completely at her mercy.

However, this time, the situation was not as bad as before.

This time, Felberta was affected as well, and Nux could tell then when he saw her trembling legs which she was trying to hide.

Felberta was enjoying this as well, not only that, he couldn't manipulate her speed with his moans.

So everything was not hopeless, there was a chance.

Felberta's body trembled when she noticed a small smile appearing on Nux's face. She felt something was wrong, however, since she was so close to winning, she stopped thinking about it and lowered her speed.

Nux quickly understood what she wanted and,

“Ahh~~ Fel~~ My love~~”

Felberta smiled as she increased her speed again.

Jolts and jolts of pleasure continued to assault Nux's body, and since he was still sensitive, it didn't take a long time for his milk to build up again and,

“Ugghhhhh!!”

\*Spurt\*

He filled her insides.

“Annhh~~”

Felberta moaned in pleasure as well, however, she did not cum. She used all her willpower not to cum.

She controlled herself.

She...

She finally won!

\*Pah\*

“Aanhhh~”

However, before she could enjoy her moment, Nux's rod that was inside her moved and she moaned out loud.

She lowered her gaze and glanced at Nux, who was smiling at her.

“I believe it should be my turn, right? My dear Fel~”

With a quick move, Nux rolled and appeared on top of Felberta, even though he had just orgasmed, for some reason, his rod was full of energy.

“Shall we start?”

Nux questioned with a smile on her face as he moved his hips.

“Annnhh~”

Felberta moaned out loud.

With just one thrust, she knew this was over.

She did not win at all...

# Chapter 106

“Uughhhh!! Fel~ I am cummiingggg~” Nux moaned as he unloaded his jizz for the 5th time.

“AAnnnhhhh~” Fel moaned, her walls tightened and her juices gushed out.

Nux then released her legs that were on his shoulders and fell down right beside her.

“Haahh... that was good...” He muttered as he turned towards her.

“Indeed...” Felberta replied in a very soft voice, and Nux noticed that in this short time, she had already entered the dreamland.

She was just too tired.

A small, satisfied smile appeared on Nux’s face. The transition of her trying to dominate and then laying down like that was incredible.

As he thought, this feeling was the best.

After laying down for a few minutes, he sat up, turned towards Felberta and kissed her forehead lovingly.

‘Sleep well~ My love.’

“mm”

As if she had heard his thoughts, a small smile appeared on Felberta’s face.

Nux’s smile widened, he shook his head and kissed her forehead again.

He then stood up, wore his clothes, walked out of the room and entered the bathroom.

...

‘Come here’

After a refreshing bath, Nux ordered Thyra.

Within a minute, Thyra appeared behind him.

“What is it?” She questioned with an expressionless face.

“Protect her while I am gone” Nux ordered as he pointed at Felberta who was sleeping calmly.

Although most of the people who can hurt Felberta in this mansion are his slaves, making the mansion very safe for her, Nux still didn’t take any unnecessary risks.

He now had people under him, why not use them?

As for why he called Thyra specifically?

Heh.

There are a few reasons.

One is that Thyra is strong.

And other...

A smile appeared on Nux’s face, he then activated his [Conceal] and moved out of the Bannermane Mansion.

Within a few minutes, he appeared outside Felberta’s mansion and walked in.

He activated his [Sense] and searched for the people he was looking for and,

‘Oh?’

A small smile appeared on his face.

He had found something interesting.

He did not deactivate his [Conceal] and walked forward.

...

On the other side, Skylia was peeking into the room from the slight slit on the door, her face was flushed red.

“What are you doing?”

Suddenly, she heard a voice and her body twitched in panic.

She quickly turned around and when she saw who it was, she sighed in relief.

“Sister Lane... I was just about to punish these two. They aren't allowed to do this while they are at work, are they?” She muttered as she invited Lane to look as well.

Curious, Lane walked towards the door, placed her head on top of Skylia's and watched.

“Aaanhhh~”

“Uuughhh! Oriel, it feels too good~~”

“Edric, I feel good as well~ Annhhh~~”

(A/N: Not important, but this is the couple that was about to get married. Chapter 57, where Lane was slightly jealous of a maid. Yes, she's that maid.)

Within a few seconds, Lane's face turned red as well and she continued watching.

As for punishing?

Both of them forgot about it.

“Annhh~ Edric, I think we should end this quickly, someone will see us.”

“So what? Lady Felberta isn't here today, don't worry, you can slack off a little.” Edric answered as he continued pounding.

“But her personal maids are still here, what if they see us?” Oriel questioned. She didn't know how right she was.

“So what if they see us? Don't talk as if you haven't heard their moans during working hours. They do it as well” Edric muttered.

Skyla's and Lane's faces turned red.

“Not only that, Sister Lane is sometimes so loud that most of the servants know what is happening when she's having sex” Edric continued.

Right now, Lane's face looked like a tomato. That was how red it was.

“They are Lady Felberta's personal maids, we can't be compared with them.” Oriel nodded.

“Alright, I will end this quickly,” Edric thought about it a little and nodded.

“T-They are about to finish...”

Skyla muttered, her face showing a little... disappointment?

“...” Lane didn't say anything. She was too embarrassed to say anything.

“Heehhh, how can these two people do something like this?”

“Right? How shameless” Skyla replied to the unknown voice with a few continuous nods.

“Shameless indeed.” The voice replied.

Skyla and Lane both kept nodding.

“How can my lovely girls peek at a couple having sex? I didn’t expect them to be so shameless”

Suddenly, Skyla and Lane stopped nodding and turned around with mechanical movements. It was as if they were broken robots.

“N-Nux...” Skyla muttered, her face, even redder than before.

“My lovely Skyla, and my serious Lane, what are you two doing?”

Nux questioned with a small smile on his face.

“U-Umm... nothing, we were just about to p-punish these two people for d-doing something like that in while they are working...” Skyla muttered.

Lane nodded at Skyla’s words.

“Oh? So you were going to punish them?” Nux questioned.

The two of them nodded repeatedly.

“Then why haven’t you done it already?”

“...” The two of them started thinking of some excuses.

“Why are your faces red?”

“...”

“Why are you acting like you have been caught while doing something wrong?” Nux continued questioning.

Under his series of questions, Skyla and lane turned silent and Nux’s smile widened.

This scene was interesting indeed.

He can tease them for hours.

He had just arrived at the mansion and had just used his [Sense] to find Skyla and Lane, however, he didn't expect to find both of them standing together, peeking at the couple having sex.

He would be a fool to waste such a great opportunity.

“U-Umm... w-we were not going to punish them... w-we were observing and n-noticing the d-differences...” suddenly, Skyla muttered.

Let alone Nux, even Lane standing beside Skyla was surprised.

‘We were observing? What? When did that happen? Why didn't I know that? Also, what were we observing?’

Countless question marks appeared in her mind.

“Oh? Then what did you observe?” Nux questioned.

“Yours is bigger”

# Chapter 107

“Yours is bigger”

Lane turned her head towards Skyla in confusion; however, after thinking for a while, she nodded her head as well.

‘His is indeed bigger.’

Nux didn’t say anything, he just walked toward Skyla and hugged her.

‘A keen observation indeed... I knew Skyla was the best...’ He thought inwardly as he continued patting her head.

Skyla didn’t understand why he was acting like this, but since she was enjoying it, she tightened her hug around him and didn’t say anything.

“That’s a very good observation, Skyla. You did a good job.”

“mm” Although she didn’t know what good job he was talking about, Skyla nodded and snuggled her face into his chest.

“How about I give you a reward?” Nux proposed.

“Hmm? A reward? What reward?” Skyla questioned in confusion.

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face as he grabbed her perky but kneaded it gently.

“Hehe~ Are you acting ignorant as well? Do you really not know what reward am I talking about?” Nux questioned.

“Annhh~”

Skyla moaned out loud, although she didn’t get it the last time, now she was sure what the reward was.

Does she want it?

Of course!

“Ye-” Skyla’s eyes brightened and just as she was about to agree, Lane interjected.

“No. W-We have work to do...”

Nux frowned, he then walked towards Lane and raised her chin as he questioned.

“What work?”

“W-we have to w-wa-” A tinge of red appeared on Lane’s face, however, she controlled herself and answered.

Or at least she tried to since Nux cut her off.

“You can always do it later, right?”

Lane knew perfectly well where this was going, her heartbeat quickened, however, she controlled herself and answered.

“Nux, our image is already ruined... the servants here can hear our moans... that’s not good...”

Skyla’s eyes widened in realization as well.

She completely forgot what happened before due to Nux’s hug.

“Yes! We can’t do it! Especially Sister Lane, she moans too loudly!” She spoke out loud.

Lane’s face turned red in embarrassment.

“Hahaha~ You are embarrassed about that?” Nux couldn’t control himself and laughed out loud.

“This is something to be embarrassed about!” Lane replied.

“Hahaha~ What’s there to be embarrassed about? Shouldn’t you just train more?”

“H-Huh? W-What do you mean by that?” Lane questioned.

A wicked smile appeared on Nux’s face as he picked her up and answered.

“Simple! You should train more to control your moans! Let me help you with this!”

Saying that, he walked towards his room with Lane in his arms.

Lane, who was now being carried by Nux was confused.

She knew something was wrong with what he said but... but why couldn’t she see what was wrong?

Why does it sound so logical?

“Skyla? What are you waiting for? Don’t you want to help your sister as well?” Nux then turned towards Skyla and questioned.

“Coming!” Skyla’s face brightened up as she rushed towards Nux as well.

...

A few minutes later, Nux, Lane, and Skyla were inside Nux’s room, or to be precise, Nux’s bed, naked.

‘What a lovely scene...’

Nux muttered inwardly as he saw Skyla and Lane laying in front of them without wearing anything.

“Alright, we will start slow and pick the pace later, okay?”

Nux muttered as he used his fingers to enter their canals.

Lane and Skyla both had different sensitive points and Nux knew all about it.

Without wasting any time, his fingers directly attacked their sensitive points and,

“Annhh~” Skyla moaned out loud.

Lane, however, controlled herself.

This was her training. She wouldn't moan.

Nux smiled as he presumed what she was thinking and shook his head.

“Anngh- mmffmm” He then bent down and kissed Skyla's lips.

Skyla responded well as her tongue entered Nux's mouth and started fighting with his tongue for dominance. She also used her hand to grab his head and pulled it even closer to her.

However, she stood no chance of winning.

Nux was practically cheating in this battle.

His middle finger entered Skyla's canal as well, and his index finger, combined with his middle one created chaos in her insides.

“Mmnnhh~” Skyla's grip around Nux's head weakened, Nux used this opportunity and started sucking on her little tongue.

“Mmnnnffff~” Skyla couldn't take it anymore, her canals tightened and,

She came.

Nux then finally released her tongue and ended the kiss. After parting, he pecked her lips again before he turned towards Lane and muttered.

“Now try and control your moans.”

Lane's body shuddered when she saw that devilish smile on his face.

However, Nux didn't give her any chance to think more about it and gave her a light kiss.

Then he moved his head in front of her pink nipple and started licking.

Lane's walls tightened around his finger. Nux's smile widened as he plunged his middle finger inside as well.

He then glanced at Lane, who was looking at him with a nervous and determined look on her face and kissed her nipple.

Then without wasting much time, he put the whole thing in his mouth and started sucking it greedily.

"Mmnnmm" Lane quickly placed her hand on her mouth to stop herself from moaning, however, a muffled moan still leaked out.

However, Nux wasn't satisfied with a mere muffled moan.

His ring finger entered her canals as well and Lane's eyes widened.

His 3 fingers simultaneously touched all her weak spots and waves and waves of pleasure assaulted her body.

Strength started leaving her body and

"Annh~"

A slight moan was released.

However, due to that moan, she returned to her senses and shook her head repeatedly. She then closed her mouth shut to stop all the moans.

Suddenly, Nux stopped sucking her nipple and raised his eyes.

"You controlled yourself, good job~" Nux praised.

However, for some reason, Lane didn't feel good from that praise...

Her instincts were screaming that something was wrong.

Her instincts were correct as a big smile appeared on Nux's face as he muttered.

“Now let me level up the game~”

Saying that, he bit her nipple and,

“Annnhhhh~~”

She moaned.

# Chapter 108

“Now let me level up the game~”

Saying that, he bit her nipple and,

“Annnhhhh~”

Lane’s canal tightened, the stimulus of three fingers all caressing her sensitive spots along with Nux biting her nipple was too much for her to bear and she came.

With that, she lost control of her body and moaned out loud.

Again.

A smirk appeared on Nux’s face as Lane took deep breaths.

“Oh my, you moaned again, my lovely Lane~”

“Haahh... hahhh... haa...” Lane didn’t reply, she was too busy breathing.

Nux then suddenly felt a hand kneading his rod, he lowered his gaze, and then looked into Skylia’s eyes, who was looking at him with a lustful look on her face.

Seeing the lustful look on her innocent look, Nux got turned on, his warrior woke up and hardened himself for the next war.

A satisfied smile appeared on Skylia’s face when she saw his erect dick, she moved and placed it right in front of her wet entrance and muttered.

“My turn~”

Nux’s smirk widened, he couldn’t turn down that request, not when she requested it in such a way.

He slid his penis in front of her entrance to lubricate it a little and when he felt that it was enough, he,

“Annhhh!!”

He slammed it into her pussy in one go.

“Ughhhh!” Nux groaned in pleasure.

Skyla’s insides were as tight as always.

Those squishy insides trying to engulf down his cock felt heavenly.

Nux enjoyed that feeling for a while and once he felt it was enough, he moved back before ramming it inside again.

“AAnnhhhh!!”

Skyla’s insides were very welcoming, so much that they tightened every time Nux’s warrior was about to leave.

Suddenly, Skyla wrapped her legs around Nux’s waist as she tried to push him towards her.

Nux smirked at her cute attempt and slammed his cock into her again.

“AAANnnhhh!!”

After a few more thrusts, Nux’s movement turned smoother and his speed increased. Droplets of sweat appeared all over his muscular body.

He then picked Skyla’s legs and placed them on his shoulders before he rammed his cock again.

“AAAANNhhhhhh!!”

This time, he went even deeper and Skyla’s moaned even more loudly.

Her moans satisfied his ego and he increased his speed even more.

“AAnnhh~~ AAnnhh~~ AAnnhh~~”

Soon, Nux noticed that Skyla was moaning louder than usual, he felt something was wrong, however, he quickly realized why she was doing that and smiled inwardly.

‘How considerate... She’s such a sweet girl~’

Nux then grabbed her soft butt and her walls tightened.

“Ugghhhhh!! Skylaa~~ So gooddd~~”

He groaned in pleasure.

Her walls clamped around his dick tightly and Nux’s back arched up. The sudden increase in pleasure made him stop his movement and close his eyes.

“Annnnhhhh~~” Skyla moaned as well.

Lane, who had now came back to her senses blushed when she heard her moans. She then turned towards Skyla and saw her being drilled while she moans in ecstasy without caring about anything.

‘Ughhh... isn’t she embarrassed...’ She wondered inwardly, but then her eyes fell on Nux who was looking at Skyla with a smile on his face and she started wondering...

‘What’s there to be embarrassed about?’

The more she thought about it, the more she wondered how stupid she was.

“Annhhh~~ I am cummingggg~~” While Lane was lost in her thoughts, Skyla moaned out loud, her back arched up as she clenched the bedsheets with her hands.

“Ughhhh~~ I am cuming as well~” At the same time, Nux’s voice was heard, Lane saw his body trembling before a sigh escaped his mouth.

Skyla's and Nux's bodies turned weak and Nux fell over Skyla with his eyes closed.

Lane watched everything with great concentration and... jealousy.

Suddenly, Nux opened his eyes and his charming golden eyes met Lane's.

A smirk then appeared on Nux's face as he stood up and crawled towards Lane.

“Are you ready for your training? Don't moan~~”

Lane's heart skipped a beat, a small smile appeared on her face as well.

She then straightened her back, open her legs a little and,

“Try and make me moan.”

A very unexpected line from someone like Lane.

Nux's smirk widened, and he took the challenge.

“Don't regret it then, my dear Lane~”

He then placed his dick in front of her cave and penetrated her insides in one move.

“Oooo~~” Lane moaned weirdly.

“Huh? What? You lost already?” Nux teased.

“N-No! T-That was just too sudden!” Lane exclaimed, embarrassed.

Nux chuckled, he then grabbed her left leg, placed it on his shoulder and moved penetrated her insides again.

“Aanhhhh~~”

This time, however, he went a lot deeper than before.

“You aren’t really doing well in this challenge~” He teased again.

“S-Shut up!”

Nux chuckled, he bend down, the more Lane’s legs stretched and the deeper he entered.

“Hehe~ Admit it, My beautiful Lane, you already lost~”

Nux whispered into her ears seductively before he rammed his cock into her again.

“Anngghhh~”

Lane’s body turned weak and waves and waves of pleasure assaulted her body. Nux’s strong scent assaulted her nose and a deep blush appeared on her face.

Nux then started kissing her ears, his hand moved down and started kneading her large breast gently.

“AAnnhh~~ AAnnhh~~ AAnnhh~~”

Nux’s movements quickened, he played with her breast roughly before he squeezed the soft mound tightly.

“AAhnnnhhh~~” A bolt of pleasure coursed through Lane’s body and she moaned again.

However, Nux wasn’t done yet, he increased his speed yet again and at the same time, he pinched her nipple.

Lane’s body trembled in delight and a foolish smile appeared on her face.

Her canals tightened to an extreme degree, Nux couldn’t control himself anymore and released his semen inside.

At the same time, Lane’s walls tightened even more and as if a switch was flipped, a large amount of vaginal juice gushed out.

After another great orgasm, Nux's body weakened and he lay beside Lane, Lane, whose leg was now released, rolled over and closed her eyes.

“Haahh... haah... haa...”

Both of them started breathing heavily, however,

“This isn't the last round, is it?” Nux heard Skylar's cute and at the same time, demonic voice.

However, unlike before, when he would feel a shiver coursing through his body, a wicked smile appeared on his face as he replied.

“Oh of course, not, my love~”

He was not tired at all~

# Chapter 109

3 hours later, Nux stood up and stretched his body.

He glanced at his bed and saw two beautiful women lying there with tired looks on their faces.

A wicked smile appeared on Nux's face and he walked towards Skyla, moved his mouth near to her ear and whispered,

“You aren't tired yet, are you? Shall we go for another round?”

Instead of answering, Skyla just rolled away and pouted.

“Haha~” Nux chuckled out loud before he kissed her forehead.

‘Uuu... why aren't you tired yet?’ Suddenly Nux's heard Skyla's voice in her head. She was too tired to say anything, therefore, she was using [Harem Seal's] connection to talk to him.

‘Secret.’ Nux replied in the same way.

Skyla then opened her eyes a little and when she saw that little smile on his face, she closed her eyes.

‘I won't tease you anymore...’ she muttered.

‘Oh, you can tease me anytime, my love. Just be ready for the consequences.’ Nux answered back and chuckled.

He then noticed a small smile appearing on Skyla's cute face and she nodded.

‘Then I will tease you more.’

Nux smiled and then walked away.

Lane had already fallen asleep, that girl moaned louder than usual today, it was as if she didn't have any restrictions at all.

Of course, the more she moaned, the satisfied Nux felt and the faster he moved.

Because of this, Lane was more tired than usual and entered her dreamland right after cumming for the 6th time.

Nux then finally left the room and walked towards the bathroom.

He was really pleased today.

First, Felberta, then Skyla and Lane, he had orgasmed many times today, however, he was still not tired.

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Master.]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 31 ]

[HP: 810/810]

[MP: 580/580]

[STR: 83]

[AGL: 93]

[VIT: 81]

[STM: 86 -> 120]

[INT: 58 -> 80]

[DEF: 80]

[Blank Points: 159 -> 103]

Yes, has finally decided to not be a cheapskate and use some of his blank points.

At first, he only wanted to satisfy his women so he increased his Stamina, however, he then noticed how ridiculously low his intelligence was and increased it as well.

Now he was very sure that a King Level Expert won't be able to see him if he activates his [Conceal].

Although he was not sure if he could assassinate a King Level Expert, he could, at the very least, run away.

He also wanted to use 10 blank points to learn about the past Nux, but then he shifted it ahead.

He had some important things to do right now.

Some very important things.

Thinking about that, Nux smiled before he entered the bathroom and took a long, relaxing bath.

...

30 minutes later, Nux walked out of the bathroom, wore his clothes and started walking around the mansion when suddenly, his eyes fell on a familiar man.

He quickened his speed and called out.

“Yo, Joyab, how it's going dude?”

Joyab, who was minding his own business and was walking around aimlessly, turned around to see who called him in such a disrespectful way. However, as soon as his eyes fell on Nux, his face twitched.

“What is it, Nux?” He questioned with a straight face.

“Nothing, I was just curious. I usually don’t see you wandering around very often.”

“Lady Felberta didn’t come to the office today for some reason, so I had some free time” Joyba answered.

“Oh? She didn’t tell you? Ah, she must have forgotten, she is with me and she’s busy right now. You can treat it as your holiday.”

“Can I know what she’s doing right now?” Joyab questioned.

A small smile appeared on Nux’s charming face as he muttered, “Fel is resting. She was tired after... after working hard...”

Joyab’s lips twitched.

He wasn’t a fool.

He knew what ‘hard work’ she was doing.

As for Nux calling her Fel, he was already used to it by now.

However, he still couldn’t believe the transition he saw with his own eyes, from L-Lady F-Felberta, to Lady Fel, to Fel, this boy really did in 2 months...

‘Haahhh...’ Joyab let out a tired sigh.

He couldn’t do anything about it.

“Haah... you really changed Lady Felberta... she used to be so diligent before...” Joyab muttered.

“Oh she’s very diligent alright~” Nux muttered, however, only he knew the underlying meaning of his words.

“Ah, by the way, I heard a few assassins attacked yesterday.” Suddenly, Joyab’s face turned serious and he bowed his head.

“Nux Leander, I am very grateful to you for saving Lady Felberta and dealing with those assassins. I will remember this favour in my heart”

Nux was surprised by his sudden action.

His and Butler Joyab’s relationship wasn’t very harmonious from the start, however, seeing him setting aside his ego and bowing in front of him, Nux realized how loyal this man is.

A small smile appeared on his face as he muttered.

“Butler Joyab, you don’t have to worry about it. One would have to pass through my dead body if he wants to harm my Fel. Please raise your head.”

Joyab then raised his head and a small smile appeared on his face.

“Also, Felberta is not as weak as you think she is”

Joyab’s smile widened and he nodded.

“Indeed, she is now an Advance Level Cultivator... She’s is not weak at all...” Joyab muttered with a small smile on his face, his eyes were a little moist.

“Ah, Nux, I suddenly remembered something, I will take my leave.”

Saying that, Joyab walked away.

‘Viscount Alveye, your daughter found herself a man worthy of her... You can be rest assured now...’

Tears streamed out of butler Joyab’s eyes as he recalled Felberta’s father, Viscount Alveye.

Joyab was truly happy today.

Nux didn't know what was going on inside Joyab's head, however, his respect for Joyab had increased a lot after this incident.

He then took out the skill book, [Wind Walk], entered the garden, and started practising his newly gained skills.

# Chapter 110

In the royal palace of the SkyFall Kingdom.

“Miss Edda, where do I put these clothes?” A girl who should be no older than 12, questioned as she carried a big load of clothes in her hands.

“Ah yes, you can put them in chamber number 6, make sure to separate white and other colours,” Edda replied with a slight smile on her face.

She is usually very strict, but she had a soft spot for this cute little girl.

No, there was no ‘history’ behind them or anything, she just liked the girl a bit.

“Yes, Miss Edda”

The little girl nodded and walked away.

‘It is almost the time now...’

Edda glanced around to see if anyone else needed any help but everything seemed fine.

*\*Ding\* \*Dong\**

A few minutes later, a bell’s chime sounded and a big smile appeared on Edda’s face.

It was finally 9 P.M.

Just as she was about to walk away, she was stopped by someone, “Edda, I see you are very busy these days, huh? You always leave as soon as the bell rings.” A man laughed out loud.

He was Madison Headly, he worked in the palace as a servant.

As someone who has been here for his whole life, just like Edda, he was a little close to her compared to others.

“Ye-”

“Hahaha~ Madison, you don't know? Edda has been busy with someone else nowadays. What was his name again... ah yes, its Dio Brando. I heard he is a head of a merchant company. Quite a good target if I do say so myself.”

Before Edda could answer, a high pitched voice was heard. Edda turned around and when she saw who the woman was, she sighed.

Edrea Fox; she is someone who is eyes on her position so badly that she even colluded with Bannermane and Hardwick house.

She is an extremely covetous type of woman who easily gets jealous of others.

“Yes, Edrea, I am meeting a man called Dio Brando and honestly, I don't think why it has to do anything with you.

Have I ever interfered with you using your loose hole to please Wyot and Ainsley?”

“...” Edrea's face turned red in rage, however, Edda wasn't done yet.

“Oh right, I also heard that Eardwulf broke up with you?”

“He did not break up with me!” Edrea retorted in anger.

“Ah yes, that was my fault. How can he break up with you when there was nothing like that between you two, to begin with...”

Didn't you become his meat hole just so he could make you sub-head maid?

He just got bored of using your already used hole and threw you away, right?”

Edda's every word stung Edrea's heart and her face reddened in anger and shame. Seeing her reaction, a small smile appeared on Edda's face.

Although she didn't show it or abused her position a lot, she was still a head maid of the Royal Palace. Her information network was strong.

She knew everything about most of the servants, especially someone like Edrea, who was coveting her position.

"Alright, if you would excuse me. I have to meet someone special." Saying that, Edda straightened her back and walked away elegantly.

Edrea looked around and when she noticed other servants' gloating expressions, her face distorted in shame.

'Edda, you went too far this time...' She muttered inwardly, however, soon, a cold smile appeared on her face.

'Enjoy all you want, you bitch. Once Bannermane and Hardwick house gets their hands on you, I will request them to give you to me. Then you will be at my mercy...

But don't believe for a second that you will have a good end

I'll make you beg for mercy.'

Edrea thought inwardly.

No one knew how she would react when she learns that Hardwick and Bannermane houses are already under Edda's control.

Edda didn't know what was going on inside Edrea's head and she didn't really care about it either.

She just activated [Conceal] and rushed towards the Bannermane Mansion.

30 minutes later, she arrived at Bannermane's house and entered the dining room where Nux, Felberta, Skylia and Lane were having dinner.

As for Alger and his wives, well, they were now eating somewhere else.

They weren't allowed to disturb Nux's meals.

"Hahh, she's late..." Felberta complained.

"Oh c'mon, she's a busy woman, it's normal for her to be a little late" Nux answered.

"Haah? Are you saying that I am free?" Felberta questioned as she raised her eyebrows.

"Aren't you free for me? For the love of your life?" Nux questioned with a charming smile on his face.

A small smile appeared on Felberta's face as she grabbed his hand gently, "Indeed, I am always free for you~"

"Me too, I am free for you as well~" Skyla chimed in and although Lane didn't say anything, she nodded as well.

"Heh~ Still acting all silent and shy. Who was the one moaning so loudly this afternoon?" Nux teased as he glanced at Lane.

Lane's face turned red and Nux and the others started laughing.

Seeing this scene, a small smile appeared on Edda's face.

She didn't know when, but she had already assimilated in this little family.

Everyone was good to her here without any alternative thoughts in their mind and she was happy about it.

She deactivated her [Conceal] as she walked towards Nux, and hugged him from behind.

"I am free for you as well~"

“Oh~ My perverted maid is here~” Nux muttered as he grabbed her hands and turned towards her.

Edda’s face turned red, she sat on the seat Nux pointed at, and a servant served the food.

“Edda, I suggest you eat well~ Nux is more energetic than usual~”

Suddenly, Felberta muttered as she glanced at Edda with a meaningful smile on her face.

“Yes! He is very energetic today! Sister Edda, you have to be careful” Skyla chimed in.

Lane nodded silently like usual, while Nux had a prideful smile on his face.

A small smile appeared on Edda’s face as she answered.

“Thank you for worrying about me, however,

I am ready for it~”

# Chapter 111

A Bannermane's housemaid was walking in a dark hallway, the further she walked, the darker it got.

After walking for a few minutes, a wooden door appeared in front of her, she gulped, calmed her emotions and knocked.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“Marquees Alger has called for Miss One. He is in his new room.” She muttered and walked away.

Her speed was visibly faster than normal.

Even though she has come to this place a lot of times, she still wasn't used to it yet.

Since her job was now, she rushed out of this creepy place.

As for the ‘new room’ she talked about, well, it was Alger's new room after he ‘gave’ his previous room to Nux.

Many servants found it weird. Most of them had sensed that something had happened, however, nobody dared to point it out.

Marquees Alger was powerful and cruel, if they were wrong, they would die, and even if they were right and something was wrong, someone capable of making things go wrong for Marquees Alger would be able to kill them.

Therefore, they didn't say anything and acted ignorantly. It's not like their life was affected in any way. They just have a few more people to serve.

The new ‘guests’ that have arrived in their mansion, the servants decided to serve them like they serve Marquees Alger and his family.

A smart decision.

The maid sighed when she walked out of that creepy place, she then walked into the kitchen and started doing her job.

...

Alger was now sitting in his new room, waiting for someone. Actually, he was inwardly jealous of Heath. He didn't know why, but Nux was staying at his place, it was suffocating for him since he took every step in with utmost caution.

He didn't dare to offend Nux.

Due to this, he gets tired very quickly.

However, he couldn't do anything about it. He can't just tell his master to go away.

He was helpless.

He could only cry and curse Heath for his good luck.

**\*Bam\***

While he was thinking about this, his door was slammed open and a woman who had covered her face walked in.

“What did you call me for?” Thyra questioned.

“You could have knocked...” Alger muttered.

“Shut the hell up. Tell me what you called for and note, it better be something important, else, prepare to lose your life, I am in a bad mood.” Thyra didn't care what he was thinking.

She was very irritated for some reason.

Alger noticed that and quickly got to the main topic.

“I didn’t want to call you here either. It’s master Nux who wants you to do something.”

“What does he want?” Hearing that name, her mood got even worse.

“He wants you to use all the assassins you have and search if there are any spies in the mansion.”

“Haven’t we done that already?”

“He says he wants you to do it again.” Alger shrugged.

“Fucking Bastard.” Thyra cursed.

Alger didn’t say anything.

To be honest, he would love to have the ability like Thyra’s, an ability to curse Nux whenever she wanted.

He tried it before but was assaulted by that pain, since then, he gave up.

“Is there anything else?” Thyra questioned.

“No.” Alger shook his head.

“Alright, I will take my leave now” Thyra muttered and walked out of the room and slammed the door closed.

‘She’s really angry huh...’ Alger muttered to himself.

This was the first time he had seen her showing so many emotions. Generally, she’s always cold and calm.

‘Heh, she doesn’t resemble an assassin at all...’ Alger chuckled inwardly.

...

Thyra didn’t know what he was thinking, and neither did she care. She just wanted to return to her room.

She has been feeling very weird lately but she doesn't know what's happening.

“Haah! Your mouth is really loud huh? How about you put that loud thing to good use?”

While Thyra was walking away, he heard something.

She narrowed her eyes and turned towards the source of direction.

It was coming from Alger's previous room, which now belongs to Nux.

Hearing the familiar words, Thyra narrowed her eyes even more and walked toward the room.

She then opened the door a little, peeked inside through that little gap and her eyes widened in surprise.

She saw a maid standing in front of Nux, who had a disdainful smile on his face.

“Get on your fours,” Nux ordered.

The maid's body moved, and she fell on all her fours.

“You see that? On the floor, on all fours, just like a bitch, that is where you belong. That is what you are now, a bitch, my bitch, who will listen to whatever I will say from now on”

This scene was extremely familiar to Thyra.

Her whole body shuddered in disgust and craving.

Wait, craving?

Thyra frowned.

She noticed that her certain area was a little too excited for some reason. She moved her hand close to that area; her finger moved and started

rubbing her little sister.

“Anhh~” Thyra moaned out loud.

She couldn't believe that just a little rubbing felt so good.

However, she quickly realized where she was and stopped.

Or so she tried to.

As if they had a will of their own, her fingers continued to move and rubbed her opening.

‘What am I doing!?’ Thyra screamed inwardly.

“Anh~” She moaned again.

She couldn't believe how good it felt.

“Hahaha~ Elegant and Proud Head Maid of the Royal Palace, on all her fours, in front of a nobody. Hahaha~ Fate is really cruel, huh. Edda Osburn.” Suddenly, Nux laughed out loud.

Thyra's eyes widened when she heard his words.

Edda Osburn.

Isn't Edda his woman?

Then why is he ordering her like this?

Wait, does that mean she isn't his woman but was just a poor victim to his weird magic?

Are all his women like that?

Thyra began to think.

“Edda Osburn, start licking my dick as if it is the most delicious thing you ever had.”

Thyra’s eyes refused to miss what was happening in front of her and she continued pleasuring herself unconsciously.

# Chapter 112

“Edda Osburn, start licking my dick as if it is the most delicious thing you ever had,” Nux ordered.

Thyra saw Edda’s body moving, she crawled towards Nux, placed her head close to his crotch area and used her mouth to lower his pants.

When she did, the 8-inch monster popped out and placed itself on the top of Edda’s face.

Edda moved her head a little, then, she kissed the head lightly.

Her tongue popped out and she started licking Nux’s shaft.

After a few licks, Nux’s whole rod was drenched in her saliva, Edda then moved forwards and started sucking his balls.

“Ughhh!” Nux groaned in pleasure.

Edda continued moving, after she was done with her sucking, she kissed the balls and then started licking his shaft, all the way up to the head.

Her pink purple eyes then glanced at Nux’s, a small smile appeared on her face before she gobbled up the whole thing in one move.

“UUghhh! So good! You are the best, Edda. I’m glad I took you as my pleasure toy~” Nux groaned in pleasure as he closed his eyes and held Edda’s head.

‘What a bastard! She’s not his woman! He is forcing her with that weird magic of his!’ Outside, Thyra cursed inwardly as she watched the whole scene.

‘I knew he was no good! That bastard!’ She continued cursing in hatred and disgust.

If only she could see herself in the mirror right now...

Thyra, who was 'cursing' Nux continuously, had a red face. She was sitting on her knees, her hand were under her panty, and her fingers continued to create chaos in her insides while a few drops of 'something' was on the floor, right under where she was sitting.

No one would believe that this girl was a coldhearted assassin if they saw her like that. Right now, she looked like a pervert who was peeking at a couple having sex.

"Ugghh~ Edda, you are amazing~" Nux moaned again.

He was lying earlier. When it came to a blowjob, Edda was indeed the best.

Not only would she gobble up his whole thing, but she would also continue moving her tongue inside, and would not stop sucking. Her cheeks would always sink inwardly, and her perfect blowjob face would never fail to turn him on.

Edda continued moving her head up and down, waves and waves of pleasure assaulted Nux's body. It was getting harder and harder for him to remain standing.

It was just that good.

His legs were weakening from all the pleasure.

He could feel his semen building up, suddenly, he grabbed Edda's head, and started thrusting his hips roughly.

"Ughhh!! Edda! Drink it all!"

Saying that, he released a massive load inside her mouth.

Edda choked due to the massive amount.

\*Gulp\* \*Gulp\* \*Gulp\*

However, she quickly gulped down everything and once Nux pulled his dick out of her mouth, she opened her mouth to show him that she gobbled everything up.

Nux smiled and patted her head.

“Good Job~”

A bright smile appeared on Edda’s face.

“Hehe~ How about I reward you now?” Nux muttered with a small smile on his face.

“Stand up” he ordered.

Edda did as she was told and stood up.

“Remove your clothes”

Edda started removing all her clothes, revealing her gorgeous tanned and untanned skin, Nux didn’t stay idle as well, as he removed his clothes as well.

A big, perverted smile appeared on Edda’s face when she saw that dreamy, perfect body with perfect muscles.

Even Thyra, who was watching everything was taken aback a little.

“Alright, go near that wall” Nux ordered and Thyra’s heartbeat quickened.

The wall he was pointing at was very close to the door.

She wanted to run away, however, her body refused to obey her and her hand continued creating chaos in her insides.

Edda then turned around, and again, Thyra was taken aback.

This was the first time she had seen Edda’s face and rather than looking like someone who is being forced, she looked like she was enjoying every

moment of it.

Heck, the big wide grin on her red face even looked a little creepy.

“Alright, bent down and put your hands on the wall”

Thyra’s heartbeat quickened even more. Edda and Nux were just 2 meters away from her. She could see everything clearly.

“Good” Nux praised.

He then walked close to Edda and started sliding his rod over her little sister.

“Annh~” Edda, who was already wet after the blowjob, moaned out loud.

“D-Don’t tease me~ Master~” She requested.

Nux’s grin widened and,

“AAnnnhh~”

He penetrated her insides in one thrust, making her moan loudly.

Edda’s body shuddered in pleasure, her red face turned even red and her smile widened. She looked like she had gone crazy.

“Alright, let’s start, shall we?” Saying that, Nux pulled out his rod and rammed it inside again.

“AANnnhhh~”

Edda then closed her eyes, her legs weakened, and just as she was about to fall, Nux grabbed her waist.

“Hehe~ My perverted maid, I haven’t even started yet~” Nux chuckled and started his thrusting.

The more he pounded, the louder Edda moaned.

Thyra also increased her speed, and her third finger entered her cave as well. The scene in front of her was just too stimulating.

She could clearly see Nux's rod that entered and exited Edda's insides. She also didn't miss the expression of pure ecstasy on Edda's face.

If Thyra still doubted her moans, the expression on her face told her that Edda wasn't faking anything.

She actually felt that good.

“Annhh~ AAnhh~ ANhh~”

Edda continued moaning.

Her mind turned blank from pleasure and a few more thrusts later, her caves tightened to a ridiculous degree.

“AAANHhhhhhh~ I am cumminngggg~”

She moaned out loud.

“Ughhh~ I am cumming as welll~” Nux moaned as well.

The sudden tightness forced his already sensitive penis to release his semen.

Edda's love juice gushed out and at the same time, Nux released his milk inside her body.

“mmnhhh~”

However, they weren't the only two who orgasmed.

There was another person who came right after them.

# Chapter 113

The next day, Edda woke up and her eyes fell on Nux, who was looking at her with a small smile on his face.

“Good Morning, My Perverted Maid~” Nux greeted.

A smile appeared on Edda’s face as well.

It was indeed the best way to start the day.

She nodded inwardly.

Soon, memories of last night entered her mind and her smile widened.

“You were amazing last night, master~”

“You were amazing as well~” Nux muttered.

“What about that assassin, did she leave?” Edda questioned.

“Of course, she left! Hahaha~ You scared her so badly~” Nux couldn’t control himself and laughed out loud.

“Hmph! I didn’t do anything, I was just doing what you told me to” Edda retorted, however, even though she tried to sound angry, the smile on her face betrayed her.

Last night, someone was peeking at them while they were having sense. No, that’s not right, it is better to say that she was manipulated into peeking at them.

If Nux didn’t order Alger to call Thyra, nothing would have happened.

Of course, nobody needed to know that.

So Shhh!

Ahem Ahem.

Of course, since Nux was the one who arranged everything, he naturally knew Thyra was peeking at them and he told Edda to act accordingly.

First, he recreated some scenes that Thyra should be familiar with, he then noted her reactions and once he confirmed that she was 'excited'.

He gave her a first-row ticket to the show.

Thyra continued watching and 'playing' while they fucked and came a few times, however, right after she came the 3rd time, Nux and Edda glanced in her direction at the same time.

Thyra's eyes widened in fear and like a deer who noticed a lion near her, she ran away as soon as she can.

"Hahaha~" Edda laughed out loud when she remembered the terrified look on her face.

It was really fun to tease her, especially when she knew that Thyra was a cold-blooded, serious assassin who has taken countless lives.

Soon, however, Edda's eyes fell on the window and her smile faded away.

"I am LATE!" She screamed in panic as she stood up from the bed.

She then turned towards Nux who was looking at her with a smile on his face and questioned, "Why didn't you wake me up!?"

"You looked so peaceful when you were asleep, I didn't want to disturb you," Nux answered.

Seeing the teasing smile on his face, Edda was sure that he did it just so he could make fun of her.

"Ughhh! I'll be late~" Edda groaned in frustration.

Just as she was about to walk towards the bathroom, Nux grabbed her hand and pulled her into the bed, she tried to struggle, however, he hugged her from behind and muttered.

“So what if you get late? You are the head maid, Edda. No one would say anything to you”

“Ughhh! Nux, let me go~ I am late! It’s not good to be late, especially when I am a head maid, I need to set an example for the others!” Although she said that, she didn’t resist his hug at all, rather, she moved her body close to his and enjoyed his touch.

“Hooh? Since when were you so serious about your job? I thought that the only thing that you think about is new positions to be bound in...” Nux muttered.

Edda’s face turned red and she pouted.

“Hmph! Who said that!? I have to do a good job as a head maid, else I’ll be replaced soon. You know how many people are trying to take away my position, don’t you?” Edda questioned as she remembered Edrea.

Then, a small smile appeared on Edda’s face as she muttered, “Hmmm, I think that once you become the king, I would slack off a little more. You won’t take away my position as your head maid, will you? Master~?”

Nux then tightened his hug around Edda, closed the distance between his mouth and her ear and whispered seductively, “Heh, slack off? What a joke! Once I become the king, you would have to work for 24 hours a day. No slacking off!

You will be forced to accompany me without any rest! Hehe~”

Edda accepted his advances with a huge smile on her face, she really longed for that moment.

Then she wouldn’t have to do so much work, she would just stay near Nux and enjoy.

She really wished that Nux becomes the king as soon as possible, and so that he can achieve that quickly, she's working hard as well.

“Ah, I searched a little and found a perfect target for you.” Then, Edda smiled slyly and muttered, “And don't worry, I made sure she fits your taste.”

“Hmm? My taste? You know my taste?” Nux questioned with a curious look.

“Of course, I know it. You love big breast!” She grabbed Nux's hand and placed it on her breast.

“Why do you say that?”

“Me, Felberta, Lane, all of us have big breasts.”

“What about Skyla then?” Nux questioned.

“That girl can melt anyone's heart with her innocence and pureness. It doesn't matter if she had big breasts or not, no one cannot not fall in love with her. It is simply impossible to resist her.

So she doesn't count.” Edda shook her head.

Out of all the women around Nux, she liked Skyla the most. She was innocent, friendly and cheerful.

She was a lovely girl.

Nux smiled as well, Skyla was cute, that was true. However, that doesn't mean that Edda was correct, he did not prefer large breasts over small breasts.

He liked all of them the same.

Breasts were breasts.

No matter if they were large or small.

Suddenly, his smile widened and he shook his head.

Heh, who was he trying to fool? Himself?

Large breasts for life!

Indeed, large breasts are the best.

He then grabbed her firm breast and questioned.

“So, who are you talking about?”

“Allura Skyfall.”

# Chapter 114

‘Thyra, come here.’

Thyra, who had just woken up, heard Nux’s voice in her head and her face turned red.

Yesterday’s memories flooded her mind.

‘Did he see me yesterday?’ She thought inwardly and panicked.

‘Ughh... why is he calling me... I am sure he saw me... I shouldn’t have peeked on him... that was...’

That was so lewd...’

Thyra’s face continued to turn redder and redder.

Her cold assassin image was really taking some heavy blows since she met Nux.

Thyra then quickly wore her clothes and walked towards Nux’s room.

Her mind was filled with how Nux’s rod was going inside and outside Edda’s private part and how Edda was reacting to it.

A few minutes later, she appeared in front of Nux’s room and knocked.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

She knocked.

“Enter.”

Thyra did as she was told and entered. However, as soon as she did, her face turned red.

Nux just had his underwear on. He was practically naked!

“W-Why did you call me when you were changing!?” She questioned out loud as she closed her eyes.

However, if one looked closely, there was a very little gap between her left eyelids.

She was peeking at her.

But nobody noticed that, so that didn't happen.

Okay?

Nux smiled when he saw her reaction, he quickly wore all his clothes and muttered, “Hee? Where did that cold and expressionless assassin go? What happened to you?”

Suddenly, Thyra frowned, ‘Does he not know that I was peeking at him?’ She thought inwardly.

However, when she saw that smile on his face, she started thinking otherwise.

‘No, he always has that hateful smile on his face... it seems that he doesn't really know...’

A deep sigh escaped Thyra's mouth.

She was saved from embarrassing herself.

Her face then turned to her usual expressionless one and she questioned.

“What did you call me here for?”

“Haa? Did you return to normal? That's sad... I liked your previous face more...”

“It is not for you to decide how I act. Of course, you can use your weird magic to force me to act like that, but don’t think I will change myself to fit your taste. Remember, I hate your guts.” Thyra answered in a cold tone.

However, Nux’s smile didn’t disappear, “Nope, you definitely changed a little, the previous you would have never talked about so many random things.”

Thyra’s cold façade threatened to break, however, she controlled herself and didn’t say anything.

Yes, she shouldn’t talk about any random things, lest he will think that she had changed.

She has not changed.

“Why did you call me here?” She questioned again.

Nux watched her for a little while and then questioned.

“Did you do what I told you to do?”

“Are you talking about the checking for spies?” Thyra questioned back.

“Yes.”

“Yes, I did. I rechecked everyone’s information, there is no change in their attitude, their families are under our surveillance and there are no unusual movements. I don’t think there are any spies in the mansion.” Thyra answered.

So that Nux doesn’t know about her peeking at her, she forced all the assassins to work and check everything out in the middle of the night. That is also the reason why she woke up so late, she was working all night.

“Good, it’s good to have assassins as subordinates, efficient indeed.” Nux nodded to himself and Thyra snorted.

“Can I go now?” She didn’t want to stay a second longer in this place.

“Ah no wait, I still want to ask something”

“What is it?” Thyra questioned in a rushed tone.

“It’s about last night,” Nux muttered with a smile.

Thyra’s eyes widened and her face turned red again.

‘D-Does he knows?’

She started doubting her previous judgment.

“W-What do you w-want to ask about last night?” She stuttered.

“Ah, nothing serious, I just wanted to ask if you slept well or not.” Nux laughed.

“ ... ”

Thyra remained silent.

She didn’t know how to react to it.

She can never understand what is going on with him.

And what’s with that hateful smile on his face!

“Whether I slept well or not has nothing to do with you!” She retorted in anger.

Thyra then turned around and walked away.

“If you have nothing else to say, then I will be taking my leave now!”

\*Bam\*

She then slammed the door closed and left.

“Hahahaha~ I can now understand why you like to tease her so much~ It’s so funnn~~” After she left, Felberta deactivated her [Conceal] and laughed out loud.

“I told you it would be fun~ Have I ever been wrong about something?” Nux smiled as well.

Felberta smiled seductively as she walked towards Nux and wrapped her hand around his neck, “How can you ever be wrong? You are the smartest and the most handsome man alive~”

“Heh, your flattery does not amuse me,” Nux muttered as he wrapped his hand around Felberta’s waist.

“Does it really not amuse you?” Felberta closed the distance between their mouths and questioned.

“Heh.” Nux smiled and sealed her lips.

“Alright, let’s go and eat now. Skyla and Lane must be waiting for us” After a short kiss, Felberta muttered.

Nux nodded and carried her like a princess.

He knew that she liked it a lot.

“Heh, treating me like a princess when you are about to meet a queen~”

Felberta laughed.

“Hoh? Are you jealous?” Nux questioned.

“Hmph! Jealous my ass! I got a whole faction. She might be a queen in the palace, but here, I am the real queen! The queen who has your heart!” Felberta declared proudly.

“I can’t deny that, you are indeed my queen.” Nux nodded.

A satisfied smile appeared on Felberta's face as she muttered, "It is good that you know about it."

"So, what did Edda tell you about her?"

A small smile appeared on Nux's face as he muttered.

"She might be an interesting character."

"When are you going to meet her?" Felberta questioned curiously.

"This evening."

# Chapter 115

“Concubine Allura, or Allura Skyfall, is a 1.7-meter tall woman, just like her name, she has an alluring, sinful body and a perfect hourglass figure. White hairs, crystal blue eyes, perfectly carved face. A beauty indeed.” Edda muttered.

“Ohh? You make her sound so beautiful.”

“She’s very beautiful.” Edda praised.

“Really? I am excited to meet her.

So? Why did you choose her?” Nux questioned.

“Allura Skyfall is nicknamed ‘The Bored Concubine’, she always tries to find something interesting in her life, it is as if she is bored of her life already. She hides her identity and randomly walks into the city to find something interesting, and she does that very often.

She isn’t arrogant like other concubines, well, she is a little, but not to the degree compared to the other concubines. She talks to the servants normally and doesn’t look down on them but that’s mostly because she tries to find something interesting in them.

Approaching and talking to her is relatively easier compared to others. You just have to win her interest, once you do that, you can meet her again in the future.

However, if she doesn’t find you interesting, you will lose the opportunity to talk to her in the future.

Of course, you don’t really need to think too much about it, I’ll be surprised if a woman can resist you” Edda explained everything she knew about Concubine Allura in great detail.

It was clear that she was thorough in her search and worked hard.

Nux kissed her forehead and then questioned.

“So how can I meet her?”

Edda smiled as she lifted her chest in pride and answered, “Heh, you don’t have to worry about that, as I said before, she likes to hide her identity and visits the capital city very often.”

Edda then moved closer to Nux and whispered in his ears.

“And she’s going to the Silver Moon Restaurant in the evening.”

“Ohh! Isn’t that where we met for the second time? Heh. It is a lucky restaurant for me.” Nux muttered.

Edda smiled.

“Alright, I am getting late now. I need to go” She then stood up and entered the bathroom.

...

Nux smiled when he remembered his conversation with Edda, right now, he was wearing an expensive purple coloured coat over a white shirt and was standing in the Silver Moon Restaurant.

He observed the beautiful lady sitting in the corner of the restaurant alone, watching everything with a small smile on her face. She was Allura Skyfall, the Royal Concubine.

‘She’s as beautiful as Edda said.’ He thought inwardly and admired her beauty. His golden eyes then shined brightly and her information appeared in front of his eyes.

[Name: Allura Skyfall]

[Age: 47 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Concubine Of the King Of Skyfall kingdom]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 32]

[HP: 400/400]

[MP: 570/570]

[STR: 40]

[AGL: 39]

[VIT: 40]

[STM: 40]

[INT: 57]

[DEF: 36]

...

A small smile appeared on Nux's face as he started walking toward her.

However, just as he was 10 meters away from her, he felt someone's killing intent. The person made it clear not to come close to her or it won't end well.

Of course, Nux just smiled and ignored the killing intent.

He already knew who was behind it.

2 Grand Master Stage experts were protecting Allura in secret. The killing intent came from them. Nux had already sensed their presence when he entered the restaurant.

This is also the reason why no ‘bug’ roamed around such a ‘beautiful flower’.

Of course, Nux was different.

He intended to pluck that flower.

“Can I have a seat? The rest of the tables are occupied.” Nux questioned and without waiting for an answer, he sat down.

Her two guards were about to jump on Nux and attack him, however, Allura secretly raised her hands and stopped them.

She can see that this young man in front of her was a Master Stage Cultivator just like her, however, he treated the two Grand Master’s killing intent as nothing but air.

Although she wasn’t a cultivation freak and found cultivation tedious, someone so young, yet so powerful and courageous definitely gained her interest.

She then glanced at the other restaurant tables and muttered with a smile, “More than 10 tables are free right now?”

“Hmm? Where? Why do I not see them? Ah, by the way, you are really beautiful, young lady” Nux questioned with a smile.

“Hoh? Do I look young to you?” Allura questioned with an interesting smile.

“Of course, you look no older than 16 to me,” Nux replied.

“Hahaha~ What a glib tongue you have~ However, you remember that when you praise a woman, you shouldn’t lie so blatantly. Everyone is not as easygoing as I am” Allura muttered.

“Ah, this is my first time doing all this, so I apologize for my inexperience, I will keep that in my mind from now on.” Nux apologized.

“First time doing what?” Allura questioned, interested.

“First time trying to impress a beautiful woman,” Nux answered.

“Heh. I do not believe that.”

“Believe me.”

“Hahaha~ I do not believe you, but if it is really your first time trying to impress a lady, then you are definitely doing a good job.” Allura laughed out loud.

“Really?” Nux’s face brightened up.

“Wait, are you trying to say that I managed to you?” he questioned.

“Hahaha~ You are too impatient, kid. What you are doing right now is definitely enough to impress a normal girl, but not me.” Allura answered, she was looking forward to how he will react.

“Oh... See? I am still inexperienced, how about you teach me how to impress a woman while I pay for the food in return?” Nux offered and again, without waiting for her, he called the waiter.

“Let me give the order. I am sure you will like it.”

Allura kept smiling, however, suddenly, she realized something.

This man changed the topic very quickly.

They were still talking about the free tables and why he didn’t sit there before he changed the topic!

She was completely trapped in his rhythm!

# Chapter 116

“You are not from here, are you?” Concubine Allura questioned.

She was definitely interested in this young boy in front of her. Not sexually, obviously.

She was just bored and she felt like this boy was a great way to overcome her boredom for a few hours.

“Oh? How did you know that?” Nux questioned back. His eyes gleamed with interest as well.

The two of them looked quite similar to each other at the moment.

“I have never seen you here before and I am very positive that my eyes won’t miss such a handsome man,” Allura answered.

“Oh ho. Thank you very much for the compliment and yes, you are correct, I am not from here.”

“Where are you from?” Allura questioned.

“I don’t really belong to any place. My friends call me ‘bored wanderer’ since I am wandering around the world, looking for something interesting.” Nux answered with a smile.

Allura narrowed her eyes when she heard him, his nickname, wasn’t it too similar to hers?

She then inwardly shook her head, thinking it was coincident and continued.

“Oh? Bored wanderer huh. That’s a nice name. So, how do you deal with your boredom? What interesting things do you do while you wander?”

“I tried many things and then concluded. Life-threatening adventures are the best way to deal with boredom.”

“That’s pretty extreme, don’t you think?”

“It is extreme, that’s why it is such a great way to deal with boredom.” Nux smiled.

“Oh? Then what life-threatening adventures have you gone through yet?” Allura questioned, the light in her eyes showed that she was very interested in this topic.

“Hahaha~ Just a few days ago, I entered my enemy’s house, sneaked around and stole his treasures. I won’t tell you the details, however, know that my enemy wasn’t a normal person. If someone would have seen me, more than 2000 soldiers would have come after me.” Nux shifted his body towards her a little and whispered.

“And you are telling me all of this? What if I spill the beans and catch you? Your enemy sounds like an influential person, I am sure he will reward me well” Allura smiled.

Nux’s smile widened as well and he replied, “Heh. That would lead to another interesting adventure of running away with you.”

“Hoh? Why would you run away with me?”

“You think you can walk away unscathed after betraying my trust? Heh. Think again.” Nux could feel the two protectors glaring at him, however, he ignored them.

They were nothing to him.

Also, he believed that Allura wouldn’t let them do anything.

“Hahaha~” Allura laughed out loud.

“You really like life-threatening adventures huh?” She muttered.

“Indeed, that’s why I am talking to you in the first place.” Nux nodded.

“Hmm? What does talking to me have anything to do with this?” Allura questioned.

“I don’t know, I just have this feeling that you are not any normal person and I am taking a big risk when I talk to you so casually,” Nux answered.

Allura narrowed her eyes again, this shouldn’t be a coincidence anymore.

“Do you know who I am?” She questioned.

“Hmm? A beautiful lady sitting at a table in the Silver Moon Restaurant?” Nux answered.

“No, that is not what I am talking about.

I just feel like you know who I am.” Allura muttered.

Nux’s eyes widened, “Wow, that’s a good pickup line indeed. It forms a connection with the other person without being too obvious.

This subtle hint would later turn into a spark and then the two of them will mate.”

“Wha- What?” Allura couldn’t believe what she was hearing.

What the heck does that mean? Is he saying that she was trying to woo him?

And where did mating come from?

What are they?

Animals?

That was so random.

“As I thought, you are good at this. I am glad that I took you in as my teacher. I feel like I will be an expert in wooing women after talking to you

a few more times.” Nux continued to nod.

“...” Allura turned silent.

She realized that he was trying to change the topic again.

She asked him if she knew her identity and he smoothly changed it to her teaching him how to impress women.

He is...

“You are good at this.” Allura praised.

“Good at what?” Nux questioned with a slight smile on his face.

Allura’s mouth twitched when she saw that expression.

This man was still acting ignorantly.

It is so obvious but he is still acting ignorantly.

This little boy was clearly teasing her!

Suddenly, a scheming smile appeared on her face as an idea popped into her mind.

How could she take it lying down?

“You just mentioned that you liked life-threatening adventures, right?” She questioned.

“I do.” Even though he didn’t know where she was going with this, Nux nodded.

“You also mentioned that you feel talking to me so casually is a life-threatening adventure?” Allura questioned again.

“I do.” And again, Nux nodded.

“Then how about you do something even more life-threatening, even more thrilling?” Allura questioned.

Nux played his role very well and his eyes brightened, “What is it? Tell me! Tell me!”

“How about you have tea with me tomorrow afternoon?” Allura suggested.

“How is tha-” Nux frowned, however, just as he was about to question, she continued.

“But the tea will be in my own room. How about it? Do you dare?”

A small smile appeared on Allura’s face as she questioned.

Hehe, now if this little boy knew who she was, he would back away immediately, and even if he didn’t know her, she will tell him her identity and scare him.

Hahaha~

This was her way of getting back at him.

‘Heh. You are still too young to deal with me, little boy.’ Allura muttered inwardly.

However, something unexpected happened, a small smile appeared on Nux’s face as he answered.

“That sounds fun. Why not?”

He agreed and he agreed without a second thought.

# Chapter 117

“W-What did you say?” Allura questioned in surprise.

“I said it sounds fun. I will join you tomorrow afternoon.” Nux answered.

“D-Do you even know who I am?” Allura questioned.

“Hmm? Again with this huh? Do you really think your identity can scare me? Heh. Let me tell you, I am not scared of anything. Rather, the higher your background, the more excited I will get.”

“...”

Allura didn't say anything. After the initial shock, she was able to calm herself.

She then observed the young man in front of her. From the looks of it, he doesn't really know who she was.

‘It might be interesting...’ Allura thought inwardly.

She really hopes to see what kind of face will he make once she reveals her identity.

“Oh really?” she questioned.

“Of course!”

“Then I will be waiting for you tomorrow in the royal palace” Allura muttered with a small smile on her face and Nux's smile disappeared.

“R-Royal Palace?” Nux stuttered as his eyes widened in surprise.

Allura's smile widened, this was the reaction she was looking for.

Yes, this look, this nervous look, it was a lot better than that hateful smile from before.

“Yes, I am Allura Skyfall, the 7th Concubine of the King of the Skyfall Kingdom.” Allura introduced herself with a playful smile on her face.

Nux’s eyes widened in horror.

He then stood up, bowed a little and muttered, “I’ll see you later”

After saying that, he turned around and walked away without waiting for her answer.

“Pppfftt!” Allura, who saw him walk away as soon as she revealed her identity laughed out loud.

She didn’t look down on him, it was a normal reaction.

It is normal to be scared of the king of the country. Not many could walk away after offending him.

She just found his reaction funny.

With how he was talking and then how he reacted, it was amusing indeed.

‘Hahaha~ That was funnn’ She thought inwardly.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

However, after the initial happiness, Allura’s smile faded when she realized something.

Her source of entertainment was gone...

She scared him away.

How is she going to entertain herself now...?

How could she be so stupid to scare away such a great source of entertainment?

She wanted to hit herself...

She then sighed in defeat and started looking around, trying to find something interesting, however, her mind was still stuck on that young man.

She regretted her decision...

“Haahhh...” In the end, she couldn’t take it anymore and stood up. She then left the restaurant and walked toward the royal palace with a dejected look on her face.

“I really shouldn’t have scared him away...” She muttered out loud.

As soon as Allura walked close to the Royal Palace, her two protectors appeared behind her and one of them sneered.

“Heh. He acted like he was some sort of big shot but he didn’t even think a minute before he ran away with his tails between his legs”

That man really got on his nerves and he was really pleased when he saw him running away in fear.

“Indeed. What a gutless man.” other protector sneered as well.

“Heh, you two act like you are any better? Won’t you run away with your tails between your legs if your opponent was the king of a country? Heck, you might run away even if you face a duke, let alone the King. Isn’t that right? Huh? C’mon, tell me.” Allura scoffed.

She was bored, therefore, she tried to tease her subordinates.

This might be fun.

However, her subordinates were familiar with her antics.

They knew the more they tried to defend themselves, the more she will tease them.

Therefore, they remained silent.

“Hmph!” Allura understood their thoughts and snorted.

Maybe she was destined to be bored today...

She sighed.

“Hmm? Lady Allura? You are back?” While Allura was sighing to herself, she suddenly heard a voice. She turned around to look who it was and answered.

“Yes, Edda, I am back.”

“Oh? That is faster than usual...” Edda muttered.

“Indeed...” Allura sighed.

“Why do you look so dejected, did you not find anything?” Edda questioned with a curious look on her face.

She knew Nux and Allura would have met today, as far as she knew Nux and his way of doing things, Allura should be all smiles right now.

However, she looks completely different from what she expected.

“That’s not it... I did find someone interesting... however, I ruined it due to my own stupidity...”

Allura muttered and sighed again.

“What happened?” Edda questioned.

“Haahh... leave it... I don’t want to recall it,” Allura sighed again and didn’t answer.

The more she acted this way, the more curious Edda got, however, she didn't question anymore. She would know it once she meets Nux.

It's no big deal.

Just as Edda was about to leave, Allura questioned.

“What about you, Edda? Where are you going?”

“Just some business talks, nothing much” Edda lied.

“Hehe~ You think you can lie to me? Business talks don't happen every day right?” Allura smiled.

“Haah... I can't hide anything from you... can I, Lady Allura?” Edda sighed in defeat.

Since Allura was bored, she loves to hear about all the gossip flying around the palace and since the head maid leaving the palace every night to meet someone was a gossip the servants talk about a lot, Allura knew about it as well.

“Hehe~ So our beautiful Head Maid finally found someone huh?” Allura muttered.

A tinge of red appeared on Edda's face as she nodded.

A big smile appeared on Allura's face.

This was interesting...

She finally found a new target.

She could use this to relieve her boredom.

“So? Who is it? What is his name? Is he handsome? How tall is he? What is his cultivation level?” Allura shot a series of questions however, Edda just remained silent and looked at Allura with a straight face.

“Lady Allura, I won’t tell you anything.”

“Whhhhyyy?” Allura questioned. She looked like a poor woman who was betrayed by the love of her life.

“Lady Allura, everyone in the palace knows about you. You will keep on teasing me if I tell you anything. Also...”

“Also what?”

A small smile appeared on Edda’s face as she replied,

“I have an inkling that you will know about him soon enough”

# Chapter 118

“What...?”

Nux couldn't take the silence anymore and questioned.

His girls have been staring at him for a while now, he thought that they would say something in a while, however, they all just kept staring.

Nux noted that this happened once Edda joined the dinner, before that, everything was fine.

“My lovely girls, can you tell me what happened? Why are you staring at me like that? Am I looking more handsome than usual?” Nux questioned as he moved his hand through his hair.

He was becoming a narcissist.

The type of people he hated in his last life.

‘But what can I do? I am just too handsome~’

He praised himself inwardly.

“How is our fifth sister?” finally, Skyla broke the silence and questioned.

“Fifth Sister?”

“She is talking about Allura Skyfall,” Felberta answered.

“How are you guys so sure that she will be your 5th sister?” Nux questioned.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

The four of them glanced at Nux with a dull look on their faces.

“What?”

“...has any woman ever escaped your clutches? Ever?” Edda questioned and the other three nodded continuously.

Nux felt that these 4 were getting along very well since everything they do looks so organized.

It was as if they knew what the others are going to do.

“I mean... There is Annice right?” He answered.

“That was just because you weren’t interested in her. Try asking her to sleep with you and see how she reacts! That girl has been bothering me for a while now, asking about you again and again.” Edda snorted.

“Hmph! Don’t act so innocent, any woman that enters your eyes end up laying on the bed next to you” Felberta blamed.

“Why are you making me sound like a sexual predator?” Nux questioned.

“Isn’t that what you are?” Skyla questioned.

“ ... ”

“Oi oi. What have you done to my cute innocent Skyla?” Nux questioned.

“Skyla, you should not spend time with them. They are affecting your innocence. You should stay with me from now on.” He then turned to Skyla and muttered.

“No, Skyla is perfectly fine and loves to stay with us.” Felberta then placed her hand on Skyla’s shoulder and muttered.

“Right Skyla?” She then turned towards Skyla and questioned.

Skyla however, glanced at Nux and questioned,

“Staying with you all the time?”

“””SKYLA!””” Felberta, Lane and Edda shouted.

“O-Oh, I meant no. I love to spend time with them...” Skyla lowered her head with a small pout on her face.

Seeing this scene, Nux laughed inwardly.

It was good that they were getting along.

Also,

Skyla is very cute.

“So, how’s Allura Skyfall? How did your meeting go?” Felberta then brought back the initial question.

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face as he remembered the Charming white-haired lady.

“She’s an amazing woman indeed...” Nux muttered as he started talking about what happened today and his impression of Allura Skyfall.

...

**\*Bam\***

2 hours later, the door of Alger’s room was smashed open and Thyra entered.

“What is it this time!?” She questioned, clearly frustrated since Alger called her again.

Alger, who saw the way she entered smiled wryly. He couldn't do anything about her.

“Look, I don't have any interest in seeing your face again and again either but I can't do anything. I am just following orders.” Alger muttered.

Thyra scowled as she questioned, “Is it that bastard again?”

“If you are talking about Master Nux, then yes. He is the one who ordered me to call you.”

“Why doesn't he just call me through that weird magic himself?” Thyra questioned with a frown.

“Well, if you don't know... Master Nux... Master Nux is 'busy' at this time of the day...” Alger coughed awkwardly and answered.

Thyra then remembered what she saw last night and her face turned a little red, of course, Alger couldn't notice that since her control over her expressions was good.

“So, why did he call me this time?” Thyra questioned and this time, Alger's face turned sour.

“Most of your assassins have 2 or 3 star weapons, right?” He questioned.

“That is true,” Thyra replied with a small smile on her face.

She could guess where this was going and she was very content with it.

“Yes, so Master Nux ordered me to give these 3 and 4 star weapons to you... he says that you can give them to the best assassins...” Alger muttered as he passed a few weapons to Thyra.

Thyra kept them all in her storage ring and chuckled, “Hahaha~ What a generous Master”

“Generous my ASS! These are all min- AAAGGGHHHHHHHHH!!!”

Before Alger could complete his sentence, he fell to his knees and screamed in agony.

“These are not mine! It’s master Nux’s!

I am Loyal!

I am Loyal!

I am Loyal!”

A few seconds later, the pain finally stopped and Alger sighed in relief.

Thyra, who watched everything unfold smiled.

This hateful man deserves it!

Although that Nux is hateful as well, at least he is not stingy. He is still hateful nonetheless.

‘Hmph!’ Thyra snorted inwardly and muttered, “Alright, if it is nothing else, I will take my leave.”

She then left the room and Alger, who was on the floor sighed.

He started wondering what bad things he had done in his life that fate put him against Nux.

He really regrets sending those assassins after him...

‘haahh... my shitty luck...’ he then sighed, stood up and walked towards his bed.

He is tired, he needs to sleep.

...

On the other side, Thyra was walking in the hall and soon, she heard something.

“AAnnnhhh~”

In an instant, she knew what she was.

‘No, I won’t repeat the same mistake again!’

Thinking that, she walked.

She walked towards the source of the voice.

She walked towards Nux’s room.

‘I should check it out a little... Yes, I need to see if his women are being controlled by his weird magic or not.

Yes, I need to confirm that and save them if they are.’

She thought inwardly and appeared in front of the Nux’s door.

Then opening it a little, she started watching everything from that slight gap.

# Chapter 119

“Oooh! New weapons! Are these all 3 or 4 star weapons!?” An assassin girl walked forwards, her eyes shining in excitement.

“Wow! These are so beautiful!”

“Heh. Master Nux is generous!”

“Generous indeed.”

More and more assassins joined.

Right now, Thyra was distributing the weapons Alger gave to her, however, there was a tinge of redness on her face.

The assassins noticed that but didn't dare to say anything.

That was because they learned their lessons yesterday.

Yesterday, Thyra had a similar expression on her face and one of the assassins pointed it out.

That assassin is still in the bed right now.

From his injuries, everyone deduced that it would take him a week to recover and that too only if he takes a healing potion every day.

Poor man.

However, his sacrifice saved the others since no one dared to question the redness on Thyra's face.

“Alright, get in line and all the assassins who have 4-star weapons, you guys stay away from here,” Thyra ordered.

A very few assassins had 4-star weapons, most of the Master Stage Assassins carried 3-star weapons and all the Advance Stage assassins carried 2-star weapons.

However, now, Master Stage assassins can carry 4-star weapons and the Advance stage assassins can carry 3-star weapons.

This will be a big boost to their fighting capabilities.

Therefore, all of them were very excited.

“Heh. Master Nux is such a generous master.” An assassin muttered after he got his new weapon.

“It’s so easy to win you guys over, huh...” Thyra muttered.

“It is not about being easy or difficult, Miss One. I just thought about it a little.” The assassin replied.

“Oh? What are you thinking about? Mind sharing it with us?” Thyra questioned. She wanted to know what was going on in his mind, maybe because she was confused about her current situation as well.

“I remained loyal to most of the Kingdom for most of my life, Miss One. I started killing people at the age of 8, all for the kingdom. I was even prepared to die for my kingdom.

However, if I think about it now, it all started when the kingdom took me in and raised me as an orphan. I believe they gave me a ‘life’ but that was far from the truth.

They did not raise us as humans, Miss One. They raised us as assassins, they raised us as tools.

Heh, they changed our perception, made us narrow-minded, they practically brainwashed us.

What’s there to be grateful about?” The assassin answered.

The other assassins who listened to him nodded their head and one of them stepped forward as she muttered,

“I agree with Twelve, we are nothing but tools, the kingdom doesn’t value us at all.

Look at you Miss One, just like all of us, you gave your entire life to the kingdom as well, heck, you worked even harder than us, and rose to a good position, but what did you get in return?

You couldn’t even win their basic trust, Miss One.

‘An Orphan can’t be trusted with such matters.’

That’s what you got, Miss One.

They sent a spy to keep their eyes on you, your lifetime worth of loyalty counts to nothing in their eyes.

Actually, I am surprised you still have some loyalty left for the kingdom.”

The female assassin muttered and another assassin continued,

“I agree with these two as well, Miss One.” Another assassin nodded.

Thyra then glanced at the other assassins and they all nodded as well.

“I understand your thoughts; however, that still doesn’t explain why you are loyal to Nux? He used his weird magic to control you all, at least you have the freedom of your thoughts when you worked for the kingdom but under him, you don’t even have that.

Just thinking about betraying him a little would activate that agonizing pain and the pain will keep increasing until you get rid of those thoughts and think about being loyal to him.

Isn’t that worse?”

“As you said, Miss One, Master Nux used his weird magic on us, we don’t really have an option other than being loyal to him.

As for comparing him with the kingdom... I feel that Master Nux is still better, the kingdom fooled us and tried to brainwash us, whereas he told us our position up front.

About the pain, Miss One, don’t forget, we were trained to handle the pain ever since we were 12. The kingdom started torturing us at such a tender age.

The kingdom just doesn’t have the way to torture us in a more painful way, else I am sure they would have used that on us as well.

They tortured their ‘allies’ while Master Nux tortured their ‘enemies’, there is a big difference between that, Miss One.” The female assassin answered.

“Also, I am sure the kingdom is a lot richer than Master Nux, however, they still gave us 3 Star Weapons. On the other hand, Master Nux gave us 4-star weapons.

He is generous indeed.” ‘Twelve’ muttered as his eyes shined in excitement when he held the new dagger in his hand.

Seeing him acting like that, Thyra just shook her head and sighed,

“Isn’t it better to say that Nux bought you all with these weapons?”

“Hahaha~ You can say that as well. Our mentality has been twisted after being trained as assassins since we were children, Miss One. Our love for weapons is very high.

A new weapon is a great way to win our favour.” Twelve laughed out loud as he held his dagger gently.

Thyra smiled as well.

They were so simple-minded.

“Also, Master Nux isn’t a normal man. I have a feeling that serving him will be a lot more beneficial to us than serving the kingdom.” Suddenly, Twelve muttered with an unusually serious look on his face.

“Hmm? What do you mean?” Thyra questioned, even the other assassins looked a little interested.

“I don’t know how to explain this to you, ah, I got it.

So hear me out.”

# Chapter 120

“So hear me out.

Viscount Felberta, we all know she is related to Master Nux, right?”

“She’s no-” Thyra wanted to say that she was being controlled by his weird magic as well, but after what she saw today, she started having doubts about it.

Her face then turned a little red.

“She’s not?”

However, she was brought out of her reverie when she heard Twelve’s confused voice.

“Ah no, I meant she is his woman, yes.” Thyra nodded.

Twelve nodded back and questioned.

“And what is her Cultivation Level?”

“A Master Stage Cultivat- wait...” Suddenly, Thyra realized that she has missed a very important detail.

“Yes, Felberta Alveye was among those nobles who preferred making contacts rather than focusing on Cultivation.

She was a mortal, however, now, she stands before us as a Master Stage Cultivator. She’s not alone, her maids, Skyla and Lane are Master Stage cultivators as well and coincidentally, they are Master Nux’s women as well.

Don’t you find this weird?”

All the assassins widened their eyes, even Thyra was shocked.

“Yesterday when I went out, I did a background check on Master Nux.”

“Hmm? Didn’t you suffer through that annoying pain due to that?” An assassin couldn’t help but question.

“It’s not like I am trying to betray Master Nux, I am just trying to find out more about him. The pain only occurs when you think about betraying him.” Twelve answered.

“Anyways, that’s not important right now. So I did a background check on Master Nux and found out that he is an orphan and was a nobody before. The only thing good about him was his looks.

He was just a mortal 2 months ago, and now he is a Master Stage Cultivator, a Master Stage Cultivator who can defeat a Grand Master Stage Cultivator.”

Twelve revealed.

The assassins’ eyes widened in shock, they just couldn’t believe what they were hearing, even the greatest genius in the world couldn’t do what Felberta and Nux just did.

“I do not believe this. How can this be possible? I think something is wrong here?” An assassin blurted out.

“Yes, what if Viscount Felberta is behind this all along? What if she was hiding her cultivation before? It is easy for a Viscount like her to hide a lover, who is also a cultivator, from the eyes of normal people.” Another assassin answered.

Thyra nodded. She agreed. Viscount Felberta might be behind everything all along.

“Then how do you explain Skyla and Lane? Those two are Master Stage Cultivators as well, how can a mere viscount have 3 Master stage cultivators serving her? And even though she does have those 2 as her servants, why would she be willing to share her man with them?

Remember, Viscount Felberta is a noble, no matter how close she is with her maids, she would never share a man with others, especially commoners.” Twelve replied and the assassins turned silent.

“Then what are you trying to say?” Thyra questioned.

She had to admit, this ‘Twelve’ was smarter than she thought.

“I think just like his weird magic to control us, Master Nux has a magic that can increase the Cultivation of a person. That is the only reason why a Viscount would choose a commoner as a man and not a boy toy.”

Twelve revealed.

“ ... ”

Silence shrouded the room.

No one was willing to believe what they heard.

“That is not possible. Cultivation is an arduous and slow process, it cannot be increased with magic so easily” Thyra denied.

There is no way that is possible.

“Yes, this is just not possible; else he would have already taken control over the world.”

“Yeah, Master Nux would have already increased our cultivation as well, he could enslave thousands of nobles and then could have increased their cultivation. This way, he would have created a peerless army and he would be undefeated.”

Many assassins stepped forwards and rejected Twelve’s theory.

“I am not saying that the magic is absolute. There has to be some kind of limit. For example, the number of people he can increase the cultivation of.

Or the maximum limit he could raise the cultivation stage of the person, or something like that.

However, I am 90% sure that something like that magic exists.

Also, about the conquering the world..." Twelve then observed all the other assassins and muttered,

"Who says that he doesn't plan to do it?

He already knows the existence of the kingdom behind us, however, he still dared to act against us.

He already knows that the two marquess' houses are not loyal to this kingdom, yet, we and they still exist and aren't wiped out yet, confirming that he hasn't reported anything to the Royal Palace.

He is not scared of our kingdom.

He is not loyal to the kingdom he lives in.

He is strong.

He has weird magic that is completely out of this world.

Who says he doesn't plan to conquer the world?

Why would he leave all of us alive? Why would he provide us with better weapons? There is no free lunch in this world.

Who knows? He might be recruiting us as his subordinates. He might be laying low and cultivating his strength. He might attack when he is ready. He might,

He might take over the world soon."

Twelve answered and everyone turned silent again.

“That’s why I said it before, following Master Nux might be better than following the kingdom. If we can prove our loyalty, not just because of the pain, but actually showing that we are willing to work for him by our own will, the benefits we will receive won’t be small”

The assassins then glanced at each other.

It would be a lie to say that they weren’t interested.

Twelve’s words made sense. His words were logical. What he said might be true.

Even Thyra had the same thoughts.

However, before she could think more, she heard a voice.

‘Thyra, come here.’

It was Nux’s voice.

‘Hmph! Speak of the Devil’

# Chapter 121

‘Thyra, come here.’

‘Hmph! Speak of the Devil’ Thyra snorted inwardly as she glanced outside the window. A small frown appeared on her face when she noticed that the sun wasn’t out yet.

‘Why is he calling me this early?’ She thought inwardly.

‘Does he want to...’ Some indecent thoughts started appearing in her mind and she shook her head repeatedly.

‘No no no! I would rather die than do that!’ She screamed inside her mind.

“Umm... Miss One... is everything okay?” Thyra was then brought out of her reverie by Twelve’s voice. She then glanced at everyone’s faces and pouted a little.

They failed to see that lovely expression that had appeared on her face since half of Thyra’s face was covered with a mask.

“It’s nothing. Alright, we have been talking for too long, everyone, return to your rooms. I still have some things to do so I will take my leave.” Thyra ordered.

The other assassins then nodded and walked into their rooms.

However, every one of them had lost expressions on their faces. They were still thinking about what Twelve said before.

Thyra then turned around and walked towards Nux’s room.

...

A few minutes later, she appeared in front of Nux's room and just as she was about to knock, the door was opened and Nux walked out while placing his finger on his mouth.

“Shhh, they are sleeping.” He whispered.

Since she was curious, Thyra peeked into the room and her eyes widened.

“How are all 4 of them here?” She questioned.

She didn't know why, but her voice was very low as well, it was as if Nux's presence affected her somehow.

“What do you mean why are all 4 of them here?” Nux questioned.

“Wasn't there only Felberta before?” Thyra questioned.

“There was- wait...” Suddenly, Nux narrowed his eyes.

“How did you know that Fel was the only one inside before?” Nux questioned.

Thyra's eyes widened in shock, she couldn't believe that she blundered like that.

She was a failure as an assassin!

She cursed herself inwardly.

“I... uhh... I just saw her entering a few hours back...” Thyra muttered.

“Riiigghhhtttt” Nux nodded.

Thyra sighed when she noticed that he had believed her.

“But why do I feel like you are lying to me...?”

She was too optimistic.

“I am not...” Thyra answered weakly. She knew it would all be over once Nux uses that weird magic of his.

“Alright. I will trust you.” Nux nodded.

“You trust me?” Thyra questioned, she was shocked.

“Well, yea. You are going to be my subordinate from now on, I think I should start trusting you a little, I mean, I can’t keep using my Magic, can I?” Nux smiled.

Thyra was taken aback by his smile, however, a cold smile then appeared on her face as she answered,

“Yes, you should trust me a little. Keep trusting me like this and one day, I will find a way to undo your magic and stab my dagger into your heart personally.”

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face when he heard her.

‘She likes to act tough huh...’ he noted.

He knew she wasn’t being serious, there were several reasons behind it.

First and the most obvious, she didn’t feel any pain.

Second, if she was that serious about doing it, she wouldn’t say that out loud and would try to act more ‘servant-like’

Of course, everything might be her plan to make him lower his guard, but Nux believed that a situation like that wouldn’t arrive.

“You wouldn’t do that, would you?”

“Oh try me.”

“Alright, let’s not talk about all this, tell me, did you distribute the weapons I gave you?” Nux questioned.

“...” Thyra remained silent as she glanced at Nux with a blank look on her face.

“Did you call me here this early in the morning to ask this?”

“Yes?”

“...”

“What?”

“Do you think I am free?”

“Yes?”

“...”

Thyra was speechless.

And the biggest problem was that she couldn't retort!

She was free!

“Still! You can't cal-”

“Shhh! Lower your voice, they are sleeping” Before Thyra could continue, Nux muttered.

“You can't call me here for something so stupid. Since you ordered me, I distributed all the weapons to my subordinates.” Thyra lowered her voice, however, her frustration was clear in her tone.

“Hmm? But I wanted to see my best assassin... I can't do that? Why do you sound so angry?” Nux questioned with an innocent look.

“...”

Again, Thyra was speechless.

This man was truly shameless.

“You could have called me a little later... why does it have to be so early in the morning?” Thyra questioned.

“Oh, that? I have some work to do in the afternoon, so I will be busy.” Nux answered.

“Work?”

“Yes, a very important work.”

“You work?”

“...” This time, Nux turned silent.

“You work? I thought all you do was fucking women.” Thyra muttered in shock.

“Exactl- Ahem, no, I mean, no, I still have things to do,” Nux answered.

Thyra narrowed her eyes as she glanced at Nux, she felt something was wrong with how he was acting.

However, she then shook her head.

‘It’s not my problem’

Thinking that, she glanced at Nux and muttered,

“Alright, do whatever you want. I will take my leave since we are done.”  
Saying that, Thyra turned away, however,

“Wait!”

“What is it?” Thyra questioned, annoyed.

“I had another question”

“Ask.”

“Did you give weapons to the assassins who are in Hardwick Mansion?”

“ ... ”

Thyra was silent again, however, from the vein that had popped up on her head and how her body was trembling while she had formed a fist, Nux knew that she was pissed.

‘Hahaha~ It’s so fun teasing her~’ He thought inwardly, amused.

Thyra noticed that smirk on his face and realized that he was doing this intentionally.

Her eyes then turned cold as she threatened.

“Mark my words; The day I find a way to overcome your weird magic will be the day you will breathe your last breath!”

# Chapter 122

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“Enter.”

Concubine Allura ordered and a maid walked into her room.

“Lady Allura, your clothes are cleaned, shall I put them into your wardrobe?” The maid questioned as she entered the room while dragging a table that had a few clothes on top of it.

Allura nodded and the maid walked towards the wardrobe.

While the maid was doing everything, Allura watched her with bored eyes. The maid was used to such gaze; therefore, she wasn't very affected and continued doing her job skillfully.

After the maid was done with her work, she bowed, however, just as she was about to leave,

“Wait,” Allura ordered.

“Yes, Lady Allura?”

“I heard Rue broke up with her boyfriend, is that true?” Allura questioned and her eyes shined.

She, as the concubine who was most interested in rumours, knew a lot and felt that this topic could get rid of her boredom for some while.

“Yes, Lady Allura. That is correct.” The maid sighed.

She knew what that look on Lady Allura's face meant.

“You are her best friend, you should know the inside details, correct?” Allura questioned with bright eyes.

“Yes, Lady Allura. I do know a few things about it.” The maid nodded.

“Then what are you waiting for? Tell me everything in detail.”

“As you wish, Lady Allura.

So all of this started a month ago, Rue’s boyfriend felt that the ‘spark’ in their relationship had disappeared and he talked with Rue.

Rue told me about it and I suggested her...”

The maid continued the story, however, in between, the excitement in Allura’s eyes dimmed down.

“Yes Yes, I do not want to hear such a long story. Tell me in short. No wait, you might miss out on some interesting points that way, just let me ask questions and you answer.”

“As you command, Lady Allura.” The maid nodded.

“So, tell me, when did all of this start?”

“A month ago when Rue’s boyfrie-”

“Yes, Yes, a month ago is fine. Now let’s get to the maid question, who started the fight?” Allura questioned.

“Fight?” The maid tilted her head in confusion.

“Yes fight. They broke up right? Who started the fight?”

“Umm... Lady Allura, there was no fight... They just mutually decided that they should break up.” The maid answered.

“Haah? There was no fight?”

“Yes, things were pretty calm; the two of them are still talking to each other as friends.”

“What the hell? Who told them to act so mature? How in the hell are they going to make that entertaining!?” Allura complained.

‘Ughhh... we are not talking about a drama show... Why would they try to make it entertaining? Shouldn’t you be happy that they moved on and no one is sad?’

The maid wanted to say that out loud, but remembering who she was talking to, she shook her head in defeat.

“Ughh... why do mature couples exist? Why are you even in a relationship if you are going to act that mature? Aren’t relationships meant to torture people? Aren’t they meant to entertain people other than the couple?” Allura groaned.

‘What a twisted way of thinking...’

The maid muttered inwardly.

“Haahhh... what a boring day...” Allura then sighed as she glanced outside of her window.

She then turned her head towards the maid and questioned with a small smile.

“So? How about you? Are you in a relationship yet?”

‘Here we go again...’ The maid resigned to her fate and answered.

“No, Lady Allura, I still haven’t found someone for myself yet.”

“Heehh? That’s bad, isn’t it? You are already 40 years old, Leane, you should find a partner soon, or else you will start ageing and will end up alone.”

The maid, Leane was a cultivator as well, so even though she was already more than 40 years old, she still kept her youthful appearance.

“Yes, Lady Allura, I will try to find someone soon.”

“C’mon, be honest with me. Your face is pretty decent, you should have a lot of people going after you, shouldn’t you?” Allura questioned.

“There are a few who seem to be interested in me, Lady Allura.”

“So why haven’t you accepted any of them yet?” Allura questioned, she could smell the entertainment.

“I did a background check on them and didn’t like what I found out.” The maid answered.

Allura’s eyes brightened in joy as she questioned.

“What did you find out?”

“They were going after other women as well.”

“...” Allura then stared at her blankly and questioned.

“What did you expect? Do you want them to be loyal to you even though you haven’t accepted them yet?”

“I... I don’t... but since they proposed, shouldn’t they at least wait for an answer?” The maid replied.

“Heehh? You got that wrong, Leane. In this world, no one waits for anyone. They liked you, they proposed to you, if you stay unclear about your answer, they will move on and propose to another woman.

It is a race.

They don’t have the time to wait for a single woman.”

“...” The maid stayed silent. She didn't think that what Lady Allura said would actually make sense. However, soon, she narrowed her eyes and questioned.

“But why are you telling me all of this, Lady Allura?”

“Because I care about you.

Because I want you to be in a relationship.

Because I want you to find the love of your life.

Because I...”

Allura continued, however, the maid already deduced the real reason.

‘She just wants something interesting around her huh...’

“Thank you for your advice, Lady Allura. I actually remembered that I still had some clothes to wash, so I will take my leave.”

Saying that, the maid stood up and left.

Allura understood that she couldn't keep her for long and didn't stop her, it wasn't that interesting anyway.

She then gazed out of her window again and soon, she heard another knock.

“Enter.”

A maid entered and bowed,

“Lady Allura, your afternoon tea.”

“Alright, keep it there.” Allura nodded, she saw other cups on the maid's table, she knew that she was busy, so she didn't waste her time.

She doesn't want an innocent servant to lose her job just because of her few minutes of ‘entertainment’.

She then grabbed the cup as a young man's face appeared in her mind.

“The afternoon tea huh... if only I hadn't scared him away... I would be having this tea with him right now... that would have been interesting...”

She sighed.

“Heehhh? Lady Allura, are you thinking about another man when you promised to drink tea with me this afternoon? Now that's not very nice, is it?”

# Chapter 123

“Heehhh? Lady Allura, are you thinking about another man when you promised to drink tea with me this afternoon? Now that’s not very nice, is it?”

Allura’s eyes widened in disbelief when she heard a voice, she then turned around and saw a familiar young man standing with a small smile on his face.

“Y-Y-You... why are you here!?” Allura questioned in fright.

“Hmm? Aren’t you the one who invited me in the first place?” Nux questioned with a frown.

He couldn’t understand the current situation.

Why is she acting so surprised?

Wasn’t she the one who invited him?

He was full of questions.

“Y-You! Do you even know where this place is!?” Allura questioned in rage.

“The royal palace?”

“YES! The royal palace! This is THE ROYAL PALACE! And do you know who I am?”

“Ughhh... you really like boasting your identity huh... you are Allura Skyfall, the 7th concubine of the king of the Skyfall Kingdom. Yes, I know that. You told me already...” Nux answered nonchalantly.

“...” Allura panicked even more.

This man doesn't realize it at all!

“Are you stupid!? Think a little.

This is the Royal Palace!

I am the Concubine of the king!

You are an unknown man who entered my room!

Don't you understand what that means!?”

Allura questioned, she had completely lost her calm now.

“Wait...” Nux's eyes widened in realization.

“You are a concubine... I am an unknown man in your room... an unknown man in king's concubine's room... If anyone finds out...”

“Yes! The two of us will be executed!” Allura answered.

“Then doesn't this mean that no one should know about it?” Nux questioned.

“Of course! No one! Not a single soul should know about it!” Allura answered, she couldn't believe how slow this young boy in front of her was.

“Then why are you shouting?” Nux questioned.

“...”

This time, Allura turned silent...

She couldn't believe she was acting so irrationally right now...

“Lady Allura! Is everything fine there?”

As if on cue, Allura heard her protector's voice and she panicked.

“Lady Allura!” The protector who was standing outside panicked when he didn’t hear any answer.

He quickly slammed the door open and entered.

Allura’s eyes widened in horror, “T-This is not what it looks like!” She tried to deny it but wasn’t able to come up with any logical explanation.

“Lady Allura! Are you alright!? Why didn’t you answer when I called you?” The protector questioned.

Allura frowned.

This wasn’t the reaction she was expecting.

She then turned around and noticed that the young man wasn’t there anymore.

‘Where did he go?’ She started looking around and soon, her eyes fell on Nux’s face, which was out while his whole body was hiding under her bed.

Allura felt that he was crazy since he was still smiling in this tense situation. However, she quickly realized that she doesn’t have the time to think about all this.

She quickly stepped in front of Nux’s face, hiding it from the protector as she answered.

“A-Ahh that? I was about t-to answer, however, you entered too quickly so I panicked a little...”

The protector narrowed his eyes.

Lady Allura was acting a little unusual today.

“Lady Allura, who was the man you were talking to before?” He questioned.

“Huh? What man? Do you see anyone?” Allura questioned calmly, however, inwardly, she was panicking.

“Wasn’t there a man who you were talking to? I clearly heard you say, ‘this is the Royal Palace! I am the Concubine of the king! You are an unknown man who entered my room! Don’t you understand what that means!?’ your voice sounded a little fearful as well...” The protector muttered.

“Oh? W-What are you talking about, protector?” Allura acted ignorantly, she tried to hide everything behind a smile.

However, the protector took that smile differently.

He knew her personality, he knew how much she liked entertainment more than anyone else and to what length she could go to entertain herself.

He was the one who was guarding her room, anyone who enters and exits the room is always under his eyes and he didn’t see any man entering the room.

This whole thing must be a farce arranged by Lady Allura in order to entertain herself...

‘It was quite a good plan; if it weren’t for that smile on her face... I would have been fooled by her...

Tsk Tsk, just how far would you go for the sake of a few minutes of entertainment?’ the protector thought inwardly as he glanced at Allura and saw that weird smile on her face.

‘Hmph! Try all you want but you can’t hide that smile from my keen eyes! I won’t be playing this game with you anymore!’ He snorted inwardly as he muttered.

“Ah, Lady Allura, it must be my fault. I think my age is affecting me a little and I am starting to hear things. This has happened to me before as well. I am sorry to disturb your rest, Lady Allura. I will take my leave now.” Saying that, the protector quickly turned around and left.

He didn't want to stay here for a minute longer.

This woman was crazy...

'Huh?' Allura remained silent, dumbfounded by how she got away.

She had no clue that her 'bored' personality saved her.

No one knows what her reaction will be if she found out why she was saved.

After the protector left, Nux came out and stood in front of Allura with a small smile on his face.

"Why are you still smiling? Don't you know how dangerous this is?" Allura questioned, however, this time, her voice was a lot lower than before.

She has learned from her past mistakes.

"I know how dangerous it is. We both will die if anyone finds out about it." Nux answered.

"Then why are you smiling like that!?" Allura questioned with a frown.

"Heh. It is a dangerous situation indeed." Nux admitted.

"However, is it not what makes it exciting?" Nux questioned with a big smile on his face.

# Chapter 124

‘Hmm? She let me go so easily? Ahh, she must have pitied my old bones... She’s not as heartless as I thought...’

Outside Allura’s room, her protector thought inwardly and sighed.

He still couldn’t believe that she would go to such lengths just to entertain herself.

‘The Bored Concubine indeed...’

...

“However, isn’t that what makes it exciting?” Nux questioned with a big smile on his face.

Seeing that crazed smile on his face, Allura’s eyes widened.

‘He’s crazy...’ She thought inwardly.

However, soon, she noticed her beating heart.

Her heart was beating like crazy, it was beating like never before.

This situation was exhilarating, especially when her protector was here in the room.

Although she was scared, once the protector left, a never felt before joy filled her body.

‘T-This... this was funnn...’ She thought inward and a smile similar to Nux’s smile appeared on her face as well.

‘Huh? No no no no.’

However, she soon shook her head repeatedly.

She was not insane like this young man in front of her.

She was not bored enough to risk her life.

“Heh. That’s how I get rid of my boredom, Lady Allura. Life-threatening adventures.

Right now, I am inside a king’s concubine’s room, if a single person learns about it, I am dead.”

“Not you! We! W-”

“Shhh!” Allura retorted out loud, however, since her voice was too loud, Nux’s placed his finger on his mouth and signalled her to be silent.

“If anyone finds out, we both die. I am not crazy like you. Don’t involve me in your games!” Allura retorted, however, this time, her voice was a lot lower than before.

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face.

This was fun~

“Oh c’mon, how come you are called The Bored Concubine, don’t tell me you weren’t excited.

You were, right? How many years has it been since you felt so much excitement?

Can’t you take a small risk like this?

Or would you like to keep living as a bored concubine just because you are a little scared?”

Nux teased.

“...”

Allura stayed silent.

A small risk!

That's fucking death!

How is that a small risk!

Is he out of his mind!?

She really wished she could hit that smiling face right now. However, it will cause a commotion for sure and she didn't want that.

"Alright, now, where's my tea?" Nux questioned.

"...you want to drink tea?" Allura questioned, and a few veins popped on her forehead.

She was really holding back right now.

"Isn't that why you called me here? To have an afternoon tea with you?" Nux questioned back.

Allura took a deep breath, she was losing it right now.

"YO-"

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

However, before she could say anything, she heard a knock, the door opened and a maid walked in.

Allura's body stiffened, her heart started racing wildly, she turned her head mechanically and a sigh escaped her mouth when she saw that the young man wasn't there. She glanced below, where Nux hid previously and shook her head when she saw the excited smile on his face.

To be honest... she was feeling excited as well...

The excitement she has never felt before...

But she wouldn't say that out loud.

"Why are you here?"

"Your afternoon tea, Lady Allura." The maid answered.

A frown appeared on Allura's face when she heard her, she then pointed at her hand and the maid's eyes widened.

"I am sorry about that, Lady Allura. There must have been an error in our calculations today, I deeply apologize for this mistake." The maid bowed.

"Alright, no problem. I actually wanted to drink a little more, so it's all fine. Leave a cup there." Allura pointed at the table and ordered.

"Yes, Lady Allura." The maid then placed a cup on the table, filled it with tea and left.

Nux then came out and looked at the teacup on the table, a small smile appeared on his face.

"Heh. To think you had already ordered a cup for me. Lady Allura, you are really shy. You could have told me that you were looking forward to this afternoon tea, that little gesture could have made my day, you know.

Not that drinking with you hasn't already made my day" Nux muttered as he picked up the cup and started drinking.

"Can't you hear? It was a mistake! I didn't order anything! I was not looking forward to anything!"

Allura retorted.

"Shhh!" Nux gestured to be silent again and Allura lowered her head as she looked around cautiously.

A big smile appeared on Nux's face.

As for the tea, he already knew that she didn't order it because it was him who ordered it.

The 'error' in the calculations was done by Edda, the head maid.

A shameless move indeed.

"Lady Allura, won't you ask me to sit?" Nux questioned as he pointed at the chair.

Allura sighed in defeat.

What a luck this bastard has, however, she didn't reject him.

From the moment he entered her room, she still didn't know how he did it without alerting her two protectors, there has never been a single moment where she wasn't excited.

This was thrilling.

Drinking tea with a man that the king doesn't know about inside the Royal palace, heh, this was fun.

'Ughhh... I am becoming like him...'

Allura groaned.

The two of them then sat down on the chair, and Allura finally regained her calm.

She realized that she was being too passive today, she wouldn't let that happen again. She needed to start the conversation this time, this was the only way for her to take the lead.

"Oh, by the way, why did you leave so quickly yesterday? The way you left, I thought you were scared of me" Allura questioned with a small chuckle.

“Ahh, that, I was a little shocked when I learned your identity, so I needed a little time to prepare for our meeting,” Nux answered.

Actually, he did that so he could see her surprised face today and,

It was totally worth it!

“Oh? What did you prepa-”

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Allura wanted to ask, however, someone knocked on the door again and her face, which had barely regained its original colour paled again.

# Chapter 125

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

A knock was heard and Allura's face, which had barely regained the original colour paled again.

The door opened and a familiar woman walked in.

"E-Edda? Why are you here?" Allura questioned as she stood up in surprise.

She turned around a little, and although she was sure he would hide, she sighed in relief when she didn't see him.

'He's quick.' Allura thought inwardly.

'Is he used to this?'

Allura began thinking.

'How many times has he done this before? Wait... how many women has he been with before?'

"Lady Allura?"

Allura was then brought out of her thoughts by Edda's voice.

She then shook her head to get rid of these thoughts as she toward Edda and questioned.

"Edda, why are you here? Aren't you busy right now?" Allura questioned.

"I am on a break right now, Lady Allura. I am actually here to share something with you..."

“What is it?” Allura questioned.

“It is about my... my boyfriend... I don't have anyone to talk to, so I thought I would talk with you.” Edda muttered.

If this was any other time, Allura's eyes would be shining brightly, but today... today she wanted nothing more but to be left alone.

She was even willing to be bored for the next 3 days.

That was how scared she was.

However, she couldn't deny Edda's request, or else the girl would be suspicious of her.

She then grabbed Edda's hand excitedly but just as she was about to walk towards the chair, Edda 'pulled' her towards the bed, where Nux was.

Allura's face paled, however, everything happened too quickly and she couldn't react.

A Royal Concubine was now sitting in her own room with the head maid of the Palace, while an unknown man was hiding under the bed they were sitting on.

How exciting... right?

“D-Did something happen between you two?” Allura questioned.

“No, nothing happened.”

“Then why are you here?”

“My boyfriend is very handsome...” Edda muttered.

“Oh? You aren't flexing in front of me, are you?”

“Huh? Ah! No! Although my boyfriend is a lot more handsome than the kin- I mean, no! I am not flexing, Lady Allura. What I am saying is that my

boyfriend is too handsome.”

“Isn’t that a good thing? Why do you look so... confused? Shouldn’t you be happy?” Allura questioned.

“Well, I am happy but there are too many women around my boyfriend...” Edda muttered.

“Oh? Does he not treat you well?”

“No... he does. He treats me really well but he treats other women nicely too...”

“Oh? So you are saying that you are jealous? Do you want your boyfriend all to yourself? Why don’t you lock him up inside a room?” Allura suggested; the topic was getting interesting and as someone who craves anything interesting, Allura was getting into the topic.

She was so excited that she even forgot about the man under her bed.

However, would Nux let that happen?

He was here to see her panicked expression, how could he allow her to gain an edge over him?

Heh.

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face.

He then touched Allura’s leg to call her, Allura’s body stiffened, she lowered her gaze and Nux moved his mouth.

‘I need the tea’

Allura’s eyes widened in shock.

‘Are you ma-‘

“Lady Allura, what happened? Where are you looking at?” Edda questioned.

Allura’s body stiffened, she turned around and laughed awkwardly.

“Haha h-haha~ Nothing... I- I thought there was a m-mouse there...” Allura muttered.

“Hmm? A mouse under your bed? That’s unhealthy, Lady Allura, wait, let me see.” Edda stood up.

“NO! no! It isn’t required, i-it will go away.”

“Lady Allura, it won’t go away like this. You don’t have to worry, I’ll deal with it.” Edda persuaded before she fell to her knees and peeked under the bed.

Allura’s eyes widened in horror and her body started trembling.

‘It’s over... we are dead...’ She closed her eyes.

“Lady Allura, there is no mouse here...”

Suddenly, she heard Edda’s voice and her eyes opened, she turned around and saw Nux standing in front of the table, holding the cup of tea in his hand with a small smile on his face.

Nux then walked forward and,

**\*Pah\***

He spanked Edda’s butt and Allura’s heart skipped a beat.

“L-Lady Allura, w-what are you doing?” Edda questioned as she stood up.

“T-There was a b-bug on your butt...” Allura muttered.

She really wanted to kill that vile man now.

Was he asking to die!?

And why is he dragging her with him!?

“Oh...” Edda muttered, however, her eyes narrowed in suspicion.

Allura noticed that suspicion and quickly changed the topic.

“A-Ah, have you considered leaving your boyfriend? He might realize your worth and would stop chasing other women after that.”

“N-No. I can’t leave him...” Edda muttered.

“Hmm? Why?”

“H-He is very good in bed...” Edda answered and Allura’s face turned red.

“W-W-What...?”

Allura stuttered.

“H-He is very good i-”

“I-I heard that! You don’t have to repeat it...” Allura retorted, then she lowered her voice and she questioned.

“H-How good is he...?”

She just couldn’t control herself.

She had to ask it.

This time, Edda’s face turned red.

“H-He pounds very hard... a-and... he makes me moan like crazy... We d-do it for hours and I always lose myself i-in the bed...”

It is very blissful...” Edda whispered with a deep blush.

Allura's face turned red like a tomato and she questioned.

“Y-You go on for hours...?”

Edda nodded.

“H-How perverted...” Allura muttered as her eyes turned misty.

She completely forgot about Nux who was hiding under her bed.

However, Nux wasn't mad about it.

What man would be mad when his woman is boasting about how good is he in the bed?

He would not!

Also, Allura needs to learn how good her future partner is.

Nux nodded to himself and continued listening, however, soon his eyes widened as Allura asked something he never thought she would ask.

“H-H-How big is he?”

# Chapter 126

“L-Lady Allura, I don’t think I was able to talk to you about the correct topic... b-but I did enjoy our conversation... I feel like I got to know you better...” Edda muttered with a slight blush on her face.

“T-This will remain between u-us... I- I can trust you right?” Allura questioned, her face was completely red right now.

She never expected that the talks like that were...

Were so exciting!

However, she knew she couldn’t talk like that with just anybody.

“You can trust me, Lady Allura, not even a soul would know what we talked about here.” Edda nodded.

“G-Good...” Allura nodded as well.

The two of them have indeed gotten a lot closer than before.

“I’ll take my leave now, Lady Allura,” Edda muttered as she stood up.

Allura stood up as well and walked her to the door, something she has never done before.

“Let’s talk again, Lady Allura,” Edda muttered with a small smile.

Allura’s blush deepened and she nodded.

Edda then left the room and Allura sighed in relief. However, as soon as she turned around, her body stiffened.

“I didn’t know Lady Allura had such a side to her. That was so indecent. I believe that rather than calling you The Bored Concubine, they should call

you “The Perverted Concubine” Nux teased.

“Forget what you saw today,” Allura ordered, her face was as red as a tomato however, she still tried to keep a straight, strict face.

“Heeeehh? Why would I? That was such a beautiful sight to beh-”

Before Nux could even finish, a sword appeared in Allura’s hand, she rushed towards him and attacked.

Nux of course defended it very easily.

Allura was at the same level as him, plus, she never trained seriously, she was akin to a child in front of Nux.

She was no threat at all.

“You know that I am stronger than you, right?” Nux questioned playfully.

Allura did not stop her attack and continued swinging her swords, “you might be stronger than me, but are you stronger than my protectors?”

“I am not. However, do you really want your protectors to see me in your room?” Nux questioned and Allura paused her attacks.

How is she going to explain how he got here?

Allura’s sword disappeared, she then glanced at Nux and muttered.

“Forget about what happened...” Her tone was a lot tamer than before.

“Why though...?” Nux questioned.

“I’ll die if you don’t...”

“Heeh? But won’t that only happen if someone else found out about it?” Nux questioned.

A frown appeared on Allura’s face when she heard him, “But didn’t you...”

“I never said I would tell what happened here to others.”

“Y-Yo-”

“However,” Nux then walked closed to Allura, she moved back but Nux followed, this continued until a few seconds later, Allura’s back was against the wall.

Nux then moved his face closer to her and smiled,

“However, I will never forget what I saw today, in fact, I would burn it in my eyes... Your red face is just too cute~”

Allura’s face turned even redder.

“You bast-”

“Ahh, look at the time, it’s been so long~” Before Allura could complete, Nux muttered as he glanced outside of the window.

He then turned towards Allura and muttered, “Lady Allura, it’s late. I should take my leave now.”

“Y-You are leaving?” Allura questioned.

“Well, you only invited me for tea, which I drank while I watched you and the head maid talk about indecent things,” Nux muttered and Allura lowered her gaze in embarrassment.

Nux smiled inwardly, Allura Skyfall was cuter than he imagined.

“Even if I do extend the tea time to an hour, it is already beyond that. So I believe it is time for me to leave.” Nux muttered.

“O-Oh...” Allura nodded.

She looked a little...

Sad?

“Why do you look so sad, Lady Allura?” It’s not like this is our last meeting, we are meeting tomorrow again, right?”

“Haa!?! Why would I be sad!?! I am actually happy that you are leaving! Also, why would we meet again!?”

“Because you are bored?”

“Huh? What does that have to be with meeting you again?”

“Wasn’t meeting me fun? Hasn’t your heart been beating like crazy ever since I entered this room?” Nux questioned.

“...” Allura turned silent.

No matter how scary and risky all of this was, it was...

It was fun...

However, no matter how bored, she didn’t think it was appropriate for her to meet another man like this.

“So? Where are we meeting tomorrow? In your room again?” Nux questioned.

“No! NO! We can’t meet here! We will die! I am not crazy like you! I am not ready to die yet!” Allura shook her head repeatedly, she was panicking.

“Then where should we meet?”

“We can’t meet in public... we just met a day ago...” Allura muttered.

“Then how about this,

You book a room in the Crown Plaza, I will sneak inside just like I sneaked in here and we will have our lunch together. How does that sound? It’s a lot safer than before, isn’t it?” Nux proposed.

“It is safe indeed...” Allura muttered.

“Yes, this is fine. I will book the room tomorrow.” She then nodded in agreement.

Nux’s smile widened, he then walked towards the window and muttered,

“Then don’t forget about it, Lady Allura~” Nux chuckled lightly and then jumped out of the window.

‘Wait... why did I agree?’ After Nux left, Allura questioned herself.

‘How does that sound? It’s a lot safer than before, isn’t it?’

Nux’s words sounded in her head and her eyes widened.

‘I just agreed because it sounded safe! I didn’t think it through! I shouldn’t go!’

Allura was panicking.

“Should I disagree?”

But I don’t know where he lives... I can’t inform him...

Wait...

Should I just... not go?” Allura muttered to herself however, she quickly shook her head.

‘I can’t do that! That idiot might sneak in here again! I can’t take that risk.

Alright, I have decided, I will go and meet him tomorrow, however,

This will be the last time.’

# Chapter 127

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

An awkward silence fell in the room.

“...hope that you were ordered to do it... Else things might not end well for you.” Thyra muttered in a dry voice as she glanced at Alger.

\*Gulp\*

Seeing the half-dead look in her eyes, Alger gulped.

“A-As I said before, I have no interest in calling you again and again... I was ordered...” He muttered.

Thyra clenched her fists.

“So what does he want now?” She questioned.

She was really getting tired of this game.

“...” Alger stayed silent.

He did not want to say what he was about to say at all.

“Hey... I asked something...”

“...” Alger did not reply.

“...” Thyra stayed silent and waited patiently.

“...” Alger still didn't reply.

The poor man was just digging his grave at this point.

“SAY SOMETHING!” Thyra roared in anger.

“H-He asked if you have distributed the weapons to the assassins that are in Hardwick Mansion!” Alger questioned in hurry.

From his expression, he looked like he was ready to die.

“Huh...? Didn’t he ask me this in the morning?” Thyra muttered.

“H-He predicted that you would say something like this, he says that you did not clarify your answer in the morning and were too busy threatening him. Therefore, he is still not clear and wants me to learn about the situation.

That is what he said, I have not made anything up!” Alger was quick to add when he noticed the vein that had popped out on Thyra’s head.

Thyra’s body trembled in anger and frustration, she then glanced at Alger and a cold smile appeared on her face.

Alger’s face turned pale and his heartbeat quickened, it seems that his clarification did not work.

Thyra then walked towards Alger with a smile on her face, the closer she walked, the wider her smile got.

The scene was quite scary, honestly.

Alger closed his eyes.

He had accepted his fate.

...

**\*Bam\***

A few minutes later, Thyra walked out of Alger’s room and closed the door with a loud bam.

She was really annoyed, however, after taking out her anger on Alger, she felt a little better.

She always wanted to do something like this, however, since Alger was a noble and a useful pawn for the kingdom, she couldn't do it.

However, now Alger is as good as useless, therefore, she could also act a little unrestrained now.

If you put it that way, Nux taking over them all was a good thing.

As she thought up to this point, Thyra began shaking her head continuously.

‘What are you thinking, Thyra!? Isn't that bastard Nux the main reason for all your frustrations!? Alger is nothing but an idiot who is forced to follow his orders!’

Thyra stopped inwardly, if Alger, who was lying in his room with a bruised face had heard her thoughts, he wouldn't know if he should cry or be happy.

However, Thyra didn't care about what he does, she continued walking and,

“AAnnhhh~”

Sigh... her luck was bad indeed.

She was correct, she indeed heard the thing she did not want to hear at all. Her little sister started twitching again and she paused.

Her feet then turned towards the source of the voice.

‘This is just for investigation purposes!’ She steeled her heart and walked towards Nux's room.

Yes, she was not lying.

Okay?

...

‘Thyra, come to the garden’

The next day, in the morning, Nux ordered.

Thyra, who was busy talking with other assassins, paused when she heard Nux’s voice.

This was getting really really repetitive.

She took a deep breath, stood up and muttered.

“I need to go.”

“Yes, Miss One.” Twelve and the other assassins nodded.

Thyra then glanced outside of the window and noticed the sun wasn’t up yet.

‘Heh. He needs to ‘work’ this afternoon as well?’

She snorted inwardly as she walked towards the garden.

A few minutes later, she arrived in the garden and saw Nux wearing skin-tight assassin clothes, similar to the ones he wore when he met her the first time.

He was sitting on the grass and once his gaze fell on her, a small smile appeared on her face as he stood up and walked toward her.

“I wanted to talk to y-”

“I know it’s you!” Suddenly, Thyra pointed at Nux and shouted.

“Huh? Of course, it’s me. What the hell are you talking about?” Nux questioned as he furrowed his brows.

“Don’t act innocent. I know it’s you who prearranged this all.

You know that I peek at you guys in the night, don’t you?

No, It's better to say that you manipulate me to peek at you guys, didn't you?" Thyra questioned.

"How did you notice?" Nux questioned with a smile. Although he was surprised by her sudden discovery, he didn't think too much about it and decided to come clean and use it to his advantage.

"Hmph! I am not an Idiot!

Although you act carefree, I know that you are pretty cautious about things.

Someone as cautious as you may overlook things one time.

The second time is acceptable as well, however, if you miss things the third time, something is wrong.

Once I thought of that, everything else was clearer.

You make Alger call me for some random, idiotic reasons, and every time I am about to return to my room, I hear a moan.

I walk towards the door and conveniently enough, you and your partner move closer to the wall that is right beside the door that I am looking from, giving me a perfect look.

How coincidental right?

No it's not!

You planned this all!

I know it!

I am sure of it!

However, I still don't understand one thing..."

Thyra then walked towards Nux and narrowed her eyes,

“Why are you doing all this? What is your motive?

Is this related to another weird magic of yours?

Or do you perhaps have a weird fetish?” Thyra questioned.

Nux’s lips twitched when he heard her last question.

This woman really knows how to get onto his nerves.

However, he knew he shouldn’t lose his calm.

He is a calm, patient and handsome man; he shouldn’t act like a brute.

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face.

“Heh. You are a pervert!”

# Chapter 128

“Heh. You are a pervert!”

“W-What do you mean?”

“Hmm? Why are you acting so innocent? I prearranged everything, yes I did.

However, did I force you to come and watch?

For the first time, I understand that you were curious about where the voice came from and you came to check. I can also understand that you stayed there for a while since it piqued your curiosity.

Let’s stretch the reason and say that on the second day, you wanted to make sure you didn’t hear anything wrong, I can understand that to some extent as well.

But then what about the third day, now you were sure what was happening, then why did you come close to my room?

When you knew what we were doing, then why did you peek at us again?

You told me that I was manipulating you, however, isn’t that the opposite?

Weren’t you the one who got manipulated because you...”

Nux then walked closed to Thyra and muttered with a smile.

“Because you are a pervert?”

Thyra stepped back a little as she created some distance between them. She then glanced at Nux with her eyes boiling in anger and retorted.

“I am not a pervert!”

“Then why were you peeking at me?”

“I- I was just curious!” Thyra answered.

“Oh?” Nux’s smile widened. “Curious about what exactly?” he questioned.

He was enjoying this.

That’s for sure.

“I- I was curious about... about...”

“Curious about sex?” Nux questioned as he started walking towards Thyra slowly.

“...” Thyra did not step back, however, seeing that Nux was walking toward her, she continued stepping back to maintain the distance.

However, she seemed to be out of luck as her back touched the wall, she looked back and just as she turned back to face Nux, he was already in front of her, with his right hand on the wall while his handsome face was extremely closed to hers.

For some reason, Thyra’s heart started beating loudly and before she could understand the situation, Nux questioned again.

“Were you curious about sex?”

This time, since he was so close to him, Thyra couldn’t avoid him anymore and nodded lightly.

Nux found this tamed Thyra very cute, his smile widened even more and he continued asking questions in a gentle tone, however,

“Were you curious how my rod slams my women’s insides?”

“Were you curious why my women moan so loudly?”

“Were you curious how good it feels?”

However, the content of his questions was anything but gentle.

The more questions he asked, the redder Thyra's face got.

Nux then finally removed her mask, revealing her beautiful face as he brought his face closer to hers and whispered,

“Would you like to try and see everything yourself?”

At the same time, his left hand travelled all the way down to Thyra's vagina and just as his fingers touched her little sister, Thyra's body trembled uncontrollably.

Her heartbeat quickened, even more, her judgment clouded and her face turned as red as a tomato.

“I-”

She was completely ensnared by Nux's sudden move and just as she was about to say something,

“W-W-W-What are you two doing?” Three's shocked voice was heard as Nux and Thyra turned around in surprise.

“T-T-Two, T-Three, w-why are you here?” Thyra questioned in shock.

“M-Master Nux summoned us...” Two answered.

Thyra then turned towards Nux and seeing the frustrated look on his face, she frowned.

“I shouldn't have called them...” Nux muttered with a scowl.

Thyra, who heard him lowered her head in embarrassment, she then quickly brought out another mask from her storage ring and covered her face.

“W-Why did you call us...?” Two questioned.

For some reason, he had a feeling that he had interrupted something very important and this will come to bite his ass in the future.

Three, on the other hand, had a blush on her face, although she was an assassin, she wasn't clueless; she knew what they were doing and found it very exciting and thrilling.

“Haahhh...” Nux then took a deep breath, he didn't expect that he would make a move on Thyra today, actually, it was a mistake in his calculations, he didn't think Thyra would address him so soon.

He was prepared to let her peek at him for the next whole week.

He was just worried about what excuses he would use to make Alger summon her but that problem was solved as well.

Good excuses weren't needed, he just needs to call order, the one facing Thyra would be Alger, not him.

Of course, all of that went to dust now since Thyra confronted him way too early.

However, a smile appeared on his face when he thought about the results, he then turned towards Thyra, and seeing her 'expressionless' face under the mask, he smiled.

He was content with whatever happened.

‘Tonight...’

He thought inwardly as his smile widened.

Thyra, who noticed his smile snorted and then she questioned.

“What did you call us here for?”

Nux shook his head when he saw her attitude, he then turned towards Two and Three before turning back to Thyra and then muttered.

“I want you to fight me.”

“Huh?” Thyra, Two and Three had the same reaction.

Nux understood what they were thinking and shook his head.

“Let me correct myself, I want you all to spar with me.”

“M-Master Nux, you want to spar with 3 Grand Master Stage Assassins at the same time?” Two couldn’t help but question.

“Yes, I do.” Nux nodded with a solemn look.

“Hmph! Don’t treat us like that waste Heath. We are different, people like Heath never train, they just cultivate, and they don’t know anything about fighting.

However, we are different, I suggest that you do not take us lightly.” Thyra muttered with a cold look on her face.

“I defeated Three, remember?” Nux smiled as he glanced at Three.

“T-That was because of that weird magic of yours!” Three retorted and as if he remembered something, Nux muttered,

“Ah yes, I won’t use my ‘Weird Magic’ as well, so you don’t have to worry.

Come, Let’s spar.”

# Chapter 129

“I...I don't believe it...”

“What the hell... How is he doing it?”

“Is he really a Master Stage Cultivator?”

“Heh. As expected of my Nux, he is strong indeed.”

Everyone then turned towards Felberta and Edda couldn't help but question.

“Sister Felberta, do you know how he is doing it?”

Felberta then turned towards Edda and shook her head.

“Of course not. How would I know that?”

“T-Then why are you acting like you already expect it?” Edda questioned.

“Because it's Nux?” Felberta replied as she tilted her head.

It was as if she was saying something obvious.

“Ah...” Lane who was standing beside Edda and Felberta nodded.

“It is Nux... That's a good reason...” Skyla nodded as well.

Edda glanced at Felberta, Skyla and Lane in shock.

“What kind of reason is that!? Why aren't you all surprised!? A Master Stage Cultivator is fighting against 3 Grand Master Stage Cultivators! Isn't that weird!?” Edda questioned as she glanced at Nux who was sparring against 3 Grand Master Stage Assassins.

Seeing her shocked look, Felberta sighed...

She remembered how she used to be shocked as well.

‘Heh, this shows the seniority, I know him better than you do!’ A small smile appeared on her face as she thought about it.

“This is not very surprising, Sister Edda” Lane muttered.

“Why!?”

“The Master Stage Cultivator you are talking about was a mortal 2 months ago,” Skyla revealed and Edda, who was hearing this for the first time started questioning her life...

“Wait... wasn’t Sister Felberta a Mortal as well? How are you a Master Stage Cultivator now?” Edda questioned.

“Ahh... she really doesn’t know huh...” Felberta muttered.

She was really enjoying this feeling.

It made her feel superior.

However, she still thought that Edda should act more elegantly. Why is she acting so surprised, she should just accept it as she does.

Don’t let anything disturb you, act and think calmly.

That is how an elegant person should act.

Just accept it, Nux was a monster.

How difficult is that?

‘Inexperienced indeed.’

Felberta nodded to herself as she straightened her back.

“Alright, don’t worry, we will tell you everything about it tonight.” Felberta then nodded.

No matter how good it felt, it was better for everyone if they stay on the same page.

Edda nodded, she wasn't in hurry either, she was more interested in Nux's fight.

The assassins were quick with their attacks and their teamwork was amazing as well. Actually, Nux was facing many difficulties when he was fighting them.

However, since all of them were using wooden weapons, there was no risk of heavy injury.

Thyra rushed towards Nux with a dagger in her hand, Nux jumped back to create some distance, however, as if she already knew he would do that, Three was standing where he was going to land, waiting for him with a big smile on her face.

'They are really good,' Nux thought inwardly and suddenly, something similar to a shield made from something like stone appeared in front of him.

He stepped on the shield and Three, who was waiting for Nux to jump down widened her eyes when she saw a big shield appearing right in front of her.

She activated her [Wind Dash] and moved back.

\*Bam\*

The stone shield then fell to the ground, Nux, who was standing on it smiled at Three before he moved his hand and a wave of fire appeared in front of him.

He waved his hand elegantly and as if controlled by him, the fire wave in front of him organized itself and,

[Fire Slash]

He attacked two, who was rushing towards him.

[Tornado]

Two used his own technique and a small tornado formed in front of him, the fire faded away. Two then activated [Wind Dash] and attacked Nux.

\*Tak\*

“Heehh... you are good.” Nux smiled as he blocked his attack. However, his eyes widened when he noticed Two’s smirk.

He quickly moved his body in a weird manner and saved himself from the [Wind Slash] that was about to attack his arm.

However, due to that, he stood in an awkward position, Two did not waste this chance and attacked his legs.

Nux finally lost his balance and fell to the ground.

“YYaahhhhhh!”

Three then rushed towards Nux and attacked his face.

Nux rolled over and defended but Three continued attacking.

Nux continued rolling and defending however, he soon noticed Thyra and Two were activating their bigger attacks.

This was bad...

Nux then shook his head and then sighed.

“Alright, that’s enough. I give up.”

He admitted defeat.

Three stopped attacking and two and Thyra stopped the skills they were activating as well.

“Hahahaha~ We told you didn’t we, Master Nux? We are not like those useless Grand Master Stage Cultivators who never train. Don’t underestimate us!” Three laughed.

She felt better after ‘defeating’ Nux, even though it was an unfair 1v3 battle.

“Yes, Yes, you guys are strong.” Nux nodded as he stood up and cleaned the dust from his clothes.

Three’s smile widened and although Two tried to hide it, a smile had appeared on his face as well.

However, Thyra didn’t share their happiness, she was looking at Nux with a serious look on her face.

“The Skills you were using, were these the 4 Star Skills you got from Bannermane and Hardwick house?” She couldn’t take it anymore and question.

This question attracted everyone’s attraction, Three’s and Two’s smiles faded and they turned towards Nux for his answer.

“Hahaha~ Thyra, what are you talking about? He only received those skills 3 days ago, how can he learn them so quickly?” Felberta questioned as she chuckled. Skyla, Lane and Edda nodded.

Not only them but even Two and Three were also nodding.

However, Thyra kept her gaze towards Nux, waiting for his answer.

She didn’t sense wrong, although poorly used, the skills Nux was using were 4-star skills and she was sure that he didn’t have any other 4-star skills than the ones he got 5 days ago.

However, this didn’t make any sense.

The number of people who could learn a 4-star skill within 4 days were no more than 5.

This kind of scary talent isn't that common.

Especially when he learned multiple skills at the same time.

Then how is Nux using these techniques?

Is it related to that weird magic of his?

Since she couldn't come up with an answer, she directly questioned the man.

“Indeed. These were the techniques that I got from Bannermane and Hardwick houses. However, as you can see, I am still not proficient in using them” Nux nodded.

However, his ‘humble’ answer shocked everyone as their eyes widened and they questioned.

“”WHAT!?!?””

# Chapter 130

“”WHAT!?!?””

Everyone questioned in surprise.

“No... I do not believe it... that is just not possible... No matter how much of a monster he is... this is just ridiculous!”

Surprisingly, Felberta was the one who was surprised the most.

If anyone had known what she was thinking a few minutes ago, they would question one thing for sure.

What happened to the elegance you were talking about?

Why is your mouth wide open now?

You don't look very elegant to me.

However, since nobody knew her thoughts, nobody said anything.

It could be said that Felberta was lucky, else, her 'superiority' would be gone.

However,

Her surprise wasn't without any reason.

Similar to her, Lane and Skyla, who had known Nux for a longer period of time, were surprised as well.

“B-But... isn't his affinity at Medium level...” Lane muttered to herself.

Thyra, who heard her turned her head in shock and questioned.

“What did you say!?”

“His affinity... it was Medium level with all the elements...”

“Then how...”

Thyra muttered as she glanced at Nux in shock.

Everyone else in the room had similar expressions, and Nux, who was the centre of attention frowned.

He now realized why they were so shocked.

His talent... or his affinity, was medium level.

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Master.]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 31]

[HP: 810/810]

[MP: 580/580]

[STR: 83]

[AGL: 93]

[VIT: 81]

[STM: 120]

[INT: 80]

[DEF: 80]

[Blank Points: 103]

Yes, he rechecked it and his talent was Medium.

He should not be able to learn 4-star skills so easily.

Something was wrong.

“We will check your Affinity again.” Suddenly, Felberta muttered.

Felberta was the one who was surprised more than anyone else.

Affinity, Talent, she always cursed herself for being born with low talent, of course, with Nux’s arrival, her talent did not matter at all, since they can raise their cultivation with snu snu, however, she was still a little sensitive to something related to Affinity.

Nux then turned towards Felberta, placed his hand on her butt and nodded with a small smile.

“As you say, My Dear Fel~”

A small smile appeared on Felberta’s face.

‘Heh. It doesn’t really matter...’

She thought inwardly and closed her eyes.

Thyra who noticed this narrowed her eyes.

For some reason, she did not like what she was seeing at all.

She was... Jealous?

When she realized it, she shook her head repeatedly and walked with the others.

...

A few minutes later, all of them were inside a room, looking at 4 crystal balls that were fixed on the table with solemn looks on their faces.

Nux nodded at Felberta, she nodded back and Nux walked towards the 4 crystals.

‘Let’s try Wind first, this is the most important for running away.’

Nux thought inwardly before he placed his hand on the crystal and injected his mana into it with a determined look on his face.

Nothing happened for the first few seconds.

However, 30 seconds later, the crystal trembled and shined.

‘Low level’ Felberta muttered inwardly.

10 seconds later, the light coming out of the crystal brightened.

‘Medium Level...’

Another 10 seconds later, the crystal shined even more brightly.

‘High level!’

Felberta’s eyes widened in surprise.

His talent increased again!

Just like how it happened before!

However, her surprise wasn’t over yet.

Another 10 seconds later, a blinding light was released from the crystal and everyone present in the room widened their eyes in shock.

“Exceptional!” Three’s exclaimed, her eyes shining with excitement and surprise.

“It’s Exceptional! Exceptional level Affinity!” Skyla jumped in joy as well.

“Wait... isn’t there only one person in the entire Skyfall Kingdom who has Exceptional level affinity?” Edda questioned.

“Yes, Candice Waters. The gem of the Royal Academy. They say she has Exceptional Level Affinity with Water.” Two informed.

“And Master Nux is now second one, Exceptional Level Affinity with Wind element.” Three muttered with a bright smile on her face.

“Don’t conclude too early,” Felberta spoke as she glanced at Nux.

Nux took a deep breath and then placed his hands on another crystal that had a tinge of red mixed within.

‘Fire, a good attack power.’

30 seconds later, the crystal shined and the light it released got brighter and brighter.

“Exceptional again!” Skyla exclaimed in joy.

Nux then placed his hand on another crystal.

‘Earth, good for defence.’

“Exceptional again!”

‘Water, good for... umm... bath.’

“Exceptional... again...”

“...”

“...”

The results were out and everyone in the room, except for Felberta, Skyla and Lane turned silent.

Candice Waters, a prodigy who has Exceptional-level affinity with water is valued deeply by the Royal Academy and the Skyfall Kingdom.

Then what about this man?

A man who has Exceptional Level Affinity with all the elements.

What about this monster?

How will the kingdom, no, the world would react to that?

No one knew.

However, one thing was for sure,

The world is about to change.

Nux Leander was too much of a monster.

Everyone in the room turned towards Nux with shocked looks on their faces.

Of course, no one knew that the man himself was quite confused.

‘My talent is clearly medium level... why is it showing Exceptional here? Is talent not equal to affinity? Did I guess it wrong all along?’

Nux started thinking.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

However, before he could think too much, he heard a knock followed by a voice.

“Umm... Master Nux... the breakfast is ready.”

Nux then glanced out of the window and noticed that the sun was already out.

“Alright, we will be right there,” Nux replied, he then turned to the rest and smiled.

“Alright, let’s stop thinking about all this and eat something~”

Others nodded, Thyra, Two and Three walked away, they never ate food with them and planned to keep it that way.

Nux wanted to invite Thyra, however, since Two and Three were here, he knew she wouldn’t agree so he did not.

Felberta, Skyla, Lane, Edda and Nux then walked towards the dining hall and the breakfast was served.

“Hey Nux, you are going to meet Lady Allura in the afternoon, right? Have you prepared anything?” Suddenly, Edda questioned.

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face as he replied.

“What’s there to prepare?”

I will go with the flow.”

# Chapter 131

“Lady Natalia, welcome.”

A receptionist bowed and welcomed her with a big smile on his face.

The Lady he was talking to smiled a little and expressed.

“I need a room.”

“Yes, Lady Natalia, your usual room is already prepared, here’s the key.”  
The receptionists answered with a smile and gave her the keys.

One of the two servants following ‘Lady Natalia’ took the keys and nodded at the receptionist.

The receptionist nodded back and Lady Natalia, along with her two bodyguards walked away.

A receptionist’s friend watched everything curiously and once Lady Natalia left, he walked toward his friend and questioned.

“Hey, Adam, why are you so respectful to that woman? I have seen you dealing with other people before, other than the basic courtesy, you aren’t really that submissive to anyone else, is she a high-ranking noble?”

Adam, the receptionist shook his head and answered, “I do not know who she is but I have seen the Plaza owner talk to her before and I clearly remembered the expression he had on his face that day.”

“Expression? What expression?”

“A respectful expression... with some fear hidden behind it...”

“Doesn’t the Plaza owner have a backing of a Marquee’s house, why is he...” His friend muttered in confusion, however, soon, he understood

something.

“I don’t know who that lady is, but it’s better not to get on her bad side, I do plan to die so soon. Not after Camila and I are in a relationship.” Adam muttered.

The friend’s face turned sour when he heard what he said.

“Hey, what’s with that face huh? We played it fair okay? She was the one who chose me.”

A sigh escaped out of Adam’s friend’s mouth and he smiled wryly.

“Yeah yeah, I know. I failed... Anyway, I am happy for you...”

‘If only I had gotten the job in the crown plaza... haahhh... money is important indeed...’

Oblivious to his thoughts, Adam smiled and patted his shoulders.

“Thank you~”

...

“Lady Allura, we left the Palace two days ago, I don’t think it’s appropriate for us to leave again.”

“Oh C’mon, protector, how many times will you repeat the same thing? We have already left the Palace. We have even reached our destination. You can stop worrying now. Also, what could possibly go wrong? It’s not like anyone knows who I am.

And even if someone does, aren’t you here to protect me?” Allura muttered as she looked around and observed the room she and her protectors have just entered.

Well, for all the slow folks, ‘Lady Natalia’ who booked the room was Allura all along.

She has left the palace again, which was quite abnormal compared to her usual pattern since she never leaves the palace multiple times in a week.

Of course, nobody doubted her because of something small like that.

She was the Bored Concubine, she does stuff in order to surprise others and entertain others. If it was her, leaving the Palace again wasn't very abnormal.

Of course, it would be a different thing if she was meeting a man.

But that would not happen.

“Lady Allura, we can't protect you from everything. You need to be cautious as well.” Another protector muttered.

“Heehhh? Aren't you the all-strong Grand Master Stage Cultivators? Who are you scared of?” Allura questioned with a smile on her face.

The two protectors, who have been with her for a long time knew that smile very well.

“Ah, Lady Allura, you are right, just let us protect you, don't worry about anything else and enjoy all you want.”

“Yes, we two men will now take our leave. Of course, we will be protecting you from the shadows”

The two protectors laughed awkwardly and left the room in hurry.

A timely retreat.

If this was before, Allura would have snorted and complained that these two old geezers were too boring, however, today was different. Today, she sighed in relief instead.

‘I really left the Palace to meet a man who I don't even know properly and a young man to boot. If someone learns about it, I'll be dead in no time.’

Allura thought inwardly as her heartbeat quickened.

This feeling...

This feeling was scary and thrilling at the same time.

‘If someone else learns about it, they will think that I am cheating on the king...

Wait...

Am I cheating?

Huh? What am I thinking?

Of course, I am not. I am just meeting him, he is not my lover, he is more like a friend.

A friend who can entertain me.’ Allura convinced herself and then, a sad look appeared on her face.

‘Also, it’s not like he will care about it... I am just a trophy after all...’

Allura then shook her head repeatedly to get rid of her thoughts.

She walked towards the bed and pressed a button.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

A few minutes later, a knock was heard.

“Enter”

A servant entered and bowed.

“Bring me a tea.”

“Yes, madam.” The servant bowed and walked out of the room, however, just as he was about to close the door, Allura ordered.

“Keep the door open.”

“Yes madam.”

The servant nodded and walked away with another bow.

A few minutes later, he returned with a table and stood in front of the door.

“Enter.”

He then entered the room, place the cup on the table, filled it with tea and then left.

Allura then grabbed the teacup and started drinking as she looked out of the window.

The sun was out and was shining brightly.

It was already afternoon.

It was time for lunch.

“He’s late,”

“To dare make me wait, I will make sure he pays a price.” She snorted.

“I apologize if I offended you in any way, Lady Allura. However, there are still 15 minutes before lunchtime, so I am not late.

It is you who arrived too early.

Not that I am complaining,

Rather, I am happy to know that you are as excited about our lunch together as I am.”

# Chapter 132

“I apologize if I offended you in any way, Lady Allura. However, there are still 15 minutes before lunchtime, so I am not late.

It is you who arrived too early.

Not that I am complaining,

Rather, I am happy to know that you are as excited about our lunch together as I am.”

“!!!” Allura widened her eyes in surprise as she turned around and saw Nux standing behind her with that signature smile on his face.

“Y-Y-You! Are you a ghost!? How do you appear behind me every time without me realizing it? And why are my protectors unable to stop you?” Allura questioned.

“Yes, that was the reaction I was expecting when I appeared behind you the first time. However, you disappointed me and started asking all those questions.

Well, I can understand that as well, you were missing me very much that day, so it was normal.” Nux muttered with a smile on his face.

“I was not missing you!” Allura retorted, she then realized something and retorted again,

“Also, I am not excited about this lunch at all! I am not early!”

“You are early, Lady Allura”

“I am not! Lunch time is 1 pm in the afternoon!”

“Yes, and it is 12:50 right now, you were 15 minutes early, Lady Allura,” Nux muttered as he pointed at the clock that was hanging in the room.

Allura glanced at the clock and widened her eyes in surprise.

Well, it was not like she didn't know about it.

Actually, Nux wasn't playing any games here, she did arrive a little early since she was a little excited about meeting him.

Of course, she would never admit it out loud.

Who would give a free point like this to others?

“Yes, that is what I am talking about. It is 12:50, lunchtime is 12:45 pm, and you are late. I believe you should apologize.”

In the end, Allura was a noble as well, she can lie right through her teeth without any problems.

As long as you don't admit you are lying, you are saying the truth.

Simple.

Seeing her lie, Nux shook his head and sighed, “Haahhh... you are really trying hard to not admit it, huh, Lady Allura. However, if you were not excited and were in rush to come here, how do you explain the missing eyeliner on your left eye?” Nux questioned with a smile on his face.

“!!!” Allura's eyes widened in surprise.

‘Wait! Did the maids not do my make-up right!? Have I been walking around without an eyeliner all this time!? What!?’

Why didn't anyone tell me?

Were they scared about angering me!?’

Or were they laughing behind my back!?’

Allura's whole world crumbled as she thought of countless possibilities. Suddenly, a mirror appeared in her hand and as she glanced looked at her own face, her movements paused.

Suddenly, she closed her eyes and started breathing heavily, however, she still failed to control her anger and lashed out.

“How da-”

“Shhhh!!”

However, before she could say much, Nux placed a finger on his lips and gestured her to stay silent as he pointed at the door.

“They will hear you” He whispered softly.

“How dare you fool me!?” Allura questioned in anger, of course, her tone was a low softer than before.

“Hahaha~ My bad, My bad, Lady Allura. However, this does prove one thing.”

“What?”

“That you were in such a hurry to see me that you forgot to see your face mirror and rushed to here. I am glad to know it, Lady Allura. You truly have made my day.”

Nux chuckled.

Allura's face turned red in anger and embarrassment.

“You bastard! How dare you tease me!?” She roared, and of course, she did it in a low voice.

“Hahaha~” Nux laughed out loud, teasing her was funnnn.

Very very funnnn~

“You dare laugh at m- Wait...”

Soon, Allura realized something.

She then turned towards Nux and narrowed her eyes.

“You changed the topic again.” She complained.

“Hmm? What do you mean?”

“Don’t try to act innocent. I won’t fall for it twice. I asked you, however, you tried to change the topic.

I do not like it.

It is disrespectful if you aren’t going to answer my questions; there is no point in having lunch together this way.” Allura replied in a serious tone.

Nux smiled wryly when he saw her expression.

‘As expected... it isn’t easy to fool her huh...’ he thought inwardly and shook his head. He had noticed that his plans aren’t working that well these days.

First the case with Thyra and now this.

Haahhh...

Well, whatever, he just needs to face it directly, plus, where’s the fun in doing everything according to the script?

“Alright, ask what you want.”

Nux decided to take a chance and be honest.

Of course, how much information he reveals depends on him. He wasn’t going to tell everything to a woman he met a few days ago.

“How did you appear behind me without alerting my protectors?” Allura questioned for the third time.

“It’s beca-”

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Nux wanted to answer, but before he could, he heard a knock.

“What is it?” Allura questioned, she wasn’t very panicked like before, she has seen how scarily quick this young man’s reflexes are, he always hides in time if something goes wrong.

“Lunch” The servant standing on the other side of the door muttered.

“Oh? To think Lady Allura have already ordered Lunch. Considerate indeed.” Nux commented.

Allure decided to ignore his comments.

It wasn’t her who ordered the food, it was her protectors.

Of course, they did that because she told them to.

But, as you know, nobody needs to know that.

“Go hide, I am calling him”

“Just call him, I’ll show you how I appeared behind you so easily. It will be a lot better than to directly explain it to you.” Nux muttered with a smile.

Allura glanced at him with an unsure look.

Nux then nodded.

“Trust me.”

# Chapter 133

“Trust me.”

Nux muttered and for some reason, Allura thought she could trust him a little.

“Enter.” She ordered.

She then heard the voice of the door opening, time around her slowed down and she observed the door opening in slow motion. Each passing mini second, Allura’s heartbeat quickened and she started panicking a little.

What if Nux’s trick didn’t work?

What if the servant saw another unknown man beside her?

Actually, the servant seeing them together was fine since he didn’t know who she was, however, what if the protectors saw Nux?

What would they think?

Would they try to side with her and shut their mouth?

Or would they tell everything to the king?

What if the king learns about it?

Will he kill her?

Of course he will!

He will execute her publically!

He wouldn’t even think twice about that!

As countless thoughts appeared in her mind, Allura panicked even more.

Suddenly, she started regretting her decision.

However, it was already too late, the door opened and the servant entered the room.

Allura's heart skipped a beat, she quickly turned her head and her eyes widened in horror when she noticed that Nux was sitting right beside her with a small smile on his face.

'Did his technique fail!?' She thought inwardly and panicked even more.

If Allura was a heart patient, then today, she would have died for sure.

"Don't worry, he can't see me."

Allura was then brought out of her reverie when she heard Nux's voice.

She then turned around as she glanced at the servant and was quick to notice that what Nux said was true, the servant indeed didn't notice him.

A sigh of relief escaped her mouth.

However, Nux had other plans in his mind.

His smile widened as he stood up and walked toward the servant.

Allura's heart which had barely calmed down started beating faster again.

'Why is he moving in front of him!?' She questioned inwardly however, her eyes widened in horror when she saw Nux picking up a meatball from the table and eating it in front of the servant.

"Y-Y-You... do you not see him?" Allura couldn't help but question.

"See what? Lady Natalia?" The servant questioned in a humble tone.

He has heard about this guest and was told that he should act very very respectfully; else this will be his last day at work and probably his life.

Allura's eyes widened in surprise.

'He is standing right in front of you! How can you not see him!?' She wanted to scream out loud however, she didn't do it.

She was sane enough to hold back.

However, she wasn't able to hide her surprised expression which the servant found weird.

"Lady Natalia? Is there something wrong? I apologize for my incompetence, please tell me what I am unable to see, I assure you that I will improve myself and deal with whatever problem you are facing"

The servant practically begged.

He felt that he had somehow missed an important detail that had offended this woman in front of him.

He still had his family, that relies on him, he can't die here!

Allura was taken aback by his question, she then pointed at the window and said a random excuse that came to her mind.

"A crow. There was a crow there. It must have flown away now."

"Lady Natalia, is that crow annoying you? Do you want me to do something about that crow? Should I send someone to catch it?" The servant questioned.

"No need.

Also, I don't really think you can catch him"

She muttered the last line in a very soft voice.

"What?" The servant, who couldn't hear her, questioned.

“Nothing, I said you do not need to do anything, just serve the food. Oh yes, keep an extra pair of cutlery here.” Allura ordered.

“As you say, Lady Natalia” The servant did everything quickly and sighed in relief.

He lived to see another day.

Just 12 more days, then he will get his salary; he was planning to buy a new dress for his daughter.

“I will take my leave now, Lady Natalia. I hope you have a good day ahead and enjoy your stay here” He then bowed and left the room.

When the servant left, Nux smiled at Allura and sat on the chair. However, Allura wasn't as comfortable as him.

“A-Are you a ghost...? A-Are you here to get your revenge? If yes, then I promise I wasn't behind your death, I am innocent. I haven't even killed an animal before. I only eat the meat others hunt. I am innocent.”

She muttered with moist eyes, Nux was sure that if he didn't say anything, she would start crying right here.

“A-Are you not here to kill me? Is it something like only I can see you? Do you want my help to get your revenge? If that is the case, then I can help you. However, I will need to hear your whole story, I won't kill someone innocent for your revenge no matter how much you scare me.”

Since Nux was silent, Allura thought about other possibilities and offered.

“You should stop reading too many fantasy books, Lady Allura.” Nux couldn't help but shake his head.

“I am not a ghost.” He muttered.

“Then how is it that only I can see you?” Allura questioned.

“Didn't your protectors see me the first time we met?”

Allura's eyes widened in surprise as she realized this was true.

"T-Then how..."

"This is my ability, once I activate it, no one can see me unless I don't want him/her to." Nux then brought his face close to hers and muttered.

"This is how I managed to sneak into your room without anyone noticing.

Cool right?"

"D-Doesn't this make you a perfect assassin?" Allura questioned.

"Of course, I don't look like it, but I am strong, you know?"

"How strong?" Allura questioned curiously, for some reason, she felt that Nux wouldn't harm her.

Nux's smile widened when he heard her question and he answered.

"Stronger than the King."

# Chapter 134

“Stronger than the King,” Nux answered with a smile and Allura’s eyes widened in surprise.

“S-Stronger than the king? But you are at Master Stage! You can’t even defeat a Grand Master Stage Expert let alone a king.” Allura retorted.

“Do you really think so? Then tell me, how old is the King?” Nux questioned.

“200 years or something,” Allura answered with a shrug, it looked like she wasn’t very bothered about it.

Nux frowned at that, however, he shook his head inwardly and continued.

“And I am just 18 years old.

I only need a few more years before I catch up to the King and then surpass him. Heh, then I can even become the new king.”

Allura raised her eyebrows at that statement.

“You do know what you just said is enough to get you executed, right?” She questioned.

Nux’s smile widened as he answered.

“Yes, I do.”

Allura narrowed her eyes as she questioned.

“What if I tell what you said to the king? Are you not afraid?”

“Heeeeh?” Nux smiled as he moved his face close to Allura and muttered.

“I know you won’t. I trust you.”

Allura’s heart started beating quickly, however, she quickly shook her head and cried inwardly.

‘He is just an 18-year-old boy! What the hell are you beating so quickly for!?’

However, when she saw Nux’s handsome face close to hers, she couldn’t take it anymore and pushed him away.

“Y-You are too close.” She muttered.

“O-Oh. My bad. I didn’t know a mature woman like you would blush so easily. Though it makes me glad for some reason.”

Nux smiled playfully.

“You!”

Allura wanted to retort, however, she noticed her red face on the window’s glass’s reflection and wasn’t able to say anything.

Nux smiled even more and walked towards the table.

“Alright, let’s eat now.”

Saying that, he started placing the food on the plates and signalled Allura to join.

Allura didn’t like that he was the only one doing this and she started placing the food on the table as well.

Nux paused as he noticed what she was doing, a small smile appeared on his face and he continued.

“So Lady Allura, what are your hobbies?” Nux questioned.

“Reading books...” Allura answered.

“Hmm? What type of books do you read?” Nux questioned.

“Fantasy.”

“Ohh, that’s good, I have an amazing story in my mind that matches the genre you read, would you like to hear it?” Nux questioned with a small smile.

Allura’s glanced at Nux with eyes full of interest as she nodded.

She was out of good books lately, so any good story was warmly welcomed.

“So this is a story about a man, who lives in a world that is a lot different than ours.”

“What kind of world?” Allura questioned.

“A world where the concept of cultivation doesn’t exist. The humans there aren’t able to cultivate and live longer. Everyone there is a normal man who is barely able to live for 100 years.

However, although there was no cultivation in that world, there was something called ‘technology’.

With that, the humans there were able to progress so much that they could even leave their own planet and explore other planets outside.”

“Oh?” Allura’s eyes brightened, though she wasn’t able to imagine a world without cultivation, this technology thingy sure did attract her interest.

“Alright Alright, Lady Allura, we are going to stay here for quite a while, don’t just listen to my story, eat lunch as well.”

“Yes.” Allura nodded.

Nux smiled as he continued his ‘story’.

What story was it?

Heh? Nux wasn't really an author was he?

He just spat out random bullshit and since the whole 'science' and 'technology' was new to Allura, she enjoyed whatever he said.

He wasn't dumb enough to tell her stories like Cinderella and all that, because the way people in this world think was different.

Therefore, for them to like the stories the people on Earth liked...

It was highly unlikely.

Well, whatever, the main goal was to talk.

Which he had achieved.

While he was at it, he also probed and learned about Allura's other interests as well.

The two of them continued, well, Nux was the one who spoke the most, but the way Allura's eyes were gleaming with interest, Nux knew that he had succeeded in the first step.

Gain her interest.

An hour passed by, and Nux had long stopped the story on something debatable, the two of them started talking if what the main character did was right or not, and this way, Nux started chatting about another topic.

He didn't realize it, however, he was becoming a master at changing the course of conversation. Unlike him in the past (on earth), now, he was the one who set up the pace of the conversation while the others followed.

How did this happen?

Who knows?

"Hooh, look at the time, Lady Allura, it's already 2 pm."

Allura's eyes glanced at the clock in shock.

She couldn't believe so much time had passed.

"So Lady Allura, when are we meeting the next time?" Nux questioned and before she could think too much, Nux continued.

"The next time we meet, I will make sure to bring a storybook that was popular in my town. It is also about Earth, the world without magic. However, it is a lot better than the one I shared with you before"

Allura's eyes brightened in joy.

"Really?"

"Why would I lie to you, Lady Allura?" Nux questioned with a smile.

Allura was taken aback by the smile and she muttered, "O-Okay, then we will meet 1 week later. I have left the Palace 2 times already, someone will be suspicious of me if I leave again this week."

"Ahh, I can understand that, alright, next week it is then." Nux smiled, he then stood up, and walked towards the window.

"See you soon, Lady Allura."

"Wait!" However, just as he was about to jump out of the window, Allura called.

"I still do not know your name," Allura questioned.

A smile appeared on Nux's face as he replied.

"Nux Leander."

# Chapter 135

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“Who is it?” After Nux left, Allura heard a knock and questioned.

“It is me, Lady Allura”

“Enter”

Then Allura’s protector entered the room and she questioned.

“What is it?”

“I wanted to ask what plans you have for today, Lady Allura.” The protector questioned.

However, before she could answer, the protector furrowed his brows,

“Lady Allura, why are there two sets of plates on your table?”

Allura was shocked when she noticed the plates, however, she didn’t show any change in her expression.

Meeting Nux was her little secret.

She couldn’t tell anyone else about it because she was sure they would misunderstand.

“Nothing, I just wanted to check if the food tasted different if we keep it on two different plates,” Allura answered whatever came into her mind.

“...” Her protector looked at her weirdly, however, he didn’t say anything.

‘Just how bored one has to be to try something like this...’

However, no one was stopping the protector from thinking and judging inwardly.

The protector then shook his head to get rid of these thoughts and then questioned.

“So back to the topic, what are your plans for today, Lady Allura?”

He completely ignored the plate incident.

He felt like it was better to do so.

Allura sighed in relief when her protector didn't question much. Of course, nobody knew what face she would make if she knew his inner thoughts.

“Let's return to the palace.”

She muttered.

“W-What?”

“Is there a problem?” Allura frowned.

“Ah, no! Lady Allura, there are no problems at all, I shall prepare everything.” The protector bowed and left the room in surprise.

“What's with that look on your face, Bruce?” The other protector questioned when he noticed the surprised look on Bruce, the protector's face.

“Lady Allura wants to return...” Bruce answered.

“What? Why?”

“I do not know... I am surprised myself.”

“This has never happened before... she just came here, stayed in a room and now she wants to return? She didn't tease anyone, she didn't observe

anyone, she didn't buy out a stall just to see the owner's reaction, why the hell is she returning so quickly?"

"Who knows?"

"Is she sick?"

"Why would she leave the Palace if she was sick?"

"You have a point."

The two protectors started thinking.

Although Allura was pretty unpredictable and does things randomly to entertain herself, she wasn't completely unpredictable either.

Therefore, her protectors, who have been protecting her for years now know a lot about her habits.

They were sure that Lady Allura was acting weird.

"Well whatever, isn't it better for us anyway?" Bruce muttered.

"That's true, maybe Lady Allura is maturing..."

"She's not a child, you know?"

"Ugh, whatever, just go and prepare the carriage, I will stay here."

"Alright."

...

Night, inside Alger's room, a similar, no, a very scene was repeating itself.

"..."

"..."

Thyra and Alger started at each other.

“I am ready, I am ready, you can go ahead and beat me.”

However, Alger was too familiar with where this will go, therefore, he prepared himself for what was about to come and raised his hand in surrender.

No use going through the same script again and again and again.

You might go ahead and hit him.

At least he is mentally prepared for it right now.

“Did Nux order you to call me here?” Thyra questioned.

However, Alger didn't fail to notice that her tone was a lot calmer than yesterday, not only that, rather than calling Master Nux ‘that bastard’ she called him by his name.

A small smile appeared on Alger's face.

Of course, he was not thinking anything weird.

The poor man just wanted to survive without being beaten.

And he saw an opportunity to do that.

“Y-Yes, Of course, it was Master Nux who told me to call you.” Alger nodded with the friendliest smile possible.

Actually, Thyra wanted to hit him just because of that weird smile of his, however, she controlled herself.

She was not a brute delinquent.

“So? What does he want today?” She questioned and as soon as she did, the smile on Alger's face disappeared.

He had forgotten, there was no way he could save himself from the beating today.

Master Nux didn't leave him any chance to.

Alger gulped as he remembered that question, he did not want to ask that question at all, however, he was helpless. He couldn't do anything about it at all.

Alger closed his eyes, his face paled and he questioned.

“H-Have you learned anything from your spar with Master Nux today? Have you profited in any way?”

“ ... ”

Thyra stayed silent.

Since she didn't say anything, Alger knew she was pissed and opened his left eye to check her reaction.

His body trembled when he noticed that she was just standing there with her head down and her hair were covering her eyes.

“Pfft”

Suddenly, a laugh escaped out of Thyra's mouth.

‘Huh?’ Alger opened his eyes as he glanced at Thyra in confusion.

“Hahahaha~” Thyra then started laughing out loud.

“He really couldn't find a better topic, could he? Hahaha~” Alger's room was filled with Thyra's surprisingly sweet laughter.

‘Has she gone crazy? Am I about to die?’ Alger thought inwardly.

“Don't worry, I know it's not your fault, you are just following orders. Alright, I will take my leave now.” Although she had covered her face with

a mask, Alger was sure that she was smiling right now.

Thyra then left the room and smiled.

‘Hmph! What an exhibitionist!’ Thyra snorted.

‘But this time, I will pass through that room without peeking! I will not peek at all!’ Thyra nodded to herself with her eyes filled with determination.

She then started walking, the closer she walked to Nux’s room, the faster her heart started beating.

‘I do not hear anything! I do not hear anything!’

She continued to convince herself as she walked, however, soon, she noticed something.

‘I do not hear anything...’

She frowned.

Was her convincing power too good?

She walked closer to Nux’s room and,

“...”

Still no sound, no moaning.

‘What happened?’

Thyra thought curiously.

In the end, Thyra couldn’t control herself anymore and walked toward Nux’s room.

She arrived at the door, crouched and then slightly opened the door like she always does.

However, She was surprised to see that the room was empty.

‘Hmm?’

She frowned but before she could think too much,

A hand covered mouth as someone grabbed her from behind and carried her into the room.

# Chapter 136

A/N: Proceed with caution. \*Skeleton Face\*

Hehehehehe!

...

Thyra panicked when someone grabbed her from behind, she didn't sense this person at all!

Who was he!?

What was he doing here!?

Thyra moved her body, trying to get out of the man's grip, however,

“Phwooo~”

Suddenly, the man who was grabbing her from behind blew a mouthful of hot air into her right ear and a jolt of electricity streamed into Thyra's body, weakening her resistance.

Thyra frowned.

What sort of person does that to weaken their targets?

Soon, an annoying but handsome face appeared in her mind.

She turned around as much as she could and was now sure who this person was.

She sighed in relief and stopped resisting.

“Heeehh? You gave up pretty quickly, Thyra.” Nux smiled as he released her.

Then, he walked toward the door and closed them.

“Why did you do this to me?” Thyra questioned.

“Do what?”

“Are you really trying to act innocent?”

“Hmm? But I am innocent, am I not?” Nux questioned as he tilted his head in confusion.

“Innocent my head! You grabbed me from behind and forced me into your room!” Thyra retorted.

She doesn't know why, but she always loses her calm in front of this man.

She really hated that!

She was a calm woman, she was not someone who keeps shouting for no reason!

“Heeh? How am I the bad person here? I was only catching the woman who was sneakily peeking into my room, was I not?”

“I-I was not peeking!” Thyra's face turned a little red and she retorted.

“Oh c'mon, how dare you lie so blatantly? I was there when you were crouching in front of my room, then you opened the door a little and you moved your head closer to the gap to look inside. Is that not called peeking?” Nux questioned.

Thyra's face then turned redder as she replied, “I-I was not peeking, I was just curious!”

“Huh? What's the difference? You were attacking my privacy in either case, were you not?”

“Privacy my head! You are an exhibitionist who likes it when other people see you having sex! How can a person like you have privacy?”

Nux's face twitched as he questioned.

“Huh? Where did you get that idea from?”

“Isn't that why you manipulated me into watching you?” Thyra questioned.

“Haaah? Didn't we get over that in the morning? You wouldn't have been manipulated if you were not a pervert! Don't blame me!”

“I am not a pervert!” Thyra shouted.

“Then why were you peeking at me!?” Nux shouted as well.

“Did I tell you just now!? I was just curious as to why there was no voice coming out of your room!” Thyra questioned even more loudly.

“Huh? What kind of sound are you talking about?” Suddenly, a small smile appeared on Nux's face as he questioned.

“Moa- huh?” Thyra stopped midway as she glanced towards Nux and then quickly covered her mouth. However, it was already over. Nux had heard her.

“Oh... so you were curious about why you didn't hear any moans today as you do normally?” He questioned.

Cornered, Thyra couldn't do anything but nod.

Nux's smile widened, he then walked towards Thyra and Thyra stepped back.

“Ah, that is a good question indeed, why didn't you hear any moans today...” Nux muttered as he continued walking towards Thyra.

“There is always a woman who moans when you pass in front of my room, then why wasn't there any moan today? You were curious about this, right?”

Thyra nodded, however, she didn't make eye contact with Nux and continued stepping back.

“Why isn't there any woman inside his room today? Were you wondering that?” Nux questioned.

“Yes... I was curious...” Thyra nodded.

Nux's smile widened even more as he walked towards Thyra, the girl wanted to step back, however, her back was already touching the wall.

Nux then closed the distance between them as he raised her chin and answered.

“That's because the woman inside my room is...

You.”

Thyra's eyes widened in shock and her heart started beating loudly.

“We were interrupted in the morning, were we not? Don't you think we should continue it?” Nux questioned.

“I-I do not think we should continue it...” Thyra muttered weakly, however, she didn't do anything to push him away.

“Oh? Are you sure?” Nux questioned.

“I-I am...”

“Are you not curious about how my rod slams into a woman's body? Are you not curious why my women moan so loudly? Are you not...

Curious about how good it feels?” Nux questioned and Thyra's face turned red.

“You are curious to know everything, right?”

Thyra nodded weakly.

“Then shall we continue what we were about to do in the morning?” Nux questioned again.

This time, Thyra didn't say anything and lowered her head.

Or she tried to.

Nux lifted her chin as he glanced at her crystal blue eyes.

He then removed the annoying mask that covers her incredibly beautiful face and revealed her luscious red lips.

Nux glanced at Thyra with his golden eyes filled with immense desire.

Desire so strong that even Thyra could feel it and due to that, her heart started beating quickly, so quickly that she felt that it would burst apart.

She then saw Nux had closed his eyes, she didn't know why, however, he felt that she should do the same and she closed her eyes as well.

As soon as her eyes were closed, her other senses heightened up, she could feel that Nux's was coming closer to hers.

She wasn't born yesterday, she knew what was about to happen.

Does she want it to happen?

She doesn't know.

However, does she want Nux to stop?

Not at all.

Her lips trembled a little before they moved a little forward and formed a pout.

Soon, an incredibly soft pair of lips touched hers and as soon as the contact was made.

Her body trembled and her heart started beating so fast that she doubted if it was humanly possible.

Nux moved his lips and since Thyra didn't know anything, she just followed his rhythm and continued to enjoy this foreign feeling inside her heart.

Yes, Thyra Cruse was enjoying this first kiss of hers.

# Chapter 137

A/N: Proceed with caution.

\*Skeleton Face\*

...

Nux moved his lips, he first sucked Thyra's lower lip then he started sucking her upper lip, repeated that a few times and soon, Thyra, who was trying to note his pattern copied his actions as well.

However, Thyra couldn't keep up for long as something wet entered her mouth.

It was Nux's tongue.

Thyra's eyes widened in surprise, however, she didn't resist.

She couldn't resist.

She just let Nux do whatever he wanted and with his every action, her heartbeat rose.

It was a new and a weird experience for her.

Nux's tongue then found hers and the two of them started mingling with each other. Their salivas exchanged as Nux's hand moved towards Thyra's back as he pulled her close to him.

Thyra's hands copied Nux's movements as well and they moved towards Nux's back.

Yes, Thyra was hugging Nux as well.

Even Nux was surprised by that action.

Nux's heartbeat quickened as he tightened his hug around Thyra and the two of them shared a long passionate kiss.

“!!!”

Suddenly, Thyra's body arched up in surprise when she felt Nux's hand moving down from her waist to her butt and then to her vagina which has been very sensitive for the last few days.

“Anh~”

Thyra then moved her mouth as she broke the kiss and moaned.

“Heh~ So sensitive~” Nux smiled as his fingers gently kneaded her opening.

“Annh~”

Thyra moaned again.

Nux noticed that her voice was incredibly sweet, he then glanced at her face and saw that she was looking at him as her crystal blue eyes shined with innocence, curiosity and... desire.

Seeing that look on her beautiful face, Nux couldn't control himself anymore and picked her up.

“Ahh!”

Thyra's body jerked in horror.

Nux then gently placed her on the bed as he crawled towards her and whispered,

“You don't need to panic, Thyra~ Just leave everything to me.”

Saying that, he gave her a little peck on her lips and questioned.

“Okay?”

His voice was so gentle that Thyra couldn't help but nod.

Nux then smiled at her, then with another peck on her forehead and then on the lips, he moved down towards her cave and started removing her pants.

As an Assassin, Thyra wore skin-tight clothes, therefore removing her pants turned out to be harder than Nux expected.

However, he enjoyed every second of it.

Heh, her face that turned redder and redder was very satisfying to watch.

After a minute of struggle, he finally removed her pants, revealing her long legs with the most perfect pair of thighs Nux had ever seen.

\*Gulp\*

Nux gulped.

He doesn't know why, but he felt that he would develop a new fetish.

However, Nux quickly shook his head.

This was not about him right now, it was about Thyra.

He then turned his gaze towards the white panty Thyra was wearing and with a smooth movement, he removed that panty out of his way, revealing her beautiful, pink entrance.

Thyra tried to close her legs as soon as Nux removed her panty, however, Nux held her leg and didn't let her move.

"Leave everything to me, Thyra." He repeated in a very gentle voice.

Thyra nodded, her heart was about to explode now. She felt Nux's gaze on her private part, this filled her heart with unexplainable feeling.

She didn't know what this feeling was, however, she knew that she didn't hate it.

Nux then observed her entrance for a little while and soon, he moved his finger and started circling it around her entrance.

Thyra's body trembled again and soon, her liquid started leaking out.

Nux smiled mischievously as he flicked her erect clit.

“Aanhhh~”

Thyra moaned out loud.

“AAnnhhh~”

However, Nux didn't give her any chance to react as his finger entered her pussy.

When Nux noticed that she was comfortable with one finger, his other finger entered as well.

His two fingers then started creating havoc inside Thyra's pussy.

Every time Thyra's body jerked a little, Nux noted that place in his mind and continued teasing other parts of her insides.

Like an expert, Nux found out many of her weak points in just 5 minutes.

“AAnnhhhhh~”

However, these 5 minutes were anything but 'just 5 minutes' for Thyra who was breathing heavily right now with her eyes closed.

She used to masturbate as well, however, she never felt this good before.

Never.

This was simply unreal.

Waves and waves of pleasure assaulted Thyra's body as Nux's fingers continued exploring her cave. Every single touch sent another wave of jolt

that coursed throughout her body.

She was on cloud nine.

‘I-Is this how g-good sex feels?’

She wondered inwardly.

However, as if Nux had heard her thoughts and had wanted to deny her conclusion,

His third finger entered her cave as well.

Then, these three fingers simultaneously teased all the weak points Nux has found and Thyra’s eyes widened in shock!

“AAANhhhh~”

Another, incomparably huge wave of pleasure coursed into her body and her back arched up. She couldn’t control herself at all and moaned loudly.

Her mind turned a little hazy as her walls tightened, her juice built up and,

\*Squirt\*

She came.

She came and she continued coming for the next 30 seconds.

This was the best orgasm she had ever had in her life.

And this will be the best orgasm she will ever have in her life.

Or at least that was what she thought,

However, Nux didn’t seem to agree with her last thought as the smile that had appeared on his face said something else.

He continued watching closely as Thyra's lower lips opened and closed uncontrollably as her juice gushed out of them.

Once he was sure that Thyra was done with her orgasm, he moved up and brought his head close to hers.

Thyra sensed his movement and opened her eyes, she then saw the smirk on his face, however, before she could say anything, Nux questioned.

“Should we start the main thing?”

Thyra's eyes widened in horror as she questioned back,

“T-This is not the Main Thing!?”

# Chapter 138

“T-This is not the Main Thing!?”

Thyra questioned in surprise and a smile appeared on Nux’s face.

“Oh, C’mon, Thyra, don’t act like you haven’t seen the main thing, you peeked on us for 3 days straight remember? I am sure you know that” Nux then brought his face dangerously close to hers and whispered.

“We have not even started yet~”

The scenes of Nux ramming his cock inside Edda’s ass appeared inside Thyra’s mind and she blushed deeply.

‘We have not even started yet... yet it feels so good... how good will it feel when we do the real thing...?’ Thyra thought inwardly as her body trembled in anticipation.

And as if hearing her inner thoughts, Nux quickly removed his pants and freed his little brother that was roaring to explore another, unexplored cave.

“B-Big...” Thyra muttered when Nux placed his rod on top of her little sister.

Nux then moved and placed his rod in front of her entrance, since she was already wet, Nux didn’t have to wait for long once he was done lubricating his rod with her juices, he put the head in.

He then bent down and moved his face close to Thyra.

“It will hurt a little, okay?” He warned.

“mm,” Thyra nodded.

Actually, she wasn’t really scared of it.

She knows that the first time hurts, however, she never thought too much about it, the pain she has been through is much worse than any normal girl can bear.

A little pain was nothing for her.

Another reason why she wasn't very afraid was that every time she peeks at Nux and his women, she had never seen a painful expression on any of their faces. There was just pure bliss.

Therefore, Thyra was sure that the pain was nothing.

Suddenly, Nux hugged her body, Thyra frowned, however, just as she was about to ask, she felt his little brother had moved and had entered her cave.

However, she did not feel any pain at all.

“Are you okay?” Nux questioned in worry.

“Yes, I am fine” Thyra nodded.

She didn't feel any pain at all.

She just felt a little weird when something entered her insides.

“Alright, I will move a little now, okay? Tell me when it hurts.” Nux muttered in a gentle tone.

A small smile appeared on Thyra's face as she nodded.

“Okay.”

Nux then moved and slowly but steadily, he continued entering deeper and deeper.

“Ugghhhh!!” He groaned in pleasure.

Thyra's insides were unusually tight, too tight.

The way they surrounded his dick, he felt like they were sucking all of his energy, rendering him unable to move.

Nux was barely holding back right now, he had to use all his will to not cum right away.

“Ugghhhhhh!!”

Finally, a minute later, Nux entered Thyra’s inside completely.

“Ugghhhh!!”

However, the tightness had increased.

Thyra’s pussy was too greedy.

The way it sucked on Nux’s dick was too violent.

But, how could Nux lose so easily?

He gathered all his willpower and moved back.

And as he moved back, he frowned.

There was no blood...

‘Was she not a virgin?’

Nux questioned inwardly, however, when he remembered her face, he shook his head.

He was sure that Thyra was a virgin.

‘Ahh,’ Soon, Nux realized.

Thyra was an Assassin, she trained hard since she was young.

He had heard some cases where the hymen breaks due to excessive training.

This was normal.

Nux's eyes then fell on Thyra's red face and he quickly got rid of these useless thoughts.

"I'll move now, okay?" Nux whispered gently.

Thyra nodded and with one thrust, Nux entered deep inside her pussy again.

"Ugghhhh!!"

"AAnnhhh~~"

This time, Nux wasn't the only one who moaned in pleasure.

Thyra was already sensitive since she came earlier, therefore, although she knew Nux would enter again, she still wasn't able to control herself and moaned out loud.

Nux's felt his body weakening due to the pleasure, he then moved his rod back and rammed it into Thyra's insides again.

"Ugghhhh!!"

"AAnnhhh~~"

The two of them moaned again.

Nux then raised his head before he sealed Thyra's lips with his own and started another round of tongue fight.

His hand did not stay idle as well and they entered inside Thyra's top and then played with Thyra's breasts.

He had to force Thyra to cum, he had to force her to cum earlier than him.

"Mmhhffmm~~"

Since Thyra's mouth was sealed, only a muffled moan escaped as Nux played with her beautiful breasts.

They may not be large, however, they were incredibly soft. Nux played with them gently while his waist continued to move as he rammed his cock inside Thyra's body.

“MMhhhhmmfff~~”

Thyra moaned again.

Nux then removed her top as well, and then he unhooked her bra, revealing her bare breast. With more space to move, Nux played with those beautiful breasts differently while he continued ramming his cock into Thyra's body.

Nux then broke the kiss as he raised his head and started increasing his speed.

“Annhh! Annhhh! Anfhh!”

\*Pah\* \*Pah\* \*Pah\*

Waves and waves of pleasure assaulted Thyra's body, she didn't know when, but the pleasure she was feeling suddenly spiked up and she lost her thinking ability.

Her body turned numb due to all that pleasure and she just lay there on the bed, accepting Nux's thrust without any resistance whatsoever.

She was in another realm of pleasure, a realm where she denied thinking about anything else but pleasure.

“Annhh! Annhhh! Anfhh!”

Her back arched up, eyes turned back and her tongue popped out as well. Her expression was very similar to Nux's other women.

She was lost in ecstasy.

“Annhh! Annhhh! Anfhh!”

“Ugghhhhhh!!”

Of course, Nux was in a bad situation either.

Thyra’s pussy was tighter than he expected, he could cum at any moment now.

However, he couldn’t cum before Thyra, his pride won’t allow it.

Therefore, he sped up his thrusting while he played with her breasts with both his hands. He was desperately trying to make Thyra cum as soon as possible.

“Annhh! Annhhh! Anfhh!”

He then increased his speed again, for the final touch, he pinched her nipples, and soon,

Thyra’s walls tightened even more.

‘I did it’

A small, victory smile appeared on Nux’s face as he groaned,

“Ughhhhhh! I am cuming!! Thyraaaa~~”

Nux then finally let go and released his milk inside Thyra’s little sister.

This cum shot accelerated Thyra’s reaction, her walls tightened even more, engulfing and sucking on Nux’s rod intensely before they suddenly loosened up and,

\*Squirt\*

“AAANNnnngghhhhhh~~”

She came.

# Chapter 139

“AAANNnnngghhhhhh~~”

Thyra moaned loudly a mind-numbing pleasure assaulted her body.

Strength left Nux’s body as well and he fell on the top of Thyra’s body, tired.

A big wave of energy entered Nux’s body and a small, tired smile then appeared on Nux’s face, he knew what that energy was.

However, he didn’t care about it right now.

He hugged Thyra’s body gently as he placed his chin on her shoulder and whispered,

“That was good.”

As soon as he whispered, Nux suddenly felt her cave tightening. His rod wasn’t out of her warm insides yet, therefore, he could feel every movement her pussy walls make very clearly right now.

‘Hmm?’

Nux furrowed his brows.

What happened?

He didn’t even do anything?

Suddenly, an idea popped into his head, he moved his mouth close to her ear and whispered.

“That was good, right?”

Again, he felt her caves tightening, and this time, it was tighter than before.

“mm” Thyra didn’t move her mouth, however, with how red her face was right now, Nux knew she liked it as well. She looked very adorable right now.

However, unlike her cute appearance, Nux had an evil smile on his face. He wanted to test something.

He then took a deep breath and,

“Phhooo~~”

Blew a mouthful of air into Thyra’s ears gently.

Thyra’s eyes widened, a weird jolt of pleasure coursed through her body and her walls tightened.

Nux’s smile widened as he felt the tightness.

‘So that’s her weak point’ He realized.

While they were busy fucking, Nux was trying to find her weak point, he tried grabbing her butt, her breasts, and her nipples, however, other than the normal reaction, he couldn’t notice anything above that.

He was confused about it.

However, he now understood the reason.

Thyra’s weak point wasn’t her breasts, nipples or her butt.

It was her ears.

‘Heh. Just wait for the next time, I will make you moan like there is no tomorrow.’ Nux thought inwardly as his evil smirk widened.

However, soon, his smile turned into a gentle one and he removed his rod from her and rolled over.

‘Rest for today~ Mu cute assassin~’

This was her first night, he will let her rest today.

They will spend a lot more nights together; he can always do it later.

Nux then finally decided to open his information.

‘Status’ he called out.

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Master.]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 31 → 33 ]

[HP: 850/850]

[MP: 820/820]

[STR: 83→87]

[AGL: 93→97]

[VIT: 81→85]

[STM: 120→124]

[INT: 80→82]

[DEF: 80→84]

[Blank Points: 103→109]

‘Hmm? Only 2 levels? That’s weird...’ Nux frowned as he glanced at his status.

Normally, he would gain a lot more levels since Thyra’s level was very high compared to her. It was weird that he didn’t gain anything much after this session.

Actually, he had noticed this before.

Edda was level 33, however, even after spending so much time with her, he was still level 31, that doesn’t make sense.

‘Has the god nerfed me since I am too strong?’

Nux thought inwardly and smirked.

‘Heh. So what? I just need to fuck more.’

Nux chuckled.

And as if hearing his inner thoughts, Thyra opened her eyes and questioned.

“A-are we going for another round?”

Nux turned around and looked at her face.

Her crystal blue eyes and short black hair, combined with that deep blush on her face made her look incredibly cute.

“Hehe, didn’t I say this before? You are a pervert.” Nux teased.

“...” Thyra pouted and then she turned to the opposite side, showing her naked back to Nux.

Nux smiled, this cute Thyra was just too lethal for him.

His dick turned hard and he moved closer to Thyra and hugged her from behind.

“I’ll not go easy on you this time, okay?” He whispered into her ear and felt her body trembling.

Nux moved even closer, he placed his large dick between her perfect thighs and her entrance while one of his hands held her thin waist and another hand gently kneaded her breast.

Her body was warm and soft, hugging her body felt so good that Nux wanted nothing more than to hug her more and more and join their bodies together.

He wasn’t alone, when Thyra’s felt Nux’s hug all over her body, a weird sense of security filled her heart and once his dick was placed so close to her sacred place, her heartbeat quickened.

Her body trembled even more and,

“Anh~” her moan leaked out.

Her already sensitive cave leaked out more and more juice, and once Nux thought it was enough, he placed his dick in front of her entrance and,

“Annhhh!!”

He entered her insides in one thrust.

“Ugghhhh!!”

Nux groaned in pleasure as well.

Thyra’s insides were as tight as before. Nux had a feeling that he would need to lot of time to get used to this blissful tightness.

“Annh~”

He grabbed her breast tightly causing Thyra to moan out loud.

Nux then rolled over on the top of Thyra and pulled his dick out till the edge before he rammed it deep inside!

“Anhhh~”

Thyra moaned.

Nux, however, controlled himself, and this time, he succeeded to control himself.

He then repeated the same movement.

“Annhhh~”

However, this time Thyra’s walls tightened even more and,

“Ugghhh!” Nux groaned in pleasure.

“Ahh! Fuck it!”

In the end, Nux decided to let go of this stupid thought of controlling his moans and he increased his speed.

He should focus on enjoying the moment.

Competitions can wait.

“Anhhh~ Annh~ Annh~”

“Ugghh! Uggh! Ugghhhh!”

The room was then filled with Thyra’s and Nux’s moans, since Thyra was a lot stronger compared to Nux’s other women, her stamina was better as well.

Therefore, even though it was her first time, the two of them continued for the whole night.

Of course, Nux didn’t try many new poses, that was for the later.

He just continued ramming his rod inside Thyra’s pussy while the girl moaned without stopping.

“T-This is too gooodd~~”

# Chapter 140

A/N: This chapter might leave a bitter taste in some readers' mouths and I apologize for that in advance.

You can skip it if you want, I'll leave the summary in the comments.

...

The next morning, Nux woke up with Thyra sleeping on his chest. Since she was an assassin, she was very light and with the way she was sleeping, Nux felt like she was a cat.

He moved his hand towards her silky hair and he started caressing them gently.

“mmm” A small smile appeared on Thyra's face as she moved her body cutely and made herself even more comfortable.

Nux chuckled inwardly, he never thought that this cold-looking assassin would have such a cute side to her.

It was very surprising.

Of course, he welcomed such a surprise with open arms. Nux then continued caressing her hair and called,

‘Status’

A screen that had his information appeared in front of his eyes.

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Master.]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 33 → 35 ]

[HP: 890/890]

[MP: 840/840]

[STR: 87→91]

[AGL: 97→101]

[VIT: 85→89]

[STM: 124→128]

[INT: 82→84]

[DEF: 84→88]

[Blank Points: 109→115]

‘115 Blank Points huh...’

Nux thought inwardly. He then looked down and after the status screen, another screen that had another message was present.

[Memory Fragment Detected, would you like to retrieve it?]

[Cost: 10 Black Points.]

[Y/N]

‘Should I do it?’

Nux questioned inwardly and soon, he stopped thinking and sighed.

He firmly believed that this memory would be useless because if his predecessor knew something that could benefit the current him, he has to be someone important, which he was clearly not.

The guy was barely eating, after all.

However, although he believed that his predecessor was useless, there was one thing that still bothered Nux.

His predecessor rejected a Viscount.

Not every commoner has the guts to do it.

Therefore, it was worth a shot.

‘Whatever, it’s only a matter of time before I gain a few more levels, it’s only 4 level-ups worth of blank points, even if the memory is useless, it’s okay.’

Nux had decided.

‘Alright, let’s do it.’

Nux then nodded to himself and clicked yes.

Suddenly, the scenery around him changed and he appeared in the night sky.

“Uwaaahhhh! Uwaaaahhh!”

Nux then looked around and heard a voice, he looked in the direction and saw 2 humans carrying a child who was crying, the humans then entered what looked like an orphanage and gave the baby to the caretaker there.

“We found this child in front of our house, we don’t know who he is or who left him there, however, we certainly cannot keep him with us,”

The caretaker nodded and took the child.

An interesting thing to note was that Nux did not see the world from his predecessor's eyes, he saw everything from a third-person perspective.

It was as if he was watching a movie.

The child then grew up in the orphanage and lived an ordinary life just like other children.

He cried, he ate, he slept, he did everything a normal child does.

However, he was a little different from others.

Black hairs, beautiful golden eyes, chubby face, the child was extraordinarily beautiful.

Therefore, he was favoured and spoiled by many.

Even the other children in the orphanage liked him and he lived a happy life.

Till now, previous Nux lived a completely normal life.

However, today, something changed.

Today was the day previous Nux snuck out of the orphanage with other children.

Unfortunately, he caught an eye of a crazy woman.

Cadela.

Since Nux was 8 years old now, his feature got sharper and he became less 'cuter' and more 'handsome'

And this 'handsome' Nux caught the Cadela's eyes.

This was the start of Nux's hellish days.

The next day, Nux was adopted by that crazy woman and left the orphanage.

For the first few days, the crazy woman treated him well, and he was happy.

But then,

For some reason, the crazy lady couldn't control herself anymore.

She then walked into Nux's room, locked the door and,

Raped him.

Yes, she raped an 8-year-old child.

Of course, as an 8-year-old child, Nux didn't know what was happening to him, he experienced his first premature orgasm. Like any normal person, he liked that weird tingly feeling as well.

However, this is where something happened.

“I am not here to pleasure you, You are the one who is supposed to pleasure me, you bastard!”

The crazy woman continued to do what she was doing even when he had just orgasmed, in a single night, Nux was forced to come countless times.

The first few felt good, however, soon, Nux started losing all his strength.

The experience after that was anything but pleasurable.

Nux tried to stop her, but he was powerless.

He was assaulted the entire night.

The next night was the same, then the next night, the night after that, Cadela continued to assault Nux without any reservations.

Soon, she gained more and more confidence and things escalated.

She tied him up and forced him to stay inside the room.

She would force Nux to do 'things' on his own accord, if he refuses, she would let him starve for days.

Sometimes, she would even take out her anger on Nux by beating him up.

She would constantly make him beg for food and then give him something stale.

When she was bored, she would even bring her friends so that Nux could 'entertain' them and she would earn some 'money'.

According to her, she fed Nux, and she 'invested' in Nux. Therefore, he shall work to repay her now.

That small room became Nux's prison, where he was abused every single day.

This torture continued for 4 years.

In these 4 years,

The playful, cheerful and naïve Nux died.

He was replaced by a gloomy, downcast and scared Nux.

A Nux who was hopeless, helpless and had already given up on himself and his life.

However, maybe the gods pitied his poor soul, one day, while the Cadela was walking down the street; she accidentally stepped in front of a nobleman's carriage.

The arrogant nobleman did not like the fact that a filthy commoner dared to step in front of her and the Cadela was beheaded.

A fitting end?

Maybe.

Maybe Not.

Nux however, didn't care.

From that day forth, he was free from all the torture.

He then started living on his own, working and barely managing to buy one meal a day.

Though his life was still full of hardship, it was a lot better compared to before.

Nux then continued living, however, these past 4 years left a major impact on Nux's life.

Gynophobia.

Yes, due to these agonizing 4 years,

Nux Leander feared women.

# Chapter 141

Nux Leander feared women.

Being tortured by that crazy woman was a horrifying experience. However, that did not stop him from living his lifeless life.

He tried to fight his fear and talk to women, however, every time he sees a woman, an overwhelming fear takes over his body and he stops moving.

Even if a woman came out of her way to compliment him for how cute he was, he would run away before she could even say a word.

Nux even lost a few jobs because he ran away after seeing a female customer, or he was scared of a female co-worker.

In a world where 40% of the humans were women, Nux was living a very hard life.

However, he still somehow managed to live.

This continued for 6 years, and then, one day few men knocked in front of Nux's house's door.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Nux opened the door and a scar-faced man, accompanied by 2 other men entered.

“W-What can I help you with?” Nux questioned in panic.

These people looked overbearing.

“So is he the one? Heh. What a lucky bastard.” A man following the scar-faced man, Akhil, muttered.

“Lucky indeed. I wish I could be in his place.” Another man nodded.

“Alright you two, shut up.” The scar-faced man instructed.

He then turned to Nux and questioned.

“What is your name?”

“N-Nux L-Leander, s-sir...”

“Hahaha~ What a pussy!” Akhil laughed out loud.

“I told you to shut the fuck up!” the Scar-Faced man turned around and glared at Akhil.

“S-Sorry sir” Akhil lowered his head in fear.

“So Nux, I am here to tell you that you have caught Viscount Felberta’s eyes and she wants you as her boy toy, are you willing?” The scar-faced man questioned.

The two men behind him showed clear signs of jealousy, actually, even the scar-faced man felt jealous, however, he was more ‘professional’ and didn’t show it on his face.

“W-What?”

“I am asking, are you willing to be her boy toy?” The scar-faced man repeated his question.

Actually, according to him, this question was only a formality, even though he just took him here, once he sees Viscount Felberta’s face, the boy will agree.

Being Viscount Felberta’s boy toy and even getting paid for it, only a fool will reject such a deal.

“N-No.”

However, Nux's answer was different from his expectation.

“W-What?”

“I said NO!” Nux repeated.

“Are you sure? Dude, have ever seen Viscoun-”

“I SAID NO!!” Nux shouted and tried pushing the scar-faced man.

The scar-faced man frowned.

He didn't expect this answer and he defiantly didn't expect such a strong denial from someone as weak as Nux.

However, no matter what, he was still a thug, when he saw Nux rushing up to him, trying to push him away, his body acted on reflex and,

**\*Bam\***

He punched Nux's face.

Nux's body fell to the floor, and the scar-faced man stepped on his back and questioned.

“Are you sure you want to oppose me?”

“I SAID NO!!” Nux shouted.

The scar-faced man's face twitched and a vein popped out on his head.

He has had enough.

“Beat him up!” He ordered.

“Hahaha! I was waiting for this order! This idiot dared to reject such an offer? There must be a screw loose in his head, let me fix it for him!” Akhil laughed as he rushed towards Nux and kicked his head.

The three men then started beating Nux, however, Nux was adamant, and rejected every time they asked him to rethink his answer.

The three men assaulted Nux till he 'lost his consciousness'.

"We will return tomorrow, I hope you will have a better answer tomorrow." The scar-faced man muttered as he walked out of the house.

"Tsk! Now we would have to use a healing potion on him! What a waste!" Akhil snorted.

"I still don't understand why he is rejecting us!"

"That Bastard! Rejecting someone like Viscount Felberta! I wish all the handsome people die a painful death!" Akhil cursed.

...

As the three of them left, Nux's body lay on the floor.

Then like in a certain game where when the main character died, the screen zooms out, a similar thing happened with Nux, who was watching everything.

Soon, everything around him turned black before,

**\*Clank\***

With a clank sound, everything broke down as if it was a mirror and Nux woke up.

Nux then looked around and realized that the memory has ended.

'My predecessor died after being beaten by those thugs.'

Nux realized.

He then looked around and saw that he was still in his room, on his bed.

On top of his chest, Thyra was sleeping.

A woman was sleeping on his chest...

A woman was so close to him...

Nux glanced at Thyra and felt something...

‘Ah, she’s so cute...’ Nux thought inwardly.

A small smile then appeared on his face as he patted her head.

His predecessor might have feared women, but he did not.

These memories did not affect him.

As mentioned before, it was like he saw a movie.

He knows everything about the ‘Character’ and knows how he feels, however, he does not feel the same thing the character does.

‘To think he accepted being beaten to death rather than going to the Viscount, who was a woman.’ Nux thought inwardly and sighed.

‘You lived a tough life... even tougher than my past life...’

Then, his eyes turned cold,

“Don’t worry, I will get your revenge.”

“mm? Whose revenge?” Suddenly Thyra, who was sleeping on his chest opened her eyes and questioned sleepily.

“Good morning, my cute assassin~”

“Good morning...” Thyra rubbed her eyes, she then looked around and quickly figured out her situation. She was sleeping on top of Nux, naked!

Nux was naked as well!

Thyra widened her eyes, she quickly remembered what happened last night and her face turned red.

However, before Nux could enjoy her reaction, he heard Edda's voice in his mind.

‘Nux, Nux, this is important.

You have to know this.’

# Chapter 142

8 hours ago, while Nux was using his [Conceal] and hiding, planning to grab Thyra from behind and do ‘things’ with her.

Edda, who he had already told his plan, decided to stay in the Palace for a certain mission and was walking towards her room when she was stopped by someone.

“Edda?”

Edda turned around and looked at the person who called her,

“Hmm? Lady Allura, what happened?”

“Nothing happened to me, but why are you here? Don’t you usually leave and meet your lover as soon as your duty ends?” Allura questioned.

“Ugghh...” Edda growled in displeasure.

Of course, even though she knew what Nux was doing and how it could only be done at the night, and how he will make up to her later, she was still disappointed.

She wanted him to fuck her tonight as well!

Allura, who quickly noticed her expressions only had one thought in her mind.

‘This feels entertaining...’

A smile then appeared on her face as she questioned,

“Do you need an ear? You can tell me everything you want, you know.”

Edda glanced at Allura, she has known this Lady Allura ever since she arrived in the palace, she knew her well enough to know what she was thinking.

‘However, sharing my pain with my future sister doesn’t seem so bad...’

Edda thought inwardly.

‘Plus, I need to get close to her, it might help Nux and he might ‘reward’ me for it!’

A small smile then appeared on Edda’s face and she nodded.

“Alright, Lady Allura.”

Allura’s smile widened.

She found tonight’s entertainment.

She then quickly grabbed Edda’s hand and pulled her towards her room.

“Alright, follow me to my room, we will talk there.”

The servants who passed the two of them glanced at Edda with pity in their eyes.

‘So it’s the head maid today huh...’

‘Sigh... even a head maid can’t defend herself from Lady Allura...’

‘Just how much bored Lady Allura is?’

Of course, Allura, as usual, ignored all these servants and rushed into her room.

She then locked the door and questioned.

“So? What happened? Why didn’t you go meet your lover? Did you guys fight? Who started it? You? Nah, it must be him! He started it right? Don’t

worry, you can share everything with me.”

Edda shook her head inwardly,

‘She’s really bored huh...’

“Lady Allura, we didn’t fight.” She answered.

“Hmm? Then why are you here?” Allura questioned with a displeased look on her face.

She doesn’t want to hear another story like that maid told her yesterday.

Tsk Tsk! A mature couple!

Hmph! What a joke!

People like them should just die!

“He is spending this night with another woman,” Edda replied with an unhappy look on her face.

“Huh?” Allura turned to look at Edda with a shocked look on her face.

She didn’t expect something like that.

No, actually, she did expect something like that, it was normal in this world.

Powerful men have Harem.

Usually, men like these get a new woman, stay with her and spend the night with her for a few days, then forget about her.

It was a very common occurrence.

A sad look appeared on Allura’s face.

She wanted entertainment; however, she didn’t want someone’s life to be ruined by it.

Weird coming from someone like her; who wanted couples to fight and break up so that she can enjoy the drama.

“So you will now become a trophy huh...” Allura muttered.

“Huh?”

“Don’t you know what trophy means? It’s a term that represents a woman who doesn’t get any attention from her husband or lover.”

“No, Lady Allura, I know what ‘Trophy’ means, however, I did not become a ‘Trophy’. He said he will make it up to me tomorrow. I am just sad that I can’t spend a night with him today.”

“Huh?”

This time, Allura was the one who frowned.

Usually, men like these don’t really care about the ‘Trophy’. Most of them do not create any false hopes like ‘I will make it up to you tomorrow’. Then why is her lover doing something like this?

Is it fun to break a woman’s heart over and over again?

Does he want her to keep up her hope and crush it every single day?

A cold look appeared on Allura’s face when she thought about this.

“Don’t worry, I’ll deal with him for you,” Allura spoke in a cold voice.

“Huh? What do you mean, Lady Allura.” Edda questioned in confusion.

Allura then shook her head and sighed,

“Edda, you are still too innocent, that bastard is just giving you false hope. People like them don’t care about the woman once they have had their fun. But don’t worry, I am with you. I will deal with that bastard no matter who he is!”

“Lady Allura, you got it wrong.” Edda finally understood what she was talking about and shook her head.

“Hmm?”

“Lady Allura, I am not a naïve child. I know how to judge people. He is not like that... he...” then a smile appeared on Edda’s face.

“He is a very gentle and caring man. Also,”

Then Edda blushed,

“He is very good in bed.”

Allura blushed as well, she soon recalled their ‘talk’ yesterday and started imagining things she shouldn’t imagine.

“Don’t worry, Lady Allura. He isn’t that type of man. I can say that for sure, he didn’t leave his other woman when I appeared. He treats them well and spends a lot of time with them, just like he does with me.

He is a good person.” Edda smiled.

A smile appeared on Allura’s face when she saw the expression on Edda’s face. Edda looked so innocent and beautiful right now.

However, soon, Allura kicked that thought out of her mind.

“And he is very good in bed.”

“...you don’t have to repeat that again.”

Allura muttered as she glanced at Edda with a dry look on her face.

“But I am not lying, he is really good in bed,” Edda repeated again, trying to tell her sister how good her future man is.

She really wanted that reward.

“Ugghhh! I get it! I get it! Don’t make me jealous...” Allura groaned.

“Huh? Jealou- wait...”

Suddenly, Edda realized something and her eyes widened, she then looked around cautiously, then brought her face close to Allura and questioned in a low voice.

“Is the king not good in bed?”

# Chapter 143

“Is the king not good in bed?”

Edda questioned in a low voice.

A wry smile appeared on Allura’s face and then she shook her head.

“Let’s not talk about this, you tell me, how i-”

“Heeh? Lady Allura, that’s not fair you know? I share so many things with you and you don’t share anything with me. Am I just a source of entertainment for you?” Suddenly, Edda questioned with a sad look on her face.

“No, it’s not like that.” Allura quickly shook her head.

Initially, Edda was nothing more than a source of entertainment for Allura, however, for some reason, after that long talk between her and Edda yesterday, Allura felt that she was a little closer to Edda.

She wasn’t just a source of entertainment, she actually cared about Edda a little.

“Then why aren’t you sharing anything with me? Don’t worry, you can share whatever you want with me, I won’t tell anyone else.

Now tell me, is the king bad in bed?

Does he have a small weapon?”

Edda questioned.

Allura’s face widened in surprise when she heard her question, She didn’t expect Edda to be so...

Perverted.

“C’mon, Lady Allura, tell tell, does the king have a small weap- mhphhf?” Edda questioned again.

“You are really daring huh, Edda. Don’t you know? If the king learns what you are saying, you will be executed!” Allura questioned.

“Aren’t we the only 2 here? How will the king know about me? You won’t out me, will you, Lady Allura?” Edda questioned back.

“Walls have ears, you know? Especially walls of the Royal Palace.” Allura smiled as she pointed toward the walls.

However, rather than a panicked expression that Allura thought Edda would show, a small smile appeared on Edda’s face as she muttered,

“Heh. Don’t worry, Lady Allura. My lover will save me if something happens.”

Allura raised her eyebrow and questioned.

“Hmm? You think he can save you from the king of this kingdom?”

“He can do anything, Lady Allura. With him around me, I do not fear anything.” Edda’s smile then widened and she continued.

“So, Lady Allura, do not worry about my security, just tell me the truth, is the King’s weapon too small?”

A sad smile appeared on Allura’s face as she shook her head.

“Hmph! I hoped that was the case... At least it would be better than my current situation.”

Actually, she has been hiding this for a long while and didn’t dare to say anything out loud however, now that Edda, who took interest in this topic and asked without fearing anything, Allura thought about something as well.

If even the head maid isn't scared, then why should she be?

She needed to share her miseries as well.

"Hmm? What does that mean?" Edda questioned.

She got a feeling that she was going to learn something important.

"Outwardly, the king may seem an average king, not too good, not too bad, however, don't you think he is too normal?" Allura questioned.

"Huh?" Edda frowned.

An Average King, everyone calls him that.

Not too good, not too bad.

This was like a catchphrase used to describe the King of the Skyfall Kingdom.

'Don't you think he is too normal?'

Edda thought about this question, soon, however, she shook her head.

"I never thought about the king too deeply, Lady Allura."

"That is understandable."

Allura nodded and then continued.

"There is a reason why everyone finds the king average and that is because he doesn't really care about this kingdom and its affairs."

"Huh?"

"Yes, he doesn't spend much time in affairs of the kingdoms. He just accepts whatever his subjects propose. Some decisions are good, some are bad, therefore, he comes out as average."

“But won’t his subjects use this fact to their advantage and eventually control everything themselves? Why aren’t they doing anything like that?” Edda couldn’t help but question.

“That I do not know. However, I have seen the king handling the official affairs once. He doesn’t think and listen to anything; he just hears the solution the subjects came up with and agrees with it without even knowing the initial problem.

The only thing he cares about is ending everything as soon as possible.”

“B-But why is he always so eager to leave? What else does he do other than ruling the kingdom?” Edda questioned.

A wry smile appeared on Allura’s face and she answered.

“He is a ‘Trophy Collector’ or that’s what he likes to call himself.”

“Trophy Collector?” Edda frowned.

“Yes, a Trophy Collector.

He likes collecting Trophies, or in other words, he likes collecting women.” Allura revealed with a dissatisfied look on her face.

“So he is a playboy?” Edda questioned.

“He can be called a playboy, but...

But he is a little strange.”

“Hmm? Why?”

“Once he has sex with a woman, he would never touch that woman again.

This is also the reason why he only has 6 children even though he has 4 wives, 50 concubines and countless other women outside the Royal Palace.

Only those who were ‘lucky enough’ to bear a child gave birth to one, as for the rest, they were trophies, never touched or cared for again.”

Allura revealed and gritted her teeth in anger.

Edda’s eyes widened in surprise as well.

People always wondered why the king only had 6 children.

Now she knows the reason.

“Heh. What a bastard, that king.” Edda couldn’t help but mutter.

“You really aren’t scared of death huh...” Allura shook her head, however, a smile appeared on her face.

She agreed with Edda.

“As I said, my lover would protect me. I am not scared.” Edda answered.

A sad smile appeared on Allura’s face,

“You are lucky to have a lover like that...” She muttered.

Suddenly, a small smile appeared on Edda’s face as she answered,

“Don’t worry, Lady Allura. Soon, you will find your happiness as well.”

Allura chuckled dryly.

She knew Edda was just saying it for the sake of saying it.

She didn’t really mean it.

Edda knew what she was thinking and shook her head.

She then noticed the sad look on Allura’s face and decided to change the topic.

The two of them started talking about another topic, then they talked about another topic, then another, and then a different one.

They talked for the whole night and then Edda excused herself.

‘Nux, Nux’ She called while she was walking in the corridor. She needed to deliver this good news.

‘This is important, you have to know this.’

# Chapter 144

A small smile appeared on Nux's face as he heard Edda's 'report'.

'Heh. How convenient.'

Nux muttered inwardly and smiled.

'Edda, you did a lovely job, thank you very much.'

'Heh. You are wrong if you think a 'thank you' would cut it'

'Oh? Then how do I show you my appreciation, my perverted maid?'

'Now that we know about it, my mission here is over' Edda muttered.

'Indeed, we don't have to worry about that thing anymore.' Nux nodded, however, soon, he understood why Edda was saying it right now.

A big smile then appeared on Nux's face and he questioned in a very gentle tone,

'How about I show you my appreciation with a long night session, My perverted maid?'

'That would work...' Edda agreed, actually, she wanted to ask more and put her terms forward more clearly, but in front of Nux's gentle voice, she forgot about it and nodded.

'However,' Suddenly, Nux muttered.

'What?'

'We won't be spending this night in Felberta's or my new mansion.'

'Why?' Edda frowned in confusion.

Nux then smile wickedly and answered,

‘Because what I am going to do with you shouldn’t be seen by others.’

Edda, who was in her room, getting ready for work paused and her body trembled. Images of her being tied up while Nux lay on the on of her body appeared on her mind and,

‘Shit... I would need to change my panty...’ She muttered as she lowered her gaze and glanced at her little sister that had gone a little out of control.

‘Heh. Make sure to bring a lot of panties, An no actually, screw it, you won’t be needing any clothes once we meet each other.

However, just bring one to be on a safer side.’

Edda then her Nux’s voice and her face turned red,

‘S-Sure...’

‘Alright, then remember, you don’t need to come to the mansion today, I will come and pick you up. Okay?’

‘Y-Yes.’ Edda nodded.

Nux then broke the telepathic link between the two of them and a big smile appeared on Edda’s face.

‘Lad- no, Sister Allura, I didn’t lie to you. He is indeed the best man you could ever wish for.’

Edda then walked towards her wardrobe and took out another pair of sexy black panties.

She might not be able to focus on her work today.

Well, not that she has been focusing on it for the last few days.

...

On the other side, once Nux was done talking to Edda, he opened his eyes and glanced around, however, Thyra was gone.

‘Ah fuck! I missed her reaction! Shit!’

Nux cried inwardly and shook his head.

He then activated his [Sense] and quickly found Thyra, who was inside the bathroom. A small smile appeared on Nux’s face when he saw what she was doing.

‘Cute...’ he muttered inwardly, activated his Conceal and walked towards the bathroom.

Naked of course.

A minute later, he walked into the bathroom and Thyra wasn’t visible.

He then walked towards the bathtub and behind the bathtub, he saw a petite girl, sitting with her head on her knees, unaware of a man standing behind her.

Nux’s smirk widened, and then, he picked her up, stepped into the bathtub and sat down.

Thyra’s body was amazingly light, for some reason, Nux really enjoyed picking her up.

“Huh!?” Thyra’s eyes widened in shock when someone grabbed her from behind without her noticing. However, she soon realized who it was and didn’t even try to resist.

“So, My cute assassin, what are you doing here?” She then heard a voice and turned around.

“What are you doing here?” She questioned.

“Yes, that is my question, you heard it right.” Nux nodded.

“I am asking you!” Thyra replied in anger.

“Oh, me? I was just here to spend some time with my cute assassin.”

“But I don’t want to spend a single minute with you! Also, what’s with this ‘my cute assassin’? I am not your assassin!” Thyra retorted.

“Oh? That didn’t seem to be the case yesterday when you were moaning so loudly~” Nux whispered into Thyra’s ears.

Thyra’s face turned red as she recalled what happened last night.

Soon, she felt Nux tightening his hug around her and then,

“Pheewwww~”

He blew hot air into her ear and Thyra’s body trembled as a weird jolt crawled all over her body.

Nux then tightened his hug around her waist, even more, crossed his legs with her and whispered,

“Also, from now on, you are mine, My Cute Little Assassin~”

Another jolt was sent into her body when she heard those words, her heartbeat quickened and at the same time, her face turned redder.

Nux then turned a little and opened the tap.

Cold water touched their warm bodies and Thyra’s back arched up again.

However, that was not because of the water,

There was another reason.

She could feel something poking her butt.

“Ah, I apologize, wait,” She then heard Nux’s voice, he picked her up, adjusted his little brother and placed her back on his lap.

“Ugghh! As expected~~ It feels gooodd~~” Nux moaned in pleasure.

Thyra’s face turned even redder and her little sister started reacting as well.

Why?

Because Nux’s little brother was now between her two thighs, dangerously close to her little sister.

And whenever his little brother was there, it never ended well.

No actually, it ended really well since she felt a lot of pleasure as well.

“Y-You are a pervert...” Thyra muttered, her voice was a lot tamer now.

“I am?”

Thyra nodded.

“Heh. I can’t help it. You are just too beautiful, My cute assassin~”

Nux muttered as he placed his chin on Thyra’s shoulder.

A small smile appeared on Thyra’s face.

“Now shall we take a bath?” Nux questioned.

“T-Together?”

“Well, since we got ‘dirty’ together, shouldn’t we clean ourselves together as well?” Nux questioned.

Thyra thought about it a little and then nodded.

“T-That makes sense.”

Then, a long, no, very long and blissful bathing session followed.

# Chapter 145

After a blissful bathing session combined with another bathroom sex, Thyra and Nux finally left the bathroom with smiles on their faces.

The two of them then started wearing their clothes, Nux wore his normal robes while Thyra wore her skin-tight Assassin clothes.

“Huh? What are you doing?” Nux questioned.

“What?” Thyra frowned.

Nux then walked towards Thyra and took away her mask.

“I don’t want you to wear your mask anymore, how am I supposed to admire your beauty if you do that?” Nux questioned with a sly smile on his face.

“But I am an assassin.”

“You are MY assassin, so you are not allowed to wear a mask,” Nux whispered.

“Whatever,” Thyra shrugged.

She knew she wouldn’t win against Nux in an argument anyway, so why try?

She was a calm-headed assassin.

She won’t waste her energy like that.

Nux smiled and nodded to himself.

“Alright, now let’s go and eat our breakfast”

“H-Huh? T-Together?” Thyra questioned.

“We spend a night together, naked.

Then we bathe together, naked.

What’s the problem with eating breakfast together?” Nux questioned.

“...” Thyra turned silent and although she tried to hide it by lowering her head, Nux could clearly see her face had turned red.

‘Heh. It’s so fun to tease her...’ he thought inwardly and chuckled.

“Will Felberta, Skyla, Edda and Lane be there?” Thyra questioned.

“Hmm? Of course, they will be. Edda won’t be there though, she is in the Royal Palace. She didn’t come here yesterday since someone else took her place.” Nux replied with a small smile on her face.

Thyra’s face turned even redder and she retorted.

“I did not take her place! You forced me!”

“When did I say you took her place?”

“I am not dumb! I know what you are talking about!”

“Hmm? What do you mean? What am I talking about?” Nux questioned with a smile.

“Yo- you...” Thyra wanted to say it out loud but was too embarrassed to do so.

“Shameless!” She retorted.

“Hahahaha~” Nux laughed out loud.

‘She’s adorable and fun to teas- ahem, and she’s cute.’

Nux thought inwardly and then he grabbed her hand.

“Alright, let’s go and eat,”

However, Thyra did not move,

“I-I won’t have breakfast with you! I want to eat breakfast with other assassin friends!”

Nux then glanced at Thyra with a blank look on his face.

He has seen and dealt with these assassins for days now, he has noticed that other than basic respect for each other, they do not have any other feelings towards each other.

They are not close at all.

Nobody is anybody’s friend.

And of course, Thyra was the same.

Nux then pulled her close to him and whispered,

“You are coming to eat with me, else I will ‘eat’ you for breakfast”

“What do you mean, ‘Eat’ me?” Thyra questioned.

Nux smirked, he then lowered his eyes and glanced at Thyra’s little sister before his smirk widened.

Thyra, of course, quickly understood what he meant.

“Alright, I need to eat with my assassin friends!” She answered quickly as she tried to walk away.

Nux chuckled inwardly and shook his head.

He then picked her up and whispered.

“How perverted~”

“W-What do you mean?” Thyra acted ignorantly.

Nux smiled and then he sealed her lips.

Thyra’s eyes widened in surprise, however, soon, she closed her eyes and her tongue entered Nux’s mouth.

Yes, she was the first to attack.

She was only shy when it comes to foreplay, once it is time for the real thing, she was a lot more active than normal.

Nux learned it yesterday night as well.

Of course, he welcomed that with open arms.

However, this time, he needed to keep things short.

After a 2 minute-long kiss, he moved his lips away and looked into Thyra’s blue eyes.

“You are going to eat with me, right?” He questioned in a very soft voice.

Thyra nodded with a slight blush on her face.

Nux smiled, he then gave her a small peck and then placed her back on the floor.

“Should we leave then?”

Thyra nodded with a smile and two of them left the room.

...

“Oh ho~ Look at you two~ Acting like a couple after the first night, huh?” Felberta commented as she glanced at Thyra and Nux.

“They are holding hands~ How lewd~~” Skylia placed her hands on her face and laughed.

Lane didn’t say anything and just nodded.

Of course, there were clear signs of jealousy on her face,

She wanted to hold Nux’s hand as well.

Not that she has never done that before, but she still wanted to do it.

“Good morning, my lovely girls~” Nux greeted with a big smile on his face.

“Good morning~” The girls repeated.

“Good Morning, Sister Thyra~” Skylia of course, was the first one to greet Thyra and waved her hand at her energetically.

“Good morning~” Thyra smiled and waved back, although her movements her a bit stiff, she was still doing fine.

Skylia then patted the chair next to her and smiled joyfully.

“Sister Thyra! Come sit here!”

Thyra nodded and then walked towards the chair Skylia pointed to.

Nux walked behind her and sat on the chair next to Thyra.

After the 5 of them were seated, Nux glanced at Felberta and smiled,

“So? Did you enjoy the show?”

Felberta smiled back, she then glanced at Thyra and answered,

“WE did. WE enjoyed it a lot.”

Skylia nodded with a playful smile, while Lane had a blush on her face.

“Huh?” Thyra frowned.

She realized that something was wrong when the 3 women glanced at her.

“What show?” She questioned.

“Hehe~ Sister Thyra, you peeked on us, you think we won’t peek on you?”

Thyra’s eyes widened in surprise and she turned towards Nux.

“You knew!?”

Nux nodded.

“Why didn’t you say anything then?” She questioned.

“Umm... well, your insides felt too good, I didn’t want to stop...” Nux replied awkwardly and then laughed.

Thyra’s face turned red.

“Hehe~ Don’t worry Sister Thyra, you don’t have to be so shy,

We only saw the part where you questioned,

‘This is not the main thing!’

And the next few hours after that.”

# Chapter 146

“Hehe~ Don’t worry Sister Thyra, you don’t have to be so shy,

We only saw the part where you questioned,

‘This is not the main thing!?’

And the next few hours after that.”

Skyla muttered with a big smile on her face as she placed her hand on top of Thyra’s as if she was trying to console Thyra.

“Doesn’t that mean you watched the whole thing!?” Thyra questioned in shock.

Skyla’s attempt to comfort her did more harm than it did well.

“No no, we missed the first 10 minutes,” Skyla replied with a sad look on her face.

“...”

Thyra turned silent as she glanced at Skyla with a blank look on her face.

She really couldn’t tell if she was a cute angel or a scheming demon.

“You missed the first 10 minutes huh...” Thyra muttered.

“Yeah... we needed to hide since we didn’t know when you will arrive... things then happened faster than we had calculated and we missed the first 10 minutes...”

Skyla shook her head and lamented.

“So you knew everything beforehand?” Thyra questioned.

“Hmm? Of course, we did. How else do you think Nux’s room was silent in the night?”

Heh. It Nux’s room is never silent, you know, especially at the night” Skyla smiled as she glanced at Nux and winked.

A smile appeared on Nux’s face.

This little demonic angle.

She was really too cute.

“O-Oh is that so...”

“Indeed indeed.” Skyla nodded.

“B-But are you g-guys fine with me? I ordered assassins to kill you all...” Thyra questioned.

Actually, this was also the reason why she didn’t want to meet Skyla, Edda, Lane and Felberta, she thought that they all wouldn’t like her.

As for Nux?

He was a perverted man, he wouldn’t care.

If Nux knew her thought...

He would agree.

If he was worried about it, he wouldn’t have approached Thyra in the first place.

Thyra knew about this as well, therefore, she was comfortable around Nux however, the same can’t be said with the women.

“You don’t have to worry about that. Everything that happened was in the past. As long as you don’t try to harm us, we are fine with having you around.” This time, Felberta answered.

“Yes, we are fine with having you around! Actually, I am even looking forward to it!

Hehe~ A cold blooded assassin is my sister, how exciting~” Skyla laughed out loud as she formed a fist and punched in the air.

She then turned towards Thyra and requested,

“You have to teach me some killing techniques, okay?”

“Hmm? Why do you want to learn that?” Nux questioned with a curious look on his face.

“Hehe~ I want to try killing a few people, I want to see how it feels~” Skyla answered with a small smile on her face.

Nux blinked in surprise.

He then turned towards Felberta and Lane and narrowed his eyes.

“What have you guys done to my cute Skyla?”

“We didn’t do anything...” Felberta replied, actually, she was surprised by Skyla’s answer as well.

“Ummm...”

“Hmm? Lane, do you know something?” Nux heard Lane’s voice and questioned.

The girl nodded and answered, “This is just her way to get close to Thyra...”

“Sister Lane!” Skyla jumped in shock.

She didn’t expect her sister to out her like that.

She felt betrayed.

Thyra, who heard Lane, smiled.

She never expected someone to go so far just to talk to her.

It felt nice.

A small smile appeared on Nux's face and he sighed in relief.

“Thank god.., as I thought, Skyla is still my adorable Skyla~”

Skyla, who heard his words blushed, however, from the big smile that was plastered on her face, anyone could tell that she was happy because of the compliment.

“As expected from someone of my faction, what a pure heart! Just like me!” Felberta nodded to herself as well.

Lane, who heard her words couldn't help but comment,

“L-Lady Felberta... you are being influenced by Nux's shamelessness.”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

With Lane's single sentence, Felberta and Nux turned silent.

“Is that so... Lane? I am a bad influence now? Hmm?” Nux couldn't help but question.

He was hurt, you know?

“U-Umm, I meant... umm...”

“Mhm, I am waiting, tell me what you meant, I am all ears.”

“I... I am sorry... I was wrong... you are not a bad company at all...”

Since she couldn't come up with an excuse, Lane lowered her head and apologized.

"Nope, a simple apology won't cut it, My dear Lane, I would need you to work hard and please me." Nux smiled.

Lane knew well enough what that smile meant, she smiled back and nodded with a blush on her face.

"Okay..."

"Heh. How lucky, should I start dissing you as well?" Felberta questioned with a smirk.

"Oh? Are you craving me so hard that you can't control yourself now? Didn't we have a great session yesterday afternoon? Did you forget about it, or are you just becoming more perverted?" Nux questioned back with a smile.

"Hmph!" Felberta snorted and didn't say anything.

Fighting Nux using words was useless.

Hmph! Hmph!

She will silence him in the bed.

That's the true battlefield.

Thyra, who heard and understood what these people were talking about couldn't help but lower her head in embarrassment.

She couldn't believe that they were talking about it in the open.

"Heehh? Sister Thyra? Why is your face so red?" Skyla, who quickly noticed Thyra's change questioned.

Thyra's face turned even redder and she shook her head,

“Nothing,”

“Oh C’m-”

Skyla wanted to continue chatting, however,

“Alright guys, let’s start eating now,” Nux muttered, he then turned towards Thyra and informed.

“If you don’t know, then let me tell you, Two and Three would be coming here soon. I need to train, so I will be fighting you guys again.”

Thyra was about to nod in agreement however, Skyla grabbed her hand and,

“No! You can train with Two and Three, I need to talk with Sister Thyra!”

# Chapter 147

“So... where is Miss One?” Three questioned with a frown as she glanced at Nux who was standing right in front of her.

“Umm... she’s busy...” Nux answered.

“Hmm? Busy? Miss One? Are you sure?” Three questioned in confusion.

Noticing her confused expression, Nux was quick to realize that there was a story behind this.

“Hmm? Why are you so surprised?” Nux questioned.

“Miss one loves sparring. When we were still in the Kingdom, she used to spar with us every month. Obviously, as an assassin, we do not need many fighting techniques, what we practised were killing techniques.

Sneak attacks, lethal attacks and attacking the neck, heart, crotch and brain.

Miss one used to see all of this and observes our weakness.”

Three answered.

“Oh? So she loves sparing huh?” Nux muttered to himself.

“She does.”

‘But she still chose to talk with Skyla and the others... is this because Skyla talked to her so cheerfully? Is she trying to get along with others?’

A smile appeared on Nux’s face as he thought of that.

‘It’s a good thing.’ Nux nodded to himself.

“Well, she’s busy right now, so only you two will be sparring with me, you are not scared are you?” Nux teased.

“Heh. We defeated you before, it won’t be tough to defeat you again.”

Three chuckled and dashed towards Nux while Two positioned himself to where Nux is going to appear after dodging Three’s attack.

“Heh.”

Nux smiled, ready for today’s training.

...

“Sister Thyra, tell me tell me, how was your first night with Nux?” Skyla questioned excitedly as she glanced at Thyra was sitting beside her on a large bed.

After breakfast, she pulled Thyra to have the ‘talk’ with her. Of course, she brought Felberta and Lane along with her as well.

No one shall be left alone.

Hehe.

“Ughhh... did you guys not see the whole thing with your own eyes?” Thyra questioned with a frown.

She did not want to discuss last night at all.

Else...

Else she will get horny again...

“Oh C’mon, Sister Thyra, although we watched everything, we didn’t ‘feel’ what you felt! C’mon C’mon, don’t be stingy, share your experience with us!”

Skyla questioned, her eyes practically had stars shining inside.

Skyla did the same thing when she met Edda.

When she met Edda for the first time, she excitedly asked her about her first night and that day, Skyla realized that she really enjoyed talking about the 'first night'.

Since that day, little Skyla has been going around asking everybody.

First, she asked Felberta,

Felberta, of course, nodded with a smile and shared anything without shame.

Skyla was like her little sister after all.

Then she moved and talked to Lane, and even though she was there when Lane spent her first night with her, she still asked about the time when she was gone.

She then tried talking to other maids, however, Skyla soon realized that she doesn't like talking about the first night unless the man they are talking about is Nux.

Therefore, she stopped talking with other maids.

From that day to this, Thyra was the first woman she could talk with.

And she was really excited about this.

"I-It felt good..." Thyra answered.

"Heeh? That's it? Sister Thyra, you have to be creative with these matters. Try explaining it in more detail"

"W-What detail?" Thyra questioned.

"Like, how good it felt.

What were you thinking about when he was about to put his penis inside your little sister?

Did you feel the pain?

Did you feel particularly good when he did something?

Did you like it when he touched your breasts?

Or did you like it when he touched your butt?

Also, how soon do you want to have another session with him?"

Skyla then shot a series of questions and Thyra opened her mouth in shock.

"There she goes again..." Felberta sighed as she shook her head and then glanced at Lane.

"She is Skyla... so it is understandable..." Lane muttered.

"True, this girl is really a chatterbox huh..." Felberta sighed and Lane chuckled.

Of course, although it may look like they weren't interested, actually, they were completely focused on the 'talk'.

They were curious as well.

"Heh. Look how red her face is..." Felberta chuckled.

"That is understandable... anyone would blush after being questioned like that just after your first night..."

"True, one has to remember the blissful night to answer Skyla's questions." Felberta chuckled.

"Indeed." Lane nodded.

As she recalled last night, Thyra's face turned red, she was really embarrassed to talk about her last night, however, seeing those starry eyes, Thyra was unable to reject Skyla.

One by one, she started talking and answering every question Skyla questioned.

"Heeh? Ears? That's different from what I thought, to be honest, I like it when he kneads my butt. Of course, that doesn't mean I don't like it when he touches my breasts, that feels good as well.

Ah, talking about breasts, I learned a massage that could help increase your size, do you want to try it?" Skyla questioned.

"..."

Thyra, however, remained silent and glanced at Skyla.

"What?"

"...it doesn't sound much convincing coming from you..." Thyra answered.

"What do you me-" However, soon, Skyla realized what Thyra was talking about...

"Pffft!" Finding the scene quite comical, Felberta laughed out loud.

Skyla turned and glanced at Felberta's laughing face, she then turned towards Lane and saw the smile on her face as well. She understood that Sister Lane was trying to hide her laughter as well.

"Y-Y-You are mean!" She pointed at Thyra and blamed her.

"I was only trying to help you! Because yours were small!"

Thyra's face twitched.

"Mine are bigger than yours." She retorted.

“No! Mine are bigger!”

“Hmph! Dream all you want!”

Skyla then turned towards Felberta and questioned.

“Sister Felberta, you tell us, who has bigger breasts, me or Sister Thyra?”

“Does it even matter?” Suddenly, Felberta questioned.

“Hmm?” Skyla tilted her head in confusion.

Thyra was looking forward to what Felberta was about to say as well.

“Why compete? Does it even matter whose breasts are bigger amongst you two?”

In the end, you both have small breasts.”

# Chapter 148

“I do not believe this! Let’s spar again!” Three stood up in anger and pointed her wooden sword at Nux. From the bruises on her face, it looked like she didn’t enjoy today’s spar.

“Nope, we won’t be sparing anymore, I have things to do.” Nux however, shook his head.

“Am I right to assume that you are scared? If that is the case, I can back down for you,” Three smirked, trying to use reverse psychology on Nux and hoping to get him to fight her.

“Heh. That won’t work on me,” Nux smirked.

“Tsk Tsk!” Three snorted.

“Three, that is enough, learn to accept your defeat.” Two muttered.

His face was bruised as well, however, he seemed more calmed than Three.

“Two! How can you accept this so easily? Although we had Miss One with us yesterday and it was easier to defeat him, I don’t believe we cannot defeat him with the two of us working together!

He is only a Master Stage Cultivator.

We are Grand Master Stage Cultivators, how can we lose so easily!?” Three questioned out loud.

“...”

Two remained silent.

Actually, he found it a little unusual too. Yesterday, although Nux was able to fight against 3 Grand Master Stage Cultivators, that was only because

they were holding back.

Today, although they did not have Thyra with them, they could still give him a decent fight and even defeat him.

However, the results were a lot different than what he expected.

They were defeated.

And although it was not a crushing defeat, it wasn't a very tough and challenging fight either.

He couldn't understand how it happened.

'Did he improve so much in a single day? What kind of progress is that?'

Two questioned inwardly as he glanced at Nux with a frown on his face.

Nux noticed his expression and could pretty much deduce what he was thinking.

However, in the end, these two were just slaves, he didn't need to tell them anything.

"Alright, that will be enough, we will spar tomorrow, I have things to do. You two can return." Nux ordered, this time, his tone wasn't playful and Three understood the difference.

Therefore, although dejected, she turned around and walked away.

Two bowed and followed Three as well.

Nux then stretched his body a little, and just as he was about to return, he heard a voice.

"Master Nux!"

Nux turned to the source of the sound and saw Alger running towards him.

“Hmm? What happened?” Nux questioned.

“Master Nux, here. I thought it was a little important so I should share this with you” Alger muttered as he passed an envelope to Nux.

Nux furrowed his brows; he took the envelope, he noticed that there was a little red mark on the edge, however, he ignored it and opened the envelope.

Then, he took out the letter inside it and started reading.

‘To My one and only love, Algerama,

The bird did not fly out today, maybe she didn’t want to meet her lover? Did they fight? Was the bird feeling sad? What about the bird’s lover? Was he sad?

I do not know, however, what I know is that I am brokenhearted since I have not met you for so long.

I just keep looking at the bird, dreaming about the day when you and the bird will meet.

Would you like that bird?

Would you like how it chirps?

Would you like her voice?

Or would you like me more?

I hope you will find the bird outside soon because if it stays in her small cage, it will break my heart.

You, of course, wouldn’t be able to bear seeing me like that, it will hurt you as well.

And when I think about you being in pain because of worrying about me, my heart shudders.

Thus, I hope you find the bird soon.

I hope you find her soon'

After reading the whole letter, Nux's glanced at Alger with a dead look on his face.

"What kind of shitty letter was it? Was the writer drunk? And why the hell are you sharing that cursed thing with me?" Nux questioned.

Alger panicked, "Master Nux, don't come to any conclusions so quickly, please read the name of the sender."

Nux frowned, however, he did as Alger told and read the sender's name.

Edrea Fox.

Nux then narrowed his eyes, he had heard this name before.

"It is Edrea Fox, a Sub Head Maid of the Royal palace," Alger revealed and Nux's eyes widened in realization.

Edrea Fox, the bitch who eyes on Edda's position.

Wait...

Soon, Nux realized something.

"This is not a love letter, Master Nux.

The 'bird' she is talking about is Miss Edda.

She is saying that Miss Edda didn't leave today, maybe she had some fight with her 'lover', that is you. She is worried that Edda won't leave the Palace a lot and wants me to deal with her as soon as possible."

Nux's eyes widened in realization...

That... somehow makes sense...

“Why is she sending this to you?” Nux questioned.

“Well, we had a deal. I will umm... kill Miss Edda, obviously, since she is the subhead maid, she will become the new head maid, then she would let me get close to the Royal Harem.” Alger answered, however, with how his legs were trembling, anyone could tell that he was scared.

However, Nux didn't care, Alger has already got what he deserved, plus, there is a much more important question in Nux's mind right now.

“Why do you want to get close to the Royal Harem?”

“Because the Kingdome Of Skadi ordered me to.”

“Hmm? What does the kingdom want with the Royal Harem?” Nux questioned.

Previously, he wasn't interested in world politics, however, now, things were different.

Plus, this directly affected Allura and Edda, Nux had to do something, at the very least, he should know what was going around.

“I do not know what the kingdom wants with the Royal Harem; however, I do have a theory in my mind.”

# Chapter 149

“I do not know what the kingdom wants with the Royal Harem; however, I do have a theory in my mind,” Alger answered.

“What is your theory?” Nux questioned, however, inwardly, he was surprised.

‘He can think something through? What? Why didn’t I know that?’

“The Skyfall kingdom is going through tough times right now, Master Nux,” Alger muttered.

“Huh? But I heard that it was the strongest among the 3 kingdoms? Is that not the case?” Nux frowned.

“It is as you say, Master Nux. However, Skyfall Kingdom is facing a critical period right now.”

“Critical Period?”

“Yes, 20 years later, the king will abdicate his throne and one of his heirs will become the next king.

Initially, it wasn’t much of a problem since the crown prince practically had no competition, he was strong and had Duke Fulvianus supporting him from behind.

However, in the last 50-60 years, the Third Prince’s cultivation has increased by leaps and bounds.

The third prince, who is 89 years old, is already at the peak of the Grand Master Stage which is similar to the first prince, who is 122 years old.

Duke Merula, who was supporting the Third Prince didn’t fail to use this fact and started gaining support from other nobles.

‘If the Third Prince is as strong as the first prince even though he is 33 years younger than him, then doesn’t that mean the potential the Third Prince has is a lot higher compared to the First Prince? Won’t the Kingdom see unprecedented growth if it is under a genius like Third Prince?’

Words like these were spread around and many nobles started supporting the Third Prince.

This started the spark, it was not a rebellion, it was an appeal, an appeal to make the Third Prince, Lovis Skyfall, the crown prince of the Skyfall Kingdom.

The Appeal, however, was rejected.

But, everything wasn’t in vain.

The First Prince, Raguel Skyfall, lost the title of the Crown Prince.

This added fuel to the fire.

Since the Crown prince position was now empty, The Fourth prince, Evander Skyfall, who had the support of Duke Centho, joined in as well.

When it was noted that three out of four Duke supported the Three Princes, all eyes fell on Duke Vestalis, the remaining Duke.

Most of them thought of him as the breaking point, however, the Duke declared his neutrality on the matter.

The person he wanted to support, the Second Princess Quiriana Skyfall was not interested in the Throne and didn’t participate in this race.

With this, the politics inside the Skyfall kingdom is now revived with three Major Princes fighting with each other, each having a Duke Supporting them from behind.

Since historic times, these were the times when most of the Kingdoms fell, this is why I said that the Skyfall Kingdom is going through a Critical Period.

As for why the Kingdom of Skadi is interested in the Royal Harem, I assume that it is because they are trying to 'support' a prince from behind the scenes as well.

The Fifth Prince, Lucas Skyfall, should be their target, since the man doesn't have any support from any major noble, he would be happy to have a Kingdom supporting him from behind.

I am sure someone like him wouldn't mind being a puppet King.

Of course, that is just my prediction.”

Alger reported.

The more he spoke, the more Nux realized that this Alger might not be as useless as he initially thought.

He knew a lot more than Felberta, that's for sure.

Of course, that wasn't Felberta's fault either.

She was a Viscount, it is normal for a Marquee like Alger to know more about the situation than a Viscount like her.

'Haaahhh...'

Finally, Nux shook his head and sighed.

The situation was a lot more complicated than he initially thought.

Everything within the kingdom was okay, however, he didn't expect the Kingdom of Skadi to play it like this.

Of course, as Alger said, it was just his prediction, what he said might be wrong however, Nux had a feeling that he was right.

Just the fact that the Kingdom of Skadi controls 2 Marquees' houses inside the Skyfall Kingdom tells that the Kingdom of Skadi isn't simple.

‘I was too naïve. The way I think isn’t broad enough; I am unable to think about all the situations at the same time. I need to improve.’

Nux realized.

‘Why wouldn’t a kingdom use this golden chance to try and take over the other kingdom? This is the prime time to do whatever they wanted. They would be fools if they miss this chance. It’s a perfectly logical move on their part.

Now the question is... what should be my next move?’

Nux questioned inwardly and started thinking about the current problem more deeply.

However, in the end, he shook his head and sighed.

It was not the time yet.

He needs to discuss everything with his girls.

Only then could he come up with something.

“Alright, I heard you, I will think a little more about all this, you can go now.

As for what to say to that maid, I’ll tell you later.” Nux turned towards Alger and instructed.

“Yes,” Alger nodded and left.

Inwardly, Alger was happy.

‘Heh, I showed my worth, I hope I won’t get treated badly from now on. I don’t want to call Miss One every single day, though she left me alive yesterday and acted a little different from before, I have this feeling that she will kill me if I keep calling her like that.

Haahhh...

Master Nux, please don't treat me badly from now on...'

Yes, that was all the marquee wanted now.

To live a normal, tension-free life.

Nux didn't know what was going inside Alger's mind.

His mind was already filled with other thoughts, in the end, he decided to meet Felberta.

A small smile appeared on his face when he thought about it.

Being serious did not suit him.

He should spend time with his beloved women.

He will think about other things later.

Hehe~

# Chapter 150

“And then I returned from the part-”

“Returned? That is such a weak word, Sister Felberta. You did not return from the party, You ‘rushed back’ from the party.

Hahaha~ I still remember how the servants looked at you when you walked out of the carriage and started running towards your room.

Hahaha~ You looked so desperate that day, Sister Felberta”

Skyla stopped Felberta midway and laughed out loud.

She was still angry about when Felberta called her out on her breasts.

Heh. She will have her revenge now.

After Thyra was done sharing her story, the others girl started sharing theirs as well. Of course, Skyla, Lane and Felberta already knew each other’s stories, however, they still shared them.

An enjoyable topic was never not enjoyable; no matter how many times you repeat it.

“Pffft!” Thyra laughed out as she glanced at Felberta.

Lane, who was the shyest one in the group didn’t say anything but she was smiling as well.

“Sister Thyra, you have to know, back then, Lady Felberta was still a mortal, however, she was so desperate that day that she ran and she ran so fast that we, who were Advance Stage cultivators were having a hard time catching up to her”

Skyla laughed even more.

“Doesn’t that just mean that you two were useless since you were unable to catch up with a mortal like me?” Felberta questioned.

“Oh C’mon Sister Felberta, you know I don’t mean that in a literal way, we could easily catch up to you since you were a mortal.

What I was trying to tell was that you were so desperate that you didn’t care about your image and ran towards your room so you could meet Nux.

Hehe~ I even remember how you hugged him like a monkey as soon as you saw him.”

Skyla, however, didn’t back down and teased even more.

Lane, who was sitting right beside Skyla nodded in agreement.

Felberta’s face twitched in annoyance and she answered,

“So what if I was desperate? I was desperate for someone who belonged to me!

Tsk Tsk, at least I wasn’t shameless enough to peek at a couple having se-”

Felberta then paused.

Initially, she wanted to talk about how Skyla and Lane were peeking at her and Nux having sex, however, she quickly realized that Thyra here also peeked at them.

If she used the word ‘peek’, Thyra, Skyla and Lane would be categorized into the same category and that would be disadvantageous for her since she would become their target.

‘Haahh... if only Edda was here...’

Felberta sighed inwardly.

She then quickly changed what she was about to say and continued,

“Tsk Tsk, at least I am not shameless enough to spend my first night with the man I love and my Sister!”

Since she can't target Skyla, she targeted Lane instead!

Lane, who was now targeted opened her eyes wide in surprise.

“What? Did you spend your first night with Nux and your Sister? Who was that Sister?” Thyra questioned in surprise, she didn't expect this serious-looking girl to be so...

Perverted...

Lane's face turned red and Skyla who was beside her smiled slyly.

“Hehe~ I was that Sister! She spend her first night with Nux and I was there as well~

Actually, Sister Lane should be thankful to me, if not for me, she would have remained a virgin for the rest of her life, no, even worse, she would have found a useless man for herself and would have married him.

Hahaha~ That would have been so sad~” Skyla laughed again.

Her Sister Lane was laughing when Felberta targeted her.

Hehe~ She wouldn't leave her either.

However, that was her mistake.

‘Heh. All according to my Plan.’

Felberta smiled slyly as she watched Skyla and Lane, especially Lane, whose face was now as red as a tomato.

“T-That is because I was not perverted enough to smell Lady Felberta's panty in the bathroom!” Lane retorted with a red face and Thyra's eyes widened in surprise.

Thyra then turned towards Skyla and questioned,

“You did what?”

Skyla blushed as well, she glared at Lane with an expression that said,

‘How could you?’

However, Lane turned her head away,

‘You started it first’

That was her reply.

“Hahaha~ Indeed indeed~ Our little Skyla here was found smelling my panty when she was washing them~

Heh. How perverted~” Felberta commented.

Skyla lowered her head in shame.

“Wait, you really did that?” Thyra questioned and the more she questioned, the redder Skyla’s face got.

“Hahaha~” Felberta laughed out loud, Lane was smiling as well.

“T-That wa-”

“Haah? Why are you girls bullying my cute little Skyla?” Suddenly, Skyla heard a voice and her eyes brightened.

She then quickly turned around, and soon, a big smile appeared on her face as she dashed toward the voice.

“Nux!” She shouted.

Nux hugged her petite body gently and patted her head.

“Don’t worry, Don’t worry, no one will bully you, I am here”

“Hmm hmm” Skyla nodded as she snuggled into his chest and closed her eyes.

“Tsk Tsk. You are late so you don’t know what happened. We weren’t bullying her, instead, that little demon was the one who was bullying us. We were just getting back at her” Felberta retorted.

Lane nodded and although Thyra didn’t nod, she now knew that Skyla wasn’t as innocent as she looked.

“Sister Felberta said I have small breasts!” Skyla complained.

Nux frowned, he then moved his hand toward Skyls’s right breast and started rubbing it gently, “Hmm? How are they small? Don’t they have the perfect size?” He questioned in confusion.

“Yes, they fit your hand perfectly, they are perfect,” Skyla muttered and Nux nodded in agreement.

“It is Sister Felberta and Sister Lane who has unnecessarily large breasts!” Skyla continued however, this time, Nux didn’t nod.

He didn’t have a death wish.

“Ohh?”

Hearing Skyla, a small, sly smile appeared on Felberta’s face.

“Say... My darling Nux~” Felberta called.

“Y-Yes, what is it, My dear Fel?”

“What type of breasts do you prefer? The ones that ‘fits your hand perfectly’ or the ones that are ‘unnecessarily large’?”

# Chapter 151

“Say... My darling Nux~” Felberta called.

“Y-Yes, what is it, My dear Fel?” Nux forced out a smile.

He had this feeling that he won't like her question.

At all.

“What type of breasts do you prefer? The ones that ‘fits your hand perfectly’ or the ones that are ‘unnecessarily large?’”

And, his feeling was correct.

“H-Huh? What kind of question is that, My Dear Fel?” Nux tried to act ignorant.

“I am asking if you prefer mine, or Skyla's breasts,” Felberta repeated. A lot more clearly this time.

Skyla, who was enjoying Nux's pats opened her eyes and glanced at Nux's face with her eyes shined with curiosity.

She wanted to know as well!

She was confident in her victory after all.

“Ahh, so that's what you are asking?” Nux finally realized.

“Yes, that is what I am asking. Now answer the question,” Felberta narrowed her eyes.

“Well, actually, I don't have any preference. I am a simple man, I like everything equally.

Your breasts are big and squishy, they feel fantastic when I touch them and I want to keep touching them forever.

Similarly, Skylia's breasts are soft and lovely, combining them with Skylia's cute face, I get a boner every time I think about it."

Nux smiled and then continued,

"What I mean to say is, everything has its own advantage.

For example, let's talk about Edda, Edda is so amazing that yesterday night when she was talking with Allura, she found out something very interesting.

Something so good that will make our future journey a lot simpler than what we predicted.

She found out a good piece of news.

However, her subordinate, the subhead maid of the royal palace, that bitch is the opposite.

That bitch sent a letter to Alger that I did not like all."

Was what he saying and the topic that was going on had anything in common?

No.

However, was Nux able to succeed in what he was trying to do?

Hehe~

"Hmm? Good news? Letter? What are you talking about?" Felberta frowned and questioned.

Nux's smile widened and he continued, "That's why I was here in the first place, let's leave the letter aside, I will first tell you about what Edda found out."

“Alright.”

Felberta nodded.

Nux then started talking about the King of the Skyfall Kingdom and his weird hobby.

The more he talked, the more Felberta and the others narrowed their eyes in anger.

This way, Nux successfully changed the topic and started talking about ‘important’ things.

He successfully managed to dodge the bullet.

After the discussion about the king and the letter ended, Nux smiled perversely and started talking about ‘most important things’.

It was then decided that Skylia will be the first, then Lane and then Felberta.

As for Thyra, she will be receiving special special attention in the evening.

What happened next was Heaven for Nux as he enjoyed the four women for the rest of the day.

...

At the night, Nux was standing in front of all the four women and he had a smile on his face.

“I will go meet Edda now.”

“You have to treat Sister Edda nicely, she worked hard~

So reward her well~” Skylia muttered as she winked at Nux playfully.

“I’ll make sure to do that.” Nux smiled back.

“Also, don’t forget to talk about that letter with her,” Felberta muttered.

“Mhm, I won’t.”

“Have fun~” Skyla laughed.

Nux smiled, he then kissed all the four girls, and before leaving he turned towards Felberta and requested,

“Take Thyra to her new room.”

“Alright.” Felberta nodded.

“H-Huh? New room?” Thyra, who didn’t know anything about it questioned with a frown.

Skyla quickly grabbed her hand and exclaimed excitedly,

“Of course! Your new room is right next to mine! So we will talk at night. Hehe~ Teach me all those killing techniques, I want to kill people!” Skyla smiled innocently.

“H-Huh? But don’t I already have a room for myself?” Thyra questioned.

“Nope, you won’t be living there anymore.” Nux shook his head.

“Why?” Thyra questioned.

“That place is too far,”

“Huh? What do you mean?”

“I would need a few minutes to come to your room, it is too far from mine,” Nux muttered.

“Actually, you can stay in your previous room as well, however,”

“However what?”

“Do you want other assassins to see that perverted face of yours or hear you moans when we have sex?” Nux questioned with a sly smile on his face.

Thyra's face reddened in embarrassment.

She has just had a lovely session an hour ago and she was sure that she wouldn't be able to control her moans while having sex...

It just felt too good...

"A-Alright, I will move to a new room." Thyra nodded.

She had no choice.

This man was forcing her.

"Good girl," Nux smiled.

"Alright, I'll go now." He then activated his Conceal and left.

...

A few minutes later, he was already in front of the Royal palace and soon, he saw Edda walking out.

He deactivated his Conceal and just like how he did it the first time,

He extended his toward Edda and smiled,

"Miss Edda, shall we go?"

A sweet smile appeared on Edda's face as she took Nux's hand and nodded.

"But we don't have any carriage today," Nux muttered.

"Hmm?"

"How about I carry you to our destination on my back?"

Edda's smile widened and she nodded.

Heh, this was a lot better than riding a carriage.

She then quickly climbed on Nux's back and Nux dashed towards a random city.

...

2 hours later, Nux and Edda were sitting in an expensive-looking restaurant and a waiter placed delicious-looking food on their table.

"So that subhead maid, umm... I forgot her name..." Nux started.

"Edrea?"

"Yes, that woman, she send a letter to Alger that told him how you didn't leave the Royal Palace yesterday and requested to capture you quickly," Nux informed.

"Oh? She's keeping tabs on me? Not that I am very surprised. Heh. I wonder what face she will make when she learns that the person she is depending on is already our subordinate." Edda commented with a smile.

She didn't look very surprised by the news.

"Heh. That would be fun to see, although I would prefer not to see her face." Nux replied.

Edda smiled and nodded.

"Indeed, you don't have to see an abomination like her, it might hurt your eyes since you are so used to seeing a beautiful woman like me."

Nux smiled and then he questioned.

"How would you like to deal with her?"

A sly smile appeared on Edda's face as she answered,

"I do have something in mind."

# Chapter 152

A/N: I suggest that you wait for the and read both at the same time.

\*Skeleton Face\*

...

Inside a dimly lit room, a brown-skinned woman was hanging in the air, her hands were tied behind her back, while her legs were tied in a way that her ankles were touching her butt, and the ropes that tied her were then masterfully tied to the ceiling of the room, leaving the woman hanging in the air without any support whatsoever.

“Hahaha~ That’s a good position for you, is it not, Edda?” Suddenly, a voice was heard and a naked man walked inside the room.

“...” The woman didn’t say anything, she just observed the man’s dreamy figure and felt a little tingle inside her important area.

That woman was Edda and the one who tied her was Nux.

This was the ‘reward’ Nux was talking about.

He was sure that Edda would enjoy this.

He thought about it for hours, after all.

Nux then walked closer to Edda, and finally, she was able to see his charming face.

However, that wasn’t what Edda was focused upon.

Nux had tied her at a perfect height.

His little brother, that was standing tall was right in front of Edda's eyes, it was practically touching her nose.

"You want this, don't you?" Nux questioned as he moved forward and his little brother touched her cheek.

Edda's tongue popped out of her own as she tried licking it, however, she didn't forget to answer the question her 'Master' asked.

"Yesh"

Nux's smile widened, he always moved his waist a little as soon as Edda's tongue touched his little brother, a weird sense of satisfaction fulfilled his mind when he saw Edda changing her angles of approach just so she could lick his penis.

"Where do you want it?" Nux questioned.

"My Pusshy" Edda was quick to answer, however, her mind was still focused on the dick in front of her.

"Do you want it that much?"

"Yesh."

"Then how about we play a game?" Nux stepped back a little and questioned.

"A game?"

"Indeed." Nux's smile widened as he pointed at a large clock that he had placed on the wall.

"I call it, 'Time Game.'"

"Time game?"

"Yes, the rules are simple, I can do whatever you want with your body and you just have to NOT moan for 1 whole minute. Simple right?" Nux

questioned.

“...” Edda, however, didn't reply, she knew the explanation wasn't over yet.

“If you succeed,” Nux then moved his rod in front of Edda's eyes and whispered,

“Then I will ram this rod inside your pussy till you pass out from pleasure,”

Edda's felt her little sister twitching when she heard it.

“However,”

Then, Nux's smile widened and he continued.

“If you fail, then the game will be reset, but the time you have to control your moan will get added on by the time that was left.

For example, if you moan after 40 seconds, then for the next round, you will have to control your moan for 1 minute 20 seconds.

Are the rules clear?” Nux questioned while he rubbed his dick all over Edda's face while the girl tried to lick it with her tongue.

“Yesh.”

“Alright, so the game... begins!”

Suddenly, Edda's eyes turned focus and she sealed her lips!

She will not moan.

Nux smiled, he then walked towards Edda's little sister, he slid his rod onto Edda's shoulder, her arm, then her back and finally, it found its place on her butt.

“Mmm~” Even though Nux didn't do anything yet, just his dick touching all her body sent waves of pleasure inside Edda's body.

However, she did not moan.

Heh. Not that easily.

Nux smiled, and his right hand then moved towards Edda's sacred place, Nux raised his eyebrows when he noticed that her pussy was wet.

He smiled, he then gently started circling his finger outside Edda's entrance.

This little gentle touch sent waves and waves of pleasure inside Edda's body as more and more juices gushed out of her little sister.

However, Edda was determined to win.

She did not moan.

Nux was patient as well, he continued circling his finger around her entrance, Edda's body, which was hanging in the air started moving slowly like a pendulum.

Since she was hanged, every little movement Edda made to overcome that itchy feeling she felt was reflected amazingly.

Edda then glanced at the clock and her eyes widened in surprise.

20 seconds.

Only 20 seconds have passed.

And this was already getting unbearable for her, Nux was doing nothing but circling his finger around her pussy...

Shouldn't he just ram his finger inside now!?

She didn't realize one minute was such a long time.

Edda gritted her teeth, she then closed her eyes and tried to ignore her little sister's frustrations.

She waited...

She waited for entire an entire hour, resisting that unbearable frustration with sheer willpower. She then opened her eyes, and,

Only 5 seconds had passed.

That meant 25 seconds in total...

Edda's whole body trembled in frustration. The pendulum-like motion her body was doing increased, indicating that Edda was getting frustrated.

However, no matter how frustrated she was, Edda did not moan.

Nux continued what he was doing with no pressure at all.

He was actually enjoying the frustrated look that had appeared on Edda's face.

Soon, he noticed that 5 more seconds had passed.

His smile then widened, his forefinger and thumb met and,

*\*Flick\**

He flicked Edda's Clitoris.

“AAAnnhhhh!!” Edda, who didn't expect that Nux would do something like that so suddenly moaned out loud and her eyes widened in surprise.

If her hands were tied, she would have slapped herself with all her strength.

She couldn't believe she moaned so easily.

“30 Seconds.

Good Job, My perverted Maid.

Good job on holding out for 30 seconds.

However, in the end, you still lost.

Therefore, now you would have to hold out for 1 minute and 30 seconds to win.

Are you ready for that?"

# Chapter 153

“Now you would have to hold out for 1 minute and 30 seconds to win.

Are you ready for that?”

Nux questioned with a wide smile on his face.

“...”

However, Edda did not reply.

She was more focused on winning the game.

1 minute and 30 seconds weren't difficult.

She just has to make sure that this time does not increase anymore.

“That's the spirit”

Nux complimented.

“Alright, round 2 begins... now!”

Nux announced and his finger moved back to her clitoris.

Edda's body tensed up when she sensed where his hand was moving.

“Mmhhmmm~”

Her body trembled in pleasure when Nux's forefinger touched her clitoris. A big wave of pleasure assaulted her body, however, Edda bit her lips to stay focused.

She would not lose!

Nux continued to rub her sensitive clitoris gently without any mercy for the next 10 seconds, and Edda's pussy, which was already on an edge, trembled and,

\*Squirt\*

“Mmmnhmmmm~”

She came.

There were no sudden movements, no sudden pain, just plain, gentle rubbing and Edda came.

Well, she can't be blamed either, she was more focused on not moaning rather than containing her orgasm.

“Was that a moan?” Nux questioned.

Edda, who had sealed her mouth with everything she had replied quickly,

“NO! That was no- AAnnhhhh~”

Nux grinned.

He knew that Edda wouldn't open her mouth no matter what happened, therefore, he used this little trick and as soon as she opened her mouth to reply, he flicked her clitoris again.

\*Squirt\*

Edda didn't say anything, she just enjoyed her previous orgasm to the full extent and once she was done, she turned toward Nux and,

“You cheated!”

“Heeh? When did I cheat? You can't be thinking of placing the blame on me, are you?” Nux questioned.

“...”

Edda turned silent.

She didn't know how to answer.

She moaned.

Nux had won fair and square.

“10 Seconds,

That was how long you could hold out for in this round.” Nux muttered.

Edda lowered her head in disappointment.

“So subtracting 10 seconds from 1 minute 30 seconds makes it 1 minute 20 seconds.

So for the next round, you would have to stop yourself from moaning for 2 minutes 20 seconds.

Can you do it, My perverted maid?”

“Shouldn't it only be 1 minute 50 seconds? Why is the penalty of the previous round being counted!?” Edda questioned in surprise.

“Heeh? Didn't I say it before? The time you have to hold back your moan will get added on by the time that was left? I said that, right?”

“...”

Edda turned silent.

“Alright, round 3 starts... now!” Nux announced and his fingers had already started moving towards her little sister.

This time, he didn't circle around her entrance like before, this time, he directly plunged his forefinger inside her vagina.

“Mmmhhmm~~”

Edda's body was already sensitive due to the orgasm she had just had, therefore, as soon as Nux's finger entered her insides, her body trembled in delight.

"Is that a moan I heard?" Nux questioned.

"..."

But of course, Edda wasn't going to fall for the same trick.

Nux smiled, and then without wasting any time, his middle finger and ring finger entered her insides.

"Mmmmmnnmm~~"

His 3 fingers then started making a mess inside Edda's vagina. He teased and rubbed 3 of her sensitive spots at the same time.

However, that was not it,

With his thumb, Nux started rubbing her clitoris as well.

This heightened the pleasure Edda was feeling to an unbearable degree, her eyes widened in surprise and,

"MMMHhmmmmm~~"

\*Squirt\*

She came again.

And this time, she came very quickly.

"Shouldn't you inform me before you squirt like this? You are such a bad girl Edda," Nux questioned with a teasing smile.

"..." However, Edda didn't reply.

She was not stupid, she knows that he was trying to open her mouth.

She won't do it no matter what happens.

However,

“And you know what happens to bad girls?

They get punished!”

Nux's smile widened and,

\*Pah\*

He slapped Edda's juicy ass.

“AAAAnnnhhhhH~~”

Edda had just orgasmed a second ago, her body was incredibly sensitive right now. The mixture of pain and pleasure she felt due to Nux's spank forced her to moan out loud.

“30 Seconds, My perverted Maid.

Now you would need to control yourself for 2 minutes and 50 seconds.”

Nux announced with a smile on his face.

Finally, Edda realized that this game might not be as easy as she imagined.

And, she was right.

The game continued, it was as if Nux had mastered the ways to make her moan.

Sometimes, he would let her play with her breasts before pinching her nipples, sometimes, he would use his dick and rub it on her entrance.

Sometimes, he would pull the ropes to increase her pain, then he would flick her clitoris, or he would directly plunge 3 fingers inside her pussy at the same time.

All in all, every action he did was incredibly pleasure-inducing and to make matter worse, the more time passed, the more Edda came and the more sensitive her body became.

...

“Now you have to hold back your moan for 10 minutes 15 seconds,” Nux muttered with a smile on his face.

Right now, Edda was a mess.

A complete mess.

Her juices were leaking out uncontrollably, her body was being swayed like a pendulum without stop.

Actually, Nux was now sure that if he does touch her and let her stay like this, she would moan out loud within 10 minutes.

That was how sensitive she was right now.

“I-Is this a r-reward of a p-punishment...?” Edda couldn’t take it anymore and question. Her face was completely red now.

An evil smile appeared on Nux’s face, he then walked in front of Edda and questioned.

“What do you think? Are you enjoying it?”

Then, a perverted smile appeared on Edda’s red face as she answered,

“I am loving it~”

As she said that, her body swayed even more, indicating how much she was trying to move but couldn’t.

“However,” Suddenly, she called.

“I am at my limits now~”

I need that Dick!” Edda screamed out loud.

“Heh. My perverted maid.” Nux called out and he then placed his rod in front of Edda’s lower lips,

“You should have said that sooner.

It was hard for me to hold back as well.”

He then started lubricating his rod with her juices and,

“The game is over, it’s now time for awards!”

“AAAGNNnnnhhhhhH~~”

Edda moaned loudly as Nux entered her insides in one move.

“Ugghhhhhh!”

Nux groaned in pleasure as well.

Edda’s walls were a lot tighter than normal. Maybe that was because she was left unattended and was teased for such a long time.

“Ahhhh~~ This is the best~” Edda closed her eyes as she enjoyed the heavenly feeling.

Nux’s one thrust, and she already entered her own world.

A world full of pleasure and delight.

“Aannhhhhh~~”

Nux then pulled his dick back and rammed his dick inside her again.

He then bent down a little and grabbed Edda’s breasts roughly.

The way she was tied, Edda couldn’t move much, therefore, she was completely at his mercy.

And Edda loved that feeling.

She didn't have to care about anything, she just has to moan.

“AANNnhhhh~~ NUX! You are the best!”

And she will do just that.

Nux smiled, suddenly, he grabbed her pink white hair and rammed his dick inside her pussy as he pulled her hair.

“AAHHhhhhnnnN~”

Edda's walls tightened even more and she moaned die to pleasure and pain.

Soon, Nux's movement turned smoother and faster,

“Annnhh! ANNH! Annhh~”

\*Pah\* \*Pah\* \*Pah\*

The room was filled with sounds of flesh meeting flesh and Edda's moans.

The scent of Edda's juices and sweat had already spread all over the room, if anyone enters the room right now,

He would surely be surprised by the depravity these two have fallen two.

“Annnhh! ANNH! Annhh~”

\*Pah\* \*Pah\* \*Pah\*

However, Edda wouldn't have cared.

She would have just continued moaning.

Being hanged like that was something new for her, and when Nux started fucking her in this position, her excitement rose to another level.

Whenever she looks at the floor below, she feels excited.

The one thing stopping her from falling on the floor under Nux's merciless thrusts were the ropes and Nux's hands.

She somehow got very excited thinking about it.

\*Pah\*

“AANNNHhhhhhhHH~”

Suddenly, Nux spanked her ass and as if a switch was flipped,

Edda moaned out loud and her walls tightened to an unbearable degree.

It was as if her pussy was trying to merge with Nux's dick.

“UgghhhhhhhH!! SO GOOD!!” The pleasure Nux was feeling increased.

Nux felt his body weakening, therefore, he quickly grabbed Edda's breasts for support and since his grip was hard,

“AANnnnhhhh~” Edda moaned even more and her walls tightened again.

“I am cumminnnngggg~” Nux groaned in pleasure and finally let go!

He filled Edda's insides with his semen, and Edda's body trembled in delight.

“I am Cummiingggg againnnnn~”

Her already sensitive body came again.

However, this orgasm she had was a lot more pleasurable than the ones before.

“Haaahhh... haahh.... Haa...”

Edda breathed heavily, this was most definitely the best session the two of them had.

Being hung in the air like this...

She might get addicted to this.

Her eyes then felt heavy, however, just as she was about to close them, a strong, manly scent assaulted her nose.

She opened her eyes and saw Nux's half-erect dick right in front of her face, touching her cheek right under her right eye.

“Clean it.”

The night was still long!

# Chapter 154

‘This was the best night I have ever had in my entire life!’

‘Heh. It was an amazing experience for me as well’

‘Mhm! Let’s do it again!’

‘Hahaha~ Calm down Edda, we can’t do something like this regularly. Even though you are a cultivator, you will tire yourself out~’

‘Ughh... I wish I could raise my cultivation faster...’

‘Don’t worry, you will become a Grand Master Stage Cultivator soon.’

‘Hehe~ You and I will need to work hard for it, especially you’

‘Heh. I am not scared of hard work, rather, I enjoy it’

‘Of course you do’

A big smile appeared on Edda’s face as she recalled her conversation with Nux.

Last night was truly awesome and anyone could tell how happy Edda was by looking at the wide and silly smile on her face.

Right now, she was rushing towards the Royal Palace.

No actually, rather than her, Nux, who was carrying her was hurrying towards the Palace.

Why?

Because she was late again.

However, she wasn’t as panicked as before.

It had already happened a few times.

She doesn't really care about it now.

Also, she won't be able to change anything even if she panics, so what's the point in worrying about it?

Wouldn't it be better to just tighten her hug around Nux and enjoy the ride?

"Heeh? You are pretty relaxed today huh..." Nux commented as he noticed it as well.

"Indeed..." Edda answered lazily.

"Huh? Didn't you say that you will work hard so that we can have a session like this again? Why are you acting all lazy now?" Nux questioned.

"I am saving my energy so that I can work later."

"Ahh, that makes sense."

"Also, it's not like I will work hard as a head maid of the Royal Palace... that, I will do slowly and lazily.

I will only work hard for the plan that you have for Lad- Sister Allura." Edda answered.

"Tsk Tsk, what a bad head maid," Nux commented.

"Hoh? Aren't I the best head maid? Am I not your favourite?" Edda questioned.

"I am just talking from the Royal Palace's point of view. In my point of you, you are the best Head maid I could ever hope for. My serious outside but a pervert inside head maid." Nux smiled.

A smile appeared on Edda's face as she answered,

"I only care about your point of view~"

“Hahaha~”

The two of them soon appeared in front of the Royal Palace and Nux stopped.

“Ugh... I need to work again...” Edda groaned in displeasure.

“Just keep it up for a few more days~” Nux smiled.

Edda smiled back before she climbed down from his back and started walking towards the Palace.

“Alright, I will meet you soon~” Edda smiled and waved her hand at Nux.

Nux smiled, he kissed her lips and then turned around.

Edda then turned around and walked towards the Palace as well.

However, as soon as she entered the palace, she heard a high-pitched voice.

“Head Maid Edda, You are Late.

I know that the spring has bloomed a little late in your life, however, that does not mean you can ignore your duties.

This is the 4th time now, how many times are you going to keep repeating the same mistakes?

How are you going to fix that 5 minutes gap that you have created?”

Edda sighed inwardly and glanced at the woman standing in front of her with a dead look on her face.

‘What a bitch like voice and face.’

She thought inwardly and soon, a smile appeared on Edda’s face.

“I apologize that I am late, however, being loved by someone is a completely new experience for me since unlike you, who goes whoring

around sleeping with any men they find for the tiniest of advantage, I was a pure and innocent woman a few days ago.

And having just tasted the forbidden fruit, it is a little difficult for me to handle up with everything.”

Suddenly, a strict expression appeared on her face and she narrowed her eyes.

“However, Sub Head Maid Edrea, I still do not understand how and since when was this your duty to keep tabs on my schedule?

I believe people responsible for this can do their work just fine, you do not need to involve yourself.”

Edrea’s face turned red in anger.

‘This bitch really has a vile mouth’

“”Head Maid Edda, I indeed do not have any obligations to keep tabs on your schedule, however, I feel that if the Head Maid of the Royal Palace shows irresponsible behaviour like this, other maids might not do their work properly.

I just don’t want you to set a bad example, Head Maid Edda.”

“Oh? Is that so?”

“Indeed.” Edrea nodded with a smile on her face.

“Ah, I just remembered, have you checked the rations?”

“Yes, Head Maid Edda, I have checked the ration, wheat, pulses, fruits and vegetables, everything is stocked up and is ready to use.

You don’t have to worry about it, I do not slack off”

“What about clothes, have you made sure all the washed clothes are sent back to where they came from?”

“Yes, I had a few maids check the whole process, it is done. As I said, you do not need to worry, I do not slack off.”

“Good, Ah yes, I remembered, Liliana is on a holiday today, have you distributed her work to other maids?”

“Huh?” Suddenly, Edrea frowned.

“What? Have you done it or not?” Edda questioned.

“But you did not order me to do it...”

“Haah? Aren’t you the subhead maid? Aren’t you the one who is responsible to manage everything after me? Don’t tell me you need an order to do something as simple as this!

What’s the use of having you around if I need to remind you to do things like this?

Aren’t you practically useless?

Why don’t you become a normal maid?

You asked me how I am going to compensate for those 5 minutes I have wasted but what about you? How are you going to compensate for this?

Who will do Liliana’s work? You? Huh?

What a useless woman!” Edda screamed in anger.

What was Edda doing?

She was using her status to bully Edrea.

Actually, even if Edrea had done something about it, Edda would have simply found fault in something else.

She was the boss here!

Can Edrea do anything about it?

Heck no!

Actually, her trying to go against her superior was a stupid idea to begin with.

Edda was not easy to bully.

Now, Edrea could only listen and grit her teeth in frustration.

“It’s better to focus on your own work rather than doing useless things. I have had enough of your incompetent ass roaming around here.

Fix yourself or you will have to face the consequences, am I clear?”

Edda questioned.

“...”

“I asked, Am I Clear?”

Edrea gritted her teeth in anger however, in the end...

“Y-Yes”

She could only bow and nod.

# Chapter 155

“I heard you got a little angry in the morning? What happened? What happened?” Allura questioned with an excited look on her face.

“Oh C’mon Lady Allura, don’t act like you don’t know what happened. I am sure you have heard this already.”

Edda answered as she shook her head repeatedly.

“Hahaha~ That is true, however, if I can directly ask everything in detail from the person responsible for the hot news, why would I do that?” Allura laughed out loud and answered.

“Haahh... why are you so interested in something like this, Lady Allura.”

“Oh C’mon, don’t take away my fun. Tell me! Tell me!”

Edda glanced at Allura’s excited face and sighed.

“Alright, I’ll tell you what happened. It all started when I walked into the palace...”

Then, Edda started talking about how Edrea stopped her and how their fight started.

...

5 minutes later, when Edda recounted everything that happened, a sly smile appeared on Allura’s face.

She had finally found her source of entertainment for today.

“Hmm, I understand. So that’s what happened...”

However, Edda, don't you think you were too rude?" Allura questioned with a smile.

"Huh? How was I rude?"

"In the end, it was all your fault wasn't it?"

"Huh?"

"Don't act innocent, you were the one who was late, although she might have come out as rude, in the end, she was in the right," Allura muttered.

"Hmph! She has no right to call me out on being late, there are people who are responsible for it and my salary is being deducted accordingly every time I am late!" Edda snorted.

"Heehh? I didn't know you were that addicted~" Allura teased.

"Didn't I already say? My lover is just that good in bed." Edda replied.

After the reward yesterday, she would use every single chance she gets to increase Nux's points in Allura's eyes.

Of course, it wasn't beneficial right now since Allura didn't know that Nux and Edda's lover was the same person, however, this won't be kept hidden for a long time.

"Yea yea, I know, your lover is good in bed, I get that. Don't repeat it again and again."

"Important things must be repeated as many times as possible" Edda nodded to herself.

Seeing her acting like that, Allura shook her head, this girl was a lost cause, also, she would lose her entertainment if the topic is changed.

She needed to keep talking about the same topic.

She could smell the entertainment.

“However, Edda,” Allura called.

“Hmm?”

“Although we were not very close before, from the few interactions and rumours I heard about you, I predicted you to be a calm and elegant person.

I didn’t know you would shut someone up using your authority just because she pointed at your mistake.

No, actually, I am sure you wouldn’t do something like this normally, did Edrea do something I don’t know about?

Is there bad blood between you two?

You are the head maid and she is the subhead maid, is there some kind of rivalry going on between you two?”

Allura questioned as her eyes gleamed in interest.

Edda could see stars of excitement shining inside those blue eyes of hers.

“You are right, Lady Allura. That Edrea isn’t as innocent as you think.” Edda muttered.

“Heeh? What do you mean? I do know about how she slept with men to rise to her current position, however, are you telling me that there is something more?” Allura questioned.

“Wait, you know about it?” Edda questioned in surprise.

“It’s not really a secret you know; also, I have many eyes inside the Royal Palace. I know a lot more than you think,” Allura smiled like a mischievous child, however, with that alluring body of her that oozed out mature charm, she looked more like a succubus than a child.

“Ughh... alright, I get it...” Edda nodded.

Then, her expression turned solemn and she continued,

“However, Edrea is a lot bigger bitch than you think,”

Saying that, Edda passed the letter Edrea sent to Alger to Allura.

Allura quickly opened the letter with an excited look on her face,

‘To My one and only love, Algerama,

The bird did not fly out today...

...

...I hope you find her soon’

“What is this?” Allura questioned with a frown.

‘If it was a poem, the writers need to work hard on it, no, maybe he should quit, at least he won’t create something as cursed as this...’ She thought inwardly.

“This is the letter that Edrea send to Marquee Alger.”

Edda revealed.

Allura’s eyes widened in surprise and soon, her eyes gleamed in interest as she joined a few dots.

“Are Marquee Alger and that Edre-”

“No, there is nothing like that. This isn’t a love letter, Lady Allura.”

“Then what is it?” Allura questioned.

“It is a letter that carries information, information about me.

The ‘bird’ in this letter is me, she’s telling the Marquee that I didn’t leave the mansion yesterday.

And by ‘I hope you find her soon’, she means that she hopes that Marquee capture me soon.”

Edda then told everything about how and what Marquee and Edrea were planning and how they were trying to capture her.

The more she listened, the wider Allura’s eyes got.

This wasn’t mere entertainment now, lives are at stake here!

“Why is she doing something like that?” Allura questioned.

“To become the head maid,” Edda answered.

“But is it worth it, is it worth it to become a Head maid at the cost of someone’s life?” Allura questioned.

“Hmph, not only head maid, that bitch is willing to kill and get rid of anyone if she can profit in some way. I have investigated a little, I am not the first person she is trying to kill.

She has done this before and has succeeded in it.

She’s not just a whore, Lady Allura.

She’s a scheming woman who would do whatever she can to achieve her goals.”

“T-That’s terrible...”

Allura muttered in shock.

However, soon, she narrowed her eyes and questioned,

“Wait, this letter should be a secret, how did you get your hands on it?” Allura questioned.

A smile then appeared on Edda’s face as she answered,

“I got it from my lover.”

# Chapter 156

“Wait, this letter should be a secret, how did you get your hands on it?” Allura questioned.

A smile then appeared on Edda’s face as she answered,

“I got it from my lover.”

“Hmm? Your lover?” Allura frowned.

“Didn’t I tell you before?”

“Yes, yes, you have already told me that your lover is good in bed but what does it have to do with this?”

“Pffttt!” Edda laughed out loud.

“Lady Allura, though it is indeed true that my lover is good in bed, right now, I am not talking about it.

I am saying that along with being good in bed, My lover is very strong as well.”

“Huh? Strong?”

“Yes, otherwise, do you think I am stupid to leave the Palace even though I know someone is after my life?”

“I do not understand what you are trying to say” Allura shook her head in confusion.

“Marquee Alger, the one who that bitch sent a letter to,”

“Yes, what about him?” Allura questioned.

“That Marquee is my Lover’s subordinate,” Edda revealed.

“What!?”

Allura questioned in surprise.

“Yes, the one who gave the letter to my lover and translated it was the Marquee himself,” Edda informed.

“B-But, isn’t a Marquee... a Marquee?”

“Huh?”

“I mean, a Marquee is a leader of a Marquee’s house, how is he someone else’s subordinate?”

“Heh. There are many nobles who are subordinates of other nobles, Lady Allura.”

Allura then narrowed her eyes and questioned,

“Is your lover a Duke?”

“Huh? Of course not. My lover is a commoner that is not common at all.” Edda replied with a smile.

Heh. The roles are reversed now.

Now, Edda was the one who was seeking entertainment by seeing Allura’s different reactions.

“T-Then why did a Marquee become a subordinate of a commoner?” Allura questioned.

“That, is a secret”

However, Edda placed a finger on her lips and smiled.

Allura pouted and then, another question popped into her mind.

“Wait, if Marquee Alger is a subordinate of your lover, then why did he make a deal with Edrea?”

“Well, it’s a long story, let’s just say that the Marquee wasn’t my lover’s subordinate from the start, it was only because he attacked me that he became my lover’s subordinate.”

“I do not understand what you are saying at all...”

Allura was full of questions now.

Edda just smiled and answered, “You will understand everything soon enough, Lady Allura.”

Allura felt that she would start having a headache if she talked more about Edda’s lover, the Marquee and all that.

It was better to return to the initial topic.

Plus, Edda seemed very chill about Edrea trying to kill her, so Allura didn’t think that she would come out as rude.

“So, what are you planning to do with Edrea?” Allura questioned.

Suddenly, Edda’s smile widened and Allura couldn’t help but feel a little unsettled when she saw that smile.

“Are you going to kill her?” Allura questioned.

“Hmm? Of course not, Lady Allura. I am an elegant lady, not a blood-loving psychopath.” Edda replied and Allura sighed in relief.

“Then what are you going to do?” Allura questioned.

“Heh. I will force her to work more and more and more.”

“Huh? What do you mean?” Allura questioned with a frown.

Edda’s smile widened even more and she questioned,

“How do you think I am here in your room, chatting with you so leisurely?”

“How?”

Edda then shook her head and recalled what happened a few minutes ago.

...

“Edrea, I need to talk with Lady Allura about something important, be sure to check with the cleaning department and read and check all their reports.

Remember, the cleaning department messes things up a lot, so you would have to personally go and check every single room and see if it is cleaned or not.

If it is not, then you would have to note that room number. Once you are done, give all those room numbers to the cleaning department so that they can clean the room again.”

Edda walked towards Edrea, who was sitting on her chair comfortably, taking her well-deserved 15 minutes of rest after working for 3 hours consecutively.

“Huh?” Edrea then frowned, however, Edda wasn’t done yet.

“After you are done with this, you will have to go to the kitchen and distribute the food amongst the maids. Do it quickly, we don’t have a lot of time before breakfast.”

“Huh? But isn’t that your duty?” Edrea questioned.

Edda then glared at Edrea and retorted.

“Are you dumb or something? Or are there some unneeded fluids inside those ears of yours? Didn’t I say that I need to talk with lady Allura about something important?”

“...” Edrea gritted her teeth in anger, however, she did not reply.

‘You bitch! What ‘important talks’ are you just going there to ease her curiosity?’

Of course, she can’t say that out loud.

She might be able to say something to Edda, however, there was no way she would have an easy life if she offended Allura.

She could only do whatever Edda was telling her to do.

‘Alright whatever, it will only take 1 hour... if I do it quickly, I might finish everything in 45-50 minutes, then I can rest for 10 minutes.’

However, as if she had read her mind, Edda continued,

“Ah right, I totally forgot, the guards said that there were rats in the south guard post, every other maid is busy so you would have to go and clean it yourself.

Do it after you are done with the things I mentioned before.”

“I would need to go inside the guard post myself?” Edrea questioned in disgust.

“Haahh? What’s with that face? You didn’t look very disgusted when you used to go there at the night, so why now?” Edda retorted and Edrea’s face turned red in anger.

Edda was using her authority to bully Edrea again!

“I will be busy talking with Lady Allura for the next few hours, be sure to do everything I said before I return else, be ready to face the consequences,” Edda ordered in a strict tone.

Edrea lowered her head and then bit her lips before she calmed down and answered,

“Yes,”

# Chapter 157

“Edrea, listen here, Mina, Sarrah, Malika and Maya won’t be coming today. Therefore, you would have to do their part of the work as well.

This is the list of everything you have to do, I am busy since I need to talk with Lady Allura, I hope everything is done before I return.

Am I clear?”

“Yes...”

Edrea took the list from Edda and saw there were 15 extra things she would have to do today, alone.

Edrea, however, did not complain.

No, it was better to say she did not have the energy to complain.

There were big black dark circles below her eyes, her makeup was a mess and her shoulders were hung as if she did not have any energy left.

She looked like she was a walking corpse.

However, no one could blame her either, for the last 5 days, Edda has been forcing her to work for 25 hours a day.

She did not even give her a chance to take a carefree and calm breath.

Not only that but,

“Hey... don’t you think Head Maid Edda is abusing her authority?” A maid who saw everything questioned another maid.

“Are you new here?” The other maid questioned.

“Yes, I am. I joined 2 weeks ago”

“Ah, so that’s why you said something like that. I am still fine, however, don’t say that in front of any other maid, okay?”

“Hmm? Why?”

“Head Maid Edda is very popular amongst the maids and her popularity is well-deserved. She works extra hard just so she could ease our workload, not only that, she even talked with the minister to hire more maids so that our workload can decrease.

A few years ago, we maids had to work so much that many of us died due to overexertion, however, ever since Head Maid Edda became the head maid, everything changed for the better.

Head Maid Edda is an idol of almost every maid in the palace.

If you say that Head Maid is abusing her authority in front of someone else, you might not get along with other maids, remember that.”

“But why does it look lik-”

“Who knows? But I am sure it is Sub Head Maid Edrea’s fault and Head Maid Edda is just punishing her.”

“Oh... I understand...”

The maids then walked away and Edrea, who heard them, gritted her teeth.

Yes, no matter how much she complains against Edda, no one was willing to believe her and everyone just placed the blame on her.

There was no justice for her at all!

Edda was not only abusing her Authority but she was abusing her popularity as well!

This was simply unfair!

Edda, who noticed her expression smiled coldly.

For these past 5 days, she has only done 3 things, talking with Allura, spending blissful nights with Nux and bullying Edrea.

She was really having a time of her life right now!

...

“Thyra Cruse, are you willing to be my Woman with all your heart?”

Inside Alge- Nux’s Mansion, Nux stood in front of Thyra and questioned.

“I-I am...” Thyra, whose face was as red as a tomato answered.

Then, she felt weird energy entering her body and she frowned, this was similar to the time when she became Nux’s slave, however, at the same time, it was different.

“W-What did you do?” Thyra questioned with a frown.

“Hehe~ it’s another one of my weird magic.”

“Another magic?”

“Yeah.”

“Aren’t I already under that weird magic of yours? Why bother with another magic?” Thyra questioned in confusion.

“Huh?” Nux frowned.

“Huh?” Thyra frowned because Nux frowned.

Suddenly, a smile appeared on Nux’s face as he realized what she was talking about.

“Hahaha~ My cute little assassin, I have already removed the Slave Seal from you, I did it 4 days ago.”

“What!?”

“Yeah? Didn’t you realize it?”

“...” Thyra stayed silent. She felt that he lying, however, she still found it hard to believe that she didn’t notice that the weird magic was lifted from her 4 days ago.

“What? Do you need proof?”

“Hmm, let’s try this,

Thyra Cruse, jump into the air!” Nux ordered.

Normally, Thyra’s body would have done what Nux ordered, however, this time, it did not move on its own.

“Do you believe me now?” Nux questioned.

Suddenly, a dagger appeared in Thyra’s hand and in one quick movement, she placed her dagger on Nux’s neck. Her movement was so quick that Nux was unable to react and now, her dagger was 1 cm close to his neck, any simple movement, and he would be beheaded.

“Do you remember the promise I made to you before?” She questioned with a cold smile on her face.

“The promise to be my woman with all your heart?” Nux questioned back.

“NO! Not that! My promise to kill you as soon as I get rid of this pesky magic of yours!”

“Ah, you are talking about that...” Nux nodded in realization.

Thyra frowned when she saw how carefree Nux was, however soon, she saw a glint in Nux’s eyes, however, before she could react, Nux moved and,

Kissed her lips.

However, the kiss didn't last long as Nux quickly broke it, he then looked into Thyra's icy blue eyes and smirked.

“How are you planning to kill me? Sucking me dry with your tight pussy?”

Thyra's face turned red as she answered,

“D-Do not think I am joking! I will r-really kill you!”

“Uh huh,” Nux nodded as he gave her another peck on her lips.

Then, Nux grabbed Thyra's waist and pulled her close to him.

“How about you try killing me in the evening after I am done with what I am about to do? What do you say?” Nux questioned.

Thyra's face turned even redder and she nodded.

“A-Alright, be prepared...”

“Sure sure, now you are coming with me, right?”

“mm”

Nux smiled.

Heh.

Thyra was cute indeed.

‘Are you ready? She's about to leave’

Then, a playful glint flashed in his eyes as he heard Edda's voice.

‘Yes, I am about to leave as well~’

‘All the best. Not that you will be needing it, I have done a good job filling Sister Allura's mind with indecent thoughts after all’ Edda replied.

Nux shook his head and chuckled.

Yes, today was the day he will have another 'lunch' with Allura.

# Chapter 158

‘Ugh... Why am I so nervous today...?’

Allura groaned inwardly.

‘Isn’t it just a normal lunch?’

She thought inwardly.

She was really confused and couldn’t understand her own thoughts.

‘Isn’t it just a normal lunch with a young man I met a week ago?’

So what if my husband, the king of this kingdom does not know about it?

It is still a normal lunch, right?’

Allura thought inwardly and soon, her face turned a little red.

‘Ughh... Allura you idiot what are you thinking!’

Allura shook her head repeatedly.

‘It’s all because of that Edda~

That girl only talked about how good her lover is, how he cares about her, how he looks after her, how incredibly handsome he is and... and how good he is... in the bed.

It’s all because of those indecent things that Edda talked about.

Also, why is she using my name to bully that other maid!?’

I mean, I don’t really have any problem with it... but still...’

Allura's thoughts then diverted to other topics as she looked out of the carriage through the window.

Yes, Allura Skyfall has left the palace again.

Anyone who knows about her would find it completely normal.

She was named 'The Bored Concubine' after all.

However, if they knew what she was going to do, they won't find it normal at all.

Meeting a man for the first time could be called a coincidence.

Meeting him the second time could be blamed on curiosity.

The third time could be said that they were now friends.

However, if you leave the palace to meet the man again, especially when you have not told anyone about this 'friend' of yours,

That is definitely not normal.

That is suspicious.

Of course, since we are talking about the Royal Palace, a place that is filled with scheming and plotting, where everyone has their own goals and is trying different things to achieve those goals, a place where no one cares about anyone but themselves,

Nobody knew about this suspicious behaviour of Allura Skyfall.

And since nobody knew,

Nothing was suspicious.

Everything was as normal as it could possibly be.

Normal indeed.

“Stop the carriage.”

While Allura was lost in her thoughts, the carriage was stopped. The doors of the carriage were opened and Allura’s protectors appeared.

“Lady Allura, I think we should return.” One of the protectors suggested.

“Huh? Why? What happened?” Allura questioned with a frown.

She could see that the protector wasn’t just saying it so he could ease his work, rather, he looked worried about something.

“This place is too quiet. I have a bad feeling about this. Bruce has gone ahead to check the place, but I still feel it is wiser to return.” The protector informed.

Allura frowned, she wanted to nod since she didn’t want to take any needless risks.

‘But the lunch...’

She was conflicted, she wanted to meet Nux as well, he promised that he would give her an interesting book after all.

“William, we should leave.” However, before she could think too much, Bruce, the other protector, returned and spoke hurriedly.

“What happened?” William questioned.

“I checked everything ahead, it is eerily silent. I checked the houses but no one was inside, all the houses are empty, this is a busy area, something like this is definitely not normal.

I don’t know what is happening, but I suggest we should leave this place as soon as possible,” Bruce reported.

“Alright, we will return.” William’s face turned solemn and he nodded.

This time, he didn’t even ask Allura’s permission.

For them, her safety mattered the most.

This situation was suspicious, to avoid unnecessary danger, they would have to act on their own, even if it offends Lady Allura.

‘But the book...’

Allura wanted to deny, however, she knew she wouldn’t be able to change her protectors’ minds.

She would have to miss her lunch today.

A sad look appeared on Allura’s face, however,

Suddenly, a black figure rushed toward William and aimed its dagger at his neck, William reacted at the last second and blocked the attack.

“Who are you!?” Bruce questioned out loud.

However, rather than answering, another figure wearing black clothes appeared behind Bruce and attacked.

Just like William, Bruce dodged the attack.

“They are both grandmasters!” William shouted!

He was having a hard time against his opponent; the same could be said for Bruce as well.

These opponents were unusually quick and flexible.

They were not normal Grand Master Stage Cultivators, they were trained assassins.

“Do not kill them, we need them alive.”

Suddenly, William and Bruce heard a voice that belonged to a female, they turned a little and saw a female wearing a skin-tight black dress and a mask that covered half of her face.

She was watching everything with a calm look on her face and from the aura around her, it was clear that she was the leader.

“Who are you!? Why are you doing this!? Do you know who we are!?” William questioned, however, the female assassin did not answer.

Actually, only a fool will answer.

And only a fool will play question answers while they were fighting.

“Ughhh!”

Since he was distracted, William was unable to dodge one attack and his opponent’s dagger grazed her shoulder.

William groaned in pain and his focus shifted to his injury for a second.

Another thing only a fool would do.

The assassin did throw away this opportunity and attacked again.

“Ugghhhh” Another cut appeared on William’s body.

Bruce on the other hand was doing fine, actually, he was even suppressing his opponent that seemed to be a woman as well.

However, he was the least bit happy.

The leader hasn’t moved at all.

It was as if she was sure of the victory.

This would be problematic.

Bruce started thinking about different ways to deal with the situation.

As if angered by how he was ignoring her, the assassin fighting Bruce quickened her attacks and Bruce was forced to step back.

Allura, who was watching everything had a tensed look on her face.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Suddenly, she heard a knock, she turned around and saw the carriage door has been opened.

She panicked when she saw a man wearing clothes similar to the one attacking William and Bruce standing in front of her.

The man didn't say anything, he just picked her up and placed her on his shoulder as if she was a potato sack.

Then, he started running.

“Save me!” Allura screamed in fear and panic.

William and Bruce, who were fighting the assassins quickly turned around and their eyes widened,

“Lady Allura was Kidnapped!”

# Chapter 159

“You bastard! Let me go!”

“ ... ”

“Let me go! Ugghhh! Let me go!”

“ ... ”

“Don’t you know who I am!?”

“ ... ”

“Do you have a death wish or something!?”

“ ... ”

“I am Allura Skyfall! The concubine of the King of the Skyfall kingdom! Let me go and I will try my best that you are not punished for the crimes you have committed.”

“ ... ”

Allura tried her best, she moved as much as she could however, the man who was carrying her had a very strong grip.

She had sensed his cultivation and knew she was a Master Stage Cultivator as well, however, Allura knew that for some reason, he was a lot stronger than a normal Master Stage Cultivator.

No matter how hard she tried, she wasn’t able to escape from his clutches.

In the end, she decided to give up.

She won’t use force, she should try intimidation.

He would surely let her go if he knew about her background? Right?

She did that.

She told him about his background.

However, as if the man was deaf, he did not react to her words at all.

Actually, Allura was too panicked right now, if not, she would have surely realized that telling him about her background was the worse move she could have made.

Of course, even if she realizes it now, it would already be too late.

The assassin then carried her like a sack and didn't say anything.

Allura continued resisting as well.

The scene looked very comical from afar, however, no one could see it.

Soon, the assassin stopped running and started walking.

Allura looked around and realized that they were somewhere near the edge of the capital city. Somewhere secluded.

Her heart started beating quickly and she panicked.

'I was kidnapped!'

She was really scared right now and the assassin who just continued walking without saying anything creeped her out even more.

Allura then looked around and noticed that she was in the slum area, however, this slum area was desolated.

Other than the two of them, no one was here.

Due to this, Allura was even more scared.

\*Step\* \*Step\* \*Step\*

Everything was so silent that Allura could even hear the assassin's footsteps. Actually, it was as if the assassin was deliberately trying to create this noise however, that might be her imagination.

A few seconds later, the assassin finally entered a house and a frown appeared on Allura's face.

The house's inside was not how she expected it to be.

It was a lot more... clean.

The assassin walked inside and Allura's eyes widened in surprise.

She saw a huge table with delicious-looking food placed on top of it.

The food was still hot, so it was clear that it was placed here not long ago.

Suddenly, the assassin released Allura as well however, instead of being happy, Allura frowned.

“Who are you?”

Allura's sword appeared in her hand as she pointed it at the assassin and questioned.

“...”

However, the assassin did not reply.

“I asked who you are! Why did you bring me here!?” Allura screamed!

She heart was beating really loudly, and beads of sweat had appeared on her forehead.

Even her hands that were holding a sword were trembling.

“Pffftt!”

Suddenly, the assassin laughed.

“W-Why are you laughing!?” Allura screamed.

“Hahaha!”

Instead of answering, the assassin laughed more and suddenly, Allura frowned.

She felt like she had heard this laugh before...

“Hahaha~ You look so scared, Lady Allura~” the assassin spoke and as soon as he did, Allura’s eyes widened in surprise.

“Y-You...” She pointed at the assassin and stuttered.

“Did you finally find out?” the assassin muttered as he removed his mask.

Allura’s eyes widened even more as she saw an incredibly charming and familiar face.

“You are Nux!” Allura screamed.

“The one and only,” Nux smiled as he bowed a little.

“So? What do you think? Does this assassin suit look good on me?” Nux questioned as he opened his arms wide and turned around a little.

“W-What are you doing!? Why did you kidnap me!?” Of course, rather than answering his question, Allura questioned back in a voice full of surprise and confusion.

“Well, you were late for the lunch,” Nux answered.

“W-What?” Allura couldn’t believe what she was hearing.

Nux smiled, he then started walking towards Allura and answered,

“Look, Lady Allura, I have been waiting for this day for this whole week, I have been very patient, okay? However, when you didn’t arrive for the dinner, my patience ran out and I kidnapped you~”

“W-What are you talking about!? I was only 5 minutes late!”

“Same thing, Same thing” Nux shrugged nonchalantly.

“What do you mean same thing!? Do you know what you did!? You kidnapped the concubine of the king of the Skyfall Kingdom, inside the Skyfall kingdom’s Royal Capital!”

“Indeed, that is what I have done. It was quite fun as well.” Nux nodded with a proud look on his face.

“This is no joke, Nux! What you did will get you killed! Not only you but even I will also be killed since I tarnished the King’s reputation!” Allura shouted in panic.

“Heeh? Lady Allura, you are really a scardy cat huh?” Nux muttered.

“S-Scardy cat?”

NO, I AM NOT!

I am just a normal person!

Don’t compare me with someone crazy like yourself!”

“Crazy?”

“Yes crazy! You are simply asking to die!”

“Oh C’mon Lady Allura, don’t tell me you didn’t enjoy this. Your heart is still beating fast, right?” suddenly, Nux grabbed Allura’s back as he pulled her close to him and questioned.

Allura’s face turned bright red and her eyes opened wide in shock, her heart, which was already beating very fast started beating even faster and

some indecent images, which have been filled inside her mind by Edda, appeared in her mind.

Soon, however, she came back to her senses as she pushed him a little and muttered with a red face,

“I-I am the concubine of the king of this kingdom, y-you can’t t-touch me like t-that”

“Concubine of the king huh... that is unfortunate indeed.” Nux nodded to himself and then, he muttered,

“It must be tough living a life where your husband won’t touch you and treats you like an object.”

Allura’s eyes widened in shock when she heard him and,

“W-What did you say?”

# Chapter 160

“Concubine of the king huh... that is unfortunate indeed.” Nux nodded to himself and then, he muttered,

“It must be tough living a life where your husband won’t touch you and treats you like an object.”

“W-What did you say?”

Allura’s eyes widened in surprise and she questioned.

“I said it must be tough living as someone’s trophy.” Nux repeated as he shook his head in ‘pity’.

“H-How do you know that?” Allura questioned.

Not many people knew about the king’s ‘hobby’.

Although the king himself hasn’t forbidden anyone to talk about it, it is still an unspoken rule to not say unnecessary things out loud.

“Edda told me,” Nux answered honestly.

“Edda? Why would she tell something so sensitive to you? No, wait! Why would she tell anything to you? How do you know her?”

Allura asked countless questions at the same time.

Her mind wasn’t working properly right now.

First, her carriage was attacked by a few unknown people.

Even her protectors, who were supposed to be strong Grand Master Stage Elites, those protectors weren’t able to stop these unknown people at all.

Then, she was kidnapped.

After that, she realized that the person who kidnapped her was this young man who she was going to have lunch with.

Now, she realized that this young man also knows her new 'friend' and not only that, her friend has even revealed an extremely important secret to this man.

Just what the hell is wrong with this day!?

Fear, surprise and then fear again, all these emotions attacked Allura one after another.

However, Nux wasn't done yet.

“What do you mean how do I know Edda? Didn't she tell you about me?”  
Suddenly, Nux questioned.

“H-Huh?” Allura frowned, she then thought about it a little more and,

‘I have a lover, he is very handsome~~’

She recalled what Edda talked about the most.

“Y-You are Edda's lover!?” Allura's eyes widened in surprise as she questioned.

“Took you long enough to realize. You are surprisingly slow, Lady Allura.  
Hahaha~” Nux laughed.

However, Allura wasn't in a mood to laugh with him at all.

She just couldn't digest so many things at the same time. Her head was aching now.

“But why would Edda reveal everything to you?”

“Hmm? I am her lover, what’s wrong with her telling me something?” Nux questioned back.

“T-That was a secret! I trusted her thinking she won’t out me however, she betrayed my trust! She wasn’t supposed to tell that to anyone else, not even her lover!” Allura shouted.

Her emotions were getting the better of her.

“Edda was right about you.” Suddenly, Nux stated.

“H-Huh? W-What did she say?”

“She said you are a person with a good heart,” Nux answered.

“O-Oh... that’s nice of her...” Allura muttered.

A small smile appeared on her face, it felt good to be complimented like this, though it was a little sudden.

“However,”

“Hmm?” Allura glanced at Nux.

“She said that although you are a good person, you have a fatal flaw.

You are a scaredy-cat.”

“Huh?” Allura frowned.

“She says that you have already given up and have accepted your fate as the King’s object, his trophy.

Your ‘boredom’ is nothing but a veil that covers your fear.

You are not bored, you just crave attention which you already know that you will never receive from the king.

However, you are still too scared to do anything about it, that's why she called you a scaredy-cat.

Initially, I didn't agree with her, I had met you 2 times and although you do get flustered easily, you did not come out as a scaredy-cat.

However, now...

Now that I see you acting like this, I have to agree with her,

You are a scaredy-cat indeed.”

Nux smiled.

“...then what am I supposed to do?” Suddenly, Allura questioned.

“Hmm?”

“I asked, what else am I supposed to do?” Allura questioned again.

She couldn't say Edda was wrong.

Actually, Edda was right.

She craved attention.

She craved her husband's attention and she also knew that she won't get it.

However, what can she do?

Her husband was the King.

Can she go against the king?

Isn't that akin to suicide?

No sane person would even consider that as an option.

Therefore, this question comes into Allura's mind,

“What am I supposed to do?”

You call me scaredy-cat; you say that I am afraid. I admit.

However, what other option do I even have?”

“Find what you want,” Nux answered.

“You crave attention? Find a man that will give you attention.”

Allura’s snickered, “And then what? Die along with that man in the crime of betraying the king?”

“Wouldn’t dying be a better option compared to living like a dull, pitiful object?”

Nux questioned with a smile.

“That may sound cool in a fantasy books, Nux. However, in reality, death is a lot scarier than you think.” Allura answered.

Truth be told, she wasn’t willing to die just because she was ‘bored’.

She lived a comfortable life.

Though she was treated like an object, she wasn’t a mistreated object.

She was treated as a trophy, placed wherever it was with no one bothering her.

Though her life was dull, it was still far better than dying.

“That is true. Dying is scary indeed.” Nux nodded in agreement as well.

“It is good that you realize it,” Allura muttered.

A wide smile then appeared on Nux’s face as he suggested,

“Then how about you find a strong man, a man who can defend you from the king AND give you all the attention you need?”

“Heh. You talk as if there are any men like that in this world.” Allura smiled wryly.

However, instead of answering, Nux just walked toward her with a smile.

Allura felt that something was wrong with that smile on his face, therefore, she stepped back.

However, she could not escape from his clutches, after 5-6 steps, her back now touched the wall, and she could not move anymore.

Nux had her cornered and as if keeping her from escaping, he placed his hand near her head and moved his face dangerously close to hers.

Allura’s heart which had barely calmed down started beating again.

“Try looking around, Allura. You will find a man that matches the description a lot sooner than you think.

A lot lot sooner.”

# Chapter 161

“Try looking around, Allura. You will find a man that matches the description a lot sooner than you think.

A lot lot sooner.”

Nux brought his face close to her ear and whispered seductively.

“Actually, you do not even have to look around, just look where you are already looking and you will find that man soon~”

He continued.

“A-Are you perhaps t-talking about y-you?” Allura questioned with a red face. She wasn’t dumb, she could understand what he was implying...

He was saying something dangerous.

Very Dangerous.

Her emotions were in turmoil right now and this turmoil was a lot scarier than the last one.

“Bingo.” Nux smiled and nodded.

However, Allura still wasn’t sure yet.

In the end, Nux was still a Master Stage Cultivator.

How is he going to protect her?

Heck, he might even die since he dared to kidnap the king’s concubine.

She still didn’t know if he could protect himself, let alone protect her.

And Nux knew about her thoughts.

“Think about it, Allura~” And since he knew about them, he continued.

“Think about this situation a little more calmly.

I am someone who has the balls to kidnap the King’s concubine inside the capital city of the kingdom.

Do you really think I am crazy?

Do you think I would have survived in this world if I was this crazy?

Obviously, I have the strength to back me up.

Didn’t you see those Grand Master Stage assassins attacking your protectors?

They were my subordinates.

Do you think Grand Master Stage Cultivators would submit to a mere Master Stage Cultivator? Do you think that makes sense?” Nux questioned.

And as he spoke, Allura started thinking as well.

He was right.

If he is this bold, he must have the strength to back it up.

Plus, he had Grand Master Stage experts as his subordinates, not only that, there was that woman wearing black clothes as well.

From the way she stood, she was a lot stronger than all 4 of those Grand Master Stage Cultivators who were fighting there.

And most probably, she is Nux’s subordinate as well.

‘Heh. My lover is strong.’

‘As I said, my lover would protect me’

Suddenly, she recalled what Edda kept saying whenever she warned her to lower her voice or questioned if she isn't scared of the king.

'Was he the reason she was so confident?'

Allura started thinking even more.

She knew the woman called Edda, long before Nux did. Although they weren't close, she could deduce her character from the rumours and the few interactions she has had with him. At the very least, Edda wasn't a reckless woman.

She plans all her moves and is cautious as well.

She is not a woman who will just leave her safety in someone else's hand if she wasn't sure whether that man can protect her or not.

'Can I trust him...?' Allura thought inwardly, her eyes then fell on Nux's face that was dangerously close to hers and her heart started beating quickly again.

"So you are saying you are the man who is strong enough to protect me from the king and give me the attention that I crave?"

Suddenly, Allura became a lot calmer now.

Why?

'Fuck it...'

Because she had decided to let go.

Maybe she doesn't want to be a bored concubine anymore.

A smile appeared on Nux's face when he heard her question,

It seemed that Allura has decided to take the risk.

"Yes, that is what I am saying." He nodded.

“Then I have a question,” Allura muttered with a smile on her face. She was now looking back into Nux’s golden eyes, not with a shy and flustered look, but with a confident and playful look.

“What is it? Ask away.”

“How are you so sure that the attention I crave will be attention from a man like you?”

“Heehhh? Didn’t Edda tell you about me?” However, instead of answering, Nux asked another question in return.

And just with that question, Allura’s face turned red.

She doesn’t have to be a genius to know what Nux was referring to.

Edda said a lot of things about her lover.

However, what did she say the most?

‘My lover is very good in bed!’

She repeated it many fucking times.

“I-I am not talking a-about that!” Allura was quick to deny.

“Oh C’mon, Allura, we all know what sort of ‘attention’ you are craving for.”

“N-No! I am not craving anything like that. I just want someone who takes care of me, spends time with me, laughs and talks with m-”

“Yeah yeah yeah, you can continue that for as long as you want, however, the truth is that, Allura Skyfall, you,

You are horny.”

Nux declared and Allura’s face turned even redder.

If they were in an anime world right now, Nux would have seen smoke coming out of Allura's head.

“I-I am not Horn- Anh~”

Allura denied the accusation,

Or so she wanted to, however, before she could even complete her sentence,

Nux's hand moved and grabbed her little sister.

This sudden movement caught Allura off guard and she moaned due to surprise and... a bit... a teeny tiny bit of pleasure.

“See that? As I said, you are horny.

Which, I believe is a completely natural reaction.

I would become horny too if I don't have sex with my women for more than a week, let alone you, who has been suffering from lack of sex for years.”

The past Nux, who was a 30-year-old virgin, would have surely tried to kill this current Nux if he had heard what he said.

But well, god is kind to every poor soul. He got another chance, which he was making good use of.

He was going after the wife of a King.

“If you moan and react like that to even a small touch like this, then, Allura Skyfall,

You are horny. ”

“Y-You're wrong... you just caught me off guard!” Allura still wasn't willing to admit her defeat so quickly.

Nux smiled and shook his head, then, a playful glint shone in his eyes and he questioned.

“How about we play a game?”

# Chapter 162

A/N: Same warning.

Read it later.

\*Skeleton Face\*

...

“How about we play a game?” Nux proposed with a playful smile on his face.

“What game?” Allura questioned.

“Hmmm, the rules are very simple...” Nux then grabbed Allura’s hand and walked towards another room.

“Come with me.”

“W-What about the food?” Allura questioned as she pointed at the dishes that were placed on the table.

“Hmm, we have much more important matters to deal with right now. Don’t worry though, we won’t waste the food, we will just distribute it to other people.” Nux muttered.

Allura nodded and followed Nux.

Nux then opened the door and Allura’s eyes widened.

The room was...

Different from what she imagined.

Remember, they were in a slum area, therefore, the rooms here weren't the best they could have.

This was one of those rare houses that had more than 1 room.

The walls of this room had some cracks, and signs of leakage could be seen around the corner, that was completely normal and wasn't out of Allura's expectations, however,

There was a completely clean and cosy-looking bed right in the middle of the room! And it took more than 80% of the whole space.

The contrast between the broken, paintless walls, bad-quality floor and all that with a comfortable, expensive-looking bed was shocking.

“W-What is this game you were talking about?” Allura questioned.

Looking at the bed, she had a feeling that the game won't be a good one at all.

Nux smiled.

A smile that Allura did not like at all.

Suddenly, a big clock appeared in Nux's hands.

He then placed the clock on the wall as he turned toward Allura and smiled even more.

“I call it, ‘Time Game.’”

“Time game?”

“Yes,”

Nux then walked towards Allura and continued.

“The rules are simple.

I can touch your body in whatever way I like; you just have to NOT moan for 1 minute.

You can do that easily, right?”

Allura frowned...

To not moan for 1 minute... that sounded simple enough...

There must be a catch right?

“If you win, I will personally help you find a man who is capable and loving.

However, if you lose and you let out a moan in less than 1 minute, the time will reset, not only that, even the time left would be added to it.

For example, if you moan after 40 seconds, then for the next round, you will have to control your moan for 1 minute 20 seconds.

Also, if you cum even once, no, that would be too easy for me, if you cum 2 times while playing this game,

The game will end and you, Allura Skyfall,

You will become mine.”

Nux announced and hearing his last line, Allura’s heart skipped a beat.

“Are the rules clear?” Nux questioned.

“A-Alright.” Allura nodded.

Actually, she felt that the game was too easy, she was actually hoping that Nux would increase the time so that he would have a better chance. Of course, if he fails, she might even moan out of her own w-

Ahem,

The game was too easy for her.

She would win for sure.

Then she would have the upper hand in this conversation.

“Alright, so the game begins... now.”

Nux announced and then, he walked towards Allura and grabbed her from behind.

Allura’s body was very soft, Nux tightened his hug around her and smelled her hair.

Her odour was fragrant as well.

“Mmmmmnnffff” Nux took a deep sniff and enjoyed her aroma.

“I hope I win this game~” He whispered into Allura’s ear, and then, his hand started to move.

His left hand moved towards her waist, and then it moved up and touched her soft breast.

The fingers of his right hand trailed down from her back, to her lower back, then her butt, her thighs and then her legs, from there, Nux grabbed her black gown and his hand returned to her thighs and then he moved towards Allura’s little sister.

Nux quickly noticed that Allura’s legs were trembling, he moved his eyes and observed her face and then, a smile appeared on his face.

Allura’s face was red, although her lips were sealed and she did not let out any sound or moan, she was breathing heavily.

Combined with her trembling body, Nux knew that she was on edge.

Thinking that, Nux smiled even more and his left hand started kneading her breast gently while the fingers of his right hand circled around her cave.

Suddenly, his index finger entered Allura's cave.

“Mmhm!” Allura's whole body jerked in pleasure, her eyes widened in surprise and a sound sneaked out of her mouth.

However, she did not moan.

She won't lose that easily.

But, things were so simple.

Nux's index finger moved, and Allura's body jerked in pleasure again.

Allura took a deep breath as she closed her eyes and lifted her head.

She was desperately trying to not moan.

She then glanced at the clock and her eyes widened in surprise,

Only 20 seconds had passed!

Only now did Allura realise.

This game was not simple at all!

It was unfair.

Unfair to her!

“Phhewwww” Suddenly, Nux blew hot air into Allura's ear and a jolt of weird pleasure rushed into her body.

At the same time, Nux pinched her right nipple and,

“Aanhhhh~”

She moaned.

She was distracted, first, she saw the time, then the weird thing Nux did near her ear! She was distracted by them, therefore, she wasn't able to focus and control her moan.

“20 seconds.”

Nux muttered as he released Allura's body and walked towards the clock.

Allura's body trembled, especially her little sister, she was feeling so good after so long but then suddenly, the pleasure was gone!

Allura's little sister twitched continuously, demanding the return of the fingers.

Allura, however, bit her lips and controlled herself.

She can't lose so easily!

She needed to fight back!

“You held back your moans for 20 seconds, Allura.

According to the rules, for the next round, you will have to hold out for 1 minute 40 seconds.

Are you prepared?”

# Chapter 163

“You held back your moans for 20 seconds, Allura.

According to the rules, for the next round, you will have to hold out for 1 minute 40 seconds.

Are you prepared?”

Nux questioned.

“Yes, I am.” Allura nodded with a determined look on her face.

Nux smiled, he was just about to start the game when he noticed Allura’s body trembling, especially her legs.

His smile widened as another evil plan appeared in his mind.

“Are you sure you are ready?” He questioned.

“Of course I am!” Allura answered.

“Hmmm, but you don’t look very ready to me, I mean, you just moaned a few seconds ago, are you sure you want to start right away. I can allow you to rest for a while you know. That is perfectly okay with me.”

Nux smiled ‘gently’.

“I said I am ready! Start the game already!” Allura screamed in frustration.

Nux’s smile widened when he noticed her frustration.

His plan was working.

What was his plan?

Simple.

He wanted to waste time.

Allura's little sister has been craving for attention for a long time. Now that she finally got the attention she needed, she was happy, however, before she could even satisfy herself, the attention was gone.

Obviously, her little sister was angry and frustrated because of that, by wasting more time, Nux was doing nothing but adding on to that frus-

“You don't need to stand there for so long, I am fine. Start the game!”

Yes, her little sister was affecting Allura's judgment.

In simple words,

Allura was getting horny.

“Alright, Allura. Round to begins... now!”

Nux decided not to torture her anymore and announced the start of the next round.

The clock started clicking again and, soon, Nux reappeared behind Allura and hugged her body.

Allura's body trembled, and this gentle hug felt very calming and comfortable.

“Be careful not to moan, Allura~”

Nux whispered into Allura's ear.

A familiar jolt of pleasure ran through Allura's body, however, this time she was prepared.

She didn't moan.

Nux then tightened his hug around Allura's soft body, and again, his left hand kneaded her breasts and his right hand moved towards her little sister.

Then, Nux's forefinger entered her cave and Allura's body shuddered.

\*Breaths\*

Allura inhaled deeply as her back arched up and her ample chest rose up.

Nux, however, wasn't done yet.

His middle finger entered inside as well.

Then, the two fingers started kneading Allura's walls.

"Your breasts are amazingly soft, Allura~"

Nux told the obvious.

"..." Allura, however, didn't say anything.

She was trying not to open her mouth because she knew the moment she did it, she would moan.

"Your little sister is wet as well~"

Nux continued whispering into her ears shamelessly.

"Heh, look how your walls surrounded my fingers~ So cute~"

While he said all that, his fingers didn't stop exploring her cave.

Suddenly, Allura's body flinched.

"Oh? Is that a soft spot?" Nux questioned with a smile as he rubbed the same part again.

And again, Allura's body flinched.

"That is a soft spot indeed." Nux nodded to himself.

Then, he rubbed the same spot again and Allura's body trembled again.

Waves and waves of pleasure assaulted her body.

“Hmm, your body is too sensitive, Allura~” Nux commented with a small chuckle.

“...” Allura didn’t reply, however, from the way her legs were trembling, Nux knew that she was about to lose it.

He then remembered the sensitive point he has found and then his finger started exploring the rest of the unexplored cave.

Allura breathed heavily, the heavy waves of pleasure that were assaulting her body continuously calmed down a little, she then opened her eyes and glanced at the watch, however, she then heard Nux’s voice.

“You don’t have to worry about the time, Allura, there are still 1 minute and 10 seconds left. We can take it slowly at our own pace.”

Nux whispered into her ears.

And for some reason, after saying this, Nux removed his fingers out of her cave, leaving her little sister hanging again.

He was really acting like a demon right now.

“W-What are yo-”

Allura wanted to ask, however, before she could, Nux raised his right hand and showed it to Allura.

“Look what your little sister did. My whole hand is wet from your juices, it is as if I have washed my hands with water.” Nux whispered.

“And you said you were not horny?” he chuckled.

Allura’s face turned a little red and when she glanced at Nux’s hand, her little sister trembled even more and she released even more juice.

“T-Time...” Allura muttered.

“What?”

“Y-You are wasting t-time...” Allura stuttered.

“Don’t worry, I have a lot of time. I know what I am doing~” Nux smiled.

Then, he brought his right hand in front of his mouth and then,

He started licking his finger as he glanced at Allura playfully.

For some reason, this made Allura even hornier and her body trembled.

“I-I want a fair match... c-continue what you were doing...” Allura muttered.

Nux smiled and then he shook his head.

“Alright,” He nodded and then his right hand started moving back to her little sister, however, this time, he moved it a lot more slowly than before.

Started with her shoulder, then he kneaded her breasts, then his fingers trailed down to her thin waist and then,

Then it moved down towards her vagina slowly.

Allura’s body trembled, then, it suddenly stopped as Nux’s finger neared her little sister. She was waiting and welcoming Nux’s fingers.

However, rather than fingering her again, Nux grabbed her erect clitoris and,

\*Squirt\*

As if a switch was flipped,

Allura’s little sister released her juices uncontrollably and her body trembled.

“AAnnnhhhh~”

She came.

And she moaned at the same time.

However, this orgasm was a lot stronger than what she was used to, Allura's back arched up and her body lost all her strength, if it wasn't for Nux who was holding her, Allura would have fallen to the floor.

“Allura, I was thinking...”

Suddenly, Allura heard Nux's voice.

“Haaahh... hhaa... haahh...” She, however, didn't have the energy to reply, she was too busy catching her breath.

Nux understood that and continued with his question,

“How about we fuck this stupid game and move to the next, more pleasurable step?”

# Chapter 164

A/N: You guys can read now.

All fine~

...

“How about we fuck this stupid game and move to the next, more pleasurable step?”

Suddenly, Allura’s brain stopped functioning.

Next Step?

More pleasurable step?

Allura wasn’t stupid; she knew exactly what Nux was talking about.

Her little sister started trembling again.

Even though she has just orgasmed a moment ago, it was still craving for more attention.

‘Am I really that horny?’ Allura questioned herself.

Actually, her little sister was reacting more strongly than normal.

Normally, once she comes, she will be fine for the next whole week.

However, now, let alone being fine for a month, her little sister was craving for more!

It was as if she didn’t want to let go of the opportunity!

“Or would you like to continue with this game?”

Allura was then brought out of her reverie when she heard Nux's voice again.

Her eyes then fell on Nux's face and seeing the gentle smile on his face, her heart started beating faster and her lower lips opened and closed continuously.

“W-We can skip the game...” Allura felt that her mouth was moving on her own.

She couldn't believe she was saying such stuff, especially to a man who was a lot younger than her.

Then, she saw Nux's smile widening.

For some reason, she felt a little happy that she agreed.

Nux then stepped forward and hugged her again.

His hug felt safe...

And calming...

Then, Nux lifted her into the air and carried her like a princess.

“Heh. I'll make sure you won't regret this decision, Allura~”

Allura smiled, she was proud of her decision as well.

And being carried like that filled her heart with some weird sort of satisfaction.

Nux then moved a little forward and then gently placed her on the bed.

All this time, Allura's gaze did not move away from Nux's eyes.

Then, Nux grabbed Allura's gown and he removed it smoothly, revealing her beautiful hourglass figure and her sexy purple-coloured bra and panty.

Combining it with Allura's red face, Nux was even more aroused.

Nux's hand then moved masterfully and soon,

*\*Click\**

Allura's bra was removed as well, revealing her large but perfectly shaped and firm breasts with light pink nipples on the top.

"You are beautiful..." Nux complimented with a dazed look.

Allura's heart skipped a beat and her face turned even redder.

"Y-You undress a-as well... I-I will be embarrassed if I-I am the only one naked," Allura muttered in a mosquito-like voice.

For some reason, she was acting like a little girl now.

Nux smiled playfully,

"Alright." He then stood up and removed his skin-tight black-coloured clothes, revealing his perfectly lean and muscular body with perfect and strong-looking abs.

Allura gulped.

Nux was really too handsome.

However, that was not what she was surprised about...

She was surprised about another thing.

'I-Is that supposed to be this huge!?'

She exclaimed inwardly as she glanced at Nux's weapon.

Nux noticed where she was looking and smiled,

"Do you like what you see, Allura?"

Allura blushed and,

“I do...” She nodded.

“Oh? You are surprisingly honest huh, Allura”

It was only now that Allura noticed that Nux had started calling her Allura rather than Lady Allura, which, she actually liked.

Lady Allura was too formal.

With Allura, it feels that they were close to each other.

Darling Allura was better, to be honest.

However, she won't say that out loud.

“Alright, let's start, shall we?” Nux smiled as he placed his little brother in front of Allura's lower lips and started sliding his dick on her wet opening.

After he thought that the lubrication was enough, he inserted the head and then he bent down and moved his face close to Allura's.

“I am about to put it in~” He whispered softly.

Allura smiled and nodded.

“Do it.”

Nux's smile widened, he then moved his hips forward and entered her insides.

“Ugghhhh!!”

Nux groaned in pleasure.

Soft, too soft!

Allura's insides were amazingly soft. It was as if her walls were welcoming his cock with lots and lots of kisses.

It was just heavenly.

“AAhhhh~~”

Allura moaned in relief as well.

Her frustrations, her pent-up desires, they were all gone in one thrust.

She then grabbed Nux's head and sealed his lips with her own.

Nux's eyes widened in surprise, he didn't expect Allura, who has been so passive for such a long time to take the initiative and such a strong one at that!

How was it a strong initiative? Cause her tongue was already inside his mouth.

Searching for its prey.

And it didn't need long to find its prey.

Nux and Allura's tongues collided and started the fight.

Allura's hand didn't remain idle either, her right hand pushed Nux's head even close to hers while her left hand moved over all over his strong and muscular back.

Since she was so strong and active, Nux thought that he shouldn't waste too much time either.

He pulled back his hips, before moving them forward in one go, this time, it was a lot faster than before.

“MMhhffmmmm~~”

Allura released a muffled moan and her body lost all her strength in one thrust.

Nux then broke the kiss as he stood up and smirked at her.

“Heh. Prepare yourself.”

Saying that, he moved his hips again and soon, his speed increased.

\*Pah\* \*Pah\* \*Pah\*

“Annhh~ Annhh~~ ANhhh~~”

Allura grabbed the bedsheets with all her strength. She felt like her soul would be sucked out since the pleasure she was feeling was so out of this world.

With each thrust, her body felt weaker and weaker, in the end, she didn't have any strength left at all.

The only thing she could do was moan.

And she was doing that in a very lewd way.

Her face was red, her eyes were rolled back and only the white part of the eyes was showing, there was a silly smile on her face and her tongue was out in the open as well.

The refined and noble Lady Allura had completely disappeared and was replaced by a perverted woman who was going crazy due to the immense pleasure she was feeling.

‘That man was not even close to this!’

A sudden thought appeared in her mind, however, soon, it disappeared.

She was busier dealing with the pleasure.

This was the only thought in her mind right now while she continued to moan in ecstasy.

Suddenly, Nux grabbed her right leg and placed it on his shoulder.

Then, he moved a little forward, stretching Allura's legs to the limit and then, he rammed his cock inside.

“AANnhhhhh!!”

Allura's eyes widened in surprise as an incomparably intense bolt of pleasure rushed into her body.

“That was good huh?” Nux questioned.

However, in answer, he only received a weird response where Allura moved her head in random directions.

Actually, she was trying to nod, however, she spared too little effort on it and once it didn't turn out what she expected, she just didn't care.

He would understand.

That was her thought.

And she was right, a smile appeared on Nux's face as he pulled his cock and rammed it inside her body again.

“AAANNnhhhhhhh!!”

Nux's hand then moved towards Allura's right breast and as soon as he grabbed it, her walls tightened to a scary extent and,

“Uggghhhhhhh!!”

Nux was forced to cum.

Allura wasn't any better either, as Nux released his juice inside her body, her walls tightened even more and then,

\*Squirt\*

She came as well.

‘That was good...’ Allura muttered inwardly and a satisfied and tired sigh escaped her mouth.

‘W-What the hell happened?’

Nux, however, wasn’t as calm as her.

He still did not understand the reason behind that sudden tightness.

However, before he could think more about it, he heard Allura’s confused voice.

“W-What is this weird energy that entered my body...? Why do I feel stronger...?”

Nux’s golden eyes shined and,

[Name: Allura Skyfall]

[Age: 47 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Concubine Of the King Of Skyfall kingdom]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 32 → 33]

[HP: 400/400]

[MP: 570/570]

[STR: 40 → 41]

[AGL: 39 → 40]

[VIT: 40 → 41]

[STM: 40 → 41]

[INT: 57 → 58]

[DEF: 36 → 37]

...

Allura's information appeared in front of his eyes.

'She levelled up, huh...'

"Nux?"

Nux came out of his reverie as Allura called him again,

"Don't you feel that normal cultivation is too boring?" Suddenly, Nux questioned.

"I do find it tedious..." Allura nodded.

Nux's smile grew and he answered,

"You don't have to cultivate that way from now on,

The way I cultivate is a lot more interesting~"

"The way yo-" Allura wanted to question, however,

**\*Bang\* \*Bang\* \*Bang\***

Someone knocked on the door violently and Allura and Nux heard a voice.

“We are the Royal Soldiers! Open the door, or we will break it!”

# Chapter 165

“We are the Royal Soldiers! Open the door, or we will break it!”

“Why are the royal soldiers here!?” Allura questioned in panic as her eyes widened in fear.

Nux narrowed his eyes well.

How did that happen?

Did the king learn that he kidnapped his concubine?

But how?

The only possible way for that to happen is that Allura’s protectors defeat Thyra, Two and Three and then rush towards the Palace.

But even then, how did they know he was here?

Nux frowned.

He was worried.

He was worried about Thyra.

If Thyra lost, then why didn’t she inform him?

Is she safe?

Suddenly, Nux started panicking as well.

He needs to know what happened to Thyra.

He has to escape.

It isn't really difficult to do so if he uses his Conceal, however, Allura would be left alone.

And although he can store the bed and table in his storage ring, the smell in this room would be enough for the soldiers to know what had happened.

Allura would be executed if the king learned that she had cheated on him.

Nux then glanced at Allura and started thinking.

Allura was important,

But Thyra was at risk as well.

Who should he choose?

“Nux.”

Suddenly, Allura called out.

Nux then glanced at her and saw her blue eyes brimming with determination.

“Let's go out and fight together. I am a Master Stage Cultivator as well, if we try really hard, I think we can escape. If not...

We will die together while fighting our enemies.”

“Huh? Why would you do that? You can escape. I will hold them back and buy you time.”

A small smile appeared on Allura's face as she replied,

“I am not an attention-seeking whore, Nux.

I am a faithful woman, you stepped forward and took my hand, you promised to give me the attention I crave, I won't betray you when it actually counts.

I'll be with you even if it means we die together." The determination in her eyes did not fade away.

"..." Nux stayed silent as he glanced at Allura.

Then, a small smile appeared on his face and he commented.

"The king really missed out on an amazing woman, huh?"

"Heh. Isn't that good for us? This allowed us to meet each other." Allura smiled as well.

Then, she continued,

"Let's fight our way out, Nux.

I promise, even if we die, I will find you in the afterlife and we will spend the rest of our time together."

"Hahaha~ Why are you acting like this is the end of the world?" Suddenly, Nux laughed out loud.

"Huh?" Allura frowned.

Has he gone mad from the pressure?

That was her thoughts, however, the reality was completely opposite.

He had calmed down now.

Thyra or Allura?

That was a stupid question.

He was a greedy man.

He will choose both!

Suddenly, Nux's expression turned serious as he questioned,

“Allura Skyfall, are you willing to be my woman with all your heart?”

“Huh?”

“Answer the question,”

“Y-Yes I am willing.”

Though she was confused, Allura still nodded, then, she felt another weird energy entering her body and she frowned even more.

“There is an ability called [Conceal]. Activate it and run away, I will take care of these soldiers.”

“Huh? W-What do you mean?”

“Use the Ability and run away. I know it’s confusing but I am sure you will figure it out.

You know how to use the ability, you just have to trust your instincts.” Nux instructed.

“I-I won’t let you sacrifice yourself!”

“Haah? Who the hell is sacrificing himself? It’s those soldiers who will die!” Nux retorted.

“I wo-”

“Allura, we don’t have time, just trust me.” Nux tried to explain, however, he soon realized that it will only waste more time.

“Alright, let’s do this, you can run away and hide somewhere. If you see that I am losing, you come and save me, okay?”

“O-Okay!”

Allura nodded.

She then thought about it and somehow, she activated [Conceal].

It was as if she has been using this ability since she was a child.

“Alright, I’ll leave, but I will be watching,” Allura muttered.

Nux nodded.

Allura then left through the window and Nux walked towards the door.

\*Bang\* \*Bang\* \*Bang\*

“Open the door or we will break it!”

Nux then heard the same voice again, however this time, he frowned.

What the hell were these soldiers doing for so long?

Were they waiting for him and Allura to finish and formulate their plan?

Where are they? In a novel?

In what world does that happen?

Nux then activated his [Sense] and soon, a smile appeared on his face and at the same time, he sighed in relief.

He then shook his head as he walked forward and opened the door.

3 soldiers wearing Golden colour armour that had Skyfall Kingdom’s crest on it were standing in front of him.

The three of them had covered their faces and when his eyes met Nux’s, the one who was banging the door turned silent.

“Took you long enough! Why didn’t you open the door when you were ordered to!? What were you doing!?” The soldier in the middle questioned in a hoarse voice.

Nux then raised his hand and answered,

“Nothing... I wasn't doing anything...”

“Step aside! We want to enter and search your house. We suspect that you have kidnapped the Royal Concubine, Allura Skyfall!”

“Are you sure you want to enter?” Suddenly, Nux questioned.

“Huh!? What do you mean? Are you planning to go against us?”

Nux, however, ignored the person in the middle and turned toward the other two.

“Are you sure you want to enter my house? You might get punished for not respecting the privacy of the citizen of the Skyfall kingdom.”

The two soldiers stopped.

They felt like Nux's words have other meanings behind them.

Soon, their eyes widened in surprise and they stepped back.

‘Master Nux, it was all Miss One's plan, we were only following her orders.’

Suddenly, Nux heard two's voice in his head and he smiled.

‘Where are you?’ Nux questioned.

One of the two soldiers lifted his feet a little.

‘The left one?’ Nux questioned.

‘Yes, Master Nux.’

‘Who is Thyra?’

‘The one in the middle.’ Two answered.

‘As I expected.’ Nux’s smile widened.

“Who do you think you are!?! Do you think we will care about your privacy? Step aside, else you won’t be able to handle the consequences.”

The soldier in the middle shouted.

“Tsk Tsk, bad soldiers need to be punished,” Nux commented, he then pointed at the soldier in the middle and announced.

“Especially soldiers like you, Thyra Cruse!”

# Chapter 166

“Especially soldiers like you, Thyra Cruse!”

“W-What are you talking about? A-Are you out of your mind?” The soldier in the middle questioned back.

“How long are you going to act, huh?” Nux questioned.

“H-How did you know?” The soldier retorted in a rather feminine voice.

Yes, Thyra decided to give up.

She knew that somehow, Nux realized it was her.

“Tsk Tsk, you think I won’t know if my woman is standing right in front of me? Your Icy blue eyes are as clear as a day; I would be a fool if I can’t recognize something like that!” Nux replied.

‘What a perfect liar...’ Two thought inwardly as he shook his head and sighed inwardly.

‘Recognize my ass, you asked me who and where she was...’

That was what he thought, however, Nux already knew about this as soon as he used [Sense].

Why did he ask Two then?

Well, he just did.

No apparent reason.

“Alright that’s enough, remove that mask and that weird armour you are wearing.” Nux then waved his hand and muttered.

Thyra nodded as she sighed...

She really wanted to scare this man...

But she totally forgot about [Sense].

Even though she uses that ability very often.

Sigh, shameful indeed.

Well, whatever, at least she achieved her goal.

Thinking that, Thyra smiled a little and removed her mask and the armour.

...

“Huh? What are they doing?” Allura, who was watching everything from afar tilted her head in confusion.

Weren't they supposed to fight?

What are they talking about?

Isn't the talk going on for too long?

Were the Royal Soldiers always so chatty?

Then, Allura saw the soldier in the middle removing his armour, no, her armour.

After she removed her armour, Allura noticed that she was a woman.

Then, she saw a smile appearing on Nux's face.

Something was weird about this situation.

Allura frowned.

However, she decided to stay here and hide.

It might all be Nux's plan, she will just wait patiently and see how it goes. If Nux is in trouble, she will rush forward to help him immediately!

...

"So? Why are you here?" Nux questioned.

"It was Miss One, Master Nux. She was the one who ordered us to come here and act like Royal soldiers."

Two revealed everything.

"Two!" Thyra shouted.

"Miss One, you are Master Nux's woman now, so you are safe from that torturous pain, I am not."

Two spoke honestly.

"You might get away if you play pranks on Master Nux, however, a servant like me can't do something like that. I have to be loyal to Master Nux"

"Yes, Two is right, we are not like you, Miss One. We are not Master Nux's woman" Three nodded as well, and her voice was filled with...

Jealousy?

Naahh, that's not possible.

Thyra pouted.

Nux just smiled as he walked toward Thyra and questioned,

"Why are you here?"

"N-Nothing." Thyra avoided his gaze and did not reply.

"Wait..." suddenly, Nux realized something and his eyes widened in realization, then, a hateful smirk appeared on his face and he questioned,

“Were you jealous?”

“N-No! What would I be jealous of?”

“Hehe~ You are definitely jealous~” Nux’s smile widened.

“No, I was not jealous!” Thyra denied the accusation with all her might.

“Then why are you here?”

“I was just here to check on you.”

“Hmm? Check on what exactly? Wait... were you thinking of peeking again?”

“NO!” Thyra denied as she shook her head repeatedly.

She really did not want to peek!

Umm... she won’t reject it if Nux asks her to, however, she wasn’t here to peek.

She really wasn’t!

Trust her.

“Then why are you here?”

“As I said, I was here to check on you.

You and Allura can’t stay here for long. Allura needs to return to the Royal Palace, else the people in the Royal Palace will be suspicious.” Thyra answered and Nux nodded.

Of course, he didn’t believe her one bit.

He knew she was jealous.

However, he liked that.

He liked a jealous Thyra.

Also, Thyra was right, Allura can't stay here for long.

“Have you captured the two protectors?” Nux questioned.

“Of course I have. It was as easy as breathing for someone like me.” Thyra smiled as she raised her head in pride.

“Yeah yeah, you did a good job, My lovely assassin” Nux smiled as he patted her head.

“Also,” Thyra didn't deny the pats, and continued,

“I think controlling those old men would be a lot easier for you.”

...

On the other side, Allura frowned even more when she saw Nux walking toward the female soldier.

She was very familiar with the smile that Nux had on his face.

It definitely did not look like they were about to fight.

Something was wrong.

Soon, Allura's eyes widened in surprise when she recognized the black clothes the girl was wearing.

‘She is one of the assassins who attacked us! She's is Nux's subordinate!’

Allura realized but then, she frowned.

‘But why did they act like they were Royal Soldiers?’

She then noticed that Nux was moving unreasonably close to his subordinate. She realized she couldn't stay here anymore.

‘I need to go there.’

Thinking that, Allura walked out of her hiding spot and rushed towards Nux and the others.

...

“Nux, who are they?” Allura questioned as she walked toward Nux and Thyra.

“Oh, Allura, you are here.” Nux smiled, he then pointed at Thyra and muttered,

“Allow me to introduce you to my woman, Thyra Cruse.”

Nux then turned towards Thyra and repeated,

“Thyra, as you already know, she is Allura Skyfall, my woman.”

Thyra nodded, she then turned her head towards Allura and muttered,

“I am Thyra, I am Nux’s woman, and your senior.”

Allura frowned, she could feel an unsafe aura that was leaking out of Thyra.

No, it was not a killing intent, it was more like superiority, Allura knew that Thyra was trying to show her superiority.

She was trying to tell her that she was a better woman for Nux than her.

However, how can Allura take that lying down?

She won’t lose, especially when it’s Nux they are fighting for.

She then scanned Thyra’s body and soon, a disdainful smirk appeared on her face as she raised her chest and muttered,

“I have bigger breasts.”

# Chapter 167

“I have bigger breasts.”

Thyra’s mouth twitched as she glanced at Allura who was looking at her with a disdainful smile on her face and as if trying to tease her more, her breasts jiggled as well.

\*Boing\* \*Boing\*

A vein popped out on Thyra’s face however, soon, she controlled herself and replied.

“Heh. They are nothing but unnecessary mounds of flesh that will hinder your movement when you fight.”

“Huh? Fight? Where did that come from?” Allura frowned and tilted her head in confusion.

“Yes, Fight. Have you heard of something like that before? I guess you haven’t. How come a weakling like you knows how to fight others?”

Hmph! You are only a hindrance who wants to be protected for the rest of her life.

Tsk Tsk, how can you ever help Nux with that pathetic strength of yours?

Not to mention those useless mounds of Flesh you carry.”

Thyra spat out and Allura turned silent.

This was the first clash between Allura and Thyra,

And it was Thyra’s complete victory.

However, Thyra was ruthless.

She didn't stop here and continued,

“In the end, big breasts or not, all that matters is that you are strong. If you are, you can help you man, just like how I am helping Nux.”

Saying that, Thyra grabbed Nux's hand and walked towards another hut.

Nux wanted to say something to cheer up Allura, however, he was now an experienced man.

He knows that you should not step between women's fights.

That is a foolish move.

Therefore, he did not say anything and just followed Thyra.

Of course, Two, Three and Allura followed behind as well.

The 5 of them then entered the hut and Allura's eyes widened in surprise when she saw her two protectors lying on the floor, unconscious and bruised.

She then turned her head towards Thyra and thought inwardly, 'Did she do it? Did she defeat two Grand Master Stage Cultivators alone? No, that's not it... those other two assassins must have helped her.'

“Thyra, you said before that subduing these two would be a lot easier and shorter process, why do you say that?” Nux questioned.

A bottle of water appeared in Thyra's head and,

\*Splash\*

She splashed the water on their faces.

“H-Huh?”

“W-What? W-Where am I?”

The two protectors then woke up and looked around, soon, their memories started to return and their eyes widened.

“Lady Allura was kidnapped!”

“Run away! There is no use fighting these peop- Aaggghhh!”

“Shut up!”

Thyra then kicked the protector named Bruce and shouted.

Bruce and William then finally realized where they were and their eyes widened when they glanced at the monster who defeated them.

“Y-You... who are you? How can you be so strong!?”

William questioned in fright as he glanced at Thyra.

“Do you not understand simple words? I said Shut. Up.”

Thyra raised her voice and William’s body trembled and he obediently shut his mouth.

‘Why does he look so scared?’ Allura thought inwardly and frowned.

“As soon as you took away Allura, they stopped fighting and tried to run away.” Thyra turned towards Nux and answered.

“Hahaha~ Poor them, the one they were facing was you.” Nux smiled.

A small smile appeared on Thyra’s face as well.

She liked being praised by Nux.

“So? Were they trying to inform the palace?” Nux questioned.

“Inform the palace? Heh.” Thyra smiled disdainfully.

“They are not that loyal, Nux. They were trying to run away. In their mind, they had already abandoned Allura.”

Thyra muttered as she glanced at Allura.

However, Allura didn't look very surprised. It was as if she had expected that.

Nux, however, was different; he frowned, “Hmm? Aren't they supposed to protect Allura? Why would they run away? At the very least, they should inform the kingdom, no?”

“They won't.” This time, Allura answered and then she continued.

“As soon as they say that they failed to protect the concubine, the chances are that the king would kill them as a punishment. No sane person would risk their life to do something so thankless.”

Thyra glanced at Allura and nodded as she turned back to Nux,

“Not everyone is loyal enough to give up their life for the Kingdom, Nux.

Especially someone like them who came from a normal background, they work as protectors because of the money, they won't risk their life for it.”

“I understand.”

Nux nodded in understanding.

However, the two people Nux, Thyra and Allura were talking about, had their eyes opened wide in shock.

“L-Lady Allura? W-Why are you with them?” William questioned in shock.

“Wait... You! Aren't you that young man who met Lady Allura a few days ago!?” Bruce who didn't like Nux's attitude recognized him and widened his eyes.

“Oh, you remember.” Nux smiled.

“Why did you kidnap Lady Allura!?” Bruce questioned.

“And Lady Allura, why are you with them? Are they threatening you!?”  
Then he turned toward Allura and questioned.

“Huh? So what if we are, what can you do?” Suddenly, Thyra questioned and the two protectors turned silent.

‘The two of them are really scared of her huh...’ Allura thought inwardly.

Thyra then walked towards William and stepped on his chest as she bent down.

“Listen here, worm.

This is not a place for you to question.

Know your place.

What is your Lady Allura doing here?

You do not need to know that, you just need to shut that mouth of yours and listen to what we say, do you understand?”

“Y-Yes.” William nodded and he bowed his head.

Although his hands and legs weren’t tied and he can move just fine, he didn’t dare to go against Thyra.

This woman defeated both of them alone, and that too within 5 seconds.

She was simply a monster.

Going against her was no different than courting death.

Thyra then turned towards Nux and nodded.

Nux nodded back, and then, a small smile appeared on his face as he questioned,

“So, Williams and Bruce, are you willing to be my Slaves?”

# Chapter 168

“Ughhh... I have to go back to the Royal Palace now...” Allura groaned in displeasure.

“Heeeeh? Did our first time feel so good that you don’t want to return any more?” Nux smiled playfully and questioned.

“N-No. That’s not it.”

Allura wasn’t honest.

Nux’s smile widened even more as he questioned, “Oh? Then why do you don’t want to return to the Royal Palace?”

“T-That’s because that place is boring...”

“Oh really? But I heard that the Royal Palace is the most interesting place in the whole world right now.”

“Huh? What are you talking about?” Allura questioned with a frown.

This time, she was actually confused.

“Hmm? Aren’t the princes fighting each other for the throne? Won’t that make things around the Royal Palace interesting?” Nux questioned.

Then, a wry smile appeared on Allura’s face and she sighed,

“I thought the same thing as well...”

I was very excited when I learned about the Princes’ fight for the throne, I thought I could finally get the entertainment I have been craving for, however...”

Allura paused.

“However what?” Nux questioned.

“However, rather than getting excited, things have gotten a lot more tense and boring now.” Allura sighed in disappointment.

She couldn’t understand how they are fighting for the throne. When has a fight for the throne gone without some drama?

What kind of stupid politics were the princes playing that there is no drama at all?

Are they idiots?

Create some drama for her to enjoy, damn it!

“What do you mean?” Nux, however, did not understand what she meant.

“Normally, you can always find something interesting revolving around the price, for interesting, a prince slapped the other, a prince was found having an affair with a maid, a prince fell from the stairs and was laughed at by others, or something like that.

You can always hear about something like that once every year or two.

However, after the political war between the princes started, every prince is more cautious and mindful of his actions and images, making things a lot more silent and boring.

And I do not like this at all.”

Allura complained with a wronged face.

Nux nodded in understanding.

“Hmmm, that does sound boring indeed.”

“Right? Stupid princes!” Allura cursed.

“Then to make things interesting, how about we spread a rumour?”  
Suddenly, Nux suggested.

“Heeh? What rumour?” Allura asked with an excited look on her face.

“The 7th Concubine of the Skyfall Kingdom, Concubine Allura Skyfall, has an affair with an unknown young man.

How about it?

That would create a spark, won't it?”

Nux questioned with a playful smile.

Allura's smile froze then, a minute later, she came out of her reverie and questioned,

“I don't want to make things interesting at the cost of my own life, Nux.”

“Hahaha~” Nux laughed out.

“Then go back to the royal palace. If you are late, someone will be suspicious, there are lots of eyes in the Royal Palace.”

“Oh? How do you know that?” Allura questioned.

“There's a certain perverted maid in there who told me that.” Nux smiled.

Allura smiled as well.

She knew perfectly well who this perverted maid was.

Nux then turned towards the two men kneeling on the ground and ordered.

“If anyone asks you where you all were, tell them that you didn't go anywhere specific and just moved around the town in a carriage. Do you understand?”

“Yes, Master Nux.” The two men nodded and bowed.

After the pain they went through a few minutes ago, they would not dare to go against this man in front of them.

That woman who defeated them alone in under 5 seconds was scary, however, she was nowhere close to this monster and that weird magic of his.

That magic kept tabs on even their thoughts!

Just the thought of betraying this man would activate an excruciating pain that was worse than any torture.

Too scary.

“Remember, protect Allura with your life. Do not do things half-heartedly because trust me, if something happened to her, death will only be a luxury.” Nux threatened.

Bruce’s and William’s body trembled in fear and they nodded.

Allura, who watched the scene turned silent as well.

She has witnessed that weird magic and the agonizing pain as well.

To be honest, it was scary.

However, when she realized why Nux did it, she couldn’t help but smile inwardly.

She then walked towards Nux and,

Sealed his lips.

Nux was taken aback however, soon, he came out of his reverie and kissed back as he grabbed her back and pulled her soft body close to his.

After a minute-long kiss, their lips parted and Allura smiled.

“I will be leaving now, okay? Don’t miss me too much.”

“Just leave, don’t waste our time. We have other, far more important things to do.” This time, Thyra was the one who answered.

She has been standing aside for a long time, waiting for the woman to go, however, it has been 5 minutes and the woman was still there.

Thyra’s patience was already running out.

“Tsk Tsk, I am going, okay. Have some patience, woman.” Allura snorted as she glanced at Thyra.

Then, she walked towards her carriage and after winking at Nux, she moved inside and her carriage left.

“I do not like her at all.”

After Allura met, Thyra commented.

“Oh? Is that because she said you have small breasts?” Nux questioned as his eyes gleamed with interest.

“Huh? Of course not! Also, she was wrong, my breasts are not small, it’s hers that are unnecessarily huge.” Thyra replied with a straight.

“You really are daring, aren’t you?” Suddenly, Nux questioned.

He had a feeling that if he didn’t change the topic, something bad would happen.

“Huh? What do you mean?” Thyra questioned with a frown.

“You dared to fool me and ruin the fun I was having, you are really daring, huh?” Nux repeated as he glanced at Thyra and his golden eyes shined.

“H-How did I ruin your fun?” Thyra acted ignorantly.

“Don’t bother, Thyra Cruse,” Nux muttered.

Then, a wicked smile appeared on his face,

“You won’t get away without any punishment.”

# Chapter 169

“You won’t get away without any punishment”

Nux muttered with a wicked smile on his face.

“P-Punishment?” Thyra stuttered.

“Yes,” Nux smiled, he then walked towards Thyra and pulled her close to himself.

His face was so close to Thyra that the woman could feel his breath on her skin.

“And your punishment will be that you can’t deny me for the rest of the day, do you accept it?” Nux whispered softly and for some reason, Thyra’s heart skipped a beat.

However, she wasn’t an innocent Thyra like she was before, now, she could resist Nux’s charm.

“W-What if I don’t listen to you?” She questioned back bravely.

“Hmm? Well, if you don’t then you don’t. I can’t really force you, can I?” Suddenly, Nux shrugged and released Thyra from his grasp.

“Huh?” Thyra frowned.

Was it that easy?

What?

Did she win?

But why doesn’t she feel happy?

No, screw happy, she was now... disappointed?

What is happening?

Thyra couldn't understand this at all.

However, suddenly, Nux grabbed her again, and then, bringing his face very very close to her, he whispered.

“However, I will say,

If you don't listen to what I say, you will miss out on something so amazing and pleasurable that you might regret it for your whole life.”

“...”

Thyra's heart skipped another beat and her little sister twitched.

Fuck winning or losing.

Pleasure is more important and,

When it comes to pleasure, Nux never lies.

“I-I will listen to you then...” Thyra muttered in a mosquito-like voice and a red face.

She was embarrassed.

A smile appeared on Nux's face as she gave a light peck on Thyra's lips.

“Good girl”

A small smile appeared on Thyra's face, “mm”

Two and Three, who were watching everything couldn't help but widen their eyes in surprise.

Are you sure she was the cold and collected Miss One?

Why does she look like a teenager in love?

‘S-She’s completely charmed by him...’ Two couldn’t help but think.

As for Three...

Well, she was looking at everything as she gritted her teeth.

“Miss One... How lucky you are... Ughhhh!” She muttered.

“Oi oi, your jealousy is leaking out...” Two couldn’t help but mutter as he glanced at Three.

However, it was as if the woman didn’t listen to him at all.

She just continued watching everything as her eyes gleamed with envy.

...

“Alright, you two can go,” Suddenly, Nux turned towards Two and Three and ordered.

“As you say, Master Nux.” Two nodded, however, Three couldn’t control herself and questioned,

“W-What about you two, Master Nux?”

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face as he glanced at Thyra for a moment before turning back to Three,

“Thyra needs to be punished.”

Thyra’s face turned red in embarrassment.

She looked incredibly cute right now.

“O-Oh... I understand...” Three nodded then, she turned around and walked away. Two followed her and left as well.

Nux then turned towards Thyra and ordered,

“You, come with me.”

Thyra nodded, right now, she was being punished.

She has to do whatever Nu- her master said.

The two of them then walked into the room where Allura and Nux spend a blissful time.

Since the window was opened, the room was now fresh again.

Nux then walked inside the room, Thyra followed in, then, with a wicked smile on his face,

Nux ordered.

“Thyra Cruse, get on all your fours.”

A familiar, a very familiar order.

However, this time, Thyra’s body wasn’t being controlled.

Thyra’s whole body trembled as she recalled those memories, her heart and mind were now confused.

Were those good memories or were those bad ones?

She didn’t know.

She was forced against her will, which is certainly bad, however, she met Nux that day... so it couldn’t exactly be called bad either.

It was rather lucky.

Ughh... this was confusing.

“Thyra Cruse, get on all your fours.”

Nux ordered again.

Thyra's body trembled, and then, she fell on her knees.

“Good, now come here. On all your fours, of course.” Nux smiled and ordered again.

Thyra did as she was told and crawled towards Nux.

“Now lower my pants with your mouth”

Thyra buried her face in Nux's crotch and tried to lower his pants with her mouth.

A few more tries later, she succeeded and a 6-inch half-erect rod popped out.

“What a filthy thing,”

Thyra commented with a smile on her face.

“Oh?” A smile appeared on Nux's face as well.

Thyra was playing her role as well.

“Is that so? Then start licking this filthy thing,”

Nux ordered in a strict tone and Thyra opened her mouth.

This past week, Nux has never asked her for a boob job or blow job, there were a few reasons, but the main reason was that Nux was a little scared.

He feared that it would affect Thyra.

But after a week, he was now sure.

Thyra was a strong girl.

And it was time to take their relationship a step closer.

Without any insecurities.

Thyra's tongue popped out and Nux placed his dick on her tongue.

Thyra then started licking his dick, from the head to the shaft and even the balls, she licked everything without any orders.

She did it on her own.

Nux patted her head as if rewarding her and then, he ordered,

“Now put it inside your mouth.”

Thyra nodded, and then, she opened her mouth and swallowed Nux's dick.

“Oohhhhhh!!” Nux groaned in pleasure.

Thyra's mouth was warm and it felt way too good~

And this wasn't over yet.

As if she recalled what Nux ordered the first time, her body moved on her own and she started sucking.

Her cheeks sunk inwardly while her tongue moved inside her mouth, licking the whole thing like before.

“Oohhhhhhhh!! This is too goodd~~”

Nux groaned in pleasure, his legs started trembling, that was how good it felt.

Thyra smiled inwardly when she realized her method was working, then, she initiated the last step and started moving her head.

“Aaaggghhhhh~~”

Nux moaned out loud as he grabbed Thyra's head for support while the girl moved her head up and down as slurping sounds echoed inside the room.

\*Slurp\* \*Slurp\* \*Slurp\*

“Ugghhh! I can’t take it anymore!!”

# Chapter 170

“Ugghhh! I can’t take it anymore!!”

Nux groaned in pleasure as he then grabbed Thyra’s head and started thrusting his hips.

“!!!”

Thyra’s eyes widened in surprise, this was too deep!

Nux’s dick had entered her throat, she couldn’t breathe!

“Ugghhh! So tight!” Nux groaned in pleasure, in the end, he couldn’t control him anymore and,

“I am cumminnggggg!”

He thrust his dick inside Thyra’s mouth and came directly inside her throat.

Then, he pulled out his dick and breathed heavily.

\*Cough\* \*Cough\* \*Cough\*

Thyra coughed as tears began to well up in the corner of her eyes.

Nux finally came out of his reverie and his eyes widened in surprise.

“A-Are you okay?” He questioned in worry.

He couldn’t believe he lost control again.

He was cursing himself inwardly.

“I-Is that it?”

Suddenly, Thyra questioned inaudibly.

“What did you say?”

Thyra then lifted her head as she smiled provocatively,

“Is the punishment over?”

Then, a small smile appeared on Nux’s face as he chuckled,

“Heh. You are dreaming if you think this is over.”

He then glanced at his dick, Thyra followed his gaze and noticed that Nux’s little brother was yet to settle down.

Nux then stood up as he walked towards the bed and lay down.

“You will be the one working today, Thyra.” He smiled.

A small blush appeared on Thyra’s face as she nodded.

Her hands then moved as she started removing her skin-tight assassin clothes, revealing her beautiful body slowly.

Nux knew that she wasn’t doing it purposefully, however, when he saw her removing her clothes like that, he couldn’t help but get even hornier.

A cold female assassin removing her clothes with a blush on her face, if this scene didn’t excite any men,

I don’t know what will.

Soon, Thyra was standing in front of Nux, completely naked and with a small blush on her face.

\*Gulp\*

Nux gulped.

Thyra then walked towards him and then she started removing his clothes as well.

Thyra's blush deepened as she felt Nux's strong abs with her hand. Then, her hands moved to his rod that was standing tall, jiggling up and down as if screaming for attention.

“Oohh~”

Nux felt a weird jolt of pleasure coursing through his body when Thyra held his little brother.

Then, Thyra started moving her hand up and down and started observing Nux's expression.

Soon, a small smile appeared on her face.

This was interesting.

She noticed that a more interesting expression appears on Nux's face when she changes her speed periodically.

This was the first time she was in the control and she liked that feeling,

However,

“This is your punishment, you are not allowed to play around.” She then heard Nux's voice.

“W-What do I do?” Thyra questioned.

“Insert it in your pussy.” Nux ordered.

Thyra then sat in a cowgirl position and for some reason, Nux's heart skipped a beat.

Thyra, of course, was oblivious to it.

She was focused on accurately placing Nux's little brother in front of her opening.

Once she was sure, she lowered her body and,

“Uuugghhhh!!” Nux groaned in pleasure.

Thyra’s insides were as tight as ever.

He won’t ever get used to this.

“Start moving.” After enjoying the tightness, he ordered.

Thyra nodded and then, she lifted her body and then lowered it again.

“Ugghhh!”

As she heard Nux’s groan, a smile appeared on Thyra’s face and soon, she increased her speed.

\*Pah\* \*pah\* \*Pah\*

Sounds of flesh meeting with flesh echoed inside the room.

“Oohhh~~ This is gooodd~~” Nux moaned in pleasure.

Thyra smiled even more and increased her speed again.

“Ugghhhhh!!”

Combined with her excellent tightness, Nux was on edge, however, he won’t cum that easily.

Thyra knew that, therefore, she increased her speed again.

She wanted him to cum, as soon as possible.

Nux understood her thoughts, then, a smile appeared on his face.

“ANnhhh!!”

Suddenly, just when Thyra lowered her hips, Nux pushed his hips upward, Thyra’s womb and Nux’s little brother’s head collided and a big jolt of pleasure assaulted Thyra’s body.

“ANhhh!”

However, Nux wasn't done yet, he pushed his dick again and continued doing it again and again and again.

“Haahh... hahhh... haahhh...”

As waves and waves of pleasure assaulted Thyra's body, her body turned weak and then,

“Continued moving, Thyra.”

Nux ordered with an evil smile on his face.

If one compares, his smile would really match the king of hell.

He looked like a devil incarnate.

Of course, since it was her punishment, Thyra didn't deny his order and even though she was tired... she moved.

However, now, her pace was a lot slower than before.

Nux then placed both his hands behind his head as he glanced at Thyra's tired body and smiled.

For some reason, this slow pace excited him even more.

Now, he controlled the pace again, since Thyra's speed decreased a lot, he could now predict when she will move, therefore, he won't be taken by surprise.

Thyra continued moving and once Nux noticed that things she was getting used to it, Nux moved his hips again.

“AANnnhhhh~”

A devil incarnate indeed.

“ANnhh! Annh! AAnnnnhh!”

\*PAh\* \*Pah\* \*Pah\*

The sounds of flesh meeting flesh echoed inside the room again but this time, Nux was the one moving while Thyra just accepted his thrusts and continued to moan.

Then, once she was tired enough, Nux smiled and stopped moving again.

“You are not tired already, are you, Thyra?” Nux questioned with a smirk.

Thyra glanced at his face with a tired look on her face, she then shook her head and started moving.

“Annhhh... Annh... Annhhh...”

However, this time, even though she was the one moving, she still couldn't control her moans.

Her body was just too sensitive.

But, in the end, she was just too tired.

Nux understood that and soon, he rolled over and appeared on top of Thyra's body.

Thyra was taken aback, however, Nux didn't give her too much time to think, he just grabbed her body, turned it around, lifted her butt and,

“AAANnnnNNhhhhh!!”

# Chapter 171

Thyra was taken aback, however, Nux didn't give her too much time to think, he just grabbed her body, turned it around, lifted her butt and,

Rammed his cock inside.

A huge wave of pleasure assaulted her body. This time, Thyra couldn't control herself anymore, her insides tightened to an unbearable extent and then all of a sudden, they loosened,

\*Squirt\*

“AAANnnnNNhhhhh!!”

And Thyra came.

Nux was surprised by how sudden everything was, he didn't think that Thyra's body was this sensitive right now.

However soon, a smile appeared on his face as he questioned in a very very gentle tone.

“This is not over, is it?”

Thyra didn't reply.

She did not have the energy to, she just shook her head and continued breathing.

Nux's smile widened.

He then grabbed Thyra's hand and started moving his hips again.

“Annhhhh~”

He wasn't planning on allowing her to rest.

This was her punishment after all.

“Annhh! ANnh! AAnnnhh!”

Thyra moaned out loud as Nux drilled her from behind.

This was definitely not the first time he did this to her, however, this was most definitely the wildest.

And she liked it.

“Annhh! ANnh! AAnnnhh!”

Now, she knew she didn't have to move at all.

Nux will be the one who will do everything from now on, he will now take control, of course, she didn't care about it at all.

Rather, she was happy.

Now she could just moan to her heart's content and enjoy this heavenly feeling.

“Ugghhhhh!”

Nux, who was on edge now groaned in pleasure.

She then glanced at Thyra and knew he had to do something to make her orgasm again.

Then a smile appeared on his face and he bent his body and placed his chin on Thyra's shoulder.

Before, he thought that Thyra's sensitive to someone blowing a mouthful of hot air into her ears, however, after some 'testing' and countless 'difficult and precise' experiments, he realized that he was wrong.

Thyra's actual weak point was,

“AAAnnnnnNNhhhh~~”

Her ears.

Thyra's eyes opened wide as Nux bit her ear, her walls tightened up and since she was already very sensitive after cumming too much, combined with how Nux was still pounding her from behind,

She couldn't control herself and,

\*Squirt\*

She came again.

“Uuuughhhhhhh!!”

However, this time, she wasn't alone, as her walls tightened; Nux couldn't hold back either and he shot a big load of fresh milk inside her body.

Right now, Thyra could barely open her eyes, she was very tired after cumming so many times in one row, however, Nux wasn't done yet.

An evil smile appeared on his face as he grabbed her body from behind, and then without pulling his dick out of her body, he lifted her up and then walked towards a wall.

“How about we copy the pose you like the most when you used to peek at us?” Nux chuckled and teased.

However, Thyra didn't care, she barely even heard him.

She only interpreted, ‘How about another round’

And that was enough for her to nod.

She would not deny such an attractive offer.

Her most primordial instincts kicked in, her body moved on its own and did whatever Nux told her to do.

She placed her hands on the wall, arched her back, and lifted her butt, ready to accept another round of pounding.

\*Pah\*

Nux smiled, he then spanked Thyra's juicy ass and then, he started pounding.

“ANnnnnhhhhh~~”

...

After that, a 5-hour long session of continuous sex followed.

The room they were in was filled with the stench of body fluids and sweat, it felt like they were in a prostitution house without perfume.

“Ugghhhhh!! I am cumming!!”

In the end, Nux groaned in pleasure and came inside Thyra again.

\*Squirt\*

Thyra's body twitched and she came as well.

However, she did not moan.

She was too tired.

Too too tired.

By the end of the session, she just accepted the pounding without moving at all. If she wasn't breathing, one would have thought that she was dead, that was how tired she was.

Her mind was already blank and she would need some time to recover from it.

Nux then finally released her body, she fell on the bed, and Nux fell right beside her.

Then, weird but extremely familiar energy entered his body along with a screen containing countless messages,

[Congratulations to the host for rising to a Grand Master Stage Mana Cultivator from a Master Stage Mana Cultivator.]

[INT: +10]

[Blank Points: +20]

[Congratulations to the host for rising to a Grand Master Stage Body Cultivator from a Master Stage Body Cultivator.]

[STR: +5]

[AGL: +5]

[VIT: +5]

[STM: +5]

[DEF: +5]

[Blank Points: +10]

[Dash unlocked.]

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: Grand Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Grand Master.]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 35 → 40 ]

[HP: 890/890]

[MP: 840/840]

[STR: 91→106]

[AGL: 101→116]

[VIT: 89→104]

[STM: 128→143]

[INT: 84→99]

[DEF: 88→103]

[Blank Points: 115→160]

A tired smile appeared on Nux's face.

He has finally levelled up.

He was a Grand Master Stage Cultivator now.

Now, sparring against Thyra, Two and Three won't be difficult anymore.

‘Hmm, I think I should add Bruce and William as well...’

Nux thought inwardly and nodded.

Then, his eyes fell on the new ability he has unlocked, [Dash]

Then, a screen carrying a description of the said ability appeared in front of his eyes.

[Dash]

[Active Skill]

[Effects:]

[Doubles Host's AGL for 5 seconds]

[Invincibility: While the Ability is active, the host will not take any damage]

[Can only be used once a day.]

[Warning: While using this ability, if the host does some action other than a dash, the [Invincibility] will lose its effect.]

Nux raised his eyebrows when he glanced at the ability description in front of him.

‘Wow... isn't it the perfect ability to run away?’

That was his first thought.

Then, an excited smile appeared on his face, however, before he could think too much, he heard Thyra's weak voice.

“Nux... did you perhaps... liked it when I ruined your fun with Allura?”

“Huh? Why do you say that?” Nux turned towards Thyra and frowned.

“Umm... I just felt like it since...” Then, a small smile appeared on Thyra's face as she muttered,

“What you did to me felt more like a reward than a punishment.”

# Chapter 172

“What you did to me felt more like a reward than a punishment,” Thyra muttered with a small, perverted smile on her face.

“Oh really?” Suddenly, Nux turned around as he glanced at Thyra, then, he moved a little and hugged her from the front.

Her breasts touched Nux’s chest while Nux’s dick touched Thyra’s thighs, The situation was getting heated up again and Thyra’s heart skipped a beat.

‘Hmm?’ however, suddenly, Thyra noticed something.

‘How does he have so much energy left? Wasn’t he tired a minute ago?’

She frowned.

Then, she narrowed her eyes and soon, her eyes opened wide in shock when she noticed Nux’s cultivation.

“Y-You broke through!?”

“Heh.” A small smile appeared on Nux’s face as he answered,

“It’s all thanks to you, My Lovely assassin.”

“W-What a ridiculous ability...”

Thyra muttered in surprise.

Nux had already told her how he cultivates and although she nodded at that time, she didn’t really believe it.

You can’t blame her either; Nux’s ability to cultivate while he fucks straight up defies the very common sense of this world. It will be impossible to

believe it unless you experience it on your own.

“Y-Your ability straight up ignores all the h-hard work I have done so far...” Thyra muttered.

She didn't know if she should be sad or happy.

She should be happy since her man has such an amazing ability which would later benefit her as well, however, she couldn't help but feel bad about it when she realizes that all the hard work she did all these years were pretty much useless in front of someone like Nux.

What was the point of working so hard?

She couldn't help but think about it.

Nux understood her thoughts as well.

His ability was ridiculous indeed, however, there was a catch.

“You didn't work hard for so long for nothing, Thyra.” Suddenly, Nux muttered.

“What do you mean? Won't it be pretty much useless when Felberta, Skyla, Lane, Edda and Allura become a Grand Master Stage Cultivator as well?

You are fine; however, It doesn't really feel good when they reap the rewards for my hard work you know...” Thyra finally expressed what bothered her the most.

“A-Am I selfish for saying that...?” and as soon as she said that, she questioned.

The last thing she wants is Nux thinking she was selfish and hating her...

However, no matter what...

She still felt it was unfair when others reaped the rewards of all the hard work she did.

“That thought process is completely normal, Thyra”

Thyra then felt Nux’s hug around her tightening and her emotions started calming down...

For some reason, when she heard Nux saying it was completely normal to have thoughts like that, her heart was at peace.

“Also, as I said before, your hard work was not in vain,”

Then, Nux continued, however, his tone was a lot more gentle and loving.

“It is true that sooner or later, Felberta and the others would have the same cultivation level as you do, however, that does not mean they would be as strong as you.”

“Hmm?”

“Yes, I am not lying.

This is all just my own theory, however, I am fairly confident it is correct.

I have divided cultivators into two categories.

Tenacious Cultivator, A cultivator who got stronger by arduous cultivation.

And Pleasure Cultivator, a cultivator who got stronger by, well, fucking.

You are a Tenacious Cultivator, Felberta is a Pleasure Cultivator.

And according to my theory, they are not the same.

A Tenacious Cultivator is stronger than a Pleasure Cultivator if they are at the same level.”

What Nux was saying wasn’t just some bullshit he came up with to lighten Thyra’s mood.

It was his actual theory and he had come up with this theory after some observations.

Right now, Felberta and Edda are at the same level, however, whenever the two of them spar, it is Edda who wins.

At first, Nux thought it was due to skills and experience, however, later, he asked the two of them to sprint without using any skills, and then he told them to arm wrestle.

In both cases, Edda won.

Her Speed and Strength were higher than Felberta's even when both of them are at the same level.

This is not just for Felberta and Edda.

Even Skyla and Lane, who are now Master Stage Cultivators, are stronger than Felberta, but weaker than Edda.

The weirdest thing about all this was that according to the status the system shows, Skyla, Lane, Felberta and Edda, should all have similar strengths, which is not true at all.

Due to this, Nux started thinking and in the end, he came up with a Theory.

The Pleasure Cultivators are weaker than the Tenacious Cultivators.

The system may not show it, but it was true.

The only reason Nux is a lot stronger than someone who has the same cultivation stage is that his system allows him to cultivate both Body and Mana at the same time.

His stats are overwhelmingly stronger than the cultivators who have the same cultivation as his.

This also means that Nux can never defeat someone who has similar stats as him.

The incident where he faced a 4 Star beast in the Bloodhill Wilderness was a good example of that.

A 4-star beast was weaker compared to him, however, he still needed to put a huge amount of effort to defeat it.

Of course, the experience was a factor in that as well, however, Nux truly believed that experience was not the sole factor.

The main reason for that was that Nux isn't as strong as the System suggests he is.

Or at least that's what Nux believes.

He wants to test his theory to be 100% sure, however, he wasn't foolish enough to challenge someone who has the same stats as him just so he could test a theory.

“So are you saying that I will be weaker than a normal Expert Stage Cultivator if I advance to Expert Stage by Pleasure Cultivation?”

Suddenly, Thyra questioned.

“I am not 100% sure, however, there are high chances that it is true.” Nux nodded.

Thyra's eyes shined in determination as she replied,

“Then I will advance to the Expert Stage with my own efforts.”

# Chapter 173

“Then I will advance to the Expert Stage with my own efforts.”

Thyra muttered with a determined look on her face.

She was an assassin and although she wasn't given a choice and was pretty much forced to work as an assassin, she now craves power and strength.

If becoming an Expert Stage Cultivator through sex makes her weaker than a normal Expert Cultivator, then she will become an Expert Stage Cultivator on her own.

“I hope you achieve that,” Nux muttered as he patted Thyra's head.

Thyra then closed her eyes and enjoyed the pats.

“However,” Suddenly, Nux muttered.

“Hmm?”

“I suggest you become an Expert Stage Cultivator as soon as possible, don't expect me to hold back, I am telling you now, if I become an Expert Stage Cultivator faster than you,

I'll pull you into the room, ram my cock inside your little sister and will make you an Expert Stage Cultivator as well~” Nux whispered into her ears seductive.

Thyra's face turned red in embarrassment, she then snuggled close to Nux and nodded,

“mm”

‘Cute indeed~’ Nux thought inwardly and continued patting her head.

The two of them stayed like this for 30 minutes and then, Nux muttered.

“We should return to the mansion now.”

“mm”

Thyra nodded.

The two of them stood up, wore their clothes, Nux waved his hand and the bed disappeared.

As for the table and the food, it was already taken by Two and Three.

Thyra and Nux then dashed towards Nux’s mansion.

No, actually, only Nux was the one who was running, he was carrying Thyra on his back.

The girl wasn’t willing to run at all...

She said she was too tired.

Of course, even though Nux knew she was lying, he didn’t say anything, he just silently carried Thyra on her back and ran towards his mansion.

...

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

In the Royal Palace, someone knocked on Allura’s room.

“Who is it?” Allura questioned, however, instead of answering, the door opened and a woman walked in.

“Edda? What’s with the angry face?” Allura questioned with a frown.

“Lady Allura, how dare you go after my lover!?” Edda questioned in anger.

She was fuming right now!

“H-Huh?”

“What? You think I wouldn’t know!? Weren’t you just going on lunch, how come you slept with my lover if you were just going there for lunch? Aren’t you ashamed!?” Edda questioned.

Suddenly, a small smile appeared on Allura’s face as she answered,

“Heeh? What can I do? Weren’t you the one who told me how good your lover is in the bed? You just told me so many times that I couldn’t control myself and went to check it out myself.”

“Y-You! I told you because I trusted you! Why did you betray my trust!?” Edda was even angrier now.

“Heh? Trust? Head Maid Edda, I think you are forgetting something, I am Allura Skyfall, you are just a servant, why would someone like me value the trust of someone like you? That is just too pointless.” Allura smiled disdainfully.

“Hmph! I am your servant only because you are the concubine of the king! However, do you think you will keep that status if I tell everyone what you did!? Heh. You might even be executed.” Edda threatened.

“Oh? And then what? Do you think the king would leave your lover alone? No! He will order to find and execute him as well! Can you bear to do that? Can you bear to see your lover being executed? Can you bear to see your lover’s eyes full of hate when he looks at you? Huh? Can you bear something like that?” Allura’s smile widened.

“...”

This time, Edda stayed silent.

In the end, she just sighed and suddenly, her angry expression turned into a smile,

“You are really good at playing a villain, huh, Sister Allura.”

“Tsk Tsk! Do you think all those books I have been reading is just for show?” Allura smiled as well.

She didn't mind being called sister.

Heh, rather, she liked that.

She felt closer to Nux that way.

“Hmm, those books did have some benefits,” Edda muttered as she sat down on the bed beside Allura.

Then, a perverted smile appeared on Edda's face as she questioned,

“So? How was it? How was my lover compared to the king of the kingdom?”

“Heh. Is that even a question, OUR lover was on a completely another level. Heh, the King and his small peepee can't even compete let alone compared.” Allura replied with a smile as well.

“Tsk Tsk, how indecent, Lady Allura, to think you will say something like that about the king? Aren't you scared?”

“My lover would protect me.”

“Hahahaha~” Edda laughed out loud.

“You really trust him now, don't you?” Edda questioned.

Then, a small smile appeared on Allura's face as she nodded.

Edda smiled as well, and then, she questioned,

“So? How did it feel like when you were kidnapped by unknown men?”

“Heeh? So you knew about it?” Allura questioned, however, she did not look flustered at all.

“Of course, I know about it. Nux told me everything, heh, I was the one who suggested to take you to those slums.” Edda snickered.

“Hoho, well, I was a little scared at first, then, when I saw Nux, I was surprised, then I was even more scared.

It was a fast and risky ride of different emotions,

Quite thrilling actually.”

Allura answered.

“Hmm, I am envious,” Edda spoke her real thoughts.

Then suddenly, her eyebrows rose up as she remembered something and muttered,

“Oh right, I almost forgot. Sister Allura, I am not here to just gossip today, I am here to teach you about all those abilities you have gained after you became Nux’s woman.”

“Hmm? Abilities? Like the one that hid my presence?”

“Yes, that is one of the abilities, there are a few more and I will teach them to you.”

“Ah, alright, but why do you sound like you are in a hurry?” Allura questioned with a frown.

Suddenly, a small smile appeared on Edda’s face as she answered,

“It is my last day in the Royal Palace after all.”

“Huh? Last day? What do you mean?”

“I will be captured today, Sister Allura.”

# Chapter 174

“Subhead Maid Edrea,” A maid called.

“Ughh?”

Edrea turned around, her lump shoulders and deep dark circles were honestly scary right now.

The maid gulped, she did not want to talk to this zombie-like subhead maid at all, however, she has to do her duty or else she will be fired.

“What is it?” Edrea questioned in a hoarse voice.

She still had a lot of work to do.

Lots and lots of work.

Too much work.

Ughh...

She wanted to die.

She was actually regretting offending Edda now...

The Subhead Maid position wasn't that bad either.

“Subhead Maid E-Edrea... there is a letter for you...” The maid was even more creeped out when she heard Edrea's voice, she quickly passed the envelope and ran away.

Edrea, who noticed the small red mark on the letter frowned, she then looked around and seeing that no one was there, she quickly opened the envelope and started reading.

‘The bird flew away,

However, since she had taken away your heart with her, I had no choice but to capture her.

The bird is with me now’

Edrea’s tired eyes brightened up!

This explains why Edda wasn’t back yet!

Marquees Alger captured her!

“Ha... Haha... HAHAHAHAAAA!”

Suddenly, Edrea laughed out loud.

Then, the ring on her finger shined and a paper appeared in her hand.

This was the list of things Edda told her to do.

She then walked towards a lamp and burned the list.

“HAHAHAHAHA! You bitch! I finally got my hands on you!”

Edrea laughed like crazy, then, she returned to her room with an excited face and then started writing another letter.

‘To my one and only Love, Algerama,

So you captured the bird that I set free.

I don’t know what to feel about this, however,

I hope you will let me meet the bird again,

Please give me a date and time,

I would like to see you and my bird again,

Maybe this time, the bird will understand my feelings,

Maybe this time, the bird will finally understand me.’

Edrea’s eyes shined in delight as she put the letter in the envelope.

“You bitch! I have had enough of you!

Hahahaha! Soon! You will finally beg me to let you go!

Hahahaha! I am looking forward to seeing you beg in front of me!

I want you to kneel in front of me!

However, no matter what you do, I would never let you go away, I will torture you! I will make your life a living nightmare!

HAHAHAHA!”

Edrea laughed like crazy again.

She was really looking forward to meeting Edda again.

However, she will do that later.

For now...

She would like to sleep.

She was too tired...

Edrea then walked towards her bed and as soon as she lay down, she entered the dreamland.

...

2 days later, Edrea stood in front of Allura’s door and she knocked.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“Enter.” Allura’s voice was heard and Edrea entered her room.

“Did you summon me, Lady Allura?” Edrea questioned with a bow.

“Subhead Edrea, I have a question,” Allura muttered.

“Please ask, Lady Allura, I will try my best to answer you,” Edrea responded.

“Then I will come directly to the point, where is Edda?” Allura questioned as she squinted her eyes.

Edrea was taken aback by the question, she knew that Allura and Edda were talking with each other for the last few days, but she had no idea that they were close enough for Allura to personally call and interrogate her.

However, no matter what she was thinking inwardly, there were no traces of worry on her face and she answered,

“Lady Allura, I do not know where the head maid Edda is. The last I saw her was 3 days ago. She left the palace to meet someone, however, she didn’t return the next day.”

Edrea muttered, not revealing too much and acting ignorantly.

“Is that so?”

“Yes, Lady Allura.”

“Are you sure you don’t know anything else?” Allura questioned.

“Yes, Lady Allura.”

“Alright, you can leave.”

Allura nodded.

A small smile appeared on Edrea’s face as she bowed again,

“As you say, Lady Allura,”

Then, she turned around and left the room.

After she left, Allura turned her blue eyes towards the curtain of her room, a maid walked out from that direction, she was Leane, a maid who was very close to Allura.

Well, they were not that close, but she was closest compared to all other maids.

Leane's has a good 'information network' she also knows most of the rumours going around the palace, which is also the reason why she is so close to Allura.

“Keep a close eye on her,” Suddenly, Allura ordered.

“Huh? Why?” Leane frowned and questioned.

“Don't you find her suspicious?” Allura questioned back.

“Suspicious? Why?”

“Edda was bullying Edrea, have you seen that?”

“Of course I did, Lady Allura. However, many maids say that Head Maid Edda was just punishing Subhead Maid Edrea for something she has done.

She wasn't bullying her.” Leane answered.

“That doesn't matter, in the end, Edda was bullying her.”

“Yes, she was,” Leane nodded.

“And now, Edda is missing,” Allura commented.

“She i- wait...” Leane wasn't stupid, she knew what Allura was trying to say.

“Lady Allura, are you saying that Edrea might be the reason wh-”

“It is just a speculation, I am not sure, however, there are high chances of that happening...” Allura answered.

“I understand.” Leane nodded.

Allura nodded.

Seeing that Allura had nothing else to say, Leane muttered,

“Lady Allura, then I will be taking my leave now,”

Allura nodded again.

Then, Leane quickly left the room with an excited smile on her face.

Heh.

Sure or not, what she learned was still something spicy.

She would be a fool if she did not spread it.

Allura, who saw her leaving, smiled.

She knew what type of girl Leane was.

Just like her, she liked rumours a lot.

However, rather than listen to rumours, she liked to spread the rumours.

And that is what she was going to do now,

And that is what,

Allura, Nux, and Edda wanted her to do now.

# Chapter 175

“Have the cleaning department cleaned the rooms I told them to?”

“Yes, subhead Edrea, I have checked it, the rooms are cleaned.”

“What about the washing department?”

“Yes, they have washed all the clothes as well, the clothes are currently being sent to the ones they belong to,”

“Good job.”

“Yes, thank you, subhead maid Edrea,”

“Hmm,”

“S-Subhead Maid Edrea?”

“Yes?”

“C-Can I leave now? I still have some work to do...”

“Alright, you can leave.” Edrea nodded.

“Y-Yes, thank you! Subhead maid Edrea!” The maid bowed and then hurriedly left Edrea’s room.

She was panicking hard.

She was scared!

It was only after she left Edrea’s room did she sighed in relief and rushed away.

Soon, the maid found her friend that looked as worried as her and her friend questioned,

“You did not offend her, did you?”

“N-No. I did everything she told me to.” The maid answered.

“Good.” Her friend nodded.

“I just hope that I don’t catch her eyes, I don’t want to end up like Head Maid Edda...” The maid muttered with a pale face.

“Sssshhhh!! Don’t say that out loud! What if she hears you!? You will die as well!” Her friend placed a finger on her lips and whispered.

“I-I am sorry...” The maid’s face turned even paler, and then, the two of them quickly left the area.

Edrea, who heard everything from behind sighed.

It was the fourth day after she received Alger’s message about him capturing Edda and rather than getting better, things were getting even worse for her.

‘Subhead Maid Edrea killed Head Maid Edda just because she punished her a little’

This rumour spread all over the palace and the more days passed by, the stronger the rumour got.

In just 4 days, all the maids knew about it and they avoided Edrea like a plague.

Actually, it wouldn’t have mattered to Edrea if she was just avoided by the others, however, things didn’t stop there.

If the rumour gains more popularity, then the authorities might hear about it...

And if that happened, then they might-

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

While Edrea was thinking about all this, someone knocked on her door.

“Enter,” She ordered.

Then, a man entered her room, followed by two soldiers, a small smile then appeared on the man’s face as he muttered,

“Edrea Fox?”

“Yes, it is me.”

“The Security department summons you. I hope you follow me without any resistance.”

The man muttered with a small, ‘gentle’ smile on his face.

Edrea gulped inwardly.

That is what she was worried about.

If the authorities heard about it, they might take action.

And they did.

“Yes, I’ll follow you.”

However, Edrea couldn’t panic here.

She was innocent.

She didn’t do anything.

“Alright.” The man smiled.

Then, Edrea followed the 3 men and left the room.

...

A few minutes later, Edrea was sitting inside a room, in front of her, sat a man who had a small smile on his face and he wore clean refined clothes.

He had a scholarly look, however, Edrea dare not underestimate him.

He was a Grand Master Stage Cultivator.

“So, Miss Edrea, I won’t waste much of our time. You have heard about the recent rumour going around, have you not?”

“I have”

Edrea was honest.

“Then what do you have to say about it?”

“I do not know how this rumour started, however, I can assure you that I did not do anything. To be honest, I don’t even believe that Head Maid Edda is dead.

I think she just took a leave.”

“A leave? Without informing the authorities?”

“It is not like she has never done it before, she just used her connections to hide it and took an ‘official’ leave,” Edrea revealed.

The man interrogating her didn’t show a surprised expression, with Edda’s influence, she could do something like that very easily.

However, he noticed something much more interesting,

“Hmmm. But Miss Edrea, even if Head Maid Edda did something like this, why do you know about it?

Your relationship with her wasn’t exactly the best, there is no way she would have told you something like that, so am I right to assume that you were keeping eye on Head Maid Edda?”

“ ... ”

Edrea stayed silent.

Actually, she was panicking inwardly.

FUCK!

She spoke too much!

There was no reason to do something stupid!

However, soon, Edrea calmed down and answered,

“Head Maid Edda was my competitor, of course, I kept my eyes on her,”  
Edrea answered.

“Competitor?” The man interrogating Edrea narrowed his eyes.

“Well, I will admit, I wanted to become a head maid as well. However, I believe it is perfectly natural to aim higher.

Of course, that doesn’t mean I will use unethical ways to achieve what I want.”

Edrea answered.

She knew she can’t fool this man, therefore, she stopped lying and started hiding the truth.

This way, it would be a lot harder to find holes in her story.

“Hmm, I understand, Miss Edrea” The man interrogating her nodded.

From his interrogation, he could feel that something was wrong with this maid. However, he wasn’t sure if she was the one who killed Edda.

Of course, once he starts investigating, everything will be as clear as a day.

Suddenly, a smile appeared on his face and he muttered,

“Then Miss Edrea, you won’t mind if we investigate you a little, do you?”

“Of course, not, sir. I am an innocent woman, I do not mind if you investigate me.” Edrea answered.

She had already expected this would happen, therefore, she did not react much and nodded.

She was innocent after all.

“Alright, Miss Edrea, I thank you for your support, I will request you to not leave the Royal Palace for the next few days.” The man muttered.

He then pointed at a bulky man and then turned towards Edrea.

“He will be staying with you for the next few days, I hope you two get along with each other.”

“I understand,” Edrea nodded as she glanced at the man who is going to ‘stay’ with her.

“I hope you are proven innocent, Miss Edrea.”

# Chapter 176

“I hope you are proven innocent, Miss Edrea.”

The man muttered.

A small smile appeared on Edrea’s face as she nodded.

“So can I take my leave now, sir?”

“Ah yes, you can go.”

“Thank you, sir,” Edrea nodded and then stood up.

Then, she left the room, and the bulky man who was going to ‘stay’ with her followed behind her.

‘This is going to be tough...’ Edrea thought inwardly as she glanced at the man following her.

She would be a fool if she couldn’t understand why the man was now ‘staying’ with her.

He was going to keep his eyes on her and prevent her from escaping.

However, Edrea had to escape.

Why?

Because of the investigation.

She has not killed Edda and her link with Marquee Alger won’t see be proven either, therefore, if this incident was investigated, she would come out as innocent.

However, that was only if THIS incident was investigated.

But this wasn't the only thing she has done.

She has killed many people before and some of them can directly be linked to her.

So once her past is investigated, she will be executed.

Her innocence in Edda's case won't matter.

She cannot stop the investigation now, therefore, she can only do one thing now,

And that is run away.

She could only run away and hide for the rest of her life.

'Fuck! That bitch was really like a curse to my good life, wasn't she!?'

Edrea blamed Edda in her head.

'And that Marquee! That Bastard still hasn't replied to my letter yet!'

Then, she cursed Marquee Alger.

She was cursing everyone who was responsible for this situation.

Then, Edrea turned around and glanced at the man following her.

The man may look like a muscle head; however, he was still a Master Stage Cultivator. It won't be that easy to fool him.

'I need time...' Edrea thought inwardly.

She needed to know what type of man this man was, his hobbies, his likes and everything else.

If she knows about all that, she could probably do something to fool him, however,

‘I don’t have time...’

Yes, she did not have time.

She needs to leave today.

If not, then once the Security department finds out about her past, they would execute her for sure.

‘Alright, I guess I would need to take the chance.’ Edrea thought inwardly and took a deep breath.

Then she walked forward and continued with her work.

...

Allura, who was just ‘walking by’ saw Edrea’s tensed look and a smile appeared on her face.

‘Acting like a spy who is on a mission, heh, this is really exciting...’

Then, a look of pitiful expression appeared on her face as she glanced at Edrea’s back.

‘I really pity you woman... you are nothing but a chess piece now...’

Haahh... it’s not like you deserve any pity, it is the consequence of your own actions.’

Then, Allura shook her head and walked away.

...

In the night, Edrea and the bulky man entered Edrea’s room.

Edrea sighed, this man was following her all day long, she has not left her alone even for a second.

This man was really serious about his work.

Edrea then glanced at the bulky man and questioned with a small smile,

“I’ll go take a bath now; you aren’t going to follow me inside, are you, Mason?”

“You have 15 minutes, if you do not come outside in 15 minutes, I will enter the bathroom,” Mason muttered.

“Oh? Wait... are you...

Are you signalling me to stay inside the bathroom for more than 15 minutes?” Edrea questioned with a slight smile.

Suddenly, the man’s face turned a little red.

Edrea quickly noticed that change and soon, she laughed.

“Hahaha~ I was just joking, don’t worry, I will come out before 15 minutes.”

“G-Good.” Mason nodded.

Then, Edrea turned around and entered the bathroom.

...

10 minutes later, Edrea walked out of the bathroom wearing nothing but a towel that covered her from her breasts to her knees.

Her black hairs were still wet and seeing her walking out of the bathroom, Mason’s face turned hot.

No matter how her character was, Edrea was a beauty.

Her black hair and brown eyes may be common, but her seductive body was anything but common.

She had a great, curvy body and a perfect hourglass-like figure; she was an alluring woman indeed.

“Do you like what you see, Mason?”

Edrea questioned with a small smile on his face.

“H-Huh?” Mason came out of his reverie when he heard Edrea’s voice.

Edrea smiled even more, she then walked towards Mason and once she was close enough, she repeated her question.

“Do you like you see, Mason?”

“Y-You are pretty indeed...” Mason tried to act calm but failed when Edrea’s soap’s scent assaulted his nose.

She smelled too good.

It was turning him on.

“Haha~ Thank you for the compliment~”

Edrea laughed.

Then, she made another bold move as she brought her hands around his neck and questioned in a very gentle tone.

“How pretty do you think I am?”

As if hypnotized by her charm, Mason grabbed her thin waist and answered,

“You are the most beautiful woman I have ever seen in my entire life.”

Edrea’s smile widened, her right hand then trailed down and soon, Edrea started touching Mason’s little brother.

Mason didn’t just stand there either, he first quickly removed that annoying towel, revealing Edrea’s sexy body, her eyes shined in desire as he started groping her soft breasts.

“Hahaha~ Shall we continue this there?” Edrea laughed charmingly and then pointed at the bed.

Mason nodded with an excited look on his face, Edrea smiled and then pulled him to her bed.

Mason, of course, let her do what she wanted to, what kind of man wouldn't like when a beautiful woman makes a move on him?

Edrea then pushed Mason onto the bed, then, she crawled on the top of Mason's body and once her face was right in front of Mason's, she stopped.

Mason smiled, Edrea smiled back, then, Edrea closed her eyes, Mason closed his eyes as well and soon,

Their lips met.

Mason tightened his grip around Edrea's body, Edrea played with his rod with her right hand while she kissed.

Then, her tongue entered his mouth, and Mason's tongue started moving as well,

Suddenly,

Edrea bit the pill she had stored in her mouth then using her tongue, she forced the pill into Mason's mouth.

Before Mason could react, the pill already entered his stomach and his eyes widened in surprise.

# Chapter 177

Suddenly, Edrea bit the pill she had stored in her mouth then using her tongue, she forced the pill into Mason's mouth.

Before Mason could react, the pill already entered his stomach and his eyes widened in surprise.

Edrea broke the kiss, then she spits her saliva into Mason's mouth, confirming that no poison was left inside her mouth and then she stood up.

Mason glanced at Edrea in shock, he felt betrayed.

“Kkkhhh!!”

He wanted to say something, however, he could not.

He didn't know what Edrea fed him was, but the way his body was losing strength and how he couldn't breathe any more air, he knew it was a poison.

A very lethal poison.

‘Why?’

That was the only question he wanted to ask.

“Don't look at me like we were lovers for years and then I betrayed you. Do you seriously think you had a chance to spend a night with a woman like me?”

Are you dumb?

Well, you are, but...

Just how dumb are you?

Well whatever, thank you for being so dumb.

I can escape now and it's all thanks to you.”

Edrea muttered as she wore her clothes.

Tsk Tsk, all men are the same.

Thinking with their groin!

Hahaha!

Mason glanced at her and his eyes turned red, was it in anger or due to suffocation, no one knew.

However, the regret in his eyes was as clear as day.

He regretted trusting this venomous woman.

He was a fool to think that she wasn't a killer and was being framed!

She was definitely the killer!

Mason hoped in his heart that she gets caught and get what she deserves.

“Kkkhhkkkk!”

Then, Mason's body twitched uncontrollably, the lack of air was too much for him, his eyes turned even redder, in the end, his body stopped moving and he died.

A small smile appeared on Edrea's face, she then placed a few pillows beside Mason and then covered him with a blanket with only his legs showing.

If one looked from far, it would look like two humans were sleeping together in the room.

Then, Edrea covered her face and left the room.

She has already checked, no other people were keeping an eye on her.

Mason was a Master Stage Cultivator, no one could predict that an Advance Stage Cultivator could escape right under the eyes of a Master Stage Cultivator, that is just not possible.

Edrea left her room, then sneakily, she walked out of the hall. She was a subhead maid, she knew about the Palace like the back of her hand.

It wasn't difficult for her to sneak out and that's what she did, she left the Royal Palace and rushed towards the Bannermane house.

She wasn't stupid enough to think that Marquee Alger Bannermane was her ally.

At best, they were someone who came together for mutual benefits.

If Marquee Alger learns about her situation, he would kill her for sure, Edrea knows that.

However, he will only kill her IF she knew about the situation and Edrea wasn't planning on revealing anything.

She would just say that she snuck out since she couldn't control herself, then, she would get her hands on Edda, torture her to ease her heart and then she will kill her.

After that, she will leave the Marquee's house and then settle in another kingdom.

She has that much savings.

She should be able to live a normal life.

Hmm, a good plan indeed.

Edrea nodded to herself.

Then, she increased her speed and appeared in front of Bannermane's house.

She then walked forward and soon, she was stopped by the soldiers.

"Stop! Who are you? What are you doing here so late in the night?" The soldier questioned.

"I am someone who knows Marquee Alger, pass on my message to him and he will know who I am," Edrea answered confidently.

"Are you Edrea Fox?" Suddenly, the soldier questioned.

"How did you know?" Edrea questioned with a frown.

"The Marquee predicted that you will come here soon, he says that the bird is ready, you can do whatever you want to her." The soldier answered and just as she heard about the bird, Edrea's smile widened and she nodded.

"Then can you take me inside?"

"Follow me," The soldier nodded and the two of them then walked towards Alger's room.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

The soldier then knocked on the door and soon, a voice was heard,

"Enter,"

"You can go in," The soldier instructed and then left.

Edrea nodded, she then opened the door, however, a frown appeared on her face when she saw an unfamiliar face inside the room.

She has never met Marquee Alger before, however, that does not mean she didn't know how he looks.

And Edrea was definitely sure that he didn't look like this incredibly handsome man sitting in front of her.

Edrea narrowed her eyes in suspicion, however, soon, she stopped thinking about it.

This was Bannerman House, the Soldier brought her to the Marquee room.

Only a few people could sit inside the Marquee room, that is either Marquee or someone close to him, in any case, both of them were temporary allies.

“We finally meet, Edrea Fox, I have heard a lot about you.”

The handsome man sitting in front of Edrea muttered.

Edrea bowed elegantly and replied, “We finally meet, my lord, however, please forgive me for my ignorance, but I do not know who you are,”

“My name is Goku Bannerman,” ‘Goku’ answered.

Then, a smile appeared on his face as he muttered,

“And I must say, Edrea Fox, you are the same as the rumours say,”

Edrea frowned.

Rumours?

What rumours?

Rumours about her beauty?

Was this a cheap way of praising her?

However, even if it was cheap, Edrea would accept it with an open heart.

It was coming from such a handsome man after all.

She did not mind spending a night or two with him.

Not at all.

“What rumour, Lord Goku?” She questioned curiously.

“Rumours about you and your loose hole.

Your scent is the same as the smell in the prostitution house.

Woman, just how many times have you sold that body of yours? And what kinds of people have you done the deed with?”

Goku grabbed his nose as he glanced at Edrea with disgust clear in his eyes.

“W-What?”

# Chapter 178

“Rumours about you and your loose hole. Your scent is the same as the smell in the prostitution house.

Woman, just how many times have you sold that body of yours? And what kinds of people have you done the deed with?”

Goku grabbed his nose as he glanced at Edrea with disgust clear in his eyes.

“W-What?”

Edrea blinked a few times.

She didn't expect this handsome man to say something so vulgar.

Did she offend him in some way?

Or did she really stink?

No, that can't be true, can it?

Edrea frowned.

“D-Did I offend you in some way, Master Goku?” Edrea questioned respectfully.

“You see, that is how one can be sure that what I said was true, if you were an innocent woman, you would have retorted me out loud,” Goku muttered.

This time, a vein popped out on Edrea's forehead.

However, she still controlled herself and a distorted smile appeared on her face,

“You must be jesting, Master Goku. I am an innocent woman, however, along with innocent, I am an elegant woman as well, I don’t retort like some brute. I believe we can settle all the matters with a nice talk, I am sure there is some sort of misunderstanding between her.”

“Damn, Edda was right, your face is as thick as loose your hole is,” Goku exclaimed in wonder.

“Edda? Head Maid Edda?”

“Tsk Tsk, didn’t I say that before? Even you wouldn’t be able to stand her, she is just that repulsive.” Suddenly, Edrea heard a familiar voice.

She turned her head and her eyes widened in surprise when she saw Edda walking toward Goku.

‘When did she arrive here!?’

She wondered inwardly.

“You were right, she is repulsive indeed,” Goku nodded as he grabbed Edda and placed her on his lap with a loving expression on his face.

Then he kissed her cheeks and then their lips met.

They completely ignored Edrea who was standing in front of them.

“E-E-Edda? Why are you here!?” Edrea questioned in surprise.

Although she did expect Edda to be here, she did not expect her to be so...

Happy.

She should have been left tied inside a dark room with no one bothering to talk to her.

“Hmm? What do you mean why I am here?” Edda then broke the kiss and turned towards Edrea.

“Ah, are you surprised how I am alive even after you killed me?”

“I-I killed you?” Edrea frowned.

When did something like that happen?

“Oh C’mon, Edda, do you really expect her brain that is filled with nothing but dunk can understand what you are saying? Simply it for her.

She has sacrificed so much for us, we can at least tell her what she is sacrificing to show our appreciation, can we not?” Goku muttered with a smile on his face.

“Of course, we can. We are good people after all” Edda nodded with a smile.

Then, she turned toward Edrea and explained,

“This is the story about a woman named Edrea. 20 years ago, she entered the royal palace as a maid.

However, how can the story be interesting if the main character is someone so bland?

Our main character was different as well.

Edrea wasn’t just a normal maid, she was a Spy.

A Spy sent by the enemy Kingdom.”

Edda told everything with a smile on her face and Edrea’s frown deepened.

“Edrea was given a single mission.

Rise.

Raise your position as soon as you can.

Become a head maid.

And this is what Edrea did.

She fought hard and rose in position.

All her opponents met 'unfortunate accidents' and Edrea had an easy path ahead.

However, wrong methods can only take you so far.

Head Maid Edda, that is me, quickly realized that something was wrong with this woman named Edrea.

Then, she did a little background check and her doubts deepened when she realized how meteoric her rise was.

However, in the end, Edda was just a head maid, she did not have any authority nor did she have any proof.

Therefore, she contacted someone who had the Authority.

Marquee Alger.

Marquee understood her problem and the two of them worked together.

Then one day, Edda blocked the letter Edrea had sent to someone and soon, she realized that Edrea's next target was herself!

The letter also revealed the existence of a man named Algerama.

No one is sure, but it is predicted that this Algerama is another, powerful Spy sent by the enemy kingdom.

A spy who supported Edrea and the reason behind all the 'unfortunate accidents' Edrea's competitor faced.

Edda and Marquee realized how serious this was. They just thought she was a woman hungry for power, but, a Spy?

That was much more dangerous than normal.

Then, Edda stepped up and offered to become bait.

She left the Palace many times, however, Algerama was too cautious.

He did not attack.

Edda, however, continued to go out, but Algerama didn't move.

Then, Edda came up with another idea.

She started bullying Edrea.

Edrea couldn't take the torture anymore and got impatient.

That day, she sent another letter and this time, Alger found out where Algerama lived.

It was near the Crown Plaza.

Alger planned to capture Algerama that day, however, Edda realized that if the fight started, many innocents will die.

Edda's kind heart couldn't take it, therefore, she used Marquee's authority to seal the area near the Crown Plaza.

However, that was a mistake.

Algerama quickly realized something was wrong and before Alger could capture him, Algerama ran away.

But how could Alger let him run away?

He and his men chased Algerama and in the end, they found him in the slum area.

After a hard-fought battle, Algerama lost, however, he was very loyal to the kingdom, as soon as he realized there was no way he could win, he decided to commit suicide.

However, he didn't go down alone.

He took down Edda, who had come here to assist Marquee Alger, with him.

Edrea, who was in the palace didn't know what happened, however, when Edda didn't return the next day and then the next day, she assumed that Algerama captured Edda.

She then got excited and sent a letter saying how she wanted to get her hands on Edda.

The Marquee got his hands on this letter and he waited for Edrea to come to where Algerama lived.

That was how he captured the Subhead maid.

Although Head Maid Edrea 'died' in the process, her selfless sacrifice made it possible to reveal the existence of such a major threat that was growing inside the very core of the Kingdom.

Head Maid Edda was a selfless and a kind woman indeed.”

Edda ended the story with a smile, then she turned towards Edrea and questioned,

“So? How was the story?”

# Chapter 179

“N-No...”

Edrea muttered.

Her face was already pale, her eyes were opened wide and by how her lips were quivering, it was clear that she was scared.

Very scared.

“N-No... I am not a spy sent by any kingdom... I am not a spy...”

“I AM NOT A SPY!!”

Edrea screamed in panic and fear!

“Miss Edrea... things are not decided by how loud you can speak them...”

The man sitting in front of Edrea muttered.

He was the same scholarly man who interrogated Edrea a day ago.

Right now, Edrea was inside the interrogation room, sitting on her knees, with her hands tied behind her back.

“Mr Brian, please trust me, I am not a spy! I will admit it, I am a killer! I am a murderer!

I murdered my competitors and rose to where I am today. The number of people I have killed is around 12. I was also the one who killed Mason.

I poisoned him.

I am a selfish, manipulative and scheming woman, however,

I am not a Spy!

Please!

Believe me!”

Edrea admitted all her crimes, her face was covered in with snot and tears. If anyone who doesn't know what she did saw her, he would find her pitiful.

Why was she crying?

Why was she admitting all her crimes?

Why was she so against being called a Spy?

Did she love her kingdom so much that even being called a spy filled her with disgust?

Of course not.

Edrea was a selfish woman.

She didn't care about the kingdom she lived in at all.

The reason she was so against being called a spy was due to her own selfishness.

She was scared.

If she is a murderer, the worse they will do is execute her.

However, if she were suspected to be a spy, things would change.

She would be interrogated and even tortured so that the kingdom could extract information from her.

And since she wasn't actually a spy.

There is no way she would know something that would satisfy the interrogators' curiosity.

What does that mean?

That means she will be tortured till she dies.

She will be tortured to death!

The worse possible way to die.

“Miss Edrea, this is the last letter you sent to your lover, Algerama, the spy. Is that true?” The scholar-like man, Brian questioned.

“N-No... I did not write that letter!” Edrea lied.

Then, a cold smile appeared on Brian’s face as he suggested.

“I suggest you do not lie to us, Miss Edrea. You will only make things more difficult for yourself if you do that.”

Then, a paper appeared in his hand as he continued,

“This is the paper where you wrote the room numbers of the room that needed to be cleaned and gave them to the cleaning department.

The writing here, and the writing on the letter matches.” Brian muttered, then, he glanced at Edrea and questioned again.

“This letter was written by you, is that correct, Miss Edrea?”

Edrea’s mouth opened wide.

She couldn’t believe her lie was exposed.

She now started panicking even more!

In the end, she started telling the truth.

“Yes, I was the one who wrote this letter.

However, the Algerama you are talking about is not a spy, he is Marquee Alger! I sent this letter to Marquee Alger!”

“Oh? Why did you send this letter to Marquee Alger?” Brian questioned.

“Marquee Alger wanted to get close to Head Maid Edda, however, Edda disagreed, no matter how much money he offered her, Edda rejected all of it.

In the end, Marquee Alger approached me, the subhead maid, what he needed was not Edda, but a head maid.

The plan was simple, he will get rid of Edda, and I will become the next head maid. In return, I will help him with whatever he asks me later.

The bird in that letter was indeed Edda,

I wrote these letters to update Marquee Alger about Edda’s current movement so that he can plan and kill her.”

“Hmm? But from the information we received from Marquee Alger said that Edda and he were rather close.”

“That is a Lie that bastard came up with!

Why would Marquee Alger approach me if he was close to my superior!? There is no motive to do that!”

“As I said before, something won’t become the truth if you say it louder, please lower your voice, Miss Edrea.

Also, if Marquee Alger was your ally, why would he out you and bring you here?”

“I don’t know why he betrayed me! However, I am not lying! The letters he sent to me are there in my storage ring! Check the writing and match it with Marquee Alger’s writing! I am sure you will find similarities!”

Brian furrowed his brows, he then picked Edrea's Space Ring and soon, a few letters appeared in his hand.

Then, a document appeared in his hand.

Alger was a Marquee, it wasn't hard for someone like Brian to find a piece of his writing.

He then started matching the two writings and then, he shook his head.

“They do not match, Miss Edrea. You lied to us,  
Again.”

Edrea's eyes widened in shock.

How was this possible!?

All these letters were sent by Alger!

How can the writing not match!?

Soon, Edrea's eyes widened in realization,

“One of his subordinates must have written it!

Yes! I am sure of it!

You should check his subordinates' writing! You will find out that I am telling the truth!”

“Miss Edrea, Marquee Alger has hundreds of servants, you don't expect us to check everyone's writing do you?

What if the writing doesn't match?

Then would you say Marquee Alger found a random commoner to write the letter for him? Then would you ask us to check the writing of every commoner living in the Skyfall Kingdom?

Miss Edrea, there is a limit to how impractical and stupid your lie can be.”

Then, a scary pressure emanated from Brian’s body, his eyes turned colder than the ice and he warned,

“Miss Edrea, I suggest you tell us everything you know, tell us about the kingdom who supports you from behind the scenes, tell us what they want, tell us what your mission is,

Tell us everything, willingly and truthfully.

Otherwise, things will get painful for you.”

“N-No...

I AM NOT A SPY!!”

# Chapter 180

In a lavish, grand hall, with large pillars supporting the ceiling, walls that were painted in white with beautiful gold coloured carvings, a red carpet in the middle, 6 chairs on either side of the red carpet, and a throne, that was placed on a floor that was a little higher than the ground, 5 men sat.

“Your Majesty, let’s move on to report number 4 we captured a Spy who lived in the Royal Palace as the Subhead Maid, her name is Edrea Fox,”

One of those men, sitting on a chair muttered as he read the paper in his hands.

He had a thin face, black hair, and crystal blue eyes, his features would have been sharper if it weren’t for those wrinkles that were on his face.

The aura around him was scholar-like and refined, he wore a blue-coloured coat with purple designs, which suited him a lot.

He may look a little old, however, no one should underestimate him,

He was an Expert Stage Cultivator, Gibson Fulvianus, a member of Fulvianus Duke House, and one of the 4 ministers working in the Royal Palace.

“Huh? Report number 4? Gibson, why are you talking about something so minor in report number 4?”

A tough-looking man questioned.

He was an Expert Stage Cultivator as well, he had a large build, and he wore a dark green coat, his attire complimented his Green coloured short hair and green eyes.

He was Warlock Centho, a member of Centho Duke House and another minister.

“Yes, at best, the subhead maid will be an Advance Stage cultivator, those weaklings don’t matter, we should talk about something more important.” A woman, who wore a red coloured gown and had a strict look on her face muttered.

She had red-coloured hair and eyes and her luscious red lips looked alluring, she was beautiful, however, no one dared to look at her for more than 5 seconds.

She was not a normal woman, she was Marlee Vestalis, a Member of Vestalis Duke House, and a minister working in the Royal Palace.

Not only that, but she was also an Expert Stage Cultivator.

“Yes, Marlee is right, let’s talk about important matters,” another man, who had a refined, scholarly face, blonde hair and brown eyes nodded his head.

He wore a white coloured coat with golden-coloured cravings and just like Gibson; he had a refined, scholar-like aura around him as well.

And just like other ministers, he was an Expert Stage Cultivator as well.

Presley Merula, a member of Merula Duke House and fourth minister of the Royal Palace.

“I know what you all are thinking, I wouldn’t have taken this matter seriously as well, however, I found something interesting when I was skimming through the reports, I hope you all will hear me out with patience,” Gibson muttered with a small smile on his face.

“Alright, I will trust you then. Continue,” Marlee muttered and the other two ministers nodded as well.

If it was a normal situation, then as members of 4 different Duke houses, the 4 of them would have fought with each other, and wouldn’t have missed a chance to suppress Gibson.

However, right now, they were inside the Royal Palace.

They weren't members of the Duke House, right now, they are 4 Ministers of the Royal Palace.

They have to discuss things orderly.

"The one who helped us find the Spy was none other than Marquee Alger Bannerman," Gibson revealed.

"Bannerman... aren't they the ones who are suspected to be affiliated with another Kingdom?" Presley questioned with a frown.

"Indeed, that's why I am confused as well..."

Then, Gibson started talking about Edrea, Edda, Marquee Alger, the Spy Algerama and everything related to this incident.

...

"This is weird indeed..." Marlee nodded.

"The whole thing sounds fishy..." Presley muttered.

"Indeed, that's the reason I gave this matter so much importance. What do you guys think about the whole situation?" Gibson nodded and then questioned.

"I think the whole thing is Marquee Alger's plot and that girl Edrea is innocent," Presley muttered.

"Well, that woman isn't innocent, there are proves that she had killed more than 10 people, she admitted her herself."

"Well, she is a murderer, I am not denying that, however, I don't think she is a spy, I think she is being framed.

Otherwise, a woman like her would have broken down from the torture and would have spilled everything she knows." Presley replied.

“Are you saying that women are weak?” Suddenly, Marlee questioned as she narrowed her eyes. There was a dangerous look on her face.

“I am not saying that Marlee, I am just stating what I feel. Also, the Spy Algerama, and Marquee Alger, these names sound a bit too similar, I am more inclined to believe what that Edrea said,

Algerama is Alger, and he is the one who was supporting her from behind the scenes.” Presley however, wasn’t too flustered and answered her calmly.

“But if that was the case, then why would he out his subordinate like that?” Marlee questioned.

“Well, Edrea was now under the eyes of the Security Department, rather than helping him, she would have brought more disaster to him, therefore, he must have discarded her.” Presley assumed.

“But wouldn’t killing her and getting rid of her when he found her be a better option for him rather than giving her to us?”

There was no need to form stories like these if Edrea had just died.

You know well enough that if Marquee wanted to hide it, there is no way the security department could have found her body let alone blame anything on him.” This time, Gibson was the one who talked.

“Indeed, Marquee Alger simply had no reason to go through all these troubles if Edrea was actually his subordinate. He had nothing to gain out of this.” Marlee nodded as well.

“No, there is something he can gain.” Presley shook his head.

“What?”

“Image.”

“Hmm?”

“His image amongst other nobles isn’t exactly good right now, however, after this incident, he can clear his name to some extent.

He might have done everything so he could improve his image.” Presley muttered.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Gibson and Marlee turned silent.

That could be possible.

They can’t deny it, however,

“I still don’t believe that Marquee Alger would go through all these troubles just so he could improve his image...”

Gibson was still unsure.

In the end, the 4 ministers turned toward the man sitting on the throne and questioned,

“Your Majesty, what are your thoughts about this?”

# Chapter 181

“Your Majesty, what are your thoughts about this?”

The 4 ministers turned toward the man sitting on the golden throne and questioned.

The man had black hair and a beautiful pair of purple eyes, there were some wrinkles on his face, however, he had maintained himself and he still looked handsome. The man had a lean and fit body, which showed he had trained his body regularly. He wore a white coat with stylish golden-coloured designs that were masterfully carved on it.

There was a golden crown on his head and he sat on the throne with an elegant, yet bored look on his face.

However, though he looked a little lethargic and leisurely, he should not be underestimated.

This man was the strongest in the Skyfall Kingdom.

A King Stage Cultivator, the king of the Skyfall Kingdom.

Ricardus Skyfall.

A frown appeared on Ricardus’s face as he heard his ministers’ question,

“Why are we discussing something so useless?”

He muttered with a bored look on his face.

The ministers glanced at each other with frowns on their faces, however, Ricardus didn’t care what they were thinking and continued.

“A Spy? Don’t talk like it is something new. There must be more than 20 spies within our Royal Palace. That is normal.

As for whether that girl is lying or not; who cares?”

King questioned and the ministers shook their heads and sighed.

They were too naive to think that he would even care...

“What does that Marquee achieve from all this?

Who cares?

What is his goal?

Who cares?

In the end, they are just a Marquee and a subhead Maid, don't give them more importance than they deserve.

Just give a reward to the Marquee for his hard work and get done with it.

As for that maid, interrogate her for a few more days, if she doesn't answer, kill her.

We don't have time for something so useless.

Discuss more important topics.”

The king announced, and then, a smile appeared on his face as he turned towards Gibson.

“So? Have you found a way to deal with that annoying curse?”

‘This is the important topic you want to talk about?’

This is what Gibson wanted to ask, however, he didn't dare to. He just shook his head and sighed,

“I have sent our men all over the world to find the cure of that curse; however, most people don't even know about that curse let alone know about its cure.

There is no progress.”

“Haahhh...”

A tired sigh escaped from other ministers’ mouths.

The king then slammed his armrest in anger as he growled,

“That Skadi bastard! He dared to fool me! I will make sure he pays for it!”

The ministers looked at each other with worried looks on their faces, they knew that the king was angry, therefore, they did not say anything.

This was normal, they just needed to stay silent for a while and everything will be fine.

And they were right.

A minute later, the king finally calmed down and sighed then he glanced at his ministers and instructed.

“Continue looking for the cure.”

“Yes, your majesty” Gibson nodded with a bow.

“Hmm, continue with the reports.”

“Yes, so to conclude report 4, I will announce Marquee Bannermane’s rewards,

Marquee Alger Bannermane will...”

...

“Marquee Alger Bannermane will receive 5000 gold coins, three 4-star weapons and one 4-star Cultivation technique as a reward for revealing a Spy that was hiding inside the Royal Palace as the Subhead Maid.

The king commends him for his bravery and wits and hopes that he continues the Skyfall Kingdom in the future as well.

Blah Blah Blah.

There was a lot more, but I didn't bother hearing everything that was announced." Allura, who was snuggled close to Nux's chest muttered with a lazy look on her face.

She just had a blissful session with Nux and therefore she was still a little tired.

Plus, Nux's embrace was just too comforting; she couldn't help but be lazy.

"Hahaha~ So the plan succeeded huh..." Nux, who patted Allura's head, muttered.

"I can't believe you would portray my kidnapping as a Spy hunt," Allura replied.

"Well, I needed a reason to move everyone from the area." Nux chuckled.

"But I have a question,"

"Ask away."

"Why did you do it?" Allura raised her head, her blue eyes looked into Nux's golden eyes and she questioned.

"Well, there were a few reasons, first,

I wanted you." Nux smiled.

"But I would have been yours either way... You didn't have to do something so crazy..."

Allura answered with a small blush.

“That would have taken too long. If I used the normal method, I would still be finding ways to take you out on lunch. There was no way I would be able to lay down beside you, on the same bed, while we both are naked, like this.”

Nux moved his face close to Allura’s and whispered.

“You are a little too beautiful Allura, I couldn’t control myself and moved recklessly”

Allura’s face was completely red now and she had lowered her head in embarrassment.

“W-What w-were the other reasons...” She questioned in a mosquito-like voice.

Actually, now she didn’t care about the reasons, however, she was too embarrassed right now, therefore, she needed to change the topic.

“Well, other reasons were related to Edda, she wanted to avenge all the people Edrea had killed and she didn’t want to dirty her own or my hands.

Also, she needed to leave the Palace.”

Nux answered and Allura pouted.

“Hmph! I know her well, the first reason is just something she came up with, I am sure the main reason was that she wanted to ‘kill herself’. This way, she could spend all the time with you!” Allura snorted.

“Hahaha~ That’s true~” Nux agreed.

Actually, Edda admitted it herself.

She doesn’t care about Edrea, she just wanted to be with him.

However, he was different.

That maid dared to target his woman, his possessive side took over.

He wanted revenge.

And he got it.

“Tsk Tsk! What a greedy bitch! I want to leave this palace and stay with you as well!” Allura complained.

Then, a sad look appeared on Nux’s face.

“We can’t do that right now...”

“I know, the death of a head maid won’t be a problem, however, if a concubine ‘dies’, the king would use all his force to investigate everything seriously.

He won’t settle down unless he finds out how his ‘trophy’ was broken.”

“Indeed, and currently, we can’t face the king, I need more power to do that, and I will need your help as well.”

A small smile appeared on Allura’s face as she replied, “I will help you in any way I can, Nux.”

Nux smiled, he then sealed Allura’s lips.

Allura, of course, accepted the kiss and used her tongue to attack Nux’s tongue. The kiss got lewder and lewder, Nux then grabbed Allura’s naked body and pulled her even close to him.

The two then rolled on the bed as they shared a hot, passionate kiss.

Suddenly, Nux broke the kiss as he stood up.

“What happened?” Allura questioned, however, soon, just like Nux, her expression turned serious as well.

Nux and Allura quickly wore their clothes, then, they glanced at each other and nodded.

They then walked out of the room.

Then, Nux and Allura turned towards a corner where the light didn't reach.

Soon, Nux frowned.

However, he trusted his ability and walked towards the dark corner.

As he walked closer, Nux finally noticed a dark veil of mist.

Nux extended his hand towards the veil, however, suddenly, a dagger that was aimed at his throat was shot!

# Chapter 182

Nux extended his hand towards the veil, however, suddenly, a dagger that was aimed at his throat was shot!

However, before the dagger could hit him, Nux grabbed the dagger with his hand and glanced at the man wearing black clothes standing in front of him.

“Heh. You really saw something you shouldn’t. What a bad luck~” Nux chuckled.

The man in black, however, didn’t reply, another dagger appeared in his hand and he attacked.

However, Nux wasn’t having any of it.

He just slapped the man in front of him and...

The man’s body flew back and crashed into the wall.

\*Bam\*

\*Crack\*

“That was loud!” Suddenly, Allura panicked!

She was still in Royal Palace, with this sound, servants and guards would be running here right now.

“Nux! You have to leave! I will take care of this man! Leave quick!” Allura walked towards Nux and tried to push him away.

She was so panicked right now that she doesn’t even realize her voice was louder than the crash’s sound.

“Allura.” Suddenly, Nux called out.

However, Allura didn't like that one bit,

“Why are you so calm!? Run away! What are you doing!?” Allura shouted again.

“Allura, do you really think this sound was louder than your moans?”

“Ru- Huh?” Suddenly, Allura paused.

She then registered what Nux said and she blushed.

“I-I am not that loud...”

“You are louder than this, Allura,” Nux smiled.

“I-I am n-not...” Allura didn't want to agree.

Soon, Nux shook his head and walked toward Allura.

Then, he placed her head on his chest and patted her gently.

“Don't worry, it is nothing to be ashamed of. Rather, it makes me happy to know that you enjoy spending time with me.”

Allura's face turned even redder as she enjoyed the pats.

However, soon, she realized something and her eyes widened,

“Then does that mean many people heard my moans!?”

Then, Allura started panicking again.

“Doesn't that mean we are exposed!? Nux! Let's run away! We are already exposed! I don't know why the king and his soldiers aren't here yet, but they will be here soon!”

Allura exclaimed in panic, however, rather than sharing her panic, Nux just smiled.

Seeing this, Allura frowned.

“...”

She stayed silent and started thinking things logically.

Something is wrong.

Nux wouldn't make a stupid mistake like this and if he did, he definitely wouldn't be so calm about it.

“What is it...?” in the end, she questioned.

Nux's smile widened and he questioned, “So you finally realized?”

“What did you do?” Allura didn't answer and questioned back.

“You don't have to worry about sound. You can speak or moan as loud as you want, no one will be able to hear it outside this hall.”

Then, Nux started explaining.

[Sound Seal]

[5 Star Ability]

[Description: The host can seal the sound within a targeted Zone, no one outside the Zone can hear any sound coming from inside the Zone.]

[Range: The maximum Zone the Host can seal is a sphere with a radius of 10 meters.]

[Consumes 1 MP every hour]

[Note: The Host has to be inside the zone for it to work. As soon as the Host leaves the Zone, the seal breaks.]

[Price: 2000 System Points.]

Obviously, if he is going to enter the Royal Palace to spend some quality time with the Royal Concubine, Allura Skyfall, he has to make some preparations.

The only reason he bought this ability was to let Allura moan as much as she wanted.

However, there were some things that he found were a little weird.

First, the tier of this ability,

It was a 5-Star Skill, to be honest, Nux didn't think it deserves such a high rating.

[Professional Killer], his passive ability, which is only a 3 Star Ability is much more useful and better than this ability.

Not only that, [Sound Seal] is the only ability that consumes his MP.

He didn't use any MP for any other ability.

Last but not the least, [Harem Seal], for some reason, his woman can't use this ability even though it is an Active Skill.

Nux found this a little weird, however, at that time, he was a little 'busy' and didn't think too much.

Of course, this is not the only thing he did as 'preparation'.

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: Grand Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Grand Master.]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 40 ]

[HP: 1040/1040]

[MP: 1500/1500]

[STR: 106]

[AGL: 116]

[VIT: 104]

[STM: 143]

[INT: 99->150]

[DEF: 103]

[Blank Points: 160->109]

He increased his INT as well, now, only a Cultivator whose MP is more than 4500 can find him.

Right now, Nux didn't know how strong an Expert or a King Stage Cultivator is, neither has he seen their status.

He was just using assumptions to calculate the increase in the MP after a cultivator breaks through, however, since he was not sure about this, he refrained from taking unnecessary risks and increased his INT to a ridiculous level.

“So you are saying I can moan as loudly as I want and nothing will happen?” Allura, who heard about Nux's ability, questioned.

“Heh. You talk as if you ever hold back.” Nux snickered.

“I-I h-hold back you know...” Allura muttered.

“And you are still so loud even though you hold back?” Nux questioned.

“I-I mean I try to hold back... you know...”

Allura lowered her head in embarrassment.

“Hahaha~” Nux laughed out, he then carried Allura in his arms and walked into the room.

Allura smiled, however, while she was being carried, her eyes fell on a man, wearing black-coloured, skin-tight clothes, who lay on the floor, unconscious.

“N-Nux...” She called out.

“What is it?” Nux questioned.

“We forgot about the spy...” She couldn’t believe that they forgot about the one for whom they came out of their room in the first place...

“...”

Nux paused.

He then turned back and saw the black-clothed man as well.

Then, a wry smile appeared on his face as he admitted,

“That was careless of me.”

# Chapter 183

[Royce Tatume]

[Age: 49 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Spy Of the Thousand Information Chamber]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 34]

[HP: 390/410]

[MP: 610/610]

[STR: 44]

[AGL: 42]

[VIT: 41]

[STM: 42]

[INT: 61]

[DEF: 40]

...

Nux glanced at the man in front of him and his eyes widened in surprise.

The Thousand Information Chamber; a familiar name.

This is the organization that makes Felberta special, indirectly, it is also the organization that protected Felberta.

For Nux, it was a good organization.

Till now.

He didn't care if the organization was good or not, but if the organization has its eyes on his Allura, then they are definitely messing with the wrong person.

However, Nux was a little surprised right now.

They were in the Royal Palace, the safest place in the whole Skyfall kingdom.

Was Thousand Information Chamber so strong that it even has the Royal Palace under its eyes?

Not a random Spy, but a Master Stage Spy was roaming freely inside the Royal Palace.

And around a Concubine's room to boot.

What the hell?

How is this possible?

Aren't they afraid of the strongest being in this Kingdom?

Aren't they afraid of the king?

Or are they stronger than the king?

Questions like these started popping up in Nux's mind, then, however, she shook his head.

There is no use thinking about it. He should just ask the man in front of him.

“Have you removed the poison out of his mouth?” Allura questioned.

“Yes, I have.” Nux nodded, he then grabbed a jar full of water and splashed the water on the Spy’s face.

The spy tightly closed his already closed eyes, then, after rubbing his eyes, he finally opened them and his eyes fell on Nux and Allura.

He quickly recalled what happened and just as he was about to attack, Nux interrupted.

“Don’t bother. You won’t win anyway. For god’s sake, you passed out with a single slap, what the hell are you trying to act so tough for?”

Nux shook his head.

The spy narrowed his eyes, however, he knew Nux wasn’t wrong, then, he started looking around as his mind started moving, however, before he could even formulate a plan, Nux interrupted his thoughts again.

“Don’t try to run away either, look, dude, I am not stupid, if I wasn’t confident enough to stop you from running away, I would have tied you.

Act calmly and think properly, I don’t want a Thousand Information Chamber’s Spy to die in front of me.”

The spy’s eyes widened in surprise as he questioned,

“W-What are you talking about?”

He tried acting ignorantly.

“Oh, please, I am not here to play this game. Look, I have a good impression of the Thousand Information Chamber, you guys have helped me before, so I will give you a chance.

A chance where you don't have to kill yourself or go through torture.”

The spy narrowed his eyes.

He doesn't know why or how, but the man in front of him knew he was from The Thousand Information Chamber.

There was no point in him lying.

“How do you know I am from The Thousand Information Chamber?”

The spy questioned with a cautious look on his face.

“As I said, I have dealt with Thousand Information Chamber before and have a good impression of them. The moment I saw you, I knew you were from that organization.” Nux answered.

‘Is he talking about the Skill I used?’

The spy thought inwardly and suddenly, he realized something.

‘How did these two find me?’

There was no way anyone could have found him when he used that Skill in the dark, however, this man and Lady Allura walked out of the room and directly walked toward him.

It was as if they already knew he was here.

‘He's not normal’ the spy concluded.

“What chance are you talking about?” then, the spy questioned.

A small smile appeared on Nux's face as he replied,

“It is simple, in exchange for your life, I want you to forget whatever you saw here and, I want you to do one thing for me.”

The spy narrowed his eyes as he muttered,

“That isn’t very descriptive.”

“What is it that you don’t understand?”

“What is this ‘thing’ you want me to do?”

The spy questioned.

“That, I do not know, however, I am sure owing a favour to a Spy of Thousand Information Chamber won’t harm me.” Nux smiled.

“So you want me to owe you a favour so you can use me later?” The Spy questioned.

“Indeed. Most probably, I would ask you for some information directly, of course, you can’t tell it to the Thousand Information Chamber, that deal would be between the two of us.”

“...”

The spy stayed silent and started thinking about this.

Then, he questioned,

“How will you contact me?”

“I have my ways,” Nux answered with a confident smile on his face.

“What if I go back on my words and do not help you later?” The spy questioned.

“My last encounter with a Thousand Information Chamber was a pleasant one, I can trust you, I believe you won’t go back on your words.”

“I won’t tell you anything that will harm the Thousand Information Chamber in any way.” The spy replied.

“I don’t plan to do against Thousand Information Chamber, so I won’t need information like that,”

Then, a small smile appeared on Spy's face and he moved his hand for a handshake.

“Deal.”

Nux and the spy shook hands with smiles on their faces.

‘What an Idiot.’

That was the only thought in Spy's mind.

This man in front of him may be strong, but he was an idiot.

Who in the hell trust a spy?

That is just so stupid.

However, what the spy didn't know was that the man in front of him had the same thoughts as him.

‘What an Idiot.’

Nux smile widened as he proceeded with his plan,

“So? Are you willing to be my slave?”

“Slave?” The spy frowned.

“Well you owe me a favour and will do anything I say to you, that is a slave, is it not?”

The Spy frowned even more,

“I am not your slave, I do not owe you a lifetime favour, I only owe you one favour. That doesn't make me your slave.”

“But you still owe me 1 favour, that makes you my slave. I am sorry, but if you don't answer my question, the deal is off”

Suddenly, Nux muttered with a frown.

The spy frowned as well.

The deal was too good for him to turn it down.

Especially now that he can get out of this situation without paying any price whatsoever.

‘Oh fuck it, it’s not like I will do that one favour for him either. I just need to say it.’

“Alright.”

The spy nodded.

Nux’s smile widened even more as he questioned,

“So, are you willing to be my Slave?”

# Chapter 184

“Y-You b-betrayed me...”

Royce, the spy muttered in a hoarse voice.

Right now, he was lying on the ground, his face was pale and he was breathing heavily while his eyes were wide open.

Yes, you guessed it right; he went through that agonizing pain.

3 times.

Thoughts about betraying Master Nux, there was nothing like that in his mind now.

However, he was still unhappy that he was cheated.

“Well, you can’t really blame that on me. You were the one who was stupid enough to trust someone. Especially someone you tried to peep on and had discovered their secrets.”

Nux just shrugged.

Royce couldn’t help but grit his teeth.

He was too careless.

This man in front of him reeked of trouble.

He is a Grand Master Stage at such a young age, he knew that he was from Thousand Information Chamber with just one glance and he was with the Royal Concubine, in the middle of the night, inside the Royal Palace.

There was no way he could be someone normal.

Royce regretted it!

He should have been 100 times more cautious when he met this man, however, he did exactly the opposite.

Nux however, did not care what Royce felt.

He just needed information.

“Alright, now answer me, who sent you here?”

Royce of course didn't have any thoughts about hiding anything from Nux and he answered, “Kelton Ackerg.”

“Who is he? What is his cultivation level? Why did he send you here?” Nux asked another series of questions.

“He is a Grand Master Stage Cultivator and he is the Leader of the Thousand Information Chamber.

As for why did he send me here, I do not know.”

Royce answered honestly.

“So you are telling me that the leader of the glorified Thousand Information Chamber is a mere Grand Master Stage Cultivator? Not only that, a spy, who is just a Master Stage Cultivator reports directly to the leader of the Organization?”

How is this organization even working?” Nux couldn't help but wonder.

As for Allura and Royce who heard him, their lips twitched.

A ‘mere’ Grand Master Stage?

‘Just’ Master Stage?

What the hell!?

Do you know how many people are stuck in these realms for their entire life!?

Was Master Stage weak!?

Was Grand Master Stage weak!?

No it was not!

“We are an organization that deals with spying and information, Master Nux. We are not fighters.” Royce then calmed his anger and answered politely.

“I understand that... but... a Master Stage Cultivator reporting directly to the leader... doesn't feel very believable to me...” Nux muttered and Royce's lips twitched again.

He was sure that Master Nux was doing this on purpose.

However, even though he couldn't do anything against him, he answered a bit rudely.

“Master Nux, the Thousand Information Chamber doesn't just choose people randomly. If you want to become a high-ranking Spy in Thousand Information Chamber, you need to pass through strict requirements.

If you don't pass those requirements, then even if you are an Expert Stage Cultivator, you won't be accepted.”

“Hmm? What are the conditions?”

“You need to have Affinity with both Fire and Wind Elements. And I, have a Medium Level Affinity with both of them!”

Royce muttered with a proud look on his face.

Now, Nux understood, he had read and learned about this world a little.

He knew that having an affinity with more than one element was rare.

If Thousand Information Chamber actually only recruits people with dual affinity with Fire and Wind, then it makes complete sense for a Master Stage Cultivator to report directly to the leader.

“Alright, so where is this leader?” Nux questioned.

He wanted to have a little ‘talk’ with the leader.

“I do not know.” However, Royce shook his head.

“Didn’t you say you report directly to the leader?” Nux questioned with a frown.

“I do, however, I do not know where the leader lives, I just follow the orders he gives and then meets him at the set time and place.”

“When are you going to meet him again?” Nux questioned.

“I need to report what I found here to him, so the next meeting is after 2 hours. Of course, I will only report what you want me to.” Royce answered.

A satisfied smile appeared on Nux’s face as he nodded.

“I will go with you and see this Leader you are talking about. As for what you will report, just say that you saw nothing and Lady Allura was sleeping calmly.”

“You are going to go with me?”

“Yes, but don’t worry, I will hide myself,” Nux answered. Royce then shook his head and then nodded.

“Alright, leave the room now, don’t disturb us for the next 2 hours.”

Nux kicked him out, then, he turned towards Allura and smiled,

“We have 2 hours, Darling~”

He has been with Allura for 2 days now, so he knew she liked it when he called her more intimately.

A small smile appeared on Allura's face and she nodded,

“Whatever are we going to do in these 2 hours?” Allura questioned jokingly.

“How about we play a game?” Nux questioned seductively.

“How about we fuck a stupid game and continue with a more, much more pleasurable step?” An alluring smile appeared on Allura's charming face as she questioned back.

Nux did not need anything, he just picked Allura up and jumped onto the bed.

“Annhh~”

...

2 hours quickly passed by.

Right now, Nux was walking beside Royce with a smile on his face and for Royce, his face was stiff.

‘Didn't he say he will hide!? Why is he following me!?’

That was the only question in his mind.

He was scared of what would happen when they meet the leader.

Although he knew his Master Nux was a Grand Master Stage Cultivator as well, his leader was someone who had affinities with 2 elements!

He was a lot stronger than a normal Grand Master Stage Cultivator.

‘Stop thinking about nonsense and continued walking,’

Suddenly, he heard Nux's order in his head and Royce continued walking.

A few minutes later, they walked into a dark hall and Royce stopped.

'Why did you stop?' Nux questioned.

'Master Nux, this is the meeting spot.'

'What? You are going to meet the Leader of the Thousand Information Chamber here? Inside the Royal Palace?'

'Yes, Master Nux, not only that, but I believe that the leader lives in the Royal Palace as well. Of course, this is just my assumption.'

'The leader of such a big organization lives inside the Royal Palace. Right inside the core of the kingdom.'

What kind of balls does one need to have to pull something like that?'

Nux was shocked; he couldn't help but open his mouth in disbelief.

He then waited for a few minutes and soon, a figure covered in black mist appeared in front of them.

\*Step\* \*Step\* \*Step\*

The closer it walked, the paler Royce's face got, he turned his head from Nux to the leader then back to Nux again and started panicking.

'You aren't going to hide, Master Nux!?''

In the end, he couldn't control himself and questioned.

'Don't worry, he can't see me.'

Nux answered and if proving his point, the leader muttered.

"Beta, what are you looking around for? And why is your face so pale?"

# Chapter 185

“Beta, what are you looking around for? And why is your face so pale?”

The leader of the Thousand Information Chamber questioned in a hoarse voice.

He was still covered with a veil of Black Mist, therefore, his face wasn't visible, however, Royce could tell from his tone that he had a frown on his face.

‘He can't see him!?’

Royce thought inwardly and his eyes widened in shock.

Master Nux was standing just in front of the leader! Why can't he see him!?

‘Is this another one of his weird abilities?’

Royce thought inwardly, however, before he could think too much, the leader questioned again.

“Beta? Are you okay? Why aren't you answering my question? Was what you found too shocking for you?”

“O-Oh, I-it's nothing like that, Leader, I was just spacing out... Sorry about that... As for what I found, to be honest, everything was normal, I think...”

Royce then started answering how normal everything was and all that.

As for Nux, he glanced at the Leader of the Thousand Information Chamber as his golden eyes shined brightly.

[Name: Kelton Ackerg]

[Age: 62 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Grand Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Vice Leader of the Thousand Information Chamber.]

[Talent: High]

[LVL: 44]

[HP: 570/570]

[MP: 800/800]

[STR: 54]

[AGL: 61]

[VIT: 57]

[STM: 53]

[INT: 80]

[DEF: 51]

...

Information about the man named Kelton Ackerg appeared in front of Nux's eyes and soon, he found something interesting.

'A Vice Leader huh...'

His [Eye Of Discerning] was as helpful as always. It was very hard for one to hide secrets from him.

And this Kelton Ackerg guy failed to do so as well.

However, Nux had to admit, Kelton's control over that black mist was much better than Royce's.

Which is understandable, although he was not a leader, he was still a vice leader of an organization like Thousand Information Chamber.

'Who is the leader then? Is he an Expert Stage Cultivator?' Nux started thinking and soon, his curiosity took over and he decided.

He is going to follow this Kelton guy.

Nux then waited patiently, Kelton and Royce talked for 15 more minutes, and finally,

"Alright, you can leave now," Kelton ordered.

"Yes Leader," Royce bowed and then walked away.

Nux had already told her he would stay here, Royce was free.

For now.

After Royce walked away, a frown appeared on Kelton's face and he started thinking, then, he turned around as well and walked into the darkness.

If it wasn't for his [Sense], Nux would have had a hard time following him.

However, since he did have [Sense], the black mist covering Kelton didn't help him hide at all.

Nux then followed Kelton for 10 minutes and then, he stopped in front of a room and knocked.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

"Enter," an emotionless voice was heard.

Kelton then entered the room and bowed.

“Lady Amaya,”

Nux, who entered the room behind him couldn't help but be shocked when he saw a woman sitting inside a lavish room.

The woman had long dark black hair, juicy red lips, a thin nose and a peerless face.

Nux won't say that out loud, but she was the most beautiful woman he had ever met.

A perfect face, a perfect body, it was as if this woman was born to define the word perfect.

Her breasts weren't large, but they weren't small either, her body wasn't curvy, it was more lean however, combining it with her divine face, she was...

Outright gorgeous.

“What have you found out?” The woman named Amaya questioned.

“The Spy said that he hasn't found anything, however, I have an inkling that he is lying,” Kelton answered.

“Hmm? What do you mean? Why would he lie?” Amaya frowned.

“That, I do not know. However, I am very certain that he was lying. His face was paler than usual, his eyes were wandering around as if he was looking for something and the way his eyes were blinking, he looked afraid of something as well.”

Hearing this, Amaya frowned even more.

She trusted Kelton a lot, however, she still couldn't believe him.

All the Spies were trained and have gone through different torture; very few things can actually scare them.

Also, the spies are extremely loyal, why would they lie? She couldn't understand.

"Why is he lying though?" Amaya questioned.

"I do not know." Kelton shook his head.

He does not have any answer to that question.

Beta has worked under him for a long time now, he knew how loyal he is, if it was before, he would have never imagined Beta lying to him, however, today, the signs were just too obvious.

'What can possibly make him betray us? Money? Torture?

What is it?' Kelton started thinking however, no matter how hard he thought, nothing came to his mind.

"Heh."

Suddenly, he heard a small chuckle. He raised his head and saw that there was a smile on Amaya's face.

"I knew something was wrong with that Allura," Amaya muttered.

"Hmm? What do you mean?" Kelton questioned.

"Think about it, Kelton.

With the whole Edda incident, where they say Edda and Marquee teamed up to catch a spy. The king's minister and the security department must have overlooked this detail, however, it didn't escape my eyes."

"What are you talking about?"

"They say Edda bullied Edrea and forced her to do more work, right?"

"Yes,"

“And how did Edda do it? She gave all her work to Edrea. But what was she doing while Edrea did her part of the work?”

“Hmm?”

“She walked into Allura’s room and ‘talked’ with her. Now from what I know, Edda and Allura weren’t that close before.

Of course, this is not the first time Allura has taken interest in some ‘maids’, however, this ‘interest’ lasted a lot longer than normal.

Normally, Allura would never talk to someone for more than 2 days, however, she and Edda talked with each other for 7 days, this is not normal at all.

And then suddenly, Edda disappeared.”

As she talked, Kelton started thinking as well.

There was something wrong here indeed.

Nux, who heard everything couldn’t help but raise her eyebrows.

What the hell...

Why is someone suspecting Allura...

Where in the hell did her name come from?

And why does what she say sound so logical?

Who the hell is this woman?

# Chapter 186

‘Allura,’ Nux called through their link.

‘What is it? Did you find anything?’ Allura questioned.

‘What do you know about Amaya Skyfall?’ Nux didn’t answer her question, instead, he questioned back.

‘Amaya? Why do you want to know about her?’ Allura frowned.

‘You know her?’

‘Of course, I do. She’s a Royal concubine, just like me. However, that child is a lot more pitiful than me.’ Allura answered.

‘Tell me everything you know about her.’ Nux didn’t say anything and just asked what Allura knew.

‘Well, 10 years ago, Kingdome of Skadi attacked the Skyfall Kingdom, of course, it was not a major attack, actually, according to the Kingdom of Skadi, it was a clash between noble houses that lived inside the Border towns of the two kingdoms.

Of course, the reason didn’t matter, the Skyfall Kingdom was stronger, and the Kingdom of Skadi was weak, therefore, the Kingdom of Skadi was forced to bow and pay compensation.

Amaya Skadi, or now Amaya Skyfall, was that compensation. At that time, she was only 13 years old, and her body still wasn’t fully developed, however, her face, her face was nothing less than perfect.

She was a peerless beauty.

And as soon as the King laid his eyes on her, he accepted the compensation and signed the deal.

However, there was a catch.

Amaya Skyfall was like an Unattainable Flower, she had a peerless appearance, but, she was cursed by the heavens.

She can't cultivate.

She has no talent at all.

Of course, to someone like the king, this doesn't matter, he just happily accepted the compensation and waited for 5 years.

Yes, he would let her turn 18, he would let her body grow, then, he would devour this piece of flower and would collect a new, even shinier trophy.

However, 5 years later, another thing was revealed.

The Curse didn't just stop her from cultivating, the curse stopped her from living like a woman as well.

Amaya Skyfall's curse didn't allow anyone to mate with her.

If one does, he will die the moment he puts his thing inside.

Of course, someone like the king can easily resist the curse; however, it will weaken him to some extent. Obviously, as the king, he cannot allow that.

Therefore, he backed away and started finding the cure to this curse.

From then to now, 5 more years have passed, however, the king was not able to find anything and Amaya Skyfall, well, she just stayed inside her room, as everyone avoided her like a plague.

A 13-year-old girl, who was sold by her parents to another kingdom, there she was ghosted by everyone around her, living a dull, lifeless life, waiting to die.

A pitiful girl indeed.'

Allura muttered, and hearing her voice, Nux knew she was sad.

‘...’

However, he didn’t say anything.

‘But why are you suddenly asking about that pitiful girl?’ Suddenly, Allura questioned.

A wry smile appeared on Nux’s face as he answered.

‘The pitiful girl you are talking about...

Is the Leader of The Thousand Information Chamber.’ Nux revealed and Allura’s eyes widened in surprise.

‘WHAT!?’

‘Yes, Amaya Skyfall is the Leader of The Thousand Information Chamber, and that is not it...’

Nux repeated, then, he glanced at the screen that had appeared in front of his face.

[Name: Amaya Skyfall ]

[Age: 23]

[Mana Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Occupation: The leader of the Thousand Information Chamber.]

[Race: Human]

[Physique: Devouring Mist Demon Physique]

[Talent: King]

[LVL:9]

[HP: 100/100]

[STR: 6]

[AGL: 14]

[VIT: 19]

[STM: 13]

[INT: 19]

[DEF: 14]

Physique.

This was something he had never seen before.

Devouring Mist Demon Physique.

‘Is that the reason behind that curse of hers?’

Nux thought inwardly.

‘Wait...’

Suddenly, Nux’s eyes widened as he recalled something.

‘The Supreme Harem God System has been successfully installed. From now on, the host can gain the power, talent, physique and bloodline of the women he fucks.’

This was the message he got from the system when it was bound with his soul.

However, since Nux has never met a woman with a different bloodline or physique, he had forgotten about it.

But now, it was different.

He has finally found someone who had a Physique.

Soon, Nux's smile widened.

'I have to talk to her.'

He had decided.

The woman has a curse and can't be fucked?

'Hmph! Curse my ass, I'll think of something.'

That was his thought.

He has found his next target.

The Unattainable Flower, Amaya Skyfall.

He then walked into the room, his [Conceal] was on, there was no way Amaya or Kelton could see him.

Then, he walked toward Kelton as a green coloured dagger appeared in his hand, he placed the dagger on Kelton's neck and grabbed him from behind.

Actually, he wanted to grab Amaya, however, he was still wary of her physique, it is better to steer away from the unknown.

"Who are you!?" Amaya, who was talking to Kelton shouted out loud when suddenly a man appeared behind Kelton and placed his dagger on Kelton's neck.

Kelton's eyes widened in disbelief as well.

However, seeing that pointy dagger on his neck, he didn't move.

He quickly calmed down and just as he was about to take out his dagger from his storage ring, he heard a voice.

“Calm down, don’t do something stupid. I could have killed you if I wanted to and you would have died without knowing how and what happened.

I mean no harm.”

Nux muttered.

Of course, Kelton wasn’t going to listen to him, however, Amaya was different.

“Kelton, stop.” She ordered.

A smile appeared on Nux’s face as he commented.

“It’s always nice to talk to smart people.”

“Who are you?” Kelton questioned as he calmed himself down.

Actually, he was wary of this man who had literally appeared out of nowhere.

However, he was giving himself too much credit.

Nux didn’t even care about it.

He was just a prop he could use to make his entry cooler.

That’s it.

His main target was Amaya, the woman sitting in front of him.

“I didn’t know the Leader of the Thousand Information Chamber was such a young woman.”

Kelton’s eyes widened in surprise,

‘How did he know!?’

That was his thoughts.

Amaya, however, seemed to have expected this and wasn't really surprised.

Then, a small smile appeared on her face as she questioned.

“Are you the lover Allura had been going out with behind the King's back?”

# Chapter 187

“Are you the lover Allura had been going out with behind the King’s back?”

Amaya questioned and Nux’s eyes widened in surprise.

“Haha~ From your reaction, it looks like I am right.” Amaya then chuckled.

Nux’s eyes widened even more when he realized what had just happened.

What Amaya said was just a guess!

She wasn’t sure about it!

However, she questioned it so convincingly that he thought that she already knew about it and reacted in a way he shouldn’t have.

‘W-What the hell? Why is dealing with her so difficult?’

Nux wondered in surprise.

He then noticed that Amaya was observing him with a small smile on her face, it was as if she was enjoying his reactions.

And for some reason, Nux did not like that gaze at all.

However, instead of being angry, Nux calmed down.

Then, after taking a deep breath, Nux questioned.

“How did you know?”

“You must have already heard what I was saying before, didn’t you?”

Nux decided to be honest and nodded.

“As I said, Edda and Allura were a little too close than normal. Then, after Edda disappeared and the whole spy thing that continued after that, one thing bugged me.

Edda, Alger, Edrea, and Algerama, the main players of this incident were mentioned, however, no one mentioned Allura, who was unusually close to Edda. Neither did the concubine herself step forward.

Something felt wrong.

I then started reading Allura’s logs and noticed that last week, she left the Royal Palace 2 times. An irregular behaviour.

Of course, this was not enough to suspect her, however, ‘coincidentally’ the day Allura left the Royal Palace, was the day Edda disappeared and everything happened.

Not only that but this time, Allura didn’t stop anywhere, in particular, she just rode in her carriage for a few hours and returned. Another irregular behaviour.

This was suspicious in my book.

I kept my eyes on her for 2 days and although I didn’t notice something weird, I felt something was wrong.

She was unusually quiet.

Then, I sent a spy to spy on Allura and the Spy I sent returned with a pale face and was acting weirdly.

This could not be a coincidence anymore.

Something was wrong with Allura for sure.”

Amaya replied.

However, Nux just furrowed his brows and questioned.

“But that doesn’t explain how you knew why I and Allura were lovers.”

“Well, that was just a guess. You have to be very skilled if you can roam around the Royal Palace and appear behind a Grand Master Stage cultivator like that. Making you a subordinate shouldn’t be easy.

Therefore I assumed you were the boss.

As for your relation with Allura, well, lovers was the first thing that came to my mind and luckily, I was right.”

Amaya answered.

“You are an intelligent woman indeed.” Nux nodded.

“Thank you for the compliment.” Amaya smiled.

Then, a small smile appeared on Nux’s face as he commented,

“However, you aren’t as intelligent as I thought you would be.”

“Hmm?” Amaya frowned.

“If I were you, I wouldn’t tell anything to someone who just barged into my room without me noticing, I would be warier and I would be on guard.

What if I don’t like the fact that you know my secret and decide to silence you?” Nux questioned with a smile.

Amaya, however, wasn’t intimidated, a similar smile appeared on her face as she questioned back.

“Do you know who I am? I am the Concubine of the Skyfall Kingdom.”

“Or in other words, you are a Trophy.” Nux mocked.

Amaya however, shook her head, “I am an ‘unclaimed trophy’, and the king values me the lot.”

“Oh? But are you sure you want the king to know that you are the leader of the Thousand Information Chamber?” Nux questioned.

“Huh?” Amaya frowned.

She then glanced at Nux for a while and then, she questioned.

“Do you really think the King doesn’t know about it already?”

“Huh?” This time, Nux frowned.

“Aren’t you from the Enemy kingdom? Why would the King not do anything if he knew you are the leader of the Thousand Information Chamber?”

Amaya chuckled and then, she answered,

“As I said, I am an ‘unclaimed trophy’, the king values me a lot. Therefore he allows me to do everything I want. He treats this as a child’s play.”

“But what if you send important information to the Kingdom Of Skadi?”

“The king knows I won’t do it and to be honest, even if I do, he probably wouldn’t care. That is just how he is.” Amaya answered.

Nux started thinking.

Amaya observed Nux’s face and she muttered,

“The Royal Palace is a lot scarier place than you think it is. Actually, I am surprised that you can roam here for so long and still be alive.”

Nux glanced at Amaya and understood what she wanted to say.

She wanted to warn him.

And Nux was planning to take this warning seriously.

Maybe he underestimated the Kingdom.

Maybe he got a little too arrogant.

He needs to slow down.

Of course, now that he is here, he won't go back without gaining anything.

A small smile appeared on his face and he questioned.

“So are you planning to call the King? Do you think you can survive till the King comes here? Let me tell you, if you are thinking of depending on this trash, then you will be disappointed.

It would be an achievement for him to resist me for 3 seconds.”

Kelton's face twitched when he heard Nux's words, however, for some reason, he believed him.

This man appeared behind him and he wasn't able to notice it.

What is stopping this man from beheading him?

Actually, even he was wondering why Lady Amaya was telling everything to this man, she is usually cold and aloof and doesn't talk to anyone.

Why is she talking so much with this man?

Suddenly, Amaya muttered.

“Well, actually, I am not planning to call the King.”

# Chapter 188

“Well, actually, I am not planning to call the King.”

“Heeh? Do you have any other plans?” Nux questioned with a smile.

“No, I do not have any other plans as well,” Amaya answered and Kelton panicked.

What!?! Lady Amaya was out of plans!?

When has this happened before!?

And why is she so calm!?

“Hmm, then why aren’t you scared for your life?” Nux questioned.

Then, a smile appeared on Amaya’s face as she answered,

“I just believe that you are not here to kill me.”

“Hmm? Why do you think so?”

“Well, what are you wasting so much time for then? C’mon, do it. Kill me.”  
Amaya chuckled.

“...”

Nux blinked a few times, then, he chuckled as well.

“You are right, I am not here to kill you.”

Then, he removed the dagger from Kelton’s neck and stepped back.

Kelton sighed in relief as he rubbed his neck.

He won’t deny it, he was scared.

Very scared.

However, now things were better.

“So what are you here for?” Amaya questioned.

Nux smiled, then suddenly, he disappeared and appeared in front of Kelton, with one chop, the man’s body fell to the floor, unconscious.

Then, Nux turned toward Amaya with the same smile on his face.

Amaya raised her eyebrow at his actions, a sigh then escaped her mouth as she muttered, “You weren’t lying when you said that he won’t be able to buy time.”

She didn’t look very shocked for some reason, she was rather calm.

“I never lie,” Nux answered.

“So? What do you want to talk about?” Amaya questioned again.

“I want to talk about your curse or to be more precise,

I want to talk about your Physique.”

Amaya’s eyes widened in surprise, this was the second time that she had shown a reaction, the first being when Nux directly appeared in front of her.

“How do you know about my Physique?” Amaya questioned as she narrowed her eyes.

Even the king did not know about this, he just treated this as a curse and was finding a cure for a curse that doesn’t even exist in the first place.

Nux just smiled as he answered,

“I suggest you do not underestimate me, Amaya.

Treat me as if I am special.”

Amaya narrowed her eyes even more.

She glanced at Nux's golden eyes and for some reason, she got lost in them.

Soon, however, she came out of her reverie and took a deep breath as she calmed herself.

“So? What do you want to talk about my physique?”

After she calmed herself, Amaya questioned.

“Is your Physique the reason why you cannot cultivate?” Nux questioned back.

“...”

Amaya stayed silent as she observed Nux. She knew she shouldn't share something like this with someone she met just a few minutes ago, however, for some reason; her instincts told her to answer this person.

‘Whatever, it's not like nothing would change if I told him.’

With that thought in her mind, she nodded.

“Yes, you are correct; there is no curse on me.

Everything is because of my physique. I cannot use a normal cultivation technique to cultivate Mana.

I could do it at first however, breaking through mortal limits and becoming a beginner stage cultivator is a complex process, I need a proper technique to do it.”

“And what about the belief that you cannot be touched?” Nux questioned.

Instead of answering Nux's question, Amaya picked up a dagger and slit her finger.

Nux's eyes widened in disbelief when he saw Black Mist coming out of her wound, it was only 3 seconds later did the Mist disappeared and blood came out.

“That is because of my physique as well, I do not know much, but I have this Black Mist inside my body and this Mist has poisonous properties.

If a mortal as much as touches this Mist, he will die a gruesome death.

A cultivator isn't spared either.

When the king was 'testing' if the 'curse' was real or not, he used an Advance Stage Cultivator, however, the moment the head of his thing touched my special spot, the poison corroded his body and he passed out.

1 month later, he died and Black Mist came out of his body.

The King of course was scared; he knew that even if he could resist the curse with his cultivation, it will have some effect on him, which he won't allow no matter what.”

Amaya answered.

She had noticed that for some reason, she was talking more than she normally does.

She soon realized that the reason might be because she wanted to talk to someone as equal.

She has been in this Royal Palace for 10 years, most people ghosted her and as for the members of the Thousand Information Chamber, they treated her with the utmost respect.

She doesn't have any friends, she doesn't have anyone to talk to and she lived like this for 10 years.

No matter how smart or intelligent she was, in the end, she was still a 23-year-old woman who has been living alone since she was 13.

Nux was the first one who talked with her as an equal, that was the reason why she talked so much.

Of course, this was all her thoughts, if Nux knew about it, he would just shrug.

‘Naahh, I am just too handsome, you are charmed by my appearance, that’s the reason why you talking more than normal.’

That’s what he would have answered.

“So what you are saying is that as long as you have a suitable cultivation technique, the ‘curse’ will be lifted?” Nux questioned.

“Yes. Although there is no proof, I am sure that once I become a Beginner stage cultivator and start controlling Mana, I will be able to control this Mist as well.”

“How are you so sure?”

“I just know it.” Amaya had no specific answer.

And Nux understood that since he could relate to it.

His Abilities are like that as well.

Somehow, he just knows how it works.

Amaya’s Black Mist must be similar as well.

Suddenly, a small smile appeared on Nux’s face as he questioned.

“So, Amaya, what if I give you a Cultivation Technique that is suitable for you? How will you repay the favour?”

# Chapter 189

“So, Amaya, what if I give you a Cultivation Technique that is suitable for you?”

How will you repay the favour?”

Nux questioned with a small smile on his face.

“Do not joke about this.” Suddenly, Amaya’s expression turned serious as he muttered.

“I am not joking,” Nux replied.

“Then you don’t know what you are talking about. You have no clue how hard it is to find a Cultivation Technique that might not even be in this world.”

“Ohh? Why are you so sure that I can’t find it?” Nux questioned.

“What do you think the reason behind establishing Thousand Information Chamber is?” Amaya questioned.

Nux narrowed his eyes as he guessed, “To find the cultivation technique?”

Amaya nodded, “Indeed, this is the only reason I formed it. It has been 10 years and I haven’t even found a clue yet, how are you going to find it?”

Amaya questioned.

Nux, however, just shook his head and replied, “You don’t have to worry about that, finding it or not finding it is my problem. You just have to tell me that if I do find it,

How are you going to repay me?”

“Anything. I will do anything you want.”

Amaya replied as her eyes shined with an unwavering will.

“Anything?” Nux questioned.

“Anything.” Amaya nodded, the determination and seriousness in her eyes did not fade away.

“What if want your life? What’s the point of getting the technique if you can’t use it?”

“You can kill me right now. There is no point in doing it in a roundabout way.”

Nux’s smile widened even more as he questioned,

“Then I will ask you one last time,

Will you do anything I say?”

“If you find a Cultivation Technique that is suitable for my Physique, then yes.” Amaya nodded again.

“Hahaha~” Suddenly, Nux laughed out loud.

“Remember your promise, Amaya.

Ah also, do not tell anything about me and Allura to anyone, okay?”

Saying that, he turned around and left Amaya’s room.

Amaya who saw his back stayed silent.

No one knew what she was thinking.

Then, she turned her head towards Kelton and shook her head.

She then picked him up and placed him on the sofa gently, Kelton has been with her ever since she was a child, he is the only person she trusts and respect.

Although he was defeated by that man today, that didn't affect the respect she had for him.

He was more like her father than her subordinate.

...

On the other side, Nux returned to Allura's room with a smile on his face.

"Heehh, you look happy? Am I getting a new sister?" Allura questioned with a smile on her face.

"How did you know?" Nux questioned back.

"Well, though I have not been with you for a long time, I have a pretty good understanding of your character.

You are a certified playboy that goes around making women fall for his charm." Allura answered.

"You make it sound so evil."

"Tsk Tsk. isn't that what you are? An evil Sexual predator." Allura snorted.

"You know... you and Felberta would get along well."

Suddenly, Nux muttered.

"Hmm, Hmm, other than Thyra, I believe I will get along with all your women," Allura commented.

"I do not understand why you hate each other so much." Nux shook his head.

"Hmph! She is too bossy." Allura complained with a pout.

“She’s not bossy, she is just shy around others,” Nux explained.

“She didn’t look very shy to me.” Allura was going to be convinced so easily. Suddenly, Allura thought about something and questioned,

“What about others? Is Thyra getting along with your other women?”

“Yeah, she is getting along fine.” Nux nodded as he thought about it.

“Why isn’t she shy in front of them, huh? Why do I receive the special treatment?” Allura questioned.

Nux frowned and then started thinking about this as well.

Why is Thyra getting along with others but not with Allura?

What is the reason?

‘Ahh...’

Soon, Nux’s eyes widened in realization as he muttered.

“That might be because of Skyla. She was there when Thyra met other girls.”

Skyla had the power to lighten anyone’s mood with her cheerful face.

One has to be a monster to not like Skyla.

Or at least that’s what Nux believed.

“Ah, Skyla huh... I would like to meet her...” Allura muttered.

“Hmm? You know about her?” Nux questioned.

“Yeah, Edda talked about her a lot. Actually, she talked about all your women; however, the most she talked about was Skyla.

She said Skyla was the one she is the closest to.”

Nux nodded, “That thought is shared by most of them. Skyla is close to all of them. Actually, once you meet her, you will like her as well.”

“I am excited to meet them.” Allura smiled.

The two of them continued talking, soon, the topic turned into something lewd and then, started another steamy session started.

The session continued for an hour, and then, Allura closed her eyes and entered the dreamland. Nux who had hugged her from behind, however, wasn't asleep.

He was searching, searching for the Cultivation technique inside the System Shop.

However, soon, a frown appeared on his face.

He couldn't find what he was looking for.

He has checked everything.

1-Star Cultivation technique.

2-Star, 3-Star, 4, 5, 6...

He searched everything; however, he did not find anything.

In the end, he glanced at another list and exhaled deeply.

[7-Star Cultivation Techniques – 10000 System Points.]

This was his last hope, he can't buy any 8-Star Cultivation technique, therefore, if he didn't find any technique here, he could forget about Amaya.

Nux then started searching, he searched and searched and soon, he found what he was looking for.

[Mantra of the Devouring Mist Demon]

[7-Star Cultivation Technique]

[Price – 10000 System points.]

He found a perfect technique, however, he realized that he didn't have enough System points.

Of course, this wasn't much of a problem for him.

A small smile appeared on Nux's face.

'I guess I need to revisit Bloodhill Wilderness.'

# Chapter 190

“My Lovely dovely girls, we all are going out today~” Nux announced with a big smile on his face.

“Heeeh? Are we going on a date?” Skyla questioned as her eyes shined with excitement. e

“We are going on a Date indeed...” Nux nodded with a smile on his face.

Skyla’s eyes shined even more.

A date with Nux?

Heck yes!

Those were her thoughts.

However, Felberta’s thoughts weren’t as simple,

“Date? Why so sudden?” She questioned as she narrowed her eyes.

A date with Nux?

Heck yes!

Those were her thoughts as well.

However, she knew this man in front of him very well.

And that big smile he had on his face...

She is 99% sure that something was wrong here.

“How many of us are going?” Felberta questioned.

“Me, you, Thyra, Skyla, Lane and Edda. We are all going.” Nux answered with the same big smile.

“Oh?” Felberta raised her left eyebrow and questioned.

“Allura isn’t going?” Felberta questioned.

“Well, she is still a Royal Concubine, she can’t stay away from the Palace for a long time,” Nux muttered with a sad look on his face.

He really wanted to get stronger as soon as possible now.

“How long are we going out for?” Felberta questioned.

“It will take us 2-3 weeks,” Nux answered.

“Got it.”

Felberta nodded. Now she was 100% sure.

Something was definitely wrong here.

There is no way Nux would leave his woman alone for 2-3 weeks without any reason. It is either they all go together, or they don’t go anywhere.

“Where are we going?” Felberta questioned as she narrowed her eyes.

“Heh?”

“I am asking where are we going?” Felberta questioned.

“Oh C’mon sister Felberta, it is Nux we are talking about, he must have chosen a fun place, right Nux?” Skyla questioned with a big smile.

“I-Indeed.” Nux nodded.

“Nux, where are we going?” Felberta, however, didn’t back down and questioned.

Now, Lane and Edda started catching up as well.

Something was wrong here.

Thyra, however, didn't care.

She was just inwardly excited to go out with Nux.

Heh. A surprisingly cute attitude for a cold-blooded assassin.

As he glanced at his girls, Nux knew he couldn't hide it anymore.

“W-We are going into the Bloodhill Wilderness.”

He revealed and Skyla opened her mouth in shock.

“How are we going to have fun there?” She questioned.

“Well... I will be honest... we aren't exactly going to have fun there...”

There is a reason why we are going there, however, I am sure anything will be fun if we are together, right?” Nux laughed.

“What is the reason?” Edda questioned.

“Well, I'll tell you guys about it later. I'll tell you guys once we reach there.” Nux replied.

“When are we leaving?” Thyra questioned. Although she sounded nonchalant, Nux could see the excitement hidden in her blue eyes.

“Heeh? You look excited.” Nux commented.

“I am excited.” Thyra didn't deny it.

She then turned towards other girls and suggested.

“You all should get a little serious about cultivation, to be honest, although you are strong and are all Master Stage Cultivators, except for Skyla, all of

you would be killed by Advance Stage Assassins if they attack you.”

Thyra muttered.

Felberta frowned, “I can understand what you are trying to say and will follow your advice, however, why is Skyla not included with us?”

Skyla, who was standing beside Thyra raised her chest in pride as a big smile appeared on her face.

“I have been learning Killing Techniques. Hehe~”

“What!?” Nux, Felberta, Lane and Edda opened their eyes in shock.

“What? You can ask Sister Thyra if you don’t believe me.” Thinking that they didn’t believe her, Skyla pouted and pointed at Thyra.

“You were serious about it...? I thought you were doing that in order to get close to Thyra...” Lane muttered.

Then, a silly smile appeared on Skyla’s face as she answered,

“Well... umm... I started it for that reason... but then I liked it... and... Haha...” Skyla laughed out loud.

“She has been learning from me for a while now, although she doesn’t have any practical experience, she should be able to defeat any of you.” Thyra nodded.

“Huh? Even me?” Edda questioned.

She was stronger than all the women before Thyra appeared, when she heard that Skyla surpassed her, her competitive nature rose up and she questioned.

“Well, you might be stronger than her physically, but if you two fight, I would bet on Skyla,” Thyra answered and Skyla’s smile brightened even more.

Hehe~ She was strong, you know?

Edda narrowed her eyes as she glanced at Skyla and challenged, “Skyla, fight with me.”

Thyra, however, shook her head, “What Skyla is learning are Killing Techniques, it isn’t child’s play.

You cannot ‘spar’ with her, especially when you know practically nothing about the technique.”

“Alright, we will be going to the Bloodhill Wilderness, let’s leave after breakfast,” Felberta announced.

She may not show it, however, she didn’t like the fact that she was the weakest among Nux’s all women, however, she couldn’t do anything about it, she didn’t cultivate on her own, she was a Pleasure Cultivator.

However, now that she heard about Thyra’s Killing Technique, she started having thoughts as well.

She would learn it and then she would defeat everyone!

She won’t remain as Nux’s weakest woman.

She was competitive as well.

“Yes, I want to go there as well,” Edda muttered, Lane who was behind her nodded as well.

Nux glanced at his girls and smiled.

“Good.” Then, he turned towards Thyra and nodded.

A small smile appeared on Thyra’s face.

“Alright, now remember, to maximize the efficiency, we will be running towards the Bloodhill Wilderness.

I hope all of you are in Clover Town within 3 days.

Okay?”

“Alright.” Felberta and the others nodded with determined eyes.

“Also, don’t enter the Inner Area, am I clear?”

“Yes.”

“Form a group of 4,

Skyla, Lane and 2 assassins.

Felberta, Edda and 2 assassins.

Thyra, you can do whatever you want inside, I believe your judgment.”

“Wait... assassins?” Felberta frowned.

“Yes, all 50 assassins will be going with us as well.”

# Chapter 191

“Damn... are you sure you are Fiery Flame Lion?” Nux questioned as he glanced at the beast in front of him.

The beast was a Lion with Flames as its mane and it gave off a dangerous aura.

Umm... well, not really.

There was no dangerous Aura.

Its whole body was covered in scratches and cuts, its movements were now sluggish, no, sluggish was an understatement, it couldn't move.

Its eyes that were filled with immense pride and ego were now filled with dread as it glanced at Nux.

It wanted to run away, however,

It couldn't move.

Nux then started walking towards the Lion, with whatever strength it was left with, the Lion tried to step back, however, it lost the balance of its body and fell down.

Its whole body was now numb. It only glanced at Nux who was walking beside it and regretted attacking.

Maybe... maybe it would have been left alive if it didn't attack him this monster.

Nux just shook his head, then, a sword appeared in his hand and he pierced it into Lion's head, taking its life.

“Grrr...”

The Fiery Flame Lion then closed his eyes, the flames surrounding its mane died down and it stopped breathing.

“I really got stronger huh...”

Nux, who killed the Lion couldn't help but smile.

Last time, he had to use all the strength he had to defeat it, however now...

Now he defeated him just because the Lion interrupted his 'walk'.

Well, actually, he was the one who deactivated his [Conceal], however, the Lion didn't have to know that.

Back to the topic,

Nux defeated the Lion easily.

The Lion's movements felt so sluggish to him that he felt like he was fighting a 1-star Beast.

Actually, those 'scratches and cuts' all over Lion's body were just Nux testing his Poison Dagger that he got from Alger.

Otherwise, he could have beheaded this Lion like he had been beheading other 4-Star Beast in one slash.

Yes, he has been in the Wilderness for a few hours now, with how clean his clothes were and how tension free his face was, it was hard to believe but it was indeed the truth.

Not only that, he had even killed more than twenty 4-Star Beasts.

The process was very simple, you walk up to a Beast, slash your sword, and boom, the beast is beheaded, simple right?

Of course, don't try something like this if you do not [Conceal], else you will fail on the 'walk up to the beast' part.

[Ding]

[4-Star Beast Killed]

[Reward: 10 System Points]

[Fire Affinity: +10]

Nux completely ignored the message in front of him and continued his walk.

‘Nux, I am here.’

However, just as he was about to attack another 4-Star beast, he heard Thyra’s voice.

‘Aha, as I thought, you are the first.’

Nux complimented.

‘It’s not like it’s a big achievement, I am the strongest one after all...’

Thyra replied nonchalantly.

However, Nux was sure that there was a small smile on her face.

‘Alright, I’ll come to get you,’ Nux muttered.

The beast he was about to attack looked around.

For some reason, it felt like it had overcome a danger.

A weird feeling indeed.

However, the beast didn’t think too much about it and continued moving.

On the other side, Nux activated his [Conceal] and rushed out of the Inner Area, then he moved out of the Outer Area and walked into Clover Town.

‘Where are you?’

He questioned.

‘Near the Entrance.’

Thyra answered.

‘Got it.’

Nux then rushed towards the Entrance and soon he found Thyra.

He completely ignored the man who lay on the ground behind Thyra, he could predict what had happened by how the group of 3 men were looking at Thyra.

The fear inside their eyes was clear.

Nux, however, did not pity these men. Hmph, they should be happy that Thyra didn’t directly slit his throat. She was feeling good today, so she must have decided to let it go after beating the man till he was unconscious.

Nux then smiled, he then walked towards Thyra and offered his hand.

The three men who were looking at Thyra with fear in their eyes finally noticed Nux, then, a small smile appeared on their faces.

Someone else is going to suffer the same fate as them, it made them happy.

However, what happened next shocked them.

That monster that had a cold look on her face showed an amazingly beautiful smile then she grabbed the man’s eyes and the two of them walked away.

“W-What was that...?” One of the men couldn’t help but question.

“T-That woman can show a face like that...?” another man questioned.

“That’s the benefit of having a handsome face.

Tsk Tsk, if we do it, then it’s an assault, however, if someone handsome does the same thing, he is a gentleman!

Where’s the logic in that?

Hmph! Women.”

The last of the three snorted with a bitter face and the other two nodded.

“Hey... don’t tell Alex about this after he wakes up...” Someone suggested.

The other two nodded and agreed.

Their friend would be too shocked if he knew what happened and they won’t let this happen.

They are good friends indeed.

...

On the other side, Thyra and Nux were walking hand in hand, looking like a couple, there was a beautiful small smile on Thyra’s face and Nux, who saw that smile smiled as well.

Thyra was too cute.

“Is anyone else coming right now?”

“Two and Three... I think they would reach here within a few hours...”

“Ahh, so we have a few hours with us, right?” Nux questioned.

A little perverted smile appeared on Thyra’s face before it disappeared quickly and she nodded.

“Hmmm, what should we do in these few hours we have?” Nux questioned to himself.

Thyra's heart started beating faster.

Then, a mischievous smile appeared on Nux's face as he muttered,

“Well, let's go and hunt a few beasts. What do you say, Thyra?”

Thyra's smile disappeared, however, she was too shy to say anything.

In the end, she nodded with a pout.

“Alright... let's hunt some beasts...”

# Chapter 192

“Alright, now all of you are here.” Nux smiled as he glanced at the 5 women in front of him.

It was his third day inside the Bloodhill Wilderness, while it would be the first day for Felberta, Edda, Skyla and Lane.

There were still a few assassins that still haven't arrived, however, they can't be blamed either, they were only Advanced and Beginner Stage Cultivators and they aren't as fast as them.

They still needed 2-3 days to arrive.

Of course, that doesn't mean Nux was helpless, he had already formed 'Party' with other adventurers.

Nux then turned towards four assassins that were standing behind Thyra.

They were Two, Three, Four and Five.

“Alright, you know the groups right?” Nux questioned.

“Yes! I have remembered it already; it's me, Sister Lane, Three and Four.

The other team is Sister Felberta, Sister Edda, Two, and Five.

The rest of the assassins are to function according to Sister Thyra's command.”

Skyla answered with an excited look on his face.

Nux smiled, he then turned towards Skyla and questioned.

“Alright, then what about the rules?”

“It is strictly forbidden to enter the Inner Area, well, except for Sister Thyra, she is strong, she can do whatever she wants.

All the teams have to be connected through Telepathic Connection, we have the advantage, and we should use it.

We are not to fight recklessly.

And no deaths are allowed.” Skyla answered like an honour student.

Nux patted her head as a reward and then nodded.

“Good, as expected of my Skyla,”

A smile appeared on Skyla’s face as she giggled.

Nux’s face then turned serious as he glanced at his girls and answered,

“Look, you are exploring the Wilderness with the best experts we have right now. Do not hesitate to ask whatever you want.

Learn from them and grow stronger, however, don’t take unnecessary risks, your safety is much more important to me, okay?”

“Don’t worry too much, we aren’t children,” Felberta answered.

She felt especially weird when Nux treated them like children, especially when she has a child of her own.

Of course, knowing that he was acting like this because he was worried about her safety filled her with immense satisfaction and delight; however, she would never say that out loud.

Especially not when there were so many people around them.

“Alright, then let’s move.” Nux nodded, he had already formed Party with everyone, now the only thing that was left was killing the beasts and getting those System Points.

After everyone left, a small smile appeared on Nux's face as he entered the Inner Area.

In these last two days, he alone gathered around 1500 points.

Yes, he killed around One hundred and fifty 4 Star Beasts, alone.

The only good thing is that he did it very far away from where he was right now.

Otherwise, there would be no beast he could kill here.

“Alright, let's start today's killing.

Hahaha!”

Demon-like laughter.

The beasts all around the area felt a shiver in their spine.

They looked around; however, they couldn't see anything.

Well, only the lucky ones would know how they died.

...

On the other side, Skyla, Lane, Three and Four were walking around and Skyla, as usual, was the one who started talking,

“So Three, what's your real name?”

“It's Clara Wingson, Lady Skyla.”

“Ohhh, Clara, that's a nice name.” Skyla complimented, then she turned towards Four and questioned.

“What about you, Four?”

“I am Sasha Simpson, Lady Skyla.” Four answered.

“Ohhh, got it.”

“So, tell me, Sasha and Clara, do you know the Killing Techniques that Thyra knows?”

“We do know about them, Miss One had thought it to us.” Clara nodded.

“Oh, so is Thyra the one who trains you?”

“Yes,”

“How do you guys train?”

“We learn the theory and then use it against real humans.”

“...”

Skyla stayed silent.

She actually wanted to learn more, however, she didn't want to kill humans.

That was bad.

As if knowing what she was thinking, Clara muttered,

“There is another way to train as well, Lady Skyla.”

“What is it?” Skyla questioned with an excited look on her face.

“We spar with each other.”

“Huh? Spar? But Thyra said there you only kill, you don't spar.”

“Well, that is true, the best way is to kill humans, and however, if you don't want to kill, then using wooden swords to spar is a good way to train.

However, I recommend that you spar with someone who had the same skill level as you, that is the fastest way to improve.”

Skyla nodded, she then turned towards Lane and smiled,

“Sister Lane you are going to spar with me after we return, okay? Please?”

Since they were small, Lane has always been weak to Skyla, she just cannot deny when Skyla looks at her like that.

Lane then shook her head and nodded.

“Alright... but you have to teach me those killing techniques as well.”

“Of course! You can count on me!”

“Alright, let’s start killing some beasts now,” Lane muttered.

Skyla nodded, she then looked around, and soon, her eyes fell on a 1-Star Beast and she rushed towards it.

A sword then appeared in her hand, and she then attacked the beast, the beast tried to block her attack with its claws, however, the strength behind Skyla’s attack was higher than normal, therefore, the beast’s body flew away and clashed with the tree.

“Don’t give the opponent any time to rest!”

Skyla recalled Thyra’s teaching as she rushed towards the Beast, which was a Gale Wolf which is known for its speed, however, against Skyla who was a Master Stage Cultivator, its speed wasn’t worth mentioning.

Before the wolf could stand back on its leg, Skyla appeared near her and then,

She pierced her sword into its head, where its brain was.

The beast’s body twitched a little, then, it stopped breathing.

Skyla killed her first beasts and she did it amazingly and decisively.

Clara, who watched everything couldn’t help but be shocked.

“W-What the hell...”

# Chapter 193

“W-What the hell...”

Clara’s mouth was opened wide in shock.

Lane, who was standing beside her frowned.

“Why are you so shocked?”

“You aren’t?” Clara questioned.

“Well, she was a little decisive with her moves, I agree, but aren’t you overreacting? It was just a 1-Star Beast.”

“It’s not about what rank the beast was, it’s about...”

“Hmm? About what?”

“Didn’t you see how quick and decisive she was? Isn’t this her first time killing a living thing? Why does she look like an experienced killer?”

Also, don’t you find the contrast between her cute face and decisive killing a little too shocking?”

Clara questioned.

Lane, however, shook her head and answered,

“We are cultivators as well, you know? We were taught cultivation so that we can protect Lady Felberta, how are we supposed to protect Lady Felberta if we aren’t prepared to kill?”

Although we were forced to kill, mentally, we were prepared to do it.

Killing a beast is nothing, we can even kill a human if he wanted to harm Lady Felberta or... Nux...

Our daggers won't tremble like you are imagining in your mind."

A determined look combined with a small blush appeared on Lane's face as she muttered.

Clara was taken aback by Lane's answer, however, soon, a small smile appeared on her face and she nodded in understanding.

Lane and Skyla were the same as her, only luckier.

While she was forced to kill humans ever since she was 7, Lane and Skyla were taken in as bodyguards and were trained to protect someone else.

It is only natural that they are prepared to kill.

Of course, Clara knew it won't be as easy as Lane think.

When it comes to killing humans, the pressure is...

A lot higher than normal.

Although her dagger may not tremble before killing the human, however, it will tremble once you killed him.

A wry smile appeared on Clara's face as she remembered the first time she killed a human.

However, soon, she shook her head and decided to change the topic.

"What about Lady Felberta, how do you think she is doing?"

"Hmm, I don't know, however, I am sure she won't be having a hard time as well..."

...

And Lane was right.

Right now, Felberta was standing in front of a dead 1-Star Earth Bear, there was blood on her feet and she was looking at the Bear with an expressionless face.

Suddenly, she felt a hand on her shoulder, she turned around and saw Edda standing behind her,

“Are you okay?” Edda questioned.

“Yes, I am fine. Something like this won’t bother me.” Felberta nodded and smiled.

She won’t deny it, she was a little shaken, however, it wasn’t much.

She knew she would get used to it if she kills a few more beasts.

‘I need to get stronger,’

She thought inwardly.

‘There are too many amazing women around him now. I need to improve myself.’

This was her motivation.

If Nux knew her thoughts, he would only chuckle and kiss her lips, however, Felberta was serious.

She wanted to get stronger.

“Alright, let’s kill a few more beasts,” Felberta muttered.

Edda who was behind her nodded.

She had already killed humans before, this was nothing for her. She decided to accompany Felberta until she is comfortable, after that, she will start killing beasts as well.

As for the assassins following them, well, the two of them kept the eye on the surrounding, although it was just an Outer Layer where the strongest Star Beast is just a 3 Star Beast, which Two can easily take down alone, they were still cautious.

That was how Thyra trained these assassins to be.

Perfectionists.

...

The other assassins were obviously faster than Nux's woman; they formed a team of 2 and hunted 3 Star Beasts.

They were quick and efficient and brought Nux lots of points.

As for their leader, well, she left the Outer Area as well and entered Inner Area, she wanted to fight 4 Star Beasts.

3 Star Beasts were too weak for her.

Also, she wanted to become an Expert Stage Cultivator and the best way to do that was fighting.

Ahem, correction, it was the second-best way to do that.

The first was,

Ahem Ahem.

Thyra then started killing 4 Star Beasts. Whether the fight would be long or short depended on whether she was the first one to attack or not. If it was the Beast who attacked her first, things would take more time.

However, if it was her who had the first strike,

Heh.

Of course, it depended on the Beast's strength as well, a 4-star beast is equal to a Grand Master Stage Cultivator. Generally, Beasts are stronger than humans of the same Stage.

A party of 1 Grand Master and around 2 Master Stage Cultivators was required to defeat a 4-Star Beast.

Of course, this is only applicable for adventurers and fighters who are not trained properly.

This does not mean that adventurers aren't experienced, in fact, in this wilderness, they are the ones with the most experienced.

However, they cannot be compared with the likes of Thyra.

Thyra was a remarkably agile assassin, and she knows how to use her speed properly.

If she is the one who gets the first attack, even an Expert Stage cultivator might fall, let alone 4-Star brainless beasts.

Killing these beasts was an easy thing for her, and of course, the number of System points she collected for Nux was the highest.

Thyra continued killing and moving from one place to other, then suddenly, while she was walking, someone tapped on her shoulder.

Her body jerked in surprise, she then turned around and saw it was Nux.

“Hello~ My cute assassin, I see you have been killing a lot of poor beasts.”

“W-What is it?” Thyra questioned with a red face.

She was a little embarrassed by how surprised she acted.

“Ohhhh? You aren't happy to see me here?” Nux questioned with a smile.

“I am but... w-why are you here?” Thyra questioned.

Then, a smile appeared on Nux's face as he answered,

“I have been waiting for you.”

# Chapter 194

“I have been waiting for you.”

Nux muttered with a smile on his face.

“Why were you waiting for me?” Although she tried to keep an expressionless face, a small smile couldn’t help but appear on Thyra’s face and she questioned.

“Well, I sensed you were close to me, I felt that you might be able to help me with what I am about to do next,”

“What do you need help with?” Thyra questioned.

Actually, she may look very normal right now, inwardly, she was all smiles.

She was glad that she could help Nux.

“Well, I wanted to kill the 4-Star beasts around this area, however, I thought about a better plan. But I am not sure if I could do it alone.” Nux muttered.

“What’s the better plan you are talking about?” Thyra questioned.

Then suddenly, Nux picked her up like a potato stack as he muttered,

“Follow me.”

“I can’t exactly do what you are telling me to...” Thyra complained.

If he wants to carry her, why not carry her on his back, or even better, carry her like a princess?

Thyra’s face reddened when she thought about it.

Her mind was filled with all sorts of fantasies as well.

As if hearing Thyra's thoughts, Nux adjusted himself a little, then, he carried her like a princess.

A small smile appeared on Thyra's face as she glanced at Nux's face from this new angle.

'He looks handsome from here as well...'

She thought and her face turned even redder.

Suddenly, Nux turned his head and smiled at her.

"Follow me."

"I can't exactly do what you are telling me to..." Thyra repeated her complaint, however, this time, her voice was a lot lower than normal.

She was actually enjoying it.

Only a little though,

She was not a pervert with only indecent thoughts in her mind.

Don't get her wrong.

Nux just smiled and shook his head.

Then, he dashed forward and crossed several trees.

Some beasts wanted to attack him, however, when they noticed his speed, they quickly turned their eyes away.

They won't be able to catch him. It will just be a waste of energy, might as well find something more delicious.

Nux ignored them as well and a minute later, he stopped and hid behind the tree.

Then, a serious look appeared on his face as he pointed forward,

“See that? I want to fight them.”

Thyra frowned, she was a little sad that Nux wasn't carrying her anymore. However, she knew they were not here for something like that.

She needs to get serious.

Then, a serious look appeared on Thyra's face as she glanced in the direction in which Nux pointed.

However, soon, her eyes widened in surprise and horror.

‘You want to go against them!? Are you crazy!?’ She used their telepathic link because she didn't want to alert the pack in front of her.

Yes, there were a total of 6 wolves in front of them, of course, if they were normal wolves, she wouldn't have worried about it, however, there was one 5-Star Wolf.

The leader of the pack.

A 5-Star Beast!

That is comparable to an Expert Stage Cultivators!

No, they are even stronger than normal Expert Stage Cultivators!

And Nux wanted to face it and its pack at the same time.

‘You are only a Grand Master Stage Cultivator, remember?’

‘C'mon Thyra, I am not reckless, that's why I called you here, right?’ Nux then answered her in a calm voice.

Hearing his voice, Thyra calmed down a little and started thinking.

‘Do you have a plan?’

She questioned.

He must have prepared a trap or something like that, right?

‘Yes, I have a plan.’ Nux nodded.

A small smile appeared on Thyra’s face as she nodded and then, she questioned.

‘Then what can I help you with?’

‘Can you deal with those five 4 Star wolves that are with it? I am not sure if I can take all of them at the same time.’ Nux answered.

‘Hmm, taking out those 5 Wolves shouldn’t be that hard. Are you planning to take out the subordinates first and then team up against the 5 Star Wolf?’ Thyra tried to guess the plan.

Nux however, just shook his head.

‘No, we aren’t going to team up.’

Then, a smile appeared on Nux’s face as he continued,

‘The plan is simple, you will those five wolves, while I will take on the leader.’

‘You are going to take on a 5-Star beast alone!?’ Thyra questioned in shock.

‘Remember Thyra, I was able to defeat Grand Master Stage Cultivators when I was just a Master Stage Cultivators.’ Nux replied with a smile on his face.

‘These two are different things, Expert Stage is different. Also, it is not an Expert Stage Cultivator you are facing, you are facing a 5 Star Beasts, it is stronger than a Cultivator.’

‘Don’t worry, I know what I am doing.’

Nux answered, his eyes gleamed in excitement and he continued,

‘I believe I can defeat it.’

[Ferocious Gale Wolf]

[Cultivation: 5-Star Beast.]

[LVL: 53]

[HP: 820/820]

[STR: 81]

[AGL: 88]

[VIT: 82]

[STM: 87]

[DEF: 82]

...

His stats were a lot stronger than this Wolf, this can also be a way for him to test his limits and see how correct the stats his system shows are.

‘Nux, this is too reckless.’

‘Do not worry, if I feel like I can’t defeat it, we both will use [Dash] and run away. Even if we can’t defeat it, I am confident in running away with you.’  
Nux answered.

He knew Thyra was worried, and he can understand why she is so worried, however, what he was doing was important.

He needs to know how strong he actually is.

Nux’s golden eyes shined even more.

Was he scared?

Surprisingly, no he was not.

Heh. He was actually looking forward to it.

Then, he walked out of the hiding place and glanced at the Ferocious Gale Wolf.

“Let’s start this, shall we?”

# Chapter 195

“Let’s start this, shall we?”

Nux muttered with a smile on his face.

“Grrr...” The wolf leader who saw Nux and Thyra walking in front of it grinned and showed its spiky, dangerous teeth.

“Grrr...” It then growled again and its five subordinates stood up and growled together.

“Grrrrrrr.”

“Grrr.”

“Grrrrr.”

Then, its five subordinates walked toward Nux and Thyra, as for the Wolf leader, it stayed where it was with a grin on its face.

It was confident.

Actually, it was inwardly laughing at these 2 fools who had appeared in front of it.

Other beings in the Wilderness avoid it, however, these fools walked towards it willingly.

It was very happy.

Food walking towards it on its own.

If only this could happen every single day.

“Heh, confident, aren’t you?” Nux smiled.

Then, he turned towards Thyra and nodded.

Thyra, who was worried before now had an expressionless look on her face, then, 2 silver daggers appeared in her hands, she then activated her Movement Skill and disappeared.

The wolves frowned, however, before they could even react, Thyra appeared on top of one wolf and pierced its eyes with her dagger.

“ROOAAARRR!!”

The wolf howled in pain as it moved its body actively as it can, trying to get rid of Thyra who was on top of it and deal with the pain it was feeling, however, Thyra didn't waste this opportunity, she tilted her dagger a little and then forced it out, along with parts of Wolves brain.

Yes, the wolf was dead.

And it was dead in one attack.

Nux, who saw the fight was shocked.

Mind you, the wolf Thyra had attacked was the strongest wolf after the wolf leader.

Not only that, but according to the system, all its stats were a little higher than Thyra.

Of course, using the Skills she had learned, Thyra could definitely increase her speed and be faster than the Wolf.

However, the fact still stands that she killed a beast, that was naturally stronger than her in one attack.

“ROAARR!!”

The other wolves finally came out of their reverie when the wolf's body fell to the ground. They all rushed towards Thyra and attacked at the same time, Thyra however, just jumped up, and then, she landed a few meters away.

The wolves, who were already angry at her didn't give her any chance to rest, the 4 of them rushed towards her and attacked at the same time.

Thyra then turned towards Nux and smiled, then, she disappeared and appeared near another wolf.

Of course, now that the wolf was prepared, it blocked her attack, however, Thyra simply disappeared again and attack the weakest wolf.

The weakest wolf wasn't as fast as the other wolf, it had just become a 4-Star Beasts, therefore, it couldn't react in time, and Thyra appeared on top of it.

She then plunged both her dagger into its eyes.

“RROOAAARRR!!”

The wolf howled in pain.

However, this time, Thyra couldn't kill it.

The other wolves had already arrived, she then blocked the claw of a wolf attacking her then, she gained a bit of balance and continued fighting.

Nux, who saw the fight smiled, then, he turned towards the Leader and smiled,

“I guess your subordinates are busy...” He taunted and since he knew that the wolf wouldn't understand him.

He stepped on the dead wolf's head and smirked.

“Grrrrr.” A dangerous glint shone in the wolf's brown eyes and it growled.

Nux had succeeded in angering it.

Now, it will avenge its subordinate.

Then, a green-coloured dagger appeared in Nux's hand and he rushed towards the Wolf.

He didn't use any movement Skills, he just rushed towards him naturally, however, even then, his speed was a lot faster than the Wolf could imagine.

Nux quickly appeared behind the wolf and stabbed his dagger into its stomach, no, not exactly stomach, it was near his stomach and leg.

He wasn't as skilled as Thyra, although he certainly had that speed, his body control wasn't at the level where he could appear on top of the beast and stab its eyes.

That was something only people like Thyra, who have trained for years could do.

Therefore, he could only appear around the places where he knew the beasts wouldn't be able to defend properly.

He learned this from an adventurer party the last time he was here.

Well, not really 'learned from them', he just stole their idea when he saw them doing it from afar.

“Roarr!” The wolf growled in pain as it jumped away.

Then, it moved quickly and attacked Nux with its sharp claws.

Ferocious Gale wolves are known for their speed; however, against someone like Nux, their speed was not worth mentioning.

Nux easily dodged its attack and then, he stabbed his dagger near the wolf's other leg and jumped away.

He then observed everything calmly.

The Ferocious Gale Wolf was still moving without any problems, which meant,

‘The poison dagger isn’t working... Its numbing power isn’t enough to stop Wolf’s movement.’

Nux noted this in his mind.

Then, a smile appeared on its face.

“You are weaker than I imagined.” He muttered, then, he used [Wind Walk] and appeared around its third leg.

Then, before the wolf could react, he disappeared and appeared near its fourth leg, then, Nux disappeared again.

Testing was over.

He was now using his skills.

He was actually serious now.

“RROOOAAARRR!!!”

Countless cuts and scratches appeared on the Ferocious Gale Wolf’s body and it roared in pain.

Nux, however, didn’t care.

Actually, he could now kill the wolf with the advantage he had, however, he had noticed something.

The wolf’s movement was getting slower and slower.

The numbing effect of his dagger was finally working.

Therefore, Nux didn’t kill it.

He wanted to test how long it will take for this effect to actually work on a 5-Star beast.

Yes, this battle was nothing more than an experiment now.

No, it was not a battle, to begin with.

‘I am stronger than I expected.’ Nux thought inwardly and continued moving around the wolf.

Now, he had even stopped using [Wind Walk], the wolf was getting slower and slower, and it wasn’t able to react to Nux’s normal speed now.

There was no need to waste MP.

# Chapter 196

“RROOAAAARRR!!”

\*Pierce\*

Thyra finally pierced the heart of the Fifth Wolf and sighed in relief. Fighting five 4 Star Wolves at the same time wasn't very hard, however, it was exhausting.

She wasn't a fighter.

She isn't used to long fights, she just goes and kills her opponents.

The process is just that simple.

Therefore, she fell short on the Stamina part.

Thyra then exhaled deeply and turned around to see how Nux was doing.

She might be a little tired, however, it wasn't to the point where she couldn't help Nux. However, when she turned around, she didn't see a hard fight as she had expected.

She only saw Nux sitting on top of Ferocious Gale Wolf's body, which was covered with scars and cuts, with a smile on his face.

“How long have you been watching me for?” Thyra questioned.

“Not too long, just from the part where you killed the 4th wolf.”

“...”

Thyra stayed silent.

‘So he is saying that he defeated a 5-Star Beast, 1 minute earlier than me, who was fighting with just a few 4-Star beasts? And that was when I started first?’

Fucking monster...’ Thyra cursed in her head.

“Thyra, trust me when I say it, you looked unbearably hot when your blue eyes shined in determination and you killed those wolves.”

Suddenly, Nux complemented with a smile on his face and hearing it, a small blush appeared on Thyra’s face.

Nux’s smile widened when he saw it.

‘She’s too cute.’

He has been observing Thyra for a while now, she has two forms, one, her assassin form, a cold expressionless face that looked at everything neutrally.

That was the face she had when she turned around after killing those wolves,

The other is her being all shy and stuttering, lowering her head with a red face and avoiding eye contact.

Something completely opposite to the normal her.

And Nux finds this transition very adorable.

Thyra, who noticed Nux’s smile knew he was teasing her, she then looked around and tried to change the topic.

“I can’t believe you defeated a 5-Star Beast so easily, it is stronger than an Expert Stage Cultivator, you know.”

Suddenly, a proud look appeared on Nux’s face as he answered,

“It seems I am stronger than an Expert Stage Cultivator now.”

“Indeed.” Thyra nodded.

She was really surprised, however, she then recalled what Felberta said and shook her head.

‘Nux is an anomaly, don’t use logic on him.’

Thyra knew those words weren’t wrong, however, she was even surer about it now.

“Actually, defeating this Wolf was pretty simple. I didn’t even use my Skills, well, I did, but I am sure I don’t need to use them.”

Then, Nux muttered and Thyra stopped thinking.

She just glanced at Nux with a blank look on her face.

“Dealing with a Beast, that is stronger than an Expert Stage Cultivator, is easy?” She questioned in her usual, cold tone.

“Mhm, it is easier than I thought.” Nux nodded.

‘Fucking monster.’

Thyra cursed in her head again.

Suddenly, she narrowed her eyes as she glanced at Nux, then, she grabbed his hand and shook her head.

“Don’t.”

“What? I haven’t even done anything...” Nux frowned.

“We are not going inside the forbidden zone.” Thyra shook her head and spoke with a serious look on her face.

“We won’t go that deep, we will just take a quick pee-”

“No, we are not going inside the Forbidden Zone, no matter what.” Thyra shook her head.

No matter what, she won't change her thoughts about this matter.

“Why though...”

“It is called the Forbidden Zone for a reason, Nux. I know you want to try and fight against a 6 Star Beast, however, we still don't have any information about the Forbidden Zone.

For all we know, there might be a 7 Star Beast inside.”

“...”

Nux turned silent.

He might have a chance against a 6 Star Beast, however, against a 7 Star Beast, he was sure that he would die.

Then, he glanced at Thyra who was looking at him with a serious look on her face and then, he sighed.

“Alright, I won't go in...”

“Good.” Thyra smiled.

“You won't stop me from hunting other 5-Star beasts though, will you?” Nux questioned with a smile.

Thyra then lowered her head and glanced at the wolf's body that was under Nux. A sigh escaped her mouth before she chuckled dryly,

“If you can overpower them like this in a matter of minutes, then I have no reason to stop you. Of course, I will be coming with you though...”

5 Star Beasts usually move around with their subordinates, I can deal with small fries while you kill the bigger ones.”

Thyra proposed with a smile on her face.

Heh, she would be a fool to lose such a golden opportunity.

“Sounds like a plan to me.” Nux nodded with a smile.

Suddenly, Thyra extended her hands towards Nux’s and smiled.

Nux frowned, however, soon, he sighed and then picked her up like a princess.

Thyra’s smile widened, she then snuggled close to Nux and Nux ran towards his next target.

This visit to the Bloodhill wilderness was a lot smoother and chiller than Nux’s last one.

He, his women, and his subordinates killed lots of beasts and gained lots of points, 2 days later, all other assassins appeared as well and with 50 assassins and those parties he had created, along with the beasts he was killing,

Nux’s system point count increased at a scary rate.

In just 2 weeks, he had already accumulated System Points required, no, more than required.

Then, he gathered everyone together and ended this hunting mission.

The journey back was a lot smoother, the assassins were ordered to rush back as soon as possible, this time, Nux moved with his woman, talking while they ran, sometime, he carried Skyla on his back as she requested.

Of course, the other girls requested the same as well.

Even Felberta.

Nux did not deny and the blissful journey continued for 5 days.

5 days later, all of them were back inside the Royal Capital.

# Chapter 197

“Alright girls, I need to go now, Allura is going to kill me, I am sure of it,” Nux muttered with a wry smile on his face.

Felberta observed Nux for a while and started thinking.

What was it that was so important that he took all of them to the Bloodhill Wilderness?

She has been thinking about this question for a while now.

She had asked Nux directly, he said that he needed a Cultivation Technique that is suitable for Amaya’s ‘Physique’, or whatever that is, but hearing this answer, Felberta frowned even more.

Cultivation Technique?

If he wants a Cultivation Technique, then why is visiting the Bloodhill Wilderness?

She asked this, however, Nux just shook his head and spoke with a playful smile.

‘I have my ways.’

And then, he changed the topic.

Felberta had to admit, from the time she met the Nux for the first time, to this, his ability to change the topic has gotten stronger and stronger.

Even she isn’t able to resist his flow now.

Shhhh.

You are not allowed to say that she was never able to resist his flow.

This shouldn't be said,

So Shh.

Ahem,

Carrying on, in the end, Felberta decided to shake her head and sigh.

She trusted Nux, she knew he had some secrets, however, she also knew he would tell her when the time is right.

Nux has done so much for her; she believed that she would be a bitch if she didn't trust him now.

“Yes, you should go. Sister Allura must have missed you all these days.”  
While Felberta was thinking all of this, Edda muttered.

Edda was the closest to Allura since she had spent a lot of time talking with her.

Of course, this might not be the same once Skylia meets Allura, but it won't change the fact that Edda and Allura are close.

“Yes, to be away for you for so long, it must have been hard for her, you should leave and talk to Sister Allura.”

Skylia, who didn't even know Allura muttered as well.

Then, a playful smile appeared on her face as she winked cutely, “Also, give her lots of love so that she has no complaints left.”

“I'll make sure to do that.” Nux chuckled when he saw Skylia winking at him, she looked adorable.

“Mhm, You should go, we all will train.” Lane nodded and muttered with a determined look on her face.

Suddenly, the atmosphere around the girls changed as they glanced at each other, even Felberta woke up from her thoughts and started looking at the

other women.

Thyra just had a smile on her face, she look the calmest.

Skyla had lifted her chest with a proud look on her face.

Lane, who usually didn't show many expressions, had a determined look on her face.

Edda was looking around with a smile that didn't look like a smile.

As for Felberta, she had clenched her fists.

Nux, who noticed the sudden change couldn't help but shake his head.

“You guys really got addicted to training huh...” He muttered.

“It is important, we can't be left behind,” Felberta muttered.

“Especially not by Skyla.” Lane glanced at Skyla and others nodded.

“Heeey! What's wrong with me overtaking you all?” Skyla pouted.

“Hmph! I should have won!” Edda muttered.

“I swear I will overtake you all.” Felberta snorted.

“...”

Who glanced at them stayed silent before he turned to Thyra who had a small smile on her face.

This all started after their hunt ended.

Nux realized that his women had a little ‘competition’, a competition about who will take the most lives.

The results were as follows,

Skyla was the one with the most kills.

Edda followed behind Skyla, then Lane and the last one was Felberta.

Thyra wasn't allowed to participate.

That would simply be unfair to all others.

Actually, the ranking was similar to what everyone predicted, there was only one variable.

Skyla.

She, who should have been second or third, overtook Edda, and she didn't win by a small margin either.

This shocked Edda to the core.

She thought about it and realized that it was all due to Thyra's training, therefore, she asked Thyra to train her as well.

Lane, who was always beside Skyla felt left out and she started training as well.

As for Felberta, well, she was at last, which everyone had already expected.

However, everyone expected it doesn't mean Felberta was satisfied.

She was the most competitive out of all the women, therefore, she started training as well.

She would not be left behind.

Not at all.

As for Skyla, well, she was already winning, so how could she give her spot to anyone else?

Hehe. She already had a plan on how to get Nux to give her extra attention after she feigns being tired due to the training.

Thinking about it, she smiled mischievously.

Thyra, who saw this as an opportunity was glad to train everyone.

Why?

That was because she wanted them to be helpful to Nux, she didn't want them to be some baggage who are just there to receive Nux's protection.

She would have ignored it if it was someone else, however, these were her sisters.

You can say that it was her own way to show her acceptance and willingness to be with everyone.

Therefore, she didn't hide anything and told them everything she knew.

Of course, since it only started 5 days ago, and they were coming back at that time, the women weren't able to train much, however, their determination didn't fade away.

Rather, it only grew.

Actually, Nux wanted to train as well, he has seen how Thyra fights and he was impressed.

Thyra was simply amazing; he wanted to learn from her as well.

However, Thyra shook her head and refused to train him.

'You will receive my special training, and that would need time. We will talk about it after we return to the Mansion.'

That was her answer.

Actually, he wanted to talk to her right now, however,

Talking with Allura was much more important right now.

And he was planning to do just that.

# Chapter 198

“Lady Allura, have you eaten lunch?” A maid questioned.

“Yes I have, you can take the plates.”

Allura answered with a lazy look on her face.

The mode nodded as she then placed the plates on her table. However, just as she was about to leave, she stopped and turned around.

“Lady Allura...” She called.

“What is it?”

“Lady Allura... are you okay...?” The maid questioned.

“Hmm? Of course, I am. Why would I not be?” Allura frowned.

“Well... you and head maid Edda got a little close before she... sacrificed herself... you also look a little lost sometimes... so I thought you are a little sad...” The maid muttered.

She had immense respect for Head Maid Edda, and that respect only increased when she heard about her sacrifice, however, this time, along with feeling deep gratitude and respect, she was feeling sad as well.

She cried alone in her room for 4 days.

“Don’t worry, I am fine. Although I am a little shaken by her death, I know her well enough to know that she wouldn’t want to grieve her death.” Allura muttered.

Actually, only she knew how hard it was for her to say those words.

‘Tsk Tsk, you really presented yourself as a great character huh... if only these people knew that you faked your death just because you were horny. I wonder what kind of face they would make.’

Allura thought about it and then shook her head.

These last few weeks have been too torturous for her.

Why?

Because she was bored.

To make matters worse, there were no other rumours inside the Royal Palace, The whole palace was filled with talks about the sacrifice of Head Maid Edda.

“Hey, why did you think that I was sad?” Suddenly, Allura questioned.

“Well for one, Lady Allura hasn’t left the Palace for 3 weeks straight, that has never happened before...”

The maid answered, and Allura’s eyes shined in realization.

‘That’s true, I haven’t left the Palace for a long time now...’

Allura thought inwardly.

Actually, it wasn’t like she couldn’t leave the palace, she just didn’t want to. She had no will to.

“That is not the only reason,” The maid muttered.

Actually, she never talked to Allura willingly before.

It was always Allura who called her first, however, today, it was different.

The maid’s reason for that was because she realized that Allura was close to Edda, and since she knew she was bored, she took the initiative to talk to her in order to pay respect to Edda’s soul.

A twisted concept but whatever.

“Hmm? What are the other reasons?” Allura questioned with interest.

“Lady Allura has bee-” The maid wanted to continue talking, however, suddenly, Allura’s expression changed and she interrupted her.

“Ah, I just realized it, Mary, I had something to do right now so I can’t talk to you. I will ask you to leave now.”

“Wha- Oh, a-as you say, Lady Allura.” The maid was surprised, however, she quickly came out of her reverie and nodded.

Then, she stood up and bowed, and then she left the room with the table that carried the plates Allura used.

After the maid left, a small smile appeared on Allura’s face, however, as if she remembered something, her smile disappeared and she scoffed.

“Tsk, Tsk, so you finally remembered me, huh?”

Then, a dangerously handsome man appeared in front of her, he had golden eyes, black hair, a muscular build and that annoying but charming smile on his face.

The man then stepped forward as he brought his face dangerously close to hers and whispered seductively.

“I am back~

Did you miss me, darling?”

Allura’s heart skipped a beat, however, this time, she was not some inexperienced girl, she won’t go down so easily, she quickly controlled her emotions as she moved back and turned her face away with a “Hmph.”

“You said you will only be gone for 2 weeks, however, you are back after 3 weeks. Hmph Hmph! Do you even care about me?”

She complained.

“Oh? So are you angry?” suddenly, Nux stood up and walked towards the door in Allura’s room.

Then, he shut the door close, locked it from inside and turned around with a dangerous smile on his face.

“I apologize for what I have done, Lady Allura.

How about I repay the damage done with my body?”

Nux offered.

A small blush appeared on Allura’s face, however, she decided to act like Nux didn’t see it, Nux shook his head with a wry smile, accepting it.

He didn’t see her blush.

Okay?

There was no blush, to begin with.

He was getting good at training his mind.

“Hmph! You think you can get away that easily?” Allura then questioned.

Nux walked towards her with that same dangerous smile on his face, then, he picked her up and placed her on his lap.

Allura, of course, didn’t deny his touch at all.

Nux then placed his chin on Allura’s shoulder and whispered softly,

“Then what would I have to do to satisfy you, darling?”

A weird jolt of pleasure assaulted Allura’s body and she nearly moaned.

However, she still controlled herself.

She needed to be strong.

Only then could she get the best deal out of this.

“Hmph! I want you to be with me for the rest of the day.” She offered.

Of course, she wasn’t really thinking this was possible, she just started with a big price, and then, she would negotiate with an upper hand.

This is business.

However, she didn’t get the answer she expected,

“Huh? Isn’t that a given?” Nux questioned back.

“Huh? What?” A frown appeared on Allura’s face.

“I will be staying with you for the rest of the day, darling.”

Nux muttered as he started caressing Allura’s soft breasts.

“R-Really?” Allura questioned, trying hard to contain her moan.

“Of course, why would I ever lie to you, darling~”

Nux muttered, then, his hand moved near her important place and then,

“Anhh~~”

Allura moaned out loud.

This would be a long long day~

# Chapter 199

“Stop.”

The maid, who was walking towards Allura’s room while dragging a table that had Allura’s evening tea on the top, was stopped by someone.

The maid frowned, she then raised her head and looked at the man who wore a black formal coat over a white shirt, his hairs were a little white, showing that his age was catching up to him, however, his posture was straight and full of strength.

The maid knew this man; he was Bruce, Lady Allura’s bodyguard.

“What is it, Sir Bruce?” The maid questioned respectfully.

“You can’t go in, Lady Allura is busy right now,” Bruce informed.

“But the tea,”

“You don’t have to worry about that, just leave the table here, you can return after at the fixed time,” Bruce instructed.

“As you say, Sir Bruce.”

The maid nodded and then, after a slight bow, she turned around.

While she was walking away, the maid started thinking.

‘Why isn’t he letting me enter the room?’

Then, the maid’s eyes widened in realization and she nodded with a small smile on her face.

‘Lady Allura is kinder than I thought. She is actually sad about Head Maid Edda’s death, however, she doesn’t want anyone else to know about it.

She must be grieving inside the room right now.’

The maid then nodded again.

Her respect for Lady Allura increased as well.

‘Head Maid Edda, though you may have left this world, you are still alive in our heart.’

The Maid muttered inwardly and got a little melancholic.

Then, the maid shook her head as she came out of her reverie and continued with her work.

...

On the other side, Bruce looked at the table in front of him with a blank look on his face.

He then glanced at the room where Allura was and a sigh escaped his mouth.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

He knocked on the room and informed,

“Lady Allura, the tea is here.”

“Enter.”

He heard the order, then, he grabbed the table and dragged it inside the room.

He squinted his nose as soon as he entered the room.

The room was filled with the scent of bodily fluid. Then, he glanced at Lady Allura, whose face was a little red, her hairs were ruffled and her clothes were wrinkled as well.

‘Tsk Tsk, at least Lady Allura tried to hide it.’ Bruce snorted inwardly and then glanced at the other man sitting beside Allura.

The man had a playful smile on his face, his hairs were ruffled as well and his upper body was completely naked.

Anyone could tell what happened in the room before.

Of course, Bruce could tell what happened as well, however, he didn’t comment anything.

“What are you waiting for Bruce, pour the tea.” The man who sat beside Allura ordered.

“Would you like to drink the tea as well, Master Nux?” Bruce questioned respectfully.

“I would have declined if it was any other day, however, I am a bit tired right now since I have been working hard on something. Tea would help for sure.”

Nux answered with a smile on his face.

‘I know what you were working hard on.’

Bruce snorted inwardly.

However, he then shook his head and nodded.

“As you say, Master Nux.”

Then, Bruce poured the tea into two cups, then, he brought the table close to the bed where Allura and Nux were sitting and then, he bowed.

“I will be taking my leave now, please call me if you need anything.”

“Sure Sure.”

Nux nodded with a smile.

Bruce then left the room, and once he did, a smile appeared on Nux's face as he questioned.

“So what are we doing now, darling?”

A playful smile appeared on Allura's face as she entered.

“We will continue after a little drinks break,”

“What a coincident, I had the same thoughts as well~

Ahaha~ We are a perfect couple, darling~”

The two of them then drank the tea and 15 minutes later, the clothes were thrown away.

Lady Allura was really grieving Head Maid Edda's death right now.

...

The next morning, in some other room that was just as lavish as Allura's,

“Good Morning, Lady Amaya, here's your tea.”

Kelton bowed and pushed the table towards Amaya.

Amaya nodded with a small smile as she picked up the cup of tea and took a sip.

Her peerless face, combined with her perfect manners, the whole scene looked beautiful and calm.

Kelton waited for a little and once Amaya was done with her first sip, he started reporting.

This was a procedure they go through every single morning. The Thousand Information Chamber is a big organization, they receive thousands of requests and information every single day. Of course, there is no way a single man or woman could handle all that.

And of course, not all matters had similar importance either.

Kelton had many subordinates, every day, he receives information that his subordinates consider important, he then filters them out and then, reports the more important ones to Amaya.

“Lady Amaya, Viscount Fred-”

\*Thud\*

A frown appeared on Amaya’s face when Kelton suddenly stopped talking, she then heard a voice and then her eyes fell on Kelton’s body which was lying on the floor, unconscious.

She then raised her head and in front of her, there stood a handsome man.

“Hello~ You didn’t miss me too much, did you?”

“...”

Amaya stayed silent, she observed the man, then she observed Kelton who was lying on the floor and then she shook her head.

“You really hate him for reason, don’t you?”

Nux’s smile widened and he chuckled,

“Well not particularly, but when I thought about how he will disrupt our conversation with his annoying questions, I assumed it’s better if he is unconscious.

Don’t you think so as well?”

“No, I do not think like that.”

Amaya shook her head.

She would never admit it out loud that for a second there, she agreed with him.

It was better if Kelton was unconscious.

But it was only for a second though.

Ahem, she values her subordinates a lot.

It was only for a second, okay?

# Chapter 200

“Well not particularly, but when I thought about how he will disrupt our conversation with his annoying questions, I assumed it’s better if he is unconscious.

Don’t you think so as well?”

Different thoughts started appearing in Amaya’s mind, however, in the end, she quickly sorted her thoughts and answered.

“No, I do not think like that.”

“You are no fun~” Nux complained.

Amaya realized that she is being too passive in this conversation, therefore, she decided to change the topic.

“So you finally decided to show yourself huh? Where have you been for the last 3 weeks?”

“Hmm, I have been busy with some stuff,” Nux answered as he sat down on a chair, right beside Amaya.

As for Kelton, well, he just lay there on the floor, without bothering anyone.

“Tsk Tsk, I know what you have been busy with.” Suddenly, Amaya snorted.

“Huh? What do you mean?” Nux questioned with a frown.

“Hmph! Don’t think that I don’t know that you sneaked into the Palace yesterday. I thought you would come to meet me soon, however, you stayed with your Allura for the whole day.”

Nux’s eyes widened in surprise.

“H-How did you know?” He couldn’t help but question.

One had to know that he trusted his Conceal very much.

Even a King Stage Expert might not be able to sense him, then how did Amaya learn about it.

“Your disguising technique may be a lot stronger than normal but don’t think that I can’t find you.” Amaya smiled.

For some reason, she enjoyed seeing a surprised look appearing on this man’s arrogant and confident face.

“How did you do it?” Nux questioned again.

He had to know.

Amaya knowing about it was fine, however, nobody else can know about it.

Is his Conceal not working anymore? Or did Amaya have any other way to know about it?

“It was simple really, Allura did not allow anyone to enter her room after the afternoon lunch. This doesn’t match her regular attitude at all.

She is someone who would go out of her way to talk to a servant just so she could hear some rumours, there is no way she won’t allow a servant to enter her room.

Unless, of course,”

Amaya then smiled as she glanced at Nux and continued,

“There is a man inside her room.”

“She could be emotionally unstable you know?” Nux questioned back.

“Heh, you may not know about it, but I have been keeping my eyes on Allura, nothing that would make her ’emotionally unstable’ happened.”

“Huh? Didn’t the head Maid Edda die? She was close to her.”

“Oh yeah? She is emotionally unstable 3 weeks after her death? You think I am a toddler?”

“...” Nux turned silent as he glanced at the woman in front of him.

This woman was scary indeed.

She is just too good.

He was having a hard time indeed.

“Hmph! I could have understood that you met her first then you came to meet me, however, to spend an entire day with her before coming to me, I feel a little sad.” Amaya muttered as she shook her head, feigning disappointment.

However, this gave Nux a chance, a small smile appeared on his face as he questioned,

“Is that jealousy I sense?”

Amaya paused.

Then, she glanced at Nux and answered,

“I was just teasing you, why would I be jealous? What is there to be jealous of?”

Nux just smiled and didn’t answer.

And for some reason, Amaya did not like that smile at all.

Therefore, she decided to change the topic again,

“So? What were you busy with? What have you been doing for the last 3 weeks?”

“Oh? Were you missing me?” Nux questioned with a smile.

“I feel honoured.”

“Again, you are thinking too much. I am just curious.” Amaya answered with a straight face.

Nux wanted to tease her a little more, however, he had more important things to do right now.

Heh. He has all the time in the world to tease her.

Amaya Skyfall isn't going anywhere.

A small smile appeared on Nux's face as he answered,

“Well, someone said that she will do anything I say if I give them a little something they need, so I have been busy finding that little thing.

I mean, she said she will do Anything I want, I would be a fool to reject such a great offer, right?”

Hearing Nux's answer, Amaya's movement paused.

She wasn't a fool, she knew what he was talking about. However, she just couldn't believe it.

“You didn't forget your promise, did you, Amaya?”

Amaya was then brought out of her reverie when she heard Nux's voice, her body flinched as she backed down when she realized how dangerously close his face was to hers.

“You didn't forget your promise, did you, Amaya? I will be sad if you did, you know?” Nux questioned again.

The playful smile on his face indicated that he was enjoying every second of it.

“D-Did you really found it?” Amaya questioned back.

“There is no reason for me to lie to you,” Nux answered.

“W-Where did you find it?”

Although she had already predicted it, Amaya’s eyes still widened in surprise when Nux confirmed it.

The technique that she was searching for her whole life,

The technique for which she created an organization like Thousand Information Chamber but still couldn’t find it,

This man found that technique within 3 weeks, this was simply unbelievable.

“Tsk Tsk, look at your eyes, the disbelief is so clear.

Hmph! You think I would lie to you?”

Nux shook his head and then, a black-coloured book appeared in his hands and he passed it to Amaya.

Amaya grabbed the book with trembling hands and when she read the title, her eyes widened even more.

Mantra of the Devouring Mist Demon.

Nux, who noticed that her hands were trembling while she held the book couldn’t help but smile,

Then, he brought his face very very close to her again and questioned,

“You did you forget your promise, did you, Lady Amaya?”

# **Volume 3**

# Chapter 201

“You did you forget your promise, did you, Lady Amaya?”

Nux questioned again, however, this time, Amaya did not respond to his question at all, she wasn't even bothered by how close his face was to hers.

Actually, she couldn't even see him right now.

That was because right now, all her focus was on the book that was in her hands.

Mantra of the Devouring Mist Demon.

With trembling hands, Amaya opened the book and on the very first page, there was the description of the Devouring Mist Demon Physique.

The book had information about everything she has been through, the Black Mist, and how the Mist inside her body act. How she can't cultivate normal techniques and more and more and more.

Amaya then turned the page, then, she turned another page, then another, another, one more, and at some point, while she was reading, her body started trembling.

This was it.

This wasn't fake.

This technique was something that would allow her to step into the cultivation world.

This is what she has been looking for her entire life.

Thinking about it, a small smile appeared on her face.

Nux's heart skipped a beat when he saw that beautiful smile,

Amaya really had a peerless face.

However, Nux quickly came out of her reverie and a playful smile appeared on his face.

“You finally found what you were looking for.” He muttered.

“However, if you want it,

You would have to pay a heavy price for it.”

Amaya then finally came out of her reverie and turned around, again, her body flinched when she noticed how close Nux's face was to hers, however, this time, Nux grabbed her waist and smiled.

“You would have to pay a heavy price for it.”

“W-What do you want?” Amaya's heart skipped a beat as she found herself lost in those golden eyes.

“You.”

Nux answered with a smile on his face.

“I want you, Amaya Skyfall.

I want your body, your soul, your heart.

I am a greedy man,

I want all of you.”

Amaya's heartbeat started racing and her face turned a little red.

She could feel the possessive feeling in his eyes; she was getting overwhelmed by it.

Also,

His face was a little too close right now.

Even his breath was touching her face.

“Do you accept the deal?” Finally, Nux questioned.

Hearing the word ‘deal’, Amaya came out of her reverie.

Her heart started calming down and her emotions stabilized.

She was the leader of Thousand Information Chamber, someone who had made countless deals with countless people.

She wasn’t someone who would get swayed by her emotions.

She won’t make a rushed and emotional decision.

However, today was different.

Today, the reason she calmed down wasn’t for her own sake. Today, she calmed herself down for the man in front of him.

She is ready to accept the deal, after all, she gave up her entire life to find what this man gave her, it was only natural she would accept the deal no matter what it was.

However, the same could not be said for the man in front of him.

“I am willing to accept the deal, however, I want to ask you,

Are you willing to take me?

Let me rephrase it.

Are you willing the risk to take me as yours and go against the King of the Skyfall Kingdom?”

Hearing her question, a smile appeared on Nux's face as he chuckled,

"Heh. You are talking to a man who has a relationship with the King's concubine, tru-"

"I and Allura are different." Amaya interrupted.

"Allura is just a Trophy, the king won't care about her, however, I am different.

I am an unclaimed trophy, the king is obsessed with me.

The chances of him finding out about your relationship with me are a lot more than the chances of him finding out about your relationship with Allura.

And once he finds out, you are dead.

Even after knowing all that, are you willing to take me as yours?" Amaya questioned again.

However, the determination in Nux's eyes didn't waver,

"I am willing."

He nodded.

A smile appeared on Amaya's face,

"Alri-"

However, before she could say anything, Nux interrupted with a serious look on his face.

"I am willing to make you mine, however,

Know this, I am not taking any risks here."

Amaya frowned.

“Our relationship might stay hidden for a while, however, I am not planning to keep it that way. The same goes with my relationship with Allura.

I am not planning to hide it for a long time.

There is no way I would keep using my ability to sneak into my woman’s room just so I could spend a little time with her.

I will do it openly.

Without hiding it from anyone.”

Amaya frowned even more.

Then, a smile appeared on Nux’s face as he muttered,

“I heard that the King of the Skyfall Kingdom is just an average king.

The Skyfall Kingdom doesn’t need an average king.

It is time to change that.”

Amaya’s eyes widened in surprise and horror when she heard what Nux said.

“Y-You are planning to go against the king!?” She questioned in shock.

“Indeed. As I said, we don’t need an average king, and although I don’t have any way to prove this, I am sure I can do a better job leading the Kingdom than what the current King is doing.”

Nux answered with a smile on his face.

“Y-You are really planning to go against the king...” Amaya stuttered.

She couldn’t digest what she was hearing at all.

Seeing her acting like this, Nux frowned,

He didn't expect a reaction like this from her, he felt that she was a lot braver than this.

“Why are you acting like that? Isn't he just a king? What's so mighty about that?”

Let me tell you, I am only 18 years old but I am already a Grand Master Stage Cultivator, and I am not a normal Grand Master Stage Cultivator either, I am someone who can defeat a 5-Star Beast within 5 minutes.

I can't say it for certainty right now, however, I am sure that once I become an Expert Stage Expert, which won't take me more than a year, I will be able to go against the king of the Kingdom.”

Nux revealed with a smile on his face.

Heh.

He had decided to shock this woman in front of him.

However, instead of being shocked, a wry smile appeared on Amaya's face as she shook her head,

“Defeating the King does not mean you would be able to become the King of the Skyfall Kingdom.

If things were that easy, many would have done it already.”

# Chapter 202

“Defeating the King does not mean you would be able to become the King of the Skyfall Kingdom.

If it was that easy, many would have done it already.”

Amaya muttered with a wry smile on her face.

“Huh? Isn’t he the strongest man in the country? Wouldn’t defeating him make me the strongest? What could possibly stop me once I defeat the King of the country?” Nux questioned with a frown.

“You are really clueless about everything, aren’t you? Who said that the King is the strongest man in the Kingdom?” Amaya questioned as she glanced at Nux, who had now stepped back and was looking at her with a confused expression on her face.

“He is not the strongest?”

“Thank the gods that you have me by your side. Who knows what would happen if you didn’t meet me?”

Actually, you should thank me that I sent a Spy to Allura’s room.” A smile appeared on Amaya’s face.

Nux, however, wasn’t sharing her smile.

He was too confused right now.

“Alright, answer this, what is the cultivation stage of the strongest person in a Duke house?”

“The head of the Duke Family is an Expert Stage Cultivator,” Nux answered.

And he was sure about his answer, he had confirmed this from Alger, Edda and Allura.

“That is correct. The head of the Duke Families are Expert Stage Cultivators.” Amaya nodded as well.

“However, that isn’t my question. I am asking about the strongest person inside a Duke family, what should be his/her cultivation stage?”

Amaya questioned.

“Shouldn’t the head be the strongest?” Nux frowned.

Amaya, however, shook her head,

“The Duke houses are a lot more deeply rooted than you think.

The strongest person inside a Duke House is their ancestor.

A King Stage Cultivator.”

Amaya revealed and Nux’s eyes widened in shock.

“I am not talking about only one House, I am talking about all four of them,

Fulvianus House, Centho House, Merula House and Vestalis House, all of them have a King Stage Cultivators protecting them from shadows.”

“F-Four King Stage Cultivators...” Nux muttered in shock.

4 King Stage Cultivators!

This was ridiculous.

He might be able to fight against one King Stage Cultivator, but how would he fight against 5 of them at the same time?

No wait...

Now that he thinks about it, it might not be that tough.

However, before his signature smile could appear on his face, Amaya continued,

“Not only that, but the Headmaster of the Royal Academy, The strongest General that leads the Royal Army and even the Queen of the Skyfall Kingdom, all of them are King Stage Experts.”

Nux gulped.

8 King Stage Cultivators.

Let's say he can fight 5 of them at the same time, however, can he fight 8 King Stage Cultivators at the same time?

The chances were low.

Very low, however, that doesn't mean that they don't exist.

He could still fight against 8 King Stage Cultivators at the same time if he improves himself and buys a few more 7-Star Abilities from the System.

However, thinking about the situation calmly, a frown appeared on Nux's face.

Seeing that frown, Amaya smiled,

“It seems that you understand what I am trying to say.” She muttered.

“Why hasn't anyone betrayed the King yet?” Nux questioned.

If the King of the Kingdom was only a King Stage Cultivator, then how is he able to rule the other 7 King Stage Cultivators?

This shouldn't be possible.

Let's say the Queen and the General are extremely loyal to him.

That makes it 3 King Stage Cultivators on the King's side, but why aren't the 5 King Stage Cultivators collaborating with each other?

“That's a good question.

Everyone says that the King is just an average King, then why hasn't he been replaced yet?

They say that he doesn't care about anything and every decision he makes is mostly decided by his ministers that are from the Duke Houses, then why aren't the Duke houses taking Advantage of this situation?

Why?

Why has the King of the Skyfall Kingdom not fallen yet?”

Amaya shot a few more questions and the more she asked the deeper Nux frowned.

He then glanced at Amaya, waiting for her to answer all these questions.

Amaya understood what he wanted therefore she didn't keep the suspense for long and answered,

“The answer to all these questions is,

The Dowager.

Astaria Skyfall.

The Strongest Being in the Skyfall Kingdom and probably the whole world, an Emperor Stage Cultivator.”

Amaya informed.

“A-An Emperor Stage Cultivator? But didn't they say that there are no Emperor Stage Cultivators alive in the World right now?” Nux questioned.

“That is just a piece of false information. Emperor Stage Cultivators are still alive, however, there are very rare.

There are only 4 Emperor Stage Cultivators in the whole world right now, each living in one of the Four Kingdoms.

And Astaria Skyfall is the strongest of them all.

That is also the reason why the Skyfall Kingdom is known to be the strongest Kingdom in this world.”

Amaya answered.

And then, she continued,

“Also, do not put Emperor Stage and other cultivation Stages in the same category.”

“Huh? What do you mean?”

“An Emperor is different.

A King Stage Cultivator will be overwhelmed if he faces 100 Expert Stage Cultivators, however, an Emperor can deal with 1000s of King Stage Cultivators without any problem.”

“WHAT!?” Nux shouted in surprise.

“As I said, an Emperor is different, it is not just a Cultivation Stage, it is a Realm.

The Strongest realm in this world.

They say that only one who could fight an Emperor is another Emperor, there is no other way around.”

Then, Amaya glanced at Nux and answered,

“That is the reason why no one dares to go against the King and betray the Skyfall Kingdom.

As long as Astaria Skyfall is alive, no man, who does not have the Skyfall Blood running through his veins, would be able to rule the Skyfall Kingdom.”

# Chapter 203

“As long as Astaria Skyfall is alive, no man, who does not have the Skyfall Blood running through his veins, would be able to rule the Skyfall Kingdom.”

Amaya declared.

“ ... ”

Hearing her words, Nux turned silent.

Actually, after all these clues, he had already guessed that there was someone stronger than a King Stage Cultivator protecting the Skyfall Kingdom from behind the scenes.

And to be honest, he was confident that he could defeat him/her.

It was pretty logical to think that way as well.

Nux wasn't a normal cultivator, unlike others, who only do Mana Cultivation, he cultivates both Body and Mana at the same time, so technically, he is twice as strong as a normal cultivator who is at the same stage as him.

When he was a Beginner Stage Cultivator, he could defeat Advance Stage Cultivators, when he was an Advance Stage Cultivator, he could defeat Master Stage Cultivators.

This cycle continued till now when he is a Grand Master Stage Cultivator and could easily destroy any Expert Stage Cultivator.

It wouldn't have been a problem for him to defeat a King Stage Cultivator after he becomes an Expert Stage Cultivator and... he thought the same goes for an Emperor Stage Cultivator as well.

He just needed to be a King Stage Cultivator and boom, it's done.

However, with How Amaya was talking, Nux realized that the Emperor Stage was not as simple as any other cultivation stage and logically, she was correct.

It's called the peak of cultivation for a reason.

Nux had a feeling that defeating an Emperor Stage Cultivator while being a King Stage Cultivator won't be very easy.

No, not easy, it might even be impossible, therefore...

He needed to think of other ways.

What other ways?

He doesn't know.

However, that doesn't mean Amaya doesn't. She has to know something, she is the leader of the Thousand Information Chamber after all.

"There has to be another way right?" Nux questioned as he glanced at Amaya.

"I told you, only an Emperor can fight an Emperor.

You will need the support of another kingdom if you want to rule over the Skyfall Kingdom, however, I will tell you this now, getting the support of another kingdom just means that you will become a puppet.

Nothing else, nothing more."

"..."

Nux turned silent and started thinking.

Amaya observed his face with an expressionless face.

Nobody knew what she was thinking.

“She has to have some weakness right? Something I can use in my favour. There has to be.”

Nux still wasn't willing to give up.

Not like this.

Amaya continued looking at him with no change in her expressionless face; Nux didn't back down either and started back into her abyss-like dark eyes.

“Arvina Skyfall.”

Suddenly, Amaya said a name.

“Huh?” Nux frowned.

A smile then appeared on Amaya's expressionless face as she muttered,

“Arvina Skyfall, the Vice Headmaster of the Royal Academy.”

“What about her?” Nux's frown deepened.

If it was any other time, he would be happy to learn more about a woman, especially if her name ends with Skyfall.

However, right now, he wasn't in the mood.

Right now, he was confused and... a little tensed.

“Even I don't know much about Astaria Skyfall.

She is someone who protects the Kingdom in secret, even though she is very strong, there is no way information about her will be out in the open.

Actually, other than the King, no one knows much about her at all.

Except for one person,

And that is Arvina Skyfall,”

Nux’s frown disappeared and he started getting an idea about what Amaya was trying to say, however soon, his frown reappeared and he questioned.

“Even you don’t know much about Astaria Skyfall, then how does Arvina Skyfall know about her?”

“Including me, there are a total of two ‘unclaimed trophies’ in the King’s Royal Harem.

Arvina Skyfall is the other one.

When I heard about it, I started researching more about Arvina Skyfall and found that she does not have any type of curse on her, in fact, she is a perfectly healthy woman who can have a baby whenever she wants.

However, despite that, the king doesn’t touch her.

There is no way that horny bastard is going to hold back just because a woman doesn’t want to spend time with him, he has had many women who were against spending a night with him, however, he was the king, and he had the power, he forced himself upon the woman.

Some of the Royal Concubines have even taken their own lives since they were ‘defiled’ by the man they hated.

Of course, that didn’t end well, angered since he lost his trophies, the king executed their families, nobles or not, no one was spared.

This was King’s warning to all the women in this world.

After becoming his, even killing themselves wasn’t an option, of course, if you are prepared to see your family dying with you, then do whatever you want.”

“Sounds like a jerk,” Nux commented.

“Well, he is,” Amaya nodded.

“Not that you are any different, laying your hands on other man’s wives, and that man is the King of the Kingdom to boot. You really have some balls, don’t you?” She teased.

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face as he replied,

“You will see my balls soon enough,”

Then, he brought his face close to hers and whispered,

“And I promise you will love it~”

Amaya’s face turned a little red, she quickly backed off and realised that they were getting off-topic.

“So, back to what I was saying,

There is no way someone like the King would not touch ‘his’ woman. There has to be a reason why he didn’t do anything, and this reason should be strong enough to stop the King of the Kingdom.

How many reasons do you think there are that are strong enough to help a woman avoid a horny bastard, a horny bastard who is also the man who has the strongest influence in this country?”

Amaya questioned.

“None.” Nux shook his head,

Then, a small smile appeared on his face as he muttered,

“Except for one.

The Dowager.”

# Chapter 204

“Except for one.

The Dowager.”

Nux answered and a smile appeared on Amaya’s face.

“Exactly. There is no way someone like the king would let a woman go, it won’t matter if she is from a Duke House, if she is the best student that is being protected by the Academy or if she is from another kingdom.

The only one that can contain the king of the Skyfall kingdom inside the Skyfall kingdom is Astaria Skyfall.” Amaya muttered.

The more he thought about it, the larger Nux’s smile got.

Amaya was right, the key to Astaria Skyfall might be Arvina Skyfall.

Nux then started thinking and he questioned,

“Do you know anything about Arvina Skyfall?”

It would be easier for him to do what he wanted if he knew more about this woman and since he was sitting in front of someone who practically knows about everything and everyone inside the Skyfall Kingdom, he thought it would be a waste of time if he didn’t ask anything.

“I have a good news and a bad news, what would you like to hear first?” Amaya questioned with a playful smile on her face.

“I am a positive person, so I would like to hear the Good news first.” Nux smiled back and answered.

“Arvina Skyfall doesn’t like the king at all, no, not liking is a weak word, the better way to describe it is that she hates the king with all her existence.

That is the reason why she stays in the Royal Academy as the Vice Headmaster.”

“Heh. That’s a piece of good news indeed.”

Nux smiled.

‘The path ahead seems clear.’

This thought appeared in his mind.

And as if knowing his thoughts, Amaya’s playful smile widened and she answered,

“And the bad news is that not only the King, but Arvina Skyfall also hates every man in the world. The Headmaster of the Royal Academy, or her own father, no one is an exception to her hate.”

Nux’s smile disappeared and he blinked a few times.

Amaya chuckled as he observed his face with interest.

‘Heh, the changes in his expressions are really entertaining,’

“Why does she hate men so much?” Nux questioned.

“I don’t know but it’s not like you men have something that makes you likeable, I kind of relate to her thinking,” Amaya answered.

“Oh?” Nux then glanced at Amaya and smiled,

“So you are saying you hate men?”

“No, I do not hate men, however, I can’t say I have a favourable impression of men either.

Hmm, if I have to explain it, then...”

Amaya started thinking and a few seconds later, her expression changed and she continued,

“If there are 2 unknown man and woman drowning in front of me and I only have the option to save any one of them, I would save the woman.”

Amaya continued to nod as if praising herself for coming up with such an explanation.

Nux continued to look at her and then, he nodded with a smile,

“Mhm, if two unknown man and woman are drowning in front of me, I would save the woman as well.”

Amaya glanced at Nux’s face with a deadpan expression.

Nux realized that she wasn’t amused by his joke and decided to continue the conversation as if nothing happened.

“If you do not have a favourable impression of men, then why did you choose to make a deal like that with me?” He questioned with a playful smile on his face.

Amaya glanced at the black coloured book in her hand and answered,

“You had something I wanted. Something I have been searching for my whole life for. It was just a deal, your gender doesn’t matter. Even if you were a woman, I would have accepted the deal.”

Nux looked at her and realized something.

The relationship between him and Amaya was just that,

A deal.

She may have a favourable impression of him, however, that does not mean she likes him.

She just sold herself because she wanted the cultivation technique.

Nux then thought a little more about it and decided to change the topic,  
He would change this situation sooner or later.

He just has to be patient.

“So according to you, to deal with Astaria Skyfall, I should meet with Arvina Skyfall, correct?”

“Yes.”

“And to meet Arvina Skyfall, I would have to go t-”

“You would have to join the Royal Academy.”

Amaya answered.

“Hmm, I figured that much.”

Nux nodded as well.

“So, how do I enter the Royal Academy? How hard is the entrance test? Which topics should I prepare for?” He questioned.

“Huh? Entrance test?”

“Well, yeah, there are too many people in the Skyfall Kingdom, they can’t just take in any random student that wants to enter, right?”

“Huh? Of course, they obviously can’t take any random student, however, there is no test to enter the academy, you just need to be a noble and you can go in.”

“Huh? A noble? So a commoner can’t join the Royal Academy?”

“Of course not, in what world would a commoner be allowed to join an Elite Academy?”

“Then how will I join the Royal Academy?” Nux questioned.

“You are a commoner?” Amaya questioned and a frown appeared on her face.

“Yes, I do not belong to any noble house.” Nux nodded and Amaya’s eyes widened in surprise.

“Y-You are a commoner?”

She couldn’t believe what she was hearing.

How is this man in front of him a mere commoner!?

That simply isn’t possible!

Which commoner has the guts to be in a relationship with a Royal Concubine!?

“Yes, Amaya, I am a commoner, now tell me, is there really no way to join the Royal Academy?” Oblivious to her shock, Nux questioned.

“...”

Amaya stayed silent and glanced at Nux with a shocked look on her face.

Nux misunderstood her face and questioned in worry,

“Is there no way for a commoner to join the Royal Academy?”

Hearing his question, Amaya finally came out of her reverie and answered,

“Well, you do not have to worry, there is a way for a commoner to enter the Royal Academy.”

# Chapter 205

“Well, you do not have to worry, there is a way for a commoner to enter the Royal Academy,”

Amaya muttered.

“What is it?” Nux questioned with an excited look on his face.

“You just need a noble’s recommendation letter.”

“A noble’s recommendation letter?”

“Yes, nobles recommend the commoner they deem fit to enter the Academy and grow stronger. Most of these commoners would later join the noble’s private army and would try to aim for higher ranks.”

“Oh, I understand.” Nux nodded.

“Mhm, remember, the higher the noble’s rank, the higher are the chances of you being accepted,” Amaya muttered.

“What if I have a Marquee’s recommendation letter?”

“Then there is no way you can be rejected,” Amaya answered and Nux’s smile widened.

It wasn’t like there was no other way he could enter the academy, he just needed to change his name from Nux Leander to Nux Alveye or Nux Bannermane.

It wouldn’t have mattered either way, however, he felt that it would still be better to enter the academy as Nux Leander.

It was high time that this name starts shining.

After all, he was a Grand Master Stage Cultivator.

Wait...

Suddenly, a thought appeared in Nux's mind,

“Amaya... what is the cultivation of the strongest student in the Academy?”

Amaya froze as well.

“The strongest is only at the peak Master Stage...

Ugh... This... will be a problem...

The gem of the Royal Academy, Candice Waters is a Master Stage Cultivator at the age of 21, she is the joy and pride of the Academy and is even called the Pillar of the Kingdom.

Many think of her as the most talented individual to have been born in the last 100 years and already treat her like a goddess.

You, however, aren't much older than her, heck, you might even be younger than her, however, you are already a Grand Master Stage Cultivator, if this is revealed...

I don't know how everyone would react...

You might even be seen as a threat that has to be eliminated.

There is no way you can join the academy like this...” Amaya shook her head and sighed.

Nux however, didn't give up.

He wasn't done yet.

Amaya frowned when she saw Nux's lost look on his face.

However, she didn't say anything and continued watching.

Time passed by and the atmosphere around the room got awkward.

Amaya continued looking at Nux who had a lost look on his face.

‘Is he really that shocked?’

Amaya couldn’t help but think inwardly.

‘Wow... this must be the man in the world who couldn’t achieve something because he was too strong...’

Amaya realized and couldn’t help but pity him.

Failed because he was too successful...

An amazing feat indeed.

These types of weird thoughts started appearing in Amaya’s mind, well, you can’t really blame her either, she has been sitting idle for more than 10 minutes after all.

Suddenly, Amaya noticed a change in Nux’s expression.

Amaya continued observing him with interest and soon, a big smile appeared on Nux’s face.

‘Has he lost his mind?’

Amaya thought, however, the next moment, her eyes widened in surprise.

“Y-Your cultivation...”

Nux’s cultivation fell down; he became a Master Stage Cultivator now, no, that wasn’t the end, it fell even more and he became an Advance Stage Cultivator!

W-What the hell is happening!?

Nux then stood up and turned towards Amaya.

“So? An 18-year-old, Advance Stage Cultivator shouldn’t be a problem now, should it?” He questioned.

“W-What did you do? W-Why did your Cultivation fall down by two stages?” Amaya questioned back.

“Oh? This, it’s nothing.” Nux shrugged his soldier and then, his cultivation returned back to normal!

He became a Grand Master Stage Cultivator again!

‘What the hell is happening!? Can you set your cultivation to whatever you like!? Since when is something like this possible?’

Amaya couldn’t help but question herself and everything she knew so far.

“Don’t think too much about me and don’t treat me like a normal man.” Suddenly, Nux muttered. Amaya turned towards her and once Nux gained her attention, he smiled and moved his face close to hers,

“You have sold yourself to a very special man, Amaya~ Don’t treat me like any other men, I am different~” he whispered into her ears seductively.

For some reason, Amaya’s heart skipped a beat and her face turned a little red.

However, before she could fully understand what is happening, Nux moved back and questioned again,

“So? What do you think? An 18-year-old Advance Stage Cultivator, it should cause too much commotion, right?”

“W-Well, it still makes you a genius, however, it won’t be to an extent where you will attract danger to yourself,” Amaya answered.

“Hmmm, good good.” Nux nodded to himself.

“Alright, if you are done, you can leave my room now, I have to cultivate,” Amaya muttered.

“A diligent woman I see.” Nux smiled.

“Yes, now leave, I have to cultivate hard in order to catch up to others.”

“Good Good, cultivate as soon as possible, I am waiting for you as well.”  
Nux winked playfully.

Amaya frowned, however, seeing the cheeky smile on his face, she quickly understood what he was talking about and her face turned red.

“Leeaaaveee!”

Nux chuckled and then he left her room.

After Nux left, Amaya’s face turned even redder, she then kept the book on the table and placed her head on her knees.

‘What a bastard...

Hmph!’

She thought inwardly and snorted weakly.

30 minutes later, she took a deep breath and then glanced at the book in front of her.

She then opened it up and started doing what the book instructed.

[Trickster]

[7-Star Ability]

[Active Skill]

[Description: It grants the Host the power to trick his opponents by binding his own Mana. This ability allows the host to decrease his Cultivation Stage to whatever lever he wants.]

[Consumes 1 MP every hour.]

[Note: If the Host uses power greater than the Cultivation Stage he has set, the Ability will deactivate on its own.]

[Price: 10,000 System points.]

‘Ugghhh... there goes all my saved up System points.’

Nux cried inwardly as he glanced at the System screen in front of him.

[System Points: 2531]

He only needed 10,000 System Points to buy the technique Amaya needed, however, just like any other experienced game player, he decided to farm more.

In the end, he got collected more than 20,000 System points, he wanted to collect more, however, he realized that Allura must be feeling lonely, therefore, he decided to leave.

His women were a lot more important than some stupid farming.

Plus, 20,000 System points were good; it was enough for him to feel rich.

Not anymore though.

Now he is poor again.

# Chapter 206

“Oi, Alger,” Nux called out.

“How can I help you, Master Nux?” Alger replied in a respectful tone.

He has been happy for the last few days, now, he wasn't forced to call a cold-blooded assassin in his room every night and tell her something she doesn't want to hear.

He doesn't have to risk his life every single day.

He can live a peaceful and happy life now.

However, right now, he was scared.

Why was his Master calling him? Is he going to face some hard trials again?

He doesn't really want to do that.

Not that he had any choice in the matter.

“Give me a recommendation letter; I want to join the Royal Academy.”

“Huh? Royal Academy?” Alger frowned.

“Yes, I am joining the Royal Academy.”

Alger finally processed what his Master was talking about and sighed in relief.

‘Haahh... The Royal Academy... I am safe...’

He thought and then secretly prayed for Royal Academy's survival.

“As you say, Master Nux.” He then nodded readily, not willing to let his Master wait.

“Good, also, arrange everything accordingly; I want to join the Academy in a Month,” Nux ordered.

“Of course, I will make sure everything is prepared.”

“Hmm Hmm, you can leave now.”

Nux nodded in satisfaction.

He might be the first commoner who asked for a recommendation letter from the noble like this.

Actually, ‘asked’ was a weak word, he ‘ordered’ a noble to write a recommendation letter and even submit it to the academy in his stead.

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face when he thought about it.

“So you are finally going to the Royal Academy, huh...” Felberta, who was sitting beside him muttered.

“You talk as if you already expected it.” Nux smiled.

“Well, I just had a feeling that you will join the Academy.”

“Heh. Don’t worry, I will take care of our ‘son’.”

A playful smile appeared on Nux’s face.

Felberta blushed.

Something she doesn’t do very often when she is in front of all the women.

“I-I’ll count on you for that...” She then answered in a meek voice.

Yes, she didn’t reject Nux saying ‘our’ son, although they weren’t officially married yet, Nux was already her husband in her heart.

Obviously, her son would be his son as well.

“Please look after him, he can be a bit too considerate sometimes,” Felberta repeated her words.

“Don’t worry, I’ll look after him.” Nux nodded.

“When will you be leaving?” Skylar who was sitting questioned with a pout on her face.

Why was she pouting, well, one, Nux was about to leave and two...

Thyra was sitting on her spot.

She was very dissatisfied.

“Hmm, I will leave one month later, the academy prohibits their students from leaving and I haven’t spent much time with Allura and Amaya.

It would be unfair of me to just leave so quickly. Everything else can happen whenever, spending time with my lovely women is much more important for me.” Nux answered.

“Hmph! Why are you only talking about Allura and Amaya? Aren’t we here as well? Or did you forget about us?” Thyra, who was sitting on Nux’s lap pouted.

Nux just smiled, then, he tightened his hug around Thyra’s body and replied,

“How can I forget about my lovely women? Or did you guys forget about our today’s blissful session?” Nux questioned.

“I-I don’t remember what you are talking about...” Thyra muttered with a small blush on her face.

The other women understood what she wanted and nodded,

“Yes, we don’t remember what you are talking about...”

“ ... ”

Nux glanced at his women and couldn't help but blink his eyes a few times.

Since when did they have such a great understanding of each other? Why are they acting like comrades in arms?

Nux then shook his head and chuckled.

His women were just amazing.

“Alright alright, since you all ‘forgot’ about it, then how about we proceed for the second round so that you all could remember it well?”

The girls smiled playfully.

Nux knew the best.

“Alright, then whose first?” Nux questioned.

“Heh. It's me of course.”

Thyra answered with a smile on her face.

The other girls wanted to refute it, however, they couldn't go against the rule they all created together.

“I'll surpass you soon, Sister Thyra!” Skyla muttered with a pout.

“Heh. You will need to train for another 1000 years if you want to do that.”  
Thyra smirked.

“Hmm, you guys are still using that rule huh...” Nux muttered.

“Yes, it motivates us to do our best.” Felberta was the one who answered.

She was the one who is in the least favourable position due to this mission, however, she doesn't want to remove it either, actually, she was the one who proposed this rule.

“Alright, if you want it then go ahead, however, know that I will always love you the same, strong or not doesn’t matter,” Nux muttered as he glanced into Felberta’s eyes.

A smile appeared on Felberta’s face and she nodded.

“Hehe~ I have bought some new ropes as well~~”

Suddenly, everyone in the room heard a small perverted chuckle and no one needed to see to know who it was.

There was only one pervert in the room.

Well, everyone was a pervert in this room, however, there was only one, unredeemable pervert in this room.

Edda then glanced at Nux and winked,

“Hehe~ I hope you have enough energy to satisfy me~”

“Heh. Says the one who lost her consciousness after four orgasms.

Weak.” Nux laughed.

Edda pouted and then turned around.

She won’t be playing this game with him.

“Alright then.”

Nux then stood up, Thyra, who was sitting on his lap was now in his arms as he carried her like a princess. A small smile appeared on Thyra’s face while Skyla glanced at her with eyes filled with jealousy and fighting intent.

“Let’s continue our round two~”

Nux laughed and then he walked towards Thyra’s room.

Another blissful round will start soon~

# Chapter 207

Early in the morning, in Royal Concubine Amaya's room, a figure covered in a black veil of mist was sitting cross-legged on Amaya's bed.

The black mist looked scary as it moved around the figure's body however, soon, its intensity started fading away.

5 minutes later, the Black Mist faded away and Amaya's body was finally visible.

A few seconds later, Amaya opened her black eyes and her eyes widened when she saw a very familiar man sitting on a chair in front of her.

"Hmm, that Mist looks scary indeed," Nux muttered with a smile on his face.

Amaya looked around and saw Kelton lying on the floor near the sofa. She then shook her head and questioned.

"Why did you hit him again? He wasn't even in the room." Amaya questioned.

"Well, he was knocking on the door, I thought he would disturb you so I knocked him out." Nux chuckled.

Kelton had a poor fate indeed.

"You have some enmity with him, don't you?" Amaya guessed.

"Trust me, I do not," Nux answered honestly.

"I pity your opponents," Amaya muttered.

Nux chuckled, however, soon, his expression turned solemn,

“Do you trust him?”

He questioned as he pointed at Kelton.

Amaya glanced at Kelton’s body and after thinking for a while, she nodded.

“I do.”

“How much?”

“99%”

Amaya answered.

She trusted Kelton, however, she did not trust him enough to talk to her about her physique.

Of course, she wouldn’t be surprised if Kelton already knew about it from that woman, however, there is no way she would tell him that she found a suitable technique for herself.

That is the reason why she only cultivates at night when Kelton is not around.

“You contradict yourself.” Suddenly, Nux muttered.

“What do you mean?” Amaya frowned.

“You say that you trust him, however, when I ask you how much, your answer isn’t 100%. That’s a contradiction.”

Amaya, however, had different thoughts.

“That is not a contradiction.”

Then, her eyes shined and she answered,

“You can never completely and blindly trust a human heart.”

“99% is already a very high number.”

“ ... ”

Nux glanced at her and then, he proposed.

“What if I say that I have something that can ensure that he will never betray or harm you?”

“ ... ”

Amaya stayed silent and started thinking about it, a few seconds later, she questioned.

“What is it?”

“It will be a little painful, however, after using it, you can trust him with your eyes closed,” Nux muttered.

“ ... ” Amaya turned silent again.

She then glanced at Kelton’s body and started thinking more.

This time, she took a whole minute to think about it and then, she shook her head.

“Leave it, he has done a lot for me since I was a child, I won’t let him suffer through any pain just because of my insecurities.

I am not that selfish.”

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face.

He respected her for this answer.

She would rather reduce her cultivation time by half than harm her subordinate.

Mind you, she is someone who sold her life for cultivation, so something like this is a big sacrifice on her part.

Nux then nodded inwardly, however, he then realized that the atmosphere in the room was a little too boring for him and he decided to spice things up,

“So what about me? How much do you trust me?”

He didn't even ask if she trusts him or not, he is her man after all.

Of course, she trusts him.

The main question is how much.

“1%”

“O-One?”

“Yes, and that too is just a graceful mark because you gave me Mantra of the Devouring Mist Demon.”

“So you really don't trust me at all, huh?” Nux muttered.

“Not one bit, you are too handsome. You have the balls to touch the King's wife. You can enter my room unnoticed. Plus, the way you talk, it feels like you are a playboy who has played with many women's hearts.

There is no way I would trust someone like you.” Amaya shook her head.

Nux's face twitched when he heard her answer.

“Tsk Tsk, to think you won't trust your future man. Hmph Hmph!”

Amaya glanced at Nux and questioned.

“Why are you here though?”

Nux look at her blankly and blinked a few times.

Really?

Even if you want to change the topic, can't you make it less obvious?

Tsk Tsk,

However, soon, a small smile appeared on Nux's face.

She decided to change the topic, she didn't deny his words.

That's a good thing.

Nux nodded to himself.

Yes, he was a man who says that the glass is half filled.

"Why are you here?" While he was lost in his thoughts, Amaya questioned again.

"Why shouldn't I be here?" Nux came out of his reverie and questioned back.

"Shouldn't you be preparing for the academy?"

"Well, Alger is doing everything." Nux shrugged.

Seeing his nonchalant attitude, Amaya just shook her head.

"When will you leave? Today or tomorrow?" She questioned.

If a Marquee is doing the arrangement, it shouldn't be a problem for Nux to enter the same day he decided to enter, there was no need for any long process and unnecessary waiting.

"1 month later."

Nux answered.

A frown appeared on Amaya's face as she questioned,

“Why are you wasting so much time?”

“Huh? Won’t you miss me if I go to the academy so soon?” Nux questioned back.

Amaya was taken aback by his response.

A weird feeling welled up in her heart, for some reason, she was...

Happy?

Amaya however, quickly shook her head and suppressed this strange feeling,

“No, I won’t miss you at all.”

Nux’s face twitched again.

It was really hard to flirt with this woman.

He, however, did not give up.

“That’s the reason I am not going.”

“Huh?”

“You won’t miss me, so what’s the point of leaving?”

I plan to spend a month and get close to you, then once we get close to each other, I will leave,

That way, you will miss me and you will be forced to take back your words in order to see me.

That’s my plan.”

# Chapter 208

“You won’t miss me, so what’s the point of leaving?”

I plan to spend a month and get close to you, then once we get close to each other, I will leave,

That way, you will miss me and then you will be forced to take back your words in order to see me.

That’s my plan.”

Nux muttered with an evil smile on his face.

“ ... ”

Amaya glanced at his and blinked a few times.

She couldn’t believe he was saying something like that.

“Pffttt.”

In the end, she couldn’t control herself and laughed out loud.

“Yep, I was correct, you are a playboy who can’t be trusted.

From your words, I am now sure, you play with the feelings of innocent wome-”

“I Love You.” Suddenly, Nux confessed.

“ ... ”

Amaya’s body froze as she glanced at Nux’s face.

Then, her face turned red and her mind stopped working.

She didn't know how to react to that.

She didn't hate Nux, but she didn't like him either, however, if she thinks about it, her liking him or not doesn't matter, she has already promised herself to him because of that deal.

He only needs to ask and she would do anything he wants.

So should she say yes?

Or should she say no?

She was confused.

It was difficult to come up with an answer.

“Pfffft!”

Amaya then came out of her reverie when she heard Nux's laugh.

“That is what you will have to say after you start missing me. Only then would I come and meet you.” Nux muttered with a playful smile on his face.

“ ... ”

Amaya stayed silent, her mind wasn't working properly right now, she needed some time to register what he said, however, once she did register it, her face turned red in anger and she cursed.

“Y-You B-Bastard!”

“Hahaha~” Nux laughed in amusement.

Seeing him laugh, Amaya pouted and then lowered her face in embarrassment.

She cant believe she fell for this trick.

That was so dumb of her.

Also, she was now even surer.

This man was a playboy indeed, he knows perfectly well how to play with innocent women like her.

She needs to be cautious around him.

“Hahaha~”

While Amaya was thinking all of this, she heard Nux’s laugh that had not stopped for so long.

She pouted, however, and then her eyes shined in determination.

She can’t stay passive for so long.

She needs to do something.

“Actually, I just remembered that I still don’t know your name.”

She muttered.

Nux then stopped laughing and glanced at her with a deadpan face.

Again, similar thoughts roamed in his mind.

‘Really? She is trying to change the topic so abruptly huh...’

If it was something else, he wouldn’t have let it happen, he was enjoying her embarrassed look after all.

However, this was important.

“My name is Nux Leander, your future man.

Of course, you can call me Darling Nux~

But I prefer Darling alone, actually, hubby is fine as well,”

He introduced himself with a smile on his face.

“Oh, so Nux Leander huh...” Amaya nodded.

She completely ignored all the extra information.

Yep, she reckoned that needs to learn to ignore his words if she wants to deal with this man.

Nux chuckled and then he continued,

“Yes, Nux Leander, you can use your men to search and learn a little more about me. You do not have to be mindful, I give you my full permission.

You are my future wife after all.”

“...”

Amaya stayed silent.

‘A shameless man indeed...’

She nodded inwardly.

Nux just chuckled and then continued talking with her.

Why was he here?

He has noticed earlier that Amaya didn’t like him much. Of course, that doesn’t mean that he has nothing, she did look at him favourably, but it was not just to the extent of liking him.

How is he going to solve that?

Well, it was simple,

He just needs to spend time with her.

He just needs to talk with her.

As a friend and as someone close to her.

He just has to make her realize that he is there for her.

He just needs to make her dependable on him.

Actually, there is an easy way to do that as well.

[Craving Touch]

He just needs to touch the girl for some time and let his ability do all the work, however, he was refraining from doing that.

Reason?

Thyra.

Yes, while dealing with Thyra, Nux realized something.

The effect of [Craving Touch] on Thyra was a lot weaker than what it had on Felberta and Edda.

And Nux assumed that reason for that is because of her cultivation.

Thyra is a peak Grand Master Stage Cultivator, this could be the reason why [Craving Touch] didn't work very well on her.

The women he would meet later would be even stronger than Thyra.

There are chances that [Craving Touch] might not work at all.

Of course, Thyra might have resisted [Craving Touch] using nothing but her strong will, that's possible as well, however, even if that is true, then Nux might meet a woman whose will is even stronger than Thyra's.

Therefore, Nux was trying not to rely on his ability.

He would do everything alone.

It might slow down the process and increase the difficulty, but...

Why not?

Let's increase the difficulty a little.

Nux then continued talking with Amaya for the next few hours, then Amaya realized that Kelton was about to wake up, therefore Nux had to leave.

In his mind, Nux decided to hit Kelton even harder tomorrow.

Thinking that, Nux left Amaya's room and walked toward Allura's room.

Of course, this whole month wasn't just for Amaya alone, he will spend time with his other woman as well.

Not only that, he would even train with Thyra and learn her killing techniques.

Combining that with his stats, Nux was sure that he would become an absolute monster.

A deadly monster.

Heh, this month would be blissful indeed.

# Chapter 209

Early in the morning, Amaya was cultivating in her room again, however, this time, the Veil of Black Mist surrounding her body was a lot denser than before.

\*Whoosh\*

Suddenly, the dense Black Mist that was doing nothing but moving around Amaya's body stopped and in the next second, it was sucked into Amaya's body.

No, it was not fading away slowly like before, this time, it was sucked away.

If before the Black Mist looked in control, this time, it looked like some other power was controlling the black mist.

Nux, who was seeing this, frowned and then, his golden eyes shined.

[Name: Amaya Skyfall ]

[Age: 23]

[Mana Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Occupation: The leader of the Thousand Information Chamber.]

[Race: Human]

[Physique: Devouring Mist Demon Physique]

[Talent: King]

[LVL:9 → 10]

[HP: 200/200]

[STR: 11 → 12]

[AGL: 14 → 15]

[VIT: 19 → 20]

[STM: 13 → 14]

[INT: 19 → 25]

[DEF: 14 → 15]

‘She broke through huh... and it’s only been 7 days... her talent is no joke.’

Amaya then opened her eyes and glanced at Nux.

“As I expected, you are here.

Haah... don’t you have anything to do?” She questioned with a playful smile on her face.

“Tsk Tsk, look at you, being all arrogant just because you broke through.”  
Nux snorted.

Amaya’s smile widened as she raised her hand and a Black Mist seeped out of it.

“Hehe, I can control this power now, be careful from now on, Nux, you dare bully me and I’ll devour you~”

“Heh. You are barely a Beginner Stage Cultivator, don’t get too cocky. I can beat someone like you without lifting my finger.” Nux snorted, and then, a playful smile appeared on his face as he muttered,

“However, you are welcome to devour me through another way though, I won’t stop you, rather, I am looking forward to it.”

A frown appeared on Amaya’s as she couldn’t understand what ‘other way’ he is talking about, however, when she noticed the smile on his face, she quickly joined the dots and her face turned red.

“Y-You are absolutely shameless. Hmph! A Shameless pervert, don’t worry, once I get stronger, I will devour you using my Devouring Mist.”

“Tsk Tsk, that’s I say Allura is much better than you, when I appear in front of her, she quickly jumps up and hugs me, and you, hmph! You are just thinking of different ways to kill me.” Nux teased.

“It’s your fault that you meet her first and not me!”

“Oh? Are you jealous?”

Amaya’s eyes widened when she realized what she just said.

She then glanced at Nux and seeing that big smile, she knew she had dug her own grave.

She has been talking with this man for a week now, she can tell what is going on in that head of his.

He will tease her to death.

“C’mon, just tell me, are you jealous? If you say the truth, then I might visit you first.”

An unusual glint shined in Amaya’s eyes.

That deal wasn’t that bad.

Amaya then shook her head repeatedly,

‘He is just teasing me, night is the only time when I can cultivate, there is no way he would come to me in the night.’

In these 7 days, their relationship has grown closer than before.

She understood Nux better than before as well.

He may act like a perfect and he may be a shameless, senseless, rude and hateful man, but inwardly, he is a good and considerate person.

He cares about people close to him.

That is his good quality.

Of course, Amaya won't say that out loud.

Nux is just a vile man, he doesn't deserve all these praises.

Hmph Hmph.

“Hmph! I am not jealous or anything, Allura is just a fool for loving you so much. I can tell from a single glance that you aren't a good person. I don't know what Allura sees in you.”

“Heh, says the one who has sold herself to me.” Nux laughed and Amaya's face turned redder.

Nux enjoyed her reactions and he would have kept teasing her, however, right now, he had something much more important to do.

A big, playful smile then appeared on his face and he questioned.

“Hehe~ So can you control the Devouring Mist now?”

“Hmm? Yes, I can, however, I can only control it if it is around 1 meter away from me, any farther than that and it will disappear.” Amaya answered.

Nux's smile widened and he asked another question.

“What about inside your body?”

“Well, I can control it inside my body as well, actually, my control over the Devouring Mist inside my better is a lot better compared to how much I can control the Mist outside my body.”

“Hehehe~” Nux couldn’t control himself and laughed out loud.

A frown appeared on Amaya’s face when she saw his laugh.

‘Why is he laughing like that?’

She started thinking.

Why does that smile look... perverted?

Wait...

Soon, she realized what this pervert was thinking and her face turned red like a tomato.

“Y-Yes, t-the mist won’t hurt you now...” She muttered in a mosquito-like voice.

“Hehehe~” Nux laughed even more and then, he started walking towards Amaya.

Amaya’s heart started beating quickly, she knew what was about to happen, however, since she made a deal, she prepared herself for it.

She would not go back on her words.

She then looked at Nux was walking towards her and closed her eyes.

Then, she felt Nux’s hand touching her body and soon, Nux picked her up and...

And placed her on his lap?

Huh?

What is happening?

Amaya frowned and opened her eyes in confusion.

“Hehe~ Don’t worry, I won’t let you taste that level of intense pleasure so quickly. Hmph! You dare act so cocky in front of me, see how I will take things slowly and torture you!

Muahahaha!”

Nux laughed out loud.

A small smile appeared on Amaya’s face and she nodded,

“mm”

# Chapter 210

“Hehe~ Don’t worry, I won’t let you taste that level of intense pleasure so quickly. Hmph! You dare act so cocky in front of me, see how I will take things slowly and torture you!

Muahahaha!”

A small smile appeared on Amaya’s face and she nodded,

“mm”

Actually, right now, Amaya was a little unsure about everything.

She can have sex with a partner without harming them, she was sure of it.

She had made a deal with Nux, that, she understands as well.

However, for some reason, she is scared.

Scared of what?

She doesn’t know.

She just feels unsure and confused.

She needs more time to think about everything.

What Amaya didn’t know was due to her past experience, she started fearing sex.

It wasn’t her fault either, she was used like an object after all.

First, she was presented to the king of another kingdom by her very own parents, the king of that kingdom saw how beautiful she was and accepted her and then, caged her inside a room.

5 years later, it was discovered that she can't have sex with any man, the king even went so far as to let another, completely unknown man come close to her and enter the head of his penis inside her.

Although her 'curse' protected her and the man couldn't do anything, it still left a trauma in her heart.

Of course, Nux didn't know her thoughts or her trauma; however, he had a vague inkling about how she was feeling.

He could still sense some unwillingness from Amaya's expression.

Of course, she would comply with his request if he asks her, however, that won't be from her consent.

Nux was sure of it.

Therefore, Nux decided to take things slow.

He will 'take things slow and torture her'.

Of course, that doesn't mean he won't do anything, he would make sure to tease her to his heart's content, and no one can stop him from doing that.

"Heeeeh? Would you look at that? Why is your face so red, Amaya? Are you perhaps embarrassed? What are you so embarrassed about?" Nux questioned as he hugged her from behind and placed his chin on her shoulders.

"N-Nothing..." Amaya answered as she lowered her head that has turned even redder.

Nux enjoyed that reaction a lot.

Hehe, this girl was completely defenceless right now.

It was a perfect time to tease her as much as he wanted.

“Is it something you can’t tell me? Wait... you are not sad about what I said, are you? Do you not want to wait and continue what couples do? Are you a hidden pervert?” He whispered into her ears gently.

“N-No!”

Amaya was quick to reject.

“Oh? Does that mean you do not what couples do with me?” Nux questioned.

“N-No! That is not what I meant.”

“So you do want to have sex?”

“NO!”

“Hahaha~” Nux couldn’t control himself and laughed out loud.

“You do not want to have sex with me, but you do want to have sex with me, what is it that you want, Amaya? Why are you so confused?”

Nux questioned and Amaya, who realized that he was playing her like a fool couldn’t help but get more embarrassed.

His touch...

The way his chest was touching her back, the way his hands were around her waist, and the way his chin was placed on her shoulder...

All of this...

All of this felt too tingly and strange.

All of this felt a little too comfortable.

However, no matter how strange it felt, Amaya can’t be in such a passive position.

“I-It depends on you, I sold myself to you, you are the one in charge, if you want to have sex, w-we can do it, however, if you don’t want to do it, we will not do it, my decision doesn’t matter.”

Amaya placed all the responsibility on him and then, she continued,

“I-It all depends on you, if you are a pervert who can’t control himself, w-we can do it right now, however, if you are a gentleman like you say you are, then we will do it some other day.”

“Oh? Don’t you know?”

Suddenly, Nux questioned.

“What?” Amaya questioned back.

“I am the biggest pervert in this world,” Nux muttered and Amaya’s face turned redder.

It seems she would have to do it today...

However, now that she thinks about it, maybe it isn’t that bad.

Nux was someone who changed her life.

He brought her the Cultivation technique she was looking for, he gave her hope and helped her step into the cultivation world.

Not only that, but Nux was her only friend, someone who she can talk to without minding her manners and without thinking about politics. She can be free around him.

And... and it was fun being around him, so maybe...

Maybe everything isn’t as bad as she thinks it is...

“A-Alrig-”

Just as Amaya was about to agree, a big wide grin appeared on Nux's face as he continued,

“However, I am a gentlemanly pervert.

And since you can see that the ‘gentleman’ comes earlier than ‘pervert’, it means I am more of a gentleman.

So since I am more of a gentleman, we will do it another day.”

Amaya, who was about to agree, paused.

Her face turned even redder and soon, her expression changed and her embarrassment turned into anger.

“Y-You dare play with me!!”

Black Mist was released out of her body, Nux, who had already expected her outburst was already near the window and was looking at her with a smile.

“We will meet soon, Amaya.”

“Come back here you bastard!”

Amaya roared in anger, however, Nux didn't hear her at all and jumped out of her window.

“Until next time, my cute little Amaya~

Remember my words, I will take things slowly and torture you.

Mauhaha~”

Amaya quickly rushed towards the window, however, as she glanced outside, a frown appeared on her face since she couldn't see Nux anywhere at all.

It was as if he just disappeared.

# Chapter 211

It was 10 A.M., and right now, Nux was standing on what looked like 2 bamboo trees that are cut from the same height.

Standing in front of him was Thyra, who was carrying a pile of Stones in her hands.

She then picked on stone and,

She threw it at Nux's head.

Nux, of course, tilted his head and dodged the stone easily.

Of course, Thyra wasn't done yet either.

She picked another stone and aimed it at his hands.

Nux's tilted his body and dodged it as well.

Thyra then aimed at his other shoulders and then his legs and Nux dodged them all.

Then, Thyra aimed at his head again and the round continued as Thyra increased her speed.

Head, shoulders, legs, she continued attacking them again and again, the attacks didn't have any fixed patterns either, she just attacked and Nux dodged.

From the smile on Nux's face, it looked like things were going pretty well, however, Thyra had an expressionless face, so whether she was satisfied or not, nobody knew.

Nux continued dodging every attack for the next 5 minutes and then, Thyra changed her attack pattern and aimed at his stomach.

Nux lifted his left leg and moved his body as he dodged the stone, however, he wasn't able to place his leg back on the bamboo and fell down.

“Ugghh...” He groaned as he rubbed his ass.

“Haahh... I can't believe it...” Thyra sighed.

From her tone, she looked very disappointed.

“W-What? I improved, did I not?” Nux questioned.

“Well you did, I just can't believe that having your level of body balance is humanly possible.”

“Uggh... don't compare me with your standards okay... I wasn't trained since I was a child...” Nux complained.

It has been 7 days since he and Thyra started training together, she first started teaching him the killing moves and everything was going great.

However, as they moved deeper and deeper, the moves got complicated and no matter how much Nux tried, he could not comprehend them at all.

Seeing this, Thyra frowned as well.

She then asked Nux to copy her however, Nux wasn't able to do that as well, somewhere, in some way, his form was incorrect and Thyra wasn't able to find the reason behind it.

Thyra then asked him to spar with her and after 2 hours of sparring, Thyra finally understood the problem.

Nux's body balance was a mess.

A complete mess.

It was such a big mess that Thyra couldn't believe that he was a cultivator who is stronger than her.

To deal with that, she came up with this training, however, Nux wasn't even able to clear this basic level of dodging the attacks aimed at the face, shoulders and legs.

This was troublesome.

Thyra had to end the training that day.

Then the next day, she came up with a set of exercises to increase the flexibility of the body and only after doing that set of exercises for the next 4 days did Nux's body get somewhat better.

Seeing some progress, Thyra then told him to stand on the bamboo again and dodge the stones.

This time, his performance was a lot better than before.

And as for today, Nux was finally able to beat the first level of Bamboo training.

Of course, it was only the first level, there were a total of 4 levels and only after Nux is able to clear all those levels would Thyra teach him other, more complex techniques.

"It's just basic body balance, don't act like it's something very hard to achieve," Thyra muttered.

"Are you saying that Felberta, Skyla, Lane and Edda's body balance is better than mine?" Nux questioned.

"Huh? I don't know about before, but there is no way they can be compared to you now."

"So my body balance is better than them?"

"Mhm," Thyra nodded.

"Then how is it a basic body balance? Aren't I already above average?"

“Hmph! As if being above average would work. Now let’s start it again.”  
Thyra just snorted and picked the stones again.

“Wait, let me ask something,” Nux interrupted.

“Why aren’t Skyla and the others going through this training, I heard you are making them practice those killing techniques.”

“Huh? I am sure I told them not to tell you what I am teaching them...”  
Thyra frowned.

“Do you seriously think they will keep a secret from me?” A playful smile appeared on Nux’s face.

Thyra’s face twitched in irritation,

“Oh c’mon, don’t be angry, do you seriously think you can keep any secret from me?” Nux questioned as he raised his hand and acted as if he was squeezing something soft.

Thyra’s face turned a little red, however, soon, she returned back to her expressionless face and she muttered,

“Alright, let’s continu-”

“You still haven’t answered me, why aren’t Skyla and the others going through this training?”

“...”

Thyra turned silent as she glanced at Nux.

Then, a sigh escaped from her mouth and she answered,

“What I want to teach you is something I gained through my hard work and relentless efforts. It is not something that can be compared to the killing techniques I taught my subordinates and what I am teaching to Skyla and the others,

It is something much stronger and more complicated.

It is my real treasure.

It is everything I know, my whole life experience.

It is the core of my being.

Call me selfish if you want, but no matter how close I am with Skyla, Felberta, Edda and Lane, I can't bring myself to teach them the core of my being.

I can't bring myself to give them my only treasure.”

“ ... ”

Nux turned silent as he glanced at Thyra who was avoiding his gaze with a guilty look on her face.

The more he looked at her, the faster Thyra's heart started beating and she panicked.

‘Should I have taught them my technique? They are my sisters after all...

I shouldn't be so selfish...

Does he think I am a self-centred woman...?’

However, contrary to what she was thinking, a smile appeared on Nux's face as he muttered,

“You are just so precious, my lovely Thyra.”

# Chapter 212

“You are just so precious, my lovely Thyra.”

“Huh?” Thyra frowned.

Then, Nux’s smile widened and he muttered,

“Hehe~ To think you would share the core of your being with me, hehe~”

For some reason, when it from Nux’s mouth, Thyra felt that he was lewd.

“Don’t think too much about it, you are obligated to share something so important with anyone. Keep your treasure to yourself.

That doesn’t make you selfish.

I can completely understand what your techniques mean to you, and I am sure the others would understand it as well.

Also,

I am glad you decided to share them with me, it makes me feel special, thank you.”

A small smile appeared on Thyra’s face when she heard Nux’s words.

She didn’t do this to hear ‘thank you’ from Nux or something like that, she did this so Nux could improve and get stronger.

However, hearing his genuine gratitude, her heart felt happy.

A weird wave of satisfaction washed over her body and then, her blue eyes shined brighter than ever.

“Alright, let’s continue your training.”

She muttered and seeing the look in her eyes, Nux gulped.

Thyra...

She looked unbearably hot right now.

That determined look on her face turned him on for some reason.

“Alright,” He nodded.

Thyra then started throwing stones at him and Nux started dodging all the attacks.

\*Thud\*

An hour later, Nux fell on his bum for the 10th time and groaned.

“Ughh...”

“Haahh... we need to put in a lot of work...”

Thyra sighed as she walked towards Nux and offered her hand to him.

Nux grabbed her hand and suddenly, she pulled her towards him.

Thyra fell into Nux’s embrace and Nux tightened his hug around her.

“Let me stay like this for a while.”

Thyra, whose face was now as red as tomato nodded,

“mm.”

She had no resistance against Nux whatsoever.

How could she say no to something as comfortable as that!?

Ah, no, that’s not the actual reason.

The real reason is that she is rewarding him for the hard work he is putting in right now.

Yes, she was rewarding her.

She wasn't doing this because it felt good.

Okay?

“Alright... we will stay like this for the next five- no, for the next 15 minutes and then we will spar,” Thyra muttered.

“30 minutes.”

“O-Okay...” Thyra nodded and sighed inwardly.

She was really too weak against him.

The two of them then lay on the ground, covered in dust while hugging each other intimately, for the next 30 minutes without being disturbed by anyone else.

30 minutes later, Thyra's body moved.

No more slacking off.

“Alright, let's restart the training.” She muttered.

“Alright,” Nux didn't reject her either.

He realizes the importance of time now.

He shouldn't procrastinate for long.

He then stood up and activated [Trickster] and limited his cultivation to Master Stage.

Yes, while training with Thyra, he realized that his [Trickster] wasn't just an ability he can use to fool others, he can use it to train as well.

Trickster allows him to manipulate his Mana in a certain way with which he can readjust his cultivation.

Of course, this doesn't mean that he can't gain back his cultivation, however, as long as he doesn't want to or his MP doesn't run out, he can't use the power that is higher than what he has set.

That means, if he sets his cultivation to Master Stage, then it does not mean he has the power of Grand Master Stage Cultivator while others only see it as Master Stage,

It means that he becomes Master Stage Cultivator as long as he does not undo his Ability or his MP doesn't run out.

This was also the reason why Thyra could understand the problem related to his body balance.

If it wasn't for this ability, he could have overpowered Thyra with his cultivation alone and she would have never found it out, however, after limiting himself to the Initial Stage of Master Stage Cultivation, he can spar with Thyra while having similar stats, making it a fair competition and allowing Thyra to find out his flaws.

"I am coming," Thyra muttered as she then dashed towards Nux.

Nux raised his hands and a wooden dagger appeared in his hand.

The two of them then clashed against each other and started sparing.

Right now, Nux has set his cultivation to the peak of Master Stage, this way, his stats are more powerful than Thyra's, however, combining it with her skills and techniques, Thyra was still able to fight him to draw, no, actually, she was overpowering him.

"Heh. This is fun." Nux smiled.

Thyra, however, didn't reply, her face was as cold and expressionless as it could get and she continued attacking.

It was as if she could hear Nux at all.

‘Haah... she entered her assassin mode huh...’

Nux thought inwardly and shook his head.

‘I need to get serious as well’

His eyes shined in determination as another wooden dagger appeared in his left hand and he attacked Thyra’s waist.

Or so he tried to, as if she had already anticipated his move, Thyra just tilted her body and using this opportunity, she attacked his left shoulder.

...

The spar continued for another 20 minutes and in the end,

“Alright, I lost.”

\*Thud\* \*Thud\*

Nux raised his hand in the air as he abandoned both his weapons while Thyra stood in front of him with her wooden dagger placed in front of his neck.

Then, Thyra’s expressionless face finally crumbled and she smiled,

“You held on longer than last time.”

“Huh? I did?” Nux frowned.

“Indeed, you held out five seconds longer than before.” Thyra chuckled playfully.

Nux’s face twitched, he then removed the restriction on his cultivation and disappeared.

Then, before Thyra could even react, he appeared behind her Thyra and grabbed her tightly.

“Tsk Tsk, now let’s see how long can you hold out for.

However, the rules of the spar will change.

The location for the next spar is the bed.”

# Chapter 213

‘He’s not here...’

Amaya thought inwardly as she looked around her room with a frown on her face. It was early in the morning, the time she usually ends her cultivation and opens her eyes to see Nux standing right in front of her, watching her with a smile on his face.

However, today, she opened her eyes to an empty chair.

Nux was not here...

A frown appeared on Amaya’s face.

Why was he not here today?

However, soon, she shook her head and then shrugged.

‘Well, that’s good, I can cultivate more.’

She needed more strength, she had no time to waste.

Actually, it was good that he wasn’t here, that way, she could use her time more efficiently.

Amaya then closed her eyes and started cultivating.

Or so she wanted to, however...

She couldn’t focus.

Different thoughts started appearing in her mind.

‘Did he not come inside the Royal Palace today? Did he visit Allura? Ugghh... I can’t know for sure since it’s night and maids won’t try to go

into her room...’

Talking with Nux every single day had become a sort of a habit to her, and as someone who had no one to talk to, her heart valued this conversation more than she expected.

She opened her eyes and then started looking around again,

“Nux...”

She finally called out.

“...”

However, there was no answer.

“Nux...”

“...”

Again, no answer.

This confirmed it.

Nux wasn’t here.

Then, another thought appeared in her mind,

‘Is he angry because I rejected him yesterday? No wait, he was the one who rejected me. Why did he do that?’

Why did he not appear here today?

Did something happen?

Is he busy with something?’

Amaya started thinking and didn’t cultivate.

Even if she did, she wouldn't be able to focus since her mind was occupied with another thing and cultivation requires a calm and focused mind.

...

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Time passed like that and soon, Amaya heard a knock, she quickly came out of her reverie and a big smile appeared on her face,

“Enter.” She exclaimed.

The door then opened and an old man wearing a black coat entered the room.

‘Hmm? Why does Lady Amaya look so excited today?’ Kelton wondered inwardly as he saw the excited look on Amaya’s face.

However, soon, Amaya’s excitement died and her expression turned into that of confusion and disappointment.

‘Huh? What’s with that expression? Am I not welcomed here anymore?’

Kelton started thinking.

For the last few days, weird things have been happening, first, him losing his consciousness for two consecutive days in the morning, then Lady Amaya shifting the meeting schedule 2 hours ahead and then how Lady Amaya started acting.

However, though the last thing was strange as well, Kelton thought it was a good thing.

Lady Amaya has always been a cold, expressionless and lonely girl, he was the only person she ever talks to and even then, she talks in a very formal way.

He has never seen her talking like a normal girl of her age.

This worried Kelton a lot, however, for the last few days, Lady Amaya has been a lot more 'cheerful'.

Though the way she talks hasn't changed much, the lonely, dull and expressionless look in her eyes has lessened a little.

"Why are you here?" While Kelton was thinking all of this, Amaya questioned.

"Huh? Are you still not ready yet?" Kelton questioned with a frown.

"Huh?" Amaya frowned as well, she then glanced at the clock and noticed that it was already 10 in the morning, it was time for her to meet Kelton and hear the daily report.

She was late!

She hasn't even bathed yet.

"Lady Amaya, are you not feeling well?" Kelton questioned with a worried look on his face.

"No, that is not it, I just overslept today, give me 1 hour, I will get ready now," Amaya ordered.

"As you say, Lady Amaya." Kelton nodded and then left the room.

Amaya sighed and then she stood up.

'Haah... he is really not here today...'

She then shook her head and then walked into her bathroom.

'Wait... does he not like me anymore?'

Suddenly, a question popped into her mind.

'Does he think it is not worth it? Was I acting like a child? Should I have been a little more forward?'

The more she thought about it, the more she started panicking.

With a lost look on her face, she continued walking while her brain started thinking about different possibilities.

‘No, he must be busy, I am just overthinking too much, yes, that’s it’

She came to a conclusion.

‘But what if what I am thinking is correct?’

No, she did not come to a conclusion.

\*Thud\*

Since she wasn’t seeing where she was going, Amaya’s head bumped into a wall.

“Watch where you are going, girl.”

“I apologize,” Amaya answered as she walked by.

However soon, she paused.

She then turned around and saw an incredibly handsome man standing right in front of her with a cheeky smile on his face.

“What? What are you looking at?” The man questioned with a smile.

“What are you doing here!?” Amaya’s eyes widened and she questioned in surprise.

The man in front of her was none other than the one she was thinking about all this time.

“Huh? I am here to take a bath. What’s wrong with that?” Nux questioned with a frown on her face.

“Huh?” Amaya frowned as well.

“What? It is a bathroom correct?” Nux questioned and Amaya nodded.

“You use the bathroom to bathe, correct?”

Amaya nodded again.

“Then why is it weird that I am here? Isn't it perfectly normal?”

Nux questioned with a smile and Amaya nodded again however soon, she paused.

She finally came out of her thoughts and started accessing the situation a little more properly.

She then looked around a little and once she was sure, she roared in rage,

“This is my bathroom!

What are you doing here!?”

# Chapter 214

“This is my bathroom!

What are you doing here!?”

Amaya questioned out loud. Nux, however, didn't lose his smile and questioned back.

“Aren't you mine?”

“Huh?”

“We made a deal remember, you are mind, body, heart and soul. Doesn't that mean your bathroom is mine as well?” Nux questioned and Amaya couldn't help but think that what he said made some sense.

Yes, she was his, so her bathroom was his as well.

What's the problem with that?

“I think everything is clear now?” Nux muttered and Amaya nodded.

“Alright, then let's go and bath.”

Saying that, Nux grabbed Amaya's hand and walked into the bathroom.

Amaya didn't resist as well and continued walking, however, soon, she came out of her reverie and panicked.

“W-What are you doing!?”

“Haah? Do we have to get over all of that again? We are about to take a bath in a bathroom, what's wrong with that?”

“Everything! Everything is wrong with that! Why are WE taking bath!? Why are we doing it together!?” Amaya questioned.

“Cause you are mine?”

“Huh?” Amaya frowned again.

For some reason, she couldn't gain any momentum at all.

“According to our deal, you are mind, correct?”

“Yes.”

“Then doesn't that mean we can take bath together?”

“...”

Amaya stayed silent as she glanced at Nux with a deadpan look on her face.

“What?” Nux questioned.

“That doesn't make any sense at all.”

She muttered.

There is no way she would be fooled with something like that.

She wasn't an idiot.

“Huh? A couple can't bath together? But I bathe with Allura many times...”  
Nux questioned with a confused look on his face.

“You bathe will Allura?” suddenly, Amaya questioned.

“Huh? Of course, I always bathe with her before coming to meet you but today I thought it would be better to bathe with you but since you don't want it, I'll go bath with her...”

Nux muttered and then he turned around.

“W-Wait.” Amaya called.

A smile appeared on Nux’s face, however, soon, it disappeared and he turned around with an innocent look on her face.

“What is it?” He questioned.

“I-It’s 10 in the morning, she would have already taken a bath, would she have not?”

“Well, that is true, but I am sure she can take another bath if it is with me, bathing with someone else is quite special and a delightful experience after all,” Nux answered with a smile on his face and then, he turned around again.

“W-Wait, y-you don’t have to bother h-her.”

“Hmm? What do you mean?” Nux questioned.

“I said that you d-don’t have to bother her, s-she must be busy, y-you haven’t taken a bath yet, the same goes with me... a-and since I have essentially sold myself t-to you, we are a c-couple...

So we can t-take b-bath together.”

Amaya muttered.

Nux’s smile widened and he nodded his head,

“See? That is what I was talking about, there is no problem if we bathe together, it is completely normal.”

“mm”

Amaya nodded.

This sounds logical indeed.

Suddenly, Nux removed his purple robes and revealed his well-toned muscular upper body, Amaya found herself lost in her own world when she saw that.

Nux was just about to remove his pants, however, Amaya soon came out of her reverie and panicked.

“W-What are you doing?” Her face was completely red right now.

“Huh? We can’t bath with our clothes on, can we?”

Nux questioned back.

“T-True...” Amaya turned silent.

Seeing that she wasn’t stopping him anymore, Nux removed his pants as well and stood in front of Amaya wearing nothing but underwear.

Amaya’s body froze as she glanced at Nux who was standing in front of her, a smile then appeared on Nux’s face as he started walking towards her.

“You are really lost today huh, Amaya. Why are you wasting so much time, here, let me help you.”

Saying that, Nux’s hand moved towards her blue-coloured night robes and with one graceful movement, her robes fell on the floor, revealing her perfect body with perfect proportions for Nux to see.

“B-Beautiful...” Nux couldn’t help but praise as he saw Amaya standing in front of him with a red face while her hands covered her breasts even though she was wearing a black bra.

Her skin was spotless and smooth, there was no extra fat anywhere around her body and combining everything with her raven hair and abyss-like eyes, Nux couldn’t help but gulp.

However, he soon came out of his reverie and continued.

“Alright, let’s move to the bathtub.”

Although he said that, he did not give her any chance to move at all, he directly carried her like a princess and walked towards the bathtub which was filled with foamy water.

He stepped into the bathtub and sat down.

Amaya's brain had already stopped working, she didn't know where she was or what she was doing, right now, she was just going with a flow.

A flow she didn't know where it would lead to.

Soon, she felt water touching her body, she looked around and noticed that right now, she was sitting inside the bathtub, on Nux's lap and she realized how dangerous the situation is.

However, before she could say anything, she felt Nux placing his chin on her shoulder and he whispered.

“Shall we start?”

A weird jolt of pleasure assaulted her body and her the energy she had collected to resist what was happening crumbled into dust.

She was already his...

What's the problem?

Isn't it just a bath?

What could possibly go wrong?

Thinking that, she nodded.

“Alright,”

She then heard Nux's voice and soon,

\*Click\*

With a click sound, her bra was removed.

...

A/N: So I was thinking, what do you guys think about Anal Sex?

Should I add it? Should I not?

We are gonna do a pole.

In the comments,

Like,

Yes A.

If you want anal.

No A.

If you do not want anal.

Also, keep in mind that the chapter with anal will take some time, I may even forget about it.

Welp, let's just see the results of the Pole first.

# Chapter 215

A/N: Ahem Ahem, again, same warning. Read the next 3 chaps together.

Muhehehe.

\*Skeleton Face\*

...

\*Click\*

With a click sound, her bra was removed.

‘W-What...?’

It was as if time slowed down for Amaya.

She saw her black-coloured bra falling into the bathtub in slow motion, revealing her beautiful white breasts and her perfectly shaped light pink nipple.

Her eyes widened in surprise and her heart skipped a beat.

Her body reacted on instinct and her hands moved towards her breasts, trying to cover them.

However, before her hands could reach her breasts, Nux’s hand moved and hugged her waist.

Seeing that, Amaya panicked even more and questioned,

“W-What are you doing!?”

Nux then placed his chin on her shoulder and questioned,

“Hmm? What’s the problem?”

Unknowingly, or knowingly, Nux moved his body even close to Amaya while he asked that. Amaya, who felt his body warmth felt a weird sense of comfort, however, soon, she came out of her reverie and questioned.

“W-Why did you remove my bra?”

“Hmm? Aren’t we here to bathe? How are we supposed to do that with clothes on?” Nux questioned back in a confused tone.

“It’s obvio-” Amaya wanted to answer, however, suddenly, she paused.

Wait...

Wasn’t he right?

How are they supposed to take a bath without removing their clothes?

There was nothing wrong with what he was doing right now but...

But... why does everything feel so wrong?

What’s the problem here?

While Amaya was thinking all of this, Nux’s hands moved, he gathered the water in the bathtub and then rinsed Amaya’s waist.

Amaya panicked again, but before she could question, she heard Nux’s gentle voice in her ear,

“Since we are bathing together, won’t it make more sense to bathe each other as normal couples do?”

If we wanted to bathe alone, there was no point coming here together, right?”

Nux muttered and again,

Even though she felt what was happening was wrong, she couldn’t find any way to refute his words.

His words made complete sense.

And since she couldn't refute his words, Amaya didn't say anything and let Nux do whatever he wanted with a red face.

Nux's smile widened, he then continued what he was doing and when Amaya's body was wet, he grabbed the soap and started cleaning her shoulders with his gentle hands.

"Your skin is very soft."

Nux complimented as he washed her arms.

"T-Thank you."

Amaya stuttered.

Nux's hand then moved and he started washing her back, even though he was just washing her back, the way his hands were moving, for some reason, everything looked very lewd.

And with how Amaya's heart was beating, it was confirmed that she could feel it as well.

"You usually can't get your back cleaned huh, one always needs a partner to that," Nux muttered.

"Y-Yes."

Amaya nodded, even saying a one-word answer was tough for her right now.

Only she knew how hard it was, her mind wasn't working properly, she was just there while her mind was somewhere else. Thinking about something very very lewd.

However, as if knowing that, Nux's next action brought her mind back to the bathroom.

He used soap to clean her waist and then, his hands paused.

It was now time to clean Amaya's breasts.

Amaya's heartbeat quickened, Nux's hands moved slowly and soon, he circled them around her breasts a few times and then, he grabbed her breasts as gently as he could.

“Mmnff~”

A weird jolt of pleasure coursed through Amaya's body and she moaned out loud.

Different emotions attacked her mind, pleasure, excitement, thrill, nervousness and... fear.

Yes, she was a little scared about what will happen next.

Oblivious to her thoughts, Nux's hand moved gently and caresse- ahem, cleaned her breasts.

Weird waves of pleasure continued to assault Amaya's body, the feeling of someone else touching her breasts so openly felt strange but pleasurable at the same time.

Her eyes then widened in surprise when Nux's fingers moved and started playing with her nipples.

“Annhh~”

She moaned out loud.

“Are you alright? Am I being too rough right now?” Nux's gentle voice entered her ears and as if it was destroying all her defences, her mouth moved on her own and she answered,

“N-No, it's fine... you can continue...”

Even Amaya herself would have found her answer shocking, however, right now she was busy dealing with this new and unknown feeling.

“Alright~”

Nux nodded and then, his hand continued moving and ‘cleaning’ her breasts thoroughly.

After around 10 minutes of gropi- cleaning, Nux was finally satisfied and then he turned on the shower.

Cold water fell on Amaya’s and Nux’s hot bodies and,

“Annh~”

Another moan leaked out of Amaya’s mouth.

Nux however, did not react to the cold water, he was busy doing much more important stuff. His hands moved all over her body and rinsed her entire body as gently and lovingly as he could.

“Here, you are finally clean now.” Nux smiled gently as he hugged Amaya from behind.

“T-Thank you...” Amaya muttered.

“...”

Nux however, didn’t reply. It was as if he was waiting for something.

Amaya found the silence awkward, she then started looking around and soon, she offered,

“N-Now should I clean your body as well?”

“Of course, that’s why we two are here right?

To take a bath together.”

“mm.”

Amaya nodded and then, she turned around while covering her breasts with her arms.

Seeing her like this, Nux couldn't believe that she was the same woman who was ordering Kilton like some experienced businesswoman.

Her strong, confident and independent side was completely invisible right now.

Currently, she only looked like a normal teenager who was standing in front of her crush, naked, scared, confused, excited and nervous.

“When are you going to start?” Nux questioned with an amused smile on her face.

Amaya then finally realized that she would have to move her hands, which means she won't be able to cover her breasts anymore, she then glanced at Nux and seeing that playful smile on his face, she realized that this was what he was aiming for to begin with.

She then gritted her teeth and moved her hands, revealing her perfectly shaped breasts.

Nux burned that sight into her memory, as for Amaya, her movements paused and her eyes widened in shock.

She was about to rinse Nux's body just like how he did with hers, however, soon, her eyes fell on that huge tent that had formed under the bathtub and her body froze.

“What? Don't act like that,

It is a completely natural reaction.”

# Chapter 216

A/N: Do not read right now~

\*Skeleton Face\*

...

“What? Don’t act like that,

It is a completely natural reaction.”

Amaya then heard Nux’s word and her eyes glanced at her face.

“Trust me, it is completely natural, you would have to check a guy’s sexuality if he doesn’t get turned on after bathing with you.

Amaya, don’t blame me, it is your fault, you are just too beautiful.”

A small smile appeared on Amaya’s face when she heard Nux’s words.

‘You are just too beautiful.

You are amazingly beautiful.

You are the most beautiful person I have ever seen.’

For some reason, her mind started moulding Nux’s words and the more it was moulded, the better Amaya’s smile got.

For some reason, she got a little too happy because of his compliment.

It wasn’t like she wasn’t complimented before, quite the opposite actually, pretty much every person she had met complimented her for her beauty, however, this was the first time she ever felt happy and contented from a compliment.

“You aren’t going to leave me hanging, correct?” Suddenly, Nux muttered.

“Hmm?” Amaya, who was lost in her thoughts couldn’t hear him properly.

“Since it is your fault, you are going to help me calm it down, right?”

Amaya’s heart skipped another beat, however, when she glanced at Nux’s face and then she glanced back at the huge tent that was formed below, she couldn’t deny him.

“A-Alright.”

She nodded.

Nux’s smile widened, he then shifted his body to a little more comfortable position and glanced at Amaya.

“B-But I don’t know what t-to do...” Amaya muttered.

She was clueless right now.

And it wasn’t her fault either, she has been living alone since she was a 13-year-old girl.

Although she knew what sex was and how the reproduction and reproduction organs work, she had no clue how to calm down an erect penis...

She has never done something like this before and never has she talked with someone else about this either.

‘Oh? She’s surprisingly innocent huh...’

An amused smile appeared on Nux’s face as he glanced at Amaya.

“Remove my underwear first,” Nux instructed.

“O-Okay...” Amaya muttered with a red face, her hands then started trembling because of how nervous, excited and scared she was, however,

she then glanced at Nux's face and saw him smiling at her, she smiled back a determined look appeared on her face.

Her hands moved and she quickly removed Nux's underwear, revealing an 8-inch huge monster that stood proudly.

'Woahhh... is it supposed to be this big...?'

Amaya wondered inwardly.

This wasn't the first penis she has seen, she has seen a penis 5 years ago as well, however, that and this...

There was a big difference between the two.

'I-Is he too big or was that guy too small...?'

Amaya muttered inwardly as she stared at Nux's little brother with a lost look on her face.

Nux didn't say anything either, rather, he was enjoying her reactions.

Therefore, he just waited.

2 minutes later, Amaya finally came out of her reverie and questioned,

"W-What do I do now?"

"Grab it with your arms, try to be as gentle as you can," Nux instructed.

Amaya nodded and with a determined look on her red face, her right hand moved and she grabbed Nux's little brother with her soft hand.

'Ohhh...'

Just this little motion sent a jolt of pleasure into Nux's body, however, he wasn't a virgin like he was a few months ago, he wouldn't moan with something like that.

He controlled himself and continued looking at Amaya who was looking at his little brother with a focused look on her face.

Her left hand moved as well and she grabbed Nux's rod with both her hands.

'It is hot...'

Amaya muttered inwardly.

She looked like a curious child who was looking at something completely out of this world right now.

A small smile appeared on Nux's face when he saw her cute reactions.

"Alright, now start stroking it, start slowly and gently."

Amaya nodded and then, her hands started moving slowly and carefully, it was as if she was scared of hurting him.

Her movements were anything but good, however, her innocent look compensated for that, no, actually, it did more than just compensate for that, Nux felt an unbearable sense of satisfaction washing over his body when he saw her stroking his dick with such a focused look on her face.

"Don't forget the balls, cup them and play with them a little as well."

Amaya nodded, her left hand then moved and cupped his balls.

"Ughh..."

Nux moaned out loud.

Hearing him moan, a small smile appeared on Amaya's face.

She felt like she had achieved something.

"Now you can keep experimenting, increase and decrease your speed according to what you feel is good."

You are an intelligent woman, I am sure you will understand how everything works very quickly.”

Nux instructed and then, he closed his eyes.

His actions clearly told what he was thinking.

He was done instructing, now, he would just lay back and enjoy Amaya’s caresses.

Amaya understood that as well, and an even more focused look appeared on her face and she increased her stroking speed.

“Ugghh... That is goof~”

Nux moaned again.

Seeing that, Amaya increased her speed even more, however, this time, Nux didn’t moan. Amaya frowned and then she increased her speed even more.

However, soon, she realized, it does not depend on speed.

It depends on suddenness, the more sudden and unexpected her moves would be, the more Nux would moan.

Thinking about it, Amaya decreased her speed, she continued this for the next 10 seconds and then, she increased her speed again.

“Aahh~” Nux moaned again and seeing that, Amaya smiled.

She understood these dynamics now.

Her hands moved quickly and she tried different variations as she increased and decreased her speed, making Nux moan out loud again and again.

Then suddenly, a thought appeared in her mind and she decided to test it out.

Her fingers moved towards Nux's little brother's head and then, she moved her thumb towards that opening and stroked it.

“!!!”

Nux's eyes opened wide, and a big jolt of pleasure was sent into her body.

He was already on the edge from the handjob and due to this sudden action, he couldn't control himself and,

“Ugghhhh! I am cumminngg!”

His little brother sprayed his fresh hot milk all over Amaya's body.

# Chapter 217

A/N: Alright alright, I'll be a good person and will not torture you guys.

I will release today's chapters at the same time.

You can read ahead without any problems.

PRAISE ME!

Gimme good reviews as well.

I am a good person.

\*No Skeleton Face\*

...

“Ugghhhhh! I am cumminnggg!”

His little brother sprayed his fresh hot milk all over Amaya's body.

Out of reflex, Amaya tried to cover her body with her hands, however, that didn't help at all. Nux's hot liquid fell on her body and seeing how his little brother was spitting out his mild like that, Amaya gulped.

“W-What is this...?” She couldn't help but question.

“It's called ejaculation,” Nux answered.

“I know that! I am not a child!” Amaya refuted.

“...” Nux turned silent and didn't say anything.

Amaya then glanced at Nux and started thinking.

‘Ejaculation... or orgasm, a person only orgasm when he or she feels good, so does that mean he enjoyed what I did...?’

Amaya thought and then, a smile appeared on her face.

For some reason, she felt proud of herself.

She then glanced at Nux’s little brother who was now in half erect state and her smile widened,

“I succeeded in calming it down...”

Nux, who heard her words couldn’t help but smile,

“Indeed, you did an amazing job, thank you, Amaya.”

“mm.”

Amaya nodded and then lowered her head in embarrassment.

Suddenly, a big smile appeared on Nux’s face as he glanced at Amaya’s body which was now covered in his jizz.

“I apologize about not being able to control myself as well, I didn’t expect you to be so good at it even though it was your first time.”

Amaya’s heart bloomed in happiness and she nodded,

“N-No worries... you do not have t-to apologize...”

“How could that be, look at you, you got dirty again, don’t worry though, I will make it up to you.”

“Hmm?”

“I will clean your body again.”

Nux muttered with a smile on his face and Amaya blushed.

She wouldn't deny it, when Nux was cleaning her body, it felt good, however, does she want to do that again?

No.

It was just too embarrassing for her.

However, there was no way just would back off.

He had to 'apologize' for his mistake after all.

Nux then turned the shower on, the cold water from the shower fell on Amaya's body and started rinsing all the jizz from her body.

Nux then smiled as he grabbed Amaya's body, this time from the front and then, he directly attacked her breasts.

“Annhh~”

The sudden attack took her by surprise and Amaya moaned out loud.

“You cannot moan like that, Amaya, it would alert Kelton who is outside,” Nux warned, however, his actions didn't match his words as he suddenly pinched Amaya's left nipple.

“AAnnhh!!”

Amaya moaned louder than normal.

“You need to control your moans, Amaya,” Nux repeated.

“How am I supposed to do that if you keep touching me like that!?” Amaya retorted back, her voice filled with panic. She was scared that she might get found out by others.

Seeing her like that, Nux shook his head and muttered,

“Alright, let me help you with it.”

“Huh?” Amaya frowned?

‘Help? How was he goi-‘

Before she could think too much, Nux sealed her juicy lips.

Amaya’s mind stopped working.

Her body also stopped working.

Her heart skipped a lot of beats at the same time.

For Amaya, everything paused.

She was lost, she was lost by the sudden kiss.

It took her 30 seconds to register what was happening and finally, she felt Nux’s lips on hers while she was in his embrace.

However, she didn’t have any will to resist that as well.

A weird sense of relief, comfort and security washed over her body.

She didn’t resist at all.

Rather, she hugged him back and started moving her hands around Nux’s muscular back as he sucked on her lips like it was the most delicious thing he had ever had.

Nux’s hand didn’t stay in one place either, his left hand stayed on her back, as for her right hand, it moved down towards her perky butt.

He rolled his fingers around that round ass and then, he gave it a gentle little squeeze.

“Mhhmmm~”

Amaya wanted to moan but since her lips were sealed, only a muffled moan could come out of her.

Suddenly, Nux picked her up without breaking his kiss and switched places.

Cold water fell on Amaya's back and Nux's right hand, which was kneading her butt moved again, this time, it moved towards her sacred place.

Amaya's eyes widened in surprise.

She wasn't a child.

She knew what was about to happen.

Nux's hand then reached her sacred place and soon, his index finger entered her canal and a big jolt of pleasure assaulted Amaya's body.

“MMmffffmm~”

Nux then removed his finger back from her cave and broke the kiss.

“Your little sister is wet~” He muttered with a playful smile on his face.

“That's because it is underwater,” Amaya answered.

“Heh.” Nux chuckled, he then brought his hand up and touched his index finger with his thumb,

“Are you sure? It doesn't smell like water to me~”

Amaya blushed.

“Hehe~ Look's like you are aroused. Did that kiss turn you on?” Nux questioned as he moved his lips close to Amaya's ears.

“...”

Amaya, however, didn't answer, her mind was a mess right now.

Things were going to little too fast. She can't understand what was happening at all.

She just stood there, still, with just a deep red blush on her beautiful face.

“You do not have to be so embarrassed, it is a natural reaction,

Your body is craving for me~”

Nux whispered gently as he glanced at the string of liquid that was formed between his thumb and index finger.

Hearing his words, Amaya’s face turned even redder.

Nux then smiled and continued,

“Of course, I am not any different either,”

Amaya then matched his gaze and her eyes widened in surprise when she saw Nux’s little brother, which was underwater, standing tall even though he had just ejaculated his milk just a moment ago.

“My body is craving for yours as well~”

# Chapter 218

A/N: PRAISE ME!

\*No Blue balls ahead.\*

...

“My body is craving for yours as well~”

Nux muttered with a smile on his face as he moved his erect penis close to Amaya’s little sister.

Amaya, who was watching everything with a red face couldn’t help but move her body in a way that her little sister’s entrance touched Nux’s little brother.

A thrilling feeling filled her heart when the two private parts touched each other.

She moved her body a little and the more Nux’s rod slid on her entrance, the faster her heart started beating.

Right now, she wasn’t thinking straight, all her actions were subconscious, even she doesn’t realize what she was doing.

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face as he saw her acting like that,

“Shall we move to the next step?” he questioned in a gentle tone.

Hearing his words, Amaya froze.

She knew what the next step was.

Her body started trembling in fear as she recalled some bad memories, however, a weird tingling feeling filled her heart, she glanced below and

saw Nux sliding his rod on her opening.

She turned her gaze towards him and seeing the gentle smile on his face, another feeling, that was way more intense than her fear welled in her heart.

She nodded.

She wanted to take the next step as well, she wanted to overcome this fear as well.

Nux smiled, he then moved and placed Amaya's body down in the bathtub with only her shoulders and head out of the water, he himself crawled on top of her body and placed his rod on her entrance.

After adjusting a little, he inserted the head of his little brother inside her cave.

As soon as he entered her cave, Nux felt something approaching his dick and he was sure that it wasn't her walls.

“Amaya, the Mist, you need to control the Mist.”

Nux muttered.

Amaya nodded and then, she closed her eyes.

The Devouring Mist that was inside her body moved from her Cave to her legs, freeing the path for Nux's rod. She then opened her eyes and nodded.

She was ready now.

Nux nodded back gently and then, he moved his waist as slowly and gently as possible.

“Be calm, no need to be scared, I am here~” He noticed that Amaya's body was trembling again so he whispered in a gentle tone.

Amaya nodded and decided to not look down and continued looking into Nux's golden eyes.

Nux smiled, he moved his waist and soon, he noticed something was in his little brother's way.

Amaya's hymen.

He lowered his body and placed his chin on Amaya's shoulder,

“It will hurt a little, okay? Be strong~”

He whispered into her ears.

“mm.”

Amaya nodded and she closed her eyes, preparing herself for the pain.

Then, Nux moved his waist and broke her hymen.

“Uuuugh.”

Amaya groaned in pain.

“I am here~ Don't worry~”

Nux whispered again.

Amaya wrapped her arms around Nux's back and tightened her hug as much as possible. Nux also continued whispering calming words into her ears.

He realized that pain wasn't the problem here,

It was her fear.

Amaya was scared, however, he also realized that she had to overcome that fear someday, and today was that day.

“Good, you are doing great, you are very brave, Amaya~”

He whispered again however, what he didn't know was that Amaya wasn't hearing him at all.

Right now, she was in her own world, her own dark world, all alone. She can't see, hear or sense anything, she was just floating around in immense darkness without knowing where she was going or how long was she floating for.

Suddenly, her still, dark, lonely, and scary world changed, a light in form of Nux appeared.

He extended his arms towards her, she held his hand with hers and the two of them hugged each other.

Nothing much changed, Amaya was still in her dark, lonely and scary world, however this time, it was 'lonely and 'scary' anymore. Now Nux was here with her.

Afraid that she would lose him, she tightened her hug around Nux's body, she used all the strength she can.

Floating was a lot easier now that she was hugging Nux.

Just the two of them...

It was a lot better and more relaxing than before.

No, actually, it was the best possible outcome.

Her and Nux alone in this seemingly endless world, just thinking about it filled Amaya's heart with immense happiness.

She was looking forward to her journey, her lifelong journey with no one but Nux accompanying her.

However, soon, an immense wave of pleasure assaulted Amaya's mind and her dark world crumbled.

“AAAannnhhhh~~”

She moaned out loud.

Amaya finally came out of her reverie and saw Nux's face on top of hers.

He had his signature smile on his face, and seeing that Amaya frowned, however, before she could ask what this was all about, she felt something inside her body move,

A feeling of emptiness welled in her heart, however soon, Nux thrust his waist and his rod entered her inside in one go.

“AAANnnnnhhhh~~”

Amaya moaned again.

This pleasure was too much for her to bear.

“Hehe~ Get ready, my Amaya, I'll take you to the world full of pleasure~ Treat it as a reward for being so brave~”

Nux smiled and moved his waist again.

“AAaaaannhhh~~”

Hearing Amaya's moans, Nux's heart was filled with satisfaction and delight.

Just like Thyra, her insides were very tight, Nux was having a hard time controlling his grunts, however, he still controlled himself and continued moving his body.

The more he moved, the more Amaya's insides took the shape of his dick.

“Aannhhhhh~~”

‘Ugghhh! she is too tight!’ Nux groaned inwardly.

Her walls weren't as tight as Thyra's, however, the way her walls surrounded his rod, it was as if they were trying to suck him dry. This

suction force was incomparable to anything he has ever felt before.

The pleasure was simply body numbing.

However, Nux was still Nux, he continued his thrusting without stopping.

“AAnnnnhhhh~~”

A few more thrusts later, Amaya’s inside became a lot more welcoming and Nux’s movement smoothed.

“Aanh! Annh! AAnnnh!”

\*Splash\* \*Splash\* \*Splash\*

As Nux increased his speed, the water in the bathtub started spilling on the floor, however, the Amaya couldn’t care less about the water.

She was busy coping with that unbearable amount of pleasure that was assaulting her mind and body.

She knew that if this keeps on, she would not be able to stay sane.

She needed to do something.

She barely opened her eyes and her gaze fell on Nux who was thrusting his waist as fast as he could.

She felt that this scene was a lot similar to the scene where she was surrounded by darkness, the only difference being that rather than feeling lonely and scared, she was dealing with a mind-numbing pleasure that might turn her into an idiot.

In the end, she did what she did before.

She gathered all her energy, lifted her body and hugged Nux.

“Hmm?” Nux was taken aback by her sudden action, then his smile widened and he hugged her back.

Thrusting like that was a little difficult, but it wasn't something he can't do.

He then picked her up and placed her body in a more comfortable position and then,

He started thrusting.

\*Splash\* \*Splash\* \*Splash\*

“Aanh! Annh! AAnh!”

Amaya continued to moan like crazy as her juices leaked uncontrollably and mixed with the water inside the bathtub.

Things didn't change at all, she was still dealing with that mind-numbing pleasure, but right now, it didn't matter.

She was around Nux.

Everything was fine right now.

Suddenly, a weird thought popped into her mind and without thinking much, she took action.

She opened her mouth and then,

She bit Nux's shoulder.

“Uggghhh!”

A weird wave of pleasure and pain assaulted Nux's body and he groaned in pleasure.

“You little...”

He muttered and his right hand then moved towards her butt.

This time, he wasn't as gentle as before, this time he grabbed her butt tightly and then,

\*Pah\*

“AAAnnnhhhhh~~”

He spanked her ass and as if her a switch had been slipped,

Amaya’s walls tightened as her insides crawled around Nux’s dick as if trying to devour him.

“Ugghhhh!”

Nux groaned and then,

\*Squirt\*

Amaya’s walls then loosened and then,

She came.

“AAAnnnnnhhhhh~~”

The sudden hike in pleasure was too much for him to bear as well, unable to control himself,

“Ugghhh! I am cumminngg!!”

Nux filled her insides as well.

# Chapter 219

\*Squirt\*

“AAAnnnnnhhhhhh~~”

“Ugghhh! I am cumminngg!!”

Amaya and Nux came together.

“Haah... Haa... Haa...”

Nux’s breathed aggressively, then he turned his body and settled himself on the bathtub, supporting his back on the edge of the bathtub.

“Ha... Ha... Haa...”

He then heard Amaya’s heavy breathing and couldn’t help but question,

“Why are you breathing so loudly? I was the one who did everything. How are you so tired?”

However, instead of replying, Amaya just moved her body and snuggled close to Nux’s body.

Yes, from the time she hugged him till now, she was still hugging him like a koala, in her last orgasm, her body had completely lost all her strength, her juices were leaking out and were falling into the bathtub water and she was pretty much numb, however, even after that, her hands didn’t move from where they were and she continued hugging Nux as her life depended upon it.

Nux actually found this very cute.

As for why she was breathing so heavily.

Well, that was natural, even though she wasn't moving, this was the biggest orgasm she had ever had, being pounded like that with no rest whatsoever, there is no way she won't be tired.

“Oi oi, you aren't going to answer me?” Nux questioned with a small smile on his face.

“mm.”

Amaya however, just replied with a weird nod.

Seeing her sticking to him like this, Nux's little brother reacted.

However, he knew it was her first time, therefore, he controlled himself.

He would have a lot more chances to do this again from now on.

He doesn't have to rush him.

He just smiled and patted the koala that refused to release him.

[Ding.]

While he was thinking about it, a familiar sound rang into his mind and a strange energy entered his body.

Nux frowned.

Amaya shouldn't be strong enough for him to receive any energy out of this session. Then why...

While he was thinking, a message appeared in front of him.

[Congratulations to the Host for obtaining Devouring Mist Demon Physique.]

‘Huh?’

Nux's eyes widened as he finally recalled how absurd his System was.

‘Devouring Mist Demon Physique’

A smile appeared on Nux’s face.

‘Status’

He muttered.

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: Grand Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Grand Master.]

[Physique: Devouring Mist Demon Physique – Acquired (+)]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 40 → 43] (The increase in his level and stats are not because of having sex with Amaya, it is from the time he spent with Thyra.)

[HP: 1100/1100]

[MP: 1530/1530]

[STR: 106 → 112]

[AGL: 116 → 122]

[VIT: 104 → 110]

[STM: 143 → 149]

[INT: 150 → 153]

[DEF: 103 → 109]

[Blank Points: 109 → 118]

Nux glanced at his status and smiled.

However, soon, his eyes fell on the (+) sign in front of his physique and he frowned.

He then came out of his reverie when he heard Amaya's confused voice.

“I feel like my cultivation increased...”

A small smile appeared on Nux's face when he heard that, actually, this time, he wasn't sure if his system would work since the cultivation technique needed to cultivate the Devouring Demon Mist Physique was different than normal.

However, it seems that his worries were unfounded.

His system was pretty simply absurd.

Something like this was not a problem for it at all.

[Name: Amaya Skyfall ]

[Age: 23]

[Mana Cultivation: Beginner.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Occupation: The leader of the Thousand Information Chamber.]

[Race: Human]

[Physique: Devouring Mist Demon Physique]

[Talent: King]

[LVL: 10 → 16]

[HP: 260/260]

[MP: 310/310]

[STR: 12 → 18]

[AGL: 15 → 21]

[VIT: 20 → 26]

[STM: 14 → 20]

[INT: 25 → 31]

[DEF: 15 → 21]

‘A 6-level jump...’ Nux’s eyes widened in surprise but then, he nodded.

It was only logical.

He was a Grand Master Stage Cultivator after all.

A playful smile then appeared on his face as he muttered,

“Mhm, 1 or maybe 2 more sessions and you will become an Advance Stage Cultivator.”

“What...?”

This time, Amaya finally reacted and broke her hug.

She then moved her head and then looked into Nux’s eyes.

“W-What did you say?”

“I said that we just need to have sex 2 more times and you will become an Advance Stage Cultivator.”

Nux repeated and her eyes widened in surprise.

“H-How is that possible...?”

She wasn't stupid, she may not know much about sex, however, that doesn't mean she doesn't know anything about this world.

Since when was raising one's cultivation that simple!?

Advance Stage Cultivator after having sex!?

Who is he trying to fool?

Seeing her reaction, Nux chuckled.

“Amaya, do you remember what I said to you when we first met?”

“Hmm? That it would be an achievement for Kelton to stand up against you for 3 seconds?” Amaya muttered as she tilted her head in confusion.

“...”

Nux glanced at her with a deadpan expression.

“That... was not what I was talking about.”

He then decided to not give her anymore opportunity to break his momentum and smiled,

“I told you not to think of me as a normal man,

I am special.”

Amaya recalled that and nodded.

“This is one of the reasons why I am special.”

Nux continued,

“Do you know Viscount Felberta?”

“I have heard of that name.”

“What is her cultivation?” Nux questioned.

“Hmm... from what I remember, only a few Viscount cultivates... Viscount Felberta isn't one of them...

She should be a Mortal.” Amaya answered.

Nux's smile widened and he shook his head and revealed.

“She is a Peak Master Stage Cultivator.”

“What!?”

“Indeed, just like her, Skyla, Lane, her two maids are Peak Master Stage Cultivators as well.

Even the Head Maid Edda, who was an Initial Master Stage Cultivator 2 months ago, is now a Peak Master Stage Cultivator.”

“Edda is alive!?” Amaya questioned in shock.

“Heh. She is very much alive~”

Nux chuckled,

“She's doing quite well actually.”

“Wait... Concubine Allura and Head Maid Edda suddenly got close...

Marques Alger and Felberta, who didn't seem to have any relations with each other got close as well...

Edda, Allura, Felberta, her maids...”

“All of them are Peak Master Stage Cultivators and,

All of them are my women.”

# Chapter 220

“Edda, Allura, Felberta, her maids...”

“All of them are Peak Master Stage Cultivators and,

All of them are my women.”

Nux revealed with a smile on his face.

“A-And they all are Peak Master Stage Cultivators...”

Amaya was shocked.

This can't be a coincidence.

There has to be a reason behind this.

Also, Felberta was just a mortal, how did she become a Master Stage Cultivator so quickly? That is simply ridiculous.

Wait...

Then, Amaya realized something and seeing the change in her expression, Nux smiled.

“It seems that you realized.”

“How is this possible?”

Amaya questioned.

“It is one of my abilities, when I and my partner have sex, the weaker one gets stronger, you, for example, were only a Beginner Stage Cultivator whereas I am a Grand Master Stage Cultivator.

Therefore, when we two have sex, you receive a huge boost in your cultivation and it will keep on happening till you become a Grand Master Stage Cultivators.”

“G-Grand Master Stage Cultivator?”

“Yes, you will become a Grand Master Stage Cultivator like me in less than 2 months.”

“H-How can such an absurd ability exists?” Amaya questioned in shock.

“I told you did I not? I am not a normal man.” Nux smiled.

“...”

Amaya didn't say anything and just glanced at Nux with her eyes filled with shock.

Nux chuckled, he then sealed Amaya's lips with his own and started sucking her lips. A few seconds later, his tongue knocked on her teeth, it was Amaya's first time, however, she instinctively knew what she had to do.

She opened her mouth and let Nux's tongue enter, their tongues then mingled with each other and Nux and Amaya shared a long passionate kiss together.

3 minutes later, Nux finally broke the kiss and then, he questioned,

“So, Amaya Skyfall, are you willing to be my woman?”

“Heh. Didn't I sell myself to you alr-”

“I am not talking about the Deal,

I am talking about your own will,

Amaya Skyfall, are you willing to be my woman with all your heart?”

“ ... ”

Amaya glanced at Nux’s eyes that were looking at him with a gaze full of passion, it didn’t take her a lot of time to be overwhelmed by those eyes.

“Yes.”

She answered with an intoxicated look on her face.

Then, she felt a weird energy entering her body.

‘Good,’

She then heard Nux’s voice in her head and was shocked again.

‘This is another one of my abilities.’ Nux chuckled and then started telling her everything about Harem Seal, the telepathic Link, the 1 Hour Ability Time and all that.

However, since they were tight on time, his explanation was a little rushed.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“Lady Amaya, are you alright?”

“That man is getting impatient,”

Nux muttered as he glanced at the door of the bathroom.

Amaya glanced at the door and secretly pouted.

“Alright, we should leave now, we don’t have much time,” Nux muttered.

“A-Alright...”

Amaya nodded as she lowered her head in disappointment.

Seeing her acting like this, Nux smiled and then he questioned,

“You are going to bathe with me tomorrow as well, correct?”

Amaya’s eyes brightened as she nodded.

“Yes.”

Nux chuckled, he then picked her up and both of them came out of the bathtub.

...

“Are you okay, Lady Amaya? You don’t usually take so much time to bathe.”

15 minutes later, when Amaya came out of the bathroom, Kelton questioned with a worried look on his face.

“I am alright, I just wanted to bathe for a little longer today since it felt good.”

“F-Felt good?”

Kelton frowned.

Huh?

Bathing felt good?

Aren’t you doing that for the last 23 years?

“Alright, let’s not talk about this now, you can start your report, we are already late today.”

Amaya muttered as she walked towards her chair.

Kelton came out of his reverie as well and continued.

As for Nux, well, he already left and right now, he was inside his room in his own mansion, looking at the System screen in front of him.

[Physique: Devouring Mist Demon Physique – Acquired (+)]

‘Acquired...’

He muttered inwardly.

He has read the Mantra of Devouring Mist Demon as well, the book has talked something about stages as well.

However, since it was essentially a cultivation technique and not a book about physique, the information it had was limited.

Nux only knew one thing,

Different Physique holders have different levels of Mastery over their Physique. The higher the Mastery they have, the stronger they are.

According to the Mantra of Devouring Mist Demon, There are 3 different Levels of Physiques.

Acquired.

Advanced.

Mastered.

Acquired level, this is where the person only has the Physique with a basic level of control, no different than a newbie.

However, even with that, a Physique holder can easily defeat an Advance Stage Cultivator.

Why couldn't Amaya defeat an Advance Stage Cultivator?

That was because her physique was in the ‘Dormant’ Stage at that time, it wasn't activated.

She didn't have control over her powers.

Now that she can control her powers, an Advance Stage Cultivator is nothing in her eyes, of course, she still needs some practice before she reaches that level.

A person who has Advanced Stage Mastery over his physique can easily go on par with Grand Master Stage Cultivator.

Yes, believe it or not, but a Beginner Stage Cultivator who has Advanced Level Mastery over his physique can easily defeat a Grand Master Stage Cultivator.

As for Mastered Stage Mastery, the last level,

The book didn't mention anything about that.

Nux would have to find out about that on his own.

The only thing he knew was that it was ridiculously strong.

Now the question arises, how does one raise his Mastery over the Physique?

Well, according to the book, the only way is to keep using the physique for as long as you can until you suddenly gain euphony.

Yes, that's it.

There was no fixed way to increase it.

You just keep doing what you were doing and one day, you will get there and will receive a tremendous boost in your power.

A crude method, if it could even be called a method.

Of course, all of this for other people,

As for someone like Nux,

Heh, here, things change.

# Chapter 221

There was no fixed way to increase the Mastery over one's Physique, one just has to keep trying and trying and hope to achieve a Break Through.

Nux, however, was different.

For him, all of this needed only one click.

[Physique: Devouring Mist Demon Physique – Acquired (+)]

He clicked on the (+) sign that was on his system and,

‘Huh?’

Suddenly, Nux's world turned black.

No, that's not right, rather than his world turning black, it was more like he was transported into a Black Space.

‘What is happening?’

Nux frowned.

He started looking around, however, there was not even an ounce of light in this place. He cannot see or hear anything.

He tried touching his face with his arms and it worked.

He could feel his body.

However, he could not feel his clothes.

It was as if he was standing naked right now.

‘Edda, Skyla, Lane, Thyra.’

He tried calling his women.

Or his women that were in Alger's mansion right now.

'Yes?'

'Nux?'

'What happened?'

'Hm?'

The 4 women answered.

'The Harem Seal is working...'

Nux thought inwardly and then, he called everyone.

'You guys, come into my room.'

'Alright'

The girls didn't joke around either, from his tone, they could tell that he was serious.

The girls quickly rushed into his room and soon, Edda's eyes widened in surprise.

"Nux!"

She wanted to rush toward him; however, Thyra grabbed her hand and stopped her.

"What are you doing!?"

"Shut up, you will die if you touch it," Thyra muttered with a calm look on her face.

'What do you guys see?' Nux questioned.

‘Were on lying on the bed?’

‘I was.’ Nux nodded.

‘Your body is covered with some sort of Black Mist, nothing is visible, the fact that it is your body is also just a guess.’ Thyra answered.

‘Black Mist?’

Nux frowned.

‘Yes, not only that, but I sense a menacing energy from that Mist, it is as if it will devour me if I go too close to it.’ Thyra muttered.

‘Alright.’ Nux nodded.

He doesn’t have to be a genius to realize what this Black Mist was,

It was Black and Thyra labelled it as lethal.

Nux was sure that it was Devouring Mist.

‘Why are you two so calm!?’

Suddenly, Edda questioned.

‘Oh my perverted Edda, are you worried about me?’ Nux questioned.

‘Of course I am! What happened to you!? What is this Black Mist covering your body.’

‘Alright now calm down. Nothing happened, I will be back to normal after some time. I just acquired the Devouring Mist Demon physique I was talking about. Don’t worry.’

Nux answered in a calm tone.

Edda and the others calmed down a little and then, Nux continued,

‘Now answer some of my questions.’

Nux then raised his hand inside the black space and questioned,

‘Did my hand move?’

‘There is no movement in your body.’ Edda answered.

Nux then jumped and questioned again,

‘Now?’

‘No, there is no movement,’ Lane answered.

Nux then tried controlling his Mana, however, he quickly realized that he can’t access Mana in this world.

He tried using [Sense], however, other than the pitch darkness, there was nothing else he could see.

‘Nux... you will be alright, right?’

Suddenly, Skyla questioned in worry.

‘Oh C’mon, don’t worry, it will be fine, I know what is happening.’

Nux muttered.

‘Alright, you all should leave the room now, things might get dangerous.’

Nux muttered and his women left the room obediently.

Nux then broke the Telephatic Link and sighed,

‘Now how the fuck do I get out...’

Yes, he did not know how to get out of this situation either.

He was just trying to calm them down.

He started looking around, however, being in this dark place, there was nothing to look for.

Then, Nux closed his eyes and started recalling what was written in the Mantra of the Devouring Mist Demon, however, nothing came into his mind.

There was nothing that is moderately close to his situation mentioned in the Book.

Nux scratched his head in confusion.

Now, even he started panicking.

‘What the hell? Shouldn’t I just level up? Why the heck is something like this happening? C’mon, if there is some sort of task that I have to do, just give me that task. What’s with this pitch black welcome?’

He started talking to himself, trying to keep his sanity and hoping to receive some kind of hint.

“ ... ”

However, only silence greeted him.

No answers, no hints, nothing.

Now, Nux started panicking even more.

‘System! System! Can you tell me what is happening? You can help me right?’

He called for his last resort.

“ ... ”

However, just like always, the System did not respond.

‘Maybe conscious systems are better than unconscious ones, they might be annoying, but at least they answer the questions...’

Nux started thinking about random things while he panicked.

This continued for 5 minutes and Nux, who was about to have a heart attack due to panic felt something change.

The pitch black space suddenly cracked and then, it broke down like a piece of mirror.

Nux then tried opening his eyes and a big sigh escaped his body once he saw a familiar ceiling on the top.

He stood up and looked around and soon, his heart calmed down.

He had returned.

Then, he glanced at his body and although there were no apparent changes, he could feel something was different.

Something in his body had changed.

He raised his hand and Devouring Mist moved out of his palm,

Nux noticed that this Devouring Mist was darker than Amaya’s not only that, he could feel that it was more lethal and stronger.

Then, as if he knew about it since he was a child, he started discovering more and more things he could do with this Devouring Mist.

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face.

‘Two, Three.’

Suddenly, he called.

‘Yes Master?’ the two assassins answered at the same time.

‘Come spar with me.

I need to test something out.’

# Chapter 222

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Two and Three glanced at Nux with deadpan looks on their faces.

“Are you seriously going to fight like that...?”

In the end, Three was unable to take it anymore and questioned.

“Hmm? What’s the problem?” Nux questioned back with a small smile on his face.

Two’s lips twitched in annoyance, however, he knew better than anyone to not say anything.

Three, however, didn’t have that level of control and snapped.

“What’s wrong!?”

Everything!

Everything is wrong! How the hell are you going to fight with us if you set your cultivation to Beginner Stage!?”

This wasn’t the first time when Nux had lowered his cultivation to fight against the two of them.

However, whenever he lowered it, he lowered it to Master Stage, he tried lowering it to Advance Stage as well but stopped doing that after trying it once.

Since that day, he always sparred with them while limiting his cultivation to Master Stage.

However, today,

Today he has taken a step further.

Let alone Advance, he decreased his cultivation even more and set it to Beginner Stage!

Just how ridiculous is that!?

“Alright, let’s not waste much time,” he then raised his hand and pointed his fingers at two of them.

“Come.”

He challenged with a small smile on his face.

Two and Three felt their lips twitching, this was ridiculous, however, there was nothing they could do about it.

If they were ordered to fight, they will fight.

Two and Three then glanced at each other and nodded.

‘We will end this quickly and make him realize his mistakes.’

That was their plan.

The two of them dashed towards Nux as their dagger appeared in their hands.

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face and then, Black Coloured Mist came out of his hands.

“W-What is that?” Three muttered in surprise.

Nux, however, did not give her much time to react and the Black Mist rushed toward her.

“Back Off! That’s dangerous!”

Two warned.

He didn't know what that Mist was, however, he knew it was scary, his danger senses, that he has honed after being an assassin for so long, were tingling.

Of course, Three was also an Assassin like him, her danger senses told her that something was wrong as well, however, she still couldn't react in time and some of the Black Mist grazed her pinky finger.

“Uggh!”

She groaned in pain, she then glanced at her finger and saw that it had turned grey. However, this was not the worse part, the worst part was that the grey part was growing at a pace visible to the eyes.

Three panicked, however, in the end, she was still an assassin, she quickly regained her senses and used her Mana to stop it from spreading.

The Mist, however, was scarier than she imagined, the Mana she was using to suppress the Mist was being devoured by it.

‘I need to push it out of my body, I can't just stop it with my Mana alone!’

Three thought inwardly and then she used even more Mana to push the Mist out of her finger.

Her finger finally regained its colour, everything was fine now.

Everything, but Three.

She looked at Nux with a horrified look on her face.

“W-What the hell is that!?”

Nux's smile grew.

“My new ability.”

Three's eyes widened in surprise, however, before she could say anything, a large amount of Black Mist came out of Nux's body.

“The spar isn't over yet, you two.

Try not to be defeated by a Beginner Stage Cultivator.”

Nux muttered and Two's lips twitched in frustration and annoyance.

However, Three didn't have the same expression as him, Three knew, Three had dealt with that Mist, it was definitely lethal.

“Do not underestimate that Mist, once it touches your body, it will spread all over, also, don't try to stop it with Mana, it has the property to Devour Mana as well, the best method is to use a little more Mana and push it out of your body.”

“No, that is not the best method.” Two shook his head with a smile on his face.

“Huh? What do you mean?”

Two's smile widened and he continued,

“The best method is to avoid that annoying Mist and defeat the man who is controlling it.”

Then Two dashed towards Nux at a speed at which no Beginner Stage Cultivator would be able to react.

Even if Nux was not actually Beginner Stage Cultivator and could see his movement, with his cultivation restricted, there is no way his body would react, Two just needed to get close to him and place his dagger on his neck.

Nux, however, had different plans, the Mist around him moved and covered his entire body like a shield.

Then before Two could get close to him, Two tentacles formed with Devouring Mist moved and attacked him.

Two jumped back and dodged, however, before he could be happy, a third tentacle was launched towards him, he dodged that as well however, the fourth tentacle attacked him.

Two was forced to dodge and jump back, this only ended when Two was already very far from Nux and there was a considerable distance between the two of them.

“W-What the hell!? What’s the range of that annoying Mist!?” Two questioned in frustration.

“100 meters,” Nux answered with a smile on his face.

Two and Three’s eyes widened in surprise as they glanced at Nux, however, Nux wasn’t done yet.

“Not only that, but the best part is that I do not need Mana to control the Devouring Mist. So if you two are counting on the fact that I will eventually run out of Mana and won’t be able to control the Mist anymore, forget about it.”

Two and Three blinked as they glanced at each other.

A range of 100 meters and no Mana consumption.

Didn’t that mean that...

They were fucked?

“Two and Three, think of something as soon as you can, otherwise, you two will be making a new record today,

And that is to be defeated by a Beginner Stage Cultivator.”

# Chapter 223

“Wow... to think that a Beginner Stage Cultivator would be able to defeat 2 Grand Master Stage Cultivators with a scratch on his body,

Tsk Tsk, how far the mighty have fallen.”

Nux shook his head in disappointment as he glanced at the two bodies that were lying in front of him.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

However, Two and Three did not respond to his provocations.

Right now, they had their own share of troubles to deal with.

Nux glanced at Two and Three, who were lying on the ground and started thinking.

Their entire body, other than the head, was grey right now,

“Devouring Mist is dangerous, if it enters your body, it will start numbing everything, your muscles, blood vessels, your nerves, Mana flow, everything.

The worst part is, that once it is done numbing a part of your body, it will move to another, and this process is scarily fast, it only takes a few seconds for it to start spreading.

You can try and stop it from spreading with your Mana, however, the Devouring Mist even Devours Mana, so that won't work for long either.

There is only one way to deal with Devouring Mist once it enters your body, and that is to force it out using your Mana.

However, this requires high Mana consumption.

Even if you do manage to force the Mist out, the opponent simply needs to force it inside your body again.

A simple process.

Once your entire body is numb and filled with Devouring Mist, the Mist will start doing what it is best at.

It will start Devouring.

Your muscles, bones, tendons, everything, it will devour until your existence is wiped out from this world.

It is simply a nightmare for the enemies.”

There was a scary smile on his face while he was saying all that.

‘Ugghh... Master... please do something about this Mist... you can explain how great your ability is later...’ Nux heard Two’s tiered voice in his mind.

Nux chuckled and then waved his hand.

“Of course, this is only for enemies, since you two are my subordinates, you do not have to worry at all.”

As he said that, Two and Three’s skin started regaining its colour and within the next 5 seconds, it was back to normal.

Two and Three glanced at each other and then they glanced at Nux.

“You lost.

This time, you lost against a Beginner Stage Cultivator.”

Nux smiled.

“T-This is bullshit! What kind of absurd ability is that!?”

It has a range of 100 meters, it has no Mana consumption and there is no limit to how much Mist you can produce this Mist!

This is simply unfair!

How can anyone fight against that!?”

Three complained.

“Well, just get stronger. The Mist won’t work that well against an Expert Stage Cultivator, a Beginner Stage Cultivator would die at the hands of the Expert Stage Cultivator before the Mist could even start acting.

And of course, once the owner of the Mist is dead, the Mist will vanish as well.”

Nux answered with a small smile on his face.

“Haah? Won’t that make you invincible under Expert Stage Cultivators!?”

“Is it anything new? Wasn’t I already Invincible under the King Stage Cultivators?” Nux smiled.

“No, that is not what I am talking about.” Three, however, shook her head.

“Hmm?” Nux frowned.

“You can indeed defeat any Cultivator who is at Expert Stage or lower, however, can you defeat them if you are out of Mana?

Can you defeat that if you are dead tired?”

Nux shook his head.

“But with this Mist, you can defeat any Grand Master Stage or lower stage Cultivator even if you do not have any Mana left or if you are so tired that you can’t move your body anymore.

It is almost as if you can defeat your enemies while you are sleeping, and these aren't normal enemies, these are Grand Master Stage Cultivators!

You can defeat any number of Grand Master Stage Cultivators without using a single ounce of Mana.

This simply doesn't make sense!"

Nux frowned.

What Three was saying was true, he is indeed invincible under Expert Stage if that was the case, however, for some reason, Nux felt that something was wrong.

This shouldn't be the case.

This is ridiculous indeed.

"Alright, I need to perform some tests, you two can leave." He glanced at Two and Three and nodded.

"What about the spar?" Two questioned.

"Do you seriously think you can defeat me? You were lying on the floor just a minute ago, don't you remember?"

Two's face twitched, however, he couldn't say anything.

That Black Mist was simply absurd.

An ability like that shouldn't exist in this world.

Two and Three left the training ground and then, Nux released the Seal on his Cultivation.

Then, he sat cross-legged and a large amount of Black Mist was released out of his body.

Within the next 10 seconds, the Devouring Mist spread all over the area and formed a circle of radius 100 meters with Nux as the centre.

Nux glanced at his MP and saw that there was no change in it whatsoever.

However, even after that, Nux had this feeling that he couldn't keep this Circle for as long as he wanted.

Nux then waited, he waited for something to happen.

The ominous-looking Mist that had formed a Dark coloured circle looked frightening, it was good that Nux had ordered all the people to move out before he started training.

Otherwise, many people would have been shocked by this ominous-looking circle.

Nux, who was at the centre of the circle didn't feel anything and decided to close his eyes.

This was getting boring, however, he needed to test his limits, this was important.

...

Nux sat there for 4 hours and suddenly,

The Devouring Mist started fading away.

“Huh? What happened?”

Nux frowned as he glanced at the Devouring Mist that was disappearing into the air.

And once the Mist completely disappeared,

“AAAAGGHHHHHH!!!”

A stinging pain assaulted Nux's mind.

# Chapter 224

“AAAAGGHHHHHH!!!”

After the Mist disappeared, a stinging pain assaulted Nux’s mind and he screamed in pain.

“NUX!”

Thyra had heard what happened to Two and Three, so she decided to walk towards the Training Ground and see what Nux was doing.

There, she saw this huge Black Mist that was spread all over the place and decided to wait.

The Mist then disappeared and a smile appeared on Thyra’s face.

‘Heh, let’s surprise him from behind~’

She thought inwardly, however, soon, she heard his scream and rushed towards him.

“NUX!”

Thyra appeared near Nux and grabbed his hands in worry.

Her eyes then fell on Nux’s face and it worried her even more.

Nux’s face was as pale as paper, veins had popped out on his head while he gritted his teeth.

It was clear how much pain he was in, however, since Thyra was here, he controlled himself and did not scream anymore.

“Are you okay!?”

Thyra questioned in worry as she patted his back with one hand and held his hand with her another.

“I-I am fine. Don’t worry.” Nux answered in a hoarse voice.

“That doesn’t look fine to me! Look at your face!” Thyra retorted in panic.

“D-Don’t worry, I am fine, I am not lying. The pain is reducing as well.” Nux muttered, his voice was a lot better than before.

“A-Are you sure...?” Thyra questioned, she was about to cry when she saw him smiling at her so weakly, she did not like this at all.

“Trust me, I am fine...” Nux answered and then, he felt his eyes turning heavy.

“I... I just need some sleep...”

Then, he closed his eyes and his head fell on Thyra’s shoulder as he passed out.

Thyra panicked even more, however, she soon noticed that Nux’s face had started regaining its colour and those veins had disappeared as well.

His breathing was calm, pulse and heartbeat were a little faster than usual, however, it wasn’t lethal.

Thyra sighed in relief.

Then, she picked Nux up and walked toward his room.

...

8 hours later, Nux opened his eyes and as soon as he did, he was greeted by the sight of 5 beautiful women looking at him with worried looks on their faces.

‘Huh? What happened?’

His memories were still a little hazy, however, soon, he recalled what had happened.

He then turned towards his girls and smiled,

“Don’t worry you guys, I am fine.”

Thyra, Skyla, Lane, Felberta and Edda who were looking at him sighed.

“How much time has passed since I passed out?” Nux questioned.

“8 hours,” Thyra answered.

“Oh...” Nux nodded.

He then glanced outside the window and saw it was already midnight.

“So we all missed our sessions for today, huh...” he muttered in disappointment.

“Don’t worry about that, we will make up for it later.”

“Yes, your health is much more important.”

“Mhm, I have contacted Sister Allura as well, she is worried about you, she wanted to come here however, I told her not to.”

“You did a good job.” Nux smiled and Edda smiled back.

Nux then glanced at Felberta and muttered,

“You didn’t have to return either, you need to get proper rest so that you can get used to your work again.”

“It’s not like I am doing it for the first time, I will go back once you are fine,” Felberta answered.

Yes, after enjoying her stay here in Alg- Nux’s mansion, she decided to return and continue her work as a Viscount. She can’t leave everything to

Joyab after all.

“I am fine now,” Nux muttered.

“No, you are not fine, you need to rest today.”

Felberta muttered,

“Yes, Sister Allura said the same thing as well, she says that you do not have to go there today, just rest here.” Edda nodded.

“Yes, you need to rest,” Thyra muttered and Lane nodded as well.

“Alright, alright, I will rest.” Nux nodded helplessly.

“Nux...” Suddenly, Skyla called out.

Nux glanced at her and saw a worried look on her face,

“What happened? Why do you look so tensed?” He questioned with a gentle smile.

“Your power... it is not something evil that is harming you, is it?” Skyla questioned.

Nux just shook his head and chuckled,

“My cute little Skyla, anything that is black doesn't mean it's evil. It is not harming my body at all, don't worry.”

“Then how did you pass out?” Skyla questioned.

“I just overused that ability, nothing more,” Nux answered.

Actually, he wasn't sure about this either, however, right now, that is the only plausible explanation that comes to his mind.

There has to be a limit on his ability, else it was a little too absurd, maybe this is some sort of limit. He needs to test it out a little more.

“Alright...”

“Mhm, don’t worry, I am fine now and will make sure not to overuse the ability again.”

“You better.” Skylia pouted.

“Alright everyone, leave the room now. Nux needs to sleep.” Thyra muttered and everyone left the room.

‘Nux, are you okay!?’ After everyone left, Nux heard Allura’s panicked voice in his head and smiled.

Then, after talking with her for a while and calming her down, he broke the telepathic link and his face turned serious.

He raised his hand and soon, Black Mist came out of his palm.

Seeing the Devouring Mist, a big sigh escaped out of Nux’s mouth.

‘I can still use it...’

He was scared that he won’t be able to use his Mist, and he didn’t want to lose this ridiculous ability like this.

However, his fears were unfounded and he can use it just fine.

He checked and saw that everything else was fine as well.

It was as if what happened a few hours ago did not happen at all.

‘I need to think more about what happened. It most probably happened because I might have overused the ability.’

But what did I overuse?

What is required to use the Devouring Mist?

There are still a lot of things about Physiques that I don’t know about.

The Mantra of Devouring Mist Demon doesn't help either.

There is nothing that can help me in the shop as well.'

Nux thought inwardly and sighed again.

'Haah... Looks like the only person I can rely on is myself.'

# Chapter 225

Right now, Amaya Skyfall was lying on her large bed with her eyes opened, from her expression it looked like she was thinking about something very deeply.

“Heeh? For Lady Amaya to think so much about someone, just who is that lucky man?”

Suddenly, Amaya heard a playful voice and a man, sitting on her bed, appeared right in front of her eyes.

Seeing the surprised look on her face, Nux smiled, he wanted to tease her more, however,

“What wer-”

“NUX!”

However, before he could say anything much, Amaya reacted as fast as she could and hugged him tightly, burying her face in his chest.

“Are you okay? I heard that you passed out, what happened?”

The worry in her voice was as clear as day.

Nux frowned and questioned,

“How did you know about it?”

“Allura told me,” Amaya answered.

“Oh? You two talked?”

“Yes, we used that telepathic connection,” Amaya answered and Nux nodded in understanding.

It was a good thing.

His girls should get along with each other.

Actually, he was glad that Allura took the initiative to contact Amaya.

From what he has learned, Amaya needs someone who could talk to her like an equal, like a friend.

Of course, he was there as well, however, the more the merrier.

So he wanted his women to talk to Amaya and get along with her. Of course, he can't really force anyone to do it.

His women don't know much about Amaya after all.

“That is not significant right now. Tell me, are you hurt? How did you pass out? Can I do something for you? Wait, why are you even here? Shouldn't you rest right now? If you wanted something from me, you could have just used the Telepathix connection.”

Nux chuckled and patted her head to calm her down.

“Don't worry, I am completely fine now.”

Amaya then finally raised her head and observed Nux's face.

His skin colour looked fine, his breathing was normal and everything else was fine as well, he indeed looked like he was fine.

A sigh of relief escaped her mouth and then, she questioned.

“So what happened? How did you suddenly pass out?”

“Well, I overused Devouring Mist.”

Nux blurt out.

“Devouring Mist...?” Amaya frowned.

Nux then realized that Amaya still didn't know that he had her Physique now. He raised his hand and the Devouring Mist seeped out of his Palm.

“!!!”

Seeing that, Amaya's eyes widened in surprise.

She couldn't believe what was happening in front of her.

“Y-You have the Devouring Mist Demon Physique as well?” she stuttered.

“I did not have one before, I took yours,” Nux answered.

“H-Huh? H-How is that possible?” Amaya questioned in confusion. First, that increase in cultivation with sex thingy and now this.

Her world views were changing yet again.

“Well, you remember how I share the Cultivation with my sex partner, right?” Nux questioned and Amaya nodded.

“My ability doesn't stop there, I can do the same with Physiques as well. I can take, no, take is not the correct word,

I can copy the Physique of the woman I am having sex with.”

Nux revealed and Amaya blinked a few times

It would take some time for her to digest this information.

This was simply ridiculous.

How could such a ridiculous ability exist?

Nux, who looked at her shocked face started thinking about something.

Devouring Mist Demon Physique was something that belonged to Amaya, the fact that he had it might not be very digestible for her.

There are chances that the thought, 'Was I used?' would pop into her mind.

Nux knew that.

However, he still decided to tell the truth.

In the end, the more he hides it, the worse it will get.

It was always better to keep as less secrets as you can.

Nux then continued observing her expressions and soon, Amaya opened her mouth.

“Does that mean I am free now?”

She questioned with a blank look on her face.

“Huh?” Nux frowned, he didn't know what she was talking about.

“You got my Physique, correct?”

“Yes.” Nux nodded.

“Then does that mean you are immune to Devouring Mist?”

“Well, yes I am,” Nux admitted.

“Then does that mean I don't have to hold back anymore!?” Amaya questioned and her blank eyes started shining brightly.

“Huh? What?”

“Since you are immune to Devouring Mist, then it won't matter if I somehow lost control over the Mist inside my body while we are having sex, right?”

“That is true.”

“Won't that mean that I don't have to hold back now!?”

Amaya exclaimed as her abyss-like black eyes shined even brightly.

“...”

This time, it was Nux who was silent.

This is what she was worried about...?

“What a pervert.” Nux chuckled.

Amaya, however, completely ignored his words and hugged him back.

“This is good, I am glad you have this amazing ability, hehe~”

Nux blinked a few times, still confused about what was happening, in the end, he just smiled and patted Amaya’s head.

Actually, he wanted to discuss more about the Devouring Mist Demon Physique, however, he felt that he should do something much more important right now.

“Then how about we test it out?” a playful smile appeared on his face as he muttered.

“Hmm?”

“How about we test out how having sex without holding back feels like?” Nux questioned as he picked Amaya from her bed and placed her on his lap.

A small smile appeared on Amaya’s face as she looked into Nux’s golden eyes.

Nux then brought his lips close to her ears and whispered in an incredibly gently voice,

“You haven’t taken a bath yet, have you?”

Amaya’s face turned red as she recalled yesterday’s bathroom session and then, she nodded.

“mm.”

“I haven’t taken one as well.

How about we do it together?” Nux questioned in his usual gentle voice.

A voice that made him look like a handsome demon enchanting a mortal to do what he wanted.

Then, a small blush appeared on Amaya’s face as she nodded again.

“mm.”

There was no way she could say no to an offer like that.

Nux’s smile widened, he then picked Amaya in his hand like a princess and walked into the bathroom.

Then, a long bath session followed.

# Chapter 226

“Aaakkk!”

Allura’s body jerked in surprise when she felt someone grabbing her from behind and placing her on his lap.

She quickly turned her head in panic and disgust, however, when her eyes fell on the man who was behind her, a sigh escaped her mouth and she stopped struggling.

“You surprised me...”

She muttered as she snuggled her body close to Nux.

“Hehe~ I would be a fool if I didn’t do that. Your expressions are too amusing and cute~”

Nux chuckled and a small smile appeared on Allura’s face.

After a bathing session with Amaya, Nux decided to meet Allura, he knew she must be worried after hearing about him passing out.

“So? Are you alright now? Edda told me that you passed out.” And as if on cue, Allura questioned.

“Heeh? You don’t look very worried to me.” Nux teased as he hugged her waist from behind.

“Tsk Tsk, if you can appear behind me and tease me like that, you must be alright.” Allura got her answer.

She had been with him for a while.

She now knew how to deal with Nux.

Heck, she had even created a book in her mind titled, 'How to deal with Nux 101'

The first rule to deal with Nux was to learn how to ignore his teasing.

Whenever you feel like you are at a disadvantage in front of him, you ignore it and change the topic.

Fighting Nux with words was a completely stupid idea.

He would find a way to defeat you eventually. You are just fighting a losing battle.

Don't bother.

"Hm hm, oh right, Amaya told me that you are doing a good job in 'acting normal'. Good, I am proud of you."

Suddenly Nux muttered.

"Of course, who do you think I am? If I want to do something, I will do it like a professional. 'Acting Normal' was a little hard at first, however, now I am getting used to it."

Allura raised her chest in pride.

"Good Good. As expected of my Allura."

Nux nodded with a satisfied look on his face.

What was this 'Acting normal'?

Well, after Amaya deduced that Allura was Nux's woman without him telling her about it, Nux panicked.

Amaya was okay, but what if someone else learns about it? That would be risky.

Therefore, Nux came up with a plan, he decided to ask Amaya for help.

Amaya was of course, happy to help and decided to tell them all the flaws about Allura and how she could change them.

After meeting Nux, Allura has stopped calling maids and stopped asking about the rumours going around,

That's a flaw.

Allura has also stopped leaving the palace every week, which is another flaw.

These combined with a few other things were pointed out and Allura was told to remove all these flaws. They can't reveal their relationship to others after all.

This was 'Acting Normal'.

And Allura was doing a good job in doing that.

A small smile appeared on Allura's face when she heard his praises.

"Well, as I said, it is a lot easier now, I found another interesting topic to talk about with the maids."

"Hmm? What topic is that?" Nux questioned in curiosity however, the reaction he got from Allura was surprising.

"..."

Silence.

Allura didn't answer and her face had turned a little red.

Nux's smile widened,

Hehe, this will be interesting.

"What is that topic, my Lovely Allura?"

“N-Nothing much... you won't find it interesting...” Allura answered.

“How can that be? How can I not like something my woman likes?. This is simply impossible.” Nux smiled.

“Oh right, I forgot to ask, what happened to you yesterday? Why exactly did you pass out?”

Suddenly, Allura questioned.

“Oh, well that happened because I was too curious about what my lovely Allura was talking about with other maids.”

Nux answered with a smile and Allura turned silent.

She added another rule, no another statement in her book.

If Nux doesn't want to change the topic, you might not be able to change it and things might not go as smoothly as you imagine.

“Allura, you aren't going to keep me curious right? What is that interesting topic you talk about with other maids?”

Allura changed the statement,

If Nux doesn't want to change the topic, you will not be able to change it.

Don't try.

In the end, she sighed and then answered with a blush on her face.

“I-I talk about s-sex...”

“Oh? What do you talk about?”

“I-I will not tell you that!”

Allura shook her red head repeatedly and seeing her acting like that, Nux chuckled.

He then placed his chin on her shoulders and whispered,

“Alright, I won’t ask you about it.”

Allura’s face turned even redder and she nodded.

She would never tell him how she hears about maids and their men having sex and then compares it with Nux and her having sex and gloats about it inwardly.

She would never tell him about this.

Never ever.

“Also, I wanted to thank you for something.”

Suddenly, Nux whispered in her ears.

“Hmm? Thank me? About what? What did I do?” Allura questioned.

“You contacted Amaya with Harem Seal’s Telephatic link, I am thankful for that.

The girl is a bit lonely, she needs a friend, however, she won’t make the first step. I am glad that you took the first step.

Thank you~”

Nux muttered as he kissed Allura’s neck while Allura moved her hand towards his face and enjoyed the kiss.

The scene looked quite alluring from the front.

Soon, however, Allura came out of her reverie and answered,

“I wasn’t the one who contacted her first.”

“Huh? You were not?” Nux frowned.

“Indeed, she was the one who did that. She contacted me yesterday afternoon on her own.”

“Oh? She took the initiative? That’s a good thing, it is good that she is looking for friends on her own. That is a good attitude.” Nux nodded to himself with a smile on his face.

“You are wrong.” Allura, however, didn’t share those thoughts.

“She wasn’t looking for friends.”

“Hmm? Then why did she talk to you?”

A wry smile appeared on Allura’s face as she chuckled.

“Talk? It was more like an interrogation.

What do Nux like, what is Nux’s favourite food, what is Nux’s favourite sex position, what is Nux’s favourite colour, what type of woman does Nux prefer the most, what type of clothes turns Nux on the most, what kind of hairstyle do Nux like the most and more and more and more questions.

She continued to ask questions like these until she was satisfied.

Truthfully, she sounded quite scary...”

Allura muttered and Nux turned silent.

Even he did not expect something like this.

“But well, since all she was talking about was you, I felt it was easier to get along with her and I started enjoying her questions too, she asked a few spicy ones as well. Fufufu~” Allura laughed playfully.

“Heehh? What a pervert, to even enjoy questions like these. You are beyond saving, Allura~”

“Heh. Says the one who roams around Royal Palace, spending Blissful times with King’s wife even though there is someone like the Dowager,

who could kill you with her finger, living here.”

A smile appeared on Nux’s face as he suggested seductively,

“Then how about we stop talking and move to the ‘spending Blissful times with King’s wives’ part?”

“Heh. A pervert indeed.”

# Chapter 227

Right now, Nux was standing on top of the Bamboo Plants that were cut at the same height. In front of her was Thyra, who carried a pile of stones in her hand.

“Alright, we will start.” She muttered and Nux nodded with a confident smile on his face.

Then, Thyra threw a stone at his face and at the same time, she threw stones aiming at his hands and legs as well, this time, her speed was a lot faster than before.

Nux, however, didn't seem to bother by it, he easily dodged all the attacks with a leisurely smile on his face.

Heck, he even had the free time to wink at Thyra who was throwing stones at him with an expressionless face.

Seeing that this wasn't affecting him in the slightest, Thyra decided to increase the difficulty and aimed at his stomach.

Nux lifted his left leg from the bamboo and turned around, dodging the stone elegantly and calmly, his leg then returned to the bamboo and there was no change in his expression.

Thyra then target his right chest, he repeated the same movement, however, this time, he moved his right leg instead of the left one.

This time, Thyra didn't give him the chance, while his right leg was in the air, she aimed at the left leg, Nux however, just jumped into the air to dodge the stone and balanced his body on his left leg alone.

Again, he took out the time to wink at Thyra.

Teasing the expressionless Thyra was just too satisfying.

Thyra, however, didn't react and increased her speed, aiming at the chest, stomach and even Nux's dick. Not only that, but she even increased her speed.

However, nothing mattered to Nux at all, he dodged all her attacks elegantly.

Then, Thyra paused a little and stood silently.

This time, Nux's gaze turned a little serious as well, he knew this was going to be the toughest one.

Thyra attacked his left chest, and he shifted his balance on his right leg, this time, however, instead of attacking his right leg, Thyra attacked his right thigh, a height he couldn't dodge by jumping.

At least not without using his cultivation.

Nux then smiled and jumped into the air, the stone was about to hit his right knee, however, he shifted his body a little, dodging the stone and then he stood on his left leg.

His body swayed a little, however, he opened both his arms wide to balance himself a little and then, he stood up straight.

Nux then placed his right leg on the other bamboo as well and then smiled at Thyra.

Jumping onto the ground, he walked towards Thyra with a grin as he held her chin and looked into her eyes.

“Hehe~ I cleared your Four Stages, are you satisfied now?”

“You failed at the last moment,” Thyra muttered.

“Of c'mon, I did regain my balance later, did I not? It was only for 2 seconds.”

“It is still considered a loss.”

Thyra shook her head expressionlessly.

No, actually, she was not as expressionless as before, with Nux holding her chin like that, there was a tinge of red on her face.

“Tsk Tsk, you are so strict. You should be a little lenient with your lover.”  
Nux teased.

“...”

Thyra however, did not reply.

Of course, Nux understood what her silence meant.

‘No way.’

That’s what it meant.

“Well whatever, just 1 or 2 days, and I am sure I will clear this 4th Stage easily as well~” Nux muttered and then carried Thyra like a princess.

This time, Thyra’s expressionless face finally crumbled and she blushed.

“You are a fucking monster!”

She complained.

“I am a monster in the bed, indeed. Thank you for the compliment.” Nux chuckled.

“I am not talking about that!”

Thyra retorted.

“This is simply ridiculous! How can you clear the 4 Stages in just one month! This is not possible! It takes years to master all this!” She complained.

Cultivation, she could understand, he has that strange ability that helps in grow stronger by having sex with stronger women.

But body balance and flexibility? How can an ability help with that?

This is just not possible.

Even if he is talented, doing something that took everyone decades in a mere month, that's not how talent works!

“Hehe~ It was all because I had a great and beautiful teacher~” Nux smiled and kissed Thyra's lips to calm her down.

His trick, of course, worked as Thyra's face turned redder and she calmed down.

Actually, even Nux was surprised how quickly he learned all of that, he credited it all to the fact that he was talented.

What he didn't know was that this was because of Body Cultivation.

He wasn't like normal cultivators; he cultivates his body as well.

That is the reason why his body was able to adapt so quickly.

He wasn't a Grand Master Stage Body Cultivator for nothing.

“Alright, we should return now, I will teach you other complex techniques later...”

Thyra muttered after calming down and Nux nodded back.

Then, he dashed towards Alg- his mansion.

...

A few minutes later, Nux appeared in the garden carrying Thyra in his arms. Then he placed Thyra back on the ground and the two of them entered the Mansion.

“Master Nux.”

As the two of them were walking, Alger called out from behind.

Nux turned around and glanced at Alger.

“What is it?”

“Master Nux, this is your Student ID and uniform, all you need to do is to apply to the Royal Academy tomorrow.”

He muttered as he gave Nux’s uniform and Student ID.

“Good.” Nux nodded with a smile on his face.

Thyra, who heard the conversation put on a sad smile on her face,

“So you will be leaving tomorrow?”

She questioned.

“Oh c’mon, don’t make a face like that, it’s not like we aren’t going to meet again.”

“But our training time would decrease...” Thyra pouted.

“How greedy Sister Thyra!” Skyla, who was passing by and heard the conversation snorted.

“You will be the one who will spend the most time with Nux! How can you complain? Tsk Tsk.”

Thyra glanced at Skyla and her blue eyes shined,

“I think I need to increase your training, if you have so much time to roam around, I am sure you can practice a few thousand more times.”

# Chapter 228

“Three 1-Star Beasts, that is 30 Academy coins. Good job, keep working hard like that.” A lazy voice was heard.

“T-Thank you, Senior Manya, me and my teammates worked hard to kill these beasts.” a young boy, who looked around 20 years old laughed awkwardly as he scratched the back of his head.

“Yeah yeah, you did a good job,” Senior Manya, however, didn’t look very interested in the boy’s story, actually, from the start to the end, she didn’t even look at the boy, she just took the proof of the three 1-star Beasts the boy hunted and then gave him 30 silver coloured coins with a lazy look on her face.

Senior Manya was a Brown-Haired, Brown eyed girl, she had a well-structured nose, cherry-like lips and a beautiful smile. Since she looked better than average, she had many people wooing her and this boy was one of them.

The boy didn’t mind that at all.

This wasn’t his first time being treated like that by Senior Manya and he knows that it won’t be the last time either, however, he will keep trying no matter how long it takes.

Thinking about that, the boy’s eyes shined brightly and he left the counter.

“Next...”

Senior Manya muttered in a lazy voice, actually, she hoped that there was no ‘next’ and she can finally take her rest, however, she wasn’t that lucky.

“Hello Senior Manya, I am a new admission to the Royal Academy, here is my ID card, I do not know the procedures, so I will be counting on you to help me with this.”

“Huh? New admission? Then why the fuck are you her-” Senior Manya scowled and raised her eyebrow. However, just when she raised her head to give her peace of mind to the man who said all this, she froze.

“Is there something wrong, Senior Manya? Am I at the wrong place? I apologize if that is the case.” Nux muttered with a gentle smile on his face.

“O-Oh. Y-You are not wrong at all. You might be wrong by a few counters, however, it’s not like I cannot help you. As your future senior, it is my duty to help my juniors.” Senior Manya replied with a small smile.

“As I expected.” Nux nodded to himself and then he continued,

“The moment I entered the office and saw your face, I knew you were a gentle, beautiful and polite person, and I wasn’t wrong.” Nux continued to nod to himself and Senior Manya’s smile widened a little.

“You have good eyes.”

“Senior Manya, I am new here. I request you to will help me with these procedures.” Nux muttered again.

“Of course, that’s why I am here for, after all, let’s not waste any more time. Show me your ID card.”

Senior Manya then took Nux’s ID card and then started reading,

“Hm Hm, an 18-year-old Initial Advance Stage Cultivator, as I expected, you are indeed a talented person.

So let’s see, Prodigy Class, Second Decade. Hm hm,”

Senior Manya then started writing the details on the paper.

Senior Manya’s speed was a little slow since she wasn’t used to this work.

That wasn’t the only reason why she was slow though,

“Oi Oi, you newbie, get the fuck off, go to counter number 4 if you are here to apply for the Academy. Don’t disturb Senior Manya.”

The student who was standing behind Nux muttered.

Nux turned around, he then noticed that this man was just a Beginner Stage Cultivator and turned around.

Yes, he simply ignored the student as if he was a bug.

The student did not like this attitude at all.

“Oi! You hear me!? Who do yo-”

“Shut the fuck up!”

Suddenly, Senior Manya, who was busy with her work shouted in rage.

“Who do you think you are to shout in front of my Counter!? How many beasts did you kill!?”

“F-Four 1-Star B-Beasts...” The man replied.

“Huh? Four 1-star Beasts? And you have the gall to act so recklessly? Who gave you the courage after this pathetic display of skills?” Senior Manya questioned with a disdainful look on her face.

“P-Pathetic Display?” The boy opened her mouth in shock.

‘Didn’t you just compliment that boy who killed 3 beasts? Our cultivation is the same, then why do I get the harsh treatment?’

The student was about to cry.

Senior Manya and Nux didn’t care what was going through that boy’s mind, Senior Manya continued her work, as for Nux, he just looked at what Senior Manya was writing since he had nothing better to do.

“Ah, it’s done, you are now a student of the Royal Academy,”

Senior Manya muttered with a smile as she stamped on Nux's ID card and passed it to him.

“You can start the class from today.”

“Thank you for your trouble, Senior Manya.” Nux smiled.

“You do not have to be so polite, it is my duty after all.” Senior Manya smiled back. Her impression of Nux was getting better and better.

“Umm... Senior Manya...” Suddenly, Nux muttered with a hesitant look on his face.

“Hmm? What is it?”

“Senior Manya, as you know, I am new to this Academy, I do not know anything about it. Out of all the people I met here, you are the only one who looks gentle, kind and someone who would be willing to help others when they need it.

Would you mind giving me a tour of the whole academy? It would be a great help.”

Nux questioned with an awkward smile.

“You bastard! Do you know who you are talk-” The student standing behind Nux wanted to interrupt, however, he turned silent when he saw Senior Manya glaring at him.

“Of course, I can, however, I am at duty for the next 2 hours. How about you come back 2 hours later?”

“Umm... I do not know if our timings would match or not, how about I stay here with you, we can talk while you deal with these busybody- students. How does that sound?” Nux proposed.

The faces of students standing behind him twitched, however, they didn't say anything.

They needed to control themselves right now...

This hateful bastard, they will deal with him later.

“Mhm, that sounds good. I would like to know you better as well, here, come on in,”

# Chapter 229

“As you should already know, one class in the Royal Academy is a Decade long and there are a total of 4 Decades in our academy.

Decade One Students are Beginner Stage Cultivators.

Decade Two Students are Advance Stage Cultivators,

Decade Three is Master Stage as for Decade Four, well, they are Master Stage Cultivators as well but they are a lot stronger than Decade Three Students.

You can leave the Academy or decide to live here as a Teacher or an Assistant Teacher after you become a Grand Master Stage Cultivator, but most of the students often fail to graduate since the conditions are so harsh.

Of course, there are also some exceptional students who skip their classes, they are the ones who Academy actually focuses on.

Also, every Class is divided into 3 Sections, Basic, Advance and Prodigy.

These classes are determined by your Affintiny with your element and learning ability.

However, since you have High-Level Affinity with Fire Element, you are directly admitted to Prodigy Class.”

Senior Manya muttered while she continued doing her work.

“Two 1-Star Beasts, good job, try to work hard and improve your skills.”

“Thank you, Senior Manya.” The student who received 20 Academy Coins smiled brightly.

“What are these Academy Points used for, Senior Manya?” Nux questioned.

“Hmm? You are a curious one, aren’t you?”

Well, just wait patiently, you will be taught about them by your teachers. I can tell you as well, however, it will be a boring topic. Just treat them as a currency in the academy.”

“Hmm hmm, let’s not talk about it, feels like a boring topic indeed and sitting here with Senior Manya and talking about a boring topic like this is the stupidest thing a man can do.” Nux nodded his head with a playful smile.

“Oh ho~ You are a gutsy one, aren’t you?” Senior Manya chuckled.

“I am just an honest person who can’t lie,” Nux answered.

“Haha~” Senior Manya couldn’t control herself and laughed out loud.

The students who were standing in front of the counter listening to their conversation couldn’t help but feel dissatisfied.

They were in the academy for so long, how dare a new student sit and laugh with Senior Manya!?

This was unacceptable!

Also,

All handsome guys should just die!

To be honest, if looks could kill, Nux would have already died many times with how the students were looking at him. He, however, ignored them all and continued talking with Senior Manya.

“So, Senior Manya, how long have you been studying in the Academy?” Nux changed the topic and questioned.

“Hmm? Are you trying to ask about my age?” Senior Manya questioned with a sly smile.

“Why would I need to do that? With how healthy and flawless your skin looks, I am sure you are not older than 21. As to why I am asking it, well, let’s say that I want to know more about you.” Nux answered.

Senior Manya smiled, satisfied with his answer.

Then, a graceful smile appeared on her face as she introduced herself.

“I am Manya Tashe, the only daughter of the Earl, Wulfsige Tashe, it is a pleasure to meet you,”

“Nux Leander, an orphan and a commoner.” Nux introduced himself as well.

‘Heh. A commoner.’ A sneer appeared on the faces of the students who heard him.

All of them were nobles. A commoner like Nux could do nothing but crawl in front of them.

“You are a commoner?” Senior Manya stopped what she was doing and questioned in surprise.

Seeing the look on her face, the other students sneered even more.

“I am.” Nux nodded.

“Heh. A commoner dared to sit along with Senior Manya, who gave you the galls to do it, huh!?” One of the students questioned with a disdainful look on his face.

Senior Manya frowned,

“Did I allow you to speak?” She turned towards the student who spoke and questioned in a strict tone.

“I-I apologize.”

The student lowered his head in fear.

“You better.” Senior Manya spat and then she turned towards Nux and smiled gently.

“Don’t mind them, they are just brainless fools. You are just 18 years old and are already an Advance Stage Cultivator, with your talent, you can even become a Grand Master Stage Cultivator, with that, you can serve as a General in a Duke’s House.

Then, even someone like my father, an Earl, would have to treat you with respect.

Also, you do not have to call me Senior Manya, I am in the Second Decade as well, so you should directly call me by my name.

I will call you Nux as well.” Manya muttered with a gentle smile on her face.

“ ... ”

Nux blinked his eyes a few times and didn’t reply.

Manya frowned,

“What happened?”

“I... I just can’t believe it...”

Nux muttered with an astonished look on his face.

“Huh? What?”

“Every beautiful woman has a black heart, I thought that when I would reveal my background to you, you would show your true face and laugh at me disdainfully.

But to think you broke this stereotype and are still talking to me so nicely...

I am surprised.”

Nux answered.

‘Fucking bastard...’

‘That was so fucking smooth...’

‘Should I make him my Master?’

The students who heard him had different reactions.

Even Manya was a little surprised.

Soon, however, a smile appeared on her face and she chuckled,

“Haha~ You have good ways with your words, I actually feel like talking to you refreshes my mind, Nux,” Manya muttered.

“I will take that as a compliment, Manya.” Nux smiled back.

The two of them then chuckled and Manya continued to do her work while Nux chatted with her.

These were the fastest 2 hours of her life.

“Manya, your shift is over, I am here to take over,” Suddenly, a man entered the counter and muttered.

“Alright, I will take my leave now,” Manya muttered and stood up.

Then, she turned towards Nux and smiled,

“Shall we start your tour now?”

“I am looking forward to it.”

Nux smiled back.

# Chapter 230

“And this is the Battle Hall; students can fight each other here in front of the whole Academy. Actually, this is an open secret, most of the students who have enmity with each other using the battle hall to settle it out.

Most of them bet all their Academy Points in this Battle. Nux, you have to be careful, many students lose all their Academy points in the Battle Hall, especially the new students. Don't let anyone provoke you. Okay?” Manya cautioned.

“Of course, I am not a reckless person, I will take care of it. You do not have to worry at all.”

Nux answered with a smile on his face.

Manya frowned.

For some reason, she did not like the smile Nux had on his face. She felt like he had not understood what she was saying.

“Be cautious, okay?” She repeated.

“Of course,” Nux answered with a small smile on his face and Manya's frown deepened.

She could feel that something was definitely wrong here.

However, she then shook her head and decided not to say anything.

Maybe she was thinking too much.

“Alright, with this, I have introduced you to all the major buildings in the Academy, at the very least, you won't get lost here now,” Manya muttered with a smile on her face.

“And I am very thankful for that. I feel incredibly lucky that I met someone like you on the first day of my academy.” Nux smiled as the two of them shook hands.

“So? Are you going to attend classes today?” Manya questioned.

“I’ll roam around, I actually want to find someone who studies in the academy.”

“Hm? Who is it?” Manya questioned.

“It’s a student, he should be around 8 years old, also, he should still be an Apprentice Stage Cultivator.”

“Ahh, a Zero Decade student huh...”

“Yeah,” Nux nodded.

“Well, it will be tough to find a single student in the whole Academy, especially a Zero Decade student in the afternoon,” Manya muttered.

“Why?”

“Zero Decade students only have a one-hour morning class, the rest of the time, they just roam around the Academy.

So if you want to find a Zero Year Student, it is better to search in their class in the morning.” Manya answered.

“I understand.” Nux nodded in understanding.

“Well, I am not in any kind of hurry, I will just move around and explore more. Of course, it would be amazing if a beautiful friend would accompany me.” Nux smiled as he glanced at Manya.

“Oh ho?”

Manya smiled as well and then,

“Well, I don’t think you have any other beautiful friend here, so I guess you are talking about me.”

Manya chuckled and the two of them continued to explore Academy.

...

“Hah!? Where did you get this Healing Potion from, you piece of shit?”

While Nux and Manya were walking around, they heard a voice and turned around.

There, they saw three boys that looked around 13-14 years old surrounding an 8-9 year-old boy with smirks on their faces.

The boy who was surrounded was trembling, he didn’t dare to look into the other boys’ eyes and lowered his face.

“I-I b-bought it with Academy P-Points.” He answered in a meek voice.

“Heehh? How did you get academy points? There is no way you can hunt Star beasts, then how did you do it?”

“Heh. Is that even a question, Oswald? I am sure he must be doing all the odd jobs like cleaning the academy and all that.”

Another boy sneered.

“Heh. That sounds like something he would do.”

“Actually, it suits someone like. Hahaha!”

“Oh c’mon, he is still a son of a Viscount, you shouldn’t say that~” another boy commented with a smile.

“Hahaha~ You talk as if you don’t say things like that.

Barens and Viscounts are nothing but a little wealthier commoners.”

“Hahaha!”

The boys continued to laugh and the 8-9 year boy continued to listen without retaliating.

“This is a common scene here. Baron and Viscounts are often looked down upon since most of the Barrons and Viscounts are non-cultivators.” Manya muttered as he glanced at the scene with a frown on her face.

“ ... ”

Nux, however, did not reply.

Manya frowned, she then turned around and saw that he was looking at everything with an expressionless face. No, though his face indeed looked expressionless, Manya could sense that something was different.

Nux looked angry.

[Name: Royce Alveye]

[Age: 8]

[Mana Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Occupation: Son of Viscount Felberta Alveye.]

[Race: Human ]

[Talent: Low]

[LVL:5]

[HP: 110/120]

[STR: 7]

[AGL: 9]

[VIT: 12]

[STM: 8]

[INT: 9]

[DEF: 7]

Yes, the 8-year-old boy who was being bullied was Royce, Felberta's son and Nux's future son.

“Alright, whatever, I don't care where you got it from, now give it to me, I need this Healing Potion.”

The boy then sighed and extended his hand to grab the healing potion in Royce's hand, however, Royce avoided his hands and stuttered.

“I-I need i-it as well...”

“Huh?”

The boy frowned.

And then without any hesitation, he used his knee to kick Royce's stomach.

“Guoohffk!”

Royce's eyes opened wide as he fell to the floor, withering in pain.

“Where did you get the guts to reject me from, huh? Did you somehow forget about the lesson I gave you a month ago?”

“Oswald, why are we even wasting our time? Let's just repeat are lesson and get over it.” A boy muttered as he picked the Healing potion that had fallen on the ground.

The ring on his finger then shined and the potion disappeared.

The boy named Oswald smiled evilly and then, he nodded.

“Alright, since we are so generous, we shall repeat our lesson.”

He then kicked Royce’s face as if it was a football.

“Agggghhh!”

Royce screamed in pain as the three boys started kicking him ruthlessly.

“We should stop them! What are they doing to a child of that age!?” Manya couldn’t believe her eyes and was about to rush to save the child, however, Nux grabbed her hands.

She turned around and he shook his head.

Actually, if he wanted to, he could help Royce as well.

However, he wanted to know what would happen.

According to Felberta, Royce has been studying in the Academy for 2 years now, he can save him today, however, he would never know what Royce went through in these past 2 years that way.

Also, he was waiting for something else as well.

“What are you 3 doing?”

A small smile appeared on his face when he heard those words.

Manya turned around and her eyes shined in delight.

“It is Lady Candice!”

# Chapter 231

“It is Lady Candice!”

Manya exclaimed in excitement as saw Candice and 4 other students who were following her walking towards the three students.

“It is Lady Candice!”

“Wow, I am so lucky today!”

“Hahaha~ What a lovely day!”

“She is as beautiful as the rumours say~”

“Hmph! Do you fucking stone in place of eyes!? How can you not see that she is more beautiful than the rumours say!? You retard!”

“Ahh, my bad, she is indeed more beautiful than the rumours say.”

“You two! Shut the fuck up! Do you think Lady Candice would care about your cheesy compliments? Rather, you two will only annoy her more.”

As soon as Candice and her men walked into the scene, the surrounding students, who were pretty much ignoring everything that was happening started talking as their eyes shined in delight.

Candice Waters, a beautiful girl with blue hair, blue eyes, a small nose and light pink lips. She wore a normal black coloured academy uniform with golden designs just like all the other students, however, the way she walked, with how her long beautiful hair flew around and the elegance that oozed out of her,

She looked like she was at another level. (Academy Uniform in the Paragraph comments.)

She is liked by everyone in the school and is treated like a goddess by not only males but even the female students.

Of course, her being beautiful is not the only reason why she was revered by all, the main reason for that was her talent.

By no means is she the Strongest Student in the Royal Academy, however, she is without a doubt, the brightest.

She is the first student in the last 200 years who had become a Master Stage Cultivator while she is just 22 years old.

A prodigy who is also known as the future pillar of the Kingdom.

She could also be called the Queen of the Royal Academy.

“What is happening here?” Candice questioned in her noble but strict voice.

“N-Nothing, Lady Candice.” The boy named Oswald answered as he bowed his head.

“Introduce yourselves,” Candice muttered.

“M-My name is Oswald Bourkee, the Second Son of Earl Bourkee,” Oswald introduced.

Candice frowned, she then glanced at one of the men following her and that man nodded.

“I am Harold Wescott, son of Earl Wescott.”

“I am Bardley Greem, Son of Earl Greem,”

The two other students introduced themselves as well.

Candice then glanced at Royce who was lying on the floor, Royce understood what he had to do.

He forced his body, which was aching all over to stand up and then, he introduced himself.

“M-My name is R-Royce Alveye, Son of Viscount Alveye.”

“A Viscount?” Candice raised her eyebrow.

“Y-Yes.” Royce nodded.

“So, Royce, what happened here?” Candice questioned.

“Lady Cand-”

“I do not recall asking anything from you, Mr. Bourkee.” Oswald wanted to speak, however, Candice cut him off midsentence and then turned towards Royce again.

“Answer my question, what happened here?”

A ray of light shined in Royce’s eyes as he answered,

“L-Lady Candice, I-I worked hard for a whole month to earn some A-Academy points to buy a Healing potion, however, the three of them attacked me and took it away.

This is not the first time either, these three have been bullying me for a whole year now, and they take all the money my mother sends to me and keeps beating me from time to time.” Royce complained and Oswald’s eyes shined in rage.

“He is Lyi-”

“Shut up.” Oswald wanted to retort, however, Candice shut him again.

“So you are telling me that they took your Healing potion?” Candice turned towards Royce and questioned.

“Yes.” Royce nodded as he glanced at Oswald before avoiding eye contact as soon as possible.

“Where is the proof?”

Suddenly, Candice questioned.

“Huh?” Royce frowned as he glanced at Candice.

“I asked, where is the proof? How are you going to prove that they took your Healing Potion?”

Candice questioned.

“T-They took it! Everyone saw it! They were beating me because I didn’t give it to them, but they still took it forcefully! You can ask everyone who was present here.”

Royce then turned around and glanced at other students to seek help.

“ ... ”

However, no one stepped forward.

Royce’s face changed.

“I-I am not lying!”

He shouted.

“Shouting something won’t make it true, Mr Alveye. I need proof.” Candice muttered calmly.

Seeing this, Nux and Manya frowned.

“Isn’t she supposed to help him?” Nux questioned.

Manya, however, shook her head in confusion.

“I do not know what is happening either...”

“Y-You can check his Storage ring! He kept my Healing potion there!”

“What proves it that it is your Healing Potion? What if it was his, to begin with?”

“Y-You can ask the Shop owner! I bought it from him a few hours ago!”

“What if you already used yours and you are just trying to take advantage of these 3?”

“...”

Royce turned silent and gritted his teeth.

Oswald, however, was smiling at him and swore in his heart that he would take revenge for outing him like that.

“Do you understand what I am trying to say to you, Mr Alveye?” Suddenly, Candice questioned.

“Huh?” Royce frowned.

“In this world, the weak have no right to say or complain about anything. Do you know why these students aren’t helping you?”

It is because you are weak.

You thought that you could use me to get back at people who attacked you,

That is how the weak think, step up yourself, protect yourself, this is how you live in this world.

Do not rely on anyone else because if you do,

You will be squashed by the others.

These three students are not wrong, they are only showing you how the world works, learn from it.

Get stronger and fight back.

I will ignore what happened here today because you have no proof to prove your innocence, however, I do hope to see a stronger you.”

Candice muttered and Royce turned silent.

“Aahh, so that’s the reason why Lady Candice didn’t help that boy, she wanted to let him know how the world works.

As expected of Lady Candice, she is indeed worthy to be the future pillar of the Kingdom.”

Manya nodded to herself and Nux frowned even more.

“Alright, everyone, disperse now. I don’t want to create any scenes here.”  
Candice muttered and with her order, everyone started walking away.

# Chapter 232

“Alright, everyone, disperse now. I don’t want to create any scenes here.”  
Candice muttered and with her order, everyone started walking away.

Oswald and his friends glanced at Royce and sneered,

“Don’t worry, fellow students, we will keep showing you how this world works, even more than before now.”

Royce’s body trembled.

“Hahaha~ What a pussy! Look how he is trembling. Hahaha~”

Oswald and his friends started laughing and then, they walked away.

Candice and her men left, and following that, the other students started leaving as well.

“Let’s go,” Manya muttered as she glanced at Nux.

“I think this would be enough for today, thank you for helping me, Manya,”  
Nux muttered and then, he walked in the direction Royce walked into.

Manya frowned, however, and then her eyes widened in surprise when she recalled that Nux was trying to find a Zero Decade Class’ boy.

‘Is this the boy he wanted to find?’

She wondered.

...

On the other side, Nux followed Royce and saw him sitting near a tree with his head on his knees.

Nux walked forward and sat down beside him.

Sensing movement around him, Royce frowned and raised his head.

Right now, his face was bruised, however, Nux still noticed the resemblance he had with Felberta.

Just like Felberta, Royce had black hair, black eyes and a face that still had a little baby fat. His features were quite cute if you ignore the bruises.  
(Picture in the Paragraph comments)

Nux smiled, then, his ring shined and a Healing potion appeared,

“Here,” Nux muttered as he passed it to Royce.

“Why are you giving it to me?” Royce questioned.

“Just take it.” Nux shook his hand.

Royce glanced at the Healing Potion and then glanced at Nux’s face.

His body was still aching from pain, therefore, he decided to take it.

In one go, he gulped down the entire Potion and soon, the potion started showing its magical effects.

The bruises on Royce’s face disappeared, however, some marks were still there.

“You want more?” Nux questioned as another Healing Potion appeared in his hand.

“No, it is alright, I will be fine after 5 to 6 days.”

“You sound like it is not your first time being beaten up like that,” Nux muttered.

“It is not, they have been doing this for a year now,” Royce answered.

“Oh? Then why didn’t you tell anything to your mother about this?” Nux questioned in curiosity.

He was sure that if Felberta didn’t know about anything happening in the Academy, otherwise, she would have long removed her child from the academy and would have started finding ways to take revenge.

“What should I tell her? That her son is being bullied by other students?”

“What? Are you ashamed of doing that?”

“No, I just don’t want her to worry about me. Also, I am sure that if I tell her about this, she will remove me from the academy, however, my mother told me about the importance of cultivation.

I want to learn, I want to grow stronger, I want to help my mother in the future.” Royce answered as his eyes shined in determination.

Nux was taken aback.

“You can cultivate outside the academy as well, can you not?” Nux questioned.

“I can, however, the academy is the only place that can bring out my best, I can’t leave.”

Nux smiled.

“What about the teachers? Why didn’t you tell them that those three were bullying you?”

“I was afraid,” Royce answered.

“Afraid that those three would bully you more?”

“No, I do not care about that, they have been hitting me for a while now, it doesn’t matter if they hit me more.

However, they are from an Earl House, mother is just a Viscount, I was afraid that they would target my mother.”

This time, Nux widened his eyes in surprise.

‘This boy is 8 years old? What the heck? Why is he so mature?’

He wondered in his head.

However, soon, Nux frowned.

“Then why didn’t you tell everything to that Candice girl?”

“ ... ”

Royce just gritted his teeth and didn’t reply.

Nux understood.

Being beaten up like this, having his Healing Potion Stolen, his emotions were already a mess, and then Candice came in like a ray of hope.

Royce must have lost control over his emotions when Candice asked her what happened.

He must have thought that he would finally get justice, however, in the end, what he got was a stupid lecture on how the world works.

Not only did he not get justice, he even did what he didn’t want to do and offended Oswald and his friends.

“I-I messed up. Their family might target my mother now.”

Royce gritted his teeth and his body trembled in fear.

Seeing him acting like that, Nux’s eyes turned cold.

Soon, however, a gentle look appeared on his face as he patted Royce’s head.

“Hey... you are worried about your mother right?”

“Of course I am.”

“Do you know who troubles your mother the most?”

“Who?”

“You.”

“Huh?”

“Yes, she is always worried about how you are doing, are you eating fine or not, have you made friends or not, and all that.

How do you think she would feel once she knows about your condition?”

“...” Royce didn't answer.

“She would curse herself, thinking that she is the worse mother who couldn't even protect her own child.”

“No! She is not that type of mother! She is the best mother anyone can have!” Royce retorted.

“Huh? Of course, she is. I do not doubt that at all. The only problem is that she has a child who does not trust her at all.” Nux spoke and Royce's eyes widened in shock.

Nux then smiled and continued,

“Do you seriously believe that those Earls could do anything to your mother?”

“Huh? They are Earls, my mother is only a Viscount-”

“That is not how things work, Royce.

Your mother isn't alone, she has her friends as well, she even has a Marquee as her friend and do you seriously think noble houses would go after each other just because of the fights between their children?

Everything would have been destroyed if that is how things worked." Nux smiled and Royce's eyes widened in surprise.

"You want to make your mother happy, correct?"

"Yes."

"Then there is only one thing you have to do,"

"What?"

"Live happily."

"..."

"Hahaha~ Yes, it is not something complicated, just live your life the way you want, and your mother will be happy."

Nux laughed out loud.

Then, his gaze turned serious and he muttered,

"Also, keep in mind,"

Seeing his solemn gaze, Royce's face turned serious as well,

"Do not let anyone trample on your pride as you did before. Your pride is connected to your mother's pride, you do not want others to trample on it, do you?"

"I don't."

"Then don't let others trample on your pride either," Nux muttered.

“B-But what do I do... they are all Beginner Stage Cultivators... I am just an Apprentice right now. How am I supposed to fight against them?” Royce questioned with a sad look on his face.

He wanted to fight back...

However, he was completely helpless.

“You do not have to worry about them, now that I am in this academy, I will deal with them. You just make sure to tell me if they ever bully you again.”

Nux muttered as he passed his ID card to Royce.

A small smile appeared on Royce’s face when he heard those words, however, soon, a frown appeared on his face and he questioned.

“Who are you? Why are you helping me?”

Nux chuckled and then, he answered,

“I am someone very close to your mother.

Don’t sweat the details for now.”

# Chapter 233

\*Chatter\* \*Chatter\* \*Chatter\*

“Excuse me,

Is this the Second Decade, Prodigy Class?”

“...”

The students who were talking with each other turned silent when they heard a voice. All of them turned toward the source of the voice and saw a handsome, black-haired, golden-eyed young man standing in front of the door with a gentle smile on his face.

Many female students were taken aback by his looks.

Of course, they didn't lash out like horny teens, no one is that desperate, no matter how handsome the person is.

Plus, they were afraid of making a bad first impression in front of this young man.

“Yeep, it is the Second Decade, Prodigy Class indeed.”

A girl answered.

She had small, brown-coloured hair, black eyes, a small face and a petite build. From the way her eyes were shining, she looked very excited.

“Oh, thank you very much~”

Nux smiled and then entered the class.

Most of the girls in the class smiled softly and seeing that scene, the boys gritted their teeth in annoyance.

“Tsk. I guess having good looks doesn’t make you good with the brains department huh...

If only you had read the board that is hanging right outside the class, you would have known that it is indeed Decade Two, prodigy class.”

A boy couldn’t control himself and sneered.

“Alright, let’s see I read the board, then what? I just walk into the class and sit wherever I want?” Nux questioned.

“That is how a sane person does things.” The boy didn’t step back and sneered again.

“Haahh... I guess you will always find a few dumb ones wherever you go... even the prodigy class isn’t the exception...” instead of replying, Nux just sighed and shook his head in disappointment.

“Huh? What did you say!?” The boy snapped.

“What? Was I wrong? Let’s say I follow your method, then how am I supposed to make friends and use basic distinction?”

“Huh? Basic distinction?” The short-haired girl who answered Nux’s question before frowned in confusion.

“Ah, this is a little something I always do.

Entering the Class and asking a question,

This is the way you can filter out good and bad people.

For example, you, who answered my question, are a kind-hearted person, a person who people can hang out with, and those four girls over there who nodded to my question are also kind-hearted.

Those 17 students stayed silent and didn’t say anything, those 17 students are neutral in my book right now,

As for him...”

Nux then turned towards the boy who stood against him and then turned around,

“Let’s not talk about him.”

“Huh!? Why did you go through such a huge explanation if you didn’t want to complete it!?”

Say what you were going to say!” The boy’s face twitched in annoyance as he roared.

“Well, let’s just say I would rather not talk to someone like you, please keep a good distance from me.”

Nux just smiled and walked toward the short-haired girl,

“My name is Nux Leander, I will be joining this class as of today, I hope you help me with the future journey.”

“S-Sure.” The short-haired girl blushed and she continued,

“My name is Anna Ranger.”

Nux then turned towards the 4 girls who nodded at him and smiled again,

“I will be relying on you guys as well,”

The girls smiled back and nodded.

“We will be relying on you as well.”

Within just 2 minutes of entering the class, Nux had already made 5 new friends.

He was indeed a friendly guy.

Of course, that is if you ignore those 12 boys who were looking at him with hostile looks.

Nux, of course, completely ignored them, he didn't care what the boys were thinking anyways.

He then walked towards the window seat and sat down.

Why the window seat?

That's because the sun's rays refresh his mind.

Of course, this was absolute bullshit of a reason, he just sat there because,

All the main characters sit near the window.

He was still a weeb deep in his heart.

“Umm... that seat...” Suddenly, Anna muttered.

“Huh?” Nux was about to ask what the problem was but the boy who stood up against him interrupted with a scheming smile.

“Anna, let him sit. He was so smug before, I am sure he can handle him on his own, isn't that right?”

“Yeah, I am sure he can do it.” Another boy muttered with the same, scheming smile on his face.

“There is no reason-” Anna wanted to reply however, soon, she turned silent as she saw a young man with light black hair and greyish eyes entering the class. (Picture in para comments)

Seeing the young man, the other boys started smiling and as for the girls, they looked at Nux in worry.

The boy who had just entered the Class frowned, he then glanced at Nux and started walking towards him.

\*Bam\*

He then place his hand on Nux's table and ordered,

“That's my seat, give it back to me and I will forgive you.”

Nux frowned and then he lowered his head, his body trembled a little and then, he muttered,

“Mhm, I was told that I should maintain good relations with my classmate.”

The blonde sneered when he heard Nux's words.

The other boys were smiling disdainfully as well, as for the girls, well, they just sighed in relief. These actions further irked all the boys but since they couldn't do anything, they decided to ignore and watch the drama unfold.

Nux then stood up from his seat, picked up the chair he was sitting and moved it away, then, he picked up the chair that was behind him, placed it before his table and sat on it.

“Here, you can take that chair, it was a little uncomfortable for me anyways,” Nux muttered with a very gentle smile on his face.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

The entire class turned silent and looked at Nux who was smiling widely.

The Blonde young man felt his mouth twitching in annoyance, his body trembled and he smashed his hand on the table again,

\*Bam\*

“Fucking Bastard! Do you know who I am!?”

# Chapter 234

“Fucking Bastard! Do you know who I am!?”

The black-haired man couldn't control himself and roared in rage.

Nux, however, didn't seem very intimidated and questioned calmly,

“Are you the son of the King?”

“Huh? No, I am not.”

“I see.” Nux nodded to himself and then questioned again,

“Then are you the son of the Headmaster of the Royal Academy?”

“No, I am not.”

“Then are you the Son of a Duke?”

“No, I am not.”

“Ahh, then you must be the Son of a Marquee?”

“No.”

“Son of an Earl?”

“Yes, I am the son of Earl Bourkee.”

“Ah, I see, a Son of an Earl.” Nux nodded again and then, his expression changed.

“Then how the fuck am I supposed to know who you are?”

“...”

The Blonde's face twitched in anger.

He looked around and noticed that his fellow classmates, especially girls were trying to hide the smile on their faces.

He, however, took a deep breath, moved his face close to Nux's face and threatened.

“Look here you little pretty boy, I don't know who you are, and I don't care either. I may not be the son of the King or a Duke, however, in this Class,

I am the King.

Got that?”

With how his eyes were shining menacingly, everyone in the class was sure that he would attack the new boy the moment he says anything.

However, the new boy's next question confused everyone in the class.

“Why?”

“Huh?”

“Why are you the King of the Class?

Are you the strongest here?”

“No, I am not.”

“Are you the one who scores the highest marks on tests?”

“No, I do not.”

“Then how the fuck...”

Nux didn't even need to complete his sentence, since everyone else got what he wanted to say.

“Pfft.”

Anna couldn't control herself and her laugh leaked out of her mouth. She soon managed to control herself and was able to bury her laughter.

However, this little incident forced other students to smile as well, and this time, even a few male students were smiling as well.

A vein popped on the boy's forehead when he saw how everyone was acting.

Then, he slammed on the table again and roared.

“I may not be the strongest, however, I am the most talented one here!

I am so talented that Candice Water made me her direct subordinate!

That is the reason I am the King of this Class.

Now get the fuck off my seat or I will make you regret it!”

He threatened again and this time, his eyes were red in rage.

Nux, however, completely ignored the boy and turned toward Anna.

“Isn't there a girl name Candice in our Academy? I heard she is quite popular here.”

“There is...” Anna nodded.

“Is he talking about her?” Nux questioned and Anna nodded.

“Yes, he is...”

“...”

Nux glanced at the blonde with a deadpan look on his face.

The boy frowned.

He couldn't understand the way the conversation was going on right now.

He just revealed his identity, shouldn't this boy be panicking right now?

Why does he look so...

Disappointed?

“W-What's with that face? I am not lying, know that!”

He declared.

And this time, Nux finally came out of his reverie,

“Wow... to think someone would be so proud of being a subordinate of a Master Stage Cultivator...

And that someone is a son of an Earl to boot.

I can't imagine how disappointed your father must be...

I kind of pity him...

Poor soul...”

“...Y-You bastard! Do you know who Candice Water is!? She is not just any random Master Stage Cultivator you can find anywhere you want! She is the future pill-”

“Yeah Yeah, she is the pillar of the kingdom, star of the academy and all that.

I have heard that countless times, don't bore me with that shit again.

Seriously, get a life man, just because someone is talented and is a little beautiful, you do have to become her dog and wag your tale joyfully while following behind her.

Can't you just act normally?

I would be finding places to hide my face if I ever did what you are doing, but you on the other hand, not only are you not ashamed, you are even proud of this.

Are you mentally ill?

To be honest, I am starting to believe that my classmates are godsend.

To deal with someone like you for so many years, I respect you all from the bottom of my heart.”

Nux turned toward the other students and bowed his head a little.

“Y-You bastard!”

The boy finally lost his control and tried to attack, however, soon, a lovely voice entered everyone’s ears and the boy was forced to calm down.

“Alright students, it is time to start our lecture, enough chit chats, now go back to your seats.”

“ ... ”

The boy calmed down and decided to sit somewhere else.

No matter what, he can’t create a scene here, not in front of the teacher.

He cannot affect Lady Candice’s reputation.

As for Nux, well, he just glanced at the beautiful woman in front of him with a lost look on his face.

The woman had long blonde hair, beautiful green eyes, a small nose and light pink lips, her features were sharp and combined with her perfect hourglass-like mature body, she looked breathtaking. (Picture in Paragraph comments.)

[Name: Evane Skyfall]

[Age: 82]

[Mana Cultivation: Grand Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Princess of the Skyfall Kingdom.]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 49]

[HP: 600/600]

[MP: 860/860]

[STR: 64]

[AGL: 60]

[VIT: 60]

[STM: 61]

[INT: 86]

[DEF: 55]

...

A small smile appeared on Nux's face as he read her information.

'A princess huh...

This is will be good.'

Seeing that all the students were now sitting in their seats, a satisfied smile appeared on Evane's face and she continued,

“Good, now without wasting any more time, let’s start today’s class.”

Nux, however, had a different plan in his mind,

He then raised his hand and muttered,

“Excuse me, Ma’am.”

# Chapter 235

“Excuse me, Ma’am.”

Seeing that someone interrupted her class before it even began, Evane frowned, however soon, she noticed a new face and questioned,

“Yes, what is it?”

“Ma’am, I am a new student.”

Nux informed.

“Alright, that is good, is there anything you want my help with?”

Evane questioned out of formality and wasn’t really expecting any questions. New students are given a guide to the academy, of course, she knows that most of the students don’t read that guide, however, how things were in the academy was pretty popular and almost every student knows that before he comes to his first class.

“Yes, there is,” Nux muttered.

“What is it?”

“I didn’t read the guide provided by the Academy, however, I did learn everything I could before joining the class. However, today, I found something new and unexpected and wanted to talk to you about it.”

“What do you want to talk about?” Evane questioned.

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face as he glanced at the boy who was trying to pick a fight with him for a moment before looking back at Evane.

“Is there something called ‘the King of the Class’ in the academy?”

Hearing his question, the student's eyes widened in surprise and Evane frowned.

“King of the Class? What is that?”

“Well, that student over there introduced himself as the King of the Class,” Nux muttered as he pointed at the boy with an innocent smile on his face.

“I asked him the reason why he is called that and he told me that his own-umm, his boss is a Master Stage Cultivator, that is why he is the King of the Class.

I know an 8-year-old child who studies in this academy, his butler is a Master Stage Cultivator as well, I know that butler, so does that make me the new King of the Class?”

Nux questioned and the other students in the class couldn't help but cover their faces to hide their smiles.

Even Teacher Evane was trying not to laugh.

As for the boy...

Well, he was looking at Nux as his eyes shone in rage.

Evane noticed that he was embarrassed so she decided to quickly end this topic,

“There is nothing like ‘King of the Class’ in our Academy, your friend, Myrill here must be joking with you since you are new. It is good that you two are getting along. Also...

Knowing someone who is at Master Stage or higher doesn't matter, what matters is how you perform...”

She said the last line while she was looking at Myrill, the boy who tried to fight against Nux.

“Ahh, so he was joking...”

I was wondering how can one be so dumb...

Turns out he joking all along, hahaha~

Sorry for not catching your jokes, my friend Myrill,”

Nux glanced at Myrill and chuckled.

Myrill forced a smile and nodded.

Then, he turned his face and his smile disappeared and was replaced with unconcealed anger.

‘You are dead...

Whoever you are...’

Myrill swore in his heart that he will take his revenge.

Not only did this bastard dare to sit on his seat and insult him in front of all the students, he even had the balls to insult him in front of a teacher.

Even Teacher Evane was laughing at him!

This boy has to pay for it.

Nux wasn’t oblivious to Myrill’s thoughts; however, he didn’t care nor was he done yet.

Myrill’s hell has just started.

Nux wasn’t planning on letting him go.

Why?

Because his full name was Myrill Bourkee.

The son of Earl Bourkee and big brother of Oswald Bourkee.

Yes, Oswald, the boy who bullied Royce.

Nux has done some research and had learned quite a few interesting things about the Bourkee's and...

Candice Water.

With this new information, he had to change his future actions as well.

The class continued while Myrill continued to plan on how to deal with Nux after the class ends.

However, luck wasn't on his side since after the Class ended, Evane muttered,

“The new student, you, come with me to my office.”

“Yes ma'am,” Nux stood up and started walking.

When he walked passed Myrill's seat, a provocative smirk appeared on his face and he continued walking.

Myrill gritted his teeth in anger,

“Let's see how long you can run for, you annoying pest.”

Myrill mumbled.

...

Nux and Evane then left the classroom and entered Evane's office.

“Your name is Nux, correct?”

Evane muttered as she sat on her chair.

“Yes, Nux Leander.” Nux nodded.

Evane then extended her hand towards Nux,

“You ID.”

Nux then gave her his ID and Evane started reading it,

“An 18-year-old Advance Stage Cultivator, you are a talented student, even among the students of prodigy class,” Evane commented.

“Thank you, teacher.”

“Hm hm, have you received the 2-Star Skill book?”

“Yes, I have.”

“Learn that as fast as possible, coincidentally, I have an affinity with Fire Element as well, so I can help you with this.”

“Yes teacher, I will work hard.”

Actually, Nux had decided to ignore this Skill that was given to him by the academy, it was only a 2 Star Skill after all.

However, now, things are different.

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face as he thought about it.

Evane, who was oblivious to his thoughts continued,

“Also, I will suggest you stay away from troubles,”

“Hmm?”

“That student Myrill, his temper isn’t the best and it is best not to fight with your own classmates.

Of course, I am not saying that you should not defend yourself if they come at you, you won’t be able to live in this world if you act too passively.

However, I will still suggest you to act with caution.”

Evane wasn't dumb, she could feel that something was happening between Nux and Myrill, although she didn't know much about Nux, she knew about Myrill.

He was a petty person who won't forget grudges.

Evane was actually a little worried about Nux.

“Ah, don't worry, teacher.

I will act with utmost caution.”

Nux smiled 'gently'.

# Chapter 236

“Alright, we will end our class here.” The teacher muttered and then left the class.

The rest of the students stood up and started talking with each other.

“Hey? What are you going to do now?”

“What else? I am going to cultivate.”

“Tsk Tsk, you are so boring. Don’t you think you should enjoy your life a little?”

“You can waste your life if you want to, I do not have the time to do that.”

“Ugghhh! What a bore.”

“Indeed Indeed.”

“Whatever you call me, I don’t care,”

“Tsk Tsk, alright, I guess I should go cultivate as well.”

“If you know what’s good for you, then sure.”

Some students were serious about their cultivation, while some just planned how they will have fun for the rest of the day.

However, one student didn’t talk to anyone and quickly rushed toward the Classroom door.

“Royce! Where are you going? Aren’t you going to hang out with us!?”  
One of the students called.

“Let him go, you idiot. Don’t you know about those First Decade students who target him? It is better to stay away from him.”

“Yeah, stay away from him, it’s not like we can help him either.”

“True True.”

The students muttered and started discussing among themselves.

This was another regular day for Zero Decade Class, unlike other classes, this class wasn’t divided into Basic, Advance and Prodigy sections.

All the students study together and are later put into different sections when they rise to Decade One.

“But why are those First Decade students targeting Royce?”

“I heard that it was because Royce bumped into them a year ago and it offended that Oswald.

I am not too sure of the details though, all I know is that it has been going on for a year now.

Every time they catch Royce, they would either beat him up or humiliate him.” e

“Hmm? Humiliate? How?”

“Well, they would sometimes ask him to go buy food for them, of course, that isn’t a problem, however, Royce would have to use his own Academy Points to buy the food and whenever he would return with food, those 3 would just throw everything at him for bringing ‘shitty’ food for them.

Sometimes, they would ask him to fill their glasses with water and bow in front of them just like a servant then they would throw the glass of water at him, sometimes, they would make him do squats in front of all the students and then embarrass him.

To be honest, I pity and commend Royce at the same time. If it was me, I would have left the Academy a long time ago.”

A boy muttered and other students turned silent.

“This is too cruel...”

“It is... that’s why Royce leaves the class as soon as it is over and then rushes towards his Room without getting caught by those three.”

The students then continued to discuss more as for Royce,

Well, just like usual, he was practically running away since the class is over.

“!!!”

Suddenly, Royce’s eyes widened in surprise when he saw those three boys walking together, he quickly turned around and started running away without alerting anyone.

“Oh! Look who it is! It is our dear friend!”

Royce, however, was unlucky and one of those boys saw him running away.

“Hey! Where are you running away, little rat? Won’t you play with your friends today?” Oswald muttered with a wide smile on his face and he started running behind Royce. His two friends smiled as they looked at each other and then, they followed behind him.

Oswald and his friends were Beginner Stage Cultivators, as for Royce, he was only an Apprentice, the three of them could easily catch him, however, to make things interesting, Oswald and his friends always lower their speed and make Royce run for as long as he can.

This was quite amusing for them indeed.

“Hey! Stop! We can’t catch up!”

“Hahaha! Yeah, little rat! Stop! I feel exhausted!”

“Hahaha!”

The three of them laughed, however, Royce didn't care about them and continued running.

Many students saw this scene, however, no one bothered to do anything, for them, it was just 4 friends playing around.

They didn't have the time to care about it.

Royce quickly passed many students, Oswald and his friends did the same as well.

Royce continued and then suddenly, he passed another student.

Oswald and the others were about to do that as well, however, Oswald was unable to dodge and bumped into the student.

“Uggh! You bastard! Don't you have eyes!?” Oswald roared in rage.

“Who the fuck are you?” The student who Oswald bumped into questioned.

“I am Oswald Bourkee! The son of Viscount Bourkee!”

“You think I care about that?” Suddenly, the other student questioned.

“Huh? Aren't you the one who asked m- Kkhhookhkhk!” Oswald wanted to retort, however, before he could complete his sentence, the other student kicked his stomach with a knee.

Oswald's eyes popped out in pain as he fell to the ground on his knees.

“\*Cough\* \*Cough\*”

In just one move, his breathing became erratic and he coughed a few times while holding his stomach.

The student, however, wasn't done yet.

He grabbed Oswald's hair and lifted him in the air with pure strength.

"First, you bumped into me, spoiling all my clothes with all this dirt, and then you even dared to shout at me?"

You have some guts, don't you?"

This time, Oswald finally saw the face of the man who hit him.

The man had black hair, golden eyes and was extremely good looking, however, right now, Oswald didn't care about how the man looked,

"M-My b-brothe-"

He wanted to intimidate the student in front of him, however, suddenly, a big smile appeared on the Student's face.

"I don't care who your father or your brother is.

You messed with the wrong person."

Saying that, Nux grabbed Oswald's head and smashed it onto the floor.

\*Bam\*

# Chapter 237

“You messed with the wrong person.”

Saying that, Nux grabbed Oswald’s head and smashed it onto the floor.

\*Bam\*

Nux then turned his head and glanced at Oswald’s other two friends.

The two students felt their bodies stiffening up in fear, however, they quickly regained control over their bodies and ran away.

Or so they tried to.

Nux disappeared and then appeared in front of Harold and punched his face.

The impact was so great that Harold’s body flew away and then his head crashed on the tree.

Nux then turned his head towards Bardley and disappeared again.

Bardley, who saw that felt his soul leaving his body and he paused in fear, making things easier for Nux.

Nux then appeared near Bardley and then, he kicked on his right knee.

\*Crack\*

“AAAAGGGHHHHHH!”

Bardley howled in pain as he fell to the ground.

A clear sound of something breaking was heard, everyone present here knew that Bardley’s knee was broken.

Nux, however, did not show any mercy and kicked Bardley's head like it was a football.

A satisfied smile appeared on Nux's face as he glanced at the three students lying on the floor, groaning in pain.

Then, his smile widened menacingly as he glanced at Harold, whose hands were trembling and he was trying to drink the healing potion.

“That's quite an item you have got there.

How about you give that to me?”

Nux then walked toward Harold and took the healing potion out of his hands.

Not only that, he even took the storage ring that was in his hands and then he repeated the same with the other two.

“You guys are quite rich huh...”

Nux muttered as he looked into their storage rings.

“So many academy points... It is almost as if you guys never spend whatever you earn, or maybe you don't earn anything at all...”

Nux continued to speak and then, his eyebrow twitched.

“You know... for some reason, after seeing your storage ring, I am even angrier now.”

Nux then stepped forward and,

“AAggghhh!!”

“Ugghhhh!!”

“Aakkkhhh!!”

He started beating the three of them till they all passed out.

This continued for the next 15 minutes and then, Nux dusted off his uniform and muttered,

“Alright, let’s leave this place now.”

“A-Are you sure that we should leave them here?” Royce questioned in worry as he glanced at the three unconscious students lying on the ground.

Royce had run far away from his class to come to this area and this place was rarely visited by others.

These students are unconscious there are chances that no one would find them and the longer it takes for them to get medical attention, the worse will their injuries get.

Of course, Royce wasn’t worried about these three, however, he was worried about Nux who might face serious consequences if something bad happens to the three of them.

“Don’t worry, everything will be fine.” Nux however, just shook his head and shrugged.

“A-Are you sure? T-This m-might be risky...” Royce was still a bit worried.

“Royce Alveye,” Suddenly, Nux stopped walking and turned towards Royce.

“I have told you before, and I will say it again, act like a noble, you do not have to worry about something so insignificant, just leave everything to me.

I’ll take care of it.

These guys dared to bully you, these guys dared to bully someone from the Alveye family, this is just the beginning.

I’ll make sure that they thoroughly regret everything.

You just focus on getting stronger, strong enough to not get bullied again.

Am I clear?"

Royce copied Nux and a solemn look appeared on his face,

"Yes, I understand. I will work hard and get stronger as soon as possible."

"Good, now go to your room and start cultivating, inform me when you are about to break through the Apprentice Stage."

"Yes, big brother Nux."

Royce saluted and then he walked away with a determined look on his face.

Then, a small smile appeared on Nux's face and, he walked toward those three students again.

After another round of beating, he finally sighed and then he walked towards his Room as well.

He needed to learn the 2-Star Skill, Fire Burst.

He has to impress a certain someone, after all.

...

\*Chatter\* \*Chatter\* \*Chatter\*

In a class full of students who were talking with each other, a knock was heard,

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

"Excuse me,"

"..."

The class turned silent and turned towards the young man who was standing in front of the door.

“Is this Second Decade, Prodigy Class?” Nux questioned the same thing.

The response he received today was mostly divided by gender.

Most of the girls just shook their heads and smiled, as for the boys, well, they just scowled as they glanced at him.

“It is Second Decade, Prodigy Class, yes.” Anna decided to play along with Nux and nodded.

“Aha, thank you for answering, I thought I would get lost today, however, I think as long as kind people like you exist, I won’t get lost.

At the very least, I would find a place to live~”

Nux smiled as he walked toward Anna.

“Thank you for the compliment,” A small blush had appeared on Anna’s face, however, she was quick to control herself and answered like nothing was wrong.

“People like you deserve all the compliments in this world~”

Nux whispered softly and this time, a deep blush appeared on Anna’s face.

She was not alone though, most of the girls who were listening to their conversation were blushing while imagining themselves in Anna’s place.

“Tsk. There he goes again.”

“That bastard.”

“All handsome guys should just die.”

The male students, however, weren’t very pleased by what they saw.

Of course, Nux was never the one to care about boys.

He ignored all of them and walked towards his seat, the seat booked for the main characters, the window seat.

He then sat down on the seat, however, as soon as he did,

**\*Bam\***

The doors of the classroom were smashed open and Myrill entered the room while glaring at Nux.

# Chapter 238

\*Bam\*

The doors of the classroom were smashed open and Myrill entered the room while glaring at Nux.

A cold smile then appeared on Myrill's face as he glared at Nux,

“Heh. It's good that you are here.”

The students in the class turned silent.

Everyone knew what happened between Nux and Myrill yesterday. Nux dared to make fun of Myrill in front of the teacher and to make things worse, even Teacher Evane was laughing at him.

Then, Nux left the class with Teacher Evane and didn't return.

This left Myrill annoyed and frustrated.

Most of the students knew something was going to happen when they saw Nux coming into the class, to be honest, they were looking forward to it.

“I've been waiting for you to re-enter the class yesterday, but I guess you must have run away. Though I have a question,”

Saying that, Myrill walked towards Nux's seat and smashed his hand on the top of his table.

“If you already knew what is going to happen to you, then little rat, why did you come into the class today? Did you think I would forget what you did yesterday? If you did, then let me tell you,

You were wrong.”

Nux frowned and then, he smiled inwardly,

‘Heh. So it’s not about his brother huh…’

I guess he still doesn’t know that I was the one behind it…’

Myrill then moved his face close to Nux’s and muttered with a scary smile on his face,

“You were wrong.

I did not forget anything.

I will make sure you pay fo-”

As if intimidated by him, Nux moved his head away from Myrill and then pointed at a chair that was placed a few meters away.

“What are you pointing on that chair for?” Myrill questioned with a frown.

A small smile then appeared on Nux’s face as he answered,

“If you want my seat, you can grab it. I already placed that seat over there.”

“…”

Myrill’s face twitched in frustration.

“Also, if you want to move your face close to someone else, here’s a quick tip,

Brush your teeth regularly.”

Nux muttered with a disgusted expression and a hand on his nose.

“It’s a pro tip coming from experience, you can trust it.

Also, try seducing someone else, I am not into guys,”

Nux then glanced at Anna and smiled playfully.

“I very much prefer girls~”

Anna and a few other girls blushed and taking this chance, Nux winked at them.

\*Bam\*

“I am not seducing you, you bastard!”

Myrill couldn't take this anymore and smashed his hand on the table again as he glared at Nux with eyes filled with rage.

“Oh, you were not?”

Well that's good, I thought your seducing skills were shitty and I was worried about your future. But now that you tell me that you were not trying to seduce me, everything makes sense. I don't need to be worried about your future.”

Nux muttered as he continued nodding to himself.

Myrill's mouth twitched uncontrollably.

The more he looked at this bastard, the angrier he feels.

“You bastard! Stop worrying about my future, rather, you should be worried about your own future because once I am done with you, no one else will be looking at your disfigured face!”

“Oh my~ Possessive much, eh?” Nux chuckled and then, he shook his head,

“But as I said, I am not interested in men.

Don't worry though, there are lots of boys in our class who will be interested in you, right guys?”

Nux muttered as he glanced at other students.

The boys quickly turned their faces away,

They weren't interested in guys either.

Nope, not a chance.

Seeing those boys acting like that, Myrill finally lost control over his emotions and shouted out loud.

“I am not gay you bastard!”

At the same time, a fireball appeared in his hand and it directly shot towards where Nux was sitting.

“DIE!”

**\*BOOM\***

From the Explosion, it was clear that it wasn't a normal Fire Ball, it was the 2-Star Skill provided by the academy, Fire Burst.

A fireball that bursts apart after the collision, a Skill that is a lot stronger than a normal Fire Ball, it is so strong that it is on the borderline of being a 3-Star Skill.

Myrill was quite ruthless to use a skill like this right from the start.

And by how close the two of them were, he was sure that Nux was hit and obliterated by his attack.

Anna and the other girls thought the same and their faces went pale from worry and shock.

Myrill didn't care about them,

He had investigated Nux, he was just a commoner, there is no problem if a son of an Earl like him kills a commoner.

He might get suspended for a few days, but that's it. No other action would be taken against him.

This was also the reason why he dared to do something outrageous in the first place.

Anna, who was frozen stiff from what happened felt someone patting her shoulder from behind, however, she didn't care about that right now and ignored whoever it was.

“Anna...”

However, then she heard a voice, she quickly turned around and her eyes widened in surprise,

“N-Nux!”

It was Nux!

He was standing behind her, without a scratch on his face.

How surprising!

“Nux! How did yo-”

“Anna, you saw what happened, correct?” However, before she could complete her question, Nux questioned back.

“H-Huh?”

“You saw what happened, correct?” Nux repeated his question with his usual smile on his face.

“Y-Yes, I did.”

“Yes, it was Myrill who attacked me first, right?”

“Y-Yes.”

“So whatever that happens from now on...”

Nux’s smile widened and he questioned,

“It could be called self-defence, right?”

“H-Huh?” Anna didn’t understand what he was talking about.

“Since he attacked me first, then even if I attack him right now, it would be seen as self-defence, correct?”

“Y-Y-Yes.”

Anna answered while she felt goosebumps all over her body when she saw that big, crazy and distorted smile on Nux’s face.

“That is good.”

Saying that, Nux disappeared.

And for some reason, Myrill’s body trembled.

# Chapter 239

“Good.”

Saying that, Nux disappeared.

Myrill, who was looking in the direction where Nux was standing with a lost look on his face suddenly felt someone patting his shoulder.

He came out of his reverie when he noticed that Nux had disappeared, he turned around only to see Nux looking at him with a big smile on his face.

“You messed with a wrong person, Pest.”

“H-Huh? Wha- Kkhhoookkk!”

Myrill wanted to retort, however, Nux directly punched his gut so hard that his eyes nearly popped out and he directly coughed out blood.

Nux, however, wasn't done.

He grabbed Myrill's hair and then smashed his head on his knee,

“Ugghh!”

Of course, he didn't stop it after doing it once, he lifted Myrill's head, and then smashed it on his knees again, then again, again, and again.

“Ugghh...”

Within a minute, Myrill's somewhat decent face was turned into a disfigured mess that was covered with blood, sweat and tears.

“Heehh? Aren't you the King of this Class? Why aren't you fighting back?”

Suddenly, Nux questioned.

“Ughh...”

Of course, Myrill didn't answer.

No, it was more like he couldn't answer.

His face was all disfigured, his nose was completely broken, there was blood all over, the blood had even cloaked around his windpipe, whenever he opens his mouth, blood instead of words flows out.

“Isn't the King of the Class a little too weak?” Nux questioned as he turned towards other boys in the class.

“Wait... don't tell me you used all the strength in that previous attack.

Well, if that is the case,”

Nux then let go of Myrill's hair and stepped back.

However, soon, a crazy smile appeared on his face and he laughed,

“Then too bad for you!”

Grabbing his hair again, he smashed his face on his knee, again.

Then, Nux took his time to step on the back of the foot of Myrill and then,

\*Crack\*

“AAAGGGHHHHHHH!!!”

He broke Myrill's ankle and the latter howled in agony.

“Also, what's with that pathetic display of the Skill, I am sure Teacher Evane must be disappointed,

Here, let me show you how it is done.”

Nux then stepped back and soon, a fireball appeared above his hand.

Then, the Fireball shot toward Myrill and,

**\*BOOM\***

It burst apart and Myrill's body flew away and clashed with Teacher's desk.

“Hmmm, I still need some practice huh... well, it is handier of a skill than I expected, I guess I work hard and train it more.”

Nux nodded to himself while the other students glanced at him with horrified looks on their faces.

They were all Advance Stage Cultivators, why the hell is the gap between them so big!?

How did this man defeat Myrill so quickly!?

And why did it seem so effortless!?

He even had the time to chat while he attacked him.

Although Myrill wasn't the strongest student in the class, he was easily in the third or second number when it came to strength and even the strongest student in the class would need to fight Myrill for hours before the results finally come out.

But this...

What the hell is this!?

“What happened here!?”

While students were observing Nux and analyzing the fight, Teacher Evane, who heard the commotion rushed into the class and saw everything.

First, the seats behind were turned into smithereens and by how everything was burned, it was clear that someone had used the Fire Burst Skill.

That, however, wasn't the worse.

The worst thing was that a student's body was lying beside the Teacher's desk.

His whole body was burned, even his hairs were burned and he had now turned bald, his face was disfigured, his foot was turned in a weird way, showing that it was broken as well,

All in all, the Student's condition was critical, the only good thing about this was that the student was still breathing.

“I asked, what the hell happened here!?”

Seeing that no one answered her question, Teacher Evane questioned again. This time, her tone was a lot stricter and louder than before.

“It was self-defence.”

Teacher Evane turned towards the source of the voice and saw Nux standing with both his hands in the air.

“What did you say?” She questioned as she raised her eyebrow.

This... this was self-defence? Was this new student kidding her!?

“He was the one who attacked me first, it wasn't a normal attack either, he used Fire Burst when we were barely 10 cm far from each other.

If that attack had hit me, I would have died.

Seeing death in front of my eyes, I was scared.

Then, my fear turned into anger and I lost control over my emotions and attacked back.

Then... this happened.”

Nux told everything that happened honestly.

He was an upright person after all.

“T-This is true. Myrill used Fire Burst to attack Nux first and that attack was definitely lethal.” Anna nodded in agreement.

‘Though I don’t think this man was the least bit scared.’

Of course, she didn’t say that out loud.

“Yes, that attack could have killed Nux. It was simply a self-defence”

“I would have lost control over my emotions too, it was too dangerous.”

“Yes, it’s all Myrill’s fault.”

Other girls, who had a good impression of Nux in their minds, supported him as well.

The only ones who were left were the boys.

“Teacher Evane, it was indeed Myrill who attacked first.”

Suddenly, the boy who stepped in front of Nux yesterday stepped forward and muttered.

He didn’t like Nux either, however, today, Nux was right.

No matter how pissed off you are at someone, it doesn’t give you the right to kill them, not only that, Myrill attacked without a warning.

A pathetic behaviour.

Nux was 100 times better than a coward like him.

Seeing him supporting Nux, other students stepped up and started supporting Nux as well.

Within a few minutes, Nux’s status changed from the assaulted to the one who was assaulted.

He had become innocent.

Not like he was not innocent before.

He is an honest and upright person after all.

# Chapter 240

“Yes, it was Myrill’s fault.”

All the students agreed and sided with Nux.

Seeing this, Teacher Evane started believing it as well.

She could totally see Myrill losing control over his emotions and attacking Nux, he has done that before and had attacked many students.

However, using a lethal Skill and trying to kill a fellow student?

‘These students are getting a little too bold, aren’t they?’

How dare he do something like that?’

Teacher Evane’s eyes turned cold.

She then bent down, grabbed Myrill’s ring and took a Healing potion out of it.

She was going to use her healing potion before, however, now, she decided against it.

Evane then shoved the healing potion into Myrill’s mouth. Then, she took out another potion from his ring and shoved it inside his mouth again.

Then another one, then another and another.

She continued doing it till he was out of potions.

To be honest, it looked like she was punishing him rather than saving him, of course, most of the students didn’t care about it.

“Will he be okay?” Suddenly, Nux walked forward and questioned with a worried look on his face.

“Huh? Are you worried about him?” Teacher Evane questioned with a frown on her face.

He of all people was worried about him?

Was he some sort of saint?

Teacher Evane was a little impressed by how good-hearted this student was.

“Of course not. Why would I be worried about someone who attacked me?”

However, Nux’s next after took away all that good impression he had unknowingly created.

“Then why are you asking me?” Teacher Evane questioned.

“Well, as long as he is alive, Marquee Alger should be able to protect me, however, if something happens to him, I don’t think that Earl Bourkee will let me go.

In the end, I am still a commoner after all.”

Nux muttered.

Teacher Evane’s smiled a little as she answered,

“Don’t worry, as long as you are in the Academy, Earl Bourkee won’t be able to do anything. And trust me, with your talent, when you leave the Academy, you will reach a level where someone like Bourkee won’t dare to touch you.

Heck, he might even come to you and apologize in his son’s stead.”

Nux however, just smiled wryly and muttered,

“Teacher Evane, you might fool a noble with words like that, however, I am someone who has seen and has gone through many hardships in this world. I know how the world works.

What if Earl Bourkee decided to send an assassin after me? What if I am killed before reaching that level?

The academy might protect their students who are alive, however, a dead student like me has no value to the academy.

As long as concrete proof isn't provided, the academy won't care about it.

And of course, since I am a commoner with no backing whatsoever, no one would ever try and search for clues if something happens to me.

Earl Bourkee would pretty much get out of this without a scratch.”

“...”

This time, Teacher Evane turned silent.

She knew how the world works as well and what Nux said, the chances of that happening are close to 100%

A serious look then appeared on Teacher Evane's face as he muttered,

“Alright, pack your bag.”

“Huh?” Nux frowned.

“Just pack your bag, well, you don't really need anything since everything should be in your storage ring.

After the class ends, you are coming with me.”

“Huh? Teacher Evane, what are you talking about?” Nux questioned with a confused look on his face.

“I'll protect you.” Teacher Evane muttered with a serious look on her face.

“Teacher Evane?”

“What? You don’t believe me?”

“N-No, that’s not it.”

“Then stop complaining. The room next to mine is empty, from now on, you will be living there. This way, I can protect you in case Earl Bourkee tries something.”

“O-Oh! Thank you, Teacher Evane!”

Nux exclaimed with a big smile on his face.

Well, he would have been happier if he was allowed to live with Teacher Evane, instead of living next to her.

But oh well, something is better than nothing.

It was still progress.

Inwardly, Nux thanked his best friend Myrill for sacrificing himself for his sake.

Friends like Myrill are all one needs in his or her life.

“Don’t worry, it is my duty to protect my students.” Teacher Evane smiled, she then turned towards another student and requested.

“Jacob, can you please take him to the Medic?”

“Y-Yes, teacher.”

The student named Jacob stepped forward and picked Myrill up.

Nux then returned to his seat and the class continued after Jacob returned.

Of course, Nux ignored whatever was taught in the class, he would rather take private lessons.

He was sure that those will be much more interesting than whatever was happening here.

Right now, Nux just continued to look at Teacher Evane with a lost look on his face and waited for the class to end as soon as it is possible.

An hour later, the class finally ended and Teacher Evane turned towards Nux.

“Alright, Nux, come with me.”

“Yes Teacher.”

Nux was quick to leave his seat and rushed towards her with a big smile on his face.

The other boys in the class looked at him as their eyes shined in unconcealed jealousy.

‘Tsk Tsk, this bastard is just too lucky!’

‘Fuckk! Should I become a commoner as well?’

‘Living in a room next to Teacher Evane? Fuck! I will exchange half of my life to get this opportunity.’

“Nux you lucky bastard.”

One of the students couldn’t control himself and muttered out loud.

All the boys in the room nodded their heads in agreement.

As for the girls, they just didn’t understand why these boys were acting like this.

What has Nux done to them?

Why are they acting like he stole their most precious treasure?

“Maybe they are just jealous.” A girl muttered.

“Of what?” Another girl questioned.

“His handsome face?”

“Ahh, that could be the reason, most of the guys in our class do look like monkeys, so it’s natural that they are jealous.”

“Indeed.”

Hearing those words, the boys’ mouths twitched.

‘Nux you fucking bastard.’

# Chapter 241

“This will be your room from now on.” Teacher Evane muttered as she opened the door of a room.

“Woowww~ It looks so cool, can I actually live here?” Nux muttered in amazement, even without going inside, Nux knew that this was an amazing room.

It was a lot better than the room he got as a student.

Well, it was only natural after all,

The Academy is where all the students and the teachers live, obviously, the treatment teachers get and the treatment students get are very different as well.

One of the examples of different treatment can be the rooms where the two of them live.

If Student's rooms are comparable to the most lavish room in a Baron Household, the room for the teachers is comparable to the most Lavish room in the Marquee household.

Yes, the difference was that big!

Well, it was understandable as well, most of the students are Beginner or advanced stage Cultivators, as for the teachers, the weakest teacher is a Grand Master Stage Cultivator, it is obvious that the two of them are treated differently.

The room Nux received now was a room where teachers used to live, it was obvious that it would be many times better than his previous room.

“Yes, you can live here.” Teacher Evane muttered.

“Are you really sure, Teacher Evane? I am just a student, and a commoner to boot, are you sure I can live in such a lavish room?”

This is a room built for teachers, after all.”

Nux was still doubtful.

Suddenly, a small smile appeared on Teacher Evane’s face and she questioned back,

“Do you know my full name?”

“Of course I do, it is Evane Skyfa-”

Nux paused as he finally realized something.

“Evane Skyfall, yes, ‘Skyfall’, the Princess of the Skyfall kingdom, arranging something like this isn’t hard for someone like me.

Of course, most nobles, even the Dukes might not be able to arrange something like this in the Royal Academy because the Academy doesn’t allow nobles to use their influence inside, however, in the end, the academy still belongs to the Royal Family.

There is no way they can stop me from doing something so small. So don’t worry and live freely.”

Teacher Evane’s face then turned serious and she muttered,

“As I said, I will protect you.”

“Thank you, Teacher Evane.” Nux bowed his head and thanked.

Evane nodded she then pointed at the door of the room beside Nux’s room and muttered,

“This is my room, if you have any problems, you can come to me. Of course, I believe you will respect the basic manners and will only come to me if it’s something really urgent, I can trust you with that, correct?”

“Yes teacher!”

Nux exclaimed with a big smile on his face.

This time, he was actually happy.

Evane didn't impose any rules on him, this meant that she looked at him in a positive light.

That is a good piece of news.

Of course, that doesn't mean he can just barge into her room whenever he wanted, he needs to keep up a good image, therefore, he needs to take things slowly.

Just like he always does.

Slow and steady wins the race after all.

“Alright, I still have some work to do, so I will be leaving, you can check your room or you can join other classes. It is all up to you.”

“Yes Teacher.”

Nux nodded with a smile on his face and Teacher Evane finally left.

Normally, the Decade Two Prodigy class have to attend Four classes, however, other than Evane's class, the rest of the classes are taken by male teachers, therefore, Nux didn't bother going into their class.

It's not like he can learn something from someone who is weaker than him.

It is pretty much a waste of time.

It is better to do something else now that he has time,

A small smile then appeared on Nux's face as he walked out and found a friend,

“Senior Manya,”

Nux waved,

“Oh C’mon, didn’t I tell you to call me Manya? We are in the same Decade after all~”

“Hahaha~” Nux laughed.

“So? Are we roaming around today as well?”

“Of course,”

“Hahaha~ You look happy for some reason,”

“What? Is that a bad thing?”

“Of course not.”

The two of them talked and then continued to move around the academy.

After that, Senior Manya went to her duty and Nux started hanging out with Anna and some other girls.

No, he was not just wasting his time here.

Well, hanging out with girls was a reason as well,

But the main reason is that he was trying to find someone.

However, no matter how much he tries and uses his [Sense], for some reason, he cannot find the Head Master of the Royal Academy.

That is what bothered him a little.

Well, that is not the only reason why he was hanging around,

He needs to look after some other things, information about Arvina Skyfall, for example.

His plan had started after...

...

‘...Ugghh... this is boring...’ Allura muttered as she glanced at her ceiling with a bored look on her face.

‘Tsk Tsk, what a pervert, to think you would act like this within a day...’ Edda snorted.

‘Don’t act like you are any better...’ Allura complained.

‘Sister Edda, you shouldn’t call someone else a pervert.’ Skyla nodded her head.

‘Indeed, anyone can call me a pervert, but not you... I won’t be able to hear it if it comes from your mouth...’ Lane nodded in agreement as well.

‘See that? Skyla and Lane understands!’ seeing that the two of them were supporting her, Allura smiled.

‘Tsk Tsk, so what? At least I am honest with my feelings~’ Seeing that the three of them teamed up against her, Edda snorted.

‘Indeed, being honest with your feelings is a lot better than just lying around, in the bed without doing anything.’ Thyra muttered.

Of course, all the girls knew that this was an indirect jab toward Allura.

‘Hmph! At least it is better than having small bre-‘

Allura wanted to use her usual weapon, however, she turned silent when she realized that one of her team members will be affected by her attack as well.

‘Guys... can you shut up, I am still working you know...’ Felberta complained.

‘You know you can shut off the telepathic connection, right?’ Edda questioned.

‘...’ Felberta turned silent.

Of course, she knew that.

But she was scared that she would miss something interesting if she did that.

‘Guys... I was wondering...’ Suddenly, Edda muttered.

‘What?’ Allura questioned.

‘What do you think about Eightsome?’

# Chapter 242

‘What do you think about Eightsome?’

‘...’

‘...’

‘...’

Edda questioned and her question was met by complete silence, no one spoke until Allura decided to break that deafening silence.

‘A pervert indeed.’

‘As expected of Sister Edda.’ Skyla nodded her head.

‘Indeed, I think only Edda has the guts to say something like that...’ Felberta nodded her head as well.

‘Never. I will never do an Eightsome! Let alone eight, I won’t do a threesome either!’

Amaya was the one who spoke.

‘Tsk Tsk, why are you so against it?’ Edda questioned.

‘Hmph! Nux is mine! Only mine!’

I know I can’t have him all to myself since he will keep attracting hoes like you, but when we are on the same bed,

Nux is only mine!’

Amaya retorted.

Right now, Nux's women were talking to each other with the Telepathic connection provided by Harem Seal.

Yes, all 7 women were talking to each other.

It will take some time before they all meet, therefore, this was indeed a good idea.

Who started it?

Surprisingly, it was Amaya.

Apparently, the woman contacted everyone to ask about Nux's likes and dislikes. Soon, the discussion went so deep that even Nux's women were confused, therefore, they started discussing it among themselves.

More and more women then joined the discussion and eventually, it evolved into this.

Amaya called it Harem Meet.

And Harem Meet only had one rule,

Nux wasn't allowed to join it.

It was the girls' secret meeting behind his back.

Of course, what the girls didn't know was that Nux already knew about this meeting.

Who told him?

It was these girls.

They promised each other not to tell anything about it to Nux, however, whenever they were alone, all of them told him about it, showing that they were the only ones who were on his side and asking for extra rewards.

They just cannot hide anything from Nux at all.

‘Tsk Tsk, we were his women before you, okay? You are the one who should be called a hoe for coming and sharing our man!’ Edda retorted.

Amaya, of course, decided to ignore this statement.

She won’t speak if she is in a disadvantageous position.

She was not that dumb.

‘Ughhh... you guys... how was last night...?’ Allura questioned and again, everyone turned silent.

‘...’

‘...’

‘...’

‘Bad...’ This time, Lane decided to break the silence.

‘Bad indeed...’

‘Ughhh... I need Nux...’ Edda groaned.

‘I need Nux... all for myself...’ \_\_\_\_\_ muttered. (Guess who it is.)

‘Tsk Tsk, just look at you guys, can’t you control yourself just a little it has only been a day, how are you guys going to survive for a whole week?’ Thyra couldn’t help but shake her head in disappointment.

‘You are right...’

A week is a little too long...’ Skylar pouted.

‘Too long indeed...’ Lane nodded as well.

‘I am sure he must have his reasons. You guys know him as well, he would never do something like this without a proper reason.’

Remember, the Academy has a King Stage Expert holding the ground, he needs to be a little more cautious since we don't know if [Conceal] would work or not.' Thyra muttered with a serious look on her face.

Yes, after joining the academy, Nux informed all his women that he won't leave the academy and visit them for a week since there is something he has to deal with.

Of course, although the women groaned, they understood that things might be a little tricky and nodded.

'Yes... I understand...' Felberta nodded.

'Sister Thyra... you can think logically like this, I am very impressed... you are indeed worthy of being my teacher...' Skyla praised and a small smile appeared on Thyra's face.

'Hmph! What's so great about that? Remember, I stayed alone for 3 whole weeks!' Allura snorted.

'That is praiseworthy indeed... Allura, my respect for you has increased a little...' Amaya muttered.

'So what? We stayed without him for a month.' Felberta lifted her chest in pride while she continued reading the documents in front of her.

Seeing her sudden act, Joyab frowned in confusion.

However, then he decided to shake his head and ignore it.

It wasn't the first time Lady Felberta is acting like this.

Ever since she met that bastard, she has been acting weirdly, actually, he is just happy that she is actually doing her work now.

'Indeed, we controlled ourselves for a month.' Lane and Skyla nodded.

'Hey... What do you guys think about Sister Arvina?'

Suddenly, Skylia questioned.

‘You are already calling her Sister huh...’ Amaya noticed.

‘Of course, you think she can resist Nux?’ Skylia questioned.

‘Well, she is known to be a man-hater.’ Amaya countered.

‘You think she can resist Nux?’ Skylia questioned again.

‘No...’ Amaya admitted.

‘So Sister Arvina it is...’ Skylia smiled cheerfully.

‘So? What do you guys think about her?’ She questioned again.

‘As I said before, she is known to be a man-hater and loves fighting.’  
Amaya, who knew the most about her informed.

‘She is an Expert Stage Cultivator, right?’ Edda questioned.

‘Yes, she is.’ Amaya nodded.

‘So is it safe to assume that Nux will become an Expert Stage Cultivator soon?’ Edda questioned.

‘Yes,’ Amaya nodded again.

‘Hehe~ Sister Thyra, your title as the strongest will be taken away soon~’  
Suddenly, Skylia chuckled.

‘...’

Thyra however, didn’t answer and stayed silent.

Felberta sensed something and decided to change the topic,

‘Amaya, what do you know about Evane Skyfall? Nux has his eyes on her as well.’

‘Tsk Tsk, what a perverted womanizer.’ Edda snorted.

‘Indeed.’

‘Mhm, he is a pervert.’

‘Tsk Tsk, my bad luck that I fell in love with a pervert.’

All of the women agreed.

‘It doesn’t matter, it is his charm but you guys just won’t understand.’

‘She’s a gone case indeed.’ Allura couldn’t help but shake her head when she heard Amaya’s words.

‘Love makes one blind,’ Skyla muttered like an old man who has lived all his life and is now teaching life lessons to others.

‘It won’t.’

Suddenly, Thyra muttered.

‘Huh? What?’

‘My Title as the strongest,

It is not going anywhere.’

# Chapter 243

‘My Title as the strongest,

It is not going anywhere.’

Thyra muttered as her eyes shined in determination.

Although the rest of the women couldn’t see her face, they could still feel the strength and confidence behind those words.

‘I will become an Expert Stage Cultivator before Nux can meet Arvina and then... then...’ suddenly, Thyra’s voice turned weak and she mumbled.

‘Then he will become an Expert Stage Cultivator with m-my help.’

‘I really want to see your face right now, Sister Thyra’ Skyla muttered.

‘Yeah, she must be as red as a tomato. Fufufu~’ Edda chuckled.

‘Tsk Tsk, to think someone like her would have such a cute side to her...’ Allura commented.

The rest of the girls passed their comments as well, however, deep inside their hearts, they all acknowledged Thyra’s words and hoped that her words come true.

Even Allura, whose relationship with Thyra wasn’t the best was thinking the same thing as was wishing for her success.

‘I believe in you, Sister Thyra.’ Lane muttered.

‘Thank you, Sister Lane.’ Thyra nodded with a small smile on her face.

She then rolled over her bed and her smile widened.

She was imagining how Nux would act when she appear in front of him as an Expert Stage Cultivator.

\*Bam\*

Suddenly, Thyra heard a voice and quickly came out of her reverie.

She quickly sat up and noticed that Skyla had entered her room and she was looking at her with a smile on her face.

‘Tsk Tsk, she is indeed red like a tomato. She’s rolling on her bed while thinking about lewd stuff’ Skyla informed all others.

‘W-Why are you inside my room!?’ Thyra questioned.

‘Hehe~ I can’t miss it now, can I?’ Skyla smiled adorably.

‘You...!’

Then, Thyra quickly dashed towards Skyla and Skyla froze.

‘You guys~ Save me~’ She asked for help.

Although her cultivation was the same as Thyra’s, the gap between their skills was too wide, she was not even close to Thyra when it came to strength.

Of course, none of the girls helped her either.

All they did was break the connection with Thyra and Skyla and continued their conversation.

‘Amaya, when are you going to carry on with your plan?’ Suddenly, Allura questioned in a solemn tone.

‘...soon.’ Amaya answered in a serious voice.

‘Don’t waste too much time, it has already been a week now, the more you push it, the more suspicious will you become.’ Allura muttered.

‘Yes, I know. I will initiate my plan 2 days later.’ Amaya answered and Allura nodded.

‘That’s good, don’t waste too much time and... be careful...’ Edda muttered as well.

‘Yes... be careful... don’t hesitate to use your power if you need...’ Lane suggested as well.

‘Ask for help if you want, although we are not very strong, we aren’t weak either.’ Felberta muttered.

‘Don’t worry, I am sure I won’t need your help.’ Amaya answered with a confident smile on her face.

‘It’s not like any of my plans have ever failed before.’

‘Tsk Tsk, how arrogant.’ Felberta snorted.

‘It is only arrogance when you can’t back it up.’

‘Sure Sure.’

‘Hey... I was just wondering...’

Suddenly, Edda muttered.

‘What?’

‘What do you guys think about Eightsome?’

‘...’

‘...’

‘...’

‘Ahh, Sister Felberta, are you finished with your work?’ Allura questioned.

‘No... I still need to work for 3 more hours before I get my break...

Ughh... this is tiring...’ Felberta answered.

‘Is there any way I can help, Sister Fel?’ Lane questioned.

‘No need... I can do this on my own...’ Felberta answered.

Yes, they decided to completely ignore Edda.

That was the wisest decision possible.

Thyra and Skyla joined the conversation a few minutes later as well and all the women continued to talk to each other.

This was how Nux’s women spent their time when Nux wasn’t here, each doing whatever they were doing while talking with each other through telepathic connection.

The Harem Meeting was quite an interesting meeting indeed.

Of course, more members would join this meeting in the near future.

...

The next day, in the morning, Nux was sitting inside his class and unlike what usually happens, today he was surrounded by the boys who were trying to talk to him.

“Hey, tell us, tell us! How did you manage to sleep knowing that Teacher Evane is sleeping inside the room next to yours?”

“Yeah? Did you feel your heart racing? Did you feel that your heart would just explode right away?”

“Did you enter Teacher Evane’s room? Did you see her in a dress other than her usual attire?”

The boys continued to shoot questions at Nux and he frowned.

“I don’t know what you guys are talking about but knowing that Teacher Evane was sleeping in a room next to me filled my heart with a sense of security and I had a good sleep.”

“...”

Hearing his answer, the boys turned silent.

“Oi... you think you can fool us like that? You are the last person who would have such innocent thoughts in his mind!

Stop acting and tell us how it was!”

“I seriously don’t know what you guys are talking about. I am not lying about anything.” Nux, however, just shook his head.

“You thin-”

“Alright you guys, this is enough, you should leave him alone.” Anna, who noticed that Nux was a little uncomfortable, decided to interfere.

“Yes, Nux is not like you perverts, don’t spoil his innocent mind with your presence.”

“Indeed, you guys should just shoo away, you perverts. Don’t disturb him.”

The other girls decided to not let Anna gain advantage and stepped forward as well.

“Yes, I have no clue what you guys are talking about, you guys should leave.” Nux nodded his head as well.

The faces of the boys in the classroom twitched in annoyance.

Nux, however, didn’t care about them and turned toward the girls,

“You guys are free today in the afternoon, right?”

“Of course, we can’t miss our usual walk around the Academy now, can we?” One of the girls answered.

Nux smiled.

“Inde-”

\*Bam\*

However, just as he was about to nod, the doors of the classroom were smashed open and a beautiful, blue-haired girl entered the classroom.

Seeing the girl, a smile appeared on Nux’s face.

‘Heh. So you finally decided to come here huh...

As I expected.’

# Chapter 244

\*Bam\*

The doors of the classroom were burst open and a beautiful, blue-haired girl entered. Just like her hair, her eyes were blue as well, combined with her light pink lips and well-structured face, the girl's beauty topped every single female student that was present inside the classroom.

“It's Lady Candice!” (Picture in Paragraph comments)

“Wow, why is she in our class?”

“Who knows? But we sure are lucky today, aren't we?”

Female and male students alike, all of them glanced at Candice as their eyes shined brightly.

Even Anna wasn't any different,

“Why is Lady Candice here?” She wondered inwardly just like every other student.

Candice, however, completely ignored these murmurs and looked around.

“Who is Nux Leander?” She questioned.

Nux, however, did not answer.

Of course, him answering or not did not matter.

There were countless people in the class who wanted to get into Candice's good books.

“He, he is Nux Leander.” One of the boys pointed at Nux.

Candice then turned towards Nux and observed him closely,

“Are you Nux Leander?”

A small smile then appeared on Nux’s face as he answered,

“Girl, I think we should get to know each other first. I understand that I am handsome and all, but think about all this from my perspective, I do not even know who you are.

How can I accept your proposal?

I think we should start by being friends.”

“...” Candice Waters turned silent.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

The whole class turned silent as well.

Candice, who couldn’t believe her ears questioned,

“W-What did you say?”

“Oh C’mon, don’t act like you are heartbroken.

I am not rejecting your love, I just said that we should get to know each other.”

“You think I am here to confess my love to you?” Candice questioned.

“I mean, isn’t that the only reason you would approach me for? I don’t know who you are, we have never met before, so I believe the only logical conclusion is that you somehow saw me and were entranced by my good-

looking face. Then you couldn't control yourself and came to me to confess your love and give yourself to me.

Oh, and don't be too embarrassed, it is not the first time something like this has happened, although other women weren't as bold as you to barge in directly into my class, they still proposed to me when I was alone.

So don't worry, you are not alone." Nux answered and then calmed her down with a gentle smile on his face.

He was an Expert in knowing how to win a girl's heart.

However, his magic did not seem to have worked on Candice as her eyes turned cold and she questioned.

"Do you even know who you are talking to?"

"Are you the daughter of the King?" Nux questioned with a smile.

"Huh? No, of course not."

"Daughter of the Academy's Head Master?"

"No."

"Daughter of the General of the Skyfall Kingdom?"

"...No"

"Any of the Dukes?"

"...No I am not."

"A Marquee?"

"Yes,"

"I see." Nux nodded and then, he frowned.

“If you are just a daughter of a mere Marquee, then how the fuck am I supposed to know who you are?”

“ ... ”

Again, the entire class turned silent.

‘Where the fuck do you get the confidence of saying that when you yourself are nothing but a commoner?’

Some of the students thought inside their minds and cursed.

“My name is Candice Water, Decade Three, Prodigy Class.”

Candice calmed herself down and introduced herself.

She didn’t share the name of her father or her noble rank when she introduced herself.

Her message was clear,

I do not need to be a Daughter of a Marquee to be someone special. Everyone else knows me here by my name, because of who I am, not because of my status.

A commendable way of thinking, however,

Nux just didn’t care.

“Nux Leander, a commoner and an orphan.”

‘One really needs high-level guts to introduce yourself as a commoner after acting like that...’ The students couldn’t help but comment.

‘Arrogant fucker.’

‘Know your place, commoner.’

All the students, especially boys started cursing Nux in their hearts.

“Are you the one who assaulted Myrill Bourkee yesterday?” Candice questioned.

“Are you here for that incident?” Nux questioned.

Inside his head, he was patting himself for working so hard.

Attacking and bullying Myrill was satisfying, but he didn't do it just because he wanted fun.

His main target was Candide Waters.

Candice Water is known to be someone who is very overprotective of her subordinates.

Therefore, bullying Myrill was a straight challenge to Candice.

She had to come here.

And that is what Nux needed.

As to why he is targetting Candice, heh...

He had his reasons.

“Yes,” Candice nodded.

“Hmm... Ah wait! Are you that Candice Water!?” suddenly, Nux's eyes widened in surprise.

“Do you recognise me now?” Candice questioned with a small, satisfied smile on her face.

“No. Never heard of someone like that in my entire life.”

Nux then shook his head and Candice's face twitched in frustration.

“So are you a Decade Three student?” Nux questioned.

“Yes, I am.”

“Ahh, then you must be new in this Academy just like me.

I am sorry to tell you, but this is Decade Two, Prodigy Class.

To get to Decade Three, you walk out of this classroom, then you turn left, then a right, then another right,

And then you ask someone else where the Decade Three Class is because I do not know that as well.”

“...”

Candice’s lips twitched in frustration and anger as she glared at Nux with hatred.

“Hey Hey, don’t look at me like that, as I said, I am new here as well, I know this Academy as much as you do.”

Nux shook his head and shrugged.

“Don’t change the topic and answer my question.

Are you the one who assaulted Myrill Bourkee?” Candice controlled her anger and questioned again.

“Wait... are you and Myril-” Nux wanted to change the topic again and waste a little more time, however, his [Sense] quickly picked what he was waiting for and a small smile appeared on his face.

“Are you here for the matter regarding Myrill?”

“Yes and I don’t want you to ask any questions now, I will be the one asking.

Are you the one who assaulted Myrill yesterday?” Candice, who didn’t have an ounce of good impression of Nux in her mind questioned in a strict tone.

Nux, however, just smiled and questioned back.

“Are you talking about the incident where Myrill tried to attack me and was then got thrashed by me?”

# Chapter 245

“Are you talking about the incident where Myrill tried to attack me and was then got thrashed by me?”

Nux questioned with a small smile on his face.

Candice narrowed her eyes and questioned,

“Are you admitting that you are the one behind it?”

“Hmm? Of course not, I was merely defending myself.” Nux answered.

“Oh? You were just defending yourself, then how did Myrill end up with a Medic?”

“Because he was weak? I mean, we two fought each other, it is obvious that the weaker one would end up in the care of a medic, is it not?”

“So you are admitting that you fought against Myrill?” A small smile appeared on Candice’s face as she questioned.

“Why? You think I was in the wrong?” Nux questioned back.

“You not only fought against your classmate, you even dared to use a Skill inside the classroom and gravely injure your classmate. Of course, you are in the wrong.”

“Hmm hmm,” Nux nodded and then questioned again.

“So you think I am wrong and I should be punished? Is that correct?”

“Yes, you gravely injured your classmate, so you should be punished. According to me, you should be expelled from the academy for breaking the rules, however, before that, you should be forced to pay for all the medical fees that will be required for Myrill’s treatment.

Of course, I know that you are just a commoner and can't pay that astronomical amount of money, so I suggest you take a loan."

"Ahh, so you want me to take a loan and then pay for it for the rest of my life?"

"That should be the least you should do after doing something so horrible." Candice nodded. Her idealistic way of thinking was indeed a little... messed up.

"So, let me get this clear, you think that I was the one who was wrong, and you are here to serve justice?"

"Yes, that is correct."

Candice nodded.

Then, a small smile appeared on Nux's face as he commented,

"I didn't know students of the Academy are smarter and more knowledgeable than the teachers."

"Huh? What do you mean?" Candice questioned.

"Do you not realize it yet?" Nux questioned.

"What?"

"Why do you think I am still here in the academy after 'breaking a rule'?"

This is because the Teacher who was in charge of our classroom didn't think that I was wrong." Nux questioned and then answered at the same time.

Then, his smile widened and he questioned again,

"So? Candice Water, do you think that my Teacher's decision was wrong?"

Do you think that my teacher is a fool who cannot distinguish between right and wrong?"

"..."

Candice frowned.

"That is not what I meant..." She muttered.

"Oh? Then can you explain what you meant, Candice Water? Because from what I deduce, I can tell that you do not approve of my decision at all."

Candice's eyes widened in surprise when she heard another voice behind her back.

She then turned around and saw Teacher Evane standing at the door looking at her with narrowed eyes.

"T-Teacher Evane... t-that is not what I meant..."

Nux smiled.

Heh, he wasn't wasting all that time without any reason, he was waiting for Teacher Evane to come and protect him.

He can't show all his cards here after all.

"Mhm, then please explain what you meant, Candice Water."

Teacher Evane smiled however then, her eyes turned cold.

"You have the audacity to enter my classroom and then blame my student for something that he had not done.

Who do you think you are!?"

"..."

The whole class turned silent.

This was the first time they had seen Teacher Evane being this angry in the last 6-7 years.

“T-Teacher E-Evane...”

“What?”

“I-I was just here s-since I felt like...”

“Since you felt like what? That my decision was wrong?”

“N-No. I-I just believe that things could have been done in a better way.

N-Nux Leander did not have to attack Myrill Bourkee, I heard that he easily subdued Myrill, but even after that, he first broke his ankle and then used Fire Burst against him.

I believe that the Academy should take action against him and his violent behaviour.”

Candice tried to explain herself.

“Do you even realize what you are talking about?” Teacher Evane narrowed her eyes.

“Myrill Bourkee tried to Kill Nux! How do you expect him to be in a normal mental state after barely surviving like that!?”

“Teacher Evane, we still don’t have something that proves that Myrill Bourkee was after Nux Leander’s life.”

Candice countered.

“Oh? So you have proof proving that Nux was too violent against Myrill, however, you do not have the proof of Myrill using a Fire Burst spell when the two of them were just 10 cm away from each other?”

“I do know that happened, Teacher Evane. But we don’t know for sure that that attack would be life-threatening for Nux Leander.” Candice countered

again.

“So you are telling me that you, a Student who has an affinity with Water Element know more about the Fire Burst Spell than me, a Teacher who has an affinity with Fire Element?” Teacher Evane raised her eyebrow.

“I-I...” Candice had no answers to her questions and she turned silent.

“Candice Water, I do not know who gave you the galls to enter my classroom and do whatever you please, however, know this.

Skyfall Royal Academy is not your playground.

Know your place.”

Teacher Evane bellowed in anger.

Candice lowered her head in shame and gritted her teeth in anger.

“Now get out of my class before I kick you out of this academy!” Teacher Evane shouted. She was truly enraged today.

“...”

However, instead of doing what she was ordered, Candice just stood there, motionlessly.

Seeing this, Teacher Evane was even more annoyed.

“Did you not hear what I said!?”

She bellowed in rage.

“...you can't do it.”

Suddenly, Candice mumbled.

“What did you say?” Teacher Evane frowned in confusion and questioned.

“I said you cannot do it.

You cannot kick me out of this school, no matter how hard you try.

You do not have the power to do so.”

Candice raised her head and glared at Teacher Evane.

# Chapter 246

“I said you cannot do it.

You cannot kick me out of this school, no matter how hard you try.

You do not have the power to do so.”

Candice raised her head and glared at Teacher Evane.

“Do not forget Teacher Evane, a single teacher cannot kick a student from the academy.

Also, don’t give me all that surname bullshit.

I very well know that you are a Skyfall. The Princess of our Kingdom.

However, my Teacher is a Skyfall as well.

Therefore, no teacher will side with you even if you use your Status because in the end, compared to a talented 22-year-old Master Stage Cultivator and the Future Pillar of the Kingdom, no one would be stupid enough to choose an 80-year-old Grand Master Stage Cultivator who has used up all her potential and can’t bring any value to the Kingdom other than teaching a few Advance Stage Cultivators!”

“ ... ”

Candice spat viciously and Teacher Evane turned silent.

This time, the Students in the classroom frowned.

If it was anything else, they would support Candice, the Queen of the Royal Academy with all their heart, however, this time, she was against their Teacher.

And not a normal teacher, but the nicest teacher.

Although Teacher Evane was a princess and had a very high social standing compared to all the students, she has never been arrogant about it and treated every student gently. She treated students even better than other teachers do.

The students respected her a lot as well.

Therefore, now that the Queen of the Academy was standing against their teacher, they like it one bit.

A thought that Nux shared with the rest of his classmates.

“The teacher you are talking about, is it Teacher Arvina Skyfall?” Nux questioned as he walked in front of Evane.

“Huh? You are rather well informed huh...” Candice smiled.

“Yes, I am well informed about certain things, therefore, I want to ask, are you sure you want to involve Teacher Arvina Skyfall in this mess?”

“Huh? What do you mean?” Candice frowned.

“First, you barged into Teacher Evane’s class, then, you blamed one of her students and challenged her decision.

As if this was not enough, you even dared to point your finger against Teacher Evane and called her ‘someone who has used all her potential’ and mocked her job as her teacher.

Does that mean you feel the same way for your teacher as well?

Do you feel that your teacher, an Expert Stage Cultivator isn’t bringing any value to the kingdom other than teaching a bunch of children?”

Nux questioned, he then walked towards Candice and narrowed his eyes,

“Are you sure you want Teacher Arvina Skyfall to hear this?”

“I-I never said anything like this! You are just moulding my words!”  
Candice stepped back and pointed her finger at Nux.

“You may have not said anything about Teacher Arvina, but doesn’t your words already tell what you think about all the teachers in general?”

To be honest, I pity Teacher Arvina, she went as far as to take you as her personal student, however, this is how low you think of her.

Dissapointing indeed.”

Nux shook his head and sighed.

“Alright, let’s do this, let’s call Teacher Arvina here and have a big, lengthy discussion about what happened.”

Nux suggested and then he turned towards Anna,

“Anna, can you please go and call teacher Arvina here.”

“Y-Yes, right away!” Anna nodded and just as she was about to rush out of class, Candice shouted.

“Wait!”

Anna paused.

Candice then completely ignored Nux and walked towards Teacher Evane,

Then, she bowed her head and apologized.

“Teacher Evane, I apologize for what I said in a fit of anger.

I am still immature and would request you to be a bigger person and forgive me.

I promise you that I will learn to control my emotions and keep my words in check.

I really did not mean what I said before, again, I apologize.”

“Alright, I forgive you. You can leave my class now, I need to continue with my lecture.” Evane sighed.

Did she forgive her?

Of course not.

However, she had to teach.

She doesn't have any time to waste on a 20-year-old child.

“Yes, Teacher Evane. Thank you very much.”

Candice bowed her head again and then she walked away.

However, before she left, she glanced at Nux, who just smiled at her provocatively, she gritted her teeth in annoyance and then left the classroom.

Today, she had taken a big hit on her pride.

She, Candice Water, the Queen of the Royal Academy, the Future Pillar of the Skyfall Kingdom, had to bow her head in front of an entire classroom.

A shameful act indeed.

And this was all because of one student.

One puny Advance Stage commoner.

Earlier, she just wanted him to pay the price for attacking her subordinate, however now, now everything is personal.

Candice wasn't planning to let that boy go with just a lifelong debt.

Now, everything would be a lot worse than before.

“Keep an eye on that student named Nux Leander.

As soon as he makes one single mistake, report it to me.” She ordered the boy who had joined her after she left the classroom.

“Yes, Lady Candice.”

...

On the other side, Teacher Evane continued with her lecture, however, with how she was delivering her lecture, it was clear that Candice’s words have affected her in some way.

The students, however, couldn’t do anything about it and just look at each other helplessly.

The class continued for more and then,

“Alright, this will be it for today, we will continue this from tomorrow. Have a good day ahead, everyone.”

Teacher Evane muttered with a small smile on her face.

However, just as she was about to leave, Nux raised his hand.

“Teacher Evane, I tumbled into a problem when I was using Fire Burst Skill yesterday, can you help me with it?” Nux questioned.

“Hmm? You learned it already?”

“Of course, I used it against Myrill yesterday, did you forget?” Nux answered with a smile.

It was only then that most of the students realized what had happened.

‘This fucking monster... he learned a 2-Star Skill in just 2 days...

This is absurd!’

Even Teacher Evane was shocked still.

“Teacher Evane, can you help me with it?” Nux questioned again.

“A-Ah, sure. Come to my office, I will help you if I can.”

# Chapter 247

“A-Ah, sure. Come to my office, I will help you if I can.”

Although she was confused about how Nux did it so quickly, Teacher Evan quickly came out of her reverie and nodded.

It doesn't matter how he did it, rather, it is a good thing that he is talented,

Her student achieving higher heights is something that will fill her heart with happiness.

Of course, she knows that someone as talented as Nux won't remain her student for long but she would still feel satisfied as long as she had a 'hand' in his growth.

“Alright, thank you very much, Teacher Evane.” Nux boomed in joy and just as he was about to follow Teacher Evane, a boy stood up.

“Teacher Evane, I am also facing some difficulties with Fire Burst Skill, I would like to come with Nux and learn from you as well.”

Nux turned towards the boy and noticed that the boy was looking at him with narrowed eyes.

His expression was clear,

‘You bastard, you already live in the room right next to hers, now you even dare to spend some time alone with her in her office!?! Over my dead body!’

Nux's mouth twitched in annoyance.

There are really too many hindrances in this class.

Soon, however, a small smile appeared on his face and he countered,

“Ahh, David, you know, the thing is, I only got this Skill 2 days ago, you have been here for a long time now, it is obvious that your mastery over the Skill would be a lot better than mine.

I don't think this session will help you in any way.

I suggest you go to teacher Evane tomorrow or any other day.”

The boy named David smiled as well,

“Ah, no, no, that can't be true. I am not very good with this Skill either, also, I have seen you use this technique yesterday, I am pretty sure you are around my level.

So I am sure this session with helping me a lot, don't worry about it.”

His smile widened when he completed his sentence.

‘How is that sucker!?! You think you can send me away!?!’

David was sure that Nux had no way to reject him now.

Of course, what he didn't know was that he was against someone who has never lost a battle of words.

“Oh, c'mon David, you don't have to act so humble in front of me.

You aren't saying that you, who have been training and learning this skill for so many years now, have the same level of mastery as someone like me, who only got this skill 2 days ago, are you?”

Then, Nux's smile widened as he questioned,

“You can't be that big of a trash, can you?”

David's mouth twitched in annoyance when he heard those words.

‘T-This bastard...’

“Of course, you aren’t that bad, right, David?” Nux smiled even more.

“Y-Yeah... I guess I should stop being humble... Teacher Evane, since Classmate Nux was the first one to ask you, I will back off today and will ask my questions at a later date.”

David turned towards Teacher Evane and forced a smile.

Then, he glanced at Nux and snorted in frustration.

That bastard was really too good with words!

‘Tsk Tsk! Hateful man!’

The last thing he can do is admit that he was trash.

His life would become a living hell if he does that.

In the end, David just sat down on his seat with a dejected look on his face.

Nux smiled and then he walked towards Teacher Evane and smiled,

“Teacher Evane, I will be following you then,”

“Alright.” Teacher Evane smiled and under David’s jealous gaze, Nux and Teacher Evane left the classroom.

...

“Nux...” As the two of them entered Teacher Evane’s office, she muttered.

“Yes, what is it, Teacher Evane?”

“Thank you for standing up for me today.” Teacher Evane smiled and Nux was taken aback.

She really was too beautiful.

“You do not have to mention that, Teacher Evane.

I just couldn't stand the fact that she had the galls to say all that to you, my saviour.

I will do the same thing I did if I have to, no one says anything disrespectful to my teacher and gets away with it."

Nux snorted.

Teacher Evane smiled, however, then, she warned,

"But you have to be careful against that girl, okay? She is quite popular in this Academy.

Also, she is incredibly strong and talented.

I am sure you must have heard about her."

A small smile appeared on Nux's face as he questioned,

"You will protect me if something happens, right, Teacher Evane?"

Evane then shook her head and chuckled,

"Don't depend on me you fool. You should just be careful and not mess with her anymore."

Nux chuckled as well,

"Hahaha~

Don't worry Teacher Evane, I am a very careful person. I won't do something reckless."

Evane seriously doubted what Nux just said, however, she didn't say anything out loud and continued,

"Alright, so what is your question?"

"Ah right," Nux then recalled what he was here for and smiled.

“So the thing is, I know that Fire Burst Spell is strong.

Very strong, I have seen its effect first hand.

However, there are too many problems with it.

First, it takes too much Mana.

Second, it takes too much time.

I am trying to adjust it somehow but I am unable to come up with a way...”

“You are already thinking of using it efficiently huh...” Evane raised her eyebrow in surprise.

“Alright, I understand, you are correct about those faults.

Fire Burst indeed takes too much Time and Mana, however, there is a way to reduce that.

Have you learned the 1-Star Skill, Fire Ball?”

Evane questioned.

“Yes, I have.”

“Good, it will be easier then,

So what you can do is that rather than making a huge Fireball from the start, you can start with a simple Fireball, then, while you shoot, you can inject more Mana into it so that it will burst when it collides with your target.

Though this does sound like nothing special, it will help you a lot if you master it.”

Nux, however, just frowned in confusion.

“I do not understand what you are trying to say, Teacher Evane.”

“Alright, I guess that would be too complicated for someone who just started learning this technique,

Let me slow it down a little.”

# Chapter 248

For the next few hours, Nux and Evane continued to talk about Fire Burst and how to use it efficiently.

And the more they talked, the more impressed Nux got.

Initially, he thought there he won't be able to learn anything major and just wanted to spend some time with Evane so that she gets more comfortable around him.

However, soon, Nux realized something.

Evane has mastered the Fire Burst Skill, a 2-Star Skill to Big Achievement Level.

This was something that almost no Grand Master Stage Cultivator would do.

2-Star Skills simply weren't worth the effort.

It would be a lot better to learn a better, higher grade Skill.

However, Evane still continued to learn it just so she could teach it to her students and help them in some way.

A commendable attitude indeed.

Evane's image in Nux's heart rose by another level today.

However, no matter what, Nux still had to end this conversation.

“Ahh... Teacher Evane... I think I understand it now...”

He had already achieved his goal, he should act cautiously now so that he does not ruin his future plan.

“Good job.” Evane nodded with a smile.

“Teacher Evane, I should leave now. I think I can increase my strength with this! It is a big discovery!” Nux exclaimed as his eyes shined with unconcealed happiness and excitement.

“Alright, I also have to take a class, you should leave now.”

Evane chuckled as she saw him acting so excited.

He was indeed an innocent and curious student.

She liked him a little.

“Alright, Teacher Evane! Thank you for your help!

You are the best teacher ever!”

Nux exclaimed and then quickly left the office.

Evane’s smile widened when she heard his words and then, she sighed.

“Haahh... He is quick to catch on to things and is eager to learn more...

He is a good student...”

Then, Teacher Evane closed her eyes for a little while and took a 15 minutes rest.

...

Time passed, and Nux, who was in his room continued to learn and experiment with the Fire Burst Skill.

He didn’t exactly care about this Skill, however, he required it for the next set of his plans, therefore, he worked hard for it.

Just like this, 8 hours passed by and Nux finally stood up.

He then stretched his body and glanced outside the window.

It was already night and the moon was out.

A smile appeared on Nux's face.

'Perfect timing.'

He then left his room and knocked on the room next door.

“Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*”

A few seconds later, Evane, who was wearing her pale yellow coloured nightgown opened the door and frowned.

“Nux? What happened? Why are you here?”

Nux's eyes shined in delight as he exclaimed,

“Teacher! I was finally able to do what you said! I used the fireball before using Fire Burs-” Suddenly, Nux realized something.

“Ahh, Teacher, I apologize, I was a little too excited and curious so I came here without noticing the time.

I apologize for disturbing you.” He bowed.

“...”

Evane turned silent.

Normally, she wouldn't talk to a student at a time like this, since, obviously, she needs to take out time for herself.

However, for some reason, seeing Nux's excited face, Evane couldn't control herself and muttered,

“Would you like to discuss it inside my room?”

“Huh?” Nux frowned and raised his head in confusion.

“I mean, you are excited to share what you learned with me, correct?”

“I am excited, but I understand it is time for your rest, you work hard for the whole day, I shouldn’t bother you at the night.”

Evane smiled and shook her head,

“Don’t worry, good students are never a bother for a teacher.

Also, I am curious to see what you have learned as well.

Now come into my room, we should not disturb other teachers.”

Nux’s smile widened and he nodded.

“Teacher Evane, you are the best teacher in the Academy.”

Evane chuckled and then, the two of them entered her room.

Nux then started looking around and noticed that there were lots of painting on the walls, then, his eyes fell on a painting on a canvas and paints and his eyes widened in surprise.

“Teacher Evane, you painted that!?”

“I did. Do you like it?”

“What about the paintings over there and the ones on the walls? Did you paint them as well?”

“I painted them all,” Evane nodded.

“Teacher Evane... although I do not know much about the paintings, but I can say for certainty that these are the best paintings I have ever seen in my life.”

“Hahaha~ You don’t have to lie to me like that. These are not that good.” Evane chuckled. Normally, she would ignore compliments like these since most of them are made to please her because of her status, however, this time, for some reason, she actually felt good for being praised like that.

“I do not lie, Teacher Evane. Your paintings are really good.” Nux shook his head.

“Alright Alright, let’s not talk about this right now. You were here because you wanted to show what you learned, correct? Let’s start, I am curious as well.”

Evane changed the topic.

She was bad at taking compliments even though she is a princess.

Nux smiled when he noticed that and nodded.

“Alright,”

Then, a Fireball appeared on the top of his hand and he continued,

“As you said, we shouldn’t make a big fireball from the start.

Fire Burst is a Skill where you solidify a great amount of Mana and then cover it with Fire, then you shoot it on your target, and once it collides, all the Mana explodes.

However, just like you said, the better way to use it is to make a Fireball, then inject more Mana into it and,”

Nux then injected Mana into the Fireball he created and it shot towards the door.

“Boom.

Your attack will work, this way, you will use less time, and since the Mana wasted would be minimal, the output of the Skill would be stronger.”

Nux muttered as his Fireball disappeared into thin air before it could collide with the door.

Teacher Evane, who saw everything couldn't help but blink her eyes in surprise.

“Y-You... how did you do it so quickly...?”

“Hehe~ I still need to work on it a little,

So I will be depending on Teacher Evane's help~”

# Chapter 249

Evane and Nux talked about the Fire Burst Skill and the way to improve it for the next 2 hours, however, then Evane's eyes fell on the clock and she realized the time.

“Alright Nux, it is already late at night, you should go and rest in your room, I need to rest as well.”

Nux frowned, he then looked at the clock and realized,

“Ah, is it that late already? I didn't realize it at all...”

Evane chuckled,

“Hmm hmm, it is good that you are eager to learn more.

But now you should leave.”

“Yes teacher.”

Nux smiled and then stood up.

However, just as he was about to leave, he stopped.

Evane frowned,

“What happened? Why did you stop? Do you need something?”

Nux turned around with a red face and questioned in a mosquito-like voice,

“Teacher Evane... can I take that painting with me...?”

“Huh?” Evane frowned.

“Y-You don't have to give me. I can understand...” Nux quickly shook his head and turned around.

“No, it’s alright, you can take it if you like it so much.”

Nux’s eyes brightened up and he smiled.

“Thank you! Teacher Evane!”

Evane smiled.

Nux then picked up the said painting and left the room.

After Nux left her room, Emilia smiled and then she walked toward her bedroom with a lazy look on her face.

...

Outside her room, Nux smiled as he glanced at the painting he took.

Was he interested in the painting?

Of course not.

He was only interested in the painter, not the painting.

Nux then walked into her room and contacted Amaya.

‘Amaya,’

‘Oh? You finally got the time to talk with me?’ Amaya’s response was lightning quick.

It was as if she was waiting for him to start the conversation.

‘How are you doing, my beautiful and cute Amaya?’ Nux questioned with a smile on his face.

‘Not good at all.’

Amaya answered.

‘It has been 2 days.’

And then she complained.

‘Alright alright, just a few more days, then, I will make it up to you.’

‘You better.’ Amaya pouted.

‘So? Why did you contact me?’ Amaya questioned.

‘Nothing much, I just wanted to tell you that your information about Evane Skyfall was correct, she really likes to paint.’

‘Hmph, of course, I am right. Why are you telling me something so obvious?’

Just as Nux mentioned another girl, Amaya’s tone changed.

Nux already learned about her more than extra possessive traits after talking and staying with her for a month.

It was a scary trait.

Naah, who was he kidding?

It was a trait that he absolutely loves.

Who didn’t like a Yandere who is completely in love with you, and she is a Royal concubine and a princess to boot?

Nux sure did.

‘Evane Skyfall, the Second Princess of the Skyfall Kingdom is the daughter of Emilia Skyfall and the Grand Daughter of Duke Leofrik Vestalis, is someone who can easily participate in the Battler of the throne with her status. Her status is high even if you compare it with other members of the Royal family.’

However, she prefers peace and quietness and thinks that politics and wars are unnecessary and tiring.

This is the reason why she left all the glory and became a Teacher in the Royal Academy.

Her hobby is painting and she...'

Amaya then continued to talk about Evane and listening to her, Nux smiled.

That is what he liked about Amaya.

Even though she was extremely possessive, she would go out of her way to find information about his next 'target'.

A completely contradictory and senseless way of doing things.

But Amaya would do it if it pleases Nux. Of course, she would want accurate rewards for her efforts as well.

She won't do it for free.

She needs accurate compensation in form of bathroom sex in 3 different positions.

Of course, anything above 3 is welcomed as well. It can be counted as a bonus since she is doing such a good job.

'What about your Physique? Did your Mastery level increase yet?'

Nux questioned.

'No...'

Amaya answered with a sad look on her face.

'Don't worry, just continue practising, I know you will get there. I trust you.'

A small smile appeared on Amaya's face,

'Yes, I will practice more.

I have arranged everything, from tomorrow onwards, I would have more time to train.'

Suddenly, Nux frowned.

'Huh? What?'

'Nothing...' Amaya shook her head.

Nux then narrowed his eyes and questioned,

'Amaya, you are not planning to do what I am thinking, are you?'

'I-I am not...'

'You think you can lie to me?'

'I am not lying...'

'When are you starting?'

'Tomorrow...'

Amaya couldn't lie.

'I will be coming to the castle then' Nux muttered.

'No you cannot!' Amaya, however, shook her head repeatedly.

'Why?'

'Have you met the Headmaster of the Royal Academy yet?' Amaya questioned.

‘No, I did not. I tried to find him, however, I don’t think he is here at the moment.’ Nux answered.

‘Then how will you know if [Conceal] will work on the King or not?’

‘It most probably will...’

‘We cannot take any chances here, Nux.’ Amaya’s eyes turned serious.

‘But...’ Nux was still unwilling.

‘No, as I said, you do not know how strong a King Stage Cultivator is, as long as you don’t see the Academy Headmaster and confirm everything, you cannot go in front of the King.’

‘How about I sneak into a Duke’s house?’ Nux questioned.

‘And what if the King Stage Cultivator could see you? What then?’

‘...’

Nux turned silent.

‘Nux, don’t do something reckless.’

Amaya’s voice turned solemn.

‘Can’t you delay it for a few more days... I am sure the Headmaster would return soon...’

Nux muttered.

‘You know I cannot do it.

They are already suspicious.’

Amaya shook her head.

‘Just a few more days will be fine...’

‘Nux.’ Suddenly, Amaya called.

‘What?’

‘You know who I am right?’

I am Amaya Skyfall.

I am someone who has formed the largest information chamber in the world without even leaving the palace.

I know how everything will go.

I know how he will react.

Trust Me.’

‘...’

Nux turned silent and in the end, he sighed,

‘Alright, I will trust you.’

# Chapter 250

The next day, Amaya was lying on her bed with a tired and dull look on her face.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

A few minutes later, Amaya heard someone knocking on her door and a small smile appeared on her face.

‘It is starting.’

She informed.

‘Alright, I am ready, okay? Inform me if something is wrong and I will come right away.’

From the other side, she heard Nux’s worried voice and a loving smile appeared on her face.

‘Don’t worry, nothing will happen,

My love~’

Amaya’s black eyes turned a shade darker when she said those words. It looked like she was possessed.

Honestly, her face was quite scary right now.

‘I trust you, my Love.’

A crazy smile appeared on Amaya’s face when she heard that.

‘Yes, you should trust the love of your life,

You should trust the person you Love the ‘Most’, you shou-‘

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Amaya was brought out of her reverie when she heard the knocks again.

Then, her smile disappeared and a dull and tired look appeared on her face.

“Enter...”

She ordered in a weak voice as Black Mist started oozing out and covering her body.

The doors were then opened and Kelton entered, however, his eyes widened in surprise and horror when he saw Amaya’s state.

Amaya was lying on her bed, with a weak and tired look on her face while black-coloured Mist surrounded her body.

“Lady Amaya! What happened!?” Kelton questioned in panic.

“...call the King...” Amaya ordered in a weak voice.

Kelton didn’t know how to react when he saw her acting like that. However, in the end, he decided to do what she ordered and nodded,

“As you command, Lady Amaya. Please wait for a second!”

Saying that, Kelton quickly left the room and rushed towards the King’s room.

A few minutes later, Kelton rushed back into Amaya’s room and behind her, a black-haired, purple-eyed man entered the room with a calm look on his face.

The man wore a white coloured coat and a red cloak over the top, he had a lean body and although he had wrinkles on his face, he still looked handsome.

He was Ricardus Skyfall, the King of the Skyfall Kingdom.

When Ricardus's eyes fell on Amaya's body, a frown appeared on his calm face and he questioned,

“What happened?” His voice sounded normal, neither too emotionless, neither too worried.

“...have you found the cure...?” Amaya questioned in a weak voice and a dull look on her face.

“No, I have not.” The King answered.

“...any clues...?” Amaya questioned.

“No.” And The King shook his head again.

“...”

Amaya turned silent and closed her eyes.

It was as if she had accepted her fate.

The King did not like this at all. A frown appeared on his face and he questioned,

“What happened? What is this Black Mist? Why do you look so weak?” He questioned with curiosity.

Yes, curiosity, not worry.

In the end, Amaya was just a Trophy.

What? She is sick?

So what? It is the Medic's duty to look after her and cure her, not the King's.

He was just here because he had time to come here, nothing more.

No, he was a little worried though, especially after seeing Amaya's condition.

She didn't look much healthy and that was bad.

She was still an Unclaimed Trophy, after all, if she is going to die, it is better for him to claim her before she leaves this world.

Seeing that his questions weren't answered yet, the King frowned.

“Answer me.”

A sigh then escaped Amaya's mouth and she opened her mouth.

“Look at my cultivation.”

“Huh?” The King frowned, however, since Amaya had turned silent again, he decided to do what she said and observed her closely.

A few minutes later, his eyes widened in surprise, this was the first genuine emotion that had appeared on his face since the moment he entered this room.

“How did you become a Grand Master Stage Cultivator?” He questioned in excitement.

He is sure that this Trophy was a weak Trophy and a Mortal a year ago.

There is no way someone can raise his cultivation in just 1 year, this is simply impossible by normal means.

This meant that Amaya had found a shortcut to cultivating, if he could learn about it, he might break through and become an Emperor Stage Cultivator.

Who wouldn't be excited about that?

However, Amaya's next words broke all his hopes.

“This is not my cultivation.”

“Huh? What do you mean?” The King frowned.

“It is related to my Curse.”

“...” The king stayed silent and waited for her to continue her explanation. Amaya understood that and continued,

“A month ago, my body started acting weirdly and I started feeling unnecessarily heavy. Initially, I just ignored it, thinking it was all because I was overworking and was tired, however, soon, it became something uncontrollable.

My body started turning heavier and heavier and soon, this Mist started appearing around me.

Initially, it used to disappear within 5 minutes and only appears once every three to four days, however, then, it started to appear more frequently.

Every day, then 2 to 3 times a day and then I noticed that more Mist appeared around me, the weirder my Body became.

From a Mortal to a Grand Master Stage Cultivator, I covered that journey in one month, this should be something to be happy about, however, that’s when I realized that this was not my own power.

This was the Curse.

My curse was getting stronger.

And yesterday, finally, it got to a stage where my body is so heavy that I can’t even move now.”

The King narrowed his eyes and then questioned.

“So this Mist, is it from your Curse?”

“Yes.” Amaya nodded and King quickly stepped back and stood a few meters away from her.

“I have been surrounded by this Mist and have stayed in this position for the past 12 hours,” Amaya muttered and after listening to everything, the King only asked one question.

“So does that mean I cannot claim you?”

# Chapter 251

“So does that mean I cannot claim you?”

Yes, that was the only thing he worries about.

He cannot claim Arvina Skyfall for reasons, now if a shiny trophy like Amaya would join her as well then...

It would be disappointing...

“I cannot say for certain.”

Amaya didn't reject or accept.

The best case scenario would, of course, be a no. However, she knew well enough to not reject the king like this.

It is always better than if the King checks it on his own.

“You are not certain?”

The King raised his eyebrow.

“...” Amaya stayed silent, however, the King knew what her silence met.

“Alright, I guess I would have to check it out myself.”

The King muttered and Amaya smiled inwardly.

The King reacted just like she imagined him to.

So does that mean the King would touch her?

Of course not.

She wouldn't have done something like this if that was the case.

“Last time, it was an Advance Stage Cultivator, this time, we will try it with Master Stage Cultivator.”

Yes, the King would make a servant touch her wife.

The King turned around and ordered a soldier.

“Call any Master Stage Cultivator here.”

“As you command, your Royal Highness.”

The soldier rushed out and a few minutes later, a man walked into the room.

The King observed the man and noticed that he was a Master Stage Cultivator.

“You know why you are called here, correct?” The King questioned.

“Yes, your Highness.” The man bowed.

“Alright, you can continue.”

The King nodded.

The man then walked passed the King and moved towards Amaya and soon, a big, evil smile appeared on his face.

Amaya Skyfall, is the most beautiful girl he has ever seen in his entire life. The Queen or any other Royal Concubine were not even close to her when it came to beauty.

Amaya Skyfall’s beauty was simply otherworldly.

And today, he was going to taste this otherworldly concubine.

Does he not know about the curse?

Of course, he does.

He knows that there are chances that he would lose his life due to the curse however, he also knew that even if he survives the curse, the King would kill him in one way or another.

The King may allow another man to touch his trophy, however, he would never let that man live.

There is no way a man like that would exist.

Therefore, he knew he would die either way. He had already accepted that.

However,

He won't die without tasting the forbidden fruit.

He would bathe in the pleasure of sleeping with the most beautiful woman he has ever seen.

Actually, he snorts at the previous man, that Advance Stage Cultivator Bastard who pulled out without even tasting it.

What a loser!

A pussy!

He, however, was different.

He was planning to go all the way and would make sure that the king listens to her wife moaning in pleasure.

Thinking about that, his smile widened even more and he extended his hands towards Amaya's perfect breasts.

However, as soon as his hands came 10 cm close to Amaya's body, the Black Mist surrounding Amaya reacted.

The man noticed a small, disdainful smirk on Amaya's face and his eyes widened in surprise.

However, before he could react, a large amount of Black Mist entered his body. He tried using Mana to block it off however, more and more Black Mist entered his body from his arms, legs, shoulders, and everywhere.

Soon, the man was surrounded by Black Mist.

“AAAHHH!!! SAVE ME!! SAVE MEE!”

The man screamed in horror as everything around him turned black.

He quickly learned that it was better to use more Mana to push out the Black Mist out of his body, however, the amount of Black Mist surrounding his body was too much.

He couldn't deal with that with his Mana alone.

Also, the Black Mist continued to Devour his Organs and his resistance started decreasing.

His hands, feet, shoulders, everything turned grey and soon, his body fell to the ground.

With all his body turned grey, the man didn't have any way to resist the Dark Mist, the Mist continued devouring the Man, his organs, bones, and blood vessels, in the end, nothing of that man was left.

Even his clothes were devoured.

The Man completely disappeared from the room.

There were no traces left at all.

And all of this happened in just 5 minutes.

Yes, a Master Stage Cultivator was completely helpless and died within 5 minutes.

That was how scary the Devouring Mist was.

“ ... ”

The people who witnessed this scene turned silent.

Their eyes then fell silent and seeing the lost, confused, and terrified look on her face, they knew that she was scared as well.

“It has become a lot stronger than before.”

The King commented with a solemn face.

“Indeed.” Kelton nodded in worry.

“The Advance Stage Cultivator died a month after this incident, also, unlike what happened today, his body didn’t disappear.

Your curse has been strengthened for some reason.”

The King turned towards Amaya and muttered.

Hearing his words, Amaya smiled disdainfully.

‘Of course, he died differently.’

The man never died due to a curse.

He was killed.

By her.

Well, she did not do it herself, but she ordered his death.

“... Will I survive?” suddenly, Amaya questioned with a weak look on her face.

Seeing her like that, Kelton’s heart throbbed in pain.

In the end, she was just a little girl.

This curse was too much for someone like her.

Why is fate so cruel to her?

“I do not know. I will continue looking for the cure, you stay here and do whatever you wish.” The King muttered.

After this demonstration, there was no way he would touch this woman.

There are chances that he will survive; however, he wasn't willing to risk it.

Risking his life for a mere woman was a completely stupid idea.

In the end, he could always find another woman.

Amaya, who saw his expression smiled inwardly.

She was correct.

This man did just what she expected he would do.

‘It was successful.’

She muttered and in that instance, she received an answer.

‘Good job,

My beautiful Amaya.’

# Chapter 252

‘It was successful.’

‘Good job, my beautiful Amaya.’

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face as he heard Amaya’s words.

Then, a sigh escaped his mouth.

It would be a lie to say that he was not worried.

He was worried sick.

He doesn’t know much about the King, however, there were chances that someone else would touch Amaya.

Let alone him, even Amaya wouldn’t accept that.

That is why he was so worried.

From what he has learned, that girl was a complete Yandere.

What do you think would happen to a man who tries to touch a Yandere?

He would die.

And what if a Yandere can’t kill the man?

She would hurt herself.

She might even kill herself.

Of course, the situation won’t turn that extreme since Nux would rush there as soon as something happens, however, Nux was still worried.

‘Alright, now I will train the Physique, you do whatever you are busy with.’

Nux then heard Amaya's voice and nodded.

This was all Amaya's plan, after today, no one would doubt her cultivation, of course, she would need to cover herself with Devouring Mist but that was just a form of Training.

Amaya's mastery over Devouring Mist Demon Physique was still just at Acquired Level, she doesn't have a system like Nux where she just needs to press a button and boom, she powers up.

She needs to work hard, walk on the path that no one has ever walked on before and get stronger.

Since the book said to use the Physique's power as much as possible, Amaya would do just that.

She would turn her physique into a curse.

'Alright, take care of yourself, I will meet you soon.'

Nux muttered and then, he broke the telepathic connection.

"Sir, how much time until he wakes up?"

"His injuries were severe, even after giving him a healing potion, he would still need a week to wake up."

A man wearing a white coat muttered.

"A week..." Myrill gritted his teeth in rage.

"The person who attacked him was too ruthless, he broke both his legs and assaulted him even after he passed out.

Not only that, but we found the body a lot later than whenever this happened. All this combined made the bad situation worse." The doctor muttered.

Myrill's eyes turned cold when he heard the Doctor's statement and he growled in anger,

“Just wake up, little brother. Leave everything else to me.

Whoever dared to do something like this,

I will make sure that he pays the price.”

Saying that, Myrill patted Oswald's head. Of course, his words didn't sound very convincing when he himself had burnt marks on his body and there were no hairs on his head.

His own condition wasn't very good either.

‘A week huh...’

Nux thought inwardly and nodded to himself.

A week was enough.

He was sure that he could get close to Evane at that time.

Of course, since he was her student, things would be harder than normal and they won't form an intimate relationship within just a week, however, Nux was sure that he would be able to get close to her.

Thinking about it, Nux left the Medic room and started walking towards his own room.

Everything would be coming together next week, he needs to prepare some more things as well.

After all, if he wants to attract her attention, he needs to make sure that he makes everything entertaining enough.

Nux chuckled and then walked into his room.

...

“Nux, tell me honestly, did Candice come to you to find trouble today?”  
Evane questioned with a frown on her face.

“Hmm? Why do you feel that way, Teacher Evane?” Nux questioned with a frown.

Right now, it was night and he was inside Evane’s room.

How did he enter?

Well, was it his first time?

He had a few doubts related to Fire Burst Skill of course.

“You didn’t have your usual, confident aura around you today. In fact, you looked a little gloomy.”

Evane answered and then, her gaze turned serious,

“Tell me if something like that happened, I can help you deal with it.”

Suddenly, a small, teasing smile appeared on Nux’s face as he questioned,

“Teacher Evane, are you worried about me?”

However, his teasing words did not work against Nux,

“Huh? You are my students, of course, I would be worried about you.”

Nux did not give up and continued,

“Oh ho? Are you sure that it is just because I am your student?”

“What other reason could there be?” Evane questioned with a frown.

Nux observed her reaction and deduced that she wasn’t acting.

She was actually clueless and doesn’t realize that he is flirting with her.

‘She’s unexpectedly innocent huh...’

“I am sure you are worried because I am your favourite student, right?”

“Since when did you become my favourite student?” Evane raised her eyebrow.

“Huh? I am not your favourite student?”

“Of course not.”

“Then who is it?” Nux questioned with a pout.

“I do not have any favourite students. Everyone is equal in my eyes.”

“I never thought you would be like this, Teacher Evane. You are betraying me.” Suddenly, Nux muttered.

“Huh? What do you mean?”

“You are my favourite teacher, so I thought I was your favourite student as well...”

I feel bad now...” Nux pouted even more.

“Stop talking about these nonsensical things, just answer my question.”

“You should not change the topic like this.”

“...”

Evane then glanced at Nux with a look that said, ‘I will get mad now.’

In the end, Nux sighed in defeat and decided to give up.

“She did not do anything, Teacher Evane. I was just worried about something else today, you do not have to worry about it.”

Evane nodded in understanding and then, the two of them continued talking.

The next day, Nux walked into his class, flirt- talked with girls, made the boys angry, and then attended Evane's class.

In the evening, he would enter Evane's room and talk about Fire Burst, and then would talk about any random things, most of the time, the topics would be related to her paintings.

And just like that, a week passed by.

# Chapter 253

“Hmm? Is Myrill still not back yet?” Teacher Evane questioned with a frown as he looked around the class.

She has seen his injury, it shouldn't take more than 3-4 days for him to fully recover, even if he wanted to rest a little, it has already been more than a week.

Shouldn't he come back to the class now?

“Heh. He must be too ashamed to come back.” A student commented.

“Indeed, he was beaten up pretty badly after all.”

“Heh, losing after being the first one to attack, that is quite shameful.”

“Indeed, no matter how much I hate this Nux bastard, I am always grateful since he got rid of a nuisance like Myrill.”

“Indeed.”

The students then turned around, however, they then noticed that rather than listening there talk, Nux was talking with a few girls, completely ignoring what was going on in the class.

“Actually... I take my words back, this bastard is much more hateful than Myrill.” A boy muttered as he glanced at Nux with hatred.

“Indeed. Indeed.”

The rest of the students nodded.

Noticing that another commotion has started because of her question, Evane decided to change the topic.

Whether Myrill attends the class or not depends on him.

It shouldn't concern her.

“Alright, everyone, stop talking, we will start our class now.” She muttered and gained the attention of the rest of the students.

However, before she could start the class,

**\*Bam\***

The doors of her classroom were kicked open by a blue-haired girl.

Seeing the girl, Evane frowned and questioned in a stern tone,

“Candice Water, what are you doing here? Is that a way one should enter a classroom, also, can't you see that I am teaching right now?”

Candice, however, completely ignored Evane's words and pointed at Nux,

“Is he the one who attacked you?” She questioned.

“Y-Yes! He is the one! He attacked me and my friends for no reason and even took my storage ring!”

A 15-year-old student complained as his face turned pale in fear when he saw Nux's face, behind him, two more students of the same age were standing.

“You bastard! You dare attack my little brother!?”

Another angry voice was heard, the class then saw Myrill walking into the class with an angry look on his face.

“Nux Leander, who gave you the galls to attack the student of this academy?” Candice questioned as she narrowed her eyes in a threatening way.

‘Oh ho? Would you look at them go~’

A small smile appeared on Nux's face when he saw what was happening.

Just like the doctor said, Oswald woke up today, of course, many would have questioned who attacked him so brutally and he would have described his face.

There is no way Myrill wouldn't recognize him right away. And he must have already told everything to Candice Water.

Then why was she acting so surprised? Why come here to confirm when they already knew who was behind it?

Well, the reason was simple, they wanted to target him.

In front of all the students.

Of course, Nux had already predicted it.

He was actually happy that everything was going exactly like it should be going.

"Candice, what is the meaning of it? How can you blame my student again?" Evane stepped in, trying to protect Nux.

However, this time, Candice was prepared.

"Huh? I am trying to blame your student? Teacher Evane, I know you favour Nux very much, so much that even after he attacked Myrill, you took his side, but are you seriously going to allow Nux to continue to bully other students in the academy?"

I also heard that you allowed him to live in the room next to you in the Teacher's Abode.

Teacher Evane, Nux is merely a commoner, someone who should have no relationship with you, then why are you going to such a length to protect him?

I heard that you were an honest and upright teacher, then why, wait..."

Suddenly, Candice acted like she realized something and questioned,

“Teacher Evane, you do not have any sort of unspeakable relationship with Nux Leander, a commoner, correct?”

“What the hell are you talking about!?”

Evane retorted in anger when she heard what Candice was talking about.

“How dare you slander a teacher!?”

She couldn't believe Candice said something like this.

However, Candice only smiled at her outburst,

“That is the only logical conclusion I can come up with, after all, a 15-year-old student says that he was attacked by Nux.

Alright, let's leave this topic, you want proof right? I will give you one, I brought a witness he-”

“I do not need any proof.”

Evane muttered.

“Huh?” Candice frowned.

Evane then suppressed her anger and turned towards Nux.

“Nux, you answer me, did you attack this student?”

“Huh!? Why are you asking him!? He, of course, would never accept it!

Was my conjecture all true!? Do you two really have some sort of unspeakable relationship with each other!?”

Candice questioned loudly.

Evane, however, just clenched her fist and tried to ignore Candice's words.

She needed an answer from Nux.

“Yes, teacher Evane, I did attack this student, not only that, I even attacked his friends.”

“What?” Evane’s eyes widened in surprise.

“See? I told you he would never adm- Huh?” Even Candice was surprised, however, soon, an evil smile appeared on her face and she shouted.

“See! I told you he was the one behind it! What are you going to say now, Evane!?”

“N-Nux... why did you...” Evane just couldn’t believe her ears.

However, instead of answering her, Nux stood up and slowly walked toward Candice.

Then, he walked passed her and observed the students that have come here to see what the commotion was about.

“Heehh? You really brought a lot of students with you, huh... Candice.”

Nux commented.

Then, he noticed a familiar figure standing there and waved his hand,

“Manya, how have you been?”

“H-Huh? I-I am fine. W-What about you?” Being pointed out like that, Manya stuttered a little, however, she still managed to answer.

“I am fine as well.

So? Why are you here?” Nux questioned.

“I just saw Lady Manya and noticed that many students were following her, so I tagged along as well.”

“Ahh”

Nux nodded in understanding.

He then turned towards Candice and smiled,

“As I expected, you are good at this, aren’t you, Candice? But...

Are you sure you want to play it like that?”

“Huh? What do you mean?” Candice frowned.

Nux’s smile widened and he shouted,

“You are here, right? Come out.”

“Y-Yes big brother...”

Then, an 8-year-old boy walked out of the crowd and Nux smiled,

“Do you recognize him, ‘Lady’ Candice?”

# Chapter 254

“Do you recognize him, ‘Lady’ Candice?”

Nux questioned as he turned towards Candice.

However, before she could even answer, Nux’s eyes fell on Oswald and his two friends and he questioned,

“Surely you three recognize him, right?”

Oswald and his friends quickly averted his gaze, not answering his questions.

Candice frowned, she felt like she has seen this boy somewhere, however, she could not remember where.

“Hmmm, it seems that you have forgotten about this boy, let me help you remember, ‘Lady’ Candice.

9 days ago, Oswald and his friends joined their hands together and surrounded this boy. Then, they attacked him ruthlessly and took his Healing Potion.

‘Lady’ Candice saw that as well. Right?”

Candice started recalling,

“Ye-” She wanted to answer, however, someone else nodded faster than her.

“Yes, I remember it! It happened a few days ago!” Manya nodded her head.

“Ahh, it seems that you remember, that’s a good thing, what about you, ‘Lady’ Candice? You remember it as well, do you not?”

Candice narrowed her eyes and nodded,

“I do. However, I do not understand why are you bringing that topic today.”

Nux just smiled,

“I happened to be there that day as well, and it was only that day that I learned a life-changing lesson that came from no one else but ‘Lady’ Candice.”

Candice frowned, for some reason, she did not like that smile on Nux’s face.

“In this world, the weak have no right to say or complain about anything, whereas the strong can do whatever they wanted and no one would say anything to them.

This is what you taught me that day, ‘Lady’ Candice.

You said that weak should not complain about anything, rather, they should go stronger and rely on themselves,”

“Yes, I remember that lesson as well, I have memorized it by heart.” Manya nodded as well.

She respected Candice a lot, her every word was like a law to her.

“Indeed, I was there as well.” Another person spoke up and seeing that, more and more students spoke up. They didn’t want to miss the opportunity to impress Lady Candice after all.

“Yes, I was there.”

“Mhm, it was indeed what Lady Candice taught us.”

“True True.”

“Those were wise words indeed.”

The students continued to nod and hearing their words, a big smile appeared on Nux’s face.

“‘Lady’ Candice, I was only following your words when I did what I did to these 3 boys.”

“Huh? What do you mean?” Candice frowned.

“These 3 ‘weak’ students dared to block my, someone who is stronger than them, path. Of course, not only that, they even dared to shout at me in return, the audacity.

I had to punish them.

They needed to be taught, they needed to know that they are weak. They shouldn’t stand against strong, therefore, I beat them up.

I did a good job, did I not, ‘Lady’ Candice?”

Nux questioned with a smile and then, the crowd turned silent.

This man’s words...

Why do they sound so logical?

He was stronger, so doesn’t that make him right?

Why was Lady Candice here then?

Noticing the students’ reaction, Candice frowned and then, her anger exploded.

“Huh!? You fought against Beginner Stage Cultivators when you yourself are an Advance Stage Cultivator!

In what world is that fair!?”

‘Tsk Tsk, what an amature.’

Nux couldn’t help but snort inwardly when he heard Candice’s response.

“Hmm? ‘Lady’ Candice, this boy is just at Apprentice Stage...

3 Beginner Stage Cultivators attacked him together...

In what world is that fair?"

"..."

Candice turned silent.

"..."

Not only her, but even the students also turned silent.

"Royce is just an 8-year-old boy and he was attacked by three 15-year-old boys who were stronger than him,

In what world is that fair?

Rather, isn't me, an 18-year boy attacking three 15-year-old boys fairer?

Don't you think so, 'Lady' Candice?"

Nux smiled.

"No. You were wrong!" Candice didn't step back.

"Oh? How so?" Nux questioned.

"These three are from Earl's House, as for this boy, he is from a Viscount House, which means, this boy is their subordinate and every Master has the right to hit his subordinates.

Also, no subordinate has any right to question his superior's decision."

Nux's smile widened and then he questioned,

"Then 'Lady' Candice, how did you question Teacher Evane's decision?"

"Huh?" Candice frowned.

“Although Teacher Evane’s polite, caring and respectful attitude doesn’t show it, in the end, she is the princess of the Skyfall Kingdom, the Daughter of the King.

Then how did you, a daughter of a ‘mere’ Marquee dare to question her decision? Not only that, you even dared to slander her?

Who gave you the galls to do that?”

“Huh!? Do you not know who Lady Candice is!? She is th-” Myrill wanted to retort, however, Nux suddenly disappeared from where he was standing and appeared near Myrill.

\*Bam\*

Then he grabbed his head and smashed it on the ground.

“The weak should remain silent.

They have no right to speak.”

Nux muttered in a cold voice as he stood up and stepped on Myrill’s head.

Then, his eyes turned towards Candice and he questioned,

“I will ask you again,

Who gave you the galls to go against the Princess of the Kingdom, you bitch?”

Candice’s body trembled when she heard Nux’s words. However, she wasn’t trembling because she was angry, she was trembling because,

Nux’s eyes...

They looked scary...

“A commoner talking with a daughter of a Marquee in this tone, let me ask you,

You gave you the galls to do that, filthy commoner?”

Suddenly, a student who was standing beside Candice stepped up and spoke with a disdainful look on his face.

Nux glanced at his face and recognized him.

He was Candice’s lackey and a Master Stage Cultivator.

As he had portrayed himself right now, Nux cannot win against him, neither in status nor in power, however, that didn’t mean that he was helpless.

He had prepared for this day for a long time now.

“Heeh? A son of a ‘mere’ Earl is talking about status, that’s funny.”

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face when he heard an unfamiliar voice.

‘They are here huh... took them a fucking long time...’

# Chapter 255

“Heeh? A son of a mere Earl is talking about status, that’s funny.”

A voice was heard.

“Who the fuck-” The boy who had stepped up in front of Nux turned around, wanting to curse, however, soon, his expression changed and his face looked like he had just eaten shit.

“Kane, Smith...”

He muttered.

A smile appeared on the boy named Smith’s face as he muttered,

“It is good that you know who we are, son of an Earl.

So I was saying, you have some guts to talk about status in front of a member of Marquee House.” Smith muttered.

“Huh? What?” The boy frowned.

“The member of Marquee house? Isn’t he just a commoner?”

“So what if he is a commoner, Nux is my, Smith Hardwick’s sword brother. Doesn’t that make him a Marquee?

At the very least, he is someone whose status is a lot stronger than someone like you.”

Smith revealed with a smile on his face and the boy’s eyes widened in surprise.

“W-What?”

Nux smiled and walked toward the boy.

“Yes, now little dog, stop barking and embarrassing your owner, stand back.”

The boy gritted his teeth in anger, however, he knew he couldn't do anything here.

Although he was stronger than this commoner, Smith and Kane were different, Smith Hardwick and Kane Bannermane, both of them were Master Stage cultivators, just like him.

Not only that, but both of them were sons of Marquees, he couldn't do anything against them.

Since the two of them were now protecting this bastard, he could only step back and rely on someone else.

“Huh? Did you just call my subordinate a dog?” Candice narrowed her eyes. She had already come out of her reverie and was cursing herself for being afraid of a mere Advance Stage Cultivator.

Nux tilted his head in confusion,

“Didn't you hear?”

Let alone your subordinate, I am calling you a bitch as well, and I have been doing that for a while now, bitch.”

“...”

Again, everyone turned silent when they heard Nux's words and Candice's body trembled again, this time, however, it was from anger.

“Are you two sure you want to protect him?” She turned towards Smith and Kane and questioned.

“Is that even a question? He is my sworn brother after all.”

Smith answered with a smile on his face.

Actually, he would never do something so tiresome as protecting someone who he doesn't even know. However, this time was different, he has received a letter from his father and the way the letter was written, Smith could feel his father's anxiousness.

Kane was the same.

They could feel how desperately their father wanted to protect this man.

Nux Leander was most definitely not a normal commoner.

He must be someone far more terrifying than that.

"Even if it means that you will fall out against the Water House?" Candice questioned.

"You think we are scared of you?" Smith questioned back and Kane stepped forward as well.

Their meaning was clear, just like every other time, Bannermane and Hardwick house were in this together.

The Water's house may be strong, however, they are nothing in front of these two Marquee houses combined.

Candice gritted her teeth in frustration.

The Royal Family and the Dukes never participate in the struggles between any lower-ranking nobles, therefore, in this academy,

Marquees were the ones with the most influence.

She may be a prodigy and her house might be strong, however, that does not mean children of other Marquee houses would submit to her.

She wasn't that influential yet.

Water Family had allies as well, however, allies were only here allies for profit, and their relationship wasn't as strong as the relationship between Bannerman and Hardwick House.

If it all comes down to political struggle, she knows that her 'allies' would leave her side.

After all, no one wants to participate in a fight. Everyone just wants to reap profits.

Bannerman and Hardwick's houses, however, were different.

They would fight out together as if they had an unbreakable bond between them, that is what makes them so strong.

Therefore, Candice knew she can't do anything about all this.

In the end, she turned toward Nux and challenged him,

“Alright, let's end this pointless conversation as cultivators do,

Fight me.”

Nux chuckled in response,

“Man, you really are a two-faced bitch huh...”

“Huh?”

“First, you call me out for attacking 3 Beginner Stage Cultivators while being an Advance Stage Cultivator, but now, you challenge me, an Advance Stage Cultivator while being a Master Stage Cultivator?”

Bitch, are you right with your head and did you damage your brain somehow?”

“Are you scared?” Candice completely ignored his words and smirked provocatively.

But would Nux give into provocations like these?

Of course not.

He still didn't get what he wanted, after all.

“You dared to slander Teacher Evane, she would like to fight it out with you, do you accept?”

“She's a teacher, she isn't allowed to fight against a student.”

“A two-faced bitch indeed.” Nux nodded his head and this time, a few more students couldn't help but look at her with weird expressions on their faces.

Was this really the girl who they called their Goddess? The future pillar of the Kingdom?

Candice's face distorted in anger when she noticed that, and seeing that expression, Nux smiled.

Now was the time.

“You want to fight me, correct?” He questioned.

“I do.”

“I have a way to make it a fair battle,”

“What?”

“Teacher Arvina Skyfall has taken you as your personnel Student, correct?”

“Yes, that is correct.”

“I heard that Teacher Arvina Skyfall is known for her Sword Skill, she must have taught you some, did she not?”

“What are you trying to get at?” Candice narrowed her eyes.

“Why don’t we have a Sword Duel, a Duel where we will not use our cultivation and fight with swords?”

Of course, since Mana has already strengthened our body, we can’t do anything about that, however, we won’t use any Skills in this fight.

We will fight purely with our swords.

And since Teacher Arvina Skyfall is so good with swords, she will act as a judge,

How about it?”

Nux questioned and a big smile appeared on Candice’s beautiful face.

“I agree.”

# Chapter 256

“I agree,” Candice answered with a smile on her face.

“A fight where we do not use our Skills correct? I am perfectly fine with that.”

When it comes to fighting against Star Beasts, humans mostly rely on their Skills, a Star Beast’s body is a lot stronger than a human who has the same level of cultivation.

A Star Beast is Stronger, Faster and sturdier than a human, however, there is one difference, and this is the Mana both of them possess.

Humans possess more Mana than Star Beasts, therefore, humans use Skills to fight and defeat Star Beasts who have the same level of cultivation as them.

Of course, only a few humans who have a high-level Mastery over their Skills, like Thyra, can defeat a Star Beasts this way.

It is not wrong to say that Skills are what divides a normal human cultivator and a powerful human cultivator.

From this, one could understand how important Skills are.

However, this also means another thing,

Without using any Skills related to Mana, the difference in strength between an Advance Stage and Master Stage Cultivator decreases significantly.

Master Stage Cultivators are only a little stronger than Advance Stage Cultivators when it comes to body strength.

Therefore, this battle indeed looked fair from an outsider’s perspective.

However, it was not.

A big smile then appeared on Candice's face as she muttered,

“Of course, since we are going to have a battle, it is only right for us to bet something, am I right?”

A similar smile appeared on Nux's face as he increased the pressure on Myrill's face and answered,

“I had the same thought.”

“Alright, then how about this,

The loser would have to apologize to the winner after the Battle ends.”  
Candice proposed.

“Huh? Just this?” Nux frowned.

He was actually a little disappointed.

Apologize?

What kind of condition was that?

Tsk Tsk.

And as if hearing his thoughts, Candice's smile widened and she conditioned,

“Of course, it won't just be a normal ‘sorry, I was wrong’ type of apology.

Rather, the loser would have to get on his knees and rub his nose on the ground and apologize.

In front of everyone present in the Battle hall, of course.”

Nux raised his eyebrow when he saw that crazed smile on Candice's face.

Wow...

This girl was ruthless huh...

“T-This is too much!” Evane, who was listening to everything stepped forward.

“Teacher Evane, I believe you do not have any right to decide on the content of our bet.” Candice turned towards Evane and narrowed her eyes disdainfully.

She did not like this bitch one bit.

“Teacher Evane,” Suddenly, Nux called.

He then turned towards Evane and smiled politely.

“I am grateful that you are worried about me, however, this bitch dared to slander you. That is something I, as your student cannot accept and would like to see her apologize.

Please do not interfere in this battle.

I hope you put your trust in me.”

Candice’s face twitched when she heard his words, however, she controlled herself and smiled,

“Teacher Evane, even your student wants to continue with the bet, please do not interfere.”

Evane then glanced at Nux and seeing that the latter was nodding, she turned silent and stepped back.

Candice then turned towards Nux and smiled,

“Do not forget about the bet, commoner.

We fight 2 days later.”

“I would like to be the ‘Queen of the Academy’ rubbing her nose on the ground. Heh, won’t it be similar to this dog of yours?” Nux smiled back as he glanced at Myrill who was lying on the floor with Nux’s shoes on his face.

“Uughh!”

The man tried to move and save himself from further embarrassment, however, Nux just increased the pressure and he was forced to turn silent.

Nux then glanced at Oswald and smiled,

“!!!”

Oswald’s entire body trembled in horror and he stepped behind Candice.

Nux then glanced at Candice and smiled provocatively.

Candice, however, didn’t react to his provocations and turned around.

‘Heh. We will see who gets the last laugh, commoner.’

She thought in her head.

She has not forgotten about her vow.

She would make Nux’s life hell, however, she cannot do it if he is part of a Marquee family.

This was why she came up with such a humiliating punishment, once Nux do something like that in front of the entire Academy, the Smith Hardwick would step back and break their ‘sworn’ brotherhood.

No Marquee house would take that Humiliation after all.

And once Smith Hardwick backs away, everything else would be simpler.

Then, she can play around with this commoner’s life as much as she wanted.

As for that bitch who was trying to protect him?

Heh.

There is only so much a mere teacher can do.

There is no way that bitch Evane can protect him if she, the Queen of the Academy was the one who was targeting him.

Thinking about everything, a small smile appeared on Candice's face and she walked away, her followers followed behind her and she ordered.

“Spread this everywhere in the academy, I want every student to know about this.”

“As you command, Lady Candice,”

Her dog nodded respectfully, as for the other dog who was lying under Nux's floor,

She did not care about him.

An embarrassment like him isn't related to her.

Yes, she has abandoned Myrill Bourkee.

Just like that.

“Hehe~ Looks like your owner left you here to rot, little dog.” Nux chuckled as he glanced at Myrill.

Seeing her walking figure, Myrill gritted her teeth.

Let alone saving him, she didn't even look at him!

And that wasn't worse, his brother, that bastard was walking away with her without caring about him at all.

Candice was one thing, but even his own brother had abandoned him.

“Tsk Tsk, and you were so proud about being her subordinate, Earl Bourkee would be so so disappointed.”

Nux chuckled.

“Nux, that is enough, let him be.”

Evane muttered.

“As you say, Teacher Evane,”

Nux smiled.

He had already achieved what he wanted to do after all.

# Chapter 257

“Nux... how are you going to fight against Candice...?” Anna questioned in worry.

This time, she did not use the prefix ‘Lady’ to call Candice.

Her respect for Candice was affected a little when she came to her class and talked back to her teacher, however, that day, Candice managed to recreate her image by apologizing sincerely.

Accepting one’s own mistake was a part of strength as well.

However, today...

Today she saw Candice’s true face.

A power-hungry, arrogant bitch who thinks she is always right.

She was the type of girl who would go against her own principles if that proves her point.

A really hateful character.

And she wasn’t alone, many students, mostly the students of Decade Two, prodigy class thought the same.

Therefore... even though some of them didn’t like Nux, they supported him in this battle.

Seeing their faces, Nux just smiled,

“Don’t worry, I will win.”

“But...”

“Shh... just trust me.”

Anna wanted to counter, however, Nux just told her to be silent.

The girl nodded and then stepped back.

Nux then turned towards Kane and Smith, the two of them nodded to him, he nodded back and then the two of them turned around.

‘Stand up for a student name Nux Leander on Monday morning,

Do not annoy him.

Do not talk to him unless he starts it.

Do not annoy him.

Don’t you dare annoy him.’

This was the letter the two of them had received from their father. They could go against anyone, but not their fathers.

They did not have any death wishes after all.

Therefore, they just nodded and turned around.

Also, they wondered who Nux actually was, but since they can’t do anything now, it was better to just shrug their shoulders and walk away.

Playing with a few women was a lot better than spending time here anyway.

Nux then looked at Evane, their eyes met, Nux knew that Evane wanted to talk about something, however, she held back.

“Alright, I don’t think anyone would have the mood to study after what happened, so I would dismiss the Class for today,” Evane announced.

Everyone then walked away.

“Big brother Nux...” Nux was about to walk away when Royce called.

“Hmm? What is it?” Nux questioned.

“Do you think you can win?” Royce questioned.

Nux smiled as he crouched towards him and questioned,

“What do you think?”

“I think you will,” Royce answered.

Nux chuckled as he ruffled his hair,

“Then what are you worried about? Just go back and play with your friends, no one bullies you now, correct?”

“Yes.” A smile appeared on Royce’s head.

“Good Good, now go back.” Nux chuckled.

Royce left and Nux walked towards his room as well. He wanted to talk to his beloved women a little.

Talking with that bitch ruined his mood, after all, he needs to charge up.

‘Yo hoo~ How are my lovely women doing~’

‘Tsk Tsk, lying on the bed and covering myself with black mist...’

And of course, Amaya was the quickest one to answer.

The other women joined as well and everyone started talking with each other.

Harem Seal was an amazing ability.

...

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

At night, Nux heard someone knocking on his doors. He used his [Sense] out of reflex and a small smile appeared on his face.

He walked towards his door and opened it.

“Teacher Evane? Why are you here? Can I help you with something?” He questioned with a surprised look on his face.

“I want to talk to you,” Evane muttered.

“Please enter.” Nux did not do anything and told her to enter his room.

Evane then entered her room, however, as soon as she did, her eyes fell on a few paintings lying on the floor. She looked around and saw a canvas, in front of the canvas, there was her painting that was hanging on a wall, while the painting on the canvas looked like an incomplete drawing of her painting.

“Ahh, I apologize...” Nux muttered, he was about to step forward to clean everything up, however, before he could, Evane questioned.

“You paint?”

Nux, however, shook his head,

“I do not, I just started it since Teacher Evane liked it, though, as you can see, I am not very good at it”

“Huh? Why would you paint just because I like it?” Evane questioned with a confused look on her face.

“I want to become your favourite student after all.” Nux’s answer was quick.

A small smile appeared on Evane’s face as she questioned,

“How is that related to painting?”

“It’s simple, Teacher Evane like painting, I will learn painting then I will impress Teacher Evane with my painting.

Then, I will become your favourite student.”

Nux answered.

“I don’t think that will work,” Evane muttered.

“Don’t worry, just give me some time.

Maybe a few years,

If I draw at least 2-3 paintings every day for the next few years, I will get better.

I will become your favourite student eventually.”

“Why would you go so far to become my favourite student?” Evane questioned in curiosity.

“Hmm? I don’t know...

Because I like you?”

Nux answered with a confused look on his face.

“W-What?” Evane stuttered due to shock.

This was too abrupt.

And... and why would a student like him...

“Hmm? Why are you so shocked, Teacher Evane? Didn’t I tell you already?

You are my favourite teacher.”

Nux smiled.

“Ahh... so you are talking about that...” Evane realized.

“Huh? What did you think I was talking about?” Nux frowned in confusion.

He really couldn't understand what Teacher Evane was thinking right now.

Teacher Evane on the other hand lowered her head in embarrassment.

‘What the hell am I thinking about...?’

She then glanced at Nux and seeing his confused face, her face turned even redder.

“What are you thinking about, Teacher Evane?” Nux questioned as he brought his face a little close to Evane.

For some reason, Evane's heartbeat quickened.

‘It's all because of that Candice...

Unspeakable relationship, what the hell was she on about!?’

Evane thought inwardly.

A small smile appeared on Nux's face when he noticed her red face,

However, now wasn't the time yet, therefore,

He changed the topic,

“So what are you here for, Teacher Evane.”

Evane then finally came out of her reverie and faced Nux with a serious look on her face.

“Did you really hit those three students?”

# Chapter 258

“Did you really hit those three students?”

Evane questioned and Nux’s face turned serious as well.

“I did.” He nodded.

“Nux, look here, if you are being threatened by someone, you can tell me. I am the Princess of this Kingdom, and I can tell you that my influence is far stronger than you know.

So if you have any troubles, all you have to do is tell me and I assure you I will handle everything.” Evane muttered with a serious look on her face. She really didn’t want to believe that her student attacked those three students.

She has spent some time with Nux, she knows his character a little, and she doesn’t think he was someone who hits someone. Therefore, she doubted that he was being threatened.

“Teacher Evane,” Nux called.

“I did it.” He nodded again.

“I am someone who dared to challenge the so-called Queen of the Academy, inside the academy. I am not scared of anyone, I am not being threatened by anyone.”

Nux answered with a serious look on his face.

“Nux, they were 15-year-old children.

Children.

Why did you hit them so hard?

I talked with the medic, do you know what he said?

He said that the person who attacked those three was simply an inhumane bastard, their legs were broken, there were injuries all over their body, and the worst part was they were left alone for god knows how long!

Why did you do it?"

Evane questioned.

"1 Year."

Nux muttered.

"Teacher Evane, those 'Children' you are talking about, bullied an 8-year-old child for 1 whole year.

And trust me, it was not any bullying normal 15-year children do, it was something far worse.

They humiliated him in front of many students, they beat him up for no apparent reason, they took everything he bought with his hard-earned money and the money his mother sent to him and they did this for a whole, long year.

Not only that, they even dared to talk about his family, they talked about how they were Earls and how his mother was only a Viscount, hinting and indirectly warning him not to complain to the authorities.

Continue this for a few more years and the impact on that child's mind would be so big that his whole life would be destroyed.

This is not something you can just ignore, Teacher Evane.

It won't be wrong to say that those '15-year-old children' tortured him, Mentally and physically."

Nux answered as his eyes shined with rage.

He wasn't nearly done with those Bourkees, however, what happens next would be decided by Felberta, not him.

Actually, he hasn't even told anything to Felberta yet.

He wanted her to see Royce's happy face before telling her what has happened.

Evane, who heard Nux's words was taken aback, she thought about it a little and then, she gritted her teeth,

“But... but couldn't you approach things in a better way...?”

That boy didn't complain to the Authorities, but couldn't you do it in his stead?

Why would you take things into your own hands?

Why not let the authorities do it?

Everything would have been solved more peacefully that way...”

She questioned and a wry smile appeared on Nux's face.

“Teacher Evane... You can talk about things and solve everything ‘peacefully’ because you are the princess of this Kingdom.”

Nux muttered and then he continued,

“With your status, solving things is much easier for you than it is for someone like us.

I apologize if it sounds a little harsh, but the way you think is naïve and a little foolish.

Let's say I had used your way to solve things and complained to the authorities, what do you think would happen?” Nux questioned.

“Authorities would have taken strict action against those three students,” Evane answered.

She wasn't bothered when Nux called her foolish, she wanted to know what he was thinking, she was rather open about it.

“And what is this ‘Strict’ action you are talking about?” Nux questioned.

“They would be expelled from the Academy.”

Hearing the answer, Nux smiled,

“Oh? And then what?”

“Huh?” Evane frowned.

“So you are telling me that the price of destroying the future of a Student is just expulsion?”

Evane frowned.

“What if I bully 20-30 students? What if I make their life worse than hell, destroy their confidence, impact their brain so much that they would never dare to stand against someone in their entire life,

What action will the academy take against me? Expulsion?

Then what about the students who were bullied? What about their destroyed future? Who will compensate that?”

“...” Evane turned silent.

She had no answer.

“This is the reason why I had to take things into my own hands, Teacher Evane.

I had to show him that while being a commoner, I can stand against Earls.

Not only that, I can even stand against someone more powerful than me.

I have to give him hope for his future, I needed to bring back his lost confidence.

And if I have to destroy the future of a few students to do that,

Then call me selfish if you want, but Teacher Evane, I will do it.”

Nux answered as his eyes shined with determination.

Evane was taken aback by those eyes.

That determination.

That will.

If she was being honest, she was impressed and at the same time, the way she was thinking was changing a little.

“Are you related to that boy somehow?” She questioned.

“...he calls me Big Brother,” Nux answered.

‘Though he should be calling me dad soon.’

Of course, he won’t say that out loud.

“So he is like your little brother huh...” Evane nodded.

“Indeed, I won’t go so far for someone I don’t know, Teacher Evane. I would have used your way, I would have complained to the Authorities.”

“...” Evane turned silent as she thought a little more about it.

“T-Then... are you sure you can win against that Candice two days later?” Evane questioned.

A smile appeared on Nux’s face and he answered,

“But of course.”

# Chapter 259

“Hey, where are you going?” A boy named Alex questioned another boy.

“Huh? Were sleeping for the last two days?” Mark answered.

“Tsk Tsk, so you are going to the Battle Hall as well huh...” Alex understood.

Mark then shook his head and a posture appeared in his hand,

“Of course I am, Lady Candice is going to fight someone who dared to break the rules of the Academy.”

“Aha, so you saw that posture as well.”

“It was spread everywhere in the Academy, how can I not see it?” Mark answered.

“Indeed.” Alex nodded his head.

“But I am still surprised, I can’t believe that boy dared to break the rules and then challenged Lady Candice to a Sword Battle.

People like him should be kicked out of the school.”

“I agree.

Well whatever, I heard that he is going to apologize after Lady Candice wins this battle.

So it doesn’t really matter.

He will be punished no matter what.”

“Do you think an apology would cut it?”

“Heh, you think we people will end it there? Let the match end, after Lady Candice is done with him, we will give him our own piece of mind.” Alex smiled.

“Hehe~ True True.” Mark nodded with a similar smile on his face.

“But why are you going there an Hour earlier?”

Alex questioned with a frown.

“Huh? I can ask you the same question,”

“...”

The two of them glanced at each other and in the end, Mark sighed.

“Whatever, let’s not talk about it right now.

Shall we go together then? If we go early, we will be able to get the best seats with the best view,”

“Alright.”

The two of them then rushed towards the Battle Hall, however, as soon as the Battle Hall appeared in front of their eyes, their body froze in shock.

There was a huge line in front of the Battle Hall.

The two of them rushed forward and questioned,

“Oi, why is there such a big line in front of the Battle Hall?” Mark questioned a boy.

A boy turned around and sighed,

“You know about the Sword Duel, right?”

“Of course we do.”

“Apparently, a few people have been here in this Battle Hall from yesterday night, and some joined early in the morning.

The Battle Hall is already full...”

“What!?”

The boy sighed...

Battle Hall had the capacity to fit 5000 Students, which was half of the total number of students in the Academy and no matter how grand the occasion was, the Battle Hall was never filled up to the brim.

Some students even called it the Second Auditorium.

However, today...

“Yes, there are only a few seats left, just get in the line, if we are lucky, we will get those seats if not...

Then forget about it...”

Yes, this time, the number of seats fell short.

That was how strong Candice, the Queen of the Royal Academy’s image and her marketing skills is.

“And we thought coming here an hour earlier was overkill...” Mark couldn’t believe it.

...

An hour later, when everyone settled down inside the Battle Hall, while many students were forced to stay out, Nux and Candice entered the stage.

“Lady Candice!”

“Lady Candice!”

Many cheers were heard.

It was expected.

She was the Queen of the Academy after all.

“Nux! You can do it!”

“You can do it!”

“We are with you!”

However, not everyone in the room was supporting the Queen.

Some supported Nux.

Most of them were the students of his own class, while there were also a few other students who heard what had happened two days ago and disagreed with Candice.

Of course, the students who were supporting Nux were fairly low in number compared to Candice’s fanatics.

“There aren’t many people who want to see you win,” Candice smirked.

Nux, however, did not give in to her provocations and answered,

“It’s not like they are going to come here and fight.”

“Heh.” Candice chuckled.

“I will clarify the rules again,

This would be a Best of Three Battle where the challengers will use wooden swords to fight.

Are you two ready?”

The two of them then heard an emotionless voice.

Nux glanced at the woman standing in front of him and smiled.

[Name: Arvina Skyfall]

[Age: 102]

[Mana Cultivation: Expert.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Vice Headmaster of the Royal Academy.]

[Talent: High]

[LVL: 54]

[HP: 650/650]

[MP: 1100/1100]

[STR: 63]

[AGL: 69]

[VIT: 65]

[STM: 62]

[INT: 110]

[DEF: 55]

...

‘Heh. I finally get to see you, Arvina Skyfall.’

Nux chuckled.

Brown-red, fiery eyes, sword-like eyebrows, light-blonde hair, luscious red lips and a lean physique, the woman was really enchanting; however, together with being beautiful, she also released a ferocious, dangerous aura.

Aura of a Warrior.

A well-trained warrior.

If Thyra gave off a dangerous, silent type aura, her aura was more of a dominant type of aura.

(Picture in Paragraph comments)

“I am,” Nux answered her question.

“Heh. I am ready as well, teacher.” Candice smiled.

“Alright.” Arvina stepped back.

Seeing this, Candice’s smile widened in joy and a wooden smile appeared in her hands.

“What did you say again? ‘It’s not like they are going to fight in your stead’ right? Heh. You wish they would.

At the very least, you wouldn’t have to go through the humiliation you will be going through today.”

Candice laughed disdainfully.

Nux narrowed his eyes,

“What did you say...?”

Seeing that look, Candice smiled even more and started walking toward him,

“I said I will make sure you crawl on your knees and rub your nose on the ground.”

Then, Candice brought her face close to Nux a crazed look appeared on her face.

“I will take everything from you, your self-respect, then your status, your confidence.

I will make sure to bury you so deep into the ground that you will never rise again.

I will destroy you, Nux Leander.”

Nux stepped back a little and gritted his teeth in anger.

Seeing that, Candice’s smile widened even more and she continued,

“Nux Lender, I will make you reg-”

However, before she could complete her sentence, Nux placed his wooden sword on her neck.

“Huh?” Candice blinked in surprise.

However, before she could react, Arvina’s voice was heard.

“Round One ends,

Nux Leander Wins.

Score, 1-0”

...

A/N: If I find a better picture for Arvina, then I might change her looks.

Though I like this picture as well.

# Chapter 260

“Round One ends,

Nux Leander Wins.

Score, 1-0”

Arvina announced in an expressionless tone.

“H-Huh?” Candice couldn’t register what had happened.

And seeing that, Nux smiled,

“Aare you sure you are the Queen of the Academy?

Because, honestly, all I see is a dumb bitch.

I mean, who the fuck talks when they are fighting?

And you did it while coming close to me.

It was as if you wanted me to win.”

Nux chuckled.

“W-What?”

Candice finally registered what happened and her face distorted in anger.

“How dare you attack me like that!?

Weren’t you barking about being fair and just 2 days ago!? What happened!?

Too scared to fight me fairly!?”

“It was as fair as it could get, you dumb bitch, the fight had started.

And from where I come from, we don't really talk with our opponents when we fight each other.”

“Y-Y-You Bastard!” Candice shouted in rage.

“Challenger Candice, the results are announced.

Come back to where your position.”

Arvina muttered and this time, although her tone was still bland and expressionless.

Nux and Candice could feel a little disappointment hidden inside it.

Nux smiled and for Candice, her face distorted in rage, however, she controlled herself and walked back to her position.

“Despicable! How can you do something like that!?” The audience finally realized what happened and someone shouted in rage.

“You call yourself a warrior!? I only see a cheater!”

“Yeah! Cheater!”

The audience started booing and taunting Nux.

Nux then turned towards the audience and shouted back,

“Oh yeah? Do you guys think you are a better judge than Teacher Arvina? Why not come down here and replace her then?”

“...”

The Audience turned silent.

Arvina glanced at Nux and narrowed her eyes.

This guy just used her to deal with the audience, placing her directly against the audience while getting out of the mess on his own.

That is not something one can come up with on a whim.

‘Is he really a commoner?’ Arvina thought inwardly.

Seeing his method had worked, Nux chuckled.

“L-Lady Candice! Don’t worry, he just won the first round on a whim, it is the best of three! You just have to win the next two rounds!”

Someone in the audience muttered.

“Yes, Lady Candice! His tricks won’t work again!”

“Yes!”

“Lady Candice! You can do it!”

The crowd then started cheering for Candice and seeing this, Nux shook his head,

“Tsk Tsk, dumb people supporting a dumb bitch,

An interesting sight indeed.”

“...”

Again, the crowd turned silent and they glared at Nux with rage and hatred.

Candice was the same as well.

She can’t believe that she lost one round.

This should have been a 2-0 match, now it would be 2-1!

And it was all because of this despicable bastard!

“Teacher, I am ready for the next round!”

Arvina turned towards Nux and questioned,

“Are you ready for the next round or do you need some rest?”

Nux shrugged.

“It’s not like I had to do much.

Thanks to you how dumb my opponent is, I am as good as new right now.”

A vein popped up on Candice’s forehead.

‘Hateful bastard!’

Arvina nodded and then she stepped back.

This time, Candice did not repeat her mistake and dashed towards Nux, trying to attack his head.

\*Tak\*

Nux blocked her attacks and their wooden swords collided.

Candice shifted her weight and attacked his waste, Nux moved his belly and attacked Candice’s shoulder which she blocked with her sword.

Candice then tried to kick Nux on his neck, but Nux crouched and attacked her legs.

“Despicable indeed.”

Candice jumped and muttered.

Nux completely ignored her and attacked her legs again,

This little advantage, he won’t leave it so easily.

Candice, however, was better than he thought, she stepped on his sword and then, she shot toward him, trying to end this fight.

“This is the end, you bastard!”

However, then, a small smile appeared on Nux’s face.

This fight was unfair, to begin with.

Unfair for Candice, of course.

She was a Master Stage Cultivator who had the advantage in speed, strength, and defence if she fought against a normal Advance Stage Cultivator.

However, Nux wasn’t ‘normal’.

He was a Body Cultivator as well.

Therefore, he had the complete advantage in this battle.

Seeing her coming towards him, Nux smiled and then, he stepped back.

Candice frowned, however, before she could even realise what had happened, Nux used his wooden sword to smack her face.

“Uuuggghh!” Candice groaned in pain.

Nux, however, wasn’t done yet.

He hit on her hand,

“Aaahh!”

\*Tak\*

The sword Candice was carrying fell to the ground.

And then,

Nux smiled.

“Ugghh!”

“Ugggghh!”

“AAgghhh!”

“Oogghhh!!”

Head, shoulder, arms, legs, he attacked everywhere, however, most of her hits were focused on her face.

And his hits weren't merciful at all.

“Heeh? What did you say?”

You will take everything away from me?”

Nux chuckled as he smacked his sword on Candice's right cheek.

“Ugghh!”

“My self-respect.”

“Ugghh!”

Candice's tooth broke and fell on the floor.

“My status.”

“Aaagghh!!”

“You? You are going to take it from me?”

Nux chuckled as he used an uppercut and punched her chin.

“Ugghhh!”

Candice lost her balance and fell to the floor.

“You think you can do that?”

Nux walked towards her and kicked her face.

“Aaggghhh!!”

Then, he stepped on her head and grinned,

“Do you have the strength to do that? Oh so mighty Queen of the Academy?”

He didn't care if Candice was a girl.

Nux was a believer of equality.

If women have the right to attack men, then men have the right to do the same.

Therefore, he stepped on Candice's face and even used some pressure to pin her head on the floor.

“AAAGGGHHHH! YOU BASTARD!”

Candice, who couldn't take this humiliation anymore roared in rage!

This bastard could have ended the fight, however, he dared to humiliate her!

He dared to step on her head!

There is no fucking way she would let him go!

“[Water Missile]!”

She used her Mana and attacked.

However, before her Skill even activated, a Strong gust of wind nullified her attack and a cold, expressionless voice was heard.

“Challenger Candice Water used Mana.

Disqualified.

Round Two ends.

Score, 2-0

This concludes today's battle.

Winner, Nux Leander.”

# Chapter 261

“Challenger Candice used Mana.

Disqualified.

Round Two ends.

Score, 2-0

This concludes today’s battle.

Winner, Nux Leander.”

Arvina announced in an expressionless tone.

However, again, Nux could notice the slight disappointment in her tone.

Well, he can’t blame her either, Candice was her personal student after all.

He finally stepped away and just smiled.

On the other hand, when her attack was nullified, Candice finally realized what has happened,

“I... I lost...” She muttered, her disbelief was clear in her tone.

“Candice Water, you did not lose.” Nux, however, shook his head.

“Huh?” Candice turned towards Nux and frowned. Actually, his words filled her with some hope.

It was a best of five.

No, it was a dream.

Yes, this was just a bad dream, everything would disappear after she wakes up.

“You did not lose, Candice.” Nux smiled.

“...” Candice glanced at Nux, waiting for him to continue.

“You lost overwhelmingly.”

Nux smiled and then, a mirror appeared in his hands.

Candice then saw her face and her eyes widened in surprise.

Her face was swollen, there were injuries all over the place and there were no signs of her previous beautiful face.

“Yes, you lost overwhelmingly, you weren’t able to land a single hit on your opponent.

If I am being honest, it was a quite pathetic display.

Although I knew you would be nothing much since you were a dumb bitch, I still expected a little better.

Meh, the Queen of the Academy my ass.”

Nux shook his head in disappointment and Candice couldn’t believe her ears.

“...”

Even the audience was silent.

They saw the battle.

It was a completely one-sided battle, Candice stood no chance at all.

All her attacks were either blocked or dodged, on the other hand, once Candice’s sword fell to the ground, everything ended.

After that, she only acted as a punching bag.

She couldn't even dodge Nux's attack.

Let alone the students supporting Candice, even students supporting Nux were surprised by this display.

No one said anything and the battle hall was completely silent.

Until...

“Y-You won!”

A boy shouted.

“Big brother you won!”

Royce shouted on the top of his lungs.

“Yeahhh!!”

“Nux won!!”

Then, Nux's supporters exclaimed in joy and excitement.

“I can't believe he defeated the Queen!” A boy exclaimed.

“Queen my ass! She's more like a dumb bitch!” Another boy retorted.

“Yeah! Even I could beat someone as stupid as her!”

“Hahaha!”

Even some of Candice's supporters started laughing.

In just a few minutes, Candice, the Queen, turned into a dumb bitch.

That is how the popularity worked, there would be people who worship you but there would also be people who would be jealous of you and would do

anything to bring you down.

Now, these kinds of people would emerge and wouldn't stop before Candice's image is completely destroyed.

“Hahaha! Indeed Indeed!

She is nothing but a Two-faced bitch who thinks that the world revolves around her just because she is a little talented!”

“Hmph! I knew someone would show that bitch her place!”

“Hahaha! At the very least, it was satisfying to watch!”

“Especially when that boy kicked her face and stepped on her arrogant face.”

“Hahaha!”

The crowd started laughing.

Arvina didn't care about it, she just walked toward Candice and gave her a healing potion.

Candice took the potion and her face started to return to normal, it was injuries from just a normal wooden sword, something a healing potion would easily deal with.

“Treat this fight as a lesson, there is always someone better out there.”

Arvina advised.

“Yes, teacher.” Candice nodded and lowered her head.

No matter how dissatisfied she was, she cannot go against her teacher's words.

\*Step\*

Candice's eyes then fell on familiar-looking shoes, she raised her head and saw Nux standing in front of her.

“What do you want...?” She questioned in a light tone. Not knowing how to deal with him.

“Our bet.”

Nux smiled and Candice's expression fell.

Arvina narrowed her eyes as well.

Nux noticed the change in Arvina's expression and smiled,

“You aren't going to come between our bet, will you, Teacher Arvina?

If you will, just tell me here and I will step back,

I can't go against the Vice Headmaster of the Academy with my measly status after all.”

Arvina glanced at Nux and then, she stepped back.

Seeing that, Candice's eyes widened in surprise.

“Candice Water, get on your knees and rub your nose on the ground while apologizing.”

Nux ordered in a cold tone.

Candice glared at Nux with eyes filled with hatred and rage,

“You think you can handle to consequences of that!?”

Nux's smile widened.

“I can.

Now do what you are told, bitch!”

Candice turned silent and lowered her eyes.

She could feel it.

She could feel every student looking at her with big smiles on their faces.

They were looking forward.

They were looking forward to seeing the fall of the Queen.

‘Do it!’

‘Do it, Candice Water!’

‘Get on your knees!’

Although no one said anything, Candice could clearly hear their thoughts.

In the end, she couldn’t take it anymore and a stream of tears came out of her eyes.

“P-Please... let me go...”

Please change the content of the bet, you want money right? Tell me how much you want, I will give you anything. Just please...”

She begged in a low voice.

She cannot get on her knees here.

Her pride would break apart, not only that, even her father’s pride would take a huge hit.

She cannot do that.

Nux, however, glanced at her with an expressionless face.

“In this world, the weak have no right to say or complain about anything. Do you know why these students aren’t helping you? It is because you are

weak.

You thought that you could use your status and money to get away from our bet.

That is how the weak think, step up yourself, protect yourself, this is how you live in this world.

Do not rely on anything else because if you do,

You will be squashed by the others.

I am not wrong; I am only showing you how the world works.”

Candice’s eyes widened in surprise when she heard those words.

Familiar, they were very very familiar sounding words, (Refer to chapter 231)

Then, Nux’s eyes turned cold,

“Now get on your knees and rub your nose on the ground, Candice Water.”

# Chapter 262

“Now get on your knees and rub your nose on the ground, Candice Water.”

Nux ordered coldly.

Candice lowered her head in shame and her body started trembling.

The Silent Battle Hall did not help her either,

She knew everyone was looking forward to her fall from grace, however, there was nothing she could do about it.

She knows that the longer she stalls, the more unbearable it will get.

Candice then forced her trembling body to move, then, she placed her knees on the ground and then, she glanced at Nux.

Honestly, she was still hoping that he would stop her...

Maybe he has a secret crush on her, maybe he took pity on her, maybe he doesn't like what she was going to do,

Anything.

Anything random reason was okay.

However, what she saw was nothing but an expressionless look that had no signs of discomfort.

“I do not have all day.” And as if taking away her last hopes, Nux spoke.

Candice's body trembled even more and then, she lowered her head.

Her tears fell on the ground and then, her nose touched the ground.

“I...I apologize f-for m-my actions...”

Saying that, Candice rubbed her nose on the ground while her body continued to tremble in shame and anger.

“ ... ”

Then, she waited for Nux’s reply.

She did her part, she just wanted to end everything now.

She didn’t even dare to look around, she didn’t need to look, she could feel those smirks on the faces of students.

Those smirks of the people who used to praise her as their Queen stabbed her body with immense pain and anger.

Nux then turned his head towards the audience, and then his eyes fell on Royce.

He nodded at Royce and the boy nodded back.

Then, he turned around and walked away.

Yes, he did not answer Candice, he didn’t care about that bitch one bit.

He left her alone.

Candice’s body trembled even more, however, she didn’t say anything.

She was too ashamed to do anything.

“Wait.”

However, just as Nux was about to leave the Battle Hall, Arvina called.

“Is there anything I can help you with, Teacher Arvina?” Nux questioned with a smile on his face.

Arvina then turned towards Candice and instructed.

“This is enough, you can stand up now.”

Candice nodded and stood up as quickly as possible.

Then, as if trying to avoid all eyes looking and gloating at her, she walked towards Arvina and stood behind her.

Arvina then turned towards Nux,

“You must be tired after your fight-”

“No, not really, she didn’t really pose any challenge.”

Nux shook his head and shrugged his shoulders nonchalantly.

“You must be tired after your fight with Candice, therefore, I won’t say anything to you today. However, 2 days later, I want you to come to my office.

Is that clear?” Arvina questioned.

Hearing her words, Candice’s eyes brightened in joy.

‘Is she going to take revenge for me?’

She thought inwardly and rejoiced, however, soon, she shook her head.

‘There is no way Teacher is going to do something like that.’

Nux didn’t break any rules today, and Arvina was the last person to show favouritism.

Candice knows her teacher well, there is no way she would take her side in this incident.

Then, Candice frowned,

‘Why is she calling him to his office then?’

Nux had the same question in his mind,

“Can I know what it is for, Teacher Arvina?” he questioned.

“Are you scared that I will act against you for the sake of my student?” Arvina questioned with a provocative smile.

“No, not really. I have heard about you, Teacher Arvina, you are an honest and just person.” Nux shook his head.

“Rumours can be wrong, you know?”

“I trust my source of information.” Nux smiled and then, he continued,

“Of course, if I am wrong and you actually do want to take action against me, I can’t really do anything to defend myself now, can I?

I am just a powerless commoner after all.”

A small smile appeared on Arvina’s face when she heard Nux’s reply.

“Alright, enough chit-chat.

I want you in my office 2 days later, is that clear?”

“Yes, teacher.”

Nux nodded.

Arvina nodded and then, she turned around and left. Candice, of course, followed behind her.

There were a lot of things in her mind right now.

Also, this was the only place that can save her from immense shame, for now at least.

Nux then walked away as well however, just as he left the Battle Hall, he saw Evane standing right in front of him.

“Teacher Evane, I won.” He smiled.

“I saw.

I can’t believe you actually did it.” Evane smiled.

“Hehe~ I told you right?

It was a walk in the park.” Nux chuckled and Evane couldn’t help but shake her head.

“You do realize what you have done, right?”

“Heh. I defeated the Queen of the Academy.” Nux answered.

“That is true, however, that is not the most surprising part,

You defeated a Master Stage Cultivator while being an Advance Stage Cultivator...

Nothing like this has ever happened before.

You have created history!”

“It was not like it was an actual fight though, we didn’t use skills.”

Nux shrugged.

Of course, staying humble is the best way to garden as many compliments as one can.

Ahem.

“It doesn’t matter! You defeated a Master Stage Cultivator! This is worth celebrating!” Evane exclaimed in joy.

“Heehh? Teacher Evane, then are you treating me for food?”

“Aren’t you the one who won? Shouldn’t you be the one to treat your teacher here?” Evane questioned.

“Alright, I’ll treat you, Teacher Evane.” Nux nodded.

“Oh? Really?”

“You think I would go back to my words?” Nux questioned.

“Don’t regret it then.”

“Heh. I won’t.” Nux nodded.

“Alright, then let’s call the rest of your classmat-”

“Huh? When did I say I will treat them as well?” Nux questioned.

“Huh? They are your classmates, are they not?” Evane frowned.

“They are, but they are not my favourite teacher,” Nux then moved his face close to Evane and whispered.

“Teacher Evane, this offer is exclusive for you and you only~”

For some reason, a tinge of red appeared on Evane’s face.

Nux then extended his hands towards her and smiled,

“Shall we go now?”

“A-Alright.”

# Chapter 263

Nux then extended his hands towards her and smiled,

“Shall we go now?”

“A-Alright.”

Evane didn't know what was happening, for some reason, when she heard that this deal was exclusive for her, she blushed and stepped back.

Nux then moved forward and extended his hands towards her and her heart started beating for some odd reason.

He was just a student offering a treat to her teacher after winning a duel, why was she acting like that!?

And since her mind was preoccupied with these weird thoughts, she couldn't think properly and accepted Nux's offer so that she can deal with the awkwardness.

She then grabbed the Nux had extended and the two of them started walking towards the Academy's Canteen.

While holding each other's hand.

This caused Evane to blush even more, however, since she had already accepted Nux's hand, she couldn't go back on her words anymore. He would feel awkward if she does that.

Therefore, Evane just closed her eyes, tightened her grip around Nux's hand and continued walking with him.

Seeing her expression, Nux smiled.

...

A few minutes later, the two of them were sitting inside the Academy's Canteen and since most of the students were still stuck in the Battle Hall, the canteen was pretty much empty.

Giving Evane and Nux all the privacy they need.

This calmed Evane down as well.

Nux then picked up the menu and gave it to Evane,

“Teacher Evane, please order anything you like.”

Evane smiled, she then gave her order and then turned towards Nux,

“What about your little brother? Is he fine now? Or is he still being bullied?” Evane tried her best to act normal.

Nux understood what she wanted and smiled,

“Yes, he is not being bullied anymore.”

“Why didn't you bring him here with us?” Evane questioned.

“Hindrance.”

Nux mumbled.

“What?” Evane couldn't catch what he said,

“Ah, I nothing. I meant that I want him to be alone for a while and think about his future steps. I can't help him there in this process.

I have done all I could, I have given him a big enough example, from here on, it's all on him.

Whether he would come out of his shell, or remain there for the rest of his life, it all depends on him.

I do plan to bring her to his mother though.”

Nux answered.

“Hmm? You are going to leave with him?”

“Yeah, I am planning to take a leave for a few days and go with him. I might as well meet his mother now.”

Evane nodded and then questioned, “When are you going to leave?”

“Two days later, after I meet Teacher Arvina.”

“Huh?” Suddenly, Evane frowned.

She had already left when Nux won, she didn't have the heart to see a student going on her knees, even though that student disrespected her.

Therefore, she didn't know anything about Arvina's instructions.

“Why would you go there?” She questioned.

Nux then told her everything that happened and then, Evane frowned even more.

“Why would she tell you to come to her office...?”

Seeing her expression, Nux frowned,

“Hm? Why are you acting so weirdly, Teacher Evane? Teacher Arvina isn't planning to do anything to me, is she?”

He questioned.

Hearing his question, Evane shook her head,

“Don't worry, she is fair and just, she won't do anything to you. She's the last person who would trouble someone just because he/she defeated her student.”

“But I heard that she was a man-hater...”

Nux questioned.

“You are rather well informed huh...” Evane glanced at Nux and then, she continued,

“Well, she can be called a man-hater, but as I said, she won’t do you any harm if you don’t provoke her.

Usually, she just gives any man a cold shoulder, even if it is her student. Of course, if you have any doubt, then she would answer your queries regardless of your gender, however, if you say anything useless, she will ignore you.

The reason I am so surprised was that she has never called for a male student inside her office on her own. This is the first time.”

“Ahh, was she charmed by my handsome face?” Nux questioned with a playful smile.

Evane then looked at him with a deadpan expression on her face as she warned.

“Yes, this is a good example, she usually ignores statements like these. So don’t say anything like this to her if you don’t want a cold shoulder.”

“Hm hm, I got it. So in conclusion, Teacher Evane is the best teacher one can get.” Nux nodded.

“...I don’t know how you came to that conclusion but thank you.” Evane smiled a little.

“Teacher Evane, can you give me some tips on how to not annoy Teacher Arvina? That would be helpful.

I would rather not lose my life there.”

“Look at you, acting all scared.” Evane chuckled.

“She’s not a blood-thirsty monster, don’t worry, she won’t harm you.”

“I don’t want any cold shoulders either.”

Nux muttered.

“C’mon, Teacher Evane, help your favourite student.” Nux requested.

Evane shook her head in defeat and sighed,

“Look, dealing with Teacher Arvina is easy.

You go there, she asks you a question, and you answer it in the shortest way possible, without any useless words.

Then she asks you a few more questions, you answer them all and you come back.

Simple.”

“Hmmm, that’s rather vague...” Nux muttered with a frown.

“Well, that is the only way to do things, as I said, as long as you don’t say anything useless, you will be fine.”

“It’s not like I say anything useless anyway, do I?” Nux smiled innocently and seeing that innocent smile, Evane shook her head.

“Why do I feel that this meeting of yours won’t be any good...?”

“Ahh, don’t worry, Teacher Evane.

I promise you, this meeting would be so good that Teacher Arvina would even praise me many many times.”

Nux smiled and Evane...

She felt like Nux’s words had another meaning behind them.

# Chapter 264

Arvina Skyfall was the Vice Headmaster of the Royal Academy, so of course, she was different from other teachers.

Therefore, when they say Teacher Arvina's Office, they don't mean a single room with a table and a few papers,

They are talking about a fucking mansion that has servants working everywhere.

And right now, Nux was standing in front of this big mansion.

"Is there anything I can help you with?" As Nux was walking inside, a servant came up to him and questioned him.

Nux was about to nod, however, then his eyes fell on someone and he smiled,

"I was called here by Teacher Arvina, but you don't have to worry, I know how to get to her office."

"Alright."

The servant nodded and then walked away.

Nux smiled, he then walked towards a certain blue-haired girl who was swinging her sword without stopping.

It has been two days after Candice's spar with Nux.

And, Candice's fall from grace.

The news about Candice's defeat has already spread all over the academy, heck, it has even left the academy and most of the noble houses have learned about it.

Of course, this piece of news wasn't alone, it came with how Candice lowered her head in front of a commoner.

Not only that but why and how the Battle started was told to everyone as well.

However, this time, Candice was the villain.

Protecting the bullies just because he was the younger brother of her subordinate, fighting against someone who only took avenged the person being bullied, defaming Teacher Evane.

All these charges came together and completely destroyed the image she has created for so many years.

As they say, the higher you rise, the harder you fall.

Candice's situation was a prime example of that.

And that is why Candice hasn't left her teacher's mansion for 2 days now.

She has decided that she won't make a public appearance as long as she doesn't become an Expert Stage Cultivator.

That is the only way she can wash away her shame.

As for taking revenge...

Well, she was thinking of ways to get her revenge, however, 2 days ago, Arvina visited her room at the night and warned,

'Do not do anything foolish,'

This was the first time Arvina warned her about anything and with how scary her eyes looked, Candice knew that he was pissed.

Therefore, Candice pledged to not do something stupid.

She can take her revenge when she is an Expert Stage Cultivator and is stronger than her teacher. However, before that,

She would just lay low and won't talk to anyone else.

Of course, not everything works in the way you want it to work.

“Yoo! Ex-Queen of the academy, how are you doing, bitch?”

Candice heard a voice, she then turned round and saw the face of the man she absolutely hate to her core.

“What is it?” She questioned.

As for his provocation,

No, she won't give in.

“What? Did I hit you too hard by any chance? Did you get dumber in these 2 days?”

Candice's face twitched, however, she still controlled herself and questioned,

“What do you want?”

“Damn, you really got dumber huh...”

Well whatever, I am here to meet Teacher Arvina.” Nux answered.

Candice then finally recalled that her teacher invited this bastard here,

“You can ask the servant working there, he will take you to her office.”

Candice pointed at the servant who was cleaning the floor.

“Ahh, but he is working, I didn't want to disturb him...” Nux muttered.

“...”

Candice then looked at Nux for a while and then pointed at another servant.

“What about that servant, he isn’t doing anything.”

“She looked like she was having rest after working so hard, so I didn’t want to bother her either.”

Nux answered.

“Do I look free to you?” Candice questioned.

“Well, yeah, you were just practising your sword techniques... So I thought you were free...”

Candice’s face twitched.

She took deep breaths to control herself and then, she forced out a smile.

“Do you think practising sword techniques is being free? Do you think it is useless?”

“Well, not really, but for someone like you, isn’t it useless?”

I mean, you lost to an Advance Stage Cultivator while being a Master Stage Cultivator...”

Nux answered.

“Follow me!”

Candice roared and then she started walking.

Nux chuckled and followed behind her.

Then, the two of them appeared in front of a room and Candice glared at Nux.

“Go inside! Teacher is inside!”

Then, she walked away.

“Fucking Bastard!! Just let me become an Expert Stage Cultivator! Once I do! Even that Marquee wouldn’t be able to do anything!

Fuck you!!”

After coming back to where she was training, Candice roared in anger.

It was completely impossible to hold back in front of that bastard!

What a poisonous tongue that bastard has!

Candice then picked up her sword and started swinging it angrily.

...

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

On the other hand, Nux knocked on the door and heard a voice.

“Who is it?”

“Nux Leander,”

Nux answered without any introduction.

His face wasn’t that forgettable, was it?

“Come in.”

It wasn’t.

A smile appeared on Nux’s face as he entered Arvina’s office.

“Hello, Teacher Arvina.” Nux greeted with a smile on his face.

Right now, Arvina was sitting on her chair, wearing a white shirt and black waistcoat half jacket over the top, her left leg was on the top of her write

and she looked at Nux with her fairy brown-red eyes.

“You are here.”

“I would be a fool to not come when you called me, Teacher Arvina.”

Nux answered and if Evane was here, she would have shaken her head and would have sighed,

‘I only gave you one suggestion,

That was to not speak useless things in front of her.

How hard is that?

How can you not follow such a simple advice!?’

Arvina raised her eyebrows at Nux’s words, however, she decided to ignore them,

“Good.”

Nux nodded and then he smiled,

“So can I know what you called me for, Teacher Arvina?”

Arvina then stood up from her seat and walked towards Nux.

“Nux Leander, I want you to spar with me.”

# Chapter 265

“Nux Leander, I want you to spar with me.”

Arvina muttered as she stood up from her seat and walked towards Nux.

“Huh?” Nux frowned and then, he smiled,

“Teacher Arvina, there are better ways to take revenge for your student, you know?”

I mean, you, as an Expert Stage Cultivator asking an Advance Stage Cultivator to spar is a little...”

“Trust me, if I wanted to take revenge, I would have beheaded you right here and right now, and no one would have said anything to me.” Arvina retorted.

Nux turned silent.

Just like Amaya said, this woman was too direct and her hatred for men was apparent.

I mean, what sane teacher talks about beheading her student right in front of him?

Someone like Arvina can easily overwhelm a normal student just by her presence.

Of course, Nux was different.

No matter how dominant Arvina’s aura was, there was no way she could overwhelm someone who was stronger than her.

“What do I get in return?” Nux questioned.

“Huh?” Arvina frowned.

“What do you mean?”

“Sparring with you isn’t exactly easy, Teacher Arvina.

If I do it, what will I get in return?” Nux questioned.

“Of course, you can also threaten me with your status and strength, but rather than going through that troublesome process, it is just better to just bribe me with something.”

Arvina narrowed her eyes.

“Don’t you value your life? Or do you like getting threatened by others?”

Nux chuckled,

“Of course, I value my life, however, I won’t be threatened by others.”

Nux narrowed his eyes as well, “I would rather die than live like a coward.”

Arvina was taken aback by his response, however, soon, a small smile appeared on her face before it disappeared the next second.

Of course, that second was enough for Nux to catch it.

‘Got it.’

He smiled inwardly when he noticed that smile.

It was a long shot, but he was successful in the end.

Arvina Skyfall was a warrior, what does a warrior like the most?

Pride and Fearlessness.

Of course, Nux calls it arrogance and foolishness, but if it impresses Arvina even a little, then they are pride and fearlessness.

“What do you want? If it is something reasonable, I will give it to you.”  
Arvina replied.

“I want you to become my Teacher.”

“Huh?” Arvina was taken aback.

“Fighting against Candice made me realize that I might not be as good as I think I am. My swordsmanship is... unrefined.

So I want you to teach me,”

Nux explained his reasoning.

No, he wasn't doing this just because he wanted to spend more time with Arvina, well, that was 90% of the reason, however, the other 10 % was because he actually wanted to learn from her.

So what he said was genuine.

And Arvina sensed that and nodded,

“It is good that you can think about improving yourself even after winning the match against Candice.”

Nux shook his head,

“She wasn't someone who can be seen as a threshold, there are a lot stronger people than her out there. She was just too weak, there is no point celebrating a victory against someone like her.”

“You do realize that she is my student, correct?” Arvina questioned as she narrowed her eyes.

“Bad Student.”

Nux answered.

“Arrogant, selfish and wastes a lot of time on useless stuff. Heh. Queen of the Academy? What kind of bullshit is that? Whenever you see her, you find her walking around with a few of her dogs following behind her.

A girl who has no understanding of how the world works and just likes to live in that fake ‘Kingdom’ she has created in her own mind.

She is the prime example of a bad student.

I, however, am different.

At the very least, I won’t lose to some random student even whom I have challenged on my own and spoil your name.”

Nux answered and a smile appeared on Arvina’s face and this time, her smile did not disappear.

“Alright, I’ll take you as my personal student.”

Nux smiled,

“Than-”

However, before he could complete, Arvina brought her face dangerously close to his and smiled,

“However, your words have made me a little too excited.

So if you fail to live up to my expectations, do not even think about getting away scratch free.”

For some reason, Nux’s heart skipped a beat when he heard those words.

\*Gulp\*

He gulped.

He felt that he has done something he shouldn’t have done.

However, he soon came back to his senses and nodded,

“I will not disappoint you, teacher.”

Arvina finally backed away and then, her face turned serious,

“Alright, now as your teacher, I would like to point out a few things I found about your fighting style.

As you said, your fighting style is unrefined.

You are not well trained, you were not taught by anyone.

Of course, since you were a commoner, I would say that you had no one to teach you.

Whatever you know comes from experience, you have used your sword and fought many life-threatening battles.

If I were to guess, you have visited Bloodhill Wilder quite a few times and have trained there.

Am I correct?”

Nux blinked a few times and then, he nodded.

Arvina smiled and continued,

“Fighting against humans and star beasts is completely different.

Humans are intelligent, while Star Beasts have a fixed pattern, humans are unpredictable, and every human has a different fighting style.

This is why, whenever you fight against a human, you would realize that some of your moves, that the beasts generally won't block, will be blocked and countered by humans.

That is why you feel that your fighting style is unrefined.

You lack training, so finding a teacher was a wise decision.”

Nux nodded in agreement.

Suddenly, a wooden sword appeared in Arvina’s hands and she pointed it at Nux.

“I also have another theory in my mind, however, I am still not sure about this.

That is the reason why I wanted you to spar with me.”

# Chapter 266

‘Huh? Is she actually avenging me?’

Are my eyes playing any tricks on me?

No no no no, there is no way teacher would do something like that.

Wait... did he somehow offend her with her words?

That does sound like something that could happen, his tongue is poisonous indeed.’

A small smile appeared on Candice’s face as she watched Arvina and Nux standing in front of her with wooden swords in their hands.

‘Heh, you finally get what you deserve, you bastard!’

Candice laughed inwardly.

Actually, she wanted to laugh out loud, however, if she did, her teacher would find where she was hiding and would change the location.

She was now sure that her teacher was a shy type of person.

She won’t help her in front of her, however, she would avenge her behind her back.

Hehe~ Her teacher was amazing.

Candice laughed inwardly and looked forward to this battle.

“Shall we start now?” Arvina questioned.

“Yes, teacher,” Nux answered.

“Alright, attack me with everything you got,” Arvina instructed.

Nux nodded and then he rushed towards Arvina and aimed at her head. Arvina, of course, blocked the attack with her sword.

Nux didn't give up, another sword appeared in his left hand and he attacked her waist.

Arvina raised her eyebrow in surprise and then, she stepped back and dodged the attack.

“You use two swords?” Arvina questioned in surprise.

“I use anything I can to defeat my opponent, swords, dagger, spears, stones, fist, anything.”

Nux answered and a smile appeared on Arvina's face.

“Alright, come at me then.”

Nux nodded and then, he dashed towards her again, he first aimed at her feet, Arvina raised her leg to dodge the attack, having already anticipated that, Nux stepped forward and attacked her other leg.

Or so he wanted to, however, there was already a sword that was placed on his neck.

Forcing him to stop.

“Don't just think about your own tactics, think about what your opponent might do as well. You gave me too much time here.”

Nux nodded and stepped back.

He then dashed towards her again and repeated the same move, Arvina raised her leg to dodge and this time, Nux crouched and tried to attack her remaining leg with his right leg, Arvina, however, stepped aside and placed her sword on Nux's neck again.

Or not...

Before she could do so, Nux crawled over and created some distance between the two of them.

Arvina didn't want to miss this opportunity, so she rushed toward him however, Nux quickly threw dust on her face, trying to blind her.

Of course, this trick doesn't work against someone like Arvina, she quickly stepped away and waited for Nux to stand up.

“Despicable attack.”

She smiled.

“As I said, I'll do anything to win, I am not a noble knight,” Nux answered and although Arvina didn't like this answer and what Nux did, she accepted it.

It made his story feel more real, tactics like these are what many adventurers who hunt Star Beasts use, so she had expected something like this from Nux.

“You are a lot stronger than I expected, Candice stood no chance against you.”

Arvina muttered.

“As I said, defeating her wasn't anything to celebrate.

Candice wasn't even a competition.” Nux smiled and Candice, who heard everything from afar, gnashed her teeth.

‘Hateful bastard!

I hope you die as painfully as possible!’

“Alright, now I will be the one attacking you, get ready,” Arvina muttered and a smile appeared on Candice's face.

‘Heh, even teacher didn't like what that bastard said huh...’

Arvina then rushed towards Nux, of course, it was a spar so she didn't use her full speed.

She was an Expert Stage Cultivator, there is no way an Advance Stage Cultivator would be able to defeat her, therefore, she held herself back.

She aimed at Nux's waist, Nux reacted quickly and moved his body, then, he tried to aim at Arvina's neck.

The best defence was an attack!

However, this time, Arvina didn't step back like before, she just tilted her head a little and then, she attacked Nux's shoulder.

She didn't lose this lead, she moved her sword and targeted Nux's knee, her speed wasn't fast, it was similar to Nux's speed, however, her attacks were still hard to dodge.

Nux was barely hanging on, and that was because his senses were a lot stronger than normal.

He was a Grand Master Stage Cultivator after all.

Nux dodged Arvina's attack and saved his knee, then, he used his sword's hilt to attack Arvina's neck, she shifted her body and let him attack her shoulder instead.

And at the same time, she punched Nux's chest.

Nux reacted quickly, however, he noticed that there was nothing he could do to stop this punch. His right hand was near Arvina's face, while his left hand...

Well, it was completely out of the battle area since he was trying to summon another sword in that hand.

In the end, Nux could only tilt her body a little and the punch connected.

“Ugghh!”

Nux groaned in pain as he was forced to take a few steps back.

“That hurts...” he groaned and then he glanced at Arvina, however, he was surprised to see a shocked look on her face.

Suddenly, Arvina disappeared from where she was standing, Nux’s eyes widened in surprise, he quickly turned around and blocked her attack with his sword.

Arvina however, wasn’t done yet.

She used dragged her sword down and attacked Nux’s feet, Nux wanted to do a backflip to dodge that attack, however, his cultivation was restricted, his body couldn’t react as fast as his mind and Arvina’s sword hit his ankle.

“Aaahhh!”

Nux grabbed his ankle and jumped a few times, trying to cope with the pain.

“Teacher Arvina, that really hurts!” He complained.

However, he frowned when he saw the surprised look on Arvina’s face.

Soon, the surprised look disappeared and she closed her eyes,

“As I expected,” She muttered.

“What?” Nux frowned.

Arvina then opened her eyes and glared at Nux,

“You are not an Advance Stage Cultivator, what is your actual cultivation?”

# Chapter 267

“You are not an Advance Stage Cultivator, what is your actual cultivation?”

Arvina questioned as she narrowed her eyes.

“Huh? What are you talking about? How can one hide his cultivation? And why would I even do that?”

Nux frowned.

Was [Trickster] not working anymore?

Was he out of Mana?

No... he still has plenty.

Then how did she find out...?

“Don’t try to hide it from me, I don’t know how you did it, but I’m sure you are hiding your original Cultivation.”

Arvina muttered and Nux frowned even more.

His Trickster was working fine...

Then how...

“Your reaction speed is a lot faster than normal.

Your eyes react to changes a lot sooner and your body is often unable to catch up to your senses. This only happens when one suppresses his powers.

I noticed something like that earlier with your battle with Candice as well, however, I still wasn’t sure about it at that time, now, however, I am 100%

sure, you are hiding your cultivation.”

“ ... ”

Nux turned silent.

He didn't know he would be exposed too soon.

He has barely been in this academy for 2 weeks...

Just how can someone do something so badly?

“Nux, you didn't answer my question yet.

What is your actual cultivation?”

Arvina questioned again.

This time, Nux knew he couldn't hide it therefore, he just sighed.

“I would rather talk to you alone, Teacher.”

“Huh? What do you mean?” Arvina frowned.

Nux then turned his head towards Candice and muttered,

“Come out.”

Candice panicked.

‘How did that bastard find me!?’

She wondered in her head.

However, she didn't move.

That bastard might be bluffing.

She won't fall for that.

She wasn't stupid!

“Are you trying to change the topic?” Arvina frowned.

Nux then sighed,

“Candice, I can see your shoes, come out now.” Of course, he didn't see any shoes, his [Sense] warned him the moment Candice decided to hide herself behind the bush.

He knew she was here from the beginning but didn't care enough to say anything.

Now, however, things were different.

This time, Candice's body flinched and she moved a little.

This little movement was enough for Arvina to know that someone was hiding behind that bush.

“Candice, come out. Now.” She instructed in a strict tone and Candice finally stepped out and appeared in front of them.

“What are you doing here? Didn't I tell you to go practice your sword techniques?”

“I-I saw you two coming here and got curious...” Candice answered.

Arvina sighed in defeat and then, she turned towards Nux,

“I need to talk to you about something, follow me to my office.”

She then turned towards Candice,

“As for you...” Arvina wanted to tell her to go back and practice again, however, in the end, she just sighed.

“Do whatever you want, I don't really care.”

It was not like Candice would hear what she will say...

Just like Nux said, she was too arrogant and often neglects her training because of how talented she is.

Disappointing indeed.

Thinking that, Arvina turned around and walked away.

Seeing her like that, Nux smiled a little.

If Arvina wasn't here, he would have thanked Candice for proving his earlier words and being the 'bad student'

Now, all he needs to do is become a 'good student' and get close to Arvina Skyfall.

'Hehe~ Candice is a true friend indeed.'

Nux thought in his mind and followed behind Arvina.

As for Candice, well since her teacher told her to do whatever she wanted, she walked towards the room provided to her by her teacher and jumped on the bed.

She was too tired after swinging her sword all day.

'Tsk Tsk, can't Teacher Arvina teach me new moves already?'

She snorted inwardly, however, then, a serious look appeared on her face.

'And what was Teacher Arvina talking about? Nux was hiding his cultivation? What does that mean? And how can one hide his cultivation? Is that even possible?'

Or was teacher trying to say something else?' Candice frowned and then, a determined look appeared on her face.

'I need to learn more about this.'

‘Wait...’ Suddenly, Candice realized something,

‘What happened to Teacher avenging me?’

...

On the other side, inside Arvina’s room, Arvina glanced at Nux and questioned again,

“Alright, now we are alone, answer me.

What is your real cultivation?”

Nux sighed, while walking towards the office, he thought about a few things and in the end, he came up with a conclusion.

He needed Arvina Skyfall’s help in the future when he deals with Astaria Skyfall.

Therefore, his relation with Arvina should be strong.

Also, he has interacted with Arvina for a while, she seemed trustworthy.

Therefore, he decided to tell her the truth.

He was hoping that she would keep it to herself.

He still wants to attend the academy after all.

Also, when there is a secret between two people, it is natural that they will get close to each other.

Nux smiled inwardly as he thought about it.

He then deactivated his [Trickster] and his cultivation returned back to normal.

“!!!”

And seeing his cultivation, Arvina's eyes widened in surprise.

“G-Grand Master S-Stage Cultivator...”

She couldn't believe her eyes.

“H-How old a-are you?” She questioned.

“I will turn 19 soon,” Nux answered and Arvina's eyes widened even more.

A 19-year-old Grand Master Stage Cultivator!!

What kind of monstrous talent is that!?

“Y-You are 19...?”

Arvina stuttered.

Nux nodded.

He was actually 18 but... whatever.

“W-What is your Elemental Affinity? It is written High here, but I am sure that is incorrect.” Arvina questioned.

“Exceptional.”

Nux answered.

“Exceptional?”

“Yes, Exceptional level affinity with all four elements.”

Nux revealed and Arvina just couldn't believe what she was hearing.

Candice, a 22-year-old Master Stage Cultivator, Exceptional Level Affinity with Water element was treated as the future pillar of the Kingdom,

B-But this!?

What the hell is this!?

A 19-year-old Grand Master Stage Cultivator!

Exception level affinity with Fire, Water, Wind, Earth, all four elements!

Just what kind of absurdity is that!?

Monster!

A complete monster!

However, soon, a frown appeared on Arvina's face,

“Why did you hide it?”

# Chapter 268

“Why did you hide it?”

Arvina questioned with a frown on her face.

A wry smile appeared on Nux’s face as he answered,

“Teacher Arvina, think with me,

An 18-year-old, Grand Master Stage Cultivator, with Exceptional Level Affinities with all four elements, with no background whatsoever,

What do you think would happen if this is revealed?

Do you think that I will be praised by others?”

“...” Arvina turned silent.

“Do you think they will make me the King of the Academy and then the Future Pillar of the Kingdom?”

Nux questioned.

And Arvina stayed silent.

“What do you think will happen, Teacher?” Nux questioned again.

“You will be killed...”

Arvina answered.

She knows it better than anyone else.

Nux’s talent has never been seen before.

Never.

There would be many who would covet this talent.

There would be many who would be jealous of his talents.

There would be many who would try to recruit this talent, however, at the same time, once Nux is recruited, there would be many who would try to get rid of this talent to avoid any future troubles.

Even if he is recruited by Royal Family, the strongest power in the Kingdom, where no one would dare to cause any harm to him,

There would still be many, inside the Royal family who would try to get rid of him.

There would be many assassins sent by other kingdoms who would try to get rid of him.

Heck, there are chances that the King would feel threatened by his talent and would try to get rid of him.

All in all, the chances of Nux surviving after revealing his talent to the world were close to null.

Thinking about all this, another question popped into Arvina's mind.

“You could have easily refused to answer the question and I would have no choice but to let it go.

Why did you tell me something so important?

Why are you risking your life?”

A small smile appeared on Nux's face as he answered,

“You are my teacher.

I can trust you enough to keep this a secret, can I not?”

Arvina blinked a few times and then, a beautiful smile appeared on her stern-looking face,

“You can.

You can trust your teacher, Nux Leander.”

Nux smiled however, soon he noticed that Arvina’s smile widened,

“However, don’t think you will be living a comfortable life anymore, Nux. You wanted to train under me, correct?

Get ready for hell, because I will polish a refined gem like you with everything I have.

And unlike Candice, I won’t let you slack off at all.”

Arvina smiled even more.

\*Gulp\*

Nux gulped.

“Umm... Teacher Arvina... I have a request...” He muttered in a low voice.

“What is it?” Arvina questioned.

“I need a leave, for a week.”

“...”

“Teacher?”

“...”

Arvina looked at Nux with a deadpan expression on her face.

“Just after you made me your teacher?”

“I-It is important, Teacher Arvina,

I-I promise to train as hard as I can once I return.”

Nux promised.

Arvina then thought about it a little and then questioned,

“Can you tell me where are you going?”

“You know why I fought Candice, correct?” Nux questioned.

“Umm... not really...

That girl didn't tell me and changed the topic whenever I asked her about it. There are people talking about it everywhere, but I would rather not believe in rumours.” Arvina answered.

Nux smiled disdainfully.

“Of course, she didn't tell you.

Let me tell you what happened then...”

Nux then told Arvina about how Candice first sided with Oswald, then how she entered Evane's class, how she acted and how things proceeded after that.

The more Arvina listened, the colder her eyes got.

“The Weak doesn't have the right to complain huh?” She growled, her anger was clear in her eyes.

“Just because you are talented and have people protecting you from behind, you dare say arrogant words like these?

Who does she think she is!?

She is merely a Master Stage Cultivator right now!

By her concept, should every Grand Master Stage Cultivator bully her then?  
How the hell would people of this world get stronger if everyone restricts  
and continue to bully them?

What kind of fucked up logic is that!?

Also, how dare she talk to a Teacher like that!?

Just who gave her the galls to do something like that!?"

Arvina continued and then, she shook her head,

“Negligent! I have been too Negligent!”

Arvina then turned towards Nux,

“Alright, you take that boy to his mother, I will give you one week.

Also, you don’t need to apply for any leaves, I’ll handle that for you.

As for me,”

Arvina’s eyes then turned cold as she growled,

“I need to fix someone and I need some time to do that.

I guess a week will be enough.”

A smile appeared on Nux’s face as he nodded,

“Alright teacher, I will be back in a week then.”

Arvina’s cold expression turned into a smile and she nodded,

“Enjoy as much as you want, my student.

Your days, once you return, won’t be very good.”

“I will look forward to it.”

Nux nodded and after a bow, he left Arvina's office.

Then, he walked toward Royce's room and muttered,

“Alright, we will be leaving the academy.”

“Huh? Why? Didn't you win? Are they pressuring you?” Royce questioned with a worried look on his face.

“Oh c'mon, don't worry kid.

Nothing like that is happening, I just want to see your mother.”

“Huh?”

“I mean, don't you want to meet your mother?” Nux questioned.

A big smile appeared on Royce's face, however, soon, that smile disappeared,

He didn't want to tell him anything that happened to his mother...

He didn't want to show his pathetic side to his mother.

“You have to tell her, Royce.

This is the only way you can make a stronger comeback. Treat this as a setback of your life.” Nux suggested.

Then, a determined look appeared on Royce's face and he nodded,

“Alright, let's go meet mother.”

# Chapter 269

“Mom!!”

Royce exclaimed in joy as he dashed towards Felberta with a big smile on his face.

Felberta got on her knees and extended her hands toward him with a smile on her face.

Royce then ran into Felberta’s embrace and hugged her with his little arms.

“Mom! I missed you~”

“Oh? You did? Then why didn’t you come and meet me last year?” Felberta questioned as she raised her eyebrow.

Of course, anyone who saw this scene would be able to tell how happy she was when they would look at that smile on her face.

Royce didn’t answer her question and continued to hug her.

Felberta chuckled and shook her head as she continued patting his head.

A few minutes later, Royce finally separated from Felberta and then,

“Sister Skyla!” He exclaimed as he hugged Skyla’s legs.

“Hehe~ You finally got time to visit your sister eh? And here I thought you forgot about me.” Skyla patted his head with a smile.

“Ehehe~ How can I forget about you, Sister Skyla~”

Royce laughed out loud.

He then turned towards Lane and hugged her as well,

“Sister Lane~”

“Welcome back, Sir Royce,”

Lane nodded with a smile and patted his head as well.

Then, Royce started looking around and his eyes fell on Edda.

Since he didn't know her, he just bowed his head.

“Fufufu~ What a cute little boy~”

Edda chuckled.

Royce smiled and then, he walked back towards his mother.

Edda's eyes then turned towards Nux and she smiled,

“Ahh, Mr Nux, you must be tired, let me help you remove your clothes in the bathroom.”

Saying that, she walked towards him.

She didn't know that boy named Royce, and in all honestly, she didn't care much about him either, Skyla, Lane and Felberta were different though, they knew the boy and were very happy to see this.

Therefore, Edda saw this as an opportunity.

Opportunity to spend time with Nux all she wants.

Hehe~

She was smart indeed.

However, before she could even get close to her, Skyla moved and grabbed Nux's arm.

“Ah, Miss Edda, you don’t have to worry, you are a guest here, I, on the other hand, am the maid of this mansion, let me do all these miscellaneous works like removing Mr Nux’s clothes.

You can go ahead and rest.”

Skyla muttered with her usual, gentle smile on her face.

Edda’s face twitched, however, she still kept a smile on her face and answered,

“Ah, don’t worry, I can see how much you missed this little boy here.

You don’t have to work, you should spend time with the boy, I’ll do all the work.”

Then, Edda used all her brain and turned towards Royce,

“You would like to spend some time with your Sister Skyla as well, right little boy?”

“Ah y-”

However, before Royce could even answer, Skyla interrupted.

“Ahh, he wants to spend time with his mother, I will talk to him later,

Mothers are always a priority, right Royce?”

Skyla questioned.

“Y-Yeah...” Royce nodded.

Skyla smiled and then turned towards Edda,

“See that, Miss Edda, so don’t worry and rest. Let me do all the work, I am used to it after all~”

Skyla beamed with happiness. She liked Royce as well, however, comparing him with Nux, Skyla didn't even need to think.

Nux won by a large margin.

She would rather spend more time with Nux.

Edda's face twitched again, she was about to reply, however, both she and Skyla then heard Felberta's voice in their heads.

'Guys... can you control yourself a little, you are making him a little uncomfortable...'

Edda and Skyla glanced at Royce and noticed that Royce was looking at them weirdly.

'I apologize, Sister Felberta... ' Skyla apologized.

'I apologize as well.' Edda did the same.

'Sister Edda, how about we both go with Nux?' Skyla questioned.

'Yeah, that seems to be a good idea.' Edda nodded and then, she smiled.

"Alright, there is no use fighting like this, how about we both go together?"

"Mhm, fighting is useless, alright, Nux, come with us, we will show you where the bathroom is."

Skyla turned towards Nux and smiled.

"Sir Royce, Skyla is right, you should spend more time with your mother." Suddenly, Lane spoke up as well.

Then, she turned towards Felberta and bowed,

"Lady Felberta, I still need to wash some clothes in the bathroom, so I will be taking my leave too."

‘Not you either...’ Felberta groaned.

These people are too horny.

They should try to control themselves.

It is not good to be this angry.

Lane just smiled and then turned around.

Her thoughts matched Skylar’s, she liked Royce, however, that’s it.

He was nowhere near Nux.

Also, she has been waiting for this day for more than a week now.

She couldn’t hold back.

She then followed Nux and others.

Nux then turned around and his eyes met Felberta’s.

A serious look appeared on his face and he muttered,

‘Fel, this is important.

Talk to him, he wants to tell you something.’

Felberta frowned, she then turned towards Royce and one glance was all it took for her to know that he wanted to talk about something.

She then turned towards Nux and nodded with a frown on her face.

She has rarely seen Nux making a face like that...

This looked serious.

“Royce, is there anything you want to share with your mother?” She questioned as she ruffled Royce’s hair.

Royce then lowered his head and then, and a determined look appeared on his face.

“Mother, I want to tell you about the last year I spend in the academy.”

“Mhm, I am listening.”

...

“This is what happened.”

On the other side, Nux finished telling everything that Royce has been through in the academy and Skyla, Lane and Edda had solemn looks on their faces.

“What are we going to do?” Skyla questioned.

Nux, however, shook his head,

“It all depends on Felberta.

We will do whatever she says,”

Then, a cold look appeared on his face.

“Even if it means that we have to destroy Bourkee Family.”

At the same time, a Nux’s heard Felberta’s voice in his head.

‘Nux, please come to my room.’

# Chapter 270

‘Nux, please come to my room.’

Nux heard Felberta’s voice in his mind. He then turned towards Edda, Lane and Skyla and muttered.

“Let’s go.”

The three of them nodded and then left the room they were in.

Nux then used his [Sense] and quickly found where Felberta was.

The three girls followed behind Nux with a serious look on their faces and a minute later,

The four of them entered Felberta’s room.

There, Felberta was sitting with Royce sleeping on her lap, she looked at Nux and seeing her face,

Something inside Nux snapped.

Felberta’s eyes were moist and from the dried tears marks left on Felberta’s face, Nux could easily tell that Felberta have been crying for a while now.

Nux narrowed his eyes.

He noticed that there was a different light in Felberta’s eyes.

He understood,

She does not want him to talk about her crying.

Therefore, Nux stayed silent.

Following him, the three other women in the room stayed silent as well. The whole room was enshrouded in a layer of silence for a good while.

“I want revenge.”

2 minutes later, Felberta broke the silence.

“What do you want to do?” Nux questioned.

Then, without any change in her expression, Felberta answered.

“I want to destroy Bourkees.”

Nux took a deep breath and then, he nodded.

“Alright.”

Although she might not show it, Felberta was petty.

Extremely petty.

A few years earlier, she destroyed an Earl’s life just because he tried to drug her.

That man didn’t even succeed, however, Felberta still destroyed him just because he dared to attempt something like this.

Today, she learns that someone has been harassing, hitting, bullying and humiliating her only child, for a whole fucking year.

There was no way she would sit back and forget about it.

“Alright, let’s move.”

Nux muttered.

“Now?” Felberta frowned.

“I want to end this before tomorrow,” Nux answered. Then, a small smile appeared on his face as he questioned,

“You do not want to just kill the Bourkees, do you?”

Felberta smiled back.

Her answer was clear.

“On the second thought, you stay here with Royce, I’ll prepare everything.”

Nux muttered.

Felberta wanted to counter, however, before she could say anything, Nux answered,

“Don’t worry, I will call you when it’s the finale,”

Saying that, Nux turned around and left.

A small smile appeared on Felberta’s face and then, she continued to pat Royce’s head.

...

‘Amaya, I need your help.’

Nux, who just walked out of Felberta’s room contacted Amaya.

‘Hmm? What can I help you with?’

Again, the response was instantaneous.

Nux then told her everything and then muttered,

‘Killing the Bourkees is too merciful for them, I want them to suffer. As much as they can.’

‘...’

Amaya turned silent and started thinking.

Nux waited for her reply.

He knew she was thinking about a plan.

Planning and Scheming, Amaya was an Expert in this field. She has been doing it since she was a child after all.

Of course, this doesn't mean that Nux wasn't thinking anything.

He was thinking of a plan as well, then, he would compare the two plans and would choose the one that would be the most painful for the Bourkees'.

Yes, Bourkees fucked up.

And they fucked up badly.

2 hours passed by in a moment, and then, Nux heard Amaya's voice in his head,

'Baron Crook,'

'Huh?' Nux frowned.

'Earl Bourkee used his status to threaten Baron Crook's daughter and forced her to 'entertain' him. The humiliation was too much for the girl to bear and she took her own life.

This enraged Baron Crook, however, he was powerless to do anything.

He couldn't touch Bourkee.

However, he bores a deep resentment in his heart.'

Amaya muttered.

She had an advantage, as the leader of the Thousand Information Chamber, she has all the information she needed to come up with her plans.

This time was the same.

She used her advantage well.

‘Nux, go to Alger and make him write a letter...’

An evil smirk appeared on Nux’s face when he heard Amaya’s plan.

‘I’ll do as you say.’

‘I am sorry, this is all I can help you with,’

Amaya muttered with a sad look on her face.

‘Don’t worry, this is more than enough, Thank you.’

A smile appeared on Amaya’s face.

Nux on the other hand, didn’t waste any time and rushed towards Alger’s mansion.

Then, he made him write the letter Amaya wanted and then, he wore skin-tight black coloured assassins clothes, covered his face and he rushed to Barron Crook’s house.

He didn’t waste a single second.

He wanted to do everything as soon as possible.

Barron Crook was a 60-year-old man, and since he wasn’t a cultivator, his hair was white and there were lots of wrinkles on his face. He gave off a gloomy aura and looked like someone who have already lost everything in his life.

Right now, this man was working in his office with a tired, dull look on his face. Beside him stood his butler who was a Beginner Stage Cultivator,

Nux then appeared behind the butler and with one hand chop, the butler passed out.

\*Thud\*

The Baron's eyes widened in surprise when he saw a black-clothed man appear inside his office without making any sounds at all.

"W-Who sent you?" The Baron questioned with a pale face.

"Do you hate Earl Bishnoi Bourkee?" Nux questioned in a hoarse voice.

Hearing that name, the fear on Baron's face was replaced with immense rage.

"I absolutely despise that Bastard! He dared to do that to my only daugh-"

"Yeah, I don't care what he did."

Nux shrugged and then, his eyes shined,

"Do you want revenge?"

All the gloominess surrounding Baron Crook disappeared and his deadpan eyes were now filled with unwavering determination.

"If I can destroy that bastard, I would do it even if it costs me my life."

A smile appeared on Nux's face when he heard that.

Then, he gave the letter Alger wrote to Baron Crook and instructed.

"Send this letter to that Bourkee."

"C-Can I read what it is?" Baron Crook held the letter as if it was the most precious treasure and questioned.

"Go ahead."

With a serious look on his face, Baron Crook opened the letter and once he started reading it, his eyes widened in surprise.

Then, an intense light shown within his eyes as he continued to read it.

Seeing his expression changing from confused, to surprise, to a happy smile and then a wicked smile, NUX chuckled inwardly.

This man really hated Bourkee bastard.

He hated him to his core.

“W-Where did you get this letter from?” Baron Crook turned towards Nux and questioned.

“A-Are you sure it i-is not fake...?”

Nux smiled and then questioned, “Are you scared?”

“Bourkee bastard isn’t a problem but with this letter, we will be targetted by Marquees Alger as well...

And I don’t know if Marquee Longe will protect us or not...”

Baron Crook muttered as his body trembled in fear.

“Heehh? Was that the extent you would go to avenge your daughter?”

Nux tilted his head and smiled,

“Is that it?”

“...”

Suddenly, Baron Crook’s body stopped trembling.

“What is the worse thing that can happen? You will be killed, right? So what? Can’t you give up on your life for your daughter?

You can’t do it?

Too scared?

Then why act like someone who has lost everything after losing your daughter?

Why not make another one?

Heh.”

Baron Crook’s eyes turned cold.

He then glanced at the man in front of him and started thinking,

He didn’t know who this man was, he could very well be a lackey of a big shot who is seeing him as nothing but a chess piece and is making use of him.

However,

So what?

If he can avenge his daughter, then being a chess piece for the bigger plot was nothing.

Even if this plot kills him,

Even if this plot destroys this kingdom,

He would do it.

Baron Crook glanced at Nux with his eyes shining in determination,

\*Thud\*

Then, the old man fell on his knees and bowed his head,

“I will do anything you say.

Even if helping me avenge isn’t your main goal and you just want to use me as a chess piece who you would get rid of later, I don’t care.

I only want one thing,

The downfall of Earl Bourkee.

I beg you.”

“...why are you acting like I am the bad guy?

Oi Oi, I am here to help you okay?

Just do as I say and I will make Bourkee weak enough that even you can get rid of him if you play your future moves correctly.”

A big smile appeared on Baron Crook’s face, he then raised his head and questioned,

“What do I have to do?”

Nux smiled as well,

Hatred is indeed the best fuel.

“Write a letter to Earl Bourkee,”

A paper appeared on Crook’s hand, he then sat on his chair and questioned,

“What do I write?”

Nux smiled and then, he started speaking.

“To Earl Bourkee,

I hope you are doing well in your life...”

# Chapter 271

“Master Bourkee, Baron Crook has sent you a letter.”

A man where a black coat over a white shirt bowed as he presented an envelope to a black-grey-haired man sitting on his chair with a leisurely look on his face.

The black-grey-haired man grabbed the envelope and chuckled disdainfully,

“Baron Crook, is he the old fart with that beautiful daughter?”

“Yes, that is correct, Master Bourkee.” The butler nodded.

An evil smile appeared on Bourkee’s face as he then clicked his tongue,

“Tsk Tsk, his daughter was a beauty indeed, it was a shame that the bitch decided to kill herself. I wanted to play a little longer that time.”

Then, Bourkee sighed,

“Oh well, whatever happened happened. We can’t do anything about it, can we?”

But why is this old fart sending a letter to me?

Heh, did he have another daughter? Tsk Tsk”

Bourkee then opened the envelope and started reading the letter inside it,

“Earl Bastard Bourkee.

Oh ho, that’s quite a greeting. Who gave him the balls to write like that?”

Bourkee muttered in amusement.

He wasn’t the least bit bothered by how Baron Crook cursed him.

Or maybe he was and was just getting excited by thinking about how he will punish that man.

Bourkee then continued reading the letter,

“I heard about an interesting piece of news and I must say, Bourkee Bastard, to be daring enough to go after a Marquee’s son...”

The more Bourkee read the letter, the serious his face got.

He narrowed his eyes and started reading the letter more carefully.

“What the hell is this guy talking about?” Bourkee narrowed his eyes in confusion.

“To joke about something like this, does this old man not want to live anymore?”

“Master Bourkee, there is something behind the letter as well...”

The butler pointed out.

Bourkee then turned the paper and his frown deepened.

‘I am not just talking around, if you don’t come to Slums in the West at 12 in the night, I will send that letter to Marquee Longe.’

“What letter is he talking about!?”

Bourkee roared in panic.

“Master Bourkee, there seems to be another letter in this envelope.”

The butler mentioned.

Bourkee quickly opened the other letter and his eyes widened in surprise.

‘To Earl Bourkee,

The information about Longe's son being in the Wilderness was accurate, do not worry, you will be compensated properly.

Alger Bannermane.'

Bourkee face paled in horror.

He quickly took out some texts and started matching Alger's writing with the writing in this letter and soon, his body started trembling in fear.

"W-What is Marquee Alger t-talking about...?"

When did I give him any information like that!?"

The incident of Marquee's son being attacked in the Bloodhill Wilderness was quite popular a few months ago, there were many suspicions that Marquee Alger was the one behind this incident, however, since there was proof, the incident got buried.

However, Marquee Longe didn't bury this incident at all.

It is said that he is searing with anger and buys any information related to this incident at a high price.

He is hell-bent on getting his revenge.

If this letter reaches Marquee Longe, then no matter how much he pleads, Marquee Longe will kill him.

Just thinking about this made Bourkee tremble in fear.

'What the hell is wrong with that Alger bastard!?' He cursed in his heart and then, his eyes turned red in rage.

'That Crook bores a deep grudge against me, from what I know, he would rather deal with me on his own than to take that Longe's help.

I don't think he has sent this letter to Marquee yet.

I need to deal with him before he thinks anything weird. I need to kill him, then I need to kill everyone living in his mansion.

Only then, would this letter be buried.’

Bourkee then clenched his fists in anger and slammed his hand on the table,

‘You want to meet me in the Slums, right? Good Good.

Let me do you a favour and send you to your bitch daughter then.’

Bourkee then started thinking,

He was different from other Earls, normal Earls have 3-4 Master Stage Cultivators under them, he, however, had 10 and he himself was a strong Master Stage Cultivator.

Even if that Crook Bastard had prepared some things to deal with him, there is no way he would predict that he would come to the slums with 10 Master Stage Cultivators.

Not only that, but at the same time, Bourkee would send the rest of his servants to Crook’s mansion to kill and burn everything.

According to the rules of the Kingdom, he cannot have more than 30 Cultivators as his servants, however, those 20 servants would be more than enough to deal with a mere Baron House.

Bourkee smiled coldly as he planned everything, then, he turned to his Butler and ordered,

“Call every cultivator; I need them to do something for me.”

The Butler frowned when he noticed the solemn look on his Master’s face.

This looked serious.

“As you command, Master Bourkee.”

The butler then bowed his head and left the room.

After the Butler left, Bourkee crouched, he then moved his table to little and then, he grabbed a tile, using a little force, he opened the tile and placed the letter inside it.

It was an unspoken rule to not keep valuable letters like these in storage rings because storage rings are the first things to get confiscated when something wrong happens.

Therefore, many nobles had secret places like these where they kept important documents.

Bourkee then placed the table back to where it was and then left his room.

He needed to talk with all the cultivators after all.

However, what he didn't know was that someone else was inside his room aside from him and his butler.

After Bourkee left his room, Nux smiled.

He then took out the letters Bourkee was hiding and chuckled,

“This is going to be fun...”

Then, he followed behind Bourkee.

He needed to know all his plans after all.

# Chapter 272

Midnight.

Earl Bourkee was walking inside the empty Slum area and was looking around, trying to find Crook.

His eyes then fell on a figure sitting on the chair with an elegant posture, since it was dark, he couldn't see who it was, however, he had a hunch.

“Crook?”

He questioned.

“...”

However, there was no answer.

“Crook you old fart, is it you?” Bourkee questioned again, however, there was no answer.

Bourkee's face twitched in annoyance.

“First! You dare try to frame me with a fake letter, then you dare to call me here and now that I am here, you don't even dare to speak!?”

Do you think this is a joke!?”

You old bastard! Apologize to me this inst-”

Bourkee cursed as he walked towards Crook however after he got close, he paused.

It wasn't Crook.

Rather, it was a beautiful black-haired woman who was looking at him with a cold smile on her face.

“Felberta Alveye...”

Bourkee recognised this woman in an instance.

He has rarely seen any woman who is as beautiful as Felberta after all.

“Bourkee, I heard your child has been bullying my child for quite a while now.”

Felberta muttered with a small smile on her face.

Bourkee’s face twitched when he noticed how she was calling him disrespectfully, however, a small smile appeared on his face and he shook his head,

“Oh really? I thought it was just a few children playing together as friends. Didn’t seem like bullying to me.”

“Stop this nonsense, I don’t care how you see this situation.

I want your children to stop what they are doing.”

Felberta warned in a threatening tone however, Bourkee did not feel threatened at all.

Rather, he just chuckled,

“Oh, I do have a way we can stop this.”

“What?” Felberta questioned.

“How about our children become brothers? This way, let alone bullying, your son would even be protected by my son in the Academy.

What do you think?”

Bourkee questioned with a meaningful smile on his face.

The meaning of his words was clear.

Suddenly, a small smile appeared on Felberta's face,

“So you are admitting that your son bullies my son, correct?”

Bourkee smiled as well,

“It is not my son's fault that your son is weak and doesn't have a good background.

Actually, even if my son doesn't bully him, someone else will, this is how status work, Felberta.

This is why I am offering you,

Become mine and let alone your son, even you would live a fulfilling life.”

Suddenly, Felberta sighed,

“I have no clue how idiotic people like you become nobles in this kingdom,

The future of this Kingdom seems bleak.”

“Huh?” Bourkee frowned.

“Think about this, you idiot,

You were sent a letter that could potentially destroy your house.

You were then called to deserted slums by the man who sent you that letter.

There you see that instead of that man, there was a woman who seemed to be sitting and waiting for you.

Then, the woman talks about how your child is bullying hers and how do you reply?

You threaten her to become yours?

Are you that braindead?

Don't you find this situation weird at all?"

Felberta questioned and Bourkee's frown deepened,

"In all honestly, if I were you, I would have tried to act a bit more mature,

'Alright, I will talk to my son about it.'

'Alright, I will make sure that my son stops.'

'What? Does he bully your son? I didn't know, don't worry, I will punish that bastard accordingly and I deeply apologize for everything he did.'

Any of answers like these would have been better but you..." A cold smile then appeared on Felberta's face as she glared at Bourkee,

"You just decided to fuck up huh?"

Bourkee, however, wasn't intimidated, rather, he just smiled,

"You are wrong,

This is not foolishness, Felberta.

This is confidence.

I am confident that someone like you doesn't have enough influence and power to harm me."

Bourkee then pointed at those 10 men behind him and smiled,

"They are all Master Stage Cultivators, Felberta.

Master Stage Cultivators.

Surprised right?

Didn't think that I had so many Master Stage Cultivators working under me, did you?"

Felberta sighed even more now,

“Arrogant and foolish...

Out of all the combinations you could choose, you chose the worse one huh..."

Felberta sighed and then, she pointed at Bourkee's men.

Bourkee frowned, he then turned around to look at his men and then, Felberta's voice sounded in his ears,

“However, this is good for me, now I can punish you as much as I want without any guilt whatsoever.

Welcome to Hell, Earl Bourkee.”

At the same time, Bourkee's eyes widened in surprise when a dagger covered in blood came out of his strongest subordinate's chest.

At the same time, a few more figures wearing black clothes appeared and started attacking and killing Bourkee's subordinates.

With the Assassins getting the first hit, Bourkee's subordinates stood no chance against well-trained assassins, within just 1 minute,

All 10 of them were dead.

The all-strong Master Stage Cultivators that Bourkee was so proud of were slaughtered without even a chance to fight back.

Bourkee's eyes widened in horror.

He was fucked!

He knew it!

His brain then worked quickly, he turned around trying to grab Felberta,

She must be the leader, if he captures the leader, he might have a chance to get out of this situation alive.

However, after he turned around, he noticed two individuals standing in front of him, they wore the same black-coloured clothes that those assassins wore however, the aura they released was far stronger.

Bourkee then noticed that Felberta was already standing far away from him and was looking at him with a cold look on her face.

“Do not kill him.”

She ordered.

Bourkee smiled.

“Cut his arms.”

She ordered.

Bourkee’s smile died.

“Do not do it in one go,

Start from his fingers.

Make it as painful as possible.

Also, while you are at it,

Slice his filthy dick as well.”

Felberta ordered and Bourkee’s face paled in sheer horror.

“As you command, Lady Felberta.”

“AAGGGHHHHH!!”

Bourkee’s screams were echoed in the deserted slums.

# Chapter 273

After dealing with Bourkee, Felberta returned to Nux's room as if it was hers.

There, she saw a Black coloured, golden-eyed young man sitting on the bed with a smile on his face.

Felberta sighed as we walked towards the man and sat on his lap as if it was her rightful place.

The man didn't have any complaints either, he hugged her mature body from behind, placed his chin on her shoulders and whispered softly,

“Do you feel good now?”

“I wanted to torture him a little more...” Felberta pouted.

“Oh C'mon, things have only started, won't the real troubles he faces start tomorrow?”

You were the one who wanted to take things as slow as possible,” Nux chuckled.

A small, cruel smile appeared on Felberta's face as she nodded,

“I know... That's why I held back and didn't kill him, I want him to take his life with his own hands...”

“Tsk Tsk, what a cruel woman~” Nux snorted as he shook his head. At the same time, he caressed her belly and kissed her neck.

“I am a cruel and petty woman, so be careful around me, okay? Don't you dare think about betraying me.” Felberta answered.

“Heh. You think I will let you go?” Nux questioned with a small smile on his face.

“Felberta Alveye, the moment you bought me as your boy toy was the moment you fell into my inescapable trap.

You can’t run away now even if you want to.”

Nux whispered softly.

Felberta smiled as the sweet memories of the last few months played in her mind and then, she chuckled,

“Tsk Tsk, you were so cute when you stuttered and always had a blush on your face.”

“Hahaha~ You were also very cute when you jumped into the arms of a man who was as frail as a stick.

You looked like a monkey~”

Nux chuckled as well.

“Ugghh...” Felberta groaned in annoyance.

Nux’s hands then moved towards her breasts and,

“Annh~”

A soft moan escaped Felberta’s mouth.

“How sensitive, you pervert.”

“I don’t want to be called that, especially from someone like you. You are the biggest pervert I have ever met in my entire life.” Felberta retorted.

“Tsk Tsk, I am nowhere near as perverted as you, Fel.

You are so perverted that you are sitting on the lap of your son's big brother.”

“ ... ”

Felberta's face turned red in embarrassment and she didn't reply.

She didn't have any reply.

Nux sensed her embarrassment and chuckled,

“Don't worry, he will call me father soon.”

Felberta's face turned even red, then suddenly, Nux tightened his grip around her waist and,

“But before that, I need to prove that I can become his father.”

Saying that, Nux fell onto the bed with Felberta in his arms, he then rolled on top of her and before she could say anything, he sealed her beautiful lips.

“AAnnnhhh~~”

Then, they started the deed and a long long night passed by.

...

Royal Court of Justice, as the name suggests, was a place where people file a complaint, start a case and accuse someone who harmed them in any way, the guilty are then punished accordingly while the victims are compensated.

Earl Bourkee was sitting in the waiting room of the Royal Court of Justice, the arrogance on his face had been washed away, from his limp clothes, it could be seen that his arms were chopped off and by how no one accompanied him even in such conditions, it could be seen that the things were not going well for him.

However, that wasn't the main problem.

“Hey you, enter.”

A guard then walked into the waiting room and pointed at another man, signalling him to enter,

Seeing this scene, Bourkee frowned and turned towards the guard,

“I was here earlier than him.”

The guard then turned towards Bourkee and then, he frowned,

“So?”

“Shouldn’t I be allowed to go inside first?” Bourkee questioned.

“I remember that he came earlier than you. Don’t try to fool me, I am very sharp.

This is your last warning, try it one more time and I will kick you out.” The guard warned and Bourkee gritted his teeth in rage.

This was the tenth time that he was hearing the same line,

Yes, he has been here in this place for 8 hours already, however, he was not chosen by the guard and wasn’t allowed to enter.

Even the people who came after him entered the court and left.

Bourkee clenched his fist- Ahh, he had no fists.

Bourkee gritted his teeth in anger as his body started trembling.

It was clear that this guard was picking on him on purpose.

And the problem was that there was nothing he could do about it. After yesterday’s incident, the strength and status he possessed were destroyed,

The 10 Master Stage Cultivators under him died, the cultivators he sent to Crook’s house were dead, and with his arms cut off, he was no better than

any ordinary human.

There was only so much he could do with his legs after all.

And the guard seems to know his condition, therefore, he was picking on him on purpose.

He didn't know who the bastard who spread the rumour about him so quickly was, but one thing was sure,

His life would be changing for the worse now and there was nothing he could do about it.

Right now, no matter how angry he was, he could only lower his head in front of this lowly guard,

“Please, let me go inside, it is something I have to do.

I beg you.”

Seeing a noble lowering his head in front of him, the guard smiled disdainfully, however, then, a strict look appeared on his face,

“You bastard! Haven't I told you already!? You will go inside when it is your turn, just wait here, you dog!”

Hearing his answer, Bourkee was now sure, the guard wasn't just picking on him for fun, he was being ordered.

Ordered by one of his enemies.

Bourkee started thinking about who it could be, however,

What he didn't know was that the one who ordered the guard wasn't any noble,

But it was the Royal Court of Justice.

# Chapter 274

Yes, the Royal Court of Justice was the one that was trying to restrict Bourkee.

It wasn't as holy and just place as it was said to be.

In the world of cultivation, where strength rules, something like the Justice Court was nothing more than a farce.

No one who was truly weak had ever won any case in the Justice Court.

This was just a 'legal' way for Nobles to do the crime.

And of course, as an Earl, Bourkee knew it well.

However, he never thought that the Court wouldn't support him.

He never thought that the court would deem him as 'weak'.

He was unable to calculate his position properly.

He wasn't thinking properly right now.

Justice Court's decision was logical, he was just an Earl in the name now, with his cultivator subordinates now gone, his arms now chopped off, he was nothing more than a slightly stronger cripple.

And since he was an Earl, he naturally had many enemies.

They are never going to leave him alone.

Of course, he had his allies too, but, they were nobles who allied for mutual interests, now, there was nothing Bourkee provide them in return, therefore, there is no way they would stay with him.

Heck, some might even try to take advantage of this situation.

Bourkee was completely surrounded now and his future looked bleak.

Therefore, Justice Court decided to not waste their time on someone like him.

Bourkee glanced at the guard, and then he warned,

“Don’t regret your choice in the future.”

Saying that, he turned around and left the Justice Court.

He needed to think of something else, however, right now, he was too tired.

He decided to return to his mansion, get some rest and then think over the situation calmly.

An hour later, Bourkee returned to his mansion, there, a servant approached him and bowed,

“Master Bourkee, you received a letter from the Royal Academy, I believe it is sent by Young Master.”

Hearing that, Bourkee’s eyes brightened.

Yes!

His son had some connections with the daughter of Marquee Water in the Academy, he might be able to help him.

“Read it, quick!”

He ordered the servant.

The servant nodded and started reading, Bourkee heard everything with an excited look on his face, however, the more he read, the gloomier his face got and his excitement died down.

Then, he gritted his teeth in anger.

‘That bastard! How can he fall out with that girl at the time when I needed it the most!? What the hell is wrong with his brain!?’

And he dares asks for help!?’

He wants me to deal with the student that defeated him!? The Student that was now under the protection of the Princess of the Kingdom!?’

How can I give birth to such an unreliable child!?’

Bourkee cursed in his head.

Then, he shook his head and walked away.

He was a fool to even think of relying on his child.

He had to do something on his own.

Bourkee then walked into his room to get some rest, however, before he could even lay down on his bed,

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

A knock was heard.

“Master Bourkee, there are people who would like to meet you.”

He heard his servant’s voice.

“Tell them I am tired, I would talk to them later,” The Bourkee shook his head and sat on the bed.

“H-Hey! You can’t enter like this!”

Bourkee then heard the servant’s panicked voice and frowned,

He was just about to question what happened but before that,

\*Bam\*

The doors of his room were burst opened and a few people entered,

“Bourkee Bastard! You dare act as a Tyrant!?”

An enraged voice was heard.

“Earl Deniskee...” Bourkee frowned.

He knew this man.

Their relationship wasn't good.

Actually, they could even be called enemies.

“Why are you here?” Bourkee questioned with a scowl on his face.

He did not like where things were going at all.

“You bastard! You dare act innocent after acting like a tyrant yesterday night!? How shameless!”

“What do you mean?” Bourkee narrowed his eyes.

He doesn't want to talk about last night at all.

However, Deniskee had different thoughts.

The ring on his finger shined and a few heads appeared on the floor.

“These are your subordinates, correct?” Deniskee questioned.

Bourkee looked at his subordinates' dissipated heads and his eyes turned cold, then, his eyes fell on an Old man who was standing behind Earl Deniskee and was smiling at him.

“Crook...” He scowled.

“You dare sent assassins to attack my friend!?” Suddenly, Deniskee raised his voice.

“Your friend?” Bourkee frowned.

Since when did a bastard like you make friends with a mere Baron?

How low have you fallen?

Those were the questions he wanted to ask, however, he didn't get the chance to.

“You bastard! You think you are the king of this Kingdom!? Do you think you can do anything you want just because you are an Earl!? You think you are the only Earl in the Kingdom!?”

How dare you send assassins after my friend!?

What would you have done if I wasn't there with him and protected him!?

Huh!?”

Deniskee raised his voice and Bourkee understood what was happening.

A wry, defeated smile appeared on his face.

‘It already started huh...’

“You bastard! I want to you compensate! Otherwise, I would be forced to take this matter into the Royal Court of Justice.”

“...”

Bourkee stayed silent.

“Why are you silent, you bastard!? Say something...”

Then, Bourkee sighed.

He couldn't do anything about it.

It was happening a lot faster than he had expected.

He then glanced at Baron Crook who was sneering at him and gritted his teeth in anger.

Then, Bourkee shook his head,

“What do you want?” He questioned.

A small smile appeared on Deniskee's face.

Heh.

It was time to loot an Earl when he was down.

There was no way he would let that slip.

And he wasn't the only one, many will visit Earl Bourkee soon.

Bourkee knew it as well.

He realized that it was too late to do anything. No actually, it wasn't that he was too late, it was more like everything happened too early.

It was as if someone planned all this.

Of course, in the end, Bourkee couldn't do anything, speculations like these were useless.

He, Earl Bourkee, and the Bourkee house were finished.

# Chapter 275

“Mama! Good morning!”

Royce rushed towards the dining table with a smile on his face.

A smile appeared on Felberta’s face when she saw him running towards her. The little boy then hugged his mother and then sat down on the chair next to Felberta’s.

“Sister Skyla, Good morning~”

“Good morning, Little Royce.” Skyla smiled as she ruffled Royce’s hair.

Royce then turned towards Lane and smiled brightly,

“Good Morning, Sister Lane~”

“Good Morning.” Lane smiled back.

“Good Morning, Miss Edda.”

“Fufufu.”

Edda just smiled.

Royce didn’t know her, therefore, after greeting her, he decided to ignore her, he then turned towards Skyla to ask something, however, before he could, Felberta questioned.

“Have you brushed your teeth?”

“Mom! Of course, I have! I am not a child anymore!”

Royce retorted with a red face.

He looked quite embarrassed that his mother asked that.

“You will never be old enough for your mother.”

Felberta used the typical mother dialogue as well.

“Alright, I am hungry, what have you made, Sister Skyla?”

Royce questioned.

“Here, I made Little Royce’s favourite, Egg rolls.”

Skyla answered excitedly, however, Royce pouted.

“Since when have they been my favourite?”

“C’mon C’mon, just eat it.” Skyla smiled.

“I won’t. I don’t like Egg rolls.” Royce shook his head.

“Eat it, they are healthy for you, you want to get stronger, do you not?”

Suddenly, A serious look appeared on Royce’s face,

“Yes, I want to be strong enough so that no one can bully me again.”

“...”

Felberta turned silent when she heard Royce’s words. Then, a small smile appeared on her face and she muttered,

“Don’t worry, no one will bully you from now on.”

“Is it because of big brother Nux?”

Well, if it is him, then I am sure no one would bully me. Many students, mainly male students are scared of him.”

“Huh? Why males in particular I wonder?” Edda questioned with a small smile on her face.

“He is an Idol for female students after all. Some even call him the King of the Royal Academy.”

Royce muttered with a smile on his face.

“Heeh. That’s a good title to start with. We can say he got a little closer to his actual goal now. Hahaha~’ Edda laughed.

Royce didn’t understand what she was talking about, he was about to ask, however, Felberta interrupted.

“Royce, you really trust your big brother Nux, don’t you?”

“Of course, he was the only one who actually did something to save me after all. He even fought against the Queen even though she was stronger than him.

Big Brother Nux is an amazing and caring person.”

Royce answered.

“Ohh? Really?” Felberta smiled.

“Indeed. He is the best!”

Royce nodded with an excited look on his face.

He didn’t know about others, however, for him, Nux was a hero, a hero who saved him from villains, a hero who fought against injustice.

He respects Nux a lot.

“Then how about Big Brother Nux becomes your father?”

Suddenly, Felberta questioned.

“Huh?” Royce frowned.

“You don’t like that idea?” Felberta questioned with a worried look on her face.

“I-Is that actually possible? For Big Brother Nux to become my father?” Royce questioned with a shocked look on his face.

His real father died while he was 8 months old, therefore, he doesn’t remember much about his father and was raised by his mother alone.

However, he still missed a fatherly figure.

He has seen other children talking about their father, usually, he keeps quiet and stays out of conversations like these, however,

If Big Brother Nux could become his new father...

Then he would be able to join that conversation as well!

He would be able to talk about his father as well!

Not only that, but Big brother Nux is strong and has immense potential, he could protect him and his mother from any harm.

Big brother Nux was indeed a perfect candidate to become his father.

However, the question was, is it really possible? Would Big brother Nux accept it?

What if Big Brother Nux rejects this offer and distances himself from him?

Royce started wondering.

However, Felberta, Royce’s mother, didn’t seem very worried about Big Brother Nux’s opinion.

“Of course he can. You just have to say yes, I am sure your big brother Nux would accept it.”

“Really! Then I accept! I accept it!”

Royce exclaimed in joy.

“Ohh? So I have a child now?” Suddenly, Royce heard a familiar voice, he quickly turned around and saw Nux walking toward him with a smile on his face.

“Big Brother Nux!” He exclaimed in joy as he rushed toward Nux, however, just as he walked towards him, Nux flicked on his forehead.

“Ugghh... Why did you hit me?” Royce questioned with a frown on his face.

“Tsk Tsk.

How dare you call me big brother?

Shouldn't you call me daddy?”

“Huh?” Royce frowned.

Then, a big smile appeared on Royce's face as he hugged Nux,

“Daddy!”

Nux patted his head with a smile on his face, then, he picked him up and walked towards the dining table.

“Mr Nux.” Skyla, Lane and Edda greeted.

“You don't have to call me so formally, I am now Royce's father, you can call me by my Name.”

Using twisted logic, Nux first stopped there from using this weird way to call him.

“As you say, Nux~” Edda muttered as she glanced at Nux with a meaningful smile on her face.

“Yes, this is better.” Nux nodded.

“Better indeed~”

Edda muttered again, the playful look in her eyes did not disappear at all.

‘You horny bitch, can’t you see that my child is still here!? Stop acting like that!’ Felberta used the telepathic connection and shouted at Edda.

Edda turned towards Felberta and smiled.

Felberta then turned towards Nux, the two of them smile at each other and then, she muttered,

“Alright then, Royce, from now on,

You will refer to Nux as your father.”

“Yeaahh!” Royce exclaimed in joy.

Then, he turned towards Nux and smiled,

“Father!”

Nux patted his head with a smile.

“Son.”

# Chapter 276

Skyla, Lane, Edda, Felberta, Nux and Royce ate breakfast together, then they talked with each other for a while and then, Skyla, the one who had the biggest heart among all other women decided to sacrifice herself and took Royce out in the garden to play.

Felberta, Edda, Lane and Nux talked continued to talk with each other with smiles on their faces.

‘Don’t forget, it will be my turn as soon as I return.’

However, before Skyla left, she turned towards Nux and muttered.

‘Alright, My cute little Skyla,’

Nux nodded with a small smile on his face.

‘Good Good.’ Skyla nodded as well and then, she took Royce out into the garden.

Her aim was simple, play as many games as fast as she could, she would make sure Royce gets tired as soon as possible, and then, she would return and have a blissful session with Nux.

“Alright, little Royce, let’s start with the catch ball. What do you say?” Skyla questioned as a ball appeared in her hand and then without waiting for Royce’s approval, she threw the ball away.

“Now go catch it, quick! I will start the timer, the faster you come back, the better score you will get.”

Royce nodded and quickly fell into her rhythm.

The two of them started playing as for Nux, well he was playing another game with three other women.

...

In the evening, after spending time with Skyla, Felberta, Edda and Lane, Nux was resting in his room with a lazy look on his face.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Suddenly, someone knocked on the door.

Nux frowned and then he walked towards the door,

However, when he opened it, he didn't see anybody. Nux frowned and then, he closed the doors.

He then turned around and was about to walk towards his bed again when someone attacked him from behind.

A small smile appeared on Nux's face, he then grabbed the figure's delicate hands with his hand, and then, he pinned her onto the wall with her hands on the top of her head and his face generously close to hers.

"Tsk Tsk, you dare attack me so sneakily, huh?"

Nux questioned as he gave a small peck on Thyra's soft pink lips.

Thyra blushed and then, she shook her head and sighed,

"I can't believe that I failed to attack you even after getting stronger."

Nux sealed her lips again and this time, he started sucking on Thyra's lips. Thyra didn't resist at all and she started enjoying the kiss.

The Kiss continued for another minute and then, Nux moved his head away from her.

His Golden eyes shined brightly as Thyra's information appeared in front of his eyes.

[Name: Thyra Cruse]

[Age: 44]

[Mana Cultivation: Expert.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Race: Human]

[Occupation: Assassin of Marques Bannermane House]

[Talent: High]

[LVL: 49 → 50]

[HP: 610/610]

[MP: 1070/1070]

[STR: 59 → 60]

[AGL: 66 → 67]

[VIT: 60 → 61]

[STM: 61 → 62]

[INT: 86 → 107]

[DEF: 53 → 54]

...

“You broke through.” Nux smiled.

“I did.” Thyra replied with a big smile on her face.

She has been fighting against Alger, Heath, Two and Three at the same time, and this time, they weren't using wooden swords, rather, they were using their real swords and it was a dangerous fight.

Thyra even got injured many times, however, she still continued fighting and after doing that for weeks, the pressure piled up and she got the push that she needed to become the Expert Stage Cultivator.

Now, Nux doesn't need that bitch Arvina's help to go stronger, he could rely on her.

She would still be the strongest amongst all his women and will be the most useful one for him.

Thyra smiled as she thought about it.

Hmm? Arvina was an Expert Stage Cultivator earlier than her and was this stronger than her?

Thyra didn't think that was possible.

She has heard about Arvina, the woman likes swords and is like a warrior, she is stronger than normal Expert Stage Cultivators, however, she wasn't a normal cultivator either.

She had the power to kill Expert Stage Cultivators when she was Grand Master Stage Cultivators, now that she has become an Expert Stage Cultivator, she didn't think that someone like Arvina would be able to defeat her.

As long as she gets the first attack, Arvina would be dead if the two of them ever clashed.

Of course, Nux wouldn't let that happen.

Never.

A small smile appeared on Nux's face as he kissed Thyra's forehead gently,

"You have worked hard." He whispered into her ears.

"I-I should be rewarded... don't you think?" Thyra questioned with a red face while she tried to avert her eyes.

“Oh?” Nux was surprised, however, soon, a playful smile appeared on his face as he nodded,

“I agree, you should be rewarded for your efforts.” Saying that, Nux moved his lips towards her ears seductively and then, he whispered,

“However, you dare to attack me so sneakily, don’t you think you should be punished for that?”

“Huh?” Thyra frowned.

As if copying her, Nux frowned as well,

“Rewarding and punishing...

These two are complete opposites... what do we do now...?” He wondered inwardly.

Then, his eyes shined,

“Ah, how about we cancel two of them out?”

“Huh? Cancel?” Thyra frowned as she couldn’t understand what he was talking about.

Nux smiled playfully and explained,

“Yeah, cancelling it out.

You deserve a reward, and you deserve a punishment,

Then how about we cancel them both and leave you alone?

Won’t that be best?”

“N-No!” Thyra was quick to retort.

“I-I have another idea...” She muttered.

She didn't know why, but she was a little more expressive today.

“What idea? Tell me, I am listening.” Nux nodded.

“Rewarding and Punishment... both end up with the same result anyway...

So how about we just double the amount of time spent...?”

Thyra muttered with a red face.

“...”

Nux was taken aback.

He blinked a few more times and then he questioned,

“So you are telling me that rewarding and punishments are one and the same thing?”

Nux's smile widened as he stated,

“Thyra Cruse, what a big pervert you are.”

# Chapter 277

“Thyra Cruse, what a big pervert you are.”

Nux stated with a playful smile on his face.

“I-I am not a pervert.” Thyra, however, denied the accusations.

“Ohh? Are you sure about that?” Nux questioned with a smile.

“Y-Yes I am.

I am not a pervert.”

Thyra answered.

Nux then started thinking and then, a big, gentle smile appeared on his face,

“Alright, I often heard that facing the reality is the biggest punishment one can go through,” Nux muttered and then, he smiled.

“At the same time, knowing the reality can also be a reward.”

Nux then glanced at Thyra, sealed her lips again and then, he muttered,

“Thyra Cruse, I have decided what to do with you.

I will now show you the reality.

I will now show you, the real you.”

Nux smiled and although Thyra didn't like where this was going,

She liked where this was going.

Confusing thoughts indeed.

...

“Hmm, hmmm, looks good indeed.”

Nux muttered as he nodded his head repeatedly as if praising himself.

“So I call this the Mirror of Reality.

As I said, this will help you see the Real you.”

Nux smiled.

Thyra, on the other hand, couldn't answer.

Right now, her limbs were tied on what looked like a cross and in front of her, there was a huge mirror.

The mirror was as big as a wall.

And seeing herself in the mirror, a weird sense of tingling feeling assaulted Thyra's little sister.

Then, through the mirror, she noticed that Nux was coming toward her with a smile on his face, her body trembled as Nux stood behind her and then his hands started moving.

First, they touched her waist, then, they moved up and after circling around her lovely breasts, they moved to her shoulders and then her arms.

After that, a small smile appeared on Nux's face and then, a knife appeared in his hands.

“Shall we start?” he questioned with a gentle smile on his face and then without waiting for her answer, he used the knife to cut open her clothes as slowly as possible.

The knife moved from her hands to her shoulder, trailing down her body while cutting her clothes without actually harming her body in any way.

“Don’t move, okay? Things might get dangerous~”

Nux whispered into her ears softly, and for some reason, her whole body trembled when she heard his voice.

The knife then reached her armpit and stopped.

Then, it circled around her armpit and shoulder, and her whole sleeve fell on the floor, revealing her arm.

Nux kissed her shoulder and then, he continued doing the same with her other arm.

When both her sleeves fell on the floor, Nux smiled and then, he placed his knife under her armpits and started cutting her clothes down to her legs.

Then, he did the same thing on the other side, Nux then stepped back and appeared behind her again, then, he placed the knife above Thyra’s breasts and started cutting her clothes in a horizontal line.

Thyra’s clothes fell, revealing the black colour bra she was wearing.

“Ahh, it didn’t completely fall off, did it?” Nux muttered as he shook his head, then, he brought his knife close to Thyra’s thighs.

“Annh~”

Thyra moaned a little when Nux slid the knife’s hilt tilt on the top of her little sister, then, he placed the blade near her little sister and started cutting her pants all the way down to her legs.

After he repeated the same thing to the other side, Thyra’s dress finally fell to the floor, Nux used the same trick to remove her bra and panty as well and once he was done, Nux admired his work with a big, satisfied smile on his face.

“What a beautiful sight~”

Nux complimented.

Thyra's face turned red for some reason.

This wasn't the first time she has been naked in front of Nux, however, this was definitely the first time when he did something like this.

Also, seeing the whole process in the mirror in front of her,

This excited her in a strange way.

“You see how your thighs are wet in the mirror?” Suddenly, Nux, who was standing behind Thyra pointed at the mirror and muttered.

“Huh?” Thyra glanced at the mirror and then, she realized she was wet.

Her little sister was trembling in anticipation and was releasing its juice uncontrollably.

Nux smiled,

“See? That is what the mirror of truth does, it shows you your real self.

Now tell me, what kind of person would get wet after having their clothes removed in such a way?”

Nux questioned and then, he answered.

“A pervert.

Only a pervert would get excited by something like this.”

Thyra's face turned red, however, she quickly shook her head.

“I am not a pervert!”

“Tsk Tsk, to dare deny it even after the proof is right in front of you, Thyra Cruse, you have fallen to a low level.”

Nux shook his head in disappointment.

However, this time, Thyra was prepared with the answer,

She then pointed at the mirror and muttered,

“See that huge tent that has formed on your pant?

Who gets excited after removing someone’s clothes in such a way?

A pervert.”

Thyra smiled as she used his words against him also, she did not give up the momentum she had gained and continued,

“The real pervert in this room is not me, it is you, Nux Leander.”

Nux was taken by surprise, however, he soon came out of his reverie and answered,

“No no no no, you got that wrong, Thyra.

This boner does not show that I am a pervert, rather, this boner is the key.

The key that will show you your real self and prove that you are a pervert.”

Saying that, Nux lowered his pants, revealing his hard dick that had veins popping all over its body, he then placed his dick right under Thyra’s little sister,

And seeing that scene right in front of her,

\*Gulp\*

Thyra gulped.

# Chapter 278

“Thyra Cruse, what a big pervert you are.”

Nux stated with a playful smile on his face.

“I-I am not a pervert.” Thyra, however, denied the accusations.

“Ohh? Are you sure about that?” Nux questioned with a smile.

“Y-Yes I am.

I am not a pervert.”

Thyra answered.

Nux then started thinking and then, a big, gentle smile appeared on his face,

“Alright, I often heard that facing the reality is the biggest punishment one can go through,” Nux muttered and then, he smiled.

“At the same time, knowing the reality can also be a reward.”

Nux then glanced at Thyra, sealed her lips again and then, he muttered,

“Thyra Cruse, I have decided what to do with you.

I will now show you the reality.

I will now show you, the real you.”

Nux smiled and although Thyra didn't like where this was going,

She liked where this was going.

Confusing thoughts indeed.

...

“Hmm, hmmm, looks good indeed.”

Nux muttered as he nodded his head repeatedly as if praising himself.

“So I call this the Mirror of Reality.

As I said, this will help you see the Real you.”

Nux smiled.

Thyra, on the other hand, couldn't answer.

Right now, her limbs were tied on what looked like a cross and in front of her, there was a huge mirror.

The mirror was as big as a wall.

And seeing herself in the mirror, a weird sense of tingling feeling assaulted Thyra's little sister.

Then, through the mirror, she noticed that Nux was coming toward her with a smile on his face, her body trembled as Nux stood behind her and then his hands started moving.

First, they touched her waist, then, they moved up and after circling around her lovely breasts, they moved to her shoulders and then her arms.

After that, a small smile appeared on Nux's face and then, a knife appeared in his hands.

“Shall we start?” he questioned with a gentle smile on his face and then without waiting for her answer, he used the knife to cut open her clothes as slowly as possible.

The knife moved from her hands to her shoulder, trailing down her body while cutting her clothes without actually harming her body in any way.

“Don’t move, okay? Things might get dangerous~”

Nux whispered into her ears softly, and for some reason, her whole body trembled when she heard his voice.

The knife then reached her armpit and stopped.

Then, it circled around her armpit and shoulder, and her whole sleeve fell on the floor, revealing her arm.

Nux kissed her shoulder and then, he continued doing the same with her other arm.

When both her sleeves fell on the floor, Nux smiled and then, he placed his knife under her armpits and started cutting her clothes down to her legs.

Then, he did the same thing on the other side, Nux then stepped back and appeared behind her again, then, he placed the knife above Thyra’s breasts and started cutting her clothes in a horizontal line.

Thyra’s clothes fell, revealing the black colour bra she was wearing.

“Ahh, it didn’t completely fall off, did it?” Nux muttered as he shook his head, then, he brought his knife close to Thyra’s thighs.

“Annh~”

Thyra moaned a little when Nux slid the knife’s hilt tilt on the top of her little sister, then, he placed the blade near her little sister and started cutting her pants all the way down to her legs.

After he repeated the same thing to the other side, Thyra’s dress finally fell to the floor, Nux used the same trick to remove her bra and panty as well and once he was done, Nux admired his work with a big, satisfied smile on his face.

“What a beautiful sight~”

Nux complimented.

Thyra's face turned red for some reason.

This wasn't the first time she has been naked in front of Nux, however, this was definitely the first time when he did something like this.

Also, seeing the whole process in the mirror in front of her,

This excited her in a strange way.

“You see how your thighs are wet in the mirror?” Suddenly, Nux, who was standing behind Thyra pointed at the mirror and muttered.

“Huh?” Thyra glanced at the mirror and then, she realized she was wet.

Her little sister was trembling in anticipation and was releasing its juice uncontrollably.

Nux smiled,

“See? That is what the mirror of truth does, it shows you your real self.

Now tell me, what kind of person would get wet after having their clothes removed in such a way?”

Nux questioned and then, he answered.

“A pervert.

Only a pervert would get excited by something like this.”

Thyra's face turned red, however, she quickly shook her head.

“I am not a pervert!”

“Tsk Tsk, to dare deny it even after the proof is right in front of you, Thyra Cruse, you have fallen to a low level.”

Nux shook his head in disappointment.

However, this time, Thyra was prepared with the answer,

She then pointed at the mirror and muttered,

“See that huge tent that has formed on your pant?

Who gets excited after removing someone’s clothes in such a way?

A pervert.”

Thyra smiled as she used his words against him also, she did not give up the momentum she had gained and continued,

“The real pervert in this room is not me, it is you, Nux Leander.”

Nux was taken by surprise, however, he soon came out of his reverie and answered,

“No no no no, you got that wrong, Thyra.

This boner does not show that I am a pervert, rather, this boner is the key.

The key that will show you your real self and prove that you are a pervert.”

Saying that, Nux lowered his pants, revealing his hard dick that had veins popping all over its body, he then placed his dick right under Thyra’s little sister,

And seeing that scene right in front of her,

\*Gulp\*

Thyra gulped.

# Chapter 279

“Annh~”

A small moan leaked out of Thyra’s mouth as Nux placed the head of his dick on Thyra’s pussy.

However, no matter how much Thyra moaned, his did not enter her insides.

This made Thyra’s little sister scream in frustration and she started twitching uncontrollably.

“Thyra, you see how your little sister is twitching? That proves that you are a pervert.” Nux pointed at the mirror with a smile on his face.

Thyra, however, did not give up.

Her body was already shuddering from anticipation, she knew that she couldn’t let Nux tease her anymore, she knew that she should just give in and let Nux do whatever he wanted with her.

However, she didn’t want that.

Where’s the fun in that?

She would rather go against him!

Then he would try even harder.

“Heh. Don’t talk like that when your little brother has veins all over his body, I can see how eager it is to enter my little sister.

You are the real pervert here.”

“So you won’t give up huh...” Nux muttered with a small smile on his face.

Then, he nodded to himself and pointed at the mirror again,

“Thyra Cruse, look at the mirror.”

Thyra frowned in confusion however, in the end, she did what she was told.

“Remember your face, how you are smiling back, how your blue eyes are shining, how confident you look, remember everything. Burn it in your memory.”

Thyra frowned even more.

“Have you remembered your face?” Nux questioned with a smile.

Even though she was confused, Thyra nodded her head.

Nux’s smile widened, and then, Black-coloured Mist came out of his body and moved towards Thyra’s face.

The Mist then covered her eyes and Thyra’s vision turned black.

Of course, the mist wasn’t dangerous for her eyes.

After increasing his Mastery Level to Advance Level, Nux is now able to control how dangerous the Mist would be to some extent, right now, the danger level was zero.

It was no different than Nux covering her eyes with his own hands.

Nux’s smile widened even more and then,

“AANnnnnhhhh!!”

He pierced his rod into her body in one go.

Thyra moaned in pleasure.

With her eyes now closed, all her other senses heightened,

She could feel how her walls were sucking and clustering around Nux's dick, she could feel how her womb was trembling and was sending waves and waves of pleasure all over her body.

She could feel everything.

Then, she felt Nux's dick moving out of her cave, her walls twitched, however, soon, the dick was smashed right back into her cave and,

“AAANNHHhhh!” Thyra moaned again.

Thyra then felt Nux's hands moving towards her breasts, then, she felt his fingers circling around her breasts,

“AAANNNhhhh!”

At the same time, he drilled his rod inside her again.

Then, Thyra could also feel Nux's breath on her shoulders, he was about to kiss her cheek.

Nux did what Thyra expected and kissed her teeth while he rammed his dick into her body.

Thyra continued to moan as well.

For some reason, doing it with her eyes closed felt even better.

“AAAnnhh~~”

Another moan leaked out of her mouth when Nux pinched her nipples at the same time, then, his right hand continued to play with her nipple while his left hand moved down.

“!!!”

Thyra's body shuddered in pleasure when Nux touched her clitoris at the same time he rammed his cock into her body.

Thyra felt her body losing all her strength, however, since her limbs were tied, there was nothing she could do rather than accept Nux's thrusts without any resistance whatsoever.

She could feel him kissing her cheek and shoulder, playing with her nipple, rubbing her clitoris and ramming his cock into her,

He was doing everything at the same time and was releasing waves after waves of pleasure into her body.

“Annh~ Annh~ Annh~”

Thyra moaned helplessly.

\*Pah\* \*Pah\* \*Pah\*

Her ears picked the sounds of flesh clashing with flesh, she didn't need to think much, she knew what that sound was.

“!!!”

Suddenly, Thyra's body shuddered again when she felt Nux biting her earlobe.

Her walls tightened, her body became rigid, back arched up and,

\*Squirt\*

“AAAannnnNNhhh~”

She came.

\*Pah\* \*Pah\* \*Pah\*

Nux, however, wasn't done with her and even though her little sister was squirting and wavering with pleasure, he continued to ram his cock inside her body.

“Annhh~ Anhnh~ Annhh~”

This multiplied the pleasure Thyra was feeling.

And suddenly, Nux flicked her Clitoris.

“!!!”

Thyra’s already weak body shuddered again and she had another minor orgasm a second after she was done with the main one.

“Heehh? You are more excited than normal, are you not?”

Suddenly, she heard Nux’s gentle voice, however, she did not have the energy to answer his questions.

The pleasure was too much for her, also, with how Nux still continued to drill his rod into her, she could do nothing but moan continuously.

She was helpless right now.

However, that didn’t mean she would let him win,

Thyra then collected her remaining strength and then, tried to tighten her walls.

Her method seems to have worked as her ears picked up Nux’s groan,

“Uggghhh!! I am cumminngggg!!”

Then, Thyra felt a thick liquid filling her insides, this made her body tremble even more, she lost all the strength she had and,

She enjoyed another minor orgasm.

Her nose then picked the smell of her liquids being mixed with Nux’s, she didn’t need to see and was able to tell that these liquids were falling out of her little sister without stopping.

“Haahh... hahh... hahhh...” She took deep breaths.

“Heh. You don’t think we are done here, do you, my lovely Thyra?”

Suddenly, Nux’s voice entered her ears and Thyra’s body froze.

Then, Nux adjusted the cross Thyra was tied on and then, he lowered her upper body and made her bend to an exact 90 degrees.

Then, he moved his towards Thyra’s soft butt and started caressing it.

“We still have lots and lots of time, my lovely Thyra.”

Saying that, Nux rammed his cock inside her again and another round started.

“AANNnhhhhH~~”

# Chapter 280

“Annh~”

A small moan leaked out of Thyra’s mouth as Nux placed the head of his dick on Thyra’s pussy.

However, no matter how much Thyra moaned, his did not enter her insides.

This made Thyra’s little sister scream in frustration and she started twitching uncontrollably.

“Thyra, you see how your little sister is twitching? That proves that you are a pervert.” Nux pointed at the mirror with a smile on his face.

Thyra, however, did not give up.

Her body was already shuddering from anticipation, she knew that she couldn’t let Nux tease her anymore, she knew that she should just give in and let Nux do whatever he wanted with her.

However, she didn’t want that.

Where’s the fun in that?

She would rather go against him!

Then he would try even harder.

“Heh. Don’t talk like that when your little brother has veins all over his body, I can see how eager it is to enter my little sister.

You are the real pervert here.”

“So you won’t give up huh...” Nux muttered with a small smile on his face.

Then, he nodded to himself and pointed at the mirror again,

“Thyra Cruse, look at the mirror.”

Thyra frowned in confusion however, in the end, she did what she was told.

“Remember your face, how you are smiling back, how your blue eyes are shining, how confident you look, remember everything. Burn it in your memory.”

Thyra frowned even more.

“Have you remembered your face?” Nux questioned with a smile.

Even though she was confused, Thyra nodded her head.

The latest epi sodes are on the NOVELNB.COM website.

Nux’s smile widened, and then, Black-coloured Mist came out of his body and moved towards Thyra’s face.

The Mist then covered her eyes and Thyra’s vision turned black.

Of course, the mist wasn’t dangerous for her eyes.

After increasing his Mastery Level to Advance Level, Nux is now able to control how dangerous the Mist would be to some extent, right now, the danger level was zero.

It was no different than Nux covering her eyes with his own hands.

Nux’s smile widened even more and then,

“AANnnnnhhhh!!”

He pierced his rod into her body in one go.

Thyra moaned in pleasure.

With her eyes now closed, all her other senses heightened,

She could feel how her walls were sucking and clustering around Nux's dick, she could feel how her womb was trembling and was sending waves and waves of pleasure all over her body.

She could feel everything.

Then, she felt Nux's dick moving out of her cave, her walls twitched, however, soon, the dick was smashed right back into her cave and,

“AAANNHHhhh!” Thyra moaned again.

Thyra then felt Nux's hands moving towards her breasts, then, she felt his fingers circling around her breasts,

“AAANNHhhh!!”

At the same time, he drilled his rod inside her again.

Then, Thyra could also feel Nux's breath on her shoulders, he was about to kiss her cheek.

Nux did what Thyra expected and kissed her teeth while he rammed his dick into her body.

Thyra continued to moan as well.

For some reason, doing it with her eyes closed felt even better.

The latest epi sodes are on the NOVELNB.COM website.

“AAannhh~~”

Another moan leaked out of her mouth when Nux pinched her nipples at the same time, then, his right hand continued to play with her nipple while his left hand moved down.

“!!!”

Thyra's body shuddered in pleasure when Nux touched her clitoris at the same time he rammed his cock into her body.

Thyra felt her body losing all her strength, however, since her limbs were tied, there was nothing she could do rather than accept Nux's thrusts without any resistance whatsoever.

She could feel him kissing her cheek and shoulder, playing with her nipple, rubbing her clitoris and ramming his cock into her,

He was doing everything at the same time and was releasing waves after waves of pleasure into her body.

“Annh~ Annh~ Annh~”

Thyra moaned helplessly.

\*Pah\* \*Pah\* \*Pah\*

Her ears picked the sounds of flesh clashing with flesh, she didn't need to think much, she knew what that sound was.

“!!!”

Suddenly, Thyra's body shuddered again when she felt Nux biting her earlobe.

Her walls tightened, her body became rigid, back arched up and,

\*Squirt\*

“AAAannnnNNhhh~”

She came.

\*Pah\* \*Pah\* \*Pah\*

Nux, however, wasn't done with her and even though her little sister was squirting and wavering with pleasure, he continued to ram his cock inside

her body.

“Annhh~ Annhh~ Annhh~”

This multiplied the pleasure Thyra was feeling.

And suddenly, Nux flicked her Clitoris.

“!!!”

Thyra’s already weak body shuddered again and she had another minor orgasm a second after she was done with the main one.

“Heehh? You are more excited than normal, are you not?”

Suddenly, she heard Nux’s gentle voice, however, she did not have the energy to answer his questions.

The pleasure was too much for her, also, with how Nux still continued to drill his rod into her, she could do nothing but moan continuously.

She was helpless right now.

However, that didn’t mean she would let him win,

Thyra then collected her remaining strength and then, tried to tighten her walls.

Her method seems to have worked as her ears picked up Nux’s groan,

“Uggghhh!! I am cumminngggg!!”

Then, Thyra felt a thick liquid filling her insides, this made her body tremble even more, she lost all the strength she had and,

She enjoyed another minor orgasm.

Her nose then picked the smell of her liquids being mixed with Nux’s, she didn’t need to see and was able to tell that these liquids were falling out of

her little sister without stopping.

“Haahh... hahh... hahhh...” She took deep breaths.

“Heh. You don’t think we are done here, do you, my lovely Thyra?”

Suddenly, Nux’s voice entered her ears and Thyra’s body froze.

Then, Nux adjusted the cross Thyra was tied on and then, he lowered her upper body and made her bend to an exact 90 degrees.

Then, he moved his towards Thyra’s soft butt and started caressing it.

“We still have lots and lots of time, my lovely Thyra.”

Saying that, Nux rammed his cock inside her again and another round started.

“AANNnhhhhH~~”

# Chapter 281

“Ugghhhh! I am cumming again!!!”

\*Squirt\*

“AAaannhhhhh!!”

Nux and Thyra moaned in pleasure as they both orgasmed at the same time.

Nux then rested his body on top of Thyra’s back and the two of them started breathing heavily.

Then, a familiar energy entered Nux’s body and a bunch of messages appeared in front of his eyes, he, however, ignored those messages and stood up.

Taking his dick out of her little sister, Nux walked towards Thyra with a smile on his face.

Thyra, who still had the black mist covering her eyes felt Nux’s little brother moving out of her cave, then, she heard his footsteps and realized that he was walking towards him.

Then, a strong scent assaulted her nose, she didn’t need to think to know what it was.

\*Sniff\* \*Sniff\*

She sniffed even more and moved her face towards Nux’s dick.

However, suddenly, the Mist around her eyes disappeared.

Thyra frowned but before she could say anything, she heard Nux’s voice.

“Look at the mirror of reality, Thyra.”

Thyra then turned towards the mirror and her eyes widened her surprise.

Her face was completely red, she was breathing heavily, her drool was coming out of her mouth, her hairs were a mess and there was a silly smile on her face.

If that was not enough then the way she had moved her head towards Nux's dick and the way her tongue was out on its own shocked Thyra to her core.

“Compare this face to your previous face, Thyra.

Then try to tell me that you are not a pervert.”

Thyra then glanced at Nux's face and saw him looking at her with a smirk on her face.

She then looked at her own face once more and was shocked again.

She couldn't believe it was her.

She couldn't believe that she was able to make that face.

She didn't resemble her usual calm and emotionless appearance at all.

It was as if she was a completely different person.

However...

Thyra's silly smile then widened.

It wasn't a problem, as long as Nux is the only one who sees her this side, it wasn't a problem at all.

“I am a pervert.”

She admitted with a smile on her face.

Nux chuckled, he then brought his dick close to Thyra's mouth.

Thyra knew what she had to do, she opened her mouth and then, she started licking his shaft.

A few minutes later, she started sucking.

\*Slurp\* \*Slurp\* \*Slurp\*

She started sucking as intensely as she could.

“Uggghhh... Thyra, you are too good!!” Nux groaned in pleasure.

With her body tied up, her movements were minimal, however, she compensated for that by how strongly she was sucking Nux’s dick.

It was as if she was trying to force him to cum even more.

And with how her cheeks were sunk inwardly, Nux, who was already very sensitive couldn’t hold back and,

“Uggghhh!!”

He came again.

Thyra didn’t waste any drop, as if she was someone who hadn’t eaten for days, she drank all his jizz without leaving anything.

Then, she opened her mouth as if she was trying to show him that she had drank it all.

Nux felt his dick twitching when he saw that face.

Thyra was tired, he knows that, he knows that the moment he places her on the bed, the girl would sleep, however, even after that, the girl still gave him a blowjob.

What a lovely assassin.

Nux then removed her from her bindings, then he picked her up and walked towards the bed.

“It is good that you admit it.”

He muttered.

“It is good that we have something in common...” Suddenly, Thyra muttered in a weak voice.

“Hmm?”

“We both are perverts...”

Thyra completed and then, she closed her eyes.

The meaning behind her words was clear, even though she was a pervert, Nux was one as well.

Even in the end, she did not completely give in.

Nux chuckled.

“We both are perverts indeed...” He agreed and then he kissed her forehead.

Thyra was already asleep, he wanted to sleep as well, however, there was something he wanted to do before that.

First, he moved the mirror and the Cross into his storage ring, this Cross was something he borrowed from Edda, as for this mirror, well, he carried it around because of this mirror of reality idea that had suddenly come into his mind.

Hehe~

‘It was fun indeed.’

He chuckled inwardly.

Thyra was more sensitive than usual today.

Nux then shook his head, he sat on the ground and then, he called for his system.

Those messages reappeared in front of his eyes,

[Congratulations to the host for rising to an Expert Stage Mana Cultivator from a Grand Master Stage Mana Cultivator.]

[INT: +20]

[Blank Points: +40]

[Congratulations to the host for rising to an Expert Stage Body Cultivator from a Grand Master Stage Body Cultivator.]

[STR: +8]

[AGL: +8]

[VIT: +8]

[STM: +8]

[DEF: +8]

[Blank Points: +20]

[Harem Gate unlocked.]

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: Expert.]

[Body Cultivation: Expert.]

[Physique: Devouring Mist Demon Physique – Advanced (+)]

[Talent: High]

[LVL: 43 → 50] (This did not happen with his session with his Today's sessions with Thyra. He was already level 49 before this session, he only got to level 50 in this session.)

[HP: 1320/1320]

[MP: 1800/1800]

[STR: 112 → 134]

[AGL: 122 → 144]

[VIT: 110 → 132]

[STM: 149 → 171]

[INT: 153 → 180]

[DEF: 109 → 131]

[Blank Points: 118 → 99]

Nux Leander was now an Expert Stage Cultivator,

An 18-year-old Expert Stage Cultivator.

And not a normal Expert Stage Cultivator, but a cultivator who can easily overpower any other Expert Stage Cultivators who dare to come in front of him.

'I got 60 Black Points...'

A small smile appeared on Nux's face as he glanced at Black points, however, then, his smile died away.

He was still far from his goal.

He needed 1000 Black points,

For what?

To upgrade his Physique Mastery to Master Level.

Yes, it needed 1000 Black points!

Upgrade to Advance Level Mastery only needed 100 Black Points, but now a direct 10 times increase!

This was ridiculous!

The system was trying to suck him dry!

Nux, however, quickly calmed himself...

There was no need to get agitated, he should focus on something much more important.

[Harem Gate Unlocked.]

# Chapter 282

[Harem Gate Unlocked.]

[Active Skill]

[Effects:]

[Teleports near a Harem Member.]

[1MP: 100 Meters.]

[One free use every day.]

[Warning: If the distance between the Host and his woman is more than the MP required to get there, the ability will not work.]

[Warning: A woman can only be counted as Harem Member if she has Harem Seal.]

The more Nux read the wider his smile got.

‘What a convenient ability...’

He muttered inwardly.

He then quickly walked into the bathroom and washed.

Then, he closed his eyes.

As soon as he got this ability, he realized how to use it.

It wasn't very hard, he just had to choose the woman he wants to go to and boom, he would be around the said woman.

Of course, he was planning to use and test this ability as much as he could.

‘Amaya Skyfall’

He thought inwardly, his body then disappeared and he appeared inside Amaya’s room.

[MP: 1308/1800]

He then glanced at his MP and noticed that around 500 MP has been reduced.

“Amazing...”

Nux muttered in amazement as he started looking around.

It was indeed Amaya’s room.

His eyes then fell on Amaya who was lying on the bed, covering herself with Devouring Mist and acting like a sick person.

A smile appeared on Nux’s face when he saw that.

He then closed his eyes again,

‘Allura Skyfall.’

He thought and then, he disappeared.

[MP: 1301/1800]

“Huh? Nux?”

Then he heard Allura’s startled voice.

Right now, Allura was reading a book while thinking about Nux, she was really surprised that he appeared right in front of her like this.

“How are you, my beautiful Allura? Did you miss me?” Nux questioned with a smile on his face.

“Shouldn’t you come here in the night?” Allura questioned while she walked into Nux’s embrace as if it was the most natural thing to do.

“Should I come in the night then?” Nux questioned with a playful smile on his face.

“Heehh? Can you really stay away from me for that long?” Allura questioned back with a smile on her face.

Nux chuckled.

As expected of Allura, this was indeed the perfect answer.

His hands that were hugging Allura started moving towards her soft and lovely breasts.

Then, a thought appeared inside Nux’s head,

He had already used 500 MP, why not wait here a little and spend some blissful time with his woman?

He could always test his abilities later, can he not?

The more he thought about it, the wider his smile got.

“Wait...”

Suddenly, Allura froze.

“You became an Expert Stage Cultivator...” She realized.

Then, she started thinking.

Only Arvina was the only one who could help Nux, however, she knew that he wasn’t that close to her.

Yet.

Then there was only one option left...

“Thyra broke through...” Allura muttered.

She didn't even think about the possibility of Nux cultivating on his own.

She knew him well, he would rather spend time with his woman than cultivate.

He was a horny pervert.

“Indeed.”

Nux nodded with a smile.

“She worked hard.”

Allura smiled as well.

She was actually happy for Thyra.

Even though the two of them didn't like each other.

While she was thinking all of this, Nux picked her up and walked toward the bed,

Then, he whispered in his usual gentle voice,

“How about we work hard as well?”

A smile appeared on Allura's face and she chuckled,

“Of course.

We should always work hard.”

Nux smiled, he then quickly removed Allura's clothes and pounced on her like a beast!

Rooaaarr!

...

2 hours later, Nux took a bath in the bathroom, with Allura of course.

However, they did not do anything.

It was already time for dinner.

Nux had to return.

Nux, who wore his clothes smiled at Allura,

“We will meet soon, my love.”

Allura smiled back.

Nux then closed his eyes and,

‘Skyla’

Then, he disappeared.

Allura raised her eyebrows in amazement.

Nux had already told her about the ability his new ability, therefore, she wasn't really shocked about his sudden disappearance. However, she was still surprised.

She was again reminded of how absurd her man was.

An ability like this was...

Simply illogical.

...

On the other side, Nux appeared behind Skyla, the girl was startled by his sudden appearance, however, she was quick to recover.

“Nux!” she exclaimed and jumped into his embrace.

[MP: 985/1800]

‘So I don’t need to say the complete name.’

Nux noted in his head.

He still needed to test the limits of his ability after all.

“How are you doing, Skyla?”

“Making food~” Skyla answered.

“Oh ho? I am looking forward to your cooking~” Nux answered as he kissed her lips.

“Mhm~ I will make sure that it will come out tasty~”

Skyla answered with a cheerful smile.

She didn’t even bother questioning how he appeared behind her.

Well, Nux’s [Conceal] worked in a similar way, so you can see that she was already used to Nux appearing around him.

“Alright, I will go now, bye~”

Nux muttered and then, he disappeared again.

He then appeared behind Edda.

[MP: 983/1800]

‘So I don’t need the name at all.’

Nux noted again.

He then looked around and saw Lane and Edda were looking at him.

“Lane, can you go stand towards that wall?” Nux questioned.

Lane frowned, however, she nodded and then did as she was told.

“What are you tryi-” Edda wanted to question, however, before she could, Nux disappeared and appeared beside Lane.

[MP: 983/1800]

This time, no MP was used.

‘Does that mean it doesn’t require MP if the distance is less than 100 Meters?’

Nux questioned inwardly.

He then turned to Edda and muttered,

“Edda, you go stand over there.”

“Alright...” seeing his disappear like that, Edda realized that he got yet another absurd ability, therefore, she did as she was told.

He will tell her everything later.

She doesn’t need to ask any questions right now.

Nux then disappeared and appeared behind Edda, then, he disappeared again and appeared near Edda.

He then repeated it 5 times and,

[MP: 982/1800]

His MP reduced again.

Suddenly, Nux grabbed his head and groaned in pain.

“Ugghh...”

# Chapter 283

“ ... ”

Right now, Royce was sitting in front of the dining table with a frown on his face.

He glanced at Felberta, who was eating silently, then his eyes fell on Nux who was doing the same, Miss Edda was standing beside them eating silently as well.

Skyla and Lane were standing behind them without moving.

And there was another woman who was sitting at the dining table.

Normally, this would not be weird, Royce has seen other guests visiting them and having dinner with them before.

However, today, the air around the dining table felt weird.

It was quiet.

Too quiet.

After the initial greetings, the only sounds he heard were utensils touching each other, nothing else.

Generally, the dinner with a guest should have more energy than normal, however, Royce could feel that the energy had decreased and is less than normal.

‘Haahh...’

In the end, Royce decided to ignore this and focused on eating.

Adults seem to think differently than him.

He shouldn't try to understand them.

Thinking about it, Royce ignored everything that was happening and continued eating.

'This is a great ability.'

Thyra muttered with an excited look on her face.

Yes, Nux and the others were using Harem Seal's telepathic link to talk to each other, that is why the dining room was so silent.

Right now, Nux was talking about the new ability he had received.

'A great ability indeed, now we don't have to wait for Nux, all we have to do is call him and he will appear beside us. Fufufufu~'

Edda nodded in agreement.

'That is not what I am talking about you pervert.' Thyra retorted.

'Huh? What? You don't want Nux to come to you whenever you want?' Edda questioned.

'T-That is not what I am talking about. What I am saying is that this ability could be used in a better way.' Thyra answered.

'Tsk Tsk, you act like that right now, but I am sure you will be the one who would abuse this ability the most out of all of us.' Edda snorted.

'Silence, training, increase.'

In reply, Thyra spoke only 3 words and Edda turned silent.

Thyra was the strongest among everyone, and she was the one who taught everyone.

She had the power here.

‘What is this better way you are talking about?’ Felberta questioned in a curious tone.

‘Using this ability, Nux can fight together with us.’ Thyra muttered.

‘Huh?’ All the women frowned.

Nux started thinking and nodded, he had a vague idea about what Thyra was talking about.

‘Since we have this telepathic link, our coordination would already be the best if we ever join the battlefield after a little bit of training.

And if we add this new teleporting ability with it, we would be a dangerous force.’

Thyra started talking, she looked so excited that her eyes started shining while she was eating, making Royce think that she was a weird woman.

Of course, Thyra didn’t care about what Royce thought, heck, she didn’t even realize that he was looking at her, she was just too excited about this new ability and continued,

‘Just imagine, we 7 women and Nux fighting together as a group against many enemies.

Imagine, the enemies think that they would defeat you within the next move, however, suddenly, Nux appears beside us and beheads the enemy.

Or suddenly, knowing that the Nux is the centre of our group, the enemy decides to encircle him and ignore us, then suddenly, he would disappear from the encirclement and would start killing and attacking enemies from behind.

Us eight fighting together would make a complete invincible team with no weakness whatsoever.’

Thyra explained and the other women’s eyes shined brightly.

This indeed looked...

Romantic.

Fighting together with Nux would be a dream come true.

Even Nux raised his eyebrow in surprise when he thought about what Thyra said. It did look quite a lethal technique.

While everyone was thinking about it, Royce frowned.

‘Is there something I don’t know?’ He thought inwardly.

That woman named Thyra alone acting strangely was fine, however, if all the people eating and serving the food acted like that...

Then the strange one is him, correct?

‘Is it because I usually stay alone and don’t talk much?’ Royce started doubting himself.

‘I agree.’ Suddenly, Nux and the others heard Amaya’s voice.

‘Thyra is right, this is indeed an overpowered ability. We can use it like how Thyra said.’

‘But if I teleport too much, my head would start aching like what happened an hour ago, won’t that be disadvantageous in the war?’

Nux questioned.

‘We aren’t going to fight without any practice of course.

Your headache was most probably because your brain was unable to handle the quick changes of surroundings so many times, I believe you just have to train and you will be able to use this ability just fine.’

Thyra muttered.

‘Yes, don’t worry, I have already come up with a training plan.’ Amaya smiled.

‘What plan?’ Nux questioned.

‘Catch ball.’

Amaya answered.

‘Huh? Isn’t that a game children play?’ Skyla questioned with a frown.

‘Yes, there are 5 of you there with Nux. All you 5 have to do is form a circle, Nux would stand in the centre of the circle, then, you 5 will try to hit each other with a ball and Nux would have to use his ability to appear next to you, protect you and catch the ball.’

‘That is a good way to train, I agree.’ Thyra nodded.

‘Hehe~ Nux would protect us? I agree as well~’ Skyla chuckled.

‘Hmph! It is nothing more than training, okay? Don’t act weirdly.’ Amaya snorted.

Her jealousy was clear in her eyes.

‘Hehe~’ Skyla chuckled again and Amaya snorted.

As the plan was made, the 8 of them continued to talk.

The dinner ended, Nux then appeared in Amaya’s room and spent another blissful session with her.

The next whole week, Nux only did two things, spending time with his women, and training his new ability.

He wanted to Train with Thyra as well, however, the woman shook her head.

This ability was much more important right now.

It was a scarily fast way to get stronger after all.

Just like that, a week passed by and Nux's vacation ended.

# Chapter 284

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“Enter.”

Nux knocked on the door and soon, he heard a familiar voice.

A smile appeared on his face as he entered.

“I am back, teacher.” He bowed his head.

Arvina looked at him with her Brown-red eyes and then, a small smile appeared on her face.

“It is good that you are back.”

Soon, however, a frown appeared on her face as she questioned,

“Why are you hiding your cultivation again?”

“There are many eyes here, teacher,” Nux answered.

“Don’t worry, the servants working here are loyal to me.” Arvina answered, however, when her eyes fell on Nux, she paused.

Nux was looking at her with a wry smile on his face.

She understood what that expression meant.

“As I said, they are all loyal to me.”

She repeated.

“Are you 100% sure?” Nux questioned.

“I am.” Arvina answered.

“Teacher Arvina, a human heart can be unpredictable, are you 100% sure that these people are loyal to you?” Nux questioned again.

“Are you 100% sure that these people would die without any hesitation if you order them you?”

Are you 100% sure that these people would not reveal anything even if they are tortured inhumanly?”

“...”

Nux continued to question and Arvina turned silent.

A human heart was unpredictable indeed.

So unless someone had the Slave Seal like Nux has, no one would be able to trust their subordinates without a sliver of doubt.

“Alright, I understand.

You can keep hiding your cultivation.”

Arvina then sighed.

She was pretty positive that her subordinates are loyal to her, however, she could still not be 100% sure about this.

There are always variables.

And Nux’s secret...

Honestly, it was much more dangerous than what Nux thinks.

Things weren’t as simple as Nux made it out to be.

Of course, Arvina didn’t blame Nux for this.

How is he supposed to know the inner workings of the Kingdom that even most of the members of the Royal Family don’t know?

“Yes, it is always better to be careful.” Nux nodded and Arvina nodded back.

“Alright, I believe you have already had enough time to rest, how about we start your training?”

Arvina changed the topic and muttered.

Small talks weren't something she was good at anyway,

Rather than talking about this, they should focus on Swords.

Or at least that's what Arvina felt.

“As you say, Teacher Arvina.” Nux nodded his head.

Arvina smiled she stood up and stretched her body.

Nux felt that she was deliberately trying to tease him, however, he did not avert his gaze.

He would be a fool to do something like that.

Tsk Tsk, he would rather enjoy the alluring sight that was in front of his eyes.

Arvina noticed that he was looking as well, she frowned and then she stopped stretching. Then, she walked out of her office without saying anything.

Nux followed behind her obediently.

The two of them walked into the garden and suddenly, Nux frowned.

“Teacher...”

“What is it?” Arvina questioned.

“Where is the oh so mighty Queen of the Academy?” Nux questioned.

“She left,” Arvina answered.

“Huh? She left the academy?” Nux frowned.

Was she that embarrassed?

“No, she did not leave the Academy, she just left this place.

The headmaster of the Academy returned 2 days earlier and heard about everything that happened.

Hearing that you defeated Candice, he was shocked.

He then came to me to talk about your battle and while he was about to leave, Candice approached him.”

Arvina explained.

“Huh? What did she say?” Nux questioned with a curious look on his face.

“She said that the reason she lost was that I didn’t teach her properly and only told her to practice one move I have taught her again and again.

She said that since she didn’t have a variety of moves to fight against you, she lost the battle.” Arvina answered with an expressionless face. She didn’t look very bothered about this incident.

“Ahh, so she blamed you.

Why am I not surprised?” Nux chuckled, then, he turned towards Arvina and questioned,

“So? What did the Headmaster say?”

“Well, no matter what, Candice still has Exceptional Level affinity with the water element, she has a bright future.

The Headmaster did not reject her and took her in as his student.”

“Ahh, so now she is Headmaster’s student.” Nux nodded with a smile on his face.

“Tsk Tsk, the only thing that was mildly good about her fight was that her moves seemed well practised, to think she would give up on that advantage as well~

A fool indeed.”

“Actually,” Suddenly, Arvina muttered.

“Hmm?”

“The Headmaster came here because he wanted to take you in as his student. Now that you have returned, I believe he will return and try to take you as his student.

You do not have to worry, if you feel like he would be a better teacher than me, then, by all means, you can leave with him.” Arvina muttered.

“Question...”

“What is it?”

“Teacher Arvina, if you and Headmaster fight without using Mana, who will win?” Nux questioned with a curious look on his face.

“Huh? Is that even a question?

I would beat that baldy up.”

Arvina answered as if it was a fact.

“Then why would I go to that baldy and train under him?” Nux questioned with a smile.

“Oi, he is the Headmaster, you cannot call him that.”

“...”

Nux looked at Arvina with a deadpan expression on his face.

“Alright, whatever, let’s start your training.

I will train you from basic, if I feel like you know it already, we will increase the level.” Arvina muttered.

“Yes, teacher.” A serious look appeared on Nux’s face as he nodded.

Arvina liked that look.

A small smile appeared on her face as she continued.

“Alright, let’s start with your posture first. I won’t change much, however, let’s try to reduce the openings it has.”

“Yes, teacher.” Nux nodded with a determined look on his face.

He was very much looking forward to it.

He needed to impress Arvina after all.

And just like that, Nux’s training started.

# Chapter 285

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“Come in.”

The doors of Evane’s office were opened and a beautiful red brown-eyed, light-blonde-haired woman walked in.

“Teacher Arvina, I heard you wanted to talk to me but why did you come on your own? You could have called me in your office.”

Evane muttered as she stood up from her seat.

“Princess Evane, you should not lower yourself like this, you have to take note of your status.” Arvina narrowed her eyes and suggested.

“I am just a normal teacher in this academy, you, on the other hand, are the Vice Headmaster, it is completely normal for me to act like this,” Evane answered with a polite smile on her face.

Arvina shook her head.

She knew her words won’t have any effect, however, she still wanted to try nonetheless.

Evane has already given up on her title as the princess and wanted to live in peace, however, Arvina knew that something like that isn’t possible.

Sooner or later, she will be dragged into politics, whether she wants it or not.

“So what did you want to talk about, Teacher Arvina?” Evane questioned.

Arvina came out of her thoughts and replied,

“I want to talk about Nux,”

“Nux? What about him?”

“I heard that you have allowed him to live in the Teacher’s abode.

Strange rumours have started because of this,”

Arvina didn’t say anymore.

Evane knew how the world works and gossips were the best sources of entertainment for most people.

She knew what Arvina was getting at and she also knew what Arvina wanted her to do.

However,

Evane shook her head,

“I don’t care what those people say.

I am doing this because I want to protect Nux.”

People can think whatever they want, Evane didn’t care.

She would do what she wanted to do. Now that she has promised that she would protect Nux, she would do her best to live up to it.

“You are trying to protect Nux?” Arvina frowned.

“Yes, that boy defended himself in front of a son of an Earl, in the process, he injured his opponent a little, I am worried that the Earl would target him.

He is a commoner with little to no background, although there is a Marquee supporting him, I don’t think that Marquee do anything if he ends up dead.

Therefore, I believe that as his teacher, it is my duty to protect that child.”

Evane replied with a determined look on her face.

However, Arvina's expression didn't change at all. Rather, her frown only deepened.

“You are trying to protect Nux...?”

She questioned again, her mind couldn't believe the absurdity of this situation.

The boy that Evane was trying to protect was probably stronger than her.

Earl?

Someone like Earl is nothing in that boy's eyes.

If he revealed his real cultivation, that Earl would come and beg for merc-

‘Ahhh...’

Arvina finally recalled the problem.

It was hidden.

She knew that Nux was a Grand Master Stage Cultivator however, Evane and the others did not.

Evane was just trying to protect an Advance Stage Cultivator.

Arvina needed to think of another way to solve this problem.

“You don't believe the Academy's security system?”

Arvina questioned.

“I don't,” Evane answered without any filters.

“...”

Arvina couldn't find a way to retort either.

For an Earl, it was pretty easy to get a student killed inside the academy.

The only reason why no one does it is that once it is found out, the consequences would be disastrous.

The Academy's leader was a King Stage Cultivator, getting into his bad books was a bad idea for any noble house.

However, since Nux was a commoner, no one would search this case and it would be buried.

That is why an Earl might try to assassinate Nux inside the Academy.

“What about me? Do you trust me?” Arvina questioned.

“Huh?” Evane frowned.

“Teacher Arvina, what are you talking about?” She questioned back.

“If I tell you that I will protect Nux, will you trust me?” Arvina questioned.

“I need to know how you are planning to do it.”

“I will allow him to live in my mansion, I am sure I would be able to protect him if anyone dares to attack him,” Arvina answered and Evane couldn't help but blink a few times.

What the hell was Teacher Arvina talking about?

“Won't that spread weird rumours as well?” Evane questioned.

“Huh? Of course not, he is my personnel Student, why would there be rumours like that? Candice had a room inside my mansion as well.”

Arvina answered and Evane's eyes widened in surprise.

“He is your student!?”

“Yes, I took him in as my student after seeing his talents,” Arvina answered and Evane couldn’t blink her eyes.

Arvina Skyfall, a man-hater, took a male student as her student on her own accord. What!?

What the hell was happening!?

“So him living in my Mansion should be fine, right?” Arvina questioned again.

“...” This time, Evane had no answer.

She had no more reasons to keep him here but for some reason, she didn’t want Nux to live in Arvina’s mansion.

Or rather, she didn’t want him to leave this place.

“Teacher Evane, it should be fine, correct?” Arvina questioned again.

Suddenly, a determined look appeared on Evane’s face as he nodded,

“Have you asked Nux? What does he say?”

“About being my student? Of course, he agreed.”

“No, I am talking about you changing his room.”

“I have not asked him,” Arvina answered.

“Then that’s it, ask him first, if he agrees, I would agree as well.”

“Huh? Why would he not agree?” Arvina frowned.

“Yes, that is what I am talking about, just ask him first, once he agrees, I will agree as well.”

Arvina’s frown deepened.

Why make a simple process so complicated?

She couldn't understand.

However, in the end, she couldn't force Evane, therefore, she shook her head,

“Alright, as you say, I will ask him first.”

Saying that, she turned around and left Evane's office.

After she left, Evane sat on her seat and then placed her hand on her beating heart.

‘What the hell is happening to me?’

# Chapter 286

After talking with Evane, Arvina returned to her mansion, she then walked towards her garden to check on Nux and a smile appeared on her face as she saw Nux swinging his sword with a determined look on his face.

With how his face and clothes were drenched in sweat, Arvina knew that the boy wasn't trying to fake it and couldn't help but smile.

A monstrously talented boy like his is hard working as well...

Arvina knew that his future was limitless.

A thought then appeared in Arvina's mind, she hid behind a bush and started observing Nux.

However, as soon as she hid behind the bush, Nux paused.

Then, he glanced in her direction and smiled,

“Welcome back, teacher.”

Arvina raised her eyebrow in surprise, she then stepped out and commented,

“You are sharp.”

“Thank you.” Nux's smile widened.

“That day, you found Candice who was hiding behind a bush as well, even I was unable to do so, how did you do it?” Arvina questioned.

As a warrior, she was quite perceptive about her surroundings, however, she could see that Nux easily defeated her when it comes to that.

Nux however, did not answer her question and smiled,

“I am just that good.”

“Tsk Tsk, focus on your moves, you arrogant fool, your form is still not perfect.”

“Hmm hmm, just give me a few more hours teacher, I will master this form.”

“Don’t rush it,” Arvina warned.

She didn’t want Nux to do the same mistake Candice did.

“Don’t worry, I won’t move the next moves unless you are satisfied.”

“Heh. It is hard to satisfy me, boy.” Arvina smiled.

“We will see about that,

I will satisfy you for sure~”

Nux muttered with a playful smile on his face.

Seeing that smile, Arvina frowned.

For some reason, she thought that Nux’s words meant something else.

However, she was not sure about it.

Maybe it was just her being overly perceptive and cautious.

She should not think too much about useless things.

Arvina noted in her head.

Then, she suddenly recalled what she wanted to talk about and she called,

“Nux,”

“Yes?”

“You live in the room next to Teacher Evane, correct?”

“Yes, I do, though I am not sure if it could be called a room though, it’s too big,” Nux answered.

“How about you stop living there and shift here?” Arvina questioned.

“ ... ”

Nux frowned and didn’t answer.

Seeing this, Arvina frowned as well,

“There should not be any problem, correct?”

“Umm... Teacher... is it possible to not shift?” Nux questioned with an awkward look on his face.

“Why? Won’t you be more comfortable here? I know your secret, so you can even slack off and stop restraining yourself from time to time. Isn’t that better?” Arvina couldn’t understand Nux’s thoughts.

“That is true... however, I would like to stay there...”

“Why?”

“ ... ”

Nux glanced at Arvina, his mind started thinking about different excuses, however, he was unable to come up with anything.

Soon, however, a smile appeared on his face as he answered,

“Because Teacher Evane is there.”

“Huh?” Arvina frowned.

Soon, her eyes widened in shock as she questioned,

“Are those rumours true!?”

“What rumours?”

“The rumours about you and Evane being a couple.”

“Huh!? Of course not!

I am not that lucky.”

Nux was quick to deny.

Arvina sighed in relief, however, then, she narrowed her eyes and questioned,

“What do you mean you aren’t that lucky? Does that mean you like Teacher Evane?”

Nux then averted his eyes,

“Ah, teacher, I don’t have time to talk right now, let me practice my form. I feel like I can still improve.”

Saying that, Nux started swinging his sword.

Arvina narrowed her eyes, although Nux didn’t answer, his actions made his answers clear.

This boy liked his teacher.

Arvina thought about it and couldn’t believe how wrong it was.

She wanted to talk more about it however, in the end, she shook her head and turned around.

Seeing her walking away, Nux chuckled.

Then, he continued swinging his sword again.

...

“Teacher, I will be leaving now.” After the training ended, Nux bowed his head and muttered.

“You are really going there huh...” Arvina muttered.

Nux just smiled and then, he turned around and left.

Arvina looked at his back with an expressionless face.

No one knew what she was thinking.

...

On the other side, Nux walked into his room and then, he started painting.

No, he wasn't doing this to impress Evane, he wasn't that good, and neither did he think he could become that good in the recent future, he just needed a topic two of them could talk about.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Nux continued painting as time passed, soon, Nux heard a knock.

A smile appeared on his face, he then opened the doors and greeted.

“Teacher Evane, I hope you are doing well.”

Evane smiled and then walked into Nux's room.

“Did you miss me, teacher?”

Honestly, I missed you a lot.” Nux smiled.

“Teacher Arvina told me that you became her student,” Evane muttered.

“Heehh? Didn't I tell you before? Remember what I said?”

Teacher Arvina would like me so much that she would praise me many many times.

However, it seemed that I underestimated my charm,

Teacher Arvina directly took me as her student.”

Nux answered with a proud smile on his face.

Seeing him acting like that, Evane couldn't help but chuckle.

He has not changed at all...

“I can't believe you managed to impress Teacher Arvina.” She muttered.

“Heeh? Wasn't that expected? Didn't I manage to impress Teacher Evane as well? Didn't I become your favourite student?” Nux brought his face close to Evane's and muttered.

“H-Huh? When did you become my favourite student?” Evane stuttered and for some reason, her face turned red.

“Whaaat? I am still not your favourite student yet?” Nux questioned with a shocked look on his face.

“No, you are not. You have to work harder for that.” Evane chuckle.

“Alright, come with me then, I will show you the painting I just made,

This will definitely impress you and I will then become your favourite student.

I am sure of it.”

# Chapter 287

“How’s this? I am quite confident in this one.”

Nux questioned as he showed another painting to Evane with a smile on his face.

“You see, here is the knight, he came after fighting a war and is now in front of the princess...”

Nux then started explaining what he drew and seeing him, Evane smiled.

“Are you going to live with Teacher Arvina from now on?” Suddenly, Evane questioned.

“Knight promised to pro-” Hearing her question, Nux paused.

Then, a frown appeared on his face and he answered,

“Of course not, why would I do that?”

“Teacher Arvina came to me, she talked about how you will be safer if you lived with her,” Evane muttered.

“Safe? Teacher Evane... have you perhaps not heard the news?” Nux questioned.

“News? What news?” Evane frowned.

“Bourkee House is now destroyed,” Nux informed nonchalantly.

“Huh? How did that happen?” Evane questioned in shock, however, Nux shook his head.

“I do not know the details, however, it seems that all the cultivators who were Earl’s subordinates were killed and even Earl had both his arms

chopped off.

Coincidentally, it was revealed that Earl Bourkee had raped Baron Crook's daughter in the past, along with this, many other crimes were revealed as well.

The Earl could only compensate the victims to avoid the case in the Justice Court, however, the number of crimes he committed were so many that his money was spent and even after that, someone filed a case against him for another crime.

Since the Earl lost most of his power, his allies refused to help him.

His condition is quite pitiful now.

Actually, I am even wondering who was the one who did something so cruel to him...

He must be a cold-hearted person.”

Nux shook his head with an innocent look on his face.

“...do you really feel that way...?” Evane questioned.

Nux then looked into her eyes and then, he sighed,

“No... I actually feel that the one who did it should be blessed by the gods and should achieve all the goals in his life.

I truly believe that he is a kind-hearted, gentle and handsome person.”

Nux replied with a smile.

“That's... quite the opposite of what you said...” Evane muttered.

“Well, let's not talk more about this.

In conclusion, now no one would attack me so I am safe.”

“What about Marquee Water? You have humiliated his daughter in front of half of the Academy, you know?”

Nux smiled,

“He won’t do anything.”

“Why?”

“Candice would be the one who would try to go against me.”

“Huh?”

“Yes, I only won against Candice because she didn’t use her Mana. If she had used her Mana, she would have defeated me easily.

Therefore, Candice would be the one to take me on, her pride won’t allow her father to step in.” Nux answered and Evane nodded in agreement.

That sounded logical.

“Also, who knows?”

If Marquee Water attacks me, that kind-hearted, gentle and handsome person might go against him this time.”

Nux muttered and again, Evane felt that there was a hidden meaning behind his words, however, she decided to ignore it since she wasn’t sure.

“All in all, I am safe, as long as I am inside the academy.” Nux muttered.

“Then... you don’t need to stay here?” Evane questioned.

“No, I must stay here. I won’t leave as long as Teacher Evane won’t throw me out.” Then, Nux looked at Evane as his golden eyes shined innocently.

“You won’t kick me out, right teacher Evane?”

“But won’t you be safer living with Teacher Arvina, the room there would be a lot better than this room.”

“But teacher Evane won’t be there.” Nux pouted, then, his eyes shined in determination.

“I must have Teacher Evane all to myself!”

He declared.

“H-Huh?” Evane blinked a few times and her heart skipped a beat.

She then noticed that Nux’s face was unusually close to hers, her heart skipped another beat and she quickly stepped back.

“W-W-W-What are you t-talking about!?”

She stuttered.

“I am not lying, I need to stay with Teacher Evane.

How else am I supposed to become your favourite student?”

“Huh?”

Evane frowned in confusion and her brain stopped working for a few seconds.

Then, her mind started processing what Nux said and she realized that she misunderstood what he was talking about.

Her face turned red in embarrassment.

‘J-Just what am I thinking...?’

She couldn’t think straight.

“You won’t kick me out, right teacher Evane?” oblivious to what she was thinking, Nux questioned with an innocent look on his face.

“I won’t, don’t worry.”

Evane answered, then, she stood up and walked away,

“It is late now, I will be leaving.”

“Have a wonderful night, Teacher Evane.”

“Y-Yes, you have a good night as well.”

“Mhm, I am planning to have a blissful night~”

Nux answered.

Evane didn’t think too much about his words, no, actually, she didn’t even hear his words.

She just wanted to get out of his room now.

She was too embarrassed, she can’t believe that she misunderstood her student.

She needs to meditate and calm her mind.

Thinking about it, Evane returned to her room and jumped onto her bed.

On the other side, after Evane left, a playful smile appeared on Nux.

He then looked at the time, it was 11 at the night, and there was still an hour before the day was over.

Nux decided to use his daily free teleportation.

He disappeared and then reappeared inside Allura’s room.

There, he saw Allura sitting on the bed, wearing a thin, see-through purple gown, her hypnotic blue eyes shined as an alluring smile appeared on her face,

“I was waiting~” She whispered.

“I hope you didn’t wait for long.”

Nux smiled and then, he pulled her into his embrace.

A long night followed.

...

The next day, Nux returned to the academy, then, he attended Evane’s class, flirting with female students, ignoring the boys and bullying the timid Myrill.

Then, the class ended, Teacher Evane left, and Nux left the classroom as well,

However, as soon as he walked out of the door,

A blue-haired girl appeared in front of him with a disdainful smile on her face.

# Chapter 288

As soon as Nux walked out of his classroom, a familiar blue-haired girl appeared in front of him.

Nux paused a smile appeared on Candice's face.

“Heeeh, you ran away pretty quickly huh?”

Candice commented.

“Were you so excited that you won against me that you took a week's leave just so you could digest the victory?”

Despite doing her best to provoke him, Candice failed to achieve her goal, instead, a small smile appeared on Nux's face as he greeted her.

“Yo~ If it isn't the Ex Queen of the Academy.

How are you doing?”

Candice's face twitched in annoyance.

“What did you say!?” She questioned.

Mind you, in these last few days, Candice has regained quite a bit of her reputation, she became the personal student of the Head Master of the Academy after all.

Of course, Nux didn't care about something like that.

“Hmm? Did I hit you a little too hard? Were your ears damaged?” Nux questioned in worry.

“Have you taken a healing potion, what did the medics say?”

The more he questioned, the more Candice's body trembled in frustration.

“You bastard! Remember, you only won because I didn't use Mana! If we had fought fairly, you wouldn't have lasted for a second!”

Nux smiled,

“You bitch, remember, you can only say this because you are a Master Stage Cultivator, if you were only an Advance Stage Cultivator, you wouldn't have lasted for a second!”

“...”

Candice turned silent and looked at Nux with a blank look on her face.

“Does your words even make sense? What's the point of talking about it when I am already Master Stage Cultivator?”

“Exactly.”

Nux nodded.

Candice frowned in confusion, however, soon, she realized what Nux was trying to say.

A vein popped on her forehead as she yelled in frustration,

“Y-You bastard! Both the conditions are different!

In our battle, I was the one who held back!

As for the cultivation, you weren't forced to hold back, you are just not talented enough!

We are different!”

“We are different indeed.”

Nux admitted.

Candice then smiled, however, before she could celebrate her victory, Nux continued,

“I wasn’t the one who kowtowed in front of the whole Academy and rubbed my nose on the ground.”

“Y-Y-Y-You Bastard!”

Candice roared in rage and suddenly,

“Hahahaha~” A hearty laughter was heard.

Nux frowned and then his eyes fell on the Bald Man who stood behind Candice and was laughing nonstop.

“T-Teacher! Stop laughing!” Candice screamed in embarrassment.

“Hahaha~” The man she called teacher, however, continued to laugh and only after laughing for a good minute did he finally calm down.

“I-I can’t believe there is someone who can handle my student so easily even though he is weaker than her.

It is quite amusing to see her reactions. Hahaha~”

Nux glanced at the man and then, his golden eyes shined brightly.

[Name: Eliyard Kingson.]

[Age: 173]

[Mana Cultivation: King.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Race: Human]

[Occupation: Headmaster of the Royal Academy.]

[Talent: High]

[LVL: 62]

[HP: 720/720]

[MP: 1420/1420]

[STR: 70]

[AGL: 78]

[VIT: 72]

[STM: 72]

[INT: 142]

[DEF: 64]

...

‘Ahh, so he is her new teacher.’ Nux realized.

This man was the Headmaster of the Royal Academy, a man who is as strong as the King and the strongest existence in this Academy.

However...

‘Hmmm... how do I say...

Kind of disappointing...?’

Nux thought inwardly.

He thought that a King Stage Cultivator would be a bit stronger than this man, however, he was wrong.

‘Is Emperor Stage the same as well?’

Nux thought inwardly, however, soon, Amaya's warning echoed in his mind.

'Emperors are different.'

Nux's gaze turned serious, he shouldn't be too careless and should stick with his plans.

There is no need to rush things.

"Ahh, allow me to introduce myself, I am Eliyard Kingson, the Headmaster of the Academy."

Eliyard introduced with a smile on his face. He was a 1.8-meter tall man with a large build, he had brown eyes, a straight nose, thin eyebrows and no hair on his head.

He wore a lavish purple-coloured coat and was looking at Nux with a smile on his face.

"Ahh, Greetings, Headmaster." Nux bowed his head a little and greeted.

"Mhm, and I am also this girl's new teacher." Eliyard pointed at Candice and informed.

"My condolences."

Nux lowered his head as if he was actually sad for him.

Candice's mouth twitched again, however, before she could react, Eliyard laughed out loud.

"Hahaha~ No no, this is nothing to feel bad about, rather, she is a rare gem that learns everything like a sponge.

She will become a great cultivator in the future, I am proud to be her teacher."

A smile appeared on Candice's face.

“Ahh, I am sure that would be the case.” Nux nodded his head.

However, with how indifferent and unnatural his movements looked, even a child could tell that he was faking it.

“Hmph! Teacher Arvina just didn’t teach me well, else I would have not lost against you!”

Candice snorted.

“My condolences.”

Nux turned towards Eliyard and lowered his head again.

“Huh? Why?” Eliyard frowned.

“With how she is, I am sure this girl would challenge me again, then when she loses, she will say the same thing again,

‘Hmph! Teacher Eliyard just didn’t teach me well, else I would have not lost against you!’

I just hope that the Headmaster won’t be too heartbroken.”

Nux muttered and Candice’s face turned red in anger.

This bastard was really good at getting on her nerves.

“You bastard! That is not an excuse! Teacher Arvina only taught me a single move and then told me to keep on repeating it again and again!

Just what type of crazy person keep practising what he already knows!?

How will one progress like that!?”

Nux, however, just shook his head,

“Naah, you were just not good enough.”

“Huh?” Candice frowned.

“I started training with teacher yesterday, and she already taught me 3 moves.”

“H-Huh?” Candice’s eyes widened in surprise.

“Alright, we are not here to compare the two teachers.” The Headmaster interjected, then, he turned towards Nux and questioned,

“Nux Leander, I am here to ask you,

How about you become my personnel student as well?”

# Chapter 289

“How about you become my personnel student as well?”

Eliyard questioned with a small smile on his face.

“Huh?” Candice’s eyes widened in surprise when she heard her teacher.

She didn’t know that was what Eliyard was planning when he asked her to take him to Nux. If she knew that, she would have tried to change the topic to something else or would have made another excuse.

There was no way she would allow Nux to become Eliyard’s student as well.

Her life would become a living hell if she saw his face more than 2 times a day.

Not only Candice but even the students who were hearing their conversation from behind were shocked as well.

That was the Headmaster!

To think that the headmaster would personally come here to ask Nux to become his student, just how big of an opportunity and honour is that?

The students looked at Nux with eyes full of reverence and envy.

Nux, however, didn’t seem very affected and answered with a nonchalant look.

“No. I don’t want to.”

“Huh?” Eliyard, Candice and all the other students blinked a few times, unable to believe what Nux just said.

“W-What did you say?” Eliyard questioned, just to be sure.

“I said that I don’t want to become your student.”

Nux answered.

“I-Is there a reason why you don’t want to become my student?” Eliyard, who still couldn’t believe that he was rejected questioned.

As for the reasons,

Well, there were many.

But the most important one was that,

Eliyard wasn’t a woman.

Nux was still in his teens, his years where he would spend his youth amidst fresh flower fields.

He would, of course, not spend time with a 100+ years old bald dude like him. He wanted to spend time with flowers, not with dirty old mud.

Of course, a 100+ years old beautiful mature woman was very very welcomed.

However, he can’t say this reason out loud, therefore, he had to give another reason,

“I trust that Teacher Arvina would be able to bring the best out of me.”

“But I am stronger than Teacher Arvina you know?”

Eliyard muttered.

“Huh? What the hell is going on here?”

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face when he heard a cold voice.

He then turned towards his beautiful, matured and wild teacher and smiled,

“They are trying to recruit your cute and hard-working student, Teacher Arvina.” He simply pointed at the Headmaster and walked towards Arvina.

“I, of course, rejected,

How can I ever leave you?”

Nux muttered.

Arvina didn't react to his words and directly turned toward the Headmaster.

“Headmaster, I didn't know you were so interested in my students.” She commented.

“Ah, it isn't like that, Vice Headmaster Arvina, as you know, both Candice Water and Nux Leander are gems of our academy, we have to focus on both of them, do we not?

So I thought it would be better if both students got equal opportunities to grow.”

“That is good thinking, headmaster, but don't you think it would be unfair to these gems if we just provide them average teaching even though we have better teachers just for the sake of being impartial?”

Arvina smiled and Eliyard's face twitched in annoyance.

‘Did she just call me an average teacher?’

He gritted his teeth inwardly, however, in the end, he controlled himself and smiled,

“Nux, are you sure you do not want the chance to learn under a King Stage Cultivator? It is a rare opportunity, you know? Not everyone will get a chance like this.”

Nux just smiled,

“I want to stay by my teacher’s side.”

He refused politely, however, inwardly, he was cursing this man,

‘Just leave us alone you baldie, or do you want me to smack that shiny-looking head of yours?’

“Alright, I hope you won’t regret your decision in the future.” Eliyard smiled and turned around.

“Let’s leave, Candice.”

“A-Ah, yes teacher.”

Candice turned around, however, before she left, she glanced at Nux and smirked.

Nux smiled, and then he pointed at his foot. i

Candice lowered her head and noticed that Nux was moving her foot as if he was stepping on something.

Her eyes widened in anger when she realized what he was hinting about,

She then glared at Nux and turned around.

‘Just you wait, you bastard!

I will make sure you pay!’

She swore inwardly.

Actually, after she became Headmaster’s student and regained a bit of her reputation, she tried to use her newly gained dogs to go after Nux, however, as soon as those dogs heard Nux’s name, they refused.

Their answer was simple, ‘if even Lady Candice was unable to defeat that man, how are we supposed to do it?’

Candice always turned silent when they said something like that.

This further increased her anger towards Nux.

Of course, Nux didn't care what she felt, he just turned towards Arvina and sighed in relief,

“Haah~ Teacher, thank god you are here~

I was so so scared~

I thought they were going to kidnap me.”

Seeing him acting like that, Arvina couldn't help but shake her head and chuckle,

“You really like drama, don't you?”

“It was entertaining.” Nux chuckled.

“But I never thought that the headmaster would actually come and would try to recruit me,” Nux commented.

“Tsk Tsk, that baldie dares to recruit my student. Arrogant.” Arvina smarted.

“Arrogant Baldie indeed.” Nux nodded.

“Oi, show some respect, he is the Headmaster of this Academy.”

Arvina muttered.

“...”

Nux turned silent and looked at Arvina with a deadpan look on his face.

“Follow me, we are already late.”

“Alright,”

Saying that, the two of them walked towards Arvina's mansion and left.

“D-Did the Headmaster and Vice Headmaster fought each other for a student?” After they left, one of the students came out of his reverie and muttered.

“T-That is w-what I saw...” Another student nodded.

“J-Just how good one has to be for two highest ranking individuals in the Academy to fight over him like this? And how can he just refuse the headmaster like it is nothing?”

“Stop thinking about it,

We and he live in two different worlds.

Go back to your class.”

# Chapter 290

“Alright, you should rest now, this is enough for today.”

Arvina instructed as a sigh escaped her mouth, her wooden sword disappeared and she sat on a chair with a tired look on her face.

Beads of sweat could be seen on her forehead, and she was breathing heavily, a handkerchief then appeared in her hands and she started wiping her face.

Then, her eyes fell on Nux who was lying on the floor with slightly hurried breathing and a calm look on his face.

Seeing that, Arvina couldn't help but sigh,

“You don't look very tired.”

She muttered.

“I may not look like it, but trust me, teacher, I am very tired,” Nux answered.

With how even his voice was, even a child could tell that he wasn't tired at all, and actually, it made complete sense for him to not be tired.

Even though he was limiting his cultivation to Grand Master Stage, even at that time, his stamina was a lot higher than a normal Expert Stage Cultivator, there is no way he would tire himself before an Expert Stage Cultivator.

He was just too strong.

“Don't even try to deny it... I know you are not the least bit tired...” Arvina shook her head.

She had already accepted that her disciple was a monster.

His attack, defence, stamina, speed, everything was way higher than any normal Grand Master Stage Cultivator she has ever met.

Heck, she might even be better than normal Expert Stage Cultivators at this point.

And things did not end here.

“And I can’t believe that you can now spar with me in just one month. That is a monstrous progress...”

Yes, 1 month has passed since Nux started learning from Arvina, and Arvina only had one comment.

Just don’t compare Nux with anyone at all.

Nux was so good that it was sometimes frustrating.

Arvina’s teaching Style was simple, she had a bunch of moves that she teaches her student,s they practise them and doesn’t move to the next move unless her students mastered the previous one.

Usually, a talented student needs around 2-3 months to master one move, Nux, however, was completely different.

His body was too strange.

It was as if his body was made for swords and fighting.

5 times, he only needs to practice the moves 5 times at max and his body would be able to replicate that move perfectly.

Yes, what took other students months, Nux did that in a matter of minutes.

Actually, if it wasn’t for Arvina doubting and checking his mastered move countless times, he would have finished his training a lot sooner.

Nux only needed 15 days to learn all her moves and since then, they have been sparring with each other.

At first, Nux was having difficulties fighting without using his Mana and using the sword moves he has learned just a few days ago, however, the more they sparred, the smoother his movement got and he integrated her moves into his fighting style.

Yes, he did not change his fighting style, he just integrated her teachings into his own fighting style, he even did some changes and made her moves more comfortable and stronger for him.

In just 15 more days, Nux improved to the extent that he was able to spar with Arvina for 6 hours straight.

And the one who usually ends the fight is not him, but Arvina since she would be too tired to continue.

As for Nux, he would just pretend to be tired while he would continue to move around without any problems.

Arvina finds that very shameful, however, there was nothing she could do about it.

Nux was a complete monster.

All she could do now was to move on to the next step, a step she doesn't usually teach to other students, however, since she had such a gem as her student, she would do her best to refine him.

“Alright, from tomorrow, we will move to the second step of our training,” Arvina muttered.

“Huh? Second Step?” Nux stood up and questioned.

Seeing her standing up so casually, Arvina's face twitched,

‘Weren't you tired? At least act like you are...’

Arvina then shook her head to get rid of these useless thoughts and nodded,

“Yes, the second step, from now on, we will use Mana as well. We will be fighting each other with real swords, and usage of skills is allowed.

Your training is over, from now on, you will learn how the Actual Swordsmen fight.”

Arvina muttered with a big smile on her face. Her smile then widened even more and she warned,

“Be careful, Nux.

This will be dangerous and you would need to use lots of healing potions in the upcoming days.

Hehehe~

Be prepared.”

Seeing her laughing like that, Nux chuckled as well.

Her warrior-like aura was practically oozing out of her right now.

Nux then looked at her and started thinking, he has been with her for a month now. He now has a decent idea about her character and what sort of person she is like.

Now, Nux started thinking.

Thinking about doing what he actually came here for.

Strengthen his relationship with Arvina Skyfall,

Not as a teacher, but as a lover.

And he had come up with a perfect plan to do that.

A warrior like Arvina only likes two things about another person.

Potential to topple all others.

And diligence and commitment to stand on top.

His plan was simple,

He just needs to defeat Arvina Skyfall.

However, he cannot do that as Grand Master Stage Cultivator, that would destroy her pride, therefore, he had to do it as an Expert Stage Cultivator,

“Teacher...” Nux called out.

“Hmm? Do you have any questions?”

“I want to spar with you.”

“Didn’t we spar just now?”

“No, I am not talking about that, I am actually talking about a real fight.

Real one-on-one, warrior against warrior spar.”

“Huh? But you are a Gra-”

Before Arvina could complete,

Nux removed his Trickster and Arvina’s eyes widened in shock and horror.

# Chapter 291

“E-E-Expert Stage...”

Arvina’s face paled in horror.

A 19-year-old Grand Master Stage Cultivator was unbelievable?

What about this then?

Does this make any sense?

Arvina was at a loss of words.

“Y-You are already an Expert Stage Cultivator...” She stuttered as her expression continued to change, from shock to amazement to doubt to acceptance and then, tensed.

Nux didn’t fail to notice it and soon, he frowned.

“Teacher, why the tensed look?”

Arvina looked at Nux’s face and muttered with a solemn look on her face,

“You are more talented than I thought.”

“Hmm? Isn’t that a good thing? Why do you look so tensed?” Nux couldn’t understand.

What teacher makes a face like this when she finds out that her student is talented?

Shouldn’t she be beaming in immense joy?”

“This is not a good thing at all...” Arvina muttered.

“Why?”

“If it is revealed, you will be killed.”

“Huh? That would have happened even if my talent was the same as what you thought it was, won’t it? Why do you look so tensed right now?”

Arvina, however, shook her head,

“No, that is not true earlier, even if your talent was revealed, I could have protected you from even the King of the Kingdom, however, now...

Things aren’t the same...

The Dukes and the King would come after you no matter what and this time, I won’t be able to protect you either.”

Arvina’s expression wasn’t good at all.

Nux, however, couldn’t understand what she was talking about and frowned,

“Teacher... isn’t my talent being better a good thing? I can get stronger faster, and with the way I am going, I won’t need more than a decade to become a King Stage Cultivator, and once I become a King Stage Expert, I would become one of the strongest people in this Kingdom.

Won’t that make me safe?

I just need to stay inside the academy for a while and then, I can do whatever I want.

Isn’t that a good thing?”

Nux questioned.

“...”

Arvina glanced at Nux, who was looking at her with a curious look on his face, in the end, she couldn’t help but sigh.

What she was about to say now,

By no means, this should be told to anyone else, it is the top secret of Skyfall Kingdom and was not something she could share with just anyone.

However, Nux was not 'just anyone' for her now.

He was her student, therefore, she decided to trust him.

“Nux...

Things aren't as simple as that.”

“What do you mean?”

“Do you know why the King is able to rule over the Kingdom even though there are around 5-6 more King Stage Cultivators here?”

“Huh?”

Nux frowned in confusion.

“This does sound strange. How is the King doing it?”

He questioned with a confused look on his face. However, inwardly, a sly smile appeared on his face.

‘She is finally going to be honest with me.’

This was a good sign, at the very least, it showed him that Arvina Skyfall trusted him.

Things were going smoother than he expected.

“Do you know why I am confident in being able to protect you even if all the King Stage Cultivators in the country come after you?”

Nux frowned even more.

“That is because of my teacher.”

“Teacher?”

Nux frowned, and this time, he frowned for real.

“Yes, my teacher, Astaria Skyfall, an Emperor Stage Cultivator.”

Arvina then told him about Astaria Skyfall and her relationship with her.

Something she must never share with anyone because if this was leaked, someone might take advantage of Astaria using Arvina, however, in the end, she decided to trust her disciple and told him everything.

“At first, if something goes wrong, I would have asked for Teacher Astaria’s help and she would have protected you.

Actually, I was thinking of training you as the next protector of the Kingdom.”

Arvina muttered.

“Huh?”

Nux frowned.

He did not expect something like that.

“I wanted you to become the next Emperor Stage Cultivator.

Do you know why Candice Water is so valued?

Do you know why I had to bear with her as my student even though she was so lazy and arrogant?

Do you know why the Headmaster took her in as his student even though she lost against you?”

“Wait...” Nux realized something.

“Yes, Candice Water is a candidate to become the next protector of the Kingdom. A talent like her is rare, however, talent alone can’t do anything, you need to work hard as well.

She didn’t work hard, that was her negligence.

However, with how valuable Candice Water is, we simply can’t give up on her.

Exceptional Level affinity is required if one wants to become an Emperor Stage Cultivator, and in the last 100 years, only Candice has that affinity, that was the reason why the headmaster took her in as his student.

He didn’t know about your absurd talent.

In his eyes, Candice was the only one.

He just wants his ‘student’ to be the next Protector of the Kingdom since that would raise his status and his name would be written down in history.”

“I do not understand.

How are you so sure that Candice would remain Loyal to you?” Nux frowned.

“She will be married into the Royal Family, then, while she is being trained, she will be groomed by the Royal family for more than 100 years,” Arvina answered.

‘Isn’t that like brainwashing?’

Nux narrowed his eyes, however, he didn’t voice out his thoughts, he had more questions.

“I did hear about the First Prince wanting to marry her, but I heard that Marquee Water rejected that offer.”

“He didn’t reject it, he left it on Candice.”

“So if you already take her as the next candidate...”

“Yes, Candice accepted.”

“What if she had rejected it?” Nux questioned.

“Do I really need to say it?”

“...she would have been assassinated...” Nux muttered with a solemn look on his face.

The Royal Family was cruel,

However, he didn't care about it.

Candice can go die for all he cares.

Before, he wanted to get close to her, however, when she saw her character and absolute unwillingness to change, he decided to change his mind.

He doesn't have any need to collect any woman he meets in his harem, he only needs to be with women who are actually good.

Just like his other women.

Nux then looked at Arvina and narrowed his eyes,

“And you wanted me to become the next ‘protector’ of the Kingdom?”

This was something he didn't like.

“That is the only way you can ensure your safety.”

Arvina answered.

Nux narrowed his eyes.

He didn't like her answer at all.

However, after thinking about it, he wasn't very disappointed either.

In the end, Arvina was only thinking about his sake,

“Then what is the problem now? Why can't I be the 'protector' now? Isn't my talent being better than what you expected a good thing?” Nux questioned.

“Your talent is too good.

It is simply absurd,

If before, I predicted that you would become an Emperor Stage Cultivator within 70-80 years, then now, you would only need 30, and 30 years is not enough to make you loyal to the Kingdom.

Not only that but Teacher Astaria still has 200 years left, if you become an Emperor Stage Cultivator in 30 years, then she would think that you would try to go against her.

And someone as talented as you would be a troublesome opponent, therefore, to get rid of the future trouble...”

“She will get rid of me.”

# Chapter 292

“Therefore, to get rid of the future trouble...”

“She will get rid of me.”

Before Arvina could, Nux completed her sentence.

Arvina looked at Nux with a solemn look on her face and then, she nodded.

“Yes, she would.”

“And if she comes for me, there is no way I would be able to survive.”

“There is no chance, an Emperor is different.

No matter how strong you get, even if you get to the peak of King Stage, and have a few more King Stage cultivators helping you,

The chances of surviving against an Emperor are nil.”

“...”

Nux turned silent.

He didn't like where this conversation was going, especially the part where he realized why Arvina was training him, however, not everything was bad.

Actually, he might get something even better out of this.

Nux smiled inwardly and questioned.

“Why are you telling me all this?”

“Huh?”

“You are the Dowager are close to each other, correct? Then why would you tell me all this and alert me, won’t it be better for you to just directly report her and then have me killed?”

“Huh?” Arvina’s frown deepened, then, she thought a little more about it and finally realized what Nux was talking about.

She chuckled,

“Are you thinking that I would let you get killed because of my good relationship with the dowager?”

“Well, isn’t that logical?”

“Nux Leander, you are my, Arvina Skyfall’s student,

There is no way I am letting you die.”

Arvina declared.

“Hmm? Isn’t Dowager Astaria your teacher? If she wants to kill me, then why would you go against her and defend me?”

Nux questioned.

“She is my teacher and I am her student, that does not mean that I am her slave with no will of my own,

If I want to protect my student, I will do it even if I have to go against my teacher.”

Arvina declared without a hint of hesitation in her eyes.

Hearing that, Nux smiled.

Arvina was thinking about him and was even willing to go against her teacher to protect him,

He liked that a lot.

However,

“How are you going to protect me? As you said, she is an Emperor Stage Cultivator, there is no way we will be able to win against her.”

Nux muttered.

“Who said we are going to fight with her?”

“Huh?”

Nux frowned.

“What do you mean?”

“The plan is simple, Candice will order it and you will be assassinated.”  
Arvina smiled.

“Huh?” Nux’s frown deepened.

This time, he really couldn’t understand what his teacher was talking about.

“The biggest problem is that you will be noticed by others eventually, and even if you have that weird ability to hide your cultivation, in front of a true expert, your cultivation will be exposed.

That would be the end of you,

Therefore, you cannot appear in public.

However, with how you defeated Candice, you cannot do something like that.

Therefore, from now on, you will annoy Candice to the point that her life will become a living hell.

In anger, she will talk to her father and Marquee Water will send assassins after you.

The assassins will 'kill' you.

Then, Nux Leander would be dead,

I will arrange a house for you that is far from the capital city, you will live in that place and cultivate silently.

Take as much time as you need, cultivate, and grow stronger,

Then, once you become an Emperor Stage Cultivator, you will be safe from all the dangers.”

Arvina revealed her plan.

This plan was the most optimal and efficient one out of all others. This was definitely the best choice if Nux was a normal Cultivator.

However, Nux was not a normal Cultivator,

He was a Pleasure Cultivator.

In order for him to grow stronger, he would need to have sex with stronger women, he is not someone who can live in seclusion, cultivate freely and get stronger.

That is just not possible for him.

Therefore, he needs to find another way to deal with this situation.

Nux started thinking, however, he noticed that a strange look appeared on Arvina's face.

“Is there anything wrong, Teacher Arvina?” He questioned.

“I have one request that I hope you will fulfil it.”

“What is it?” Nux questioned.

“I want you to lay low as long as my Teacher is alive, even after you become an Emperor Stage Cultivator.

I don't want the two of you to clash against each other, you both are a precious part of my life.

My teacher will leave this world within 200 years, an Emperor Stage Cultivator can live for 500 years, you would still have 300 years left.

After she leaves, you can become the protector of this Kingdom,

I would have no problems with that.”

Arvina muttered however, a frown appeared on Nux's face.

“I will, of course, do my best to avoid a fight against the Dowager, however, Teacher Arvina, what do you mean by becoming the Protector of the Kingdom after she dies?”

“Hmm? Isn't it obvious? Someone would become the protector of the Kingdom after she dies,

That someone will most probably be Candice.

However, I am sure that you will be a lot stronger than Candice, therefore, it would be easy for you to Kill Candice and become the Protector, don't worry, I will make sure that the process is smooth.”

Arvina muttered and Nux's frowned,

“Teacher Arvina...

Why would I fight against an Emperor Stage Cultivator in order to become the Protector of the Kingdom?”

He questioned.

“Huh?” Arvina furrowed her brows in confusion,

“What kind of question is that? The protector’s position is well respected by all, even the King would have to bow his head in front of you, anyone would want that kind of power, why would you not want it?” Arvina questioned.

“Huh? What power? What respect?”

How many people in this world know about the Dowager?

How many people know about the secret protector of the Kingdom?

Barely 10.

Won’t I just become a shadow living in dark without doing anything?”

“...”

Arvina turned silent.

She cannot deny Nux’s words, however, soon, a frown appeared on her face,

“What do you want to do then?”

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face as he revealed.

# Chapter 293

“What do you want to do then?”

Arvina questioned with a frown on her face.

“Why not aim higher?”

“Why don’t I become the King of the Kingdom?”

Nux smiled.

No, he wasn’t stupid.

He knew the risks.

He knew well enough that telling his goals to Arvina was very risky right now, however, Arvina was someone who placed her trump card in front of him, she told her about the existence of Astaria Skyfall and her relationship with her.

This relationship was a double-edged sword, she can use it against people stronger than her and do things her own way, however, if this news is leaked, she would be in trouble as people would come after her and would try to capture her in order to have a high ground against an Emperor Stage Cultivator.

She was practically putting her life on the line by telling this to Nux, however, she still did it.

Therefore, Nux decided to risk it as well.

“What did you say?” Arvina narrowed her eyes when she heard Nux’s words.

“I said that there is no need to become the Protector, if I am the strongest, shouldn’t I become the Ruler?”

Strength rules this world, shouldn’t I be placed at the top since I am the most powerful?

Why should I become a chained dog who is caged in one castle and has the duty to protect it?”

“Protector is not a dog.” Arvina glared at Nux.

“Oh please Teacher, you of all people should talk like that,

Alright, tell me, what does Dowager Astaria do all day?

Where does she live?

When does she enjoy her life?

Why can no one ever see her?

When does she leave the Palace or even her room?”

Nux continued to question and Arvina turned silent.

She knew answered to all his questions, however, she didn’t want to say it,

Her Teacher, Dowager Astaria, lives in the most lavish room of the Palace, a room that is exactly behind the Throne Room, the complete centre of the Palace,

However, although it may sound very grand and impressive,

In reality,

That room is also a cage that binds her teacher.

Her teacher rarely comes out of that room.

What she does inside that room, no one knows.

What she does in order to enjoy her life, no one knows.

The more she thought about it, the more Arvina felt that Nux's words were correct.

Her teacher was caged.

Seeing that her expression was changing, Nux smiled and then, he continued,

“The current King of the Skyfall Kingdom, what does he have?

What makes him the King of our Kingdom?

What good things has he ever done?

I have heard countless times that he is an Average King,

Why is an average man like him allowed to become the King?”

Hearing about the current King, Arvina's eyes turned cold.

Nux noticed that and his smile widened,

‘This is good, she doesn't like the current king, rather, from her expression, it is clear that she hates him.

Heh, King, my amazing friend,

You are just amazing,

Thank you very much, friend.’

Nux smiled inwardly and then, he continued,

“Instead of a man like him, isn't it better for someone like me to become the King? I am sure I can do a far better job than him.”

Nux smiled, however, suddenly, he noticed Arvina's expression changed into a smirk,

“You want to become the King?” She looked at him with a disdainful look on her face.

“I d-”

Nux wanted to answer, however, before he could, Arvina interrupted.

“You think you can do a better job than the current King?”

“I ca-”

Again, Nux was interrupted.

“So what if you can?”

“Huh?”

“There are many people who can do a far better job than him, heck, even a random commoner might be able to do better than him, however, if that is the case, then why was he the one who became the King?

Haven't you ever wondered that?”

“...” Nux turned silent.

“Let me answer that question for you,

The reason behind it is that he has Skyfall blood flowing through his veins.

No, Skyfall Blood doesn't have any unique property, it is the same as any other human's, however, right now, inside the Skyfall Kingdom, having Skyfall blood in your veins means that you are blessed.

It doesn't matter how bad he is, he will become the King just because he is a Skyfall.

That fact will remain unchanged until someone topples up the Skyfall.

Do you think a slightly better than the average leader can topple up the Royal Family?

Do you think an average leader would be able to rule the Kingdom after creating a Chaos like that?

What about the ministers?

What about the other nobles?

Dukes, Marquees, Earls, Viscounts and Barons,

What about the common people who are fed up after being ruled for so many years and want to live their own life as they want?

What about the opposite Kingdom who will direct their fangs towards us as soon as we show them our weak side?

Do you think you can take all of that yourself?

Do you think you are good enough to take care of all that trouble?"

“ ... ”

Nux turned silent.

Arvina, however, wasn't done yet,

“It is very simple to just say, ‘I want to become the King’

However, it is not easy to become one,

What is your Goal?

Why do you want to become the King?

What is the reason?

Do you have anything like that?

Or do you want to become the King just because it sounds cool?”

Arvina questioned and again, Nux was speechless.

Goal...

What was his goal...?

Why was his reason to become the King...?

Did he even have any reason...?

Seeing him staying silent, Arvina scoffed,

“Nux, what you are thinking right now is nothing but an immature fantasy.

You are too immature to take that burden.

The current King might be an average King,

However, the Kingdom is stable,

And I am sorry to say this right in front of you,

But this Kingdom won't be stable if you take over as the King.

You are still too immature for that.

As you are right now, you do not have what it takes to overthrow the Skyfall Family and Rule the Kingdom as the King.”

# Chapter 294

“As you are right now, you do not have what it takes to overthrow the Skyfall Family and Rule the Kingdom as the King,”

Arvina spoke bluntly without hiding her thoughts.

Nux, who heard her words couldn't help but lower his head.

This time, he had no answers to her questions.

His teacher was right, he had no goals, no reason and no determination to become the King.

He does not know about Politics, he does not know about Ruling, he does not know about etiquette, and neither does he know about what it means to be the King.

All in all, he has no qualities to become a King.

The current King might not be a good King, however, Nux might not be any better than him either.

Actually, the whole idea of becoming the King was something he came up with on a whim.

He was indeed too immature.

Nux realized it.

And as if seeing through his thoughts, a small smile appeared on Arvina's face and she questioned,

“Nux, do you know what your weakness is?”

“What is it?” Nux questioned.

“Your talent is too high.”

“Hmm?” Nux frowned.

“You are absurdly talented, Nux.

Of course, it is a good thing, however, it is a double-edged sword,

Since you are too talented, you grow faster than others and face fewer challenges compared to normal people, everything is too easy for you.

Therefore, you take things too nonchalantly.

You are too carefree and easygoing.

In other words, your high talent has made you arrogant and immature.

You do not understand the actual hardships in this world,

This is your weakness.”

Arvina muttered and Nux listened to her words attentively.

He couldn't deny her this time as well,

She was right again.

“However, this does not mean that you cannot change or not improve.”

Suddenly, Arvina smiled.

“Hmm?” Nux looked in her direction and frowned.

“All you lack is maturity.

You are just 18 years old after all,

You haven't seen the world yet.

All you have to do is explore the world and eventually, you will learn everything on your own.”

Arvina smiled and Nux nodded in understanding,

“However, I know you are not patient enough for that long, therefore, I have a perfect opportunity for you.

An opportunity where you can see the truth of this world.

An opportunity where you can grow without any limits.”

Saying that, a golden-coloured badge appeared in Arvina’s hand as she smiled,

“An opportunity that can turn you from an 18-year-old immature child to a grown-up veteran.

Nux Leander, would you like to take hold of this opportunity?”

Arvina questioned.

A determined look appeared on Nux’s face as he questioned,

“What is it?”

Arvina smiled, she has indeed not judged her student incorrectly, she then gave the badge in her hand to Nux and informed him,

“The Woods Dynasty and the Solid Earth Kingdom are at war with each other.”

“Huh?” Nux frowned.

“I want you to take this pass to the general of the Woods Dynasty and join the war.”

“!!!”

Nux's eyes widened in surprise.

“Y-You want me to take part in war?”

“That is the only place that can help you grow the fastest.”

Arvina replied with a stern look on her face.

“Of course, you can reject the offer and take things slowly, I have nothing against that either.”

She added.

“...I need some time to think.”

Nux muttered.

He cannot answer this right away, he had to discuss it with his women, they were an active component of his life after all, they deserved to hear what has happened and had the right to say what they think.

“Alright, I will give you a week to think about it, you can answer me after that.”

Arvina nodded.

Nux nodded back and then he bowed,

“Then I will be taking my leave, Teacher Arvina.”

Arvina nodded, Nux then turned around and started walking towards his room, at the same time, he used Harem Seal and started talking with his women.

...

‘Huh!? Is that bitch crazy!? Why would she send you to war!?’

As Nux returned to his room and explained everything to his women, Edda shouted out loud.

“I agree with Sister Edda, why would send you to fight a war? This is ridiculous!”

Skyla nodded as well.

‘Agreed.’ Lane nodded.

‘You do not have to go, Nux, just leave that bitch alone, something is wrong with her head.’ Felberta nodded her head.

‘Indeed. Just leave her alone.’

‘Yeah, she just doesn’t know how awesome you are, you can do anything, Nux.’

‘I agree. I agree.’

The other women nodded their heads as well,

However,

‘No, she is not wrong.’

The women then heard a voice.

‘What are you talking about, Sister Thyra?’ Skyla questioned.

‘As I said, Arvina isn’t wrong, Nux is indeed a little immature and is not ready to take over the throne.’

Thyra commented.

‘Nux, you still haven’t killed a human yet, have you?’ she questioned.

‘...’

Nux turned silent as he realized it.

He has tortured humans, however, he has never killed anyone with his own hands.

Why? Was it because he was still used to thinking like a human from the 21st century?

No, that should not be the case, for a 21st-century human, torturing someone is strange and scary as well.

That is definitely not the case,

Then why?

Why hasn't he killed anyone yet?

Nux thought to himself,

'You see? You haven't even killed a human yet, how can you become the King of the country?

This is a great opportunity Nux,

Participating in a War will help you a lot and you will grow splendidly.'

'I agree with Thyra.'

Amaya nodded in agreement as well.

'Nux, you should not miss this chance.'

'Yes, I am even thinking of continuing our training in this war,' Thyra muttered.

'Huh? You are coming with me?'

'Yes, however, it will only be the 2 of us.'

‘Huh? No fair!’ Skyla complained.

‘Disagree.’ Lane shook her head.

‘I will come with you as well. I would like to know how having sex in the middle of the war feels like.’

Edda smiled.

‘...’

Nux was at a loss of words.

# Chapter 295

‘I will come with you as well. I would like to know how having sex in the middle of the war feels like.’

‘...’

Nux was at a loss of words.

‘No, I will be going with him, alone.’

Thyra, however, didn’t agree.

‘Huh!?! Who gave you the right to decide that!?’ Amaya countered.

‘Indeed, you have no right to decide something like that! Don’t be too arrogant.’ Allura nodded as well.

‘Yes, it is completely unfair that only Sister Thyra would be able to have sex with Nux, I want to join as well~’ Skyla muttered.

‘Yes, you can’t have him all to yourself.’ Felberta nodded.

‘You guys... have you forgotten about the Harem’s Gate?’ Suddenly, Thyra questioned.

‘Look, Nux has Heaven’s Gate now, he would be able to visit every one of you every other day because he would have one free teleportation every day.’

I am not being selfish or something, however, the next part of Nux’s training has to be done practically.

Nux needs to kill people in order to learn that.

I hope you guys understand.

If you guys think it is unfair, then I am ready to promise you all that I will not have sex with him for one whole month.'

Thyra muttered and the women turned silent.

They could feel Thyra's sincerity.

Yes, now, promising to not have sex with Nux was a new way of showing their sincerity. It was a big sacrifice after all.

So anyways, the ladies could feel Thyra's sincerity from her words, she really wanted well for Nux.

'Alright... I agree... you can go with him...' Surprisingly, Amaya was the first one to agree.

'And you do not have to stop yourself from having sex with him, we do not control yours or Nux's life, do what you wish.

However, I want Nux to come meet us once every two days.' Amaya muttered.

'Yeah, I want that as well.'

'Yes, that would be good.'

'Indeed indeed.'

A small smile appeared on Nux's face when he heard the ladies talking to each other.

They might fight and bicker with each other, however, their relationship was strong.

He enjoys listening to their conversations.

'Nux, you are going to meet us regularly, correct?' Felberta questioned.

'Heeh? Is that even a question?

You guys think I can live without you all?’

Nux questioned back.

‘Of course not. There is no way you can leave this marsh of forbidden pleasure you have created.

Nux Leander, you are trapped with all of us.’

Amaya smiled and muttered seductively.

‘Hmmm... I wonder what having sex while sinking in a Marsh would feel like.’

Edda muttered curiously.

‘Alright, then it is decided, I and Nux will go to the Woods Dynasty together,’ Thyra concluded.

‘Mhm, I have no problems.’

‘I agree as well.’

‘Yep Yep’

The girl nodded.

Yes, all of them collectively agreed to ignore the perverted Edda.

Edda, however, was used to it.

She would personally talk about it with Nux later.

Fufufu~

This seemed interesting indeed.

...

The conversation ended, and Nux and the girls talked about another topic while Nux continued to complete the painting he was drawing.

Time passed and soon, it was time for Nux to meet Evane.

He stood up and walked towards her room (in the night) and knocked.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“Come in.”

Nux then heard Evane’s voice.

He entered and Evane, who was panting looked at him with a smile on her face.

“How was your day?” She questioned in a gentle tone.

In this past month, the two of them have gotten closer and closer, she didn’t treat Nux as her student anymore, they were more like friends who shared a common interest with each other.

And since they are busy during the day, they often met at the night.

What?

Hmm? It was strange for them to meet at night?

Oh c’mon, that is so old-school way of thinking.

There is nothing wrong with two friends meeting each other at the night.

What could possibly go wrong?

“It was good, I completed the painting I was working on,” Nux answered.

“Oh? Show me, show me,”

“Ahh, I can’t the paints haven’t dried off yet.”

“Hm hm, I will wait for tomorrow then.”

“Mhm, I will wait for you in my room.” Nux nodded.

“What about you? What are you making?”

Nux questioned as he dragged a chair towards Evane and sat next to her as if it was the most normal thing in this world.

Then, he started looking at her painting.

“Hmm... I see a man wearing armour walking towards a girl wearing expensive clothes...”

It feels like a Knight and a Princess.”

“You are correct.” Evane nodded with a smile.

“Hmm? But what is that red part on the knight’s cheek?” Nux questioned.

“Blood.”

“Huh?” Nux was taken aback.

Usually, Evane’s paintings were all about ‘happy’ things, flowers, stars, rivers and all that, for her to draw something like blood was pretty... unusual.

“The Knight has returned after winning the war and now is meeting the love of his life, the princess.”

Evane explained.

“Oh ho? What a coincidence.”

Nux smiled.

“Hmm? What coincidence.”

“I was about to talk to you about war as well,” Nux muttered.

“Huh?” Evane frowned.

“Teacher Evane, you know about the War between the Solid Earth Kingdom and the Woods Dynasty, correct?”

“I have heard about it.”

“I am going to join it.”

Nux informed.

“What!?”

Evane’s eyes widened in surprise.

“What did you say!?”

“I am going to join that war.”

“Huh!? No way! Are you crazy!?” Evane shouted.

“Teacher Arvina wants me to join the war. She told me that I am too immature right now, therefore, I need to experience war in order to grow up.”

“Is she crazy!?”

You are an 18-year-old boy!

Of course you are immature!

Does she wants you to think like a 50-year-old man!?”

Evane couldn’t believe her ears. Suddenly, a determined look appeared on her face and she muttered,

“No, I need to talk to her! Teacher Arvina is out of mind!

How can she send an Advance Stage Cultivator to a war!?

This is unacceptable!” Evane stood up, however, just as she was about to leave, Nux muttered.

“Teacher Evane, I am not an Advance Stage Cultivator.”

# Chapter 296

“Teacher Evane, I am not an Advance Stage Cultivator,”

Nux muttered.

“Huh? What do you mean?” Evane turned around and frowned.

However, her frown only deepened when she saw Nux’s solemn face.

This was the first time she has seen that expression on his even, even while facing Candice Water, he didn’t look like this tensed.

“Teacher Evane, what I am going to tell you right now, I hope you can keep it a secret from others. If not, I would lose my life.”

Nux muttered.

“W-What?”

“Teacher Evane, can I trust you?”

Nux questioned with a solemn look on his face.

Seeing his expression, Evane’s heart skipped a beat and,

Unconsciously, she nodded her head.

“Y-Yes.”

Nux smiled and then, he deactivated [Trickster].

Soon, Evane’s eyebrows rose up and her mouth widened in shock,

“Expert Stage...”

She muttered inwardly, unable to believe what she was thinking.

“Teacher Arvina is not a fool, Teacher Evane. She knows how strong I am, that is why she wants me to participate in this war.”

Nux muttered.

“S-So Teacher Arvina already knew about it?”

Evane couldn't help but question.

“She did.” Nux nodded.

“D-didn't you say that I was your f-favourite teacher?”

Evane face turned red as she questioned.

For some reason, she didn't like the fact that some other teacher knew more about her student than she did.

Even she was confused and didn't know why she was feeling something like that.

Many teachers know more about the students in her class than her, however, she had never felt something like this.

However, for some reason, Arvina knowing more about Nux than her... This didn't sit well with her.

She... she actually felt betrayed.

Nux wasn't a dense idiot as well, he understood what she was feeling as soon as he saw her face and a playful smile appeared on his face.

“I didn't tell Teacher Arvina myself, she was the one who found out. That day, I thought it was the end of me, however, Teacher Arvina was generous enough to keep this a secret.”

“W-What?” Evane looked at Nux.

“Yes, Teacher Arvina found out about this when I fought against Candice, she noticed that my movements looked like I was holding back and started observing me.

That was when she found out.

I was not the one who told her.

Teacher Evane, you are the first person in this academy, who I trust enough to share my secret on my own accord.”

Nux nodded.

A small smile appeared on Evane’s face when she heard Nux’s words.

This...

For some reason, this felt good.

“I hope you can keep it a secret, Teacher Evane.

A secret that is between just the two of us.”

Nux smiled.

“A-Alright...” Evane’s face turned red as she nodded and then,

“C-Can I ask you something?” She questioned.

“Of course, you are my favourite teacher, you can ask me anything.”

“W-Why are you keeping this a secret?”

Nux then told her how his life would be at risk if he was exposed, Evane was a princess, so with just a few hints, she was able to understand everything.

She completely agreed with Nux’s thoughts, however, she still couldn’t understand one thing,

“But why send you to the war though, maturity naturally comes with time, all you have to do is wait. Why the rush?”

Nux shook his head,

“With the speed at which my cultivation is growing, teacher Arvina says that by the time I grow up, I would be too strong and would become arrogant.

That would lead to my downfall.

Therefore, my maturity needs to catch up with my cultivation.”

Nux answered and Evane nodded in understanding.

“So since you are so talented, you need to work extra hard. Is that it?” Evane muttered.

“Something like that.”

Nux nodded.

“I still do not approve of this though... it is too risky...” Evane was unsure.

“Don’t worry Teacher Evane, I am strong. There is no way I would get hurt.” Nux smiled.

“I don’t know much, however, in a war, being strong isn’t enough, you have to be on your guard all the time, even your allies might actually be your enemies, you have to be extra careful since you are not the part of their army.

In the end, even a King Stage Cultivator would die if his heart is pierced with a sword.”

Evane muttered.

“Oh ho? Teacher Evane, are you worried about me?” Nux questioned with a playful smile on his face.

“Huh? What kind of question is that? You are my student, of course, I am worried about you.”

Evane answered without hesitation, however, Nux didn't like that answer.

“Heeh? You are only worried because I am just one of your students?”

Evane frowned.

“Aren't you worried because I am who I am?” Nux then walked towards Evane, moved his face close to hers and whispered.

“Our relationship is a lot lot closer than that, is it not?”

Evane's heart skipped a beat when she heard Nux's words.

She then quickly stepped back and questioned with a red face.

“W-What are you talking about? What special relationship?”

Nux pouted, “I am not just one of your students, I am your favourite student, am I not? I am, right?”

“O-Oh, that's what you are talking about...” Evane realized.

“Hmm? Of course, what did you think?” Nux questioned.

Evane's face turned redder and turned her back towards Nux,

“N-Nothing. I wasn't thinking about anything.”

“Mhm, I understand.”

Nux nodded.

“Also,”

Evane called.

“What is it?”

“You are still not my favourite student.

However, if you come back alive,

I will admit that you are my favourite student.”

Evane muttered and although he couldn't see, Nux was sure that her face was as red as a tomato right now.

“Then I will make sure to come back alive.”

Nux smiled.

...

The next day, he met Arvina and told her about his plans about participating in the war.

Arvina smiled, and told her to rest for a week.

Nux then spent a blissful week in the Skyfall Kingdom and then,

He and Thyra left for the Woods Dynasty.

# Chapter 297

“Hey you, stop right there. Who are you?”

A soldier questioned in a strict tone. o

“Heh, wearing Black in the night while walking towards us, aren't you two just begging us to capture you? Maybe you two have some sort of fetish? Hehe~”

Another soldier laughed.

“You two look like a couple, hehe~” A soldier pointed out.

“Hehehe~”

Other soldiers started laughing creepily as they surrounded the two people wearing black-coloured skin-tight clothes.

“We want to meet you general.” The man muttered in a hoarse voice.

“Heh, I want to meet the Queen of our Kingdom as well,”

The soldier laughed.

“Hahaha~

I want to meet the King.”

“Tsk Tsk, why would you even want to meet the King? Queen is a lot better, at least she is pleasant to the eyes, King on the other hand would only make you nervous.”

“Hmmm, true.

Mathew, I never thought you were such a smart person, I shall follow you from now on.”

“Hm hm, you are a little dumb, but since I am such a generous person, I will allow you.”

“Hahaha! He called him dumb!”

“Hahaha!”

The soldiers then started laughing.

The four reeked of Alcohol.

Actually, just from their actions alone, it was clear that they were drunk, however, it was normal.

They could die any day, they went through a tough battle today and they also lost a few of their close friends,

Alcohol was the only way for them to survive.

However, today...

Today was their unlucky day.

“Hehehe~ Hey you two~ How are you goi-”

\*Bam\*

\*Clash\*

\*Thud\*

A soldier wanted to question something, however, before he could, a punch landed on his face and his body flew back and landed on a table that the soldiers kept their alcohol on.

The three other soldiers looked at the man in black with a blank looks on their faces,

This man...

He was strong...

The three of them quickly sobered up, however, when they tried to look into these two individuals' cultivation, they couldn't sense anything.

There were only two ways something like this is possible,

First, they weren't cultivators.

However, since they sent a Beginner Stage Cultivator flying with just one fist, this wasn't possible.

So the only other possibility left was...

Was that these two were incomparably stronger than them.

So strong that they couldn't even sense their cultivations.

\*Gulp\*

The soldiers gulped in fear.

“What is happening here?”

Soon, however, the soldiers heard a familiar voice and a big smile appeared on their faces.

“Head!”

The three of them dashed towards the man who had appeared and pointed at the man who hit the other soldier.

“Head! These two are picking a fight with us and they hit him for no reason!”

The Head then looked at the Two people in front of him and a solemn look appeared on his face.

These two...

They were Expert Stage Cultivators...

Someone who could easily get the Rank of Deputy General in the army.

They were strong,

However, this didn't mean that they could just barge into their camp and beat their soldiers.

“Go and call Deputy General.” The Head ordered a soldier.

“D-Deputy G-General?”

The soldier stuttered.

“Do it fast, we don't have much time.”

The Head rushed.

He couldn't raise his voice, however, his desperation was clear.

Even he was scared right now.

He, an Advance Stage Cultivator, was standing against two Expert Stage Cultivators, of course, he would be scared.

Honestly, it was praiseworthy that he hasn't passed out in fear.

“We are not here to fight, else you would have died already.” Suddenly, the woman in black muttered in an emotionless voice.

“Yes, we just want to meet your general.” The man nodded as well.

“W-We can’t just let anyone meet the general... y-you have to tell us who y-you are but seeing that you are c-covering your face... I-I don’t think you will t-tell us anything...” The Head muttered.

“...” The two of them turned silent.

“I-I have called for Deputy General, y-you should talk with him, I-I d-do not have the authority t-to do something like this.”

Seeing that these two have turned silent, the head panicked and clarified himself, and only when the two people nodded was he able to calm his racing heart.

...

Time passed and soon, the Deputy General came.

He was a 2-meter-tall man with a large, muscular build, he wore a dark green army uniform and had a strict-looking face. He had a fierce aura around him and as soon as other soldiers saw him, they soluted with a respectful on their faces,

“Deputy General!”

The Deputy General’s eyes then fell on the two people wearing black coloured clothes and he frowned,

“Who are you?”

“I want to meet your general.”

The man, however, didn’t care if he was if the one in front of him was Deputy General or whatever, he just wanted to meet the general.

“Hmph, you think just any random person could meet our General?” The Deputy General snorted.

“Oh? So you are so big of a trash that any random person has the same cultivation as you?”

“ ... ”

The Deputy General turned silent, the other soldiers could see that his body was trembling, and there was a vein that had popped up on his head.

He was angry.

However, the man in front of him had a great point...

There are no ‘random’ Expert Stage Cultivators in this world.

These two were definitely not normal,

However,

“I can’t let you meet the General.” The Deputy General shook his head.

“Why?” The man questioned.

“I do not know you, what if you are an assassin that wants to harm our general?”

“And I thought that the King Stage Cultivators are strong.

Turns out they are just people afraid of losing their life to people who are weaker than him.”

The woman standing behind the man chuckled.

The Deputy General looked at the woman and narrowed his eyes.

“Just let us meet the General, it is not like we can harm him.”

The Deputy General then looked at the two of them and after thinking for a while, he nodded.

“Alright, let me talk to the General.”

# Chapter 298

“The General has agreed,  
Follow me.”

The Deputy General returned and muttered in a strict tone.

The black-clothed man looked at the woman and his golden eyes shined.

‘You did a good job, my love.’

‘Heh, it’s so easy to handle people with big egos.’ The woman smiled.

‘Thyra, you naughty little girl~’

A smile appeared on the Woman’s face.

Yes, if you guys haven’t caught on, the two people who casually entered an army camp were none other than Nux and Thyra.

Surprising, right?

‘Alright, let’s follow this giant. I want to meet the general and get over this.’

Nux muttered.

Thyra nodded and the two of them appeared in front of the largest tent in this area.

“General, they are here.”

The Deputy General muttered, he didn’t wait for any response and directly entered the tent.

Nux and Thyra followed behind him and soon, Nux's eyes fell on a woman wearing a black coat sitting on a chair with a leisurely look on her face.

No, actually, she did not look leisurely at all, she looked like a wild lioness who was looking at her pray, she was a dangerous woman.

And on top of that, she was a beautiful woman, with black-red hair, sword-like eyebrows, red eyes that shined ferociously, a straight nose and a wide smile on her face,

The dangerous beauty.

A lethal beauty.

A beauty that turned Nux on...

Right now, Nux was so lost that he even forgot to use the Eye of Discerning and just continued to burn the sight in front of his eyes in his mind.

Thyra, who was standing behind him noticed his weird actions and clicked her tongue.

Then, her eyes fell on the General's chest and she clicked her tongue again,

'How the fuck do you fight with those mounds of meat hanging in front of you.'

(Picture in paragraph comments)

Thyra didn't like this General at all.

She narrowed her eyes and a smile appeared on her face when she saw the Deputy General, who was still in the tent.

"Heh. Are you sure you are a King Stage Cultivator? I didn't know that a King Stage Cultivators needed the protection of an Expert Stage Cultivator when they face two unknown Expert Stage Cultivators."

Thyra chuckled.

The General's eyes moved, she looked at Thyra from the head to toe as if she was scanning her, and once she was satisfied, she looked at the deputy general and ordered,

“You can leave.”

The Deputy General didn't say anything and left.

The army had only 1 rule, do not disobey or question your superior's decision.

You can give them suggestions, however, once you are ordered to do something, you have to do it without any complaints.

A good soldier is the one who listens to the orders, not the one who comes up with different strategies and acts as if he is smarter than everyone.

The Deputy General left, seeing that, Thyra chuckled again,

“Heh. How impulsive, I only needed a few words in order to make you do what I wanted. Are you sure you are the General?”

If the Deputy General was here, he would have shouted in anger, however, the general was different,

A beautiful smile appeared on her face and she questioned,

“Do you know why he was here?”

“Isn't it obvious? It was because he wanted to protect you.” Thyra answered.

“Indeed.”

The general nodded.

“He wanted to protect me, and do you know why I ordered him to leave?”

Thyra narrowed her eyes.

The General's smile widened and a crazed look appeared on her face,

“That is because I concluded that you can't harm me even if you were given 100 chances.

You are too weak to do that.”

Thyra's face twitched when she heard those words.

She then narrowed her eyes dangerously and muttered,

“I see, not only are you easy to manipulate, you are dumb as well.

Why am I not surprised?”

The general just smiled and didn't say anything, Thyra, however, did not like that,

“Trust me, if I was an assassin, your head would have been rolling on the floor.” She challenged with a smirk.

The General's red eyes shined and she muttered,

“Try it then.”

“As I said, you are dumb.

What kind of assassin attacks when you order them to? Our speciality is sneak attacks.”

“Heh, that's what rats do. Attacking from behind.

Not that it will matter, I am positive that someone like you won't be able to harm me no matter how many sneak attacks you use.”

The General smiled.

Thyra smiled back.

Nux, who was looking at the two women smiling at each other knew better than anyone that this wasn't a pleasant environment.

He had to intervene, otherwise, things can get out of hand.

Suddenly, a small smile appeared on his face.

“Girls, you two need to calm down and get along with each other.

You two will be sisters in the future, after all.”

“Huh?” The general frowned.

“What do you mean?”

She questioned as she narrowed her eyes and looked at Nux.

Nux smiled as he then threw the badge Arvina gave to him towards the General and muttered,

“You two will be fighting a war together, so of course, you should get close and treat each other like sisters in order to cooperate well. Isn't that right?”

Nux smiled brightly.

Thyra, however, didn't share his smile.

The General may have been fooled by Nux's words, however, she knew what Nux was talking about.

That man has already set his eyes on this woman.

Thyra knew that she would get another new sister soon, and this sister...

She will join the ranks of Edda, Felberta, Lane and Allura.

Tsk Tsk.

“Hmmm.”

Suddenly, Thyra heard the General's voice.

She turned around and then, she noticed that the general was scanning Nux with interest, soon, the General's smile widened and she questioned.

“Since we are going to fight, we should treat each other as sisters, right?”

“Indeed, indeed.” Nux nodded his head in agreement,

“Then with that logic, should I treat you as my little brother?”

# Chapter 299

“Then with that logic, should I treat you as my little brother?”

The General chuckled.

“Pffft.”

Thyra couldn't help but laugh out loud, especially when she saw Nux's reaction.

He was looking at the General with a deadpan look on his face, he even forgot to blink.

“...”

He was at a loss of words.

In the end, Nux could only show a smile and shook his head,

“I was just joking, you don't have to take me seriously, we are fighting a war, there is no need to become brothers and sisters just for that.”

Nux quickly refused and denied his own words.

The general chuckled as she glanced at Nux and then, a seductive smile appeared on her face.

“You are an interesting guy.”

Nux noticed that her red eyes were smiling when she said those words and riding her momentum, a smile appeared on his face as well.

“It would be great if you remove this mask of yours, I want to see your face.”

The general muttered, and Nux nodded his head.

However, just as he was about to remove his mask, he stopped.

Nux's eyes then fell on Thyra before they returned to the general again and he smiled.

'Easy to manipulate my ass.'

Nux muttered to Thyra.

'That was close.'

Thyra nodded her head as well.

The general was different from what she imagined, the woman nearly made Nux do what she wanted with just her words alone.

Thyra could feel it,

This woman was dangerous.

Of course, Nux could see that as well, however, he was not planning to back off.

"Hmm? Are you that interested in seeing my face?" Nux questioned.

"I am." The general nodded.

"I won't show it to you." Nux shook his head.

"Why? Are you hiding something?" The general questioned.

"No, there is a problem with my face."

"Hmm? Is it an injury or a scar? Or is it a scary birthmark? Actually, you don't have to worry, no matter what it is, it won't bother me, as a general I have seen lots of things, the face being completely disfigured so badly that it looked horrendous isn't something that can bother me.

So you don't have to worry because I am sure your face will be better than the things I have seen."

The general smiled.

"Ahh, I think you misunderstood.

My face is, of course, a lot better than anything you have ever seen.

And this is the problem.

Wherever I go, women would fall for my charm, therefore, I cover my face.

You should be careful as well, general, don't be too curious, else you might fall in love with me."

Nux smiled.

"..."

The general blinked a few times and didn't have any answer to that.

She has seen a lot of things, but this man's shamelessness is on an entirely different level.

"Ahh, of course, you don't have to worry, if by chance, you did fall for my charm, I will take the full responsibility.

However, I would prefer we take things slowly, get to know each other well, not by face, but by our pure and innocent souls, let our lovely hearts connect with each other,

Only then, can we build a strong, healthy and long-lasting relationship."

Nux smiled brightly.

"..."

And again, The General didn't have any answers to what he just said.

Thyra, who saw the general's face smiled,

Yes, this was how things usually go by,

Nux isn't the one who loses the words battle, he is the one who stands on top.

He is the winner.

The General just took him by surprise for the first time,

She ain't winning anymore.

Thyra nodded to herself.

Satisfied by this situation.

The general didn't know what she was thinking, however, since she had no answers to Nux's shameless words, she decided to change the topic.

“So Arvina Skyfall send you two?” She questioned.

Nux smiled meaningfully and then, he nodded,

“Yes, she did.”

“And you two are here to assist us in this war?”

The General questioned.

“Indeed.” Nux nodded again and at the same time, his golden eyes shined brightly and the General's information appeared in front of him.

[Name: Ember Windstar.]

[Age: 152]

[Mana Cultivation: King.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human]

[Occupation: General of the Woods Dynasty.]

[Talent: High]

[LVL: 61]

[HP: 740/740]

[MP: 1450/1450]

[STR: 72]

[AGL: 78]

[VIT: 74]

[STM: 73]

[INT: 145]

[DEF: 75]

...

‘Ember huh...

She is indeed hot~’

Nux chuckled inwardly.

“I am glad that Arvina sent someone here to help me, however, I still cannot accept you two into the army.”

Suddenly, Ember muttered.

“Why?”

Nux frowned.

“I do not know who you are and you two are unwilling to reveal your faces this will create problems, since you won’t be able to get along with other soldiers.

A war cannot be won with personnel strength alone.

Also, you two are too strong, other than me, there are only 4 people here who can go against you, however, even they might not be able to defeat you.

It won’t be easy to add you into the army since I won’t be able to find a leader capable enough to lead you and I, of course, won’t be able to make you two leaders.”

Ember shared her problems.

However, Nux was already ready for something like this,

“This won’t be a problem, we are hiding our identities for certain reasons, however, you have seen Arvina Skyfall’s badge.

You may not trust us but you trust her, correct?

We are someone close to her, so we won’t betray you.

Also, you may be a King Stage Cultivator and Expert Stage Cultivators like us might be nothing in your eyes, however, if we go to the battlefield, we will be a tremendous help.

I don’t think you should disregard us like that.”

Nux muttered.

Thyra stepped up as well.

“And as for you adding us to your army, I have a solution.”

“What is it?” Ember turned towards Thyra and questioned.

“Make us the Leaders.”

# Chapter 300

“Make us the Leaders.”

“Huh?” Ember frowned.

“Didn’t I tell you just now? I can’t make you two leaders.

It is not easy, no matter how strong you are, other soldiers won’t follow your lead because they don’t know anything about you.

They are risking their lives in this war, however, this does not mean that they will just throw away their lives like that.

They are humans, not puppets.”

Thyra, however, shook her head,

“I never said that you need to place any soldiers under our command.”

“What’s the point of being a leader then?” Ember couldn’t understand her thoughts.

“Look, I will be honest,

This will be our first time fighting a War, we have no prior experience. We have stayed in Bloodhill Wilderness for a month and have fought against countless beasts, however, we haven’t fought any humans on such a large scale.

We are newbies and if you place soldiers under us, they will lose their lives. We, of course, do not want that.

However, at the same time, we, as Expert Stage Cultivators, cannot be under the command of someone weaker than us.

Therefore, the best solution will be to make us the Leaders without any soldiers under us.

This way, no soldier would lose his/her life because of us and at the same time, no leader would place us in their plans for the upcoming war.”

Thyra explained.

“Then what are you going to do?” Ember questioned as she narrowed her eyes.

“We will just join any random squad when the war will start and once we are close enough, we will assassinate the enemy leaders.”

Thyra smiled.

“Huh? You will assassinate enemy leaders in the middle of the war? How will you do it, don’t you usually assassinate someone when they are not on guard?”

Ember raised her eyebrows.

“Assassination is all about taking the opponent by surprise, don’t worry, we can do it. I promise to bring you at least 5 enemy heads when I return.”

Thyra answered.

“Ew! Why would you do that? That is so gross.

I didn’t know you were a mindless brute.”

Ember then turned towards Nux and smiled seductively,

“You should stay away from brutes like her,”

Then, Ember stood up, walked towards Nux and placed her finger on his chin, then lifting his chin up, their eyes matched and Ember whispered in a seductive voice,

“There are many, much better options out there. All you have to do is look around.”

\*Pat\*

Thyra was quick to move,

She slapped away Ember’s hand and stood in front of Nux.

“How shameless,”

She muttered.

Ember just smiled and looked at Nux.

“We will meet again,

Very soon.”

“S-S-Sure.”

Nux stuttered.

“Mhm, I am looking forward to me, Mister Golden Eyes.”

Ember chuckled inwardly, finding Thyra’s reaction amusing.

She was doing all this to tease her, after all.

Of course, Nux’s stuttering was cute as well.

All in all, she could feel that she would spend quite an amazing time with these two here.

“We will be taking our leave now.”

Thyra muttered.

“You can leave but why not leave Mister Golden Eyes here? I want to talk to him,

Privately~”

Ember smiled.

“No! I won’t allow you to do that, you bitch!

If you want to talk, do it in front of me!”

Thyra shouted in anger.

“I don’t think you would want to hear our talks,

I want to talk about some...

Private matters.”

Ember smiled.

“You two don’t even know each other!

What private matters do you have to talk about!?

Hmph! Hmph!”

Thyra snorted, then she grabbed Nux’s hand and started walking outside the tent.

“That’s why I wanted to talk to him,

To get to know him better~

Won’t it be better if he and I strengthen our relationship?

How do you not understand my pure intentions?”

Ember questioned with a dramatically sad look on her face.

Thyra, however, did not stop and left the tent with Nux.

“Where are you going~~

Mister Golden Eyes, meet me later~”

As they walked out of the tent, Nux and Thyra heard Ember’s words.

“He won’t!” Thyra answered and then she walked away.

Nux, who was following behind her looked at him with a small smile on his face,

“You do realize that she is doing this to tease you, correct?”

Thyra didn’t stop and continued walking,

“Of course I do.” She nodded and then, she continued.

“Whatever she said about spending time with you and all that,

It was all for the sake of teasing me,

She wants to see my jealous face,

However, what would happen if I show her what she wants?”

Thyra questioned with a smile.

“Hmm? What?” Nux questioned.

“Heh. Someone like her would want to tease me more and more and more.”

Thyra’s smile widened.

“Wait...”

Nux realized.

“Do you finally get it now?”

The more she would want to tease me, the bolder her actions would get and the more she will advance towards you,

All on her own.

It would be easier for you to seduce her after that.”

Thyra smiled.

“Oh ho? You are doing this for me? But I thought you didn’t like her.”

Nux questioned.

“Well, I don’t exactly hate or like her,

She is strong, it will help you and it will push others in the group to train more. I like that.

However, she has those mounds of fat on her chest, tsk tsk, she will join Allura and the others.

Tsk Tsk, isn’t that fat useless?”

Thyra complained.

“...”

Nux used his right to remain silent.

“Of course, in the end, it doesn’t really matter. I know you well enough to foresee where this will end.

You have already set you, there is no way she would escape.

I am just speeding up the process.

However, you better not forget about my rewards, got it?”

Thyra warned with a seductive smile on her face.

Suddenly, Nux picked Thyra in his arms and dashed towards the Jungle.

“Alright then, let’s start with your rewards, shall we?” he questioned with a smile.

“Shouldn’t we look around the army camp a little before doing that?”

Thyra questioned. They have just arrived here after all.

“Meh, we can do it later,

For now, let’s try having sex in the Woods while we are in the Woods Dynasty.”

# **Volume 4**

# Chapter 301

“Where have you two been? I was looking for you.”

The Deputy General questioned in his usual, strict tone.

“We were busy with some stuff.”

Nux answered with a smile on his face.

The Deputy General narrowed his eyes since he didn't like this vague answer, however, in the end, he just sighed and continued,

“Whatever, I am here to tell you that your tent is ready, follow me, I'll show you where it is.”

“Alright, thank you for your work.” Nux nodded and then, he and Thyra started following the Deputy General.

“I talked with the General, she told me that you two don't know much about the Army and War, so let me tell you a few important things.”

While the three of them were walking, the Deputy General started,

“We appreciate your efforts.”

Nux nodded, a small smile appeared on the Deputy General's face and he continued,

“First, let me start with the Soldier Rankings within the Army.

The First is a Soldier, a normal soldier, they are usually Apprentice or Beginner Stage Cultivators.

Then comes the Head Soldier, or a Head, they are Advance Stage Cultivators and usually have 10-15 soldiers under their command,

These 10-15 Soldiers and the Head Soldier leading them combined is called a Team.

The next Rank is the Unit Captain, they are Master Stage Cultivators and have 20-25 Teams under them.

This is called a Unit.

Next is the Squad Captain, Grand Master Stage Cultivation and 20-25 Units under them. This is called a Squad.

Then comes the Deputy Generals, Expert Stage Cultivators, and have around 20-25 Squads under them.

Then comes the one leading this Huge army, the General, the King Stage Cultivator, she has everything under her control, however, most of the time, she relies on her trusted Deputy Generals and efficiently manages the whole army.

After the Ruler of the Dynasty, she is the one with the most influence in the Woods Dynasty.” The Deputy General informed with a proud look on his face.

Nux nodded his head as he heard this information.

This was indeed a little interesting.

Thyra, who already knew about all this since it was similar to how the Army in the Skaadi Kingdom worked, didn't have many changes in her expressions and questioned,

“So what is our rank?”

“I was coming to that topic.”

The Deputy General looked at Thyra and muttered.

Thyra nodded and the Deputy General continued,

“You two are Expert Stage Cultivators, someone who should be Deputy Generals, however, for the reasons you already know, we can’t make you the Deputy Generals.

Therefore, the General has introduced a new, special Rank for you two.

Assistant General.

This Rank will allow you to roam around the battlefield and do whatever you want. Other than the General herself, no one has the power to command you.”

“Hmmm, so that means we are Deputy Generals like you,” Nux commented.

The Deputy General’s face twitched and he shook his head,

“No, you are not Deputy General, you are Assistant Generals.”

“Isn’t that the same thing? We have the same status after all.” Nux smiled.

The Deputy General clenched his fist in frustration and answered,

“No, we do not have a similar status, although I cannot command you two, unlike you, I have full power to order any other soldier whose rank is lower than mine.

You, on the other hand, can only ask for assistance from anyone who is not the General or Deputy General, and if it forces them to put their lives on the line, they have the right to refuse you.

You do not have absolute power to control them, therefore, you do not have the same status as me.”

“Will the soldiers take their own life if you would order them to?” Nux questioned.

“Huh? Why would I give a crazy order like that?” The Deputy General frowned.

“Just answer the question,”

“There is no answer to a stupid question like this,

I will never give a stupid order like that.”

Nux smiled,

“You can try to deny it, however, I know the answer is no.

They won’t follow your orders.

No matter how I look at it, Assistant General and Deputy General are the same.” Nux smiled.

The Deputy General clenched his fists in annoyance.

This man is too irritating, in the end, he decided to not respond to his words and continued walking.

Nux just smiled and didn’t say anything.

He was really enjoying his stay in this Army Camp.

Thyra, who saw everything couldn’t help but shake her head.

This Deputy General... she found him a little pitiful...

However, she won’t deny it, she was enjoying this as well.

A few minutes later, the three of them appeared in front of an empty space and the Deputy General smiled.

“You can live here, have a nice stay.”

Nux looked around again and then, he turned towards the Deputy General,

“Are your eyes working fine?”

Where is the tent you are talking about?”

He questioned.

“Huh? Tent? Did you think we would arrange a set tent for you as well?”

This is the Army, not your home where you could play around, arrange everything on your own.”

The Deputy General smiled.

Nux raised his eyebrow and then, a smile appeared on his face,

“Hey, you. Yes, you.

Come here.”

He looked around and ordered a soldier to come here.

When the soldier saw that the man calling him was standing with the Deputy General, his eyes widened in surprise and he rushed towards Nux and saluted.

“Deputy General!”

“Hmmm, Master Stage, so you must be a Unit Captain,” Nux muttered.

“Yes, I am.”

The Soldier nodded.

“Well, I am the new Assistant General, your superior, and I order you to set our tent here,” Nux ordered.

Then he turned towards the Deputy General and smiled,

“I can order him to do that, right, Deputy General?”

The Deputy General's face twitched, however, he couldn't do anything about it.

Nux indeed had the power to do it.

He could only nod.

# Chapter 302

After the Soldiers made a tent for Nux and Thyra, he saluted and then left.

The Deputy General, who was still bitter about what happened before didn't say anything and left as well.

Now, only Nux and Thyra were left.

“Hehe~ Are we going for another round?” Nux questioned with a playful smile on his face.

Thyra, however, shook her head.

“Don't forget what we are here for.”

“Huh? There are no wars here though? Aren't we free till the next battle starts?” Nux questioned in confusion.

“We are not here for war alone,

We are here to continue your training.”

“Ah, I thought we would continue my training while we are on the battlefield.”

Nux muttered.

“There is no way I would let you enter the battlefield like you are right now.”

Thyra muttered with a solemn look on her face.

“Huh? Why not?” Nux frowned.

“You have to get used to killing first.”

Nux's frown deepened.

“Killing a human is different than killing a Beast, Nux. You cannot enter a war without having prior experience of killing, I can't have you lose your focus just because there is human blood on your face.

This will be the Second Stage of our training, Nux.

The path of an Assassin.

From now on, everything you learn will be from practical experience.”

Thyra muttered as her eyes shined in determination.

Nux smiled and then he kissed her lips and whispered seductively.

“You can do whatever you want with me, my love~

I am all yours~”

A small blush appeared on Thyra's face, however, it quickly reverted back to normal and her face turned expressionless.

Thyra entered her serious mode.

“Follow me.”

She instructed and turned around.

Nux didn't ask where they were going, he just followed his teacher with a small smile on his face.

He was looking forward to it.

A few minutes later, Nux noticed that they have entered the Woods Dynasty's city, this time, they were not using [Conceal], rather, they were using the dark night to hide, just like normal assassins do.

Their footsteps were light and made as little sound as possible.

Someone who is not perceptive enough would never be able to hear it.

In the middle of the night, Nux and Thyra wandered around the silent, deserted streets and after exploring the entire city, they finally stopped.

From the roof of a house, Thyra pointed at the street.

Nux looked where she pointed and found 2 men surrounding a woman.

One had covered her mouth while the other had lifted her legs and was taking her towards a deserted alleyway where no one would find them.

The woman resisted as fiercely as she could, however, in the end, she couldn't do much against them and was taken away.

There, the man finally removed his hand from the woman's mouth and she shouted with all her might,

“HELP! HELP ME!”

Panic was clear in her voice, however, the men didn't care about it, the one covering her mouth now held her two hands on the top of her head.

While the other one was about to remove her clothes.

“Please! Don't do this! I have a husband! I am begging you, don't do it!”

With tears all over her face, the woman begged, however, the men didn't care and continued to do what they were doing.

The man was about to tear open the woman's gown, however, before he could, his world spun.

‘Huh?’

He noticed that everything had started moving up, he then glanced at his friend, who was looking at him with his mouth opened in shock and before his friend understand what happened, a dagger pierced his neck as well.

The man finally realized,

He was killed by the one who killed his friend.

The world wasn't moving up, it was his head that was falling.

And as if confirming his thoughts, his eyes turned heavy and his consciousness drifted apart.

The woman who was about to be raped turned pale in horror as she saw a man wearing black-coloured clothes standing in front of her.

“You did not see anything, is that clear?” The man muttered.

The woman blinked a few times, then, she finally realized what had happened, her eyes shined as she quickly stood up and bowed her head,

“T-Thank y-y-you! Thank-k y-y-you very much!”

“Leave.”

“Y-Yes!”

The woman then ran away, few seconds later, she slipped and fell, however, she quickly stood up and continued to run while tumbling away.

She was grateful to the man who saved her, however, she was too scared to stay there.

Her heart was still beating quickly, she had really avoided a great calamity by hair's breadth.

After the woman ran away, Thyra appeared and glanced at Nux with a blank look on her face.

“What? You didn't expect me to wait till they removed all her clothes and save her at the last moment, did you?”

I honestly hate that storyline.”

“ ... ”

Thyra, however, did not reply and just stared at Nux.

“Why are you looking at me like that? Do I look a little too handsome today?” Nux questioned with a playful smile on his face.

“Do you not feel anything?” Thyra questioned.

Nux’s gaze then turned serious, he then glanced at his hands and shook his head,

“I do not.”

Thyra frowned.

“Are you sure you haven’t killed before?”

“Well, I did kill beasts, however, this is my first time killing a human. Maybe it was because I was already prepared for it?

That might be the reason why I don’t feel anything, right?”

Thyra thought about it a little and then, she instructed.

“Alright, now drag these bodies away and bury them somewhere.”

“Hmm? Why don’t we directly use the storage rings?”

“No, I need you to do it without a storage ring.”

“Alright.”

Nux nodded and then he grabbed the legs of the two dead bodies.

Then, he glanced at Thyra.

“You are coming?”

“I will not come with you, do it alone.”

Nux nodded and then left.

Then, he continued to drag the body and soon, he found a perfect place to bury these two bodies.

He started digging the ground and soon, he felt something strange.

He had just killed a human, the realization stuck in.

# Chapter 303

He had just killed a human, the realization stuck in.

He didn't feel anything before, however, now that he was alone, he finally realized what he had done.

To be honest, he still didn't feel anything much however, as he glanced at the two bodies in front of him, his heart started beating quickly.

His movements paused.

Looking at those motionless bodies and the eerie silence that had enshrouded the whole area, Nux felt something strange.

He couldn't point out what it was, however, he knew something was different.

Nux then closed his eyes and started breathing calmly.

This was something Thyra had told him to do when she was suggesting different ways to get over his first kill.

The best way is to accept it.

However, it was not as easy as it sounded.

Sometimes, people won't even realize that they haven't accepted it yet.

The same was happening with Nux right now, he might feel nothing was happening, however, deep inside, something still bothered him.

For someone like him, the best way is to try and forget about everything for a time being.

And he can't use anyone's help for that, he had to do it on his own.

Nux then sat crosslegged and started meditating.

15 minutes later, he opened his eyes.

He didn't look at the bodies, he just continued digging and once the hole was big enough, he kicked the two bodies inside it and started refilling the hole.

Then, he returned.

Thyra noticed that he looked a little lost.

She understood.

Nux would be able to hold on if someone, or more specifically, one of his women is beside him, however, the same can't be said for when he is alone.

Once he is alone, he would start thinking about all of this and wouldn't be able to sleep at night.

This was a problem.

However, he was still doing a lot better than she thought.

“Alright, this would be enough for today,”

“Hmm?”

Nux frowned.

“That's it?”

“Well, the training isn't over, the real training starts after you have killed the person, your brain has registered it, however, your heart hasn't.

You have to stay alone for a while, introspect and then finally get used to this new, strange feeling.

Of course, this wasn't something that can be done in days, you need some more time.

However, I feel that you will be able to do it faster than normal.

You are different from others, after all.”

Thyra smiled.

Nux nodded and the two of them returned to their tent.

There, Thyra and Nux slept in different tents, Nux didn't sleep, he just closed his eyes and thought about what had happened.

He still felt that he hasn't done something wrong, therefore, he didn't feel any guilt.

Then what was this strange feeling?

He didn't know.

And he didn't know if he could ever understand what it is.

The next day, Nux woke up, he and Thyra walked around the army camp, although he was a little gloomier than normal, he still looked fine.

Seeing that, Thyra smiled.

In the night, she went out with him again, this time, Nux killed another human and they returned.

This continued for the next 4 days, by now, Nux has killed 6 humans, however, his reaction to it wasn't as strong as before.

He had even started flirting with Thyra and Ember.

He still wasn't completely over it.

On the fifth night, Thyra and Nux were running towards a city and just as they were about to reach their destination,

Thyra muttered,

‘We are going to increase the difficulty level now.’

‘Hmm? How are we going to do that? Killing more humans?’

‘No, we are going to increase the strength of the human we will kill.

You are already used to killing humans by now,

From now on, you will start assassinating strong humans using the techniques I taught you.’

Saying that, Thyra passed a paper to Nux.

‘Clayton Brook,

In the Woods Dynasty, his status is similar to a Marquee, he is a Grand Master Stage Cultivator who uses his status to oppress commoners.

He is part of many frauds, he has raped many women, killed a lot of men and is an unforgivable person.

However, he always uses his status to dodge any punishments.

Today, we are going to get clean this trash from the world.’

Thyra explained.

‘Thyra...’ Suddenly, Nux frowned.

‘What?’

‘We are not warriors of Justice, Thyra. This is the Woods Dynasty problem, why do we have to take care of it?’

‘We just want a target.’

‘Why bother researching so much?’

‘While I was trained as an assassin, there were three stages of Killing.

First, where I was made to kill a person who deserves to be killed. Since I deemed that the person should have been killed, it was easier for me to get over the fact that I killed him.

This is what I am doing for you by choosing targets that you feel should be killed.

The Second Stage is where you start killing people for your own advantage. As long as killing that person benefits you enough, you will kill.

They made me kill people while I was about to break through the next stage, under the pressure of fighting against those people, I grew faster than normal and I got stronger after killing them, which, in the end, would help me survive in this world later, I killed.

For you, this will happen when you participate in the war, killing the enemy soldiers will help your allies, and it will reduce the number of casualties among your soldiers, this will be your reason to kill.

For a King, as long as killing someone benefits him or his country, he should raise his sword.

The Last stage is where you kill indiscriminately. Right, wrong, innocent, criminal, it doesn't matter. You just kill since you were ordered.

I had killed so many people that I got numb, killing didn't bother me anymore. I turned into an emotionless killing machine that killed someone just because I was ordered to.

The background of that person didn't matter.

Even if he was the most innocent person that hasn't harmed a single soul, I would kill without a second thought.”

Thyra's eyes then shined in determination as she grabbed Nux's hand with her two hands.

“However, I will not let you move to the last stage.

I will not allow you to turn into an emotionless killing machine.

You don't have to walk into that marsh, if you ever need an Emotionless Killing Machine,

I will be there to do that dirty work for you.”

# Chapter 304

\*Clank\*

An expensive-looking vase fell on the ground.

Beside the table, there was a bed and on the bed, there was a man,

“Kkkhhkkk!!”

The man wanted to say something, however, he was choking on his own blood.

Words didn't come out of his mouth, even though he was trying his hardest, he wasn't able to breathe anymore, therefore, the only thing he could do was glare at the two beings standing in front of him in hatred while trying to make as much sound as possible.

He knew that he will lose his life soon, however, he wanted to make sure that these two bastards responsible for it dies with him.

Therefore, he wanted his guards to come and see how he was assassinated in his own room.

The man was Clayton Brooke and the one who assassinated him was Nux.

Clayton wanted revenge, he was so blinded in his rage that he didn't even notice that the one killing him was an Expert Stage Cultivator, someone who could easily kill anyone who enters after hearing that sound.

Actually, even if he did notice it, he would have done the same, even if he can't kill the people who killed him, at least someone would follow him in his death.

It wasn't like his guard was out of fault, he was the one who failed to protect him after all.

Shouldn't he lose his life because of this?

That was completely fair in Clayton's eyes.

Soon, Clayton heard footsteps.

He smiled, it was his subordinate, he knew it.

However, his smile died soon.

The person who killed him and the one following him...

They were running away.

They had jumped out of the window!

Clayton's heart shuddered, he grabbed the bedsheets tightly and started looking around, trying to throw something else to call the guard sooner.

However, Nux and Thyra had already left the room, by the time his guard entered,

"Lord Clayton!"

It was already too late...

Clayton lost his life.

The last scene he saw was his guard rushing towards him with a panicked look on his face.

He couldn't even see a beauty in his last moment, tsk tsk, poor bastard indeed.

Brooke's house fell into panic as the news about the death of Clayton Brooke spread like fire.

On the other side, the people who caused this incident, they were just running away with a calm look on their faces.

Thyra, who was following behind Nux was smiling.

Nux was doing a lot better than she had imagined, killing a human didn't affect him as much as she thought it would.

She understood that the reason behind that might be her.

Since she was with her, he was able to cope up.

She became her support.

Thinking about it, Thyra smiled.

This made her happy.

Actually, the moment she met Ember, she realized that soon, she won't be the strongest within the harem.

She won't be Nux's source of strength anymore.

She wanted to be selfish and stop Ember and Nux from getting close, however, she knew that if she used the normal way, reaching the King Stage would take Decades, this would stop Nux's progress as well.

Therefore, she backed off.

Ember was important,

Even though she will lose her importance,

Ember was still important.

And realizing this importance, Thyra didn't try to stop Nux from getting close to Ember, heck, she was even willing to help him.

“We are here, activate your [Conceal]”

While Thyra was lost in her thoughts, Nux's voice sounded.

Thyra came out of her reverie and did as she was told, the two of them then walked into Nux's tent.

And there, Thyra smiled,

“You did a good job today.”

Nux glanced at his hands and nodded,

“I didn't feel much today when I was killing that man.”

“Mhm, you will get used to it soon, now, we can take a step forward and continue your training,” Thyra muttered.

“What are we going to do?” Nux questioned.

“You will restrict your cultivation, to the point that you are actually weaker than your target and then, you will assassinate him.

A good assassin can kill a target stronger than him.

Remember, no matter how powerful your opponents are, as long as your dagger pierces their heart, they die.”

Thyra muttered with a smile.

“We will take it slow, don't worry.”

“I like it when it's slow as well, you moan louder if I start slow and then ram it in one go.”

Nux nodded to himself.

“...”

Thyra looked at Nux with an expressionless look on her face.

Nux, however, could notice the tinge of red on her face and smiled widely.

Teasing the serious Thyra was indeed the best.

He didn't know why or how, but the serious Thyra is just too hot for him to not do anything.

“Kekeke~”

Nux laughed strangely.

‘Nux, it’s 11:57, why aren’t you here yet?’

While Nux was thinking all this, he heard a voice.

He then soon realized that he had to use his free teleportation for the day right now because if he didn't, he would be stuck in this place,

He then looked at Thyra and smiled,

“Alright, my lovely assassin, I will leave now~

Your sisters are calling me.”

“Alright.”

Thyra pouted however, in the end, she could only nod.

Then, Nux disappeared and reappeared in front of Allura, who was looking at him with a seductive smile on her face.

As Nux's eyes fell on Allura, they widened in surprise.

This woman...

She was completely naked right now!

“How was your day, my love~” Allura questioned as she placed her right leg on top of the left one, teasing Nux with her alluring movements.

\*Gulp\*

Nux gulped,

Then, he walked toward her with a big smile on his face.

“It was good, however,

I feel that it would become even better soon~”

Saying that, he pushed Allura into the bed and then placed his hands on top of hers,

Allura looked into his golden-coloured eyes and smiled,

“You are perceptive~”

Then, a long night followed.

# Chapter 305

“Assistant General Nux, Assistant General Thyra, the General has called for you.”

A soldier saluted and then told what he was here for.

Nux looked at the soldier and nodded,

“We will be there soon.”

“Yes sir!”

The soldier saluted again and left.

Nux then turned to Thyra and smiled,

“It is finally starting.”

“Well, it is just a meeting right now, it hasn’t started yet,” Thyra replied.

“Hmm hmm, it would be my first time attending a meeting like this,” Nux muttered.

“This would be the first for me as well.” Thyra nodded her head.

The two then held each other’s hand and walked towards the General’s Camp.

As they entered, their eyes fell on 4 people living sitting inside the tent around the big round table,

They were Ember and her 3 Deputy Generals.

As Ember’s eyes fell on Thyra and Nux, she smiled,

“Well then, as you all already know, they are the help sent by my close friend, Assistant General Nux and Assistant General Thyra.”

“Yeah, we already know about them, General, the two who have come here to ‘assist’ us, however, are unwilling to show their faces to us.

We know them well,

Nux and Thyra, there are chances that their names are fake as well.”

A Deputy General snorted.

He wasn’t alone, most of the Deputy Generals didn’t have positive attitudes towards Thyra and Nux, of course, the two of them didn’t care.

For Nux, as long as the General smiled at him and treated him well, he was fine, as for Thyra, well, as long as Nux is fine, she was fine as well.

Therefore, the two of them ignored their remarks and walked into the camp.

“So? What are we called for?” Thyra questioned in her usual cold tone.

Ember, who saw that Thyra was still fiery as ever smiled and then, she winked at Nux.

Thyra saw that and she narrowed her eyes,

Then, she tightened her grip around Nux’s arm.

“You didn’t call us here just so you could try to eye on another woman’s hand, right?” Thyra questioned.

Ember smiled in satisfaction and then, her eyes turned serious,

“Have a seat, we are discussing something important.”

Thyra and Nux looked at each other and then, they sat down on the chairs.

Then, the General placed a map on the table and started,

“This all started 100 years ago when the Solid Earth Kingdom entered the Forbidden Area inside the Bloodhill Wilderness.

Since they lost a considerable amount of strength, the other three powers took this opportunity and attacked.

Of course, it wasn't a major attack and the Solid Earth Kingdom didn't lose much in this, however, the boundary line between the four Kingdoms shifted a little.

Just like other powers, the Woods Dynasty didn't lose this opportunity and attacked, in that war, we won the Highcrane Fort, a good defence location that belonged to the Solid Earth Kingdom.

However, 2 years ago, the Solid Earth Kingdom, which didn't do much even though their land was taken away from them finally moved.

With an overwhelmingly strong force, they overpowered our men staying in the Highcrane Fort and took back the land that belonged to them.

If they had only taken what belonged to them, things wouldn't have been that complicated, however, they didn't stop there.

With their immense momentum, they continued at captured our Deathspike Fort as well.”

The General then narrowed her eyes,

“They were ruthless with their moves and didn't spare any soldiers, more than 10,000 soldiers died.

We, the Woods Dynasty cannot let this slide,

Therefore, I was ordered to reclaim our Deathspike Fort.

Our strategy is simple,

We will use our Piercing Flame Squad to destroy their walls, our Absolute Earth Squad to defend our Piercing Flame Squad,

Then after we destroy their walls, we will move with full force and reclaim our Fort.”

The General smiled.

However, hearing this, Nux frowned.

“Isn’t this too... simple...?”

He questioned.

This strategy...

Even a child could come up with something like this.

Thyra agreed with Nux’s thoughts.

This sounded too simple for a War plan.

Were they hiding something from them? Were they still doubtful of them and were not revealing their full plan in front of them?

Thyra believed that something like this was possible.

However, Ember shook her head,

“You are right, this is a Simple Strategy and the reason behind this is that the outcome of this war is already decided.

The Woods Dynasty would win.

And I am saying this, not because I am arrogant but because I have a reason to back up my words.

Since the Solid Earth Kingdom attacked us and took back their Fort, it is clear that they are planning to take back their other Forts as well.

And to do that, they would need soldiers.

There is no way they would use all their soldiers here.

It would have been different if we were attacking their Highcrane Fort, however, since we will only take back what was ours,

They won't retaliate much.”

Ember smiled.

Hearing her words, Nux frowned even more.

“If it was that simple, then why were you, a King Stage Cultivator sent here?”

Ember smiled,

“As I said, we are not going there to just win, we are winning overwhelmingly.

You can say that we are going to make a statement to the world.

The Woods Dynasty is strong, absurdly strong, do not mess with us.”

This time, Thyra frowned,

“If you want to show that, then why not take the Highcrane Fort as well? Only then will you be able to make that statement.”

Hearing that, the General smiled wryly,

“Well, Woods Dynasty is strong, however, the Solid Earth Kingdom is strong as well.”

Nux's brows furrowed in confusion, however, Thyra finally understood what was happening.

“So this is all just a farce.”

She muttered.

“A farce...?”

Nux finally realized it as well.

Ember smiled,

“Yes, you two are correct, this is not a war, it is just a farce, a farce that was arranged by the Solid Earth Kingdom to take back the territories they had lost.

I assume that the two Kingdoms had planned it before,

We are just pawns here,

Pawns playing the game they have orchestrated.”

# Chapter 306

“Pawns playing the game they have orchestrated.”

Ember muttered with a small smile on her face and the tent turned silent. The three Deputy Generals didn't say anything, it seemed like they knew about this as well.

Thyra and Nux looked at each other and Nux narrowed his eyes.

Playing the game someone else has orchestrated, he didn't like this feeling at all, however,

‘It doesn't matter.’

Nux heard Thyra's words in his mind.

‘Even if it is all just a farce, you will still gain a lot out of it, you will get what you are here for,’

Then, Thyra glanced at Ember and her blue eyes shined,

‘Heck, you will get something far more important than you hoped for, no matter how you look at it,

You are benefiting from this ‘game’.

So don't think about useless stuff and,

Play.’

Hearing her words, Nux smiled.

Indeed, things like these did not matter.

Also, this made sense.

His Teacher still didn't know how strong he was, in her eyes, he was just a normal Expert Stage Cultivator who has decent swordsmanship.

An Expert Stage Cultivator was strong, however, that didn't mean that his teacher would send her student to participate in a war.

She must have known from the start,

This war was just a farce.

A perfect place where Nux can train without worrying about many things.

“So when are we attacking?” Nux smiled and questioned.

A smile appeared on Ember's face as she nodded,

“2 days.

We would attack 2 days later and would end this farce in 1 hour, we won't be wasting any more time than this.”

Nux smiled.

“I understand.”

Then, the meeting ended.

A few minutes later, Nux and Thyra returned back to their camp,

“Haahhh... talk about disappointment...”

Nux sighed.

Thyra just smiled and then, she started removing her skintight clothes.

Nux understood her intentions,

Therefore, just like the good and supportive man he is, he helped her remove her clothes.

Then, another session continued.

...

Just like that, 2 blissful days passed by.

And today, was the day of the 'War'.

The Woods Dynasty's army was prepared.

With loud and thunderous steps, they marched towards the Deathspike Fort.

Just like other Deputy Generals, Nux was standing alongside Ember.

Right now, he was wearing his black assassin clothes, and on top of that, he wore shiny armour.

Even though his face was covered, he looked quite dashing just with his posture and aura alone.

However, out of everyone on the battlefield, only Thyra understood his inner thoughts just by looking at his face.

Nux was nervous,

And how could he not be?

There were a total of 60,000 men standing in front of him,

This many people...

It was his first time seeing something like this.

And these people would soon participate in an all-out war.

Any sane person would be nervous in this situation.

However, unlike him, Ember was confident.

She then stepped forward and,

“Soldiers!”

She roared, gaining the attention of 60,000 soldiers in front of her.

“The Solid Earth Bastards dared to take what is ours, can we accept it without doing anything!?”

“NO WAY!!”

“Are we just going to sit in our houses and let our enemies underestimate us!?”

“NO WAY!!”

“Then are we going to Fight Back!?”

“YES WE WILL!!”

“Are we going to Destroy the Solid Earth Bastards!?”

“YES WE WILL!!”

Ember smiled, satisfied by the scene in front of her.

Nux, who heard 60,000 people shouting together in perfect sync was taken aback.

He was overwhelmed by the immense energy these soldiers radiated.

However, what overwhelmed him even more was...

‘Beautiful...’

The black-red-haired woman who was commanding these 60,000 soldiers.

Their leader, the General, Ember Windstar, this woman...

She looked too charming right now.

Nux was completely lost in her voice.

“Soldiers,

Formation!”

Ember ordered, the soldiers then arranged themselves into the formation and then,

“March!”

Ember roared.

“YYEAAAHHH!!!”

The soldiers roared loudly.

Their roar was so loud that even Nux, who was lost in his thoughts, came out of his reverie.

The Energy these Soldiers were radiating had increased exponentially.

As Nux saw the soldiers marching towards the Fort, everything around him turned silent.

He didn't hear the Soldiers' cries, nor did he hear Ember's voice, everything around him was unusually silent.

Was it him panicking in this situation?

Was it too overwhelming for him?

Nux didn't know.

He only knew that he had to continue moving, and that is what he did.

He followed others and continued walking as he looked around with a confused look on his face.

He could hear the footsteps of the soldiers, he could hear the sounds of the swords being unsheathed, however, he couldn't hear any words.

This was...

A bit strange...

Nux shook his head again and again, however, this weird situation didn't change.

However, just as he was about to smack his head with his hand,

“Piercing Flame Squad, Absolute Earth Squad, move forward!

Destroy their walls!”

He heard Ember's roar.

Miraculously, the strange feeling suddenly disappeared and everything went back to normal, Nux felt something was pulling him away, however, this time, he didn't lose his focus.

He prepared himself and soon, a serious look appeared on his face.

Then, he activated his [Sense] out of reflex. A second later, the picture of the entire battlefield appeared inside his mind.

He then started the situation around him with a calm mind, Thyra was behind him, Ember was in front of him, the rest of the Army had stopped their advance, and only two squads were moving forward.

They were preparing to create an opening.

The opponents' soldiers were standing on the Fort walls, preparing their arrows and aiming toward the two squads coming for them.

From their expression, they looked quite calm.

It was as if they were sure of their victory.

Nux frowned.

This was strange.

This war was just a farce, however, for the Solid Earth Kingdom's Soldiers; this war was something where they would lose their lives.

Then why are they...

“!!!”

Suddenly, Nux's eyes widened in horror.

“Stop!

Stop Marching Forward!!”

He screamed.

# Chapter 307

“Stop! Stop marching forward!”

Nux shouted at the top of his lungs.

The Soldiers stopped marching, and many of them didn't believe this 'Assistant General', however, in the end, he had a higher rank than them, therefore, they could only agree and do what he had ordered.

The General and the Deputy Generals frowned as they saw this.

However, Nux didn't care about it and shouted again,

“Step Back!

Step Back Quick!”

“Huh? What are you trying to do, you bastard!?”

Keep in mind, you are someone who is allowed to roam wherever you want on the Battlefield, however, this does not mean you can order other soldiers as you will!”

A Deputy General shouted in anger.

“Soldiers! March Forward!”

He ordered.

Seeing the two higher-ups fighting with each other, the soldiers frowned in confusion.

What are they supposed to do now?

Nux then looked at the Deputy General and then, he directly turned towards the General.

“Order them to come back!”

He shouted in a fierce tone.

“Why?” Ember questioned.

“I don’t have time! Just or-”

“”AAAGGHHH!!!!””

Nux wanted to reply, however, soon, everyone heard the soldiers’ screams.

Nux, Thyra, Ember and the Deputy Generals turned around and their eyes widened in surprise when they saw large, Black Coloured Spikes impaling more than 2000 soldiers.

The rest of the soldiers panicked and started running back in panic. The enemy soldiers, however, didn’t give them this chance and started shooting their arrows to kill any soldier they can.

They had the high ground, they would be fools if they didn’t use this advantage.

“D-Death Spikes...” A Deputy General’s eyes widened in surprise.

“T-This... how is this possible!?”

The Deathspike Fort belonged to the Woods Dynasty in the first place, there is no way the Deputy Generals won’t know what those spikes were.

The Deathspike Fort was a fort that had spikes surrounding it from all directions, no matter how many soldiers stood on the top of these spikes, once they are activated, they would pierce through their bodies and would kill everyone.

It was a lethal defence system that the Fort was named on.

However, although it was strong, this Defense system wasn't used much, the reason was simple,

It required a large amount of Mana to Activate it, even a King Stage Cultivator won't be able to activate it.

Mana of 30,000 Beginner Stage Cultivators is needed to activate this Trap.

"They shouldn't have enough manpower to activate this fort!" A Deputy General screamed.

Ember frowned.

She did not expect to lose around 2,000 soldiers before the battle even began.

"There are many many soldiers inside that Fort, the number far surpassed the 20,000 soldiers you were talking about.

If you want a rough estimation, there should be around 50,000 soldiers in that fort."

Nux reported.

Ember's eyes widened in surprise.

"How could that be!?"

A deputy general questioned.

"I don't have any reason to lie."

Nux replied with a solemn expression on his face.

The deputy general turned silent.

Ember looked at Nux and nodded,

“We cannot doubt him right now, he saved our soldiers, if he wanted, he could have just stayed silent and we would lose our two Squads before they could even do any damage.

We should believe his words.”

“T-Then w-what are we going to do now?”

One of the deputy generals panicked.

There plans...

Everything was going awry right now.

Ember, however, was different from the Deputy General, she was a lot calmer.

She started assessing the situation calmly.

“With Nux’s help, the Death Spike failed and was unable to do as much damage as it could.

The best way to use Deathspike is to use 20,000 soldiers to activate it, those soldiers have already used half of their Mana, we shouldn’t give them the time to recover,

We will use this chance and attack.”

“But how are we going to break through their walls? With the Deathspike in the equation, there is no way those soldiers would be able to get near the Fort Walls.”

“Order them to attack from where they are standing.” Ember instructed.

“Huh? From that far? The Piercing Flame Squad would have to use twice the amount of Mana to do that.”

“Don’t worry, we already have the advantage in terms of Mana, all we need to do is break the walls, once we succeed in that, they won’t be able to

access the Deathspikes anymore.”

The Deputy Generals’ gazes turned serious.

They then looked at each other and nodded,

“Yes, General!”

They saluted and then rushed toward the soldiers.

The Soldiers were panicking, something like a speech won’t help them, therefore, although it was faster than planned, the Deputy Generals had to move.

“Piercing Flame Squad! Heed my orders!”

A Deputy General, the one who had the Piercing Flame Squad under his command shouted loudly,

“Absolute Earth Squad! Stand Tall, we still have comrades that we need to defend!”

The Deputy General with Absolute Earth Squad under him ordered as well.

The other Deputy General ordered the other squads and the three of them quickly took control of the army.

With their leaders with them, the panicked soldiers calmed down.

“Soldiers! Do not back down right now, we have to avenge our fallen brothers!”

“YEAHHH!!!”

The Soldiers roared.

The Absolute Earth Squad stood in front and took the most damage, however, they still stood strong and created Earth Shields that blocked the Arrows fired by the soldiers.

The Piercing Flame Squad then created fireballs and then aimed them at the Fort Walls.

Yes, it was just a 1-Star Skill, Fireball.

However, with more than 10,000 soldiers using this same Skill at the same time, the power was higher than any 4-star Skill. Not only that, but since it was just a 1-Star Star Skill, the Soldiers were able to shoot Fire Balls continuously.

With an attack stronger than a 4 Star Skill falling on the Walls again and again and again,

The Walls cracked,

“Continue shooting!

Don’t think about conserving Mana!

Break the walls!”

The Squad Leader ordered.

And soon,

**\*BOOOOOM\***

The walls were burst open.

Ember then stepped forward and raised her sword in the air.

“Soldiers!

March Forward and Kill all these bastards!”

“YEAHHHHH!!!”

# Chapter 308

\*BOOOOMMM\*

With that huge explosion, the Fort Walls were burst open.

The Deathspikes or any other Trap that requires Mana to activate is usually connected to the Walls, once the walls are destroyed, all traps are disabled.

This was the reason why the walls are valued so much. They are the first and the strongest layer of defence in any fort.

And now that the Woods Dynasty's Army has broken through the walls,

“Soldiers!

March Forward and Kill all these bastards!”

Ember, the General was ready to destroy her enemies with her dominant force.

“YEAHHHHH!!!”

The rest of the Squads, who were eagerly waiting for the time to shine roared in excitement and rushed forward.

While the other squads rushed towards the Fort, The Piercing Flame Squad and Absolute Earth Squad turned around and rushed back to safety.

They have spent most of their Mana, the Absolute Earth Squad could still hold up, but the Beginner Stage Cultivators in the Piercing Flame Squad were barely holding on right now.

Shooting so many Fire Balls at the same time was...

Tiring.

However, the results were satisfactory.

With smiles on their faces, the two squads moved towards safety.

Nux, who saw everything smiled and turned towards Ember,

“We will move as well.”

Helping and saving so many soldiers’ lives helped him calm his nerves. Now, he was much more confident and was moving naturally.

Ember nodded,

“Alright.”

Nux and Thyra then nodded at each other, and then, covering their head with helmets, the two of them joined any random squad and rushed towards the Fort.

Ember, who was now left alone smiled as she saw Nux’s backing figure.

‘You saved my soldiers’ lives...

I will make sure to repay you...’

Then, she shook her head, stretched her body and soon, a horrifying aura oozed out of her body.

“Soldiers of the Solid Earth Kingdom,

Prepare to die!”

She shouted and then dashed towards the Fort as well.

...

Nux was right, the number of soldiers inside the Deathspike Fort was 53,431, an absurdly huge number.

Placing 50,000 soldiers in a fort... was too much.

Especially considering that everything that is happening right now is just a farce.

Well, nobody cared about this right now,

Those 50,000 soldiers prepared themselves to face that huge army that was rushing toward them.

Then, the 60,000 Soldiers of the Woods Dynasty clashed against 50,000 soldiers of the Solid Earth Kingdom.

“YEAHHH!!!”

“KILL THOSE BASTARDS!!”

The War Started.

The stronger cultivators continued to behead soldiers around them unless they found their match and continued their clash.

The same was the case for the Generals.

Ember massacred the soldiers around her and finally, she met the Enemy General.

A King Stage Cultivator.

The two of them looked at each other and the enemy General smiled.

“Ember Windfall, I have heard about you.”

“That is good, however, I cannot say the same about you.

You see, I usually ignore people weaker than me.”

Ember smirked.

“Hahaha~ You are just like how the rumours say.”

The Enemy General laughed.

Ember, however, wasn't in the mood to waste this time.

She knew that the Enemy General was here to sacrifice his soldiers, therefore, he didn't care how many of them died, however, she was different, she wanted to have as fewer casualties as possible.

Therefore, she wanted to end it quickly.

Without saying anything, she pointed her sword at the enemy general and rushed toward him.

The enemy general smiled,

“Alright, let's see if you are as strong as the rumours say, the Fiery Killer, Ember.”

\*Clank\*

Their swords clashed.

Just like that, the 3 Deputy Generals fought against enemy Deputy Generals.

The Squad Leaders fought against Squad Leaders.

Unit Leaders with Unit Leaders,

Head Soldiers with Head Soldiers.

And the Soldiers with Soldiers.

However, some had already found faults in this pattern.

The Solid Earth Kingdom loses in terms of the numbers of soldiers.

Therefore, the stronger men, the Squad and Unit Leaders tried to kill as many enemy soldiers as they could before meeting their match.

This was a very common tactic.

And a man named, Jason Demin, a Squad Leader and a Grand Master Stage Cultivator wasn't looking for his match, rather, he avoided long fights and aimed for Beginner and Advance Stage Cultivators.

Therefore, he normally targets groups of soldiers because only Beginner and Advance Stage Cultivators fight in groups.

Since he targeted the weak, his kill count in this war was already above 100.

This was the way he fights a war and usually kills more than 1000 soldiers on his own.

And just like any other war, he was doing the same this time as well.

After killing 11 soldiers, he targeted another team and rushed toward them,

However, just as he was about to behead a soldier, the man turned around and blocked his attack.

\*Clank\*

Jason's eyes widened in surprise.

A Beginner or Advance Stage Cultivator shouldn't have this sort of reaction speed,

Something was wrong.

Jason had sensed it.

He then focused and observed the cultivation of the soldier he was attacking, and as soon as he did it,

The hairs on his body stood up from fear.

‘E-Expert... W-What the hell is a-an E-Expert Stage Cultivator doing here...?’

Jason questioned inwardly and this was the last question in his mind as soon, his whole world turned upside down.

He was beheaded.

He didn’t even have the time to react against the man in front of him.

“It was easier than I expected,” Nux muttered with a nonchalant look on his face.

“Don’t be too carefree, it is a war, anyone can attack you from anywhere.”

Thyra, who was just behind him muttered in a serious tone.

Someone like her could easily create chaos around the battlefield with her skills, however, she decided to stay with Nux.

She had to protect him if by chance someone took Nux by surprise.

Suddenly, Nux and Thyra both turned in a certain direction,

Then, they disappeared and appeared behind an enemy Unit Leader who was trying to hide and was trying to search for a chance to attack them.

Without giving him any Chance, Nux beheaded the man and turned toward Thyra.

“Sure Sure, I will be careful~

Don’t worry.”

# Chapter 309

“Sure Sure, I will be careful~

Don’t worry.”

Nux muttered with a small smile on his face.

Thyra looked at his face and couldn’t help but shake her head.

“You don’t look very ‘careful’ to me.”

“Hahaha~ Don’t worry~ Don’t Worry~

I will be fine~

Also, don’t I have you right beside me?

What could possibly go wrong?”

Nux muttered with a bright smile on his face.

Thyra looked at him and shook her head.

He was not being serious at all.

Thyra’s thoughts were contradicting.

She liked the fact that killing humans didn’t affect Nux as much as it used to. Of course, it didn’t mean he was completely unbothered by it.

She could sense that he was trying to hide it from her and was trying to act unbothered, however, even after that, Thyra knew that his condition was a lot lot better than before.

She was happy about it,

However, at the same time, she didn't like that Nux was taking this too lightly.

They were in the middle of a War.

Any single mistake could get them killed.

Getting careless here was a grave mistake.

However, Thyra could understand Nux's thoughts as well,

Right now, Nux is a lot stronger than the two Generals, who are fighting each other fiercely and were the main deciding factor of this War.

If Nux wanted, he could easily slay both of them at the same time without breaking a sweat.

He was just that strong.

He alone had the power to change the course of this war.

Not only that but the statement, 'You must always be careful when you fight in a war' wasn't something Nux had to follow.

He had his absurd abilities.

His [Sense] would tell him every time someone aims at him.

His [Conceal] would allow him to disappear from everybody's sight.

His Physique would allow him to release Devouring Mist and Kill every single being who is Grand Master Stage Cultivator or lesser.

His [Harem Gate] would allow him to teleport and leave this area whenever he wants.

With these absurd abilities, Nux was practically invincible.

Getting Carefree was only a natural reaction.

Also, Nux was right, she was here with him.

If everything comes down to it, she could always protect him.

Heck, if it is required, she would even use her life to save Nux's.

Nux's safety was practically guaranteed here.

Suddenly, Nux's expression changed, Thyra understood what happened,

She activated [Sense] and scanned the entire battlefield. Soon, she noticed something strange and then, her eyes turned cold.

The man she was looking at was a Grand Master Stage Cultivator and was hiding behind a few Beginner Stage Soldiers, with how his feet were pointing at Nux, how his left hand was close to the place where he had kept a dagger, how he was looking at Nux every other few seconds, and how he was moving towards him slowly and steadily, his intentions were clear.

He was trying to take Nux by surprise and then pierce his dagger into Nux's heart.

However,

Before he could even achieve his goal,

A dagger pierced his heart.

It was Nux's dagger.

The Enemy Squad Leader died without even knowing what had happened.

Nux stood in front of his corpse.

Thyra smiled and walked toward him as well.

“You did well.”

She muttered.

“Thyra... I was thinking...” Suddenly, Nux muttered.

“What?” Thyra questioned.

“Isn’t finding and killing enemies a lot better than letting the opponents come towards us ‘weaker’ soldiers and then kill them?”

Nux questioned.

“...”

Thyra looked at Nux and turned silent.

Then after thinking for a while, she nodded to herself.

“Just don’t overdo it.

You can’t have too high of a Kill Count, remember, you are just a ‘normal’ Expert Stage Cultivator.

Okay?”

Nux smiled and nodded his head.

“I know that of course.

Don’t worry,

I am not an Idiot.”

Nux smiled brightly.

Thyra, for some reason, didn’t like that smile on his face, however, in the end, she didn’t say anything and turned silent.

From then on,

Nux’s domination and enemy Master and Grand Master Stage Cultivators’ hunt started.

...

“Hahaha~ You are stronger than I thought, Fiery Killer!

A Prodigy who has High-Level Affinity with both Fire and Wind, fighting you was indeed eye-opening!

Hahaha~

I had a lot of fun.”

The Enemy General laughed loudly.

His clothes were a mess right now, there were many cuts all over his body and a serious wound on his lower abdomen, however, the man was still laughing loudly.

Ember, on the other hand, didn't look much different from before except for the sweat on her forehead.

From her breathing, it was clear that she wasn't much tired either.

However, there was still a solemn expression on her face.

Even though she was clearly winning, she could feel that something wasn't right.

The Enemy General...

He was too carefree...

This was something that didn't sit well with Ember.

Suddenly, a sad look appeared on the Enemy General's face when he looked at his abdomen.

“Haahh... I wanted to fight you more, however, it feels like this is the farthest I can go... If I continue, I might not make out of this battle...”

Ember frowned.

“You are giving up?”

“Mhm, I am.

However, prepare yourself, Ember Windfall, we will fight again, and next time, I will defeat you.”

The General muttered and then, he stepped back.

Ember didn't follow him either.

Actually, the reality was that she couldn't follow him.

From the start, a King Level Cultivator wasn't supposed to die in this battle.

You either win this battle or you run away, these were the only two options.

Of course, she could also try to follow him, however, she couldn't leave her army here.

Also, she can't go too deep into enemy territory, that was simply foolish.

Therefore, she could only stay there and announce,

“The Enemy General has fled,

This battle,

We have won!”

“YEAAAHHHHH!!”

Hearing her words, the two armies reacted differently.

The Solid Earth Kingdom soldiers started running away in panic and fear,

The Woods Dynasty Soldiers started slaughtering the soldiers running away and howling in excitement.

The Woods Dynasty's Soldiers then occupied the Deathspike Fort, others started setting up tents for their superiors, the injured were treated and the ones who were tired just lay down on the ground.

The War had ended.

And the Winner was the Woods Dynasty.

Or that's what everyone thought.

# Chapter 310

“Heh, the Fort is finally ours now.”

A Deputy General muttered with a smile on his face.

His hairs were a little messed up and he was drenched in sweat, however, other than that, he looked perfectly fine.

He had minor injuries on his body before, however, the Healing Potions showed their magic and all those minor wounds had already disappeared.

“Indeed, actually, the battle was easier than I thought it would be. Aside from that initial Deathspike Trap, the entire battle was pretty smooth.”

Another Deputy General muttered.

“Indeed, there are a lot fewer casualties than I thought.”

The last Deputy General nodded.

“Hahaha~ Those soldiers would drink a lot today, they might even lose self-control.”

“Hahaha~ Don’t worry, they worked hard.

They are allowed to relax a little.”

“Indeed indeed, they deserve it.”

“Hey Hey, don’t talk like that, don’t we deserve a reward as well?”

“Huh? Is that even a question? Of course, we will reward ourselves.

Hehe~ I have even prepared a vintage just for this moment.”

“Hehe~ As I expected, Morrison, you are indeed an intelligent person.”

“Kekeke~”

The three Deputy Generals laughed.

It was very clear that they were in good mood.

Then, the Deputy General named Morrison turned towards Ember,

“General, you are going to join us for a drink, right?”

Ember looked at the Deputy General and then,

A small smile appeared on her face,

“Have I ever denied a good drink before?”

Wide smiles appeared on the Three Deputy Generals’ faces.

“Hahaha~

Tonight is going to be a great night!”

They laughed.

“Of course, since I am here, how can a night not be good?” Suddenly, the four of them heard a voice and soon, two people wearing skin-tight black coloured clothes entered the tent.

As her eyes fell on the two people who had just entered the tent, a small smile appeared on Ember’s face.

“You finally arrived.

What were you two doing?

We were waiting for you.”

Nux smiled then, he turned towards Thyra and his smile widened,

“We were doing something very important.”

A small blush appeared on Thyra’s face.

“Huh? What were you two doing that was so important that you two had to do it just after winning a war?”

A Deputy General couldn’t help but question.

“Ahh, just think of it as a sort of celebration.

It was our own way of celebrating good things.”

Nux smiled.

And this time, the General and the Deputy Generals caught on.

The four of them looked at Nux and Thyra with strange looks on their faces.

Just...

Just how...

How can someone be in the mood to do something like that after fighting a war?

And as if knowing what all of them were thinking,

Nux shook his head.

“Don’t think too much about it, virgins like you won’t understand.”

Ember felt her face twitching when she heard those words.

The Deputy Generals, however, couldn’t control themselves and lashed out.

“Haah!? Fuck you! I am not a Virgin!”

“Indeed, mind you, let alone a Virgin, I am very experienced!

You are nothing but a child in front of me.”

“Indeed Indeed, there is no way we would be virgins.”

“I completely agree.

How is that even possible?”

The Three Deputy Generals nodded continuously.

And Nux, who was looking at them smiled.

Inwardly, he thanked these Three Deputy Generals and then looked at Ember who was unusually silent.

Nux’s words weren’t meant for all four of them in the first place.

They were meant for Ember, the General.

He had managed to get close to her in all these days and from their conversations, he could easily deduce that she was a virgin.

Therefore, his question only targeted the General.

As for the others,

Meh, when has Nux ever cared about guys?

He was just enjoying Ember’s reaction.

However, Ember didn’t allow him that luxury.

“Heh, it was your first war, wasn’t it?” She questioned as she turned towards Thyra.

“It was,” Thyra answered.

“So? How was it? Where are the heads that you promised to bring?”

Ember questioned with a slight smile on her face.

“Don’t tell me you weren’t able to do what you said?

An Expert Stage Cultivator like you can’t be that weak, can you?”

Thyra’s face twitched.

This woman was shameless.

Wasn’t she the one who said she didn’t want it?

Why was she asking for it now?

However, soon, a small smile appeared on Thyra’s face.

She had prepared for something like this before. Then, Thyra threw a Ring toward Ember.

“20 plus Squad Leaders, 400 Unit Leaders, all their heads are inside it, check it whenever you want.”

Thyra smiled triumphantly.

And Nux...

He just noticed how quickly and effortlessly Ember changed the topic.

Nux then turned towards Ember, wanting to see that winning smile on her face, however, what he saw was an expression of pure shock.

“Y-You two killed so m-many?” Ember questioned in shock.

Thyra smiled,

“Well, it was our first war, so we weren’t able to do very well, I hope you can forgive us.”

“...” Ember turned silent.

This time, she had to answer.

20 Squad leaders...

This was simply absurd...

There were only 50-60 Squad Leaders in the enemy team to being with, and these two killed more than a third of that with just them alone.

Not only that, they had even killed 300 Unit Leaders as well...

This...

Just how did they do it?

Just how much were they running around in order to find their targets?

And how did they even have the energy to do... that after fighting for so long!?

“T-That must be the reason why there were so less casualties among our soldiers...” A deputy general muttered.

“...”

The tent turned silent again.

First, they saved 1000s of soldiers and now this...

J-Just who are these two!?

“Yo-”

Ember wanted to say something, however,

“General! General!

This is bad!”

A soldier rushed into the tent with a panicked look on his face.

“What is it?” A Deputy General frowned.

“General! You need to return!”

# Chapter 311

When Nux entered Woods Dynasty's Army Camp, there were around 1,20,000 soldiers in the Camp.

Of course, the General did not take all the Soldiers with her for this attack.

Half of the Soldiers were left behind.

However, since they were only going to protect the base, not many higher-ranking officers were left behind.

There were no Deputy Generals, only 30 Squad Leaders, 500 Unit Leaders and the rest were Head Soldiers and Normal Soldiers.

All these soldiers had to do was to stay in the camp,

It was an easy thing to do.

Actually, it was more like a break for these soldiers,

However,

Something happened.

An hour after the Main Army left, 10 Expert Stage Cultivators appeared in this area and together, they assassinated all 30 Squad Leaders and then killed around 100 Unit Leaders while escaping.

This was disastrous.

The whole army panicked.

“How did this happen?”

Ember, who was looking at her subordinates' dead bodies questioned in a solemn tone.

“ ... ”

No one replied.

“Where did those 20 Expert Stage Cultivators come from?”

Ember questioned again.

The Three Deputy Generals started thinking.

A Kingdom's army only has 6-10 Expert Stage Cultivators, however, this does not mean that there are only 6-10 Expert Stage Cultivators in that Kingdom.

There are other Expert Stage Cultivators as well,

“The Nobles...”

Deputy General Lawrence muttered.

The answer was obvious, however,

“I don't understand...”

Why are the nobles moving?

Wasn't this War a farce?

And even if the Solid Earth Kingdom doesn't treat this as a Farce, the nobles moving makes no sense at all.”

When the Two counties are at War, the only time Nobles make a move is when they see the chance to earn some profit.

If they don't see this chance, they would not move at all.

The King cannot force them either, else, the King will be known as a Tyrant and planning a coup would be a lot easier.

In a War, nobles were the least helpful bunch,

It has always been that way.

However, this time, the Nobles of Solid Earth Kingdom were moving...

Ember and her three Deputy Generals could not understand the reason behind it.

“What about our spies? If the nobles were moving, then something must have happened inside the Solid Earth Kingdom, why weren’t we informed about it?”

Ember questioned.

“It might be possible that they only discussed this with the Dukes, not the rest of the nobles. If a big announcement wasn’t made, then the Spies won’t be able to report anything.” Another Deputy General presumed.

“Umm... how are we so sure that these Expert Stage assassins are nobles?”

What if it was something else?

A Hidden Team that belongs to the King alone or something like that...” Suddenly, Nux questioned.

Ember turned towards him and shook her head,

“It isn’t as easy as it sounds.

Grooming an Expert Stage Cultivator is a difficult time that needs a lot of time.

Of course, there are always chances that what you said was true, however, the chances of these assassins being nobles are higher.

In the end, all we are doing is presuming things.

We do not have accurate information.

However, one thing is clear.

The Solid Earth Kingdom's movements are strange.

First, they had an unusually high number of Soldiers inside the Deathspike Fort.

Second, their 20 Expert Stage Cultivators assassinated the leaders of our army that weren't even the part of War.

Something is going on inside the Solid Earth Kingdom...

I would need to report it.”

Ember muttered with a solemn expression on her face.

However, again, Nux couldn't understand,

“How are these actions strange?

They wanted to defend Deathspike Fort and make it there's, that is the reason why they fought so hard.

Then they used their assassins to Kill our Leaders to weaken our army.

All these actions were done in order to weaken our army.

Isn't that completely normal?”

Nux questioned.

However, Ember shook her head again.

“What you said would have been true if the Woods Dynasty and the Solid Earth Kingdom were at war with each other.”

“Huh?”

Nux frowned.

Ember understood his confusion and continued,

“As I said before, all of this was a Farce.”

“I thought it was pretty clear from when we saw that there were 50,000 soldiers defending that fort.

This is not a Farce.

It is an actual War.”

This time, Nux didn't back down.

“I agree with your words, Solid Earth Kingdom's actions are too much.

That is the reason why I said it was Strange.

You see, there is no enmity between the Woods Dynasty and the Solid Earth Kingdom, therefore, they have no reason to start this war.”

“Huh? What's the problem? In the end, the reason is only an excuse.

Even I can form a believable reason and start the War.

‘The Woods Dynasty attacked us when we were down, now, they have to pay for their actions.’

A simple but effective reason.

Thyra was impressed.

However, Ember wasn't.

“What you are talking about is ‘Forging a reason to influence the mass’, however, a War between two Kingdoms won't start with something foolish

like this.

Nux, when Two Kingdoms fight, the one that benefits isn't one of those 2 Kingdoms, but the other Kingdoms.

Victory or Defeat doesn't matter, when you participate in War, you are weakened, at the same time, the other Kingdoms just enjoy the show and strengthen themselves.

This is extremely disadvantageous for a Kingdom,

And if we talk about the situation of our continent, where the four strongest Kingdoms rule, 2 Kingdom fighting is other is the worse decision those two Kingdoms could make.

Therefore, unless there is absolute enmity between the Two Kingdoms, they would never go to war with each other no matter what.”

Nux finally understood.

“However, the Solid Earth Kingdom's actions seem like they are pushing for War, which is completely unnecessary in this situation. This is why you think that their actions are strange, am I right?” Nux questioned.

“Indeed.”

Ember nodded and Nux's expression changed.

# Chapter 312

Nobody other than Thyra noticed.

There was a small smile on Nux's face, it was only for a second, it would even be misunderstood with a slight twitch, however, Thyra, who was the most familiar with Nux could understand him very well.

Nux was excited.

Thyra frowned.

She couldn't understand why he had that face.

Why was he excited?

However, even though she was confused, Thyra didn't say anything.

And only after the meeting ended and Thyra and Nux returned inside their tent did she question,

“Why were you so excited?”

Nux looked at Thyra and smiled,

“Tsk Tsk, just how closely were you looking at my face for you to notice that?” He whispered seductively.

“Very closely.” Thyra brought her face close to Nux's and answered shamelessly.

“Tsk Tsk, what a pervert.”

“What can I do? It's the aftereffect of living with a certain someone.

That certain someone is so perverted that even I, a completely innocent woman was affected by him.”

Thyra replied and a smile appeared on Nux’s face.

Then, he sealed Thyra’s lips and after sharing a small kiss, he replied,

“Don’t blame that certain someone for your perverseness. He is not to blame, I believe that he is an innocent person.”

“Oh real-” Thyra wanted to reply, however, she soon realized something.

“Oi Oi, why did you change the topic, answer my question.

Why are you so excited?

Is there something I missed?”

Nux shook his head and answered,

“This war would continue.”

“Huh? That’s the reason why you are excited?” Thyra frowned.

“Indeed.” Nux nodded with a smile on his face.

And at the same time, he looked at the screen in front of him.

[Quest System]

[Current Quests]

[Kill a Beginner Stage Cultivator.]

[Reward: 1 System Point]

[Accept: Y/N]

[Kill an Advance Stage Cultivator.]

[Reward: 2 System Point]

[Accept: Y/N]

[Kill a Master Stage Cultivator.]

[Reward: 5 System Point]

[Accept: Y/N]

[Kill a Grand Master Stage Cultivator.]

[Reward: 10 System Point]

[Accept: Y/N]

[Kill an Expert Stage Cultivator.]

[Reward: 20 System Point]

[Accept: Y/N]

[Kill a King Stage Cultivator.]

[Reward: 50 System Point]

[Accept: Y/N]

Yes, just as he dashed towards the enemy Army, his Quest System updated.

And if that wasn't enough then,

[Party System]

Yes, his Party System was activated as well.

He...

Had formed a party with 60,000 soldiers!

Fighting against 50,000 System points packet, with 60,000 Points Sla-  
allies,

What was the result?

He was rich!

He was fucking rich!

When the war started, he had some little reservations about Killing humans,  
however, these last few days have been an eye opener for him.

He had learned,

In this world, human lives did not matter.

Anyone can Kill anyone and no one would blame him.

That is how this world works.

Of course, from all the novels he had read in his past life, Nux knew about  
it beforehand, however, knowing and accepting it in your mind are two  
different things.

Now, Nux had accepted it.

And he had realized his mistake.

He was taking things too leniently.

He needs to think more before taking any action. He needed to be more  
patient.

It wasn't like he had to figure everything out on his own, he, who was from  
another world, had a big advantage.

His women.

His women were all amazing people, he should rely on them and discuss things thoroughly before planning everything.

Ahem Ahem,

Back to the topic,

Nux's inner heart hasn't changed.

Killing humans still affected him, however, his mind had strengthened.

His mind had realized that it was all for the greater good.

And now that he gets System Points for Killing humans, his resolve got even stronger.

His calculations were simple, the more System Points he has, the higher number of abilities can he buy, and the higher number of abilities he has, the stronger he becomes.

Him becoming strong is something that increases the chances of him and his women surviving in this cruel world.

Therefore, Nux killed.

Not only that, he even wished that the war would continue so he could earn more and more points.

And things were going the way he wanted, he was obviously happy and was looking forward to the next war.

“Oh? Was your first experience on the battlefield too exciting for you?”

I didn't know you loved War so much.”

Thyra muttered and then, a dramatic expression appeared on her face,

“Wait... don't tell me...”

Is it because I am here with you?

Aha! Now I understand, here, you don't have to deal with those other annoying women, here, you can peacefully spend time with your favourite woman without any problems.

Hmm hmm, I can completely understand that.

Those women can get annoying indeed.

Don't worry, I won't tell them."

Thyra nodded to herself as she muttered.

Seeing her acting like that, Nux chuckled.

Then, he grabbed Thyra's butt, then he stepped forward, soon, his leg 'slipped' and the two of them fell to the ground.

"Let's finish what we started before, shall we?"

Thyra smiled back.

"Why not?"

...

On the other side, after everyone left her tent, a solemn look appeared on Ember's face and she ordered.

"Call Luke."

The soldier standing outside her tent heard her order and saluted,

"As you command, General."

A few minutes later, a man with a thin frame entered Ember's tent.

There was nothing special about him, black hair, black eyes, average looks, not only that, his strength wasn't anything much either.

He was just an Advance Stage Cultivator.

Now the question was, how did Ember know about a mere Advance Stage Head Soldier?

The reason behind this was because this man was Ember's most Loyal subordinate.

Someone so loyal that even though he had the talent to become a Grand Master Stage Cultivator, he decided to give up on his own life and not cultivate in order to become a Spy who can help Ember.

"Luke, I need you to do something for me."

"I will do it."

Without even hearing what she wanted, Luke nodded.

Ember, who was used to his attitude just smiled a little and then continued,

"I want you to visit the Solid Earth Kingdom and look at the situation yourself, I don't trust other spies.

How many subordinates you take with you depends on you.

I just want results within 3 weeks.

Can you do it?"

# Chapter 313

It was 9 in the morning and Ember was roaming around the Army Camp, checking if she could find a variable. She has already sent a few Spies inside the Solid Earth Kingdom, now, all she had to do was wait and she would get the gist of the situation there.

Not only that, but she has also reported the incident of Squad Leaders being assassinated to the Dynast, or in other words, the King, however, she has yet to receive any response from that.

Lack of information.

This was a severe issue.

Her limbs were tied because of this.

If things stay the same, she wouldn't be able to plan her next move.

All she could do was act like a turtle, roam around her camp and keep the place safe from any possible future attacks.

Yes, even though they have won this war, the atmosphere of the Woods Dynasty's army camp was stale and silent.

Soldiers were on high alert.

Even drinking wasn't allowed.

“Oh? So you finally returned? Took you long enough.”

While Ember was walking around the camp, she heard a voice.

“Well, they kept me there for far too long.”

Ember frowned. Then, she turned around and noticed that this tent belonged to Thyra.

“Tsk Tsk, they must be very desperate.”

Ember heard Thyra’s voice. Not only that, but she had even recognized the second person’s voice as well, it was Nux.

And from how they were talking, it looked like Nux has returned from somewhere, but the problem is...

That she didn’t see Nux leaving the Army Camp.

Did he sneak out?

Where did he go?

‘Wait...’

Suddenly, Ember thought of a possibility.

From the start, Nux and Thyra were too good.

First, they saved 2 of her strongest squads from getting annihilated by revealing the Deathspike Trap, then he revealed the number of Soldiers inside the Deathspike Fort correctly when even her, the General of the army had no clue about it. Then, that unnaturally high number of Kills.

Everything about Nux and Thyra was too good to be true.

So good that Ember was...

A little suspicious.

Were these two hiding something?

Are these two their allies or enemies?

‘What are they talking about?’ Ember wondered inwardly as she hid and continued to listen to their conversation.

“Haah! They must have sucked you dry huh? Those desperate bastards.”

Thyra muttered and Ember’s frown deepened.

‘Sucked him dry? Is this some sort of code word?’

Are they talking about information?

The enemies sucked all the information out of Nux’s mouth?

Is that what Thyra is talking about right now?’

Ember wondered inwardly.

“Of course not!”

Nux, however, shook his head and then continued,

“Trust me, I still have a lot of energy left.”

‘Energy... does this mean that he still hasn’t fully revealed everything yet?’

Ember had her own opinions and the more she heard their conversation, the surer she felt.

She might be right.

Nux and Thyra might be spies sent by the Solid Earth Kingdom.

“Wait...”

Suddenly, Thyra muttered, then, she looked at Nux’s hairs and his face and her eyes turned cold.

“So you took the bath already?” She questioned.

“Yeah, I did.”

Nux nodded.

“Who was it? Wait, don’t tell me, I can already guess it.

It must have been that princess. I am sure of it.”

‘Princess? He directly shares our secret with the Princess of the Solid Earth Kingdom!?’

Also, what the hell does ‘taking bath’ means?

Is it another code word?

Does this mean exchanging information?

What is he getting in return then? Money? Power? Or is it something else?’

“Indeed, it was her.” Nux nodded.

“Hmph, as I expected.

That girl is a little too attached to you. Hmph Hmph!”

Thyra snorted.

‘Wait... a little too attached to him... does this mean that Nux is the closest spy who works for the Princess of the Solid Earth Kingdom?’

If that is the case, then I can get a lot of information about the Solid Earth Kingdom if I capture him.’

Ember thought inwardly and a determined look appeared in her eyes.

“Oh C’mon, though I have already taken a bath, it doesn’t mean I can’t take another.

If you are jealous, you can tell me, you know?”

Nux chuckled.

“I am not jealous.” Thyra denied it with a firm face.

“And as for bathing with you,  
I will take you up on that offer.”

“Hehehe~

Tsundere Thyra. So cute.” Nux chuckled and Thyra blushed.

Ember, on the other hand, furrowed her brows and groaned inwardly.

‘Ugghh... this code language is too complicated, I am unable to decipher it...

If ‘taking bath’ is exchanging information, then why are the two of them doing it? Aren’t they working together? Why would they exchange information with each other?

And what is Tsundere?

Ugghh... this is so confusing...’

Ember was fiery and bold, thinking too much wasn’t her style, therefore, since she couldn’t understand anything after thinking about this for so long, she decided to do it in her own way.

She decided to capture Nux and Thyra and force them to spill everything.

Of course, there is a chance that the two of them were innocent, however, at a time like this when she knows practically nothing about the enemies,

Doubting every single thing is a way to go.

In the end, if she was wrong, she would bow her head and apologize.

Ember made up her mind, then, her red eyes shined and she entered Thyra's tent with her sword in her hand.

“Don't move!”

She roared.

Nux and Thyra's eyes widened in surprise when they saw her entering like that.

“What is the meaning of this!?” Thyra questioned in anger. She couldn't believe that this woman barged into her room like that!

And she did it just as she was about to have a good time!

How shameless!

“...”

However, instead of a reply, all she got to see was Ember's face who was looking at Nux with absolute shock on her face.

“Y-You... you are a child!?”

# Chapter 314

“Y-You... you are a child!?”

Ember shouted in shock.

This face... she was sure that it was no older than 25!

And this man is an Expert Stage Cultivator!

What the hell is happening!?

“No, I am not a child, I am an adult.

I apologize if you misunderstood.”

Nux denied.

“Who do you think you are fooling!? Cultivation might extend your lifespan however, you still get older.

A 60-year-old Cultivator may look like he is in his late 20s, however, this...

You don't even look like you are 20!

Do you think I am a fool!?”

“No, that is no-”

“No! no, you can't fool me!

Alright, let's do it.

Let me see your bone age!

This way, I will be able to confirm it.”

“ ... ”

Nux turned silent.

Bone Age, in this world where Cultivators roam around freely and a 100-year-old man, might look like a handsome man in his early 30s, the concept of Bone Age was very popular.

No matter how much one cultivates, bone age was something unchangeable.

The Bone Age is a sure-shot way of knowing the age of a person.

Therefore, when she noticed that Nux was still trying to hide it, Ember suggested checking Nux's bone age.

However,

“As I was saying, I am an Adult.

A soon-to-be 19-year-old Adult.”

Nux wasn't planning to hide it from the start.

“ ... ”

This time, Ember was the one who turned silent.

She couldn't believe the bullshit she was hearing.

A 19-year-old Expert Stage Cultivator...

What sort of absurd talent is that!?

Even a person who has Exceptional level talent doesn't have this sort of absurd growth!

And mind you, Exceptional Level Talent can grow into Emperor Stage Cultivator!

If this boy has a talent higher than that...

Then...

Then... just what realm could he reach?

Just who was this monster!?

Ember wondered inwardly.

“You see that?

This is the reason why we don't reveal our faces.”

Ember finally came out of her reverie when she heard Thyra's voice. She then turned towards her and Thyra continued.

“A 19-year-old Expert Stage Cultivator, absurd right?

Anyone would react like how you are reacting.

However, that's not it.

The more people learn about him, the more dangerous it will get. You are experienced, you would know how others would react, right?”

Thyra questioned and Ember turned silent.

How could she not understand?

She has lived in this world for 100 years after all.

A small smile appeared on Nux's face as he stepped forward and walked toward Ember.

“Ember Windfall, I request you to hide this fact from others. Let this be our personnel little secret, how about it?” Nux whispered sweetly.

“Take it as you returning the favour of the time when we saved your soldiers from that Deathspike trap.”

Thyra muttered.

“Naah, she doesn’t need to see it as returning a favour, right, Miss Ember?” Nux interrupted. Then, he brought his face dangerously close to Ember and smiled,

“You can keep this a secret just because of how close we two are, right?”

Ember looked at Nux’s face and frowned.

This man...

He was a prodigy, she understands that.

But...

But why is he so handsome!?

Just why is god so generous to him!?

However, instead of getting flustered like a girl in her teens, the general smiled.

This was an opportunity, an opportunity to tease Thyra.

Ember then moved her face, placed her hand on the back of Nux’s neck and their forehead touched each other. The two of them could feel each other’s breaths touching each other, then, a small, seductive smile appeared on Ember’s face and she looked at Thyra.

“Indeed, why are you making it sound like a deal, Thyra? I and Nux are close, we don’t need deals. Our hearts are connected to each other. We understand each other. Therefore, I would keep this a secret without treating this as a favour.”

“Tch.”

Thyra snorted and turned her face away.

Seeing her reaction, Ember smiled in satisfaction, then, she turned towards Nux and saw his golden eyes looking at her and shining brightly.

For some reason, Ember's heart skipped a beat and she quickly stepped back.

Seeing that scene, Thyra smiled inwardly.

'You are playing with fire, General Ember Windfall.

A fire that will engulf you no matter how hard you resist.

Of course, you won't realize it until you are completely engulfed in those flames.'

"Oh right, General Ember, why did you rush into our tent with the sword in your hands?" Suddenly, Nux questioned.

"O-Oh, this?" Ember finally realized and then, she shook her head.

"This is nothing."

Her doubts were cleared.

Nux was a monster, if the Solid Earth Kingdom knew his existence, then he would have either died or would have become their most treasured treasure.

There is no way they would send him as a Spy.

However, now that she thinks about it, more and more questions appeared in her mind, but before she could ask anything, Nux questioned.

"Oh c'mon, you won't just barge into our tent with your sword in your hand without any reason, right?"

You can tell me, didn't you say it just now?

We two are very close to each other.

Share it with me.”

“I... I heard your conversation about you returning from somewhere, them sucking you dry, bathing together and thought you were a spy...”

Ember thought about it and then decided to answer.

“ ...”

“ ...”

Nux and Thyra were surprised.

Everything was okay... but...

How the hell is their conversation and them being spies related!?

“Wait...” Suddenly, Thyra frowned.

Then, she turned toward Ember and narrowed her eyes.

“So you heard everything from the start to finish?”

A teasing smile appeared on Ember’s face,

“Yes, I heard about you and him bathing together~

Fufufu~ I want to join in as well~”

Thyra, however, wasn’t in the mood to laugh or act ‘ashamed’.

“So am I correct to assume that you were hiding?”

“W-Well... I apologise for peeping into your conversation like this...”

A solemn look appeared on Thyra’s face.

Seeing that, Ember frowned.

Why was Thyra acting like that? Was she offended because she heard their conversation?

Well, she was in the wrong, so, she was prepared to apologise.

However, Thyra had a different thing in her mind.

She turned towards Nux and used the telepathic link.

‘Your [Sense] didn’t work.’

Nux’s eyes widened in surprise.

# Chapter 315

‘Your [Sense] didn’t work.’

Nux’s eyes widened in surprise when he realized that.

Instinctively, he used his [Sense] again, and just like any other time, it was working perfectly fine.

He could see Thyra, Ember, inside the tent, outside the tent, he could see everything clearly.

Nux frowned.

‘It’s working... then why didn’t it work before...?’

Nux thought inwardly.

He then looked at Ember’s status again.

[Name: Ember Windstar.]

[Age: 152]

[Mana Cultivation: King.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human]

[Occupation: General of the Woods Dynasty.]

[Talent: High]

[LVL: 61]

[HP: 740/740]

[MP: 1450/1450]

[STR: 72]

[AGL: 78]

[VIT: 74]

[STM: 73]

[INT: 145]

[DEF: 75]

...

While he was at it, he looked at [Sense]'s description again.

[Sense]

[5 Star Ability]

[Description: When activated, the user will be able to sense everything around him. The range will depend on the user's MP (1 MP = 1 meter).]

[Note: The ability will be activated automatically if someone is deliberately hiding his/her presence and is in the detection range of the ability.]

[Note: The ability will fail to detect the presence of a cultivator whose MP is 2 times more than the Host's]

'Cultivator whose MP is 2 times higher than the Host's...

Let alone being 2 times higher than mine, Ember's MP is less than mine. Then why is [Sense] not working?'

Nux was confused.

“What happened? Why do you two look so strange? Do you really want me to apologize right now? If that’s the case, I can do i-”

Ember, who was just about to bow her head in order to apologize was stopped by Nux.

“No, General Ember, we aren’t worried about that.”

“Then what’s the problem?” Ember questioned.

“...”

Nux turned silent.

Then, he turned toward Thyra and used their connection.

‘We need to test it out.’

‘I agree.’

Thyra agreed.

Nux’s abilities not working, this would be a big blow to him.

They had to test this out and make sure what happened.

Nux then turned towards Ember and muttered,

“General Ember, I need your help.”

“What do you want? You can tell me anything.”

Seeing the solemn look on Nux’s face, Ember’s face turned solemn as well and she muttered.

“Can you go out with Thyra and do what she said? I promise it isn’t something complicated.”

“Huh?” Ember was taken aback by this strange request.

However, in the end, she didn't think too much and nodded.

“Alright.”

Nux then turned towards Thyra and nodded.

Thyra nodded back, then, she walked towards Ember and the two of them left the tent.

‘Can you still see us?’ After leaving the tent, Thyra questioned.

‘Yes, I can.’

Nux nodded.

‘Now I will deactivate my [Sense], try hiding.’

Nux muttered.

‘Alright.’

Thyra then walked towards the Tent and hid.

And as soon as she did, Nux's [Sense] activated automatically.

‘It is working...’ Nux muttered.

Thyra frowned.

‘Tell Ember to do the same.’

Nux muttered.

Thyra nodded and then walked towards Ember who was looking at her with a strange look on her face.

“General, can you please go and hide there as I did?”

“Hide?” Ember frowned.

“Yes, hide, just like how you hid when you were peeing at our conversation.”

Thyra muttered.

“Is this some sort of strange way of punishing me?” Ember questioned.

“No, it is not like that, trust me, it is important for us.

You promised, now you can’t go back on your words.”

Ember looked at Thyra and then sighed,

“Whatever...”

Then, Ember walked toward the Tent and hid herself.

‘She hid herself. Was your [Sense] activated?’

Thyra questioned.

‘No...’

Nux replied.

‘Try using [Sense] on your own and see if you can see her.’

Thyra suggested.

Nux did as she told, [Sense] was activated, however, Ember was nowhere to be seen.

The [Sense] was unable to capture her...

Nux told this to Thyra and her frown deepened.

‘Tell her to move around.’

Nux muttered.

“General Ember, this should be enough, please come here.”

Ember muttered and then walked towards Thyra.

Nux activated his [Sense] again and this time, he could see Ember with his [Sense].

‘How does this work?’

Nux muttered.

‘I have asked others, they are thinking about it, I think they would come up with their theories soon.’ Thyra muttered.

‘Mhm, you did a good job.

You can bring her in.’

Thyra nodded and she and Ember entered the tent.

“I don’t understand what you two are trying to do.”

“We are trying to confirm something, General Ember.”

“Confirm what?”

“Well, it is related to one of my deepest secrets, I can’t share it with you now, can I?”

Nux smiled teasingly.

“Oh? Didn’t you say that we two are very close? Why are you hiding your secrets from me?” Ember questioned.

Nux walked towards Ember and moved his face close to hers.

“Are you saying that you aren’t hiding anything from me, Ember?”

Ember stepped back.

“Oh well, I guess we are not that close then,”

She muttered coldly.

“Indeed, I would prefer if we were closer than this.”

Nux nodded slowly.

A small smile appeared on Ember’s face as she looked at Thyra before looking at Nux again,

“Well, we can always start slowly by spending time with ‘just the two of us’, right?” Ember chuckled. Thyra’s face twitched and seeing that, Ember smiled in satisfaction.

“Of course, I will look forward to that.”

“Mhm, then why waste time? I will be free in like, 3 hours. How about you come to my tent after that? Alone, of course.”

Ember offered.

“I will gladly take that offer.”

Nux smiled.

Ember’s smile widened and when she noticed Thyra glaring at her, she chuckled.

Then, she turned around and waved her hands,

“Alright then, Nux.

We will meet 3 hours later, don’t be late.”

“I won’t.”

Nux smiled.

Ember left the tent.

As soon as she left, Nux's face turned serious again.

'Have you thought of anything?'

He questioned.

And soon, he got his answer,

'I do have a theory in my mind.'

# Chapter 316

‘I do have a theory in my mind.’

Amaya muttered.

‘What is it?’

Nux questioned curiously.

‘From what I know, [Sense] works on ‘Intent to hide’.

That means, if someone ‘wants’ to hide from you, the [Sense] will be activated and you will know where that someone is.

Ember, however, comes out as an exception.

She, for some reason, doesn’t get detected by you [Sense].

Of course, I have thought of a possibility where just like Thyra, who talked about ‘wanting to kill you’ without any ‘intent’ and got away with it, there might be a chance where Ember did the same thing.

That means, she hid without the ‘intent to hide’, however, there are two problems with that.

First, hiding without ‘intent of hiding’ seems impossible. Thyra just spoke those words, she didn’t take any action, Ember, however, was ‘doing’ that action, the possibility of her doing something like that without the ‘intent’ is nearly zero, especially when she doesn’t know about your [Sense] ability.

The second is when you used your [Sense] yourself and still weren’t able to find Ember.

If [Sense] is activated by you, intent to hide or not doesn’t matter.

You will see everything around you without any problems.

Then why did Ember get away with it?

Due to this, I believe that rather than hiding the 'Intent', Ember got away from [Sense] with something else. Not only that, but I also believe that she didn't do this 'something else' on her own.

I suspect that the problem is with the ability, not Ember.

Ember didn't use any special ways to avoid your [Sense], rather, there is something different about Ember that makes her undetectable from [Sense].

And what is the difference between Ember and all the other people you have met so far?'

After a long explanation, Amaya questioned.

Nux narrowed his eyes and after thinking for a while, he answered.

'Her cultivation.'

'Correct.'

Amaya smiled.

'Ember is the Second King Stage Cultivator you have met. Also, the Headmaster of the Academy, the other King Stage Cultivator never tried to hide from you, therefore, you can safely say that Ember is the first King Stage Cultivator you have tried to use your [Sense] on.

Of course, from our observations, we have seen that [Sense] has no problem in 'seeing' the King Stage Cultivator using a normal way, but the problem arises when the King Stage Cultivators try to hide.

So according to me,

[Sense] fails to detect a King Stage Cultivator if he intends to hide from you.

And I believe that it will be the same for Cultivators above King Stage, that means, [Sense] won't be able to detect the Emperors either.'

Amaya explained.

'I still do not understand one thing.

Why is this happening?

According to what I know, as long as my target's Mana isn't twice mine, [Sense] will work. However, since the conditions aren't met in this case, why is [Sense] not working properly?'

This time, however, Amaya shook her head,

'I do not have an answer to that.'

'...'

Nux turned silent.

'Actually, it doesn't really matter.'

Suddenly, Felberta muttered.

'Hmm?'

Nux frowned and Felberta continued.

'Why it is happening doesn't matter, of course, it would be better if we knew what is happening, however, even if we don't know what has happened, we won't be able to change anything. It's not like we can change your ability, right?'

Rather than thinking about this, I believe it would be better to fully understand the limitations of Depth.

Think of every single possibility.

Every single way to beat [Sense].

That would be the best.’

‘I agree with Sister Fel.’

Allura nodded in agreement.

‘I agree as well.’

Amaya agreed as well.

‘You are about to meet Ember, ask for her help.’

Thyra suggested.

‘Hmm? What? He is going to meet Sister Ember?’

Skyla’s ears perked up as soon as she heard Thyra’s words and she questioned.

Yes, she has already started calling Ember ‘Sister Ember’, however, even though she had accepted it already, for some reason, she didn’t like that Nux was going to meet her.

‘Huh? Nux? You are going to meet Ember? Isn’t that too soon?’

Amaya, of course, didn’t like this as well.

‘Too soon? Amaya, I have been here for 2 weeks now...

Or do you want me to stay here for a few months?’

Nux dropped the bomb.

‘No! Of course not!’

‘Amaya you bitch! What are you talking about!?’

“Oi oi oi, you can just not see him if you want!

Don’t group us with you!’

‘Indeed indeed.’

Everyone attacked Amaya.

Except,

‘Hmm, actually, it doesn’t sound that bad.

Guys, Amaya doesn’t mean any harm, she just wants Nux to train more, so don’t blame her.’

Thyra muttered with a small smile on her face.

‘Shut up you bitch!

I did not mean that. Nux, you should go meet Ember as soon as possible, then you should fuck her as soon as possible.

Then you should return.’

Amaya muttered with a smile on her face.

‘ ... ’

‘ ... ’

‘ ... ’

Everyone turned silent.

Nux chuckled.

He really enjoyed talking to his women.

‘Alright Amaya, I will do as you say.’

Nux smiled.

‘ ... ’

‘ ... ’

‘ ... ’

And his women turned silent again.

Nux chuckled again and continued talking.

Just like that, 3 hours passed by, seeing the time, Nux stood up.

It was time to meet Ember.

“You are late.”

As Nux entered Ember’s tent, she muttered while sitting on her chair.

Nux smiled, then, he walked forward and sat on the chair placed in front of her.

“I apologize.”

“Oh well, whatever.

It wasn’t an official meeting.

It is just two friends meeting each other. So we don’t have to be so strict about it.”

“Indeed indeed.”

Nux nodded his head continuously.

“Alright then, my friend.

Let me ask a few questions.”

Sticking to her usual way of doing things, Ember muttered without wasting any time.

“Ask what you what.”

Nux smiled.

Then, a serious look appeared on Ember’s face and she questioned,

“What is your relationship with the Skyfall Kingdom.”

# Chapter 317

“What is your relationship with the Skyfall Kingdom?”

Ember questioned with a small, friendly smile on her face.

“Oh ho, starting right from a complex topic I see,”

Nux muttered with a small smile on his face.

“You don’t have to answer me if you don’t want to. I won’t complain.”

Ember muttered.

Nux nodded and then, he answered,

“Other than the fact that I grew up there, I have no relationship with the Skyfall Kingdom.”

Hearing this answer, Ember frowned.

“As I said, you can choose not to answer if you want. I won’t say anything. However, I would prefer it if you don’t lie.

Lying won’t help us in any way, rather, it would only create a barrier between us.”

Nux, however, shook his head,

“I am not lying.

I really have no relationship with the Skyfall Kingdom, however, I do have some relationships with certain members of the Royal Family.”

Nux answered with a playful smile on his face.

“Arvina Skyfall I presume?”

Ember guessed.

“Indeed.”

Nux nodded his head.

“I guessed it. That girl doesn’t give out her badge very often.

So? How are you related to her?”

Ember questioned.

“She is my Teacher.”

Nux answered.

“Teacher? As in your personnel teacher?”

“Yes, recently, I joined Skyfall Royal Academy and caught her eyes. Then, she recruited me as her student and of course, I accepted readily.”

“Sounds like something she would do.”

Ember nodded with a smile on her face.

“You two seem to know each other.”

Nux commented.

“Well, we used to be close when she was small. However, as more and more time passed and she realized her responsibilities as the Consort of the Skyfall Kingdom and me, as the General of the Woods Dynasty, we weren’t able to spend much time with each other.”

Ember answered and Nux nodded.

Then, Ember continued,

“So you are telling me that the Royal Consort knows about your absurd talent.”

“She does, of course. She is my teacher.”

“Then why are you here? Shouldn’t you stay inside the Academy and train under her?” Ember questioned.

“She was the one who send me here. She says that I am too immature and wants me to grow up.”

Nux answered.

“Huh? You are just 19 years old? What does she expect? Isn’t the solution to this problem very simple? We just have to wait for 30-40 years, you will automatically be mature by that time.”

Ember frowned.

Wasn’t her friend being a little too immature?

Why would she send a 19-year-old boy to War?

Why if he dies?

Why would she risk losing a monstrous talent like Nux for something so stupid?

Ember couldn’t understand what was going on inside Arvina’s mind.

Nux adjusted his body as he sat more comfortably on the chair and muttered. “Teacher Arvina said that if we wait for 30-40 years, it would already be too late.”

Hearing those words, Ember frowned.

And seeing that reaction, Nux smiled, then, he bent his body towards Ember, looked around a few times and then, he whispered.

“Since I would already become an Emperor Stage Cultivator by that time and of course, I can’t become mature if I am the strongest, now can I?”

“!!!”

Ember’s eyes widened in surprise.

“Y-Y-You know about Emperor Stage!?”

“Well, Teacher Arvina told me about them, each Kingdom has one protecting them, they are the reason why the Kingdoms rule over all others, right?”

Nux smiled.

Ember was dumbfounded.

What Nux just said was a Kingdom Level Secret that shouldn’t be revealed in any scenario.

She knew that Arvina had some connections with Skyfall Kingdom’s Emperor Stage Cultivator, however, she just couldn’t understand one thing.

Why would she tell something like that to Nux!?

Was she out of her mind!?

Actually, that was okay, but...

Emperor Stage in 40 years!? What the hell is that!? What kind of absurd confidence is that!?

‘Wait... ‘

Suddenly, Ember realized something.

A 19-year-old Expert Stage Cultivator...

The youngest Expert Stage Cultivator she has ever met was 54 years old...

Ember then looked at Nux and started thinking.

‘If it is him... then... he might be able to do it...’

Suddenly, another thought appeared in Ember’s mind,

“If my memory serves me right, the Emperor Stage Cultivator of the Skyfall Kingdom still has many years left...

if you become Emperor Stage as well then...”

Ember didn’t say anymore.

However, the meaning of her words was clear.

A grave expression appeared on her face.

2 Emperors... this would be too advantageous for the Skyfall Kingdom and disadvantageous for the other 3 Kingdoms, which, includes her Dynasty as well...

This was clearly bad for her and her Dynasty’s future, not only that, but the source of all the future troubles is sitting right in front of her.

Ember started thinking...

Should she...

Get rid of him right now?

Then, Ember’s eyes fell on Nux who was looking at her with a small smile on his face.

She quickly shook her head.

‘What are you thinking, Ember!?’

He trusts you!

How can you betray his trust like that!?’

Soon, however, another thought appeared in her mind,

‘It is his fault for trusting you.

This is related to the two strongest powers, if you don’t make a move right now, he will make his move in the future.

This might even destroy the Woods Dynasty.

You have to get rid of him now that you have this chance.’

‘What about Arvina then!? She sent her student here because she trusted you!

Are you going to betray her as well!?’

White Ember questioned.

‘She sent her student here so that he can train. She is treating us as some sort of practice dummy!’

Red Ember muttered.

‘Y-You! How can you think like that!?’

White Ember questioned in rage.

‘This is the truth!’

Red Ember spat.

In midst of their fight, Ember sat there with a confused expression on her face,

However, her confusion was dealt with by Nux’s next words.

“Do not worry, as I said before,

I do not belong to the Skyfall Kingdom.”

# Chapter 318

“Do not worry, as I said before,

I do not belong to the Skyfall Kingdom.”

Nux muttered with a small smile on his face.

“Huh?” Ember, however, frowned when she heard those words.

“How is that possible? You are going to become an Emperor Stage Cultivator, there is no way the Skyfall Kingdom will let you go.

I assume that you are being manipulated by your teacher.

The higher-ups in the Skyfall Kingdom must already know about you by now.” Since she was already in a very confused state, she wasn’t able to control herself and spoke directly.

Nux, however, shook his head and muttered.

“Believe me, I do not belong to the Skyfall Kingdom.”

“...”

Ember turned silent.

She wanted to say that Nux was being ridiculous and was being lied to, however, seeing those eyes, she was unable to say those words out loud.

There was not a glimpse of uncertainty in those eyes.

She felt like Nux knew what he was talking about.

However, as a General, she understood the working of her Dynasty.

She knew how what lengths could the higher-ups of a Power could go in order to get what they want.

This is not true for the Skyfall Kingdom or the Woods Dynasty alone. It is true for every single power in this world.

From a Baron's house to the Royal Family, the core of power is always the same.

Nux, however, seems to be completely clueless about this, therefore, for some reason, Ember decided to tell the truth about this world.

“Think with me here.

Since you live in the Skyfall Kingdom, there have to be many people who know about your talent.

There is no way someone like you can stay hidden.

Trust me, if more than 10 people know about your existence, the Royal Family must be knowing about it by now.

And if the Royal Family know about you and you do not wish to become the Protector of the Kingdom, then sooner or later,

You will be assassinated.”

Seeing the solemn look on Ember's face, a small smile appeared on Nux's face, then, he shook his head.

“Do not worry, what you think won't happen.”

Hearing those confident words, Ember wanted to facepalm.

Why is this boy not understanding what she is talking about?

She wondered in her head.

And as if seeing through her thoughts, Nux smiled,

“I am not saying what I am saying without any reason.

My Teacher, Arvina Skyfall, is the one helping me hide my secret from others, she wants me to hide and cultivate till I become an Emperor Stage Cultivat-”

“Nux, don’t forget, this ‘Teacher Arvina’ you are talking about is also the Royal Consort of the Skyfall Kingdom.

Do not trust a Royal, Nux.

They are made from lies.

They can come up with a lie right in front of you and make it look like what they said couldn’t be truer.

By now, Arvina, who is helping you hide this secret must have already reported this to the King of the Skyfall Kingdom.”

Ember muttered.

“Hmm? Isn’t teacher Arvina your friend? Why are you talking like that?”

Nux questioned out of curiosity.

“Well, she is indeed my friend, however, it has been years since she became part of the Royal Family, she is different from before.

Of course, the same goes for me as well, I am different from before since I became the General of the Woods Dynasty.”

Ember answered.

“So this means what you said was just you assuming everything just because of the fact that Teacher is part of the Royal Family?” Nux questioned.

Ember frowned.

“She is part of the Royal Family, you are taking this ‘fact’ too lightly here.”

“I will ask again, everything you said just now was just you assuming everything just because Teacher is part of the Royal Family?”

Nux repeated.

“Yes, however, it is not baseless assumptions, I have experienced many people who have gone through many different changes once they became part of the Royal Family.

That place is a deep, dark marsh.

A place of no return.”

Ember nodded.

“Well, what you think isn’t wrong.”

Nux nodded his head.

Ember thought that this boy finally understood what she was talking about, however, these thoughts vanished as Nux continued.

“You are right, however, I will still choose to believe my judgement. The time I have spent with Teacher Arvina, the sincerity I have seen in her eyes, and her pride as a warrior that would never allow her to go back on her words, I would rather believe these things than make assumptions.”

“ ... ”

This time, Ember didn’t have any way to respond.

I would rather trust my Teacher than trust useless assumptions...

Shouldn’t she do the same thing?

Shouldn’t she trust her friend rather than trusting these assumptions?

She should, however, after living for so many years, she has learned that rather than trusting a person, trusting assumptions is often proven correct.

“Of course, if my judgement is incorrect, then I am ready to deal with the consequences.”

Nux muttered with a smile.

And hearing those words, the General came out of her reverie and frowned.

She just thought that Nux might not be as immature as she thought he is, however, he just decided to go on and prove her wrong again.

“Consequences?” She raised her eyebrows.

“You will deal with the consequences? Do you even know what the consequences are?”

“Well, I would have to fight against a Kingdom.”

Nux muttered.

“...”

Again, Ember turned silent.

She was dumbfounded at how nonchalant Nux sounded.

“Or in other words, you will lose your life.”

She muttered.

“Well, not necessarily.” Nux smiled and Ember frowned.

And seeing her expression, Nux’s smile widened.

“General Ember, I am not a fool.

I do not move without a plan.

I decided to trust my Teacher, however, this does not mean I am willing to put my life in her hands.”

“ ... ”

Ember didn't say anything and continued to listen.

“If the King already knows about it, then sooner or later, he will attack me. Of course, the Emperor Stage Cultivator won't show herself just because of a mere Expert Stage Cultivator, at best, there would be 2 or 3 King Stage Cultivators attacking me.

And General Ember, since you are my close friend, let me tell you a secret.

Although I am an Expert Stage Cultivator, I am serious, I can easily get away from a few King Stage Cultivators pursuing me.

I am stronger than I look.”

# Chapter 319

“Although I am an Expert Stage Cultivator, I am serious, I can easily get away from a few King Stage Cultivators pursuing me.

I am stronger than I look.”

Nux smiled playfully and Ember narrowed her eyes.

If it was anyone else other than Nux, she would have doubted these words, however, Nux was a monstrous prodigy,

He wouldn't have survived this far if he didn't have a few trump cards hidden.

Also, Nux never said he could defeat King Stage Cultivators.

He said he could run away from them.

Although this wasn't something very common, there have been a few cases where an Expert Stage Cultivator survived an assault from a King Stage Cultivator.

Therefore, Nux achieving that isn't something impossible.

However,

“How are you so sure about it?” Ember questioned.

She wanted to know more about it.

“That,

Is a secret.”

Nux smiled.

Ember narrowed her eyes in frustration, however, she soon controlled herself and questioned.

“Have you tested it before?”

“No, I have not.” Nux shook his head.

“How about you test it with me here? I am sure it will help you.”

Ember offered with a smile.

She had two reasons to do what she did,

First, she wanted to help Nux,

Second, she wanted to see if Nux could actually do it.

Getting away from a King Stage Cultivator, she wanted to see how Nux would do or try to do it.

She wanted to see why he was so confident.

However, as if trying to annoy her purposefully, Nux shook his head,

“As I said, it is a secret and is my trump card.

I can’t show it to you carelessly.”

“But wouldn’t it be better if you knew if it would work or not with full certainty?” Ember questioned.

“It would, however, I will still not risk it.”

Nux smiled.

Ember’s face twitched in frustration, however, soon, a small smile appeared on her face.

“Hmmm, so you are telling me that you won’t use it unless it is absolutely necessary?”

“Yes.”

“You are saying that you won’t reveal your secret unless a King Stage Cultivator is coming for your life? Is that correct?”

“Yes, it is.”

Nux nodded and Ember’s smile widened.

Different thoughts were running wild in her mind right now.

However, Nux shook his head.

“Don’t do what you are thinking of doing.”

He muttered with a soft smile on his face.

“Huh? Why not?” Ember questioned.

She didn’t even try to deny it.

She knew Nux had caught on as well.

“Well, as I said, I will only use it if my life is on the line and if you push me that far,

I will take my revenge.”

“...”

Ember turned silent.

For a moment, she found herself lost in Nux’s golden eyes that were shining uncontrollably.

It took her a good minute to bring her mind out of that frozen state and once she returned, she looked at Nux and smiled playfully.

“Oh? So you will attack me after you become a King Stage Cultivator?”

Nux shook his head,

“No, I will attack you once I become strong enough to kill you.

I am a very petty man, General Ember.

If you come after my life, I won't let you go scot-free.”

Nux muttered with a solemn expression on his face.

Inwardly, however, he was praising himself for acting like that.

He has noticed that Ember was kind of a combination of Arvina, Amaya and Thyra.

She is prideful, she is a good Leader and she can kill without blinking her eyes.

Now the next question was,

What kind of man would a woman like Ember prefer?

The answer was simple.

A wild, dangerous, strong and petty man.

A man who would match her energy.

A man who would be stronger than her.

A man, who would defeat her.

That would be the type of man Ember would like.

And this is exactly how Nux would present himself in front of Ember.

His methods seemed to have worked as a wide smile appeared on the General's face, and along with that, a ferocious aura was released from her body, trying to engulf Nux without any mercy.

However, no matter how experienced she was, no matter how many people she has killed before and no matter dangerous she is, her aura wasn't able to threaten Nux who was stronger than her.

Nux tackled her aura with an expressionless look on his face.

He treated it as if it doesn't even exist.

Seeing this, Ember's smile widened even more.

"I really want to attack you right now."

She spoke out loud as her red eyes shined brightly.

Right now, her whole body was trembling in excitement, however, soon, her body stopped trembling and she calmed down.

"I really want to attack you right now, however, if I do, you will become my enemy in the future.

That, I do not want.

Therefore, I have decided to wait.

I will wait until you become a King Stage Cultivator.

And once you do, I will fight you all I want."

Ember smiled excitedly.

Seeing her acting like that, Nux smiled.

"Be prepared to be defeated."

He taunted.

“Heh, we will see about that.”

Ember chuckled.

The two of them looked at each other with smiles on their faces and after a while, another question popped up in Ember’s mind.

“Mind if I ask you another question?”

“Hmm? Go ahead.”

“Let’s say you are wrong and were betrayed by your Teacher.

You were attacked by the Skyfall Kingdom, however, you managed to escape.

What would you do after that? How will you take revenge against the Entire Kingdom that has an Emperor Stage Cultivator defending it?”

Instead of answering, Nux questioned back.

“What do you think would the Dynast say if I reveal my talent to him and tell him about my intentions of joining ranks of Woods Dynasty?”

Ember raised her eyebrow,

“You would betray your Kingdom just because you want revenge?”

“Betray? Why are you making it sound like I am the one betraying? Aren’t they the ones who attacked me first?

Also, it’s not like I have any attachment to the Skyfall Kingdom, as I said, I was just born there.

I have no other relationship with that Kingdom.”

“What about Arvina?

What would you do with the Teacher who betrayed you?"

# Chapter 320

“What about Arvina?”

“What would you do with the Teacher who betrayed you?”

Ember questioned.

Nux’s face turned solemn and he answered,

“I will kill her as painlessly as possible.”

“You will kill her?” Ember raised her eyebrow.

“Yes, I will.”

Nux didn’t back down.

“This is your teacher we are talking about.”

“That is the reason why her death will be painless.”

“...what about the rest of the people who attacked you?”

“They should prey that they had died due to other reasons before I became strong enough to go after them.”

Nux answered with a cold expression on his face.

“...”

Ember looked at Nux for a while and then, and then she nodded her head in agreement.

“Good, good, you did not disappoint me.”

Nux smiled back,

“Well, I won’t let my enemies live, I am not a fool.

However, I will say, I don’t see this happening.

I am sure that Teacher Arvina would not betray me.”

“I hope that is the case.”

Ember smiled.

“Heh. I feel like we have become a lot closer after this conversation.”

Nux commented with a playful smile on his face.

Ember looked at Nux and narrowed her eyes,

“Do you really feel that way? Because to me, rather than a conversation, it feels more like me interrogating you.

You didn’t ask anything and continued to answer my questions”

“Don’t worry, I am getting a lot of answers,” Nux answered with a small smile on his face.

“Huh? What does that mean?” Ember frowned.

However, instead of answering, Nux just continued to smile as he looked at Ember’s face.

“Well, if you are satisfied then I don’t have any problems either.”

Ember shook her head.

“Indeed,

Also, it is not like it is our first and last time talking alone like this, right?”  
Nux smiled.

Ember looked at Nux for a while and then, she smiled as well,

“Indeed, it won’t be the last time.”

“Alright then, since you said that we are closer to each other, let me ask more complicated questions.”

Ember muttered.

“Being greedy I see.” Nux smiled.

“I would like it if you term it as saving time.”

“Oh well, ask what you want.”

Nux nodded and suddenly, the air around the room turned heavy.

Nux’s eyes fell on Ember and he saw that all that playfulness was now gone and was replaced by a solemn expression.

“How did you know that the Deathspike Trap was activated during the War.”

Ember questioned.

“Secret.” Nux, however, shook his head and did not reply.

Ember nodded and then continued,

“What about the number of soldiers inside the Fort, how did you know about that?”

“Secret.”

“Where did you come from when I barged into your tent?”

Ember had heard Thyra’s words and that was enough for her to deduce that at that moment, Nux had just returned from somewhere.

This made her curious about where Nux went, however,

“Secret.”

Ember’s lips twitched in annoyance.

“What is your relationship with Thyra.”

“Lovers, soon-to-be husband and wife.”

This time, Nux finally answered.

Ember sighed in relief.

He wasn’t playing with her, he was still serious about answering her questions.

“Why are you making advances towards me then?” She questioned.

As a General leading an entire army, she was very perceptive of her surroundings and people’s feelings. It would be idiotic to think that she wouldn’t catch on, especially with so many hints throughout their conversations.

Nux was trying to approach her, Ember knew it and therefore, she was curious about the reason, however,

“Secret.”

Nux smiled.

‘AAAGGHHHHH!!’

Ember screamed inwardly.

‘Secret! Secret! Secret!’

Is he playing with me!?’

She was frustrated.

She was angry.

And as if sensing her emotions, Nux muttered,

“About your last question,”

Ember came out of her reverie and focused on his next words.

Nux smiled, he then moved his face close to Ember’s and whispered.

“You will know it soon.

Very soon.”

Ember clenched her fist and a vein popped on her head.

This boy was annoying.

She really wanted to hit him right now, however, she controlled herself.

“Alright, we have been talking with each other for a long time now. I think you are tired now. You should go back and have a good rest.”

Seeing her acting like that, Nux smiled.

Then, he nodded and stood up.

“Alright then, my dear friend Ember,

I will take my leave now.”

Ember nodded.

“I am looking forward to our next meeting,

My dear friend Ember~”

Nux muttered and then, he left.

Ember sighed in relief as he left her tent and Nux, well, he had a big smile on his face.

Today, he gained a lot.

The biggest reward he got today was the Path.

The Path to Ember's heart.

He could now see it clearly.

“Took you long enough.

What were you two doing?

And why are you smiling like that?”

As soon as Nux entered his tent, he saw Thyra looking at him with an extremely jealous look on her face. Seeing her face, Nux smiled and then he pulled her petite body into his embrace.

A small smile appeared on Thyra's face as she felt Nux patting her head gently.

She hugged him back and closed her eyes.

Seeing that she has calmed down, Nux finally answered her question.

“Something good happened.”

“What? Did you find something good while experimenting with your [Sense] ability?”

Thyra questioned and suddenly,

Nux turned silent.

“Shit...”

He cursed.

“What happened?”

Thyra frowned.

“...”

Nux didn't answer.

Thyra narrowed her eyes and questioned,

“What happened, Nux?”

“I... I forgot to experiment on my ability...”

Thyra's lips twitched.

...

“Ahem... Ember my closest friend~~” Nux sang politely.

“Huh? You are back? Why so quick?” Ember frowned.

“Umm... I need you to do something for me...” Nux muttered.

“What is it?”

“Can you go stand in that corner and hide?”

“Huh?”

“Don't ask too many questions, just do it.

Please?”

“Whatever.”

“Thank you~”

Nux smiled and Ember stood up.

Then, Nux tested the limits of his [Sense] according to his women's instructions.

# Chapter 321

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Nobody spoke and silence ruled over the place.

Everyone sitting around the table had solemn looks on their faces.

Suddenly, two more people entered the tent and seeing the solemn looks on others' faces, the two of them frowned.

‘Today is the last day.’

Thyra reminded.

‘Ahh...’

Nux realized.

‘I think there was no response.’

Nux muttered as he looked at those expressions on Ember's and other Deputy Generals' faces.

‘That seems to be the case.’

Thyra nodded her head as well.

Nux and Thyra then walked forward and sat on their chairs.

Seeing that everyone have arrived, Ember started,

“We still haven't received any response.”

“This confirms that Luke and his men have met an unfortunate accident, correct?” Deputy General Lawrence muttered.

“Yes, I believe that they were caught.”

Another Deputy General muttered.

“ ... ”

Ember didn't say anything and remained silent.

Luke was her personnel subordinate that directly reported to her. She would be lying if she said that she wasn't feeling anything. However, she can't show those emotions here.

Many soldiers lose their lives every day, she can't show her grief for one particular soldier. This would be unfair to other soldiers who have lost their lives.

Therefore, Ember remained strong.

“What about the Spies sent by the Dynast?”

Lawrence questioned.

Ember looked at the Deputy General and then, she shook her head,

“There was no response from them as well.”

“Does that mean that they were caught as well?”

“No, they still have a week extension to report.”

“We all know that it is just a false hope, if they haven't sent any response in 3 weeks, the probability of them getting caught is near to 100%”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Again, everyone turned silent, however, no one could refute those words.

Nux looked at everyone's expression and couldn't help but think.

It has been a month since Ember sent a spy named Luke and some other men as Spies inside the Solid Earth Kingdom.

These spies were told to send a confirmation letter in 3 weeks, however, 3 weeks later, no letter was received.

The dates were then extended by a week and now that another week has passed, the deaths of those Spies have been confirmed.

The same thing happened with the Spies sent by the Royal Family.

They were sent by a week after Luke and the others, however, they haven't sent any letters either.

Most probably, they were dead as well.

This was a big problem for the Woods Dynasty.

Lack of information, especially in Wartimes can be fatal.

They had to do something and they have to do it urgently.

“...What are we going to do now?”

Lawrence questioned.

“Do we send another batch of spies?”

“Huh? What's the difference? Won't they die as well?”

“It's not like we have many options here.”

“I don’t understand, how is the Solid Earth Kingdom doing this? How are they killing every single Spy that is entering their Kingdom? This is simply impossible.”

“I don’t understand it either... it is as if every single soldier there is working with all his heart without thinking about anything else...”

“Let’s not talk about this right now, thinking about our next course of action is much more important.”

“I suggest that we talk with the Dynast and think of a solution. The Dynast will be able to provide us with more manpower and his advisors might have some strategies in their mind.”

“I have a better plan... We can...”

The discussion continued like this for a long time.

Nux and Thyra, however, stayed silent throughout the discussion and continued to listen.

The meeting continued for 3 hours and then, Ember spoke,

“Alright, we have discussed quite a few plans for the future, I will give you guys 1 day to think about it a little more, tomorrow, we would have another meeting, where we will be finalizing our next course of action.

You all may leave now.”

“Yes General.”

“As you command, General”

The Three Deputy Generals stood up and saluted.

Nux, however, remained seated.

The Three Deputy Generals looked at him and frowned.

“I have to discuss something with the General, I hope you guys will excuse me.”

Nux muttered.

The three Deputy Generals looked at each other and nodded. This time, they didn't have any complaints.

Actually, the relationship between them and Nux has improved a lot.

Nux may ignore them and do things in his own way, however, when it is needed, he can perform. This was all they needed. Therefore, they didn't pick on Nux anymore either.

They just saluted at Ember again and then left.

Ember looked at Nux and questioned,

“What happened?”

“I have heard about all your plans,” Nux muttered.

“Umm... good job?”

Nux looked at Ember with a blank look on his face, soon, however, he continued,

“As I was saying, I have heard about all your plans and I think all of them are useless.”

Ember frowned and then, she questioned.

“Do you have a better plan?”

Nux smiled,

“I do, however, it is very expensive.”

“Hmm? How expensive? How much gold do you need? If it is feasible, the Woods Dynasty will do everything to support you.”

Nux, however, shook his head,

“No no no no, it is not expensive for the Woods Dynasty, rather, it would be expensive for you, Ember Windstar.”

Ember frowned again and seeing this, Nux smiled even more.

“So? Ember Windstar? Are you willing to pay the price?

It will save many of your subordinates’ lives and will help your Dynasty greatly.

Would you do it?

Or would you just let your men die meaninglessly?”

Ember, however, didn’t fall for Nux’s words and questioned,

“What is your plan? How are you going to do something that so many people failed in? Also, what price do I have to pay?”

“Well, the plan is simple.

Rather than sending those weak spies, I would be the one to go inside the Solid Earth Kingdom and report the situation there to you.

As for the price,

Well, you will be owing me a big big big favour after this.

A favour that would be very hard to repay.

So? Ember Windstar, are you going to accept it?”

# Chapter 322

“So? Ember Windstar, are you going to accept it?”

Nux questioned with a small smile on his face.

Thyra, who was sitting beside him couldn't help but shake her head inwardly.

‘He started making his move huh...’

“You are going to go there yourself? Do you even know how and what a Spy does?” Ember raised her eyebrow in doubt.

“Huh? Don't I just have to bring back the information I found?”

Nux questioned with a frown.

“Well, that is the most basic thing, however, it is not that easy to become a spy, you have to learn a code language that only you and the person you are sending a letter to can decipher.

You have to manipulate people into giving information that you need. Even licking the target's boots isn't impossible in this job.

You can't just become a Spy just because you want to, you have to go through years of training, just being strong isn't enough.”

Ember explained.

Nux, however, shook his head and smiled,

“Who do you think gave you the information about the Deathspike Fort?”

“...”

Ember turned silent.

“I told you the number of soldiers inside the fort, I told you the trap they were hiding and even saved your soldiers from dying meaninglessly.

Not only that, but I indirectly wasted enemy soldiers’ Mana, making them weaker than normal and I did all this within a few minutes when I wasn’t even trying.

What do you think would happen if I visit the Solid Earth Kingdom with the intention of spying?”

Nux questioned with a smile and Ember turned silent.

She couldn’t help but think that Nux’s words are correct.

Nux had lots of secrets, Ember believed that he had a very high chances of succeeding.

Thinking that Ember still wasn’t convinced, Nux continued,

“Look, Ember, whether I fail or not depends on me.

All you have to do is agree to my conditions.

No matter what happens, you aren’t the one taking the loss in this deal.”

“Alright, I agree.”

After thinking about it for some more time, Ember nodded.

Nux’s smile widened and then, he stood up.

“Alright then, I will take my leave now.

Rest well, General Ember.

You might need it when I return.”

Ember frowned, unable to understand why Nux was saying these words.

Thyra, however, understood the hidden meaning in an instant and couldn't help but nod inwardly.

'It is indeed tiring. Rest is important.'

Then, she stood up as well.

Ember looked at the two of them and stood up.

"When will you be leaving?" Ember questioned.

"Tonight."

Nux answered with a smile.

"And I will return in a week."

"A week?"

"Yes, it won't take longer than that."

Ember raised her eyebrow in amazement and then, she nodded.

"Alright, whatever you say."

Nux smiled, then, he turned around and left the tent with Thyra following behind him.

'We are leaving tonight?'

After they left the tent, Thyra questioned.

'No, 'we' are not leaving tonight, only I am leaving.'

'You are not going to take me with you?'

Thyra frowned.

A solemn look appeared on Nux's face,

'The Solid Earth Kingdom, it is moving strangely.

The fact that it was able to capture every single spy we had sent there is simply ridiculous.

Going there is risky, therefore, I will move alone.'

Nux answered and from his firm tone, it was clear that he won't change his mind.

Thyra tried to talk to and convince him, however, he still rejected her.

Not only that, he even talked about this with his other women and soon, a conclusion was made.

'Nux should go alone.'

Of course, not many women thought about Thyra's well-being when they concluded this.

Their main reason was jealousy.

'Thyra should try staying away from Nux as well.'

Thyra knew about this, however, since the numbers were not in her favour, she could only swallow this defeat with a bitter look on her face.

Just like that, the day passed by and soon, Nux left the Woods Dynasty and rushed towards the Solid Earth Kingdom.

The distance wasn't high, it was only around 20 km, for Nux, reaching there in 10 minutes wasn't a difficult task, however, he didn't choose that path.

The path he chose was a roundabout path that is 300 km from the current border.

This is the path used by most of the Spies since it was easier to blend in with the large number of people that use this path every day. Nux wanted to know how and why the spies were captured too easily, this was the reason why he chose this path.

3 hours later, Nux finally appeared in front of a border town and surprisingly, there were 4 soldiers standing in front of the Gates.

“Who are you? Where did you come from? What is your purpose for visiting Red Sparrow Town?”

A guard questioned.

“I am Elijah Winkson, I work for Flaming Gold Merchant Group, I have arrived at the Red Sparrow Town because I want to visit my Merchant’s Group branch that is in Willow Wood City.”

A merchant answered.

The Guard noted everything the Merchant said and nodded.

“You can enter.”

The merchant nodded and entered.

However, after the Merchant left, the Guard’s eyes turned cold and he muttered,

“This is my first time seeing him.

Draw his face, then go visit the Flaming Gold Merchant Group’s branch and check if it is actually him.”

“Yes, sir!”

The other soldier saluted and then left.

Nux, who was seeing everything from the side frowned.

These guards...

They were working too hard...

Just what is happening?

Nux wondered inwardly.

He noted this in his mind and then, he left.

His first target wasn't this place, but the Army Camp.

He wanted to see how many soldiers were positioned there.

With his [Conceal] activated, he faced absolutely no problems with any of the guards, he just dashed through and reached the Solid Earth Kingdom's Army Camp within two hours.

After reaching the Army Camp, Nux activated his [Sense],

“!!!”

And his eyes widened in surprise.

...

# Chapter 323

‘One, two, three... Forty-three...

Forty-Three Expert Stage Cultivators!

What the hell is that!?

Aren’t Expert Stage Cultivators supposed to be rare!?

How and why are there so many Expert Stage Cultivators here!?’

Nux couldn’t help but exclaim in his head.

The number of soldiers in this army camp was similar to the Woods Dynasty’s army camp, however, the strength of the soldiers was incomparably higher.

There were nearly no Beginner Stage Cultivators in this army, on the other hand, the Woods Dynasty’s army was filled with those Beginner Stage Soldiers.

In the Woods Dynasty’s army camp, most of the soldiers except for the ones doing the duty were drunk and living their days as if they were their last, here, however, things were different.

Each and every soldier was active, of course, the ones who were sleeping were different, however, no soldier was consuming alcohol.

Nux was surprised.

However, his surprise did not end here, he moved forward to get an even more detailed understanding and then, he sensed 7 strong auras.

Seven King Stage Cultivators...

‘If this army attacks the Woods Dynasty’s army, they all are dead.’

Nux thought in amazement.

Ember was strong, however, even she won’t be able to take more than 3 King Stage Cultivators at the same time.

The rest of the 4 King Stage Cultivators would go after the Deputy Generals and the rest is easy.

The Woods Dynasty’s army didn’t stand a chance against this army.

‘Why did they not use their full force before?’

Suddenly, a question appeared in Nux’s mind.

‘No wait...

The real question is,

Where did they get this many strong cultivators from?’

Nux frowned.

The Skyfall Kingdom has 8 King Stage Cultivators, however, only 1 of them actually fights in a war, the rest don’t move unless they want to.

The same could be said for the Woods Dynasty.

So the question was,

How did the Solid Earth Kingdom recruit 7 King Stage Cultivators in their army?

‘Are the Nobles of the Solid Earth Kingdom moving?’

Nux questioned inwardly.

‘But why would they move? Just what is happening?’

Nux then used his [Sense] and [Eye of Discerning] at the same time and soon,

All his doubts were cleared.

[Name: Marcus Kane]

[Age: 172]

[Mana Cultivation: King.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human]

[Occupation: Sect Leader of the Celestial Dragon Sect.]

[Talent: High]

[LVL: 64]

[HP: 740/740]

[MP: 1460/1460]

[STR: 73]

[AGL: 79]

[VIT: 74]

[STM: 73]

[INT: 146]

[DEF: 78]

...

[Name: Fredgelord Phase]

[Age: 185]

[Mana Cultivation: King.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human]

[Occupation: Leader of the Bloody Bucket Adventurers.]

[Talent: High]

[LVL: 62]

[HP: 730/730]

[MP: 1420/1420]

[STR: 71]

[AGL: 76]

[VIT: 74]

[STM: 73]

[INT: 142]

[DEF: 77]

...

...

‘Sect Leaders, Adventurer team leaders, Wandering Cultivators, the Solid Earth Kingdom has recruited every single one of them...

But...

How...?’

Nux couldn't understand.

He knew that all these people value their freedom the most, this is the reason why they don't join any Kingdoms and stayed neutral.

No matter how many benefits one provides them, they would never join them unless they want to.

Therefore, Solid Earth Kingdom recruited so many of them at the same time was...

Unbelievable.

'I need to research more.'

Nux thought inwardly as he narrowed his eyes.

What did the Solid Earth Kingdom offer these people?

What was so valuable that made these people give up on their freedom and become Solid Earth Soldiers?

Nux wanted to find it out.

However, since it was already morning, Nux decided to make his move a few hours later and left the army camp.

His next destination was the Solid Earth Kingdom.

He wanted to see how the people inside the Solid Earth Kingdom were living.

He wanted to see what was the difference between the Solid Earth Kingdom and the other places he has visited.

He wanted to see the atmosphere inside the Solid Earth Kingdom.

Nux then rushed towards his destination and soon, he was inside the capital of the Solid Earth Kingdom.

However, after coming here, a frown appeared on his face.

Other than the strict security at the gates, everything else was completely normal. According to what he has heard from the people talking with each other, this change in their security system started 1 year.

1 year ago, suddenly, the checking at the gates got a lot stricter.

The guards stopped taking bribes, and the one bribing the guard was noted down and his entire background was searched.

If the man/woman turns out to be a criminal, or worse, a spy with no clear background, they, their 'families', and all the people they are close with, all of them were executed without any mercy.

There were no hearings in the Royal Courts, no extension of time, nothing.

Once the crime was proven, the guilty were executed.

People who were familiar with the guards questioned them about the strictness and why they were working so honestly, however, there was only one answer.

Higher-ups are doing the same, we are just following them.

There was no further explanation.

With these changes, the crime rates reduced a lot and eventually, the Solid Earth Kingdom turned brighter than normal.

Therefore, no one complained about the stricter security, rather, they supported it quite well.

“No! I did not do anything! Where are you people taking me!?”

While Nux was sorting out all the information he had received, he heard a voice.

He raised his head and saw a man who was being dragged out of his house by 4 guards. The man was trying to resist as hard as he could, however, with 4 cultivators surrounding him, he, as a mortal was unable to do anything and was taken away.

Nux followed behind them.

Soon, however, he stopped.

The guards were entering the Royal Palace, and since he had some doubts in his mind, Nux stayed behind and didn't enter with them.

After all, it was better to be safe than sorry.

Nux then decided to move around the Solid Earth Kingdom, buy(Steal) some gifts for his women while he waited for the night and once the sun was down.

Nux returned to the army camp and started executing his plans.

# Chapter 324

“Deputy General Ansel, General Armando has agreed to meet you. Please enter.” A soldier reported.

Deputy General named Ansel nodded and then, he walked inside the room.

“General Armando.” He saluted at the man sitting inside the room.

“Ansel, it is the middle of the night and I have to wake up early in the morning, you better make this worthwhile.”

“Yes, General.

The reason why I came here is simple, I want you to follow me.”

“Huh?” The General frowned.

“Follow you?”

“Yes, I have to show you something I found.” Ansel nodded.

Armando’s frown deepened,

“Why didn’t you bring it here?”

“I would have if I could,” Ansel answered.

“...”

Armando turned silent.

“General, I promise it will be worth your time.”

“What if it is not?” Armando narrowed his eyes and questioned.

“I-I bet my life on it.”

Ansel muttered after some hesitation.

Armando observed the man in front of him for a while and then, he nodded.

“Alright, take me where you want to.”

Ansel smiled,

“Thank you for trusting me, General.”

“I am not trusting you,

Remember, your life is on the line here.”

Armando warned coldly.

“Yes General.”

Ansel saluted and the two of them then walked out of the room.

After walking out of the room, Ansel stepped forward,

“General, it is a little far from here, let’s run.”

Saying that, he started running.

The General didn’t refuse and kept up with the Deputy General’s speed quite easily.

20 minutes later, the two of them appeared inside a deserted alleyway, a frown appeared on Armando’s face.

“How much more time will it take?” He questioned.

Suddenly, Ansel stopped running.

The General frowned and stopped as well.

“It is here?” He questioned.

“...” Ansel, however, did not reply.

“I asked you something, Ansel.”

“...”

Again, Ansel did not reply.

“Ansel, answer m-AGGGHH!!”

Armando commanded him again, however, before he could even complete his command, he screamed in pain and jumped forward.

With a quick movement, he turned around and there, he saw a man wearing skin-tight, black-coloured clothes, standing there with a dagger in his hand that was stained in fresh blood.

Armando’s eyes turned cold as he glanced at the man in front of him, then, he looked down at his right calf and gritted his teeth.

‘This would be problematic...

Just how in the hell did this man escape my senses?’

While Armando was thinking about all this, Ansel attacked him from behind, targeting his other calf.

However, with Armando’s senses, he reacted quickly and dodged the attack.

Then, a sword appeared in his hands and he slashed it at Ansel.

Ansel blocked the attack with his sword, however, since the impact was too strong, his body flew back and fell on the ground.

“Ansel you bastard! How dare you betray me!? Do you want to die!?” Armando questioned in fury.

“Now now, General Armando, it would be problematic for you if you ignore me.”

Armando narrowed his eyes as he looked at the man in front of him.

“Who are you?”

Armando questioned in caution. The man, however, just chuckled,

“What kind of assassin tells his identity just because he was asked?”

“Why are y-”

“Alright, let’s not waste time with these stupid questions.

You see, there are other important things that I have to do rather than being here.

So let me end this,

Armando Callen, are you willing to be Slave?”

“Huh?”

Armando frowned.

“You are quite brave for someone who is only an Expert Stage Cultivator.”

He countered with a cold face.

Hearing this, Nux shook his head in disappointment.

“Oh well, it seems that I would have to fight with a King Stage Cultivator now...”

Then, Nux looked at Armando and his golden eyes smiled brightly,

“Do not disappoint me, General Armando.”

Then,

Nux disappeared.

He appeared behind Armando, however, this seemingly fast attack was blocked by Armando without any major trouble.

Nux smiled.

And then, he increased the strength behind the attack.

“!!!”

A shocked look appeared on Armando’s face when he realized that he was being pushed back.

‘How is an Expert Stage Cultivator so strong?’

He questioned inwardly and at the same time, the ground under Nux’s foot moved.

Nux lost his balance and using this chance, Armando pushed him back and aimed at his neck.

However, as if it was boneless, Nux’s body bent down backwardly and then, with a few back flips, he created a distance between the two.

“Ground Tremor, a 4 Star Skill, hmm hmm, that’s quite an effective way to use it.”

Nux muttered as he recognized the move with a single gaze.

In these last few months, his knowledge has increased a lot, if earlier, he was just a person from another world with no knowledge of this world, now, he was a complete part of it and could be considered fairly knowledgeable.

And with Amaya and Arvina’s help, his knowledge about Cultivations and Skills has improved a lot.

“You are stronger than I thought,” Armando commented with a solemn look on his face.

Right now, he wasn't thinking about winning this battle,

It was not that he thought he would lose for sure, but the problem was that Nux wasn't alone, If Ansel attacked with him, things might get troublesome for him.

Therefore, saving his life was a priority.

“Hmm, you were the one who fought General Ember, right?”

Armando came out of his reverie when he heard his opponent's sudden question.

“I heard that General Ember used both Wind and Fire elements, is that correct?”

Armando narrowed his eyes,

“Why do you care?”

“Nothing really,

I just wanted to confirm something.”

“Confirm?”

Nux's smile widened as he straightened his back and a scary aura was released from his body.

“Yes, now answer me.

Who has better control over multiple elements?

General Ember, or...”

A Fireball was then shot towards Armando, the General jumped back however, a Sharp Spike shot out of the ground and attacked him.

The General Barely avoided, however, before he could even gain his balance, Nux used his [Wind Walk] and appeared behind him.

“Me.”

# Chapter 325

‘What kind of monster is he!?’

J-Just how is this possible!?’

Is he even human!?’

General Armando was horrified.

This was supposed to be a simple job.

All he had to do was defeat Expert Stage Cultivators, if possible, capture them alive and then return to the base with the two of them.

Then, he would interrogate them and would also torture his subordinate who had betrayed him.

This was an easy thing to do...

Then...

Then... how...

How in the hell did he meet this monster...?

People who had affinities with two elements were considered talented, right?

They were god gifted and were called a prodigy, right?

Then what about this bastard?

Fire, Water, Wind, Earth, this monster had affinity with all these elements!

And as if this was not enough, this bastard also had unreasonable strength, speed, defence and most probably Mana.

Just... Just how is he supposed to fight against this bastard!?

“Oi oi, the strength behind your attack is reducing, are you getting tired?”

The man questioned and Armando’s lips twitched in frustration.

“C’mon, a King Stage Cultivator can do better than that, right?

Aren’t King Stage Cultivators supposed to be strong? Why are you so weak?”

‘You bastard! It’s you!

It’s you who is abnormal!’

The General cursed in his head.

However, he didn’t say anything out loud.

He didn’t have the time to.

He had to be extra attentive to fight against this man. If he loses focus for even a second, it might lead to a fatal injury.

Yes, it was a difficult and hardcore fight where both parties couldn’t be careless, even for a single second.

Or that was what the General thought.

“Haahh... this is getting boring...

Let’s end this shall we?”

“Huh?”

The General frowned and a smile appeared on Nux’s face.

“I won’t hold back anymore, okay?”

‘You were holding back!?’

The General screamed inwardly, however, before he could even react, Nux disappeared from his vision and appeared behind him.

“Ugghhh!!”

The general was unable to react in time and Nux attacked his left calf.

The General lost his balance and fell down.

Seeing this, a kind smile appeared on Nux’s face,

“With this, you won’t be able to run away.”

The General stood up, however,

“Ugghhh!!”

Nux kicked his stomach and the General’s body flew away.

\*Thud\*

“Don’t move, you are only going to make this more painful for yourself.”

Nux muttered calmly as he stepped towards him.

“Alright, let me ask you again,

Armando Callen, are you willing to be my Slave?”

“Never.”

The General glared at Nux with defiance in his eyes.

\*Bam\*

Nux, however, just stomped on his face and contrary to the General’s expectations, a big smile appeared on Nux’s face.

“Oh ho?”

Well don't worry, we have a lot of time to change your mind.

Fufufu~”

“General...”

Suddenly, the man who was looking at everything from far, Deputy General Ansel muttered,

“I would suggest that you give up...

It is for your own good...”

Saying that, Ansel turned silent and his body started trembling.

Seeing this, the General frowned and seeing this, Nux smiled inwardly.

The Doubt was planted.

Now, all he had to plant was ‘hopelessness’.

“Hmph! You think I will be scared of little torture?” The General snorted.

“Y-You might be able to bear it for a few hours... or even a day... but...

Can you bear it for months? Years? Decades?

Can you bear it for the rest of your life?”

Ansel questioned with no emotion in his eyes.

It was as if he was dead from the inside.

“Believe me, general, this man is scarier than he looks.”

“Your words do not scare me, traitor. And don't worry, others will find me soon enough.”

“They won’t,” Ansel answered.

“Huh?” Armando frowned.

“You are already dead, General Armando.”

“Huh?”

“General Armando left his room with his trusted subordinate, Deputy General Ansel, however, Ansel turned out to be a traitor and the General was surrounded by Ember and 5 other Expert Stage Cultivators that the Woods Dynasty sent here for the sake of revenge.

The General fought bravely, however, he was eventually defeated and killed.

The proof of this incident will be the soldier, who ‘by chance’ saw this happening with his own eyes.

Ah yes, don’t worry, that ‘soldier’ is the spy planted by me as well.”

Nux muttered with a small smile on his face.

The General narrowed his eyes,

“You think they will believe this ridiculous story?”

“Of course not.

They will look for proof, therefore, they would come here, where you and I fought.

How many elements do you think were used in this fight?”

Nux questioned.

“...”

The General turned silent and Nux smiled.

“All 4 elements were used, not only that, but your signature move, Ground Tremor was used as well.

Combined with all that blood dropped here and the missing you, what do you think the common interpretation will be?”

“ ...”

The General didn't reply.

Then, a crazed smile appeared on Nux's face as he continued.

“General Armando Callen fought bravely, however, in the end, he was outnumbered and wasn't able to make it out alive.

The case will then be closed and no one will look for you.

After that...

We would have a long long long chat with each other, General Armando.

As I said, we have a lot of time to change that rigid mind of yours.”

“ ...”

The General looked at Nux with a grave expression on his face.

He had to run... he had to leave this place...

However, he wasn't able to defeat this man when he was at his full strength, just how would he defeat him now?

No matter how hard he thought, the General couldn't see a way out.

‘Do I have no other option than to suffer from endless torture?’

He questioned inwardly and suddenly, Ansel muttered,

“General... I know you are loyal to the kingdom... however, this man would torture you for decades if it is required... 20 years ago, I was the same as you, however, within just 5 years, my willpower broke down.

These people are too horrifying... General...

Don't try too hard...”

The General frowned.

‘These people...’

He noted these words.

‘This is a whole organization...

A horrifying organization that works in shadow, nothing is known about them.

He had many questions in his mind.

How strong they are?

How many members do they have?

How deep their roots are?

How long have they existed for?

The more he thought about it, the more solemn his expression got.

Nothing... practically nothing was known about this organization...

‘I need to do something about it...’

A determined look appeared on General's face and seeing that look, Nux smiled.

‘Doubt, hopelessness and then, an opportunity to become a hero.

And what does the hero do?

Self Sacrifice.'

"I agree, I agree to be your slave."

He decided to infiltrate this organization.

"Good job.

Now let me ask again for confirmation,

General Armando Callen,

Are you willing to be my Slave?"

# Chapter 326

“AAAGGGHHHH!!!”

‘I am loyal!

I am loyal!

I am loyal!

I am loyal!’

The General shouted inwardly and finally, the agonizing pain he was feeling subsided.

“Haah... Haah... Haahh...”

The General took in deep breaths and at the same time, he looked at the man in front of him in pure terror.

“I hope you understand your position now.

You see, it will make things easier for me and you as well.”

Nux smiled gently.

“W-What is t-this magic...”

Armando couldn’t help but question.

“You don’t need to know that, just know that this pain you felt will return the moment you think about betraying me.

You be careful about what you think, do you understand?”

Nux threatened.

“Y-Yes,”

Armando’s body shivered in fright and he nodded his head.

Seeing him like that, Nux smiled.

‘Amaya, you are a fucking genius.’

He praised.

‘I told you it would work.’

Soon, he heard a voice full of pride and contentment.

‘After being betrayed by one of his most trusted subordinates, the General’s state of mind was already a mess.

Meeting a monster like you, who has affinity with all Four Elements had another impact on his state of mind.

Then his mental state took an even deeper fall when he was defeated by an Expert Stage Cultivator.

Cutting off all his roads to escape was another blow, by now, he was already hopeless,

‘I will be tortured for the rest of my life, just like my subordinate who was tortured for 5 long years’, a seed of fear was planted in his mind.

However, no matter what, in the end, he was still a General with a strong mentality, just this much was not enough for him to give up, therefore, the last step was an opportunity.

What would he do when he was trapped by a cruel, mysterious organization that no one knows about?

He would become a ‘hero’, he would ‘give in’ to that organization and join it with a goal in his mind, a goal of gathering information about that organization and then plan against it.’

Amaya explain and then, a small smile appeared on Nux's face,

'Heh, 'hero' my ass.

It may sound very praiseworthy from the outside, however, isn't it just him trying to avoid being tortured?'

Amaya smiled,

'That is correct, no matter how well trained they are, no one 'likes' being tortured, however, someone like the General won't give in just because they are scared. Their long years spent in the army won't allow that.'

'They would need a reason'

Nux muttered.

'And that is all you need to do your magic.'

Amaya smiled.

'I can't believe you came up with something like this.'

Nux complimented.

'Wasn't it obvious from the start?

I am better than any of your other women,

So...

Don't you dare leave me, okay?'

Amaya's eyes turned even darker and a wide, creepy smile appeared on her face.

It was honestly quite scary,

However,

‘Huh? Leave you? Amaya, how will I even live without you? Do you think that is even possible?’

My Love, I won’t leave even if you ask me to.

Amaya Skyfall, you are stuck with me.’

A similar creepy smile appeared on Nux’s face as well.

How to deal with an extra possessive girl like Amaya?

Show possession.

A possession even stronger than hers.

‘Hehe~’

Nux’s methods worked and a beautiful smile appeared on Amaya’s face.

‘You should return soon~’

I have something I want to show you~’

Amaya muttered.

‘Heh, don’t talk like that, I might abandon my mission midway.’

Nux chuckled.

‘I love you.’

‘Love you too.’

Nux smiled and then, he looked at the general who was lying on the floor, tired and scared.

“Alright Armando, as I have said before, there are other much more important things that I have to do than being here and being covered in blood and sweat with dudes like you.

So let's get this started,

I will ask some questions and you will answer them, is that clear?"

"Y-Yes, M-M-Master."

"Alright, so question one,

I heard that, a year ago, on a certain day, the security inside the Solid Earth Kingdom suddenly turned stricter. The Guards don't accept bribes anymore, Officials don't slack off anymore, Nobles don't take brazen actions anymore, and all the criminals were being executed without any mercy, all in all, the whole state of the Solid Earth Kingdom changed.

What happened? What did you guys do? And How did everything happen so quickly?"

Nux questioned.

"It all started from the higher-ups."

The General answered.

"Huh?" Nux frowned and then, his eyes turned cold.

"Give me a better answer; explain it in a better way."

He ordered.

"It starts with the King, the King became stricter and ordered everything, and the execution was simple.

If you don't follow the King's order, you will be executed.

And as if he was setting up an example, the head of the Duke's house was executed because he didn't take the King's order seriously."

Nux narrowed his eyes in confusion.

Dukes were different from other nobles, they had Royal Blood flowing through their veins, therefore, they held strong power, a power that even the Royal family had to be considerate about.

Executing the Duke...

It wasn't considered a wise move...

"There were no repercussions?" Nux questioned.

"There were not."

Armando answered and then, he continued,

"After this incident, other nobles took the King's orders very seriously, since most of the officials came from the noble families, they stopped slacking off as well and seeing them, the officials who didn't have noble backgrounds started to change as well.

The same happened with the Guards and others, their higher-ups had turned stricter, and the punishment for offences had become crueller, therefore, they changed as well.

From the Top to the lowest of the positions, everyone changed, and that is how the Solid Earth Kingdom changed."

Armando answered.

Nux thought about it for a while and then, another question popped into his mind,

"What about other Generals, I noticed that they are not from the Solid Earth Kingdom, but are from different Sects and Adventurers parties, how did you recruit them?"

"That was Lord Hermes's doing."

"Huh? Hermes? Who is that? I have never heard that name before."

# Chapter 327

“Huh? Herms? Who is that? I have never heard that name before.”

Nux questioned with a surprised look on his face and suddenly, Armando’s face turned solemn.

“Herms Lyzander, the Grandfather of Alexious Lyzander, the current King of the Solid Earth Kingdom, he is also known as the Strongest man inside the Solid Earth Kingdom.”

Armando informed and Nux raised his eyebrow in amazement.

“Is he...

An Emperor Stage Cultivator?”

Nux questioned.

“Y-Yes.”

Armando answered and at the same time, he was shocked.

Emperor Stage, not many people knew about this stage.

It was a National Level secret.

‘Does this Mysterious organization know about the Emperor Stage as well?’

Armando questioned inwardly, then, he thought a little more about it and realized,

‘This man knew about other generals’ origin, he knew that they didn’t belong to the Kingdom. Knowing about the Emperor Stage Cultivators wasn’t shocking. The real shocking thing is,

His Expression.'

The General thought inwardly as he looked at Nux's calm face.

He couldn't believe that Nux was so calm even after hearing about the Emperor.

'Wait...'

Suddenly, the General thought of something, and the more he thought about it, the stronger his doubt got.

'Does this mysterious organization also has an Emperor Stage Cultivator backing them up?'

The General's eyes widened in surprise.

Just how is this organization so strong?

And... and why are they hiding even though they are so strong?

What are they planning?

Armando's body shivered in fear.

"I understand it now."

Suddenly, Nux spoke as if he was enlightened.

"The reason why the Duke's Family didn't take any actions even though their head was killed, the reason why everything went so smoothly, the reason why the King was able to take such a strong stance and the reason why Wandering Cultivators, the Sect Masters of different Sects and strongest of the Adventurers decided to join the Solid Earth Army.

Now I understand everything.

The reason why everything happened and proceeded so smoothly was because of that Herms Lyzander, an Emperor Stage Cultivator.

He must be the one behind everything, am I right?”

Nux questioned and Armando nodded in agreement.

Then, Nux frowned.

“Why is he doing this though?” he questioned.

“From what I have heard, according to a treaty signed between the 4 strongest powers, Emperor Stage Cultivators aren’t allowed to participate in any events happening around the world, not until the fate of their Kingdom depends on it of course. Isn’t that correct?”

‘He even knows about the Treaty...’

The General just gave up on being surprised.

Actually, Nux didn’t know about this, even Amaya didn’t know about a Treaty like this existing between the 4 Kingdoms. It was Ember who told him about this.

“Yes, that is correct.

An Emperor Stage Cultivator cannot take part in worldly events, especially the events related to the war between two Kingdoms, if they do, the other 3 Kingdoms would join hands to destroy that country, this is called the Treaty of Eternal Peace, which was signed in order to maintain the peace of the world.”

Armando explained and Nux frowned,

“Then isn’t Herms breaking this treaty by recruiting all these people and affecting the War between the two Kingdoms? Is he not scared about being surrounded by the other Three Kingdoms and his Kingdom being destroyed?”

Nux questioned.

Hearing this question, a small smile appeared on the General’s face.

“Committing a Crime is wrong, getting caught is.”

“So you are betting on that fact that the other Kingdoms won’t know about it?”

“That is correct. You see, when it comes to matters like this, coming up with a decision is much more complicated than you think.

Even if you take me to another Kingdom and make me admit that Lord Herms is making his move and breaking the treaty, all the Solid Earth Kingdom has to do is deny those claims and there is nothing you or I can do about it.”

Nux frowned.

He didn’t have much knowledge on matters like these, however, even he could understand one thing.

The Solid Earth Kingdom’s actions are too bold.

Making a case isn’t hard.

They can state that the General is lying and deny his claims, however, the sudden changes inside their Kingdom cannot be explained in any other way.

Actually, the other 3 Kingdoms don’t even need to ‘prove’ that the Solid Earth Kingdom is guilty.

All they need is a ‘reason’.

A reason to work together and destroy 1 Kingdom.

No Kingdom would step out of this since everyone would want a piece of pie for themselves.

Nux was no expert, however, even he can feel it.

Something else, something much more different was going on right now.

It is as if everything is a scheme, a scheme where, this war between the Solid Earth Kingdom and Woods Dynasty is just a small event that would give birth to another, bigger event.

Nux didn't like this.

Also, for some reason, he didn't feel safe inside the Solid Earth Kingdom anymore.

Therefore, he decided to return.

He already got what he wanted inside this Kingdom, now, it was time to return.

Nux then turned towards his new Slaves and ordered,

“Alright, this is enough for now. If I need anything else in the future, I will contact you. For now, you two can go and live your normal life.

Of course, don't forget to inform me if something major happens, alright?”

‘He is planting us as his spies.’

Armando understood Nux's intentions.

However, there was nothing he could do about it.

He knew that Lord Herms might have a way to undo this strange magic, however, even if he thinks about that possibility, that agonizing pain returns and tortures him, therefore, he had already given up on this thought.

For now, he would do as this man says.

“Yes, Master.”

Nux then turned around, however, just as Nux was about to turn around, Ansel questioned,

“Master, h-how are we going to return? What will we say to someone who asks us where we went? How do we explain the General’s injuries? How do we explain the marks of a big fight here? What if they doubt us?”

Nux paused.

Then, he turned around and looked at Ansel.

“You need a reason huh...”

A small smile appeared on his face.

# Chapter 328

“You need a reason huh...”

A small smile appeared on his face.

“Y-Yes.”

Ansel nodded.

Nux then turned towards Armando and ordered,

“Beat him up.”

“Huh?”

“Huh?”

Both Armando and Ansel had the same, confused reaction, however, they didn't have much time to think about it.

Armando's body moved on its own and he lashed onto Ansel and started beating him up.

“Uggh! Wha- Aggh! What are you doi- aaghh!” Ansel, who was just an Expert Stage Cultivator was unable to fight against a King Stage Cultivator and was being beaten up by Armando.

“I-I can't control my b-body!”

Armando answered with a shocked and horrified look on his face.

‘Just what is this magic!?’

At the same time, he wondered in his mind.

That agonizing pain, the ability to control one's body, just what is this strange and overpowered magic?

Does every member of this mysterious organization have these abilities?

He couldn't help but question inwardly and at the same time, he continued beating up Ansel.

Soon, Armando started enjoying it.

Wasn't Ansel the bastard who led him to his doom? Why not repay this favour to him?

Soon, Armando got control of his body and then, he started beating Ansel of his own accord.

“Agghh! M-Master! A-At least- Aagh! Tell me what's my f- aaghh! Fault!”

Ansel questioned while he covered his face with his arms.

“Alright, this is enough.”

Suddenly, Nux ordered.

Armando stopped and stood up with a refreshed smile on his face. As for Ansel, he just lay on his spot as if he was dead.

“You did well.” Nux complemented.

“Master... I still do not understand why you ordered me to do this.”

Armando questioned.

“Y-Yea... I-I want to know that as well...”

Ansel, who was lying on the ground questioned as well.

“Well, you needed a reason, right?”

Nux smiled and soon, he revealed his plans.

...

30 minutes passed by, right now, Nux was standing inside a Tent and in front of him, there were 6 people sleeping peacefully.

These 6 people were all Expert Stage Cultivators.

The Solid Earth Kingdom secretly attacked Woods Dynasty's camp and killed 30 Grand Master Stage Cultivators, and 100 weaker soldiers.

Of course, this has nothing to do with Nux, however, this did hurt his future woman.

Therefore, Nux decided to take a little revenge.

'30 Grand Master Stage Cultivators... hmm... it should be comparable to 6 Expert Stage Cultivators, right?'

Nux thought inwardly and then, he shrugged.

'Whatever, it is the thought that is counted.'

Do note, that this is the man who was acting strangely for 3 whole days just because he killed someone. Now, killing 3 Expert Stage Cultivators was completely normal for him.

This was the time when Nux truly and officially integrated into this world.

'Alright, let's get this started, shall we?'

Nux smiled and then, he stepped forward.

Since it was dark, he was using his [Sense] to look around. Of course, since his [Conceal] was activated, no Soldier standing outside, or the soldier sleeping inside realized his presence.

This will be a simple mission.

Soon, Nux appeared in front of a man who was sleeping with a carefree look on his face.

A dagger appeared in Nux's hand, he then raised his hands, however, just as he was about to kill the soldier, the soldier rolled aside and dodged his attack.

“An Assassin!

Everyone! Be on guard!”

The Soldier shouted.

The other 5 soldiers reacted quickly and woke up.

Their weapons appeared in their hand and in the next second, they were attacking Nux with everything they had.

“There is an Assassin here! Come inside!”

Another soldier shouted.

The Soldiers outside the tent were surprised.

Just how in the world did an assassin enter the tent!?

Why did they not see him!?

Is he some kind of ghost!?

What kind of trick did he use!?

Also... what is going to happen to them now...?

However, right now, they didn't have the time to think about all these questions.

They all looked at each other and then, they dashed inside the room and attacked the assassin who was already surrounded by 6 other soldiers. Now,

that assassin was surrounded by 10 Expert Stage Cultivators.

“Attack him!”

“Try not to kill him, it would be better if we can capture him alive!”

“Hehe~ I wonder who gave him the confidence to attack all of us alone!”

“Hahaha~ Too arrogant, this bastard.”

“Oi oi, you guys, don’t act like that. He might just be a distraction, all of you who had just entered, leave the tent.

We can take him out alone, you guys go and check other tents.

See if there are any other tents that are being attacked.

Increase the security around the area.

Check how they entered our camp without us knowing.

Capture the man responsible for all this.

Inform the Generals and they will be the ones who will tell us what to do.”

One of the soldiers ordered.

Since his words sounded logical, no one complained and soon, action was taken.

The Soldiers who had just entered the tent left and started checking other tents, at the same time, they started informing other soldiers about the attack.

The whole Army camp reacted at a lightning-quick speed and soon, a big search for other assassins was started.

...

Inside the tent, 6 Expert Stage Cultivators surrounded a single assassin.

With their weapons in their hands, all 6 of those soldiers had smiles on their faces.

“Hehehe~ Let’s end this, shall we?”

“Remember, try not to kill him.”

The one who ordered everyone before cautioned.

“Yea yea, you don’t have to remind us again.

I honestly hate killing my opponents.”

“Hahaha~ I know why you hate that you sadistic bastard!”

“Hahaha!”

The soldiers laughed and then, they attacked the assassin at the same time.

As for the assassin who was surrounded by these 6 soldiers, well,

He was confused.

Yes, he was not scared, rather, he was shocked and confused.

‘My...

My [Conceal] didn’t work?’

Nux’s eyes widened in surprise.

# Chapter 329

‘My...

My [Conceal] didn't work?’

Nux's eyes widened in surprise.

‘How... why is this happening? Wasn't it working fine just a few minutes ago?’

Or were these soldiers just pretending not to notice me?’

Nux thought about this possibility while dodging the attack that was aimed at him.

Soon, however, he shook his head,

‘No, this is not possible.

This is a completely foolish move.

Then how?

Just how did that man dodge my attack?’

Nux questioned inwardly as he looked at the white-haired man in front of him.

‘Is he special?’

Is he different from the others?’

Nux thought inwardly and then, his golden eyes shined brightly.

[Name: Ajax Wanderer]

[Age: 121]

[Mana Cultivation: Expert.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Deputy General of the Solid Earth Kingdom.]

[Talent: High]

[LVL: 54]

[HP: 650/650]

[MP: 1100/1100]

[STR: 62]

[AGL: 66]

[VIT: 65]

[STM: 62]

[INT: 110]

[DEF: 52]

...

Seeing his information, Nux's frown deepened,

'He doesn't really look any special either...

Is it someone else?

Someone who somehow blocks my [Conceal]?'

Nux then looked at everyone's status but wasn't able to find anything different.

'What in the hell is happening?'

Nux couldn't understand and he wasn't given any time to think about all this either.

"He is inside, the Deputy Generals are fighting him, let's help them!"

Soon, he heard a soldier's voice and he understood that he couldn't waste any more time here. Nux then looked at the 6 soldiers in front of him and sighed,

"It would have been better if the other three hadn't rushed out of this room but oh well, 6 is not bad either."

Hearing his words, the other 6 soldiers frowned.

"What are you talking about?"

One of the soldiers questioned.

Nux, however, didn't reply, the two daggers in his hand disappeared and soon, a sword appeared in his right hand.

Then,

Nux disappeared.

"What!?"

"Where is he!?"

Those were the last words.

\*Thud\* \*Thud\* \*Thud\*

Six heads fell on the floor, followed by a fountain of blood that erupted from their necks. Nux, however, didn't care about anything and he simply dashed out of the tent.

“Look! He is trying to run away!”

“Chase him!”

“Kill him!”

“What about the Deputy Generals!?”

“Someone go inside the tent and report the situation!”

“I will go!”

Amongst the chaos, Nux tried to run and leave the Army camp, however, he soon realized that there were 4 King Stage Cultivators standing near the exit, waiting for him.

‘Fuck, did these bastards already know that their Deputy Generals would lose?’

That is some confidence in your subordinates’ Skills.

Tsk Tsk.’

Nux snorted.

The Generals who were looking at him running towards them chuckled.

“Heh, we finally caught this rat huh...”

“Hahaha~ He’s much more agile than normal rats.”

“Indeed indeed.”

However, the 4 King Stage Cultivators turned silent when they noticed that in this seemingly tense situation, a small smile appeared on Nux’s face. Yes,

even though his face was covered, the Generals could still see that smile on Nux's face. That was just how wide the smile was.

“That bastard... is he smiling?”

One of the General questioned with a frown on his face.

“Is he crazy?”

“No, it feels like he has some sort of plan in his mind.”

A General muttered and,

He was right.

The Generals prepared their attacks and aimed at Nux, however, the closer he got, the wider Nux's smile got.

“Don't think too much about this. He is just a crazy bastard.

Everyone, attack in 3,

2,

1,

NO- huh?”

Just as the Generals were about to attack, something different happened.

Nux's speed increased.

Within a second, he bypassed the Generals and continued to run.

“ATTACK HIM! DON'T LET HIM RUN AWAY!”

A general finally came out of his reverie and ordered.

The 4 Generals shot their attacks towards Nux and,

\*KABOOM\*

A huge explosion sounded.

“Heh. That bastard thought that he could run away. Hahaha~”

A general laughed.

However, then his eyes fell on another general who was looking at the situation with a solemn look on his face.

“Why do you look so serious?” The General questioned.

“We killed him.”

The other General questioned.

“Huh? So wh- oh...”

“You wanted to capture him alive, right?”

“Indeed... he was strong...”

He must have known some good information...”

“Well, we can’t do anything, that bastard and his abilities were too strange.”

“Indeed, killing a variable like him is the best option.”

“Yes, he could be a very troublesome enemy in the future.”

The Generals discussed with each other, however,

“H-Hey... H-H-How the hell i-is that p-p-possible...?”

Suddenly, a General muttered in surprise.

“What happened?” Another General questioned as he looked in the direction the other General was pointing and soon, his eyes widened in

surprise.

“He’s alive!?”

He questioned in shock.

Nux, who was attacked by all their attacks combined and got caught by such a huge explosion was still alive!

Let alone alive, he was completely scratchless!

“Just how is that possible!?”

“Should we chase him?”

“You think we can catch that bastard?”

“He is too fast!”

The Generals discussed with each other and Nux,

He ran away.

‘Heh, this ability is absurd.’

Nux chuckled inwardly as he looked at the screen in front of him.

[Dash]

[Active Skill]

[Effects:]

[Doubles Host’s AGL for 5 seconds]

[Invincibility: While the Ability is active, the host will not take any damage]

[Can only be used once a day.]

[Warning: While using this ability, if the host does some action other than a dash, the [Invincibility] will lose its effect.]

Yes, this was the ability that Nux used.

He got it as a reward for becoming Grand Master Stage Cultivator, however, he didn't get any chances to use this ability.

Today was the first time he had used this ability and he had to say,

It is simply broken.

It is like having an Extra life.

'Invincibility... I wonder if I can obtain an ability like that someday...

Not as an after-effect, but a pure ability that I can activate any time I want.

Heh, that would be cool.'

# Chapter 330

“That bastard! He ran too fast!”

“Did anyone see his face? I wasn’t able to since he has a Mask covering it.”

“The colour of his eyes isn’t common, we can try using that to narrow down our search list.”

A General suggested and hearing him, the other Generals thought about it and then nodded in agreement.

Indeed, Golden Coloured eyes weren’t common, they could use that as the base of their search.

“Yes, and he had a well-built physique as well,”

Soon, other Generals started pointing out what they noticed and an imaginary picture of Nux was created.

Golden Eyes, muscular built, fair skin and 1.9 meters tall, with this, they had high chances of finding this person.

“General!”

Suddenly, a soldier rushed toward the Generals and shouted.

“What happened?”

“General, the Deputy Generals who fought against that assassin,”

“Yes, what happened to them?”

“They all are dead!”

The Soldier reported with a panicked look on his face.

The Generals looked at each other and narrowed their eyes, from the time the presence of an assassin was revealed to the now, only 15 minutes had passed.

Was this soldier insinuating that in these 15 minutes, not only did that assassin manage to escape from the grasp of their entire army camp, but he was also able to Kill 6 Expert Stage Cultivators?

Just how is that possible?

“Take us there.”

A General ordered with a solemn look on his face.

“Yes, General.”

The Soldier saluted, then, he turned around and started running towards the tent where Nux and the six Deputy Generals fought against each other.

The Generals followed the soldier and soon, a strong scent of blood assaulted their noses. Their expression turned solemn and then, they entered the tent.

“This...”

One of the Generals couldn't believe his eyes.

“We were waiting for the Generals' orders, therefore, we did not do anything.”

The Soldier inside the room muttered with a pale look on his face, obviously, he was scared.

Not from the Generals, but from the sight in front of him.

“You did well, you can leave now.”

One of the Generals nodded. The Soldier nodded back and then, he rushed out of the tent.

Then, a solemn look appeared on the Generals' faces.

“They were killed in a Single Move.”

A General muttered.

“Yes, and with how clean the cut on their neck is combined with how the assassin was able to run away after attacking using an attack like this, it is clear that the assassin was holding back and still hadn't used his full power.”

Another General spoke.

“You guys...”

Suddenly, a General spoke up, gaining everyone's attention.

“Do you think you guys can Kill 6 Expert Stage Cultivators in one move and then escape from 4 King Stage Cultivators?”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Nobody answered, however, that silence was an answer itself.

“D-Does that mean that man was stronger than us?”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Again, no one answered.

“Yes.”

After a long silence, a voice was heard.

The 4 Generals frowned and then, they turned to where that voice came from.

“Armando...”

All the Generals recognised the man who had just entered the tent.

“That assassin is stronger than all of us.”

“How do you know about it?”

Armando then pointed at his injuries and answered,

“I just fought him.”

The expressions on the Generals’ faces turned solemn.

“You lost against him?”

A General questioned.

“No, I did not lose, however, if he wasn’t in a hurry, I am sure he could have killed me.”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Again, the whole tent turned silent.

First, that assassin sneaked inside their camp, then, he sneaked passed the Soldiers and entered the Tent where 6 Expert Stage Cultivators slept.

He then got caught, and the whole army camp learned about him, however, that man simply killed the 6 Expert Stage Cultivators, dashed outside and

right in front of the entire Army Camp, he ran away.

And as if this wasn't enough, the man also fought against a King Stage Cultivator and was able to injure him.

Just what kind of monster was that!?

Does he not get tired!?

The Generals were confused.

“Wait...”

Suddenly, a General spoke and then, he looked at Armando.

“How did you catch him?”

And as if he was prepared for this question, Armando answered without missing a beat.

“I did not catch him, he just appeared right in front of me and my subordinate while we were returning to the Camp.”

“Returning? Where did you go?” The General narrowed his eyes.

“We had some work to do.”

Armando gave a vague answer and since their position was the same, the other Generals didn't have any authority to question any further.

“So does that mean that this assassin was a King Stage Cultivator?”

Another General questioned.

“Yes, he is a King Stage Cultivator and a very strong one at that.”

“Was he sent by the Woods Dynasty?”

Armando shook his head,

“That, I do not know.”

“It has to be, right? Who else would be daring enough to attack our army camp?”

Another General muttered.

“That is true...”

“But... But there are no records of the Woods Dynasty having such a powerful assassin in their ranks.”

“Yes, I have never heard about this assassin before either.”

“If the Woods Dynasty had an assassin like this under their command, then why didn’t they use him more often? Why is he not well known?”

“We do not...”

The Generals continued to discuss while one of them ordered the soldiers to take care of the dead bodies and prepared their burial.

The whole army camp was in chaos for the next few hours and the man who was responsible for all this,

Well, he was just lying down on the ground, looking at the stars with a small smile on his face.

‘I guess it’s time to return, huh...’

Thinking that, the man closed his eyes and the next moment, he disappeared and reappeared many miles away, on top of a bed, where a certain woman with a lean physique and icy blue eyes was waiting for him.

‘Hello, love~’

# Chapter 331

“This is a problem...”

Deputy General Laurence muttered.

“Why do I feel like the Dynast is taking things too lightly?”

Another Deputy General muttered.

“Because he is an Idiot, he doesn’t understand how serious this situation is.”

“He might be an Idiot, but what about his Ministers? Are they Idiots as well!?”

“Well, as long as the Dynast doesn’t agree, the Ministers can’t do anything.”

“But 10 Beginner Stage Spies!?”

That’s all the help they could offer!?

How do they expect us to get any result with a force like this? Do they think we don’t have Beginner Stage Spies under us? Are they trying to mock us?”

“There is no use discussing this right now.”

The room turned silent when Ember spoke and everyone looked at her face with solemn looks on their faces. Seeing that she had managed to gain their attention, Ember continued.

“The Dynast has made it clear that he won’t provide us with any help, so don’t count on their help. If you have any ideas on how to tackle this situation with our own strength, I am all ears.”

“I do have an Idea but I am not sure if it will work or not.”

Deputy General Lawrence spoke.

Ember turned her head towards him and nodded,

The Deputy General nodded back and explained his plan.

“Our biggest problem is lack of information.

Our spies are unable to sneak inside the Enemy Kingdom due to their tight security and it is becoming quite a big hurdle for our future plans.

Therefore, I would like to weaken this ‘tight security’ they have.”

“How do you plan on doing it?” A Deputy General questioned.

Then, a cold look appeared on Laurence’s face and he answered,

“War.

We will start a War.

However, the main motive of this war won’t be to win over the Highcrane Fort, rather, it would be to send some of our spies into the Solid Earth Kingdom.”

“Ahhh... Since they are fighting a War, their Security System would be weaker and our spies would be able to enter the Kingdom...

Is that what you are betting on?”

Another Deputy General questioned.

“Yes.”

Laurence nodded and the Deputy General frowned.

“You are going to sacrifice thousands of soldiers just so you could plant some spies inside the Solid Earth Kingdom?”

Laurence, however, did not back down and answered,

“If we don’t get the information we need soon, a lot more than a thousand soldiers would lose their lives.

It is a necessary sacrifice.”

Laurence didn’t deny it.

He was ready to sacrifice a few to save many.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Silence echoed inside the room, however soon, one Deputy General agreed,

“I agree with this plan.

This is a necessary sacrifice”

And just after he nodded, the other Deputy General nodded as well.

“I agree as well. I believe this is the only thing we can do right now.”

The three Deputy Generals then looked at Ember for her response, however, before the General could respond, someone else spoke.

“I strongly disagree with this plan.”

The Deputy Generals frowned as they turned their heads towards Thyra.

Ember had a frown on her face as well.

“Why do you disagree?”

She questioned.

Actually, even she thought that this plan was good, however, this was the first time she has seen Thyra rejecting something so strongly, therefore, she wanted to listen to her reasonings.

“I want to talk to you, alone.”

Thyra muttered as she looked into Ember’s eyes.

Ember and the Deputy Generals frowned.

“We can talk after the meeting is over.”

Ember replied, Thyra, however, shook her head.

“It is important.”

“...”

Ember turned silent.

Then, she looked at the Deputy Generals and suddenly, Lawrence stood up.

“General Ember, I believe I need some more time to think about this plan in more detail,”

Ember looked at him and smiled thankfully.

“Alright, I give you one day to think it thoroughly, is that enough?”

“Yes.”

“Good, today’s meeting concludes here.”

Ember ordered and the three Deputy Generals stood up, saluted at Ember and left.

Then, Ember looked at Thyra and questioned.

“Now tell me what’s in your mind. Why did you reject that Idea?”

“As you are right now, challenging the Solid Earth Kingdom to a War is a suicidal action.”

Ember got her answer, however, the one who answered the question wasn't Thyra, but someone else.

Ember frowned and then turned around.

Her eyes then widened in surprise when she noticed Nux standing right behind her with a leisurely look on his face.

“Long time no see, friend.”

“When did you appear behind me?

No, when did you even enter inside the Tent?

No, no, when did you even return from the Solid Earth Kingdom?”

Ember asked a series of questions.

“Well, that is not important.

Aren't you curious about what I learned from my investigations instead?”

Nux questioned with a smile on his face.

Ember frowned as she wanted to ask more questions, however, she knew her priority, therefore, she subdued her curiosity and questioned.

“What did you learn? What's happening inside the Solid Earth Kingdom? Why is it moving so strangely? Why is the security so tight? How is the security so tight? How are they able to catch every single one of our spies?”

Suddenly, Nux's playful smile disappeared and he answered,

“The Emperor is moving.”

Then, Nux revealed everything he learned to Ember and the more she heard, the wider her eyes got.

...

30 minutes later.

“...so you are saying they have 7 King Stage Cultivators acting as the Generals of the Army?”

Ember questioned.

“Yes, their current army is a lot stronger than yours. Following Laurence’s plans is no different than suicide.”

Nux nodded and then, a paper appeared in his hand and he passed it to Ember.

“This is the paper containing all the information about their soldiers, their names, affinities, numbers, and their cultivation, everything.”

“H-How did you get your hands on it?”

Ember questioned in surprise.

Then, a playful smile appeared on Nux’s face and he replied,

“I got it from General Armando.”

# Chapter 332

“I got it from General Armando.”

Nux answered with a playful smile on his face.

“General Armando?”

Ember narrowed her eyes and then, she questioned,

“Why would he give something so important to you?”

Seeing her reaction, Nux chuckled,

“Secret.”

He answered.

“...”

Ember continued to look at Nux without any change in her expression.

What she wanted was clear, however,

Nux didn't give in.

“Trust me, I will not betray you.”

He just said these words.

Ember narrowed her eyes even further and then, she started thinking.

3 minutes later, she stopped looking at Nux and then, she started reading the paper Nux handed to her.

The more she read, the more solemn her expression got.

“Are all these other soldiers members of Sects or Adventurers groups as well?”

She questioned.

“Yes, this is the reason why they have so many strong cultivators in their army.

The troops they lost in War against us were nothing to them.

That is the reason why they were so carefree when they lost.

Compared to what they have, what they lost that day was nothing.”

“Following Laurence’s plan is suicide huh...”

Ember muttered with a wry smile on her face.

“Actually, even if you don’t follow Laurence’s plan, your defeat is inevitable.

As I said, their Emperor is moving.

Emperors are different from others, we can’t face them no matter how superior tactics we use.

What you need to do is ask for the Dynast’s help, tell them about this situation and retreat as soon as possible.”

Nux suggested and Ember nodded with a solemn look on her face.

“You are right, we can’t go against emperors,

I will send him another letter and seek his help.”

“Mhm, that would be the best.”

Nux nodded.

Ember looked at Nux and smiled,

“Nux, this is the third time you have saved my army from a devastating defeat and unnecessary sacrifices, no, actually, this time, you haven’t only saved my army, but you have also saved my own life.

I am grateful.”

Then, Ember continued,

“I owe you a big favour Nux, as a repayment, you can ask me whatever you want, and if it is something I can do, I will do it.”

Ember had a simple, upright nature.

She was like a foolish and honest warrior.

Owing favours to others or something like that is something she doesn’t like at all. She prefers to even out as soon as possible.

Now that she owes a big favour to Nux, she would do her level best to pay him back.

No matter what he asks, she would fulfil it.

However,

“Don’t worry about it.”

Nux replied with a small smile on his face.

“Huh?” Ember frowned.

“Nux, you have been with me for a while now. You should know that I am not someone who would forget about favours.

I need to pay you back.”

Ember’s expression was very serious right now.

Nux, however, just chuckled,

“I don’t think you are getting what I am saying, General Ember.”

“Huh?”

“I never said I am forgetting or nullifying this favour, what I am doing right now is stacking it.

Hehe~ I am sure that this isn’t the last time you will need my help. You will keep owning me in the future as well.”

Nux then stood up from his chair and walked towards Ember. With his face so close to hers that their noses brushed with each other, Nux continued in an extremely seductive voice.

My plan is to keep stacking these favours up until it becomes so heavy that once I ask you what I want,

You won’t reject me no matter what it is~

General Ember Windstar, I will only make my move when I am absolutely sure that you can’t escape from my trap.”

Ember looked at Nux’s golden eyes with a lost look on her face.

Soon, however, she came out of her reverie and smiled,

“You are making me nervous, little boy.

The more you ‘stack’ this favour, the more I would wonder,

What is it that you so desperately want that requires you to stack so many favours?

What would I lose if I give you what you want?

Questions like these scare me, little boy.”

Seeing that he wasn't able to see her flustered expression, Nux backed off with a disappointed look on his face.

Then, he shook his head and muttered,

“Tsk Tsk, the fearsome General Ember Windstar, a prodigy who has affinities with two Elements is afraid of a 19-year-old boy's request, heh, if others hear about it, their ears might fall off.”

A teasing smile appeared on Ember's face as she turned towards Thyra,

“Heehh? Don't 'others' already know about it?”

“I am not 'others' you bitch, I am a lot closer to Nux than you will ever be.”

Thyra's response was lightning quick.

“Hahaha~”

Ember chuckled and then, she stood up.

“Alright Nux, I will meet you soon.”

“I am looking forward to that.” Nux smiled.

Nux and Thyra then left the tent.

...

“Assistant General Thyra,”

In the middle of the night, a soldier appeared in front of Thyra's tent and shouted.

“What is it?” After a while, Thyra walked out and questioned.

“I apologize for interrupting your sleep, Assistant General, however, the General seeks your presence, and it is urgent.”

The Soldier reported.

“Huh?”

Thyra frowned.

Unable to understand Ember’s action, however, since the soldier said that it was urgent, she didn’t think too much about it and nodded.

“Alright, give me a minute.”

Thyra then entered the tent and after a while, she returned with Nux following him.

“Take me there.”

She ordered, however, the soldier shook his head.

“Assistant General Thyra, General has specifically mentioned that you must come alone.”

Hearing those words, Nux and Thyra frowned.

Thyra then looked at Nux and the latter nodded.

‘If something happens, call me as soon as possible.’

‘Don’t worry.’

Thyra nodded toward the soldier and the two of them walked away.

‘Why does she wants to meet her alone?’

Nux wondered inwardly but then he shook his head and returned to the tent.

‘I am sure she won’t harm her.’

With that thought in his mind, Nux closed his eyes and slept.

“!!!”

However, soon, Nux’s eyes widened in surprise when a dagger’s icy cold blade touched his neck.

# Chapter 333

Out of reflex, Nux used his [Sense] to see who it was, however, before he could even activate it,

He heard a voice.

“That is a good expression.

I don’t get to see this expression on your face that often.”

Nux frowned.

“Ember?”

A satisfied smile appeared on Ember’s face and she nodded,

“You can recognize me from my voice, good job.

You would have been in big trouble if you weren’t able to do something like this.”

“What are you doing here, General?”

“I am an impatient woman, Nux.”

Ember smiled.

Then, she moved a dagger a little closer to Nux’s neck and continued,

“Now don’t move.”

Ember then grabbed Nux’s hands, then she placed them on top of his head one by one, grabbing both his hands with one hand, Ember smiled with a satisfied look on her face and then, she finally crawled on top of Nux.

Nux’s eyes widened in surprise when Ember appeared in front of him.

“How do I look?”

Ember questioned with a playful look on her face.

“ ... ”

Nux didn't answer.

He was just too busy admiring this alluring sight in front of him.

Right now, Ember was not wearing her normal suit, rather, she was wearing a very thin, black-coloured, see-through Gown that barely did anything to hide her sinful body.

Other than her private parts, which were covered with a black coloured bra and panty, the rest of her body was practically naked.

“ ... ”

Nux didn't say anything and continued to stare at those well-toned abs.

His little brother twitched.

Today, Nux unlocked a new fetish.

Abs.

‘Fuck, they are alluring.’

He cursed inwardly.

Ember, who didn't get the answer she wanted wasn't disappointed at all.

She may have not gotten the response she had expected or wanted, however, what she got was something far more satisfying than what she imagined.

Especially the little twitch on Nux's lower part.

Of course, she did not miss that.

Ember smiled, then, she moved her body and ‘unknowingly’ placed her little sister on top of Nux’s shaft.

Nux felt a strange jolt of pleasure coursing through his body.

Ember, however, didn’t give him any chance to collect his thought and moved her face dangerously close to Nux’s.

Right now, their faces were so close that if any one of them moved even an inch closer, their lips would meet. The two of them could practically feel each other’s breath.

“What are you doing, General Ember?”

Nux, who was lost in Ember’s beautiful red eyes questioned.

Ember’s black-red hairs falling on his face did nothing to distract him, rather, they made this situation such a way that all he could see was Ember’s face, which, he was very satisfied to keep it that way.

It was a sight to behold after all.

Looking at Nux’s face, Ember smiled seductively.

“I am here to fuck you,

Forcefully, if I have to.”

For some reason, Nux’s heart skipped a beat.

Ember had sprayed perfume on her body, along with her wet clothes, Nux knew that she had taken a bath and prepared herself before coming here.

Just thinking about all this, Nux got hard.

He was completely entranced by this woman in front of him.

Soon, however, his inner sadistic woke up.

A playful smile appeared on Nux's face.

“General Ember Windstar, you do realize that what you are about to do is a crime, right?”

“Yes, I do.”

Ember smiled.

“Won't you get into trouble if you commit a crime?”

Nux questioned.

“Do you think the General of a Dynasty would get into trouble for something so insignificant? Don't worry, I have enough influence to get out of this situation without any problems.

Also, it's not like I will get into any sort of trouble in the first place.”

“Hmm? Why do you say that?”

Nux questioned with a curious look on his face.

“Heh.”

The General chuckled.

“It is called a crime if it gets caught, I, however, won't get caught because the victim in my case won't file a complaint against me, right?”

“Heeh? How are you so sure about that?”

I have a lover, you know? Just thinking about how sad she will be after learning that the love of her life got raped by someone makes me angry.

So angry that I will file many cases against you and seek justice.”

“So you have a lover eh?”

Ember smiled, and then,

She questioned.

“Why did you not think of this lover when you were ‘stacking’ so many favours in order to fuck me?”

“So you knew.”

Nux smiled.

“It is pretty hard to not know when you leave so many obvious hints, boy.

Did you think looking at me with those desperate and passionate eyes would hide it? No, actually, were you even trying to hide it?”

Ember questioned with a chuckle.

Nux chuckled as well.

Then suddenly,

Ember sealed his lips.

“!!!”

Nux’s eyes widened in surprise and he was unable to react in time.

Ember’s lips continued to touch his, however, by the time he came out of his reverie and actually got to enjoy her sweet lips, Ember broke the kiss.

“Boy, you are handsome, you are intelligent, you are strong, you are reliable and you are resourceful.

You are a great man, however, you have one fault.”

“What is it?” Nux questioned.

“You are not direct enough.”

Ember answered.

“Huh?”

Nux frowned and then, Ember explained.

“Looking at me with those eyes full of passion, fantasizing about me and then planning about how to get your hands on me from afar is too passive.

Be a warrior, boy.

If you want something, ask for it.

You don't need any favours or something like this.

If you want to spend a night with me, have enough guts to come up and ask for it.

That is how a warrior does things.”

Ember explained and then, a wild aura was released from her body.

“Don't worry though,

I will show you the way of the Warriors,

In. A. Great. Detail.

Be prepared,

Boy.”

# Chapter 334

“Be prepared,  
Boy.”

Ember spoke with a wild, crazy smile on her face.

And as if he was influenced by her, a big smile appeared on Nux’s face as well.

Ember smiled in satisfaction and then, she sealed Nux’s lips again.

This time, however, Nux wasn’t lost anywhere else, this time, he enjoyed her sweet and soft lips as much as he can. She was still grabbing his hands above his head, therefore, Nux could not move much, however, Nux didn’t care, he continued to suck Ember’s lips greedily and the two of them shared an extremely lewd kiss.

3 minutes later, Ember finally broke the kiss and look at Nux with a smile on her face.

Nux smiled back and suddenly, Ember bit her lips.

Nux’s little brother twitched again.

Right now, Nux was rock hard and all he wanted was to get behind Ember and ram his cock inside her forbidden cave.

However, he was not the one in control right now.

Ember was the one who had the control.

Ember smiled seductively and muttered,

“Now stay there like a good boy you are, alright?”

Don't worry, appropriate rewards will be given if you listen to what I say, do you understand?"

"Yes, Lady Ember."

Nux nodded with an obedient look on his face.

He wanted to lash out, however, his inner sadist wanted to see how far will this woman go.

Seeing him acting so obediently, Ember smiled contently and then, she moved her face away from him and sat up.

Her hands then moved towards Nux's member that was being unreasonably hard right now.

She wanted to calm this little boy down.

True to her direct nature, Ember directly removed Nux's pants without any teasing, then, she lowered in underwear and soon, an 8-inch shaft popped out of its confines and nearly slapped Ember's face with its body.

Ember's eyes widened in surprise.

However, in the next instant, her expression returned to normal.

However, this instant did not escape Nux's keen observation who was looking at Ember with a small smile on his face.

Ember was acting as if she was bold and fearless, however, Nux knew the reality.

In reality, this 'bold and fearless warrior' was a virgin.

This was probably her first time being so close to a man.

Therefore, the sadistic Nux was excited to see how long will she act like a 'strong' woman in front of him.

Oblivious to his thoughts, Ember continued her little act as she continued to stare at the shaft in front of her.

Then, her hand moved and she grabbed Nux's little brother gently.

Nux's body twitched a little.

This reaction was enough for Ember to know that what she was doing was correct. She turned towards Nux and smiled,

“Good job in following my orders, now let's start with your rewards, shall we?”

Saying that, Ember's hand moved.

She continued to move her hand while looking at Nux's facial expressions, and soon, she figured out the right amount of force that she had to use.

“Ugghh!”

And soon, Nux groaned in pleasure.

Ember's movement may be experienced, but with just how she was looking at him, he felt a strange sense of pleasure all over his body.

Combined with those rough hands that hardened due to years of training, holding his dick was weirdly satisfactory and doubled the pleasure he was feeling.

Hearing Nux's groan, a satisfied look appeared on Ember's face and then, she increased her speed.

Nux moved his body unnaturally to cope with the sudden pleasure and seeing this, Ember's smile widened,

“Now now, boy, if you are about to give in to the pleasure and release something, you better tell me before you do it, alright?”

Saying that, Ember slowed down her speed before suddenly increasing it again.

“Ugghh!”

Another moan of pleasure escaped Nux’s mouth.

This moan motivated Ember even further and she put her heart and soul into giving a handjob to Nux.

Since her movements roughened up, Nux could see the clear picture of her beautiful breasts moving up and down continuously, this sight further aroused him and different fantasies started playing in Nux’s indecent mind.

The pleasure continued to accumulate, Nux continued to moan in pleasure and soon,

“Ugghhhh!!!”

He sprayed his milk on Ember’s gown.

“W-W-What?”

Ember stuttered.

Too shocked to say anything.

She couldn’t believe that she was covered with something like this...

Just what in the hell was happening...?

How did this happen...?

Nux, however, looked very pleased by his work.

Seeing that ferocious warrior and the leader who lead around 60,000 soldiers into the war, being covered in his jizz like this filled him with immense pride.

He burned this sight into his memory and enjoyed every moment of it.

Ember, however, did not like this.

“Didn’t I tell you to inform me before you cum?”

She questioned as she narrowed her eyes.

“You did.”

Nux nodded.

“Then why did you not follow my order?”

“Because I didn’t want to.”

Nux answered with a playful smile on his face.

“Huh?”

Ember frowned.

And seeing this reaction, Nux’s smile widened,

‘This is enough,

I can’t control myself anymore.’

With that thought in his mind, Nux started,

“General Ember, have you ever heard a case where the victim turns out to be the actual hunter?”

“Huh?” Ember’s frown deepened.

“What are you talking about?”

She questioned.

“General Ember, you told me to be direct, correct?”

Nux questioned back and before the already confused Ember could react, he moved.

The next second, the position reversed,

Now, the one who was at the top of another wasn't Ember, but Nux.

“!!!”

Ember couldn't believe how ridiculously fast this happened and failed to react in time.

Right now, Nux had pinned her hands on top of her head, just like she did to him. Ember tried to resist and soon, Ember's eyes widened in surprise again.

‘I am unable to overpower him!?’

“Let's study the case of Victim becoming the Hunter more closely, shall we?”

A small, devilish smile appeared on Nux's face and he,

Tore the thin black Gown Ember was wearing.

# Chapter 335

Tore the thin black Gown Ember was wearing.

“!!!”

Ember couldn't believe what just happened, however, before she could even react or say anything,

Nux sealed her lips.

In the next instant, all the resistance Ember was showing died down and she closed her eyes.

Nux smiled and continued,

This time, however, it was not a normal, inexperienced kiss, this time, Nux pushed his tongue inside her mouth and tasted every corner of it.

With his free hand, Nux quickly removed his shirt and then, their naked bodies touched each other while the two of them shared an alluring kiss.

2 minutes later, Nux broke the kiss, and then, the two of them separated with a thin silver lining of saliva joining their mouths. Nux licked his lips, breaking the saliva lining, then, he looked into Ember's beautiful red eyes and smiled,

“How was it?

Your first real Kiss, I mean.”

Ember, who was still shocked by everything that was happening finally came out of her reverie and questioned with an extremely flustered look on her face.

“W-W-What are you doing!?”

Nux looked at Ember's flustered face and his smile widened,

“Playing the hunter.”

Saying that, Nux moved his head down to her chest and with his teeth, he pulled down Ember's black bra, revealing her big, soft, and fleshy mounds with a light pink cherry on the top.

Ember's face turned red while Nux enjoyed the sight of those precious mounds jiggling on the top of her chest.

Nux moved his head again, starting with a light kiss on Ember's lips, he went down, kissed her chin, then her nape, then he continued to move down and soon, his lips appeared in front of Ember's light pink nipples.

Ember, who was seeing everything from so close could feel her heart beating quickly, then, she noticed a small smirk on Nux's face before he,

“Anh~”

Licked her nipple and unknowingly, a moan leaked out of her mouth.

Nux didn't stop there and continued to lick her nipples as he was eating the most delicious dish in the world.

He then buried his face inside her ample chest, feeling those soft breasts all over his face and at the same time, hearing that rushed heartbeat.

As Nux continued to stay in that strange position, Ember felt a weird itch inside her canals. She tried to move her body, however, with her hands pinned over her head, there was nothing much she could do.

Again, she was surprised by how strong Nux's grip was.

She wanted to ask him about this, however, right now, dealing with that strange itch was more important to her.

Since her upper body wasn't restricted, Ember decided to move her lower body.

Rubbing her thighs with each other, Ember tried to get rid of that itch, however, while moving her legs like that, her left thigh touched something.

Something hard and warm.

With Nux laying his head on her breasts and blocking her vision, Ember couldn't see what it was, however, the familiar warmth and size quickly gave it away.

'H-He is hard again...'

Her heart skipped a beat, and as if reacting to that, Nux's other hand moved and trailed down towards Ember's little sister.

Nux knew that Ember couldn't see anything, therefore, he made sure to touch every part of her body with his fingers gently and slowly so that she knows what is going to happen to her.

\*Badump\* \*Badump\* \*Badump\*

A small smile appeared on Nux's face after hearing Ember's increased heartbeats.

His efforts were paying off.

His hands then slipped inside Ember's panty and,

“Anh~”

Another moan leaked out of Ember's mouth.

'Damn, isn't she a little too sensitive? I haven't even touched her properly yet.'

Nux wondered inwardly and with a sudden moment, he directly grabbed Ember's clit.

“Annnhhhh!!”

Ember moaned loudly.

Hearing that loud moan, Nux's body started acting up, veins popped out on his little brother's body, however, he just placed it on the top of Ember's soft and warm thigh and inserted his finger inside Ember's body.

“AAannhhh!!”

Ember moaned and then,

The exploration started.

Ember was a lot more sensitive than normal, her body reacted to his every little movement, therefore, finding her weak points was a simple task.

Once Nux noted down all her special points around her entry in his mind, his middle finger entered Ember's cave as well.

Soon, the two fingers started assaulting those special points crazily, at the same time, Nux's thumb teased and attacked Ember's clitoris and Ember,

“AAannnnhhhhhh!!!”

She moaned loudly and moved her body in a strange way to cope with this intense pleasure that was attacking her body.

‘What... what is this!?’

She wondered in her head.

‘Just why does it feel so good!? Something like this never happened when I did it to myself!’

“AANnnnhh!!! S-So goooood!!!”

Ember moaned and moaned continuously.

She believed that this was the peak of pleasure a human body is capable of feeling.

She has finally reached the zenith.

And as if going against that statement, Nux's face, which was just laying on top of her soft breasts moved and he started sucking her nipples fiercely, increasing the pleasure she was feeling.

“AANNHhhhhhh!!”

Nux continued to assault Ember's body while at the same time, he pressed his shaft on her soft tight and continued to rub it against it.

Suddenly, he noticed Ember's walls moving strangely, he quickly realized that she was about to cum, therefore, to give her the best possible experience, he increased the speed at which his fingers were moving, outside of her cave, he used his thumb to press on her clitoris and at the same time,

He bit her nipple.

“AANNnhhhhhhhhhHH!!!”

With a very loud moan, Ember raised her back in the air and,

\*Squirt\*

She came and,

\*Squirt\* \*Squirt\* \*Squirt\*

Continued to have a few more minor orgasms after the main one.

Nux looked at her face that was expressing pure bliss and his weapon twitched.

“Shall we move to the final part now?”

Nux questioned with a smirk on his face.

# Chapter 336

“Shall we move to the final part now?”

Nux questioned with a smirk on his face.

“F-Final p-part...?”

Ember, who was still lost in her own world questioned in a strange voice.

Nux smirked.

No one would believe that she was Ember Windstar if they saw her like this.

Her milky white breasts moved up and down while she breathed heavily, beads of sweat that trailed down from her forehead as if she has fought a big way, the deep red blush on her face, increased heartbeat and those misty red eyes,

She did not match that vibrant, dominant and wild General Ember Windstar at all.

And seeing this sight, Nux’s sadistic side urged him to see more.

Nux then placed his rock-hard dick right in front of her entrance and seeing this, Ember finally came out of her reverie.

“W-W-What are you doing?”

She questioned in a tired voice and a slightly panicked look on her face.

“Completing the Hunt.”

Nux answered with a playful smile and,

“AANNhhhhhhh!!!”

With just one big thrust, he entered her insides and Ember’s loudest moan till now was heard, her back arched up and she moved her legs around Nux’s waist as if she was afraid that he would run away.

The mixture of pain and pleasure assaulted her body and her blood leaked out of her pussy.

Nux, on the other hand, was on cloud nine right now.

Ember’s insides were squishy and warm, her walls crawled around his little brother, massaging and trying to engulf every single part of it.

This incredible tightness...

Nux liked it a lot.

Nux then waited for Ember’s expression to return to normal, and only after he was sure that she was okay did he finally move again.

This time, however, he moved as slowly as possible.

Suddenly, Ember grabbed his hands and pulled his face towards her.

With their face dangerously close to each other, Ember whispered,

“I am not weak.

You don’t have to be so careful. Something like this doesn’t even hurt.”

Ember understood what Nux was trying to do,

And although she was grateful that he was thinking about her well-being, right now, this wasn’t what she wanted.

“Just start with the good part already!”

Ember exclaimed.

Nux looked at her and blinked a few times.

Well, this... was surprising...

However, since he got the green signal, a big smile appeared on her face.

“I didn’t know you were such a big pervert, General Ember.”

Nux teased.

Ember, however, just closed her eyes.

“What did you say? Sorry, I fell asleep.”

Ember muttered without opening her eyes and hearing those words, Nux’s face twitched in annoyance.

“Now you have done it.”

Then, Nux quickly pulled his rod near the opening and then,

“AANNNhhhhhh!!!”

He drilled his dick right inside her pussy again.

Ember moaned loudly and at the same time, she tightened her hug around Nux’s neck.

This time, Nux didn’t care about anything and moved his dick back and then, he drilled it inside again and again and again.

“AAanhh! AAnhh! Anhh!”

The more he drilled, the louder Ember moaned and soon, her grip around Nux’s neck got weaker.

She was losing all her strength.

Jolts and jolts of pleasure assaulted her body, making it more numb and eventually, weaker.

Her mind was already in a blank state right now and all she could think of was to match her moans with Nux's drilling.

Yes, that was all the General of an incredible army was thinking right now.

However, Nux wasn't done yet.

Feeling that it wasn't enough, Nux grabbed Ember's left leg and placed it on his shoulder, then, he bent down, Ember's leg moved with him and continued to stretch further and further.

Her cave opened up as well and soon,

Nux drilled his rod even deeper.

“AAannhhhh!!”

Ember's eyes widened as a giant jolt of pleasure assaulted her mind.

She felt like Nux's rod has touched something it shouldn't have.

Nux, however, didn't care and continued to thrust his rod inside Ember's body.

This time, his hands didn't stay idle either, he grabbed Ember's squishy breasts gently and then, he started stroking that mountain gently while playing with that beautiful peak with his fingers.

\*Pah\* \*Pah\* \*Pah\*

“AAanh! AAanh! Anh!”

The pounding continued, the sounds of flesh meeting flesh and Ember's moans echoed inside the tent.

Nux, on the other hand, was trying his best to not moan and continued to play with Ember's body.

Soon, Ember's insides tightened, Nux quickly understood what was about to happen and to make everything much more pleasurable, he thought of a small plan.

Soon, a Black Coloured Mist oozed out from his body, it then moved towards Ember's eyes, taking away her vision. His hand trailed down to her entrance, his mouth moved close to Ember's ears and then with his other hand, he continued to play with her breasts.

Then suddenly,

“AANNgggnHHhhh!!!”

He used every weapon at the same time.

He bit her earlobe, pinched her nipple, pressed her clit and drilled inside her with all the power he had.

Ember, who was attacked by the waves of pleasure from all over her body wasn't able to take it and she moaned out loud.

Her walls tightened to an unbearable extent and she,

\*Squirt\* \*Squirt\* \*Squirt\*

Came nonstop.

On the other side, Nux wasn't any better either, as Ember's cave tightened, the pleasure he was feeling rose by multiple folds and,

“Ugghhh!! I am cummingggg!!”

His penis released its load inside her Ember's body.

His milk mixed with Ember's juice and a strange smell spread inside the tent, Nux and Ember, however, didn't care.

Right now, they just supported their body on each other and breathed heavily.

“Haah... Haa... So... haah... how was... your... haah... first time...?”  
Nux questioned with sweat rolling over his forehead while he lay on top of Ember’s soft body.

He then looked at Ember, waiting for his reply and soon, he saw a small smile on Ember’s face,

“Haa... haahh... haah...

We... haah... the night isn’t over yet...

Right...?”

Hearing that answer, a big smile appeared on Nux’s face.

“Of course not.”

Little Nux rose up again.

# Chapter 337

“Ugghh!! I am cumming again!!”

Nux groaned in pleasure as he painted Ember’s insides white with his milk again.

However, this time, Ember, who was moaning as loudly as possible a few rounds ago, didn’t let out any voice.

She was too tired to do so.

Even opening her mouth and moaning was a tiresome job for her right now.

She has orgasmed many times this night, however, those orgasms weren’t alone, they were accompanied by countless minor orgasms.

Right now, her body was so numb that she couldn’t even move a muscle, however, at the same time, her body was so sensitive that even a minor touch would send a jolt of pleasure into her body.

It was a strangely good feeling and Ember felt that she would get addicted to it.

\*Squirt\*

With Nux pushing his rod inside her with great force and then shooting his milk inside her, Ember’s already sensitive insides reacted and,

“AAaannnhhhhhh!!!”

She came again.

Then, Nux’s body fell on top of Ember’s, he then kissed her cheeks lightly and then rolled beside her.

“Haah... Haahh... Haah...”

“Haaahh... haa... haaa...”

The two of them took deep breaths.

Then, Nux felt a strange, but familiar energy entering his body.

Nux knew that he had levelled up, however, he did not bother looking at his status.

After all, the information in his Status would change very soon, there was no point in looking at it again and again.

‘Keke’

Thinking about it, a small smile appeared on Nux’s face.

Then, he moved his body towards Ember then grabbed her from behind, his hand naturally grabbed her firm breast while his other hand kneaded her well-toned abs.

Feeling his touch, a small smile appeared on Ember’s face and with all the strength she had, she moved her tired hand and placed it on top of Nux’s hand that was kneading her abs.

“That was amazing...”

She whispered softly.

“Indeed.”

Nux nodded in agreement and then, he continued.

“I never thought I would be in this position so soon.”

Ember smiled,

“So I was right, you did have your eyes on me...”

“Trust me, Ember. Every man present here in this Army Camp has his eyes on you,

You are just too hot to be ignored, a sinful body that would arouse even a eunuch combined with that fiery, wild and dominant attitude, there is no way anyone can resist you.

You are a cheat-like existence.”

“You sure have a sweet tongue, Boy...”

Hearing him praise her like that, Ember’s face turned a little red, however, since he was currently hugging her from behind, Nux couldn’t see that beautiful sight.

“Believe me, these are not just empty words.”

Nux muttered and then, a small smile appeared on his face,

“However, you were wrong about one thing.”

“Hmm? About what?” Ember questioned.

“The favour, I am not working so hard in stacking that because I wanted to fuck you. Your assumption was wrong.”

Nux revealed and Ember’s eyes widened in surprise.

If she had more energy, she would have turned around and looked at Nux with a shocked look on her face.

‘Did I give away my virginity without any reason?’

This question popped into her mind.

However, before she could think more, Nux’s hug tightened around her tired body, she could feel Nux’s mouth coming close to her ears and for some reason, a subtle wave of pleasure was released inside her body.

Then, Nux started,

“You see, if I only wanted to spend a night with you, I would have asked it the first time I saved your army.

As you said, like a Warrior, I would have been direct with my approach and I would have asked you directly. I would not have waited for so long.”

Nux muttered and then, his smile widened.

“However, you see, I am a special case.”

“Special case?”

Ember frowned.

Nux then moved even close to Ember, tightened his hug around her, and placed his half-erect dick between her soft thighs, then, he bit her earlobe and kissed her nape.

“You see, I have this strange problem,

I did not know about this before, however, after spending so much time with Thyra and my other women, I am finally sure of this.

I do not just have sex with a woman and get over it.

There is a greedy demon living inside me, once I spend a night with a woman, I want her to be mine and mine alone.”

Then, Nux’s Golden eyes turned dark,

“I will not allow them to get away from me.

Therefore,”

Nux’s hand then trailed down from her abs and reached towards her pussy,

“What I wanted was not just a simple one-night stand,

The Greedy me wanted the complete Ember Windstar all for myself.”

Then, Nux gently grabbed Ember’s little sister, and,

“Annh~”

A small moan leaked out of Ember’s mouth. Right now, her face was completely red, however, as a strong woman, Ember still wanted to stand up for herself.

“D-Did you think that stacking favours would be enough to have ‘Ember Windstar’ all for yourself?”

“Of course not, how could the woman I set my eyes on be that cheap?”

I knew that no matter how many times I save your or your soldiers’ life, it won’t be enough to get what I wanted, therefore, I changed my plans.

Rather than getting Ember Windstar, what I wanted was the ‘way’ to get Ember Windstar.”

Hearing that answer, a satisfied smile appeared on Ember’s face.

Then, she spoke,

“I like you, boy.”

“You don’t need to stack any more favours, I will give you what you want right now.

Since ancient times, there is only one way to get what you want,

Fight for it.

Getting ‘Ember Windstar’ all for yourself is simple,

Defeat ‘Ember Windstar’ in a duel and you demand anything you want.”

“Can I get ‘Ember Windstar’ as a reward as well?” Nux questioned with a smile.

Suddenly, Ember smiled wildly and a ferocious aura was released from her body.

“Winner takes all, boy.”

# Chapter 338

Suddenly, Ember smiled wildly and a ferocious aura was released from her body.

“Winner takes all, boy.”

“Winner takes all, huh...”

An Aura, that overpowered Ember’s Aura released from his body then, and a wild smile appeared on Nux’s face.

“Alright then, Ember Windstar, I, Nux Leander, challenge you to a Duel, Accept it only if you are willing to be mine for the rest of your life.”

A serious expression appeared on Ember’s face.

“Are you sure you want to do it right now? With your talent, it is only a matter of time before you become a King Stage Cultivator, it won’t be too late to challenge me by then.

Keep in mind, I, as a Warrior, won’t go easy on you no matter what.”

Nux shook his head,

“No, now that I see the path right in front of me, I won’t be able to wait for long.

I am an impatient man.”

Nux then moved his mouth close to Ember’s ears and whispered.

“I want you to be mine as soon as possible.”

This time, however, Ember didn't blush or feel any sort of pleasure, even if she did, she didn't show it on her face.

Rather than pleasure, there was a frown on her face,

“You seem pretty confident that you will win against me.”

Ember narrowed her eyes.

“With the thought of winning you in my mind, I am very motivated.”

“Motivation won't help you in a battle against absolute power.”

Nux chuckled,

“I won't be holding back.”

Ember's face turned solemn,

“How much time do you need?”

Without wasting any more time in small talks, Ember questioned.

“As soon as possible.

I am ready even if it is right now.

I want you to be m-”

“Tomorrow evening.

You must be tired right now, rest well,

I will meet you tomorrow evening.”

Ember muttered and then, she stood up.

...or she tried to.

Nux, however, grabbed her from behind and tightened his hug around her.

“Stay with me~”

At the same time, Nux started kneading her breasts and rubbing his dick against her soft and perky butt.

A small blush appeared on Ember’s face, this time, however, her pride as a Warrior was on the line. Therefore, she battled the pleasure she was feeling and even though she was tired, she forced herself to stand up and then she looked at Nux with a solemn look on her face.

“Be prepared for the battle.”

Then, she wore her clothes and turned around.

...

‘She got away...’

After Ember left her tent, a big, wide smile appeared on Nux’s face.

‘She is too much...’

Nux thought inwardly, then, he placed his hand on his chest and felt his heart that was beating so quickly that it felt like it would burst out.

‘She is too fucking much...’

I will make that Wild General mine!’

Nux swore in his heart and his smile widened even more.

He was really enjoying this chase.

“Tsk Tsk, just look at that smile on your face, you are really enjoying whatever is happening, aren’t you?”

Nux finally came out of his reverie, then, he turned towards Thyra who was looking at him with an extremely jealous look on her face.

“Tsk Tsk, look at you, so? Did you enjoy peeking at us?”

Nux questioned with a playful look on his face.

“Naah, it was good,

But I still feel me and you looked better together compared to Ember and you.”

Thyra smiled.

Nux chuckled as well.

...

Time passed and soon, it was time for the battle.

“Assistant General Nux.”

And soon, Nux heard a voice.

A big smile appeared on his face and he walked out of the tent.

“Assistant General Nux, General Emb-”

“Take me there.”

Nux ordered impatiently.

“Y-Yes, Sir.”

The soldier saluted and then, he turned around.

Nux followed the soldier and soon, he appeared in front of Ember’s room.

“The General is waiting for you inside her room.”

The Soldier muttered.

Nux nodded and then, he stepped inside the room.

“You look unbearably beautiful, General Ember.”

Nux smiled as he glanced at the General who was wearing her normal Coat, this time, however, her hair were tied into a pony and there was a red golden sword in her hand.

“Don’t bother, I won’t go easy on you.”

Ember replied with a solemn look on her face.

Nux just smiled and questioned.

“Where are we fighting?”

“Follow me.”

Ember muttered and then, she turned around.

Ember then moved out of the room from the backdoor and started running in a certain direction.

Nux followed her without any problems and soon, the two of them appeared in front of a plain field.

“This will be our Battle Arena.”

“It is finally starting huh...”

Nux muttered as he glanced at Ember who was pointing her sword at him.

“I hope you are prepared for defeat.”

Ember spoke.

Nux just smiled and his sword appeared in his hand.

Ember took it as his approval and then,

She disappeared.

Nux turned around and saw that she was already behind him.

With her sword covered with flames, she attacked.

\*Clank\*

Their sword clashed.

Nux then jumped back however, soon, Wind Blades were shot at him.

Nux jumped to the side and dodged, however, as if his moves were already predicted by his opponent, a fireball appeared right in front of him.

Nux slashed his sword, his sword and the Fireball clashed and soon,

\*BOOM\*

The fireball exploded.

Ember Windstar, the General of the Woods Dynasty, even though she wasn't a Peak King Stage Cultivator, she was still considered one of the strongest King Stage Cultivators in the world and the reason for that was her Double Affinity.

The Wind Element that drastically increases the Speed, and the Fire fire that increases the Power,

This woman had affinities with both of them, this combined with how smartly she uses her two elements to her advantage, her battle sense and surrounding awareness,

She was a scary opponent to fight against.

# Chapter 339

She was a scary opponent to fight against.

However, this is only true for a normal cultivator, in front of a Monster like Nux,

Things were different.

The smoke that spread around the area after the explosion cleared up and Ember narrowed her eyes as she glanced at the scene in front of him with a solemn look on her face.

“Water Element...”

She muttered as she noticed Nux standing in front of her, his entire body was covered with a layer of Water Shield that had cracks all over it, however, Nux, that was protected by the shield was completely fine.

“That was a precise use of [Water Shield], it seems you have practised it well and have good control over your element.

Good.”

Ember praised honestly and Nux chuckled.

Then, he pointed his sword at Ember, his pose was quite similar to Ember’s, thinking that he was taunting her, Ember narrowed her eyes and decided to act again, however, suddenly,

Nux disappeared.

\*Clank\*

He then appeared right in front of Ember and slashed his sword at her, she blocked his attack with her sword, however, this time, Nux was the one who

was overpowering her.

Ember frowned, however, since she was currently in the battle, she didn't have much time to think and analyse this, therefore, she did what was required and jumped back.

\*Whoosh\* \*Whoosh\* \*Whoosh\*

At the same time, she also shot some Wind Blades at Nux to distract him.

Wind Blades weren't as strong as Fire Balls, however, they were faster, and dodging one in a battle was troublesome.

Ember's plan was simple, she wanted Nux to stop there and block all the Wind Blades, and while he is doing at, she would regain her balance and would prepare for her next attack.

This time, however, things didn't go as she planned and Nux's next actions surprised Ember to her core.

\*Whoosh\* \*Whoosh\* \*Whoosh\*

Wind Blades formed behind Nux and soon, they were shot towards the Wind Blades made by Ember and the opposing Wind Blades cancelled each other perfectly.

“W-Wind Elements...”

‘He has affinities with two elements as well!’

Ember realized.

However, this was just the beginning.

Nux then appeared in front of her and attacked.

\*Clank\*

Their swords clashed with each other, and Ember jumped back again, however, while she was jumping back, she noticed that the ground behind her had turned into Sharp Spikes.

“!!!”

Ember’s eyes widened in surprise.

‘Earth Element!’

She couldn’t believe what she was seeing.

Then, she shifted the weight of her body to the other leg and avoided this situation with just a small mark on her shoe.

However, right as she landed on the ground, she felt that the temperature around her has changed. She then looked in front of her and,

“!!!”

Her eyes widened in horror.

A big Wave of Fire was moving towards her!

And she had no way to defend against it!

In the end, Ember could only embrace herself for the impact and swung her sword toward the Flames coming towards her.

**\*KABOOM\***

An explosion sounded, Ember’s body flew back and fell on the ground.

She was hurt, her armour was burnt and was falling apart, her clothes behind her armour had burnt as well, even her white skin had a few marks,

It could be said that her condition was bad, however, she wasn’t done yet.

She still had what it takes to win this fight!

Therefore, Ember moved and then stood up.

Or so she wanted to...

However, before she could,

A sword was placed on her neck.

Ember then looked at the man who was standing right behind her head,

“That was my strongest Wide Area attack, [Fire Slash], cool right?”

Nux questioned with a small smile on her face and soon, Ember realized something.

“Fire... Fire Element as well...

Water, Wind, Earth and Fire... y-you...

You have an affinity with all four elements!”

Nux’s chuckled,

“I do.”

Ember, however, couldn’t digest this,

“H-How is this possible!

People with affinity with 2 Elements at the same time are rare, I have never heard about someone who has an affinity with 3, how do you have an affinity with all 4 of these elements!?”

“I am a special case.”

Nux’s smile widened and then, he continued,

“Well, a normal person can’t have Ember Windstar all for himself now can he?”

“ ... ”

Ember turned silent and soon, she realized another thing.

She lost...

She lost a battle against an Expert Stage Cultivator...

And as if confirming that fact, Nux smiled,

“Ember Windstar, the opponent’s sword is on your neck, do you accept your defeat?”

With a bitter look on her face, Ember answered,

“I do.”

Nux’s continued with the same smile,

“Winner Takes All,

According to this statement,

I, the winner of the Duel, can demand anything I want, correct?”

“Yes, that is correct...”

Ember answered with a lost look on her face.

She still couldn’t accept her defeat, and in her mind, she was repeating the battle and was trying to find ways to win.

However, Nux’s next actions brought her out of her reverie.

He moved his sword from her neck, then stored it inside his storage ring, then, he extended his hands towards her,

Ember took the hand and Nux pulled her up.

Then, a healing potion appeared in Nux's hand.

He then looked at Ember and his smile widened,

“Then from now onwards,

You, Ember Windstar, will be mine and mine alone.”

Nux quickly drank the healing potion and then,

“!!!”

He sealed Ember's lips, bringing her out of her reverie.

Ember then drank the healing potion, directly from Nux's mouth, once the potion was finished, the two of them started kissing and exchanging their saliva.

Nux's tongue moved wildly and explored Ember's mouth while his hands moved towards her butt and he pulled her close to him.

2 minutes later, the Kiss finally ended, and then, Nux questioned,

“Do you accept it?”

“Can I deny it?”

Ember questioned with a playful smile on her face.

“The Loser has no right to deny the Winner's demand.

From now on, whether you want it or not,

You are mine.”

Nux answered as his golden eyes shined brightly and then, he sealed Ember's lips again.

This time, Ember reciprocated as well and her tongue moved as well.

Their tongues clashed with each other for supremacy, rolling around and licking each other, Nux, however, cheated and started kneading Ember's butt.

“Mhf~”

A small, muffled moan leaked out of Ember's mouth and soon, Nux's tongue dominated the match.

After sharing a 3 minute-long kiss, the two of them separated and then, Ember smiled,

“You actually won against me, Nux.”

A satisfied smile appeared on Nux's face.

Hearing the word 'Boy' again and again was getting annoying.

He felt that the distance between the two of them was too far, maybe Ember understood that and changed her way of addressing him.

“I told you I would.”

Nux nodded.

“Were you that confident in your strength, or am I just too weak for you?”

Ember questioned.

“...”

Nux didn't know how to answer this question.

However, Ember wasn't done yet.

“And why are you stronger than a normal Expert Stage Cultivator? How were you, an Expert Stage Cultivator, were able to push away me, a King Stage Cultivator?”

This is just not possible.

Even having an affinity with all 4 elements doesn't explain this.

Just ho-"

"Don't bother."

Suddenly, Ember heard a voice and a frown appeared on her face.

This voice...

She then turned around and there, she saw Thyra leaning on a tree with a casual look on her face.

Seeing that she has gained her attention, Thyra continued,

"Don't use normal standards to judge him, he is different."

"W-Why are you here?"

Ember questioned with a flustered look on her face.

Seeing that look, Thyra smiled inwardly.

'Heh, I can finally get back to you, 'General' Ember.'

"Why would I not be here? How can I miss the scene where after which another woman would become my sister?"

Ember's face turned red.

"Y-You already knew about it?"

"Of course I did. You think my man would hide anything from me?"

Thyra smiled and then continued,

"Woman, the moment you tried to tease him, your fate was sealed."

“Tsk Tsk, why do you make it sound like I am a bad person.”

Suddenly, Nux snorted.

“You are a bad person, Nux.”

Thyra muttered.

“Why are you acting like you already knew that I would lose this match?”

Suddenly, Ember questioned.

“Huh? Isn’t that obvious? Because I did know about the results already, there is no way you can defeat Nux.”

Thyra answered as if it was the most obvious thing in the world.

“Wha-”

Eber wanted to question, however, Nux interrupted.

“Thyra, wear your mask, Ember, wear another Coat, this one is all torn up.”

While saying that, Nux wore his mask.

“Huh?”

Ember frowned, she then looked at Nux before her eyes fell on Thyra, she then realized that Thyra had already covered her face with a mask and was surprised.

She then copied Thyra and did as Nux said.

\*Step\* \*Step\* \*Step\*

Then, Ember, Thyra and Nux heard the sound of footsteps.

Someone was coming towards them.

# Chapter 340

“General Ember!”

The soldier saluted.

“Why are you here? I told you not to follow me, right?”

Ember questioned with a frown on her face.

She knew that her soldiers won't dare to disobey her orders, not until something that they can't handle on their own happens.

“General Ember, Lord Finkelstein is here.”

The soldier reported and as soon as Ember heard that name, her face turned solemn.

“Finkelstein? Who is he?”

Nux questioned with a frown on his face.

Ember doesn't show this type of expression why often.

Nux was sure that something was wrong with this Finkelstein guy.

Ember turned towards Nux and answered,

“He is a troublesome man to deal with.”

“Huh? How can there be someone more troublesome than me?”

Nux's ego was hurt.

And hearing those words, Ember shook her head in helplessness. She look at Thyra for help, however, the woman was busy nodding her head, agreeing with Nux's statement.

‘Whatever, let’s just meet him.’

In the end, Ember just shook her head and gave up.

She then turned towards the soldier and ordered,

“Let’s go.”

“Yes, General.”

The four of them then left the plain fields and returned to the army camp, there, they saw a man wearing lavish clothes, standing in front of the 3 Deputy Generals of the Woods Dynasty’s army with an arrogant look on his face.

“Why is she not here yet? Does she not respect the Dynast of this Dynasty?”

The man questioned in anger.

“Don’t act like you are the Dynast of this Dynasty.”

Laurence, one of the Deputy Generals snorted.

“Deputy General Laurence, I may not be the Dynast of this Dynasty, however, I still hold the message from the Dynast, which means, that right now, I represent the Dynast himself.

And even if I am not representing him, you are not someone who can talk to me like that.

Know your place.”

Finkelstein narrowed his eyes as he glanced at Laurence.

“As expected of the Soldiers who work under that Ember, they are all rude and useless.”

Finkelstein snorted.

Laurence gritted his teeth.

He wanted to lash out and attack this man standing in front of him, however, he could not do it.

This man was a King Stage Cultivator, he was stronger than him and was comparable to the General.

Of course, Lawrence wasn't scared, however, if he was the one who attacked first, this bastard might use that as a reason to cause trouble for the General.

This was something Lawrence cannot accept.

Therefore, all he could do was grit his teeth and stay silent.

Seeing this, a big, wide smile appeared on Finkelstein's face and he continued,

“Heh, rude and useless, I guess I should add coward to that list as well.”

Lawrence clenched his fist in anger, and the other soldiers who surrounded them felt uncomfortable as well.

However, they didn't have to stay that way for long,

“Did you just call the soldiers serving the Army of the Woods Dynasty useless?”

Ember questioned with a curious look on her face.

Finkelstein turned towards Ember and scowled.

“ ... ”

However, he did not have any answers to her question.

And seeing that, Ember smiled,

“What happened? Why are you not answering my question? Did you perhaps say those words by mistake? Do you want to apologize for that?”

“The way a subordinate act reflects on how a leader deals with different situations.

If your subordinates are so easily cornered, it tells a lot about you as a leader.

The Soldiers of our army may not be useless, rude, or cowards, however, with you as their leader, they certainly look like one.”

Ember narrowed her eyes.

“I am just asking this for confirmation, but,

Did you just call me a coward?”

A ferocious Aura was released from Ember’s body.

The suffocating Aura affected everyone around the area and Finkelstein was no exception as well.

He took a step back and didn’t say anything.

“ ... ”

Seeing this scene, Nux, who was standing behind Ember chuckled,

“Heh, and he called our soldiers coward.”

“Pfft.”

Thyra didn’t even try to control herself and laughed out loud.

Seeing this, the rest of the soldiers smiled as well.

“And who are you?”

Not liking Nux's comment one bit, Finkelstein questioned as he narrowed his eyes in anger.

“Heeh? Why do I have to answer you?”

Nux questioned.

“Because I am someone who can Kill you with my eyes closed.”

Finkelstein answered arrogantly.

Hearing those words, Nux chuckled.

“Oh God, I am so very scared.”

Again, the soldiers started chuckling and this time, the Deputy Generals started sympathizing with Finkelstein. They were in the same position as him a few days ago after all.

Finkelstein already started hating this man in front of him.

“Aren't you a little too arrogant for someone who is just an Expert Stage Cultivator?”

“Hmm? At least I have the guts to fight against Cultivators who are in the same Cultivation Stage as me.”

Nux smiled and a vein popped up on Finkelstein's forehead.

In the end, he couldn't control himself anymore and a sword appeared in his hands,

“That's it. I gave you enough chances already.”

He roared in rage, however, just as he was about to dash towards Nux, a sword appeared in Ember's hand.

Seeing that, Finkelstein paused.

He might act all mighty and great, however, in his heart, he knew that he was no match for Ember even though they both are King Stage Cultivators.

He might be able to fight against her for a while, however, he knew that eventually, he would lose.

Not only that, but this was Ember's territory, he can't act recklessly here. Even if he does defeat her, there is no guarantee that others won't attack him.

Therefore, Finkelstein had to hold back.

Actually, in truth, he doesn't have to hold back at all.

He might not be able to defeat Ember through his strength, however,

That doesn't mean that he cannot use any other means.

He could always use some 'other means' after all.

Thinking about it, a small smile appeared on Finkelstein's face.

“Whatever, let's not talk about useless stuff anymore,

I am here for something much more important.”

# Chapter 341

“Whatever, let’s not talk about useless stuff anymore,  
I am here for something much more important.”

Seeing that smile on Finkelstein’s face, Nux narrowed his eyes in doubt.  
For some reason, he did not like that smile at all.

And as if she was thinking the same thing, Ember’s expression wasn’t good  
either.

“What is it?”

She questioned.

“It is the response from the Dynast to your recent letter.”

Finkelstein muttered with a big smile on his face and then, the ring on his  
finger shined and an envelope that had Dynast’s insignia printed on it  
appeared in his hand.

Ember and the other soldiers present here bowed their heads and placed  
their right hands on their chests. Nux looked around with a frown, Thyra  
then looked at him and nodded.

The two of them then followed the other soldiers and bowed their heads as  
well.

With a solemn look on his face, Finkelstein looked at Ember and muttered,

“The topic of this letter is a little sensitive, order everyone else to leave.”

This time, Ember didn’t debate about this either, she had talked about the  
Emperor Stage Cultivator in her previous letter, the topic of this letter was  
indeed a bit too sensitive for everyone else to hear.

Therefore, she nodded her head and turned toward Lawrence.

Lawrence understood what she wanted and turned around.

“Everyone, I would be the one training you all today!

Show me your spirit!”

“YEAHHHH!!”

The soldiers roared together and then, everyone followed Lawrence.

Ember then looked at Nux and nodded.

Nux nodded back and then, he and Thyra turned around.

Ember then turned towards Finkelstein and muttered,

“Follow me.”

Finkelstein nodded.

‘I don’t like that smile on that man’s face.’

As they were leaving, Thyra muttered.

Nux nodded.

‘I don’t like that as well, don’t worry, I am not planning to leave just yet.’

Instantly, Thyra understood what Nux was going to do and nodded.

The two of them then ‘left’ the area and once Nux was far enough, he activated his [Conceal] and returned to Ember’s room.

There, he saw Finkelstein opening the letter, and then, he started reading it with a wide smile on his face.

” ‘To General Ember Windfall.

I have received your reports and I only have one comment on this matter,

If you can't lead the Army anymore, just say it directly, don't make up useless stories. The Emperor of the Solid Earth Kingdom making a move on his own? Do you think it is a joke? Can you be more absurd? Do you even know what you are talking about?

Do you think you are strong enough to survive if your opponent is the Emperor?

Who do you think you are?

And why would the Emperor move for someone as insignificant as you? Do you think he has that much time in his hands?

You fail to calculate the enemy's moves, your spies are unable to enter the Solid Earth Kingdom, you do not have any information in your hands and in this bad situation, all you are doing is coming up with absurd stories like that!?

Do you not want to be a General anymore?

If that is the case, you can come forward and say it right to my face, I have better options who can surely do a better job than you are doing.

Ember Windstar, keep this in your mind, this is your last warning, if you come up with something as absurd as this again, or if you fail to show me the results again, I will take away your position and will give it to someone who actually deserves it.

As for the help you asked for regarding this matter,

I believe I don't have to say anything anymore.

Ellinger Woods, The Dynast of the Woods Dynasty' ”

Finkelstein then rolled the letter respectfully and the letter disappeared from his hands.

Then, he looked at Ember, his solemn expression turned into a wide smile and he snorted.

“Tsk Tsk, to think you would come up with something so absurd. No wonder the Dynast is so angry. I knew you were not that good, however, I had no idea that you were that useless.

This is truly shocking.”

Hearing those words coming from his mouth, Ember, who was still a little doubtful was now sure.

Thinking that Finkelstein, a King Stage Cultivator, coming here on his own just to deliver this message was absurd, he must have another goal in his mind.

And now, the goal was revealed.

Him coming here while carrying this letter only meant one thing.

The Dynast was sending him to make a Statement.

The ‘replacement’ that the Dynast was talking about in this letter was this man right in front of her.

The Dynast and the Finkelstein, the two of them were in this together.

‘To think you would go this far.’

Ember thought inwardly, however, outwardly, she didn’t show any other expression.

Seeing this, Finkelstein pouted.

He wanted to see despair and hopelessness on this woman’s face.

“Heh, I hope you do a better job next time, General Ember, don’t trouble our Dynast with something so absurd and childish next time. You are a mature King Stage Cultivator, you should understand the weight of

responsibility that is on your shoulders and consider everything before you make a move.”

He ‘guided’.

Of course, he wasn’t actually guiding, he just wanted to tease Ember.

Ember, however, didn’t care about it at all,

“Now that you have delivered your letter, I believe you should return, you are a busy man, after all, right?”

Finkelstein’s mouth twitched in frustration, however, in the end, he just nodded.

“I will take my leave then.”

‘Act all you want you bitch, I would like to see your expression once your position is taken away from you. Heh, then, you will show me the expression that I long to see on your face.’

An evil smile appeared on Finkelstein’s face as he left Ember’s room.

After he left, Nux appeared right in front of Ember and questioned with an extremely joyful face.

“Is the relationship between you are the Dynast of the Dynasty bad?”

# Chapter 342

“Is the relationship between you and the Dynast of the Dynasty bad?”

Nux questioned with an extremely joyful look on his face.

Seeing that face, Ember frowned,

“Why do you look so happy after hearing that?”

“Oh... Ah, I mean,”

Nux’s face then turned solemn and he questioned.

“It seems that the relation between you and the Dynast is not very healthy, is that true?”

Ember’s face twitched when she noticed how quickly Nux’s expression changed, however, in the end, she just shook his head and answered,

“Yes, you are correct, the relationship between me and the Dynast isn’t good.”

“Why?” Nux questioned out of curiosity.

Ember then glanced at Nux for a while and then, she answered,

“It started 10 years ago when the previous Dynast of the Kingdom died of illness and his oldest son took over and became the new Dynast of the Dynasty.

The new Dynast was strong, thoughtful, and mature, however, he had one weakness, his extreme lust.

After I returned to the Capital to greet the new Dynast, I caught that man’s eye and he asked me to be his woman, I, of course, rejected that offer.

My condition was simple, defeat me and ask what you want from me.

However, since the Dynast is only an Expert Stage Cultivator, he wasn't strong enough to defeat me as you did, neither was he brave enough to challenge me, nor was he patient enough to wait and become stronger in order to defeat.

He chose the easiest way possible.

And that was to use his newly gained power and force me into marrying him.

However, I, who has been serving as a General of the Dynasty for so long had a considerable amount of influence as well.

The Dynast soon realized that his methods won't work on me and since then, he has been holding a grudge against me.

This is not the first time something like this has happened, he had tried to get his revenge on me before as well,

Sometimes, he would cut short our food supply, sometimes, he would ask us to do impossible missions with less manpower or something like that. His goal was simple, he wanted to take away my position as the General of the Dynasty and once my influence weakens, he would use that chance to force me into marrying him.

However, I did not give in, me and my soldiers still charged through and passed all his trials without giving him any chance to complain.

Things were going well but I never expected that the Dynast would take the involvement of the Emperor Stage Cultivator so lightly and use it to pressure me again.

This is simply ridiculous, he is not thinking about the lives of the Soldiers serving the Dynasty at all!"

Ember smashed the table in front of him in anger.

Nux, who heard everything frowned.

This story wasn't really surprising, a perverted ruler going after a beautiful woman, it was a pretty common story, heck, with how beautiful Ember is, he could completely relate with the Dynast. Of course, his steps were too extreme and he was a moron, but still, they both had the same initial thought,

Ember was beautiful and they both wanted her all for themselves.

He could understand what the Dynast was thinking, what he couldn't understand was what Ember was thinking.

“If the Dynast treated you so unfairly, then why did you not quit your position yourself?”

“Won't I just be giving him exactly what he wants if I do that?”

Ember questioned.

“Huh?”

Nux did not understand.

“There is a reason why the Dynast wants to take away my position so desperately.

That bastard is playing a long game, after my position is gone, a few years later, my achievements would be forgotten and the influence I hold will weaken.

Once my influence is not strong enough to protect me anymore, the Dynast would pressure me into marrying him and I won't be able to reject him.

So giving up on my position is just playing right into his hands.” Ember explained.

Hearing this, Nux's frown deepened,

“Is it worth going through so many troubles for?”

Why not just leave the Dynasty and settle somewhere else?”

“Settle somewhere else? Where?”

In any other Kingdom? Do you think any Kingdom would agree to let the General of the enemy nation live in their land?”

Ember questioned.

“Why not hide your identity?”

Nux questioned.

“Again, do you think, I, as a King Stage Cultivator can hide my identity so easily?”

“There are those wandering cultivators, right? The cultivators who live in seclusion, avoiding all the troublesome situations and only getting involved in something that actually interests them, can’t you live like that?”

Ember shook her head,

“If I was a Wandering Cultivator from the start, I would have been able to do that, however, I am the General of the Woods Dynasty, there are certain things that I know that a normal wandering cultivator shouldn’t know.

The Enemy nations would try their best to capture me and extract the information they want, and my own nation...

Well, since the Ruler of the nation wants me, there aren’t many places where I can hide and live freely.”

A long sigh then escaped Ember’s mouth and she continued,

“In the end, being the General of the Army, defending the Dynasty, and strengthening my influence is the only way for me to live safely and independently.”

“ ... ”

Nux turned silent and started thinking about everything more deeply.

Today, he finally realized how strong the Ruler of the Nation is.

Even though he is just an Expert Stage Cultivator, he has the power to trouble a strong King Stage Cultivator like Ember, and he is not even using his trump card yet.

‘Teacher Arvina... you asked me why I wanted to become the King, right?’

You asked me what my goal is, right?’

I think I finally found the answer to that answer.’

A strange shine lit up in Nux’s beautiful eyes, he then looked at Ember and questioned,

“Ember Windstar, do you trust me?”

# Chapter 343

“Ember Windstar, do you trust me?”

“Huh?”

Hearing the sudden question, Ember frowned.

“C’mon, you belong to me now, Ember.

You trust me with all your heart, right?”

Ember’s face momentarily turned red before turning back to normal and she questioned,

“What are you planning?”

“Well, I’ll tell you after you answer my question.”

Nux smiled.

“You are annoying.”

Ember complained.

“So? Do you trust me?”

“It doesn’t matter if I trust you or not. I am yours now, you have the responsibility to take care of me. You can do whatever you like, I will follow you.”

Ember answered.

“Hmmm, I didn’t you were the shy type.”

Nux muttered.

Ember's face twitched and she retorted in anger.

“Are you going to tell me what you are thinking or not!?”

“Alright Alright, you don't have to be so aggressive, I will tell you.”

Nux chuckled and then, he revealed his plan,

“Let's run away.”

“Huh?” Ember frowned.

“...”

Nux, however, did not explain any further and continued to look at Ember with a smile on his face.

“Didn't I just tell you the problem? I can't run away, I don't have anywhere else to go.”

“You do not have to worry about that, I have a perfect place where you can live without any troubles at all.

You just have to agree and follow me.”

Nux replied.

“...”

Ember turned silent and started thinking.

“...what about my soldiers...?”

In the end, she voiced her worries.

“They will be going against an Army that is a lot stronger than them, if I am not here with them, many of them would lose their life.

I don't want that to happen.”

“Things would be worse if you stay here, Ember.

Currently, there is no way for you and your army to win, if the two nations clash, your defeat is inevitable. There are 7 King Stage Cultivators in the opponents camp and I am not even talking about the Emperor right now.

If your army wants to win this war, the only way is to seek the Dynast’s help. However, with your relationship with the Dynast, that man would never help you and your soldiers will be the ones to suffer because of this.

Right now, the only thing you can do is leave, this way, you will be safe and the Dynast would be forced to help the army since the newly appointed General would be his subordinate.”

“...”

Ember turned silent.

“So the real problem is me...?”

She questioned.

“No, the real problem is not you, Ember.

The real problem is the Dynast. However, since the Dynast holds the power, we can’t go against him right now.

We can only back down.”

Nux answered.

Ember nodded and then, she spoke,

“I understand, I will leave with you. However, we won’t be leaving today.”

This time, the determination in Ember’s eyes was unwavering.

She won’t back off, and Nux knew him.

However, he was curious.

“Why do you say that?”

“I will write a resignation letter to the Dynast and will only leave once the next General arrives. I absolutely won’t leave my soldiers leaderless, even for a single day.

I don’t know when those bastards will attack us again.”

Nux looked into Ember’s fiery red eyes and couldn’t help but smile,

“Alright, we will do as you say but the talk with the Deputy Generals, you would only tell them what I tell you, okay?”

“Deal.”

Ember nodded and then, she started writing the letter.

...

‘I need your help.’

‘Leave it on me.’

Thyra nodded and then, she walked towards the three Deputy Generals who were standing together discussing something with solemn looks on their faces.

“I did not like the expression on Finkelstein’s face when he left.”

Thyra spoke.

The three Deputy Generals looked at her and Lawrence nodded,

“I did not like that as well.”

Thyra continued.

“The General hasn’t come outside as well, I am worried.”

Lawrence looked towards Ember’s room and narrowed his eyes,

“Don’t worry, she will come out soon.”

“I know that.”

Thyra nodded and continued talking with the three Deputy Generals.

Time passed and soon, Ember walked out of her room with a solemn expression on her face.

Thyra and the Three Deputy Generals rushed toward her.

“General, what happened, what did the Dynast’s letter say?” Lawrence questioned.

Ember then looked at the 4 people in front of her and then, she answered,

“He refused to help us in any way possible.”

Lawrence frowned,

“Why do you have that expression on your face then? Hadn’t we already expected that?”

“There is something that you are not telling us, isn’t there?”

Thyra narrowed her eyes and questioned.

Lawrence and the other two Deputy Generals frowned as well.

Seeing that she couldn’t hide it anymore, Ember sighed,

“The Dynast has ordered me to give up on my position as the General of the Army and return.”

“WHAT!?”

The three Deputy Generals shouted in shock.

“Why would he do that!?”

“Is he out of his mind!?”

“Where else would he find a better General than you!?”

“Wait... is it that Finkelstein bastard?”

“NO! I would never serve that bastard as my leader!”

“I agree! I would rather die!”

The Deputy Generals showed their rejection, however, Lawrence...

He was oddly silent.

“General...”

“What is it?” Ember questioned as she turned towards Lawrence.

“...is it related to ‘that’ incident?”

“...yes.” Ember nodded and the three Deputy Generals turned silent.

“That bastard! He still wants to force you into marrying him!”

“This is unacceptable!”

“Yes! I don’t accept this! I would leave the army as well! I don’t want to serve this Dynasty anymore!”

“Yes! I will follow the General as well!”

“Indeed.”

“No, I won’t allow it.”

Ember, however, shook her head.

“Why?”

“Remember, your family is still living in the Dynasty. Don’t do something stupid, it might harm your family in the future.

I am different, my family has already abandoned me.”

“ ... ”

The Deputy Generals turned silent.

“...what would you do now?”

After a long silence, Lawrence questioned.

“I can’t return to the capital, you know what would happen if I do that,”  
Ember answered.

“Then where are you planning to go?”

“She will be going with me.”

# Chapter 344

“She will be going with me.”

Lawrence and the other two Deputy Generals frowned as their eyes fell on Nux who was walking towards them.

“Why would General Ember go with you?”

A Deputy General couldn't hold himself back and questioned out loud.

Hearing his question, Nux smiled, he then grabbed Ember's hand, crossed his fingers with hers, and smiled,

“Well, you don't have to know about it.”

Nux tried to shake it off, however, this little action of his left a huge impact on 3 Deputy Generals' minds.

Especially when they saw that General Ember wasn't resisting Nux's touch at all.

“Y-You... you two...”

Lawrence didn't know what to say.

Nux, however, understood what he wanted to ask and smiled,

“What you are thinking is current.

I and Ember are one now~”

And as if to prove what he said,

Nux moved his head and kissed Ember's cheeks right in front of them.

“!!!”

The Deputy Generals couldn't believe what they were seeing!

This man was bold enough to Kiss General Ember and the General just stood there without doing anything.

Her reaction to this entire situation was just the initial shock and a small blush on her face that disappeared as soon as it appeared. Other than that, General Ember did not react at all.

Her reaction proved it.

This man wearing black clothes and a mask on his face wasn't lying.

He actually managed to make The Fiery Killer his woman.

Not only that, but he was even flexing about it in front of everyone as he wants.

“You are just an Expert Stage Cultivator, how did you defeat the General?”

Ember Windstar is a very popular woman inside the Woods Dynasty and many men had tried to win her heart, therefore, her ‘condition’ of winning against her in order to win her heart was very popular and a lot of people knew about it.

It was the only reason why flocks of men trying to woo Ember didn't surround them every single day.

Hearing this question, the other 2 Deputy Generals got curious as well and looked at Nux with doubtful looks on their faces.

‘This guy defeated General Ember?’

‘Is he that strong? It doesn't look like this.’

‘Did he... cheat?’

‘That might be the case...’

The Deputy Generals then narrowed their eyes and looked at Nux suspiciously.

Nux, however, just chuckled and continued,

“Tsk Tsk, you guys wouldn’t understand, that ‘condition’ was just a farce arranged by Ember to keep the men she didn’t like away from her, it acted like a ‘reason’ that she could use in order to reject the men she didn’t like and,”

Nux then looked at Ember and smiled. He moved his hand from her hand and placed it around her waist, pulling her close to him,

“And wait for the man she actually likes.”

“Does that mean...”

“Yes, you are right, I did not defeat Ember, I just impressed her and managed to win her heart.”

Nux answered as he kissed Ember’s cheeks again.

The 3 Deputy Generals were shocked and at the same time, they were extremely jealous.

Just how...

Just how could someone else do what... what they were trying to do for so long...

This is not fair!

Also, why was the General acting so meekly!?

She hasn’t said a word from the moment Nux appeared!

She is just standing there, blushing like a teenage girl while trying to keep a straight face!

This!

This was so annoying and heartbreaking!

“Umm... aren't we going off-topic here?”

While everyone present here was lost in their thoughts, Thyra, who was extremely jealous of Ember right now spoke with a spiteful look on her face.

“Right, Thyra is correct. We don't have the time to discuss it right now.”

Ember, who thought of Thyra as the only light of escape in this darkness of embarrassment quickly jumped on this opportunity and changed the topic.

Knowing exactly what was going on inside Ember's and Thyra's minds, Nux just smiled, and then, he continued,

“So as I was saying, Ember would be leaving with me. According to the letter sent by the Dynast, the new General would come within a week.

We three would be staying in this Army Camp till the next General returns and once he is here, we will leave.”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

The three Deputy Generals turned silent.

Then, the Deputy General named Hasten turned towards Nux and warned,

“You better take good care of the General or don't expect to live an easy life. We three will come after you with everything we have if anything happened to her.”

“Heeh? Do you think that my Ember would need anyone’s protection? Believe me, the only reason I am taking her away with me is that I want to keep her all to myself, as for protecting her,

I don’t think there is anyone else who can do a better job in that than Ember herself.”

Nux smiled and hearing those words, Ember smiled as well.

“Where are you going to stay?”

Lawrence questioned.

Nux, however, shook his head,

“I think it would be better if you don’t know about it.”

Lawrence narrowed his eyes,

“Are you thinking that we would betray the General just because she is quit her position?”

“No, I trust Ember’s judgment,

She placed her trust in you, so I am sure you won’t betray her, however, I still think that the fewer people know about this, the better it will be. It is actually for your own good. I hope you understand.”

After thinking about it for a while, Lawrence nodded. He and the other two Deputy Generals stepped back.

Nux looked at the three Deputy Generals who had gloomy looks on their faces and smiled widely.

“Alright you guys, don’t be so down, your General would stay here for the next whole week, won’t you make this the most memorable week for her?”

The Deputy Generals’ eyes started shining brightly,

“Yes, this is it! Show your excitement, show your spirit!”

Nux clenched his fist as if he was trying to motivate the gloomy Deputy Generals in front of him, then, however, a playful smirk appeared on his face and he continued.

“However, try not to disturb us too much, you see, we two just found out about our love for each other and would like to explore it more deeply.

Make sure to not interrupt us while we spend lovey-dovey time with each other, okay?”

Nux smiled very politely and the three Deputy Generals who heard his words wanted nothing more than to kill this guy right here, right now.

Even Ember was shocked by how shameless Nux was.

However, she wouldn't deny it,

She was actually looking forward to those lovey-dovey times.

Thinking about it, Ember's pussy twitched a little and a small smile appeared on her face.

She really was looking forward to the blissful week that she is about to spend together with her 'man'.

'Fufufu~

This is going to be a long week indeed.'

# Chapter 345

[Congratulations to the host for rising to a King Stage Mana Cultivator from an Expert Stage Mana Cultivator.]

[INT: +20]

[Blank Points: +40]

[Congratulations to the host for rising to a King Stage Body Cultivator from an Expert Stage Body Cultivator.]

[STR: +8]

[AGL: +8]

[VIT: +8]

[STM: +8]

[DEF: +8]

[Blank Points: +20]

[Regeneration unlocked.]

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: King.]

[Body Cultivation: King.]

[Physique: Devouring Mist Demon Physique – Advanced (+)]

[Talent: High]

[LVL: 50 → 60]

[HP: 1600/1600]

[MP: 2100/2100]

[STR: 134 → 162]

[AGL: 144 → 172]

[VIT: 132 → 160]

[STM: 171 → 199]

[INT: 180 → 210]

[DEF: 131 → 159]

[Blank Points: 99 → 189]

‘Haah... finally...’

Nux thought inwardly as he looked at so many messages that had appeared in front of him. A small, satisfied smile appeared on his face.

He finally did it.

He had finally become a King Stage Cultivator.

Nux’s eyes then fell on Ember who was sleeping next to him with a small smile on her face.

Seeing her breasts that were touching each other while being sandwiched by her two arms while Ember slept soundly aroused him to no extent.

‘Ughhh... this figure... it is just too delicious...’

Nux groaned inwardly as he felt his dick twitching again.

He had just orgasmed around 5 to 6 times and was completely dried out, however, even after that, he still wanted to just grab this woman in front of her and devour her.

Ember was just that enticing.

With her long black red hair that contrasted well with her white skin, her calm expression while she is asleep that is completely opposite to the wild and dominant expression that she usually has on her face, those arousing abs on her waist, and that dangerously pretty face, no man would be able to resist himself in front of a beauty like this.

Especially when that man's jizz was leaking out of her cave like that.

Nux then moved closer to Ember and hugged her body.

Her soft breasts touched his hard chest, while his dick was surrounded by the warmth of her thighs,

He felt incredible.

'Ahh, this is amazing~'

Nux sighed contently.

"Mhfhmm..."

Ember, who was sleeping peacefully let out a strange voice as her hands moved towards Nux's back, she unknowingly pressed her breasts on Nux's chest and placed her head on his shoulders.

Nux's hand moved towards her perky butt and he started kneading them gently.

"Mhhmm~"

A soft moan leaked out of Ember's mouth and the smile on her face widened.

She was feeling good.

However, right now, she was too tired to wake up, she had orgasmed countless times after all.

Nux understood that as well, therefore, after hugging this beautiful woman in front of him and placing himself in a comfortable position, he finally looked back at the messages in front of him.

‘Regeneration...’

Nux focused on his newly gained ability and then, another screen appeared in front of him.

[Regeneration]

[Effects: Doubles the Regeneration of the Host.]

‘...’

Nux turned silent.

‘...that’s it?’

He questioned inwardly.

This was the vaguest ability description he has ever read.

‘Doubles the Regeneration? Regeneration of what? Why is that not mentioned here? Why in the hell just happened? Why is the description so vague?’

Nux couldn’t understand.

He had a few guesses in his mind about what the ability is actually about, however, if he was being honest.

He was a little disappointed.

No matter what this ability does, in the end, it is only a support ability, Nux actually wanted an ability that focused on attack power.

Something strong enough to hurt an Emperor.

Actually, Nux hoped that the ability he would get after becoming a King Stage Cultivator would be his key to dealing with the Emperor Stage Cultivators in the future.

However...

Things did not go as he planned.

Even after becoming a King Stage Cultivator, there was no major change in Nux's strength.

He has gotten stronger, yes, however, was he strong enough to fight against an Emperor?

Nux didn't know.

He has never seen an Emperor with his own eyes after all.

However, this time, he had a vague feeling that he wasn't.

Emperors are different.

Only an Emperor can fight an Emperor.

He has been hearing words like these countless times.

Even Ember, who is full of confidence and fighting intent admits that if she and an Emperor Stage Cultivator fights, the chance of her winning is absolute zero.

Mind you, she hasn't said the same words for Nux, she admits that Nux is stronger than her, however, she still thinks that she has a chance to defeat him, even if it's very low, that is just how strong and indomitable her will was for.

However, in front of an Emperor, even her strong and indomitable will was weak.

Against an Emperor, even Ember had to admit her defeat.

This was the reason why Nux was doubtful if he could defeat an Emperor or not and wanted to rely on the ability he would receive in the future.

However, today,

His hopes were crushed.

‘This will be complicated...’

Nux thought with a solemn look on his face.

‘They are here.’

While Nux was thinking about all this, he suddenly heard a voice.

He then narrowed his eyes and a frown appeared on his already solemn face,

Then, he gently moved his body away from Ember, wore his clothes, and disappeared.

...

Nux then appeared in an Area that was 30 km away from the Army Camp, he looked around, and soon, his eyes fell on Thyra who was pointing in a certain direction.

Nux moved his head towards the direction Thyra was pointing at and activated his [Sense].

He saw a Familiar face.

A face he wanted to squash on the ground when he first met him.

Finkelstein.

That annoying bastard was here.

However, this time,

He was here to replace Ember and become the General of the Woods Dynasty.

Nux wanted to kill this man right here right now, however, in the end, he controlled himself and calmed down.

Then, a small smile appeared on his face,

“Oh well,

It seems that we can finally return.”

He shouldn't be sad.

He would be meeting his women soon, he hasn't seen them for more than a week after all.

They must be angry.

# Chapter 346

“Soldiers of the Woods Dynasty, gather here as soon as possible!”

Early in the morning, while most of the soldiers were busy with their own work, a loud sound was heard and it attracted everyone’s attention.

“This is an Order!”

The confused soldiers then moved quickly and soon, everyone gathered around 3 men who were looking at everything with wide smiles on their faces.

Seeing that everyone has gathered, one of the three men stepped forward and the coat he was wearing fluttered due to the wind.

Many soldiers frowned when they saw the coat that the man was wearing, however, every single one of them knew who this man was, therefore, they didn’t dare to say anything out loud and continued to observe.

“I am sure many of you have countless questions in your mind.

What is Lord Finkelstein doing here?

Why is Lord Finkelstein wearing this coat that only the General is allowed to wear?

Why has Lord Finkelstein ordered us to gather here?

Don’t worry, I will answer all your questions right now.

Now before I start, let me make a few things clear,

From now on, you are not going to address me as ‘Lord Finkelstein’, from now on, you all would address me as General Finkelstein!”

Finkelstein announced loudly and soon, the soldiers frowned.

“What? General Finkelstein? Why would he call him that?”

“Also, why is he wearing that coat?”

“Is he going to become the General as well?”

“Huh? How is that possible? How can there be 2 Generals in the Army?”

“Indeed, there must be something else.”

“Is it one of General Finkelstein’s games?”

“Hmm, that might be the case.”

The soldiers started chatting with each other and,

“Silence!”

A loud roar was heard.

“...”

Silence fell over the area.

Finkelstein then looked at the soldiers in front of him and continued,

“You lot are not allowed to speak until I am done with my part, is that clear?”

“...”

No one answered.

“IS THAT CLEAR!?”

Finkelstein shouted and at the same time, he released his suppressing aura. His technique worked and the soldiers’ bodies moved instinctively.

“Yes Sir!”

“Good.”

Finkelstein praised.

No matter how one looked at this scene, although he did use a little force to do it, Finkelstein proved that he indeed had leadership capabilities.

“Due to some unforeseen events, General Ember Windstar will be retiring early and will no longer serve as the General of our Dynasty.”

“!!!”

The soldiers’ eyes widened in surprise.

However, before they could react, Finkelstein continued.

“General Ember has served the Army for 60 long years and has achieved countless things in this time. She is without a doubt one of the strongest and most successful Generals that has ever served our Dynasty,

However, now that she is leaving, the Dynast has given me this difficult task to fill the void she has left and become the next General of the Army.

Now, I call General Ember Windstar who would like to give her final goodbyes to her dear soldiers.”

Finkelstein then turned in a certain direction and soon, a woman walked forward and stepped inside the encirclement.

“General Ember.”

Seeing Ember standing right in front of her, Ember raised her eyebrows in surprise, however, soon, her surprise disappeared and she turned toward the Soldiers.

“Soldiers of the Woods Dynasty...”

Then, another speech followed.

Nux, who was observing everything from afar was surprised.

This Finkelstein, that man was smarter than he thought.

Unlike how he predicted that Finkelstein would act arrogantly and try to insult Ember, Finkelstein did the opposite and has been showing his 'respect' for Ember from the moment he arrived here.

That was a mature move on his part.

Nux, Thyra, and Ember were impressed.

“With this, I will be taking my leave,

However, I will leave my one last order here,

Do not die a wasteful death.

Is that clear?”

“YEAAAHHHH!!”

A roar countless times louder than before was heard.

Nux noticed a small twitch on Finkelstein's face, however, he quickly turned that into a smile and turned towards Ember.

“General Ember, Dynast has prepared these 2 escorts for you, they will take you to the Capital city safely, I have also prepared the carriage for you and have ensured that you will have a comfortable journey.”

Finkelstein bowed as he pointed at the two men who were standing behind him.

Nux and Ember's expressions turned solemn when they saw the two Expert Stage Cultivators.

‘Heh, Escorts my ass. Aren’t they here just to keep an eye on me and ensure that I reach the Capital without any hitches?’

Ember thought inwardly and chuckled.

‘Well, it’s not like two Expert Stage Cultivators are going to make any difference.’

Ember’s eyes then turned cold,

‘The Dynast is just wasting 2 precious lives by sending them here.’

“That is very thoughtful of you, General Finkelstein.”

Ember smiled.

Finkelstein smiled back and then he bowed his head,

“I hope you have a safe journey, General Ember.”

‘Just leave already, isn’t that what those words actually mean?’

Ember chuckled.

‘Don’t worry, I’ll don’t plan on stalling for more as well.’

“Alright, I will be taking my leave then.”

Ember smiled and then, she turned around.

Finklestein then looked at the two men he brought with him and nodded. The two men nodded back and then started following Ember from behind.

Finkelstein, the 3 Deputy Generals, and the soldiers did the same.

Yes, every single one of the soldiers wanted to escort Ember to the carriage, the situation would have become a big mess if the Deputy Generals hadn’t made their moves and settled the soldiers.

“Have a great life ahead, General Ember. I hope your life as Dynast’s concubine is fun.”

Seeing that no one was around, Finkelstein looked at Ember with a big smirk on his face.

Ember just looked at Finkelstein and smiled,

“Be careful out there.”

“Huh?”

Finkelstein frowned in confusion, however, Ember already entered the carriage and only spoke one thing,

“You know me, I wouldn’t have given up if I wasn’t in a hopeless situation. I just hope you can deal with what I, Ember Windstar, see as hopeless.

I wish you luck, New General.”

Under the confused and doubtful expression on Finkelsten’s face, the carriage started moving.

# Chapter 347

“Hmm? Why did you stop the carriage?”

Ember questioned with a frown on her face.

The Escort named Jack, who was sitting with Ember inside the Carriage frowned and knocked on the carriage walls,

“Jerry, why did you stop the carriage?”

“There is a man standing in front of the carriage.” The other escort named Jerry, who was driving the carriage answered.

And as if confirming those words,

“Whatever you are carrying is mine! Return what belongs to me back to me!”

Hearing those words, Jerry frowned and looked at the ‘Bandit’ with a deadpan look on his face,

“You Idiot, at least look at the Cultivation Stage of the man you are trying to rob before making a move...”

Jerry was pretty sure that the bandit would soon panic when he noticed how strong he is and would stop bothering him. He was too bored, however, since he wanted to leave a good impression on Ember, he didn’t kill this man right now.

However, contrary to his expression, rather than fear, the Bandit only looked at him as if he was looking at an Idiot and,

“You Idiot, at least look at the Cultivation Stage of the man you are trying to talk big to.”

Jerry blinked a few times, then, he narrowed his eyes to check the Bandit's Cultivation and,

“!!!”

Jerry panicked.

He quickly moved from the driving seat and rushed towards Ember.

“General Ember! You have to help us!”

“Huh? You can't even handle a mere Bandit now?”

Ember questioned in a disinterested tone.

Even Jack had a frown on his face, he couldn't understand why Jerry would ask General Ember's help for something so trivial like this, however, Jerry's next words shocked him to his core.

“He is a King Stage Cultivator!”

“WHAT!?”

Jack exclaimed in shock.

“Yes! I am not lying!”

Jack quickly rushed out of his carriage and glanced at the bandit who was looking at them in patience.

“!!!”

Jack's eyes widened in surprise and he quickly turned toward Ember and asked for her help.

“General! You have to help us! He is not an opponent we can defeat ourselves.”

“Huh? Aren’t you the escorts sent here to protect me and ensure my comfort during my travel? Why should I do your work?”

Ember questioned and the two Escorts were speechless.

“General! This is not the time to pla-”

Jack wanted to complain, however, soon, someone tapped on his shoulders and,

“Excuse me, I think I have been very patient for a while now, can you return what you guys took from me, I am in a bit of a hurry.”

The bandit seemed like a gentleman.

“W-We do have anything inside the carriage except for a human. However, if you want money, then you ca-”

Jerry turned around and tried to talk to the bandit, however,

“Huh? Why would I want money? Do you think I lack money? I am not trying to rob you guys, I only want what is already mine.

Now do it while I am asking it politely, or you won’t like where this will lead to.”

The Bandit threatened.

“B-But w-we don’t have anything that belongs to y-you...” Jack stuttered.

The bandit then shook his head and sighed,

“I guess you want to take the hard way.”

Saying that, the bandit raised his hands, the escorts tried to defend themselves, however, the Bandit was too fast, his hands appeared on their faces and he pushed them to the side, throwing them to the ground like they are stone statues.

“No! Don’t go inside!” Jerry shouted.

However, Jack stopped him and shook his head.

‘Let him do what he wants, once the General gets annoyed, she would deal with him herself.’

That was his plan.

There weren’t many people who could defeat General Ember in a battle after all.

And as if he had the same thought in his mind, Jerry turned silent and just looked at the scene in front of him with a sly smile on his face.

However, what the two of them saw after that caused their jaws to drop on the ground.

The Bandit, whose half of the body was inside the Carraige moved out with General Ember in his arms, the man then turned towards them and snorted,

“Hmph! You dare lie to me when you were hiding what belongs to me inside this carriage of yours!?”

Do you have a Deathwish?”

“ ... ”

The Escorts, however, didn’t listen to whatever the bandit said since they were too busy looking at General Ember who was hugging the Bandit like a Koala.

‘This... this the Fiery Killer...?’

They wondered in their heads.

The two of them were so shocked that they didn’t even notice their impending deaths.

Soon, a Sword appeared in Nux's hand,

Seeing the sword, the two escorts finally came out of their reverie, however, it was already too late.

\*Whoosh\*

\*Thud\* \*Thud\*

A sword slashed and two heads flew into the air.

Before they could even understand what happened, the two escorts were beheaded.

“Tsk Tsk, to think you will kill these two escorts so mercilessly, are you sure that you are just an 18-year-old boy and not a merciless killer?”

Ember questioned with a small smile on her face.

“Trust me, I am only an 18-year-old boy.

A boy who managed to defeat the Fiery Killer and made her his woman.”

“Heh,” Ember just smiled.

“So... how long are you planning to stay there?”

Thyra, who walked towards the two of them questioned with an extremely jealous face.

Ember looked at Thyra for a while and then,

“Heh.”

With a small chuckle, she turned her face away.

Thyra's face twitched in annoyance.

Nux enjoyed their attraction and at the same time, he attacked the carriage with a [Earth Spike] Spell, then burned the ground with Fire spells and started using all the elements around the Area.

Once he was done, he turned towards Thyra and smiled,

“It’s time to leave now.”

Thyra, who was glaring at Ember, smiled lovingly and nodded.

# Chapter 348

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

In the middle of the night, someone aggressively knocked on Arvina's room.

“Who is this!?”

Arvina questioned in an annoyed tone as she sat up.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Since the knocking on the door still continued, Arvina stood up from her bed and walked towards the door with an angry expression on her face.

‘Is this isn't something very important, whoever it is, he or she will pay dearly for ruining my sleep’

Arvina swore inwardly and aggressively opened the door.

“You better have a good reason-”

However, before she could even complete her sentence, she paused.

“Nux?”

She questioned with a frown.

Yes, the man who was knocking on her doors for so long was none other than her student.

A student who...

“Shouldn't you be in the Woods Dynasty right now?”

Arvina questioned with a confused look on her face.

“Teacher Arvina, we need your help.”

However, unlike his usual playful smile on his face, Arvina noticed that Nux was looking at her with a nervous and somewhat desperate look on his face.

Arvina was even more confused now.

She has never seen this expression on Nux’s face.

“What happened?”

Arvina questioned.

However, instead of answering, Nux just turned his head and looked in another direction, Arvina frowned, however, before she could ask, another woman walked out and appeared in front of her.

A woman she knew very well.

“Ember...?”

Arvina narrowed her eyes.

“It has been a while, Arv.”

Ember smiled lightly.

“What are you doing here?”

Arvina questioned in confusion.

“Teacher, we need your help, Ember left the Woods Dynasty and now is looking for a place to hide. No other place came into my mind and I brought her help.

Please hide Ember in your mansion, Teacher Arvina. I beg you.”

However, those words did not lessen Arvina's confusion at all, rather, they only increased the number of questions in her head.

“Left the Woods Dynasty? Why? Aren't you a General of the Woods Dynasty's army? Why do you want to hide here? Who are you hiding from? What happened?”

“Things are bad...”

Ember muttered and this time, a solemn look appeared on Arvina's face.

She looked at Nux and questioned in a tone that demanded answers.

“What happened in the Woods Army Camp? Why are you here so suddenly? Why is the General of the Woods Dynasty here with you? And who are you running away from?”

I need answers to all these questions, and do it as clearly as you can.”

Nux then looked at Arvina and with a serious look on his face,

He answered,

“An Emperor is making a move.”

Arvina's eyes widened.

“What?”

“Yes, so what happened was...”

Nux then started recounting whatever happened until now in detail and an hour later, Arvina, who, right now was sitting inside her room, on a chair, with her hands on her chin and an extremely serious look on her face, summarized.

“So you are saying that Lord Herms is making his moves and has taken control over the Solid Earth Kingdom. The Kingdom is now completely changed, with close to no criminals roaming around. Not only that, but the

Kingdom has also started recruiting strong Sect Members, Wandering Cultivators, and Adventurers into its ranks and now have 7 King Stage Generals in their army?”

“Yes, that is correct.”

“You have reported all of this to your Dynast, however, that man is still stuck in his past and wants to use this opportunity to weaken your influence and then pressure you into marrying him?”

“Indeed, he thinks that since I am making all of this up and nothing I reported to him was true. He told me to deal with all this on my own and is not willing to help me at all.”

Hearing those words, Arvina frowned,

“How does that make sense? With your past achievements as a General, it is clear that you are not someone who would make this up.”

“He is nothing but a fool. He is not thinking things through at all, with him as the leader, the Woods Dynasty will face heavy losses, however, the problem is that the one suffering from this would be Ember.

If she stays there and fights, she would lose her influence when the War ends and she loses, if she quits and refuses to lead the Army, she would be called a coward and would be blamed by others as someone who fled in front of difficulties, this would affect her influence as well.

No matter what step she takes, things wouldn't end in her favor at all.

Therefore, I told her to leave that messy situation and brought her here.”

Nux answered and then, he continued,

“And now, I want your help and request you to hide her here. No matter how dumb that Dynast is, won't dare to search inside the Strongest Kingdom in this world, especially not inside the Academy that is the heart of that Kingdom.”

Arvina looked at Nux and a small smile appeared on her face,

“Nux, you look a little mature now.”

“Hmm?”

Nux frowned.

He matured?

When?

Why didn't he notice anything?

“Well, I don't know how to say this, but I definitely feel that you changed a little, don't worry, we will analyze this together.

As for your request, I accept it.

General Ember helped and guided you, as your teacher, it is my duty to help her when she needs it.”

A big smile appeared on Nux's face.

“Teacher Arvina, you are the best!

I love you!”

Arvina just chuckled and shook her head.

Ember, however, looked at this situation with an amused smile on her face, and soon, she nodded her head.

Suddenly, Nux stood up from his chair and looked at the two women in front of him with a smile on his face.

“Well, this is good, now that General Ember is living here, you two old friends can catch up to each other.

As for me,

Well, I have to meet, so I would be taking my leave now.

You two have a good night ahead.”

Saying that, Nux turned around.

However, just as he was about to leave, Arvina noticed his cultivation.

“!!!”

# Chapter 349

Just as Nux was about to leave, Arvina noticed his Cultivation and her eyes widened in surprise.

“King Stage!!”

She wanted to talk to him about this, however, when she came out of her shock, Nux had already left her room.

“Nux wait!”

Arvina didn't give up, she stood up and dashed outside her room, however, when she looked around the corridor outside her room, Nux was nowhere to be found.

It was as if he disappeared into thin air.

Arvina frowned.

“Don't bother, Arv.

There are people he wants to meet, he was getting impatient so he must have ran with all his might and you already know, if a King Stage Cultivator gives his all, you won't be able to catch him no matter what.”

Arvina looked at Ember and seeing the calm look on her face, she shook her head.

“You do not understand, that boy is just 18 years old, he was a Grand Master Stage Cultivator when I met him and it was just a few months ago.

That boy became a King Stage Cultivator from a Grand Master Stage Cultivator in just a matter of a few months!

Isn't that ridiculous!?”

“Well, he is Nux. He was a monster from the start.”

Ember shrugged with a nonchalant look on her face.

Seeing that reaction, Arvina frowned.

She wanted to retort to her words however, now that she thinks about it...

Isn't that the perfect reason and the best explanation there is?

How did he become a King Stage Cultivator so quickly?

Well, because he was Nux.

He has done so many impossible things before, why not just add another one to that list?

When Arvina thought about it that way, she wasn't as shocked as before.

She has to admit, this was indeed a good way to think things when it was related to Nux.

However, Arvina didn't like the fact that the one who came up with this theory was not her but Ember.

Why...

Just why did this woman come up with a Theory to deal with her student?

Shouldn't she be the one who should come up with something like this?

The more she thought about it, the more Arvina frowned.

She then walked towards Ember and sat down next to her.

“You understand him well, huh...”

“Well, I have been observing him for more than a month now.”

Ember smiled.

Arvina frowned inwardly,

‘I have been doing the same, you know?’

However, she didn’t say that out loud and nodded her head,

“Hm hm, that sounds reasonable but still... aren’t you acting a little too nonchalant right now?”

He is an 18-year-old King Stage Cultivator, after all, you have to be a little shocked, right?”

“It’s not like I am not shocked, I just got numb.”

“What do you mean?”

“That boy has done a lot of things in these past few days he has been with me.

It won’t be wrong to say that this boy has practically saved me and my entire army many times.

He has achieved feats that most of the soldiers who have countless years of experience haven’t.”

Hearing those words, a proud smile appeared on Arvina’s face.

“Heh, as I expected.”

Although she didn’t say it out loud, the words ‘He is my students’ were written on her face, in capital letters.

It couldn’t be any more obvious.

Ember, of course, understood what she wanted to say as well, she wanted to smile with her as well, however, before that, she wanted to confirm something else.

“Arvina, I have a few questions that I want you to answer,

Would you mind doing that?”

Suddenly, the frown on Arvina’s face disappeared.

The two of them are meeting each other after years and they are not as close to each other as they were before, however, this didn’t mean that they have completely forgotten about each other.

Arvina knew what the look on Ember’s face meant right now.

She was dead serious right now.

“Ask.”

Arvina nodded her head.

Ember then placed her hands on the table and moved her upper body close to Arvina, then, her red eyes shined brightly as they scanned Arvina’s facial expressions as if trying to see if she would lie or not.

“What is your plan? Just what are you thinking right now?”

She questioned.

“Huh? Plans? What plans?”

Arvina frowned.

“I am talking about Nux, why are you helping him? You know how monstrously talented he is, correct?”

With his talent, sooner or later, he and the Skyfall Kingdom would become enemies.

What will you do if that happens?

Who will you side with that day?”

Ember questioned.

“Huh? What kind of question is that? Isn’t it obvious? I would side with my student of course.”

Arvina answered without even thinking about it, Ember, however, wasn’t done yet.

“So you are going to betray the Kingdom you have lived your life in?”

“No, I am not ‘betraying’ the Kingdom, I am just betraying the Skyfall Family.

I feel that whatever happens after this would be better for the Kingdom, it just won’t be ‘Skyfall’ anymore.”

Arvina answered with the same resolution as before.

“You are close to the Emperor Stage Cultivator of your Kingdom correct? I heard that she has been protecting you and that she is the reason why that perverted King of yours hasn’t touched you, right?

Are you going to betray the woman who has been protecting you for so many years for a student who you have just met a few months ago?”

Ember tilted her head as she probed.

“...”

This time, Arvina didn’t answer as quickly as before.

This time, she hesitated, and after hesitating for a while, she nodded,

“T-The situation where Nux and Teacher Astaria face each other won’t happen.”

Ember narrowed her eyes.

“You didn’t answer my question.”

“That is my answer to your question.”

Arvina shot back.

“Alright, let me create a hypothetical situation for you.

Let’s say your Teacher and Nux do fight each other,

What would you then?

Who would you side with?

Nux, your student,

Or your teacher?”

# Chapter 350

“Let’s say your Teacher and Nux do fight each other, What would you then?

Who would you side with?

Nux, your student, or your teacher?”

Ember narrowed her eyes and questioned.

Hearing those words, Arvina turned silent and started thinking.

Her Teacher who supported her throughout her life, or her student? Who would she choose?

It was a big question, she needed time to think about it.

However, even after thinking for a good 5 minutes, Arvina was unable to come up with an answer.

“So you haven’t decided that, have you?”

Ember questioned.

Hearing those words, Arvina snapped,

“This question is wrong to begin with.”

Ember frowned, however, Arvina didn’t care about that and continued,

“A hypothetical situation means nothing.

What you are saying doesn’t make any sense.

As I said before, I will make sure that my Teacher and Nux don’t face each other. I have talked about this with Nux and I am sure he would respect my words and my plans.

Talking about something that won't happen is useless.”

Arvina snorted.

Ember, however, didn't seem satisfied by that answer.

Well, she can't be blamed either.

Unlike Arvina, she knew how Nux's ability works.

If they follow Arvina's plans, Nux would never become an Emperor Stage Cultivator and would always be stuck in King Stage.

To break through the King Stage, Nux would need Arvina's Teacher's help. Therefore, he can't wait and lay low until she dies.

The two of them have to meet each other.

And once they meet, they would most probably be enemies.

That was the reason why Ember was trying to prepare Arvina for this situation.

“It is a hypo-”

However, before she could even complete her words, Arvina questioned.

“Why do you care?”

“Huh?”

Ember frowned at the sudden question.

“You were too aggressive with your previous questions for someone who only knew Nux for like, a month.

In the end, he is just a boy sent by me to your army camp so that he can gain a little experienced, why are you so involved with him?

It is not like you cannot run away from the Woods Dynasty on your own, it might be more complicated than just directly getting Nux's help, but I still believe that if a King Stage Cultivator like you wants to, you can easily hide from the world.

Isn't Nux just a more convenient way out for you?"

"No, Nux is not just a more convenient way out for me, our relationship is a lot deeper than you think."

Ember's reply was instantaneous. From her tone, it was clear that she did not like Arvina's words one bit.

Arvina, however, did not back down.

"Oh? What is your relationship with him then?"

What would you do if Nux ends up fighting an Emperor Stage Cultivator, would you run away, or would you fight together with him?"

"I will fight together with him of course, I would use my life to protect him if the situation asks for it.

Remember, Arvina, I was the General of the Army before coming here, I am not scared of losing my life."

Arvina was taken aback by those words.

She never expected Ember to say such words and with such convictions at that...

It was a bit overwhelming if she was to be honest.

"J-Just what is your relationship with Nux for you to say those words without any hesitation?"

Arvina questioned.

She didn't know if even she could say those words with such determination.

Suddenly, a small smile appeared on Ember's face as she revealed.

“We are lovers.”

“HUH!?”

Arvina's eyes widened in surprise.

“You heard it, we two are lovers now.”

Ember repeated.

“HOW!?”

Arvina still believed that Ember was lying to her, however, seeing that Ember wasn't saying anything else after that, Arvina realized that she wasn't fooling around...

Ember was actually serious.

“W-What about that challenge of yours? About the man defeating you before winning your heart?”

Arvina questioned.

“Didn't you see his cultivation just now?”

Ember questioned back.

“I did, he was a King Stage...”

Arvina realized.

“He... he defeated you?”

A wry smile appeared on Ember's face.

“Although it is a bit embarrassing for me to lose against someone so younger than me, in the end, I just accepted the reality and my loss”

Then, a beautiful smile appeared on Ember's face as she continued,  
I got the love of my life in exchange, after all."

"..."

Arvina turned silent.

She couldn't believe that the woman blushing and smiling in front of her was that fierce General who has killed thousands of people with her sword.

'J-Just how did he do that?'

She wondered in surprise.

With the help of her newly gained insight, Arvina wasn't shocked by the fact that Nux is now strong enough to defeat Ember, one of the strongest King Stage CULtviator in this world, however, that smile on Ember's face...

It is not something that a woman who got into a relationship with a man by a bet or a challenge would show.

That was the smile on a Woman in love.

She has seen this smile on countless women's faces, however, never in her wildest dreams did she think that she would see this smile on Ember's face.

This was...

This was simply amazing...

Arvina was surprised and overwhelmed, however, at the same time, she was a little annoyed,

'Why is that boy going around charming countless women like it is some sort of competition?'

Half of the girls in the Academy dream about him, even a few married female teachers have their eyes on him, but as if that was not enough, this

boy just went to an Army camp and brought back the General of that Army with him as his woman!?

Just how ridiculous is that!?

Arvina was out of words, her eyes then fell on Ember, who seemed to be lost in her own fantasy and couldn't believe her eyes.

'What is with that silly smile on your face? You are doing this on purpose, aren't you?'

Arvina questioned inwardly, however, seeing that there was no change in Ember's expression, she couldn't help but shake her head and curse in her head.

'Nux, you little bastard...'

"A-A-Aaanchii!"

On the other side, Nux, who was about to meet Amaya sneezed, and then, he frowned,

'Huh? Just who is thinking about me?'

He wondered inwardly.

Soon, a playful smile appeared on his face as he nodded to himself,

'I bet she is a woman.'

Kukuku~'

# Chapter 351

“It feels good...”

Amaya muttered in a soft voice as she tightened her grip on the Nux’s hand she was holding.

A smile appeared on Nux’s face as he strengthened his grip as well.

“Indeed, it feels good to walk around like this.”

Nux nodded as he looked around with a curious look on his face.

“That Royal Garden is a good place to spend your time with your loved ones.”

Nux stated and Amaya couldn’t agree more.

Yes, right now, the two of them were roaming around in the Royal Garden inside the Royal Palace, right in front of the Guards!

Of course, the guards couldn’t see them, but that is beside the point.

The two of them were using [Conceal].

Why go through that much trouble? Why not stay in Amaya’s room and spend time there?

Well, that was an option, however, Nux knew that Amaya has been trapped inside that room for a very long time now, especially with her ‘curse’ where she can’t move her body and could only lay down and stare at the ceiling of her room,

Therefore, he decided to change things a little and with that smile he was seeing on Amaya’s face right now, he would say it was a perfect decision.

“Ugghh... I am tired now...”

Suddenly, Amaya muttered.

“Huh?”

Nux frowned, however, soon, he understood what she meant and couldn't help but shake his head.

Then, he walked in front of Amaya and crouched, Amaya smiled and quickly jumped on his back, Nux then stood up and carried the woman on his back.

“Hehe~”

Amaya chuckled.

“Is this comfortable enough for you, princess?”

Nux questioned ‘respectfully’.

“Yes, now move forward,

March!”

Amaya pointed in a certain direction and the Nux started walking.

Of course, he didn't do this service for free.

Since Amaya was taking advantage of him, it was only natural for him to do the same thing after all.

Nux's hands moved from her hands and he grabbed her thighs, then, his hands moved inside the gown she was wearing, touching her smooth skin, they then moved higher and higher, and soon, Nux's hands were very close to Amaya's forbidden region.

As if satisfied by where he has reached, Nux's hands stopped moving and started caressing Amaya's inner thighs.

Amaya, of course, didn't have any problems with that at all, she just continued to look around and observe the beautiful flowers, the leaves that moved due to the wind, the well-trimmed grass, the stars in the sky, and at the same time, enjoy Nux's touch.

This small little walk was a memorable experience for her.

...

Time passed by and since the time limit of [Conceal] was about to end, Nux and Amaya decided to return.

A solemn look then appeared on Amaya's face as she started,

“We need to make our move, and we have to do it as soon as possible.”

“Hmm?” Nux tilted his head.

“With the Emperor Stage Cultivator of the Woods Dynasty coming into the picture, everything has become a lot more complicated than before.

Not only that, but I have noticed that the Kingdom of Skadi is making some strange moves as well, I tried to get some information out, however, all my information network was blocked. I do not know if it is related to the Emperor Stage Cultivator of the Skadi Kingdom or not, however, I do believe that something is happening.

A Storm is brewing, Nux.

A storm that we have no information about.”

Amaya declared and Nux's face turned serious.

“Do you think the Emperors making their moves is related to us?”

It was a dumb question,

If the strongest beings living in this world are moving, of course, it is going to affect every being living in this world, Nux knew that as well.

However, he still wanted to confirm a few things.

“Well, there aren’t any direct relations yet. However, with the goal that we have in our mind, it is certain that we are going to clash with them in the future.

Actually, what I am talking about isn’t actually related to the Emperors, they will be a big problem today, however, currently, we have an even bigger problem to deal with.

And that is, Allura.”

Nux’s nodded in agreement.

“She is indeed in some trouble right now...”

“She has become an Expert Stage Cultivator from a Master Stage Cultivator in just a few months, she has practically skipped the whole Grand Master Stage.

This has attracted many eyes on her, even the King was interested in her. They have placed many spies around her to see if she is hiding anything and things have become a little complicated.

I am different, I can just blame it on my ‘curse’ and get away with it, however, Allura can’t do that.

Things might seem calm right now, however, with you becoming a King Stage Cultivator now, it is only a matter of time before she becomes a King Stage CULTVIATOR as well.

And once that happens, I am sure she would be surrounded by the King and his men.”

Nux’s face turned solemn as well, actually, once Allura’s Cultivation was revealed, he wanted to return, however, Allura ensured him that she would deal with it and convinced him to focus on their mission.

Of course, she did what she said she was going to do splendidly and got more time, however, Nux still didn't like the fact that there were countless eyes keeping tabs on his woman's actions.

“Do you have a plan?”

Nux questioned.

“We have to Kill Allura.

Just like we killed Edda.”

Nux frowned.

“But the King...”

“Yes, with his nature, he would go berserk and would use everything he has to find the murderer, however, I have a plan to deal with this situation. A plan that would keep him busy and would stop him from poking his nose in our business. Not only that, but if things go well, we might even get the chance to kill him.

I also plan to bring out the Emperor who is still inside seclusion. This way, you would be able to see the Emperor in action and this would allow you to judge if you can defeat her or not.”

Hearing her words, a small smile couldn't help but appear on Nux's face.

‘As expected of my Amaya, she is indeed a Genius.’

“What is your plan?”

He questioned and then,

“So what I plan to do is...”

A long conversation continued.

# Chapter 352

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Someone knocked on Evane's door, Evane, who was busy with her painting, frowned, she then stood up and opened the door.

“Who is i- hmm?”

“Princess Evane, I am back.”

Nux, who was wearing Armour while carrying a helmet in his hand spoke with a smile on his face.

“N-Nux?”

Evane blinked a few times.

“Hmm? Why that expression? You did not forget about me, did you?”

Nux questioned with a playful smile on his face.

“Of course not.”

Evane's answer was instantaneous.

Hearing those words, Nux nodded to himself as well,

“Indeed indeed, there is no way your mind would forget about me, right, Princess Evane?”

Nux's smile widened.

Evane snorted and nodded to herself.

“Well, you are Nux alright.”

Nux had that unique way of talking, a little arrogant, a little playful, it wasn't disrespectful in any way, rather, it had its own unique charm and was like his identity. Evane, who was missing this for a while now smiled inwardly.

“It is good that you recognized me.”

Nux nodded and then, he extended his hands towards Evane,

“So? Where is my Welcome Back hug?”

“H-Huh?”

Evane frowned at the sudden request.

“Well, I returned after fighting a long, tiresome, and cruel war and you are the first person I reported to,

Princess Evane, your knight is back,

He deserves a Welcome Back hug as a reward, does he not?”

Nux questioned with a playful look on his face.

Evane blushed a little and didn't move. She just stood there with an embarrassed look on her face and hesitated.

Nux, however, had a very thick skin.

Nux just stood there with his hands extended towards Evane

Something like this won't make him feel awkward at all.

“Princess Evane, you aren't planning to abandon your knight, are you?”

He questioned.

“W-What's with that Princess Evane this Princess Evane that you are talking about? This is the Royal Academy, I am not a Princess but a Teacher

here.

So don't call me that.”

Evane retorted.

“My hug, Princess Evane.”

Nux, however, did not listen to Evane's words at all, he just stood there with his hands extended towards Evane, and this time, he even closed his eyes.

His intention was clear, he would stay in this place as long as he does not get the hug he wanted.

Evane understood that as well, therefore, in the end, she finally gave in, and with a face as red as a tomato, she finally moved and hugged Nux.

With the thick armor he was wearing, Nux wasn't able to enjoy this hug at all.

However, he was not annoyed by that at all.

It was all for the greater good after all.

This little sacrifice was worth it.

Nux then moved his hands and hugged her back.

Evane's face turned even redder when she felt that thick armor all over her body, especially on her breasts.

For some reason, she felt very comfortable and safe in this situation.

She did not hate this feeling at all.

‘!!!’

Soon, however, Evane's eyes widened in surprise and she shook her head repeatedly.

'Evane! Just what are you thinking!?! He is your student!

Your Student!'

However, while she was lost in her own thoughts, Nux place his chin on Evane's shoulder and whispered softly,

"It feels good, Princess Evane."

"T-That's Teacher Evane for you."

Evane retorted.

"Well, to be honest, I am fine with Evane as well. Only if you would allow me to call you that, of course."

"W-W-W-What are you talking about?"

Nux's words were like a jumbled puzzle for Evane's mind, a mind that was already a big mess right now.

"Teacher Evane, after participating in this war, I realized something."

"W-What is it?" Evane questioned back.

"In these last few days, I have killed a lot of people, I have seen many enemies and allies dying on the battlefield, I have even picked up bodies of my allies to whom I talked with just a day before the battle and while going through all of this, I realized.

I realized that life is too short to hold yourself back in fear of what others would think.

We might be alive and doing well today, however, the next day, someone might assassinate us and take our most precious thing away from us.

Therefore, it is better to just do what you want and live however you want.

And this is exactly how I will live from now on.”

Nux smiled.

“That sounds like a good way to li-H-Huh?”

Evane nodded and agreed with Nux’s words, however, before she could even complete her sentence, Nux moved and tightened his hug around her.

“Therefore from now on, I will not hold back my thoughts and do exactly what I wanted to do since the first day I met you.”

Nux whispered, this time, however, Evane noticed the change in his tone.

His words sounded...

Possessive...

It was as if Nux was trying to say something to her, and of course, Evane had a rough idea of what it was.

That was the reason why she was so flustered.

She wasn’t ready to hear those words right now, however, Nux didn’t seem to know about her thoughts and continued.

“I know what I am going to say is morally wrong since we are teacher and student, however, the moment I laid my eyes on you, my heart started beating unnaturally and I fell in love.

Everything happened so quickly that I was unable to react in time.

I know that what I am saying might strain our current relationship, however, if I don’t say these words when I have the chance, I will regret it for the rest of my life.”

Nux then released Evane from his hug and grabbed her shoulders.

With his golden eyes shining brightly, he looked straight into Evane's eyes and,

“Evane, I love you.”

\*Ba-dump\*

Evane's heart skipped a beat.

She had already guessed what Nux wanted to say and was already thinking about different replies in her mind, Should she accept it? Should she reject it? How should she reject it? Should she be strict and yell at Nux for thinking about something so wrong? Or should she reject him politely while being considerate of his feelings? Actually, why even reject him? Should she just accept his proposal and live a whole new life? No no no no, it was definitely better to reject him, or maybe accepting it was better. Or...

Yes, her mind was a big mess right now and she wasn't able to come up with a certain, fixed answer.

However, in the end, when she heard the three magical words,

The Mess in her mind cleared up.

And now,

Her mind was completely blank.

She wasn't able to think about anything at all.

“...”

Therefore, she just turned silent and didn't reply.

Nux, of course, expected something like that.

He just stepped back and smiled,

“I know this is all too sudden for you, Evane.

I don't want you to rush it. Think things through at your own pace, you can answer me whenever you want.

I will wait for your response.”

After saying that, Nux turned around and left.

\*Clank\* \*Clank\* \*Clank\*

The heavy armor he was wearing produced different sounds as his body moved, those sounds echoed inside Evane's mind, and seeing his walking figure, Evane felt a strange pain in her heart.

She wanted to stop the man who was walking away, however, she thought that this man was just an 18-year-old boy and her student stopped her steps.

Just like Nux said, this wasn't something she could think about in just 5 or 10 minutes, she needs to think about it thoroughly and then come up with a good answer.

Evane nodded to herself and with a heavy heart, she walked into her room.

There, her eyes fell on a certain painting, a painting where a man wearing thick armor was walking toward a woman wearing expensive-looking clothes.

This painting was about a Princess meeting the Knight who has just returned from war.

This was a painting she drew.

The story behind this painting was simple,

The Princess and the Knight loved each other, however, due to the difference in their status, they couldn't get married to each other. The Knight, however, still dared and confessed his love for the princess, the princess accepted and the two of them lived happily ever after.

How they lived, and where they lived didn't matter.

The only thing that mattered was that they lived together, overcoming all the hardships they faced.

‘Living happily ever after huh...’

Evane thought about it for a while and turned silent.

With heavy thoughts weighing her mind, she decided to call it off and closed her eyes.

...

The next day, Evane woke up, took a bath, ate her breakfast, and then, she walked toward her class.

As she entered the classroom, she noticed that many girls were standing around a certain seat and, on that seat,

There sat a boy who was smiling at her.

“Oh, Teacher Evane is here.

Good Morning, Teacher Evane.”

For some reason, seeing that sight in front of her,

Evane felt annoyed.

# Chapter 353

“Oh, Teacher Evane is here.

Good Morning, Teacher Evane.”

Nux smiled playfully and for some reason, Evane did not like the sight in front of her at all.

Just why in the hell were all the girls in the class standing near Nux’s seat?

She couldn’t understand it and neither did she like it.

“What is happening here?”

She questioned in a strict tone.

“Teacher Evane! Nux is back!”

Anna spoke with an excited look on her face.

She was excited to see her friend after so long. Her excitement was shared by other girls in the classroom and they nodded as well.

“It is good that he is back but why are you guys surrounding him like that?”

Evane questioned.

“W-We just wanted to catch up to our classmate who has not been attending classes for such a long time.”

Another girl stepped forward and answered.

Evane’s mouth twitched in annoyance.

‘What a blatant lie.’

She couldn't believe that her students were lying like that.

“Oh? Then why didn't you catch up with Myrill when he returned to the class after a week of being in Medic's care?”

Evane questioned.

This was a topic that she, as a teacher, shouldn't talk about, however, right now, since her emotions were a big mess, she didn't think too much and questioned.

All the students in the room turned their heads towards Myrill, who didn't have any reaction on his face.

Right now, he couldn't care less about what his classmates thought of him. He had bigger problems to deal with.

His family was pretty much over right now, his father was a cripple, and he, as the older brother, would now have to take care of his younger brother all on his own.

For that, he needs to use this Royal Academy to his advantage, in this safe environment, he would work hard, train diligently and become stronger, only once he is stronger would he be able to protect his younger brother and live a normal life.

Yes, he was a lot more mature now.

This was a little late, however, as they say, it is never too late to improve yourself.

This change might lead to him achieving something unbelievable in the future.

Seeing the students' reaction, Evane finally realized what she just said and couldn't help but curse herself inwardly.

Nux understood the situation and frowned inwardly,

Then, a small smile appeared on his face and he continued,

“Teacher Evane, aren’t you happy to know that I am back as well?”

“H-Huh? Of course, I am.”

“Aren’t you curious about why I didn’t attend the class for a whole month?”

“I already know about it though?”

Evane tilted her head in confusion.

“Exactly, you already knew about it, but my classmates didn’t, that’s why they were curious and came up to me.

I am one of their closest friends after all,

Right, my friends?”

“Indeed.”

The girls answered with smiles on their faces and Evane’s face twitched again.

‘And why are all your ‘friends’ just girls?’

She wanted to ask out loud, however, she knew she couldn’t do so.

In the end, she could only force herself to calm down and sighed,

“Alright, catch up with each other later, go back to your seats now. The class is about to start.”

“Yes, Teacher Evane.”

The students nodded and returned to their seats.

Evane then turned around and started the class.

...

Time passed by quickly and soon,

“Alright, this will be enough for the day.

I hope you revise today’s lecture after going back, we will meet tomorrow.”

Evane spoke and just as she was about to turn around, Nux and most of the girls in the class stood up.

“Where are you all going?” Evane questioned with a frown.

“Didn’t you say that we can catch up after the class ends?”

Anna questioned back.

“What about your other classes?”

“Well, I only attend your class, Teacher Evane,” Nux spoke with a playful smile on his face.

“You are my favorite after all.”

A small blush appeared on Evane’s face, however, since she was in front of other students, she quickly hid that and spoke with a stern look,

“You should focus on other classes as well, or you might not fail to pass this Decade.”

“Yes, I will keep that in my mind.”

Nux’s smile widened.

Seeing that smile, Evane realized.

‘He can’t even fail... he is stronger than most teachers here...

What an infuriating fellow.’

Evane just wanted to strangle this man alive.

“We will be taking our leave now, Teacher Evane.

You have a good day!”

Anna spoke and then, she pulled Nux out of the class.

Other girls followed back.

Evane didn't like this scene at all, especially the smiles on those girls' faces.

‘They are up to no good...’

She complained inwardly.

However, she knew that she couldn't do anything about it.

In the end, she could only shake her head and prepared to leave.

“Teacher Evane...”

Just as Evane was about to leave, a girl called out.

“Hmm? Julie? Is there anything I can help you with?”

Evane questioned.

“Teacher Evane, I am facing difficulties in understanding a new Fire Skill I have been learning recently, can you help me with it?”

The girl named Julie questioned.

“Of course, I am free right now, you can come to my office.”

The girl smiled and nodded.

Evane and Julie then left the classroom and started walking toward Evane's office.

“Alright, what do you guys want to eat? Since I came here after so long, it will be my treat.”

“Oh my, Nux, aren't you generous.”

“Hehe~ When it comes to academy points, I am the richest person in our classroom.”

Nux joked and the girls surrounding him chuckled.

“...”

Evane, who saw that scene paused.

Again, she didn't like this strange feeling in her heart.

Was she jealous?

She thought inwardly, however, she quickly shook her head.

‘He is just my student, why would I be jealous?’

This doesn't make any sense.

Also, that boy has some guts, to propose to me yesterday night and then roam around with so many girls the next day, right in front of me.

Hmph Hmph’

Evane snorted.

“He is quite popular.”

Suddenly, Julie, who has been silent this whole time spoke.

# Chapter 354

“He is quite popular, especially amongst the girls.”

Julie, who has been silent this whole time spoke.

“Indeed, a little too popular actually...”

“Well, he is strong and talented...”

Not to mention incredibly handsome.

The only thing holding him back is his humble background, however, that wouldn't be a problem once he breaks through Advance Stage and becomes a Master Stage Cultivator.

With his talent, he will become one in a few years and once that happens, there would be flocks of women rushing toward him, therefore, it is only natural that those girls would try their best to get their hands on him.

After all, the sooner they try, the higher the chances of their success.”

Julie analyzed everything in great detail.

“Thinking about marriage already? Shouldn't you focus on your studies?”

Evane raised her eyebrow.

Hearing those words, Julie smiled wryly.

“Let's be honest here, Teacher Evane, majority of the students joins the Royal Academy not to learn, but to find a perfect partner for themselves.

This is the only place where we could properly interact with people of our age and status, in other words, this is the only place where we are free to choose our partners ourselves.

Once we leave the academy, our parents would be the ones deciding our marriage partners.

By then, we won't have the freedom to choose.

We would be forced to comply with our parents' demands.

Of course, students of Prodigy class are a little different and don't focus much on this stuff, however, with someone like Nux right in front of their eyes, they won't give up on this opportunity at all."

"..."

Evane couldn't help but be amazed.

She has been teaching in this Academy for years, why hasn't she noticed this tell now?

'Are these really just children? Why are they worried about stuff like marriage so early?'

This was a big shock for Evane.

"T-Then why aren't you going after him?

Do you not like him?"

Evane questioned in curiosity.

"I find it hard to believe that there would be any girl who would not like someone like Nux. I am not an exception either.

However, my parents have already arranged my marriage with Earl Andrew, I don't have the luxury to choose now."

Julie answered with a small smile on her face.

"Huh? Marriage? So quickly?"

“Teacher Evane, we might be students, but we are still more than 20 years old, some of us are even 30. It is a perfect time for us to get married.

It is you who is unusual for staying single for so long.

Well, I think that is a little expected since you are the Princess of the strongest Kingdom in the world, your parents don't force you to marry someone, right?

Though I will say, Teacher Evane, you are missing out.

Marrying someone you like is a big change in your life, it is an experience that I am looking forward to.”

Julie smiled.

Again, Evane turned silent.

‘I am the unusual one...?’

She questioned inwardly.

She thought about it a little more, however, suddenly, she recalled someone Julie said,

“You are marrying Earl Andrew?”

“Yes, that is correct.”

Julie nodded.

“Isn't he, like, 3 times older than you? Are you comfortable in marrying someone like that?”

“...”

Hearing that question, Julie turned silent.

There was a change in her expression for a second, however, she quickly hid that and smiled,

“Of course not. Due to Cultivation, age is nothing more than a number.

He may be in his 70s right now, but doesn't he still look like a man in his 30s? What's the problem then?

Also, I have heard that he is caring and cherishes people close to him.

What else could I wish for?”

‘Age is just a number huh...’

Evane muttered inwardly.

‘She is marrying someone who is 3 times older than she is and is completely fine with that...’

Doesn't that mean me getting together with Nux is fine as well...?’

Evane thought inwardly and soon, her face turned red.

‘No no no no! Just what in the hell am I thinking!?’

Evane then shook her head, however, Julie continued,

“I truly believe that as long as you like someone, you should truly pursue him, factors like age, status, and anything else are irrelevant. In the end, your inner satisfaction is what matters the most.”

More and more strange thoughts started entering Evane's head and her face turned redder and redder while she glanced at Nux who was standing right in front of her.

If anyone else saw her right now, they would easily guess her feelings right now, however, the girl, who was standing with her right now, didn't notice anything.

Julie was lost in her thoughts.

What she said earlier was a lie.

She did not like that bastard Andrew at all. She has heard that he was a pervert who lusts after women and is unbearably rude. Of course, she didn't believe those rumors at first, however, she has met this man before and was sure that he wasn't a good man at all.

He was a far cry from the dream man she had imagined in her mind.

The only reason she was marrying him was that her parents forced her to.

Their reasoning was clear, since he is older than her, he would be dying sooner than her as well, once he dies, all his properties would belong to her and would indirectly belong to their house.

It was a long-term plan and recently, it was quite popular amongst the noble houses.

Of course, there were some problems with this plan like children and stuff, however, that would be dealt with later. Julie didn't bother with those either.

However, no matter what, Evane was still a Princess that belongs to the Royal family, there is no way Julie can tell her the truth, this might destroy her family after all.

Therefore, Julie just lied.

What she didn't know, however, was that her lie had opened a completely different path in Evane's mind.

# Chapter 355

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Heavy silence enshrouded the entire room, the people sitting inside the room looked nervous, some were even trembling, while some were sweating profusely.

If any other normal man enters this room, he would pass out just because of the aura the people inside this room were unconsciously emitting.

Yes, unconsciously, that was how strong these people were.

However, even these supposedly strong beings were trembling in front of the man sitting in front of them with a serious look on his face.

The man's hair had turned white, a sight that is not very common in this world since most people cultivate and extend their lifetime. Once these cultivators get old enough to have white hairs, they would just lock themselves inside their rooms and go into seclusion, desperately trying to break through and live longer.

This man, however, was different from others, he knew he could only live for two decades at best, however, he did not care. He didn't bother to go into seclusion to try and break through since he knew he can't do it.

He had already reached the peak, after all.

“So you are telling me...”

That a single man infiltrated our army camp, killed around 6 Expert Stage Cultivators, caused chaos throughout the camp, alerted everybody, and still

ran away?”

The man questioned in a serious tone.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Again, everyone just decided to stay silent.

They all were too scared to say anything right now.

This, however, annoyed the man even further,

“Answer my questions.”

He spoke, no, he threatened.

“Y-Yes, t-that is what happened, L-Lord Herms...”

In the end, a man finally spoke up.

The white-haired man or Lord Herms turned towards the man who spoke and questioned,

“What was his cultivation stage?”

“He was a K-King Stage Cultivator, Lord.”

“There were 7 King Stage Cultivators in the Army Camp.

You all, combined with all the soldiers you had under your command, failed to capture a single King Stage CULtviator?”

“Lord Herms, there were not 7 of us present there, General Armando was not present in the army camp when that man attacked.”

Another man named Fredgelord spoke as he pointed at General Armando.

Herms narrowed his eyes and questioned.

“What were you doing when the Army Camp was attacked, Armando?”

Noticing his gaze, Armando’s entire body trembled in fear. However, he quickly regained control over his emotions and answered,

“My subordinate saw some traces of fighting outside the army camp, these traces were very recent, therefore, I decided to act on my own and left the Army Camp to check them.

I never expected that the army camp would be attacked by an assassin when I was gone.”

“What about the traces you are talking about? Did you find anything peculiar there?” Herms questioned.

“I did not, however, if I had to guess, I would say that those traces were of that assassin fighting someone else there.”

Herms frowned.

“So you are saying that the assassin who was capable enough to kill and then escape from the clutches of 6 King Stage Cultivators was fighting someone else outside our army camp?”

“This is just my assumption, my lord. I am not very sure about this.”

“Hmph! Don’t you think it’s too much of a coincidence? General Armando leaves the Army Camp and the assassin attacks, it is almost as if the assassin knew that you wouldn’t be there.”

Fredgelord snorted.

However, another man named Marcus shook his head,

“I believe it is just a coincident.”

“Hmm? Why do you think so, Marcus? You aren’t in this together with Armando, are you?”

Fredgelord provoked.

Marcus, however, was too experienced, to fall for that cheap provocation, he took a deep breath and continued,

“That assassin was capable of fleeing from 6 King Stage CULTviators and thousands of soldiers without any major injuries, I don’t think the addition of another King Stage Cultivator would have changed anything.”

Hearing those words, the others inside that room nodded as well.

These words sounded credible.

“Indeed, Fredgelord, rather than talking about this nonsense, I believe it would be better if you use your brain and think about ways to identify that Assassin.”

Another man spoke up.

“Tch.”

Fredgelord snorted.

“Forget it.”

Suddenly, Herms, who has been staying silent for a while spoke.

“Hmm?” Armando and the other King Stage Cultivators turned towards Herms and frowned.

Herms, however, didn’t care about what they were thinking and continued,

“If that assassin is as good as you guys say, there is no way we would be able to identify him, Golden Eyes might be rare, however, this does not mean that we can look for golden eyes men in the whole world.

For all we know, that eye color might be a disguise to distract us.

Therefore, rather than looking for someone so sneaky like him, it would be better for us to focus on our future plans.

In the end, only a few Expert Stage Cultivators lost their lives, they might be rare, however, in the end, we are still stronger than the Woods Army.

I don't think we would face any problems in crushing them.”

Herms spoke.

The other Generals nodded their heads and suddenly, one of the Generals raised his hand.

“Lord Herms...”

“What is it?”

“Lord Herms, I heard that Ember Windstar, the General of the Woods Army has given up on her position as the General and has left the Army.”

“Huh?” Herms and the others present in the room frowned.

“Are you certain?” Herms questioned.

“Yes, Lord. This news was reported by my trusted subordinate. A new General named Finkelstein has replaced General Ember.

Although not as good as Ember, he still has decent Skills as the General, however, he still hasn't won the trust of his soldiers yet.

It can be said that right now, the Woods Army is even weaker than before since their strongest General has just turned her back on them.”

Hearing those words, a cold smile appeared on Herms's face

“Heh. Why don't we advance with our plans then?”

# Chapter 356

“Heh. Why don’t we advance with our plans then?”

Herms questioned with a playful smile on his face.

However, before they could continue, Marcus questioned.

“Do we have any information about why General Ember left?”

The General who reported about this shook his head,

“We do not. Actually, General Ember’s resignation was very random and unpredictable, our spies are unable to come up with any decent reasons that made her do something like this.”

“...”

Marcus turned silent and started thinking.

For some reason, General Ember resigning just when they are so close to initiating their plans... He felt that something was off about this.

“Actually, there is another thing I received from my Spy’s report.”

“What is it?” Marcus questioned.

“Do you remember those two Assistant Generals?”

“The ones who killed many of our soldiers in the previous battle?”

This time, Herms was the one who questioned.

“Yes, them. According to the reports, the two of them left the same day General Ember left.”

“Huh? That’s strange. Were they Ember’s subordinates?”

Hermes questioned.

The General, however, shook his head,

“We don’t have any information about them. The only thing we know about them is their name, Nux, and Thyra, but then again, since the two of them always covered their face with a mask, these names could be fakes as well.”

Hermes nodded.

“Tsk. Those bastards are blessed by Lady Luck,

They have killed quite a lot of my subordinates in the previous battle, if I had gotten my hands on them in the next battle, I would have made them regret ever being born into this world.”

Fredgelord snorted as he clenched his fist in annoyance.

“What about their faces, have your spies mentioned anything about that?”

Fredgelord questioned.

“Well, since they always had a mask on their face, we only know about their eye color, the woman named Thyra has icy blue colored eyes, and the man named Nux has Golden Coloured ey-”

Suddenly, the General who was reporting this turned silent as he realized something.

“Golden Coloured eyes...”

He repeated.

“Similar to the assassin who attacked our Camp...”

Marcus understood what he wanted to say as well.

However, Armando shook his head,

“Have your minds stopped working or something?”

This man named Nux is an Expert Stage Cultivator, while the assassin was a King Stage Cultivator, the two of them are not the same person.”

“Ah... that’s true...”

The other Generals nodded in agreement.

“Indeed, we shouldn’t bother wasting our time on small fries.”

Even Herms seemed convinced.

“Alright then, enough discussion.

Since Ember has left, Woods Army’s Morale must be low right now, we will use this chance to attack and reclaim the lost Deathspike Fort and further destroy their morale.”

“What about the Generals, how many Generals should we send this time?”

“Well, we will be taking this a little seriously now.

Fredgelord and Marcus, you two will follow Armando and participate in this War.

Remember, you only have one Goal, and that is the New General’s Head.”

“Hahaha! I have been waiting for this day for a long time now! I can finally move now! Hahaha!”

Fredgelord laughed out loud.

Marcus, however, frowned.

“Sending 3 King Stage Cultivators... won’t that make the Woods wary of us?”

“Don’t worry too much about it.

It's not like I am acting on my own.

Sending Three King Stage Cultivators is nothing.

The Woods have lost 1 King Stage Cultivator already, if we kill another one, they would be 2 King Stage Cultivators down.

That Dynasty only has 6 King Stage Cultivators, if they lose 2 of them, it would be a big advantage for us.

And I am sure that even after losing 2 King Stage Cultivators, that Old Geezer won't make his move.

In the end, the Woods would only send the 4 King Stage Cultivators they are left with on the battlefield and we will use that chance to Kill all 4 of them.

With all the King Stage Cultivators gone, defeating the Woods would be a simple job.”

“What if their Emperor Stage Cultivator interferes?”

General Armando questioned.

“Don't worry, he will not interfere, he knows that if he does, it would mean that he is breaking the Treaty of Eternal Peace, I would then request help from other Kingdoms and destroy the Woods Dynasty.

He won't take that risk. That old geezer is not that foolish.”

“But according to the Treaty, the Emperor Stage Cultivator can't interfere until the Fate of the Kingdom is at stake, the position the Woods Dynasty will be at that time, won't he justify his actions as saving his nation that is about to be defeated by the enemy nation?”

General Armando questioned.

“Heh. Don't worry, his Nation's fate won't be at risk.

After winning this war, rather than marching inside their capital city and trying to gain control over the whole Dynasty, we would only take some 'rich' cities and exploit those.

This way, since the capital is not threatened, he wouldn't be able to move without breaking the Treaty."

"So either he lets us exploit their cities all we want, or he moves and breaks the treaty, causing his country to be destroyed, these are the only two options he will be left with, right?"

Fredgelord questioned with a wide smile on his face.

"Indeed."

Herms nodded with a small smile on his face.

He could already see his victory right in front of his eyes.

The others inside the room smiled as well.

As for Armando,

'I need to report this to Master...'

Although he was smiling on the outside, just like the other Generals, inwardly, he was thinking about different things.

"Alright, the meeting is over, you people can leave now."

Herms waved his hand, the Generals stood up and left the room one by one.

Once the Generals left, the smile on Herms' face disappeared and he narrowed his eyes.

'What a useless bunch. Can't even catch a normal Assassin.

If only I didn't need them for our future plans...

I would have killed them all.

Tsk Tsk.'

Herms snorted.

'Master Nux...'

Outside Herms's room, General Armando quickly contacted Nux, however, the answer he got from him was very unusual.

# Chapter 357

‘Master Nux.’

‘Armando? What it is? Why are you contacting me right now?’

Nux, who was about to return to his room questioned with a frown on his face.

‘Lord Herms is here in the Army Camp.’

Armando reported.

Hearing those words, Nux’s face turned solemn and he nodded,

‘Continue.’

‘He wants us to attack and reclaim the Deathspike Fort.’

Nux noted this detail in his head.

‘Did you learn something else?’

He questioned.

‘Yes, He shared his future plans with us.’

Armando answered and Nux’s eyes brightened in joy.

‘What are they?’

‘After winning this war, he plans to exploit the Woods Dynasty until their Emperor Stage Cultivator loses his patience...’

Armando then started talking about everything Herms said in the meeting, however, suddenly,

‘Armando, wait a minute.’

Nux, who was interested in this topic from the start, spoke.

‘What is it, Master Nux?’

Armando frowned.

‘...’

Nux, however, didn’t reply.

Right now, he had just entered inside his room and,

‘We will talk about secondary things like these later, Armando.

Something really urgent came up, so I will be breaking this connection now.’

‘Huh?’

Armando frowned.

Secondary Matters?

This is an Emperor Stage CULTviators and his future plans they were talking about!

In what world is this topic a secondary one!?

Shouldn’t his Master stop everything and focus on what he is saying right now!?

Armando couldn’t understand this at all.

Nux, however, didn’t care about this at all.

Emperor Stage Cultivators and their plans don’t matter.

Right now, what mattered the most was the woman in front of him.

“Teacher Evane...”

Nux called.

Evane, who was wearing a blue gown looked at Nux and for some reason, Nux’s heart skipped a beat.

This wasn’t the first time he has seen Evane in that gown, actually, he have seen her in that gown quite a lot of times, however, this time, along with that gown, there was a deep red blush on her face, her movement seemed a lot more sensual, a lot more alluring and a lot more...

Womanly.

“A-Are you sure you want to do it...?”

Evane questioned with an awkward, yet alluring look on her face.

Seeing that expression, Nux’s inner sadistic woke up and,

“What are you talking about, Teacher Evane? I do not understand, can you say it more clearly?”

Hearing those words, Evane’s face turned even redder.

“I... I am... a-about... relationship... ours...”

“I really don’t understand what you are talking about, Teacher Evane.”

Nux’s smile widened.

“I...”

Evane wanted to reply, however, in the end, she decided to give up.

What she was going to say was too embarrassing for her.

She would come back later after she is more prepared.

With that thought in her mind, she quickly moved her legs and while hiding her face from Nux, she rushed towards the door.

Seeing that scene, Nux's inner sadistic died down at a record speed and he panicked.

“!!!”

Just as Evane's hand was about to touch the door, Nux hugged her from behind and placed his chin on her shoulders.

“I am sure.”

He whispered.

“S-S-Sure about what?”

Evane questioned back.

She knew that Nux understood what she was talking about, she also understood what he was talking about, however, she wanted revenge.

H-How dare he embarrass her like that!

She wanted to see a flustered expression on that annoying face!

However,

“I don't care.”

Nux was ready with an answer.

“Huh?”

“I don't care about what it is, however, if it is anything related to you, Evane, then I am sure.

If we are in this together, I am more than ready to do it.

That is just how important you are to me.”

Nux spoke and again, Evane’s face turned red.

She didn’t expect Nux to answer her question like that.

And the way he was hugging her like that...

That... that felt very comfortable as well.

In the end, Evane just closed her eyes and enjoyed this strange and new feeling.

Nux then moved his face from her shoulders and brought his lips close to her nape, he then took a deep breath, Evane’s fresh and pleasing body odor entered his nose, and after sniffing it a few more times, Nux kissed her nape.

Evane felt as if strange jolts were coursing throughout her body.

It was a strange and... king of addictive feeling...

While she was lost in this new sort of pleasure, Nux tightened his hands around her waist and picked her up.

Again, Evane didn’t complain at all.

She was actually enjoying this fresh and thrilling feeling.

“!!!”

Soon, however, her eyes widened in surprise when she realized that Nux had placed her on the bed and was now on top of her.

She finally realized.

By coming to his room and saying those words, she has practically said yes to their relationship, not as Teacher and Student,

But as Lovers.

And now that they were lovers...

The next step was...

K-K-K-Kiss!

Evane's heartbeat quickened.

Right now, both her hands were above her hands, grabbed by Nux, while he was kissing all over her body, especially around her neck and shoulders.

For some reason, she felt weirdly relaxed, and whatever Nux was doing felt good.

She...

She was looking forward to what would happen in a few minutes.

Nux continued to kiss her body and helped her relax, once he was sure that it was enough, he finally raised his head and his eyes then met Evane's.

Nux was momentarily lost in those beautiful Green eyes, then, he looked at Evane's beautiful face from up close,

Thin Eyebrows, a straight nose, a face with no blemishes or pimples, perfect features that matched each other well, and those juicy light pink lips that were quivering a little.

'I wonder what they would taste like'

With this question in his mind, Nux lowered his head, and soon, he closed his eyes.

The distance between his and Evane's lips reduced and just as he was about to claim those beautiful lips,

A Hand blocked his lips and he heard a voice.

"I-I am n-not ready for this!"

# Chapter 358

“I-I am n-not ready for this!”

Evane muttered with a flustered look on her face.

Nux’s eyes then fell on her face and he noticed that right now, her face was as red as a tomato. To be honest, this embarrassed face was too alluring for Nux to not do anything.

However, in the end, he respected Evane’s decision.

Everyone was not straightforward and aggressive like Ember, some people were like Evane as well.

People who want to take their time to get comfortable around you.

People who want to take things slowly.

That was completely normal.

Nux then moved his body and he fell beside Evane.

“I apologize for rushing like that, Evane.”

He spoke as gently as he could.

Hearing those words, Evane felt guilty...

“I apologize...”

Therefore, she apologized.

“I should be more open to things like these, I kno-”

“You do not have to force yourself, you won’t enjoy this if you do.”

Nux interrupted.

Then, he looked at Evane's face and smiled gently,

“Trust me, it would be much more pleasurable if you and I both are ready for this. I am already the happiest man in the world now that you have decided to give me a chance.”

“Thank you.”

A small smile appeared on Evane's face.

“Alright then, it is decided. We will take things slowly,

So no touching until you are comfortable enough.”

“I-I never said t-that touching isn't allowed...”

“Hmm?”

“Y-You can touch... If you want...”

Her voice was practically inaudible when she said those words.

“Heh.”

A small smile appeared on Nux's face.

“Now that makes it easier.”

He spoke.

“W-What?”

Evane frowned.

“I now know what we can do for the rest of the night.”

“R-Rest of the night?”

Evane questioned with a shocked look on her face.

“Hmm? Of course. You weren’t planning to go back, were you?”

“I wa-”

“Don’t bother, you will be staying here with me for the rest of the night.

Kukuku~ It would be a great night indeed.”

Nux chuckled and seeing the smile on Nux’s face while he was looking at her, Evane started imagining something.

‘S-Since I allowed t-touching... i-is he going to h-hug me for the rest of the night? Is that what he plans to do?’

Evane’s heartbeat quickened as her mind started imagining things in more and more detail.

‘T-That doesn’t sound that bad...’

Evane concluded in her mind and was actually looking forward to the rest of the night. However,

“Let’s paint.”

Nux’s next words crashed all her dreams.

“Huh? Paint?”

“Yes, isn’t that something you like? After staying with you for so long, I have come to like that as well.

So let’s draw something together.”

Nux spoke cheerfully and stood up with an excited look on his face.

The ring on his finger shined, canvas, paints, drawing sheets, everything appeared one after another, while Evane just stayed there with a shocked

look on her face.

‘Is... is he holding himself back after I stopped him the first time...?’

A question appeared in her mind.

However, before she could ponder much about it, Nux questioned,

“Hmm? You don’t look very excited about this.

Do you not wish to draw right now?”

“Hmm? No, I am fine, just give me a second.”

Evane then stood up, tied her messed-up hair into a ponytail, and walked towards Nux.

As someone who has been drawing and painting for decades, she has a deep love for this in her heart, therefore, in just a minute, all her thoughts vanished and she started thinking about what to draw.

“!!!”

While her mind was occupied with these thoughts, Nux grabbed her from behind, pulled her close to him, and sat down with her sitting on his lap.

He then moved his mouth close to her ears and whispered,

“Shall we start our painting now?”

“H-Huh?”

Evane couldn’t answer.

Nux grabbed her hand that was carrying a paintbrush, then gently moving his hands, he dropped the paintbrush she was carrying on the paint, and then he moved it back to the canvas.

“What are you thinking about, Evane? Don’t you want to draw with me?”

Nux whispered again.

Evane, who was busy enjoying Nux's warmth and the way he caressed her waist, finally came out of her reverie and questioned inwardly,

'I-I have to draw like that!?'

However, before she could think too much, Nux moved her hand again and started drawing.

Evane started to enjoy this strange way of painting as well, soon, she started moving her hand on her own accord, and Nux,

Well, he completely ignored the painting and continued to touch, kneed, and kiss Evane's body to his heart's content. Not only that, since Evane moved her body a lot while she painted, her butt moved as well, Nux's little brother approved this as well and although it couldn't act today like it used to, it still enjoyed the feeling of being rubbed by Evane's perky butt.

The drawing session continued for the rest of the night and Nux dared to say that,

This was the most enjoyable painting session he has ever experienced.

Actually, this wasn't true for just him alone,

Evane was the same.

This was the most pleasurable drawing session for her as well.

Sitting on his lap, she felt strangely comfortable and safe, and although Nux touching her like that was a little embarrassing, with how gentle he was and how good it felt,

She allowed him to do whatever he wanted while she drew and chatted with him for the rest of the night.

...

The next day, Evane and Nux entered the classroom at the same time, Nux then reluctantly left Evane's side and walked towards his own seat.

This time, however, neither the boys nor the girls in the classroom greeted him,

They just sat on their seats while looking at Nux and then looking at Evane who was standing near her table and narrowed their eyes in doubt.

‘Something is wrong here...’

The whole classroom collectively thought.

# Chapter 359

“Alright, that will be enough for today.”

Evane dismissed the classroom.

“Teacher Evane.”

A student called out.

“Yes, James?”

Evane questioned.

“I had a few doubts I wanted to ask, are you free right now?”

Evane’s eyes momentarily fell on Nux, who was looking at this boy named James with a threatening gaze, and she smiled wryly,

“Yes James, I am free right now. Follow me to my office, you can ask me what you want there.”

“It would be better if you try to solve your problems on your own though. You would turn into an Idiot if you seek help for every little problem you face.”

Nux commented.

James turned towards Nux and looked at him with a blank look on his face,

“Aren’t you the one who asked for Teacher Evane’s help the moment you entered our classroom?”

“Well, I am different.”

Nux replied.

James narrowed his eyes,

“Why are you different?”

The other boys in the class had serious expressions on their faces as well.

“Well, I am already an Idiot.”

“...”

The whole class turned silent.

In the end, they decided to ignore Nux’s words and continued with whatever they were doing.

James followed behind Evane and seeing that, Nux snorted inwardly.

‘You should just disappear, you bastard.’

In the end, Nux shook his head and decided to go to Arvina’s mansion.

“Teacher, I am here.”

He spoke with a big smile on his face.

“So you finally got the time to visit your teacher, huh?”

“Hahaha~ Well, I was busy with my classes.”

Nux chuckled.

“What’s the point? You don’t need those classes, if you want to skip them, I can arrange that for you.”

“No no, I need to attend those classes, it is very important for me.”

Nux smiled brightly.

Arvina narrowed her eyes suspiciously, however, in the end, she decided to stay silent and continued,

“Alright, whatever you wish, let’s start with your trai-”

However, before she could even complete, Ember entered the room and hugged Nux from behind.

“You haven’t visited me for 2 nights now, am I not good enough for you now?”

Are you going to leave me after you used me?

Are you not going to love me anymore?”

Ember complained dramatically.

Hearing those words, a small smile appeared on Nux’s face, then, his smile turned evil.

“Huh? Who are you?”

How dare you hug me as if you know me, woman?”

“Now you act like you don’t even know me? Have you really abandoned me!?”

Ember, who understood what to do questioned even more dramatically.

“You bastard, how dare you!?”

Ember then grabbed Nux’s collar in anger and shouted.

“Ember, look, you were an amazing woman, but,

It just doesn’t feel the same anymore.”

Nux replied with a guilty look on his face.

Ember's grip on his collar weakened, taking this chance, Nux stepped back,  
“I...”

Ember didn't know what to say.

She was too shocked to say anything.

Dropped shoulders, furrowed eyebrows, moist eyes, her sadness was clear from her body language.

Arvina, who was seeing everything from afar was speechless.

Just what in the hell were these two doing?

Even she could tell that the two of them were just acting and were not serious.

But the point was...

Why?

Just why in the hell were these people doing this?

She couldn't understand.

She then noticed that Ember's body language suddenly changed, she then appeared in front of Nux with a wild smile on her face and then, she picked him up.

“Alright, don't blame me for what's going to happen to you from now on.”

“W-What are you going to do to me now?”

Nux questioned with a 'panicked' look on his face.

“Heh. I am going to take you with me and lock you inside the room with me.”

Then, a seductive look appeared on Ember's face and she whispered,  
"There, I would do 'bad things' with you.

Kukuku~"

Hearing those words, Nux, who was in her arms, panicked even more.

"B-Bad things."

"Kukuku~"

Ember laughed again.

"..."

Again, Arvina was speechless.

Just... Just how in the hell did this turn into something like this?

Why are these two so random?

Is that how normal couple acts like?

Also...

Why are they doing this right in front of her!?

While Arvina was busy with her thoughts, Ember turned around and walked towards the door, with Nux in his arms, of course.

"Where are you going?" Arvina questioned.

"Huh? Can't you see? I am going back to my room to do 'bad things' with him."

Ember answered as if it was the most natural thing in this world.

Arvina's face twitched,

“You can do ‘bad things’ with him later, he needs to train right now. So you can take your leave, but Nux is staying here.”

“Huh? What’s the point?”

Ember questioned.

Arvina narrowed her eyes.

“Isn’t he already stronger than you? What can you possibly teach him now?”

A logical question.

“I can still teach him swordsmanship.”

Arvina answered.

“He has already formed his own style now, you do not have to teach him.”

Ember replied.

“He can always refine that style by sparring with me.”

“I hope you won’t take this offensively, but the current you is a little too weak to be a challenge him, his learning speed would be too slow if he trains with you.

You do not have to worry about that. I will spar with him after I am done with some other spars with him.”

Ember smiled seductively.

“...”

Arvina turned silent.

This time, she didn’t have any reply.

Seeing that, Ember walked out of the room.

“ ... ”

Arvina, who was left inside the room stayed silent for a long time.

There were different thoughts in her mind, but...

Soon, she started hearing voices that she would rather not hear...

“So goood~~”

“Annhh! Aannh! Aanh!!”

“Ugghhh!!”

“ ... ”

Arvina’s body twitched in annoyance.

‘T-These two...

They are shameless!!

Especially that bitch Ember!

I can’t believe she is doing something like that with an 18-year-old boy!

Shameless!’

# Chapter 360

“Just... how...?”

“You do not have to force yourself so much, Ember. I know you are strong but, if you and I fight, you will lose.”

Nux spoke as gently as he can.

“Losing in a fight and not being a match at all are very different.”

Ember spoke with a wry smile on her face.

At the same time, she grabbed the hand Nux had extended towards her and stood up.

She didn't promise in vain, after she was done doing 'bad things' with Nux, the two of them started sparring against each other.

However, Ember soon realized something.

Nux was too strong, no matter how she fought, defeating her was a simple task for Nux.

It was as if she was a child in front of him.

Ember couldn't understand...

“We are both King Stage Cultivators, you could even be called a newbie King Stage Cultivator, then why is the gap between us so huge?”

Just how is this possible?”

Ember questioned.

“That's because of his Body Cultivation.”

The one who answered was a woman with a lean physique, who walked toward Nux, kissed his lips, and then turned towards her with a small smile on her face.

“Body Cultivation?” Ember frowned.

“That is correct.

Don’t you ever wonder how Nux defeated you when he was just an Expert Stage Cultivator?”

Thyra questioned.

“Isn’t that because he has an affinity with 4 Elements?”

Ember replied.

“That is not correct.” Nux shook his head.

“Having the ability to control all 4 elements is certainly good, however, it doesn’t allow me to defeat someone who is stronger than me.”

“Then this Body Cultivation...”

“In this World, Cultivation is divided into two parts, Mana Cultivation, what we people usually practice, and Body Cultivation, which, for some reason, is not practiced by any of the people I have met.”

“This is my first time hearing about Body Cultivation.”

Ember spoke.

“Yes, that is the reason why no one practices it,

Nobody even knows about it.”

Thyra nodded.

“Then how did you...?”

Ember questioned.

“Well, I don’t specifically practice body cultivation on my own.”

Nux answered and Ember frowned in confusion.

“His special ability.

It not only raises his Mana Cultivation but Body Cultivation as well.”

“!!!” Ember’s eyes widened in surprise.

She quickly understood what that implies,

“It means that just by having sex with us, he becomes...”

“Yes, he doesn’t just become King Stage Mana Cultivator, but a King Stage Body Cultivator as well.

This is the reason why he is so strong.

He is twice as strong as a normal cultivator of the same stage.”

“!!!”

Again, even though she had already thought about it, Ember was still shocked.

“C-Cheating. You are cheating!

You are cheating in life!”

Ember complained like a small child while she pointed her trembling finger at Nux.

She actually looked quite cute right now.

A small smirk appeared on Nux’s face as he glanced at Ember,

“Isn’t it a good thing that the man who is all yours is special?”

Ember, who was pointing at Nux aggressively, blushed a little.

Then, she nodded her head in agreement.

It’s a good thing indeed.

“Tsk, fucking cheat.”

This time, Thyra was the one who complained.

Again, Nux just kissed her lips as a bribe,

The bribe worked, the woman just closed her eyes, moved her hands around his neck, and enjoyed the Kiss.

“Hey...”

Suddenly, Ember called out.

“Hmm? What is it?” Nux questioned.

“This Body Cultivation...”

I know your ability won’t help me with this, but... do you have any technique through which I can start this?”

“Hmm?” Nux narrowed his eyes.

“Well, I don’t want to admit it, but I know that I have already used up all my potential. No matter how much I cultivate, I can’t improve my Mana Cultivation now.

Not only that, with your ability, once you get stronger, I will get stronger as well, therefore, I was thinking,

That rather than just depending on you to get stronger, why don’t I try this Body Cultivation?”

“Well, it’s not a bad idea, but the problem is that we don’t really have a ‘technique’ you can use.”

Thyra answered and Ember turned silent.

‘I guess I was hoping too much.’

Ember thought inwardly and shook her head in disappointment.

However, suddenly,

“Actually...”

Nux spoke.

“I do have a Body Cultivation technique with me.”

“Huh?”

Thyra and Ember both looked at Nux with shocked looks on their faces.

“You do!?”

Thyra, however, was more shocked compared to Ember.

“Why didn’t you give it to me then?”

“Umm... You never asked...?”

Nux smiled wryly.

Actually, before Ember mentioned this, he never thought about it. It just... skipped his mind.

It was pretty strange.

‘Why hasn’t any of us ever thought about this?’

Nux wondered in his head and after thinking for a while, he finally realizes.

Every one of them was busy with their own goals in their minds,

Thyra was trying to be ‘useful’ to him. Always trying to become an Expert Stage Cultivator as soon as possible.

Felberta was busy catching up to Skyla and others and defeating them no matter what.

Skyla was busy learning Killing Techniques.

Lane just wanted to stay together with everyone.

Edda... well... her mind was filled with other thoughts. As for getting stronger, well, she didn’t really care.

Amaya had her physique. She only focused on her physique and thought of ways to increase her mastery over it.

As for Allura, well, she was influenced by Edda and didn’t care much about strength either. As long as she was with Nux, nothing else mattered.

Ember, however, was different, she was someone who had used up all her potential and didn’t have any ways to get stronger than her current self.

For someone like her who values strength over her life, this was devastating.

Therefore, this Body Cultivation Technique was a new hope for her.

“Alright then, Ember.”

Nux smiled, then, a book appeared in his hands and he extended it towards Ember.

“Here.”

Ember took the book, however, as soon as she read the title, her eyes widened in horror and surprise.

“S-S-Seven Star Cultivation Technique...”

# Chapter 361

“S-S-Seven Star Cultivation Technique...”

Ember’s eyes widened in shock.

Even Thyra, who was standing beside Ember had a shocked look on her face.

“I want a Technique as well.”

She spoke.

“Well, you two sisters would have to share it with each other.”

Nux replied with a playful smile on his face.

“No.”

Thyra, however, shook her head.

“Hmm?” Nux frowned.

“I think we need to share this with everybody. They are too weak and many of them still can’t defeat cultivators who have the same cultivation as them.

I can also see that not many of them are fit to learn my techniques, therefore, I believe introducing Body Cultivation to all of them is important.”

Thyra’s inner teacher woke up.

Nux welcomed this idea with open arms.

“But we won’t be forcing anyone, okay?”

He spoke.

Suddenly, a cold smile appeared on Thyra's face,

“Heh, you don't need to force anyone.

I am sure every one of them will accept this idea with open arms.”

Nux narrowed his eyes.

For some reason, he didn't like that smile on Thyra's face.

However, in the end, he shook his head.

Thyra has been training all his women for so long now, she knows what to do and what not to.

Everything will be fine.

Probably...

Hearing their conversation, Ember smiled wildly, then, she passed the technique to Thyra,

“Hmm?”

Thyra looked at Ember and frowned.

“Why are you looking at me like that?

You are the one who is responsible for training them, right? I think it would be best if you keep this technique with you.”

Thyra looked at Ember for a while and then she nodded her head.

“However, do note that if I feel that you are lacking and are unable to train my 'sisters' properly,”

Ember walked closer to Thyra and whispered.

“I will take away your position.”

Hearing those words, Thyra smiled as well.

“Don’t worry,

I will train them as intensely as I can.”

Ember’s smile widened as well.

For some reason, she could feel that she would be getting along with Thyra a lot.

Thyra shared the same thoughts as she and Ember continued to smile at each other.

A new friendship was formed.

And the rest of Nux’s women...

Well, their fates were decided and they don’t even know what happened.

Poor souls indeed.

“Ahh, yes, remember, keep Amaya out of this.”

Suddenly, Nux spoke.

“”Hmm?””

Both Ember and Thyra had the same reaction.

Ember then turned towards Thyra and questioned,

“Who was this Amaya again?”

“Princess of Kingdom of Skadi, Royal Consort of the Skyfall Kingdom, one of the Two Untouched Flowers, Leader of the Thousand Information Chamber.”

Thyra answered and Ember raised her eyebrows in amazement.

“That’s a long list of titles.”

“Indeed.”

Thyra nodded.

Amaya was someone that even she respected.

She was an intelligent woman, even though the change in her attitude when things come to Nux is a little worrying.

“Is that the reason why he is showing such blatant favoritism?” Ember questioned as she looked at Nux and pouted.

Nux found the pouting War General especially cute.

However, he then decided to clear the misunderstanding.

“That is not the case, Amaya is a little different.”

Saying that, he raised his hand and Black Mist came out.

Nux then explained about Amaya’s Physique and Ember finally understood.

“So she already has something that would make her stronger.”

“Indeed.”

Nux nodded.

“Alright, we will leave her alone then.”

Ember and Thyra nodded.

No one knew when the training became something ‘they’ were responsible for.

It could be said that the new ‘friendship’ is stronger than what anyone predicted.

Nux looked at the two of them and smiled.

It is always good to see his women getting along with each other, after all.

While he was lost in these thoughts, Ember turned towards him.

“Hmmm, I want to meet my new sisters as well,

How about we call them here?”

“Huh?”

Hearing that, Nux frowned.

Then, after thinking a bit more about it, a smile appeared on his face.

“Hmmm, that is not a bad idea.”

Since he had to spend the night with Evane now, he is unable to take out more time for them, however, if they all come and live with him here...

Things would be different.

Also, he was missing living with all of them as well.

“That does not seem like a bad idea at all~”

Nux’s smile widened.

“But where are they going to live? Your room might be an option, but there are too many people there.

Other teachers would notice something sooner or later.”

Thyra questioned.

“...”

Nux’s smile disappeared.

“Hmm, can’t they just stay in Arv’s house? It is quite big, I don’t think anyone would notice.”

Ember suggested.

“HmMMM.”

Nux thought about this and a minute later, a small, playful smile appeared on his face.

He could see the way.

The way to get close to his lovely Teacher Arvina.

“Alright, I’ll talk with my ‘Teacher’~”

Nux chuckled and then, he turned around.

“Where are you going?” Thyra questioned.

“To talk with Teacher Arvina.”

Nux answered and then, he walked away.

“Well, he looks excited.”

Ember commented.

Thyra, however, didn’t say anything.

She felt that something was off, however, she was unable to place her finger on it.

In the end, she just decided to trust Nux and forgot about it.

...

On the other side, rather than going to Arvina as he said, Nux walked out of Arvina’s mansion, activated his [Conceal], and started walking around the

Academy.

‘I failed to use such a big asset even though it was right in front of me...’

Nux narrowed his eyes.

Body Cultivation is a completely different path of Cultivation that nobody in this world knows about.

However, with his system, not only does he not know about it, he even has ways to use it to his women’s advantage.

However, even after being here for half a year, he hasn’t acted on it.

This was... unsettling...

‘I need to use my system more efficiently...’

# Chapter 362

Careless.

Way too careless.

To not use his assets efficiently...

This couldn't get any dumber.

The more Nux thought about this, the more he cursed himself.

However, he knew doing something like that won't help, in the end, rather than cursing himself fruitlessly, it is better to learn from this and think a little more about all this.

Thinking about all this, Nux started his walk.

A walk where he just thought about different things on his own.

The walk where he thought about the problems he was facing on his own, without Amaya's, Felberta's, or Thyra's help.

The walk where he would talk with himself.

Something that he hasn't done for a long time now.

His system is strong.

A little too strong.

It is a good thing, however, this can also be considered bad as well.

With so much power in his hands, Nux became conceited.

Since he never really faced any challenge, he got careless.

From a mortal to a King Stage Cultivator, his journey has been incomparably smoother compared to any normal person.

However, now, things have changed.

His next goal, the Emperor Stage...

This Stage was different.

It was incomparably different than any other cultivation stage.

If he doesn't change the way he acts, he would face serious consequences.

'Status.'

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 18]

[Mana Cultivation: King.]

[Body Cultivation: King.]

[Physique: Devouring Mist Demon Physique – Advanced (+)]

[Talent: High]

[LVL: 60 à 61]

[HP: 1620/1620]

[MP: 2101/2110]

[STR: 162 à 164]

[AGL: 172 à 174]

[VIT: 160 à 162]

[STM: 199 à 201]

[INT: 210 à 211]

[DEF: 159 à 161]

[Blank Points:189 à 192]

[Ability: Craving Touch, Eye Of Discerning, Sense, Professional Killer, Conceal, Harem Seal, Slave Seal, Trickster, Harem's Gate, Sound Seal, Dash, Regeneration.]

This time, he carefully read the abilities he has bought and unlocked.

‘Not enough... These are not enough to deal with Emperor Stage...’

Thinking about it, Nux's eyes fell on another section.

[System Points: 84,534]

A small smile appeared on his face.

‘System Shop’

[System Shop]

[Cultivation Techniques]

[1 Star Cultivation Techniques – 100 System points]

[2 Star Cultivation Techniques – 200 System points]

...

...

...

...

[7 Star Cultivation Techniques – 10000 System points]

There were still more, but Nux quickly decided to ignore them and moved to the next columns.

[Skill Books]

[1 Star Skill Books – 10 System points]

...

...

...

...

...

[7 Star Skill Books – 1000 System points]

[Weapons]

[1 Star Weapons – 10 System points]

...

...

...

...

...

[7 Star Weapons – 1000 System points]

[Abilities]

[1 Star Abilities – 100 System points]

[2 Star Abilities – 200 System points]

[3 Star Abilities – 500 System points]

[4 Star Abilities – 1000 System points]

[5 Star Abilities – 2000 System points]

[6 Star Abilities – 5000 System points]

[7 Star Abilities – 10000 System points]

Again, he opened the shop and jumped directly to the abilities section.

There, he saw a section that he usually ignores.

[8 Star Abilities – 100000 System points]

8 Star...

Technically speaking...

This level was 1 level higher than Emperor Stage.

These abilities should be incomparably stronger than 7 Star Abilities, which Nux believes are too powerful.

These abilities...

Should be something Nux can use to defeat Emperor Stage Cultivators.

And he has been ignoring this for a long time now.

Of course, he is that big of an Idiot to just ignore something like this.

He had his reasons,

When he came to this world, 100000 System points was a huge deal for him, therefore, he didn't even look at this section now, even now, after he has grown so much, 100000 is still a big number for him.

However, right now, he has 85000 System Points, reaching 100000 wasn't hard.

Just one trip to Bloodhill Wilderness and boom,

He has the points he needed.

Why wasn't he doing it then?

That was because this was a scam.

No matter how much he tries, he could never select 8 Star Abilities.

This section was locked!

Initially, he thought he needed to 100000 before being able to unlock this, however, he later realized that this was not true because,

[8 Star Weapons – 10000 System points]

The 8 Star Weapons that cost 10000 System Points,

He had more than 10000 System Points right now, however, even after that, the 8-Star Weapons section is locked.

The same is true for everything else as well.

Anything that is above 7 Star inside the Shop is locked and Nux had no Idea about how to break that lock.

This was the reason why he has been ignoring this section for a long time now.

This was also one of the problems he is currently facing.

‘Ugghh... whatever, I will just buy a few 7 Star Skills and Weapons for them...’

In the end, Nux just shook his head and stopped thinking about this 8 Star lock and started thinking about different ways to get stronger.

Of course, he won't be buying anything right now.

For this, he will discuss things with his women.

In the end, they are the ones who will use these Skills and Weapons after all.

Noting this in his mind, Nux shifted his attention to his next problem that was related to his [Conceal] and [Sense].

[Conceal] and [Sense] are the abilities that he has been depending on for a long time now and are two of the most used abilities he has, however, recently, these 2 abilities have been failing him.

Nux has noticed that whenever Ember is involved, [Sense] fails.

[Conceal], on the other hand, works perfectly fine against Ember.

Actually, other than the time when he was assassinating those Solid Earth bastards, [Conceal] has never failed to work.

However, that is what makes it so dangerous.

For [Sense], Nux had a rough idea of why it failed when Ember is around.

[Sense] is a 5 Star Ability.

Ember, however, is a King Stage Cultivator, which is comparable to 6 Star.

Nux believes that since Ember's 'tier' is higher than his Ability, [Sense] fails in front of her.

However, this introduces another problem,

[Conceal] is a 7 Star Ability, something that even an Emperor can't beat, then why...

Why did it fail...?

‘Wait...’

Suddenly, Nux paused his steps as he realized something.

His eyes then moved and fell on his abilities again,

[Ability: Craving Touch, Eye Of Discerning, Sense, Professional Killer, Conceal, Harem Seal, Slave Seal, Trickster, Harem’s Gate, Sound Seal, Dash, Regeneration.]

He finally realized.

# Chapter 363

[Sense]

[5 Star Ability]

[Description: When activated, the user will be able to sense everything around him. The range will depend on the user's MP (1 MP = 1 meter).]

[Note: The ability will be activated automatically if someone is deliberately hiding his/her presence and is in the detection range of the user.]

[Note: The ability will fail to detect the presence of a cultivator who is concealing his presence and has 2 times more MP than the users]

[Conceal]

[7 Star Ability]

[Description: When activated, no one will be able to sense the user's presence or see him if the user doesn't wish for it. Only a cultivator with 3 times more MP than the user can detect the user's presence. Or else, the user can only be detected if he touches or is touched by the user.]

[Note: If the user's killing intent is detected by a cultivator, the effect of the ability, [Conceal], would wear off]

‘So that's it...’

Nux finally realized.

Then, he clicked on another ability, and information about that appeared in front of his eyes again.

[Professional Killer]

[3 Star Ability]

[Description: A passive skill that controls a user's killing intent to such an extent that it could only be released after the user's attack has landed, or has failed to land on the target.]

Reading about this ability, a small smile appeared on Nux's face.

Finally.

He finally figured this out.

The 'Star' of his ability doesn't tell if the ability is good or bad, it tells about its Tier.

A 5 Star ability won't work on a 6 Star, or a King Stage Cultivator.

Or in other words, an Ability won't work on someone who is 'stronger' than the Ability's Tier.

[Sense] a 5 Star ability won't work on Ember, a King Stage Cultivator.

As for his [Conceal], well, [Conceal] never failed to begin with.

What failed was the [Professional Killer], as a 3 Star Ability, it failed to work against Grand Master Stage Cultivators, therefore, it failed to hide Nux's killing intent and once his Killing Intent leaked, the [Conceal] wore off.

“Haahh...”

A big smile appeared on Nux's face.

“Good job, me.”

He patted himself on the back and then,

He continued his walk.

This time, however, his mood was a lot lighter than before.

He still doesn't know if he could defeat an Emperor Stage Cultivator or not, however, he was sure he would find a way out eventually.

He just needs to be more careful and focus on things around him.

...

“...”

“...”

Right now, Nux was sitting in front of Arvina and Arvina was looking at him with an annoyed look on her face.

“So... you are telling me to let your ‘other women’ live here with you as well?”

“...yes.”

“How many ‘other women’ do you have again?”

Arvina questioned as she placed her elbows on the table and her chin on her fists.

She looked very serious right now.

“I have 9 lovely women around me.”

Nux answered with a small smile on his face.

His answer, however, was a big shock for Arvina.

“N-NINE!?”

“Yes.”

Nux replied honestly.

“How is that possible!?”

Arvina questioned.

“Hmm? We fell in love and became lovers...?”

Nux tilted his head in confusion.

Arvina’s face twitched in frustration when she heard that answer.

In this world, a capable man with high social standing having nine or more than nine women in his harem was possible.

And of course, with Nux’s monstrous talent, he is incomparably better than those ‘capable’ men out there.

Therefore, him having 9 women should not be weird if,

“But you are only 18 years old!

Just how in the hell do you have 9 women already!?”

How is this possible!?”

Arvina couldn’t understand.

“Didn’t you think that an 18-year-old boy being a King Stage Cultivator was impossible as well?”

Nux replied calmly.

“...”

Arvina turned silent.

If he can be a King Stage Cultivator at the age of 18, then why can’t he have 9 women as his lovers at the age of 18...

Arvina couldn’t help but agree with Nux’s words.

In the end, an 18-year-old boy having 9 women as his partners sounded more logical in Arvina's mind.

However,

“And why should I let them stay here in my mansion?”

Arvina questioned.

“Because I miss them.”

Nux answered again.

“I fail to see how that's my problem.”

Arvina didn't back down.

“It is not your problem, it is mine.

However, I am your beloved student.

You aren't going to abandon me, are you?”

Nux questioned with a small smile on his face.

“ ... ”

Arvina didn't reply.

“Teacher Arvina, it's been months since I have seen them.

I really do miss them badly.

There are so many free rooms in your mansion, can't you just give them a few rooms? 3 would be more than enough.”

Nux requested.

Arvina looked into Nux's eyes and in the end, she couldn't ignore her student's sincere look.

“How long will they stay here for?”

Nux's eyes brightened up.

“A week, no, 2 weeks, no, a Month!

Yes, a month would be enough!”

He replied with an excited look on his face.

“2 Weeks, that's it. I won't let them stay for a second more than that.”

Arvina spoke with a strict look on her face.

“Alright, 2 weeks it is then.”

Nux didn't argue and smiled brightly.

“Teacher Arvina, you are the best!”

“Now leave my room, I still have some work to do.”

“Yes, teacher.”

With a bright mood, Nux stood up and turned around.

“Also.”

However, just as he was about to leave, Arvina called.

Nux turned around and seeing that she has gained his attention, Arvina spoke with a slight blush on her face.

“T-Tone it down a little...

When... you know...

When they arrive...”

A playful smile appeared on Nux’s face as he nodded,

“Don’t worry teacher.

I will make sure that you won’t hear a thing.”

“You can leave now.”

Arvina didn’t show her face to Nux and ordered.

Nux smirked.

Then, he left Arvina’s office and,

‘Did you all miss me, my darlings?’

# Chapter 364

‘Did you all miss me, my darlings?’

Nux questioned with a small smile on his face.

‘Heeh? What’s with that tone huh? And since when did you start caring about us?’

Felberta questioned back.

Nux couldn’t see her right now, however, he was sure that she had a playful smile on her face when she said those words.

‘Oh c’mon, you know I care about you guys the most in this world, right?’

‘Hmph, you are all words~’

Felberta snorted.

‘Tsk Tsk, I was a fool for thinking about you guys when you think so badly of me.’

Nux pouted.

‘I am different, I don’t think like her. For me, you are the best~’

Skyla chimed in.

‘My lovely Skyla, you are the best as well.

I love you~’

‘Hehe~ Love you too~’

Skyla chuckled cutely.

‘So? What were you talking about before when you said that you were thinking about us?’

Felberta questioned.

‘Hmm, are we finally going to have sex in the middle of the War?’

Edda questioned.

And from her tone, she didn’t look like she was joking at all.

Yes, she was damn serious about it.

She had a checklist in her mind.

A checklist that holds her deepest fantasy.

A checklist that no one has ever seen.

‘...’

Nux turned silent.

‘So? What were you talking about before when you said that you were thinking about us?’

Felberta repeated her question without changing her tone at all.

Her voice and tone sounded so similar that Nux felt he had just returned back to time.

Felberta’s message was clear.

Ignore that horny bitch.

Nux, of course, couldn’t do that.

‘I am very sorry, my perverted maid, I still haven’t arranged that for you, however, I will make sure to compensate you a lot.’

‘Are we going to use ropes?’

‘Ropes are overrated, I was thinking about using Vines.’

‘Hmmm, feels closer to nature. That is not bad at all.

I wonder why have I never thought about that?’

‘You are not creative enough. You need to be more creative.’

Nux suggested and Edda noted her shortcoming.

‘ ... ’

Felberta and other girls, who were listening to this conversation were speechless.

‘Edda, I have never seen you before, however, I sure am excited to meet you.

I want to know how your brain works.’

Ember spoke in a curious tone.

‘Sure, I want to meet a previous General as well. I want to ask if it is possible to have se-‘

‘Meet her?’

Ember’s words were cut off by Amaya, who focused on something much more important.

A satisfied smile appeared on Ember’s face,

‘You are as intelligent as I have heard.’

She complimented.

‘Thank you for the compliment, now can you explain more about the meeting part.’

Unless the compliment was from Nux, Amaya didn’t care and this was very clear from her unchanged tone.

‘Well, Nux just talked with Sister Arvina and you all can now live inside Sister Arvina’s mansion, where Nux and we two live.’

Thyra answered.

“What? Really!?”

Skyla questioned with an excited look on her face.

‘Yeah, I missed living with you guys, so I thought, why not?’

Aren’t I the best?’

Nux questioned, of course, his target wasn’t the one he was talking to, but someone else.

‘Well, I guess you still think about us.’

Felberta spoke.

There was a small smile on her face while she signed the documents in front of her.

She may not show it openly like Skyla, but everyone knew that she was very happy about this.

However,

‘But you, Miss Intelligent, you can’t come here due to, well, you know, reasons. The same goes for you, Allura.’

Ember muttered.

‘Don’t worry, I am a very patient woman, I can wait for as long as it is required.’

Allura answered without hesitation.

‘Of course you wouldn’t have any problem.’

Thyra snorted.

‘Heh, she would be dying soon, after all. A dead person has no wants.’

Edda chuckled.

Allura’s smile widened,

‘Well, I am different from others,

I will have many many needs once I die.’

‘Fufufu~ You are too perverted, Allura.’

Edda laughed.

‘...I don’t want to hear that from someone like you.’

Allura replied.

‘Fufufu~’

Edda chuckled again.

‘...’

The two of them were chuckling and giggling, however, someone inside the room didn’t share that happiness.

‘Amaya, I promise I will make it up to you somehow.’

‘Don’t worry about it, I can understand.’

‘...’

Other girls turned silent.

They have been talking with each other for a long while now, therefore, they knew that this wasn't Amaya's normal response.

Right now, they were actually pitying the girl.

However, Amaya's next words changed their minds.

‘The one whose love is the strongest is often the one who sacrifices the most.’

‘...’

The other women who heard Amaya's words could feel their faces twitching.

‘Since I love you the most compared to anyone in this world, I have to make this sacrifice for the sake of our future plans and happiness.’

‘Bitch...’

‘Fucking bitch...’

‘Hmph.’

Others turned their head away even though they knew that Amaya won't be able to see a thing.

‘Still, I promise I will make it up to you.’

Nux spoke in a serious tone.

‘I believe you.’

Amaya replied with a small smile.

‘I believe you with all my heart.’

The smile on her face stayed the same, however, the intensity in her eyes...

Felt different.

It felt a little intimidating.

‘Mhm, you won’t have to wait for long.’

Nux, however, wasn’t intimidated at all. Rather, he only felt closer and closer to Amaya.

He was changing as well.

‘So? When are we going to leave?’

Felberta questioned.

‘Hmm? You haven’t packed up already? I am already ready to leave.’

Skyla spoke with a smile.

‘A-Already?’

Felberta was shocked.

‘Uhh... Are we not leaving right now...?’

Even Sister Lane is ready with her stuff.’

‘Lane? You as well?’

‘Umm... I am ready as well.’

Edda nodded as well.

Felberta just blinked a few times and then, she sighed and stood up.

“What happened, Lady Felberta?”

Joyab questioned.

“This is enough for today,

Also, I won't be coming tomorrow and a few days after that.”

Joyab frowned.

# Chapter 365

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“Who is it?”

“It’s me, Teacher Arvina.”

Nux informed.

“Nux?”

Arvina frowned.

“Come in.”

She ordered.

Nux then opened the door and walked into Arvina’s office.

“What is it? Didn’t you just leave half an hour ago? Why are you here again?”

Arvina questioned with a frown on her face.

“Do you not like me being inside your office, Teacher Arvina?”

Nux questioned with a dramatically sad face.

“...”

Arvina looked at Nux with a deadpan look on her face.

“That is correct, I do not like your presence at all.”

She replied.

“Ahh! What have I done to ever deserve such hate from this cruel world?”

Nux placed his right hand on his chest, raised his left hand in the air, and delivered his dialogue efficiently.

Arvina facepalmed.

“Alright, you might have a lot of time in your hand, but I am not free. Tell me what you are here for.”

She questioned.

“Well, the thing I talked about before.”

“About your lovers?”

“Yes...”

They are here...”

Nux smiled.

“...”

Again, Arvina turned silent.

She didn't say a word and just continued to stare at Nux and 2 minutes later, when she finally registered this news, she replied.

“Already?”

“Well... yeah...”

Nux replied as he pointed his at the door.

At the same time, the door opened and 5 beautiful women walked in.

“Thank you for taking care of Nux all this while, Teacher Arvina.”

One of the women spoke.

“ ... ”

Arvina, however, didn't reply.

Or more precisely, she was too shocked to say anything.

She stayed like that for 5 minutes, her eyes shifting from Nux to his women, then returning back to Nux and repeating.

In the end, when she finally let everything sink inside her head, she calmed down (acted as if she calmed down) and questioned.

“Are Expert Stage Cultivators so common now?”

Hearing those words, Nux chuckled,

“Well, they are my women, they have to be special compared to others, right?”

“But how is every single one of your lovers an Expert Stage Cultivator? Just how is this possible!? And why do I not know about any of them!?”

Most Expert Stage Cultivators were well-known people.

Even Wandering Cultivators who aren't affiliated with anyone were popular because of how strong they were.

After all, there were only around 50-60 Expert Stage Cultivators living inside the Skyfall Kingdom.

They were rarest of the rare.

And right now, Arvina was seeing 5 of these 'Rare' existences in front of her and she didn't know any of them.

Just what was going on here?

“Well, we don’t like much attention. So not many people know about us.

I hope you will keep our meeting a secret as well.

Not like I need to say much about that, since you are already hiding Nux’s secret.”

The woman smiled.

“ ...”

Arvina looked at Felberta and narrowed her eyes.

“You...

Have we ever met before?”

“That was rude of me, I should have introduced myself first.

My name is Felberta Leander.

She is Skyla Leander.

She is Lane Leander.

She is Edda Leander,

And she is Thyra Leander.”

Hearing her words, Arvina narrowed her eyes.

“I was told that you guys are his lovers.”

“We are.”

Felberta nodded.

“Then why are your nam-”

Arvina wanted to question, however,

“We will be getting married soon. So it doesn’t matter.”

Skyla, who already understood what she was thinking answered with a smile on her face.

Hearing those words, a smile appeared on Nux’s face and he nodded his head.

“Indeed, we will get married soon.”

His other women smiled as well.

“Why are there only 5 women? Didn’t you say you have 9 lovers?”

Arvina questioned.

“I do have 9 lovers, these are 5 of them. Ember is in her room right now, as for the other three, well, they are a bit busy so they won’t be coming here.”

Nux answered.

Arvina nodded in understanding, and then, her eyes fell on a certain girl, who had tanned skin, white-pink hairs, and pink-purple eyes, tan skin wasn’t rare, however, those hairs and eyes, Arvina has seen them before.

Not only that, but even the name of this woman matched a woman who Arvina knew.

However, Arvina also knew that the woman in front of her couldn’t possibly be the woman she was thinking about. That was because,

The woman she was thinking about was already dead.

“What about you? Why have you hidden your face?”

“I don’t like to show my face to others, I hope you understand,” Edda answered.

Arvina was now even more suspicious, however, thinking that it would be rude to ask her to remove her mask, she backed off.

“I understand.”

However, suddenly, another question popped up in her mind.

“How did you people enter the Academy?”

Entering the academy wasn't difficult, however, if 5 unknown Expert Stage Cultivators enter the academy without prior notice like these 5 women have, there will be a big commotion for sure.

Even the Head Master of the Academy would have to personally come out and deal with the situation accordingly.

Therefore, Arvina couldn't understand why nothing has happened yet.

“We sneaked in.”

Thyra was the one who answered this question.

“You sneaked in?”

Arvina frowned.

“As she said, we don't like to attract unnecessary attention. Therefore, we sneaked in.”

“You can do that...?”

Arvina opened her mouth in surprise.

Isn't the Academy supposed to be safe?

How did 5 Expert Stage Cultivators just sneak into the Academy like it was nothing?

Where were the guards?

What were they doing?

“It was quite easy actually.”

Thyra smiled.

Arvina finally realized.

Nux’s women were just like him.

Fucking monsters.

Although they weren’t as young as Nux, they were still pretty young compared to other Cultivators.

Therefore, for dealing with them, Arvina used the same strategy.

“Ahh, I still haven’t prepared any rooms for you people.”

“You don’t have to worry about that, Sister Arvina, we can adjust in Sister Ember’s room for a while.”

Skyla answered with her usual smile.

However, Arvina frowned.

“Sister?”

# Chapter 366

“You don’t have to worry about that, Sister Arvina, we can adjust in Sister Ember’s room for a while.”

“Sister?”

Arvina frowned.

Skyla’s face changed.

She couldn’t believe she blurted that out loud.

Arvina is her sister, that was not a lie.

However, that was something that would happen in the future! Not now!

She can’t spoil the future like that!

Skyla wanted to slap herself for this blunder.

However, right now, the more important thing was to deal with this situation.

“Ah, I apologize for her rudeness, Skyla here has this bad habit of making new Sisters wherever she goes.”

However, Skyla didn’t have to worry about that since Felberta stepped in on time.

“Hmm? Making new sisters?”

“It’s nothing. She just acts like that sometimes.”

Felberta waved her hands.

Hearing that, Arvina shrugged her shoulders and smiled,

“Well, it is always better to build connections with someone as talented as her.”

Then, she turned toward Skyla and nodded,

“You can call me Sister Arvina if you want.”

Skyla’s eyes brightened up as she heard those words, then, a little evil smile momentarily appeared on her face as she continued,

“Then I will call you that, Sister Arvina.

Today and in the Future.

You should call me Sister Skyla as well, it would be helpful in the future. The faster you start the quicker will you get used to it, after all.”

Hearing those words, Felberta, Thyra and Lane smiled a little as well.

“Hmm?”

Arvina frowned.

For some reason, she felt that she and all the other people in this room were out of sync.

It was as if they were talking about completely different things.

However, in the end, she just shook her head and stopped thinking about it.

It must be her misunderstanding.

“Teacher Arvina.”

Suddenly, Nux called out.

Arvina looked at him.

“Can I take them to Ember’s room?”

“Ah, sure. You do that and I’ll make some arrangements for them before the night.”

“Hmmm, we can stay in one room as well,

Sevensome doesn’t sound bad.”

Is it even necessary to mention who spoke these words?

However, even Edda was cautious enough to not speak her last line loudly and only muttered it to herself.

However, Felberta, who was standing right beside her was able to hear what she said, though as someone who was already used to this woman, she didn’t show any reaction.

“No, I cannot do that, you are my guest, I will make sure that your stay here is comfortable.”

Arvina answered.

Nux smiled,

“Teacher Arvina, I know I have said this before, but you really are the best.”

“Oh? Even better than your Teacher Evane?”

Arvina questioned playfully.

“Ember must be waiting, I will take my leave now, Teacher Arvina.”

Acting like he didn’t hear those words, Nux turned around and left the room. His women followed behind him as well.

And Arvina, well, her smile faded away when everyone left her room.

‘Ember, my dear friend Ember,

You have no clue what kind of freaky family you have become a part of.’

...

On the other side, once Nux and the others entered Ember’s room, Ember, who was sitting on her chair stood up with a smile on her face.

“It is nice to meet you, ‘Sisters’”

Ember smiled and at the same time, a fierce Aura mixed with Killing Dense Killing Intent released from her aura.

Felberta, Skyla, Lane, and Edda were a little overwhelmed by that Aura. Even Thyra was affected a little, however, she didn’t show anything on her face.

Nux, of course, didn’t feel a thing.

Ember continued to observe her new ‘sisters’ and once she was satisfied, the oppressing Aura disappeared.

“So? What do you think about your Sisters?”

Thyra walked toward Ember with a smile on her face.

“They are good.”

Ember smiled.

“Especially them.”

She then pointed at 2 women, one was Skyla and the other was,

Felberta.

“Hmm? Felberta?”

Thyra raised her eyebrow.

Skyla, she understands, the woman was skilled. Felberta, however, wasn't very gifted in that department.

“She has the Will.”

Ember, however, thought otherwise.

“Initially, she was the one who was affected the most by my Aura, however, her strong Will didn't allow her to step back.

She faced my Aura with just her Willpower alone.

I won't be surprised if she surpasses all of them in the future.”

Ember was full of praise.

“What are you two talking about?”

Felberta, however, didn't like this situation one bit.

This woman was praising her, she could understand that.

However, Felberta could notice that she was still looking down on her.

It wasn't intentional, it was an unconscious action but that just makes it even more frustrating.

It was as if Ember already knew that she was better than everyone present in this room and only looked at the rest of them from afar.

“”Nothing””

Thyra and Ember answered at the same time.

Seeing this, Ember frowned.

‘It finally happened huh...’

She realized.

In the end, another Harem Faction besides hers was formed.

Felberta knew this would happen sooner or later, actually, she even felt strange that it hadn't happened already.

However, the attitudes, goals, behaviors, and thoughts of all the women who became Nux's lovers were so different from each other that no other faction was formed.

Today, however, things changed.

Second Faction was formed.

“Heh.”

Suddenly, a small smile appeared on Felberta's face.

And as if sensing what she was thinking, Skyla and Lane smiled a little as well.

Especially Skyla, whose cute eyes were shining brightly.

“It is nice to meet you, Sister Ember.”

She spoke.

“It is nice to meet you as well, Skyla.”

For some reason, Ember's eyes turned a little warm when she spoke with Skyla.

Yes, even she was affected by Skyla's charm.

“I wish to spar against you someday, Sister Ember.”

Skyla spoke with an excited look on her face.

“I will be looking forward to that.”

Ember smiled.

“You should be.”

Felberta smiled.

“Don’t worry, we are always ready.”

Thyra smiled.

“Heh.”

Everyone in the room smiled at each other.

However, Nux could see the sparks that were appearing between their line of sight, and seeing this, he couldn’t help but smile.

“You guys sure are getting along.”

# Chapter 367

“You guys sure are getting along.”

Nux spoke with a small smile on his face.

“Heh, we sure are.”

Felberta smiled.

Nux’s smile didn’t change.

He then turned towards Thyra and extended his hand,

“My Lovely Assassin, can you give it to me for a second?”

Thyra nodded with a smile on her face, the ring on her finger shined and she gave the book that appeared in her hand to Nux.

“Thank you.”

Thyra nodded again.

Nux then turned towards his other women and started,

“So, I believe you all know about Body Cultivation, correct?”

“The second path of Cultivation. Something that no one in this world knows about.”

Felberta answered.

“That is correct, and well, I found a Cultivation Technique that can help you walk in this unknown, undiscovered path.”

Nux smiled as he showed the book in his to Felberta, Lane, Skylar, and Edda.

Felberta's eyes shined when she heard those words,

“So rather than wasting time when you are not around, we can use this technique to enter the Realm of Body Cultivation.

Isn't that amazing?”

Even Skyla's eyes were shining now.

“Yes, that is correct.”

Nux nodded.

“So what we are going to do now is that we will copy this technique and distribute a copy to everyone...”

Nux continued and seeing this, a small frown appeared on Thyra's face.

This...

Nux was taking things into his own hands for some reason.

Was it not her duty to distribute the technique and train all of them?

So why is Nux...

‘Is it because of this little quarrel?’

A thought appeared in her mind, however, she soon disregarded this possibility.

When it came to his women, Nux was a direct man, if he has any problems with anything, he would say that directly, he won't be standing there smiling like that.

‘It was all fine when he gave that book to me an hour ago...’

Thyra started analyzing the situation.

It would be a lie to say that she wasn't affected by Nux's decision at all. She only wanted to help him and make his life easier, however, somewhere in her heart, she felt that Nux stepping up like that was a good thing.

"I will be counting on you guys to copy it, I need 11 copies, and I need them as soon as possible."

"Don't worry, I'll deal with that." Felberta stepped forward.

Nux nodded, then, he continued,

"Also, I want you guys to give the weapon you use."

"Huh?"

Ember frowned.

"Wh-"

She wanted to question, but,

"Here."

Skyla walked towards Nux and gave her daggers to him with a big smile on her face.

Nux smiled, took her weapons, and patted her head.

"Hehe~"

Skyla grabbed this opportunity to sneak her way toward his chest.

Her intentions were now clear to everyone present in this room,

She would be occupying this place for a while now.

Nux, of course, didn't reject her at all.

He would need the heart of a monster to do that, after all.

He just moved his left hand around Skylara's waist and started kneading her bud.

"Anhhaha~"

Skylara laughed adorably.

"I underestimated her."

Ember, who was looking at the sight in front of her muttered with a solemn look on her face.

"Don't let her appearance fool you, she's a lot smarter than she shows. Though her brain only works with things related to Nux."

Thyra commented.

"Tsk Tsk" Edda snorted.

Lane, like always, didn't say anything, however, she took this opportunity to walk toward Nux and gave him her sword.

Nux smiled, accepted the sword, and the Sword owner who was now hugging her just like Skylara.

This little session soon turned into a competition and a minute later, Nux was enjoying a mass hug with 6 beautiful women at the same time.

'Heaven indeed.'

Nux thought inwardly and smiled.

Everyone stayed in this position for a while and soon, Skylara, who was in the most comfortable position after Nux, spoke.

"Nux..."

"Mhm?"

“I want to meet Sister Evane.”

Felberta and Lane rolled their eyes when they heard those words.

“Don’t you have Ember already?”

Felberta questioned with a frown.

“Huh? Me? What?”

Ember frowned as well.

“Don’t worry about it.”

Thyra shook her head.

“Well, I do have Sister Ember... but that’s just for tonight...”

Skyla replied.

“Heh, I am sure you can extend this to 10 to 20 nights with ease.”

Felberta chuckled and Lane nodded her head in support.

Even Thyra and Edda were nodding their heads.

“But... it would still be better to have Sister Evane as well right?”

Skyla smiled.

“What a greedy and horny woman.”

Edda chuckled.

“Hey Hey Hey, w-what are you guys talking about?”

Ember, who was completely thrown off by this conversation questioned.

From her voice, it looked like she was panicking for some reason.

“I am telling you this right now, I won’t do anything strange no matter what.

My body belongs to Nux and Nux alone.”

“Huh?” This time, Skyla and the others frowned.

Nux realized what was happening and why Ember was acting like that, however, he didn’t bother to say anything.

He was too busy enjoying this sensational feeling right now.

‘Maybe Edda is right.

Sevensome doesn’t sound bad at all.

I now certainly have the stamina for it.’

A small smile appeared on his face.

A few seconds later, Felberta understood what happened as well and a disgusted expression appeared on her face.

“Just what in the hell are you thinking, Ember? Why is that the first thing that came to your mind?”

“...it’s you guys who were saying it like that.”

“We were not.”

Felberta shook her head.

By now, everyone understood what happened.

“Sister Ember, you don’t need to worry, I don’t need anyone besides Nux as well.”

“Then what were you talking about?”

Ember questioned.

“Girls talk~”

Skyla laughed like a little devil.

Everyone in the room found that adorable.

“What do you mean?”

Ember questioned.

“You will find it soon enough.

Fufufu~”

Skyla laughed, then, she turned towards Nux and questioned,

“So? Can I meet Sister Evane tomorrow?”

“Of course, you can, my cute little maid.”

# Chapter 368

“I can feel it, this would be the best painting we have ever made,”

Nux spoke with a confident smile on his face.

Hearing those words, Evane just smiled and shook her head.

“Do you want to say, the best painting ‘I’ have ever made?”

She questioned with a soft chuckle.

“Whatever do you mean?”

Nux couldn’t understand.

“You haven’t even touched the paintbrush since ‘we’ started this painting this, Nux. All you are doing is...”

“Oh C’mon, don’t act like I am not doing anything.”

Nux smiled as he moved his chest towards Evane’s back, while his hands moved around her waist slowly, and alluringly.

“Mmhmmm.”

Evane’s back arched up as she took a deep breath.

“Tell me, what have you done then?”

She questioned.

Nux then placed his chin on Evane’s shoulder and answered,

“I made sure that your state of mind is in the best possible condition with my intensive care.”

“My state of mind?”

Evane smiled as she questioned.

“Well, of course, you aren’t going to claim that my presence here means nothing to you, right?”

“Of course not. Your presence means a lot to me, however,

I still don’t see how that is considered as you helping me in this painting in any way?”

“Well, as I said, it’s your state of mind.

With me here, you feel different, you feel comfortable, you feel calm, you feel good, you feel fresh,

With my presence, you feel relaxed.

It may not look much from the outer perspective, but trust me, it is helping you a lot.

So make sure to always call me whenever you start your painting, alright?”

Nux whispered softly while he rested her head on Evane’s head.

Heating his words, Evane just smiled.

Although she didn’t know if her art improved or not, one thing was sure, Nux’s presence here indeed lightened her heart.

Especially his gentle touch.

That made her feel protected.

She treasured that feeling.

“Oh? But how am I going to call you?”

“That is a simple task, all you have to do is think about me in your mind, and I will appear right in front of you.”

“And how are you going to do that?”

Evane raised her eyebrow while she continued to paint on the canvas.

“With the power of Love~”

Nux answered dramatically.

Evane shook her head, then, she balanced her head with Nux’s.

“Alright then, from now on, I will use the power of love to contact you, I hope you will answer me.”

Saying that, Evane turned her head a little and then,

She gave a small peck on Nux’s cheek, which, actually surprised Nux a lot.

“So kissing is allowed now?”

He questioned.

“A-As long as you don’t go overboard...”

Evane answered with a red face.

It has only been a few days since the two of them decided to become lovers and all this while, their relationship has grown a lot deeper than before.

Therefore, Evane wanted to take things even forwards, therefore, she allowed these little kisses.

Was she going too fast?

She was asking this question to herself as well, however, in the end, she decided to place her trust in Nux.

“Heeeheeeheee”

Who, right now, was laughing creepily.

“What happened?”

Evane questioned.

“Nothing, nothing happened at all. You can continue to paint, don’t worry.”

Nux answered with a playful smile on his face.

Evane frowned.

She was sure that something did happen, however, in the end, she just shook her head and decided to focus on her painting.

However, as soon as she turned her face toward the painting,

Nux attacked and started kissing her cheeks as if he was a hyena who was munching on its prey.

“Stooopp~”

Evane felt ticklish all over her body and told him to stop.

Nux, however, didn’t stop and continued.

“Stooopp~ Hahaha~”

Evane laughed out loud.

She tried to move away, however, Nux tightened his arms around her, he even moved his legs around hers, locking her legs as well.

Right now, Evane was completely at her mercy and Nux enjoyed this moment to the fullest.

“Hahahaha~”

Evane continued laughing as this ticklish sensation only got stronger and only after 5 minutes passed did Nux finally decide to stop.

“Haah... Haahh... Haah...”

Evane took deep breaths.

“That was good, thanks for the meal.”

Nux smiled.

“Y-You... you are a brute...”

Evane pouted.

“You are the one who gave the permission.”

Nux replied with an Evil smile.

“I take back my permission.”

“You can’t do that.

Extra charges to take back the permission you gave.”

“W-What charges.”

“A kiss on the lips.”

Evane’s face turned redder.

“S-Shameless...”

“Hahaha~”

Nux laughed out.

The two of them continued to chat like that, and Evane soon shifted her focus on the painting. Nux, as usual, continued to enjoy the feeling of

cuddling a beautiful woman like her.

The time passed and suddenly, Nux called out.

“Evane...”

“Hmm? What is it?”

Evane, who was absorbed in her painting questioned without looking back.

“Tomorrow, I want you to come with me and meet a few people.”

“Hmm? Meet who?”

“My other lovers.”

Nux answered honestly.

Evane froze.

10 seconds later, she slowly turned around and tilted her head,

“Y-Your lovers...?”

“Yes. I want you to meet them.”

Evane frowned.

“You have more lovers other than me?”

Hearing that question, Nux frowned.

This...

Did he just do something stupid?

But how?

Having a harem in this world was common, very common.

A man having other lovers was not frowned upon, rather, it showed that the man is capable, or had a significant status.

Therefore, Nux couldn't understand why Evane was acting like this.

“Yes, I do.”

In the end, Nux just decided to answer honestly.

“...why didn't you tell me this before?”

After a long silence, Evane questioned.

“I was afraid.”

“Afraid that I won't allow you to have other lovers?”

“Afraid that you won't give me a chance to be with you.”

“...”

Evane turned silent.

Nux frowned as well.

He did not like where this was going.

He was now cursing his past self for doing something so stupid.

“...alright, I'll meet them.”

Suddenly, Evane answered.

However, Nux could feel that something was wrong.

He tried to tighten his hug around Evane, however, Evane stood up.

“I think we have painted enough for the day.

I had a tiring day, so I will go and sleep now.”

Saying that, Evane turned around.

# Chapter 369

“Alright, this will be enough for today. We will be ending our class here.”

Evane spoke with a small smile on her face. She then looked at the students in front of her, her eyes momentarily stopped on Nux, before they continued to observe other students.

Once she was sure that no one had any doubts, she turned around and left the classroom.

The other students stood up as well. Nux hurriedly left the class and chased after Evane.

“Teacher Evane.”

He called out.

Evane paused, she looked at Nux, and then, she smiled.

Nux smiled back.

Then without wasting any more time, he questioned.

“You are coming with me, correct?”

“As I said yesterday, I am. Don’t worry.”

“So when are you free?” Nux questioned.

“When are they free?”

“Well, they are free right now.”

“But I can’t leave the academy right now, I still have a few more classes later.”

Evane frowned.

“You don’t have to leave the academy.”

Nux replied.

“Huh?”

Evane’s frown deepened.

“They are here in the academy.”

Nux answered.

Evane’s eyes widened,

‘Wait... his lovers... is he talking about the girls in our class?’

Evane realized how strange it would be to share a man with her students for the rest of her life.

However, she soon recalled that the ‘man’ she was talking about was her student as well...

The strange one here wasn’t her students, a student being in a relationship with another student was completely normal. She, on the other hand, was a teacher who was in a relationship with her student. She was the strange one.

Thinking about that, Evane felt even worse.

“Shall we go now?”

Nux, who seemed oblivious to her thoughts, questioned.

“Where are we meeting, the Academy’s Canteen?”

“Hmm? Of course not. They can’t roam around here and there freely, they are not the students of this Academy after all.”

Nux smiled.

“H-Huh?”

Evane was now confused.

Her mind then started different possibilities and soon, another answer popped up in her mind and she widened her eyes,

“T-They sneaked in here?”

“Bingo.”

Nux smiled widely.

“IT’S TRUE!?”

Evane couldn’t believe what she was hearing.

One had to know, the Royal Academy had a very high level of security. If anyone sneaked inside and got caught, the punishment will be very harsh.

One might even lose his or her life.

“Why would you tell them to do something like this!? Do you know how serious the consequences will be!?”

Evane questioned.

“Teacher Evane, you worry too much.”

Nux however, just shrugged.

“I am not worrying too much!

It is you who is taking this too lightly!”

Evane shouted.

However, she quickly realized they were gardening attention, therefore, she lowered her voice.

“You might be an Expert Stage CULTviator, but if you or anyone related to you breaks the Academy rules, you won’t be able to save them from punishment.

Remember, the Headmaster of the Academy is a King Stage CULTviator.”

“Teacher Evane, as I said, you are worrying too much, just come with me.”

Nux just smiled.

Evane realized that he wouldn’t understand, therefore, she shook her head in defeat.

“Alright whatever, just take me there now. We don’t have much time to waste here.”

She wanted to end this as soon as possible.

She knows that the faster she ends the meeting, the faster they would be able to leave the Academy, and the lower the risk of them getting caught would be.

Nux smiled, he wanted to grab her hand, however, there were too many eyes here.

He can’t do something so lewd in public.

He was shy.

Nux chuckled inwardly, then, he started walking while Evane followed behind.

However, as they continued to walk, a frown appeared on Evane’s face.

“Nux...”

She called out.

“Yes?”

“Where are going...?”

Evane questioned with a doubtful look on her face.

She knew where this path led, however, she highly doubted that this is what they had to do, however, Nux’s next answer cleared her doubts.

“To Teacher Arvina’s mansion.”

Or rather... made her even more doubtful and fearful, even.

“W-Why are we going there?”

They are hiding near Teacher Arvina’s mansion? They are hiding near the Vice Headmaster’s Mansion!? That was the best place they could find in this huge Academy!?

Evane couldn’t believe it.

She was panicking a little.

However, her little panicking soon turned into big panicking when Nux directly entered Arvina’s mansion.

‘They are hiding inside!?’

This was ridiculous.

Wait...

This was too ridiculous...

Evane realized something.

“Why are we here?”

“Hmm? To meet them of course.”

Nux answered naturally.

“But it’s Teacher Arvina’s mansion.”

“I was unable to think of a better place than this. It’s big, it’s comfortable, so they won’t have any problems living here.”

Nux answered.

Evane narrowed her eyes,

“Does Teacher Arvina know about this?”

“Of course she does. I asked her permission before I brought them here.”

“And she agreed?”

Evane was surprised.

Arvina wasn’t someone who would agree to something like that.

She was a very strict person.

“Of course she did, I am her favorite student, after all.”

Nux smiled.

“Are you not my favorite student?”

Evane narrowed her eyes even more.

“Heh, our relation is a lot closer than that now, won’t you agree?”

Nux turned around and smiled wickedly.

Evane blushed a little.

“As I said, I have the permission, you don’t have to worry, let’s just go and meet them. They are very excited to see you as well.”

Nux chuckled and then he turned around.

Evane continued to follow him and soon, they were standing in front of a door.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“It’s me.”

Nux spoke.

The doors were quickly opened and soon, a rocket was shot toward Nux.

Nux caught the flying rocket and patted her head.

“I missed you~”

Skyla spoke as she snuggled close to his chest.

“I missed you as well.” Nux smiled.

Skyla’s eyes then finally fell on Evane, who was standing beside Nux and she smiled even more,

“Are you Sister Evane?”

“S-Sister?”

# Chapter 370

“Are you Sister Evane?”

“S-Sister?”

Evane was surprised.

“Hmmm?”

Skyla frowned.

Arvina being surprised by that, she could understand.

But why was Evane getting surprised by something like this?

“Well, you are Nux’s wife,

I am Nux’s wife,

Since both of us are his wives,

Doesn’t that make us sisters?”

“W-W-Wife...”

Evane’s face turned red.

Seeing this, a playful smile appeared on Skyla’s face.

“Fufufu~ You look so cute when you blush.

Fufufu~”

Skyla started copying Edda’s laugh.

Hearing her words, Evane blushed even more.

“Skyla, shouldn’t you introduce yourself before teasing your sister?”

Felberta spoke from behind.

“Oops.”

Skyla smiled, then, she turned towards Evane and patted her chest.

“My name is Skyla Leander, it is nice to meet you, Sister Evane.”

“N-Nice to meet you as well. I am Evane Skyfall.”

Although she was a little flustered, she quickly put herself together and replied.

She then turned towards the others and started observing them.

“I am Felberta Leander.”

Seeing this as an opportunity, Felberta introduced herself.

“Lane Leander.”

Lane did the same and the others followed as well.

“Edda Leander.”

“Thyra Leander.”

“Ember Leander.”

Hearing this, a big smile appeared on Nux’s face. Of course, Thyra didn’t use to take this opportunity as well.

“Heeh? Since when have you become a Leander.”

She teased as she turned towards Ember.

“What are you talking about?”

Ember looked at Thyra and frowned, then, her eyes turned towards Nux and she questioned.

“Am I not your lovely wife as well?”

“Of course, you are, my love.”

Nux answered with a big, satisfied smile on his face.

Ember’s smile widened as she turned her head back to Thyra,

“Hear that? I am a Leander as well.”

“Tsk.”

Thyra snorted.

She wanted to see Ember blush, but...

It seems that it would be a hard task.

She has noticed that Ember is getting increasingly bolder every day. Yes, she was a bold General before, however, this woman was a newbie when it came to sex and relationships just a few days ago. Thyra couldn’t believe how quickly she adapted and changed herself.

‘Now this bitch acts like she has years of experience. Tsk Tsk’

Thyra snorted inwardly.

Of course, she completely ignored the fact that she was the same as Ember a few months ago.

Nobody should know about that.

So, Shhhh.

Seeing the two women talking to each other like that, a surprised look appeared on Evane’s face. She weakly pointed her trembling finger at

Ember and questioned.

“A-A-Aren’t you G-General Ember W-Windstar?”

Yes, she knew who this woman was!

How could she not!?

Well, she had her doubts before, but when she introduced herself, she was even surer.

Ember Windstar!

Just what is she doing here!?

“Hmm? Well, I did go by that name a month ago.”

Ember nodded.

“W-What are you doing here?”

Evane questioned.

“Hmm? Didn’t I say it before? I am his wife. That’s why I am here.”

“...”

Evane was speechless.

She then looked at Nux and found him smiling at her.

“W-When d-did you two meet? Aren’t you from the Woods Dynasty? How do you know each other?”

She questioned.

“Hmm? Did you forget?”

I left the Academy to participate in a War.

I brought the General back as my price.”

Nux winked at Ember.

The previous General just shook her head and smiled.

“Though I will admit, it is surprising that Princess Evane knows about me.”

“H-How could I not!?”

You are one of the Strongest King Stage Cultivators in this world!

Even the Headmaster of the Academy might not be your match!”

“Huh? Why are you comparing me with that Baldy? I can defeat someone like him with my eyes closed.”

Ember seemed offended.

“H-Huh?”

Evane was confused.

“You can?”

“Hmm? What’s so hard about that? Even I can Kill that baldy.”

Evane’s eyes then fell on the woman who was trying to tease the General before and what she saw in her eyes was genuine confusion.

Evane then looked at the others inside that room and...

None of them looked surprised.

‘This is a King Stage Cultivator we are talking about! Why is everyone so calm and unbothered about it!?’

“I think you are missing the point here, Princess Evane.”

Suddenly, Ember stepped forward.

“That man named Baldy, he is not strong.

The only good thing about him is his high Talent. He only cultivates, he never trains. Someone like his can only overpower those weaker than him.

Arv is much better than him if you want to talk about strength.”

Ember spoke, and Thyra who was standing beside her nodded her head in agreement. Others didn't seem like they disagreed either.

Hearing these words, Evane was filibustered...

‘His name is not Baldy...

Also, why are these people so laid back!?

Just how strong are th-

“!!!”

Evane's eyes widened in surprise.

‘Everyone in this room is a monster!’

Evane couldn't believe her eyes.

General Ember, she knew about her already so that's fine, but others weren't normal either.

Everyone else in this room was an Expert Stage Cultivator!

Even that cute and tiny woman who was hugging Nux was the same!

That cute and tiny woman was a lot stronger than her!

And she was younger than her!

Just like most of the women in this room.

‘Just what the hell is this place!?’

Why are so many talented women gathered in a single room?

Why do I not about any of them except the General?’

Evane’s head was a mess.

Then, her eyes fell on Nux was patting that cute girl with a smile on his face.

Nux’s eyes fell on Evane as well and he smiled,

“What happened, Evane? Do you feel a little uncomfortable?”

“N-No, I am alright.

I am just a little overwhelmed.”

Suddenly, Evane felt a tap on her shoulder, she turned around, and there she saw Felberta standing behind her with a smile on her face.

“Here, you should have a seat.”

Evane smiled back and complied.

The others settled down as well, Skylia placed her chair close to Evane and smiled,

“It is very nice to meet you, Sister Evane. I want to talk to you, a lot.”

“I feel the same way... Skylia...”

# Chapter 371

“So Royce, the boy Nux saved was your son?”

Evane questioned with a surprised look on her face.

“He is.”

Felberta smiled.

“Wait...”

Evane’s eyes then widened in surprise.

“No, it is not what you thinking.”

Felberta, however, shook her head before Evane could say anything out loud.

“He is my son, not Nux’s.

I was a Widow before I met Nux.”

Felberta answered with a smile on her face.

“Ahh,”

Evane understood.

“So that’s why he decided to go after Candice.”

“No, that is not the only reason.”

Nux spoke.

“Hmm? What’s the other reason?”

Evane questioned back.

“She was rude to the teacher I had a crush on.”

“Teacher you had a crush on...”

Evane frowned, however, just a second later, her eyes widened, and then, she blushed.

“Y-You...”

“Ahahaha~ Sister Evane, you are so cute~”

Skyla couldn't control herself and laughed out loud.

“She is like an Apple. Hahaha~”

Other women in the room had smiles on their faces as well.

“Wait...”

Suddenly, Skyla recalled something.

“Sister Evane, didn't you say you had another class? When is it?”

“!!!”

Evane's eyes widened in surprise.

She then quickly looked at the time and then she stood up!

“It has already started 10 minutes ago! I completely forgot about it!”

Evane was already at the door when she ended the sentence, however, just as she was about to leave, she paused and turned back.

“Skyla... I want to meet you... after class. Is that okay?”

“Hmm? Sure.”

Skyla was quick to nod.

“Alright.”

Evane nodded and then, she left.

“Tsk Tsk, another woman charmed by Skyla’s cuteness. You little devil.”

Felberta snorted.

“Well, that is just how strong my Skyla’s Charm is.”

Nux smiled.

“Skylaaa~”

Suddenly, Skyla felt a hand on her shoulder,

She turned around and saw a tanned skin woman wearing a mask on her face looking at her.

“What is it, Sister Edda?” Skyla questioned.

“Don’t you dare talk about the ‘Thing’ when you are with her okay?”

“I-I won’t.”

Skyla smiled back.

“No, no, that’s not how it works.

You have to promise me.

Promise me that you will not talk about the ‘Thing’ with her.

If you break it, you have to give your session time to me for 2 days.”

“What would I get in return?”

Skyla questioned.

“You will get my eternal Love.”

Edda smiled as her eyes shined perversely.

“I don’t want that.”

A disgusted look appeared on Skyla’s face.

“I will keep my promise, and in return, you stay away from me.

I am Nux and Nux’s alone.”

“Deal.”

Edda smiled back.

“Hmmm.”

Suddenly, Skyla placed her hand on her chin.

“What are you thinking about, Skyla?”

Nux questioned with a curious look on her face.

“Hmm, I was thinking... that if I have to meet Sister Evane later...

Then how about we start with my session first?”

“Huh? How is that fair? It is my turn today.”

Thyra complained.

“Oh please, you had your time with him for so long.”

Felberta stepped in.

“So you are on her side?”

Thyra questioned.

“No, I am on Justice’s side.”

Felberta smiled.

“Tsk.”

Thyra snorted.

She knew this woman all too well to know what she was thinking.

‘Siding with you faction member I see. Hmph.’

“Well, we can do that, we don’t know how long it would take for you to return, after all. Thyra, my lovely assassin, can you be a little considerate and exchange with Skyla?”

“Whatever.”

Thyra just nodded.

In front of this man, she couldn’t say no.

Well, in the end, Thyra stopped thinking about it.

It was better to think about the compensation she would ask for since she sacrificed so much.

‘Roll play doesn’t sound like a bad option...’

...

2 Hours quickly passed by.

Right now, Evane was sitting in front of Skyla, inside the room Arvina gave to Skyla.

“What did you want to talk about, Sister Ember?”

Skyla questioned.

A serious look then appeared on Evane's face and she questioned,

“Doesn't that bother you?”

“Hmm? What?”

“Calling me Sister.”

Skyla frowned.

“Why would that bother me?”

“While I was talking to you guys, I realized something.

Not everyone refers to each other as 'Sisters'. Some of them don't even have a good relationship with each other.

You are the only one who seems to get along with everyone and refer to them as 'Sister'.

Doesn't that bother you?

After all, no matter what, in the end, these are the women who have a relationship with your man. Shouldn't you hate them since you have to share your husband with them? Don't you want to have Nux all for yourself?”

Evane spoke what was in her heart.

Yesterday, when she realized that Nux had other lovers, she was disappointed.

She even felt a little betrayed.

She understands that having a Harem is completely normal, however, in the end, she still wanted to have Nux all for herself.

Just like how the princess had the knight all to herself in the picture she drew.

“I do not hate them.”

Skyla, however, shook her head.

“Hmm?”

Evane frowned.

“Wanting Nux all for myself, every single one of them wants to do that, of course, I am the same as well.

However, you have to think about things from Nux’s perspective as well.

Just think,

‘Will I be able to live without Nux?’

Your mind would return a big no as an answer.

I cannot live without him, I know that and I am sure that he cannot live without me either.

However, in his case, this goes further.

Just like me, he can’t live without Sister Felberta, Sister Lane, Sister Edda, Sister Thyra, Sister Ember, and you, Sister Evane. We are now part of his life. An unbreakable part of his life.

Forcing him to live without any one of us would be like breaking him.

This will only distort and destroy our relationship with him, eventually destroying us all in the process as well.

Also, you are right, some of my sisters don’t have a good relationship with each other, however, that doesn’t mean they hate each other. We all are bound together with a chain named Nux.

We may fight against each other, but we cannot hate each other.”

# Chapter 372

“We may fight against each other, but we cannot hate each other,”

Skyla answered.

This was one of those rare moments when she was actually serious and wasn't just playing around.

“...”

Evane turned silent and started thinking about Skyla's answer.

A while later, she asked another question.

“You can't hate against each other, I understand.

You can't wish to have Nux all to yourself, I understand that as well.

But what about defending Nux? What about restricting him? Why not stop him from getting together with more women? Why don't you try and avoid me? Why don't you show your rejection towards me?

Why are you so good to me? Why call me 'Sister'?”

Evane still couldn't understand.

“As I said before, I won't do anything that would hurt Nux. Restricting him is impossible. With his charms, no matter where he goes, he will attract women.

Also, believe it or not, this 'restriction' you are talking about.

Nux has placed several on himself.

He may act like a pervert who is attracted to any woman he finds, however, he will not go after a woman just because of her beauty.

If that was the case, then Sister Felberta's friends, his new 'friends' he made in this academy, and even Candice,

He would have gone after every one of them.

Trust me, it is not that hard for him.

I shouldn't be saying this, but all he has to do is push a woman to a wall and most would accept him.

With his looks, talents, and strength, something like this is not difficult at all.

However, since he genuinely cares about all of us and wants to spend more time with us, he tried to limit himself."

This was something Nux has never talked about or discussed with anyone before. However, after being with him for so long, his women understood this on their own.

Nux may seem like a pervert on the outside, but inwardly, he truly loved all his women and genuinely cared about them.

Thinking about all this, a beautiful smile appeared on Skylia's face.

Then, she glanced at Evane and continued,

"Of course, there are certain women,

Women who even he cannot resist.

You are one of those.

You are someone who won his heart even though he was trying not to lose. You are someone who forced him to break his restrictions.

He won't chase after a woman that easily, he will chase after a woman after a long fight in his heart and since he is already doing so much while thinking about his relationship with us, we see no need to place any restrictions on him.

He is already a perfect husband for us, after all.”

Skyla's eyes shined beautifully.

Even Evane was taken aback by that smile on her face.

She seemed... genuinely happy.

Very happy.

However,

“Still... don't you...

Don't you want to be even more... selfish...?”

The matters regarding the heart were complicated.

These feelings... they were complicated...

Hearing Skyla's words, Ember may not want to restrict Nux anymore, however,

She still wanted to be his first woman...

She wanted to be someone who took all his firsts.

His first kiss, his first midnight cuddles, his first time, she wanted all of them.

However, knowing that someone has already taken them made her feel...

Sour...

“I can’t blame you.”

Suddenly, Skyla spoke.

“Hmm?”

“In the end, no matter what,

You are the Princess of the Strongest Kingdom in this world.”

“...what does that have to do with anything.”

“It does. A lot, actually.

What do you think a homeless man desires?”

“Huh?”

Evane frowned.

She couldn’t understand how that jumped into their conversation.

“He would desire to live like a normal, common man. A small house, food to eat, that would be enough.

Now answer this, a simple commoner, who has everything that the Homeless man desires, is he satisfied?

The answer is no he is not.

The commoner isn’t satisfied. He desires to live a life where he has a loving family, a life where he spends all his time with his children, and a loving wife.

Just like this, a man who has this all would desire money. Money with which he can buy things that would make him and his family happy.

A man who has this all would desire even more money. The man with lots of money would then desire power, he would desire to become a noble. A

Baron would desire to be a Viscount, a Viscount would desire to be a Marquee, a Marquee would desire to be a Duke, and the Duke would desire to be the King.

Even the King, the King would desire to rule the whole world.

Everyone would desire different things and the desire gets higher and higher the better your position is.

A homeless person wouldn't even dream of a partner.

I, a normal maid, only desired a normal, loving partner. Thoughts about me having him all to myself didn't even appear in my want. I was fine as long as the man is not abusive, and is sane. I had very low standards.

You, on the other hand, are the Princess,

Your desires and the standards you have set up for your future partner are too high. So high that a man like that might not even exist.

And of course, it is not your fault. If I was in your place, I would have probably done the same.”

Skyla patted Evane's shoulder.

However, Evane narrowed her eyes,

“So you are saying... that Nux is not up to the standards I have set in my mind?”

“Trust me, Nux is incomparably better than whatever standards you have set in your mind.”

Skyla was quick to deny.

There was even a rare, disdainful look on her face right now.

It was as if she wanted to say,

‘Nux doesn’t meet your standards? Who do you think you are, bitch?’

Of course, our cute Skyla wouldn’t say those words out loud.

“I do not understand... What are you trying to say... first you say my standards are high, then you say that Nux surpasses my standards...

Why are you making things more confusing than they already are?”

# Chapter 373

“I do not understand... What are you trying to say... first you say my standards are high, then you say that Nux surpasses my standards...

Why are you making things so confusing?”

Evane frowned.

“Haahh...”

In the end, Skyla exhaled deeply.

She would admit, she got a little defensive when Evane said that Nux didn't meet her standards and got derailed from the topic, but seriously, shouldn't she understand it by now?

Hmph!

Skyla snorted inwardly and then, she continued,

“What I am trying to say is that,

Nux is the best man you can ever find.

However, however, you would never be able to monopolize him or restrict him because you simply do not deserve that.

He is too good for you.

Of course, the same goes for us as well, he is too good for us as well.

That is the reason why we have to share him amongst ourselves. Otherwise, it wouldn't be fair to Nux.”

“ ... ”

Evane turned silent.

Skyla's words sounded a bit harsh...

However, these harsh words answered some of the questions that were in her mind.

And at the same time, she realized,

“You really really really love him, don't you?”

Skyla's eyes shined brightly as she answered,

“He is my all.”

“...”

Evane smiled back.

Honestly, she was taken aback by that how strong the feelings behind Skyla's words were.

She doesn't think that she could say those words so strongly and admired Skyla for this.

“Why do you love him so much?”

Suddenly. Evane questioned.

“Huh?”

Skyla frowned.

“Because he cares about me?”

Skyla blurted out the first thing that came into her mind.

“Hmm? Most men take care of their women, don't they?”

“They do?”

Skyla questioned back.

“I think so?”

Evane tilted her head in confusion as well.

Do they? Or do they not?

Evane didn't really know.

“Does your father take care of your mother properly?”

Skyla questioned.

“Hmmm, not really. He practically ignores her existence. Though I can't say that my mother is any different.”

Evane answered.

“What about you?”

“I don't have parents so I don't know.”

Skyla shook her head.

“Hmmm, but I still believe that the reason you gave me was a little too bland.”

Evane muttered.

“Hmmm.”

Skyla then started thinking and soon, another answer popped inside her mind.

“Sex feels good.”

“Huh!?”

Evane’s face turned red.

“W-W-W-What are you talking about?”

“What? Don’t you agree with me? Isn’t sex the most wonderful thing in this world? Though I realized after talking with a few of my friends that it is not as pleasurable as it is for me or my sisters.

But then again, Nux is just too special.

Having sex with him feels amazing.”

A dreamy look appeared on Skylia’s face.

She could feel her little sister tingling a little.

“Ahhh~ I am getting weak just after thinking about it...”

Skylia spoke with a silly smile on her red face, and then, she questioned,

“What about you? You don’t like having sex?

Uggh, that was a stupid question, let me rephrase it,

What do you like the most when you are having sex, and why?”

“...umm... I don’t like anything in particular...”

Evane answered.

“Huh?”

Skylia came out of her reverie when she heard Evane’s words.

Then, she turned her head towards Evane and questioned with a doubtful look on her face.

“You... Don’t tell me you haven’t... had sex with Nux yet...”

That was the only conclusion Skyla can come up with.

If someone doesn’t like having sex, then it could only mean that he or she hasn’t had sex before.

It was a perfectly logical statement.

Evane lowered her face and then, she nodded lightly.

This proved that Skyla’s theory was correct.

She would have celebrated for being correct, however, she couldn’t do that right now.

She was just too shocked by the revelation.

“You... you really haven’t... done it already...?”

Evane shook her head with an embarrassed look on her face.

Even she couldn’t understand why she was so embarrassed right now.

“You aren’t joking with me, are you?”

“...I am not.”

Skyla turned silent.

However, after thinking about this for a while, she nodded inwardly.

She is an Idiot.

Wasn’t this something predictable already?

If her sister here had tasted the forbidden fruit, then why would she think about so many useless stuff?

Why would she think about being selfish, restricting Nux, and all that crap?

Won't she only think about sex?

The more Skyla thought about it, the more she was convinced.

This new sister of hers really hasn't had sex with Nux.

Skyla then observed the pitiful woman in front of her and then, she did what she had to do.

She gossiped.

'Sister Evane hasn't done it yet.'

'What!?'

'Really!?'

'How!?'

And within a millisecond, she got responses from her other sisters.

'How is this even possible?'

'I don't know-'

Skyla wanted to answer, however,

Suddenly, the doors of her room were smashed open and a tanned skin woman walked in,

"Is it true?"

She questioned.

Evane, who was taken aback by her abrupt entry questioned,

"W-What?"

“Is it true that you haven’t done the deed with Nux yet?”

“The deed?”

“Sex! You haven’t done it till now, is it true?”

“Yes, it is.”

Evane answered, however,

“!!!”

Suddenly, her eyes widened in surprise.

“How do you know that!?”

She questioned with a terrified look on her face.

Edda, however, completely ignored her and,

‘Guys... Skyla isn’t lying...’

It really is true...’

Evane, of course, didn’t like when she was ignored like that, therefore, she called out.

“Hey! I am asking some-”

Or so she tried to.

Before she could even complete her sentence, Felberta, Thyra and Ember walked inside the room and questioned.

“It is really true?”

Felberta questioned.

Ember then looked at Evane and raised her eyebrow in amazement.

“I can’t believe it...”

“Right? This is shocking.”

Thyra agreed.

“W-What are you guys talking about? What is unbelievable?”

Evane questioned.

“The fact that you two haven’t done it already.”

“HOW IN THE HELL DO YOU KNOW THAT!?”

Evane shouted.

# Chapter 374

“WHY IN THE HELL DO YOU KNOW THAT!?”

Evane shouted in shock.

“...”

The entire room turned silent.

“Umm... Sister Evane...”

I may have told them... by mistake...”

It was not a mistake at all.

“You told them? When? You were sitting right in front of me.”

“...”

Skyla didn't know how to answer that question.

Suddenly, Ember patted Evane's shoulder and sat right next to her.

“We have our ways to do that, you will know about them soon, but let's not talk about this right now.

Tell me, how have still not done it yet?”

“Indeed indeed.”

Edda walked forward and sat near Evane as well,

“I am curious as well.

I am sure Nux you and Nux have spent the last 3 nights together with each other.

Tell me, my Sister Evane, just how in the hell did you resist that walking piece of, ravishing, delicious meat?"

"M-Meat?"

"Ughh... don't listen to her. She has some...

Problems in her brain."

Felberta walked up to Evane as well.

She then sat down and questioned,

"Though I will ask, just how did you not jump onto Nux when he was right in front of you in the middle of the night?"

Evane's face turned red.

"Tsk, you said the same thing I did."

Edda snorted.

"Sister Evane, please tell us, just what did you guys do in these past three nights?"

Skyla questioned.

"Umm..."

Evane blushed.

However, when she saw these women looking at her with such a determined look on her face, she decided not to hide anything and answered.

"We... we painted..."

"You painted?"

Edda frowned.

“Y-Yeah.”

“You kept painting for 3 whole nights?”

Edda questioned.

“Y-Yes.”

Evane nodded with a deep blush on her face.

“Why are you blushing? You used to do it a lot of times, right?”

Edda couldn't understand.

“Well... we did more than just painting...”

Evane answered.

A smile appeared on Edda's face.

“Now we are talking. Eh? So? What ‘more’ did you do than just painting?”

Edda questioned with a wide smile on her face.

The others were smiling as well.

“W-Well, I sat on his laps while I drew... w-while... he h-hugged me from behind...”

Evane answered with a mosquito-like voice.

“So you two cuddled?”

Edda questioned.

Evane nodded.

“You cuddled for the whole night?”

Evane nodded again.

She looked quite adorable right now.

“Hmmm, cuddling with him for the whole night...

That doesn't sound bad at all.

I am quite tempted.

It sounds romantic~”

Felberta muttered.

“Don't forget, we are talking about the 'session time' right now.”

Edda commented.

Felberta frowned.

“It does not sound very romantic anymore...”

Cuddles were good, Felberta loved cuddling with Nux, however, sex was better.

“I am actually amazed...”

Ember commented.

“Just how do you resist jumping on him?”

Edda nodded.

“Indeed indeed.”

Ember nodded as well.

“She should learn from you, attacking him in the middle of the night after distracting Thyra... Now THAT sounds like a pleasant night.”

Edda smiled.

“Fufufu~ It was pleasant indeed.”

Ember chuckled.

“Fufufu~”

Edda chuckled as well.

The two women were bonding quite well with each other.

An unexpected friendship indeed.

“Tsk Tsk, don’t make it sound like she fooled me, I was the one who left on my own.

I could have easily rejected when that soldier came to me.”

Thyra defended herself.

“Yeah yeah, whatever.”

Ember just waved her hands.

“Tch.”

Thyra snorted.

“But I have to admit, that was really bold of you, to enter his room in the night, I mean.”

Felberta commented.

Ember smiled wildly.

“That man was taking too much time. I got impatient.”

“What a pervert, you couldn’t control yourself, even though you knew that the man you were aiming for had another woman with her. Fufufu~”

Edda chuckled.

“Hmph! Don’t make me a sexual predator.

The ‘man’ you are talking about was giving me hints, he was making it too obvious. I only hastened the process.”

“Hehehe~ It did end up greatly, didn’t it?”

Skyla chuckled.

“It did indeed.”

Ember smiled.

“Though I still failed to stay on the top until the end.”

“Haah... don’t bother with that. I have been trying to do that for a long long while now.”

Felberta sighed.

“Heh. You and I are different. You are failing because you aren’t good enough. I, however, am different.

You can ask Nux if you want, I nearly defeated him in our last session.”

A perverted smile appeared on Ember’s face.

Felberta just chuckled dryly.

“You can ask him as well, I ‘nearly’ defeated him in my last session as well.”

“Huh?” Ember frowned. She could feel that Felberta’s words were hinting at something.

“You started out strongly, you were even making him moan continuously, not only that, you even succeeded in making him cum and placed him on

edge, right?

However, soon, you started losing, then, he turned around and comes to the top.

Then, he pounds and pounds and pounds while you just moan and moan and moan.

Eventually, you lose.

That's what happens, right?"

"How did you know?" Ember was shocked.

She couldn't believe how accurate this was.

Felberta just smiled wryly.

"Wait..."

Ember finally understood.

"Yes, you 'winning' the game is just him acting just so he could enjoy your expression after you are defeated. That man is a bastard."

Felberta snorted, however, soon, her face turned red,

"A caring bastard..."

Ember was shocked, while Edda, Skyla, and Thyra has beautiful smiles on their faces.

Evane, who was watching everything finally realized what Skyla was talking about before.

These women did not hate each other.

Rather, they actually had a good relationship with other.

Yes, unlike before, she couldn't sense any dislike from their expressions.

They just looked like teenage girls discussing their love life with their closest friends.

They actually looked like real sisters right now.

Suddenly, Evane noticed that the door of the room opened and Lane walked in,

“Where were y-”

She wanted to question, however, Edda, who was sitting beside her quickly stood up while her purple-pink eyes shined brightly.

“Have fun bitches.”

Saying that, she disappeared.

“Where did she go...?”

Evane was shocked.

“To have sex.”

Felberta answered with a jealous look on her face.

# Chapter 375

“To have sex.”

Felberta answered with a jealous look on her face.

“T-To have s-sex?”

Evane was taken aback.

“Well, yeah. Why else do you think that pervert would run like that.”

Thyra replied.

“W-With whom?”

Evane, whose emotions were a little mess right now, asked a strange question.

“...”

Everybody in the room looked at her as if they were looking at an Idiot.

Evane understood.

“With Nux...?”

“Duh.”

Ember shrugged.

Suddenly, Evane’s eyes fell on the woman who had just entered the room and a thought appeared in her mind,

“Wait... does that mean that she...”

“Yeep, Sister Lane was doing the deed with Nux while we were talking. That’s why she didn’t come here.”

Skyla chuckled, she then stood up and walked towards Lane.

“So? Sister Lane, would you mind sharing your experience with our new Sister?”

Lane’s eyes then fell on Evane, who was blushing uncontrollably.

If it was before, Evane would have stepped forward and would have denied this without any hesitation.

However, after being surrounded by these women for so long, and hearing about how good sex feels again and again and again, even Evane got curious.

So, although she didn’t show any reaction on her face, inwardly, she was still hoping that Lane would share some details.

No!

Actually, now that she thinks about it, Evane would rather not hear about her lover making love with another woman. She was still not that open-minded yet.

Yes, Evane had finally made up her mind, no more discussions were needed.

Evane doesn’t have to hear anything like this. She would figure things out on spot. W-While she is facing that directly...

With that thought in her mind, Evane closed her eyes.

“Well... we tested out a new thing today...”

Lane started with a blush on her face.

“Heehhh? I was just asking for Sister Evane’s sake, but now I am actually curious. Hehe~”

Skyla chuckled.

“Come, have a seat, Sister Lane.”

Skyla then pulled Lane towards her bed, and the rest of the women shifted themselves around Lane with excited looks on their faces.

Evane, however, didn’t move much from her seat.

She remained true to her words.

“So? What happened, Sister Lane? Tell us every single detail~”

Skyla questioned.

Then with a blush on her face, Lane questioned.

“H-Have you guys ever wondered why Sister Edda likes ropes so much?”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

The whole room turned silent.

No, it was not because of the question, rather, it was because of the underlying meaning of the question.

“Lane... you tried ropes...?”

Felberta questioned.

Lane’s face turned even redder however, in the end, she nodded weakly.

“Give us a little more description, Sister.”

Skyla urged.

Ember, who noticed the excitement in Skyla’s eyes couldn’t help but chuckle,

“Now this feels familiar.”

“You will get used to it.”

Thyra answered.

“I sure hope so as well.” Ember chuckled and continued to enjoy Lane’s embarrassed expression while her own lovely Sister interrogated her without any mercy.

“H-H-He tied those ropes a-around my breasts... my waist... and... e-even there... I... I couldn’t move at all...”

Lane described.

“A-Around your breasts...”

Even Felberta was taken aback.

She even started imagining how the ropes would be tied around her boobs, and once she imagined herself like that, she was unable to get that thought out of her mind.

The other women inside the room were the same.

They all listened to Lane’s words and imagined themselves in that position.

“I... I... was completely at his mercy...”

Lane continued her discussion.

“My hands were tied behind my back, in that condition, where I could barely move, he placed me on the ground near the door and sat on the bed with his erect shaft out in the open.

Then, he ordered me to crawl towards him in that state. At the same time, he also moved his dick up and down, as if trying to entice me with it.

My instincts took over,

I couldn't control myself and in the end,

I decided to crawl.

However, it was a lot harder since my hands were tied behind my back, to do what he wanted, I had to put in extra effort, balance my weight correctly, lift my back up with all the energy I have, and then use my knees to crawl towards him till my upper body falls down again.

The ropes that were tied all around my body didn't make things any easier either, the more I moved, the more those ropes tightened up.

S-Some part of the r-ropes even slid i-into my... in t-there...

That made it even more difficult.

To be honest, I didn't want to continue.

However, when my eyes fell on him, who was looking at me with a small smile and that hidden little worried face, a strange energy entered my body.

With that, I lifted my back again, crawled towards him as quickly as possible,

And once I was there...

It was heaven...”

A silly, perverted smile appeared on Lane's face.

At the same time, similar smiles appeared on other women's faces as well.

They all were imagining it well...

Lane continued her description about how Nux caught her as soon as she arrived near him.

However, he placed her on his lap, how his hands moved towards her sensitive regions, how his fingers entered her forbidden place, how he then threw her on the bed.

How his mouth moved towards her little sister, how his tongue entered her cave, how she...

How she had a great orgasm, washing his face with her juices.

How his shaft then entered her cave, how the pounding begin, how she was hammered till she couldn't think straight, how her body had turned weaker.

Ho-

“Hey... I missed the part where he grabbed her hair...”

While Lane continued her discussion, Evane, who was imagining everything with her eyes closed moved her head towards the person closest to her and questioned.

“It doesn't matter, just imagine something yourself. Fill in those voids with your imagination, go wild~ Only then will you succeed.”

Skyla gave life advice.

And Evane noted it deep down in her heart.

# Chapter 376

Lane's story ended and none of the women present inside the room said anything. Right now, all of them were adding their own twists and kinks in this story.

For some odd reason, the room was filled with a strange smell.

However, no one inside this room noticed this smell.

They just stayed silent, with their eyes closed, until,

“Hmmm, ropes don't sound bad at all.”

Until Ember broke the silence with her comment.

“I agree.”

Felberta nodded.

“Girls, I have some things to do, so I will see you later.”

Suddenly, Thyra stood up.

“Just say that you want to relieve yourself, you pervert.”

Ember teased.

“Hmph, I don't do something so lowly, not when I have MY loving husband taking care of me.”

Thyra snorted and then, she left the room.

After her, other women stood up as well and left the room.

Evane did the same thing and returned to her room as well.

Usually, after she returns home, she would start painting right away, however, today, her mind was filled with some other thoughts.

The painting was the last thing she wanted to do right now.

In the end, she just walked toward her bed and lay down.

Then, she started thinking.

What was she thinking?

She didn't know.

Her mind was wandering around, she wasn't able to focus on anything, in particular, however, she still continued.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Suddenly, Evane heard a knock.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Then, she heard the knock again.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

And again.

This time, she finally came out of her reverie.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

She then quickly stood up and rushed towards the door.

“Who is i- Huh?”

She wanted to question, however, she was surprised to see Nux standing right in front of her.

“Are you okay? Is everything fine?”

Nux questioned.

There was a hint of worry in his eyes.

Evane’s heart felt a little warm.

“Everything is fine, don’t worry.”

She smiled as she signaled him to enter.

Nux entered her room and then, she questioned.

“So? Why are you here?”

“Hmm? Do you not want me here?”

Nux frowned.

“It is not like that, but, um... aren’t you busy with... you know... your...  
ahem...”

Evane couldn’t say that.

She was still too shy.

Nux frowned.

“Busy with what?”

He couldn’t understand what she was talking about.

“Umm... you were... shouldn’t you be having s-s-sex with Edda right  
now?”

Evane questioned.

“Huh? I did that hours ago.”

Nux answered.

“Huh?” This time, Evane frowned.

She then looked outside from a window and her eyes widened in surprise.

It was night.

Evane then looked at the watch and realized that it was 12 in the night.

“Evane, are you really alright?”

Nux placed his hands on Evane’s shoulder and questioned.

“I-I am fine.”

Evane nodded.

“Do you want to paint tonight?”

I am completely fine with it if you want to rest. You look tired.”

“No, I want to paint.

With you...”

Her last words were barely audible, however, Nux didn’t miss them.

A smile appeared on his face, he then picked Evane up like a princess and walked towards the painting.

Evane, who was now in Nux’s arms smiled beautifully.

Then, she closed her eyes to enjoy this ride, however, before she could even start to enjoy it, Nux paused.

She opened her eyes and realized that they were already standing near the painting.

Nux smiled, he then sat on the chair and placed Evane on his lap.

Evane made herself comfortable, as for Nux, well, he didn't even waste a single second, his hand directly moved towards Evane's body while his chin went towards Evane's shoulder.

"I think we will complete our masterpiece today."

He whispered softly.

Evane, however, shook her head,

"I don't think so."

"Hmm? Why is that?"

Nux questioned.

"You are distracting me."

"Hmm?" Nux frowned.

"You are being a big hindrance here."

Evane's hand moved and soon, it touched something.

"Especially this. This is being a big hindrance and is distracting me. Therefore, I believe that we would have to take care of this before we continue with our drawing.

However,

For some reason, I have this gut feeling that once we start taking care of this, we wouldn't be able to stop and would fall into an endless trap of pleasure and nastiness."

Nux was forced to tighten his hug around Evane's body as she stroked his dick through his pants.

“You really want to deal with this distraction?”

Nux whispered softly.

“Yes, I have to.”

Evane nodded.

“Are you sure about this? I will warn you beforehand, you might not want to paint ever again after this.”

“Heh, you sure are confident.”

Evane smiled back.

“Oh believe me.”

Nux’s smile widened even more and then,

“Anh~”

His hand moved and touched her breasts.

“This is going to be the best night you have ever spent.”

Nux chuckled and then, he got to work.

Right now, Evane was still wearing her coat over the shirt, the dress which she usually wears while she teaches.

This gave Nux the chance to undress the ‘Teacher Evane’.

A chance that he did not give up at all.

With a quick movement, he quickly removed the coat that Evane was wearing, however, when it came to the shirt,

Nux’s hands got unbearably slower.

He moved his hands towards her buttons, unbuttoning them one by one.

He took his special time on the buttons that were on her breasts, he didn't give up on the opportunity to touch those soft breasts in any way he wanted.

While he did that, Evane, whose hands were locked in due to Nux's hands, couldn't move.

As if this gave her the time to think about what she was doing, a deep red blush appeared on her face, and as if trying to deal with that,

“D-Do it faster! We can't just stay on the undressing part for the rest of the night!”

She urged.

Nux smiled.

“Why did you decide this so suddenly, Evane?”

You know that I can wait till you are completely ready, right?”

“I... I want to do it right now...”

Evane didn't back down.

“Why the hurry though?”

“I... it's nothing.

What? Do you not want t- Anh~”

A moan leaked out of Evane's mouth as Nux suddenly bit her earlobe.

At the same time, a thought appeared in his mind,

‘My lovely wives, you all are the best!’

# Chapter 377

Evane has spent her entire day with Nux's women.

And what did those women always talk about?

Heh.

The answer was obvious.

Therefore, Evane's mind was preoccupied with those lewd things.

Of course, something like this wasn't enough to make her push herself this strongly.

The deciding factor was something, or more precisely, someone else.

Ember Windstar.

Evane had heard about this woman.

One of the strongest King Stage Cultivators in the world, a top class General, a Great Leader, a fierce Warrior, a Merciless Killer,

All these titles were used to describe her.

Due to this, although Evane had never met the General before, she still had a certain imaginary image in her mind.

However, today, that imaginary image was tarnished.

Today, that rumored woman was smiling perversely while talking about lewd things with a few other women.

This was a big shock for Evane.

The fact that this rumored woman and the women she was talking with, were fantasizing about a single man, who just happens to be her lover as well.

‘Just how good does... sex feels for them to talk about it for the whole day with such an interesting look on their faces?’

This question popped up in Evane’s mind.

Also...

Though she would never admit it out loud, she was jealous of the fact that some women knew more about her lover than her.

Therefore,

She decided.

She would do it.

She would have sex with Nux today.

This was what led to this current scenario.

And that is why,

‘My lovely wives, you all are the best!’

Nux was thanking his women in his heart.

“Heh, I would be a fool to miss out on a golden opportunity like this.”

He chuckled and his hand continued to unbutton Evane’s shirt.

Evane’s heartbeat quickened and her face turned red.

Soon, Nux was done unbuttoning the whole shirt, his hands then moved towards Evane’s shoulders and he removed the shirt, revealing Evane’s bare skin and a tame, white-colored bra.

“White, the color of pureness, this is so you Evane~”

Nux commented.

“S-Shut up.”

Evane snorted.

Nux chuckled and then, his hands moved towards her pencil skirt.

“!!!”

Evane’s eyes widened.

“W-W-What are you doing?”

She questioned with a panicked look on her face.

“Preparing my meal, of course.”

Nux answered as if it was the most obvious thing in the world.

“P-Preparing your m-meal?”

Evane was flustered.

“Indeed.”

Nux smiled and,

\*Click\*

With an echoing sound, he unhooked her skirt.

Evane’s back arched up.

Nux, however, didn’t give her any chance to adjust and started removing her skirt.

Evane’s face turned red and her heartbeat quickened even more.

She could see how her skin was being revealed to another man while she was sitting on that very man's lap.

Evane closed her eyes in shame and... excitement.

Finally, Nux completely removed Evane's skirt.

The woman just sat there without saying anything, however, from her red face, it was clear that many things were going on inside that mind of hers.

A few seconds later, Nux moved his hand around Evane's waist and pushed her closer to his body.

"Hmm?"

Evane opened her eyes.

What was that warm feeling she was feeling on her back right now?

She wondered in her head.

Then, Evane turned around and,

"!!!"

Her eyes widened in shock.

Nux was bare-chested!

That warm feeling she felt was from her chest.

In shock, she moved away from him.

Or... so she tried to, Nux, however, tightened his grip around her even more and then placed his chest on her shoulders.

A strange wave of comfort washed over Ember's body.

This warmth...

She liked it a lot.

It felt as if she was a budding plant, while Nux was that giant tree that was protecting her and providing her with warmth.

Evane closed her eyes again.

This was too comforting.

However, tonight was not meant to be comforting at all.

“!!!”

Evane’s eyes widened again.

Something...

Something went inside!

In an instant, Evane lowered her head and saw Nux’s hand inside her panty!

“What are yo- Annh~”

She panicked and wanted to question, however, before she could,

Nux moved his finger that was inside Evane’s forbidden region.

Evane’s back arched up again and her breathing turned haggard.

Nux, like the gentle and caring man he was, allowed her to regain her energy.

A few seconds later, Evane calmed down and,

“Take it o- Aahnnh~”

Nux moved his finger and Evane moaned again.

This time, Nux didn't give her any opportunity to relax and continued to explore her forbidden region while noting her weak points inside her mind.

Evane was helpless.

All she could do was push her back towards Nux's chest and enjoy that warmth.

Nux, of course, didn't deny that, rather, he used his other hand to pull her even closer, while his other hand continued the exploration of the forbidden cave.

“How does it feel?”

Nux whispered.

Evane, who was busy dealing with this strangely fulfilling feeling smiled,

“Warm.”

“Hmm? Warm?”

“Then what about this?”

“Aaannhh~”

Another moan leaked out of Evane's face as Nux teased her weak point violently.

“I-It feels good.”

Evane answered.

A satisfied smile appeared on Nux's face.

Then, he pulled out his finger.

“Huh?”

Evane frowned.

“What happened?”

“Hmm?”

Nux smiled.

“Why did you stop?”

Evane questioned.

“Heeh? Someone looks awfully disappointed.

Was I that good?”

Nux teased and Evane’s face turned red.

“N-No, that’s not it.”

“What it is then?”

Nux questioned out of curiosity.

“You should end what you started.”

Evane came up with a random reason.

“Heehh? Didn’t I end it already?”

A big smile appeared on Nux’s face.

Evane took a deep breath.

“You should properly end what you started.”

Her annoyance was clear in her tone.

“I didn’t know.”

Suddenly, Nux commented.

“Didn’t know what?”

Evane questioned back.

“You are actually quite adorably when you are flustered.”

“I-”

Evane was about to reply, however, suddenly, Nux stood up, and with her in his arms, he walked towards the bed,

“Evane, my darling, you are right.

I should properly end what I started.”

# Chapter 378

“Evane, my darling, you are right.

I should properly end what I started.”

Nux spoke with a playful smile on his face.

Evane, who now lay on the bed, looked at Nux, who was standing right in front of her, bare-chested.

This time, she finally had a clear look at him and she,

\*Gulp\*

She gulped.

Nux was... handsome.

Unbearably handsome.

All of this combined with that playful smile on his face, and the state she was in, Evane could feel her forbidden region twitching unstoppably.

Her body was burning,

Evane knew,

Her body was demanding something.

Her body wanted this man in front of her.

Evane then saw Nux walking towards her. A small smile appeared on her face. She looked into Nux's eyes with passion boiling in her eyes.

This time, she was really ready.

Nux crawled up on the bed, then he moved his face to her legs, and from there, he moved up.

Her knees, then thighs, Nux moved and continued moving, he paused near her forbidden region, then, he took a deep sniff.

Evane blushed.

“Now that smells alluring~”

Nux commented.

Evane blushed even more and didn't reply.

Then, Nux made a bold move and kissed Evane's crotch through her panty.

This sent a big jolt of pleasure inside Evane's body.

Her insides, which were already trembling nonstop, calmed down for a small while, however, once Nux's lips moved away, the itching grew stronger.

Evane pressed her thighs on each other, trying to deal with that itch, however, it did not work.

Oblivious to her troubles, Nux continued his journey, he slid through her thin waist smoothly, with his lips barely grazing Evane's belly, this 'barely grazing' however, only added to Evane's trouble.

She finally understood why the girls called Nux a bastard.

He indeed was a bastard.

Right now, all Evane wanted was to grab Nux's head, pull him close to herself, then force him to speed things up, however, right now, for some reason, she couldn't move.

Yes, her body was strangely weak.

Therefore, she couldn't move.

And this gave Nux the leverage to do whatever he wanted.

And of course, Nux didn't give up this chance.

The smooth journey he was having found an obstruction.

There were two mountains in his path.

A wicked smile appeared on Nux's face.

His lips then touched Evane's bra, then, with his mouth grazing Evane's breasts, Nux climbed the mountains.

Then, he moved forward towards Evane's upper breasts, then her collarbone, her neck, and finally,

Their eyes met.

\*Gulp\*

Evane gulped again as she found herself lost in Nux's golden eyes.

She then noticed that Nux's face was coming closer and closer to hers, a sudden urge took over Evane and she close her eyes. Her lips formed a pout and then,

Their lips met.

At this instance, all the itching Evane was feeling vanished.

A big wave of comfort washed over her body while Nux sucked on her lips and she sucked on his.

A few moments later, Nux's lips parted.

Evane opened her eyes and looked at Nux with a starry look on her face,

Nux smiled.

Evane closed her eyes again.

Nux chuckled softly and then, they kissed again.

After enjoying it for a minute, their lips parted again.

Evane opened her eyes, and at that moment, their mutual understanding grew so much that Nux instantly knew what she wanted.

And as if Evane realized that her message to Nux was delivered, she closed her eyes again.

Another Kiss.

Then another.

Another one, again, again, one more, and again.

The two of them continued to kiss each other again and again, tasting every single part of the other's lips.

Evane was addicted to this.

However, all good things must come to the end.

The kissing session ended and this time, Nux moved his face away, ignoring whatever Evane was 'saying' with her eyes.

Seeing this, Evane pouted.

'Bastard indeed.'

She even cursed.

And as if the god was punishing her for cursing, the itching returned as well, this time, even stronger than before.

Evane was helpless.

In the end, she could only rub her thighs with each other.

“Hmm? Is something wrong, my darling?”

Suddenly, Nux questioned.

Evane looked at him with hope, however, when she noticed that playful smirk on his face, she turned her face away.

Nux chuckled.

“Oh well, I guess I would need to help you, don't I?”

“Hmm?”

Evane turned her face back towards Nux.

Suddenly, she felt Nux's fingers below her waist.

Evane understood what he was trying to do and her heartbeat, which had calmed down a lot after the kissing session quickened up again.

Nux then removed Evane's panty, another jolt entered Evane's body when the cold air directly touched her forbidden region.

“This is... beautiful...”

Nux commented with a lost look on his face.

However, this complement didn't make her happy at all.

As soon as her panty was removed, the twitching had become stronger and was growing with every passing second.

The more time Nux 'wasted' while he was lost in her beauty, the more that itching would increase.

How could he not understand!?

Evane was annoyed.

In anger, she finally reacted.

“...hurry.”

Yeah... The response didn't come out as strongly as she wanted it to be.

Rather than a command, it looked more like a plea.

Nux crawled back, and then, he lowered his head again.

Then, he kissed Evane's crotch again, this time, however, there was no panty in between.

“Ahhh~”

A wave of comfort washed over Evane's body and she moaned.

However, things had just started.

Nux's moved his mouth and soon, his lips touched Evane's lower lips.

“!!!”

Evane's eyes widened in surprise.

However, Nux didn't give her any chance to react and his tongue entered her insides.

“Aannhh~”

Another moan leaked out of Evane's head, this time, however, it wasn't from comfort, this time, it was a moan of pleasure.

Unable to control herself, Evane gave herself to desire.

Her legs moved and locked around Nux's legs, she then sandwiched Nux's head with her thighs, pushing him even closer to her little sister and allowing his tongue to explore deeper.

“AAnnnhhh~”

Another moan leaked out from the woman's mouth.

# Chapter 379

“AAAnnhhhh~~”

Evane moaned loudly.

Nux, who was busy with his tongue, could feel Evane’s pressing her thighs against his face, and at the same time, she was trying to push his face right into her forbidden area.

Nux had to admit it,

This was a heavenly feeling~

With her meaty thighs pressing against his face, and her tasty lower lips right in front of his mouth, this was all a man would ask for.

Nux then continued to move his tongue, he already learned where the weak points were when he explored this cave for the first time.

Of course, it did take him some time to find them again with his tongue, however, as soon as he did find them, his work got easier.

Weak points were all he focused on and as a result,

“AAAnnhhhh~~”

Loud and pleasureful moans were all the things that could come out of Evane’s mouth.

As for her other mouth, well, it only secreted juices.

Divinely delicious juices.

Of course, Nux had full access to them.

Without waiting for any permission, Nux quickly gulped down the juices Evane's lower lips released.

The process was simple, Nux's tongue worked on generating more juice, while Nux drank the juice generated.

“AAnnhh~~”

Evane, of course, continued to moan as well. The pleasure she felt continued to stack up, all the itching she felt completely disappeared, her grip around Nux's face loosened up, giving him the chance to move a little more, this way, his tongue explored even more areas, and soon,

Nux felt Evane's cave twitching.

He paused.

A second later, he realized what was happening and decided to speed up the process.

His upper teeth then nibbled on a small bud that was on top of Evane's lower lips,

“!!!”

Evane's eyes widened in surprise as a big jolt of pleasure passed through her entire body, her walls tightened and soon, they loosened up and,

\*Squirt\* \*Squirt\* \*Squirt\*

Nux's face was washed by the purest liquid that exists in this world.

“AAaannnnNnhh~~ So Goodd!!”

Of course, this was followed by a loud moan.

Nux, who was busy gulping down everything he had collected smiled,

“It was good indeed.”

Evane's eyes then fell on Nux and,

“T-That is... My...?”

She questioned with a tired, as well as shocked look on her face.

“Yes, your assumption is correct, my darling, this liquid is indeed yours. I have to say, I never expected you to release this much. Even I failed to gulp down all of that. Quite a shocker, if I am being honest.”

Nux answered with his usual playful smile on his face and the more he spoke, the redder Evane's face got.

She was embarrassed.

Nux, however, wasn't done yet.

“Which brings me to another question, Darling. Just how often do you masturbate?”

Evane averted her eyes.

Nux raised his eyebrows and tilted her head.

“Now that, is quite an amusing reaction.”

He then crawled onto the bed again, placing his face right in front of Evane's he questioned.

“You aren't planning to hide things from the person who you love the most, are you?”

“...”

Evane, however, didn't answer.

“...”

Nux didn't say anything and just continued to stare at her.

In the end, Evane finally gave in,

“Once...”

“Hmm? Once a day, that’s pretty normal.”

Nux nodded.

“Not a day...

A month.

Sometimes, once every 2-3 months...

I... I don’t d-do it very often.”

Again, Evane was embarrassed.

“...”

This time, even Nux was silent.

“Now that’s straight up depressing...”

He commented.

“...”

Evane didn’t say anything.

“We have to correct that, now don’t we?”

Suddenly, a big smile appeared on Nux’s face.

“Hmm?”

Evane tilted her head.

Seeing her face, Nux couldn’t help but shake his head.

“Evane, oh my lovely Evane, just how could your pure self mingle with a sin like me~

Oh ho ho ho~”

Nux then moved his mouth closed to Evane’s ear and whispered,

“Evane Skyfall, I am going to ruin this pureness of yours.”

Evane felt her little sister twitching a little again.

Yes, with just a few words, Nux managed to arouse Evane again.

Nux then stood up, Evane’s gaze followed him, then, with a smile on his face, Nux lowered his pants, revealing the already erect little Nux which was not little at all.

Evane’s heartbeat quickened as well.

Nux chuckled, then without saying anything else, he walked towards her legs and hopped onto the bed again.

“Aanhh~”

Evane moaned as Nux placed little Nux on top of her lower lips. Nux then started rubbing little Nux on Evane’s slit.

This act alone was enough for Evane to moan more and more, when suddenly,

Nux inserted the head inside.

Then, he crawled forward, his eyes meeting Evane’s and,

“AAAAnnnnNnhhh”

He pushed the whole thing inside.

This time, Evane's moan wasn't full of pleasure, this time, pain accompanied it as well.

"Calm down, everything will be fine in a minute,"

Nux's whispered into Evane's ears.

His voice was full of love and care.

Even though she was in pain right now, seeing him so close to her, Evane felt assured, and then, she closed her eyes.

Suddenly, she felt something soft touching her lips.

Within a moment, she realized what it was.

She reciprocated with her own kiss.

The two of them sucked each other's lips lovingly.

Evane completely forgot about the pain and focused on Nux's lips.

Nux, on the other hand, tried his best to hold back.

Evane's insides were too soft.

Too soft.

He had a rough idea about this when he touched her insides before, however, now that he was actually inside, he realized just how absurdly pleasurable it was.

Nux was having a hard time holding himself back.

Right now, his body was urging him to start moving and explore more of this feeling, his body was urging him to ravish this woman in front of him.

However, he held himself back.

Now was not the time yet.

Right now, kissing and calming her down was all he could do.

# Chapter 380

“Are you alright now?”

Nux questioned in a calm voice.

“mm.”

Evane nodded.

“Really?”

Evane’s smile widened and she nodded again,

“Yes, yes I am.”

A wicked smile then appeared on Nux’s face.

“Heh, that’s good.

Get ready to be not alright now.”

Evane chuckled as she looked at Nux with unconcealed love in her eyes.

‘Gentle Bastard.’

She muttered inwardly.

Nux smiled as he moved his face away, then, he pulled his shaft out of Evane’s body as slowly as he can.

He stopped right when he was about to fully pull it out, then, he moved back in.

Again, he was very slow with his movements.

Actually, this was the hardest time for him.

These unbelievably soft and warm insides crawled all over his penis, sucking it with a tremendous force, he really had to give his all just so he couldn't cum.

Nux continued his slow movements until he noticed some levels of ease in Evane's expression.

Then,

“AAAnnnNnahhh~”

A got a little rougher.

With just one thrust, his dick moved into Evane's deepest parts. Sending jolts and jolts of pleasure inside her body.

Those unbearably soft insides welcomed him well.

Controlling the urge to cum right here and now, Nux moved and thrust his dick again.

“AAAnnhhhHh~”

And again,

“AaAnnNhhh!”

And then again,

“AaannnnhhhhHH~”

With each thrust, the pleasure Evane felt became stronger and stronger, while the pain she was feeling got weaker and weaker.

“Now you look more comfortable.”

Nux commented.

Evane smiled back and nodded,

“Guess I don’t need to hold back anymore.”

“Huh?”

A frown appeared on Evane’s face, however, before she could think too much about what Nux said,

He thrust again.

“AAAnnnNNNHHhhh!!”

This was Evane’s loudest moan so far.

This thrust...

It was much stronger compared to the last ones.

However, Nux was done yet.

Before she could even cope with the pleasure he was feeling, Nux pulled his rod out, before putting it right inside.

“AAnnhhh! Aannhh! Aannhh!!”

A Series of loud moans were heard.

The pounding had started.

Jolts and Jolts of pleasure completely overwhelmed Evane’s mind and body.

Now, all her questions were answered.

She finally realized why those girls were so crazy over this. She finally realized why even Ember Windstar failed to resist this. She finally understood how they could talk about this and only this for the whole day without getting tired.

Sex just feels too good!

Just how could something possibly feel this good!?

Evane couldn't understand.

“AAannnnhhhhHH!!”

Suddenly, another, big moan leaked out of Evane's mouth.

Evane then opened her eyes, there, she saw Nux who was... biting her bra...?

Evane frowned.

However, suddenly, Nux's eyes fell on hers, with a smirk on his face, Nux pulled away her bra, revealing her bare breasts that jiggled from the sudden movement.

After revealing those beautiful mountains, Nux didn't wait at all.

He rested his head on Ember's right breast.

A comfortable feeling washed over his body.

Just like her insides, Evane's breasts were incredibly soft as well.

Nux snuggled his face and enjoyed this feeling for a while, and then, his tongue popped out.

The desire to taste those pink nipples, he couldn't fight it anymore.

“Annhh~”

Evane moaned as Nux licked the tip of her right nipple.

He didn't stop there, after licking it for a few seconds, his insatiable greed grew and he place the whole thing inside his mouth.

Now, while his tongue still played with the tip, his mouth sucked on the whole nipple, and Evane,

“Aannnhhhh~~”

She moaned in pleasure.

The rough pounding on one side, and this on the other side, was too much for her.

The waves and waves of pleasure that continuously assaulted her mind were too overwhelming. Her mind couldn't take it anymore, therefore, it blanked out.

She couldn't think straight anymore. The pleasure was the only thing she had in her mind right now.

Her body wasn't holding out any better either.

After so many merciless thrusts, her lower regions had turned completely numb, the only thing they could do was to release juice.

Yes, she has already had countless small orgasms.

Due to this, the rest of her body was very weak as well. Her hands, her back, her legs, her head, she couldn't move anything at all.

The only thing she could do was moan.

To be honest, if it wasn't for her moans, one would think that she was dead.

Of course, Nux wasn't holding out any better either,

Actually, his condition was even worse than Evane's, which was quite rare these days.

He has been holding the urge to cum for a long time now, however, Evane's insides were too scary.

He was at his limits right now.

He doesn't even know how he held on for so long.

‘Uggghh! Fuck it!’

In the end, Nux finally gave in.

He had to resort to cheating.

He has no other options.

In the end,

“AAnnnhhnHNNh!”

He bit Evane’s nipple.

Her walls tightened, the pleasure he felt increased and,

“Ugghhhhhh!! I am cumminggg!!”

He painted her insides in white.

Evane’s walls loosened up as well and,

\*Squirt\*

“AAnnnNAnnnhhhh!!”

She came again.

This time, it wasn’t a minor orgasm, it was a big, much more pleasurable one.

Their juices mixed and then,

Evane felt a strange energy entering her body.

If she was in a normal state right now, she would have definitely frowned and would have checked what this energy was.

However, she wasn’t in her normal state right now.

Therefore, she didn't bother about it at all.

Heck, she didn't even realize that an energy had entered her body.

After all, something else, something much more important had just entered her body.

A smile appeared on Evane's face.

Nux just stayed where he was, his face resting on Evane's breasts while her nipple was inside his mouth, the rest of Nux's body was on top of Evane's, while his little brother comfortably stayed inside those soft insides without the care of the world.

"How... haah... how was it...? Did you... hahh... enjoy your first time?"

Nux, who was still a little out of breath questioned.

"Best... night..."

Evane only answered with 2 words.

She didn't have any energy to say anything else.

The two of them closed their eyes and with their bodies mingled with each other like that, the two of them entered the dreamlands.

# Chapter 381

“So according to thi-”

While Evane was teaching, the doors of her classroom opened,

“Sorry, I am late.”

Seeing the person who has just entered, Evane frowned,

“Where were you?”

“Well, I woke up early.”

Nux replied with a fresh smile on his face.

The rest of the students, however, frowned when they heard his option.

‘Huh? Is he out of his mind? Just what kind of person arrives late when he got up early.’

‘What kind of strange excuse is that?’

‘As I thought, he is crazy.’

Nobody understood what he was talking about.

Except for the one he was talking to of course.

“So where were you?”

Evane questioned.

“I was training.”

“With Teacher Arvina?”

“No, with her friend.”

Nux smiled.

Evane realized and nodded.

“Alright, enter the class now.”

Nux smiled and walked in. Evane smiled back, and seeing this smile, Nux couldn't control himself.

“Teacher Evane, I have to say, your face looks very bright today. Don't you think, you think so as well, guys?”

The rest of the students nodded as well,

“Yes, I was thinking the same as well.”

“I had the same thoughts in my mind as well.”

“Yes, Teacher Evane, your face looks quite rosy today.”

“Teacher Evane, did something good happen?”

One of the students questioned.

“Well, something good did happen.”

Evane nodded with a small smile on her face.

“Ohh? What happened, Teacher Evane?”

Evane's eyes momentarily fell on Nux before they quickly turned away and she shook her head,

“That's a personnel matter.”

“”””Ooohhhhhh!”””””

The entire class smiled.

Evane's face turned a little red.

“K-Keep quiet. Focus on the class!”

“Guys, listen to Teacher Evane, don't ruin her mood okay?”

Suddenly, Nux spoke up.

“We aren't ruining her mood, don't worry. You just take care of yourself. Your actions are the ones that would ruin her mood the most.”

A student retorted.

“Oh c'mon. How could you possibly say that?”

Nux was hurt.

“My actions would never hurt Teacher Evane, on the contrary, they would only put a satisfied smile on her face. That is just how good I am.”

Nux then turned towards Evane and smiled,

“Isn't that right, Teacher Evane?”

“S-Stay silent. We w-will be continuing with the class.”

Evane stuttered.

She couldn't believe that Nux would place her on the spot like that.

“Yes, Teacher Evane, don't worry, I am looking forward to that class.

And the sessions we will have in the future. I really enjoyed the last one.”

Evane blushed.

“Huh? Why only the last one?”

A student couldn't help but question.

“Because the last one was special, of course.”

Nux answered.

“Hmm? I didn't find the last session very special, what are you talking about?”

The student questioned back.

“Well, you weren't even there, how would yo-”

“Alright, stop talking now.

Nux, stop talking.

Joe, you stop as well.

We will be continuing our class now.”

Evane quickly interrupted Nux's words and ordered everyone to settle down.

Seeing her acting like that, Nux chuckled.

Evane looked at him and her face twitched.

‘This bastard is having fun...’

Evane thought inwardly.

She really wanted to go and strangle him right now, however, she controlled that urge and calmed herself down.

The class went on smoothly.

Some students still thought about how strange the conversation between Nux and Teacher Evane was, however, in the end, they just accepted the

fact that Nux was not right in his head and shrugged.

There were better and more important things in their lives to worry about.

1 hour passed by and,

“Alright, this is enough. Does anyone of you has any questions?”

A student raised his hands,

“Teacher Evane, I do have some questions.”

Evane looked at the student and nodded,

“What are they?”

Evane questioned.

“They would need some time, can I come to your office?”

The student questioned.

“I have a prior arrangement, so we cannot do that right now. You can come to me after 3 in the afternoon, I will available by then.”

“I understand, Teacher Evane.”

The student nodded.

Evane nodded back and then, she turned towards Nux,

“Nux, come to my office.”

Nux frowned, however, soon, a smile appeared on his face and he chuckled,

“Ah yes, we do have some, ‘prior arrangement’, after all.”

This time, Evane controlled her expression well and didn’t react,

“Yes, now move faster, I do not have a whole day. I have a busy schedule today.”

“I am sure you do, Teacher Evane.”

Nux smiled.

Evane then walked out of the class and Nux followed her with a big smile on his face.

Evane entered her office and then waited, a few seconds later, Nux entered as well. Evane smiled, Nux smiles back, then he shuts the doors and locks it.

Evane’s smile widened, and without waiting or saying anything, she walked towards Nux.

Their lips met, Evane’s hands moved all over Nux’s back, while Nux’s hand touched her lower waist gently, then one of them moved down to her perky butt, while the other moved up to her breast.

“Mhhmmnm~”

A moan leaked out of Evane’s mouth. She then tightened her hug around Nux, pulling him even closer to herself. Nux, of course, did not reject this offer at all.

He just intensified his sucking and soon, his tongue moved out.

Evane’s eyes opened a little when she felt his tongue entering her mouth, however, soon, they returned to normal as she started using her tongue as well.

Their tongues clashed with each other, Evane’s movements were clearly inexperienced, however, Nux still enjoyed the kiss a lot.

After a full 5 minutes long and passionate kiss, their lips finally parted, with a silver lining of saliva in between.

Nux licked the saliva around his mouth and smiled,

“So this was the prior arrangement you were talking about? I can’t even think of what my dear classmate would think if he sees this.”

Evane blushed.

“S-Shut up. I-I really d-did have something I wanted to talk to you about.”

Nux turned Evane’s body and then hugged her from behind, his one hand caressing her breasts, while the other one moved towards her forbidden region.

“Annh~”

Waves and waves of pleasure assaulted Evane’s body and she moaned.

“What is it?” Nux questioned.

After biting her lips to cope with pleasure,

Evane answered.

“I-I got stronger...”

# Chapter 382

“So... you are telling me that your power grows stronger, the more... you make love with your woman...?”

“If the woman I am making love to is stronger than me, then yes.”

Nux nodded and Evane, who, right now was sitting on his lap comfortably, blinked a few times. Showing clear disbelief.

Yes, even though she was hearing these words from her lover’s mouth, she was unable to accept this.

What Nux was telling him was simply too absurd.

“And if the woman is weaker than you?”

Evane questioned.

“If the woman is weaker than me, then she is the one who gets stronger. As in your case, after the lovely session we had, you felt that you have become stronger.

It is not just your illusion, it actually happened.

Right now, the current you are stronger than the day ago you.

And this won’t be the last time you would feel this because, well,

We will be having a lot of sessions from now on,”

Nux whispered into Evane’s ears while caressing her breasts gently.

Evane’s face heated up, she hands grabbed Nux’s hand that was on her waist and she continued to enjoy his touch, while hearing what he was saying of course.

“So until you become a King Stage Cultivator, you would keep getting stronger the more time you spend with me.

So make sure not to leave me, alright?”

Nux chuckled, however, this time, Evane was not as calm as before.

“King Stage?”

She questioned.

“As I said, as long as your cultivation is not the same as mine, you would keep getting stronger, since I am a King Stage Cultivator, your growth would only stop after you be-”

“You are a King Stage Cultivator? Weren’t you an Expert Stage Cultivator before!?”

Evane’s eyes widened in surprise.

An 18-year-old King Stage Cultivator...

Absurd...

Too absurd...

Her lover was now as strong as the King, and the headmaster of the academy...

Not only that, but according to him, she would become that strong as well...

Just how absurd is that!?

“Of course, I am King Stage Cultivator, didn’t you meet Ember before?”

Nux replied.

“Ember?” Evane frowned, however soon, it suddenly clicked.

“She is a King Stage Cultivator!”

“Indeed, and because of her, now I am a King Stage Cultivator as well.

Now, with me, all my wives would become King Stage Cultivators as well, including you.”

Nux smiled.

“This... this is ridiculous!”

Evane still couldn't believe him.

However, now that she thinks about it, she finally realized it.

The reason why every single one of Nux's women was absurdly talented, the reason why Nux's Cultivation rose so ridiculously quickly.

It was all because of this ability.

It all made sense now.

“Well, your husband is just too special.”

Nux chuckled as he moved his hands towards her forbidden area and grabbed her lower lips.

“Annhh~”

Evane moaned and her face turned red.

“H-Husband... I-It sounds nice...”

She muttered in a mosquito-like voice and a beautiful smile appeared on her face.

However, suddenly, her expression changed,

“Wait... so does that mean soon we would have 7 King Stage Cultivators on our side?”

“Yes, that is current.”

Nux nodded with a smile on his face.

“I can’t believe this.”

Evane just shook her head.

This was too much for her. This man, sitting in front of her was breaking all the logic here left and right, however, even for him, this was just too absurd.

Impossible! Yes, it was entirely impossible!

“Well, we already have 6 Expert Stage Cultivators on our side, don’t we?”

However, Nux’s next words somehow made it believable.

“We are really going to have 7 King Stage CULTivators on our side...”

After thinking for a few minutes, Evane finally came to a conclusion.

A shocking conclusion.

These many King Stage Cultivators were enough to build another Kingdom.

Their strength would soon rival the strength that the 4 Strongest Kingdoms in the entire world possess!

Ridiculous!

Wait...

Suddenly, another thought appeared in Evane’s mind.

“Nux...”

She called out.

“Mhm?”

“Let’s say you make love with 100 women, will they all become King Stage Cultivators as well?”

“Well, if I continue to have sex with them for a month or something, then yes.”

“Then why haven’t you done that yet? Won’t that make you unparalleled in this world?”

“It might but…”

Nux then placed his chin on Evane’s face and whispered,

“Won’t that reduce the amount of time I could spend with my lovely women?”

“…”

Evane turned silent.

“Kekeke~ You see, I have this fatal weakness, I can’t stay away from my lovely wives for too long.

Also, imagine having 100 wives, I don’t even know how would I spend time with you all. As high as my stamina is, I believe even I would be sucked out if I would try to satisfy you all~”

Nux chuckled.

Evane laughed out loud.

“I love you…”

Suddenly, Evane muttered in a small voice.

“Oh? I didn’t quite catch that, can you repeat that for me?”

Nux smiled.

Evane pouted.

However, in the end, she repeated what she said, this time, a little louder.

“I love you...”

Nux’s smile widened. Then, he stood up with Evane in his arms.

“Hmm?” Evane frowned, however, as soon as Nux placed her on the sofa, she quickly understood what was happening.

“I love you too, Evane.”

Then, he brought his mouth close to her ears and whispered.

“Now let me show you how strong my love is.”

Evane and Nux smiled.

Their lips met, the tongues clashed, the saliva was exchanged, the clothes were removed at lightning speed with their naked body mingling together, and Nux’s erect dick finally entered Evane’s warm and especially soft insides.

“AAAnnnhhhh~~”

A moan leaked out.

“Ugghhh! Evane~ This feels too good~”

A grunt was heard.

Then soon, the sounds of flesh meeting flesh and pleasurable moans and grunts echoed inside that room.

However, no one outside of that room was able to hear these sounds.

The only two people who were able to hear these voices were the two responsible for it.

“AAAnnnhhHHhh~~ I love itt~~~”

# Chapter 383

Evane walked out of her office with a big smile on her face.

She could feel that she had gotten stronger again, and according to Nux, if they continue this pace, then within 2-3 days, she would break through and would become an Expert Stage Cultivator.

A stage that she practically gave up on, was now merely a few days away.

This was a great feeling.

However, this wasn't the reason behind Evane's happiness.

Well, it was a small part of it, however, the main reason was her talk with Nux. Now that she had gotten to know him better and had learned about all his strange and absurdly powerful magics, she felt that their relationship had strengthened a lot.

Just thinking about this fills her heart with immense happiness.

“Oh ho, someone looks quite pleased today.”

Suddenly, Evane heard a voice and came out of her reverie.

Her eyes then fell on a couple in front of her and she smiled,

“Good afternoon, Teacher Amanda, Teacher Kevin.”

“The one for whom this afternoon is actually looking good is you, Teacher Evane.”

Teacher Amanda chuckled.

“It is nothing like that.”

Evane smiled.

These two people in front of her were a husband and wife couple. Evane wasn't exactly close with them, or any of the other teachers working in this Academy for that matter, however, they still had a certain relationship as work colleagues and often greeted each other when they met.

“No, but seriously, that smile looks beautiful on your face, Teacher Evane.”

Amanda praised.

“I certainly agree with that.”

Kevin laughed out loud.

“Of course you do.”

Amanda rolled her eyes and Kevin chuckled again.

Seeing the two of them, Evane laughed a little as well.

“So? Teacher Evane, are you really not going to share the good news with us?”

Kevin questioned with a smile on his face.

“Umm...”

Evane didn't know what to say.

“Let me guess, you fell in love, didn't you?”

“Huh?”

“Huh?”

Amanda received two reactions from two people in front of her.

First, was her husband, who couldn't understand how she came up with that conclusion, and second was Evane, who was wondering how she guessed it correctly.

Amanda completely ignored her husband and turned toward Evane,

“You don't have to look so shocked, that tinge of red on your face is giving it all away. Though I must say,

You really did fell hard, did you not?”

Evane's blush deepened and she nodded meekly.

Kevin was surprised, as for Amanda, well, she just smiled.

“Are you two together now?”

Evane nodded again and Amanda's smile widened,

“Now I know why you are smiling like a fresh rose.”

Evane smiled a little.

Amanda then patted Evane's shoulder and,

“I hope you two stay together and true to each other for the rest of your life.”

“Thank you.”

Evane smiled beautifully.

Then, with a blush on her face, she walked away.

“Heh, to think our princess finally found someone. She took her damn time.

Also, the man who managed to win her heart, he is one lucky bastard.”

Kevin chuckled.

Amanda didn't say anything and continued to look at Evane, who was walking toward her class.

“We should go to our classes as well.”

Kevin muttered.

Amanda nodded and then, the two of them turned around.

...

“Lady Arvina, she is here again.”

Right now, Arvina was sitting inside her office, in front of her was the servant working in her mansion.

Arvina looked at her servant and questioned,

“Where is she going?”

“Inside ‘her’ room.”

The servant answered.

Arvina frowned and after a while, she nodded.

“Alright, you can leave now.”

“As you command, Lady Arvina.”

The servant bowed his head and left the office.

After he left, Arvina frowned again.

“Why is she here again?”

She wondered in her head.

The woman she was talking about was Evane, who, right now, is inside Ember's room, where Nux's wives and Nux are staying and talking with each other.

Actually, a teacher meeting her student's wives wasn't a problem, if the relationship between student and teacher is close, something like this was very common.

However, meeting her student's wives consecutively, for two days and that too at night.

Now that, is a bit... strange.

Weird thoughts boiled inside Arvina's mind.

However, as soon as those thoughts appeared, she shook her head.

'I am sure she must have her own reasons.'

Arvina thought and then, pushed out those weird thoughts out of her mind.

She couldn't imagine Evane of all people doing that sort of thing so brazenly.

However, Nux's charm wasn't something to scoff a-

No, no, it is all just a misunderstanding, she must have something really important to talk about. This is why she is here, that's all.

With these thoughts in her mind, Arvina closed her eyes.

However,

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Another knock on the door was heard.

"Who is it?" Arvina questioned.

“Lady Arvina, the Headmaster is here to meet you.”

Her servant reported.

Arvina frowned.

‘Headmaster? At this time?’

She couldn’t understand what was going on.

“Let him in.”

In the end, she couldn’t let him wait for long.

He was the Headmaster of the Academy after all.

The doors opened and soon, a bald man walked inside.

“Vice Headmaster Arvina.”

He called out.

“Headmaster, I do not think it is appropriate for you to visit me at this time.”

“Oh C’mon, don’t act like it’s the middle of the night, Arvina. It is barely 9.”

“I still don’t believe that you can visit me at this time.”

Arvina didn’t back down.

“Haahh...”

The Headmaster sighed in defeat and shook his head,

“Alright, I will admit, it is my fault, I shouldn’t have come here at this time, I apologize.

Can we talk about the problem now, or do you want me to hold my ears and stand here for 5 minutes?”

Arvina’s frown deepened.

From his words, what the Headmaster wanted to talk about sounded very urgent, however, for some reason, she didn’t have a good feeling about this at all.

However, she had no other choice.

“What is it?”

# Chapter 384

Evane entered Arvina's mansion with an excited look on her face. She was looking forward to meeting all her sisters today.

After all, she has finally done the deed.

Now, she could actively take part in the conversation and could finally talk about how incredibly good it felt.

How she needed an hour just to cope with the pleasure she felt.

How her entire body turned numb.

How Nux thrust his dick inside her.

How absurd his magics are.

And more and more.

She really was very excited to discuss all of this, however, as soon as she entered the room, the excitement on her face faded away.

“Evane, we were waiting for you.”

Seeing her, Nux smiled, then, he patted the spot beside him, signaling her to come and sit there.

Evane complied as she walked forward while observing everyone's expressions.

They were all smiling, however, Evane could still feel that there was a strange tension in the air.

“What happened to you guys?”

In the end, Evane couldn't control herself and questioned.

However, instead of the women, Nux was the one who answered,

“Evane, there are a few things that I believe you should know.”

“Hmm? What are they?”

“Other than the women inside this room, I have 2 more wives.”

Nux revealed.

“ ... ”

Evane frowned.

She couldn't understand.

“Is that it...?”

Why were they all acting like it is a big deal?

Nux having more women around him was very logical.

There is no way someone like him won't attract female attention to himself.

That is just not possible.

Actually, after thinking about this for a while, Evane has finally come to a conclusion.

The number of women Nux had didn't matter. Nux genuinely cares about her, she knows that. Therefore, now, or in the future, Evane was sure that she would never regret her choice of choosing Nux.

All she has to do is trust Nux.

“Look, if you were worried about me acting out after learning that you have more women, you don't have to worry.

Just bribe me and I will forget that you ever hid anything from me.”

Evane winked at Nux.

Seeing her like that, Nux couldn't help but let out a small chuckle.

“I see a Skyla.”

Felberta commented.

“I was about to say that...”

Lane, who usually doesn't speak much, commented as well.

“Indeed.”

Thyra nodded her head.

All the women smiled, the atmosphere inside the room lightened up a little and then, Nux continued,

“Don't worry, I will bribe you plenty later, however, I think you should learn about your two other sisters first.”

“Mhm, I am ready. Tell me about them, also, tell me when I can meet them. I am very excited to meet them.”

“Well, you have probably met them before.”

Nux commented.

“Hmm?”

Evane frowned.

“Who are they?” She questioned.

“Her name is Allura Skyfall.”

Nux revealed.

“!!!”

Evane’s eyes widened in surprise.

“Allura S-Skyfall? As in Consort Allura? T-The Royal Consort? The K-King’s Wife?”

“My wife, not the King’s.”

Nux was quick to correct.

“Y-You had the balls to g-go after the K-King’s wife?”

“As I said, she is MY wife, not the King’s.”

Again, Nux corrected.

“You call her Sister Allura, Allura, or anything, don’t call her Consort Allura.”

Evane could feel that Nux was actually getting a little irritated, therefore, she quickly corrected herself,

“So Sister Allura is... your wife?”

She still didn’t know how to digest this news

“Yes, that is correct.”

Nux nodded with a smile on his face.

“What about the King? What if he finds out?”

Evane questioned.

“Well...”

Nux didn't know how to answer.

Well, he did have an answer, however, he was hesitating to say it out loud, because, in the end, the King was still Evane's father.

He didn't think that he should say what he wants to say right now.

However, Nux knew that one way or another, he had to explain his plan to Evane. He cannot escape.

This was also the reason why Nux called her here.

However, in the end, he decided to take things slowly, at first, he should tell her about Allura and Amaya.

However, Evane treated Nux's silence in a different way.

“Hmmm, I can understand, just like the King, you are a King Stage Cultivator as well, you are as strong as the King, also, soon, you will have 7, no, 9 King Stage Cultivators by your side.

The King won't be able to do anything in front of you.”

“Umm... that is not entirely correct, however, for now, just know that I have a certain plan in my mind.”

Evane nodded,

“Mhm, I understand, what about the other one, who is she?”

“Amaya Skyfall.”

“Conso- Sister Amaya?”

Evane frowned.

“Isn't she curs-”

“Yes, you are correct. That one.

However, my Amaya is not cursed at all. Rather than a curse, that is a blessing for her and me.”

“It is not a curse? But I heard that the King tested it...”

“Yeah, those tests weren’t that great. Those people just didn’t have enough knowledge, so they termed it as a curse.

Welp, it protected my Amaya though, so that’s a good thing.”

Nux smiled.

“Well, so there you have it, Allura and Amaya, they are your sisters as well. You can actually talk to them using the telepathic connection.”

‘Hello, Princess.’

And as if she heard Nux’s words, Allura talked to Evane using the connection.

‘You are Cons- Sister Allura?’

Evane questioned back.

‘I am.’

‘What about Sister Amaya?’

‘Well... she, she won’t talk to you in front of everyone. I believe she would talk to you personally when you are alone.

Right now, she is probably just sneaking around, hearing our conversation.

She is a bit of a weirdo.’

Evane chuckled.

“Wait...”

Suddenly, a question popped up in Evane's mind.

“Why are you telling me about this right now?”

Hearing that question, Nux's face turned a little serious,

“Well you see, Allura is facing a problem inside the castle, so we ar-”

Suddenly, Nux paused in between his words and a frown appeared on his face.

# Chapter 385

“Well you see, Allura is facing a problem inside the castle, so we ar-”

Suddenly, Nux paused in between his words and a frown appeared on his face.

Thyra, who was the most perceptive of the changes in Nux’s expression quickly understood what happened, and to confirm her theory, she activated [Sense].

Felberta and the others followed behind and soon, Ember did the same as well.

Evane, however, was lost.

She didn’t know what happened.

Everything was going fine, Nux was about to reveal his plan to her, however, suddenly, he paused, his expression changed, and a second later, the expressions of everyone present inside that room changed as well.

She felt left out again.

‘Use [Sense]’

However, suddenly, Evane heard Skyla’s voice in her head, she looked in her direction and saw her winking at her with a smile on her face.

A smile appeared on Evane’s face as well.

Then, she used her instincts to activate [Sense] and,

“!!!”

Her eyes widened in surprise.

She could see everything around her!

She could even see what was happening behind her, in front of her, above her, below her, she could see everything. Not only that, but she could even see outside the room even though she was inside the room right now.

‘Focus on Sister Arvina’s office,’

Then, Evane heard Skylar’s voice again.

‘Alright.’

She nodded, then, she focused on Arvina’s office.

She was surprised to see how easily she could peek into her office, however, soon, she stopped thinking about this useless stuff when she noticed the presence of that bald man standing inside Arvina’s office.

‘The Headmaster...’

She now realized why everyone’s expression changed.

This man shouldn’t be here right now.

And as if he had the same thoughts, Nux spoke out loud.

“Everyone, use [Conceal], hide your presence, I would go and see what is happening.”

“Alright.”

His women nodded and used [Conceal] to hide their presence, Evane did the same as well.

Nux smiled and then, he turned around and left the room.

A few seconds later, he was standing outside Arvina’s office.

“What is it?”

Arvina questioned.

“Vice Headmaster Arvina, I believe you should know that guests aren’t allowed here in the Academy.”

The Headmaster started without wasting much time.

“Guest? What are you talking about?”

A frown appeared on Arvina’s face as she questioned.

Seeing her expression, it actually looked like she didn’t know what the Headmaster was talking about.

Her reaction was pretty believable,

However,

“Oh C’mon, Arvina, do you really think that you would allow someone to stay inside your mansion and your servants won’t know about this?”

Arvina’s eyes turned cold when she heard the Headmaster’s words.

“Don’t make that face.

You didn’t really think that the servants working inside the Royal Academy would go against the Headmaster of the Academy and hide things from him, did you?

It is not their fault, their livelihood is at stake here.”

“ ... ”

Arvina turned silent.

“Arvina, you have been here for many years and we have a good relationship with each other, that is the only reason why I am willing to ignore this.

However, keep in mind, that guest of yours, I don't care whoever he or she is, I want him or her to leave, by tomorrow.

If I learn that he or she is still here even after my warning, then I would have to take action personally, are my words clear?"

"..."

Arvina didn't reply.

"Vice Headmaster Arvina, are my words clear?"

"Yes, they are, Headmaster."

Arvina finally replied.

"Good."

The Headmaster smiled and then, he turned around.

Nux, who was hearing everything from outside, clenched his fist and a cold expression appeared on his face.

The doors of the office opened, and the headmaster walked right passed him without being able to see him, Nux completely ignored the man, deactivated his [Conceal], and entered the office.

"What you doing here?"

Arvina, whose eyes fell on Nux questioned with a mildly surprised look on her face. Then, however, she shook her head,

"No, actually, that isn't really important. Since you are here, you must have heard the Headmaster's words, correct?"

"Yes, I have."

Nux nodded.

“Then you know what you have to do.”

“Teacher Arvina, I need your help.”

Nux spoke.

“I can’t really help you, Nux. That Baldy is unusually strict on this matter.”

“I need a Base of Operations.”

“Huh?”

Arvina frowned.

“Base of Operations, why do you need that?”

“The world is going to change soon, Teacher Arvina, and I need a place where I and my loved ones can stay safely, hidden from all the people, and at the same time, also keep an eye on the situation and the changes that are happening around us.”

“The World is changing, what do you mean?”

Arvina frowned.

“I mean exactly what I said, Teacher Arvina. I believe that we will see a big, world-shaking event soon.

And I am not saying that on the basis of stupid productions, I have my reasons to say what I am saying.

I have been to war and I have seen it,

The Emperor Stage Cultivator of the Solid Earth Kingdom is making his move without caring about the Treaty.

The Dynast of the Woods Dynasty is a fool.

According to my sources, the Skadi Kingdom's movements are strange as well.

The only Kingdom that does not seem to be doing anything strange things is ours, the Skyfall Kingdom. Which itself is a little suspicious because, in the end, we are the strongest out of the four nations.

There has to be something that our Kingdom is doing, we just don't know it.

4 Strongest Nations, making strange, unpredictable moves, do you really think nothing is going on?"

Nux questioned and Arvina turned silent.

"..."

Nux's words were logical, just the fact that the Emperor is moving is enough for the people to be on alert. The rest of the things were concerning as well.

"This Base of Operation, do you have any place in your mind?"

Arvina questioned.

"I do have a place in my mind."

# Chapter 386

“I do have a place in my mind.”

Nux nodded.

“Where is it?”

Arvina questioned.

“Right here.”

“Hmm?”

“The Academy.”

“Academy?”

“Yes, this Academy.

This is the perfect spot, it is located inside the capital, therefore, we won't face any troubles in obtaining any information we want. And since this is the Royal Academy, a place that has the support from the Kingdom and has a King Stage Cultivator protecting the place, it is a perfect place to hide as well.

A perfect Base of Operations.

Now all I need to do is take over it.”

Nux answered with a smile on his face.

“Take over the Academy?”

Arvina frowned.

“Nux, just like you said, this Academy has a King Stage Cultivator protecting it, you can’t just take over the Academy like that.”

“Do you really think I can’t?”

Nux questioned with a smile on his face.

“Nux, I know you have the famed General Ember on your side, and I certainly believe that she is much stronger than the Headmaster, however, the fight between King Stage Cultivators is not that simple.

Even if Ember can defeat the Headmaster, all he has to do is run away and report to the King about what is happening here. Once that happens, we would have to face the entire Kingdom, and you already know that we are not ready for it.”

“Teacher Arvina, did you really forget how strong your student actually is?”

Nux chuckled and then, his face turned serious.

“I do not need Ember’s help to deal with that Baldy.”

“You plan to do everything yourself?”

“That is correct.”

“You do not need anyone’s help?”

“To deal with that Baldy? Trust me, me going myself is an overkill already.”

Nux was confident.

“Oh? Then why are you here?”

Arvina questioned.

“Well, I should at least inform my teacher about my next plans, shouldn’t I? You have trained me and taught me so many things. It is the least I can do

to show my respect, right?”

A satisfied smile appeared on Arvina’s face.

“Are you absolutely sure you don’t need any help? How about you take Ember with you, just to be sure that nothing goes wrong? This is a very risky move, you need to think this through and you must have plan B and plan C even.”

She suggested.

Nux looked at Arvina for a while and then, he commented.

“You are underestimating me.”

“No, I am no-”

“No, I understand that. You are right in your own way, one should indeed have backup plans if when he making a risky move.

I agree, I will bring Ember with me as a backup plan, however, along with her, I want to bring you as well.”

“Me?”

“Yes, I want to show you how strong your student actually is.”

Nux smiled.

“Heh, you sound confident.

What if you mess up in front of your teacher? Won’t that be embarrassing?”

Arvina teased.

“I wouldn’t have invited you if I wasn’t confident, teacher.

Trust me, I don’t plan on messing up. I want to impress you and win your heart, after all.”

Nux chuckled.

Arvina chuckled and furrowed her brows at the same time.

‘Win my heart? That sounds so strange.’

She commented inwardly, however, thinking that it was only a joke, Arvina ignored it.

“Alright then, I would love to see how you will take over this academy. When are we leaving? How much time do you need to prepare everything you want?”

“Hmm? What prepared? I was born prepared teacher, we are leaving right now.”

“Huh? Right now?”

“Well, I wanted to wait for a few days, however, with that Baldy barging into your office like that, I decided to do it right now.”

This was actually true.

Nux wanted to wait till all his wives are King Stage Cultivators, including Evane.

Why his wives?

Well, they will all be acting as his backup plans in this operation after all.

Yes, Nux was doing a lot more thinking than before now.

He already had thought of backup plans before Arvina even proposed it, though his grand backup plan only involved his wives standing at the exit and the entry of the Academy, just to make sure the Baldy doesn't run away.

This wasn't really a Master plan, however, it was foolproof.

Since Nux even had a backup backup plan for the case where his women fail to catch the Baldy. Then, the Baldy, who would be near the Royal Palace would meet a certain white-haired woman.

He would then trust that white-haired woman and go with her, only to be betrayed later of course.

Yes, he was cautious.

Too cautious even.

One could say that he was, 'ready perfectly'.

“Aren't you being too spontaneous...?”

Arvina questioned.

“Trust me, teacher, I am not.”

Nux assured.

Arvina decided to place her trust in her student and nodded.

“Alright, I trust you, let's call Ember now.”

“I have already called her, she will be coming here in a minute.”

Nux smiled.

“Huh? When did you call her? You were right in front of me all this while.”

“Teacher, we two are lovers, we don't need to talk to each other to say what we want.

Our hearts are connected, with this, we can talk with each other no matter how far we are.”

Nux answered and Arvina stepped back a little.

There was a strange expression on her face.

It was clear that she didn't believe Nux at all.

Actually, Arvina was having a hard time digesting such a corny line, especially since it was coming from her student.

“It looks like you don't believe me, teacher.”

Nux commented.

“What's there to believe? That's an obvious lie.

Heart connection my fo-”

“Hmph, admit it, you are just jealous.”

Arvina's sentence was interrupted by Ember, who was standing behind her.

“Huh? When did you come here?”

“Just now. My husband called me so of course, I will be here. We are going to that Baldy, right?”

Nux told me that the Baldy barged into your house and ordered you to kick all of us out by tomorrow.”

“!!!”

Arvina's eyes widened in surprise.

# Chapter 387

“H-How did you know!?”

Arvina questioned with a shocked, almost horrified look on her face.

“Hmm? I told you right, Nux told me.”

Ember shrugged, not caring about Arvina’s shocked look one bit.

“How? He was right in front of me!”

Arvina wasn’t having it.

“I told you before, didn’t I, Teacher? Lovers have a Heart connection with each other, they can communicate with one another no matter the distance.”

“Don’t fool me! I have never heard of something like that!”

“Well, you have never met real lovers, have you?”

Ember chuckled.

“I mean, most of the couples you met were either forced by their families, wanted the status, or were trying to kill each other.

Your own relationship isn’t any different either now, is it?”

“ ... ”

Arvina turned silent.

She only looked at Nux and Ember smiling at each other and narrowed her eyes.

“Shall we leave now?”

Ember questioned as she glanced at Arvina.

“Alright...”

Arvina nodded.

Nux smiled as well.

‘Are you guys ready?’

‘We are already in our position, captain!’

Skyla saluted.

‘Yes, we are ready, don’t worry, I will protect Evane, she is right here with me.’

Thyra spoke as well.

‘I-I’ll be careful as well... You do the same, okay?’

Evane spoke.

‘I’ll be careful.’

Nux nodded.

‘Good luck.’

Felberta smiled.

‘Meh, it’s not like he needs it, it’s only the Baldy.’

Edda shrugged.

Nux chuckled and then, his face turned serious.

Arvina, Ember, and Nux then walked out of Arvina’s mansion and sneaked inside the Badly’s Mansion.

The plan was to knock out any servant they meet while moving toward Baldy's room, however, Nux moved around so greatly that it felt like he had the map of the entire place in his mind.

“ ... ”

Arvina was speechless, she has been inside the Headmaster's Mansion a few times, however, even she has not seen some paths Nux was taking.

5 minutes later, Nux, Arvina, and Ember were right in front of Headmaster Eliyard's room.

“What are we going to do? Barge right in? Or do we lure him out?”

Arvina whispered.

“That sounds so discourteous, Teacher. How could you even suggest something like that?”

Nux couldn't believe how rude his teacher sounded.

“Teacher Arvina, one should always be courteous while doing something like this,”

Nux explained and then,

\*Bam\*

He kicked the door open.

“Courteous...”

Arvina commented.

Ember chuckled.

“Who are you?”

Headmaster Eliyard questioned with a frown on his face.

“We meet again, Headmaster.”

Nux smiled.

Eliyard narrowed his eyes,

“Nux...?”

He recognized this student.

“That is correct.”

Nux smiled.

“What are you doing here?”

Eliyard questioned with a strict look on his face.

“Well, you did barge into my Teacher’s Office at an untimely hour, consider it as payback.”

Eliyard’s expression turned cold, his eyes then fell on Arvina who was following behind Nux, and spoke coldly.

“Arvina, if you don’t give me a good explanation, don’t think you would be able to save him, or yourself. Also, don’t rely on the fact that you are the Royal Consort becau-Ugghhh!”

\*Bam\*

Eliyard’s body was sent flying and collided with the wall.

Nux stepped forward.

“I have to say, you are quite brave to talk to my teacher like that right in front of me.”

“K-King S-Stage... You are a King Stage Cultivator!!”

Eliyard received the biggest shock of the century.

“Did you really not check that when I entered your room, you dumbass?”

“H-How is this possible!?”

Eliyard couldn't care less about Nux's insults. He was just too shocked to say or do anything.

However,

Nux just appeared right in front of him and kicked his face again.

\*Bam\*

\*Clank\*

This time, Eliyard's body clashed with the table, breaking the table and the vase that was on the top of the table in the process.

Blood trailed down from Eliyard's forehead.

Eliyard touched his forehead, seeing the blood on his fingers, his eyes widened in surprise, and then,

His face distorted in anger.

“You bastard!”

The Baldy then dashed towards Nux and a sword appeared in his hand.

He didn't care if this boy was a student of this academy.

This boy was a King Stage Cultivator of unknown background who barged into his room and attacked him. This was enough reason for him to deal with this situation as he sees fit.

Yes, he was planning to kill Nux.

\*Bam\*

\*Clank\*

Or that's what he wanted to do at least.

However, Eliyard was completely oppressed.

With just one slap, Nux had sent him flying away. This time, his body clashed with the wall, and the painting that was placed on the wall fell down and broke down.

Nux then walked towards Eliyard and stepped on his sword.

Eliyard looked at Nux's face and any change in his expression,

Nux attacked his head with his knees. Eliyard's head was sandwiched between the wall and Nux's knee and his nose broke.

Nux, however, wasn't done.

He continued to crush Eliyard's face with his knee again, and again, then again.

“AAgg- Bgghh!!”

Eliyard couldn't even scream properly. His vocal chord was being clogged with blood.

With each attack, his face was disfigured to another degree, while more and more blood dropped on the ground.

After Nux was finally satisfied, he grabbed Eliyard's neck and lifted him in the air.

“This... is this really a fight between two King Stage Cultivators...?”

Arvina, who was looking at everything questioned with a dumbstruck look on his face.

“Trust me when I say it... but your student is holding back...”

Ember replied. Her words sounded confident, however, deep inside, even she was a little shocked.

This one-sided beat-up was a fight between King Stage Cultivators... it was hard to believe...

“He is much stronger than I thought...”

Arvina finally realized.

“He is.”

Ember nodded.

“No wonder you lost when you fought him.”

If Arvina had said those words before, Ember would have retorted angrily, however this time,

“I had no chance from the start.”

She admitted.

“Though I will say, I wasn’t beaten up that brutally.”

She pointed at Eliyard.

“I kind of feel bad for him...”

Arvina commented and Ember agreed.

# Chapter 388

Nux looked into Eliyard's eyes with a cold expression on his face.

Eliyard glared back.

The anger, rage, and defiance were clear in his eyes.

“Heh, and I here I thought you were just a coward.”

Nux chuckled.

“W-Who are you?”

Eliyard questioned in a hoarse voice.

“Did you forget about the student of your own Academy, Headmaster?”

Nux questioned with a playful smile on his face.

“You are not a student of my Academy. You are a Spy. A Spy sent by an enemy Kingdom!

Tell me, which Kingdom sent you here? Is it the Skadi?”

Eliyard's face was completely red right now and he was desperately gasping for air, however, even after that, he didn't show a single sign of weakness and questioned with his eyes full of anger.

Nux commended that unyielding attitude of his.

However, right now, that wasn't something he wanted to see.

He wanted a weak Eliyard right now and he didn't mind making things a little more painful to get what he wanted.

“Nothing personnel, Headmaster.”

Saying that, he threw Eliyard's body away as if it was a bag of trash.

“Aggh!! Ugghhh!!”

Eliyard groaned in pain.

Nux walked towards him leisurely and,

He kicked on his stomach, sending him flying again.

“Ugggkghkkhh!!”

Nux then observed Eliyard and noticed that he was still looking at him with the same defiance on his face.

He sighed.

“Do you want my help? I am an expert when it comes to dealing with these types of people.”

Ember raised her hand and spoke with a fresh smile on his face.

“Oh really?”

Nux questioned.

“Who do you think I am?”

Evane smiled even more.

A smile appeared on Nux's face as well.

“Alright then, how about you give me a few tips?”

Nux turned towards Ember and questioned with a smile on his face.

“Hmmm, so for the starters...

How about keeping an eye on your enemy?”

Ember smiled.

Nux frowned, he then turned around and noticed that Eliyard was already near the back door.

He was running away!

“Haahh... I guess I was right before, he is a coward.”

Nux sighed. He actually looked a little disappointed.

“You got overconfident.”

Ember commented.

“You are right. I will be careful in the future.”

Nux nodded.

“Mhm, you should. When the stakes are high, these small mistakes can be heavier.”

Ember nodded back.

“Hey! Can't you see!? That man is running away!! Why are you two so calm!?”

Arvina shouted in panic.

Just what were these two thinking!? Cant, they discuss the mistakes or whatever after capturing Eliyard!? What if he runs away and reports everything to the Kingdom?

No matter how strong Nux and Ember were, acting so carelessly was not acceptable!

“You worry too much, teacher.”

Nux smiled.

“What are you talking about!?”

Arvina couldn't believe it.

“Ember! You know how dire the consequences will be if he reports it to the King, right!? Why aren't you doing anything!?”

“Well, I know about the consequences, however, I, think trying to do everything by myself is too... lonely.

I should try and place my trust on my sisters...”

Ember replied.

Her expression looked a little lost right now, it was as if she was thinking about something important and her mind wasn't here.

“Sisters?”

Arvina frowned and suddenly,

“Agggghh!! Leave me you bitches! Help! Somebody help me!!”

She heard a voice.

Arvina glanced at the door and soon, Thyra walked in while dragging the injured Eliyard with his leg.

Behind her, Felberta, Skyla, Lane, Edda, and Evane walked in as well.

‘What is she doing here?’

A question popped inside Arvina's mind, however, she had more important things to talk about right now.

“We captured him.”

Thyra spoke with a smile.

A big smile appeared on Nux's face.

He then turned towards Ember and spoke,

“See? You can trust your back on your sisters, they are all very awesome.”

Ember smiled back and nodded.

“They are better than I expected at least.”

“Hmph, don't get carried away. I will surpass you soon enough, bitch.”

Thyra snorted.

“We will see about that.” Ember chuckled.

“Wait Wait Wait, I think you guys are missing something here.”

Suddenly, Arvina spoke up.

“Hmm? What's the matter, Teacher Arvina?”

Nux questioned with a confused look on his face.

“He is a King Stage Cultivator, just how did they capture him!? How can a few Expert Stage Cultivators stop a King Stage CULTvator from running away!? This is unheard of!”

Arvina questioned.

“It's not that hard if you stab the calf muscle~”

Skyla smiled cutely as she pointed at Eliyard's body.

“...”

Arvina's eyes finally fell on Eliyard's body.

She noticed that both his calves muscles were stabbed by two knives.

However, that wasn't it.

There was one knife on his right thigh, one on his left foot, one was pierced inside the right shoulder and his entire face was swollen up, but that was probably Nux's doing.

Arvina could now imagine what happened and how it happened.

“Hmm hmm, if we use assassination techniques more creatively, you can capture someone alive. You just have to stab nonlethal points rather than the critical ones.”

Thyra spoke with a fresh smile on her face.

“Though I will admit, I almost pierced his heart out of instinct.”

“Now now, we have to treat him properly, okay? He is the key to our base after all.”

Edda chuckled.

“...”

Although there were a lot of things in her mind, Arvina decided to stay silent.

“Which kingdom sent you bastards?”

Eliyard questioned with eyes full of rage.

“Alright, you can drop this act now.

You are not fooling anyone.”

Ember spoke while she glanced at Eliyard.

“Act?”

Nux tilted his face in confusion.

“Yeah, him acting all brave like this, it is all an act.

Although rare, I have seen a few people act like that.

They are the type who fear ‘pain’ more than death.

They would try to make you feel that they are not afraid of death, just so they could fool you into thinking that they are not the ones you can break with torture and you would kill them right away.”

Ember then walked towards Eliyard and soon, the smile on her face turned demonic,

“In other words, they act brave, however, in reality,

They are the biggest cowards you would ever meet in your entire life.”

# Chapter 389

“In other words, they act brave, however,

They are the biggest cowards you would ever meet in your entire life.”

Ember spoke as she looked at Eliyard with a demonic smile on her face.

“Aren’t I right, Eliyard Kingson?”

“W-Who are you?”

Eliyard questioned as his body trembled a little.

Ember crouched and with her face close to Eliyard, she whispered,

“You are not the one asking questions here, Eliyard.”

“E-E-Ember... You are E-Ember W-Windstar...”

Eliyard finally recalled.

He always thought that Ember was a little familiar, however, he didn’t care much about it because he was dealing with other, far more important matters, however, now that Ember’s face was so close to his, he finally recalled who she was.

“Oh ho? I didn’t know you were so popular, Ember.”

Nux chuckled.

“What can I say? You can’t contain my awesomeness no matter what happens.”

“Indeed, Indeed. I agree with that.”

Nux nodded repeatedly and then, he questioned,

“So? What about him? What you said about him, is it really true?”

“Don’t we have a better way to find out?”

Suddenly, Thyra walked forward.

“Hmm? What are they, Thyra?” Nux questioned with a smile on his face.

Thyra smiled back, then she walked towards Eliyard and crouched.

“We can always test it out, can’t we?”

Saying that, Thyra stabbed a knife into his left thigh.

“AAaaGGGhHHhh!!”

Eliyard screamed in pain.

“HMMMMMMMMM.”

Thyra nodded to herself.

“What did you find out, Detective Thyra?”

Nux questioned with a playful smile on his face.

Evane noticed that he was awfully unbothered about the man screaming in front of it and narrowed her eyes. Different thoughts about this situation filled her mind after that.

Of course, everyone else was oblivious to these thoughts.

“Hmmm, I was wondering this when I stabbed him before, but now I am sure. His screams are louder than the screams I usually hear when I stab other people.

This is very strange. It is almost as if he feels more pain than the others.”

“Hmmm, that is an interesting theory.”

Nux smiled.

“But how does that prove my point?”

Ember questioned curiously.

“Well, it does not, for now.”

“For now?” Felberta frowned.

“We can always run more experiments, can we not?”

There are many non-life-threatening places on his body, we have a lot of healing potions in our stock, so why don't we find more about this?”

Thyra proposed.

“That seems like an interesting idea.”

Nux and his other women nodded, however,

“NO! NO! You can't hurt me anymore! You don't need to prove it. She's is right! I am afraid of pain, so don't hurt me! Please! I will do anything you want, just don't hurt me.”

Before the experiment could continue, Eliyard spoke up.

He had finally realized.

He was cornered by a group of crazy people.

Absolute maniacs!

Just how could one not care about someone who is screaming in agony and just talking about things like it is a normal Sunday?

How ridiculous is that!?

Eliyard didn't have any intentions to against these crazy people.

He was cornered here, he needed an opportunity to get out of this place. However, he will do all of that later, for now, ensuring that he won't get stabbed anymore had a higher priority.

“Oh? Well, this proves your theory, doesn't it, Ember?”

He is a coward.”

“I never doubted myself for even a second.”

“I certainly believe that.”

“Well then, I believe it is my turn now, correct?”

Nux smiled as he stepped towards Eliyard and then, he questioned.

“Eliyard Kingson, are you willing to be my Slave?”

“Yes, I am. I definitely am. I would do anything you say, no matter what it is.”

Eliyard answered without a second of hesitation.

Even Nux was a little taken aback.

“A simple yes would have sufficed.”

“W-What have you done to me?”

Suddenly, Eliyard questioned in panic.

Right after he said those words, a strange energy entered his body, and for some reason, he got a bad feeling about this energy.

For some reason, he knew that whatever it was, it wasn't a good thing.

And of course, he was 100% right.

“Nothing much, really. Just a little magic of mine that would ensure that you remain loyal to me from now on.”

“Huh?”

Eliyard frowned.

However, before he could even ask anything, Thyra removed all the knives that were stabbed into his body.

“AAaagghhH- Ummghgfgffff!”

He opened his mouth to scream, however, Thyra forced a healing potion into his mouth.

The man wasn't even allowed to scream.

The wounds started healing up, and although the healing wasn't very fast, Eliyard's condition was certainly better compared to before.

Thyra, Ember, and Nux moved away from him, leaving him alone.

Seeing this, Arvina frowned.

“What are you guys doing? What if he runs away?”

“Hmm? Didn't he admit to being my Slave? Everything will be fine from now on, don't worry.”

Nux smiled,

“Isn't that right, Eliyard?”

“Y-Yes, of course, yes. I would never run away, how could I possibly do that when I gave you my word? Don't worry, I am a man of my word.”

Eliyard answered with a smile on his face, at the same time, he continued to tie up the wounds on his legs with bandages.

As someone who fear pain more than anything, he had a decent knowledge of first aid.

Soon, the ring on his finger shined, another Healing Potion appeared in his hand and he gulped it down as well.

Nux and his women did nothing but watch him do whatever he wanted with a smile on their faces.

It was as if they were waiting for something.

This confused Evane and Arvina a lot.

“So? Shall we discuss how things are going to change after today?”

When Eliyard was finally done with everything and was now standing on his two legs, Nux questioned.

Eliyard smiled.

“Ah, sure. Of course, I am your slave now, you could tell me whatever you want. I will make sure...”

Eliyard started walking towards the doors while talking, making it look as natural as possible.

Arvina panicked when he was near the doors, however, suddenly,

“...all you have to do is give the ord- AAAGGGGHHHHHH!!!!!!”

Eliyard shrieked in agony.

“You thought of running away, didn’t you?”

Nux chuckled.

# Chapter 390

“Alright, fire all the servants who work here, I will bring my own people here,”

Nux ordered while he and his wives walked around Eliya- Nux’s new mansion.

“As you command, Master.”

Behind them, Nux’s most loyal slave walked with his head bowed.

“Hmm, finally those people would have a place to live, they aren’t doing any good while staying with Bannermane and Hardwick.”

Thyra smiled.

“Indeed. Those assassins would be moving a lot now, tell them to be prepared.”

“Don’t worry, I will make sure they don’t slack off.”

Thyra nodded.

“Also, which is the most lavish room in this Mansion?”

Nux questioned.

“That would be mine, Master.”

“Yeah, that would be mine now.”

“Yes, Master.

I would make sure to change the curtains, bedsheets, no, I would just change the whole bed and would... umm...”

Eliyard then looked around and muttered,

“I would make sure to place the largest bed possible inside that room.”

“...”

The whole area turned silent.

“Mhm, Nux, I like this new Slave of yours, you Pass.”

Edda gave a thumbs up.

“I thank you for your praise, Lady umm...”

“Edda.”

“Yes, Lady Edda.”

Eliyard bowed respectfully.

“See that? Cowards really are the best, aren't they?”

Ember whispered into Nux's ears.

“Indeed.”

Nux nodded with a satisfied look on his face.

This all started after Eliyard experienced that hellish pain after he tried to run away.

Mind you, the pain that the Slave Seal inflicts was so strong that even someone like Thyra had no choice but to give up, a coward like Eliyard didn't even stand a chance of resisting it.

And as someone who fears pain more than his life, Eliyard made a point to not betray his Master for the rest of his life.

And that, was how the most Loyal Slave to ever exist in this world was born.

“Huh? Teacher?”

While Nux and the others were exploring their new mansion, a familiar person appeared in front of them.

“What are you doing here?”

Candice narrowed her eyes when she saw Nux.

Nux, however, completely ignored her words and turned towards Eliyard.

“What is she doing here?”

“S-She is my student, so she has the right to live in my mansion.”

“Well, not anymore, kick her out.”

Nux ordered.

Eliyard nodded and then walked towards Candice.

“Candice, you should leave. You are not allowed to live here any longer.”

“Huh? Why?”

Candice frowned.

“Because I said so. Now leave.”

“But according to the rule-”

“Yes, I, as the Headmaster of the Academy have made a new rule, that you, aren’t allowed to stay here.

Now leave.”

Eliyard ordered.

There were no signs of his previous tamed behavior, now he looked like the old headmaster again.

“That is quite a transformation.”

Felberta commented.

“Indeed.”

Nux nodded with a smile on his face.

Enjoying the show that was happening in front of him.

“My father will know about this.”

Candice threatened in a solemn tone.

“A father who is merely a Marquee? You think I care about him? Trust me, child, if even 10 of your fathers were to come at me, nothing would be changed.

Now leave.

Also, keep in mind, do not call yourself my student anymore.”

“...”

Candice didn't say anything, however, with how moist her eyes were, it was clear that she was affected by her tea- past teacher's words. Momentarily, her eyes fell on Nux, who ignored her this time as well, she clenched her fists and turn around.

“Tell someone to keep an eye on her, the moment she leaves the Academy, inform me.”

Nux spoke as he glanced at Candice who was walking away.

“I will do that, Master.”

Eliyard nodded.

The exploring continued for a while longer, Nux changed everything that he didn't like, of course, his wives ordered the changes they wanted in their new rooms.

An hour later, the exploring finally ended and Eliyard bowed.

“Master, I have noted all the things you have asked for and will make sure everything is ready by tomorrow morning.”

Nux nodded.

“I will be taking my leave now, Master.”

Nux nodded again and Eliyard turned away.

“I... I can't believe you subdued Eliyard so... easily...”

Arvina commented.

“I told you, didn't I? I am a lot stronger than you think, Teacher.”

Nux smiled.

“Can... I ask you something?”

After a moment of silence, Arvina spoke.

“You can ask me anything you want, Teacher.”

“Why... why did the Headmaster start screaming at that time...?”

“Y-Yes, I would like to know that as well...”

Evane stepped forward as well.

“Well, it is one of my magics that ensures someone’s loyalty to me. At that time, he was thinking about running away from me, which was interpreted as him betraying me, thus, the pain.”

Nux didn’t hide anything.

Evane understood what he was talking about.

‘I will tell you more about it later, love.’

Evane then heard Nux’s voice in her head and she nodded with a smile.

“Huh? Magic? What Magic? Is it some sort of Skill Book?”

Arvina on the other hand, frowned.

“Heh. Your student has many secrets, Teacher.”

Nux chuckled.

“...”

Arvina didn’t know what to say.

Whatever technique Nux used... it was...

Brutal...

Of course, she wasn’t planning to call him out on that.

In this world, how you achieve something doesn’t matter, the only thing that matters is that have you got what you want or not.

Therefore, Arvina didn’t talk much about this ‘magic’.

“Also, why did you fire all the servants working here?”

She questioned.

“Teacher, your servants leaked the news about Ember living with you, what guarantees that these servants won’t leak the news about us living here?”

“Then who were the new servants you were talking about?”

“They are my people.”

Thyra answered.

“Your people?”

“Yes, I have trained them and now, they will be working for him.”

Thyra answered.

“Have you contacted them?”

Nux questioned while they were on this topic.

“Yes I have, they will be coming here soon. Just tell Eliyard to deal with the guards.”

“Don’t worry about that.”

Nux replied and Thyra nodded back.

“Heh, now, all we have to do is wait.”

Felberta chuckled.

“Indeed.”

“I am excited to meet Sister Allura.”

Skyla spoke with an excited look on her face.

“Hmm? Allura?”

Arvina frowned.

“She is my wife, Teacher.”

“Oh... it’s just that I know a person who has the same name.”

Arvina replied.

“Ahh,”

Nux nodded back.

Felberta and the others smiled.

# Chapter 391

“Your Majesty.”

A servant bowed with a respectful expression on his face.

A black-haired handsome man looked at the servant and questioned with a lazy look on his face.

“Why are you here?”

“Lady Allura wants to go out on her tour again.”

The Servant informed.

A small frown appeared on Ricardus’s face.

“Didn’t she go on her little tour 2 weeks ago?”

“That is correct, Your Majesty, but now the Royal Consort wishes to go out again.”

“...”

Ricardus started thinking.

The servant who was looking at the King of the Kingdom couldn’t help but shake his head.

‘Everyone in the Royal Palace knows that Consort Allura likes to go out every week, however, here he is, getting surprised that she wants to go out after 2 weeks. Shouldn’t he be more worried instead? Does he not know anything about his wife at all?’

Ricardus, of course, was oblivious to the servant’s thoughts.

“Alright, let her go wherever she wants, however, tell her to return within 2 hours.”

“2 Hours?”

The Servant frowned.

Isn't that too less? You could barely even look around if you just have 2 hours. Normally, Consort Allura only returns after 6-7 hours, how is she going to return in just 2 hours?

“What? Did you not hear what I said?”

Ricardus narrowed his eyes.

“Nothing at all, Your Majesty. I will inform Consort Allura right now.”

In the end, this wasn't a matter where the servant should butt in, therefore, he just bowed and left the room.

After the servant left, Ricardus's face turned serious.

“Keeve,”

He called out.

A man wearing black colored clothes appeared in front of him and kneeled.

“Your Majesty.”

“Have they reported anything?”

Ricardus questioned.

Keeve, however, shook his head,

“They have not. Let alone using a different way to cultivate, Consort Allura doesn't cultivate at all.

All she does is idle around, read books, eat food, chat with servants and just stare at the building with a silly smile on her face.

We have searched her room quite a few times, we have even interrogated the servants she talks to, however, we are unable to find anything.

There is no major change in Consort Allura other than her Cultivation.”

“ ... ”

Ricardus thought about everything for a while and then, he nodded his head.

“I am sure that she is hiding something from us, just keep an eye on her, I am sure she would let her guard down soon enough.”

“As you command, Your Majesty.”

“Also, as you have heard, she is going out again, order your men to follow her, I don’t trust her bodyguards now.”

“Yes, Your Majesty.”

Keeve nodded and then, he turned around.

After Keeve left his room, a sigh escaped Ricardus’s mouth and he smiled,

“Allura, oh my dear Allura, just what is it that you are hiding from me? Is it a secret cultivation technique?”

Then, his purple eyes shined in greed.

“Is it something that would make me an Emperor?”

I will know about it soon enough.”

...

‘I am inside the Carriage now.’

30 minutes later, Allura finally walked into her carriage and informed her real husband with an excited look on her face.

‘Kekeke~ I can’t wait to see you, Allura.’

Allura heard a reply and a beautiful smile appeared on her face.

‘I can’t wait to see you either.’

She replied.

‘Alright, you two know about the plan, correct?’

Amaya, couldn’t hear them talking to each other with so much love interrupted.

‘Yes, we know. Don’t worry.’

Nux and Allura nodded.

‘Do you want me to go over it again?’

Amaya questioned.

‘No, we are fine.’

Allura smiled.

A small pout appeared on Amaya’s face.

‘Whatever.’

She snorted.

“Lady Allura, we are ready, shall we leave now?”

“Yes,”

Allura nodded with a graceful smile on her face.

Her carriage then left the Palace, this time however, along with her 2 Grand Master Stage Bodyguards, there were,

‘3 Expert Stage Cultivators are following me.’

‘Heh, the King really values you, doesn’t he? You might have the chance to become King’s favorite consort, Allura.’

Amaya chuckled.

‘You can take this chance from me, I don’t care.’

Allura snorted.

‘I would rather stay as Nux’s favorite wife.’

Amaya commented.

‘Huh? Since when did you become Nux’s favorite wife?’

‘From the start, of course.’

Amaya answered confidently.

‘Heh, keep dreaming.’

Allura snorted.

‘Girls, let’s focus on the mission, shall we?’

Nux’s danger senses started tingling when he heard what they were talking about, he could easily predict what situation he would be placed in if he let them continue this conversation, however, he, who has been dealing with these girls for months now, was experienced.

Therefore, without even wasting a second, he changed the topic.

‘There are three Expert Stage CULTvators following you, correct, Allura?’

Tell me, how strong are they?’

Nux questioned.

‘Huh? Well, not very strong, the strongest one is only at the middle of the Expert Stage, while the rest seems to have just broken through Grand Master Stage.’

Allura answered.

‘Hm hm, I understand. They won’t pose much difficulty then.’

Nux nodded.

‘Heh, you talk as if they would pose trouble if they were at Peak of Expert Stage.’

Amaya chuckled.

‘Well, if they were all Emperor Stage Cultivators, it would have been problematic.’

Nux replied.

‘Sure sure.’

Amaya just shook her head.

‘Hmm, I have arrived at the spot.’

A few minutes later, Allura spoke.

Hearing those words, Nux sighed in relief.

He managed to avoid the arrow by avoiding that topic.

After a light chuckle, Nux’s face turned serious.

‘Alright, I can see your carriage now.’

‘Start the plan.’

Amaya spoke in a solemn tone as well.

Allura nodded and then, she ordered.

“Stop the Carriage.”

“Hmm? Here?”

The driver frowned.

“I said stop the carriage!”

Allura repeated.

This time, her voice was filled with panic!

“Stop the Carriage you bastard!”

She shouted in fear.

The driver frowned, however, before he could reply, he heard another shout.

“Who are you!? How did you get inside!?”

No! Don’t!!!

Someone! Save me!!

HELP!!

HEL- AAagghhhhHhhhH!!!”

# Chapter 392

‘Ugghhh... Why do I have to follow her like this...’

A man groaned inwardly.

He was Trent, one of the men working under King’s Personnel Unit known as the Shadow Guards.

Though not many people knew about this Unit, however, if Ricardus were given a choice to choose between the Skyfall Army or the Shadow Unit, then without a doubt, he would choose the Shadow Unit.

That was how strong this Unit was.

Not only that but they were all extremely loyal to the King as well.

Capture them and they would kill themselves the second they get the chance to.

The Shadow Unit was the King’s most trusted Unit and knew almost all of the King’s Dark secrets that others didn’t know about.

The assassination of the troublesome nobles, stealing from rich nobles, finding out about a piece of certain information, burying down a piece of certain news, spreading rumors, there was nothing that the Shadow Unit didn’t do.

And being part of this Unit, Trent was dissatisfied with the fact that rather than risking his life for the King, he was assigned to this pathetic job of spying on his wife.

‘Ugghhh... how boring can one person be...?’

Trent groaned inwardly.

‘She is just going to eat, roam around like an idiot, then return... why are they sending me after her...? Don’t they have anything better? How about I kill some nobles? Now that would be interesting...’

Trent was full of complaints.

He wanted to live a thrilling life, after all.

And unfortunately,

His wish came true.

Suddenly, Allura’s carriage stopped.

Trent frowned.

‘Why has the carriage stopped in the middle of a busy street? Wasn’t she planning to go inside the restaurant?’

He wondered inwardly.

Then, his eyes fell on the driver, who stood up from his seat and rushed towards the carriage with a panicked look on his face.

Without any manners or constraints, the driver opened the carriage doors and his eyes widened in horror.

“Lady Allura! Lady Allura!!!”

He screamed at the top of his lungs.

“Lady Allura is not here!”

‘Huh?’

Trent frowned.

She’s not here? Where else could she be?

He was sure that he has seen her entering the carriage with his own two eyes. He couldn't possibly be mistaken.

Trent wanted to go out and see what is happening, however, he knew it wasn't the time yet.

Lady Allura had her 'official' protectors, after all.

As if on cue, the two protectors quickly rushed towards the driver.

“What happened? Where is Lady Allura?”

One of the protectors questioned.

“I-I don't know!”

The driver answered in a panic.

The protector frowned.

Then, he pushed the driver away and peeked into the carriage.

“Blood...”

A solemn look appeared on the Protector's face.

There were some signs of a struggle inside the carriage.

“AAGGGHHHHHHH!!!!”

Before the two protectors could talk more about it, one of the commoners, who had circled around the carriage to see what was going on screamed in horror.

The others looked in the direction he was pointing at and,

“AAGGGHHHHHHH!!”

“It's a Head!”

“Murder!!”

“He was beheaded!!”

Chaos ensued.

There was a bodyless head that was rolling on the ground with endless blood coming out of the neck...

Trent’s eyes widened in surprise when he saw that face...

‘That’s Stark!’

He recognized that face.

It was a man from the Shadow Unit.

Not only that, but he was also one of the 3 members who were following behind Allura, just like him.

What’s even worse?

He was the strongest out of all of them!

‘How did he die? Why didn’t we see or notice anything? When did all this happen?’

Many questions popped inside his mind, however, now wasn’t the time to think about these things.

Right now, he had to act.

The enemy was in the shadows and was trying to hunt them, they don’t know anything about the enemy, however, with how effortlessly he killed Stark, Trent assumed that he was a King Stage Cultivator.

The best move in this situation would obviously be to run away, however, King’s wife went missing, and the only proof they have is the carriage.

They couldn't leave it here, not in the hands of those useless protectors.

Therefore, the best solution would be,

Trent dashed towards the Carriage. There, his eyes fell on another man who was running towards the carriage as well. He knew that man.

He was the other member who was assigned to this mission.

It seemed that he had the same thought process as Trent.

The two of them nodded at each other and stood in front of the carriage with their backs touching each other.

“W-Who are you!?”

One of the protectors questioned in panic.

“Shut it, we will be taking over this case now.”

Trent declared, and at the same time, a badge appeared in his hands.

Seeing that badge, the two protectors' eyes widened in surprise.

“K-King's Badge!!”

\*Whoosh\*

\*Crackle\* \*Crackle\*

While Trent was dealing with the protectors, his partner quickly fired a firecracker in the sky.

Within a few seconds, the blue Sky was shining with red, and yellow colors, however, no one had the time to admire that beautiful sight.

The crowd continued to run away hysterically, the protectors just bowed their heads, and Trent and his partners just stood there, with their backs touching each other.

“The guards should be here soon.”

Trent’s partner, Tim, spoke.

“Yes, don’t let your guard down. The attacker can attack any time.”

Trent replied.

“Don’t worry, I am prepared.”

Trent and Tim stood there on full alert.

Seeing that sight, Nux, who was looking at everything from afar smiled,

“So they are the Shadow Unit? Doesn’t look very strong to me.”

He chuckled.

“Don’t joke around.”

Allura, who was on Nux’s back spoke in a solemn tone.

“Well, I will admit, their reaction was faster than I thought. I wanted to kill 2 of them, but they grouped up too quickly.”

“You should have asked for help.”

“Indeed.”

Nux nodded.

Realizing his mistake.

“Not that it would matter anyway. In the end, what we wanted to achieve has been achieved.”

Allura chuckled.

“Then let’s watch the show, shall we?”

Nux pointed at the unit of soldiers that were rushing towards the area.

# Chapter 393

“Everybody, calm down, no one will move, listen to what I say, otherwise, don’t blame us for being cruel.”

The Man who was leading the Unit of Soldiers ordered.

“Lord, they are not listening to us at all!”

“Hmph! Why are they panicking about a little head? If they are that scared, I need to use this fear to my advantage.

Guards, behead whoever dares to disobey you. You have my permission.”

As soon as this order was released, 3 more heads fell on the ground.

“...”

This time, no one shouted.

The entire area turned silent.

“I will repeat.

Nobody moves. If anyone dares to disobey my words, you would meet a similar fate.”

“...”

Everybody turned silent.

With a satisfied look on his face, the Head of the Guards continued,

“Royal Consort Allura has been Kidnapped by some filthy rats, not only that, but those bastards dared to kill one of our people, if anyone of you has any idea about what has happened, come forward.

If the information you provide turns out to be helpful, you would be heavily rewarded.”

Everyone looked at each other, clearly interested in the ‘heavy rewards’ the Head Guard was talking about, however, nobody stepped forward.

No one knew what happened, not even the people who gathered here first.

Seeing this, the Head Guard just sighed.

Then, he turned towards Trent and Tim and bowed,

“Sir, we have surrounded the Area.”

Trent and Tim nodded.

“Alright, I think we should begin the investigation.”

“Lord...”

Suddenly, one of the protectors called out.

“What?”

Trent questioned.

“You should look inside the Carriage.”

“...”

Trent looked at the protector and then nodded.

With a serious look on his face, he peeked into the Carriage and narrowed his eyes.

“Blood...”

“Blood?”

Tim frowned.

Trent nodded, Tim then peaked into the carriage as well and his face turned serious.

“You.”

Trent pointed at the Head Guard.

“Call the Driver.”

Trent ordered.

A few seconds later, the Driver appeared.

“What happened here?”

“I d-do not know anything, Lord.”

The Driver stuttered.

His face had lost all its color and his body was trembling.

It was clear that he was scared of something.

“Why did you stop the carriage so suddenly?”

Trent questioned.

“Lady Allura ordered me to.”

“Huh?”

Trent, Tim, and the Head Guard frowned.

“Lady Allura ordered you to?”

“Y-Yes Lord.”

“Why would she do that?”

Tim couldn't understand.

“I-I do not know, however, I could feel that her voice sounded a little shaky...”

The Driver then told everything that happened and the more they heard it, the more they couldn't understand what had happened.

“You... are you trying to fool us...?”

Suddenly, the Head Guard looked at the Driver and narrowed his eyes.

“NO! Lord! Believe me, I am not lying!

That is exactly what happened!

Please, believe me!”

The Driver practically begged.

“Actually... what he says makes sense... Even the people who were passing by attested that they heard those words.”

Suddenly, Trent spoke up.

“What if they are in this plan as well?”

The Head Guard questioned.

Trent, however, shook his head.

“That's not it. I do not trust people, I only trust evidence.

And the evidence says that this man isn't lying.”

“Hmm?” The Head Guard frowned.

“Think with me,

‘Who are you? How did you get inside?’

These words clearly mean that someone somehow entered Consort Allura’s carriage.

‘No, don’t kill me. Someone, Save me. Help.’

These words mean that the person who enter tried to harm Allura, and clearly, he overpowered her, who was an Expert Stage Cultivator.

There are signs of a struggle inside the carriage, along with blood, which, I believe should be Consort Allura’s.”

“So you are saying that someone just randomly entered the carriage we were keeping our eyes on, attacked Lady Allura, took her away with him, and we didn’t see anything?”

“Yes...

As absurd as it sounds, that is the only possibility I can think of.

Don’t judge them by normal means.

Look at Stark’s head...

With how clean the cut is, I am sure that the one who did it was a King Stage Cultivator...”

Trent’s tone got heavier when he talked about Stark’s death. Clearly, he was affected by the death of his partner.

“Do you think it was the same person?”

Tim questioned.

“No, I think they were different. One entered Lady Allura’s carriage, while the other killed Stark.”

“And both of them were King Stage Cultivators?”

“Yes, I can’t think of anyone weaker doing anything like this.”

“But... why would they kill Stark? If they wanted to kill him, then why didn’t they kill the two of us as well?”

Tim questioned with a frown on his face.

It was scary how he was talking about his own death like that.

But that was just how the Members of the shadow unit were. They never cared about their own death. For them, failing to successfully complete a mission and disappointing the King was much worse than death.

“To send a message.”

Trent answered.

“Those bastards clearly knew that Lady Allura has left the Mansion, which, of course, wasn’t very hard to know, however, that was not it, these bastards also knew that we were following her.

Therefore, not only did they harm Lady Allura right in front of us, they even killed the strongest among us.

I do not see any other reason for doing this other than sending a message.

A clear show of strength.

A clear challenge.

To not only us, but the entire Shadow Unit.

Whoever these people are, they are clearly not your average men, they have a goal in their mind.

A scary goal.”

Trent answered with a grim look on his face.

Tim's face turned serious,

“So they left us alive so we could become there...”

“Messengers, yes.”

“...”

The two of them turned silent.

“What are we going to do?”

Tim questioned.

After thinking about things for more than 5 minutes, Trent just shook his head.

“We have no other option, we have to report to the King.”

“...alright.”

Although he wanted to report this after catching the criminal, Tim knew he couldn't do that right now.

They didn't have any way to catch the culprit.

Therefore, they could only return empty-handed.

“You there.”

Trent called.

“Yes Sir.”

The Head Guard stepped forward.

“Search everyone present here, though I highly doubt it, there are chances that the culprit or someone who is related to the culprit is still here.

Capture anyone you think suspicious and don't back off from using violence if you want."

"Yes sir!"

The Head Guard Saluted.

"We will report this to the King."

Saying that, Tim and Trent looked at each other,

And disappeared.

# Chapter 394

“So you are telling me that my wife disappeared in the middle of the crowded speed, right in front of 3 Expert Stage Cultivators’ eyes, and not only were you not able to stop it, you even failed to see what had happened?”

King Ricardus, who right now was sitting on his throne questioned with a solemn look on his face.

Right now, he looked nothing like the lazy and carefree man that didn’t bother with anything his ministers said. Right now, he looked like a ferocious beast who is trying his best to hold his soaring anger.

In front of him, 2 men wearing black colored clothes were kneeling with expressionless looks on their faces.

“We failed you, your majesty. We are willing to give up on our life as compensation.”

Trent replied in a respectful tone.

“You think your pitiful like can pay for the damage that has been done to my reputation?”

The King spat in anger.

“My wife suddenly disappeared! Most probably killed or kidnapped by someone, right inside the capital of my Kingdom, in broad daylight!

I will become a laughing stock!”

“...”

Trent and Tim didn’t say anything.

They knew that the King is angry, and it was best not to say anything at this moment. Also, it was not the time to say anything right now, someone else would do it.

“Your Majesty, you need to calm down.”

Keeve, the Leader of the Shadow Unit stepped forward.

He was someone that even the King respected.

“Keeve, you better have a solution in your mind.”

This time, however, even Keeve wasn't very sure.

“...I would need some more time to think about my plans, your Majesty.”

“...what?”

Ricardus frowned.

Keeve didn't dare to look into his eyes.

Ricardus then turned towards his 4 Ministers,

“You guys must have some sort of plan in your mind, correct?”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

The Ministers, who always tried to impress the King and show off their intelligence stayed silent.

This King couldn't believe this.

However, Keeve and the Ministers were not to blame.

This incident was too strange, to begin with.

How can an Expert Stage Cultivator just disappear in broad daylight, in the middle of a busy street when 3 more Expert Stage Cultivators were following her from behind?

This just does not make any sense.

There were many questions they all wanted to ask.

Why did Consort Allura order the Driver to stop the Carriage?

Who was the person that entered the carriage?

Why was Consort Allura so scared of him?

Did she try to fight him?

How strong was he?

Also, how just how did that person enter the carriage without being seen?

How did he leave?

Did he kill Consort Allura and then placed her body inside his storage ring?

Or did he take Consort Allura with him?

What does he want?

Why target Consort Allura?

Is it related to her getting stronger so quickly?

Also, who killed Stark, the Expert Stage Cultivator?

Was he the same person who attacked Consort Allura? Or was he someone else?

Did those two fight against each other?

Why didn't Trent and Tim notice anything?

Just what the hell happened?

Their heads were filled with countless questions that they couldn't find the answers to. The more they thought about it, the scarier this got.

**\*Bam\***

Suddenly, the King slammed his hand on the armrest of the throne, breaking it in the process.

The King then stood up and glared at Trent and Tim.

“You two will receive your punishment once this case is solved.”

“We will give our all to solve this case and wash this shame.”

Trent bowed and Tim nodded.

“Keeve, follow me.”

Suddenly, the King ordered in a solemn tone.

Keeve wanted to ask where they were going, however, with how angry King was, he didn't dare to ask anything and followed him quietly.

As for the rest of the ministers, well, since they were ordered, they didn't follow the king and started talking with Trent and Tim, trying to get more information about the incident.

...

**\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\***

Hearing the knock on the doors, Kelton opened the door.

“Your Majesty?”

Kelton frowned.

“I want to talk to Amaya.”

Ricardus spoke with a solemn look on his face.

Seeing this, Kelton’s frown deepened, however, he didn’t dare to keep the King standing.

“Please, enter.”

Saying that, he stepped aside.

Ricardus entered the room and soon, his eyes fell on Amaya, who was lying on the bed, covered in that dangerous Black Mist.

Ricardus also noticed that the Black Mist looked more... lethal than before...

His eyes then fell on Amaya, who was ‘sleeping’ peacefully.

“Your condition is not getting any better, I see.”

Ricardus commented.

Hearing his words, Amaya finally opened her eyes, her deep black eyes met Ricardus’s purple eyes, and once again, Ricardus was taken back.

His consort really was beautiful.

It is a pity that she is cursed.

“So you are finally here, I was waiting for you.”

Amaya spoke with a small smile on her face.

“Hmm?” Hearing her words, Ricardus finally came out of his reverie and questioned.

“What do you mean by that?”

Amaya didn't answer that question directly, she just turned her head towards Kelton and ordered.

“Leave, I would like to talk with his Majesty, alone.”

Kelton frowned, however, since he didn't go against Amaya's order and nodded.

It wasn't like he could save Amaya if the King decided to harm her.

Once Kelton left, Amaya turned towards Ricardus and smiled,

“Allura was kidnapped, correct?”

I was wondering when you would come here to seek my help.”

“How did you know about it? And why did you send him out?”

Ricardus questioned.

“You know who you are talking to right? I may be in a state where I can't move very often, but I am still the leader of the Thousand Information Chamber.

As for sending him out, well, I didn't know if you have made this news public or not.”

Amaya replied.

“Isn't he the one who reports everything to you?”

King questioned with a curious look on his face.

“I can't trust a single person, now can I?”

Amaya smiled.

# Chapter 395

“I can’t trust a single person, now, can I?”

Amaya smiled.

“...”

The King narrowed his eyes, he believed that Amaya trusted this butler more than anyone in this world, however, it seems that he was wrong.

Of course, in the end, it didn’t matter to him at all.

Whatever was happening between Amaya and her servant wasn’t something Ricardus would bother himself with.

He was here for a reason, and the reason was,

“Look, if you are here to ask me where Allura is, or anything related to this case, then sorry to disappoint you, but even I don’t know anything about this.”

Amaya shook her head.

“Even you don’t know anything about this?”

The King was a little surprised. This wasn’t something he expected to hear. Not after Amaya was the first one to talk about this incident.

“Your Majesty, you have to understand, we are talking about a man who can somehow enter and leave a Royal Consort’s carriage without being noticed in the broad daylight.

I have never heard about this sort of absurd Skill in my entire life.

This is definitely not the work of a normal cultivator.

He must be someone special...

The one behind it...

I have a hunch that he is a very scary enemy, a lot scarier than we are imagining him to be.”

Amaya spoke in a solemn tone. Then, she looked into the King’s purple eyes and cautioned.

“Your Majesty, I would suggest you to be cautious...”

Keeve, who heard those words fell into deep thoughts, for some reason, the priority of catching the culprit rose marginally in his mind.

This King, however, didn’t take Amaya’s words seriously.

“I do not need your words of caution, Amaya. What I want is your assistance.

Use that head of yours and think of a way to find the culprit.

And if you can’t even do that, then you might as well close that little chamber of yours.”

The King spat.

“As I said before, I do not know anything about this case. We have practically zero clues, there is nothing to narrow down our search upon, no one knows what the culprit looks like, no one knows if it is a single individual or a group, and if they are indeed a group, no one knows how many of them are there.

Nothing is known at all, therefore, Your Majesty, I cannot help you.”

The King Clenched his fist.

“Useless.”

Spitting those words, the King left Amaya's room after shutting down the doors as loudly as he could.

\*Bam\*

After the King left, a small smile appeared on Amaya's face.

'Who knows, the culprit might be a Handsome devil who likes to kidnap beautiful women...'

Then, she pouted.

'I wonder when that devil would kidnap me...'

Am I not beautiful enough?'

"Lady Amaya! Are you alright!?"

While Amaya was thinking about all this, a man entered her room with a panicked look on his face.

"Yes, Kelton, I am alright."

Amaya nodded with a calm look on his face.

"W-Why was the King here? And why did he look so angry when he left?"

Kelton questioned.

"Well, he lost one of his trophies."

Amaya chuckled.

"Huh?"

Kelton failed to understand, however, Amaya didn't bother to explain.

She just smiled, looking forward to what would happen in the future.

...

\*Bam\*

\*Clank\*

\*Bam\*

\*Clank\*

\*Bam\*

\*Clank\*

“Useless! All of you bastards are useless!”

The King started throwing and breaking everything he could find, trying to vent his frustration.

Keeve, Trent, Tim, and the Ministers stayed silent and let the King do whatever he wanted.

5 minutes later, after breaking about everything he could find, the King finally calmed down, his eyes, however, were still red in anger.

With his body trembling in anger, the King ordered.

“Search.”

“Huh?”

The Ministers frowned.

“Search for Allura.

Search every single house, inn, tent, restaurant, shop, or any sort of building, abandoned or not, search every single of them.

If you find anything or anyone suspicious, capture him.

Form search parties, use all those useless guards who are doing nothing but wasting the Kingdom's food.

Find Allura.

I do not care how you do it but I need Allura standing in front of me within a week.

If this does not happen then...

Don't even think of living an easy life from now on."

The Ministers frowned.

This Search order...

This was impractical!

Just how in the hell were they supposed to do that within a week!?

Just how much manpower would they have to use?

What about the Palace?

Who is going to protect the Palace?

What if the one who attacked Consort Allura attacks them? How would they defend themselves?

The Minsters panicked.

However, the King didn't care about what they were thinking.

All he needed were results.

He wanted his Allura back.

He wanted the culprit behind this kneeling in front of him.

He wanted to torture the bastard who dared to touch what was his.

Only then, would he be able to wash this shame away.

“Now what are you doing here!? Leave!”

The King shouted again.

No matter how unwilling they were, Keeve, Trent, Tim, and Ministers left the Hall.

Then, they gave out commands, every one of them calling their subordinates, and head of guards. Messages were sent to noble houses, even the Skyfall Army was involved.

Within the next few hours, the entire Palace and then the capital fell into Chaos.

Guards and Soldiers roaming here and there.

People being captured left and right.

Guards searching nobles' and commoners' houses alike.

The inns, the shops, each of these places were thoroughly checked.

More and more guards joined this operation, adding up the number and boosting the search speed.

This absurd behavior carried on for days.

From the Capital to the other cities, then to the outskirts of cities and villages, every place was searched.

Many many criminals, who were hiding and trying to avoid the guards for years were captured.

However, the Criminals the Guards were looking for,

They were nowhere to be found.

# Chapter 396

“Headmaster Eliyard, I am sure you already know what has happened, therefore, I would appreciate it if you were to step back and let me do what I came here for.”

Keeve looked into the Headmaster’s eyes and spoke.

“I didn’t expect you to come here personally.”

Eliyard spoke.

Keeve wasn’t someone who appears in public very often. Therefore, Eliyard was surprised to see this man in front of him.

“I am tasked to search the Royal Academy and the Dukes’ Houses.”

Keeve replied with an expressionless face.

“Sending a King Stage Cultivator to search the places where the King Stage Cultivators reside... I see.”

Eliyard nodded to himself.

Keeve narrowed his eyes,

“You aren’t going to stop me, are you?”

“Hmm? Of course not. Why would I go against the King’s orders? I have nothing to hide.

Search anywhere you want.

Of course, I hope you do it in moderation because you know, even I have an image I need to stand up to.”

Eliyard smiled.

“Heh. I understand, you don’t have to worry, if you have nothing to hide, which, of course, I am sure is true, I will mind this ‘image’ of yours.”

Keeve chuckled and then, he ordered,

“Alright, come in. Search every place you want, if you see anything suspicious, contact me.”

“Yes Sir!”

The Guards standing behind Keeve entered and soon, they spread around.

Keeve then turned towards Eliyard,

“I would like to visit your mansion.”

“Mhm, I welcome you with open arms.”

Eliyard nodded.

“Follow me.”

Saying those words, Eliyard started walking.

A minute later, Eliyard and Keeve entered Eliyard’s Mansion.

Keeve started looking around, trying to find anything suspicious, trying to find anything related to Consort Allura.

However, what he didn’t know was that ‘Consort Allura’ herself was standing right behind him, looking at him with an interested look on her face.

“So he is that Keeve, the famed Leader of the Shadow Unit?”

Nux spoke.

“Indeed.”

Allura answered.

“Hmmm, doesn’t look very special to me.”

Nux muttered as he looked at Keeve while his golden eyes shined.

“Hmmm, he is different from Eliyard.”

Ember commented.

“Hmm? How can you tell?”

Nux questioned.

According to the System, there wasn’t much difference between Eliyard and Keeve, however, Nux knew that the previous General wouldn’t say anything without any reason.

“Well, his posture, his aura, the air around him, everything is different.

He may not be a Warrior, however, he has seen blood. A lot of blood.

He is a capable man.

To be honest, I want to fight him.”

Ember spoke with an excited look on her face.

“Tsk Tsk, just fight me.”

Nux snorted.

Not liking this at all.

He was not going to lie, he was jealous.

For a moment, he wanted to Kill this man named Keeve.

It wasn't something big, however,

“Hmm?”

This little thought was enough for Keeve to sense that something was wrong.

He turned around, however,

“ ... ”

There was nothing to see.

“What happened?”

Eliyard questioned with a frown on his face.

“Nothing...”

Keeve frowned.

He was sure he sensed something.

Actually, he didn't just sense something, he sensed his death.

However, that feeling disappeared the moment it appeared.

A strange thing indeed.

Thinking that, Keeve turned around and continued to walk with Eliyard.

Behind him, Nux reappeared in front of his women.

“That was close.”

He spoke.

“You need to control your Killing Intent.”

Felberta spoke.

“Well, don’t blame now, alright? It was a mistake.”

Ember spoke with a wide smile on her face.

“Tsk.”

Thyra snorted.

“The Harem’s Gate saved you.”

Allura chuckled.

“Indeed.”

“Harem’s Gate and Conceal is a scary combination.”

Skyla muttered.

“Scary? It’s a cheat! An absurd combination.”

Thyra snorted.

“Indeed, Indeed.”

Felberta nodded her head.

Nux just smiled.

He already knew how much of a cheat he was, however, right now, it wasn’t about him. He was more interested in this Keeve in front of him.

“He is sharp.”

He commented.

“I told you he is sharp.”

Ember smiled.

“Mhm, I never doubted you for a second.”

Nux and his women continued to observe this man named Keeve with relaxed looks on their faces.

Soon, half an hour passed by, right now, Keeve was inside the last room inside Eliyard's mansion, however, he was unable to find anything, even though the one he was trying to find so desperately was standing right in front of him.

“Are you going to leave now? Or would you like to have a cup of tea with me?”

Eliyard questioned with a small smile on his face.

Keeve looked at the man in front of him and narrowed his eyes,

“Eliyard, recently, I heard that you fired all your subordinates and hired new ones, what's with that?”

His eyes looked scary right now, he looked as if the moment a lie comes out of Eliyard's mouth, he would kill him.

Eliyard, however, wasn't scared.

He was used to acting like a brave, fearless man for many, many years, Something like this wasn't enough to threaten him.

“Those workers weren't doing their job properly, so I fired them. It's not a big deal, now is it?”

“The Timing is very coincidental though.”

Keeve looked into Eliyar's eyes, trying to pierce through all the walls he had placed inside his mind.

Eliyard, however, just shook his head,

“Well, coincidence happens.”

“ ... ”

Keeve was unable to say anything.

“Lord!”

Soon, the Guards who were searching the rest of the Academy returned as well.

“Did you find anything?” Keeve questioned.

“No, we did not.

It is just like we suspected, the Royal Academy has nothing to do with all this.”

The Soldier commented.

“Of course.”

Eliyard chuckled.

“Well, Keeve, it was nice catching up with you, however, as you know, I am the Headmaster of the Academy, so just like you, I have some things that I need to do.

I hope you successfully find that culprit.

Whoever he is.

And of course, don't hesitate to come here and ask for assistance if you want.”

With that, Keeve was sent out of the Academy.

“Alright, we will be visiting Duke Fulvianus next.”

With that, the Search operation continued.

# Chapter 397

“Useless, you all are absolutely useless.”

The King declared with his eyes fuming in rage.

“Failing to find a single person even with so many men under your command, hmph, useless.”

This time, however, the Ministers didn't stay silent.

“Your Majesty, things aren't as simple as they seem.”

One of the Ministers stepped forward.

“What does that mean?”

The King narrowed his eyes.

Right now, the last thing he wanted to hear were excuses.

“Our men have been searching all around the Kingdom and although we were unable to find Consort Allura, it doesn't mean that we returned completely empty-handed.”

“What did you find out?”

The King questioned.

He was desperately hoping for a piece of good news.

However, luck didn't seem to be on his side.

“Lady Allura wasn't the only person to get kidnapped.”

“Huh?”

The King frowned.

“Yes, many missing cases have been reported within these last few days.

A Viscount named Felberta Avelye is missing along with her two closest maids. The method of kidnapping was very similar to Consort Allura, the carriage they were riding stopped and they disappeared in broad daylight.

Along with this Viscount, a few other nobles have been Kidnapped as well, even some of the commoners met the same fate.

With this, we can be assured now.

This isn't a work of a single individual.

It's an organization, a big, and strong organization.”

Hearing these words, the King narrowed his eyes.

“Is there a connection between Allura and the others who were Kidnapped?”

“We have been trying to find that out, however, we were unable to come up with anything. Allura and all these people are not related to each other at all.”

The Minister shook his head with a disappointed look on his face.

“To have so many strong Cultivators as their members, this organization is definitely not a normal organization, they must have been staying in the dark for decades, looking for an opportunity to strike.

I don't think they would act so brazenly just to kidnap some people at random.

There has to be a reason.

There has to be a pattern.

There must be some sort of hidden connection between the people they are Kidnapping. There has to be.”

The King spoke.

The Minister, however, shook his head,

“No, there is nothing in common, we have searched and thought about every single possibility.”

“Then think more.”

The King ordered.

“But-”

“No buts. I do not want any excuses, use that brain of yours and think of something. I am already holding back a lot since I haven’t beheaded you all for being so incompetent, now don’t make me regret my decision.”

The King snapped.

Seeing this, the Ministers looked at each other and frowned.

Then, collectively, their eyes fell on Keeve.

Seeing this, Keeve sighed, and then, he stepped forward.

“Your Majesty, I don’t think it would be that easy to track these people down.”

“What do you mean?”

If it was someone else who had said those words, the King would have snapped by now, however, Keeve was different, he was the man who the King trusted the most.

He was his strongest and the most loyal subordinate.

Therefore, the King treated him with respect.

“These people are stronger than we expected.”

Keeve replied.

Ricardus’s frown deepened.

“A few days ago, Ember Windstar, the General of the Woods Dynasty, was about to return to the Capital in a carriage when suddenly, she disappeared.

The men who were hired to escort her were found dead near the carriage.

Doesn’t this sound familiar?”

Keeve questioned.

“You are trying to say...”

The King finally realized.

“Yes, I suspect that the ones behind the disappearance of General Ember Windstar are the same people who have attacked Consort Allura.

This means that those bastards do not operate in the Skyfall Kingdom alone, they operate in Woods Dynasty, and presumably in the Solid Earth and the Skadi Kingdom as well.

The entire world is their playground.

That also means that searching inside the Skyfall Kingdom is foolish, there is a possibility that Consort Allura is in another Kingdom.”

“Another Kingdom?”

Ricardus frowned.

This makes things a lot more complicated than before.

In the Skyfall Kingdom, he could do whatever he wanted. However, there is no way this wide-scale search would be allowed inside any of the Kingdoms.

This would simply mean a slap to their face, after all.

No Kingdom would take it with smiles on their faces.

Ricardus's face turned solemn, after a long time, he felt insecure...

There were chances that he might fail to clear the stain on his reputation...

However, suddenly, a question popped inside his mind,

“How was an organization this strong and influential, hid its traces so cleanly?”

Ricardus questioned.

“We thought of the same thing.”

Noticing the chance, a minister finally stepped forward.

“And after all the considerations, we finally came to a conclusion.”

“What conclusion?”

Ricardus questioned.

“This organization is supported by one of the four strongest nations.”

“...”

The King narrowed his eyes.

There were chances that what the minister said was true, and, the King didn't want to admit it, however, if one of the Kingdom actually does have control over this organization, then that Kingdom is stronger than the Skyfall Kingdom.

“What do you guys think? Who do you think are the ones behind this organization?”

Ricardus turned towards Keeve and questioned.

“If I had to guess then it would be the Solid Earth Kingdom.”

“Solid Earth Kingdom? Why them?”

The King couldn't understand.

Aren't they the weakest?

How could they possibly support an organization this strong?

The King couldn't understand.

However, Keeve had his own reasons,

“The Solid Earth Kingdom has been acting strangely.

From what we know, after the losses they suffered in their previous expedition inside the Bloodhill Wilderness, they have become the weakest out of the four Kingdoms.

However, even after that, that Kingdom is still waging war against the Woods Dynasty and was actually winning. Let alone fighting back, the Woods are finding it hard to even hold their grounds and stand firmly.

Just how is something like that possible?

Something must be wrong inside the Solid Earth Kingdom.

I strongly believe that we should place our focus on them.”

# Chapter 398

“Something must be wrong inside the Solid Earth Kingdom.

I strongly believe that we should place our focus on them.”

Keeve spoke with a serious look on his face, and this time, someone unexpectedly agreed with his words.

“I agree with him.”

Hearing a voice that he shouldn't be hearing right now, the King frowned. He then turned towards the source of the voice and saw Amaya standing in front of him.

“What are you doing here?”

The King questioned.

“I wanted to talk to you about the Solid Earth Kingdom.”

Amaya answered.

The King narrowed his eyes and questioned.

“Is it so important that you would use 2 hours of your freedom to come and talk to me?”

Everyone in the Palace knew that Amaya had a deadly curse eating her from inside. The curse was so deadly that she couldn't even move and usually stayed inside her room.

However, every day, at random, the curse weakens for two hours, in these two hours, Amaya can move wherever she wants and could do whatever she wants.

Other than using her energy, of course.

She has tested it before, the moment she tries to use her cultivation that she has gained due to her curse, that annoying curse returns and breaks her entire body with agonizing pain.

The King still remembers the day when Amaya was howling in agony while lying on the floor withering in pain and with that scary Black Mist surrounding her body, no one dared to pick her up.

Amaya spent that entire day staying on the floor, that was the day when everyone inside the Palace learned about her curse and...

Distant themselves from her even more than before.

Her curse was just too strong.

Amaya termed these 2 hours and hours of freedom, the time where she would move wherever or do whatever she wanted and instructed everyone to not bother her.

This was the time when she wouldn't talk to anybody, even the King.

Therefore, the King was surprised that she used this time she so valued to come here.

“What I want to talk about is just that important.”

Amaya answered with a serious look on her face.

“What is it? What do you want to talk about?”

Ricardus questioned.

“I can't contact any of my spies that I have planted inside the Solid Earth Kingdom.”

“!!!”

The King's eyes widened in surprise.

Not only him, but the ministers, Keeve, or anyone who actually knew a bit about Amaya was shocked to their core.

“None of them...?”

Keeve couldn't help but question.

“None of them...”

Amaya nodded with a solemn look on her face.

Ricardus's face turned serious as well.

They weren't just talking about three or four spies here, Amaya had planted more than a thousand spies inside all the Kingdoms, her information network was greatest for a reason.

Although not as strong as the network inside the Skyfall Kingdom, it was still stronger than most of the information networks that existed inside their home Kingdom.

Heck, she even knew some secrets of the noble that even those noble's wives didn't know about.

“I tried to place more spies, however, I soon lost contact with them as well. This can't be a coincidence, there is something wrong.

Your Majesty, you need to send someone there and check what is going on there.

This matter...

I believe it is much more important than Allura's incident.”

Amaya spoke.

The King narrowed his eyes when he heard her last sentence, it was clear that he didn't like those words at all, and as if Amaya sensed that, she continued,

“Just like Keeve and the Ministers said, these two incidents can be related to each other. This organization you were talking about, there is a high chance that its base is inside the Solid Earth Kingdom.”

The King thought about all this for a while and then, he nodded.

“Alright, I will focus on the Solid Earth Kingdom.”

Amaya smiled a little, however, the smile on her soon disappeared and she continued,

“There is a high chance that the Spies you send there will be dealt with before they could find anything valuable.

Once that happens, contact the Woods Dynasty.”

The King narrowed his eyes again.

‘Once that happens’ these words triggered him.

It was as if she was sure that he would fail, of course, the King didn't like this at all.

Amaya was clearly looking down on him.

Keeve, however, didn't care about these trivial things right now.

“Why the Woods Dynasty?”

Amaya turned towards Keeve and questioned back,

“Have you heard about Ember Windstar?”

“About how she went missing?”

Amaya nodded.

“Yes, I have heard about it and I believe the ones behind this incident are also the ones who attacked Consort Allura.”

Keeve nodded back.

“There is a very high chance that what you think is correct, however, that is not what I am talking about right now.”

“What is it then?”

Ricardus questioned.

“Where was Ember going when she was attacked?”

Amaya questioned Keeve.

“To the Capital.”

Keeve answered.

“Why was she going to the capital?”

Amaya questioned again.

Keeve narrowed his eyes and then, he shook his head.

“I do not know.”

“She resigned.”

“She resigned...? That woman...?”

Keeve frowned.

“Yes, the woman who was known to be the best General that the Woods Dynasty has seen in so many centuries resigned while the Dynasty was in danger.”

There has to be some reason for it.”

“She might be running away in fear.”

A Minister chuckled.

Amaya and Keeve looked at him with expression faces, the woman turned silent and turned away.

“Ember Windstar wasn’t the type who would be scared for her life, she wouldn’t just run away because she was scared.

There has to be a reason behind this.

I assume that it has to do something with the Solid Earth Kingdom.

Try to find some clues from there, talk with the soldiers close to her maybe.

I think this will give you a lead you can work on.”

Amaya suggested and Keeve noted all her words in his mind.

At the same time, he couldn’t help but look at Amaya with an amazed look on his face.

He wondered how that woman was able to come up with something like this.

‘She’s not called the Smartest Woman in the entire Kingdom without a reason.’

“Oh, before I forget, there is something else that I need to tell you.”

# Chapter 399

“Oh, before I forget, let me tell you about another reason why I am here,”

Amaya spoke as she turned towards Ricardus.

“Hmm? What it is?”

Ricardus questioned.

“In the future, I would sneak out of the Palace.”

“Huh? What does that mean?”

The King frowned.

“It means just what I said, I need to leave the Palace for a while. I will return soon of course.”

“Huh? Where do you want to go?”

The King questioned.

Amaya rarely left the palace.

In fact, she hasn't left the Palace more than 5 times in all these years, therefore, her talking about leaving was a little... strange.

Especially in a condition like that.

“I can't tell you that.”

Amaya, however, didn't answer Ricardus's questions.

“Why do you want to leave?”

Ricardus changed his question.

“The Solid Earth Kingdom somehow blocked my network, I need to find out what happened. I can’t let it continue like this any longer.”

“Are you planning to go there yourself?”

Ricardus questioned with a frown on his face.

“Consort Amaya, you can’t do this. This is a rash decision.”

Keeve spoke up.

Amaya looked at Keeve and frowned,

“Why would I go there myself, especially with this annoying curse on me? Do you think I am a fool?”

“Umm... then what are you planning?”

Keeve couldn’t contain his curiosity.

“You do not have to worry about that. Just leave it to me.”

Saying that, Amaya turned around and started walking towards the doors.

“Oh right.”

Suddenly, she stopped and turned towards Ricardus.

“Your Majesty, I would appreciate it if you would respect my privacy and will not send your men behind me.”

Ricardus smiled.

“Of course, I will certainly respect your privacy.”

“I am thankful.”

Amaya smiled back and then, she left.

“Keep an eye on her.”

Right after Amaya left, Ricardus’s smile disappeared and he ordered.

“As you command, your majesty.”

Keeve nodded.

“Also, try to plant some spies inside the Solid Earth Kingdom and...

If that fails... then... contact the Woods Dynasty.”

“Yes, Your Majesty.”

Keeve nodded again and the meeting continued.

...

On the other side, Amaya, who has just left the meeting room, smiled.

Then, she walked toward the garden and ordered,

“Prepare a tea for me,”

The Maid she ordered to bowed and with a slightly fearful expression on her face,

“Y-Yes, Lady Amaya.”

She ran away.

It was clear that was trying to go as far away from Amaya, who was ‘cursed’.

Of course, Amaya didn’t care about it.

It was rather convenient, to be honest.

Unlike Allura, she didn’t like chatting with random people.

Actually, she didn't like talking with anyone.

All she needed was one person.

As long as she had him to talk to, she didn't care about anyone. Not even her 'sisters'.

Thinking about that man, a smile appeared on Amaya's face.

"Y-Your Tea, Lady Amaya."

While Amaya was lost in her thoughts, the maid placed the cup of tea and some snacks on the table, and then,

"I will be taking my leave now, Lady Amaya."

She hurried away.

Again, Amaya didn't care.

She just leisurely picked up the cup and started sipping on the tea.

Waiting for certain someone to come here.

...

Time passed by and soon, Amaya heard a voice,

"Lady Amaya! What are you doing here!? You could have at least informed me that you were here!"

"Calm down Kelton, I am not a child."

Amaya answered in a calm voice.

"How can you say that!? You know that your 'Freedom Time' is about to end, don't you!?"

"Well, I had to meet the King."

Amaya replied.

“Huh?”

Hearing those words, Kelton frowned.

“The King? Why?”

However, instead of answering that question, Amaya questioned.

“Kelton, what do you think? Who would become the next King of the Skyfall Kingdom?”

“Hmm? Since when were you so interested in that?”

Kelton couldn't understand. This question just popped out of nowhere.

“Well, I would be a fool to not show my interest in this topic, won't I? Ricardus won't live for long, after all.”

Amaya chuckled.

“Huh? What does that mean?”

Kelton questioned.

“Well, he is getting older and older. Even his hairs have started turning white, maybe 20 to 30 more years and...”

“Ahh, so that's what you meant.”

Kelton realized.

“Of course, what did you think?”

Amaya questioned with a smile.

“Nothing...”

Kelton turned silent.

Amaya chuckled and Kelton continued,

“Well, you are right... I believe it is time that the King chose the Crown Prince, isn't it?”

“Indeed. Who do you think he will choose?”

Amaya questioned.

“Well, I believe it would be the First Prince.”

“Why do you think so?”

“Well, given his recent breakthrough to the Expert Stage, he has this absurd advantage over all the others.

The Second Princess isn't interested in the Throne.

The Third Prince... well, he was a good competition, he is certainly more talented than the First prince, however, with more than 40 years of gap between the two of them, he loses out.

Especially now that the First Prince is an Expert Stage Cultivator.”

“Mhm, I had the same thoughts as well.”

Amaya nodded repeatedly and then,

“However, the King seems to think otherwise.”

A smile appeared on her face.

“Hmm? What does that mean? Does the King not favor the First Prince?”

Kelton questioned.

“Well, from his words, I have an inkling that he favors the Third Prince. Which, actually makes sense according to me.

The First Prince is 123 years old and has recently become an Expert Stage Cultivator, however, the Third Prince is only 64 but is already a Grand Master Stage Cultivator. I believe that in 15 more years, he would become an Expert Stage Cultivator, which is more than 40 years faster than the First Prince.

I believe that he has the potential to be a Great King.”

Amaya praised.

“That is true indeed...”

Kelton nodded as well.

“No matter how strong the First Prince is, if the King doesn’t favor him, he would not become the King, no matter how hard he works.”

“Indeed Indeed.”

Amaya nodded with the fakest smile she could muster.

Of course, she wasn’t the least bit interested in this conversation.

What she was interested in was the maid hiding behind the bush.

‘Now now, my little butterfly, go spread what you heard all around the world,

Make it big.’

A small smile appeared on Amaya’s face.

# Chapter 400

“Bastards!!!”

\*Crash\*

\*Clank\*

The King screamed in anger and frustration and threw a Jar made of glass on the ground, breaking it into pieces.

In front of him kneeled a man wearing black colored clothes and beside him stood a man wearing the same, black colored clothes.

“Keeve, what happened? Why have all your subordinates become so useless? Have I become too lenient? Is that the case?”

Ricardus, who was trying his best to hold back his anger, questioned.

“That is not it, your Majesty.”

Keeve declined.

“Then what is it? What happened? Have you started recruiting useless pieces of shit into my Shadow Unit, by any chance?”

The King questioned again, glaring at the man kneeling in front of him with unconcealed anger.

“No, that is not it either, your Majesty.”

“THEN WHAT IS IT!?”

\*Crash\*

\*Clank\*

The King threw away another Jar and roared.

“Your Majesty.”

Unlike his subordinate, Keeve was intimidated by Ricardus’s actions and replied calmly.

“You have to understand, we are talking about Consort Amaya. You know it better than anyone else what type of woman she is.”

The King glanced at Keeve and Keeve continued.

“Yesterday, she came here to inform you about how she was going to sneak out of Palace. Notice the words she used, Your Majesty. ‘Sneak’.

She wouldn’t say those words if she wasn’t sure of herself.

You have to understand, it is not his fault and neither has the Shadow Unit become ‘useless’. It is just that the opponents that we are facing are too strong or smart this time.”

“So are you saying that you are too weak to handle your enemies?”

The King stepped towards Keeve and questioned while his purple eyes shined in ruthlessness.

“No, what I am saying is that our enemies have become too unpredictable. However, it does not mean that we can’t take care of them. We just need a bit more time.

And Your Majesty, I dare say, we, the Shadow Unit are the only ones who can actually go against these enemies. You know that as well.

So, Your Majesty, I believe that rather than just pointlessly blaming everything on your subordinates and cursing them, I think it would be better if you would try to find out how Consort Amaya snuck out and figure out a way to ensure that something like this does not repeat in the future.”

Keeve looked back into the King’s eyes.

The Staring contest continued for a few minutes and then, Keeve stepped back and bowed,

“I apologize for my rude behavior, Your Majesty. I guess I have been on edge lately. Things... aren't really going my way...”

Ricardus looked at Keeve for a while and then, he narrowed his eyes,

“I would have executed you for talking to me like that if you hadn't proven your worth to me before.”

Keeve kept his head low and didn't retort.

The King snorted and then, he turned towards the man kneeling on the floor.

“So? What happened? How did you lose her track? She shouldn't have been able to use her cultivation, so she is no different than a mortal.

How did you let a mortal escape your eyes?”

“I was attacked... from behind...”

“Who attacked you?”

Keeve questioned.

“I do not know...”

“Tell me what happened, from the start.”

Keeve ordered.

His subordinate nodded and then, he started.

“Just like you ordered me to, I started keeping an eye on Consort Amaya from yesterday. Everything that happened was natural, after drinking her tea, she returned to her room and lay down on her bed.

30 minutes later, that horrifying Dark Mist started oozing out of her body, from her expression, I knew she was in pain. Soon, her entire body was covered with Black Mist and she stopped moving.

The rest of the day passed, then early in the morning, the Mist surrounding Consort Amaya's body started disappearing, then, she stood up.

After freshening up, she ate some food then...

Then she started walking..."

"Walking?"

Keeve frowned.

"Yes, walking..."

She started walking aimlessly, first, she walked into the garden, then she walked around the palace, this continued for 30 more minutes and then suddenly,

She looked at me."

"She looked at you?"

"Yes, she looked at me, she smiled at me, and then..."

I passed out..."

"..."

Keeve narrowed his eyes.

"Someone attacked you from behind, correct?"

Ricardus questioned.

"Yes."

The man nodded.

“And of course, you did not see his face, did you?”

“No... I did not...”

“Heh.”

The King chuckled condescendingly.

“Well, we can say that whoever he was, was related to Amaya.”

“Yes, that is what I assume as well.”

The man nodded.

“But... but how did Amaya know that you keeping an eye on her?”

The King couldn't understand.

“It's the walking.”

Suddenly, Keeve spoke up.

“Hmm? What?”

“Yes, her walk.

It wasn't just pointless walking. It was Consort Amaya's plan to figure out who was keeping an eye on her and where he or she was.

If she moves, you would have to move as well, then, her subordinates would trace you down. No matter how far away you hide, if you follow her for 30 minutes, even a child could tell that you are the one she is looking for her.

And well, once she found out...

The only thing she needed was to take you out.

Once that was done, she left the Palace.”

“But how did she even leave? Why was she not seen by anyone?

She is just a mortal, how can she fool so many cultivators and sneak out?”

The King questioned.

“Or maybe, she didn’t ‘fool’ anyone. She didn’t have to.”

Keeve spoke up.

“You mean...”

“Yes... the guards who saw her simply didn’t say anything because...”

“They were already on her side.”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

The three of them turned silent.

A few minutes passed by and then,

“We need to catch those traitorous bastards.”

The King spoke.

Keeve, however, shook his head.

“We can’t do that. We do not have any leads. There are thousands of guards inside the Palace, we can’t capture every single one of them.

We need to find out who they are first.”

“How do we do that?”

The King questioned.

However,

“I do not know...”

Keeve shook his head.

“...”

The room turned silent again.

# **Volume 5**

# Chapter 401

On the other side, the woman who was responsible for the King's and his closest subordinate's headache was currently standing in front of a few beautiful women with a smile on her face.

“It is nice to finally meet you all.”

“Indeed. Though I will say, you are indeed beautiful.”

Felberta chuckled.

“I agree. Those features, oh my fucking god, no wonder that bastard fell for you the moment he saw you. He got so greedy that he didn't even notice this ‘curse’ of yours.”

Allura nodded as well.

“Well, I will admit, you are the most beautiful woman I have ever seen, after me of course. Though I am much more curious about what goes on inside that head of yours.”

Evane looked at Amaya with her eyes shining with curiosity.

“Well, thank you for the warm greeting and your compliments, however, I do not plan to sleep with any of you.

I am already taken.”

Saying that, Amaya looked at Nux and smiled lovingly.

Then, her lovingly smile turned into a disdainful one when her eyes returned to the woman again.

“Though I will say, looking at your faces, I am now even more rest assured that you bitches won't be able to take my Nux away from me.”

Hearing those words, Felberta's face twitched in annoyance.

"That's why I didn't want to meet you."

Yes, this was Amaya's first time meeting... everyone.

Indeed, she hasn't met any of Nux's women even though she has been with him for such a long time. She hasn't even met Allura or Edda, who have been living in the Royal Palace just like her.

Well, that was how she was,

She didn't like socializing.

Everything related to talking to people was done by Kelton, her butler.

"Same. I didn't want to meet her either."

"I agree as well."

"Well, she sounded like a bitch. Now it turns out she actually is one."

Thyra snorted.

"Trust me, the feeling is mutual. I only came here because it was necessary."

Amaya retorted.

Nux could swear that he saw sparks flying around in the air.

He had to intervene, he knew it, however,

Someone beat him to it.

"But I wanted to meet you, Sister Amaya."

"Well, yes, except for you, Skyla.

I wanted to meet you as well.

You are, way way way better than all these bitches.”

Amaya smiled warmly as her dark eyes fell on Skyla.

“Oh ho? Even this Amaya can’t escape your charm, good job Skyla.”

Ember chuckled.

Amaya looked at Ember and narrowed her eyes.

“What do you mean by ‘this’ Amaya.”

“Nothing, don’t take it seriously. It’s just a habit.”

Amaya narrowed her eyes even further.

Ember smiled and looked right into Amaya’s eyes.

She was definitely enjoying this.

“Alright girls, this is enough greetings, right? Though I preferred for if it was slightly... warmer...”

This time, Nux finally interrupted.

“Oh, why? Were you expecting a Tensome?”

Edda questioned with a playful look on her face.

“Just so you know, I am down for that. Call me anytime you want.”

She chuckled.

“I am not down.”

Amaya was quick to refuse.

“This is something you and I can agree on.”

Felberta nodded.

“Indeed.”

Thyra nodded as well.

“Too messy...”

Lane spoke.

“...”

The rest of the women looked at her.

“What...?”

Lane questioned.

“Why are you even imagining that, Lane.”

Felberta couldn't help but shake her head.

“Hmph! You guys just don't realize what you are missing out on.”

Edda shrugged.

“You say it like you have done it before.”

Thyra retorted.

“It won't hurt to try, will it?”

Edda questioned.

“”””No.””””

Nux looked at the girls and then, he started thinking.

Tensome... does not seem like a bad idea at all...

Actually, he was a little interested now.

“Amaya, don’t you think your actions are a little too rash.”

Suddenly, Allura questioned.

“What do you mean?”

Amaya questioned.

“Well, you know, sneaking out of the Palace like that. I know you have [Conceal], but won’t this just alert the King? Won’t he become warier? You did just sneak out of his Palace, right under his man’s nose, after all.”

Allura explained.

“Well, you do not have to worry about that.”

Amaya however, shook her head, and then, a wicked smile appeared on her face.

“He will be warier of me, yes. However, he won’t be able to act on it. He simply won’t have the manpower to do so.”

“He will know about the Emperor soon, won’t he?”

A similar smile appeared on Allura’s face as well.

“Heh, that’s not it.”

Amaya’s smile widened.

“These next few days would be a nightmare for our dear King. Problems here, problems there, problems everywhere.

Problems out of the Palace, problems inside the Palace, the problems just won’t end.

Heh, I just hope that he would take everything on bravely and won't just give up in between."

"Not going to lie, that does sound incredibly wonderful."

Felberta smiled as well.

"Indeed."

Allura nodded.

Others nodded as well, smiling.

Amaya nodded back.

"So? Are you finally going to discuss your plan?"

Ember questioned with a curious look.

Yes, this time, other than Nux, nobody knew what was going on inside Amaya's head.

According to Amaya, it would be better to discuss the plans while facing each other, unlike the other plans that they discussed with the telepathic connection.

That is the reason this meeting was arranged in the first place.

"Indeed, I will tell you guys what I have in my mind,"

Amaya nodded but then,

"However,"

Her eyes fell on Evane Skyfall.

She walked towards her and greeted her.

"It is nice to meet you, Princess."

“Y-Yes, I feel the same... C- Sister Amaya.”

Evane stuttered, for some reason, she felt... timid... around her.

“I actually wanted to meet you the most compared to all others.”

Amaya smiled.

Skyla pouted.

As if sensing that, Amaya turned towards her and corrected herself,

“After Skyla, of course.”

Skyla smiled.

Amaya smiled and turned back to Evane.

“W-Why?”

Evane questioned.

“Well, I wanted to ask something.”

“What is it?”

“Princess Evane, would you like to be the Ruler of this Kingdom?”

# Chapter 402

“Princess Evane, would you like to be the Ruler of this Kingdom?”

Amaya walked towards Evane and questioned with a curious look on her face.

“H-Huh? R-R-Ruler? A-As is the Queen?”

“Of course, what else would it be?”

So? How about it?

Would you like to participate in the Battle for the Throne and fight with your dear brothers?”

“O-Oh.”

Evane didn't know how to respond.

Seeing this, Amaya stepped back and explained.

“You see, our initial plan was simple, we were planning to kill the King and then overthrow his reign. Nux would then become the next King and we would then live the rest of our life together with him, as Queens.

His Queen, mind you, I am not interested in ruling the Kingdom.,

My only wish is to see him sitting on the Throne and ruling the world.”

Amaya looked at Nux and smiled lovingly.

Nux chuckled and then sent a flying kiss in her direction.

Amaya's smile widened and then, she turned back to Evane,

“However, there are certain problems with that plan.

One is Astaria Skyfall, the Emperor Stage Cultivator that is protecting the Skyfall Kingdom, she would not allow anyone who is not a Skyfall to sit on that Throne.

Well, to be honest, we would have dealt with her one way or another,

However, we have now stumbled upon a new problem, a problem I can't deal with."

"E-Even you can't deal w-with it?"

"As much as I hate to admit it, I cannot."

Amaya shook her head with a disappointed look on her face.

"What's the problem?"

Evane questioned with a curious look on her face.

The moment she met Amaya, she could feel a strange pressure emitting from her, it was as if this woman was capable of doing literally anything.

Initially, she only thought of Amaya as a pitiful girl who was abandoned by everyone.

However, after having a chat with Skyla and the others, she finally realized, Amaya was anything but pitiful. Yes, whatever happened to her might be sad, however, she wasn't dejected, she continued fighting and with her frightening intelligence, she successfully raised the largest information chamber in the whole world in just 5 years.

In Evane's eyes, Amaya was an invincible woman.

Someone who is completely different than...

Her.

Therefore, she didn't know how to react to what Amaya said.

“Well, her name is Evane Skyfall or Evane Leander.”

Amaya smiled as she looked at Evane.

“M-Me?”

Evane was surprised.

Amaya chuckled and then she explained,

“You see, killing the King is easy, however, now that you are here, Nux is hesitating.

No matter how distant the two of you are, in the end, you two are still related by blood.

Well, to be honest, I can't really relate, if it were me, I would rather support him in killing that sorry excuse of a man who claims to be my father, and from what I have seen, your father isn't very different from mine. I don't know why you would feel bad about his death.

But now that I have seen you, I can understand.

You are too timid, Evane.

Although you won't say anything out loud, you would still be affected by his death. You might even blame yourself for it and this is something this man wouldn't accept, no matter what.”

Amaya spoke as she pointed at Nux.

A small smile appeared on Nux's face as he glanced at Amaya.

‘And here I thought that I hid it from you.’

He chuckled.

‘Hmph! Boy, try training for another 1000 years before trying to fool me.’

Amaya snorted.

Nux shook his head with a wry smile on his face.

He thought that Amaya would only discuss the plan she had discussed with him, however, clearly, she has some other things in her mind.

‘Amaya... just how can you be so amazing?’

‘I was born amazing.’

Amaya lifted her chest in pride.

‘Oi Oi Oi, how dare you two talk to each other using the connection.’

Suddenly, Ember interrupted.

‘Hmm? How did you know?’

Nux frowned.

He was sure his connection with Amaya was a personal one, others shouldn't be able to listen to it.

‘Just look at her.’

Ember spoke.

Nux then glanced at Amaya and,

“Pfftt!”

He burst out in laughter.

Amaya, who was talking to Evane was now standing with her chest lifted up, closed eyes, and a proud smile on her face, while others looked at her with a confused looks on their face.

The scene looked quite comical.

\*Cough\* \*Cough\*

Hearing his laugh, Amaya soon came out of her reverie and coughed to hide her embarrassment.

Then, as if nothing happened, she turned back toward Evane and continued,

“And since Nux wouldn’t accept this, I need to come up with something else.

Something that doesn’t involve killing that useless father of yours.”

Amaya’s tone sounded... disappointed for some reason.

Evane didn’t know what to say.

She knew that Nux wanted to become the King.

She wasn’t a fool, she knew something like this won’t happen until the King, that is her father, is dead.

She was given a choice.

Her future husband or her father.

A man who she just met a few months ago, or the man who shared the same blood as her.

The answer was obvious.

Her future husband.

Unlike Nux, with whom, she could now spend her entire day without any complaints, she wasn’t really close to her father. She didn’t even have to think for a second to come up with an answer.

It was that obvious.

However, if she was actually honest, and could be a little more selfish,

She would rather not choose at all.

And Amaya finding out about this and actually doing something about it...

This was... touching...

She felt like she was around the people who actually cared about her.

A small smile appeared on her face.

However,

“You really don’t want the King to live now do you?”

Ember questioned with a curious smile on her face as she glanced at Amaya.

“Hmph! Who would want that bastard to live any longer?”

# Chapter 403

“You really don’t want the King to live now do you?”

Ember questioned with a curious smile on her face as she glanced at Amaya.

“Hmph! Who would want that bastard to live any longer?”

Before Amaya could even answer, another woman snorted.

Evane, Amaya, and Ember turned towards Allura, and Ember smiled.

“Heeh? Sister Allura, I didn’t know you hated the King so much.”

“Try living with him for a few days, you would have the same reaction.”

Allura snorted.

“Thank you very much but I am very fine here.”

Ember chuckled.

“Tch.”

Allura clicked her tongue.

“Umm... Sister Allura... why do you hate the King so much?”

Evane couldn’t help but question.

Allura’s eyes fell on Evane and she finally realized what she has done.

“Nothing, I was just joking.

The King won’t live for a long time anyway, we don’t have to kill him if it is not absolutely necessary.”

“No, you don’t have to hide it, Allura.”

Suddenly, Thyra stepped forward.

“Our initial plan was to Kill the King, which was put on hold because it might affect Sister Evane, however, and as much as I hate to say it, you are also part of the family.

If you are dissatisfied, Nux wouldn’t be happy either and I wouldn’t allow that. Therefore, say what you were going to say.

Why do you hate the King so much?”

‘Thyra standing up for Allura, now that is surprising. Not complaining though, it is pleasant to the eyes.’

A smile appeared on Nux’s face.

However, then, a frown appeared on his face,

He didn’t know Allura hated the King so much.

She never mentioned it before.

“I am not lying, nothing happened between me and the King, I... well, I would just prefer if I don’t have to see his face anymore.”

Seeing that everyone was now looking at her, Allura sighed.

“My name is Allura Winfer, I come from Winfer family.

My family didn’t have a very strong influence, we were just Baron, I, however, was different, unlike other members of my family, I had a Medium Level Affinity with Water Element, of course, it is nothing much compared to some monsters here, however, for a Baron Family, it was big deal.

If I trained well, I could become a Master Stage Cultivator, someone who is as strong as an Earl.

When I learned about it, I was overjoyed, the only thing I wanted to do was to raise my family's status.

And for that, I joined the Royal Academy, faced all the bullying and harassment bravely, cultivated with everything I had, but one day,

My family called me back.

I returned, and realized that while I was working hard, doing my best to help my family, my so-called family sold me to the King, in exchange for raising their status from Barons to Viscounts.”

Allura revealed her past with a smile on her face.

However, Nux and everyone present in the room could see how painful that smile was.

Nux appeared behind that Allura and hugged her from behind,

Allura's fake smile was instantly replaced by a warm, lovely smile.

‘This bitch.’

Thyra cursed in annoyance when she realized what Allura was trying to do.

Of course, she wasn't going to let her win.

“I still don't understand, I get that you were betrayed by your family, but why do you hate the King? You aren't blaming him for this, are you?”

Thyra questioned.

“Well, after I was arranged to marry the King of this country, the naïve 20 year old me thought another thing.

‘So what if my family betrayed me? I am leaving them anyway, therefore, rather than focusing on them, I should focus on the future. I would give everything to my future husband.’

With that fragile attempt to heal my heart, I focused on the King and tried to love him with all my heart, initially, things were going well, the King reciprocated my feeling and visited me from time to time, I actually thought that the King loved me back, the two of us then... well, spent a night together and then,

The King disappeared.

I waited.

I waited for a whole year.

And then I finally realized.

He betrayed me as well, just like my so-called family.

I realized that since my birth, I was just a trophy.

And whenever I see that man, and that unbothered, slightly disdainful look in his eyes, I realize that again.

Therefore, I would rather not see that bastard-”

Before Allura could even complete, Nux tightened his hug around her and whispered,

“You are not a trophy, Allura.”

“Of course, Allura Winfer and Allura Skyfall was,

Allura Leander isn't, right?”

A big smile appeared on Allura's face.

“Indeed.”

Nux then started kissing Allura's shoulder.

Allura held Nux's head with her arm and enjoyed his touch.

At the same time, she glanced at Thyra and smiled.

Thyra shook her head and smiled back.

‘You really are a bitch.’

She muttered.

‘Thank you for your kind words.’

Allura chuckled.

‘But Nux is right, you are not a Trophy.’

Thyra spoke in a serious tone.

Allura looked at Thyra for a while, and then, she smiled,

‘I know that already.’

Thyra nodded.

“Wait, so you hate King just because you don’t like the look in his eyes?”

Ember questioned.

“As I said, I don’t really hate him, I just don’t want to see him. Killing him would be better, however, if that would hurt one of my sisters, I wouldn’t want that.

As long as I don’t see that ugly face, I am perfectly fine.”

Allura answered.

“Well then, just like we decided, we won’t be killing the King, rather, we would just make Evane the new Queen, which would automatically make Nux the King.

Is that okay with you, Evane?

Are you ready to participate in the Battle of the Throne?”

Evane looked at Amaya and then others with a determined look on her face and then, she nodded.

“I am ready.”

# Chapter 404

“Talk to him, if he dares to disagree, ki-”

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

In a lavish room, a man with red colored hair and eyes, wearing black-golden colored clothes, was sitting on his chair and was instructing his subordinate who was kneeling on the floor with a respectful expression on his face.

The man had sharp features and a charming, yet dangerous Aura.

He was Leofric Vestalis, the Head of the Vestalis Duke House, and was one of the strongest Expert Stage Cultivators of the Skyfall Kingdom.

A man who was feared by many and only a few people in this entire world dared to go against him.

Today, however, Duke Vestalis was interrupted by a knock.

This normally wouldn't have been a problem, however, the man who knocked on the door dared to enter without waiting for his permission.

Now, this was getting out of line.

The Duke narrowed his eyes and looked at the guard who entered his office.

“You better have a good reason for this blatant disrespect you have shown me, Zane, because if you don't, then don't even think about meeting your family again.”

The Guard, who just entered the Duke's office felt a shiver run down his spine.

He was a Grand Master Stage Cultivator, however, in front of the Duke, he wasn't nearly as impressive.

The Duke could destroy him in seconds, and he knew it.

However, he had a good reason for doing what he did.

“Lord Vestalis.”

He called out.

The Duke looked at him, seeing that he has gained the Duke's attention, Zane reported.

“Princess Evane is here to see you.”

Suddenly, those eyes that looked like they would pierce Zane into pieces shined in gleam.

“Evane is here?”

An excited look appeared on Vestalis's face.

“Yes, Lord Vestalis,”

A small smile appeared on Zane's face and he continued,

“And I apologize for my rudeness, but I have already brought the princess in since I couldn't let her stand outside like others. I am ready to accept any punishment you deliver.”

Hearing those words, Duke Vestalis laughed out loud.

“Hahaha~ You don't have to worry, Zane.

You have done a good thing. It is indeed not correct to treat Evane as if she is a normal guest. She is my Grand Daughter, of course.

Don't worry, rather than a punishment, I would reward you instead.

Tell me, what do you want?”

Duke Vestalis questioned with a happy expression on his face.

Zane smiled inwardly.

It was just as he expected.

The moment he talked about his Grand Daughter, the cold and ruthless Duke disappeared.

Zane never thought about getting punishment for even a second, he knew about the Duke, and he knew how he would react.

It was a calculated move.

However, now wasn't the time to be relaxed.

“Lord, you are generous, and I would love to accept a reward, however, the Princess is still waiting outside, please meet her first.”

“Hahaha~”

The Duke laughed again.

“Good Good, Zane Riverson, I give you a day to decide what you want, tomorrow, you can come to me and demand it.

Think well.”

“As you command, Lord Vestalis.”

Zane bowed his head.

“I will send the Princess in now.”

Then, he stood up and left the room.

A few seconds later, the door opened, and a breathtakingly beautiful blonde walked in.

“Grandpa.”

Evane greeted with a fresh smile on her face.

“Evane!”

Duke Vestalis rushed towards Evane and hugged her.

Evane hugged back.

“I missed you, Grandpa.”

“Hmph! If you missed me, you would have visited me sooner.”

Vestalis pouted.

His subordinate, who was standing behind him couldn't help but shake his head.

This Duke Vestalis...

Who would believe that this man is a cold-blooded killer if he saw him acting like this?

Just a few minutes ago, he was talking about killing someone, and look at him now, fawning over his granddaughter like that.

Just how can one change his attitude so quickly?

His subordinate, however, was used to this.

Duke Vestalis was filled with unconditional love for his first Grand Daughter.

The moment he held her in her arms when she was born, his ruthless, expressionless face crumbled and was replaced by a delightful one.

It was truly a bizarre sight that even the people close to Duke couldn't understand.

Not even his daughter, Princess Evane's mother could understand why her father loved her daughter so much, even she didn't receive this much love from the Duke.

"Well, I am here now, aren't I?"

Evane replied with a smile on her face.

"It is good that you are because if you hadn't visited me for a few more days, I would have barged into that academy of yours and would have demanded to meet you.

How dare you stay away from your Grandpa for such a long time?"

Duke Vestalis snorted.

Evane chuckled.

"See? I knew you would try to do that, therefore, I visited you before you could barge in."

"Hahaha~ My Evane knows me well."

The Duke laughed out loud.

"Alright now, have a seat."

Then, he pulled Evane's hand and placed her on the chair.

Then, he sat on the chair opposite to Evane's and turned towards his subordinate.

"What are you standing there for? Bring the Tea, also, make sure to bring those chocolate cookies,"

"As you command."

The subordinate bowed and then walked away.

‘Who would believe that a Duke would remember his Granddaughter’s favorite snacks? Tsk Tsk.’

The Subordinate thought inwardly and clicked his tongue.

“Now, let’s have a long chat, shall we?”

On the other hand, the Duke looked at Evane and smiled.

“So? How was the Academy? Did anyone bully you?”

Evane chuckled, and then she replied,

“No one bullied me grandpa, and the Academy was good as well, however,”

Suddenly, Evane’s face turned serious.

“I am not here to talk about that.”

Seeing the serious expression on his Granddaughter’s face, a frown appeared on the Duke’s face.

“What happened?”

He questioned.

“Grandpa, I need a favor.”

# Chapter 405

“Your Majesty, I think I have made it very clear before, I do not want to entertain anyone in my Hours Of Freedom.”

Amaya, who was currently sipping her tea inside her room, questioned with a calm look on her face.

Yes, she was indirectly telling the King of the Kingdom to get the hell out of her room.

Actually, it wasn't even indirect, it was pretty straightforward.

She just didn't say the words, 'get the fuck out' directly.

However, the King understood what she wanted to say and narrowed his eyes.

“You cannot talk to me like that. I am the King of the Kingdom.”

Amaya smiled,

“I apologize, if I sounded rude, Your Majesty. It is just I lose control over my emotions due to this annoying curse, I am forced to stay in one place for the whole day, therefore, I really value these 2 hours I have where I can move and do whatever I want.”

The King looked at Amaya and narrowed his eyes even more.

Her words were polite... however... why did the King feel that she was saying, 'I don't give a fuck' right in his face?

“Where did you go yesterday?”

In the end, the King decided to completely ignore it and questioned directly.

Dealing with Amaya was hard, especially after she has been ‘on edge’ due to her curse.

“Hmm? Didn’t I tell you before? I snuck out of the Palace.”

Amaya answered with an innocent look on her face.

The King’s face twitched in annoyance.

“You did tell me that. However, that is not what I am talking about right now. What I want to know is where you sneaked out yesterday.”

He questioned.

“Well, it wouldn’t be called sneaking out if everyone knew about my destination, now will it?” Amaya smiled.

“Amaya, I am not in the mood for any jokes.”

The King spoke with a serious look on his face.

“I am not joking, your Majesty.

All I can tell you is that I went there because I wanted to send some of my special spies into the Solid Earth Kingdom.

I can’t tell you anything other than that.”

The King looked at Amaya for a while, and then, he questioned.

“Did you succeed?”

“Well, I have already made my moves, and whether it will succeed or not, I will know within 2 weeks.”

Amaya answered.

The King nodded.

“What about your Majesty? Did you manage to place your spies into the Solid Earth Kingdom?”

Amaya questioned.

The King shook his head,

“I do not have any answer to that question, Keeve is the one who handles all of that, he hasn’t reported anything to me yet.

Actually, I am worried about another thing right now.”

Amaya noticed how the King refused to answer her and changed the topic.

‘He is smarter than he looks.’

She noted inwardly and smiled inwardly.

Then, she ‘frowned’,

“Hmm? Another thing? What happened, Your Majesty?”

She questioned.

Successfully allowing the King to change the topic.

“It’s about the Princes. The fight between them has become even fiercer than before.”

“Hmm? What happened?”

“A rumor spread, saying that I would soon choose the Crown Prince and that I favor the Third Prince. I do not know who has spread this rumor, but I am sure he or she has done it intentionally. Everything happened way too quickly for it to be natural.”

“Oh? So this flamed the War between the princes?”

Amaya questioned with an interested look on her face.

“Indeed.”

The King nodded.

“Then what about you, Your Majesty? Who do you support?”

Amaya questioned.

“Well, everyone has their own strong points.”

The King replied.

Clearly, he had no intention of answering this question.

Amaya lost interested.

A Meaningless conversation was the thing she hated the most.

Unless it is with Nux of course, with him, she could talk about the most meaningless matters of the world. Just his presence alone was enough for her.

Of course, Ricardus wasn't Nux, therefore, now that she has learned what wanted, Amaya wanted to end this conversation.

And she had a perfect way to do so.

“Indeed, they are you so-”

Amaya stopped inwardly and then, she cursed,

“Shit.”

Her face contoured into a painful frown, and Black Mist came out of her body. In an abrupt manner, she stood up and jumped into her bed.

Then, she groaned in pain.

“Uuugghhhh!!!”

More and more Mist came out of her body.

Seeing this scene, the King stepped back.

Amaya clenched the bedsheets and gritted her teeth.

Clearly, she was in immense pain.

“I will take my leave now.”

The King muttered and then, he turned around.

He wasn't interested in that curse of hers.

Especially when there are chances that he might be cursed as well.

He quickly left Amaya's room and the moment he left, Amaya's face returned to normal.

‘My butterfly did a good job.’

She spoke.

‘Well, she was your butterfly after all. She has to be good.’

Nux replied.

A small smile appeared on Amaya's face.

‘Indeed Indeed.’

‘Did you talk with the King?’

Nux questioned.

‘Heh, that coward just left.’

Amaya snorted.

‘Oh? Did your ‘Curse’ return?’

‘Yeah’

‘Hahaha~’

Nux laughed.

Amaya chuckled as well.

‘It is really convenient.’

She commented.

‘Indeed.’

Nux nodded.

Then, he questioned.

‘So? What was he talking about?’

‘Nothing really. He was really tight-lipped today.’

‘Well, whatever. It’s not like his answers would really help us in any way.’

Nux shrugged.

‘Indeed.’

Amaya nodded, and then, she questioned.

‘What about Evane? Did she leave?’

‘Yes, she is talking to her Grandpa right now. I just hope that man is as good as she believes him to be.’

Nux answered.

‘Don’t worry.’

Amaya smiled.

‘What about him? When do you think he will visit you?’

Nux questioned.

‘Hmmm? With how the Coward was talking, the rumor spread faster than I expected. He should come to me soon enough, maybe in a day or t-‘

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Suddenly, Amaya heard a knock.

Immediately, she used her [Sense] and her smile widened,

‘He’s here.’

# Chapter 406

“Heeh? Is that True? The Third Prince? But I thought the First Prince would become the Crown Prince.”

“I used to think the same thing, however, that is incorrect. Think about it logically, the only advantage the First Prince has over the Third Prince is that he was born earlier than him.

The Third Prince is smarter, more loved, and has higher potential compared to the First Prince, if it wasn't for the 60 years of age gap between them, the First Prince wouldn't even be a competition.

The King would have to be a fool to choose the First Prince as the Crown Prince.”

“Now that you say i-”

\*Step\* \*Step\* \*Step\*

“Prince Raguel!”

The two servants who were talking to each other suddenly paused and bowed hysterically as they saw a handsome man, with black colored hair, Crystal Blue eyes, well-carved face, wearing Purple colored coat standing in front of them.

‘Zel, you bastard! Why the hell were you talking so loudly!’

The Servant cursed his friend inwardly, his face was pale white and his body was trembling.

Clearly, he was scared.

The man in front of him was Raguel Skyfall, the First Prince of the Skyfall Kingdom.

And, was also the man who they were talking about.

‘I am dead...’

The Servant started thinking about his family as he closed his eyes.

“You are not paid to talk about useless stuff, go do your work.”

The First Prince ordered.

“Huh?”

The Servant, who has closed his eyes suddenly opened them and frowned.

“What? Was I not clear enough?”

The First Prince questioned.

“No! i-I Apologize, Prince Raguel! We will return to our work right away!”

Saying that, the two servants rushed away.

Seeing them running away, the First Prince sighed.

‘This is the 4th time already...’

Raguel couldn’t understand.

Everything was going fine 2 days ago.

Everyone respected him and believed that he would be crowned as the next King.

Just what in the hell happened in these last two days?

Why have the odds fallen in favor of his brother? And so drastically at that?

Why was the Third Prince’s so-called Potential wasn’t mentioned before?  
Why now? Did something happen?

He talked with many people, his mother, his Grandfather, and his loyal servants, but no one was able to come up with an answer.

This lack of answers annoyed the First Prince.

In reality, the First Prince was panicking.

He could see his chances of becoming the King disappearing right in front of his eyes.

And in panic.

He decided to talk to a certain woman.

A woman whom he had never talked to before.

Amaya Skyfall.

If anyone would know the answers to his questions, it would be Amaya Skyfall.

A princess from another Kingdom. A woman with the largest information network in the world. A woman he normally avoided because of her scary curse.

Of course, it was clear that he couldn't avoid her now.

Therefore,

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

He knocked on the doors of her room.

“...”

No one answered.

The First Prince frowned and

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

He knocked again.

“...”

But again, no one answered.

The First Prince’s frown deepened, then, without waiting,

He directly opened the door and entered the door.

‘Hmm?’

Inside, he saw a woman covered in ominous-looking Black Mist laying on the bed with an expressionless look on her divinely beautiful face.

‘She... really is beautiful...’

The First Prince was taken aback.

For the next two minutes, he just stood there, admiring Amaya’s beauty.

Amaya, who was waiting for him to speak up, felt her lips twitching in frustration.

Why the hell was this monkey looking at her?

Does he want to die!?

Tsk!

After snorting inwardly, Amaya decided to open her eyes on her own.

“It’s rather disrespectful to enter a woman’s room without her consent, don’t you think, First Prince?”

Amaya spoke in a calm but oddly soothing voice.

There were no signs of her frustration in her voice.

The First Prince finally came out of his reverie when he heard his voice,

“I-I apologize.”

He replied and then continued,

“I knocked a few times but no one answered.”

“And I believed that not answering meant that I wasn’t ready to meet anyone.”

A mannerly way to call someone a rude bastard.

“Again, I apologize, but I really wanted to talk to you about something that is very urgent.”

The First Prince wasn’t offended, rather, he felt that he was in the wrong for disturbing Lady Amaya’s sleep, therefore, he apologized.

Amaya looked at Raguel’s face for a while and then, she muttered,

“What is it?”

She questioned.

Raguel’s face twitched.

She could at least offer him a seat.

Just why is she being so unwelcoming?

In the end, he just sighed, then grabbed a chair and sat down,

“Have you heard about the recent rumor about me and Lovis?”

He questioned.

However, instead of answering, Amaya looked at him with a deadpan expression on her face.

Raguel soon realized his mistake and reframed his question.

“This Rumor about me and Lovis, do you know how it spread? Who is behind it? Why did it spread so quickly? Also...

Is it true?”

“I don’t think I am obligated to answer any of your questions,”

Amaya replied.

“You are not.”

Raguel agreed.

“But you can still help me, can’t you?”

“And why would I do that? What is in it for me?”

Amaya questioned.

“What do you want? Name your price, I will buy this information from you.”

Raguel proposed.

Amaya, however, just chuckled,

“Heh. Did you forget who you are talking to? Why would I want your money?”

Raguel clenched his fist.

“Then what do you want?”

However, he soon controlled his anger and questioned.

“ ... ”

Amaya observed Raguel for a while.

A few more seconds passed by, and now, Raguel felt a little uncomfortable. It felt as if Amaya was investigating him.

Suddenly, as if she was done with her little investigation,

Amaya turned around and closed her eyes.

“This information is not for sale.”

A vein popped up on Raguel’s forehead and then, he warned.

“You better answer me when I am asking nicely.”

# Chapter 407

“This information is not for sale.”

Amaya replied as she turned around and closed her eyes.

The First Prince didn't know how to react to that.

If it was just a normal rejection, he would have probably left quietly, however, that little observation Amaya did before answering...

That annoyed him.

It was as if Amaya was trying to say, ‘you are not worthy of buying this information from me.’

And of course, as the First Prince of the Strongest Kingdom, Raguel didn't like that answer at all.

A vein popped up on his forehead and he glared at Amaya.

“You better answer me when I am asking nicely.”

Hearing those words, Amaya opened her eyes again and glanced at Raguel,

“Oh? What if I don't?”

“It is not hard to hurt a cripple who cannot move,”

Raguel threatened.

“Are you threatening me?”

Amaya narrowed her eyes.

“I am not, I am just saying that you shouldn't make enemies, especially in that condition.”

“Heh.”

Suddenly, Amaya chuckled.

Raguel frowned in confusion and a smile appeared on Amaya’s face.

“You don’t even have the guts to admit that you just threatened me, a cripple and you want to become the King? Quite laughable.”

This time, Raguel lost control over his emotions and tried to grab Amaya’s neck.

“Sure, c’mon, try and touch me, I would like to see how many seconds this Mist needs to completely obliterate the First Prince of the Strongest Kingdom.”

However, Amaya’s next words stopped him.

Raguel clenched his finger in anger and threatened.

“Don’t think you are invincible just because I can’t touch you.

I still have many ways to kill you.”

“Are you threatening me, First Prince?”

Amaya repeated her question with a smile on her face.

This time, however, Raguel didn’t back down and replied in a cold voice.

“I am, can you do anything about it?”

Hearing those words, Amaya chuckled again.

“Are you threatening a Royal Consort? I didn’t know you were so brave. I wonder what the King would have to say about it.”

“ ... ”

Raguel turned silent.

He completely forgot the woman in front of him is his father's woman.

\*Gulp\*

Raguel gulped as he glanced at Amaya with a wary look on his face.

This woman... she was playing with his emotions!

Raguel finally realized why his mother was so wary of this woman.

She may not be strong, but, she knew how to play with the person in front of him.

She made him say things he would normally never say, especially to a consort.

The First Prince narrowed his eyes and observed Amaya.

On the other side, Amaya was doing the same.

‘Arrogant, short-tempered and...

A fool.’

And within a few seconds, she formed a character chart in her mind.

“I may not be able to harm you right now, however, I still suggest you to not to underestimate me.”

A few seconds later, Raguel questioned.

Amaya looked at him and smiled, clearly, she was not taking him seriously.

“Once I become the King, your status as the Royal Consort will not save you anymore,”

“Heh. This would have scared me 2 days ago, not now.”

Amaya dropped a bomb.

The First Prince narrowed his eyes.

“...”

Amaya looked at him, waiting for his next question.

“...”

Raguel, however, didn't say anything.

‘Haahh...’

Amaya sighed inwardly.

‘I guess I need to spoon-feed him.’

“You becoming the King is imposs-”

Amaya wanted to say something, however, she paused mid-sentence and turned around.

It was as if she was hiding something.

The First Prince finally realized.

“You know something, don't you?”

He questioned as he narrowed his eyes.

Amaya sighed.

“I will not answer your questions.”

She repeated.

“Lady Amaya, please, I need your help.”

Raguel spoke, sincerity shining in his eyes.

Amaya looked at him for a while and spoke,

“Why? Didn’t you say you would kill me once you become the King?”

“I give you my word that I won’t.”

Raguel answered with a serious look on his face.

Of course, normally, his ‘word’ wouldn’t have been enough.

However, that is only when Amaya was actually scared of him.

She could kill someone like Raguel with just a mere thought.

He posed no threat.

She looked at Raguel for a while and then, she finally dropped a bomb.

“You know, I really hate Ricardus.”

The First Prince narrowed his eyes.

“What do you mean?”

“I am sure you know what it means, don’t you?”

Amaya questioned as her dark black eyes shined.

“Do you... want me to Kill the King?”

After some hesitation, the First Prince questioned.

‘Huh?’

Amaya frowned.

She had to admit, this was not something she was expecting when she was playing her little game.

Then, a small smile appeared on Amaya’s face.

She wasn't expecting this, however, she would definitely walk on this new road of possibilities.

Within a few seconds, a whole new set of questions appeared in Amaya's voice and she continued,

“Look, I will be honest with you Raguel.

It doesn't matter if this new rumor about King favoring Lovis over you is true or not, there are some events that are going around in this Kingdom that are not in your favor at all.

If things continue to move as they are moving right now, the Throne will never be yours.”

“What are these ‘events’ you are talking about?”

Raguel questioned.

Amaya, however, chuckled,

“Now hear me out, will you?

Why do you even need to know what these ‘things’ are?”

“What do you mean?”

“Answer me, who would become the new King if suddenly, Ricardus dies tomorrow morning?”

Amaya questioned.

Right now, her eyes were completely focused on any minute changes that appears on Raguel's face.

Raguel's eyes widened, but soon, he replied.

“That would be me.”

“Indeed. That would be you.

You are the Strongest of all the Princes, you are the Oldest, and right now, you are the only possible option.

However, the question is.

Are you willing to take the right step?

Are you willing to betray your father to make the Throne yours?”

# Chapter 408

“Are you willing to take the right step?

Are you willing to betray your father to make the Throne yours?”

Amaya questioned with a curious smile on her face.

One thing was clear, she was definitely enjoying different reactions that were appearing and disappearing from the First Prince’s face.

“ ... ”

The Prince remained silent for a good while and then, he looked at Amaya and seeing her smiling at him, his face turned cold and he stood up.

“I do not need to take these extreme steps, I am sure, father the King will make the right decision and will make me the next Crown Prince.

Now if you don’t have anything substantial to say, I will be taking my leave.”

Saying that, the First Prince turned around.

Looking at his back, Amaya chuckled.

This wasn’t the reaction she was hoping for, but, oh well, it was still better than other scenarios in her mind.

At the very least, the First Prince doesn’t seem to be against the idea of going against the King.

How and why she concluded that?

Well, it was pretty clear from his reaction.

If the First Prince was actually against the Idea of going against the King, then with his short-tempered attitude, he would have stood up and attacked her right there. Of course, it was possible that he was holding himself back.

However, Amaya believed that it was highly unlikely.

Out of all the emotions, Raguel showed when she talked about betraying the King, anger was missing.

Therefore, Amaya believed that at the very least, Raguel was not very loyal to his father.

Which, of course, was completely reasonable since the King was the worse father a child could hope for.

He never treated his children with love.

No, let alone love, he didn't show a single emotion to his children.

His children meant nothing to him.

He only cared about his Trophies.

It would be weirder if a child would actually be on his side even after all that.

“Raguel.”

Just as the First Prince was about to move out of the room, Amaya called.

“What is it?”

Raguel turned back.

“You should look into Duke Merula and Duke Vestalis.”

Saying those words, Amaya closed her eyes.

From this action, it was clear that she wasn't going to talk about this anymore.

Raguel understood that, therefore,

“I will look into it, thank you.”

He walked away with a solemn look on his face.

These two names that Amaya spoke of.

These two were very important people.

Duke Merula was the Duke who supports the Third Prince, his biggest rival, obviously, the relationship between the First Prince and Duke Merula wasn't good.

Duke Vestalis was the Duke who stepped back from this battle and has declared his neutrality. Currently, he is the pivot point of this battle. He could even be called the strongest Duke.

If he stays neutral, the Battle continues without any problem, however, if his neutrality changes, it would change the whole course of this Battle.

If these two people are communicating, then this was not a piece of good news for Raguel.

Just as this thought popped up in Raguel's mind, his walking speed increased and soon, he left the Palace.

Where was he going?

He wanted to meet Duke Fulvianus, his Grandfather.

He had to talk to him about this incident.

And he had to do it urgently.

...

“Did you know? Teacher Evane left the Academy.”

On the other side, Arvina walks into Nux’s room and informed.

“Hmm? Of course, I do.”

Nux frowned.

Why was she so surprised?

He wondered inwardly.

“You know?”

Arvina raised her eyebrow.

“Of course I do. She is my wife after all, how could I not know?”

“What!?”

Arvina’s eyes widened in surprise.

“Hmm? What happened? Why do you look so surprised, Teacher Arvina?”

Nux tilted his head in confusion.

“Teacher Evane is your wife!?”

Arvina, however, wasn’t as calm as him.

“Hmm? I thought you knew?”

Nux was still as confused as before.

“How would I know something like that!?”

“Did you not notice how she was visiting us every night? She was also there when I fought against Baldy. I thought you already connected the dots.”

Nux replied.

“I thought that she was just coming here to meet her student’s wives! The same thing happened with the Principal, I thought she was just here to help her student!”

“Hmm? Then why would she visit us again and again if she just wanted to meet my wives? Also, how would she help me deal with a King Stage Cultivator when she is only a Grand Master Stage Cultivator?”

Nux questioned in confusion.

“I was there as well wasn’t I!? I am also just an Expert Stage Cultivator! Also, didn’t I meet your wives multiple times, didn’t I!? Does that mean that I am your wife as well!?”

Arvina questioned back.

‘Well, I don’t mind that at all. I am actually looking forward to that day actually.’

Nux wanted to say this out loud, however, he knew it wasn’t the time yet.

Therefore, he held himself back and stepped back.

“I apologize, Teacher Arvina. I didn’t think about it that way. I should have talked to you about this sooner.”

He admitted his mistake.

“Let me correct my mistake now, Teacher Arvina.

Yes, Evane is indeed my wife. I fell in love with her when I first met her, then I proposed to her after I returned from the Woods Dynasty and luckily, she accepted.”

“S-She accepted.”

Arvina stuttered.

She couldn't believe what she was hearing.

Evane, who was a Teacher just like her was in a relationship with her student...

“H-H-How could you... she is your Teacher...”

Arvina pointed her trembling finger at Nux and questioned.

“Look, Teacher Arvina, I know it feels wrong, and I perfe-”

Nux wanted to explain things, however, suddenly,

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Suddenly, the two of them heard a knock.

Arvina frowned and walked towards the door, however, before she could, the door opened itself and a white-haired beauty walked in.

“You weren't going to let me wait outside, were you?”

The woman spoke and seeing the woman in front of her,

Arvina's eyes widened in horror.

“A-A-Allura Skyfall!”

# Chapter 409

“A-A-Allura Skyfall!”

Arvina’s eyes widened in horror.

Allura’s eyes then finally fell on Arvina and she smiled,

“Arvina, long time no see. How are you doing?”

Then, she turned towards Nux and frowned.

“Did I interrupt anything? Are you busy?”

“Of co-”

Nux was about to answer, however, Arvina beat him to it.

“W-W-What are you doing here!?”

“Huh?”

Allura frowned.

“Weren’t you... weren’t you-”

“Kidnapped?”

Allura smiled.

“Kidnapped?”

Arvina frowned.

“Ahh, it isn’t yet clear what happened to me, is it?”

Allura chuckled.

Arvina couldn't understand a thing about what Allura was talking about, therefore, she turned towards Nux and questioned.

“What happened? The entire Kingdom is busy trying to find her, why is she here!? Wasn't she attacked? Didn't she just disappear in the middle of a busy street?”

Just what in the hell is happening here?

And what is the relation between the two of you?”

Arvina shot a series of questions at Nux.

“Umm... well...”

Nux was a bit overwhelmed by all these questions.

Therefore, Allura took over.

“Well, allow me to answer your questions, Arvina.

Yes, I was attacked and was kidnapped by an extremely terrifying and possessive man who was unable to stay away from me for even a second longer and that kidnapper is standing right in front of you.”

Allura chuckled as she pointed at Nux.

“N-N-Nux?”

Arvina tilted her head in confusion.

“Indeed, he is the one who kidnapped me in the middle of a busy street, right under the eyes of spies sent by the Kingdom.”

Allura smiled.

Nux placed his hand on the back of his head and chuckled embarrassingly.

“You don't have to repeat it like that...”

“Fufufu~”

Allura laughed.

And Arvina, couldn't take this anymore.

“What the hell are you two talking about!?”

Then, she turned towards Nux.

“Nux! Do you realize what you have done!? You kidnapped the Royal Consort! The King's Wife! Why would you do something so stupid!? What would you do if you if the King finds out!? You know you can't fight against the entire Kingdom right now! Why would you Kidnap the King's wif-”

“My Wife.”

“Nux's Wife.”

Nux and Allura corrected at the same time.

“W-What?”

Again, Arvina couldn't believe what she heard.

“Can you not call me that bastard's wife again and again, I feel uncomfortable.”

Allura questioned.

“W-What do you mean?”

“I am not that bastard's wife, you know I was forced by my family. I didn't do it of my own will. So I am not his wife.”

Allura spat with a disgusted face.

Then, a beautiful smile appeared on her face as she looked at Nux.

“I belong to Nux.”

“You are his wife...”

Arvina finally realized.

At the same time, Nux spoke up.

“I did not do anything wrong, Teacher Arvina. I only wanted to stay close to my wife.”

Arvina turned towards Nux and looked at him with disbelief clear in her eyes,

“Y-You went after the King’s wif-”

“Again, don’t call me that.”

Allura interrupted.

Arvina turned towards Allura and couldn’t help but question.

“W-Why did you do that? Why did you betray the King?”

Hearing that question, Allura narrowed her eyes.

“Betray the King? Oh please Arvina, I don’t want to hear that from someone who rarely sees the King’s face in her life.

Not everyone is lucky to avoid that bastard like you.

I did not betray him, I merely did what I actually wanted to.

I don’t want to do things that others tell me to do. I will do what my heart desires.”

“What your heart desires...”

Arvina repeated Allura’s words with a lost look on her face.

“Indeed, what my heart desires.”

Allura repeated those words as well, this time, there was a seductive smile on her face as she looked at Nux.

Nux chuckled as he extended his arms toward her.

Allura’s smile widened and she walked into his embrace.

Seeing that scene, Arvina felt a strange... feeling...

Seeing Allura’s face... that worriless, happy face...

Arvina felt something.

However, she still couldn’t understand.

“Why did you kidnap your own wife?”

Arvina questioned.

“Didn’t I say it before? He was unable to stay away from me. I am just that attractive.”

Allura answered with a haughty look on her face.

Nux chuckled and then, he nodded,

“She is right. I was missing her.”

“How did you do it?”

Arvina narrowed her eyes and questioned.

“Well, I have my ways.”

Nux smiled.

Arvina’s face twitched in annoyance.

She was dying to know how Nux kidnapped someone in broad daylight under so many eyes, however, she knew that he was not going to tell her.

She knew how he worked.

If she tries to ask more, he would just change the topic in a way she wouldn't realize and once she does realize it, she would feel embarrassed.

Therefore, it was better to just not talk about the topic he doesn't want to talk about.

Therefore, Arvina asked another question.

“What if her location is revealed and the King finds out?”

“Why do you think I killed that Idiot from the Shadow Unit?”

“What do you mean?”

Arvina frowned, however soon, she realized what Nux was talking about.

The current investigation...

It was focusing on a completely opposite theory...

The King and his men were trying to find Allura Skyfall who was attacked by a 'mysterious organization.' After further investigation, it turns out that this Mysterious Organization is stronger than they expected and its scope covers the entire continent.

It is believed that Allura was currently being held in another Kingdom and the King's men were still investigating where she is.

However, in truth, the woman they were looking for was staying right inside the capital of their Kingdom, inside the building that is under their control and this 'mysterious organization' they were looking for doesn't even exist!

Nux was literally playing the King and his men.

All of them were dancing on the palm of his hands!

The Top echelons of the strongest Kingdom in the world were being played by an 18-year-old boy!

Just how scary is that?

# Chapter 410

“Y-Y-You... j-just what kind of student have I been teaching?”

Arvina shook her head as she glanced at Nux who was smiling at her.

“A really really really good and hardworking student,”

Nux answered.

“Heh.”

Arvina snorted.

“Umm... Arvina.”

Suddenly, Allura called out.

“Hmm? What is it?”

Arvina turned towards Allura.

“You still train him, don’t you?”

Allura questioned.

Hearing that question, Arvina sighed,

“Yes, I know, he is stronger than me, I know it already and I don’t want to hear it again. My answer is clear, his form might be good, but he can still improve and I believe that I can help him improve.”

A while before, Ember teased Arvina about being weaker than Nux and still training him, Arvina didn’t like that feeling. Therefore, she was a little sensitive about this.

Allura, however, didn’t care about all that.

“Woah Woah, I didn’t ask for any explanation alright, I just wanted a small yes and no. Do you still train him or not?”

“I do. Yes.”

“How many hours?”

“He has been busy, so only 3 hours a day.”

“Lucky you...”

Allura sighed and then she placed her hand on Arvina’s shoulder.

“Alright, Arvina, you can spend your next hour with Nux, I will be taking my leave.”

Then, Allura turned towards Nux and winked playfully.

“I will have 2 sessions tomorrow, don’t forget.”

Nux chuckled and shook his head. Allura turned around, however, Arvina interrupted.

“Wait, I am just about to leave, you can stay here.”

Allura, however, didn’t turn around and just shook her hand,

“No no nope, not happening. You already wasted 15 minutes of my session time. I won’t compromise here at all.

I would rather postpone it to tomorrow.”

Saying that, Allura left Nux’s room.

“...”

Arvina turned silent.

Nux just chuckled.

Arvina then turned towards Nux and snorted.

“You even laid your demonic hands on the King’s Wi- umm... the Royal Consort.”

“It still means the same but whatever.”

Nux commented.

“You really wish to go after the King, don’t you? Do you have some sort of hatred for him?”

Arvina questioned in curiosity.

“Teacher Arvina, I think you got something wrong.”

Suddenly, Nux spoke.

“Hmm? What do you mean?”

Arvina questioned.

“I did not go after Allura because I want to make the King’s wife mine, or I want to go against the King, or because I hate him.

I want to take the King down because I want to stay with Allura.”

Well, initially he did approach Allura because she was the Royal Consort, but now, she meant more to him than that.

She owns the part of his heart, after all.

Arvina observed her student’s smile when he was looking at the door Allura walked out from and couldn’t help but comment.

“What a playboy.”

Nux’s smile widened.

“I just can’t do anything, there are just too many amazing women in this world. You can’t help but fall in love.”

“Hmph!”

Arvina snorted.

Nux just smiled.

Arvina then questioned.

“Hmph! First, you go after your Teacher, then you go after a married woman, how many taboos are you going to break?”

Nux chuckled. Then, he looked at Arvina’s face and commented.

“I might be thinking of breaking one more taboo, Teacher.”

“Huh?” Arvina frowned.

“Are you going to target another married woman? Or are you going to target another one of your teachers?”

Arvina questioned.

Nux’s smile widened and he answered,

“Both.”

Arvina’s eyes widened,

“You are going after two more women!?”

“No, just one.”

Nux looked into Arvina’s brown-red eyes.

“One?”

Arvina frowned.

“Does that mean you are going after a woman who is your teacher and is marr-”

Suddenly, Arvina turned silent.

A teacher and a married woman.

“...”

Arvina then looked at Nux’s expression and...

She stepped back.

Nux, however, didn’t let this chance go and stepped forward.

Then, his golden eyes shined and he directly looked into Arvina’s eyes.

“Teacher Arvina, I want yo-”

“No, do not say anything else.”

Arvina, however, interrupted him midsentence.

“I am your teacher.”

She spoke.

“Is this the only reason you are rejecting me?”

Nux questioned.

“Only reason?”

Arvina raised her eyebrow.

“Nux, I am not Evane.

She might ignore the fact that she has been teaching you as her student for more than a month, but I cannot.”

“Why? What’s so bad about a Teacher and Student being in a relationship?”

Nux questioned back.

“Everything. What is not bad about this!?”

Arvina raised her voice.

“And if you forgot about it, then let me remind you, I am already married!”

“Married to a person you don’t even like!

No, fuck like, you hate him!

You loathe that man.”

Nux raised his voice a little as well.

“How do you know that? I might secretly like the King.”

Arvina retorted.

“Teacher, please don’t. I know why you are here in the Academy. I know perfectly well how close you and the King are.

At least don’t lie right to my face.”

Nux shot back.

“...”

Arvina turned silent.

“I don’t get it. What is the issue here? Why not? Are you rejecting me because you are my teacher or because you are married? Are you worried

about what others would say? Since when do you start to care about that, Teacher Arvina?

Aren't you a warrior? Shouldn't a Warrior do whatever he or she wants?

Then why hesitate here?"

Nux questioned.

Arvina and Nux stared at each other, different emotions shining in their eyes, a whole minute passed by with just the two of them standing there, staring at each other.

"You want to know the reason, correct?"

Suddenly, Arvina spoke.

"Yes, I do."

Nux nodded.

"The reason I reject you is that I do not like you, Nux. I do not see an 18-year-old boy as a man. You are not the type of man I would fall in love with. You are not the one.

You and I, can't happen."

"..."

Hearing those words, Nux turned silent.

"Is that a better reason?"

Arvina questioned, her eyes shining strangely.

Nux stared into her brown-red eyes for a while, his eyes turned moist, and then, he started nodding his head.

"Yes..."

Yes, that is a better reason indeed.

I accept this reason.

I am not the one.

Alright, I accept this reason.”

Nux continued to nod his head and then, two crystalline tear drops rolled down his cheeks.

“You and I, really can’t happen.”

# Chapter 411

“You and I, really can’t happen.”

Nux spoke in a hoarse voice.

“Nux you...”

Arvina stepped towards him, her cold expression suddenly changed into worry, no, extreme worry.

This was the first time she had seen Nux like this.

She was shocked.

She wanted to wipe those tears, however, Nux stepped back.

Then, a shocked look appeared on his face.

His hand quickly moved towards his cheek and he finally realized,

He cried...

He cried right in front of...

“Nux I-”

Arvina stepped forward but before she could touch Nux, he disappeared.

“Huh?”

Arvina frowned.

How in the hell did he disappear into thin air?

Is that even possible?

She knew Nux was fast, however, she was sure that he wasn't fast enough to move past her and leave the room before she could even react.

Even an Emperor Stage Cultivator cannot do something like this.

Was that one of his magic?

A thought appeared in Arvina's mind, however, soon, thoughts like these disappeared.

There were more important things she had to worry about right now.

She didn't know what Nux would do right now.

She just hopes that he doesn't do anything reckless.

And... she hopes that... he is fine...

...

"Nux?"

Amaya frowned as Nux suddenly appeared in front of her. However, her frown soon turned into a smile.

It was not the time yet but, why not?

She was ready.

However, as soon as he appeared, a veil of Dark Mist surrounded Nux's body. Amaya frowned,

"Nux?"

She called out.

"..."

However, there was no answer.

Amaya's frown deepened.

She then used her [Sense] and realized.

Nux was not there.

He...

He used the Devouring Mist as a cover to move out of her sight, then, he activated his [Conceal] and disappeared.

A genius idea that Amaya would normally appreciate, however, right now, she could feel that talking to Nux was more important.

'Nux?'

She called using her connection.

'I will talk to you later, Love. I am a bit busy now.'

She then heard Nux's calm voice.

'But you just here.'

'Yes, I needed to go somewhere, the Royal Palace was close, so I used the Harem's Gate.'

'But why did you hide?'

Amaya questioned.

'I was in rush,

I hope you understand.'

Nux replied.

'Alright...'

Amaya nodded in understanding.

‘You are the best.’

Nux smiled cheerfully.

‘Of course I am.’

Amaya smiled back.

A minute later, her smile disappeared.

She could feel it, something was wrong.

Though he didn’t sound like it, for some reason, Amaya knew something was wrong with him.

‘Did something happen?’

Therefore, she contacted her sisters.

‘Hmm? What do you mean?’

Felberta questioned.

‘With Nux, I mean. Did something happen there?’

‘Hmm? With Nux, nothing. Why? What happened?’

Seeing her seriousness, Felberta didn’t joke around and questioned.

‘He looks... sad...’

Amaya then told them everything that happened, however, since none of the women were there, they couldn’t understand what Amaya was talking about.

‘Wait...’

Suddenly, Allura spoke.

‘He was with Arvina 10 minutes ago.’

‘I will talk to Arvina, she would know about it if something actually happened to him.’

Ember spoke.

The others nodded, Ember nodded back and walked towards her door.

However, before she could touch the door, the door opened and Arvina walked in.

“There is a problem.”

Arvina spoke.

“What happened?”

Ember frowned.

“Nux disappeared.”

“Huh?”

Ember’s frown deepened, however, she soon realized that Nux must have used Harem Gate and calmed down a little.

“What happened?”

She questioned.

At the same time, the rest of the women except Amaya and Evane walked into Ember’s room and questioned.

“”””What happened?””””

“W-Why are you all here?”

Arvina couldn't help but ask.

“That is not important right now, tell us, what happened?”

Thyra spoke.

Arvina agreed with her words, therefore, she nodded and,

“He proposed to me.”

She started talking about everything that happened.

...

10 minutes passed by and Arvina was done with her story.

“...”

The room turned silent.

“...”

Arvina was silent as well.

Her worry was clear with how she was sweating and how pale her face was.

She really was very worried about her student.

However, Ember... she was thinking about a completely different thing.

“You really rejected him... Arv, I am amazed. I never thought a woman could reject a man like Nux.”

“I agree.”

Felberta nodded.

“It is surprising indeed.”

Thyra nodded her head as well.

“Teacher Arvina, you are... amazing... You managed to resist Nux’s Charm.”

Skyla was amazed.

This time, she didn’t even call her ‘Sister’.

She was just that impressed.

The others had the same reaction.

And seeing that, Arvina couldn’t help but shout.

“What are you guys talking about!? Why are you praising me!? Shouldn’t you be worried about Nux!? He is not emotionally stable right now. What if he does something reckless!? Aren’t you guys worried!?”

“Huh? What are you talking about?”

To Arvina’s sudden outburst, Ember just replied with a small frown.

“W-What?”

Arvina was taken aback.

“Look, I know Nux is your student, so there is a chance that you see him as a child, however, you have to understand that he is not a child.

He is mature enough to hold himself back.

What do you mean by ‘he would do something reckless?’

He is not stupid.

He knows how to control himself.

He just needs some time.

It is the first time he got rejected by the woman he loved, after all.”

Ember smiled a little.

“Y-You knew about it?”

Arvina questioned.

“Why do you think Skyla was calling you Sister?”

Ember questioned back.

Arvina then looked at Skyla, who just smiled foolishly.

“You all knew about it?”

Arvina couldn't believe it.

Felberta smiled,

“Well, he has been talking about you from the day he fought with that Candice girl.”

“That's when...”

“Yep, when you first met him.”

“He...”

“Well, it wasn't really love at first sight, unlike my case.”

Felberta first asserted her dominance as she placed her one leg on top of another and then, she continued,

“But yes, he did fall in love with you after spending some time with you.”

“...”

Arvina didn't know what to say.

“Oh, don't take it as if we are trying to convince you or something.”

Suddenly, Felberta spoke.

“Hmm? What do you mean?”

Arvina frowned.

“Mhm, I know Nux, he will respect your feelings, so you don't have to change yourself because you are worried about him.

He will come back, don't worry.”

Felberta explained.

“Mhm, he is a strong man, after all.”

Ember smiled. Then, she looked at Arvina and her smile widened,

‘Just make sure you are not trying to fool yourself.’

Of course, she didn't say those words out loud.

# Chapter 412

“Heeh? The First Prince is interesting indeed.”

Ember commented with a smile on her face.

“Heh, to be honest, if I had a father like the King, I would be the same.”

Edda spoke.

“Indeed, Indeed, that bastard is the worse.”

Allura nodded in agreement.

“Well, whatever the reason, in the end, it is good for us.”

Nux commented and the others nodded,

“We will be using the First Prince to our benefit, therefore, we will be changing our plans. Amaya already has a few plans in her mind, just give her some more time, she just needs to refine whatever she is thinking.”

“Tsk Tsk, I still don’t know what goes on inside that mind of hers.”

Ember shook her head.

“Heh, if it was that easy to find out, she wouldn’t be the one planning everything for us.”

Nux smiled.

“The Princess of Skadi is intelligent indeed. The Skadi must be regretting their decision right now.”

Ember laughed.

“I am than-”

Nux was about to answer, but suddenly,

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

A knock was heard.

Nux and the others used [Sense] and soon, Ember's, Felberta's and Allura's smiles widened as they glanced at Nux.

Nux glanced at them and shook his head in defeat.

Then, with a big sigh, he stood up and opened the door.

“Teacher Arvina, how are you?”

He smiled.

“Nux...”

Arvina called out.

“...”

Nux turned silent.

“...”

Arvina didn't know what to say either. However, she knew she had to break this silence, otherwise, this relationship of hers with her student would become awkward.

“W-Where did you go, yesterday? You didn't even show up for your training today.”

“Ah, well, I just recalled that I had to be somewhere else at that time, I had no choice but to leave and I just returned from that place.”

“I understand.”

Arvina nodded.

Nux nodded back.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Again, the two of them turned silent.

Ember, Felberta, and Allura were definitely enjoying whatever was happening in front of them.

It was their first time seeing Nux acting so awkwardly after all.

An interesting sight indeed.

“Ugghh, alright Teacher Arvina, listen here.”

Nux, who could practically feel their gazes on him couldn't take it anymore and spoke out loud.

“W-What is it?”

Arvina questioned.

“It's getting too awkward. I can't take this anymore.

Let's just act like yesterday never happened, alright?”

“That is a good idea.”

Arvina nodded.

“Mhm, just forget about everything. We are just like any other normal Student and Teacher.”

“Yes, that is correct.”

Arvina nodded again.

Nux's smile widened as he smiled,

“So, Teacher Arvina, what happened? Why are you here?”

“I am just here to check up on you. You know... about...”

“Ah, don't worry about it. I am fine now.”

Nux's smile widened.

“That is good.”

“Mhm,”

Nux nodded.

And then, he continued,

“Well, Teacher Arvina, I am talking about something important right now, so would you mind...”

“Ah, yes, alright. I will take my leave. I will talk to you later.”

Arvina quickly realized what Nux was talking about and nodded.

Then, she smiled at Nux's women and turned around.

“Thank you for understanding, Teacher Arvina.”

After Arvina left, Nux closed the door and sighed again.

“You know that you are not going back to normal, right?”

Ember questioned.

“Well, we can at least try.”

Nux replied.

“I just don’t want to stand in front of her and have all those awkward conversations about whether and whatnot.”

“You have not moved on yet, have you?”

Felberta questioned.

“Of course not.”

Nux shook his head.

“It is my first time facing a rejection, after all.”

Hearing those words, Ember couldn’t help but speak out loud.

“You do know that all is not over yet, don’t you?”

Nux narrowed his eyes.

“What do you mean?”

“There are chances that Arvina is not being honest with you and with herself. I mean, she is your teacher, it would be hard for her to believe that she is in love with you, just like Evane.

Her case, however, is even more complicated since she is a wife as well.”

“So you are saying that she might actually love me but is unable to accept me?”

Nux questioned.

“Yes.”

Ember nodded.

“And how are you sure that what you say is true, and Arvina really does not like me as someone who she can spend the rest of her life with?”

Nux questioned.

“Well... because it is you...?”

Evane answered back.

Nux looked at her with a blank look on his face,

“So you are not sure.”

“Well... I am... not...”

Ember replied.

“Ember, don’t complicate simple things, I liked Teacher Arvina, I proposed to her. She didn’t have the same feelings, so she turned me down.

It is just that simple.”

“Matters of the heart are never simple, Nux.”

Suddenly, Felberta spoke up.

“They actually are. It is we who try to complicate them. Just listen to your heart.

Didn’t you all do that same thing? Was it that hard? Cause in my case, my heart told me that I love you all, and I walked right in.

Didn’t you all do the same?”

“We did. My heart told me you are the one when you hugged me that day.”

Skyla nodded with a big smile on her face.

“See? It is just that simple.”

Nux nodded.

“ ... ”

Felberta turned silent.

“Not everyone can hear their hearts so easily.”

Ember spoke.

“Then what do you think I should do?”

Nux questioned.

“Why not try to confirm if she actually has feelings for you or not?”

Ember suggested.

Nux, however, shook his head.

“That would be harassment.

A no means no.

And Teacher Arvina has made her stand clear.

I have made a mistake before, I do not plan to repeat it again.”

Nux answered.

A loving smile appeared on Thyra’s face,

“You can repeat that mistake on me if you want.”

Thyra spoke as she bit her lower lip seductively while winking at Nux.

Nux chuckled.

“Why not talk to Amaya? I am sure she can come up with a better answer”

Suddenly, Felberta spoke.

“Hmm? Well, we can do that.”

Nux nodded.

Soon, Amaya joined the conversation, Ember then told her about the theory in her mind and asked what she thought.

Amaya’s answer was, however, well... Amaya’s answer...

‘Huh? Why should he do it? Aren’t there enough of you bitches around him already?’

# Chapter 413

‘Huh? Why should he do it? Aren’t there enough of you bitches around him already?’

A typical Amaya answer.

‘Tsk Tsk, so selfish.’

Ember snorted.

Well, if it was anyone else other than Arvina, she would probably think the same way, however, she didn’t want to lose her friend again.

‘You know Nux likes her, don’t you?’

She questioned.

‘I do. However, if she doesn’t like him back, then just leave her alone.’

Amaya replied.

‘You know perfectly well that not liking Nux is... difficult.

Arvina likes him, she just doesn’t realize it.’

Ember spoke.

‘Alright, let’s say what you said is all true. Then what? If she doesn’t realize that she likes him, then that means that she doesn’t want to realize it.

The pressure from society, not breaking the ‘taboo’ and whatever is much more important to her than Nux.

Why should Nux go after a woman like her?

Didn’t he already tell her how he feels?

It's not like he is running away from here, is he?

If she loves him back, and that love is stronger than this stupid society pressure she is facing, then she would come to him.'

'...'

This time, Ember turned silent.

'I agree with Amaya.'

This time, Felberta sided with Amaya.

'Indeed, if a woman can't even understand her own feelings, then it is her fault.'

Thyra nodded as well.

'Mhm, taboos are nothing, didn't I and Evane break them? Our love is real.'

Allura looked at Nux with a loving smile on her face.

'Tsk'

Amaya snorted.

Then, she changed the topic,

'Alright, let's not talk about this useless stuff anymore.

The King and his men are close to finding out the truth.'

Amaya muttered.

'Hmm?'

This gained everyone's attention and soon, everyone forgot about Arvina.

...

“Your Majesty,”

Keeve kneeled.

“You are back.”

Ricardus spoke.

“Yes, Your Majesty.”

“So? Did you find anything?” The King questioned.

“Yes, I did.”

Keeve nodded.

A smile appeared on The King’s face.

“Finally some good news.”

“I would not say so, Your Majesty.”

Keeve, however, didn’t allow him to stay happy for a long time.

“What happened?”

The King narrowed his eyes.

“The Solid Earth Kingdom just attacked the Deathspike Fort and... the War ended in just 10 minutes.”

“WHAT!?”

The King and the Ministers who were hearing the report shouted in disbelief.

“Yes. The General of the Woods Army barely ran away, however, he is in critical condition. From what I have heard, he won’t be back to normal for the next 5-10 years.”

“...how did this happen?”

The King questioned with a solemn look on his face.

“There were 3 King Stage Cultivators on the Solid Earth Kingdom’s side.”

“What? How is that possible? Did the Dukes join the war?”

“All the Generals had covered their faces with masks, so no one knew their identity.”

Keeve reported and then, he spoke his thoughts.

“I do not think they were the Dukes.”

“Then who were they?”

The King questioned.

“I do not know, however, if they were the Dukes, I don’t think they would cover their faces like that. Just think of those old geezers, do you really think those greedy bastards would cover their faces when they are fighting the War for the Kingdom?”

Hearing those words, the King nodded.

“Yes, those geezers would make sure the entire world knows that they are participating in the War.”

“...”

Hearing these words, the Ministers turned silent and averted their eyes.

They knew better than anyone that whatever the King and Keeve were talking about was true. However, they did not like the fact that Keeve, a mere servant was using words like Bastards for their Protectors.

Of course, they wouldn’t show their opposition directly.

Servant or not, Keeve was a King Stage Cultivator.

He is at a stage where even though he is just a commoner, nobles would still have to bow their heads in front of him.

“I don’t get it, why is the Woods Dynasty losing this war bad for us?”

One of the ministers questioned.

“I was coming to that.”

Keeve nodded and then, he started explaining.

“First, these 3 Mysterious King Stage Cultivators, we don’t have any idea who they are. Well, they could be Part of the Kingdom’s private forces, so that’s not the problem.

The real problem is the Woods Dynasty.”

“Why is that?”

The King questioned.

“When I arrived there, they treated me well and answered all of my questions in detail. They even told me about how they will react in this bad situation and their next plans.

However, when I talked about General Ember...

The Dynast turned silent and tried to avoid the topic.

He was... strangely silent about this matter.

Not only that, he even order a few of his men to keep an eye on me after I asked this question.”

“...”

The King and the Minsters frowned.

“He is hiding something.”

A minister spoke.

“Of course he is. But the question is, what?”

“Why did General Ember give up on her position?”

The Ministers started discussing, however, before they could delve deeper, Keeve interrupted.

“Well, you do not have to worry. I heard that the Deputy Generals of the Woods Army were especially close to General Ember, if the Dynast is indeed hiding something, then I think they would know about it.

Although I couldn't meet them on my own since there were too many eyes on me, I sent one of my men to them.

He should come back with the answers soon enough.”

“As I expected of you, Keeve.”

The King nodded in satisfaction.

The Ministers, however, didn't agree,

“And why would the Loyal Subordinates disclose their Master's secrets to your men?”

“Heh, because we would bring justice to the dead General Ember.”

Keeve smiled.

Hearing those words, the King and the Ministers smiled wickedly.

“We would indeed.”

The King muttered then, he turned towards Keeve and nodded,

“You did a good job, Keeve.

You can go rest now.”

“As you command, Your Majesty.”

# Chapter 414

“What did the Marquee Feldrik say?”

A man with black hair, green eyes, a thin nose, and a well-structured face was sitting on a lavish chair with a calm expression. He wore a White colored coat, with a golden-colored design and had an imposing aura.

He was Duke Thronton Fulvianus. The Strongest of all four Dukes, a great and overbearing leader, and the Duke who supports the First Prince.

“He agreed.”

In front of him, stood his butler, the man he trusted the most out of all his servants.

“That is good.”

The Duke smiled.

The Marquee’s response was well within his plans, this placed a smile on his face.

The Duke preferred things to be under his control and to achieve that, he has sometimes taken extreme steps.

“What abou-”

The Duke wanted to ask about something else, however, suddenly, the doors of his room opened and a man walked in.

“Ho-”

The Butler was about the shout at the man who had just entered the Duke’s room so rudely, however, before he could even say a word, his eyes fell on the man who just entered.

“Smith, leave.”

The man who just entered ordered.

The Buttlar, however, didn't dare to raise his voice at him.

He just bowed his head and turned his head towards the Duke. The Duke nodded, Smith, the butler nodded back, and then, he answered,

“As you say, Prince Raguel.”

Smith then stood up and left the room.

“Grandfather, you need to know this.”

As soon as Smith left, Raguel turned towards his Grandfather, Duke Fulvanus, and spoke.

Hearing his hurried and tensed voice, the Duke frowned.

“What happened?”

“I talked with Amaya.”

“Amaya? That Cursed Consort?”

Duke Fulvanus guessed.

“Yes, I talked to her.”

The Prince nodded.

“Why were you talking to that bitch?”

An annoyed look appeared on the Duke's face.

From his reaction, it was clear that he didn't have a good relationship with Amaya.

And that was true.

The Duke didn't like the Cursed Consort at all.

He had talked to her before, actually, he wanted to help her expand the Thousand Information Chamber, however, the woman rejected it.

He even offered to invest more money into the Chamber, however, he didn't even realize when the woman changed the topic and talked about an entirely different subject.

In the end, he had to leave that room with a disappointed look on his face.

He couldn't believe that the woman managed to manipulate him into talking about useless stuff and he only realized it after the meeting ended.

Thornton gets embarrassed every time he thinks about that day.

Amaya Skyfall was a woman who even he could not have control over and since he couldn't control that woman, he hated her.

Amaya, on the other hand, didn't even know that a Duke hates her so much, of course, she didn't care about it either. For her, it was just a normal, everyday meeting.

“Have you heard about the rumors?”

The First Prince questioned.

“About the Third Prince?”

The Duke questioned.

“Yes, about him becoming the Crown Prince.”

“I have heard about it. However, these are just baseless rumors, I believe it is just their pathetic attempt to turn the situation in their favor.

They were the ones who spread the rumors, that is the reason why they spread so quickly.

Don't worry, baseless rumors like these do not remain for a long time. I think these rumors would disappear within a week or so."

The Duke just shrugged it off.

"Amaya has different thoughts about these matters."

Raguel replied.

"..."

The Duke turned silent.

If it was any other time, he would have just slammed the table in front of him and shouted,

'You think she is better than me!? If I said don't worry then don't worry. Her thoughts don't matter.

She is not always right!'

However, this time, he didn't say those words.

Too much was at stake here.

Deep down, he knew that Amaya won't say anything without a proper reason. If she said something, the chances of it being correct are very high.

Therefore,

"What did she say?"

The Duke questioned.

"Well, she didn't really clarify, however, she said my chances of becoming the King aren't very high."

The First Prince answered.

“Why did she say that?”

The Duke frowned.

“Does that mean that the King is actually thinking about making Lovis the Crown Prince?”

He questioned.

“She said that it doesn’t matter what the King thinks.”

“Huh? Is she out of her mind? Is the curse getting over her head? Is it affecting her?”

Heh. Can’t say that the bitch didn’t deserve it.”

A wicked smile appeared on the Duke’s face.

“She said that I need to look into Duke Merula and Duke Vestalis. She was hinting that the two of them were collaborating with each other.”

Raguel replied.

“Huh? Two Dukes collaborating? Don’t be ridiculous!

Also, there is nothing to ‘look into’, I have already planted my spies in their Mansions, and nothing is happening between the two of them.

Don’t worry.”

The Duke snorted.

This time, however, Raguel wasn’t silent.

“Grandfather, I need you to look into the Two Dukes, more thoroughly.”

“I told you, I ha-”

“Grandpa, the stakes are high. Don’t take unnecessary risks just because of your ego.

It is Consort Amaya we are talking about. You know perfectly well what kind of woman she is.

And about her Curse affecting her head, trust me, I had a talk with her, and there is nothing wrong with her.

She is as scary as the mother told her, even scarier maybe.

Actually, she looks so sharp that for a moment, I thought that this ‘Curse’ is all a façade.”

Hearing those words, the Duke turned silent.

After thinking about it a little, he realized that his Grandson was right.

He shouldn’t take unnecessary risks.

“Alright, I will look into it.”

“Mhm.”

The Prince nodded.

“But I still don’t understand, why is that Cursed Bitch helping you?”

The Prince shook his head and joked,

“I don’t know,

Maybe she likes me?”

# Chapter 415

“Teacher Evane!”

A student exclaimed in excitement.

“I can’t believe it! You have become an Expert Stage Cultivator!”

Another student exclaimed.

“What’s not to believe? Wasn’t it clear from the start? Teacher Evane, I knew that you were different from normal cultivators. Becoming an Expert Stage Cultivator was only a matter of time.”

“Indeed, Indeed, I knew that as well.”

“Mhm Mhm.”

More and more students nodded in agreement.

Evane, who was hearing all their comments couldn’t help but smile.

“But Teacher Evane, are you really leaving?”

A female student stepped forward and questioned.

“Yes, I am.”

Evane nodded with a smile on her face.

“I wanted to leave earlier, however, I then realized that I couldn’t leave without saying a proper farewell, so well, here I am.”

“Is it really that important? Why not stay here in the Academy, you are the best teacher we have.”

A student tried to convince Evane, however, she had already made up her mind.

“No, I have to leave.”

“Where are you going? Are you going back to the Royal Palace?”

Another student questioned.

“You will know that very soon.”

Evane didn't answer clearly.

“Then wha-”

“Alright Students, I know all of you are curious, however, Teacher Evane can't answer all your questions like that.

There are certain reasons why she has to leave our Academy, it is unfortunate, however, I believe that rather than being sad about it, we should send Teacher Evane with smiles on our faces and wish her the best of luck for her future.

Can you all that?”

A bald man stepped forward.

‘Eliyard, I didn't know that you were so good with this stuff.’

Nux praised.

‘I have been doing this for many years now, Master.’

Eliyard answered respectfully.

Again, all the weight around his words disappeared the moment he talked to Nux.

‘Good, Good, continue.’

Nux nodded and didn't waste much time.

Today, he was not the main character.

Evane was.

He would just stand among the students, silently.

“”””Yes we can, Headmaster.””””

The Students nodded collectively. Right now, they were all inside the Academy's Auditorium. Evane has been a Teacher in this Academy for 34 years now, and the number of students she taught was not fixed to just 20 students in Nux's class.

The number was in the 100s.

Students from her other class and the students she taught years ago, all of them have come here to bid her goodbyes. Some of the students weren't even taught by her, but they were still here.

Teacher Evane was just that popular in the Academy.

“Good,”

Eliyard smiled amiably.

Then, he turned towards Evane and spoke,

“Alright, now rather than asking her questions, let us call Teacher Evane here so that she can say her farewells to us properly.”

Evane stood up from her chair and walked forward.

“Good morning to you all...”

Then, she started her farewell speech.

The Event continued, some students then stepped forward and praised their teacher, Evane then distributed some sweets to all the students here, and then, after bidding her final farewells, she walked out of the Auditorium.

Tears threatened to come out of her eyes, however, she didn't cry.

She held those tears back.

'You are too weak, I am not talking about your cultivation, but your mind. You are too kind, Evane, your heart is too pure.

You need to change that, you need to learn how to control your emotions.

The Place you are going is a place where people who you think are closest to you would stab you with a knife the moment they get the chance to.

You can't show your emotions there like you do now.

You need to change.

This will be heart, however, I know you can do it.

You can do anything for Nux, can you not?

I will be there to help you, but in the end, it all depends on you.'

These were the words Amaya said to her personally before she left for the Palace.

And she, as a Princess who was born in that place knew that these words were true. She had realized that the Royal Palace was not a suitable place for her.

That was why she joined the Academy in the first place.

However, now, she had to return.

And this time, she would need to jump into the very marsh she has been avoiding for such a long time now.

Funny how fate works really.

Of course, Evane was not against any of it.

She had a goal in her mind.

She wanted to help Nux.

Isn't it just simple politics? Well, she had the master of this game right by her side.

Bring it on, she was ready.

And to show that she was ready, she would start by not crying on this simple farewell.

“Evane.”

While Evane was thinking all of this, someone called her.

She finally came out of her reverie and turned towards the voice.

“Teacher Arvina.”

She called.

Arvina smiled.

“So you really are leaving huh.”

“Yes, I am.”

Evane smiled.

“Do you really want to? No one would force you if you don't.”

Arvina wanted to confirm.

Evane chuckled.

Nux has said these exact same words many many times now, however, every time he said those words, her answer has remained the same.

“I am stronger than you think.”

Hearing those words, Arvina couldn't help but smile.

“I know. You do not have to tell me. You are strong. Very strong.

Much stronger than me.”

Suddenly, Evane frowned.

Something was wrong.

She could feel it.

Arvina's words sounded a little... different.

“Teacher Arvina, is something wrong?”

Evane questioned.

She has just returned from her Grandfather's house, therefore, she didn't know about what happened between Arvina and Nux.

Nux wanted to fill her in, however, he realized Evane was already dealing with a lot since she would be going back to that place, therefore, he decided to let her enjoy her moment and didn't say anything.

He was planning to tell her everything later, however, he didn't expect Arvina to appear in front of Evane like that.

“Evane...”

Arvina called.

“What is it, Teacher Arvina?”

“Can I talk to you about something?”

Arvina requested.

# Chapter 416

“So, how have you been?”

Arvina questioned with a small smile on her face.

“Fine, no, more than fine actually, I am doing better than I ever have.”

Evane answered with a bright smile on her face.

Mind you, Evane was a Princess, fooling her was definitely not easy.

She had noticed that Arvina was not acting like her usual self. She was... well, it was as if she was trying to hide something.

However, Evane didn't have a solid proof of that, also, she trusted that Arvina was not going to hurt her.

That's why, she decided to play this little game of hers.

It can actually act as a practice session before she actually plays these games with every other person she meets in the Royal Palace.

“So? Why leave so suddenly? Did someone say anything to you?”

Arvina questioned.

Evane looked at her and smiled,

“Do you really think someone has the galls to say anything to the Princess of the Skyfall Kingdom?”

A surprised look appeared on Arvina's face.

This was the first time Evane talked about her status in front of her.

Evane however, didn't care about what she was thinking and just continued to smile.

'You dare to against the Princess of the Skyfall Kingdom?'

'Do you think you can say those words in front of the father, the King? How do you think he would react if he finds out?'

'Are you threatening me? The Princess? You sure are brave, aren't you?'

'Think about the consequences before you do anything.'

'Name your Price.'

These were the few sentences Amaya has taught her. She needs to learn a lot of things, changing the topic, finding out small details, knowing whether someone is lying or not, intimidating the target, planting self-doubt or any other feeling in anyone's mind,

She needed to learn all these things, it was not a fast process, but these sentences would help a lot.

Therefore, like the good student she was, Evane was using these sentences and noting her target's reactions to them.

This time, her aim was to change the topic.

However, these amateurish moves wouldn't really work in front of a woman like Arvina.

"It is because of Nux, isn't it?"

Arvina questioned directly.

"Hmm? What do you mean?"

Evane acted confused.

However, Arvina wasn't going to let her go that easily,

“You are going back to Royal Palace and you are going there because of Nux, aren't you?”

She directly jumped onto the topic, something that would rarely happen in the Royal Palace.

Evane didn't know how to answer that, therefore,

“Think about the consequences before you do anything.”

She directly repeated one of the sentences Amaya told her to speak.

“What...?”

Arvina tilted her head in confusion.

“...”

Evane, however, didn't say anything and continued to look at Arvina with a serious look on her face.

A serious look appeared on Arvina's face and she nodded,

“Don't worry, I am prepared for anything.”

“...”

This time, Evane was actually confused.

What the hell was she talking about? What is she prepared for? Is that some sort of signal? Hmm?

Seeing that she wasn't replying, Arvina decided to move further.

“I know about you and Nux already.”

This time, Evane's eyes widened in surprise.

“You do?”

“Yes, he told me about it.

Don’t forget, I am his teacher, he shares everything with me.”

Hearing that, Evane just shook her head,

“Trust me, he does not share everything with you.

You are missing out on the best part.”

The Skyla inside Evane woke up.

“Huh?”

Arvina frowned.

“Ah, don’t worry about it. I just... spew some nonsense from time to time.”

Evane shook her head and then, she changed the topic.

“And yes, you are right, I am going back because of Nux. He has a certain plan in his mind and according to that plan, I need to enter the Royal Palace.”

“A plan?”

Arvina frowned.

“Yes, but before you ask me any further questions, let me tell you that I will not tell you anything, my lips are sealed.”

Arvina looked at Evane’s serious face and understood that she wasn’t joking at all.

“But you told me that you were going back on your own accord?”

Arvina questioned with a frown.

“Of course, I am.”

Evane nodded.

“Your two statements don’t match up.”

Arvina commented.

“It does, for Nux’s plan, I need to be in the Royal Palace, and since I want him to succeed, I will go to the Royal Palace. What’s the problem?”

“You are going there because Nux wants you to, not on your own accord.”

Arvina answered.

“Didn’t you say Nux is your student? You have been with him for so long, do you really think he will force his wife to do something she doesn’t want to?”

“ ... ”

This time, Arvina turned silent.

“He did not force me, I am going there on my own accord.

I want to help him.”

Evane spoke with a beautiful smile on her face.

“...you really love him a lot, don’t you?”

Arvina commented.

“Of course I do.”

Evane nodded without a second of hesitation.

“Don’t you... feel a little strange?”

Arvina finally asked what she wanted to ask.

“What do you mean?”

Evane tilted her head in confusion.

“I mean, he was your student just a few days ago... don't you think find it strange that he is now... your husband?”

Arvina questioned.

A small chuckle escaped Evane's mouth and then she nodded.

“It does feel a bit strange.

To be in a relationship with your own student, feels like I am doing something wrong.”

“ ... ”

Arvina turned silent.

This is exactly what she was going through after Nux proposed to her.

She just couldn't imagine herself with a student she was teaching.

“However,”

But, Evane was not done yet.

“When I compare this strange feeling and the desire in my heart.

Desire wins by a big margin.”

“Desire?”

Arvina frowned.

“Desire for Nux of course.

My heart desired him, this strange feeling did stop me at first, however, in the end, I decided to take a single bold step, and now,

I am proud of my past brave self.

I truly believe that it is all about that one brave step.”

# Chapter 417

“Duke Fulvianus, there is a problem.”

Smith, the Butler of the Duke, Thornton Fulvianus spoke with a solemn look on his face.

“What is it?”

The Duke questioned.

“It is about what the First Prince said.”

Smith answered and Thornton’s face turned solemn.

“Is it about Duke Merula and Duke Vestalis?”

He questioned.

“Yes.”

The butler nodded his head.

“What is it?”

“After our investigation, we noticed that there are indeed some secret letters that have been exchanged between the Dukes.

The two of them are definitely communicating with each other, and they are doing it very secretly.”

“ ... ”

Hearing these words, Thornton narrowed his eyes.

He was the Strongest of the 4 Dukes, however, in reality, this didn’t really mean anything. He may be strongest when it comes to one on one fights,

however, this didn't mean that the Fulvianus Duke House was the strongest compared to all.

The real power of the Duke's House depended on their Protectors.

The King Stage Experts who were protecting their house in secret.

Just like Emperor Stage Cultivator behind the Kingdoms, these Protectors didn't show themselves either. Therefore, not much is known about them and since the strongest of the Duke Houses were a mystery, nobody knew which Duke house was the strongest.

Not even the Duke Houses themselves.

All the Duke Houses were wary of each other and all of them are presumed to be on the same level.

Therefore, when Duke Merula and Duke Vestalis decided to stay silent about their secret communication, nobody was able to find anything, however, the moment Duke Fulvianus tried searching with the certainty that the two parties were communicating,

He was able to find the Truth.

“Did you find out the content of these letters?” Thornton questioned.

The Butler, however, shook his head.

“I did not, they were very secretive about it. The letters were probably burned the moment they were delivered and read.”

Thornton turned silent.

This was not good.

Two Dukes communicating with each other.

This was definitely not a piece of good news for him.

Thoughts similar to his Grandson started appearing in his mind.

‘This is not good at all.’

With a tense look on his face, the Duke started thinking.

“ ... ”

The Butler didn’t say anything either.

He knew better than anyone that disturbing his Master while he was thinking wouldn’t lead to a great ending.

He just stood there, with his head bowed, and ears perked up, ready to answer whenever the Duke sought his assistant.

He was a loyal butler indeed.

More and more time passed, and the Duke didn’t say anything and had already closed his eyes, he was thinking about all the possibilities and the worst-case scenario, however, in the end, he opened his eyes and shook his head.

“No, this can’t be.”

“Hmm?”

The Butler frowned.

The Duke then explained,

“We are taking this too seriously. The Two Dukes are talking to each other in secret, that conversation could be about anything.

We should not assume anything without knowing the content of the letters.”

“But those letters are probably in cinders now, and even if they do exist somewhere, I highly doubt that we would be able to find them very quickly.

This time, the Targets are Dukes, we would need months just to get a small lead and we wouldn't even know if that lead would actually be a lead or just a trap set by our opponents."

The Butler spoke.

"Heh, this is why I am the Duke and you, smith, are just a butler."

Thornton snorted.

Smith frowned in confusion.

Seeing his expression, Thornton just smiled, and then, he started explaining.

"You are correct, the letters have probably turned into ashes now and even if they are not, we definitely don't have enough time to find where they are."

Hearing these words, the Butler frowned even more.

Why was the Duke repeating the words he already said?

What happened?

He wondered in his head.

And as if knowing what was going on inside his mind, the Duke's smile widened,

"However, who said that we need to find the letters to know about the contents of the letters?"

"Are you saying that we need to capture the servants who read the letters?"

The Butler finally realized.

They couldn't possibly capture a Duke, however, capturing a servant should not be very hard.

The Duke, however, shook his head.

“There is no way those bastards would allow any servants to read those letters.”

“Then what should we do?”

The Butler questioned.

“Did those two geezers realize that you were looking into them?”

The Duke questioned back.

“If they look into it, they would find out, however, I don’t think they know about it right now.”

The Butler shook his head.

“This is good enough.”

The Duke smiled and then, he ordered.

“Write a letter to Duke Vestalis.”

As soon as he said those words, a paper, and a pen appeared in the Butler’s hands.

No matter how confused he was, once the Duke orders anything, he must ensure that he doesn’t let him wait for more than it is needed, otherwise, he is a failure as a butler.

The Duke nodded and then, he cleared his throat before starting,

“To Duke Leofric Vestalis,

I do not wish to waste your and my precious time in small, meaningless talks, therefore, I would directly come to the topic.

As you already know, the King would soon elect the Crown Prince and this Game of Thrones is about to see its conclusion. However, even when we have come this far, you, one of the main players in this battle have not participated.

Honestly, it is surprising to see that a smart man like yourself will not benefit from this Game.

However, worry not, as I have a way with which you can benefit from this battle as well.

An Alliance.

An Alliance between you and me.

The terms are simple, you place your support on my Grandson, Raguel Skyfall, and in return, when Raguel becomes the King,

Your House will receive direct benefits.

As an expression of my goodwill, I am sending 10,000 gold coins along with this letter, and not only that, once we come into an alliance, the Gold Mine you always wanted will be yours as well.

I hope you make a wise choice.

Duke Thornton Fulvianus”

# Chapter 418

“Haah...”

A tired sigh escaped Raguel’s mouth as he burned the letter he was reading.

“So Duke Merula and Duke Vestalis were exchanging letters...”

Grandfather, I know you are right, this is a serious problem and I have to come and meet you, however...

I really cannot visit you right now as I...”

The First Prince sighed as he observed the letter turning into ash in front of him.

Once the letter was completely turned into ash, the First Prince waved his hand, a gust of wind was generated and all the ash disappeared.

The Prince then walked in front of a mirror and started fixing his hair and then fixed the coat he was wearing.

Looking at himself for the last time, Raguel nodded to himself, and then, he walked out of his room.

“I have my own share of troubles to deal with...”

After another sigh escaped his mouth, a noble, charming smile appeared on his face and he walked towards the entrance of the Royal Hall where an old member would return after, many many years.

The prince stood amongst the crowd of people who were waiting for his Sister, the Second Princess and he did what others were doing.

Wait.

10 minutes later, an extremely beautiful woman with a gentle face walked in, her green eyes shined in delight, while the black gown she was wearing enhanced her beauty to a ridiculous degree.

The Woman was being followed by 2 butlers and 8 soldiers who stopped the moment the Woman entered the Hall, they were not allowed to go any further.

The woman continued to walk forward and soon, she was standing near the throne, where a black-haired man was seated with a smile on his face.

“Father, the King.”

The Woman bowed elegantly.

Placing a silly smile on many men’s faces.

She was indeed a beauty.

“I am glad that you finally decided to return to where you belong, Evane.”

Ricardus, The King of Skyfall Kingdom spoke with a smile on his face.

“I am glad that I am back as well, Father.”

Evane smiled.

The King’s smile widened and he then picked up the Glass of wine that was served to him.

Raising that Glass in the air, he announced,

“The Second Princess, Evane Skyfall is finally back.

For the Second Princess’s return.”

“”””For the Second Princess’s return.””””

The people inside the room raised their wine glasses as well and cheered.

The King then took the first sip, the others followed, and soon, the music started.

A few minutes later, the King left, and then, the real party started.

Evane picked up the Glass of Wine as well, and then, she took a deep breath.

‘Everything starts now.’

And as if they read her mind, more and more people started walking towards her.

“Princess Evane, welcome back.”

“I am glad to be back.”

Evane smiled.

“Princess Evane, I missed your presence.”

“Princess Evane, how was your stay in the Royal Academy, did you learn anything?”

“Princess Evane, did anyone bully you while you were there?”

“Yes, Princess Evane, if anyone did, you can tell me, and I will make sure to deal with that person.”

Evane could feel it.

These stupid games had already started.

No one here meant what they say, no one here actually cared about her, they only cared about one thing.

Why is the Princess back? Is she planning to participate in the Battle Of Thrones? Is there any way they can benefit from this?

These were the only things they cared about.

Of course, Evane was already prepared for it. She knew this was how things worked here, therefore, she wasn't very affected by it.

She observed these people with a smile on her face and just nodded or answered their questions with one simple sentence.

However, she couldn't do this forever,

“Sister.”

A Blonde, attractive man with brown eyes walked towards her and called out.

Seeing this man, a small smile appeared on Evane's face.

“Hello, Little Brother.”

Yes, this man was Evane's little brother, the Third Prince, Lovis Skyfall. The renowned Genius of the Royal Family with a High-Level affinity with Earth Element.

“I am glad that you are here, Sister, things were getting rather boring without you here. You know, I wasn't facing any decent challenge.”

Lovis glanced at Raguel and chuckled.

Evane's eyes momentarily fell on Raguel and she chuckled.

“You have grown well, Lovis. You seem much more confident than before.”

Evane smiled.

“Well, things are going rather well for me. I can't help but be a bit confident.”

Lovis smiled.

“I see, I see.”

Evane’s smile widened as she glanced at Raguel again.

Raguel, who was looking at Lovis and Evane from afar narrowed his eyes.

He had his doubts before, but now, he was sure.

Something was definitely going on between these two.

Duke Vestalis, the man supporting Evane, and Duke Merula, the man supporting Lovis, these two are talking to each other secretly, and now, Evane and Lovis, these two are acting all friendly with each other, he would be a fool to not realize it.

These two were definitely collaborating.

Amaya was right, Duke Vestalis would soon support the Third Prince, and once that happens, the King will be forced to choose the Third Prince and he would be left behind.

However, Raguel still didn’t know why Duke Vestalis would do something like this.

Just what does he stand to gain from this?

Money?

Would a Duke do all of this for money?

He wasn’t sure.

“Sister.”

Suddenly, another man called Evane out.

“Ah, Forth Brother, how are you?”

Evane questioned with a smile on her face.

“I am fine, how about you? How are you?”

The Forth Prince smiled.

The Forth Prince, Lucas Skyfall, had green-colored hairs, and an above-average face, he was only 3 years younger than the Third Prince, however, he was still a Master Stage Cultivator.

In reality, he stood no chance of winning this Battle of Throne, however, since he had a Duke supporting him, he was still fighting this battle.

His Green eyes had a tinge of red on the edges and they looked heavy, it was as if he was tired and would fall asleep any moment.

“I am fin-”

Evane wanted to answer, however, suddenly, she stopped and narrowed her eyes.

# Chapter 419

“I am fin-”

Evane wanted to answer, however, suddenly, she stopped and narrowed her eyes.

“Fourth Brother... are you drunk?”

It may have been hidden with so many perfumes the man sprayed on himself, however, the moment he opened his mouth to talk, Evane caught that smell and frowned.

The people around her frowned as well, however, soon, their faces went back to normal.

Not here, this was not the time to act like that. Especially against someone who might have a shot at becoming the King of the Kingdom, no matter how small the chances were.

Also, they weren't really surprised by this anyway.

This wasn't the first time something like this has happened.

The Fourth Prince was a well-known drunkard.

The Black Sheep of the Royal Family.

Evane knew about that, however, she didn't expect her brother to come here like that. From what she remembers, her little brother knew how to hold himself back.

Well, he did when she left this place.

Actually, other than the First Prince, her relationship with her other brothers was not that bad, especially her Fourth Brother, since he was the youngest,

she liked him a lot and spent a lot of time with him.

Unlike her Third Brother, who only cared about Cultivation, the Fourth was different, he actually liked to have fun. Therefore, the two of them were very close.

However, as Lucas grew up, Evane got busy with her own stuff and failed to spend much time with him. He then found new friends, the friends Evane didn't like at all. However, little Lucas didn't listen to his sister and started spending more and more time with his new friends.

The Distance between the two of them started growing.

And before she knew it, the 14-year-old Lucas had already started drinking and abusing women.

This was also another reason why Evane decided to leave the Royal Palace.

Everyone here was so busy thinking about themselves. The First Prince didn't talk to any of his brothers and sisters, the Third only cultivated, while the fourth, well, he was busy with his so-called friends.

In this place, no one cared about anyone but themselves.

“I was happy okay? Happy that you are coming back. So... I drank a little.”

“How much did you drink?”

“Only about 10 bottles.”

“...”

The entire place turned silent.

‘That’s a little!?’

Of course, nobody said anything.

“I can't believe this.”

Evane spoke and then chuckled dryly.

“And here I thought you would not drink today out of your respect for me. Guess I was a fool.”

“Oh C’mon!”

The Fourth Prince then shouted.

“Stop this Drama, will you? What respect are you talking about? Please don’t act so pure and saintly. I know why you are here.

You are here for the throne, are you not?”

“What?”

Evane frowned.

The others looked at her face with interested looks on their faces.

“What ‘What?’, just say the truth.

Why bother hiding? Everyone here knows that already.

I bet that you leaving this Palace was a stunt in the first place, right?”

“No. You are wrong.”

Evane shook her head.

“Oh? Then why are you here? Why did you return?”

“I...”

Evane didn’t answer.

According to the script, here was the part where she would say that she is not here for the Throne. However, for some odd reason, Evane couldn’t lie.

“What? Why don’t you answer? Wait, do you have some sort of plan in your mind? Something you can’t disclose to us right now?”

Then, Lucas’s smile widened,

“Wait wait wait wait, did I just expose your grand plan? Did I just crush your dreams of becoming the Queen of this Kingdom?”

Oh I apologize.

Hahahaha~”

Lucas laughed out loud and Evane... well she just stood there.

“Hahahaha~”

The Fourth Prince continued to laugh.

Clearly, he was drunk and was not in his right mind, therefore, a few men wearing skin-tight black clothes appeared and took the Fourth Prince with them.

“W-Were... were they from the Shadow Unit?”

Someone from the crowd muttered.

“The Shadow Unit? As in the King’s personnel Unit?”

“I-I think it was them.”

“No way...”

“Why is the Shadow Unit here?”

“Don’t you know? The King has been on edge since Consort Allura was attacked. It is natural that the level of security would be improved.”

“Yes, I suggest that you all do not act impulsively, Prince Lucas is a Prince, the Son of the King, so nothing would happen to him, however, the same

can't be said for you guys.

If the Shadow Unit sets its eyes on you, then you wouldn't come out of it unharmed."

"Indeed. We all should be careful."

"Make sure not to get drunk."

The moment the Shadow Unit appeared, everyone's faces and plans changed.

The Shadow Unit was a feared Unit. Nobody except the King and people close to him knew much about it.

However, everyone knew one thing.

The Shadow Unit has the power to destroy any noble house if they wish to.

They were strong, and not someone to be trifled with.

Parties like these would come and go, there was no rush to execute their plans, and the intelligent ones decided to halt all their plans and continued to observe.

"Little Sister."

Finally, Raguel called.

Evane came out of her reverie and turned towards him.

"First Brother."

She smiled a little.

"Don't mind the Fourth Brother, he was clearly drunk. I am sure he didn't mean what he said."

"Yes, I know... he was drunk. I understand."

Evane nodded with a small smile on her face.

“Mhm. Also, it is great to have you back.”

The First Prince smiled.

Evane smiled back.

“Alright, I will take my leave now.

As the oldest brother, I need to have a little chat with the Fourth Brother. What he did today was very inappropriate, and I should talk to him about this.”

Saying that, Raguel turned around with a smile on his face.

‘Finally, Finally some good news.’

# Chapter 420

“Tsk, that bastard, he just had to cause a ruckus there.”

Lovis, the Third Prince snorted in anger, soon, however, he controlled his emotions and turned towards his sister.

“Sister, don’t think too much about him, he is a gone case. You have a seat here, Leo, bring the Tea.”

“As you command, Third Prince.”

The Butler standing behind Lovis bowed his head and left the room.

Evane looked at her brother and sat on the chair he was pointing at.

Seeing that, Lovis smiled and sat in front of her.

“Haahh... after that annoying party is over, we can finally talk to each other freely.”

“You still don’t like all these parties, do you?”

“Hmph! A place where everyone keeps that disgustingly fake smile on their faces? Sorry, but I would never like something like that.”

Lovis snorted and then, he looked at Evane and smiled,

“I would rather stay in my room with my sister and drink tea peacefully while we two catch up.”

As he said those words, his butler, Leo, returned, behind him was a maid who was pushing a table that had snacks and tea on the top.

“Ah, the Tea is here.”

Lovis's smile brightened up.

Before the maid could move, he picked up the cup and placed it in front of Evane, then, he picked up the kettle and served the tea to his sister.

“Here.”

“You do not have to do that.”

Evane spoke.

“Ugghh... Sister not you as well.

Can't I serve my own sister?”

“It's not like that, but you are a pri-”

“Yes, Yes, I know I am a prince, however, along with the prince, I am your brother as well. Now just sit tight and let me serve you the tea.”

Saying that, Lovis continued to pour tea into Evane's cup and once he was done, he started pouring the tea into his own cup.

“C'mon, what are you waiting for, let's drink.”

Saying that, he picked up the cup and started drinking.

There was no sign of his previous mannered self that he showed while he was attending the party. Right now, Lovis looked more... free.

Seeing this, a reminiscing smile appeared on Evane's face.

This indeed felt good.

With a smile on her face, Evane drank the tea slowly and elegantly.

“Hmmm, this is strange.”

She muttered.

“What happened, Sister?”

Lovis frowned.

Evane then looked at Third Prince and smiled,

“Why are you not cultivating today?”

Hearing those words, Lovis scratched the back of his head embarrassingly.

“Oh C’mon, Sister, I know you are mad about me not meeting you and only focusing on Cultivation, but you should not tease me like that.

Do you really think I would not greet you after you returned to the Palace after so many years?”

“Well, I can definitely imagine you thinking,

‘So what if she is here? It is not like she is only here for 1 or 2 days, she is going to stay here from now on, I can meet her later, it is not a problem, reaching the Expert Stage is more important. Muahahaha”

“I do not laugh like that!”

Lovis complained.

“Hahaha~”

Evane laughed out loud. Then she extended her hands and pinched Lovis’s nose.

“You are still as cute as before.”

Lovis slapped her hand and pouted.

“I am not a child.”

“Oh don’t worry, even if all your hair turns white, you would still be a child in my eyes.”

Evane chuckled.

“I am not a child!”

Lovis snorted.

“Hahaha~”

Evane laughed out loud.

“Whatever.”

Lovis gave up and then, he questioned.

“So? How was the Academy? Did you enjoy teaching those noble children?”

“Well, I won’t say it was boring.”

Evane answered.

“Oh? What can possibly be so interesting there?”

Lovis questioned with an interested look on his face.

“Oh, there are many interesting things there, much more interesting than cultivation.”

Evane smiled.

“I doubt that.”

Lovis replied.

“Well, students all cultivate together and have fun.”

“That is just a waste of time. Cultivation requires focus and a calm mind.”

Lovis retorted.

“Well... not all types of cultivations require focus...”

Evane mumbled.

“What?”

Lovis couldn't hear properly.

“Ah, nothing. I was saying that we have a very good restaurant there.”

“Oh C'mon, we have the Best Chefs in the Kingdom working in our kitchen.”

Lovis answered and Evane sighed.

Seeing her like that, Lovis finally realized.

“Haah... now I see why you are back.”

“Hmm? Why?”

“The Academy sounds like a boring place. I would never spend my whole life there.”

“Well, it is still better than the Royal Palace, at least no one keeps up a façade there.”

Evane was quick to defend the Academy.

“Oh? Then why are you here?”

Lovis questioned with a curious smile on his face.

“That...”

Again, Evane didn't know how to answer that question.

Just like what happened at the party, she didn't know what she should do. She didn't want to lie to her brother, however, she couldn't say the truth

either.

She was confused.

Seeing her acting like that, Lovis smiled,

“You are here for the throne, aren’t you?”

“Huh?”

Evane’s eyes widened in surprise.

“N-No, of cou- why wo-”

“Hahaha~ Just look at you, panicking like that. Don’t worry sister, I know you better than anyone. You don’t want the throne. I am sure you just missed us. That is why you are here, right?”

“R-R-Right.”

Evane nodded with a smile on her face.

“Mhm, I missed you a lot as well.”

Lovis nodded.

Evane nodded back and then, Lovis muttered,

“Though I will say, Sister, you came at a really bad time.”

“Hmm? What do you mean?”

Evane frowned.

“Well, according to the Rumors, the King will elect a Crown Prince soon and many think that you are here because you want the Crown for yourself.”

Lovis answered.

“Of course, I know you have no interest in the Throne, however, as your brother, I suggest you to be careful.

First Brother is...

Pretty desperate right now.”

Lovis muttered with a small smile on his face.

“What do you mean?”

Evane frowned.

“Nothing...”

Don’t worry, I will protect you.”

“Alright...”

# Chapter 421

“Haah... things are not good at all...”

Raguel, the First Prince sighed as he walked into his Grandfather’s room. There, his eyes fell on Smith, his Grandfather’s Butler. He looked at the Butler and nodded.

The Butler looked back, then he glanced at The Duke, the Duke nodded, the Butler then bowed and left the room.

Once the Butler left, Raguel continued.

“Evane is back.”

“I heard that.”

The Duke replied with a Solemn look on his face.

“And things are bad.”

Raguel spoke.

“...”

The Duke didn’t say anything.

Raguel understood what his Grandfather wanted and continued his story.

“So she walked into the Palace today, and there, she met the Lovis and Lucas, Lucas acted just like he always does, like an idiotic drunkard.

That is not a problem.

Lovis, however, was different than normal.

First and most surprising was that he decided to take part in that Party. A cultivation maniac like him rarely shows up for any parties, of course, I know that the relationship between those two is good, however, I still don't think that Lovis would join a party for just that reason.

There must be something else.

Something other, hidden reason.

I was cautious, and then, I noticed, Evane and Lovis looked a lot closer than before.

Grandfather, with how close they looked, I believe there is a high chance that the two of them are collaborating with each other.

However, not everything is bad.

There is some good news as well.”

“What good news?”

The Duke questioned.

Raguel smiled and then, he continued.

“Well, we can be sure that Duke Vestalis is not going to side with Lovis.”

“Why is that?”

“If he wanted to side with Lovis, Evane wouldn't be back.”

Hearing those words, the Duke frowned.

“Hear me out, Grandfather.

Evane is back, however, she hasn't changed at all.

She still doesn't know how to control her emotions. Today, Lucas asked her if she was here for the Throne and Evane was unable to answer that

question.”

“What does that mean?”

The Duke questioned.

“If Evane didn’t have any thoughts about the Throne in her mind, she would have said that without a second of hesitation, however, today, she didn’t answer.

This only means one thing, she wants the Throne.

And for that, she would need Duke Vestalis’s support. With this, we can be sure that Duke Vestalis is not planning to support Lovis.

We can say that we have avoided the worst-case scenario.

Evane and Lovis are collaborating, however, in the end, they are still aiming for the Throne and are each other’s enemies.”

The First Prince smiled.

The Duke, however, shook his head.

“I wouldn’t be too sure about that.”

“Huh?”

The Prince frowned.

The Duke’s ring then shined and soon, a letter appeared in his hand. He passed the letter to the Prince and the Prince frowned.

Skipping all the less important things, The Prince directly read the most important line,

“You think you can buy me with those pathetic gifts? Dream on. I would never give in to your stupid demands. Hmph! Even if I wanted something out of this, I would have contacted Duke Merula, not you.

Know your place!

Duke Leofric Vestalis.”

Raguel’s eyes widened in surprise when he read that letter.

“This was the letter sent to me by Duke Vestalis. With this, we can be sure that he plans to side with Lovis. He wouldn’t have mentioned Duke Merula’s name if he hadn’t thought of it already.”

“It can be a Trick to fool you.”

The First Prince narrowed his eyes.

“And what would he get after that? Look, with what you said, there is no way Evane has what it takes to be the Queen of the Kingdom. She is too naïve to be the King.

There is no way the King would choose someone like her as the next Ruler of the Skyfall Kingdom.

She is just like Lucas, not even in the competition.

The only people who are in this competition are you and Lovis.

Duke Vestalis knows that as well.

Therefore, I believe that he has already made his choice.

And this is the worst-case scenario for us. We can be sure of that.”

Duke Thronton spoke with a serious look on his face.

“ ... ”

Raguel turned silent.

“ ... ”

Duke Thornton didn't say anything either.

The situation was serious, the two of them could see the Crown slipping away from their grasp.

“What should I do?”

Raguel questioned.

“...”

However, the Duke didn't have an answer to his question.

Even he was confused. He was thinking about all this for the whole day, however, he was still unable to com-

Suddenly, an idea popped up in the Duke's mind.

“What did you say about Lucas?”

“Hmmm? Lucas?”

Raguel frowned.

“Yes, him. What did he do again?”

“Well, nothing much, he just came to the party, drunk and created a little scene. Nothing abnormal, he is a hopeless drunkard after all.”

Hearing those words, a smile appeared on the Duke's face.

“What do you think the Fourth Prince desires?”

“Hmm?”

“Do you think he wishes to become the King?”

“Of course he does.”

Raguel nodded.

“Why do you think he wants to do that?”

The Duke questioned.

“Hmm?”

The First Prince tilted his head in confusion.

“I don’t know, maybe he just wants to live a carefree life and drink all day? I mean, I don’t think he has anything else in his mind other than alcohol and women.”

Duke’s smile then widened,

“And what if we promise him all that without any need to become the King?”

Hearing those words, Raguel paused.

“You mean...”

“It is time to make Lucas your best friend, Raguel.”

Duke Thornton smiled wickedly.

A similar smile appeared on Raguel’s face and nodded his head.

“I understand. I understand it all.”

The two of them smiled at each other and then, Raguel left.

He wanted to meet his new friend as soon as possible.

After all, there were a lot of things he wanted to talk about.

# Chapter 422

“You look tired, brother.”

“Huh? How did you get it?”

Lucas, the Fourth Prince who was just sitting on his chair with a tired look on his face looked at Raguel with a surprised look on his face.

“Through the door, of course.”

Raguel answered with a small chuckle.

“But I ordered them not to let anyone in. Those bastards dared to go against my orders, I will make sure they wi-”

Lucas was about to stand up and confront those guards, however, before he could do so, he was stopped by Raguel’s chuckle.

“Oh C’mon, don’t blame them, brother. It is not their fault.

Do you really think they will have the galls to stop me, the First Prince from entering your room?”

Hearing those words, Lucas narrowed his eyes,

“How would you feel if I entered your room, unannounced?”

“Now don’t act so grumpy, we are brothers. Of course, you can enter my room whenever you want.”

Raguel, however, stayed calm and answered with a smile on his face.

“Oh? What happened? Why are you showing that ‘brotherly love’ now?”  
Lucas raised his eyebrow.

Hearing those words, Raguel smiled, then he grabbed the bottle of Alcohol placed on Lucas's table and poured some for himself in a glass.

“Brother, please don't act like this is the first time I have shown my 'brotherly love' for you.”

He chuckled.

“It is the first time though. You haven't even talked to me for so long before today.”

Lucas was direct with his words.

Unlike normal members of the Royal Family, he didn't play complex games whenever he talked with anyone. He just talked normally, he said what he wanted to say and did whatever he wanted to do.

He never cared about what others thought about him.

And of course, as someone who has never really talked to him before, Raguel was having difficulties holding up the conversation.

With Lucas shutting him off every time he tried to talk to him, he didn't know how to continue, however, no matter what, he couldn't give up here.

It is pretty much confirmed that Duke Merula and Duke Vestalis are collaborating with each other, defeating the two of them alone would be nearly impossible. There is no way the King would choose him over Lovis, who has the support of Two Dukes.

Therefore, to remain in this battle, he needed Duke Centho on his side.

However, talking to the Duke directly wouldn't work. That old monster has many years of experience under his plate.

If he or his Grandfather talks to him, he would understand their motives in an instant, and soon, he would realize how bad their position actually is. Once that happens, there is no way the Duke wouldn't try to exploit their

weakness and benefit from it. That is the most common and logical move. Even Duke Fulvianus would do that if he was in his position.

Therefore, talking to Duke Centho directly wouldn't work.

Targetting the gullible Lucas was a much safer option.

The Process is simple, just promise him a lavish life, full of booze and women and he would talk to the Duke himself.

It was just that simple,

Or that was how it should have been.

Lucas, however, was much colder than Raguel expected him to be.

“Is that true? Hahaha~ I apologize for that. I have been a bad brother.

However, now I am here to redeem my mistakes. Give me a chance, will you?”

Raguel smiled a little and extended the glass he was holding forward.

Lucas looked at him for a while and then,

\*Clink\*

He raised his own glass towards Raguel. Their glasses touched each other's, and Raguel's smile widened.

Finally, he was going somewhere, he kept the momentum and spoke,

“To our new and better relationship.”

Lucas nodded.

Seeing that, a smile appeared on Raguel's face.

He would see his grasp around the Throne getting stronger again.

However, suddenly, a smile appeared on Lucas's face.

Seeing that smile, Raguel frowned.

That smile... it wasn't a warm smile that should be appearing on his face right now... that... that was a...

Disdainful smile...

Wait, Disdainful?

Raguel's frown deepened.

"What happened, brother?"

He questioned.

Hearing that question, Lucas's smile widened,

"Nothing really, I am just wondering how more fake can you be."

"What? What are you talking about, brother?"

Raguel tried to keep his smile.

"Ugh, you can stop with the acting, 'Brother'. This makes me sick."

"What are you talking about?"

Raguel couldn't understand.

"You will be a better brother? You are looking forward to a better relationship between us? Don't make me laugh.

I know you well, First Brother.

Before this, you didn't even talk to me properly, I could tell from the look in your eyes that let alone 'loving me', you didn't even think of me as your blood brother.

I was and am nothing in your eyes. That will never change and I know that.

So why don't you stop this pathetic act of yours and directly spit what you want to spit out and then get the hell out?"

Lucas spat with a cold look on his face.

This time, his words were a lot harsher than they were when he was talking to Evane.

This time, he was sober.

Hearing those words and that tone, Raguel realized that coaxing him like that wouldn't work. He finally realized that his brother might be a lot smarter than he gives him the credit for.

However, in the end, he was still the First Prince, he quickly changed his approach and started,

"Alright, you are right and I agree, this act didn't suit me in the first place. I was way out of my comfort zone."

Saying that, Raguel placed the glass of alcohol he was holding on the table and wiped his hand with a handkerchief.

"Mhm, now that is much like you."

Lucas nodded with a smile and drank the whole glass in one gulp before refilling again.

"Alright, I will stop with all these unnecessary talks and will directly jump to the topic."

"Much appreciated."

Lucas shrugged.

Then, a solemn look appeared on Raguel's face and he questioned.

“Lucas Skyfall, do you actually believe you can become the King of the Skyfall Kingdom?”

# Chapter 423

“Lucas Skyfall, do you actually believe you can become the King of the Skyfall Kingdom?”

Raguel questioned with a solemn look on his face.

Hearing that question, Lucas smiled and answered confidently.

“Of course I do.”

Raguel looked at him with a blank look on his face and continued to stare at him.

“What?”

Lucas frowned.

“Answer me honestly, do you actually believe you stand a chance in this Battle To Throne?”

Raguel questioned again.

“First Brother, do you have a hearing problem or something? Didn't you hear it the first time?”

I said Yes.

Yes, I believe I have what it takes to become the King of this Kingdom and I believe that I have a good shot at becoming one.”

Lucas answered.

Raguel's face twitched when he heard that answer.

This time, he decided to be blunt.

“A 59-year-old Prince of the Kingdom who knows nothing but to drink liquor and waste his time with different women. A Prince who never focused on Cultivation and barely managed to become a Master Stage Cultivator even after all this year.

A man who has no clue about military tactics has no political stand other than the fact that his Grandfather is a Duke, a man whose guards easily allow someone else to enter his room despite his clear orders against it,

Do you really think a man like you is fit to become a King when the ones you are competing with are me and Lovis?

I, a 124-year-old Expert Stage Cultivator, who is much more experienced when compared to his siblings, am currently the strongest of all the contenders, have the support of the Strongest Duke of the Kingdom, and have the most number of Nobles supporting him.

Then there is Lovis, a 62-year-old Grand Master Stage Cultivator who is aiming to become an Expert Stage Cultivator soon, a man who has dedicated his life to cultivation and has a solid foundation in the Palace.

Do you actually think you stand a chance?”

Raguel repeated his question again.

“Actually, I believe that even Evane, who is too naïve for all the throne and is not even in the competition is a better contender than you.

Trust me when I say it, little brother.

You cannot win.”

“ ... ”

Lucas turned silent.

“ ... ”

Raguel didn't say anything, he just continued to look at Lucas, making him more and more uncomfortable.

Lucas lowered his head and avoid eye contact in order to get out of this situation, however, the more time passed, the more uncomfortable he felt, in the end, he couldn't hold it anymore and questioned.

“Are you here to make fun of me?”

“No, I am not. On the contrary, I am here to help you.”

Hearing those words, Lucas frowned,

“Help me? Help me how? You are going to help me become the King?”

“...”

Raguel looked at Lucas with a lost expression on his face.

“Just why do you want to be the King so badly?”

He couldn't help but question.

“Huh? Don't act like you don't want to be the King.”

“I do, I want to become the King because I want to rule over everyone. I want the power to do anything I want, I want to push the Kingdom to new heights and I plan to unite the whole continent under my banner.

But what about you?

Why do you want to be the King?”

Raguel questioned with a curious look on his face.

“My intentions are not as grand as yours, I just want to become the King so that I can do whatever I want and however I want.

Once I become the King, people wouldn't have to barge into my room without knocking."

Lucas muttered as he glanced at Raguel and narrowed his head. Raguel chuckled a little and Lucas continued,

"Once I become the King, I can drink anything I want, I can sleep with any woman I want and no one would dare to say a word about it."

"Hmmm, that is quite a goal."

Raguel nodded.

"Huh?"

Hearing that, Lucas frowned.

"What happened?"

Raguel tilted his head in confusion.

"You don't think that my goal is... childish?"

"Hmm? Of course not. You want freedom, how is that childish?"

Raguel answered and a small smile appeared on Lucas's face.

Seeing that smile, Raguel smirked inwardly.

The Fish has taken the bait.

Now, it was time to slowly pull it out of the water and capture it.

"But what if I say that there is a better and a lot easier way to achieve this dream of yours?"

Raguel questioned.

"Hmm? What are you talking about?"

Lucas questioned back, clearly interested.

“Think with me.

The King’s brother, who is supported by the King, does whatever he wants, drinks whatever he wants, sleep with any woman he wants, and offends anyone he wants, however, since the King has his back, no one dares to go against him.

He is weak, however, his brother is the King, therefore, even the Strong were forced to bow their heads in front of him.

A man who only drinks and sleeps with women while other, much more competent people serve him.

How does that sound?”

Raguel questioned.

Lucas started imagining that lifestyle.

“Lucas, you have to understand, even if you become the King, you would not be able to achieve your dream, there would be many people who would still bother you, especially the other Kingdoms, if you become the King, you will definitely not achieve the freedom you desire so much.”

Raguel spoke and Lucas...

He started understanding what his brother was talking about.

“So what you are trying to say is...”

He spoke.

Seeing him like that, Raguel’s smile widened.

“Yes, this is what I am talking about.

How about you become that carefree King's brother who could do whatever he wants, while I, take the bigger responsibility and become the next King?

How about it?"

"So I only need to support you and once you become the King, you would let me do whatever I want?"

Lucas questioned with a silly smile on his face.

"Indeed Indeed."

Raguel nodded.

"Alright, I agree."

Lucas nodded without even thinking.

Raguel's smile widened.

"You have made a wise choice."

He wanted to comment, however, suddenly, again, a similar disdainful smile appeared on Lucas's face.

"If only it was that easy, right, brother?"

# Chapter 424

“If only it was that easy, right, brother?”

Lucas questioned with a disdainful smirk on his face.

Seeing that look on his brother’s face, Raguel finally realized,

Lucas was making fun of him.

He had no plans to work with him from the beginning. He was deliberately saying what he wanted to hear because,

“Hahahaha~ My acting skills have improved a lot, wouldn’t you agree, brother?”

I must say, seeing how all the expectations just flushed out of your face when you realized the truth, Hahahaha~ It was so amusing.

Hahahaha~”

He was saying all that because he wanted to laugh at him.

Raguel realized and clenched his fist in anger.

The thing he hated the most was being made fun of, especially by someone far weaker than him.

All the ‘gentle’ look on his face faded away and his eyes burned in anger and loathing.

“You have gone too far, Lucas.”

He glared at Lucas and spoke in a hoarse voice.

Seeing that look in his eyes, Lucas exclaimed.

“Aha! There is it!”

Raguel furrowed his brows a little.

“There is that usual look on your face.

The look full of loathing and disdain towards me.

Brother, even a child could tell that your gentle look before was just a ruse. In truth, the only thing you feel towards me is disdain.

You want me to become the King’s brother who does nothing but is backed by his brother? Who is going to have my back? You?

You? A man who doesn’t even think of me as his brother.

Brother, you are the most selfish person I have met, you think I would rely on someone like you?

Heh. If I wanted to rely on anyone, I would choose Third Brother, he is harsh, however, at least he doesn’t keep on that fake gentle persona like you.

Also, I believe that he has a better chance of becoming the King than someone like you.

You are nothing but an arrogant fool.”

“What did you say?”

Raguel narrowed his eyes and walked towards Lucas with a threatening look on his face.

Lucas backed down a little, however, soon, he forced a smile on his face and replied,

“What? You think you can scare me?”

Hearing those words, Raguel smiled wickedly and moved his face closer to Lucas.

“Oh, I definitely can.”

Lucas’s face turned pale.

However, this time, he decided not to back down.

“Do you really think Lovis can become the King of this country?”

“Trust me, First Brother, if not me, then he is the one who will become the King, which I think would be a lot better than you becoming the King.

You want to unite the whole continent under your banner? Heh, You? A man who couldn’t even realize that a ‘drunkard’ was fooling him until the Drunkard hinted at it himself.

If someone like you becomes the King, then rather than making the Skyfall Kingdom the only existing Kingdom on this Continent, you would just make wipe the Skyfall Kingdom from this continent.

You will destroy our Kingdom.”

This time, Raguel failed to hold himself back and grabbed Lucas’s neck in rage.

“And you think you, a drunkard bastard like you can become a better King than me?”

Raguel spoke in a hoarse voice.

“Y-Yes, I can.

A King who does nothing b-but enjoys his life is definitely a better King than someone who overestimates himself.

At the very least, I won’t try to go after other Kingdoms and destroy ours in the process.”

Lucas answered.

“Oh yeah? Then what would you do once the other Kingdom comes after you?”

“Skyfall Kingdom is the strongest Kingdom, brother. No Kingdom would come after us no matter how useless the King is. You know that as well.”

Raguel didn't say anything for a while.

He knew Lucas was right.

The current Skyfall Kingdom was very stable, they had the highest number of King Stage Experts, the highest number of soldiers in their army, strong trading networks, and many more.

Even if the King turns out to be a useless one, the Kingdom would still stand strong.

However, knowing was one thing, admitting was another.

Raguel would never admit that Lucas was right, therefore, he tightened his grip around Lucas's neck and narrowed his eyes.

“You are speaking too much. Do you want to die that badly?”

“Haah... Haahh... Haahh...”

Lucas started struggling even more, he was having difficulty in breathing, however, even though he was in that condition, he just smiled.

“S-See that? You lost control over your emotions so easily, do you really think you can become the King, brother.”

Raguel didn't answer, he just tightened his grip around Lucas's neck even further.

It was clear, he wasn't just trying to scare him anymore, right now, he was actually planning to kill him!

Lucas was getting on his nerves!

He wanted to see fear in his eyes.

However, Lucas didn't give him that satisfaction, he just smiled even more,

“H-Heh, d-do it, brother. I-I would love to see how you w-will become the King after k-killing your own brother.”

Hearing those words, Raguel's eyes, which were red in anger widened in surprise and he quickly backed up.

He had finally come out of his reverie.

He then looked at his own hands with a panicked look on his face.

“Haah... haah... haa...”

On the other hand, Lucas was desperately catching his breath, his face was red and there were finger markings on his neck, however, he still had a smile on his face.

A smile full of satisfaction.

This was the first time he felt that he actually won against this brother of his.

“Haa... Haha... Hahahaha~”

Slowly, the smile on Lucas's face widened and then, he started laughing.

“...”

Raguel just glared at this little brother of his, his rage was clear on his face, however, he held himself back.

He can't do anything reckless right now.

He would deal with this bastard later.

“Hmph!”

With a snort, Raguel turned around and left Lucas’s room.

# Chapter 425

‘Nux, can you come here?’

Amaya requested with a solemn tone.

‘Hmm? Did something happen?’

Nux questioned while defending against Ember and Thyra’s combined attack.

‘Yes.’

Amaya nodded.

Nux’s face turned solemn.

‘Alright, I’ll be there in a moment.’

Nux replied, and at the same time, he blocked Ember’s sword, then he attacked her right leg.

Ember lost her balance and fell on the ground. Knowing that it would be impossible to win if Ember is out, Thyra attacked from behind, trying to save her teammate, however, Nux grabbed her hand, lifted her up, and slammed her to the ground right next to Ember.

Then, with his hands, he grabbed their necks, not allowing them to move.

With his face covered in sweat, he glanced at the two beautiful women under him and smiled,

“That was good.”

“What happened?”

Thyra questioned.

Nux tilted his head in confusion.

“You would never end the fight so quickly. How would you take advantage of us if you do that.”

Thyra explained her reasoning.

Nux chuckled and then answered,

“Amaya called. It sounded serious.”

Hearing Amaya’s name, Ember pouted.

“Hmph!”

Seeing her acting like that, Nux smiled.

Then, he kissed her on the forehead, then did the same with Thyra, and stood up after.

“I will take my leave now.”

Ember nodded,

“Alright, we will go and see how others are doing.”

Nux smiled and then, he disappeared.

The next moment, he appeared in front of Amaya, and as soon as he entered the room, he activated his [Sense].

“No one is there, don’t worry, I wouldn’t have called you if I was under someone’s observation.”

“Hooh? That’s rare. Why is there no one watching you today.”

“The King is busy with his own thing.”

Amaya smiled.

Nux nodded, he then walked towards Amaya and placed her on his lap.

“So? What happened?”

He questioned while his hands started moving around Amaya’s body.

Amaya, of course, didn’t stop him.

A small smile appeared on her face and she replied,

“Raguel just met Lucas.”

“Hmmm, Raguel is the First and Lucas is the Fourth, am I correct?”

“Yes.”

“Ah, so the two of them met. Well, you did say something like this might happen.”

“Indeed,”

“So? What happened? Did Lucas accept his proposal?”

Initially, when Amaya and Nux were planning everything. Amaya had predicted that Raguel would try to contact Lucas, the weakest of the four contenders for the Throne, and would try to ask for his support.

Or, the support of Duke Centho, to be more precise.

This worried Nux before, however, Amaya later said that Lucas wouldn’t accept, well, because if it was that easy, someone would have already contacted him by now and he wouldn’t be fighting for the Throne.

Since these words sounded logical, Nux agreed and didn’t think too much about it, however, if Amaya had called him here to discuss it, then something must have gone wrong.

Therefore, Nux guessed.

“No, Lucas did not.”

Amaya, however, shook her head.

“Hmm? Then what’s the problem? Isn’t everything going according to what we have planned?”

Nux questioned.

“No... things are not as simple as we thought.”

“What do you mean?”

Nux frowned.

“I used [Sense] on Lucas and Raguel while the two of them were talking to each other and saw the entire thing fold out on my own.

Therefore, I noticed something.”

Amaya spoke.

“What?” Nux questioned.

“The Fourth Prince was too calm today.”

Amaya answered.

“What do you mean?”

Nux couldn’t understand.

“According to what I know, Lucas is just a drunkard who has no control over his emotions and often bursts out and creates a scene just like he did at the party, he is reckless and not very intelligent.

However, when he was talking with Raguel today, he didn't seem like his usual self.

He was playing mind games with Raguel. I know, Raguel was the one who wanted his help, so him being in a bad position was logical, however, the way Lucas was playing with his today still felt strange.”

Amaya started her analyses.

“This sudden change could only mean two things.

First, the Fourth Prince is actually a wolf in sheep's clothing and is hiding his capability. However, something like that is highly unlikely because even if he is hiding his intelligence and all that drunkard prince persona is just a façade, the fact that he is a Master Stage Cultivator remains.

No matter how intelligent one is, if he isn't strong enough, he would never become the King. Lucas doesn't stand a chance, so all this acting doesn't really make sense.

This brings me to my second theory, Lucas knew something Raguel didn't.”

“He knew something Raguel didn't?”

“Yes. Something that made him very confident. Confident enough to go against Raguel, someone who has a decent chance to become the King.”

“There are only a few things like that,” Nux commented and Amaya nodded.

“Indeed. I replayed their conversation again and soon, I realized something.

Lucas mentioned Lovis.”

“The Third Prince.”

“Yes, I was doubtful, therefore, I checked the connection between the two of them. I wasn't able to find anything between them, however, when I investigated Duke Centho and Duke Merula, I found a connection.

The Two of them have been talking to each other for a while now.”

“Do you mean...”

“Yes, the Third Prince is not as straightforward as we expected him to be.”

Amaya nodded.

“This is bad.”

Nux commented.

“Indeed.”

A solemn look appeared on Amaya’s face as well.

The two of them were not actually worried about Lovis, the man was just a Grand Master Stage Cultivator, he was barely a threat, however, what they were worried about was Evane.

Evane was close to Lovis and Lucas.

However, now it was clear that there was more to Lovis than what meets the eye, therefore, Nux was worried that the man might hurt his Evane.

Of course, he wouldn’t let that happen no matter what.

“We need to investigate this Lovis dude...”

# Chapter 426

“Nope, nothing, I cannot find anything about the Third Prince.”

Amaya shook her head as she skimmed through some papers.

Nux, who was sitting right next to him frowned,

“He is too clean. So clean that it is suspicious.”

Amaya smiled and shook her head,

“Well, now it is just your bias speaking. You have already assumed that the Third Prince is hiding something. It doesn't matter if we find anything on him or not, you would still be suspicious of him.”

Nux looked at Amaya and then, he nodded.

“I will not disagree, however, I still feel that guy is suspicious. He is a Prince for god's sake, why is he so mysterious? How do we not have any information on him other than what most people already know?”

“Well, he is known to be a Cultivation Maniac who stays inside his room most of the time. So collecting information on him is a little harder.

People have tried talking to his servants, however, they didn't get anything useful out of them.”

Amaya answered.

“See? This proves it.

His servants are oddly tight-lipped, something is definitely wrong with Lovis.”

Nux pointed out and Amaya chuckled again.

“Or it could also mean that he really has nothing to hide.”

Nux looked into Amaya’s eyes with a deadpan look on his face and then, he questioned.

“You really don’t think that, do you?”

“Well, all the logic points towards the fact that the Third Prince is actually innocent, and everything we have been talking about is just our assumption.”

Amaya answered.

Nux’s frown deepened, seeing that, Amaya’s smile widened and she continued.

“However, my assumptions are never wrong.”

Hearing those words, Nux smiled,

“So you mean...”

“Indeed, if we can’t find anything about this Lovis then we just need to have a chat with him.”

Amaya nodded and a Nux’s smile widened.

“So, my genius wife, how do we do that?”

“It’s not that difficult, we have Lovis’s sister on our team, remember?”

“We are going to involve Evane in this?”

Nux furrowed his brows.

“Oh? You think she wouldn’t help?”

Amaya questioned.

“She would of course, however, it would hur-”

“Nux, Evane is not a child, she might trust her brothers a little too much and is close to them, however, that doesn’t mean she is going to trust them blindly and won’t even try to find out the truth.

If anything, she would try to use this chance to prove to you that Lovis is not the type of man we think he is.”

Amaya answered and after thinking about it for a while, Nux nodded.

“Alright.”

“Good, now contact her and explain everything to her.”

Nux did as Amaya told him to do and after explaining everything to Evane, the woman nodded.

‘Alright, come to my room, we will go and talk to Lovis right now.’

Then a small smile appeared on Evane’s face and she spoke,

‘I guess meeting your brother-in-law in person would clear all your doubts.’

Hearing those words, Nux looked at Amaya and smiled dryly.

To be honest, Amaya was a scary woman.

She could predict literally anything and most of the time, her predictions would come true.

Just like what happened with Evane’s case.

“Is she ready?”

Looking at Nux’s expression, Amaya guessed.

Nux chuckled in defeat, then, he kissed Amaya on her lips and replied,

“I will take my leave now.”

Amaya nodded with a smile, then she grabbed Nux’s head and kissed him again.

Nux didn’t fight back and allowed her to do anything she wanted, 5 minutes later, when Amaya was finally satisfied, she released her grip and nodded.

Nux nodded back and then, he disappeared.

He then appeared in Evane’s room, where the woman was waiting for him with a smile on her face.

“Welcome.”

Nux looked at the blonde woman standing in front of him and hugged her soft body.

“Shall we leave now?”

Evane questioned with an excited look on her face.

“Have you remembered Amaya’s questions?”

Nux questioned back.

“Of course.”

Evane nodded.

Nux nodded back and after he covered half of his face with a Mask, wore skintight black clothes, and set his cultivation at Grand Master Stage, he bowed his head.

“After you, Lady Evane.”

Evane chuckled and then, she walked out of her room.

Nux followed her from behind like a loyal servant, of course, he didn't waste this chance and continued to observe Evane's perky butt jiggling left and right as she moved.

Evane felt his gaze and shook her head with a smile.

The two of them didn't share any words, however, they still created their own moment out of this small walk.

A few minutes later, Evane appeared in front of Lovis's room and knocked.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

'You need to knock before entering your brother's room, suspicious.'

Nux narrowed his eyes and commented.

'What if you and I are enjoying our time and he barges into our room without knocking?'

'That makes sense, knocking is important I guess.'

Nux nodded in understanding.

A few seconds later, the door was opened by Lovis's butler.

"Hmm? Lady Evane? Are you here to meet Master Lovis?"

The Butler questioned respectfully.

Seeing the Butler, Nux narrowed his eyes again.

'Expert Stage Butler, even Raguel, the First Prince only has Grand Master Stage Cultivator as his butler.'

'There are people who are protecting the First brother from shadows, Lovis doesn't have anyone like them.'

Every Prince has their own way of protecting themselves.'

Evane answered.

‘Yes, I know, don’t bother with me, I am just making some observations.’

‘I know what you are trying to do.’

Evane replied.

Nux wanted to reply, however, before he could, Evane turned towards the Butler.

“Yes, I am here to see him.”

“Umm... Lady Evane, Master Lovis is currently cultivating. So if it is no-”

“It is important, I need to talk to him,

Right now.”

Evane spoke in a firm tone.

Seeing Evane act like that, Nux couldn’t help but smile.

Lovis’s Butler was taken aback, however, he regained his composure soon and nodded.

“Alright, I will talk to Master Lovis, please have a seat and wait for a while.”

# Chapter 427

“Sister? What happened? Is something bothering you?”

Lovis questioned with a frown on his face.

“No, I am just here to talk with you.”

Evane answered with a smile on her face.

Hearing those words, Lovis’s frown deepened,

“Leo told me that you are here to talk about something important.”

‘He is indirectly saying that you aren’t just wasting my precious time to talk about random stuff right? If you are then you should leave.’

Nux translated as he continued to observe the Third Prince.

[Name: Lovis Skyfall]

[Age: 62 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Grand Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Third Prince of the Skyfall Kingdom.]

[Talent: High]

[LVL: 46]

[HP: 600/600]

[MP: 860/860]

[STR: 58]

[AGL: 65]

[VIT: 60]

[STM: 61]

[INT: 86]

[DEF: 52]

‘Huh? He’s nothing special.

Even that Candice is better than him...

Is he really the best the Skyfall Royal Family could offer?’

Nux wondered inwardly as he continued to stare at Lovis.

Sensing his gaze, Lovis turned towards Nux and saw those Golden eyes looking at him with... disdain? Lovis frowned.

“Who is he, Sister?”

He questioned.

He was indeed different than Raguel, if it was the First Prince, he would have lashed out at Nux for looking at him like that, Lovis, however, was a lot calmer.

He was affected by that gaze, that was clear, however, he didn’t show it on his face.

‘Maybe he is not that bad.’

Nux admitted.

“Ah, he is my Bodyguard.”

“Hmm? I have never seen him before...”

Lovis narrowed his eyes as he glanced at Nux.

“Didn’t you say that I came at a bad time and that First brother is getting pretty desperate? I thought that I should not depend on you much and hired him as my bodyguard.”

Evane answered.

“Is that so...”

Lovis started observing Nux more carefully, trying to pressure him with his gaze, Nux, however, completely ignored his gaze and even started yawning.

He was blatantly disrespecting Lovis, however, Lovis didn’t lose his temper and turned towards Evane.

“Why is he covering his face?”

“Well... he has some... problems with his face.”

Evane replied.

‘Indeed, being too handsome can be a problem sometimes.’

Nux agreed.

‘Oh C’mon.’

Evane shook her head and chuckled.

Lovis, however, narrowed his eyes even further and then questioned.

“Are you sure you can trust him?”

This time, before Evane could answer, Nux stepped forward.

“Yes, she can. She is not a fool, she wouldn’t have hired me if she didn’t trust me. Heck, I can even say that she trusts me more than she trusts you, someone, she hasn’t met for more than 20 years.

Who knows how much you have changed in these last 20 years.”

“Don’t go too far, little ant.”

This time, Leo couldn’t hold himself back anymore and roared in rage.

He had already brought out his dagger and was ready to attack Nux, however, before he could do that, Lovis stopped him.

Then, he glanced at Nux and smiled.

“Heh, you are brave, I will give you that. To go against me, the Third Prince of this Country with your meager status, commendable indeed.”

“Of course, that is all you guys have to say for yourself, your status, but that is understandable, you don’t have anything noteworthy apart from your status do you?”

Nux smiled lightly.

Leo tightened the grip around his dagger, he could feel it, even Lovis was about to lose control over his emotions.

Lovis, however, held himself back and turned towards Evane.

“Sister, your bodyguard is a little too disrespectful. Please tell him to leave, there is a limit to how much I can listen.”

Evane glanced at Nux and smiled inwardly,

‘See? Did you find anything suspicious? He doesn’t have that inflated ego and is even willing to let you go just because you are my bodyguard.

Do you think that he would go that far if he was just acting like he cares for me?’

Nux glanced at Lovis and this time, he couldn't help but nod.

Evane was right, maybe he and Amaya were wrong about Lovis.

‘Continue with the Act.’

However, before he could say anything, he and Evane heard Amaya's voice.

Evane narrowed her eyes.

‘Why now?’

‘Trust me, I can feel it.

Something is wrong here.

He is a little too calm.’

Amaya replied.

Evane glanced at Nux, and Nux nodded a little.

Evane sighed, and Nux smiled wryly.

‘Just a little more.’

Nux knew Amaya well, unlike him, she wasn't an unreasonable person, she must have seen something if she told them to continue with this little act of theirs.

Evane then finally nodded and turned towards Lovis.

“I apologize for his behavior, Third Brother. I give you my word, he won't say a single word from now on.”

Lovis narrowed his eyes, however, in the end, he just nodded.

“Tsk.”

Nux snorted and turned his head away.

“Have a seat.”

Evane pointed at the chair next to her.

Lovis looked at Evane and then sat on the chair Evane pointed at.

“So? What did you want to talk about, Sister?”

“The Throne.”

Evane answered in a solemn tone.

“The Throne?”

Lovis frowned.

“What do you want to talk about?”

He questioned.

“Do you remember when I told you that I am not interested in the Throne before?”

Evane questioned.

Hearing those words, Lovis’s expression changed momentarily, and then, he nodded.

“Yes, you said you have no interest in the Throne. Was that a lie?”

“Hmm? Of course not. Why would I lie to you?”

Evane replied and at that moment, all the seriousness that had appeared on Lovis’s face turned into confusion.

“Then what are you here for?”

Lovis was getting a little impatient now.

“I wa-”

Evane was about to answer, however, before she did, she turned toward Nux.

Nux nodded, then, he walked towards Leo, Lovis’s butler and,

“Come with me.”

Took him with him.

Lovis frowned, however, before he could say anything, Evane dropped the bomb.

“What if Duke Vestalis supports you in this Battle of Throne?”

# Chapter 428

“What if Duke Vestalis supports you in this Battle of Throne?”

Evane offered with a smile on her face.

“W-What?”

Lovis was stunned.

He couldn't believe what he was hearing.

He tried to hide his excitement and was trying not to show any reactions to Evane's words, however, no matter how hard he tried, Nux could see those eyes shining in uncontrollable greed.

‘His Desire was the Throne is too Great, even greater than Raguel.’

Amaya, who was seeing everything from afar spoke.

‘I can see that and I refuse to believe that he is the person Evane thinks he is.’

Nux nodded his head and narrowed his eyes as he glanced at Lucas.

He was doubtful at first, however, now he was sure.

Evane was wrong about Lucas.

This man was definitely not as simple as Evane portrays him to be.

He has many secrets.

‘Evane needs to stay away from him.’

‘We need to prove everything to her.’

Amaya replied.

Nux then glanced at Evane and his face turned solemn,

‘It won’t be that easy.’

‘Don’t worry, let the act continue, I am sure this man would fall for this.’

Amaya smiled.

Nux smiled back.

“What are you smiling about, you bastard?”

Leo, Lovis’s butler, who Nux pulled away, questioned in a frustrated tone.

“...”

Nux, however, completely ignored the man and continued to observe Lovis and Evane with his [Sense].

“Lovis, I need your help.”

Evane muttered.

“Help?”

Lovis frowned.

Weren’t you about to help me? When did our situation turn around?

Wait...

Was her sister playing with him?

Lovis narrowed his eyes.

However, before he could make any more absurd conclusions, Evane continued.

“Yes, I need your help with Lucas.”

“With Lucas?”

Lovis tilted his head in confusion.

He just couldn't understand what was going through his Sister's mind.

“I am observing that boy ever since I returned and I realized that his addiction to Alcohol has increased even more compared to the time I left. Not only that, he has even started going around touching random women and prostitutes, I heard that he even assaulted a few women.”

Evane spoke about her worries.

This time, although what she was saying was according to the script, she wasn't acting.

She was actually worried about Lovis.

“I have to do something, I can't allow him to destroy his life like that and for that, I need your help.”

She spoke in a determined tone.

Although Lovis couldn't understand where Lucas suddenly popped into this conversation, he still questioned.

“What can I do for you?”

“Listen, I have a plan.”

Evane then moved her body close to Lovis and continued.

“I will talk to my Grandfather, I will ask him to support you instead of supporting me. You can then talk with your Grandfather and tell him to give my Grandfather some benefits, I am sure he will agree and support you in this Battle of Thrones.

With two Dukes supporting you, there is no way you would not be chosen as the next King of this Kingdom.”

Evane explained her plan and hearing her words, Lovis’s eyes shined in excitement and a smile appeared on his face.

‘He is not even trying to hide his excitement now.’

Nux shook his head.

‘He is too excited to care about it.’

Amaya replied and Nux nodded.

Evane’s face then turned solemn and she continued,

“Once you become the King, I want you to put Lucas in Prison.”

“Prison?”

Lovis frowned.

“Yes, I have realized that normal methods won’t work against him. We need to use force. In prison, he wouldn’t be able to touch any alcohol or women, in a few years, I am sure Lucas would get rid of this annoying addiction.

I know it is wrong, however, if it can place him back in the right path, I am ready to do it.”

Evane answered with conviction.

“So... you will support me as long as I promise to imprison Lucas after becoming the King?”

Lucas questioned.

“Yes, I will.”

Evane answered.

“And what if I don’t keep my part of the promise?”

“Huh? Why would you do that? You are not planning to go against your Big Sister are you?”

Evane narrowed her eyes jokingly.

“Of course not. How can I do that.”

Lovis chuckled.

A smile appeared on Evane’s face as she grabbed Lovis’s cheeks.

“I know I can trust your words, Lovis.”

“Ugghhh! I am not a child!”

Lovis complained.

“For me, you will always be a child, even after you become the King.”

Evane answered.

Lovis chuckled and at the same time, he realized.

His Sister was as naïve as before, she hasn’t changed at all.

She was not a threat.

A smile appeared on Lovis’s face as he glanced at Evane.

“Oh right,”

Suddenly, Evane spoke up.

Then, two papers appeared on Evane’s hand and she passed them to Lovis.

“Alright, write what you just said on this paper and then sign it.”

Hearing those words, Lovis narrowed his eyes.

“Didn’t you say that you trusted my words?”

“I did, however, I do not trust your memory. You will forget about it, therefore, it is better to write it.”

“Why two papers then?”

Lovis questioned.

“One for you and the other for me, of course.”

Evane replied.

Lovis narrowed his eyes even further, however, in the end, he decided to give in.

The rewards were just too enticing for him to not give in.

Also, it is just writing on paper, what could possibly go wrong?

Once he actually becomes the King, would he really be threatened by a piece of paper?

Of course not.

In the end, Lovis decided to fulfill his sister’s wish and started writing on paper.

“Hm hm, good.”

Lovis quickly wrote on the papers and as soon as he was done, Evane smiled.

“Alright, now stick this paper in your room, so that you will never forget it.”

Lovis chuckled, and then, he called,

“Leo.”

“At your command, Master Lovis.”

Leo appeared within a second.

“Stick this paper to the wall of my room, make it so that I can see it every day.”

“As you command, Master Lovis.”

Lovis then turned towards Evane and smiled.

“Are you satisfied, Big Sister?”

“Good Boy.”

Evane smiled.

# Chapter 429

“Looks like you are having a great time, aren’t you?”

A woman with short black hair, wearing skin-tight black clothes that highlighted her lean physique walked into a room with a calm expression on her face. Half of her face was covered with a mask, however, her Icy blue eyes were hypnotic enough to win any man’s heart.

Of course, if you ignore the fact that she just barged into the room with a dagger in her hand.

That was scary.

“Who are you!? How dare you bar- Acckk”

A guard shouted in rage, however, before he could even complete his sentence, the woman disappeared and appeared behind him.

With a single chop on his neck, the guard passed out.

The same thing happened with other guards who rushed out, the guard who had already run away and was planning to report everything was taken care of by another woman who wore similar clothes, Auburn hair, and big green eyes.

“W-W-Who are you?”

The only person left in the room questioned with a frightened look on his face.

“Hmm? Why do you look so scared, Fourth Prince? Don’t worry, I am not here to harm you, if I wanted to do that, you would have died already.”

The woman smiled.

Then, she pointed at the guards lying on the ground and spoke,

“See? I didn’t even kill them. I just knocked them out.”

However, even after hearing those words, Lucas didn’t calm down.

A woman suddenly barged into his room, he would be excited if this was a normal situation, however, it was anything but normal right now.

He was scared shitless.

All his drowsiness due to alcohol had faded away and his eyes and ears were wide open right now.

“W-W-Why a-are you d-doing this?”

He stuttered, tears were threatening to come out of his eyes and his face was pale in fear.

Seeing him acting like that, Thyra just shook her head.

She knew he was pathetic, but still...

Just how pathetic can one be?

He was a Prince of a Kingdom for fuck sake!

In the end, Thyra just sighed and continued with what she was here for.

“I just wanted to talk to you.”

“A-About what?”

“You and your Grandfather, Duke Centho now support the Third Prince, Lovis Skyfall, correct?”

Hearing those words, Lucas’s eyes widened in horror.

“N-No. O-O-Of course not! W-Why would I do t-that? I-I want to become the K-King.”

Although Lucas was not very adept in politics and anything related to it, however, he knew that the fact that he secretly supports Lovis couldn't come out yet.

If that happened then... then bad things will happen.

Or at least that's what his Third Brother, his Grandfather, and his Third Brother's Grandfather told him.

“You do not have to deny it, we already know about this fact. We knew about this for a long time now.”

Thyra replied.

“W-We?”

Lucas caught her words.

“W-What do you mean by ‘We’? A-Are you from some organization? W-W-Who are you?”

Lucas questioned in panic.

“Have you heard about Consort Allura's disappearance?”

Thyra questioned back and Lucas's eyes widened in surprise.

Consort Allura's disappearance!

Even someone like him knew about it.

He had heard that it was done by a mysterious organ-

Lucas finally realized.

And as if she knew about it, Thyra continued.

“Yes, I am from ‘that’ organization.”

Lucas’s pale face turned even paler.

“Don’t worry though, I am not here to hurt you.”

“T-Then why are you here?”

Lucas questioned.

“You support the Third Prince because he promised you a tension-free life full of Alcohol and Women, correct?”

Thyra questioned.

This time, Lucas was so scared that he didn’t even deny what she said and came clean.

“Yes, that is all I want, however, if you wish, then I can take back my support, I will even quit alcohol and would never touch a woman. If you want me to support First Brother, I would do that as well, just let me live. Just give me one chance!”

Lucas begged.

“Why would I want you to support that idiotic first brother of yours?”

Thyra tilted her head in confusion.

“Well, anyway, as I said, I am not here to hurt you. I just wanted to tell you something that I feel you should know.”

Saying that, a paper appeared in Thyra’s hand and she passed it to Lucas.

With trembling hands, Lucas grabbed the paper Thyra passed to him, and then, he started reading.

Soon, however, his eyes widened in surprise, all the fear from his face turned into shock and he increased his reading speed.

“It is not a fake, your brother’s signatures are on it.”

Thyra spoke.

Lucas didn’t reply and directly looked below.

There it was.

His brother’s signatures, the paper even had his stamp on it.

“Why would he do something like this?”

Lucas questioned.

However, instead of answering, Thyra just stepped back.

“I will leave this to you, do with it as you see fit.”

Then, she disappeared.

Lucas, who was now left alone in his room started thinking.

Even a fool like him knew that he was being played by this ‘mysterious organization’, these people would never bother him if they didn’t have some sort of plan in their mind, however, he didn’t care.

He didn’t care that this mysterious organization was using him as a tool.

This paper was authentic, it was his brother’s handwriting.

His brother was planning to put him in prison after he becomes the King.

To help him with his alcohol and woman addiction? What bullshit!

He was the one who brought different women for him in the first place!

That was how he gained his support in the first place and now he plans to go back on his words!?

No way!

Lucas wouldn't let that happen!

He would not let Lovis use him like this!

He will not become Lovis's tool!

He would rather become a tool for this mysterious organization that at least showed him the truth.

With an angry look on his face,

Lucas stepped out of his room and walked towards Lovis's.

# Chapter 430

“Looks like you are having a great time, aren’t you?”

A woman with short black hair, wearing skin-tight black clothes that highlighted her lean physique walked into a room with a calm expression on her face. Half of her face was covered with a mask, however, her Icy blue eyes were hypnotic enough to win any man’s heart.

Of course, if you ignore the fact that she just barged into the room with a dagger in her hand.

That was scary.

“Who are you!? How dare you bar- Acckk”

A guard shouted in rage, however, before he could even complete his sentence, the woman disappeared and appeared behind him.

With a single chop on his neck, the guard passed out.

The same thing happened with other guards who rushed out, the guard who had already run away and was planning to report everything was taken care of by another woman who wore similar clothes, Auburn hair, and big green eyes.

“W-W-Who are you?”

The only person left in the room questioned with a frightened look on his face.

“Hmm? Why do you look so scared, Fourth Prince? Don’t worry, I am not here to harm you, if I wanted to do that, you would have died already.”

The woman smiled.

Then, she pointed at the guards lying on the ground and spoke,

“See? I didn’t even kill them. I just knocked them out.”

However, even after hearing those words, Lucas didn’t calm down.

A woman suddenly barged into his room, he would be excited if this was a normal situation, however, it was anything but normal right now.

He was scared shitless.

All his drowsiness due to alcohol had faded away and his eyes and ears were wide open right now.

“W-W-Why a-are you d-doing this?”

He stuttered, tears were threatening to come out of his eyes and his face was pale in fear.

Seeing him acting like that, Thyra just shook her head.

She knew he was pathetic, but still...

Just how pathetic can one be?

He was a Prince of a Kingdom for fuck sake!

In the end, Thyra just sighed and continued with what she was here for.

“I just wanted to talk to you.”

“A-About what?”

“You and your Grandfather, Duke Centho now support the Third Prince, Lovis Skyfall, correct?”

Hearing those words, Lucas’s eyes widened in horror.

“N-No. O-O-Of course not! W-Why would I do t-that? I-I want to become the K-King.”

Although Lucas was not very adept in politics and anything related to it, however, he knew that the fact that he secretly supports Lovis couldn't come out yet.

If that happened then... then bad things will happen.

Or at least that's what his Third Brother, his Grandfather, and his Third Brother's Grandfather told him.

“You do not have to deny it, we already know about this fact. We knew about this for a long time now.”

Thyra replied.

“W-We?”

Lucas caught her words.

“W-What do you mean by ‘We’? A-Are you from some organization? W-W-Who are you?”

Lucas questioned in panic.

“Have you heard about Consort Allura's disappearance?”

Thyra questioned back and Lucas's eyes widened in surprise.

Consort Allura's disappearance!

Even someone like him knew about it.

He had heard that it was done by a mysterious organ-

Lucas finally realized.

And as if she knew about it, Thyra continued.

“Yes, I am from ‘that’ organization.”

Lucas’s pale face turned even paler.

“Don’t worry though, I am not here to hurt you.”

“T-Then why are you here?”

Lucas questioned.

“You support the Third Prince because he promised you a tension-free life full of Alcohol and Women, correct?”

Thyra questioned.

This time, Lucas was so scared that he didn’t even deny what she said and came clean.

“Yes, that is all I want, however, if you wish, then I can take back my support, I will even quit alcohol and would never touch a woman. If you want me to support First Brother, I would do that as well, just let me live. Just give me one chance!”

Lucas begged.

“Why would I want you to support that idiotic first brother of yours?”

Thyra tilted her head in confusion.

“Well, anyway, as I said, I am not here to hurt you. I just wanted to tell you something that I feel you should know.”

Saying that, a paper appeared in Thyra’s hand and she passed it to Lucas.

With trembling hands, Lucas grabbed the paper Thyra passed to him, and then, he started reading.

Soon, however, his eyes widened in surprise, all the fear from his face turned into shock and he increased his reading speed.

“It is not a fake, your brother’s signatures are on it.”

Thyra spoke.

Lucas didn’t reply and directly looked below.

There it was.

His brother’s signatures, the paper even had his stamp on it.

“Why would he do something like this?”

Lucas questioned.

However, instead of answering, Thyra just stepped back.

“I will leave this to you, do with it as you see fit.”

Then, she disappeared.

Lucas, who was now left alone in his room started thinking.

Even a fool like him knew that he was being played by this ‘mysterious organization’, these people would never bother him if they didn’t have some sort of plan in their mind, however, he didn’t care.

He didn’t care that this mysterious organization was using him as a tool.

This paper was authentic, it was his brother’s handwriting.

His brother was planning to put him in prison after he becomes the King.

To help him with his alcohol and woman addiction? What bullshit!

He was the one who brought different women for him in the first place!

That was how he gained his support in the first place and now he plans to go back on his words!?

No way!

Lucas wouldn't let that happen!

He would not let Lovis use him like this!

He will not become Lovis's tool!

He would rather become a tool for this mysterious organization that at least showed him the truth.

With an angry look on his face,

Lucas stepped out of his room and walked towards Lovis's.

# Chapter 431

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“Open the door, you fucking bastard!”

Lucas shouted in rage as he continue to bang on the door in front of him.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“Open the fucking door!”

Seeing him acting like that, the servants who were walking around frowned in confusion, however, no one dared to step up.

The Fourth Prince was drunk again, they didn't plan to get themselves involved in this stupid thing.

“Open the-”

Lucas shouted again, however, this time, the door was opened by Leo, who frowned.

“Master Lucas?”

“I need to see Lovis.”

Lucas spoke.

“Master Lucas is cultivating righ-”

“I don't care! I need to see him, now!”

Lucas raised his voice.

Seeing that, Leo frowned.

Just why the hell does everyone talk to his master so badly? Was his master always that popular? Or was there something special going on today?

Leo couldn't understand.

And he didn't try to understand either.

He just needed to perform his duty as the butler properly.

“Please come in and have a seat, Master Lucas. I will go and pass your message to Master Lovis.”

He bowed his head but just as he turned around, Lucas spoke.

“I don't have time to wait, I need to talk to him right now!”

Saying that, Lucas walked in and started walking towards the Cultivation Chamber.

“Master Lucas, you can't!”

Leo shouted, if it was anyone else, he would have stopped him by force, however, Lucas was a prince, and he couldn't possibly use force against him. Not until his or his master's life was in any sort of danger.

However, just as Lucas was about to walk into Lovis's Cultivation Chamber, the doors of the Chamber opened and Lovis walked out.

With a frown on his face, he glanced at Lucas, then he glanced at Leo and nodded.

Leo nodded back and walked away.

When Leo laughed, Lovis glanced at Lucas and narrowed his eyes.

“Why are you here? You shouldn't be here, don't you know that. There are too many eyes in this Palace. You and I can't be linked together right now.”

Hearing those words, Lucas's rage soared even higher.

“You dare act like that after all this!?”

“What are you talking about?”

Lovis frowned.

“You think you will plan to imprison me and I wouldn’t know?”

You bastard, you dare go against me when I am the reason why you are so confident in winning the Throne in the first place!? Huh!?”

Lovis was shocked.

How did he know!?

He couldn’t believe it.

However, he didn’t show his shock on his face, he kept his frown on his face and continued,

“Just what are you talking about? Are you out of your mind, why would I try to imprison you? Who told you this stupid thing?”

Lovis questioned.

For him, fooling Lucas was simple, just act as if nothing happen and soon, Lucas would start doubting himself.

Not only that, he would even tell him who told him everything and once he gets the name, Lovis was planning to get rid of that bastard.

However, this time, things didn’t go as he planned,

Rather than doubting himself, Lucas just threw a paper on Lovis’s face.

Lovis caught the paper and started reading, soon, however, his eyes widened in surprise.

“You think you can fake your way out of this!? Do you think I am a fool!?”

Lucas shouted in rage.

“...”

This time, however, Lovis didn't have an answer.

He couldn't believe it.

This letter...

Just how did Lucas get his hands on this letter?

How is this possible?

He had a talk with Evane just a few hours ago, just how...

Suddenly, a theory popped into Lovis's mind.

However, before he could think too much, Lucas walked towards him and warned.

“Look Lovis, I don't know what you think of me, however, I am not as big of a fool as you think I am.

Do not treat me like a tool.

If I can give you a direct way to the Throne, I can take it away as well.”

Lucas then walked even close to Lovis and threatened.

“I am just a drunkard, Lovis. I have nothing to lose.

You, however, are different.

You are talented, you have worked hard, and you have a bright future ahead of you.

However, If you do not give me a reasonable expression within a week,

I will destroy you.

Even if I have to sacrifice myself in the process.”

Saying those words, Lucas turned around and left.

“ ...”

All this while, Lovis didn't say anything and even after Lucas left, he just stayed silent.

He was fooled.

He was fooled by his 'Naïve' Sister.

He got too greedy.

3 Dukes supporting him would have cemented his position as the next King.

Blinded by his greed, he underestimated both, Evane and Lucas.

He took Lucas for a granted.

A drunkard like you, what can he possibly do in front of him? Nothing, he could do nothing.

Then there's Evane.

His Naïve and stupid sister.

That idiot was thinking about getting rid of her brother's alcohol addiction rather than thinking about the Throne. That Idiot nearly cried in front of everyone just because a drunkard spoke a few things to her.

Someone like her could never become the Ruler of this Kingdom.

She never stood a chance.

That was his thoughts.

However, he finally realized how wrong he was.

Lucas was a lot more aggressive than he thought he would be.

He was not the Lucas who could just be fooled by giving him a beautiful woman. He has changed, and though still stupid, he was now 'less' stupid.

As for Evane.

That Bitch.

Rather than a naïve girl, she was a scheming bitch who planned this all from the start.

Lovis realized.

He had to do something about that bitch.

She was a threat.

A threat he had to deal with as soon as possible.

First, he would need to patch up with Lucas.

He was his trump card right now, however, before doing that, he had to meet that bitch first.

After all, he needed a scapegoat to direct Lucas's anger on.

Thinking about it, a cold smile appeared on Lovis's face.

# Chapter 432

“Hmm? Lovis? What happened?”

Evane frowned in confusion as she saw Lovis standing in front of her room. Then, a smile appeared on her face and she questioned,

“What? Were you missing this Elder Sister of yours?”

Lovis, however, clearly wasn't in the mood for any jokes.

“Heh, trying to act ignorant I see.”

Lovis snorted.

Seeing that, Evane frowned,

“You seem to be in a bad mood.”

“Oh yeah? It seems that way to you?”

Lovis snorted again.

This time, Evane realized that something was wrong.

She then turned towards Nux and questioned,

‘Did you do something?’

‘Hmm? Of course not.’

Nux denied.

‘Other than stealing some paper from his room.’

He completed the sentence.

‘What did you steal?’

Evane questioned with a frown.

Nux smiled.

‘Nux, tell me. What did you steal?’

Nux, however, did not reply.

He was waiting for something.

‘Nu-‘

Evane was about to say something, however, suddenly, Lovis spoke up.

“Are you thinking of an excuse right now? If that’s true then I must say, you are shit at planning something. If I were you, I would already have an excuse even before you meet me.”

Lovis spat.

“Huh? What are you talking about?”

Evane questioned.

“Ahh, so that’s it. Your dumb brain couldn’t come up with an excuse, therefore, you are planning on acting ignorant. I must say, that’s quite dumb but that’s to be expected of you.”

Evane’s face turned serious.

“Lovis, I don’t know what you are on about, however, that is not the correct way to talk to your Elder Sister.”

“Haah? Do you think I care about the fact that you are my Elder Sister? Stop daydreaming! Just because I indulged with you for a while, you think I am someone you can fool anytime you want? Did you think you can play around and I wouldn’t know?”

Lovis shot back and Evane's eyes widened in surprise.

Just what is Lovis talking about?

And... why is he acting like that?

He has never done something like this before!

However, Lovis was not done yet. He walked close to Evane and spat,

“You are here for the Throne, aren't you, bitch?”

Evane's eyes widened even further.

“What? Surprised that I found out? Did you really think that you can hide it after doing something like this?”

“Just what are you talking about!? Are you going to tell me what happened!?”

Evane shouted.

“You!”

Seeing that she was still acting, Lovis couldn't control himself and was about to attack Evane, however, before his hand could touch Evane's face, Nux grabbed it.

“I stopped myself before, I won't do it again. Back off.

Or you will regret it.”

‘Haah... I told you to wait a little...’

Amaya sighed.

‘And let him hit Evane?’

Nux questioned back.

‘She can defend herself, she is about to become an Expert Stage Cultivator after 1 or 2 more sessions, remember?’

‘That bastard cursed her. He should be glad that he is still alive.’

‘You need to control that temper of yours, the plan won’t work as we want it to.’

‘We will think of another plan, I am not planning on letting anyone touch my wife.

The Throne can go fuck itself.’

Hearing those words, Amaya sighed.

‘Whatever... let’s just see how it goes.’

Then she glanced at Nux and a small smile appeared on her face.

On the other side, Lovis, who glanced at Nux could feel a dominant aura suffocating him. As a cultivation maniac, he could feel it.

The disparity in strength, he could feel that prince or not, if he does anything reckless here, he will die.

Therefore, he quickly calmed down, and then, he stepped back.

Seeing that Lovis had calmed down a little, Evane questioned.

“Now can you tell me what happened?”

“Please stop acti-”

“Will you shut up and tell me what happened!?”

Evane questioned in frustration.

“Stop acting like you don’t know! Acting Ignorant! Playing with me! Why are you talking in codes!? Just tell me what happened and we can talk about

it!”

She shouted.

Lovis couldn't believe that Evane was still trying to act as if nothing happened, however, this time, he wasn't planning on backing down.

“Alright, tell me then, where is the paper where I wrote about Lucas? You should have it with you, correct? Show it to me.”

Evane tilted her head in confusion and soon, a paper appeared in her hands.

“Here.”

Lovis took the paper and then, his anger turned into confusion.

“How do you have it?”

He questioned.

“You were the one who gave it to me...”

Evane didn't know what her little brother was talking about.

However, soon, she realized something and turned towards Nux.

‘You stole his paper!’

‘Umm... I borrowed it for a little while...’

‘What did you do with it!?’

Evane questioned.

‘I... kinda gave it to Lucas...’

Nux answered with a wry smile on his face.

Evane's eyes widened in surprise.

‘So that’s why you wanted him to write 2 papers.’

She realized.

‘I just wanted to show you your brother’s true face. Didn’t you see? He came here without even checking his own paper first. He didn’t even consider the possibility of checking his own room and directly blamed everything on you.’

If the relationship between the two of you was as strong as you think it is, he wouldn’t have doubted you.

He sees you as a threat, Evane.

He is wary of you.

He is scared that you will take away the Throne he always desired.

He cares about the throne a lot more than he cares about you, or anyone for that matter.’

Nux explained everything and Evane turned silent.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

On the other side, Lovis was silent as well.

He couldn’t understand, if Evane has this letter, then how did Lucas get his hands on it?

Does that mean...

Another thought appeared in his mind and without saying anything, he turned around and rushed towards his own room.

‘You see that? He didn’t even apologize for acting like that. Do you really think he is as innocent as you think he is?’

Evane, you need to understand, this is the Royal Palace, everyone here only cares about one thing, the Crown.

Everyone here is selfish. They only think about themselves and your brother,

He is no different.'

# Chapter 433

‘Evane, you need to understand, this is the Royal Palace, everyone here only cares about one thing, the Crown.

Everyone here is selfish. They only think about themselves and your brother,

He is no different.’

Nux spoke in a calm voice.

He knew Lovis was not the type of person Evane thought he was, and now, Lovis just proved his point.

Nux knew that this might be a shock for Evane, however, it was still better than her being fooled by her ‘innocent’ brother.

Now that she is aware of his true reality, Evane would not be fooled.

Or... that was what Nux thought would happen. Evane, however, had a different opinion.

“No, that is not correct.”

After thinking for a long long while, Evane came to a conclusion.

“You are Amaya are biased against him, therefore, you are not thinking it properly. Think about this, for him, I am someone who returned from the academy after more than 20 years and my return was definitely not something predecided, it was instantaneous.

Many were confused as to why I returned and though he didn’t ask directly, it is natural that Lovis was confused as well.

I told him I do not desire the Throne, however, after that, I told him to write on that paper. It is only natural that he would doubt me, especially after the paper appeared in his 'benefactor's' hands after a few hours.

If he didn't trust me, he would have never written anything on that paper, however, he did write, showing his trust. However, soon, his trust was broken and the paper appeared in Lovis's hand.

Isn't it natural that he would get angry?

Heck, even I would be angry if I was in his position.

Actually, he didn't just come and attacked me directly, this shows that he still cares about me."

Evane then turned towards Nux and spoke.

"Nux, please don't doubt him, he is exactly like I told you, he is not some sort of selfish manipulator who would get rid of the people after they are no longer of any use to him."

Hearing those words, Nux turned silent.

Evane's words actually made sense... Lovis's reaction made sense...

This was not enough to prove anything to Evane.

She is too naïve to even consider the possibility of her brother being a manipulative player.

He had to do something else.

Nux starting thinking.

Seeing that Nux was not saying anything, Evane continued her explanation.

"As for the fact that he returned without even apologizing, again, think about this from his perspective. The paper was with me, this meant that I was not the one who did this.

The only people who knew about the paper were you, me, him, and his butler. I am innocent, you are on my side, and you don't have any motive if I don't have one, he, of course, would not do something like this, so the only one left would be his butler.

A butler who has stayed beside him for who knows how long.

A servant he trusts the most.

And there is a chance that that servant betrayed him.

Anyone would be shaken by that conclusion and obviously, he isn't in his right mind currently, therefore, he wasn't able to apologize.

He must be too occupied with thoughts about his butler.

He must have forgotten it.

I am sure he would return and apologize soon.”

Evane smiled.

Nux forced out a smile as well.

‘Uggh... why is she naïve... I guess that is what attracted me to her in the first place...’

Nux just shook his head.

‘Step back, let things continue... You can't do anything about it right now...’

Amaya had the same thoughts.

‘Can I really not do anything?’

Nux questioned.

‘Evane doesn't understand the meaning of ‘Trust’ means.’

Amaya commented.

‘What would you have done if you were in Lovis’s position? Would you even consider that Evane was the one who betrayed you?’

‘Of course not.’

Nux’s answer was instantaneous.

‘Yes.’

When you say you ‘Trust’ Evane, it means you trust her enough to show your back to her.

Trusting someone is dangerous, you can only say you trust someone when you are ready to lose something precious the moment that person goes against you. If you think about how would defend yourself when the person behind you attacks you, then you actually do not trust that person.

The same goes with Lovis, he does not Trust his Sister, heck, he was even ready to turn back and attack the person behind his back.

Evane, however, would not understand it.

At least not now.

Therefore, the only thing you can do is to stay with her for a while and protect her.’

Amaya spoke and Nux nodded with a serious look on his face.

‘I need to step back.’

‘Indeed.’

The two of them nodded, then Nux glanced at Evane and smiled.

“Alright, I will wait for him to come and apologize to you.”

Hearing those words, Evane smiled lovingly.

“Mhm.”

Seeing that smile on her face, Nux smiled as well. Then, his smile got perverted, he closed the doors, and then, he questioned,

“Alright then, how about we make you an Expert Stage Cultivator?”

Evane’s face turned red and then, she nodded meekly.

“A-Alright.”

“Hehehe~”

Nux laughed evilly and picked her up.

The two of them quickly jumped on the bed and Evane’s Cultivation session started.

...

On the other side, Lovis walked into his room and called.

“Leo.”

“At your command, Master.”

Within a second, a man appeared in front of him and bowed.

“Where is the paper that I gave you before?”

Lovis questioned.

“Hmm? That paper? I placed it in your room as you ordered me to, Master Lovis. Should I bring it to you?”

Leo questioned.

Seeing his reaction, Lovis narrowed his eyes and spoke.

“No need, you just follow me. I will get that letter myself.”

“As you command, Master.”

Leo bowed his head and the two of them walked into Lovis’s room.

“Where is the paper?”

Lovis questioned.

“Ther-”

Leo pointed at the wall, soon, however, his eyes widened in surprise.

“Where is the paper?”

# Chapter 433.1

“Where is the paper?”

Leo questioned with a surprised look on his face.

“Yes, that is what I am asking, Leo. Where is the paper?”

Lovis narrowed his eyes.

Leo turned around and glanced at Lovis,

“Master Lovis, I really don’t know, I placed it here. I remember it well. I am sure that I am not mistaken!”

“Oh? Then where is it? Did it fly away on its own?”

Lovis questioned.

“I do not know! I placed it here a few hours ago, how can it just... disappear?”

“Maybe you picked it up?”

Lovis questioned.

“Of course not, why would I do something like this? Master Lovis, you know it, I am not that careless. If I had picked it up, I would know where I placed it.

I am a responsible man.”

Seeing his butler’s reaction, Lovis frowned.

He already knew that the paper wouldn’t be here, it was obvious, Evane had her own paper, so of course, the paper he had must be missing.

And just like Evane thought, the second person he doubted was his own butler.

That was the reason he asked him to come with him.

He wanted to see his butler's reaction.

However, now that he has finally seen it, Lovis found it hard to believe that his butler was the one who betrayed him.

Even after seeing that the paper is missing, his butler didn't even realize the fact that he is suspicious of him.

Leo thought that Lovis actually wanted his help to find the paper.

This was not the reaction that a traitor would show.

There were two choices here,

First, Leo was a great actor and knew how to fool him.

Second, Leo was actually innocent.

Both options had an equal likelihood of being true.

Leo has been living with Lovis for a long long time now, for him, fooling Lovis wasn't a hard job.

However, Lovis was inclined to believe the second option.

Leo was innocent.

He had many, better opportunities to betray him, but he didn't. He has no reason to.

Lovis trusted Leo a little.

Therefore, another question popped into his mind.

If not Leo then who?

Evane had the paper, so she couldn't possibly b-

Suddenly, Lovis stopped.

'That bitch...'

He cursed again.

He realized.

He was played.

Again.

'That was the reason she asked me to write on two papers in the first place! She wanted to prove her innocence using the other paper!'

Lovis realized and his anger boiled.

'That fucking bitch! Acting all innocent like that, you disgusting whore!'

However, this time, Lovis didn't let anger get the best of him.

He started thinking.

'But how did she steal the paper from my room? How is that possible?'

He questioned inwardly and started pondering.

'Is there a strong Cultivator backing her up? Who is he? Why is he helping her? Is he an assassin?'

Lovis's face turned solemn.

Evane was a far greater threat than he thought she would be.

He didn't expect that she would have such a strong expert backing her up.

‘I need to be careful around her’

Lovis thought inwardly.

He can’t as aggressively as he did previously.

Evane has changed too much.

She is not that naïve girl he thought she was all those years ago.

He needed more information about her before acting out.

His thoughts were simple,

If she can steal something from his room without alerting anyone, what’s stopping her from assassinating him?

A shiver ran through his spine the moment he thought about it.

He needed to plan.

He needed to wait.

He needed to collect more information.

And that is what he will do now.

Lovis sat down on his chair and started thinking even more.

...

On the other side, Duke Fulvianus and the First Prince, Raguel Skyfall were sitting inside the room with solemn looks on their faces.

“Are you sure this is true?”

Raguel questioned.

“I checked it myself, it is 100% true.”

Fulvianus nodded.

After listening to the conversation between Raguel and Lucas from Raguel, he had the same thought as Amaya, and after some interrogation, he found out about the connection between Duke Merula and Duke Centho.

After that, it wasn't hard for him to figure out that Lucas was actually on Lovis's side.

Raguel stayed silent for a long time and then, a defeated smile appeared on his face.

“And here I thought that I would become the King.”

Seeing his reaction, the Duke frowned,

“Are you giving up?”

Raguel glanced at the Duke and questioned back,

“Does it look like I have any other options?”

3 out of 4 Dukes support that bastard, there is no way I would become the next King.

Cultivation, being the strongest of all the princes, none of this mattered, I never had a chance to win this battle from the start.”

Raguel replied with a dull look on his face.

“You cannot give up like this.”

Duke Fulvianus spoke with a strict look on his face.

“What can I do, the King will definitely choose the Third Brother.”

Raguel countered.

“That is only if the King has the chance to choose.”

The Duke replied with a cold, merciless look on his face.

Hearing those words, Raguel's eyes widened in surprise.

“A-Are we going to do what Consort Amaya suggested?”

He questioned.

“Does it look like we have any other option?”

The Duke questioned back.

Hearing that reply, Raguel's shocked look turned into a determined one and he commented.

“I think father has ruled for long enough.”

A cold smile appeared on the Duke's face.

“Indeed.”

The First Prince smiled as well.

He would become the King and no one in this world can stop him.

Not even his own father.

“Alright, I will contact my Brother.”

Duke Fulvianus spoke.

“Minister Gibson?”

Raguel questioned.

“Indeed, we would need his help and opinion if we want to organize a successful coup.”

Then, the smile on the Duke's face widened,

“I am sure he must have a lot of grievances against that Ricardus Bastard.”

# Chapter 433.2

“So... you two plan to kill the King?”

Gibson Fulvianus, one of the four Ministers working directly under the King and older brother of Duke Thornton Fulvianus, questioned with a strange expression on his face.

Seeing his expression, Duke Thornton and Raguel frowned, this wasn't the reaction they were expecting.

They thought that Gibson would have a cruel and cunning smile on his face and would start giving different ideas on how to Kill the King in the cruelest ways possible. Well, if not this, then he might start dreaming about being the King's Grandfather and gaining an influence stronger than ever before, or maybe he would have some other reactions, however,

They never expected he would act so... calmly... even looking at them with a doubtful look on his face.

However, even after all that, Thornton didn't back down and nodded with a determined look on his face.

“Yes, we do plan to Kill the King.”

“Haahh...”

Hearing that answer, a big sigh escaped Gibson's mouth.

He glanced at Thornton with a disappointed look on his face and spoke.

“So let me get this straight, the Third Prince somehow has 3 Dukes supporting him, and the Odds that Raguel becomes the next King is close to zero.

Therefore, as a solution to this problem, you guys came up with a plan to get rid of the King before he crowns the Crown Prince and once that happens, Raguel, the oldest and the strongest would become the next King.

Correct?”

“Yes, that is correct.”

Thornton nodded again.

Gibson glanced at the two people sitting in front of him with an expression that looked like he was looking at the dumbest people in the entire world.

Seeing that reaction, Thornton’s frown deepened.

What happened? Why was his brother acting like that?

He tilted his head in confusion.

Gibson, who realized that his brother still did not understand what was wrong shook his head in disappointment.

“Thornton, I gave up on the Duke’s position because I believed that you would become an amazing leader, now I realized that father was right, you do not deserve to be the Duke.

I was wrong.”

Hearing those words, Thornton’s face turned cold.

“Don’t take that man’s name.”

He warned.

The person he hated the most in his life was his father.

A father who always underestimated him, a father who never valued him and always favored his older brother.

He was sick of his father.

He wanted nothing more than the death of his father.

Actually, if he had the chance, he would have stabbed his father on his own.

However, his father was not someone who could be fooled very easily, he would never show his back to him.

Never.

‘I will get that bastard someday.’

Thornton cursed inwardly.

“You must be thinking about getting rid of the father now, correct?”

Gibson guessed and Thornton’s eyes widened in surprise.

Gibson sighed again,

“Thornton, can you get any more foolish? Father is the only King Stage Cultivator backing us up, our house will be destroyed if something happened to him before the next King Stage Cultivator joins in.

You fool, when will you ever think about the consequences of your actions?

You want to Kill the King? Have you ever thought about the consequences?

What if the King survives, then what?

What if Lady Astaris returns and comes after us?

What will you do then?

You haven’t thought about it, have you?”

This time, Thornton couldn’t control himself and rebutted in rage.

“So what other option do we have!? There is no way Raguel would become the King if I don’t do anything! What? Should I just back down and let that Lovis become the next King!? Or do you have any better plan!?”

Gibson, however, didn’t lose control over his emotions and replied calmly.

“I do have a better plan.”

“Oh? Why don’t you enlighten us, brother?”

For more chapters, please visit

Thornton spoke sarcastically.

“Kill Lovis.”

Gibson answered without any change in his expression.

“!!!”

“!!!”

Hearing those words, Thornton’s and Raguel’s eyes widened in surprise.

“I do not understand, why would you go as far as contacting other Kingdom, lure Lady Astaria away, and then try to Kill the King? That bastard can only live for 30 more years, why not be patient?

Why not calm down and directly eliminate the source of all the problems?”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Thornton and Raguel turned silent.

Gibson continued.

“You two are worried about the King choosing Lovis as the next King and are willing to Kill the King before he does that. What kind of bullshit thinking is that? Why not just eliminate the man the King wishes to choose?”

Raguel and Thornton realized how thoughtless their plan actually was. Raguel, however, wasn't planning to hear an hour-long lecture and tried to retort,

“But... but...

But that Amaya told me to g- ...shit.”

However, he stopped midsentence.

He finally realized what happened.

Gibson heard his words as well.

“What were you saying? Amaya what? Are you talking about Consort Amaya?”

“...”

Raguel didn't answer.

“I asked you a question!”

Gibson raised his voice.

This was the first time he had done that ever since he came here.

“Raguel, tell me what you were saying. Amaya what?”

He questioned again, this time, his tone was a lot heavier than before, he wasn't requesting.

He was ordering.

His theory was clear, anything related to Amaya must be done with extreme caution.

If that woman is somehow involved, then something is definitely wrong with this situation.

Feeling overwhelmed by his Aura, Raguel gave in and answered,

“I had a talk with Consort Amaya a few days ago...”

Hearing those words, Gibson’s eyes widened in surprise.

“Why would you do something like that!? Didn’t I tell you not to go near that woman!?”

“I-I wanted to confirm something...”

Raguel lowered his head.

Gibson took a deep breath.

This was definitely bad.

Amaya was definitely involved with whatever is happening here. He was doubtful about how his little brother came up with such a ridiculous idea of going against the King, however, now he was sure.

It was that Bitch.

She must be manipulating him somehow.

Gibson shivered.

Going against that bitch... was the last thing he wanted to do...

However, he had to solve this mess.

That woman must have done it with thorough planning.

He needed to deal with this situation layer by layer.

“Tell me, Raguel, tell me everything from the start, and don’t you dare leave a single thing out.”

He spoke with a solemn expression.

# Chapter 433.3

“Let’s assassinate Amaya Skyfall.”

Gibson spoke with a worried look on his face.

After hearing Raguel’s story, no matter how much he thought about it, he couldn’t understand what that woman was thinking.

There were too many things that simply doesn’t make any sense.

And since he couldn’t think what she was thinking, he decided it was better to just eliminate that cursed bitch.

“I would gladly get rid of that bitch if I can, but why right now? Shouldn’t we deal with Lovis first?”

Raguel questioned.

Gibson, however, shook his head,

“Amaya is a lot scarier than that little boy.

Look, we have no clue why she helped you in the first place, that must be where she started her manipulation.

The information she provided you was empty, she only told you about Duke Vestalis and Duke Merula, she didn’t talk about Duke Centho at all.”

“Is it possible that she did not know ab-”

“Trust me, if she was interested in the Dukes, there is no way she would not know about something like that.

She hid that information from you for a reason, as for what that reason is, I do not know.”

After a little pause, Gibson continued.

“Raguel, I believe that you were only a little pawn in her actual. Her actual goal was to reach Thornton through you.”

“Reach me? Why?”

Thornton questioned.

“Isn’t it obvious? She wants to Kill the King for some reason, that is why she manipulated you through Raguel. You almost did what she wanted, didn’t you?”

Gibson replied, Thornton frowned,

“But I don’t understand, what does Duke Centho has to do with all this? Why leave him out?”

Gibson shook his head,

“As I said, I do not know, however, if she did that, she must have a reason. I guess there must be some connection between the two of them.”

“Should we search for it?”

Duke questioned.

“You think you would find something? Thornton, you are dealing with Amaya Skyfall, the leader of Thousand Information Chamber, you would never find what she wants to hide from the World.

Trust me, if you find something that can actually be used against her, then you must have found it because she wanted you to find it.”

Gibson spoke with a solemn look on his face.

“Aren’t you mystifying her a little too much?

I don’t think she is as terrifying as you make her out to be.”

Raguel couldn't help but comment.

“Heh.”

Gibson just chuckled at his statement.

Seeing that he was underestimating him, Raguel frowned and after thinking for a while, a smile appeared on his face.

“Didn't you say she wants to kill the King? Why do you say that?”

“Didn't she say that to you? She was the one who planted the seed of a coup inside your head. I am sure about this, she wants to Kill the King.”

“Then why don't we just tell father about it, I am sure he will believe me and get rid of her. If there is one thing I know about father is that he is a coward, if someone threatens him, he would get rid of him or her as soon as possible.”

A winning smile appeared on Raguel's face.

‘Heh, it's not that hard to deal with that bitch, we just need to think a little.’

However, despite his seemingly perfect plan, Gibson wasn't impressed. Actually, he looked even more disappointed.

“See? I told you right? You shouldn't have talked with her.”

“Huh?”

Raguel frowned.

“Look, Amaya is a lot scarier than you think she is. She is not strong, however, the way she plays with people makes her a big threat. Do you think she would reveal her motive to you so easily?”

She would never do it unless she is sure that you cannot reveal it to anyone who could threaten her.”

“What do you mean?”

For more chapters, please visit

Raguel frowned.

“Why do you think Lovis hasn’t revealed that he has 3 Dukes supporting him until now?”

“Where did that come from?”

Raguel tilted his head in confusion.

“Just answer the question.

“Well... I don’t know.”

“He did that to protect himself. If the fact he is a man backed by the 3 Dukes is revealed, then he would be in danger since there would be people that would try to assassinate him in order to create chaos.”

Raguel frowned.

“It would be revealed sooner or later, what’s the problem?”

“Raguel, ‘The Crown Prince is backed by 3 Dukes’ is very than ‘The Third Prince is backed by 3 Dukes’ remember that.”

“Then why not just reveal it to the King and become the Crown Prince?”

“That would mean that he is too scared and desperate for the King’s Protection. Making him a bad heir.”

“...”

Raguel thought about it a little and understood, however, he still couldn’t understand one thing.

“What does it have to do with that Amaya?”

“Well, if you tell the King about Amaya, he would surely investigate and in one way or another, he would investigate the link between you and her, and soon, he would find out about the Dukes supporting Lovis.

Of course, that is the last thing we want and that is what Amaya is betting on.”

Gibson answered.

“...”

Raguel turned silent.

He didn't know if Amaya had thought that far or not, however, he certainly can't tell the King about her right now.

No one can know about the fact that Lovis is backed by 3 Dukes, especially the King.

However, he had to do something...

“So what should we do?”

He questioned.

“Look, Amaya tried to manipulate us, we can't let her get away from this. Also, we don't know what she is planning however, we do know that it is certainly not good for us. Therefore, getting rid of Amaya is the best-case scenario in this situation.”

“And you think that the all-knowing Amaya wouldn't have considered this?”

Raguel questioned and hearing those words, a cruel smile appeared on Gibson's face.

“She must have and I am sure she is depending on the Palace's security right now, however, what she doesn't know is that Palace's security is at all time low right now.”

“Huh? It is?”

Thornton frowned.

He didn't have any information about this.

“It is a top secret. The King is busy with something else, most of his men are working on it and only the Four Minsters know about this. Even Amaya won't know about this. This is a perfect opportunity.”

Gibson's eyes shined in delight.

“Alright, it is decided, we will get rid of Amaya Skyfall the day after tomorrow.”

Gibson declared.

“How about we add Lovis into the Equation as well?”

Thornton questioned.

Gibson frowned a little and after thinking about it, he nodded.

It was a little risky, but it was worth it.

“Add that bitch Evane as well.”

Raguel spoke.

If he was going to eliminate the competition, he was going to do it thoroughly.

He wouldn't let anyone become the King.

No one but him.

# Chapter 434

“Add that bitch Evane as well.”

Raguel spoke with an evil smile on his face.

If he was going to eliminate the competition, he was going to do it thoroughly.

Gibson glanced at this Grandson of his and frowned.

“Why Evane?”

He questioned.

Hearing that question, a solemn look appeared on Raguel’s face and he replied,

“Her sudden return is too suspicious, she says that she doesn’t want the Throne, however, I still don’t trust her.”

“She can be the contender for the throne with her cultivation.”

Gibson nodded.

“However, if we kill her as well, then people might get suspicious of you.”

A cold smile appeared on Raguel’s face,

“It doesn’t matter if they get suspicious of me. As long as they don’t have enough proof, no one can do anything. Not even the Dowager.”

Hearing those words, a disdainful smile appeared on Gibson’s face.

“Heh. You are Ricardus’s son indeed.”

“Indeed.:

Thornton nodded with a similar smile on his face as well.

“Huh? What do you mean?”

Raguel questioned with a frown on his face.

“Nothing. Forget about it, we have more important issues to talk about.”

Gibson shook his head.

This wasn't something important right now.

Right now, they needed a plan.

“We can't send 3 separate Units to deal with 3 different people. 2 is already stretching it.”

Gibson spoke.

“How about we attack when Lovis and Evane are together?”

Raguel presented an Idea.

“That's not bad, but how will we know when the two of them will be together?”

Thornton questioned.

“Don't worry, I have a perfect way to arrange that.”

Raguel smiled.

“Oh? Do share.”

Gibson spoke with a curious look on his face.

Raguel smiled evilly and explained his plan,

“We will...”

The planning continued and the more they thought about it, the more confident they felt.

Raguel's path to the Throne will soon be clean and clear.

...

"Master Lovis."

Two days later, Leo, Lovis's butler walked into Lovis's room with a letter in his hand.

"Hmm? What is it, Leo?"

Lovis who had just come out of his Cultivation Chamber questioned.

"I believe you should see what it is."

Leo spoke while passing an envelope to Lovis.

Lovis frowned and took the envelope. He noticed that this letter was sent by Evane and seeing that, his frown deepened.

"Why is that bitch contacting me through a letter? Doesn't she know how risky it is?"

Lovis couldn't understand, however, he didn't have any other option.

He opened the letter and his frown deepened even further.

'If you want Duke Vestalis's support, come to my room at 1 in the morning. Of course, do it in secrecy.'

That was it.

There was nothing else written on the letter, no greeting, no name of the sender. However, with the stamp on the envelope and the letter, it was clear who the sender was.

“Why is she calling me so late in the night?”

Lovis couldn't understand.

“And what's with this threatening letter?”

The letter's meaning was clear, if you don't come, don't expect my Support from now on.

A clear threat.

For more chapters, please visit

Something Lovis never thought Evane would do.

However, after thinking about it, a smile appeared on Lovis's face.

“She's finally going to reveal her true face, huh.”

He muttered.

He was getting tired from playing this idiotic game. He tried a lot in these 2 days, however, he couldn't find anything out of ordinary about Evane.

Her life was so normal that he felt like someone was deliberately leading him to false information.

He had to admit.

Evane was indeed capable.

He realized that she was the actual threat to him, not Raguel.

Raguel was just an arrogant nobody after all.

“Alright Dear Sister, now that you have decided to come out of your shell, it is time for us to clash directly.”

A cold smile appeared on Lovis's face and he desperately waited for the sun to go down.

...

Lovis didn't have to wait for too long, the time passed by fairly quickly and in the middle of the night, he walked out of his room while covering his body with a black shawl.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

He knocked on Evane's door.

"..."

However, nobody answered.

Lovis frowned and knocked again.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Lovis knocked again.

"..."

But again, no one answered.

Annoyed, Lovis was about to answer, however, soon, she heard a hurried voice.

"Wait, I am coming."

Lovis paused and waited.

2 minutes later, Evane opened the door, and seeing her face, Lovis frowned.

Her face was a little red, her upper forehead and the region near her ears were wet, signifying that she has just wiped the sweat off her face, the dress

she wore looked a little disorganized as well, signifying that she has worn it in hurry,

Seeing all this, Lovis couldn't understand,

“Wh-”

“Why are you here?”

Before Lovis could ask anything, Evane questioned.

“Is something bothering you? Are you okay? It is very unlike you to come here in the middle of the night. And what's with the Shawl? Are you hiding something?”

Evane continued to question with a worried look on her face.

Hearing all those questions, Lovis tilted his head in confusion.

Wasn't she the one who called him?

Why is she acting like this right now?

He couldn't understand.

Seeing that he wasn't answering, Evane frowned, her worry deepened, and then she pulled him into her room.

“Come inside first. Standing here will make us suspicious.”

Lovis was pulled inside, there, he could smell a faint, funny smell, however, before he could point it out, his eyes fell on another person.

“Why are you here?”

He questioned.

“I am her bodyguard, of course, I would be here. Else people like you might try to harm her.”

Nux replied with an annoyed look on his face.

Lovis shook his head.

Talking to a servant was not worth it, he just turned towards Evane and spoke bluntly.

“Sister, I need to sleep, so I would appreciate it if you don’t play any games with me.”

“Games?”

Evane frowned.

Seeing that she was hellbent on acting like that, Lovis just threw the letter at her.

“Here, you were the one who called me here, aren’t you? It even has your stamp on it. Now tell me, why did you call me here?”

Evane frowned, she quickly grabbed the letter, and soon, a solemn look appeared on her face.

“Lovis... I did not send this letter.

This Stamp is fake...”

# Chapter 435

“Lovis... I did not send this letter.

This Stamp is fake...”

Evane spoke with a solemn look on her face.

“What?”

Lovis quickly snatched the letter and looked at the Stamp more carefully.

2 minutes later... he realized that what Evane said was true.

The Stamp was fake.

He didn't think about it before because the content of the letter contained classified information and was not something anybody would know.

‘Wait... is this one of her games?’

Lovis thought inwardly and glanced at Evane.

However, seeing the confused and worried look on her face.

He doubted that possibility.

Something was wrong.

The sender of this letter knew about such a piece of classified information, this was definitely not a harmless prank.

But why would the sender want him to meet Evane in the middle of the night? If he or she wanted to hurt him, then wouldn't it be better to call him somewhere more... isolated?

‘Unless... his target is not me but Evane as well?’

Lovis quickly came up with a conclusion and a shiver ran through his spine.

He was being targeted and he fell right into the enemy's trap!

He fell into panic.

'Both of us are Grand Master Stage Cultivators, they will surely send Exp-'

Suddenly, Lovis paused when his eyes fell on Evane.

Then, his eyes widened in surprise.

"You broke through!?"

"Huh?"

Evane frowned.

"What?"

"You are an Expert Stage Cultivator now!"

Lovis exclaimed in shock.

"Ahh... that, well, yea..."

Evane answered with a small blush on her face. Her eyes fell on Nux, however, they soon returned back to the ground.

She was definitely embarrassed.

Seeing that, Nux couldn't help but chuckle inwardly.

"She is indeed an Expert Stage Cultivator. Let me tell you, Third Prince, but Second Princess Cultivates very 'hard', trust me, I say this from first-hand experience."

He spoke with a playful smile on his face and Evane's face turned even redder.

“She goes wild~

Something you would not expect that innocent and pure nature.

I was quite surprised.”

Nux continued to give more information and Evane couldn't take it anymore.

“S-Stop! D-Don't say anything anymore!”

She ordered with a red face.

Nux felt that if he teased her a little more, smoke would start coming out of her head.

That was how embarrassed she looked.

‘Ahhh, she's so cute~’

Nux couldn't help but sigh inwardly.

Lovis, who couldn't understand the thing he said frowned.

‘Just what the hell is he talking about? Cultivating hard? Going wild? Does that mean all she does is cultivate?’

Why have I not heard anything about it?

Also, why is she getting embarrassed about something like this!?

Wait...

This isn't the time to think about all this.’

Lovis finally realized.

Evane becoming an Expert Stage Cultivator was a big disadvantage for him.

Now, 2 out of the initial 4 contenders were Expert Stage Cultivators!

This was not a piece of good news for him.

Raguel was alright, he was more than 120 years old, nearly double his age, him being stronger than him was normal and his strength will definitely not be the deciding factor in this battle for Throne.

Evane, however, was different.

She was only 20 years older than him.

Even though he was sure that he would also become an Expert Stage Cultivator in 20 years, he didn't think anyone would wait for that.

For more chapters, please visit

If he could only provide what Evane is capable of providing right now, then why would anyone wait for him?

The choice would be obvious.

Anyone with a sane mind would pick Evane!

'Wait...'

Suddenly, Lovis frowned.

'Doesn't she have Medium Level affinity with Fire Element? How in the hell did she manage to become an Expert Stage Cultivator!? Grand Master Stage should be her limit!

Just how!'

Lovis couldn't understand.

His eyes widened in shock.

His whole world was falling apart.

Soon, his eyes turned red as he glanced at Evane.

He was being played.

He was being played from the very start.

He finally realized what happened.

Why everything happened finally made sense now.

His biggest trump card, his unmatched talent, Evane had already taken it away from him.

However, that was not enough.

Evane wanted a sure-shot victory.

Therefore, she targeted his other cards.

First, she returned to the Palace.

Got close to him. Then, baiting him with 'support of the Third Duke' she made him write that cursed paper. Planted a seed of doubt inside that stupid fourth brother.

This would eventually take away Duke Centho's support from him.

However, that was not it, Evane's greed didn't end there.

Who will Duke Centho support if not him?

That idiotic Lucas? Of course not.

He would choose someone else.

And that someone else would be none other than Evane, a woman who has a talent similar to him.

Not only that, even the Nobles following Duke Centho would support her.

Yes, within just a few days, Evane, who didn't have any support from any of the nobles except her own grandfather, would receive the support of 2 Dukes and many other nobles as well.

She was planning to take away everything he had built in all these years.

'You greedy bitch!'

Lovis roared inwardly.

He never thought his sister would be so devious!

'Huh? What happened to him?'

Nux, who was looking at Lovis's expression frowned in confusion.

He was fine when he entered before, wasn't he?

Just what happened?

Why did he look so... angry?

Was he planning something?

Why was he here in the first place?

Nux finally realized.

He was here to blue ball him.

Fucking bastard!

Nux wanted nothing more than to kill this bastard.

He knocked right when he was about to cum.

'Fuuckkk! Lovis you bitch!'

Nux cursed inwardly.

‘Nux.’

Suddenly, Nux heard a voice.

‘Hmm? Amaya? What happened?’

Nux questioned with a frown on his face.

‘I am surrounded by 5 assassins.’

Amaya replied in a calm voice.

“WHAT!?”

Nux, however, was not as calm as she was and questioned out loud.

“What happened?”

Seeing him shout like this, Evane questioned in worry.

# Chapter 436

Just like any other night, Amaya was lying on her bed, her body was covered by Black colored Mist and even though her eyes were wide open, she didn't move an inch.

In front of her face, there was a black colored Mist. Or that is how anyone looking from afar would see it as. However, if someone glanced at this mist from Amaya's angle, they would see a portrait of a man's face.

There was a silly smile on Amaya's face while she continued to make changes to the portrait before bringing it back to normal.

'As I expected, if his nose was any sharper, it wouldn't look good at all. He is perfect the way he is.'

Amaya noted and then continued to enlarge Nux's eyes.

'Nope, that won't do either. I need to try something else.'

Yes, believe it or not, that was how Amaya passed most of her time.

Thinking about Nux.

She was beyond crazy at this point.

\*Step\*

While Amaya was enjoying her time, suddenly, her expression changed.

Without wasting any other second, she activated her [Sense] and soon, she noticed 5 men walking toward her room.

She frowned, then, she increased her Mana output, widened her search range just to be sure, and once she was sure there was no one else, she informed Nux.

‘Nux, I am surrounded by 5 assassins.’

She didn’t receive any response from another side, however, Amaya was still calm.

‘You don’t have to worry too much, also, don’t shout out loud, I can’t hear you that way. Talk to me through connection.’

‘Are you okay? Do you need my help!?’

She soon received her answer.

A small smile appeared on Amaya’s face and at the same time, those 5 Assassins walked into her room, 3 through the door and 2 through the window.

They had blocked all her escape routes and even though they had covered their faces, Amaya could tell that they were smiling at her.

‘Don’t worry, there is only 1 Expert Stage Cultivator and 4 Grand Master Stage Cultivators, I can deal with them alone.’

‘You carry on with your session with Evane, I will not give my time to her.’

‘Hmph, don’t even talk about it. That Bastard Lovis interrupted us.’

Nux snorted. Hearing the assassins’ cultivation, he calmed down.

Amaya can handle those idiots with ease.

‘Hmm? Are you guys being attacked as well?’

Amaya questioned.

‘No, we are not being attacked. It seems that someone send some sort of letter to this Lovis using Evane’s stamp, this idiot fell for it and came here.’

Nux informed.

‘Nux... use your [Sense].’

Amaya spoke.

‘I know, I have used it already, other than Lovis’s Butler, no one else is around us.’

Nux answered.

‘What about the servants?’

Amaya questioned.

‘...’

Nux paused and then a minute later, he spoke while scratching the back of his head.

‘Well, I guess we are going to be attacked as well.’

‘Raguel is pretty bold.’

Amaya spoke.

‘Well, it is a good chance, is it not? We should thank him.’

Nux smiled as he glanced at Lovis.

Amaya chuckled.

“Hmmm? Does she not realize that she is in danger?”

For more chapters, please visit

One of the assassins surrounding Amaya questioned with a disdainful smile on his face.

“It’s not like she can do anything, can she? She can’t move, remember?”

Another assassin answered.

“But she can still react, can’t she? I heard that she can talk even if she is in this condition.”

The first assassin replied.

“You really want to hear my voice, don’t you?”

Amaya smiled.

The assassin was taken back by the smile on her face and soon, he sighed,

“I can’t believe that they are making me kill a beauty like you, Lady Amaya. Trust me, I feel so bad, however, I can’t go against them, I need to feed myself, after all.”

Amaya just laughed lightly.

“Don’t worry, no hard feelings.”

“I knew you were different than other women, Lady Amaya. If only you could be my woman, even though you are cursed, I would have treasured you with all my heart.”

The assassin replied.

“Can you fulfill my last wish though?”

“What is it?”

“I want to know why I am dying, who ordered it?”

Hearing that question, the assassin sighed,

“Lady Amaya, I am sure you already know how things work in our field. I can’t tell you about it.”

“Well, you people don’t really talk to your target like you are doing either, now do you?”

Amaya smiled.

“Haah! You got me there.”

The assassin smiled.

“Alright, I will fulfill your last wish, Duke Vestalis sent us here.”

“Hmmm.”

Amaya nodded her head.

“You had already guessed it, hadn’t you?”

The assassins questioned.

“I had a rough idea.”

Amaya nodded.

“You are amazing indeed.”

The assassin nodded.

“Though I would like to ask, how did you know it was Duke Vestalis? It could have been any other Duke as well. Duke Merula for example.

I mean, sorry to say this, Lady Amaya, but you aren’t exactly liked by any of the Dukes.”

“They have terrible taste.”

Amaya replied.

“They do, indeed.” The assassin nodded.

“As for your answer, well, it’s simple really, Lovis and Evane are currently being attacked, and Lucas is... well, Lucas, completely useless, so I don’t think Duke Merula will do anything risky for that boy, he stands no chance to win the throne, after all. Why take such a huge risk?

The only one left is Raguel, the first Prince, so it had to be Duke Vestalis.” Amaya generously explained.

Hearing those words, the assassin nodded. “Now that I hear this from you, it does make a lot of sense, you are indeed the most intelligent woman in this Kingdom, lady Amaya. Even a muscle brain like me understood what you just said.”

Amaya nodded back with a smile.

The assassin continued to nod as well, however, suddenly, he paused.

He then turned towards Amaya and questioned with a solemn look on his face.

“How did you know that Sir Lovis and Lady Evane are being attacked?”

# Chapter 437

“How did you know that Sir Lovis and Lady Evane are being attacked?”

The assassin questioned and hearing that question, the other assassins' expressions changed as well.

They all alerted themselves and started looking around with cautious looks on their faces.

With their years of experience, they could feel it.

Something was about to happen.

Seeing their reaction, Amaya smiled.

“You know...” She called out, “I must say, you have a lot to learn as an assassin. You should never talk to your target like you did now, what if your target was planning something and was just stalling for time?” She questioned.

This time, however, the assassin wasn't playing around, “Answer my question, how did you know that Sir Lovis and Lady Evane are being attacked?” He repeated his question as he pointed his dagger at Amaya.

Initially, Amaya wasn't a threat, a woman who couldn't even move, what could possibly go wrong when someone like her was his target? She couldn't even defend herself. Therefore, he was relaxed and started talking.

A mistake, but it wasn't fatal. Even assassins want to indulge a little.

However, the assassin finally realized that something was wrong. He wanted to correct himself and quickly shot his dagger at Amaya, trying to pierce her heart in one move.

However, things didn't go as he planned.

The dagger he thought would directly pierce Amaya's heart without any problems was caught,

It was caught by Amaya herself.

“!!!”

The assassin's eyes widened in surprise.

“You can move!?”

He questioned in shock.

Seeing his face, Amaya's smile widened, and then, she stood up.

“I must say, Duke Vestalis sending a mere Expert Stage Cultivator and 4 Grand Master Stage Cultivators to kill me, a King Stage Cultivator is quite disrespectful.

Shouldn't he at least send around 10 King Stage Cultivators?”

'10 King Stage Cultivators my ass! Where do you think he would find those from!? Even he himself is only an Expert Stage Cultivator!'

The assassin thought inwardly.

However, this wasn't something he should worry about right now.

Amaya was moving.

That Black Mist was still surrounding her, meaning the Curse was still active. This was unheard of.

Suddenly, another idea popped into her mind and he commanded.

“Don't be scared, remember, she can't use her cultivation! Just kill her, she is just trying to put up a strong front, don't fall for it, and just kill her!”

The other assassins, who were just as confused and afraid as he was came out of their reverie and nodded.

Their leader's words made sense.

The 4 of them looked at each other and nodded, however, just as they were about to attack Amaya, they noticed that she was looking at them with a smile on her face and then,

The Mist covering her body moved and rushed towards them.

The assassins tried to dodge it, however, as if it had eyes, the Mist followed behind them, and soon, it surrounded their body.

“Ugghhhh!!”

The assassins groaned in pain.

“W-What is this!?”

One of them shouted in panic.

“It is eating my Mana!”

Another assassin shouted in horror.

“Push it out of your body! Don't block it! Push it out! Don't let it stay inside for long!”

An assassin spoke.

Hearing that, Amaya smiled and clapped.

For more chapters, please visit

“You figured it out, congratulations. You are much smarter than I thought you were. Here, as you prize,

I will increase the difficulty.”

\*Whoosh\*

A second later, more Devouring Mist was released from her body and rushed toward the four assassins.

The assassins, who were barely resisting the mist were now completely surrounded now.

“Captain! Save us!”

“Uggh! Keep this thing away from me!”

“Captain!!”

The assassins shouted in fear.

The leader of the assassin, the Expert Stage Cultivator, the one who was talking with Amaya looked at him with a shocked look on his face.

“H-H-How are you doing this?”

“Doing what?” Amaya questioned.

“Y-Your curse! How are you controlling it!?”

The assassin raised his voice.

Amaya smiled, “You think I am a fool like you? Why would I reveal any information to you?”

“Yo-”

The assassin wanted to say something, however, before he could, another assassin interrupted.

“You can talk to her later! Save us first!”

The assassin finally came out of his reverie and rushed towards Amaya, however, suddenly, Amaya, who was standing right in front of him

disappeared.

The Assassin looked around in caution and soon, he heard a voice.

“It was nice talking to you, Cervic.”

Before he could react, his throat was slit open, and then he heard Amaya’s voice again.

“Also, don’t bite more than you can chew, I would never be your woman. I already belong to someone else. Know your place, Cervic Malfoy.”

“H-H-Hkwo do you know mky name?” Cervic, the assassin questioned, however, since his throat was being clogged by his own blood, his words weren’t clear.

Amaya just smiled at him, he soon felt all his energy leaving his body.

He turned around and noticed that all his subordinates were lying on the floor, motionless.

He didn’t know if they were dead or alive, however, he knew that they would die soon. The Black Mist was still surrounding their bodies.

In his last moment, his eyes fell on Amaya again, and seeing how she was just sitting on the bed, looking at him with a curious look on her face while that scary Black Mist was dancing in her hands, he could only think of one thing,

‘Fucking monster...’

Cervic finally took his last breath and closed his eyes.

Amaya smiled, then, the Mist on the top of her hand moved and covered Cervic’s body.

She then waited for another 10 minutes, the Devouring Mist not only devoured the assassins’ mana and inner organs, it even devoured their bones, muscles, skin, and everything else.

Other than their Spatial Ring, their entire body was devoured by the Devouring Mist.

Amaya stood up, picked the Space Rings, stored them in her pockets, and then smiled.

‘I should start my act now.

Are you guys ready?’

‘Whatever.’

Thyra replied.

Amaya’s smile widened, a dagger then appeared in her hand, and then,

\*Pierce\*

She pierced it into her thigh.

# Chapter 438

“Who’s there!?”

In the middle of the night, a guard questioned as he noticed a figure trying to run out of the Palace.

The figure, however, the figure didn’t stop and continued to run away.

Its speed was not high, it was only comparable to a mortal, however, the guard was still wary since it was the middle of the night.

“Jimmy! Come here!”

He shouted and called for his partner.

His partner, who was patrolling on the other side rushed towards him.

“What happened?” the partner questioned.

The guard pointed at the figure who was still running away, the partner’s eyes turned solemn and he ordered,

“We need to capture him.”

The guard nodded and the two of them dashed toward the figure.

The two of them were Advance Stage Cultivators, for someone like them, catching up to a mortal was a simple task.

A minute later, they already appeared in front of her figure, however, as soon as they saw the figure’s face, their eyes widened in surprise.

“L-Lady Amaya!?”

Jimmy questioned in shock.

Seeing the guard, a relieved look appeared on Amaya's face,

“Thank God... I finally found someone...”

Amaya sighed deeply.

However, soon, her expression changed.

“Shit, you are only Advance Stage Cultivators!”

The Guards frowned, confused, and before they had any more time to think, Amaya ordered.

“Look, you two have to run away else you will die as well. Remember, Raguél Skyfall, the First Prince is the one behind this attack. You need to expose him! Now run!”

Saying those words, Amaya passed them and started running away.

The guards frowned in confusion, they didn't know what was happening, however, they knew it was serious.

Confused, the two of them did what Amaya ordered them to and started following her. Jimmy then noticed the blood that was coming out of Amaya's thigh and his eyes then finally fell on the dagger that was pierced into her thighs.

“!!!” His eyes widened in surprise.

“Lad-”

He wanted to question about it, however, Amaya quickly turned around and shouted.

“You fools, why are you running after me!? Go in the opposite direction, get out of here! They will come here soon! You cannot get caught by them! Remember what I told you and run away!”

The two guards finally realized what was happening.

It was apparent after seeing that dagger pierced into Amaya's thighs.

Consort Amaya was being attacked, she was trying to escape.

However, the two guards doubted that she could get away in her state.

"Lady Amaya, we can help yo-"

Jimmy spoke, however, he was again cut off by Amaya.

"They all are Grand Master Stage Cultivators, you wouldn't be able to do anything! Just run, I will survive... somehow, you two just run away!"

Saying that, Amaya turned away again.

"G-G-Grand Master."

The two guards stood there in shock.

They knew it well, they would never be able to go against Grand Master Stage Cultivators. The two of them looked at each other and nodded.

They ran away.

For more chapters, please visit

They respected Lady Amaya and whatever, however, they were still unwilling to die uselessly for her. She was going to die anyway, what's the point of them dying with her?

They should at least save their lives.

With this thought in their mind, the two of them ran away as fast as possible.

\*Step\* \*Step\* \*Step\*

A minute later, the two of them heard a few footsteps, they turned around and noticed 5 figures wearing black colored clothes rushing towards the

direction Amaya ran into at an absurd speed.

“Don’t let her get away, follow the blood trail. That bitch won’t get away this time.”

The one who was running at the front spoke.

The Gurads’ eyes widened in surprise and the two of them hid behind a tree.

“Haah... Haa... Haa...”

2 minutes later, when the guards were sure that the assailants had gone after Consort Amaya, the two of them breathed heavily.

Even though they haven’t done anything, they could feel their heart pumping erratically.

It may not look like it, but the two of them had just survived a life-and-death situation.

If the assailants had noticed them, they would have died today.

“L-Lady Amaya saved us...”

Jimmy spoke with a tired voice.

“She did indeed...”

The other guard, Adam, nodded back.

“But she...”

Jimmy wanted to say something, however, he didn’t.

Adam understood what he wanted to say and a guilty look appeared on his face.

“Do you think she got caught?”

Adam questioned.

“No doubt about that,” Jimmy replied.

“But she is Consort Amaya, do you think she would get caught like that?” Adam still had some hope.

“She might have ran away in normal conditions, considering how intelligent she is, however, that blood trial... it would give her away. In the end, she is just a mortal, how could she escape the pursuit of 5 Grand Master Stage Cultivators?

Also, keep in mind, she can only run for two hours.”

“Her curse...” Adam realized.

“Indeed, her curse would act up in 2 hours, there is no way she would be able to run away after that. Though I don’t think she would be able to dodge her assailants for so long, even if she did, two hours later, she would definitely get caught.” Jimmy spoke.

“...” Adam turned silent.

“...” Jimmy didn’t say anything either.

“What should we do about it?” Adam questioned.

“About what?” Jimmy questioned back.

Adam glanced at Jimmy for a while and then answered,

“We know who sent those assassins after Consort Amaya, it was the First Prince, she told us to expose him, but who should we tell this to?”

Jimmy turned silent and after thinking for a few minutes, he sighed,

“No one.”

“What?” Adam frowned.

“If you want to stay alive, then bury this secret with you. Consort Amaya is already dead, who do you think would protect us for the sake of the dead?” Jimmy questioned.

“B-But she gave up her life to save us!” Adam countered.

“She didn’t, they were after her in the first place, she didn’t do anything for us. Now keep your mouth shut, otherwise, not only you, but your entire family would die a gruesome death.”

# Chapter 439

On the other side, Amaya, who was running away from her assailants, finally managed to run out of the Palace, there were around 10 guards who saw her running away like that, however, the moment they learned about the situation, all of them backed off and ran away.

Of course, Amaya didn't fail to tell them who the culprit was.

She told that to everybody.

Her idea was simple, some might chicken out of this situation, but everybody couldn't possibly be the same, can he?

“Heh, to think you managed to run this far, praiseworthy indeed.”

While Amaya was still running, she heard a voice from her behind.

She quickly turned around and saw that 5 beings wearing black colored clothes were standing in front of her.

“However, this is the end, Amaya Skyfall.”

The leader of the assassins muttered.

Seeing them, Amaya sighed, all the energy left her body and she fell down.

“Are you giving up?”

The leader of the assassins questioned with a smile.

“Alright, this is enough, don't get too involved in it. I am actually tired, running with a dagger pierced into my thigh, it's a lot more painful than I thought.” Amaya sighed and at the same time, she removed the dagger from her thigh.

“Ugghh!”

She groaned in pain, covering the wound with her hand, and with her other hand, she drank a healing potion.

The leader of the assassins looked at her for a while and then, she sighed as well.

She walked towards Amaya and crouched.

“I can’t believe you pierced your own thigh.”

Thyra spoke while tending to Amaya’s wound.

“I can do anything for him. This is nothing.”

Amaya spoke with a smile on her face.

Thyra glanced at Amaya and smiled,

“This is why I acknowledge you. You are willing to go so far for him, just like me.”

The two of them looked at each other for a while and then,

“I am not into women, I only belong to him.”

Amaya clarified.

“I have the same thoughts.”

Thyra nodded as well.

She then continued to tend to Amaya’s wound and then, Amaya questioned.

“Did you bring what I told you to?”

Thyra didn’t say anything, she just pointed at the woman behind her.

Three stepped forward and nodded.

Soon, a body appeared on the floor.

“He was assaulting a woman.”

Three informed.

“Ah, perfect.”

Amaya smiled and ordered.

“Slit his throat, make sure a lot of blood drops on the ground.”

Three did what she was told and slit the man’s throat.

Amaya then waited for a few seconds, letting the blood fall on the ground and once she was satisfied, she pointed at the tree nearby and ordered,

“Drag him to that tree and burn his body.”

Three nodded, then she turned towards the people behind him.

“Ugghh! Why should I do it?”

Two complained.

“You have a problem?”

Three narrowed her eyes.

Two raised his hands in the air and stepped back.

“Alright, I will do it.”

He and the other assassin dragged the body to the tree and then burned it.

For more chapters, please visit

15 minutes later, nothing but ashes were left.

After that was done, Amaya ordered,

“Now erase all the traces within 1 minute.”

“Are you sure?” Thyra questioned.

“Just trust me.” Amaya smiled.

Thyra shrugged and waved her hands.

The other assassins nodded and 4 assassins started removing all the blood trail quickly, they even mixed the ashes with the mud in the ground and erased all the footsteps they could find.

Once this was done, Amaya smiled.

“Now we just need to wait for Nux.”

“Mhm.”

Thyra nodded.

...

On the other side, inside Evane’s room,

“WHAT!?” Nux shouted in shock.

“What happened?” Evane rushed towards Nux with a worried look on her face.

For Nux to act like this, something bad must have happened. She quickly forgot that her brother was there and waited for Nux’s answer, Nux, however, didn’t answer.

Evane quickly realized that he was using the telepathic connection to talk to someone and decided to wait.

Lovis, who saw this scene frowned.

Wasn't he just a bodyguard? Evane's Servant?

Why does he look like a leader?

What is this situation?

Can a servant just randomly shout like this in the middle of the night?

And even his Sister, why was she acting like this? Why is she so worried about a mere servant?

'Wait... something is not right... that bitch took too much time to open the door, her face looks like she just wiped all the sweat, while her dress looks like she wore it in hurry...'

Lovis started connecting all the dots.

However, before he could come to a conclusion, Nux called out.

"Hey, Third Prince."

"Huh? What?"

Lovis came out of his reverie.

"You should call your butler inside."

"Huh? What are you talking about? I have not brought him here. Why would I bring him, I just came her-"

"You don't have to come up with any excuses, I know that butler is outside, call him in," Nux spoke.

"Are you doubting my words?" Lovis narrowed his eyes.

"Just call him in, it would be too late to regret if you don't." Nux wasn't the least bit intimidated by his gaze and spoke nonchalantly.

Lovis frowned, "Are you threatening me?"

Nux sighed, “I am not threatening you, you fool. We will be surrounded soon, call him in, he would be of help.”

“Huh?” Lovis frowned.

“Why do you think someone would go as far as to write a fake letter to call you here? Just because you brother and sister can have a nice little chat?”

Nux didn’t need to explain more, Lovis understood, and with a serious look on his face, he ordered,

“Leo, come in.”

As if waiting for this order, the butler walked into the room with a frown on his face.

“Hmm, 2 Expert Stage Cultivators, 4 Grand Master Stage Cultivators... I think we have a fair chance in this battle.”

Nux muttered.

“Are you a fool? We only have 2 Grand Master Stage Cultivators. Me and you.” Lovis snorted.

“I know that, of course.” Nux nodded with a confused look on his face.

“Why did you say 4 Grand Master Stage Cultivators then?”

“I was talking about the enemies, you dumb fuck.”

# Chapter 440

“I was talking about the enemies, you dumb fuck.”

Nux snorted.

Lovis narrowed his eyes and retorted, “Who do you think you are talking to? If you forgot, then let me remind you, you are just a servant, a servant I can get rid of any time I want. Know your place, insect.”

Nux glanced at Lovis and just smiled, “Ahh, I am so scared. Third Prince Lovis is using his trump card, his status, to threaten me again. What could I possibly do when he sends 100 King Stage Cultivators to hunt me down.”

He then rushed towards Evane and hugged her from behind,

“Lady Evaneeee, I am so scaaaarred. Save meeee~”

Evane, of course, didn't mind being hugged by Nux, however, Lovis couldn't help but widen his eyes in shock,

“You bastard! Get away from he-”

However, before he could say anything, the doors of the room were burst opened and 6 assassins wearing black colored clothes entered.”

“Oh, they are here.”

Nux spoke with a smile on his face.

The assassins raised their eyebrows when they saw Nux hugging Evane from behind, however, in the end, they didn't care about anything.

Unlike the assassins who were after Amaya, these assassins didn't waste their time and directly attacked.

‘What are you doing? Isn’t dealing with all of them a simple task for you? Why aren’t you fighting?’

Seeing that Nux had no intentions of moving, Evane questioned.

‘If you get into a dangerous situation, I would help.’ Nux replied.

‘Isn’t this situation dangerous already!?’ Evane questioned again.

‘Heh, it’s not nearly dangerous... for you.’

Evane narrowed her eyes, ‘For me?’

‘I am not planning to save that bastard, I’ll only save you.’ Nux revealed.

‘You can’t do this!’ Evane eyes widened in surprise and she dismissed.

‘Well, he is your brother, isn’t he? Save him then. I’ll only act like a normal Grand Master Stage Cultivator.’ Nux shrugged.

Evane couldn’t believe what she was hearing. She turned and looked at Nux with a shocked look on her face, however, Nux just pointed behind her with a smile on his face.

Evane quickly turned around and blocked the attack of the Expert Stage Assassin.

Collecting all her strength, she pushed the assassin away, and then, she ordered,

“Leo, you fight that Expert Stage Assassin, Lovis, go after the Grand Master Stage Assassin and try to get rid of him as soon as possible! And Nux... you go and fight that Grand Master Stage Assassin.”

“What about the remaining assassins!?”

Lovis questioned.

A determined look appeared on Evane’s face and she spoke,

“I’ll take care of them.”

Saying those words, a red-orange colored sword appeared in her hand and she dashed toward the Expert Stage Assassin.

\*Clank\*

The assassin’s dagger and Evane’s sword clashed, from the clash, it looked like the two of them had the same level of strength, however, suddenly,

\*Whoosh\*

Scorching Flames covered Evane’s sword, the assassin could feel that heat burning his hand, and his grip on his weapon weakened. The assassin didn’t panic, he decided to bear the heat, however, he soon realized that his 4 Star Dagger was being affected by Evane’s sword.

For more chapters, please visit

There was already a 1 cm long cut on the blade!

If this continued, his dagger would break in the middle of the battle! He had to do something!

Using this moment of confusion, Evane slashed her sword, due to the sudden force, the assassin stepped back, and Evane quickly rushed towards the assassin and slashed at his neck.

The assassin blocked her attack with all his might, soon, however, he felt a scorching pain in his lower body.

He lowered his head and noticed a grievous cut on both his thighs. The skin around this cut was burned and the more it was exposed to air, the more it hurt.

‘When!?’

He couldn’t understand. Evane never aimed at his thighs, just how did she...

He soon realized.

Her sword.

He didn't know what tier it was, however, it was definitely not her 4 Stage Sword that was written on the information.

‘Just where did she get that ridiculous sword from!?’

He wondered inwardly.

Evane, however, didn't care about what he was thinking, seeing this chance, she just kicked his chest. Due to the immense force behind the kick, the assassin's body flew away.

Evane then turned around, another, red-black sword appeared in her hand and she rushed towards the two Grand Master Stage Assassins who were about to attack Leo and Lovis.

‘She has another!?’

The Expert Stage Assassin who fell down couldn't believe his eyes.

He wondered where these weapons came from, however, he realized that he didn't have the time. There is no way the other assassins would be able to fight Evane, he had to get up and fight again.

However, just as he tried to get up, he lost his balance and fell down.

His wound was more serious than he thought.

In the end, the only thing he could do was drink a Healing Potion and tend to his wound.

“Ugghh!!”

He groaned in pain and frustration and gulped an entire Potion in one go.

On the other side, Evane fought against 2 Grand Master Assassins alone, she knew she didn't have much time, the Expert Stage Assassin would get back soon.

At best, she only had one minute, therefore, she decided to inject more Mana into her Swords, and the Flames around her two swords increased.

With just one slash, she cut an Assassin's body into two, while the other had to sacrifice his entire arm from his shoulder in order to stay alive.

“Haah... haa... haahh...”

Evane took deep breaths.

She had used almost all her Mana she was left with in this attack, however, she knew it hasn't ended yet.

She rushed towards the assassin who was still shivering in pain and attacked. The assassin blocked the attack with his dagger. Evane didn't stop and continued to attack ruthlessly.

The assassin, who had already lost his major arm couldn't stand more, and soon, Evane beheaded him.

Evane's hands trembled.

This was the first time she had killed someone.

Seeing the blood flowing around in her room, she wanted to throw up.

Seeing her just standing there, the Expert Stage assassin, who was still tending to her wound had another idea.

# Chapter 441

Seeing her just standing there, the Expert Stage assassin, who was still tending to her wound had another idea.

A 3 Star Crossbow appeared in his hand, then another bottle appeared in his other hand, he spilled the content of that bottle on his Crossbow's arrow, then without wasting any moment, he shot at Evane.

On the other side, Nux, who was fighting against a Grand Master Stage Cultivator was in a tough situation.

This Grand Master Stage Assassin was really strong, he was dominating the entire battle and,

\*Clank\*

This time, when their daggers clashed, Nux's dagger flew away.

“Oh, how careless of me.”

Nux slapped his forehead lightly and dodged the assassin's blade.

Another dagger appeared in his hand and he continued this difficult battle.

\*Clank\*

His dagger that flew away clashed with the arrow that the Expert Stage Assassin had shot toward Evane.

‘Huh!? What!?’

The Expert Stage Assassin's eyes widened in surprise.

His attack failed, Evane, who was clearly lost in something would have been attacked, however, this dagger just appeared out of nowhere and

deflected his arrow!

Just how lucky can one get!?

The assassin couldn't believe it.

Can this get any worse!?

He wondered inwardly and soon, he received his answer.

Yes, it can.

Evane, who was lost in her thoughts came out of her reverie when she heard the sound of the dagger and arrow clashing. She turned around and then, her eyes fell on the assassin.

'Fuck me.'

The assassin cursed himself, the wound on his thighs still hurt like hell. He knew that he still couldn't stand yet.

However, with Evane looking at him like that, he knew it was the end.

In the end, he just glared at the assassin who was fighting with Nux and cursed all his generations in his mind.

Evane didn't waste any time either, she dashed toward the assassin and beheaded his head.

With how her hands were trembling, it was clear that she wasn't feeling well, Nux realized this as well, however, he knew he had to give her the time to figure everything out.

He can't help her with this.

Their path was never clean, they needed to stain their hands with blood.

Initially, he wanted to avoid getting blood in his women's hands, however, Ember and Thyra continued to press him, telling him how important it was.

In the end, his other women, even Evane agreed and he nodded as well.

His women had to grow as well.

And after this incident, he knew that Evane would grow as well.

Therefore, he just continued his ‘difficult’ fight and didn’t help her.

“Haahh... Haa... Haa...”

Evane breathed heavily.

After using almost all her Mana, she was very tired.

She was sure that if it wasn’t for the Body Cultivation that she has been practicing for a while, she would have already fallen down.

“SISTER! If you are done then come help me! This bastard is a Peak Grand Master Stage Cultivator!”

Suddenly, Evane heard Lovis’s call for help.

For more chapters, please visit

She quickly turned around and as soon as she did, her eyes widened in surprise.

Lovis’s entire body was covered with wounds.

The wounds weren’t fatal, however, with how things looked, if someone didn’t help him, he would die!

He was barely holding on against this assassin.

Actually, for Lovis, who had become a Grand Master Stage Cultivator not so long ago, it was already a great feat to fight against this assassin for so long.

However, in the end, there was only so far he could go with his strength. The difference between him and the assassin was absolute.

A worried look appeared on Evane's face, she then glanced at Nux, however, seeing that he was still fighting against that Assassin, she realized that he wasn't planning to help. In the end, she had to do it all by herself.

With a determined look on her face, she tightened the grip around her swords, and just as she was about to dash towards Lovis and the Assassin, she heard Nux's voice.

'You can't inject more Mana into those swords, you would pass out in the middle of the battle.'

Evane paused and glanced at swords.

These were 7 Star Swords that Nux had gifted her. It was ridiculously overpowered, Nux even said that its attack power was the strongest amongst all the 7 Star Swords, however, along with that, its Mana consumption was ridiculously high as well.

Therefore, Evane had to be careful with these swords.

Her second sword disappeared, and then, she dashed toward her brother.

Her body felt like it was 10 times heavier than normal, however, she still attacked the assassin with all her might.

The assassin dodged her attack.

He panicked when Evane appeared before him like that, however, as soon as he looked at Evane's posture, he realized that she was very tired.

His smile widened, although he was outnumbered, one of his opponents was covered with wounds, while the other was tired.

He couldn't see himself losing this battle.

With a confident smile on his face, he dashed toward Evane and Lovis at the same time.

“Aaaahhhh!!”

Lovis slashed his sword at the assassin, but the assassin simply blocked his attack, and at the same time, he kicked Evane’s stomach.

“Cough!”

Evane was forced back and coughed a few times.

The assassin took his chance and aimed at Lovis’s neck, Evane’s eyes widened in shock, and she quickly dashed towards Lovis and blocked the assassin’s attack.

Lovis took this chance and aimed at the assassin’s thigh.

The assassin, however, attacked Lovis’s face with his knee, Lovis stepped back and covered his nose.

The assassin then focused on Evane and started attacking.

With each attack, it was getting more and more difficult for Evane to block those attacks.

She was waiting for Lovis to attack the assassin, however, after more time passed, she frowned.

She turned around and noticed that Lovis was still standing behind her, covering his nose.

“What are you doing!? Attack him!”

She shouted.

“You are an Expert Stage Cultivator, can’t you take out a mere Grand Master Stage Cultivator!?”

Lovis complained.

Hearing his words, Nux narrowed his eyes.

He could see what was going on inside Lovis's mind, actually, he had predicted something like this already, in the end, he just shook his head and decided to give Lovis a chance, just like Evane wanted him to.

“Lovis, keep in mind, if Evane dies, you will be killed next. You two need to work together if you want to win this battle.”

# Chapter 442

“Lovis, keep in mind, if Evane dies, you will be killed next. You two need to work together if you want to win this battle.”

Nux spoke in a calm tone.

Lovis glanced at Nux, seeing that he was still fighting against the Assassin, an angry look appeared on his face.

“Talk after you defeat that assassin first! You useless bastard, you couldn’t even defeat a single assassin, what right do you have to order me around!?”

After saying those words, he turned towards Evane and the assassin he was fighting again, he could see that Evane was being pushed back.

‘If Evane is killed, you will be next.’

He then remembered Nux’s words.

“Uggghhhh!!”

With a long groan, he dashed toward the assassin and attacked him.

“Good!”

Evane praised.

Lovis forced out a smile and the two of them started attacking the assassin again.

Even though he was fighting against 2 opponents, the assassin wasn’t pushed back, Evane’s attacks were getting weaker and weaker, and Lovis was the same too, the assassin knew that as more time passes, his victory would be much clearer.

However, the assassin couldn't waste any more time.

His partner, who was fighting against Leo was in a disadvantageous position, he had to help him before he is defeated.

The assassin fighting Nux was in a strange situation where even though he had a clear advantage, he failed to land a single blow on his opponent. He didn't know when he would get rid of Nux and will be free.

Therefore, everything depended on him.

With that thought in his mind, the assassin attacked Evane with more force than normal, Evane, who didn't expect that was pushed back, and taking this opportunity, the assassin attacked Lovis with full force.

“AAAGGghhhhhHHh!!”

Lovis shrieked in pain. Looking down, he noticed a huge cut on his chest with blood coming out continuously.

Lovis panicked and completely forgot about his opponent who was right in front of him.

Seeing this chance, the assassin's eyes shined and he attacked again, this time, he aimed at Lovis's neck.

“NOO! LOVIS!!”

Evane shouted in fear and panic.

Flames burned around her sword again and she dashed toward the assassin.

The Assassin frowned and decided to block, the Flames surrounding Evane's sword turned even fiercer and she slashed her sword at the assassin.

“Aggghhhhh!!!”

Evane's sword tore through the assassin's 3 Star Dagger and slashed his chest.

A wound similar to Lovis's appeared on the assassin's chest, however, Evane did not stop.

“AAhhh!”

With another roar, she appeared in front of the assassin and beheaded him.

\*Clank\*

Evane used her sword as support and stood up.

“Haahh... Hahh... Haahh...”

Her face was pale, her entire body was drenched in sweat, her limbs were trembling and she was breathing heavily, it was clear she had already used every ounce of her Mana.

How was she still standing up, no one knew.

Lovis, who was standing behind Evane couldn't help but widen his eyes, his sister defeated 3 Grand Master Stage Assassins and 1 Expert Stage Assassin on her own.

How ridiculous is that!? How is she so strong!?

Leo was an Expert Stage Cultivator as well, however, even though he is still fighting his enemy and although he had an advantage, he still hasn't defeated him.

Lovis knew that the cultivation, more difficult it is to kill the opponent of the same Cultivation, then, how, just how did his sister defeat his opponent so quickly?

Lovis was confused, terrified, and impressed.

He momentarily forgot about his pain and looked around.

For more chapters, please visit

Leo was winning, he would defeat his opponent soon, Nux was still fighting against the Grand Master Stage Assassin, he and Evane were now free, however, both of them were too tired to help anyone.

After analyzing everything, Lovis concluded that he was now safe.

He had survived this dangerous situation.

His eyes then fell on the person responsible for his safety and a small, genuine smile appeared on his face.

“Sister...”

He called out and even though his wound was still bleeding and it was unbearable and painful, he still walked towards her.

Evane, who heard his voice, smiled,

“Don’t worry, everything is fin-”

Before Evane could even say anything, Lovis had already taken out a dagger and was about to pierce him.

The tired Evane couldn’t possibly block this attack, this attack was too sudden, and in truth, Evane was too shocked to even respond to this attack.

‘No...’

Evane muttered in shock. She couldn’t believe that she was going to die at the hands of the brother she trusted.

Soon, however, Lovis’s expression changed.

The wide smile on his face was replaced by a frown, he then turned a little and his eyes widened in surprise.

Evane turned her head and saw Nux standing beside her, holding Lovis’s hand with an emotionless look on his face.

“H-H-How!?”

Lovis’s eyes widened in shock!

He glanced at the place where he was fighting against the assassin and only found that assassin, lying on the ground, lifeless.

“When did you...”

Lovis couldn’t believe his eyes.

Nux, however, didn’t bother to reply, he just turned towards Evane and spoke,

“You believe me now, don’t you? You nearly sacrificed your life to protect him and this bastard still tried to stab you from behind.”

“ ... ”

Evane didn’t know what to say.

“Evane,”

Nux called with a serious look on his face.

Evane looked into his eyes.

“I have to do this. I am sorry.” Nux spoke.

“Wha-”

Evane frowned, however, before she could react, Nux pierced Lovis’s stomach with his own dagger.

“Ugghhh!!”

Lovis’s eyes widened in surprise.

“NUX!”

Evane shouted in worry and tried to rush toward Lovis, however, Nux grabbed her from behind and narrowed his eyes.

“He tried to kill you, Evane.”

“B-But-”

“He is still my brother, I know, don’t give me that bullshit. He is your brother who tried to kill you, that is even worse than these assassins.”

Nux spoke in a serious tone.

“Look, Evane, I didn’t say anything before because I didn’t have any solid proof, but if you still try to defend him,

Then you disappoint me.”

# Chapter 443

“Look, Evane, I didn’t say anything before because I didn’t have any solid proof, but if you still try to defend him,

Then you disappoint me.”

Nux spoke with a solemn look on his face.

“Ugghhhhh!”

On the other side, Lovis, who was pierced by his dagger fell down and his body stopped moving.

Seeing him like that, Nux narrowed his eyes even further.

“His dagger was laced with paralyzing poison, heh, he was completely prepared to get rid of you.”

“ ... ”

Again, Evane didn’t say anything, she just looked at Lovis, who was lying on the ground with a lost look on her face.

Lovis, who noticed her gaze pleaded for mercy with his eyes, however, seeing that she wasn’t responding, he turned towards Nux.

Nux, however, didn’t care about him, he just lifted the limitation on his Cultivation and appeared before Leo and the assassin fighting him, with just one slash, he beheaded the assassin.

“!!!”

Lovis’s eyes widened in surprise. ‘King Stage Cultivator!’

“K-King Stage Cultivator!!”

Leo had the same reaction as his Master.

“Y-You are a King Stage Cultivator!”

He pointed at Nux and screamed in fear.

“Why are you posing as her servant!?”

Leo couldn't understand.

“You don't have to know that. Just answer my question,

What are you going to do?

Are you going to stay loyal to your Master and die? Or are you going to become my Slave?”

Nux questioned and Leo didn't know how to respond.

“I do not have all day, Leo.”

Nux spoke.

“...”

Leo stayed silent and a few seconds later,

“Aaaahhhh!!”

He rushed towards Nux with a dagger in his hand.

“Well, option 1 it is.”

Nux shrugged and then, he beheaded Leo.

He then turned towards Lovis to finish everything, however, a frown appeared on his face when he saw Evane standing next to Lovis and Lovis was looking at him with a boastful look in his eyes.

Lovis had realized that Nux wouldn't move against him as long as his sister was willing to protect him and seeing that his sister was standing right next to him, he was sure that he was saved now.

Actually, he was thankful to his sister, even though he was trying to backstab her, she still stood up for her.

Maybe his sister was not a bitch like he thought she wa-

*\*Pierce\**

Suddenly, Lovis's eyes widened in surprise.

He looked below and saw a red colored sword piercing his neck. Since his whole body was paralyzed, he didn't feel any pain, however, he could feel his life draining away slowly.

With a panicked look on his face, he turned towards his sister and saw her holding the sword that had pierced his neck.

'Y-You b-bitch...'

He cursed in his head.

He couldn't believe that his Sister, who was protecting her with her life on the line was the one who killed him.

This time, however, he wasn't the only one who was surprised, Nux, who was looking at everything was the same as well.

'She... She killed him?'

He continued to look at Evane with a lost look on his face.

Evane glanced at him and a second later, tears started rolling out of her eyes.

Nux walked towards Evane and placed her head on his chest.

“It’s all fine, don’t worry, you did the right thing.”

More tears started streaming out of Evane’s eyes, Nux continued to pat her head and soon, Evane passed out.

Nux carried her like a princess and then glanced at Lovis.

‘I didn’t think you would kill him.

For more chapters, please visit

You are stronger than I thought, Evane.’

With a small smile on his face, Nux walked out of the room.

Just like that, a long night finally ended.

...

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

The next day, Kelton walked towards Amaya’s room and knocked.

“ ... ”

However, he didn’t receive any answer.

Kelton frowned,

“Lady Amaya.”

He called out and knocked again.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“ ... ”

But again, no one answered.

Kelton waited for a while and continued to knock, however, 10 minutes later, when no one answered, a worried look appeared on his face and he decided to barge in.

He tried opening the door but he then realized that the door was locked.

A solemn look appeared on Amaya's face.

Ever since Amaya's 'Curse' had gone out of control, she had stopped locking the doors.

Something was definitely not right.

Kelton realized it, therefore, without waiting, he smashed the door open and barged inside Amaya's room.

"Lady Amaya?"

He called out.

"..."

Again, he didn't receive any answer.

'Is she not here?'

Kelton wondered in his head, soon, however, his eyes widened in surprise.

There was blood!

He quickly rushed and crouched near the blood, then he noticed the trail going toward the window.

Missing Amaya, blood inside her room, something was definitely wrong.

Kelton panicked, he followed the blood trail and opened the window.

His eyes then fell on the blood on the ground and he assumed the worse possibility.

With a determined look on his face, he rushed out of Amaya's room and rushed towards the King's room.

“Stop!”

However, there, he was stopped by the guards.

“I need to talk to the king! Something happened!”

Kelton shouted.

“The King is busy, he cannot talk to anyone right now.”

The Guard shook his head.

“This is important!” Kelton didn't back down.

The Guard, however, shook his head again. “As I said, the King is busy, no matter how important it is, come later.”

“Lady Amaya is missing, there is blood inside her room, I assume that she was attacked last night! I need to talk to the King, we need to search for her if she is still alive! We also need to catch the culprit!”

Kelton described everything.

Hearing his words, the guard frowned,

“What? Lady Amaya was attacked as well?”

“Of course she is, do you think I am lying to y- Wait, as well? What do you mean?”

Kelton questioned.

“Princess Evane and Prince Lovis were attacked last night and,

Prince Lovis didn't survive.”

The Guard revealed.

# Chapter 444

“So you are saying that the Emperor of the Solid Earth Kingdom has broken the Treaty and is now involving himself with the country politics and is even harming other Countries?”

“Yes, that is correct. That is why I came here to talk to you. I wouldn’t have bothered you otherwise, but with Emperor involved, you are the only one I can come to.”

Ricardus, the King of the Strongest Kingdom, replied as he bowed his head with a respectful look on his face.

In front of her, sat a woman wearing a red-black gown, the woman had long black hair, brown eyes, a thin nose, and light pink lips, the woman had an alluring hourglass figure and a beautiful face, however, her sword-like eyebrows and cold eyes didn’t allow anyone to appreciate her beauty.

The woman had a fierce aura around her that commanded absolute obedience, her intimidating aura didn’t allow anyone to look directly at her face or her body, the only available option was to bow your head while addressing her.

Even the King of the Strongest Kingdom wasn’t an exception.

She was Astaria Skyfall. The Strongest Cultivator in this world and the sole reason why the Skyfall Kingdom stood out as the Strongest Cultivator even though it was ruled by an incompetent King.

(Picture)

“I seek your assistance, Lady Astaria.”

Ricardus spoke in a respectful tone.

His, words, however, did not bring any change to Astaria's expressionless face,

“I do not know what games are you trying to play, Ricardus. Just know that I won't be playing any of this stupid game with you.

Leave.”

“But-”

Ricardus tried to argue, however, he turned silent when Astaria raised her hand.

With her sharp eyes, Astaria glanced at Ricardus, the King stepped back out of instincts and Astaria questioned.

“How do you know that the Emperor of the Solid Earth Kingdom is moving? What is your source?”

“I have not come to you without any proof, Lady Astaria,”

Ricardus then told her about the recent events where Solid Earth Kingdom, the supposedly weakest Kingdom defeated the Woods Dynasty one-sidedly. He also told her about how Ember, the General of the Woods Dynasty left the Dynasty.

“General Ember was not a Coward, Lady Astaria. If she left, there must be a reason, however, when I brought up this topic while talking to the Dynast of the Wood Dynasty, he tried to change the topic.

His behavior was strange, therefore, I decided to investigate.

I had some people sneak into Woods Army, my people then had a talk with Deputy General named Lawrence, he was General Ember's closest subordinate.

Thinking that he would know why General Ember left, I sent my subordinate to talk to him.

He told me that General Ember found out how the Emperor of the Solid Earth Kingdom was involving himself in this war, she reported this to the Dynast and asked for his assistance, however, the Dynast refused, forcing her to leave.”

The King reported everything.

“And the random Deputy General knew about the existence of an Emperor? You think I am a fool?”

Astaria narrowed her eyes.

“He was not a random Deputy General, he was General Ember’s clo-”

Ricardus tried to argue, however, again, Astaria raised her hand and ordered,

“Enough.

An Emperor will never move unless his or her country is in danger.

Come to me when you actually see the Emperor with your own eyes.

Don’t be fooled by any random Grand Master Stage Cultivator.

Now Leave.”

After saying those words, Astaria closed her eyes, signaling that she would not hear anything else.

Ricardus didn’t know what to do...

‘I would die if I see him with my own eyes...’

He thought inwardly, however, he knew saying anything else was useless, therefore, he decided to walk out and think of something else.

‘I need solid proof.’

With that thought in mind, he walked out of Astaria's room.

However, as soon as he walked out of the room, Keeve, who was waiting for him outside bowed his head.

For more chapters, please visit

“Your Highness, this is bad.”

“What happened?”

Ricardus frowned, it was very unusual for Keeve to act like this.

“Third Prince Lovis was assassinated! The Suspects are Second Princess Evane!”

“WHAT!?”

Ricardus's eyes widened in surprise.

Inside Astaria's room, Astaria, who had closed her eyes, opened them again when she heard Keeve's words. She sneered.

“Killing her own Brother, heh, Ricardus, I expected nothing less from your children.”

Then, her eyes shined with curiosity,

“I would like to see how you would handle things, Ricardus.”

Saying those words, Astaria stood up.

Yes, she had decided to come out.

Astaria walked out of her room, seeing her coming out, Ricardus and Keeve's eyes widened in surprise, Keeve quickly fell on his knee and greeted her respectfully.

“Dowager.”

Astaria, however, narrowed her eyes, hatred was clear in her eyes.

“Do not call me that.”

Keeve momentarily glanced at Ricardus and then greeted her again,

“Lady Astaria.”

“Much better.”

Astaria nodded her head, she then turned her head towards Ricardus and questioned with a curious look on her face,

“I heard your daughter killed your son, how are you going to punish her, Ricardus? I am sure, you, as a just king already have thought about this, haven't you?”

“Lady Astaria, Evane is just a suspect right now, we don't know if she is actually the Killer or not.”

Keeve spoke up as well, “That is correct, Lady Astaria. Although she is the prime suspect, that is only because the two of them were together last night when they were attacked.

To be honest, she is more of a victim than a suspect.”

A frown appeared on Astaria's face.

“They were attacked?”

“Yes, we have found 6 assassins' bodies in Second Princess's room, the room where The Third Prince and Second Princess were in last night.”

Keeve reported.

“6 Assassins entered the Royal Palace and attacked Second Princess and Third Prince?”

Astaria raised her eyebrows.

Ricardus turned away.

“Lady Astaria, we needed our men to investigate the Solid Earth Kingdom and Woods Dynasty, therefore, the Palace’s defense was compensated.”

Hearing that, Astaria sneered,

“They really found a perfect time to attack, didn’t they?”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Keeve and Ricardus didn’t say anything.

“Call the Second Princess, I need to talk to her.”

Astaria ordered.

# Chapter 445

“Reeve, you have to help me.”

On the other hand, Kelton, who was already panicked because of Amaya’s sudden disappearance, decided to talk to Reeve.

Just like Keeve, Reeve was one of the leaders of the Shadow Unit that is loyal only to the King. He was also a King Stage Cultivator and unlike Keeve, who involved himself in different matters and even takes missions from the King, Reeve’s only responsibility was to protect the King.

In others’ eyes, Keeve was the King’s strongest subordinate, however, in truth, Reeve was even stronger than Keeve, he just didn’t show himself in front.

Not many people knew about him, even the Ministers of the Royal Palace didn’t.

Kelton, however, was of course different than others, as Amaya’s subordinate, he knew many things that normal people didn’t know.

“I owed you a favor, that is why I came here when you called me, however, what you are asking is impossible, as you know, other than the King’s security, I do not handle anything, Keeve does.

However, even if you ask him, I can assure you that he wouldn’t be able to help you much.

You have to know, Kelton, A Prince has died.

We need to find the culprit as soon as we can, I am sorry to say this, but we cannot waste our time on Consort Amaya.

And you know Consort Amaya, do you not? This whole blood in her room and her being missing might be one of her normal plays.”

“It is not!”

Kelton, however, was sure.

“You have to believe me, this is not a play, Lady Amaya is actually missing! She might be in danger!”

Reeve shook his head.

“I cannot do anything, Kelton. Lady Amaya is just a consort, Prince Lovis is the Third Prince, someone who could have very well become the next King of the Kingdom. We need to investigate this first, only after this investigation is completed would we shift to Consort Amaya.”

Kelton clenched his fist in anger.

In the end, he didn't say anything and turned around.

With a determined look on his face, he decided.

‘I will investigate everything on my own.’

With this thought in his mind, he returned to Amaya's room.

He then saw the blood trail and walked towards the window. Then, he jumped out.

After looking around a little, he noticed more blood on the ground.

A large splatter.

Obviously from the impact of jumping out of the window.

‘It was most probably Lady Amaya.’

Kelton thought inwardly and followed the blood trail again.

While following the Blood Trail, he soon appeared in front of Palace Waals, there, he noticed a bloody handprint on the edge of the wall.

‘She was trying to climb up.’

Kelton noted.

He did what Amaya did and climbed, then, he jumped out of the Royal Palace.

Many soldiers noticed him doing all this, however, he didn’t care.

Nothing else mattered.

He could already imagine what had happened.

Lady Amaya was attacked by the assassins, the assassins underestimated her because she couldn’t move, however, luckily, Lady Amaya must have gained her hours of freedom right when she was attacked.

Then somehow, she must have stopped her opponents, and using this chance, she must have run away.

However, while doing all that, she was injured and bleeding, the assassin didn’t even give her a chance to drink a healing potion and continued to chase after her.

Just thinking about all this made him boil in rage.

Kelton then looked around, trying to find the blood trail, however, this time, he was not able to find anything.

For more chapters, please visit

He frowned,

‘Was she caught here?’

However, he then shook his head.

‘If she was caught here, there should have been more marks on the walls, not just a simple handprint.’

Kelton thought inwardly and started looking around again, in the second search he finally realized why he couldn't see any more blood.

The trail was wiped out.

If it was someone else, they would be out of options, however, Kelton decided to follow this 'wiped out trail', it was a little difficult, however, for someone like him, it wasn't that hard.

Kelton followed the trail and after walking for a while, he noticed that the signs of wiping away were too strong on the ground. He frowned, then, he crouched and started digging.

He didn't need to dig for long, 2 seconds later, red sand appeared.

Kelton's face turned solemn.

For the sand to get red, the blood fallen on this ground must have been too much and it must have been fresh.

Kelton looked around and his face turned even more solemn when he noticed that there was no more blood trail after this. Not even the 'wiping out' marks were there.

Lots of blood, no more blood trails,

This could only mean one thing,

There was a high probability that Lady Amaya was captured here.

Kelton looked around, trying to find something that would go against his assumption, however, his eyes then fell on a tree.

The sand under that tree was a bit strange.

Kelton rushed towards the tree and started digging the sand, soon, the sand turned black.

Something was burned here.

Kelton's entire body trembled.

He assumed the worst-case scenario.

However, somewhere in his mind, he hoped that he was wrong.

To fulfill that hope, he had to investigate more.

Soon, a few documents appeared in his hand, he didn't waste any time, he sat on the ground and started searching through the documents.

5 minutes later, he finally found what he was looking for.

Night Guard's schedule.

He started searching and soon, he figured out the names of the guards who might have seen Lady Amaya last night.

Soon, more documents appeared in front of him and he started skimming through them.

An hour later, Kelton already had the addresses of all the guards and the next moment, he had already rushed towards the first guard's house.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

He knocked on the guard's door aggressively.

A few seconds later, a woman opened the door,

“Yes?”

“Is Jimmy Decker inside?”

Kelton questioned.

“Yes, who are you?”

The woman answered.

“I need to talk to him.”

# Chapter 446

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

A guard knocked on Evane's new room, her last room was currently under investigation, also, with all that blood flowing around, Evane didn't wish to stay there a second longer, therefore, a new room was arranged for her.

"Come in."

A few seconds later, the guard heard Evane's order, he then walked into her room and saw Evane sitting on her chair with an expressionless face, and beside her stood her mysterious bodyguard. The guard didn't really care about anything and after a respectful bow, he told why he was there,

"Second Princess, the Dowager summons you to the Royal Hall."

Without any change in her expression, Evane nodded and,

"I will be there soon. You can leave."

The Guard nodded, and after another bow, he left.

"Heh, she is finally out."

Evane smiled.

Nux narrowed her eyes, "You know that you do not have to go, right?"

"Do I really have any other option? The Dowager herself has summoned me, plus, don't you wish to meet her as well?"

"I do wish to meet her, however, you are much more important to me right now. As long as you are not completely fine, I do not wish to do anything." Nux was honest.

Evane chuckled, “I am fine, don’t worry.”

Nux didn’t know what to say.

Yesterday night was too much for Evane, she had seen too much blood, she killed a human for the first time in her life, she was betrayed by the brother she trusted so much, and worse of all, she killed her brother with her own hands.

There is no way she wasn’t affected by it.

However, Evane continued to act as if nothing happened, and this worried Nux.

He talked about this with his wives, however, they didn’t have any solution. Even Amaya didn’t say anything.

Evane has to deal with it on her own.

This was the only thing they said.

“So? Do you want to come with me?”

While Nux was busy thinking about all this, Evane questioned.

“There is a high chance that she will see through your cultivation if you come.” Evane continued.

“I know.”

Seeing that she was still not talking about last night and was trying to avoid it, Nux did the same.

He will give her the time she needs.

Thinking about that, Nux continued,

“She will probably figure out my actual cultivation, however, this is the best chance for me to observe her as well. I can’t use [Conceal] around her,

getting caught while sneaking around is much more dangerous than directly meeting her.

I am willing to take this risk.”

“Alright then, follow me, my bodyguard~”

A playful smile appeared on Evane’s face.

Although he didn’t like that forced smile on Evane’s face, Nux still smiled back,

“As you command, Second Princess.”

Evane started walking, and Nux followed behind her. While walking, a serious look appeared on Evane’s face and she questioned,

“You remember what happened yesterday, correct?”

“Mhm, don’t worry.”

Nux nodded.

Evane nodded back and then, the two of them entered the Royal Hall.

This was Nux’s first time here, he looked around with a curious look on his face, first, his eyes fell on the 4 ministers sitting on either side of the Throne, however, they all were only Expert Stage Cultivators, he wasn’t trying to be overconfident, however, for the current him, Expert Stage wasn’t worth mentioning, therefore, he ignored them and then his eyes fell on the King,

[Name: Ricardus Skyfall.]

[Age: 231]

[Mana Cultivation: King.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Race: Human]

[Occupation: The King of the Skyfall Kingdom]

[Talent: High]

[LVL: 64]

[HP: 740/740]

[MP: 1440/1440]

[STR: 71]

For more chapters, please visit

[AGL: 78]

[VIT: 74]

[STM: 71]

[INT: 144]

[DEF: 62]

...

‘Hmm, nothing special.’

That was Nux’s first thought. He then looked around and then his eyes fell on Keeve,

‘Ah, I have seen him before.’

Nux recalled, he continued to look around, he saw there were 10 members of the Shadow Unit in this Hall, 3 of them, including Keeve, were King Stage Cultivators and the rest were all Expert Stage Cultivators.

Seeing this, a smile appeared on Nux's face,

'The Royal Family is stronger than I thought.'

If anyone heard how strong the Shadow Unit actually is, they would simply tremble from fear, Nux, however, was different. Even if all these come at him together, he was sure that he could deal with them.

However, he also knew that this wasn't the Royal Family's main power.

The interesting thing to note was that the King was not sitting on the Throne.

He was sitting on the seat below the Throne.

On the Throne sat a black-haired woman that had a suffocating aura around her.

The moment Nux's eyes fell on the woman, his danger senses kicked in, this woman was dangerous, and he could feel it.

He didn't need [Eye Of Discerning] to tell who she was.

She was Astaria Skyfall, the strongest being in this world.

Nux took a deep breath, his golden eyes then shined and soon, Astaria's information appeared in front of him.

[Name: Astaria Skyfall.]

[Age: 318]

[Mana Cultivation: Emperor.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Race: Human]

[Occupation: Dowager of the Skyfall Kingdom.]

[Talent: Exceptional]

[LVL: 70]

‘Huh? What?’

Nux frowned.

‘That’s it?’

He couldn’t understand.

Why couldn’t he see anything?

Name, Age, Cultivation, Race, Occupation, Talent, and Level?

Why is there only irrelevant information? Where is the rest?

What about her MP, her HP, her STR, her main stats? Why couldn’t he see them?

What happened?

“Hmmm?”

While Nux was busy analyzing her, Astaria, who wanted to meet Evane quickly ignored her as her eyes fell on someone much more interesting than whatever was going on here.

Yes, her eyes fell on Nux.

And soon, a question popped up in her mind.

“Second Princess Evane.”

She called out.

“Y-Yes, Dowager.”

Evane replied.

If it was any other situation, Astaria would have frowned and would have told Evane not to call her that, however, right now, she wasn't even actually looking at Evane.

With her eyes still stuck on Nux, she questioned.

“Why is a King Stage Cultivator following you as your servant?”

# Chapter 447

“Why is a King Stage Cultivator following you as your servant?”

“Huh!?”

“WHAT!?”

Hearing that question, the Four Ministers, the King, and the Members of the Shadow Unit widened their eyes in surprise.

“King Stage!? Isn’t he just a Grand Master Stage Cultivator!?”

The King couldn’t control himself and questioned.

Astaria, however, completely ignored him and continued to observe Nux with a curious look on her face.

Nux, who was still trying to figure out why his System wasn’t showing Astaria’s status properly quickly came out of his reverie when he felt Astaria’s gaze piercing his entire body as if it was a sharp arrow.

Unconsciously, he stepped back.

‘Maybe coming here was not as good of an idea as I thought it was...’

Nux was even regretting it a little now.

However, unlike him, Astaria was enjoying this a lot.

After so many decades, she finally found something worthwhile, Nux was like the most delicious chicken in her eyes.

“You are hiding too many secrets, boy.”

Astaria commented.

“ ... ”

Nux didn't say anything and continued to look at her.

Seeing her looking at him like that, he felt that he couldn't hide anything from those sharp, intimidating eyes,

“Tell me, boy, why is a King Stage Cultivator like you following a mere Expert Stage Cultivator like a servant?”

Astaria questioned.

“ ... ”

Nux, however, didn't answer.

Astaria frowned, however, she didn't mind, she had way too many questions in her mind, and Nux will obviously answer one of them,

Right?

“How did you hide your Cultivation from everyone? Why am I the only one who can see through your real Cultivation?”

“ ... ”

Again, Nux didn't answer.

There were too many people around.

Also, Astaria wasn't exactly an ally.

“How old are you boy? I am sure you are not any older than 50, but I still want to know your exact age.”

Astaria asked another question.

“WHAT!?”

“A less than 50-year-old King Stage Cultivator!? What kind of absurd talent is that!?”

The others present in the Royal Hall received another shock.

Nux on the other hand, was now actually regretting his decision of coming here.

His Cultivation was alright, but how did she determine his age? Also, shouldn't she focus on Lovis who was killed by assassins? What about the missing Consort that was most probably assassinated?

Aren't there many more important topics to talk about other than a normal servant?

Nux realized it.

He was too careless. He should have waited for a better opportunity to use [Eye of Discerning] on an Emperor Stage Cultivator,

Not that it actually helped with anything at all.

A complete waste.

“You aren't really answering any of my questions, boy.”

Suddenly, Astaria commented, she then narrowed her eyes and questioned.

“Do you think I won't do anything even if you ignore me like that?”

Suddenly, the calm and silent atmosphere turned heavy, and everyone could feel a suffocating aura around them.

For more chapters, please visit

\*Cough\*

Suddenly, Nux coughed blood.

“NUX!”

Evane shouted in worry, however, just as she was about to rush toward him, she realized that she couldn't move.

Something was restricting her movement.

On the other hand, Nux felt as if a whole mountain was placed on her head, trying to crush him, forcing him to kneel, Nux, however, didn't kneel.

He glanced at Astaria who was looking at him with a curious look on her face, a sword appeared in his hand, he pierced his sword into the floor and using it as a support, he continued to stand and glanced at Astaria.

Seeing this, a smile appeared on Astaria's face. She placed her right leg on top of her left and smiled,

Suddenly, the pressure around Nux increased dramatically,

His eyes widened in surprise and,

\*Crack\* \*Crack\*

“AGGghhhhhh!!”

He howled in pain.

Both his left and right leg bones were broken, and his body was trembling in pain, however, he still continued to stand.

Impressed, Astaria tried to increase the pressure, however, suddenly, Evane appeared in front of Nux and glared at Astaria.

“You do not have any right to hurt my man!”

She shouted in rage.

Astaria frowned.

How did she break through her restriction?

Was she too focused on the boy that she completely forgot about this girl?

Ah, that must be it.

“Hmm? Right? Why would I need something like that?”

Astaria smiled and then suddenly, she narrowed her eyes,

“And talking about right, what right do you have to question what I am doing?”

“As the next ruler of this Kingdom, I have the right to question anything I want.”

Evane didn't back down and spoke in a determined tone.

Her words not only surprised the King and the Ministers but even Nux.

“Hoh? The next Ruler? From what I have heard, the Crown Prince hasn't been announced yet, what makes you so sure that you will become the next Ruler of this Kingdom?”

Astaria questioned with a curious look on her face.

“Do you have any other options besides me?”

Evane questioned back.

“What? Are you going to choose a man who hired assassins to get rid of his own brother and sister?”

“What do you mean?” Astaria narrowed her eyes.

“It was Raguel, the First Prince who sent assassins to kill me and Lovis,” Evane replied.

“Do you have any proof to support your argument?” Astaria questioned.

“There were no servants around my room when I was attacked, this means that the attack was preplanned. Not only that, the attack was planned by someone who has the power to move servants around the Palace.

Who do you think has that much power? It was obviously a Duke.

Duke Centho, Duke Vestalis, and Duke Merula have no reason, the only one left is Duke Fulvianus.

Who has connections to Duke Fulvianus? It is the First Prince.

Who will have the most to gain if I and Lovis are killed? It is the First Prince.”

Then, a letter appeared in Evane’s hand,

“Not only that, Lovis received this letter with my fake stamp on it, calling him into my room in the middle of the night. If I was the one who sent this message, why would I use a fake stamp? It was clearly sent by the killer.

The First Prince has the power and influence to pull all this off, not only that, but he also has the motive,

The Culprit has to be the First Prince.”

# Chapter 448 - Sounds Like You Really Loved Your Brother.

“The Culprit has to be the First Prince.”

Evane spoke with a confident look on her face and at the same time, she supported Nux and gave him a Healing Potion.

Hearing her words, Astaria chuckled,

“Did you really think you could skip the main part so easily?”

Evane’s face turned solemn, and Nux had a similar reaction.

‘Shit.’

He cursed inwardly.

‘Get ready.’

He then heard Evane’s solemn voice.

His eyes then fell on Evane and he noticed that she had turned her back towards him, making it easier for him to stab her from behind.

Of course, he was still reluctant to do so.

And as if she had sensed it, Evane spoke,

‘We have already talked about this Nux. You will run away the moment something is wrong.’

‘Yes, I know.’

Nux nodded.

‘Then get ready.’

Evane spoke.

Nux then clenched his fist and just as he was about to take out his dagger from his storage ring, Astaria spoke.

” ‘Duke Centho, Duke Vestalis, and Duke Merula have no reason, the only one left is Duke Fulvianus,’ this is what you said, did you really think that giving out more proves against the First Prince would bury your statement?’”

“Huh?”

This time, Evane frowned in confusion.

“This cheap trick will not work, Evane. Explain yourself.

Duke Merula and Duke Vestalis I understand, they are yours and the Third Prince’s and your Grandfathers, but what is stopping Duke Centho to attack you two?”

Astaria questioned.

‘Ah, so that’s what she was talking about.’

Nux and Evane sighed in relief, a serious look then appeared on Evane’s face and she continued with her script.

“Duke Centho and Duke Merula already had a deal. Rather than supporting Lucas, who did not have a very high chance of sitting on the Throne, Duke Centho decided to support Lovis. It doesn’t make sense for him to go after someone who carries all his hopes.”

Hearing her words, the Ministers and King frowned and glanced at Ministers from Centho and Merula families, the two ministers, however, didn’t show any reactions. Presley Merula, however, glanced at Evane and wondered inwardly,

‘How does she know about that?’

Astaria wasn’t a least bit interested in the Ministers, she just questioned Evane.

“And do you have any proof of your claim?”

“Of course not. There is no way Duke Merula and Duke Centho would allow me to keep the proof for something so confidential, this matter was related to Lovis’s life after all.

However, I am sure if you investigate on your own name, you will definitely find something.”

Evane replied.

“Alright, let’s assume that what you say is true, doesn’t this practically ensure Lovis’s position as the next King of the Kingdom? This is definitely something that would bother you, wouldn’t it?

What if you were the one who killed him?”

Astaria questioned.

For more chapters, please visit

“I wouldn’t have made it so obvious if I wanted to kill him.”

“What do you mean?”

“Why would I use a fake stamp? Although it didn’t, however, there was a very high chance that Lovis might realize that the stamp is fake and might not come, I wouldn’t take such a stupid risk after arranging everything.

Also, I never said I wanted to be the ruler. Rather, I wanted to support Lovis, I even talked with my Grandfather, although the talks were yet to be concluded.”

“WHAT!?”

“Then the Third Prince would have had 3 Dukes supporting him! Who could have defeated him!?”

The people in the hall couldn't control themselves and exclaimed out loud.

Astaria, however, remained calm,

“Are you saying that you do not wish to become the next ruler?”

“At first, yes, I did not.”

Evane nodded.

“At first?” Astaria raised her brow.

“After my brother was assassinated, I made up my mind. No matter what happens, I would not let that Raguel sit on the Throne.”

Evane spoke with a solemn look on her face, her solemn look then turned into an angry one and she clenched her fist.

“He killed my brother for the Throne, now I will take that Throne away from him.

I know that Lucas is not suitable to be the next king, therefore, as the only eligible heir, I had to step forward.”

Then, a chilling smile appeared on Evane's face and she commented.

“I can definitely sacrifice this much in order to get my revenge.”

“...”

The King narrowed his eyes,

‘You want to Throne for you petty Revenge?’

He wanted to ask, however, he knew that right now, he couldn't ask anything.

Astaria was in control right now.

“Sounds like you really loved your brother.”

“...”

For a while, Evane didn't say anything.

Many scenes played in her mind, scenes where she and Lovis played together as children, the scenes where the two of them drank together, the scenes where the two of them laughed together, however, soon, that scene was replaced by the scene where Nux grabbed Lovis's hand that was about to stab a poisonous dagger in her back.

Her eyes glistened up, however, she then took a deep breath and an emotionless look appeared on her face,

“Yes, I did. He and I were close.”

Astaria completely ignored all the changes in Evane's expression and only focused on her words. In truth, living in the Royal Palace for so long had made her numb, even though the woman in front of her was her granddaughter, and from the looks on it, it looked like her granddaughter was about to cry,

She still didn't care.

Heck, for all she knew, she might be acting right now and truth be told, Astaria actually believed that Evane was indeed acting and was actually the one who killed Lovis.

“Then what about him? He was there with you when you two were attacked right? As a King Stage CULTivaor, he could have easily defeated all the assassins on his own.

If you loved your brother so deeply, why didn't you order him to kill all the assassins?

It should have been an easy fight with him around, now?”

Astaria questioned.

# Chapter 449 - Absolutely Not.

“If you loved your brother so deeply, why didn’t you order him to kill all the assassins?”

It should have been an easy fight with him around, now?”

Astaria questioned.

Hearing her questions, the Ministers and even the King frowned.

Yes, with a King Stage Cultivator with them, this battle should not have been difficult at all. In truth, Evane’s bodyguard could have dealt with all the assassins alone, Lovis and his butler shouldn’t have died.

It was now clear, Evane was lying.

Every eye fell on her.

Evane trembled, not because she was nervous, but because of anger.

She clenched her fist and spoke with a cold expression,

“It was because of that bastard butler of his.”

“What do you mean?”

Astaria frowned.

“Leo, Lovis’s Butler betrayed Lovis.”

Evane continued to explain.

“We were attacked by 2 Expert Stage Cultivators and 4 Grand Master Stage Cultivators, at that moment, my bodyguard was still a normal Grand Master Stage Cultivator.

I wasn't planning on revealing my trump card unless it was absolutely necessary."

Evane explained and a few people nodded.

That was something they might have done as well.

"The battle started, I and my guard were fighting 1 Expert Stage Cultivator and 3 Grand Master Stage Cultivators, Lovis and Leo, on the other side were fighting 1 Expert Stage and 1 Grand Master Stage Cultivator.

The battle was going fine and we were even winning, if it had continued the way it was going, we would have won, and maybe he was pressured because of this, Leo, Lovis's butler suddenly turned against Lovis, with 2 Expert Stage and 1 Grand Master Stage Cultivators attacking him at the same time, Lovis couldn't hold up and was killed.

In anger, I ordered my guard to kill everyone present there but...

I was too late..."

"..."

The entire hall turned silent.

"You know, the way you are throwing blame on people one after another isn't really supporting your story. It looks like a made-up story."

Astaria commented.

"I agree, Leo would never betray the Third Prince, I can assure you that." Presley Merula, the Minister who came from the Merula household spoke with conviction.

He then glanced at Evane and narrowed his eyes,

"Princess Evane, you can end your fake story now and reveal the truth."

Marlee Vestalis, the Minister from Vestalis Duke House wanted to support Evane, however, she was unable to come up with any argument.

A butler betraying his master...

This wasn't something that happened very often.

Butlers were very loyal, they were trained to be that way.

Especially butlers like Leo, who had stayed with Lovis ever since he was born.

Evane, however, completely ignored everyone and continued,

“Even I was shocked when I saw Leo brandishing his sword against Lovis, that was the reason I lost my control in the first place.

However, now that I think about all this, it all makes sense now.”

“What do you mean?” Presley frowned.

“A few days ago, I made Lovis right something on two papers...”

Evane then explained the Paper incident that happened a few days ago.

“That day, I had my paper with me, however, the paper from Lovis's room was missing. Obviously, that was the paper that was sent to Lucas.

Now Lovis would have never done something like that in the first place and the only person other than him who knew where the paper was, was Leo.

For more chapters, please visit

I think everything started after that day,

Lovis must have started doubting Leo and Leo must have felt it. This is why Leo decided to take this risky step and end all of it together.”

“...wait, Duke Merula did say something about Lovis asking some questions about Leo...” Suddenly, Presley spoke in a doubtful tone. “And it did happen 3 days ago.”

“Yes, that was the time when this happened.”

Evane nodded. With one more person supporting her, her argument got even stronger.

The Entire Hall turned silent and, in this silence, Gibson Fulvianus sweated continuously.

Things weren't looking good for them, he had to do something.

“Lady Astaria.”

He called out.

“What?”

Astaria questioned.

“We need to keep in mind that all of these are mere speculations, we can't be sure about anything. Everything Princess Evane said might be forged.”

Gibson spoke.

“As I said before, with your power, it won't be difficult to reconfirm whatever I said,” Evane answered back.

Gibson snorted and then continued,

“Also, the fact that Princess Evane's servant is a King Stage Cultivator is suspicious itself.

Where did she find him? Why is he serving her? There are too many unanswered questions.”

“I do not think that has any relevance to anything here. The First Prince tried to assassinate his brother and sister and succeeded in killing his brother.

This is a grave crime, we need to focus on that first.”

Evane shot back.

“I agree, we should investigate this matter thoroughly, if The First Prince is actually behind it, then I believe he should be beheaded.”

Although she didn't know many things, Marlee Vestalis could see a future where Evane would become the ruler of this Kingdom. Therefore, even though she herself was suspicious of Nux, she decided to ignore it and turned against the First Prince.

“I agree.”

Presley Merula nodded as well.

He wanted Justice for his Grandson.

If that Bastard Raguel was actually behind it then...

“You bastards! What are you talking about!? This Bastard might be a spy from another Kingdom!”

Gibson pointed at Nux and shouted.

“Oh yeah? A spy is still better than a Prince who has killed his own brother!”

Presley shouted back.

“You Idi-”

Gibson wanted to retort, however,

“Silence.”

A wave of unbelievably powerful pressure was felt and everyone turned silent.

“We will investigate this matter. Evane, you can leave, however,”

Astaria then glanced at Nux and her brown eyes shined,

“He has to stay.”

Evane, however, had a different thought in her mind, she directly picked Nux and spoke,

“Absolutely not.

Because of your stupid stunt when you were testing him, he is injured, I have to tend to his injuries. If you want to talk to him, talk after he is cured.”

Saying that, Evane turned around and with Nux in her arms, she walked away.

# Chapter 450 - The First Prince Was The Culprit.

“Absolutely not. Because of your stupid stunt when you were testing him, he was injured, I have to tend to his injuries. If you want to talk to him, talk after he is cured.”

Evane replied in a cold tone and walked away.

Ricardus took in a cold breath when he heard what his daughter just said.

Acting so arrogant just because you have a chance at becoming the next King?

Even he, who is currently the King never dared to talk to her like that.

He slowly and carefully turned his face towards Astaria and as soon as he saw his face, he returned to his original position with his heart beating loudly.

As expected, Astaria’s face didn’t look good.

“Where do you think you are going?”

She questioned.

Evane, however, didn’t stop and continued to move,

“Didn’t I tell you already, I need to tend to his injury, I don’t have time to waste. You can play your games later.”

Astaria narrowed her eyes,

“Little girl, do you really think I won’t kill you just because you might become the next Ruler?”

Evane turned around, she directly looked into Astaria's sharp eyes and replied,

“Kill me then.”

This time, Astaria narrowed her eyes in confusion.

“I do not fear then, Lady Astaria. The person who has been protecting me all this while is hurt, I need to tend to his wound. You can kill me if you don't like that, however, I am not planning to lose another person close to me.”

“...it is just some broken bones...”

Don't make it something so serious...”

Astaria was somewhat speechless.

“I am a little sensitive, Lady Astaria. Excuse me then.”

Saying that, Evane started moving again.

This time, Astaria didn't stop her either.

Ricardus frowned.

‘She isn't killed yet?’

With a confused look on his face, he turned toward Astaria and his eyes widened in surprise when he saw a small smile on Astaria's face.

‘She is impressed?’

Ricardus couldn't believe it.

Evane managed to impress the Dowager in her first meeting!

Ricardus couldn't help but glance at Evane who was walking away.

Just like him, members of Shadow Unit and all the Ministers observed at Evane as well.

Suddenly, Nux grabbed Evane's gown and she stopped.

Nux then glanced at Astaria and after thinking for a while, he spoke,

“The Solid Earth kingdom, do not ignore it.”

Astaria frowned.

“What do you mean?”

“Herms Lyzander has broken the Treaty.”

Hearing those words, Astaria's eyes widened in surprise.

“How do you know about it?”

She questioned, Nux, however, did not answer and Evane walked away.

After Evane and Nux left, a solemn look appeared on Astaria's face,

‘How did he know his name?’

She couldn't understand.

Not many people knew about Herms's name. Heck, even Ricardus might not know about it.

For more chapters, please visit

Every Kingdom keeps their Emperors a secret, after all.

‘No wait, he said that Herms has broken the Treaty, does that Old Bastard really has the Guts to do that?’

Astaria wondered inwardly.

Ricardus has reported the same thing, she didn't believe him at first, however, with Nux saying the same thing.

Even she had to think about it for a while.

Yes, for some reason, Nux's words had a much stronger impact on her mind than Ricardus's.

Astaria had decided.

She would visit the Solid Earth Kingdom and will observe everything on her own.

However, before she does, there were a few things that she wanted to do here.

“Investigate the First Prince, see if he has any hand in the fake letter that was sent to the Third Prince.”

Hearing this order, Gibson's eyes widened in surprise,

“Lady Astaria, you aren't actually believing that Girl's story, are you!? It is clearly Forged!”

He couldn't help but jump in.

He couldn't let this investigation start.

He was confident of hiding his tracks if it was a normal investigation, even if the King led it himself, he would have a chance at hiding his tracks, however, if Lady Astaria leads this investigation, there is no way he would be able to hide anything.

That woman has no restraints at all!

“Why do you look so scared, Minster Gibson?” Astaria narrowed her eyes and questioned with an amused look on her face.

However, before Gibson could answer, someone else did.

“He is scared because the First Prince, his Grandson, is indeed the Culprit.”

Everyone in the hall turned toward the voice,

“Who are you?”

Astaria questioned the man who had entered with two guards following behind him.

The man kneeled and introduced himself,

“Lady Astaria, I am Kelton Ackerg, I am Lady Amaya Skyfall’s butler. Yesterday, just like the Third Prince and Second Princess, my lady was attacked as well.”

While he was saying all this, anyone could see that his eyes were bloodshot and his eyelids were puffed, it was clear that he was crying.

Soon, however, his eyes got even redder, then with anger and hatred, he glared at Gibson and continued,

“I investigated the attack myself and found that the one behind the attack was the First Prince.”

“BUL-”

Gibson wanted to interrupt, however, before he could, Kelton pointed at the guards behind him and spoke.

“These are the guards who were on night duty yesterday, Lady Amaya, who was trying to run away from those assassins met them, and a few other guards yesterday.

Tell them what you saw.”

Kelton ordered.

“We saw Lady Amaya running away, there was a dagger that had pierced her thigh and Blood was continuously coming out of there.

She couldn't even move properly, however, she still continued to run.

We rushed towards her when we saw her, however, she told us to go away since she feared that the assassins might kill us, the only witnesses as well.”

‘As well’

These two words meant a lot.

“ ...”

The entire hall turned silent.

“What did Lady Amaya say to you?”

Kelton, who could barely control his tears, questioned.

“She told us that the one behind this attack was Raguel, the First Prince.”

# Chapter 451 - Stay Within Your Boundaries.

“She told us that the one behind this attack was Raguel, the First Prince.”

The Guard revealed.

“LIES! They are lying. Hey, you! What is your name? Do you know how grave the consequences of lying inside the Royal Hall are? Your whole family will be implicated in this.”

Gibson shouted and pointed at the guard who came with Kelton.

“Of course! More than 10 guards are lying at the same time, aren't they?”

Kelton laughed angrily.

“Hmph! It isn't very hard to bribe them, is it?”

Gibson shot back.

Kelton couldn't believe what he was hearing.

To think he would try to deny his claims so shamelessly!

This is just absurd!

No, actually, it was not that absurd.

If Kelton was right in his mind, he would have already expected this, however, after talking to the guards and learning about the condition Amaya was in, he couldn't control his emotions.

How could Amaya, who is comparable to a normal mortal, run from the pursuit of 5 Grand Master Stage Cultivators with an injured leg?

She was caught.

Although Kelton didn't want to believe it, this was the truth.

Once he concluded that, he was overwhelmed with grief, his grief then turned into anger which was now directed at Gibson.

“What? Staying Silent because I caught your act and exposed you? Hmph! I knew you were lying.”

Gibson snorted.

This time, Kelton couldn't control himself and,

“AAgghhhh!!”

He dashed towards Gibson in anger, trying to kill the man in front of him and even forgetting that the man he was targeting was actually stronger than him.

Gibson was more than happy to clash fists with him.

First, it would empower his argument, ‘Kelton couldn't lie anymore, so he decided to use force’

Secondly, he would be able to silence this man in front of him.

It would only be called self defense after all.

How would he know that the man in front of him would be so weak that he died in just one attack?

This was perfect.

A small smile appeared on Gibson's face.

Soon, however, his smile disappeared and his face paled as a suffocating aura overwhelmed his entire body and his movement paused.

“ ... ”

He glanced towards a Throne and sure enough, Astaria was looking at them with an emotionless look on her face.

“To dare fight in front of me, you two sure are gutsy.”

“ ... ”

Gibson turned silent.

Kelton, however, was different.

“I attacked because he is lying! That bastard Raguel was the one behind this attack! And this bastard must be the one who helped him! That’s why he is defending him so hard! Lady Astaria, you have to believe me! Raguel, no not him, but the entire Fulvanus house must be behi-akkk”

Kelton shouted, however, suddenly, the pressure surrounding his body increased and he fell down.

This time, he was forced to stay silent.

“I have heard what you said, Kelton. I want you to tell me about the entire process and I will investigate the whole thing on my own.”

For more chapters, please visit

Astaria spoke in a calm tone and at the same time, she lowered the pressure on Kelton, allowing him to speak.

“What is there to investigate? I am telling you who the culprit is right now! Why would you lengthen the proc-Ugghhh!!”

Suddenly, the pressure around Kelton increased dramatically.

\*Crack\* \*Crack\* \*Crack\*

“AGGGHHhhhHH!!”

Kelton couldn't take the pressure anymore and he screamed in agony.

'Now this is a normal reaction.'

Inwardly, Astaria sighed.

The pressure she used against that boy was countless times stronger than what she was doing now, however, the boy didn't even fall down, let alone scream in pain.

Astaria had to give her all just to pressure him and all it did was break that boy's leg, a normal King Stage Cultivator would have turned into meat paste a lot sooner.

That is just how scary an Emperor is.

Astaria just didn't know what kind of little monster she faced today.

Thinking about it, a small smile appeared on Astaria's face, however, when her eyes fell on Kelton, who was screaming in pain, a serious look appeared on her face. She reduced the pressure on Kelton and spoke.

"Stay within your boundaries."

Whether he was right or wrong didn't matter, there is no way Astaria would allow him to shout like that. This was the Royal Hall, everyone must stay within his or her limit. This was not a place anyone can take lightly.

"..."

Kelton turned silent.

Astaria wasn't someone he could offend. Not until he has taken his revenge.

Seeing that he had calmed down, Astaria explained,

"What Gibson said was not wrong either, the evidence you provided could be easily forged and since this is a sensitive topic, I can't take any rash decisions."

“ ... ”

Kelton didn't say anything.

However, inwardly, he snorted.

'Lady Amaya is not from this Kingdom, that's why you people are not serious about this. Even after I gave all the evidence, you still don't capture that bastard. I need to think of something else.

I can't depend on these selfish bastards. .'

Astaria obviously didn't know what Kelton was thinking and in truth, she didn't care either.

Her guts told her that Kelton was not lying, however, she knew better than anyone to not believe her gut in this situation.

She turned towards Gibson, and seeing the nervous look on his face, she just shook her head.

“Alright, you can leave. The Guards will stay here, I also want the names of the other guards you were talking about.”

Kelton nodded.

“Yes, I will give that list to Keeve, I'll give their guarding schedule along with it as well, through the blood trail, you can notice the direction Lady Amaya ran into. With their Schedule, they would have seen her, I was not lying.”

Astaria nodded.

Kelton nodded back and then after giving a few documents to Keeve, he turned around and left.

Kelton didn't even return to his room, he directly walked out of the Royal Palace.

He had decided.

‘Since these people won’t do anything, I will go to someone who will.’

With this thought in his mind, Kelton started running.

His destination?

The Skadi Kingdom.

# Chapter 452 - The Kiss Healed Me.

‘Hmm hmm, that went better than we thought it would, didn’t it?’

Nux questioned with a small smile on his face.

‘Better my foot.’

Evane, who was carrying Nux in her arms answered with a cold look on her face.

Since there were too many servants around, the two of them were using the connection to talk to each other.

‘Didn’t we already expect that she would try to attack me? However, she only used her Aura, isn’t that better than what we thought?’

Nux questioned.

‘Your legs are broken, you fool. How is that better?’

Evane retorted.

‘Oh C’mon, don’t be so mad, it is not as bad as you think. Everything is fineee~’

Nux shrugged.

‘Heh. It didn’t look very ‘fineee~’ when you were panicking like a little child back there.’

Evane snorted.

‘...’ Nux turned silent. He didn’t know how to answer that.

Well, he couldn’t be blamed either. He was really surprised.

Auras.

He has seen many scary auras.

Ember, the General of the Woods Dynasty has killed and led many, her fierce aura was suffocating and frightening as well. It could overwhelm and intimidate the target, however, it could never hurt someone.

Astaria, however, was different.

Her Aura was so fierce that with just her Aura alone, she was able to break his legs.

And that is when he is a King Stage Body Cultivator, he didn't imagine what would happen if he was just a normal cultivator.

It was frightening.

‘Hmph!’

Evane snorted again.

Seeing that, a teasing smile appeared on Nux's face.

‘Oh hoo~~ Looks like the cold Second Princess is angry~

Hehe~ You looked so badass when you left the Royal Hall~’

‘...’

Evane didn't say anything and just continued to walk.

Nux, however, noticed the slight change in her expression. Seeing that it worked, his smile widened and he continued,

‘Hehe~ ‘Absolutely not. Because of your stupid stunt when you were testing him, he was injured, I have to tend to his injuries. If you want to talk to him, talk after he is cured.’ Oh damn, saying that to the strongest being in the world, Evane, I didn't know you were so badass~

That useless father of yours was gawking at you as if he was seeing a ghost.  
Kukuku~’

This time, Evane couldn’t control herself, her cold expression broke and a small smile appeared on her face.

‘Ohohoho~ You are laughing~’

‘Shut up.’

Evane retorted.

‘Kukuku~’

Nux continued to laugh.

‘My wife is so cute~’

He commented.

‘...’

Again, Evane didn’t say anything, she just increased her speed.

However, anyone who looks at her face would be able to see that slight blush and the smile that she was trying her hardest to hide.

For more chapters, please visit

Nux continued to tease his wife, a minute later, the two of them entered Evane’s room.

Evane placed him on the bed and spoke in worry,

“I will call a medic, stay here for a while, I will be back.”

She then turned around, however, just as she was about to walk away, Nux grabbed her hand.

“Just stay with me, kiss me and I’ll be healed~”

Saying that, Nux moved his lips, expecting a kiss.

Evane, however, just lightly slapped his lips,

“Shut up, stay here like a good boy.”

However, again, just as she was about to go, Nux strengthen his grip.

Evane frowned, suddenly, Nux pulled her towards him, she fell into his bed, Nux then rolled over, and with his target right in front of him, he stole lips.

Evane tried to resist, soon, however, she gave in and kissed him back.

Seeing that she was now responding, Nux continued further and his tongue entered her mouth. Soon, their tongues twirled around each other. Nux then pulled his tongue back, he enjoyed the sensation of her soft lips touching his.

Evane broke the kiss, and after taking a short breath, she moved forward and kissed him again, this time, she was the one who took the initiative, her tongue entered Nux’s mouth and their tongues entangled again.

Evane then broke the kiss and rolled over again. This time, she was on top of Nux, her hair fell near Nux’s face, with their faces close to each other, they continued to look at each other,

“Your legs are completely fine, aren’t they?”

Evane questioned lightly.

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face as he replied, “I told you, didn’t I? Kiss me, and I will be fine~”

Evane then placed her index finger on Nux’s lips, Nux turned silent, he just continued to look into Evane’s green eyes and enjoyed this strange but pleasurable feeling.

“I clearly heard your bones breaking, how did it fine now?”

Evane questioned and at the same time, she moved her finger on Nux’s lower lip, allowing him to speak.

“With your kiss of co-”

Again, Evane placed her finger on his lips.

“I need a proper explanation.”

“Well, I don’t really know, it was painful, but after you gave me the Healing Potion, the regeneration was scarily quick.”

Evane narrowed her eyes.

“Is it related to that new Magic you got?”

She questioned.

“It might be.”

Nux nodded.

The [Regeneration] he received when he became a King Stage Cultivator, well, it was not as useless of an ability as he thought it was at first.

Although it didn’t help him in fighting against an Emperor Stage Cultivator, it still helped him in other ways.

His stamina regenerated quicker than before, what does it mean? More sex of course!

With his scarily high stamina, combined with fast regeneration, he was like a God of Sex!

Ahem, that was not the only use, he could train a lot more.

Even his Mana Regenerated quicker than before, the same went with his HP.

And now, he learned that the [Regeneration] even increased the working speed of the Potion he consumed, and most probably, it would be the same for Mana Potions.

A scary ability indeed.

“Though the Kiss helped as well.”

Nux chuckled.

Evane couldn't hold back and chuckled out loud.

“It should have helped you as well, did it not?”

Suddenly, Nux questioned.

# Chapter 453 - What If L Become The Ruler Of This Kingdom?

“It should have helped you as well, did it not?”

Suddenly, Nux questioned with a slight smile on his face.

“...” Suddenly, Evane turned silent.

Nux then pulled her near him, her breasts touching his chest, their forehead and nose touching each other's, Nux's hands touching Evane's lower back while her hands touched his shoulders.

The two of them could feel each other's breath on their lips and in this position, Nux spoke in a low voice,

“You know you can talk to me when you feel troubled, don't you? You don't have to deal with everything alone. I want you to be a strong Evane like you were back in the Royal Hall, however, it is okay to be weak around someone you love. I will not hurt you.”

This time, there was no playfulness in Nux's voice, his voice was filled with warmth and gentleness.

He started caressing her hair lovingly and questioned,

“Lovis's death still affected you, didn't it?”

“...”

Evane didn't say anything.

Nux didn't force her either, he continued to caress her hair while synchronizing his breathing with hers. He knew that he had to be patient here and he was ready to give as much time as Evane needed.

“...He didn't just die... I was the one who killed him...”

After a long silence, Evane finally said something.

“You didn't do anything wrong.”

Nux's answer was firm.

“But I killed my own brother.”

“A brother who was trying to stab you with a dagger that was laced with poison when you were fighting with your life on the line for him.”

“H-He was wrong... I admit, but he was still my brother.”

“Again, that makes it even worse. Trust me, you didn't kill him, in truth, you saved him. I was saving him for the last, I would have taken a good amount of time to deal with him, his end wouldn't have been so quick and painless. You saved him from endless misery.”

Nux replied and after pulling Evane even close to him, he spoke,

“No one hurts my Evane and survives.”

“...”

Evane turned silent.

Nux sighed, he started caressing her hair again and continued,

“Don't worry, what you did was not wrong, rather, it was a strong move. It proved that you are not the weak woman others think you are. You are someone who can take a hard decision and stick with it.

That is a Quality of a Queen.

You, my Evane, will become an amazing Queen.

A True Queen.”

“It’s painful to become a queen...”

Evane spoke in a weak voice.

“ ... ”

Nux paused.

A weak smile then appeared on his face, he placed Evane’s head on his chest and nodded,

“It is, it is very painful to become a Queen, but don’t worry, I will be here with you. You can share this pain with me. That will ease the pain.”

Hearing Nux’s words and feeling his pats, Evane finally decided to let go, and soon,

Streams of tears fell out of her eyes and she started crying.

Nux closed his eyes and continued to pat her.

Time passed, and under Nux’s gentle pats, Evane fell asleep, seeing that, Nux smiled, he gently wiped her tears, placed her cheeks in Evane’s head and he closed his eyes as well.

...

The next day, Nux woke up from his sleep.

He then turned around and noticed that Evane was looking at him with a small smile on her face.

For more chapters, please visit

“What are you looking at?”

He questioned in a sleepy voice.

“Nothing, I was just looking at you.”

Evane replied with a small smile.

“Heh. You pervert.”

Nux chuckled and at the same time, he yawned.

“I am a pervert indeed. Staying with you for a long time has its downsides.”

Evane commented.

“Oh?”

Nux raised his eyebrow.

“Downsides? What downsides? Sleepless nights? Too much pleasure?”

“Heh.”

Evane chuckled.

Nux started laughing as well.

“Nux.”

Suddenly, Evane called out.

“Yes?”

“Why do you want to become the King?”

Evane questioned with a curious look on his face.

A smile appeared on Nux’s face when he heard that question,

“Teacher Arvina asked me this question earlier, at that time, I didn’t have an answer, saying that I was not mature enough, she sent me to a war.”

“And did you find a reason there?”

Evane questioned.

Nux nodded, “I met a Deputy General named Lawrence there. He actually wanted to follow Ember when she was coming here, however, following Evane would be considered as a betrayal, and since his family still lived in the Woods Dynasty, he couldn’t do what he wanted.

If he was tagged as a ‘traitor’, his family would suffer.

What man would do something like that?

Therefore, to protect his family, he stayed there.”

Nux then glanced at Evane and answered,

“I do not wish to be like that. To be forced to do something I don’t want to, my family being held hostage inside the kingdom they live in, I will not accept that. That is the reason I want to become the King. If I rule this country, I would be able to do whatever I want and my family wouldn’t be targeted by anyone.

Of course, I know all of this is not that simple, however, becoming the King is still better than not becoming one.”

“So you want to become a King because you want to protect your loved ones and want to be free? You don’t want your family to become a hostage, is that right?”

“Yes,”

“Becoming a King and wishing to be free, the two are contradicting, don’t you think?”

Evane questioned.

Nux scratched his head and smiled awkwardly,

“I admit, it is contradicting, but I do not have any other options. Plus, don’t I have you guys? Won’t you guys keep an eye on the Kingdom for me?”

“We will help you, of course, but I have a better plan.”

“Oh? Enlighten me.”

Nux smiled.

“What if I become the Ruler of this Kingdom? That would solve all the problems, won't it?”

# Chapter 454 - First, I Want You To Answer My Question.

“What if I become the Ruler of this Kingdom? That would solve all the problems, won't it?”

Evane glanced at Nux and questioned with a curious look on her face.

Nux sat up and looking into Evane's eyes, he nodded,

“That would be the most ideal outcome, it was also my initial plan, however, since you didn't seem very willing to be the Ruler, I didn't force you.”

“Don't worry, I will become the next Ruler, no, I want to become the next Ruler, help me become one.”

Evane spoke with a solemn look on her face.

Nux narrowed his eyes,

“Why do you want to become the next Ruler?”

“I want to know why everyone craves it so much.”

Evane answered.

“Huh?”

Nux frowned.

That was... a strange reason.

“If someone is willing to kill his own brother or sister for this thing, there has to be something very very very amazing about this throne, right? I want

to know what it is. I want to know what am I missing all these years.”

Nux shook his head,

“There is nothing interesting about it, you are saying this because of Lovis and you kn-.”

“Me becoming the next Ruler is a much better plan than you becoming one.”

Evane interrupted Nux and spoke.

“I have the Skyfall Blood running in my veins, Nux. You, do not. If you become the King, you would have to go against Astaria Skyfall, the strongest being in this world. The plan you currently have is too complicated and depends on many things for its success.

It has too many inconsistencies, it is not a good plan.”

“ ... ”

Nux turned silent.

Evane wasn't wrong, even though it was Amaya who came up with a plan, there were only so many ways to deal with an Emperor Stage Cultivator. Even someone like Amaya couldn't come up with something that is will definitely succeed.

“Nux.” Suddenly, Evane called out.

“Just make me the next ruler, I will be fine, don't worry.”

“Are you sure?”

Nux narrowed his eyes.

“What could possibly go on? Plus, don't I have you with me? There is also Sister Amaya, if I fail to manage anything, I am sure she will help me.”

“ ... ”

Nux fell into deep thought.

“It will be much more convenient, Nux.”

Evane spoke again.

Nux glanced at her, and then, he nodded.

“Alright then.”

After thinking about this for a while, Nux agreed.

“Get ready to rule this kingdom, Queen Evane.”

Evane smiled.

Nux smiled as well.

It was not like he was going anywhere, he would be here to help Evane. Plus, just like Evane said, it would be a lot more convenient than him becoming the next King.

‘Are you awake?’

Suddenly, Nux heard a voice.

‘What happened?’

Nux questioned back.

‘Come here. I need to talk.’

Nux glanced at Evane, she looked at him and smiled,

“Let’s go, shall we?”

“What about that idiot outside?”

Nux questioned back.

“What? Should I knock him out?”

Evane chuckled.

“There are chances that Astaria is keeping an eye on us.”

“Heh, the all-powerful Emperor shouldn't be that free.”

“Whatever.”

Seeing her nonchalant attitude, Nux shrugged as well.

Activating his [Conceal], he walked out of the room and knocked out Reeve, who was keeping an eye on his room.

Since the man wasn't peeking inside the room, Nux decided to go easy on him and was a little gentle.

For more chapters, please visit

Nux then returned, Evane smiled, she activated [Conceal] as well, and then, they left the Royal Palace.

A few minutes later, Nux and Evane were inside the Skyfall Academy, sitting inside Nux's room.

Nux's other wives were here as well.

“So? How was your meeting with the strongest being in the world?”

Amaya questioned with a small smile on her face, at the same time, she walked towards Nux and hugged him, Nux didn't reject, he hugged back and stuck to him like a koala.

Seeing this, the others frowned, Skylia acted the fastest and rushed towards Nux as well.

Soon, Nux was surrounded by his beautiful wives.

‘Heh. Heaven indeed.’

Nux smiled inwardly.

‘I need to make a big bed so that I can sleep with all of them.’

A random thought appeared in his mind.

A thought Edda would definitely like.

“It was not as bad as I thought it would be.”

Nux replied to Amaya’s question.

“Do you think you can defeat her?”

Ember questioned.

“Of course not. If she and I fought, I will be defeated in a single move.”

Nux answered without hesitation.

“...”

Ember turned silent.

That is not something you say so proudly.

She spoke inside her mind.

Thyra had the same thought.

“What if all of us attack her together?”

Suddenly, Felberta questioned.

Except for Evane, all of them were King Stage Cultivators, if they attacked someone together, it would be a nightmare, however,

“There is no chance, Emperor is a different realm.”

Nux shook his head again.

Repeating the same words his women told him in front of them.

“Alright, it is not like we didn’t predict it.”

Amaya spoke.

“Indeed, we predicted it already.”

Nux nodded.

“Mhm, we will continue with the plan.”

Amaya nodded, however, suddenly, Nux interrupted.

“Actually, I think we can make a better plan now.”

“Hmm? What do you mean?”

Amaya frowned.

A smile appeared on Nux’s face, he then glanced at Evane and revealed,

“Evane wants to become the Ruler of this country.”

Amaya narrowed her eyes,

“I am sure you didn’t feel the same way before, then why now? Why so suddenly, what happened?”

She questioned.

Thyra and Ember had a similar question in their minds.

Especially Ember, she could feel it, Evane has changed.

How does she say it...

Her aura...

It was different than before.

“Well, we can discuss about the reason later.”

Suddenly, Nux stepped in.

He then placed Amaya back on the ground and questioned,

“First, I want you to answer my question.”

“What is it?”

“Your Physique. How did you increase its Mastery level so quickly?”

# Chapter 455 - Devouring Mist Is Different.

“Your Physique. How did you increase its Mastery level so quickly?”

Nux questioned.

He was doubtful. When Amaya was fighting with all those assassins, he was looking at everything with his [Sense], and he saw that she used Devouring Mist to Kill all those Grand Master Stage Cultivators.

With just Acquired Level Mastery, she shouldn't be able to do that. She needed Advance Level Mastery over her physique to perform something like that.

Therefore, when Nux saw her today, he used [Eye of Discerning] and,

[Name: Amaya Skyfall ]

[Age: 23]

[Mana Cultivation: King.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Occupation: The leader of the Thousand Information Chamber.]

[Race: Human]

[Physique: Devouring Mist Demon Physique-Advance]

[Talent: King]

[LVL: 61]

[HP: 710/710]

[MP: 1440/1440]

[STR: 68]

[AGL: 74]

[VIT: 71]

[STM: 69]

[INT: 144]

[DEF: 58]

Yes, Amaya had managed to increase the Mastery Level of her Physique in less than a year.

Hearing Nux's question, a proud smile appeared on Amaya's face.

“Hehe~ I was about to tell you that. I had thought of a more romantic way to do it though.”

She pouted.

Nux looked at Amaya, who was sulking like a little child and couldn't help but shake his head with a smile.

‘What a snake.’

‘Attention craving bitch.’

‘Hmph!’

Nux's women, however, just snorted when they saw her acting like that.

Of course, though they were dissatisfied, they didn't interrupt.

They knew it as well, if they were in Amaya's position, they would have done the same thing.

Didn't Thyra take a big advantage and went to another country with Nux alone? Tsk Tsk, what a dream come true.

"Alright alright, I will pretend that I don't know about it, is that alright?"

"It won't be the same."

Amaya shook her head.

"Alright, whatever." Suddenly, she just shrugged, then she looked into Nux's eyes and muttered,

"Nux, I will tell you something very very amazing, however, I need a reward."

"What reward?" Nux questioned.

A big smile appeared on Amaya's face as she glanced at all the women standing in the room.

The women's faces twitched.

Even Ember, who prides herself in being coolheaded was annoyed.

"Come to my room, I'll tell you there."

Amaya spoke.

"Right now?" Nux frowned.

"Of course, the earlier the better. Trust me, it will be worth it."

Nux didn't know what to do,

They were in a meeting, after all.

“Just go, don’t worry.”

Suddenly, Felberta spoke.

Nux turned towards her, he then noticed Thyra who was nodding as well.

Lane, Skyla, and Allura nodded as well.

Nux frowned, suddenly, Amaya grabbed her hand and pulled him away.

In the end, Nux didn’t say anything and walked away with Amaya.

After the two of them left, Skyla walked towards Evane and grabbed her hand.

“???”

Evane tilted her head in confusion.

Skyla just smiled, she then pulled and her made her sit on the bed.

Then, she sat next to her, and with a gentle smile on her face, she questioned.

“Are you okay?”

“What do you mean?”

Evane frowned.

Thyra stepped forward,

“Your brother’s dead, don’t let it affect you.”

“Indeed, don’t keep anything inside you, if you want to share anything, we are here.”

Allura nodded.

For more chapters, please visit

“We are your sisters, after all.” Felberta smiled.

Hearing those words, a smile appeared on Evane’s face.

She then glanced at everyone present inside the room and chuckled,

“Didn’t you guys help me enough already?”

“What do you mean?”

Skyla frowned.

“You gave up on your session time so that Nux can stay with me, didn’t you?”

Evane smiled.

Hearing her answer, a smile appeared on Felberta’s face,

“That is nothing, we can do at least this much for you, can’t we?”

“Indeed.”

The others nodded.

“Of course, you would have to pay us back in the future.”

Edda chuckled.

Evane pouted, “I am still a little down.”

“Don’t worry, we won’t be taking your time.”

Allura placed her hand on top of Evane’s hands and smiled.

Evane smiled back.

“Any time soon.”

Edda completed Allura's sentence and Evane pouted again.

The women laughed.

“Still, remember to talk to us if you need anything, alright?”

Felberta spoke.

“Yes, I will.”

Evane nodded. She could feel it, the family love that she craved, she knew that she could experience that here.

With her sisters.

The women then continued with their conversation.

On the other side, Amaya, who pulled Nux into her room made him sit on the bed and smiled,

“Alright then, let me tell you what I found.”

“Please enlighten me, Lady Amaya.”

Nux bowed dramatically.

Amaya chuckled, then, her expression turned serious and she continued,

“According to the book, the more we used this Devouring Mist, the faster we can increase the Mastery level, correct?”

“Yes, that is the reason you started this whole ‘Curse’ thingy.”

Nux nodded.

“Yes, I wanted to increase my Mastery Level, therefore, I surrounded myself with Devouring Mist. However, something didn't feel right.

The Process was too slow.

It was as if something was missing and since I had a lot of time to think, I started experimenting.”

Nux continued to listen to Amaya’s words attentively.

Amaya then raised her hand, Devouring Mist seeped out of her hand, it then moved towards the nearby Vase and surrounded it.

Soon, the Vase disappeared.

Nux frowned in confusion.

This shouldn’t be possible.

The Devouring Mist is only able to ‘devour’ flesh, Bones, and all that.

It cannot devour just anything.

How did she do it?

“Try to understand The Devouring Mist.”

Suddenly, Amaya spoke.

“Understand?”

Nux frowned in confusion.

“Yes, understand it. Don’t treat it like a simple Ability, only using it and never bothering with anything else. Neither should you treat it like a Skill, training to get better.

Devouring Mist is different.

Understand its Principles.

Understand how it works.

Try to use those principles to your advantage,

Only then would you be able to increase your Mastery.”

“So you are telling me that the method the Book gave us is-”

“It’s useless, too wasteful. It will take ages to improve if you follow it.”

Amaya shrugged.

“...”

Nux turned silent.

He knew Amaya was intelligent, but for her to practically ‘invent’ a whole method.

This is just...

‘Haahh...’

In the end, Nux just sighed.

“Alright, how about you share all the Principles you have learned with me?”

# Chapter 456 - Devouring Mist.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Nux and Amaya continued to stare at each other for 2 minutes straight. In the end, Nux sighed.

“I do not understand anything you just said.”

“It is so simple, how can you not understand, Devouring Mist is Darkness that devours matters, in theory, it could devour anything, however, we are not strong enough to us-”

“Alright, alright, that’s enough.”

Nux raised his hand, and with his other hand, he grabbed his forehead.

“I don’t get it at all.”

Amaya frowned.

Nux was a fool, she knows that.

For him to not understand anything she says...

Something was not right.

“What do you not understand?”

Amaya questioned.

Seeing that she was still trying to help him, Nux smiled,

“Look, I understand everything you say, however, the moment you describe how you actually increased your mastery with them, I blank out. It is as if I am listening to someone without knowing what language they are talking in.

It is extremely complicated.”

“...”

Amaya turned silent and started thinking.

Nux, who had used all his energy fell on the bed, not thinking about anything.

Seeing this, Amaya pouted, she stood up from her chair, climbed on the bed and lay next to Nux with her back facing his chest. She then grabbed his hand and after placing it on her waist, she started thinking again.

Nux didn't say anything either, he tightened his hug around her petite body, his chest touched her back and their legs intertwined together.

In this comfortable position, Nux closed his eyes.

5 minutes later, Amaya spoke,

“Everyone's understanding of the Devouring Mist must unique to them.”

“Hmm? What are you talking about?”

Nux opened his eyes and questioned with a curious look on his face.

“I got it. My understanding of the Devouring Mist can't be passed to you.”

“Why?”

Nux frowned.

“Everyone sees this world in their own different ways, for them, different things might have a different meaning. The same goes for Devouring Mist.

Your views on the Devouring Mist must be different than mine.

That is why you can't understand the connection between the principles I have understood and the way to increase your mastery.

Because if you want to increase your Mastery, you have to understand the principles on your own.”

Amaya explained.

“I somewhat get it...”

Nux nodded.

“So in conclusion, I need to work hard, correct?”

“Indeed.”

“Alright. I'll work hard and understand all the principles there are.

Later.”

With that, Nux closed his eyes.

“You aren't forgetting something, are you?”

Suddenly, Amaya questioned with a seductive smile on her face.

Nux, who had closed his eyes suddenly smiled.

“Ask what you want.”

“Don't you know it already?”

For more chapters, please visit

Amaya smiled seductively, at the same time, she moved her hips and teased Nux's crotch.

“You don't want any foreplay today, do you?”

Nux questioned.

“Nope. I want you to lose control and pounce on me~”

Amaya whispered.

A wide smile appeared on Nux's face, his hand that was on Amaya's waist moved towards her butt, then without wasting any time, he tore open her pants, and lowered her panty, with his other hand, he had already lowered his own pants,

“Remember, you asked for it.”

Saying that, Nux pushed his little brother inside Amaya's cave.

“Annhh~”

A session filled with loud moans and grunts started.

...

2 hours later, Amaya was sleeping in her bed with a satisfied smile on her face, juices were still coming out of her cave and it still felt a little tingly, however, she just crossed her legs, changed her position a little, and continued to sleep.

Seeing this sight, Nux, who has just returned from the bathroom couldn't help but smile.

If it was any other day, he would have walked towards the beautiful woman who sleeping on the bed and would have slept with her, however, today, he didn't do it.

He sat on the ground and crossed his legs.

He then closed his eyes and started ‘comprehending’ the Devouring Mist.

‘Try to imagine the Mist in your mind, try to understand how it works, what it contains, why it does what it does, try to understand everything.’

He then remembered Amaya’s advice and went into deep thought.

Suddenly, he felt a strange feeling of weightlessness washing all over his body.

He frowned and opened his eyes.

‘Hmm?’

His frown deepened.

He wasn’t inside his room. He was inside a strange place, everything around him was black.

Nux remembered this feeling well. It wasn’t his first time in this place, he came here when he increased the Mastery Level of his Physique using Blank Points.

The last time when he was here, he panicked, this time, however, he was much more mature and sensitive.

He could feel it, around him was not darkness.

It was Devouring Mist.

This Place was filled with Devouring Mist.

No, it was better to say that the Devouring Mist has devoured this place altogether.

A scary conclusion but for some reason, Nux felt strangely calm here.

Unlike his last visit, Nux sat down, and with great attention, he continued to observe the Devouring Mist.

He couldn't exactly see anything since everything was so dark, however, since he could still feel the Devouring Mist around him, he felt that he could actually comprehend the principles Amaya was talking about.

Time passed, and Nux stayed in that position for who knows how long.

In the real world, Amaya had woken up as well, a frown appeared on her face when she saw Nux sitting on the floor, covered with devouring Mist.

'Is he trying to copy my method?'

She wondered inwardly.

Soon, however, she shook her head,

'No, it is something different.'

Amaya couldn't point it out, however, she could feel something was different.

Not wanting to disturb him, she silently walked out of the room after cleaning herself.

"Tsk Tsk, I know you wanted a reward, but don't you think this is going too far?"

The moment Amaya walked out of the room, she was surrounded by Nux's wives.

"Yeah, and how are you still walking?"

Edda had a different question in her mind.

"What do you mean?"

Amaya frowned.

"Hmph! You still dare to feign ignorance after staying with Nux for 8 straight hours? Have some shame."

Thyra snorted.

# Chapter 457 - What Do You Think L Should Give Heras A Meeting Gift?

“Hmph! You still dare to feign ignorance after staying with Nux for 8 straight hours? Have some shame.”

Thyra snorted.

“8 Hours?” Amaya frowned.

“Still acting?” Thyra raised her eyebrow.

“No wait...” Ember, however, frowned.

“Edda is right, how are you still walking?”

She questioned and then answered to herself,

“This could only mean one thing, you two did not have sex for 8 hours, did you?”

“Of course not. As much as I want to do that, I know that I would pass out a lot sooner.”

Amaya shook her head.

“Indeed, 8 hours is too much, even for me.”

Edda nodded to herself.

“What were you doing inside then?”

Thyra questioned.

“Where is Nux?”

Evane questioned.

“Well, he...”

Amaya didn't know how to answer, therefore, she just opened the door.

The women peeked into the room and,

“That's... Nux?”

Ember frowned.

“I have seen this before.”

Thyra spoke with a serious look on her face.

“Don't worry, it is not dangerous. On the contrary, it is good for him.”

“How long has he been like this?” Felberta questioned.

“6 hours.”

Amaya answered.

“How is that safe!?”

Thyra shouted.

“I told you, it's safe. He is in control. Just treat it as if he is cultivating and don't disturb him.” Amaya explained.

“Heh, Nux cultivating... feels strange.”

Felberta commented.

“Indeed.”

Lane, who is usually silent nodded as well.

“It’s because we can’t help him anymore.”

Thyra spoke.

Ember’s face turned solemn as well.

“We should cultivate as well.”

Felberta suggested.

“Indeed.”

The women nodded to each other and returned to their rooms.

Except for Amaya...

She just walked back into the room where Nux was cultivating.

“What are you doing?”

However, just as she was about to close the door, Thyra appeared in front of her and questioned with a doubtful look on her face.

“Nothing, I just want to cultivate.”

“But why in his room?”

“It is my room.”

Amaya replied.

Thyra narrowed her eyes, “He is inside, so it is his room for now. You can use his room.”

“I want to stay in the same room as him,” Amaya answered.

“You are not special.” Thyra narrowed her eyes.

“I know, I am just here because it would help me.” Amaya, of course, had an answer.

“What do you mean?”

“You see that Mist? I feel like I can get stronger if I observe it, it is different from the normal Mist.”

And to show that she wasn't lying, Amaya raised her hand, and Devouring Mist seeped out of her hand.

Thyra looked at the two Mist and turned silent.

She then glanced at Amaya's face for a while and,

“You are lucky.”

Saying that, she turned around.

She sensed it, Amaya wasn't lying, and the Mist surrounding Nux was different.

It felt... much more threatening.

For more chapters, please visit

Thyra didn't know much about this, therefore, she decided to step back.

Seeing this, a smile appeared on Amaya's face.

She closed the doors and walked near Nux.

Sitting cross-legged right in front of him, she focused and soon, started comprehending the Mist surrounding Nux.

Others started their respective cultivations as well and the entire mansion turned oddly silent.

...

“You can come in, teacher.”

The next day, Nux, who finally opened his eyes sensed his teacher standing in front of his room.

A second later, Arvina walked into his room.

“Lovely evening to you, teacher.”

Nux smiled.

Arvina smiled, her eyes then fell on Amaya, who was sleeping on Nux’s bed with a smile on her face.

“I can’t believe I am seeing this expression on her face. She usually had an expressionless mask on her face back in the Royal Palace.”

Arvina couldn’t help but comment.

“Mhm, I saw that expression as well, it had its own charm, to be honest, however, this smile suits best on her beautiful face the best.”

Nux smiled as he glanced at Amaya who was sleeping without the care of the world.

“I guess she is relieved because she doesn’t have to return to the Palace anymore,” Arvina spoke.

“She will return soon.” Nux, however, shook his head.

Arvina frowned.

“As the Queen of course.”

“You are ready to become the King, aren’t you?” Arvina smiled.

“No, I am not.” Nux shook his head, then with a smile on his face, he explained.

“The plans have changed, I do not wish to become the King anymore. I just want to stay with my wives and enjoy my time with them.

Plus, I don't really wish to go against that monstrous teacher of yours.”

Hearing him say that, a smile appeared on Arvina's face,

“So she is finally out huh?”

“Indeed.”

Nux nodded.

“So? Did you meet her?” Arvina questioned with a playful smile on her face.

Nux sighed helplessly, “Meet? She even gave me a gift.”

“A Gift? What Gift?” Arvina frowned.

“She broke my legs.”

“...”

Arvina raised her eyebrows.

Nux then told her what happened and after hearing all that, Arvina sighed,

“You are lucky she didn't kill you.”

“Well, I did what you told me to. I won her interest, and with Evane backing me up properly, I survived. It may not look like it, but I thought about it for a long long time before deciding to meet her.”

“And what would you have done if she had insisted on killing you there?”

Arvina narrowed her eyes and questioned.

“I would have run away, of course. Though that would have affected our future plans badly.”

“And how exactly do you plan to run away from an Emperor?”

Arvina questioned.

“I have my ways.” Nux smiled.

“...” Arvina didn’t know what to say.

“Oh right, teacher.”

Nux called out.

“Yes?”

“I am planning to meet her again, what do you think I should give her as a meeting gift?”

Arvina couldn’t believe what she was hearing.

“Do you not value your life anymore?”

“It will be more suspicious if I don’t meet her now. Also, this time, I am planning to be honest with her. So I believe she won’t hurt me.

I don’t wish to become the King any longer, remember?

I am not her enemy.

I am just a person who supports her granddaughter.”

“...”

Arvina didn’t know if she should be impressed or ashamed of her student’s shamelessness.

“C’mon teacher, give me some tips, will you? How do you think I should deal with Lady Astaria?”

“Haahh...”

Arvina sighed.

This would be a long discussion.

# Chapter 458 - We Were Going To Be Honest With Her!?

“These are all the things I could think of.”

Arvina spoke.

“Hm hm.”

Nux nodded.

Seeing him like that, Arvina couldn't help but speak,

“Just... just don't offend her, alright?”

“Of course, you don't have to worry about that.”

Nux replied with a confident look on his face.

Arvina didn't like that confident look at all, however, in the end, she decided to trust her student.

‘Nux? Are you awake?’

Suddenly, Nux heard Evane's voice in his head and he frowned,

‘Hmm? What happened?’

‘Lady Astaria is summoning you. Well, she is actually summoning me, but I think the main reason for that is because she wants to meet you.’

‘Hmm? Didn't we tell her that I was injured?’

Nux frowned.

‘Only your legs were broken, 2 days are more than enough for them to get healed, we can’t keep using this excuse.’

Evane replied and Nux’s frown deepened.

‘2 days?’

‘Hmm?’

Evane frowned as well.

‘Evane, where are you?’

Suddenly, Nux questioned.

‘In the Palace of course.’

‘Why did you return so quickly?’

‘You know I can’t stay out of the Palace for more than a day, right?’

‘More than a day?’

Nux couldn’t understand.

‘What are you talking about?’ Nux questioned.

‘Huh?’

A strange confusion.

“Oh, you finally woke up. I never thought your cultivation session would last for more than 20 hours.”

Suddenly, Amaya, who had just woken up spoke up.

“More than 20 hours?”

Nux frowned.

“Yes, you were sitting cross-legged for more than 20 hours.”

“Wait... does that mean...”

“Yes, you have stayed here for more than a day. Evane had already returned.”

Amaya clarified.

Seeing his confused face, Arvina frowned,

“What happened? Why do you look so confused? It’s pretty normal to lose the Track of time when you are cultivating. This must have happened in the Past as well, didn’t it?”

“Huh? Ah- yes, of course! Of course, it has happened in the past. Hahaha~ I just didn’t expect it to happen right now.”

Nux laughed.

“What are you talking about? It is not something you ‘expect’ to happen. It just happens.” Arvina couldn’t understand.

“Well usually, his control over this is strong, so he rarely loses track of time, also, he has to meet Lady Astaria as well, that’s why he said that he didn’t expect this to happen.”

Amaya smiled.

“Ah, I get it.”

Arvina nodded in understanding.

“Don’t worry, you can tell her what happened. Teacher is not someone who will point at you if you lost track of time during Cultivating. She is not that petty.”

“I understand.”

Nux nodded.

A smile then appeared on his face and he bowed a little,

“Teacher Arvina, I am already late, I don’t think I should make Lady Astaria wait anymore, so I will be taking my leave.”

“Alright. Be careful though.”

“Yes, I will be.”

Nux nodded, he then walked towards Amaya, the two of them shared a light kiss then Nux left the room.

For more chapters, please visit

Then he kissed all of his wives and then disappeared.

The next second, he appeared right in front of Evane and smiled,

“Well, I am back.”

“Finally.” Evane smiled.

“Well, don’t blame me alright, that was my first time ‘Cultivating’, okay?” Nux scratched the back of his head.

“Hahaha~ People would die in shock if they heard a King Stage Cultivator say something like this.” Evane chuckled.

Nux smiled as well.

He understood it well.

His System was a fucking cheat, without it, he was nothing.

‘Oh well, let’s think about all these sentimental things later. I have more important things to do right now.;

Thinking that, Nux took a deep breath, he then turns towards Evane and smiled,

“So? Shall we meet Lady Astaria?”

“Alright.”

Evane smiled, she then lifted her chest and,

“My bodyguard, follow me.”

“As you command, Second Princess.”

Evane and Nux walked out of the room and a few minutes later, they appeared in front of a lavish-looking room.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Evane knocked.

“Enter.” A command was heard.

Evane and Nux nodded at each other and entered. There, they saw a black-haired beauty sitting on a chair with a leisurely expression on her face.

The moment the woman’s eyes fell on the two of them, they brightened,

“Oh ho? You two finally decided to show up, huh?”

Astaria questioned with a smile on her face.

“Greetings, Lady Astaria.”

Evane bowed, and Nux, who was standing behind her bowed as well.

Astaria just shook her head,

“Yeah Yeah, I don’t need any formalities, have a seat.”

Evane sat at the seat Astaria pointed at.

Astaria waited for a while, then she glanced at Nux and spoke,

“Do I have to give you a special invitation? Have a seat.”

“Yes, Lady Astaria.”

Nux sat down as well.

“I investigated what you said a little, and yes, Prince Raguel might actually be the one behind this attack.”

Astaria spoke.

Evane’s face changed, however, there weren’t any major changes in Nux’s expression.

“You don’t seem very surprised.” Astaria glanced at Nux.

“I already knew that. Lady Evane didn’t lie, the proofs would of course support her statement.” Nux shrugged.

After talking with Arvina, he had a better understanding of the woman sitting in front of him and he wanted to use this information as much as he can.

Hearing his answer, a smile appeared on Astaria’s face,

“Alright then, let’s not waste any time on these useless conversations. Let me talk about what I actually called you here for.”

Astaria glanced at Nux and spoke.

Nux looked into her eyes and smiled,

“I am glad that we are on the same page.”

In an instant, the air around the room changed, Evane, who was the main character before now turned into a side character, Astaria completely ignored her presence and shifted her entire focus on Nux.

“Boy, I want you to answer some of my questions and be sure to answer them honestly, your life is at risk here.”

Rather than being intimidated, Nux just smiled and nodded,

“Please ask, Lady Astaria.”

“Why are you helping Evane? You have a bright future ahead of you. You might even reach my level if you try ha- no, scratch that. With your absurdly high talent, you will definitely reach my level in the near future.

Then why bother with something so fruitless, why is someone like you degrading himself to be a servant of someone who will never reach your level, let alone surpass you?”

“Because I love her, of course.”

Nux answered honestly and Evane’s eyes widened in surprise and horror.

‘We were going to be honest with her!?’

# Chapter 459 - L Am Not Your Enemy

“Why to bother with something so fruitless, why is someone like you degrading himself to be a servant of someone who will never reach your level, let alone surpass you?”

Astaria questioned with a solemn look on her face.

“Because I love her, of course.”

Nux answered honestly and Evane’s eyes widened in surprise and horror.

‘We were going to be honest with her!?’

Evane questioned through the telepathic connection. Nux, however, didn’t answer and continued to look at Astaria with a smile on his face.

Astaria narrowed her eyes.

“You love her?”

“I do.”

Nux nodded and to prove his point, he grabbed Evane’s hand.

Evane, who was scared about the consequences was now even more surprised, however, even after that, she didn’t reject him.

She tightened her grip and glanced at Astaria with a determined look on her face.

‘Whatever. If she decides to attack you, you know what to do.’

Evane spoke.

‘Don’t worry.’

Nux replied in a calm voice.

“With my talent, I certainly deserve to be your granddaughter’s hand, right, Lady Astaria?”

Nux questioned.

“ ... ”

Astaria didn’t say anything and just continued to observe the two of them.

Nux was just smiling at her, Evane, however, looked a little scared. However, she wasn’t scared because Nux was lying, she was scared thinking about what her reaction will be. Still, Evane was looking at her with a determined look on her face. Astaria liked that look.

At the very least, she can be sure that her granddaughter actually loves this boy.

However, that was not her concern right now.

“Love huh?”

She spoke,

“What if you only want control over the Throne through her? What if you want to use her as your puppet so you can rule this Kingdom?”

“Heh, why would I do something so pointless if I wanted that? In a few years, I will become an Emperor, the strongest existence in this world.

Once that happens, I can create a Kingdom of my own, why would I work so hard to take control over some other Kingdom?” Nux replied with a smile on his face.

Hearing his answer, Astaria couldn’t help but chuckle,

“Do you really think making your own Kingdom is that simple, boy?”

“Is it not?” Nux tilted his head in confusion.

Astaria smiled,

“If you, as an Emperor, try to create your own Kingdom, your action will be seen as a revolt against the Four Strongest Countries in this world.

Skyfall, Skadi, Solid Earth, and the Woods, all of them would attack you and this includes the Emperors supporting these Kingdoms. There is no way you can go against all these Kingdoms alone.”

“If I become an Emperor, then I can.”

Nux, however, didn't back down.

Astaria narrowed her eyes.

For more chapters, please visit

“I am sure you have already felt it when you tested me, I am not your average King Stage Cultivator, I can defeat 10s of King Stage Cultivators alone. That King Stage Cultivator you sent to keep an eye on me can be considered as an example.

Lady Astaria, I am a lot stronger compared to a normal King Stage Cultivator, what do you think will happen once I become an Emperor?”

“ ... ”

Astaria didn't say anything, however, she understood what Nux was trying to say.

If he became an Emperor, he will be a lot stronger than a normal Emperor.

This statement sounds absurd at first, King Stage cannot be compared to Emperor Stage, however, how many Emperors were confident enough to go

against 10s of King Stage Cultivators when they were only King Stage Cultivators?

No one.

Even she, the strongest of all the Emperors in this world could only fight against a maximum of 3 King Stage Cultivators and even she would have to retreat in front of them.

Talking about 10... it was impossible.

She would have been surrounded within a few minutes.

Nux, however, was different. He was strong, she had felt it when she used her 'pressure' on him, even after using all her energy, she only managed to break his bones.

This was not something a normal King Stage Cultivator could do.

Thinking about all this, Astaria started believing Nux's words, and soon, an evil smile appeared on her face.

“Boy, aren't you scared that I would feel threatened and would try to kill you to remove a future threat?”

“Are you really going to kill your Student's Student?”

Nux questioned back.

Astaria frowned. A badge then appeared in Nux's hand and he passed it to Astaria.

Astaria took that badge and after looking at it for a few seconds, a smile appeared on her face,

“So you are Arvina's student. That answers why you know so much about Emperors and stuff.”

“I am not your enemy, Lady Astaria. There is no need for you to feel threatened by me. If I become an Emperor, I will only be a dependable Ally. My lover would be Queen of this Kingdom, after all. Why would I try to go against my lover?”

Nux smiled as he glanced at Evane. Evane smiled back.

“What if your ‘lover’ does not become the Queen? Won’t you try to go against us to get your revenge?”

Astaria questioned with an amused look on her face.

“You do not have any other choice.”

Nux shrugged.

Astaria raised her eyebrow.

“What? Don’t look at me like that. The First Prince tried to kill his own brother and sister, there is no way he is fit to become the king, too greedy and merciless. He would destroy the Kingdom.”

Hearing those words, Astaria’s face turned solemn and... a little... sad?

“The Third Prince is dead, the Fourth Prince is a useless man who decided to waste his life on alcohol and women. The only good choice is My Evane, the Second Princess.”

“Alright, whatever.”

Hearing his words, Astaria’s mood changed a little.

She sounded... annoyed?

Nux frowned, he didn’t know what happened.

“Are you the one Arvina chose to be the next Emperor who will protect this Kingdom?”

Astaria changed the topic.

# Chapter 460 - Lady Astaria, L Hope You Answer My Question Honestly.

“Are you the one Arvina chose to be the next Emperor who will protect this Kingdom?”

Astaria questioned with a curious look on her face.

“Initially, yes. That is what Teacher wanted.”

Nux nodded and hearing his answer, Astaria frowned,

“Initially?”

“Yes, initially, however, when I learned about it, I rejected the Idea.”

Again, Nux was honest.

“Why would you reject that?”

Astaria frowned.

“You become the Strongest Being in the Kingdom, a being who has control over everything, a being who can order around anyone, even the King. You can just stay in your room and do whatever you want, literally no one can say anything to you.

Why would you reject something like that? You gain absolute power.”

Hearing her words, Nux couldn't help but chuckle,

“Absolute power my foot. Staying in a single room for the rest of my life, isn't that comparable to being a prisoner? You get to order around people?”

What are you talking about? You rarely even meet people.

Tell me, when was the last time you left your room before this?”

Nux questioned.

“ ... ”

Astaria turned silent.

“See? This Absolute Power is just a prison. I will rather stay as an independent Emperor Stage Cultivator, go wherever I want, live wherever I want, and do whatever I want.” Nux spoke with a big smile on his face.

“And who said you can’t do it as the Protector of this Kingdom?”

Astaria questioned.

“Hmm?” Nux frowned.

“Do you really think anyone in this Kingdom has the power to imprison me? Do you really think that I would stay in that room if I don’t want to?”  
Astaria smiled.

Nux narrowed his eyes,

“Then why do you stay in that room? Isn’t it... lonely?”

“I am always immersed in my Cultivation, I don’t have any time to think about such stuff. Yes, you will be free from any responsibilities whatsoever if you do not become the Protector, however, if you do that, you won’t be able to focus on your Cultivation. And Trust me, after becoming an Emperor, a cultivation session of a few hours wouldn’t help you in any way.”

Hearing those words, Nux frowned,

“Cultivation? You still cultivate?”

“Of course I do.”

“But isn’t Emperor Stage the peek? You are already the strongest in the world, why cultivate now?”

“Heh.”

Astaria couldn’t control herself and a small chuckle leaked out of her mouth.

Seeing that, Nux frowned,

“Wait... you are not the Strongest in the World?”

He guessed.

“I am.”

Astaria nodded.

Nux was now even more confused,

“Nux, Emperor Stage is not the Limit, there is something above the Emperor.”

“Above the Emperor?”

“Yes, don’t ask me what it is, since even I don’t know, however, the moment I stepped into this Realm, I knew it wasn’t the Limit, I can still accumulate energy in my body, there has to be another Realm above the Emperor.

Other Emperor feels the same, the reason they stay in a single room for most of their life is that they all want to reach that realm.

You know about the Treaty, correct?”

Suddenly, Astaria questioned.

“Yes, I do.”

Nux nodded.

“Why do you think the Treaty the signed?”

“Is... is it because you all wanted to cultivate, and didn't want anyone to bother you?”

Nux guessed.

Astaria chuckled,

“Indeed. Well, it wasn't us, it was the Second Generation Emperors, they all could feel this Realm as well, therefore, they signed this Treaty. Of course, the damage caused by the Battle between 2 Emperors is also a reason.”

“So you have been Cultivating all these decades inside that room?” Nux questioned.

“Indeed.”

Astaria nodded and now, Nux was even more confused.

For more chapters, please visit

[Name: Astaria Skyfall.]

[Age: 318]

[Mana Cultivation: Emperor.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Race: Human]

[Occupation: Protector of the Skyfall Kingdom.]

[Talent: Exceptional]

[LVL: 70]

He glanced at Astaria again and soon, her information appeared in his mind.

‘Is my System wrong?’

Nux couldn’t understand. With a confused look on his face, he turned towards Astaria and questioned,

“Lady Astaria, I hope you answer my question honestly.”

“Alright, ask what you wish.”

Astaria smiled a little.

“After Cultivating for all these years, have you experienced any improvements? Can the present you defeat the past you, who had just become an Emperor?”

“...”

Astaria turned silent.

“Please answer my question, Lady Astaria.”

Nux urged.

“I can defeat my past self, yes.”

Astaria nodded. Hearing that answer, Nux’s frown deepened.

“However.”

Suddenly, Astaria continued,

“I have not experienced any improvements in my cultivation. In all these years, only my control over my energy has improved.”

‘As I thought.’

Nux nodded inwardly.

Astaria was still Level 70, and even after all those years, her level has not improved, that was also the reason Nux believe that Emperor was the peak.

“I don’t understand, if you have not experienced any improvements, then why bother? Why not just enjoy your life?”

Hearing that question, an emotional smile appeared on Astaria’s face,

“I am determined to see that peak.”

“And this is the same for all the Emperors?”

Nux questioned.

“You cannot become an Emperor if you are not curious enough, Boy. All those geezers are desperate to see the peek, even more desperate than me.”

Astaria answered.

“Some of them might not be that desperate.”

Suddenly, Nux commented.

“What do you mean?”

Astaria frowned.

“I told you, did I not? Focus on the Solid Earth Kingdom.” Nux spoke with a serious look on his face.

Hearing those words, Astaria’s face turned solemn as well.

“Herms Lizander has broken the Treaty.”

“I wanted to ask you this before but couldn’t since there were too many people.

How do you know that man's name?"

Astaria questioned.

"The General of the Solid Earth Kingdom, Armando, he is my subordinate."

Nux revealed and Astaria's eyes widened in surprise.

"A General serving the Solid Earth Kingdom is your subordinate? How did you do that?"

"I have my ways."

Nux smiled mysteriously. Astaria's face twitched, however, before she could attack him in annoyance, Nux continued.

"This only proves my point further. Herms is actually breaking the Treaty, if you want, I can even tell you what he plans to do."

A solemn look appeared on Astaria's face, seeing that he successfully managed to gain his attention, Nux smiled and started telling her everything he knew.

# Chapter 461 - You Really Are Planning To Go After My Grandmother, Huh...

“This is a serious matter.”

After listening to what Nux had to say, Astaria commented.

“I know.” Nux nodded.

With her sharp eyes, Astaria glanced at Nux and warned,

“I will visit the Solid Earth Kingdom myself and if I find that you lied, that my Student’s Student or not, you will face serious consequences.”

“I would never joke about something like this.”

Nux nodded with a serious look on his face as well.

Astaria then stood up and started walking out of her room, however, before she actually walked out, she turned back and glanced at Nux.

“The investigation about the assassin case will continue, Raguel might try to attack Evane. I am counting on you to protect her.”

“Don’t worry, no one can hurt even a strand of her hair with me here.”

Nux replied confidently.

“You might lose some corrupt subordinates though.”

He warned.

“That’s the problem for the next Ruler, not me.”

Astaria glanced at Evane and smiled.

Evane chuckled.

Astaria chuckled as well and then,

“I hope what you said turns out to be true.”

Saying that, she disappeared.

“Did she just use an ability similar to your [Harem’s Gate]?” Evane questioned.

“No, she just moved very fast. So fast that we couldn’t even see her.”

“As expected of the Strongest being in this world.”

Evane smiled wryly.

“She is a monster.”

Nux nodded.

“Haaahhhh....”

Suddenly, a relieved sigh escaped from Nux’s mouth as he fell on the bed with a relieved look on his face.

“That is not your bed...”

Evane spoke.

“Heh.”

Nux just chuckled.

“With that monster gone, I am the strongest being in the Kingdom.”

Nux commented.

“That is true.”

Evane nodded.

“Just a few more days and our plan will be fulfilled. Raguel would be proven Guilty, you will be crowned as the next King, then we will force Ricardus to abdicate the Throne and you will finally become the actual Ruler.

You will then strengthen yourself, gain more and more support from all the nobles, get rid of useless subordinates, filter out the whole Kingdom and once you have absolute power, you can introduce me and the others.

Haahh... peaceful days are coming soon.”

Nux sighed.

“And what about that Herms?”

Evane questioned.

Everything was going a little too well, Evane felt that something was not right. The only aspect they couldn't control was what Harms Lyzander was planning to do, therefore, she was worried about it.

“Astaria would take care of it. We don't have to worry about it.”

Then suddenly, a perverted smile appeared on his face and he continued,

“If she cannot, then we can always create our own Army of Emperor Stage Cultivators with Astaria's help.”

For more chapters, please visit

“You really are planning to go after my Grandmother, huh...”

Evane commented. No matter what, she felt strange whenever she thought about it.

“Oh c’mon, please don’t call her your grandmother. From what angle does she look like a Grandmother? She looks like a perfect MILF in her early 30s.”

Nux smiled perversely.

‘There he goes with his perverse fantasies.’

Evane shook her head in defeat.

However, after talking with Nux, her worries lessened.

Nux was right, if something goes wrong, they can always get her Grandmother and her husband to... have sex with each other.

‘Ugghh!! That sounds so wrong...’

Evane couldn’t help but think.

Anyways, after Nux and Astaria’s fucks, Nux will become an Emperor Stage Cultivator and not just a normal Emperor Stage Cultivator, he would become a man who is Emperor Stage Mana Cultivator and Emperor Stage Body Cultivator.

Once that happens, he would be strong enough to defeat many Emperor Stage Cultivators on his own.

He would be absurdly powerful. No one in this world would be able to go against him.

No matter what the other emperors were planning it would all be useless if front of Nux.

Soon, with Nux, all his wives would become Emperor Stage Cultivators as well. With that much power in their hands, no one would go against them and they would live a life without any worries.

Just thinking about all this places a smile on Nux’s face.

“Alright, let’s get go into your room.”

Suddenly, Nux stood up and spoke.

Evane smiled.

“Alright.”

The two of them then left Astaria’s room and walked into Evane’s room.

There, without wasting a second, Nux walked towards the bed. Evane blushed a little, however, suddenly, a confused frown appeared on her face when she saw Nux sitting cross-legged.

“What are you doing?”

She questioned.

“...” Nux, however, didn’t reply. Soon, Black Mist surrounded his body.

‘Is he... cultivating?’

Evane was shocked.

A smile then appeared on her face,

She walked towards the bed as well, sat cross-legged, closed her eyes, and started cultivating as well.

...

“AAAHHHHH!!!”

\*Smash\* \*Crunch\*

On the other side, in the Fulvanus Duke House, a man who looked in his early 60s threw a vase in fury. In front of him, stood 3 men, Duke Thornton Fulvanus, Gibson Fulvanus, and Raguel Skyfall. All 3 of these men were incredibly influential and had control over many lives, however, in front of

this man, all three of them were bowing their heads and didn't dare to utter a word.

“To actually dare to send assassins after a Prince, a Princess, and a Royal Consort at the same time...

Are you guys out of your mind!?”

The man shouted in rage.

However, even after all that, the three men didn't dare to say anything to him.

This man was Cyneheard Fulvianus, Thornton and Gibson's father and Raguel's Great Grandfather, he was also the King Stage Cultivator protecting the Fulvianus Duke house.

Cyneheard glanced at Gibson and spoke,

“I could expect something like this from Thornton, he is a fool, I have known that for a long time now, but you? How could you do something so foolish, Gibson?”

Gibson just bowed his head and didn't say anything.

Thornton, however, couldn't control himself and he,

“Are you just going to keep shouting like an Idiot or are you actually going to do something!?”

# Chapter 462 - He Was Asking For It.

“Are you just going to keep shouting like an Idiot or are you actually going to do something!? You are usele-”

Before Thronton could say anything else, Cyneheard appeared in front of him, grabbed his face, and smashed it into the floor.

\*Whoosh\*

\*Bam\*

\*Crash\*

“Ugghh!”

Cyneheard didn't stop there, after pummeling his son into the ground, he kicked his face, his body flew back and clashed with the wall.

In just two moves, Thronton's face was crushed and disfigured and the only thing he could do was groan in pain.

“Uggh...”

All his anger and irritation at being compared to his brother faded away.

Cyneheard glanced at Thornton and spoke in a cold tone,

“I think you forgot who actually makes the rules here just because you have been leading this house for too long.”

“...”

Thornton didn't say anything.

For some reason, seeing his son lying around like that annoyed Cyneheard even more.

He appeared in front of him and kicked his face again, crushing his head between his leg and the wall.

“Great Gra-”

Raguel tried to stop his Great Grandfather, however, Gibson grabbed his arm and shook his head,

“Don’t do anything foolish.”

“But he might di-”

Raguel wanted to counter, however, Gibson interrupted.

“He was asking for it.”

“Well... he was”

Raguel couldn’t help but agree.

The two of them just stood in silence and continued to see Cyneheard taking out his anger on his poor son.

After 5 minutes of merciless beating, Thornton’s face was unrecognizable, this time, he wasn’t even groaning, most probably, he had passed out from the pain.

“Know your place.”

Cyneheard spoke coldly.

“...”

Of course, Thornton wasn’t in any condition to reply.

“Hmph!”

Cyneheard snorted, he then turned towards Gibson and Raguel and spoke,

“You people messed up.”

“We apologize, father.”

Gibson lowered his head and apologized, Raguel repeated his actions.

“This is not something a simple apology can solve. Let’s leave the Royal Consort out of this for a while, you targeted both the Second Princess and the Third Prince at the same time. It would have been fine if you had managed to kill them, however, with the Second Princess surviving and blaming everything on you,

You are in a difficult position.

Merula House, who lost their chance to have some power over the Throne will now come at us, Vestalis House would not leave this chance, they might contact Merula House and even Centho House will come after us as well.”

“Will their Protectors interfere as well?”

Raguel questioned with a solemn look on his face.

Cyneheard shook his head,

“You don’t get it, they won’t directly fight us. With Lady Astaria out, they would never dare to act recklessly, they would use this chance to take advantage of us.

They will pin many blames on us and would try to make up for all their losses.

Rather than going against Lady Astaria by fighting us directly, they will ask for her help and would ‘seek justice’.

They are going to play dirty.”

Cyneheard's expression was not good.

“B-But it is just our imagination, correct? This might not happen, right?”

Raguel still had hopes.

His hopes, however, were crushed.

“The moment our attack failed, I set up a few of my men to keep an eye on the Three Duke Houses, the three of them are exchanging letters very frequently. They are definitely planning something.”

For more chapters, please visit

Gibson spoke with a solemn look on his face.

“I expected that...”

Cyneheard nodded.

However, even though his prediction was correct, he was not the least bit happy about it.

“If Evane becomes the Queen, things would be even worse.”

Suddenly, Gibson commented.

Raguel's eyes shined momentarily, however, he controlled his emotions and questioned in a serious tone,

“What should we do about her then...?”

“...”

Gibson didn't say anything and glanced at Cyneheard, waiting for his answer.

“We need to deal with the Second Princess.”

Cyneheard spoke with a solemn look on her face.

“Are we going to kill her?”

Gibson questioned.

“Are you a fool!? How are we going to Kill her, let alone the fact that she has a King Stage Cultivator as her subordinate and there are 2 Duke Houses supporting her, Lady Astaria is out right now.

Any reckless action and our whole house will be destroyed.

Do not underestimate an Emperor, you people do not know how scary she is.”

Cyneheard warned.

“Then what should we do...?”

Gibson questioned.

“ ... ”

Cyneheard turned silent.

Even he didn't have an answer to this question.

They were surrounded.

They have lost most of their Expert Stage Cultivators in this attack, the other Three Duke Houses were looking at them like hungry wolves looking at injured prey. Astaria Skyfall, the strongest being in the world is out of her Cultivation room and was now investigating the entire incident.

He couldn't think of anything that could save them.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

The entire room turned silent.

“There is one way.”

After a long silence, Cyneheard spoke.

“What is it?”

Raguel questioned with an excited look on his face.

“This might affect our reputation and would definitely lower our overall strength, however, this is the only way I can think of right now,

We need to break all our relationships with the Expert Stage Cultivators that were killed in this attack.

From now on, we don't have anything to do with those assassins, we were innocent.

If we manage to prove this, then they would have no choice but to give up on attacking us, of course, we might even have the chance to fight for the throne.”

“I have already cut all the ties with those assassins.”

Gibson spoke.

Hearing that, a satisfied smile appeared on Cyneheard's face.

“You did well.”

“However, I do not believe we can prove our innocence in this incident. Vestalis House is giving its all to prove us guilty. I believe that they have already convinced Merula House, the two houses our working together to forge even more evidence against us.

With our current power, we can't go against them.”

“ ... ”

Cyneheard turned silent again. After thinking for a while, he spoke,

“We do not have any choice, we can only wait. If things don't go in our way, then,”

A cold look appeared on Cyneheard's face and he spoke,

“Then we would go all out in order to get rid of that Evane Bitch.”

# Chapter 463 - A Messenger?

“Are you alright? You are not hurt anywhere, are you?”

Leofric Vestalis, or Duke Vestalis rushed towards her Granddaughter, grabbed her shoulders, and asked her in worry.

“Grandpa, don’t worry. I am not hurt anywhere.”

Evane answered with a smile on her face.

Hearing her answer, Leofric sighed in relief, soon, however, his expression changed and he clenched his fist,

“Don’t worry, I will make sure that bastard pays for it. How dare he try to hurt my Granddaughter!? I will make him and his entire house pay for it. You focus on staying healthy, Evane, Grandpa will take care of all this.”

Leofric and Evane smiled.

“Also, why didn’t you tell me that you had a King Stage Cultivator as your subordinate? How did you even recruit him? He is not trying to hurt you, is he? Are you sure that he is trustworthy?”

Leofric asked a series of questions.

“Don’t worry, he is trustworthy.”

Evane replied.

“Where is he? I need to meet him.”

Leofric spoke. Evane, however, shook his head,

“He is cultivating, he can’t meet you yet.”

“Hmm? You can always call him, can’t you?”

“I don’t want to disturb his cultivation.” Evane shook her head.

Hearing that, Leofric narrowed his eyes.

Evane’s response was strange, it didn’t look like she was talking about her servant...

Leofric tried to test the waters.

“Hmph! He is just a servant! Why can’t he meet his Master’s Grandpa!? I need to meet him, now! Where is he? In your room, right? Let me meet him.”

Saying that, Leofric started walking, Evane, however, appeared in front of him.

“He is not a servant.”

She spoke in a strict voice.

Leofric narrowed his eyes, he has never seen this expression on Evane’s face.

“Who is he then?” He questioned.

“He...” A small blush appeared on Evane’s face and she answered, “He is my husband.”

“H-H-H-H-Husband!?”

Leofric shouted out loud.

So loud that a few servants turned towards him and Evane.

Evane panicked.

“Keep your voice down! Not many people know about it.” She shushed.

Leofric, however, couldn't believe what he just heard.

He expected that the relationship between Evane and her mysterious subordinate wasn't simple, but a husband? Not even a Lover, a husband?

Just how...

When did his Granddaughter marry?

And why didn't she invite him!?

As if knowing what he was thinking, Evane smiled,

"We haven't married officially yet, we will arrange a big wedding once I become the Queen."

"Now I have to meet him, I can't give my Granddaughter to just any random nobody."

Leofric spoke.

"Don't worry, I will come to your house with him, but don't disturb him right now."

"Alright, I will be waiting for you then." Saying that, Leofric turned around.

However, before he moved out, he turned around again and, "Visit me as soon as possible."

"I will, now go." Evane chuckled.

Leofric finally left. Evane sighed, she then stood up and walked towards her room.

There, Nux was sitting cross-legged, covered with ominous-looking Black Mist.

Evane sighed, she then walked towards him and started cultivating as well.

The next few days went peacefully.

However, Nux added another thing to his schedule.

Cultivating.

And he was oddly immersed in it.

So much that he would continue to cultivate for days before finally waking up, then he spent time with his women, and once they all were satisfied, he returned to cultivating again.

His wives found this sudden seriousness very peculiar, however, they didn't complain.

They were actually happy that Nux was working hard.

Although the time he could spend with them was reduced, seeing him working so hard was a delight in itself.

More and more days passed by, Nux and his women continued to cultivate peacefully,

However, on a certain day, someone unexpected contacted Nux.

For more chapters, please visit

'Master.'

Hearing his voice, Nux, who was cultivating, opened his eyes and frowned,

'Alger? What happened?'

Yes, it was Alger. Alger Bannermane, one of Nux's first slaves.

'Master, someone wants to meet Mistress Thyra.'

Alger reported.

‘Thyra? Who is it?’

‘I don’t know but...’

‘But what?’

Nux questioned.

After some hesitation, Alger replied,

‘He is a King Stage Cultivator.’

Nux raised his eyebrow.

King Stage Cultivators were rare, for a King Stage Cultivator wishing to meet Thyra... something was not right.

‘Also, he seems to be sent by the Skadi Kingdom.’

Alger reported and Nux’s face turned serious.

‘Have you told anything to Thyra?’

He questioned.

‘No, I have not. I reported to you first.’ Alger replied.

Nux nodded, alright, stall him for a while, I will be there with Thyra.

‘As you command, Master.’

Alger nodded.

Nux ended his conversation with Alger and contacted Thyra.

‘I am coming there, we will go meet that man together.’

After telling everything to Thyra, Nux turned towards Evane and smiled,

“I need to go.”

“Alright.”

“Call me if anything happens.”

“Mhm. Don’t worry, I don’t think many people can defeat me now.”

Evane chuckled.

Nux chuckled as well, then, he disappeared.

The next second, he appeared in front of Thyra. Thyra smiled, she walked towards Nux, placed her hands on his shoulders, and their lips met.

After thoroughly enjoying his lips, Thyra stepped back.

“Shall we leave?”

She questioned.

Nux smiled.

Thyra then started running towards Alger’s Mansion, Nux activated his [Conceal] and followed behind her.

A few minutes later, the two of them appeared in front of Alger’s Mansion.

Nux narrowed his eyes,

“1 King Stage and 3 Expert Stage Cultivators.”

“That’s an intimidating lineup.”

Thyra smiled.

“Indeed.”

Nux agreed.

“Shall we surprise them?”

Thyra chuckled as her eyes moved toward the 3 Expert Stage Cultivators who were hiding.

“Meh, let’s just meet the boss.”

Nux shrugged.

He wasn’t interested in surprising anyone. It would have been different if it was a female assassin, of course.

Seeing a cold, emotionless assassin’s surprised expression was never less amazing.

Just thinking about it, Nux smiled.

Thyra then walked into the mansion and entered the room where the King Stage Cultivator was sitting.

Seeing her enter, the King Stage Cultivator stood up.

“One, you are not responding t-”

Suddenly, the man turned silent.

# Chapter 464 - L Do Not Wish To Serve Her Anymore.

“One, you are not responding t-”

The man wanted to say something, however, he turned silent.

“Your Cultivation...”

He couldn't believe what he was seeing.

However, after seeing it with his own eyes, he finally understood something that was bothering him for quite a while.

Thyra smiled,

“Thyra.” She spoke.

“Huh?”

The Man frowned.

“Thyra, not One. Call me properly, with proper respect.” Although she was still smiling, the man knew he couldn't mess this up.

Thyra was now a King Stage Cultivator. Although he was a King Stage Cultivator as well, Thyra was someone who could assassinate an Expert Stage Cultivator when she was only a Grand Master Stage Cultivator.

She was the best Grand Master Stage Assassin under his Master's command.

He was not planning to against someone like her when she has the same cultivation as her.

“Miss Thyra.”

He spoke respectfully, however,

“Mrs. Thyra.”

Thyra corrected him again.

“You are married?” The man frowned.

“If I am not wrong, then that is what ‘Mrs.’ mean.”

A polite version of ‘Yes, you dumb fuck’

The man’s face twitched in annoyance.

He wanted to reprimand On- Thyra for not replying to her Master’s Letters, however, right now, he was being treated like a fool. He was frustrated, however, there was nothing he could do.

Seeing him like that, Thyra smiled. She then walked towards the chair the man was sitting on and sat,

“So? Why did you call me?” Thyra questioned with a smile on her face.

“I was sent here by Master.”

The Man spoke.

Thyra frowned and at the same time, she recalled the ‘Master’ who has trained her since she was small.

It was not a happy memory, however, it wasn’t bad either. Her Master didn’t treat her with love, however, she didn’t live a bad life either. Of course, that is if you don’t consider killing innocents, being tortured to insane limits, training for 20 hours a day, and more as a bad life.

The Thyra before meeting Nux never lived a life different than that, therefore, she didn’t have any opinion on her life. However, the Thyra now,

who has lived with Nux and has finally felt how it was like to be loved by someone,

She termed her past as ‘Hell.’

“I do not wish to serve her anymore.”

Without even hearing anything else, Thyra spoke her thoughts.

She wouldn’t go back to being an Assassin, at least not her Master’s Assassins, she would now be Nux’s assassin.

Just thinking about this placed a smile on her face and she glanced at Nux.

‘Hmm? What happened?’

Nux questioned when he noticed her.

‘Nothing.’

Thyra smiled.

‘Kukuku~ Am I looking too handsome today?’

‘So handsome that I can’t hold back.’

Thyra chuckled.

‘Should I just knock this Idiot? We can start here.’

For more chapters, please visit

‘A tempting offer indeed.’

Thyra glanced at the man in front of her and actually started considering Nux’s proposal.

“This will be Master’s last request for you. I know you have already decided to quit this life and have started a new life here, but can you do this

last mission for your Master?

Treat it as your farewell mission.

You will be fairly rewarded, of course.”

Suddenly, the man muttered.

“You do not have the authority to decide that.” Thyra narrowed her eyes.

“I don’t, however, I do know how that this is how the Master would react if she was here.

This Mission is extremely important for her.”

The man spoke.

Hearing his words, Thyra frowned, however, she didn’t say anything.

‘Just ask what it is. You don’t have to contain your curiosity. If you want, you can even decide to complete this mission as a farewell to your Master.’

Suddenly, Thyra heard Nux’s words.

She then glanced at Nux and after thinking for a while, she questioned.

“What is the Mission?”

Hearing her words, the man’s eyes brightened up, soon, however, his face turned serious and he revealed.

“Assassinate Raguel Skyfall, the First Prince of the Skyfall Kingdom.”

Thyra raised her eyebrow. Even Nux was a little interested.

“Why does she want to Kill him?”

Thyra questioned.

The man, however, shook his head,

“I do not know, all I know is that she wants this mission to be completed as soon as possible.”

Thyra nodded.

That was how it usually went, they never knew why they had to kill someone.

And for her Master to even send a King Stage Cultivator for this Mission, this must be an extremely important mission.

“As you already know, he is an Expert Stage Cultivator, he is also being protected by a Duke house that has a King Stage Cultivator backing them up. Master didn't know that you have already become a King Stage Cultivator, therefore, she sent me and 3 other Expert Stage Cultivators to aid you in this Mission.”

The Man continued to explain.

“She wants me, who is only a Grand Master Stage Cultivator, to lead a King and Expert Stage Cultivators?”

Thyra questioned with a doubtful look on her face.

“Don't act like you don't know. You are the subordinates she treasures the most, even when it is compared to us King Stage Assassins.”

Whether it was true or not didn't matter, the man had to say whatever he could in order to win Thyra over.

And what he said was not entirely wrong either, with Thyra's Talent, it would have only taken 100 or 150 years for her to become a King Stage Cultivator, therefore, her Master treasured her more than the other assassins.

Of course, Thyra didn't care about all that.

“I am not doing this mission.”

Thyra shook her head.

If they wanted, they could have killed Raguel anytime, however, they had other plans and Thyra wasn't planning to ruin their plans for this stupid Mission.

“And I suggest you do not do this Mission either, someone much more dangerous than that King Stage Protector is out right now.”

Thyra warned.

“Lady Astaria, I know about her.”

The man nodded and this time, Nux and Thyra raised their eyebrows in surprise.

# Chapter 465 - What Is Master'S Real Name?

“Lady Astaria, I know about her.”

The Man nodded and Thyra and Nux’s faces changed.

“You who about her?” Thyra narrowed her eyes.

This wasn’t something this man should know about. This was Skyfall Kingdom’s deep secret. The fact that Lady Astaria is out shouldn’t be revealed to other countries so soon.

If it was before, Nux and Thyra would have ignored it, however, now, when Evane is about to become the next ruler of this Kingdom, they can’t ignore it.

They had to know, how in the world did this man know about this?

Is there a Traitor inside the Kingdom? Or maybe there is more than one?

Nux and Thyra had to make sure.

“Master told me.”

The Man answered.

“How did she know?”

Thyra questioned and again, the Man shook his head,

“I do not know.”

‘Ask him how he plans to Kill Raguel under Astaria’s watch’

Nux instructed.

“How do you plan to kill the First Prince under her watch?”

“Master said that currently, Raguel is not living inside the Royal Palace because he is being blamed for the Third Prince’s Assassination. He is living in Duke Fulvianus Mansion. Therefore, Lady Astaria wouldn’t know if we attack him.

The only problem is that King Stage Cultivator protecting the Duke House, well, it was a problem before, however, with two of us, two King Stage Cultivators fighting in this, completing this mission would be as easy as killing a bug.”

The man smiled.

“ ... ”

Thyra frowned.

‘So they know about the fact that Raguel assassinated the Third Prince, it is a little faster than I expected, but still not too abnormal. Raguel is staying in Duke’s House is something that you can guess yourself.

The fact that they do not know about Astaria’s Journey to the Solid Earth Kingdom means that the informant is not the King or anyone in the Shadow Unit.

I think it is one of the 4 Ministers.’

Nux already had a rough guess in his mind.

‘Gibson...’

However, since he wasn’t sure, he wasn’t planning to take any action.

At the same time, he told everything that happened to Amaya.

After thinking about this for a while, Amaya shook her head.

‘It cannot be Gibson.’

‘Why not? He is the only one who has the reason to collude with other Kingdom.’ Nux frowned.

‘He has the reason, yes, however, the timings don’t match. The Response is just too quick. Even if Gibson wanted to do something, he wouldn’t have done so right after the assassination. He would have waited for at least a Month.

It was not like Raguel and he will be implicated within a month, due to their status, it would have taken a lot more time than that. Gibson should know this as well.

There is no way he would do something as dangerous as contacting the other Kingdom when all eyes are on him.

Even if it is proved that Raguel is the killer, Fulvianus House would only lose some of their power, however, if the fact that they are in contact with the other kingdom secretly is revealed, the whole Duke House would be destroyed.

The stakes are just too high.’

Amaya explained and Nux turned silent.

‘Then how does this ‘Master’ know about all this?’

‘I don’t know.’

Amaya snorted.

Nux frowned.

A strange reaction.

Why is she acting like that?

He wondered in his mind.

Suddenly, a question popped into her mind.

‘Amaya.’

He called out.

‘What is it?’

‘What is your mother’s name?’

‘Why do you want to know?’

‘I want to go after her, the woman who gave birth to someone like you must be a beauty.’

‘Don’t even dare.’ Amaya threatened.

‘I am just joking, now tell me her name.’

‘Riona Skadi.’

For more chapters, please visit

Amaya answered, however, her expression was not good.

Nux nodded, he then turned towards Thyra and questioned.

‘Thyra, what’s this Master’s name again?’

‘Her name?’

Thyra frowned.

‘Yes, what is it?’

‘I don’t know...’

Thyra shook her head.

‘Huh?’

‘I was not ranked high enough, though I met her a few times, every time I did, she had a mask on her face.’

‘What about this idiot? He should know about it, correct?’

‘He should...’

Thyra nodded and then without needing Nux’s instruction, she questioned,

“What is Master’s real name?”

“Huh?”

The Man frowned.

“Just answer the question.”

“...”

The man didn’t know how to reply.

His Master’s name was a secret, however, Thyra here was someone very important for this Mission, and this Mission was very important to his Master.

He didn’t know what to do.

“What? So much for the final farewell and all that? You can’t even trust me with something so simple? How can I trust you with my life then?”

You can leave.”

Thyra spoke in a cold tone.

“Find someone else to help you.”

Saying that, Thyra stood up and started walking away.

“Riona, Riona Skadi, the Queen of the Skadi Kingdom.”

Thyra's eyes widened in surprise.

On the other hand, Nux finally realized.

'So the woman they are talking about is your mother.'

'She is not my mother, she is a bitch.'

Amaya's response was instantaneous.

'You really hate her, don't you?'

'Hmph, try getting abandoned by your mother when you are only 12 years old, you would know how I feel, honestly, I would have preferred if I was an orphan.'

Amaya snorted.

'So she was the one who sent you here.'

'Yes, Skadi's attacked one of the cities in the Skyfall Kingdom, afraid of retaliation, they 'sold' me to the perverted King here. This bitch was the one who proposed this Idea.'

'Sending her 12-year-old daughter away as a gift... disgusting...'

Nux clenched his fist.

'What else can you expect from a power-hungry bitch.'

Amaya commented.

'Do you know why she wants to Kill Raguel?'

Nux questioned.

'I don't.'

Amaya snorted.

Nux realized that he shouldn't ask anything from Amaya in this situation. Her hatred for her mother will cloud her judgment.

'You don't have to be so worked up, I am here, you are not with the King or the Skadi's anymore. You are trapped with me now.'

'I am not worked up, I don't care about that bitch.'

Amaya snorted again.

'...'

Nux turned silent.

He realized that he had to visit Amaya, however, right now, he had to do something else.

# Chapter 466 - My Amaya Is Much More Important To Me Than Any Random Slightly Beautiful Woman.

‘Thyra, can you describe what kind of person this Riona is?’

Nux questioned.

Thyra placed her hand on her chin and started thinking, a few seconds later, she replied,

‘Cruel, selfish, emotionless, distant’

‘A terrible person.’

Nux analyzed, Thyra, however, shook her head,

‘No, she was not a bad person, she may be all that, however, she still cared about her subordinates. Whenever one of the assassins dies in any mission, although in front of everyone, she would remain emotionless,

However, one day, I found her standing in front of an assassin’s dead body, she looked genuinely sad but as soon as she saw me, she picked up the body and buried it.

I clearly remember, she didn’t use her leg to push the body into the pit, although coldly, she still picked the body with her own hands and buried it properly. That is not something an ’emotionless’ master would do.’

‘So she was only acting as if she was emotionless.’

Nux muttered.

‘That is what I believe at least.’

Thyra nodded.

Hearing these words, Nux frowned,

Thyra's description was different from Amaya's.

If Riona was actually caring, then why would she give her daughter away as her gift?

Did she not have enough power?

Or...

Another thought appeared in Nux's mind.

'Thyra, can this all be just an act to ensure your loyalty?'

Nux questioned.

Thyra narrowed her eyes and shook her head.

'I was only an Advance Stage Cultivator back then, I don't think she would go that far for a mere Advance Stage Cultivator.'

'You were not a normal Advance Stage Cultivator, Thyra. You were someone with High-level affinity, someone who had the chance to become a King Stage Assassin, you were definitely worth the effort.'

'...'

Thyra turned silent.

'This could all be an act, can it not?'

Nux questioned again.

'It can.'

After thinking for a while, Thyra nodded.

While Thyra and Nux were talking to each other, the King Stage Cultivator lost his patience,

“Mrs. Thyra, are you going to help us?”

He questioned.

Thyra glanced at the man in front of him, then after thinking for a while, she shook her head,

“I have been thinking about this for a while,

I will not help you.”

The man finally lost his patience, he wanted to attack Thyra right here, however, for some reason, he felt that it would be a huge mistake.

Therefore, he controlled his anger and started walking away.

He would think of another way to complete this Mission.

However,

“I will not help you, not until I know why she wants to Kill the First Prince.”

Thyra completed.

“I told you before, I really don’t know why she wants Raguel dead.” The man spoke with a genuine look on his face.

“I know.”

Thyra nodded and then, she smiled,

“Therefore, I will come and meet Master on my own.”

The man’s eyes widened in surprise, even Nux was surprised.

For more chapters, please visit

Thyra then turned towards Nux and smiled,

‘Everything she did could be an act, I know. However, I still believe that it wasn’t. Why don’t you meet her and find out on your own?’

‘But that’s the Skadi Kingdom, we don’t know anything about their Emperor, he might attack us.’

‘They don’t know who we are or our relationship with Evane, in their eyes, I am only an assassin who has come here for her last Mission, they won’t kill us as long as we haven’t killed Raguel.’

Thinking that what she said made sense, Nux nodded.

‘Alright then. Tell him that we are leaving tomorrow.’

Nux had already used his ‘Free’ Teleportation for today, therefore, leaving tomorrow was the best option.

Thyra smiled and then turned back to the man,

“You want to meet Master?” The man questioned again.

“What? You are not scared are you?”

“...”

The man turned silent and after thinking for a while, he nodded.

“Great, we will be leaving early in the morning.” Thyra smiled.

The man nodded and then, he started walking away.

“I will meet you in front of this Mansion at 4 in the Morning.” He spoke.

“Alright.” Thyra nodded and the man left.

5 minutes after the man left, Amaya, Ember, and all of Nux's wives except for Evane walked into Alger's Mansion.

"You are going to the Skadi Kingdom?"

Amaya narrowed her eyes and questioned.

"I am." Nux nodded.

"You are not thinking of going after that bitch, are you?" She narrowed her eyes.

"Woah Woah, What do you think of me? I am not a pervert, okay?"

"..." Amaya didn't say anything and continued to look at Nux's face.

"..." Nux realized that she wasn't joking, therefore, with a serious look on his face, he nodded,

"Don't worry, I won't go after your mother. I will not do anything that would hurt you."

"What if that bitch comes after you?"

"I will reject her."

Nux's answer was instantaneous.

"My Amaya is much more important to me than any random slightly beautiful woman."

A small smile appeared on Amaya's face, however, she retorted.

"She is not beautiful."

This time, Nux shook his head,

"She is your mother, there is no way I would believe that."

Amaya turned away.

Seeing her acting like that, Nux realized that her mood was now better, a small smile appeared on his face.

“But why do you want to meet her? Riona Skadi is not a normal person.”

Suddenly, Ember questioned.

“Hmm? You know about her?” Nux questioned with a surprised look on his face.

“I was the General of Woods Kingdom, you know? Of course, I know about her.”

“Why don’t you know anything about the King’s Wives then?”

“Heh, don’t compare someone like Riona to those idiots who only play ‘beautiful me’ all day. Riona Skadi is different. A lot more different.”

Ember chuckled, and Amaya snorted.

Nux narrowed his eyes, he couldn’t contain his curiosity and finally questioned.

“What are you talking about? Why is Riona different.”

“In front of normal people, she might just be the King’s Wife, however, in truth, she holds a lot more power compared to that Idiotic King. Her influence is far higher than any of the King’s Wives. In truth, it is not wrong to say that she is the actual ruler of the Skadi Kingdom.”

# Chapter 467 - Lt Is Nice To See You Without Amask,Thyra.

“In front of normal people, she might just be the King’s Wife, however, in truth, she holds a lot more power compared to that Idiotic King. Her influence is far higher than any of the King’s Wives. In truth, it is not wrong to say that she is the actual ruler of the Skadi Kingdom.”

Ember revealed and again, Amaya snorted. Thyra, on the other hand, raised her eyebrow in surprise. She didn’t know that her previous Master was so influential.

Seeing Amaya’s reaction, Nux frowned,

“It seems that you knew about this.”

“I did.”

“And why didn’t you tell me?” Nux narrowed his eyes.

“What’s there to tell? She has a little influence, so what? Every bitch has some sort of influence, she just happens to have a little more than others.”

Amaya shrugged.

Hearing her words, everyone present in the room could feel their lips twitching.

A little influence?

She is a fucking Queen!

A Queen!!

Suddenly, a smile appeared on Nux’s face,

“You are right, she only has a little influence, since when did we care about it.”

“Indeed.”

Amaya nodded.

Nux nodded as well.

The people in the room glanced at the two of them and couldn't help but shake their heads.

“So? Why do you want to meet her?”

Ember questioned again.

“It's Thyra who wants to meet her.”

Nux pointed at Thyra. Thyra then told everyone about the relationship between her and Riona, at the same time, all of them also started discussing why Riona wants to kill Raguel and not Evane.

This time, Amaya didn't contribute much to the topic, she just acted spoiled and sat on Nux's lap.

The discussion continued for a long time, and soon, the topic of discussion changed. Time slots were divided and another round of pleasurable sessions and loud moans started.

Time passed, and soon, it was time for Thyra and Nux to go.

Nux, of course, would follow them using his [Conceal].

The King Stage Assassin soon appeared in front of the mansion, behind him, there were 3 Expert Stage Assassins, yes, they were the same assassins who were hiding yesterday.

“Are you ready?” The King Stage Assassin questioned.

Thyra nodded, and the man nodded back, "Let's go." He shouted and then, he started running.

At their level, traveling by carriage was too inefficient, rarely anyone used a Carriage.

Everyone then started running towards the Skadi Kingdom.

Since no one was in any sort of hurry, they took their time to reach their destination.

A day later, all of them appeared near the outskirts of Skadi Kingdom, here, the King Stage Assassin stopped, he then turned towards Thyra and spoke,

"Stay here, I will talk to Master and bring her here."

"Alright."

The Assassins nodded and then they started running away, this time, Thyra didn't follow them.

Once they left, Thyra explained,

"Even though she was the Queen, she never met us in the Royal Palace, to be honest, I didn't even know that she was the Queen. Heh, to think Amaya was my Master's Daughter."

Thyra chuckled dryly.

She knew her Master was someone influential, but the queen? She had no idea.

To be honest, she was never curious about her Master's identity, she only wanted to clear her mission and then clear another mission.

That was her life. The same was true for all the other assassins around her.

"Heh, to think she was able to hide her identity from assassins who are experts at finding out anything they desire. I have to admit, she is amazing."

For more chapters, please visit

Nux commented.

“Well, don’t forget, she is Amaya’s mother.” Thyra pointed out.

“Indeed. Someone who gave birth to Amaya can’t be normal.”

Nux smiled.

Then, he walked towards Thyra and hugged her from behind.

“What about you? Are you alright?”

“Hmm? Of course, I am. Why do you ask?” Of course, she didn’t reject the hug, she placed her hands on top of his and smiled.

“Well, you learned a lot of things in successions. I am sure you are overwhelmed.” Nux spoke gently.

“Heh, I am not as weak as you think.” Thyra chuckled.

“My previous Master is the Queen of a Kingdom who actually has more influence than the King, well, it doesn’t matter now. I am not connected to her in any way now. I only came here because I want to know what she is planning.”

Thyra’s eyes then turned cold,

“And if her plan is something that goes against ours, we need to get rid of her.”

There was no trace of doubt or uncertainty in Thyra’s tone.

“Tsk, you should have let me pamper you.”

Nux snorted.

Thyra smiled, then she pushed her body towards Nux, her butt touching Nux's crotch, she then turned a little, her blue eyes looked into Nux's and she smiled,

“Who said you can't pamper me now?”

Nux's smile widened.

He tightened his hug around Thyra.

The two of them cuddled in the middle of nowhere.

Time passed quickly, 1 hour later, Nux's hands, which were kneading Thyra's breasts stopped.

“They are here.”

He muttered.

“Is there anyone else with her?”

Thyra questioned.

She was worried about the Emperor Stage Cultivator following her. Of course, Nux had the same doubt in his mind as well, however, after using his [Sense], he sighed in relief.

“No, only that King Stage Assassin is with her.”

Thyra smiled.

She was right, even if Riona wanted to kill her, she wouldn't call Emperor Stage Cultivator, even she shouldn't have enough influence to order an Emperor.

Nux then stepped away from Thyra and reactivated his [Conceal].

Thyra adjusted her clothes a little, a minute later, Riona and the King Stage Cultivator appeared in front of her.

“Thyra.”

Riona called out.

When her eyes fell on Riona, Thyra stood up and smiled,

“Lady Riona.”

“It is nice to see you without a mask.”

Riona spoke.

“Well, I can’t say the same to you. You are still covering your face with that mask.”

Thyra chuckled.

“Ah, it’s a habit, I apologize.”

Riona chuckled back, then, her hand moved towards her mask, and for the first time in her entire life,

Thyra saw her Master’s face.

# Chapter 468 - Riona Skadi

‘Well, she is Amaya’s mother all right.’

Nux couldn’t help but comment in awe.

‘...’

Thyra didn’t say anything.

Riona was an exact copy of Amaya, well, not exact, Amaya’s features were more clearly defined, and her face was more well structured, if Amaya was a prime example of perfect beauty, Riona was a woman with a mature charm around her.

Raven hair, black eyes, thin eyebrows, luscious red lips, a lean figure, just like Amaya, Riona’s breasts weren’t large, however, they weren’t small either, they were a cup size bigger than Amaya’s.

All in all, Riona was a beautiful, charming woman.

It would be a lie to say that Nux wasn’t attracted to her.

However, just like he said before, he didn’t have any plans to go after this woman.

He would stay loyal to his words, and loyal to Amaya.

“What are you silent? Am I too ugly?”

Riona questioned with a gentle smile on her face.

Thyra shook her head, “You are an attractive woman, Riona.”

It was a little strange for her to call her previous Master directly by her name, however, Thyra had decided to do that from now on. She has to

forget her past. She wasn't the emotionless killing machine she used to be.

Riona didn't seem to mind it as well,

“The same goes for you, Thyra. Well, it's not really a surprise, I knew you would turn into an attractive woman from the moment I first met you.

Kukuku~ You were such a cute little girl back then.”

Riona chuckled.

Thyra frowned. Riona was being a little too talkative.

To be honest, Thyra was getting a little suspicious.

This Riona was too different from the 'Master' she knew.

“Adding your current strength, you have turned into the perfect woman there is.”

Riona commented.

Thyra just smiled while she continued to observe Riona.

“Though I will say, I thought that you would still need around 80-100 years to become a King Stage Cultivator. I never imagined that you would break through into the King Stage so quickly. You practically skipped the entire Expert Stage.”

Riona chuckled and then, she questioned,

“Just how did you do it, Thyra?”

Thyra finally realized.

‘So that was why she was being so friendly.’

She sighed in relief.

Now that she could read this woman in front of her, things were better.

A small smile appeared on Thyra's face and she replied,

"I got a little lucky."

"A little lucky? Heh, you skipped an entire cultivation stage, Thyra, that is not a 'little luck'."

Riona chuckled.

"Hahaha~"

Thyra started laughing as well.

The two women continued to laugh, however, both, the King Stage Assassin following Riona, and Nux knew that none of them were actually happy.

Finally, Riona stopped this tiresome game and continued,

"Then I am right to assume that you won't be accepting any more missions, correct?"

For more chapters, please visit

"Indeed."

Thyra nodded.

"What about this Mission?"

"I will consider accepting it if you tell me why you want to kill Raguel."

"That is not what you said befor-"

The King Stage Assassin retorted, however, before he could even complete his words, Thyra glanced at him with her icy cold eyes and spoke,

“Your words are not required here, stay silent.”

“You...” The King Stage Assassin glared at her in anger and hatred, earlier, he held himself back because he was in Thyra’s area, however, here, things were different. This was his yard.

Here, he coul-

Just as the King Stage Assassin was about to attack Thyra, Riona raised her hand and glanced at Thyra,

“Your attitude has changed quite a lot after you became the King Stage Cultivator.”

“I am not the same as before.”

Thyra shot back.

“That is good. However, keep in mind, there are always people who are stronger than you.”

“Indeed, there are always people who are stronger than you.”

Thyra smiled.

Riona’s face turned serious.

She then released her aura.

Her aura was strong, just like Ember, however, unlike Ember, whose Aura was dominant and intents to suppress her target, Riona’s Aura was dangerous, something that intents to pierce open her targets.

An Aura of Assassin, an Assassin who was stronger than Thyra.

Although Thyra was not overwhelmed by her Aura, she was a little affected.

Riona stepped forward and threatened,

“Don’t try to bite more than you can chew.”

Thyra, however, did not back down,

She stepped forward and looked into Riona’s black eyes.

There was no trace of fear in her eyes, the two women continued to look at each other but no one moved.

2 minutes passed by, however, the tension between the two women only continued to increase.

Suddenly, however, Riona stepped back.

“Alright, be honest, why do you want to know my reason? I don’t think you are the type who was ever curious about something like that.”

“I told you already, didn’t I? I am not the same as before.” Thyra replied.

Riona, however, narrowed her eyes,

“I stepped back, you should step back a little as well. Deals are made when both parties are willing to provide their best. It is never a one sided effort. Not unless you have a ridiculous advantage and trust me, you don’t have that.”

Thyra thought about this for a while and finally decided to answer Riona’s question,

“Targeting Raguel doesn’t benefit you in any way, sooner or later, he will be punished by the Skyfall Kingdom for attacking his own brother and sister. If you wanted to target someone, it would be Princess Evane. She is the one who will become the next ruler.

Killer, her would affect the Skyfall Kingdom, now that is something that benefits you. Killing Raguel, on the other hand, is useless. Rather, you would just be taking the risk of exposing yourself and would be forced to pay for the consequences if you get caught.

It is not worth it.

You are not someone who will make irrational decisions, so why this?

Why do you want to kill the First Prince so badly?”

“My reason is personal.”

# Chapter 469 - Do Not Touch My Wife.

“Why do you want to kill the First Prince so badly?”

Thyra questioned.

“My reason is personal.”

Riona spoke.

Thyra narrowed her eyes.

“I stepped back, you should step back a little as well. Deals are made when both parties are willing to provide their best. It is never a one sided effort. Not unless you have a ridiculous advantage and trust me, you don't have that.”

She then repeated Riona's own words.

“Oh? And how are you so sure that we don't have a 'ridiculous advantage'? Just in case you forget, there are 2 King Stage Cultivators standing in front of you and you are alone.”

The man standing next to Riona threatened.

Thyra glanced at the man, then completely ignored him and looked back at Riona,

“Do you really want to do this?”

She questioned.

Riona frowned. She then turned towards the Assassin and spoke coldly,

“Stay silent.”

The man snorted, however, he didn't dare go against Riona's order and turned silent.

Riona then glanced at Thyra and spoke,

“You should also know your limits, Thyra. Don't be too overconfident.”

“I will not help unless you decide to be honest with me, I have no reason to risk my life for someone who is still hiding things from me.”

Thyra replied.

“...” Riona didn't say anything.

“Alright then, it was nice meeting you again, Riona.”

Saying that, Thyra turned around.

“Lady Riona...”

The King Stage Assassin wanted to say something, however, Riona raised her hand again, signaling him to stay silent.

Then, she glanced at Thyra's back and,

“That bastard killed my daughter.”

She answered.

“Huh?”

Thyra turned around.

“That bastard killed my daughter. He will get caught, the Kingdom will punish him, he is finished, I do not care about anything like that. Whether the Skyfall Kingdom will punish him harshly or leniently, I don't care about that either.”

I want to deliver him his punishment on my own. That is the least I could do for my daughter.”

Thyra narrowed her eyes, even Nux was surprised when he heard her reason.

“Don’t act like you care, you were the one who sent your daughter away in the first place.”

Thyra retorted.

“How do you know about that?” Riona, however, narrowed her eyes.

“What are you talking about?” Thyra feigned ignorance.

This time, however, Riona didn’t control herself, she released her Aura again, this time, it was a lot more suffocating than before.

She then walked towards Thyra and questioned her in a threatening way,

“How did you know I was the one who sent my daughter away?”

Riona’s entire aura changed. It was as if everything she had shown before was just an act, now, however, she looked serious, scary even.

Thyra, however, was not intimidated.

“I have my sourc-”

She replied, however, before she even completed her sentence, Riona disappeared and with a dagger in her hand, she appeared behind Thyra, taking her by surprise.

Thyra’s eyes widened, she didn’t expect Riona would attack her like that.

This was too aggressive, the cool-minded Riona would never do something like that.

Thyra tried reacting, however, Riona was faster than she expected.

For more chapters, please visit

Just as Riona's dagger was about to touch Thyra's throat, a hand grabbed Riona's hand, stopping her attack with ease.

"Who are you? How did you get here?"

Riona questioned as she glared at Nux.

Nux, however, completely ignored the woman and turned towards Thyra.

"Are you alright?"

"I got careless." Thyra narrowed her eyes.

"Heh. That's good."

Nux chuckled.

Thyra narrowed her eyes.

"You keep your guard down since you know I am around, it feels nice."  
Nux chuckled.

Thyra smiled a little, however, before she could reply, another dagger appeared in Riona's hand and she attacked Nux.

Nux, however, blocked her attack with ease and grabbed her hand.

"Khwak!"

He then kicked Riona's stomach and pushed her away.

"Who are you!?"

Riona questioned again.

Just this small encounter was enough for her to realize that the man in front of her was not a normal King Stage Cultivator.

He was much stronger than that.

He was not an Emperor, that she knew.

He was just a ridiculously strong King Stage Cultivator.

Riona decided to take things seriously.

Dark Mist surrounded her body, Nux frowned, soon, however, he realized that this Dark Mist was not the Devouring Mist. It was just a cheap imitation. This was not his first time seeing this, Kelton used a similar technique, Riona's looked more refined, however, in the end, it was still nothing more than a cheap imitation in Nux's eyes.

“You are lucky that you are her mother. You would be lying dead on the ground if not for that.”

Nux narrowed his eyes and warned,

“Do not touch my wife.”

Riona, however, completely ignored his warning and focused on more important talk.

“You knew my daughter?”

She questioned.

“We were a little close.”

Thyra stepped forward and replied.

“Then why aren't you accepting this mission!? Weren't you close with her!? Do you not desire revenge!?”

Riona shouted.

The King Stage Assassin standing behind was shocked.

He had never seen Lady Riona acting like that.

“Did you not hear me? We were only a little close. She wouldn’t have risked life to avenge me if I had died, I am doing the same.”

Thyra shrugged.

“Who are you kidding!?! With that monster with you, killing that bastard would be as easy as killing a bug! Heck, you don’t even have to assassinate him, you can directly barge into that Duke’s house and directly kill him!”

Riona retorted.

“Heh, aren’t you speaking too much for someone who sent her daughter to Skyfall Kingdom in the first place? I mean, rather than Raguel, aren’t you the one who killed her?”

Sending a 12-year-old girl into another Kingdom was no different than killing her, don’t you think?”

Nux chuckled as he blamed Riona, at the same time, he observed her reacting with a curious look on his face.

Riona’s eyes turned bloodshot,

“You bastard! Do not spout bullshit if you don’t know anything!”

She then dashed towards Nux with a dagger that was covered with her mysterious Black Energy.

# Chapter 470 - That Mist...

“You bastard! Do not spout bullshit if you don’t know anything!”

Riona shouted in rage and then dashed towards Nux with a dagger that was covered with her mysterious Black Energy.

A normal, 2-star dagger appeared in Nux’s hand and,

\*Clank\*

He blocked Riona’s attack with a smile on his face.

“Heh, do you think you will get stronger if you get angry? What? Did you think you were the main character here?” Nux chuckled.

“Huh? What?”

Riona furrowed her brows in confusion.

“Nothing.”

After a small laugh, Nux pushed her away.

“Also, don’t try to scare me with that stupid Black energy of yours, it is nothing but a combination of Fire and Wind.”

“How do you know that?”

Riona narrowed her eyes.

“Amaya told me of course.” Nux shrugged.

Suddenly, Riona frowned.

She then glanced at Nux and narrowed her eyes,

“What was your relationship with my daughter?”

“Didn’t she tell you already?” Nux pointed at Thyra.

“Don’t think you can fool me, that girl would never reveal the secret of this technique to anyone random.”

Nux smiled disdainfully, “You talk as if you know her.”

Riona narrowed her eyes again, “Trust me, I know her better than you do.”

“I highly doubt that.”

Nux shook his head with a smile on his face.

‘If only you knew.’

Thyra, who was listening to their conversation shook her head and sighed.

“So you admit you were close to my daughter, don’t you?”

Suddenly, Riona muttered.

“...”

Nux turned silent.

He couldn’t believe that he got played so easily.

‘This bitch.’

He cursed inwardly.

He glanced at Riona again, however, rather than the winning smirk that he expected would appear on her face, her expression looked rather serious.

“You were close to my daughter, why are you hesitating even though I am giving you a chance to avenge her?”

“ ... ”

Nux didn't say anything.

“Are you perhaps scared of the retaliation? No, with your strength, there is no way you would be scared of Duke Fulvianus coming for you. Ah, so it must be her.

You are scared that Lady Astaria would go after you, aren't you?”

Riona questioned.

“...” Again, Nux didn't say anything and continued to look at Riona.

“You do not have to fear her, just like Lady Astaria, my Kingdom has an Emperor Stage Cultivator as well. After you complete this mission, you can come to live in our Kingdom. Without anything in return, of course. Rather, if you wish, I would even give you a position where even the Dukes would have to bow in front of you.

Of course, if you wish to not reveal yourself, then I won't give you any position and you can stay in seclusion, doing whatever you want...”

Then Riona glanced at Thyra and spoke,

“And with whomever you want.”

“ ... ”

Hearing those words, Thyra turned silent and Nux chuckled.

Riona really was Amaya's mother.

“Your man is too simple.”

Suddenly, Nux spoke.

“What?”

Riona questioned with a confused look on her face.

“We are not scared of anyone, neither do we need your Kingdom for refugee. As for the revenge, heh, we will avenge Amaya on our own. Your plan is just too simple.

For more chapters, please visit

Just assassinate someone who dared to attack Amaya? Heh, too simple, too easy. Death is an easy way out. I will show Raguel was hell on earth looks like.

He would regret ever laying hands on my Amaya.”

Nux spoke with a crazy smile on his face.

Riona was taken aback, soon, however, she focused on much more important work.

“My Amaya? What do you mean? What was your relationship with my daughter?”

“Heeh? Didn’t you say you know your daughter better than me? Why are you asking me then?”

Nux snorted.

He was still a little salty about before.

Riona’s face twitched in annoyance.

“Just answer the question.”

Riona ordered.

“And who do you think you are to order me around?”

Nux chuckled.

“I am her mother.”

“Heh.”

Nux laughed out loud again.

“What I did was important.”

Suddenly, Riona spoke.

Nux and Thyra narrowed their eyes,

“What do you mean?”

Nux questioned.

“...”

Riona didn't say anything for a long time.

“You are correct, I was the one who sent her away when she was just a child, I was a cruel mother who abandoned her child. I know that.

However, I was forced to do so.

If I hadn't, Amaya would have died.”

“Explain yourself.”

Nux spoke with a serious look on his face.

“Why should I? Who are you? What is your relationship with my daughter? Do you even deserve to know the truth?”

“I'll only give you one chance to explain yourself, believe me, if you don't explain yourself, you will regret it in the future.”

With such a vague reply, Riona would have walked away if it was someone else, however, since the topic was about her daughter, she didn't walk away

and started thinking.

After thinking for a while, she finally decided to reveal everything,

“In the Kin-”

However, before she could begin, Nux interrupted.

“Actually, you should come here tomorrow, and explain everything properly, with as much proof as you can, if you manage to convince me, then I promise you, something great will happen.”

“Something great?”

Riona frowned.

“Just trust me.”

Nux smiled mysteriously.

Riona frowned.

“Be sure to prepare well, Riona. Remember, tomorrow, same place, same time”

After he said that, Dark Mist seeped out of his body and covered his and Thyra’s body. A few seconds later, the Dark Mist disappeared and Nux and Thyra were nowhere to be seen.

“Where did they go!?”

The King Stage Assassin spoke in panic.

He couldn’t believe that two people, who were standing right in front of him just... disappeared!

This was ridiculous!

She turned towards Riona to see if she knew anything, however, the woman was just too shocked to say anything.

“Lady Riona?”

The man frowned, what they saw was shocking, but for Lady Riona to just stay in one place with her mouth opened in shock...

What he didn't know was that Riona had different thoughts in her mind.

“That Mist... It... it w-was the c-curse...”

# Chapter 471 - She Loves Her More Than Her Own Life.

The next day passed by very quickly, Riona spend her entire day preparing for her meeting with Nux.

No matter what, she had to talk to Nux and win his trust.

There were many questions in her mind, especially after what she saw yesterday and only Nux could answer her questions.

With a nervous look on her face, Riona walked to where she met Nux and Thyra yesterday. This time, the one following her was not the King Stage Assassin, but a Grand Master Stage Cultivator.

A move to show her trust in Nux and Thyra.

For her to go in front of 2 King Stage Cultivators alone, it required guts. Of course, this was all just for a show. Riona had met Nux and even fought against him for a while, she knew how strong he was, bringing another King Stage Cultivator won't make much of a difference, however, as they say, it is the thought that counts.

Well, the man who followed her was not normal either. A man Nux has seen quite a few times but has avoided every time.

Kelton.

Amaya's butler.

"I hope you are prepared." When his eyes fell on her, Nux smiled.

"..."

Thyra didn't say anything and continued to observe the woman in front of her.

“Let's not waste much time and continue, I am sure you have many questions in your mind, I will answer all those questions if your so-called explanation is convincing enough.”

Riona nodded, she didn't wish to waste much time either.

“As you already know, Amaya was born with an incurable curse. Her entire body was filled with a certain Dark Mist that doesn't allow her to cultivate, forcing her to live like a mortal. However, in truth, Amaya wasn't the first person who was born with that curse.

In truth, that Dark Mist is not a curse but a physique.

Devouring Mist Physique.

A Physique that many descendants of the Skadi Family inherit. They call the inheritors Physique Holders.

It is something that should have been a gift, something that should have made the Skadi Family the strongest family there is. However, even after searching for generations, we never managed to find a way to cultivate this Physique.

For us, this physique was nothing more than a curse to us and the Physique Holders are considered harbingers of misfortune.

The hatred that the Skadi Family has for this physique is unimaginable. It is to the point where they kill the Physique Holders in order to show their dissatisfaction to the Sky about the Physique.

A foolish custom, I know.

However, even with all the power I have, there is nothing I can do to change this.

Stopping the King was not a problem, however, Lord Amletus, the Emperor of the Skadi Kingdom is not someone I can go against.

If he had found out about Amaya's Physique, he would have killed her for sure.

I could have faked Amaya's death and could have allowed her to live somewhere else, however, this was too risky. I may have power in this Kingdom, however, unlike Lord Amletus, my power is not absolute.

I have many enemies that would do anything they can to destroy me.

There was no way for me completely hide Amaya inside the Kingdom, one day, her physique would have been revealed and once that happens, she would have been executed.

Therefore, the only option I had was to 'use' Amaya."

"That's why you 'sold' her to the Skyfall Kingdom."

"Indeed, since we got what we wanted without 'giving away' anything, Lord Amletus, who now knew about Amaya's Physique made an exception and decided not to kill her."

"So you planned everything and sent her away because you didn't wish for her to be executed?"

"Yes."

"Then why didn't you say anything to Amaya?"

"How could I talk to the harbinger of misfortune, that girl only had one use, once I used her, I don't care about her anymore."

For more chapters, please visit

Riona replied and Nux understood.

"So that was the persona you opted."

“If I talked with her, even in secret, someone would have found out, and again, things could have gotten worse.”

Riona replied, then, she lowered her head and smiled bitterly, “I regret not talking to her...”

Thinking about it, Riona clenched her fist in anger.

‘If only I could talk to her.’

“And I presume this man is the ‘proof’ of everything you said?”

Nux questioned as he glanced at Kelton who was wearing a mask.

“Yes, if you were close to Amaya, you must have met him.”

Amaya nodded and at the same time, she signaled Kelton to remove his mask.

“Kelton, long time no see.”

Nux smiled.

“Master Nux...”

Kelton greeted back.

“Kelton was my most loyal subordinate, I sent him away so that he could protect Amaya from all the harm and take care of her.”

“Heh, it doesn’t seem like he is very good at his job.” Nux chuckled.

Kelton clenched his fists in anger.

No, he was not angry at Nux, he was angry at himself.

“I deserve death.”

He spoke.

‘Ask if Kelton reported everything I did to her.’

Suddenly, Nux heard a voice in his head.

“Did Kelton report everything Amaya did to you?”

Nux questioned.

“He did, although I wasn’t there on my own, as a mother, I had to keep an eye on my daughter. Of course, if what she was doing was something that the Skadi Kingdom shouldn’t know, I kept it a secret.

Before I a Queen, I am a mother.”

Riona answered.

“Heh, so you were a spy.” Nux glanced at Kelton and smirked,

“No wonder I didn’t like you from the beginning.”

“I was not a spy, I never betrayed Lady Amaya. Lady Riona would never harm her.”

“And what if she did?”

Nux questioned.

“I have seen how miserable she has been when she sent her daughter away with my own eyes, Lady Riona is simply incapable of hurting Lady Amaya.

She loves her more than her own life.”

# Chapter 472 - You... You Aren'T A Necromancer,Are You?

“I have seen how miserable she has been when she sent her daughter away with my own eyes, Lady Riona is simply incapable of hurting Lady Amaya.

She loves her more than her own life.” Kelton answered with a solemn look on his face.

“It still doesn’t change the fact that you betrayed me.”

Suddenly, another person wearing an oversized cloak that hid her face walked in.

Kelton’s eyes widened in surprise, with his trembling fingers, he pointed at the woman who had just walked in and stuttered,

“L-L-Lady A-Amaya.”

“...”

The lady didn’t say anything.

“Y-You are L-Lady Amaya aren’t y-you?”

Kelton questioned.

“...”

Again, the cloaked lady didn’t reply.

“Amaya!”

On the other hand, Riona didn’t wait for anything, without any confirmation, she directly dashed toward the cloaked lady. However, before

she could hug her, the lady disappeared and appeared behind Nux.

She then revealed her face and the moment Riona's and Kelton's eyes fell on her face, their eyes widened in surprise.

“Lady Amaya!”

“Amaya!”

They both called out in joy, however, just as they were about to rush towards her again, two swords appeared in Nux's hands and he glanced at Riona with a cold look on his face,

“I have already warned you before, do not touch my woman. That was the first and last warning, don't break it. Your end won't be good.”

He then glanced at Kelton and narrowed his eyes,

“Traitors should stay away as well.”

“I am not a-”

Kelton wanted to retort, however, when he saw Amaya looking at her with a cold look on her face, he stayed silent.

Even his master was doubting him.

What could be worse?

“I didn't think that you would reveal yourself.”

After dealing with the two, Nux turned towards Amaya and spoke. Then, a strange expression appeared on his face and he questioned.

“What's with the strange cloak though...?”

A small blush appeared on Amaya's face and she pointed toward a certain tree.

“What? It looks cool, doesn’t it?” Edda pouted.

“I agree, it fits the situation well.” Skyla nodded with an excited smile on her face.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Nux, Amaya, and Thyra turned silent.

These two women were really enjoying themselves, weren’t they?

“Well... it does look kind of good... it has a different appeal.”

Nux admitted.

Amaya wearing an oversized black cloak gave her a strange, new charm.

Hearing his words, a small smile appeared on Amaya’s face, however, that smile soon disappeared when she heard Riona’s excited voice.

“You are alive!”

“To your disappointment, I am.”

Amaya replied coldly.

“What are you talking about? Why would I be disappointed? This is the greatest day of my life!”

“Good for you.”

Amaya replied.

For more chapters, please visit

“Amaya, my lovely daughter.” Riona smiled widely and started walking towards Amaya.

Nux, however, stepped in.

“Get away, I need to talk to my daughter.”

“Your daughter doesn’t wish to talk to you.”

Nux replied.

Riona’s eyes fell on Amaya and she finally noticed her expression.

There was no trace of love in those eyes, Amaya’s cold, emotionless eyes looked like she was looking at a stranger.

“Amaya...”

Riona called in a weak voice.

“Please don’t call me like we are closed, I barely remember your face.”

“Amaya, I know you are angry that I abandoned you, but I had a reason-”

“Yes, I know, I would have died if you hadn’t done that, I heard all that. Thank you for saving my life, are you happy now? Or would you like to be compensated in any other way? Is monetary compensation alright with you? How much do you want?

Make sure it is a reasonable price, alright? I am not the one who asked you to save me after all.”

Amaya’s sharp words pierced Riona’s heart, the more she spoke, the more Riona was hurt. Riona’s expression changed, her eyes turned moist, she lost all the power she had and fell on her knees.

Or, she was about to, however, before she could, Skylia appeared next to her and supported her.

“Alright, this is too much, Sister Amaya. You can’t treat your mother like this. She may have abandoned you, but as she said, she had a perfectly valid reason. Don’t be so unreasonable.”

“ ... ”

Amaya turned silent.

She knew she was acting unreasonably, this was something she would normally not do, however, for some reason, she... she couldn’t take a logical step.

She wanted to talk to this woman in front of her as well, however, at the same time, she wished to never see her face again.

A conflicting thought.

“Alright, don’t put the blame on Amaya.”

Nux placed his hand on Amaya’s shoulder and spoke up.

“It wasn’t Riona’s fault, however, it wasn’t Amaya’s fault either, Riona made a decision to abandon her daughter to protect her on her own, now as her daughter, Amaya has the right to decide what she wants on her own.

Whether she wants to talk to Riona or not, she has a right to choose that on her own.”

“Indeed, I agree with Nux. Amaya isn’t at fault either.”

Feeling left out, Edda deactivated her [Conceal] and walked in as well.

Seeing another woman walking in, Riona was surprised.

However, Kelton’s reaction was even more extreme than hers.

“Y-You are Edda! The Head Maid!”

“Oh, it’s been a while since I heard someone addressing me like that.”

Edda spoke with a surprised look on her face.

“Y-You! You should be dead! How are you alive!?”

Kelton questioned in surprise and horror.

Seeing this reaction, Edda pouted,

“Huuuh? Why did you only have this reaction when you saw me? Why didn’t you have the same reaction when Amaya walked in front of you?

Why didn’t you ask the same thing when it came to her?

She should be dead as well, doesn’t she?”

Kelton and Riona finally realized.

They were so happy to see Amaya standing right in front of them that they completely forgot something.

Amaya should have been dead...

How...

How is she alive?

Suddenly, Kelton’s eyes fell on Nux.

“You... You aren’t a Necromancer, are you?”

# Chapter 473 - Don'T You Dare.

“You... You aren't a Necromancer, are you?”

Suddenly, Kelton pointed at Nux and questioned with a doubtful and fearful look on his face.

“ ... ”

Nux turned silent.

He didn't know how to reply to that.

“Pfft!”

Thyra, who was standing beside Nux couldn't help but laugh out loud.

“Indeed. He is a Necromancer.”

Edda nodded.

“We were killed, however, with his magical powers, he turned us into his undeads. Woohoo~

We are undeads now~~”

Edda did a 360 rotation and acted dramatically.

Soon, Skyla joined Edda as well and although Thyra didn't join, from her expression, it was clear that she was having fun.

“ ... ”

Nux glanced at his women with a deadpan look on his face.

“”Woohoo~ Woohoo~~””

“O-”

Nux wanted to call out, however, before he, Riona retorted.

“Stop this Nonsense. Amaya is not undead. She is perfectly fine, her heartbeat and breathing are completely normal. She is a perfectly fine human.”

“...”

Kelton turned silent.

Seeing that he realized the truth, Edda and Skyla stopped as well.

Riona then walked towards Nux and bowed her head.

“Thank you for saving my daughter.”

“I did not save her. She did it herself, those weak assassins weren’t her match.”

Riona frowned,

“What do you mean? Those assassins were Grand Master Stage Cultivators, she couldn’t possibly fight against the-” Suddenly, Riona realized.

“Can’t you see? She is a King Stage Cultivator. Grand Master Stage Cultivators are nothing in her eyes.”

“But she couldn’t use her cultivation because her Curse wouldn’t let her.”  
Kelton frowned.

Riona’s eyes widened,

“It was not a curse to begin with!”

‘She is indeed intelligent, I now know where you got that intelligence from.’ Nux spoke to Amaya through his connection.

‘Hmph! She is still too slow, she needed so many hints to figure out something so simple. Don’t compare me with her.’

Amaya snorted.

‘Of course, the child is always better than the parent.’

Nux nodded continuously.

‘...’

Amaya didn’t reply.

“Amaya, you found a way to cultivate your physique! This is so amazing! If we give this way to Lord Amletus, then the Physique Holders will not be considered as Harbingers of Misfortune, rather, they will be praised and raised with love and respect!

Lord Amletus would definitely accept you, he might even make you the next queen!

Great! This is just great!”

Riona failed to control her emotions.

Everything that was happening was too good to be true.

Her daughter was alive, now her daughter has even found a way to cultivate her physique! Her daughter can now live with her, she can make up all the time she has been unable to spend with her! She can definitely spoil her little princess as much as she wanted.

Seeing the smile on Riona’s face, Nux was taken aback.

‘What’s with that beautiful smile?’

He couldn’t help but think inwardly.

‘Don’t you dare.’

And as if knowing what he was thinking, Amaya warned.

For more chapters, please visit

‘I... I didn’t do anything!’

Nux countered.

‘Now now, you can’t blame him, Amaya, just look at the smile on that woman’s face, that is just too beautiful. It shows how much this means to her.’

Thyra, who somehow knew what Nux and Amaya were talking about joining in.

Amaya’s face twitched, she then looked at Riona and spoke coldly,

“And who said I would share any details about what I found with that Amletus or whoever he was?”

Riona’s smile disappeared, and soon a bitter smile appeared on her face,

“The Kingdom abandoned you when you needed it, I guess it is natural that you wouldn’t want to share your technique with the Kingdom.

I thought I could finally spend some time with you...”

“Huh? Who said that we have to share the technique for you to spend some time with Sister Amaya?”

Suddenly, Skyla questioned.

Riona turned towards Skyla and frowned.

“What do you mean?”

“I know you are a queen so you must be busy, however, I am sure you can take some time out for your daughter, right? We can stay on the outskirts of

the Skadi Kingdom for a few days. I am sure you can secretly sneak out of the Palace and spend some time with your daughter. What do you think?”

Skyla questioned.

Riona’s expression brightened up.

She grabbed Skyla’s hands and questioned,

“Will you really do that?”

“Of course! Why won’t we?”

Skyla nodded with a bright smile on her face.

“Alright! Kelton, buy the biggest mansion in the Shikari Village, clean it up and prepare it within 30 minutes.”

Without wasting even a single second, Riona ordered.

“A-As you command, Lady Riona.”

Kelton nodded and then disappeared.

“I didn’t agree to any of this.”

Amaya narrowed her eyes.

“Sister Amaya...” Skyla called out with a kind smile that didn’t look kind at all.

“What...?” Amaya questioned.

“You agree, right?”

Skyla questioned.

‘Amaya, I think you should give her a chance. Circumstances parted you two away, however, everything is not over yet. I am not trying to force you

to like her, but you can at least talk to her a little, right?

How about you start everything anew? Try forgetting everything and just treat it like a normal meeting. Just let things go by naturally and see what happens.'

Nux suggested.

Amaya thought about it and then, she finally came up with an answer,

“Alright... We will stay here for a few days, but make sure that no one knows about you and only come at a specific time, don't just pop up randomly in front of our house. Also, don't stay for more than an hour.”

Hearing her answer, a big, wide smile appeared on Riona's face.

Unable to contain her overflowing joy, Riona hugged Skyla, lifted her up, and started rotating like a top.

“Thank you so much! I would never forget this favor! Thank you!”

“Don't mention it!”

Skyla, who was picked up like she was a doll replied.

Suddenly, Riona increased her speed and,

“Thank you so much!!

Hahahaha~”

She started laughing.

“Her smile really is beautiful.”

Nux commented.

“Don't you dare.”

Amaya warned.

# Chapter 474

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

A figure wearing an oversized black cloak knocked at the doors of a Mansion.

A few seconds later, the door was opened by a beautiful woman with auburn-colored hair.

“Oh! You are here!”

Skyla spoke cheerfully, then with a big smile on her face, she welcomed,

“Please come in!”

The cloaked figure then walked into the mansion and without wasting any seconds, she removed the cloak, revealing her beautiful face.

The beautiful woman then started looking around, soon, her black eyes shined when her eyes fell on another beautiful woman who was sitting on a sofa with an emotionless look on her face.

“Amaya! I am here!”

The woman chimed and rushed towards her daughter.

Without any approval, she sat beside her daughter, hugged her, and then placed her head on her shoulders.

“I missed you!”

The woman spoke.

Amaya, however, didn't show any reaction, other than slight discomfort.

“Ahem Ahem.”

However, just as Amaya was about to get away from her mother, Skylia coughed.

Amaya glanced at Skylia and seeing her looking at her with a ‘kind’ smile on her face, Amaya sighed.

This little sigh was enough for Riona to realize that her daughter had accepted her advances, overjoyed, she started patting Amaya’s head gently.

“ ... ”

Amaya didn’t say anything.

On one hand, she was feeling uncomfortable because she was so close to her mother but on the other hand, she was also feeling very comfortable under her mother’s gentle pats.

She could feel her mother’s love through these pats, it was a comforting feeling where she felt protected and loved, however, at the same time, the fact that she couldn’t enjoy this warmth for so many years because of this very person haunted her as well.

“So? How was your day?”

Riona questioned.

“ ... ”

But again, Amaya didn’t answer.

Seeing how things were proceeding, Skylia sighed.

It can’t go like this. The walls that Amaya had built around her were too strong, she had to do something.

“It was nothing great, we all just cultivated.”

Skyla decided to join the conversation.

Seeing what Skyla was trying to do, Riona couldn't help but smile and she nodded at Skyla with a thankful look on her face.

Skyla just smiled back and the two of them continued.

“You people are still cultivating even though you are in another country? Why not try moving around? Have you eaten the food here? I don't want to act arrogantly, however, I can proudly say the cuisines our country serves are much better than whatever you people eat in the Skyfall Kingdom.

How about it? Would you guys like to take a look around and try anything? How about we go out right now?”

Riona questioned.

“We were planning to roam around with Nux.”

This time, Amaya was the one who answered.

“Hmm? We can always take him with us, can't we?”

Riona suggested. At the same time, she was happy that Amaya finally answered one of her questions.

“First, he is not here, second, we were planning to go with Nux, alone. Only us lovers.”

“What is your relationship with that man?”

Suddenly, Riona questioned.

Well, it was not like she didn't already have a slight idea, however, she still had to make sure.

“Is it not clear enough? We are lovers, of course.”

Amaya answered.

Hearing her answer, Skyla, Edda and Thyra smiled as well.

“All of you...?”

Riona questioned with a frown on her face.

“Yep, all of us. Though I am still the favorite.”

Amaya answered.

“Haah? Since when were you the favorite? It is clear that I am the favorite, he spends the most time with me.” Thyra stepped in.

“Heh, kids, do you guys even know about his deepest, darkest desires? I am the only one who knows that and it is because I am the favorite.” Edda stepped in as well.

“No, that is because you a pervert and trust me, I know all his desires.”

Thyra snorted.

“Sisters, look, I love you all and I really value you people, however, you should not lie to Lady Riona like this, just tell her the truth, I am the favorite.”

Skyla wasn't going to back down either.

“Hmph! Delusional.”

Amaya snorted.

“It is you who is delusional.” Thyra retorted.

The women continued to fight with each other and Riona, who was the one who initiated the fight couldn't believe what she was seeing.

Four incredibly beautiful women, all King Stage Cultivators, are fighting with each other for a man.

Wait... suddenly, Riona realized something.

All these women in front of her were King Stage Cultivators. All of them were powerhouses, and all these women loved a single man. Not only that, but the man in question was even more monstrous and was stronger than any King Stage Cultivator she has ever met.

Isn't it the world's strongest harem!?

To think her daughter belongs to the world's strongest harem.

Riona's eyes then fell on Amaya, who was still fighting with others, and even though she was fighting, Riona could feel that Amaya was happy.

At the very least, she was expressing her emotions, completely different compared to when she is with her.

Another thought popped into Riona's mind and she smiled,

“So you are saying that all of you are his favorite?”

Riona questioned.

“I never said that, I said I am the favorite.”

Amaya turned towards her mother and replied.

“And that is clearly a lie.”

Thyra snorted.

“Indeed.”

Edda and Skyla nodded.

“You-”

Amaya wanted to retort, however, Riona jumped in.

“Stop, I have a way to decide who is the favorite.”

She can't allow these women to fight with each other and completely ignore her presence as they did last time.

She had to mix in with them.

“What's the method?” Thyra questioned.

“Let me ask a few questions and let's see who answers them first.”

“”””Heh, easy.””””

The three women spoke at the same time.

“So, question one, what is Nux's favorite colo-”

“”””Black.””””

The women answered at the same time and Riona finally realized, this was going to be harder than she thought.

Of course, thinking about it, a smile appeared on her face.

The harder it is, the longer it will take and the longer it takes, the happier she would be.

# Chapter 475

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

,m Riona, Amya, Edda, Thyra, and Skyla turned silent.

Especially Riona, she couldn't believe that all these women would know the answer to every single question she asked and would answer before she could even finish the question.

Just... just how is that possible.

She was sure that if it was her and the questions were about that idiotic King, she would struggle to answer even one question, the same would be true for all the other consorts and concubines.

“Ughh... I think I need to change the questions...”

Riona muttered.

“Indeed, you should ask better questions, even idiots like them would be able to answer questions like these.” Amaya nodded.

Thyra, Skyla and Edda snorted.

“Yes, ask about the night sessions. It would be clear who the winner is.”

Edda spoke.

“ ... ”

Riona couldn't help but stare at this tanned skin woman.

“Yes, night questions sound good, I need to show you all just how close I and Nux are.”

Amaya nodded.

Riona couldn't believe that her genius daughter would allow something like this.

“Night questions it is then. Hmph, none of you has ever done it inside a war tent, have you?” Thyra snorted.

Riona's eyes widened in shock.

Inside a war tent!? What!?

Also, is this the same serious Thyra who never fails her mission and kills without mercy!? Just what happened to her?

“Hmph! That is nothing! I know a lot more than you people! Lady Riona, please ask the questions!”

Skyla joined in as well.

‘Even this naïve looking girl...’

Riona couldn't believe her eyes.

“Yes, ask the questions.”

Edda spoke.

The women looked at Riona with their utmost serious expressions.

Riona was overwhelmed...

“I-I don’t think I would a-ask anything about t-that...”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

The women turned silent.

“Useless.”

Amaya snorted silently but Riona’s ears caught on.

“B-but don’t worry, I have a different set of questions.”

“What questions?”

Amaya questioned.

“So? Who was the first? As you guys know, the first to join the harem always has a special place in the man’s heart. So? Who among you is the first.”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Again, the women turned silent.

Riona frowned.

What happened? Why aren’t they answering quickly as they did before?  
Did she ask the wrong question?

Wait...

Suddenly, another possibility popped up in Riona's mind and she widened her eyes,

"Don't tell me all of you did it together!"

"What!? Of course not! What the hell are you talking about!?"

Amaya retorted with a red face.

"Then...?"

Riona frowned.

"None of us were first."

Amaya replied with an annoyed look on her face.

"The first was Felberta."

Thyra spoke. Her expression wasn't good either.

"If you compare the four of us, then I was the first!" Skyla smiled proudly.

"First doesn't even matter. The question is not about the first, it is about who is the closest!" Edda snorted.

"Indeed."

Thyra agreed.

"Yes, it was a stupid question."

Amaya commented.

"Wait." Suddenly, Riona paused.

"This Felberta you are talking about. Where is she?"

“She is not here,” Amaya replied.

Riona realized and a sad look appeared on her face,

“I am sorry about that...”

Amaya understood that her mother misunderstood.

“She is not dead. She is just not here, she is in the Skyfall Kingdom, but you can rest assured, she is not the favorite, the favorite is me.”

Amaya commented.

“Again, you ar-”

Thyra wanted to counter, however, this time, Riona didn't let her.

“There are more women other than you four?”

This bastard...

Does he dare to go after more women even though he has four King Stage Cultivators who love him with all their heart?

Just how greedy can he be?

“As much as I hate to admit it, there are more of these bitches around him and he loves them all. Not more than me though.” Amaya snorted.

“...how many women exactly...?”

Riona questioned with an unsure look on her face.

“There are Nine.”

“NINE!?”

“Hmm? Why are you so shocked, normally, Kings have more than 20 wives, don't they? Are you saying my Nux is any less than a King?”

Amaya narrowed her eyes and questioned.

“...”

Riona didn't know what to say.

“As much as I hate the fact that he is surrounded by so many women, the number is not that big for you to react like this.”

Amaya spoke.

“No... you don't get it. Kings have more than 20 wives because all those wives are useless. How many of them do you think are King Stage Cultivators, take that idiot Roman Skadi for example, other than me, none of his wives are Expert Stage Cultivators, let alone King.

The same goes for that Ricardus Bastard, he only has 1 King Stage Cultivator as his wife, well, if we add yo-”

“I am not his wife. I only belong to Nux.”

Amaya narrowed her eyes.

“R-Right. You are not. See? He only has 1 King Stage Cultivator as his wife, you people, on the other hand, are all King Stage Cultivators. As top experts of the world, you should have your own self-respect, don't share your man with random women. Fight for yourself.”

“What are you talking about?”

Suddenly, Thyra questioned.

“Huh?” Riona frowned.

“Random women? Woman, you used those words right now but don't use that in front of him. He won't tolerate it.”

Thyra warned.

“ ... ”

Riona turned silent.

“Also, the ‘random women’ you are talking about...

All of them are King Stage Cultivators.”

Thyra revealed.

“WHAT!?”

Riona’s eyes widened in surprise.

Seeing her reaction, a small smile appeared on Thyra’s face.

She would have never revealed their strength if it was before, however, with Emperors coming into the picture, they all have decided to not hide themselves.

Once Evane becomes the next queen, they would have to come out as well.

Whatever Herms was planning was not something they can take lightly.

They couldn’t hide forever.

And since they were already planning to come out, there was no point in hiding everything from Riona.

Plus, after revealing this small information, they can find out whether they can actually trust Riona or if everything she has been doing all this time was just an act.

“N-N-Nine K-King Stage Cultivators?”

# Chapter 476

“N-N-Nine K-King Stage Cultivators!?”

Riona finally reacted.

Nine King Stage Cultivators!

This is absurd.

Even if she counts the Cultivators that are hidden from the world and only act in secret, the entire Skadi Kingdom would only have around 10 King Stage Cultivators.

And here, Nux alone has Nine King Stage Cultivators in his harem, adding him into the count, and they would have 10 King Stage Cultivators.

The same number of King Stage Cultivators the Skadi Kingdom has...

“This doesn’t make sense! Why would you all stick to a single man? No matter where you go, you would be respected, you can get literally anything you want, why would you settle fo-”

“Tsk, you would never understand.”

Amaya snorted.

She already realized what Riona was talking about and didn’t wish to hear it.

“Indeed.”

Thyra agreed.

“Hehe~ We can have anything we want, however, nothing in this world is better than having Nux~”

Skyla chuckled.

“...”

Riona was taken aback.

She couldn't understand.

Just what kind of strange magic has this man done on her daughter and these women? Why are they so attached to him?

“So... so where is the man we have been talking about for all this time?”

She questioned.

“Bloodhill Wilderness.”

Amaya answered.

“Huh? What is he doing there?”

Riona frowned.

“Training.”

Amaya replied with a sad look on her face.

Recently, Nux has been too absorbed in his training, he didn't neglect his women, however, the time he spent with them has certainly been affected.

Even now, when all of them were here, rather than going out with them, he disappeared and went into the Bloodhill Wilderness.

No one knew why he was suddenly being so serious, he would only smile whenever any of his women asks about this and wouldn't reply.

The women found it strange, however, after a while, they accepted it.

“Well, I guess it is good for us.”

Riona muttered.

“What do you mean?”

Thyra narrowed her eyes as she glanced at Riona.

Riona looked at Thyra and then replied,

“The Beasts in the Bloodhill Wilderness has been acting up for a while, the frequency of their attacks has increased without any apparent reasons, many adventurers died under their hands, many adventurers have complained that they have seen Beasts that shouldn't be inside the Outer Region roaming around.

The Kingdom was forced to send a few soldiers to deal with these Beasts, the situation is under control right now, but no one knows what will happen in the future.”

Riona revealed.

Hearing her words, Amaya nodded,

“It is not the Skadi Kingdom alone, Skyfall Kingdom and Woods Dynasty are facing the same problem, knowing anything about the Solid Earth Kingdom is currently difficult, however, I believe that they must be facing the same problem as well.”

“Since the Bloodhill Wilderness is connected to all 4 Kingdoms, assuming that is wrong.”

Riona nodded.

“Therefore, since Nux has gone into the Wilderness, he would for sure kill a few beasts, which would help my soldiers directly or indirectly.”

“Heh, the soldiers would help him as well.” Thyra chuckled.

“What do you mean?” Riona questioned.

“Nothing.” Thyra chuckled and then she decided to change the topic.

“Do you know the reason why the Beasts are acting like that?”

Riona, however, shook her head,

“According to our Kingdom’s history, something like this has never happened before, so we have no clue.”

“Why not send some strong people to investigate?”

Edda questioned.

Suddenly, a serious look appeared on Riona’s face. She looked at the women who were looking at her with curious looks on their faces, she started considering whether she should talk about this or not.

She then glanced at Amaya, who was looking at her with the same, curious expression, and in the end,

‘Fuck it, it doesn’t matter.’

She decided to tell everything she knew.

Nothing matter more than her daughter. She wasn’t planning to spoil her relationship with Amaya before even managing to rebuild it.

She would give her all the love she had, and this time, she would do it directly, without hiding anything.

“Bloodhill Wilderness isn’t simple.”

“What do you mean?”

Amaya questioned.

Seeing that she was interested in this conversation, a small smile appeared on Riona’s face and she continued,

“Most of the Secrets that the Bloodhill Wilderness contains are inside the Forbidden region, the reason why the beasts are reacting strangely might also be related to the Forbidden Region, however, we can’t just send people inside the Forbidden Region.”

“Why? The Beasts are Killing adventurers and soldiers, why not send a King Stage Cultivator to investigate? It would be better if he or she can find a way to stop all this, correct?”

Thyra questioned.

Riona shook her head,

“As I said, it is not that simple. No one is allowed to go inside the Forbidden Region, and the King Stage Cultivators are not excluded from that rule.”

“Even the King Stage Cultivators are forbidden to go inside?” Skyla questioned with a surprised look on her face.

Suddenly, Riona’s expression changed.

“Wait, you said that Nux went inside the Bloodhill Wilderness, right?”

“Yes, he did.”

“He is not planning to go inside the Forbidden Region, correct?”

Riona questioned.

“Hmm, I don’t think so...” Amaya shook her head.

Nux never talked about going inside Forbidden Region, he didn’t look particularly interest-

“He might.”

Suddenly, Thyra spoke with a serious look on her face.

“When we visited the Bloodhill Wilderness last time, he showed some interest in going inside the Forbidden Region and at that time, he was just a Grand Master Stage Cultivator. If it is right now, there are chances that he might go inside the Forbidden Region.”

Thyra talked about the time when Nux and his women visited the Wilderness for a ‘date’, and to collect points for Amaya’s technique.

Hearing her words, Riona’s eyes widened in horror.

“We have to stop him, let’s go. It is not too late. We can catch him if we leave right now.”

“What happened?”

Amaya questioned.

“Don’t ask, just come with me. If he enters the Forbidden Region,

The Chances that he would come back are zero!”

# Chapter 477

“Don’t ask, just come with me. If he enters the Forbidden Region,

The Chances that he would come back are zero!”

Riona replied with a panicked look on her face, she then quickly grabbed Amaya’s hand and tried to pull her outside the mansion.

In truth, she wasn’t really worried about Nux.

She was actually worried about Amaya. This daughter of hers seems to truly love this man, if something were to happen to him, she knows that Amaya would be heartbroken.

Riona, however, wasn’t planning on letting them happen.

She would save Nux before something could happen.

She would save him no matter what.

“???”

Suddenly, Riona frowned.

She turned her head and questioned,

“Why aren’t you moving?”

Even though she was trying to pull her, Amaya didn’t move, rather, she was using force to stop her as well.

A confused look appeared on Riona’s face, she then glanced at other women inside the room, and seeing calm looks on their faces, her frown deepened.

Why aren't these women affected? Why do they look so calm? Didn't they love Nux? The Love of their life was in danger, how could they be so calm?

She couldn't understand.

"Don't worry, I have already called him, he is coming back. He didn't step into the Forbidden Region yet. You can calm down."

Amaya replied.

However, at the same time, she frowned inwardly.

Why was her mother acting like that? Why was she panicking when Nux was in danger? Wait...

Suddenly, another possibility popped into Amaya's mind.

She then glanced at Riona with a hostile look on her face.

"What happened?"

Riona tilted her head in confusion.

"Nothing."

Amaya shook her head.

She was still not sure yet.

She would need to wait and find more clues before acting.

"No, leave that, what do you mean he is coming back? How do you know he hasn't stepped into the Forbidden Region?" Riona questioned.

"Secret."

With a playful smile on her face, Amaya placed a finger on her lips and muttered.

“Amaya, it is not the time to joke around, Nx’s life is actually in danger.”

Riona warned with a serious look on her face.

“Hmm? Why is my life in danger?”

Suddenly, the doors of the Mansion opened up and a handsome man walked in.

“Nux!”

Skyla didn’t miss the chance, she jumped on Nux with an excited look on her face.

Nux caught the girl and hugged her gently. He then started patting her head and Skyla closed her eyes, enjoying the treatment.

“Y-You... weren’t you in the Bloodhill Wilderness?” Riona questioned with a surprised look on her face.

“I was, but then they called me so I returned,” Nux replied.

“Called you?”

Riona frowned.

“What? You don’t know about this?”

Nux frowned.

“Know about what?”

Riona was now confused.

“About the connection,” Nux answered.

“What connection?”

“The connection of love, of course.”

“What in the hell is that?” Riona had a strange expression on her face.

“ ... ”

Nux just stared at her in silence.

“What are you keeping the suspense for? Just tell me what it is.”

Riona spoke.

“Well, when you love your partner with all your heart, you can hear their voice in your mind no matter how far apart the two of you are. This is called the Connection of love.

Didn’t you know about it? I thought everyone knew about it.”

Nux spoke with an innocent look on his face.

Seeing his expression, Riona frowned.

Something like this existed? Why did she not know about it?

“Alright, you can stop your games.”

Suddenly, Amaya stepped in.

A smile appeared on Nux’s face.

“It was fun seeing her reaction.”

Nux chuckled.

Riona’s clenched her fist in frustration.

“You...”

“Well, I can deny that.”

Amaya nodded.

“Amaya?” Riona opened her mouth in shock.

She couldn't believe that her daughter betrayed her like that.

“Alright, let's not talk about useless things right now,” Nux stepped forward, he then glanced at Riona and questioned with a serious look on his face.

“Amaya told me that you said that The Forbidden Region inside the Bloodhill Wilderness is dangerous, why do you say that?”

Riona, however, was not some random woman without any ability to think,

“What do you mean useless topic!? I need to know. How did you return? Also, how do you know about what I told Amaya, you weren't even in the room.

No, that's not it, yesterday as well, all your women, even Amaya, just appeared out of nowhere. How is that possible? How could I not sense any of them?”

Riona questioned.

Suddenly, a playful smile appeared on Nux's face as he placed his finger on his lips and replied,

“Secret.”

Riona noticed that Nux's and Amaya's reactions were too similar to each other. Again, she was taken aback.

“Alright, now answer my question,” Nux spoke.

“You didn't answer mine,” Riona complained.

“This is not something we can answer, we already told you about things that we have kept secret from the rest of the world, I believe that should be enough for you to trust us.”

Amaya stepped up.

In front of her daughter, Riona didn't have any choice but to give up.

"I would have told you anyway..."

Riona spoke with a dissatisfied look on her face.

Seeing her like that, Nux couldn't help but smile inwardly.

'She actually loves her daughter.'

"Well, if I am being completely honest with you, even I don't know much about the Forbidden Region, I have not visited it.

Lord Amletus warned me not to enter the Forbidden Region."

"Lord Amletus?" Nux frowned.

If an Emperor was warning about something, it has to be a serious issue.

After meeting Astaria and feeling the difference in power between the two of them, Nux was overwhelmed.

He considered himself to be strong, however, in front of Astaria, he was nothing.

Actually, he was proud that he was able to maintain his sanity and act normally in front of that monster.

Yes, Nux was affected by that monster.

And if someone who has a similar strength to that monster was saying something, he had to take it seriously.

"Yes, I don't know the details, but Lord Amletus said that let alone us, even if he himself went into the Forbidden Region,

He wasn't 100% certain about returning alive."

# Chapter 478

“Yes, I don’t know the details, but Lord Amletus said that let alone us, even if he himself went into the Forbidden Region,

He wasn’t 100% certain about returning alive.”

Riona spoke with a serious look on her face and hearing her words, Nux and his women turned silent.

“A 7 Star beast...”

Nux narrowed his eyes and commented.

“Most probably, and as you know, Beasts of the same level are stronger than the humans... that is the reason why even he is uncertain.”

Thyra nodded.

Riona, however, shook her head.

“I thought about the same thing, but Lord Amletus didn’t reply, I don’t know if it is true or not.”

Nux frowned,

“Why is he keeping this a secret?”

“Well, he did warn me, didn’t he?”

Riona replied.

“This doesn’t feel right.”

Nux commented.

Riona just chuckled, “I was thinking the same when I heard about all this, however, since there was no other way to deal with my curiosity, I had to just bear with it.”

“Something is wrong, I feel like this is something I should know.”

Suddenly, Nux spoke.

“Lord Amletus won’t say anything, no matter what I or you say to him.”  
Riona shook her head.

“Heh, he is not the only Emperor Stage Cultivator in this world, is he?”

Nux chuckled.

“I’ll just ask Lady Astaria, I am sure she will answer my questions.”

A smile appeared on Nux’s face.

“Hmmm, she should know about this as well.”

Riona nodded, however, suddenly, she paused.

“Wait.”

“Hmm? What?”

“You are close to Astaria Skyfall?”

Riona questioned with a surprised look on her face.

“Hmm, well not exactly close, we only met 2 times after she came out of that stupid room of hers, and she attacked me the first time. Well, it wasn’t really an attack, she was testing me and it seems that I passed whatever her test was.

The second meeting was a lot better though.”

Nux replied.

“You passed her test?” Riona frowned.

“What? You know something about this test?”

Seeing her look, Nux got curious.

“No, I just... for you to meet her 2 times within just a month, that is very surprising. Emperors don't really like to meet people.

And... you seem confident that you can meet her the third time.”

Riona spoke with a strange expression on her face.

“Oh don't worry, I am sure I'll meet her again, it is not that hard.”

“...”

Riona didn't reply.

Nux didn't pursue the matter either.

On the other hand, Amaya, who was looking at the two of them from afar shook her head and sighed.

‘If only you knew that not only does he plan to meet that woman again, he was even preparing to make her fall in love with him...’

Amaya then looked at her clock and soon, a smile appeared on her face,

“Alright, this is enough.”

She spoke.

Everyone turned towards her.

“What happened?” Nux questioned.

“Time is up, it has already been an hour, it is time for you to go.”

Amaya spoke to Riona.

Riona frowned, she then took out her own watch and looked at the time there.

“...”

She turned silent.

One hour had indeed passed.

“Everything in the Palace might get suspicious, you should leave.”

Amaya spoke.

“You look oddly happy for some reason, do... do you really hate me that much?” Riona questioned with a strange look on her face.

“The people in the palace would get suspicious, don’t waste more time.”

Amaya didn’t reply and repeated her own sentence.

A small sigh escaped Riona’s mouth, in the end, she smiled wryly and turned around.

However, just as she was about to walk out of the mansion,

“I do not hate you.”

Amaya spoke.

With a big smile on her face, Riona turned around, however, no matter where she looked, she failed to find Amaya.

“Fufufu~ I didn’t know Amaya was the shy type, for her to disappear right after she said those words... I am seeing a new side...”

Nux chuckled.

He then turned towards Riona and smiled,

“I think whatever you doing is working, just be patient.

Let her act out a little more.”

“She can act out as much as she wants.”

Riona spoke with an incredibly beautiful smile on her face and walked out of the mansion.

‘Her smile really is beautiful...’

Nux thought in his mind and suddenly, someone pinched his waist.

“Oww!”

He cried in pain.

Turning around, he saw Amaya standing next to him and glaring at him.

“Don’t you dare.”

She warned for the umpteenth time.

“I didn’t even do anything!”

Nux complained.

The other women chuckled.

...

On the other hand,

Amaya, who had just walked out of Nux’s mansion turned serious. She then rushed towards the Royal Palace with all her might, a few minutes later, she appeared in front of the Palace and walked in.

Then, she entered her room, where a man was already waiting for her.

“Lady Riona.”

Kelton greeted.

“Tell me everything you know about that boy named Nux.”

Riona ordered.

Kelton frowned.

Riona, however, didn't explain herself, Kelton sighed, and then, he started talking about what he knew.

Knowing that his master was now in a relationship with someone, he was curious and started looking around immediately, therefore, his memory was quite fresh.

Kelton's report ended within 5 minutes, to be honest, he couldn't find anything much about the man named Nux Leander.

In his report, Nux was a meek man who barely managed to earn enough to eat a meal in a day. There was nothing special about him other than his appearance, soon, he was scouted by a Merchant who sold him to a noble named Felberta Alveye.

After that, Nux... disappeared.

There was no further information about him.

Hearing his report, Riona frowned.

The man in the report and the man she just met didn't match each other.

“I believe Lady Amaya has some hand in tempering the information about this man,” Kelton spoke.

Hearing her daughter's name, a smile appeared on Riona's face,

“Heh, she is very overprotective about him. Fufufu~ So cute~”

Kelton didn't say anything.

“Alright, don't look, it is useless if Amaya was the one who tempered that man's information.

I want you to investigate something else.”

“At your command, Lady Riona.”

“Find out all the people Astaria Skyfall has met after coming out of her seclusion.”

# Chapter 479

“Find out all the people Astaria Skyfall has met after coming out of her seclusion.”

Riona ordered and soon, a frown appeared on Kelton’s face,

“Lady Riona... information related to an Emperor is not something I can find...”

“I know, let alone you, no one would be able to find that, however, you should know about something, when she came out of her seclusion, you were inside the Kingdom, weren’t you? Who were the people she met with?”

“Umm... the King... the Ministe-”

“These all are too obvious, she would meet these people every time she comes out of her seclusion, I need to know about the people who had never met her before.”

“Well this time, I heard the First Prince and the Second Princess met Lady Astaria as well.”

“It was about the incident related to the assassination?”

Riona questioned.

Hearing that, Kelton’s expression turned unsightly.

He was still angry about this whole incident. How dare that bastard go after his Master? He wanted to Kill Raguel.

Riona had the same thoughts, however, now that she has met with her daughter, who has not only found a way to cultivate her physique but has also found a man she loves and is living happily, her anger has reduced.

The 'dead' status was very beneficial for current Amaya, Riona knew about it.

And knowing her daughter and from how her eyes shined when she talked about Nux today, Amaya was sure that even if Raguel hadn't attacked her, Amaya would have faked her death just so she could live with the man she loved.

Raguel actually helped her.

"The First Prince and the Second Princess, correct?"

"Yes."

Kelton nodded.

"How strong is the Second Princess again?"

Suddenly, Riona questioned.

"Expert Stage."

'Ahh, so she can't be one of those nine...'

Riona thought inwardly.

"However, she has a King Stage subordinate under her."

Kelton informed.

Riona raised her eyebrow.

"A King Stage subordinate? A Princess has a King Stage subordinate serving her?"

"Yes, that man is the reason why she didn't die during this assassination attempt."

Kelton nodded.

A frown appeared on Riona's face.

Why would a King Stage Cultivator serve a Princess?

Was it the protector of the Duke house that supports the Princess? No, that shouldn't be the case, those turtles would never leave their shell, especially not all the time just for the sake of a single girl.

This man had to be someone else, but again, why would he serve a Princess?

Was he betting on the fact that Evane would surely become the next ruler? But why not serve the King directly, no King would reject a King Stage Cultivator...

Riona couldn't understand.

"Wait... if the Second Princess had a King Stage Cultivator as her subordinate, why did that fool even bother to attack her?" Riona questioned.

"This isn't known by all because the information was contained later, however, I heard that the subordinate used a strange technique to hide his cultivation, he only appeared as a Grand Master Stage Cultivator in front of others.

It is said that Lady Astaria was the one who saw through his technique and exposed him."

Kelton answered with a strange look on his face. Even he couldn't believe what he was saying.

"..."

Riona couldn't understand.

Hide his cultivation? How could such a strange technique exist?

However, suddenly, her expression changed.

These strange techniques... aren't these strangely similar to the techniques Nux and his wives showed? Somehow communicating when they are miles apart, suddenly disappearing from the sight, suddenly appearing from behind...

These techniques shouldn't exist either, but they do.

She has seen it with her own eyes.

Suddenly, a smile appeared on Riona's face,

She was going in the right direction.

"Describe this subordinate you were talking about. How does he look?"

She ordered.

"I never saw that man on my own, also, he heard that he always had a mask on." Kelton shook his head.

"You should go and ask around, I am sure someone else must have seen him, correct?"

"That might be possible. I will try searching for the masked man following the Second Princess who was a Grand Master Stage Cultivator."

Kelton narrowed it down.

"Good."

Riona nodded.

"Alright, now tell me, you said Lady Astaria saw through this subordinate's cultivation, correct?"

"Yes."

Kelton nodded.

“So this means that the subordinate met Lady Astaria, correct?”

Kelton nodded again.

Amaya’s smile widened.

She could roughly guess the entire situation, however, she didn’t rush out and concluded, she needed to be thorough, especially with this.

“Kelton, find out everything that happened when Lady Astaria and this King Stage Subordinate met with each other. Tell me if Lady Astaria attacked this man.”

“Attacked?”

Kelton frowned.

“Yeah.”

Riona smiled.

Kelton frowned, however, he didn’t ask too much and nodded.

Lady Riona was indeed very similar to Lady Amaya, however, he had to admit, Lady Amaya was much sharper. Or maybe it could be said that since Lady Riona is more thorough and only works on proof, Lady Amaya, on the other hand, predicts things whenever she feels she has enough information.

Therefore, Amaya was much faster with her deductions.

Riona, on the other hand, was much more thorough with her answers.

Well, no matter how much one sugarcoats it, Amaya was still the more intelligent one.

Her ‘predictions’ have never been wrong before, after all.

She was fast and precise.

“Collect all the information I told you to. You can use Ribson to exchange letters with your informant.”

While Kelton was comparing Amaya and Riona in his mind, Riona ordered.

“Sir Ribson?”

Kelton questioned in surprise.

The man they were talking about was a King Stage Cultivator.

“Yes, it is an important matter, do it as fast as possible.”

Riona nodded.

“As you command.”

Kelton bowed his head, then, he walked out of his room.

After he left, a small smile appeared on Riona’s face as she started thinking about the future.

She realized this after spending some time with her today, Amaya would not talk to her unless the one they talk about is Nux or something related to Nux.

Therefore, to continue her conversation with Amaya, she had to keep using Nux.

She had to take this slow, starting with talking about Nux and once Amaya is more comfortable, she would start subtly changing the topic and soon or later, she and Amaya would be just like any other mother and daughter.

Fufufu~

# Chapter 480

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

A knock was heard, the door was opened, and seeing the woman who knocked, a smile appeared on Skyla's face,

“I was waiting for you.”

“What a coincidence, I was waiting to meet you guys as well.” A mysterious smile appeared on Riona's face.

“Please come in.”

Skyla welcomed.

Riona walked in, then after looking around, her eyes fell on Amaya, who was sitting on a chair, looking at her with a bored look on her face.

“You are here again? As a queen, don't you have things you have to do?”

Amaya questioned.

This was already the fifth day and Riona hasn't missed even a single day of the meeting, let alone a day, she hasn't even missed a single second, she always arrived a few minutes earlier and always tried to leave as late as possible.

Hearing her words, Riona wasn't annoyed, rather, a smile appeared on her face, she walked towards Amaya and buried her head into her breasts,

“Nothing is more important than my lovely daughter.

Work? I'll just work restlessly for a few nights, nothing I can't handle.”

Riona patted her nonexistent biceps with a proud look on her face, before continuing to pat Amaya's head.

Amaya didn't reject either, with an annoyed expression on her face, she allowed Riona to do whatever she wanted.

Of course, Thyra, Edda, and Skyla, who were seeing this from afar could easily tell that Amaya wasn't the least bit annoyed. Rather, she was enjoying her mother's company, of course, Amaya will never admit this openly.

"As Nux used to say... a tsundere."

Thyra muttered as she continued to observe the scene in front of her with an amused look on her face.

"Indeed."

Edda nodded.

"Hmm? But he said that Amaya was more like a Yandere though?"

Skyla frowned.

"Ask him, it's not like I know what exactly these foreign terms mean."

Thyra shrugged.

Skyla shrugged as well and all the women continued to observe the scene.

Riona didn't hold back either, since she was allowed to do anything she wanted, she quickly placed Amaya's head on her lap and smiled,

"How about you get some rest?"

"I had plenty of rest yesterday."

Amaya replied in a monotonous tone.

“Trust me, no rest can be compared to resting on your mother’s lap.”

Riona replied.

“Try ‘resting’ with your lover after having an intense session, you would know what I am talking about.”

Amaya shrugged.

“...”

Riona turned silent.

As she thought.

Talking with Amaya without her bringing Nux into this topic was nearly impossible.

Riona sighed. It was good that she was prepared today.

“Oh yeah? Why don’t you describe to me how good it feels then? Since I never experienced this, after all.”

“Are you trying to interfere with my love life?”

Amaya narrowed her eyes.

“...” Riona didn’t know what to say.

“But I do pity you for not experiencing something so good.”

Amaya spoke.

Suddenly, a smirk appeared on Riona’s face as she offered,

“Then how about you sleep with me then? I don’t know how good it feels to sleep with a lover, but I am sure I would be satisfied if I can sleep with my daughter again.”

“I am sorry, I only sleep with Nux.”

Amaya shook her head.

“Well, he can join us, I don’t have any problems.”

Riona spoke without thinking too much.

Her words, however, shocked the others present and they looked at Riona with strange expressions on their faces.

“What?” Riona frowned.

Soon, however, she realized what she said and her eyes widened in surprise,

“No! I didn’t mean it that way! I meant... wait, I really shouldn’t have said that, huh? That sounds so inappropriate.”

Riona started talking to herself.

Amaya, however, continued to glare at her mother.

‘I knew I was right, this bitch was going after him. That’s why she has been talking so much about him.’

Amaya was ready to go on a war.

She can allow anyone to join Nux’s harem, anyone but her mother.

No! Never!

Nux will not become her stepfather!

As soon as this thought appeared in her mind, Amaya shook her head continuously.

She affirmed her thoughts.

She would never allow this to happen.

“Tsk, you really don’t like lying on my lap, do you? Geez, you are moving so much.”

As Amaya continued to shake her head, Riona complained.

In the end, she allowed her to sit back up, not forcing her to lay on her lap anymore.

Amaya didn’t break her eye contact with Riona, seeing her looking at her like that, Riona smiled playfully,

“Why are you looking at me like that? What? Am I looking incredibly beautiful today?”

Yep, she had no clue about what Amaya was thinking about.

“...”

Seeing that Amaya didn’t reply to her again, Riona sighed, in the end, she decided to use her trump card.

“I didn’t expect that even Princess Evane is one of your sisters.”

“How did you know?” Amaya narrowed her eyes.

“Who do you think I am?”

Riona smiled proudly.

“Did you do a background check on Nux?”

“I got curious, okay? Just think about it, a single man attracting the attention of nine women who are all King Stage Cultivators. Anyone would be curious.

You may not realize it, but nine King Stage Cultivators is a very big deal.”

Riona answered.

If Amaya was in her right mind, she would have understood what Riona was talking about, however, in her right mind, she was not.

She narrowed her eyes and continued to observe her mother.

‘As I thought. She is planning it.’

Her thoughts were now even more confirmed.

“Hmm?”

Riona, who didn’t have a single clue about what her lovely daughter was thinking frowned, soon, however, a playful smile appeared on her face and she spoke,

“I have an amazing gift for you.”

“ ... ”

Amaya didn’t say anything and continued to observe her mother. Riona found her reaction strange, however, she didn’t think too much about it, with a smile on her face, she took out an envelope and gave it to Amaya.

“It is sent to me by someone you know very well.”

Amaya frowned, took the letter and a confused expression appeared on her face.

“Raguel Skyfall?”

# Chapter 481

“It is sent to me by someone you know very well.”

Amaya frowned, took the letter and a confused expression appeared on her face.

“Raguel Skyfall?”

Riona’s smile widened.

“Read it. I am sure you will like it.”

Amaya’s face then turned serious and she opened the envelope.

Thyra, Edda, and Skyla appeared behind her and the three of them started reading the letter.

The more they read, the more their expression changed,

A minute later, when Amaya was finally done with reading the letter, a strange paper with different stamps printed on it appeared in her hand, she then compared a certain stamp with the stamp on the letter, and the two stamps matched.

“This letter is authentic.”

She spoke.

“He is bold, I will give him that.”

Edda spoke with a playful smile on her face.

“That bastard is targeting Evane.”

Thyra spoke with a solemn look on her face.

“Heh, it’s not like he can do anything.”

“Not unless...”

Thyra glanced at Riona.

Seeing her gaze, Riona understood what Thyra was thinking and smiled.

“Well, he did ask for my assistance in this matter, he told me that if I help him get rid of Evane, he will owe me a favor and once he becomes the King, he would do anything I want to return that favor.

It is a tempting offer, I won’t lie.”

“To have the King of the enemy country owe you a favor, it is tempting indeed.”

Amaya agreed.

“But how are you so sure that he would return the favor? What if he ignores you after becoming the King? Once he becomes the King, Astaria would be protecting him, I don’t think there is anything you can do against a monster like her.”

Thyra questioned with a curious look on her face.

However, before Riona could answer, Amaya spoke,

“The same Astaria would become his enemy if something like that happens.”

Thyra frowned.

Amaya then pointed at the stamp at the end of the letter and spoke,

“This right here is the proof that this letter was sent by the First Prince, this texture is unique to the stamp given to him, this can’t be copied. Once it is revealed that the First Prince has colluded with the enemy Kingdom, King or not, he would face the death penalty.

Actually, by sending this letter to her with his own stamp on it, he is putting himself at a big risk as she can always use this letter to blackmail him.”

“Would you look at that? As I thought, my daughter is indeed a genius. Just as I thought. Fufufu~ You explained everything so amazingly~”

Riona chuckled.

Amaya, however, didn't react to her words.

“He is trying to show his sincerity.”

Thyra commented and Amaya nodded.

“Well, it is still a stupid move nonetheless.”

Edda commented.

“You can't let someone, especially your enemy, get a hold of your weakness.”

Amaya nodded, “You are correct, however, if you think about it from Raguel's perspective, he doesn't really have many options. He tried to remove both the Third and Second Princess from the equation, however, the Second Princess.

The chances that the Second Princess would become the next ruler are close to 100%, the strongest Cultivator of the entire Kingdom is out now. To make it even worse, in his eyes, the relationship between the Third Princess, who he had killed, and the Second Princess, who will become the next Ruler is not good at all.

She would definitely take her revenge once Evane gets in power. His life would be anything but easy.”

“...”

Everyone in the room turned silent,

Riona, however, continued to smile, “As I said, my daughter is indeed a genius.”

She then walked towards Amaya and buried her face into her breasts again. Again, Amaya was helpless.

While Amaya and Riona were doing their thing, Thyra glanced at Riona and questioned,

“So? What about it? Are you going to help him?”

“Well, I can always blackmail him using this letter, I don’t even need to help him, however, there are only so many things I could get from a mere prince, a King owing me a favor is much better for me.”

Riona spoke.

“But how are you going to help him? Lady Astaria is still inside the Royal Palace you know? Are you going to ask Lord Amletus’s help?” Thyra questioned.

“There is no way she would help me with something so insignificant. Not that he can help me even if he wants to, a treaty holds him back.”

Riona replied.

“Then you are not going to help him?” Thyra questioned.

“I just said it, a king owing me a favor is much better than a mere Prince owing me one.”

“Heh. Sure, try it, I am sure the outcome would be as you expect.” Thyra smiled disdainfully.

“Are you challenging me?”

Riona narrowed her eyes.

“You can take it like that.”

Thyra didn't back down either.

"Tsk, you people are ungrateful." Suddenly, Riona snorted.

"What do you mean?"

"Wait..." Suddenly, Amaya frowned.

"If you actually wanted to help him, you wouldn't have shown this letter to us."

Amaya spoke.

Riona pointed her finger at Amaya and,

"Pippon!! As I thought, as expected, only you are the one who understands me.

\*Sniff\* \*Sniff\*

As they say, blood is indeed thicker than water."

Then, Riona hugged Amaya again.

"W-Why don't you explain your plans before hugging me again?"

Amaya, whose face was buried into her mother's breasts for the third time in a single day, spoke.

"Hmm hmm, why not."

Riona understood that she was going a little far and coughed.

She then stood straight, then glanced at all the women present inside the room, and questioned,

"Your plan is to make Evane the next Queen of the Skyfall Kingdom, correct?"

“Well, that is the plan, but we don’t need any help, Evane becoming the next King is something that will happen eventually.”

Thyra replied.

“Eventually, you don’t know how long it will take, how about we move forward with that plan? And while we are at it, we will also deal with that idiot Raguel, what do you say?”

Riona spoke.

“Heh. Sounds amazing, how about you explain your plans first?”

All the women standing in the room chuckled.

# Chapter 482

“Alright, time is up, you should leave now.”

Amaya spoke.

Riona looked at her and pouted,

“You really hate me, don’t you?”

Amaya sighed, “I already told you this before, I do not hate you, if you do not leave, someone will get suspicious of you, it is foolish to extend this meeting for a few minutes when it may ruin our future meetings.”

“Tsk, having a daughter who is a genius has its fair share of troubles as well.”

Riona snorted, then, she stretched her hand outwardly and stood up,

“Alright, I will be taking my leave guys. We will meet again tomorrow, you people can discuss the plan with Nux, if he agrees, we can have an even more detailed discussion. Is that okay?”

“Don’t worry, we will discuss it with him.”

Thyra nodded.

“Yeah, now leave.” Amaya waved her hands.

It looked as if she was shooing her away.

The scene was quite comical with Riona pouting like a little child. One might even wonder who is the daughter here.

Riona then walked out of the mansion with a sad look on her face.

“You could be a little more polite to her, you know...” Seeing this scene, Skyla commented.

“Don’t be fooled by her, she is the Queen of the Kingdom, that too in a Kingdom where females never had power before. She is not the type of woman who would get affected by something like this.”

Amaya spoke with an expressionless look on her face.

“What do you mean?”

Thyra felt that Amaya’s words had a hidden meaning behind them, so she questioned.

“Think about this. Raguel send assassins and ‘killed’ Amaya, Riona Skadi’s blood daughter, do you think he would be stupid enough to ask for her help?”

“Well, she did ‘sell’ you to another Kingdom, so I don’t think he would care about your relation with her while talking to her. In the grand schemes of things, something like this is useless.” Thyra replied.

“I understand that, however, if you were in Raguel’s position, would you still choose to go for the Skadi Kingdom?”

I mean, since he has 2 other options that would give him the same result as this one, he would be a fool to choose the Skadi Kingdom.”

“ ... ”

Thyra turned silent.

Amaya was correct.

Raguel could have chosen the Solid Earth Kingdom or the Woods Dynasty as well, the result would have been the same in both cases. Choosing a Kingdom that could potentially be holding a grudge against you is a foolish decision.

“Something is wrong here.”

Thyra commented.

“Indeed, that woman is hiding something. The timing is too accurate for it to be just a coincidence. Think about this, we are here and in just a few days, Raguel sent a letter like this to the Skadi Kingdom.

He had a month, why didn't he send it before? Why the Skadis? Why not someone else? And why did he decide to move so suddenly?”

Amaya nodded and pointed out a few more suspicious things.

Now, even Skyla and Edda realized something was not right and Skyla's face turned serious.

“Do you think that woman is planning something?”

Skyla questioned.

Skyla might look cute and innocent at first, however, do not forget, she is Thyra's best student. She has killed quite a few people, she was warm and innocent, however, she was not naïve, the moment she realizes that Riona was trying to harm her sisters or Nux, she wouldn't hesitate to kill her off.

“That woman is definitely planning something.”

Amaya replied.

Skyla's expression turned icy.

She had decided, she would get rid of that bitch with her own hands.

“However, I don't know whether her plan is to harm her or not.”

Amaya spoke and hearing those words, Skyla calmed down.

She interacted with Riona, she could feel that her love for Amaya was genuine, she didn't know whether she was fooled or not, however, she

would like to believe that what she was feeling was correct.

Riona might have an ulterior motive, however, Skyla wanted to believe that her ulterior motive doesn't involve hurting them.

“So what are we doing?”

Thyra questioned.

“What else? We would talk to Nux and the others, know what they think about it and then come up with a decision.” Amaya shrugged.

“Alright.”

Thyra nodded.

Time passed, and a few hours later, Nux returned,

“Hello, you beautiful ladies~”

With an elegant bow, he greeted. The scene looked quite funny considering that his clothes were rather dirty, completely different than the elegant look he was going for.

The women chuckled and shook their heads in helplessness.

“You are finally back,” Amaya spoke.

“Indeed.”

Nux nodded.

“Why are your clothes so dirty? You didn't go to the Forbidden Region, did you?” Thyra narrowed her eyes and questioned.

“Of course not. There is no way I would face a beast that even an Emperor is wary of. Did you forget? I am someone who would run the moment I think that my life is in danger. Why would I risk my life by doing something so stupid?”

“So you are saying that your clothes got dirty in the inner zone?”

Thyra raised her eyebrow in doubt.

One had to know, even when Nux was just a Grand Master Stage Cultivator, his clothes didn't get dirty in the inner zone.

He always had a little layer of waiter shield all around his body that protects his clothes and his face from all the dirt and blood in the Wilderness.

It was not like Nux would struggle desperately fighting normal beasts, he can even one-shot a 6 Star beast now, who would force Nux to the extent that his clothes got dirty?

“Well, don't worry about it, I was trying a few new things.”

Nux chuckled.

“New things?”

Thyra narrowed her eyes.

“What new things? Tell me! Tell me!”

Skyla questioned with a curious look on her face. At the same time, she grabbed this chance to rush and Nux and hug him. She didn't mind getting a little dirt on her clothes.

A small price to pay.

“It's a secret~” Nux chuckled.

Skyla pouted.

# Chapter 483

‘Hmm? What’s the problem here?’

Nux questioned with a frown on his face.

‘What? Don’t you realize it, she might try to harm us.’

Felberta spoke with a serious look on her face.

‘Do you really think he can harm Evane with me there?’

Nux questioned back and everyone turned silent.

‘That is correct... With Nux there, as long as Riona doesn’t send Amletus, harming Evane would be impossible no matter how many King Stage Cultivators she sends.’

Thyra nodded.

‘And even she wouldn’t have the power to make Amletus move.’ Amaya nodded.

The women finally understood what Nux was talking about, a small smile appeared on Amaya’s face and she spoke,

‘Alright then, we don’t need to think more about this. We are going to carry on with this plan. In the end, if this is successful, we would get rid of a few annoying things at the same time, and Evane becoming the next Queen would be then 100% assured.’

Nux smiled as well.

‘Fufufu~ This is getting fun~’

Ember commented with a smile on her face.

‘Okay, we should stop wasting more time, let’s start.’

Suddenly, Allura spoke with a competitive look on her face.

‘Heh, eager to lose today as well, aren’t you?’

Amaya provoked.

‘Heh, we will see about that.’

Ember snorted.

Amaya, Thyra, Edda, and Skylia glanced at Nux at the same time.

This was the signal.

Leave the conversation, now it’s time for women’s talk.

Nux sighed and with an unwilling look on his face, he disconnected the call.

He then noticed Amaya’s, Thyra’s, Skylia’s, and Edda’s expressions changed. It looked as if they were about to fight a war.

Nux sighed again and then he turned around.

This was something new his women started.

Battle for the Beloved.

That is what they call it.

In summary, it is something that decides which group would Nux visit today first, the ones in the Skadi, or the ones in the Skyfall. What they do, however, is not known by Nux.

The women had decided to keep it a secret.

From their sky and embarrassed expressions, he knew it was something fun, however, whenever he asks about it, they just smile and don’t answer any of

his questions.

‘Haahh...’

Nux sighed at his lonely life and walked into his room.

30 minutes later, his women would come and decide who the victor was, and then finally something fun would happen.

Thinking about it, a small smile appeared on his face.

Now the question was, what was he going to do in these 30 minutes? Well, the answer was simple.

Nux walked towards his bed, sat cross-legged, and closed his eyes. Devouring Mist covered his body and he started cultivating.

...

Time passed, soon, 30 minutes passed by, and the doors of Nux’s room opened, since Nux wasn’t in deep meditation right now, he quickly opened his eyes.

His eyes then fell on the dejected looks of his women’s faces, a smile appeared on his face.

“It seems they were well prepared for today, weren’t they?”

“Tsk, numbers advantage.”

Thyra snorted.

Nux chuckled and then stood up.

“Don’t worry, I will be back soon.”

“mm.”

The women nodded.

Nux then kissed all the women on the lips and then he disappeared.

The next second, he reappeared 1500 km away, right in front of Ember. The lioness-like woman was sitting on the bed, wearing a bold outfit that was barely hiding her curvy body.

Ember's red eyes shined dangerously as she glanced at Nux, the woman then placed her right leg on the top of her left, this little movement was so sensual that Nux couldn't help but feel a little twitch in his lower region.

Ember was looking especially alluring today, adding her suppressing aura that she unconsciously releases, Nux knew that he was going to have a hard time holding himself back.

His golden eyes shined as well, an aura even more suppressing than Ember's was released from his body, a wide smile appeared on his face and without wasting any time, he removed all his clothes.

"I like that dress."

He commented.

"That was the aim."

Ember chuckled.

"You certainly succeeded, now just make sure you are not broken."

"Try your best."

Ember challenged.

Nux's smile widened, he then walked towards Ember, his hand moved and directly touched Ember's soft but perky breasts, without much effort, he removed the so-called clothes, which were nothing but two straps covering Ember's pink and delicious-looking nipples and a cap that she wore when she was a General.

Feeling his touch, Ember moved her body backward, slowly falling on the bed, Nux followed her body, and soon, both of them were lying on the bed with Nux on top of the General.

“Where will you run now?”

Nux whispered.

“I never planned to run in the first place.”

Ember replied.

Nux smiled, he then lowered his met and their lips met.

While their lips tasted each other, their naked bodies mingled together, Ember’s well-trained, but somehow curvy body touched Nux’s lean, well-built body.

Nux’s hand moved, one on Ember’s lower back, the other on the back of her head, both of Ember’s hands were moving around his wide back, touching every single inch there was.

The temperature of the room increased, and the hot scene turned even hotter and continued to get hotter and hotter.

The night continued, and soon, the foreplay and the kissing were over,

“Annhh~”

Nux’s dick finally entered Ember’s vagina, a small moan leaked out of Ember’s mouth.

“With just that?” Nux questioned.

“That was just to cheer you up.” Ember didn’t give up.

“So thoughtful~”

Nux chuckled, he then moved his hips back then without waiting, he pushed them back with all the strength he had.

“AAAaaannhHHhh~~”

This time, Ember’s moan was much louder than before.

Nux smiled,

“Continue to ‘cheer me up’ like this, you are doing quite good.”

“...”

This time, Ember didn’t say anything. She was too busy trying to keep her face straight.

Nux chuckled, he then kissed Ember’s lips again and the hot and sizzling session continued.

# Chapter 484

“Alright then, it is decided, we will continue with the plan, you prepare things on your own end, I will talk to that idiot King, once the preparations are done, we will discuss the date of the operation.”

After seeing Amaya agreeing to her plan of betraying Raguel, Riona spoke with a smile on her face.

“Alright, we can discuss more about this tomorrow. You can complete your preparations, there is not much to do on our side.”

Amaya nodded with a small smile on her face.

Riona nodded, and this time, without waiting, she walked out of the Mansion.

She knew what Amaya’s next words were going to be.

The time was already up, and the topic they were talking about was already over, she had a few other topics to start about, however, Amaya wouldn’t really be interested in them and even if she was, she wouldn’t let her start another topic since the time was already up.

Riona had no choice but to leave.

And since she was leaving, why not leave without her daughter needing to say it today?

Thinking about this, Riona left.

After she left, Thyra raised her eyes,

“Something is wrong,”

She commented.

“Of course something is wrong, we decided it yesterday, if you about it.”

Edda came with her sassy reply.

Thyra completely ignored the woman and continued,

“What preparations was she talking about? Why does she need to talk to the King? Isn't she the one who holds the most power in the Kingdom?”

Hearing her words, Edda frowned as well.

Amaya, on the other hand, shook her head,

“Things are not simple. The Skadi Kingdom works differently from the Skyfall Kingdom. She may hold most of the power, however, with that power, the responsibility she bears is much heavier.

Keep in mind, the one who is sitting on the Throne is still the King, not her.

One wrong move, and she would lose most of her power and influence. Her position may look strong and mighty from the outside, however, in truth, it is as weak as a castle made my cards, one little push and everything will be destroyed.

And right now, she was about to make that wrong move.

The King Stage Cultivators that she sends in order to ‘assassinate’ Evane, would die, if she makes this move on her own accord, she might even get executed, therefore, she needs the King’s permission to continue with this plan.”

Amaya explained, showing why she was called a Genuis again.

Hearing her explanation, Edda raised one of her eyebrows,

“So she is trying to use the King as a scapegoat?”

“You can say that.” Amaya nodded.

An amazed look appeared on Edda's face, she then glanced at Amaya and joined her hands in a respectful way, "Amaya, your mother is a fucking genius,"

Amaya just snorted.

"How is she sure that the King would agree with this plan? She has even formed so many plans, shouldn't she have asked for his permission first?" Thyra questioned with a frown on her face.

"These tasks are usually done by the order of their difficulty, if she has talked and convinced all of us and made a few more plans before talking to the king,

Then she must be confident that she would be able to manipulate the King to do what she wants."

Amaya replied.

Edda was now even more amazed, "I will bow to her and hold her legs next time she is here. I only thought of her as a stupid mother who cares about nothing but her daughter. To think she was this savage. To treat the King of a Country like a fool, to not even consider him as a factor that might ruin her plans, oh my god, she is like... a beast!"

Now Edda was simply fangirling.

"Do not underestimate that woman, as I said before, she is someone who holds power in a Kingdom where women never had any power, she can't possibly be a simple woman. A stupid woman who only cares about her daughter? Heh, I guess she succeeding in fooling you as well."

Amaya snickered.

Edda didn't care that Amaya was laughing at her, she was just too busy thinking about how cool that woman was.

She found her new role model.

“ ... ”

Seeing her acting like that, Amaya shook her head and sighed.

Skyla, who was silent this whole time questioned with a frown on her face,

“I wanted to ask this earlier, however, I forgot about it that time so I will ask right now, when you say that a Kingdom where women never had any power, what do you mean?”

“I meant exactly what I said. The Skadi Kingdom never had a female ruler. There are many strange traditions in this Kingdom, and one of them is this one. They feel that women’s position is lower than the men’s, therefore, being ruled by a woman was a disgrace for them.”

Amaya explained and continued further,

“With her cultivation talent and intelligence, she would have become the next Ruler of this country, however, since she was a woman, her brother, who was nothing but a useless bastard who rarely cultivates was chosen as the next King. That Idio-”

“Wait Wait Wait.”

Amaya wanted to continue, however, she was then interrupted by Edda.

“You are telling me that your mother is married to her brother!?”

Hearing her question, Amaya frowned,

“Didn’t you know that already? The Skadi Kingdom has been following Incest since the time the Kingdom was established. This is another one of their strange traditions. They do this to keep the blood pure. Only a child that has a complete Skadi Bloodline is allowed to become the next King.”

“What if the brother and sister don’t want to marry each other?” Skyla questioned.

“In the matters of the Kingdom, their wishes are ignored and overlooked.”  
Amaya answered.

“So they are forced.”

“Yes.” Amaya nodded.

“Wait...” Suddenly, another thought appeared in Thyra’s mind.

“You are Lady Riona and the King’s daughter, so you are a pure-blooded Skadi, correct?”

“I am.” Amaya nodded.

“Do you have a brother?”

“Yes, there is one.”

“So won’t you be forced to marry him?”

# Chapter 485

“So won’t you be forced to marry him?”

Thyra questioned with a frown on her face.

Edda and Skyla’s expressions changed. Amaya, however, had a ridiculous expression on her face as she turned toward Thyra.

“What are you talking about? I am dead, remember?”

“Ahh, right.”

Thyra, Skyla, and Edda remembered.

“But what if Riona reveals the truth? What if she is actually not on our side and all of this is just an act?” Thyra questioned.

“Well, I don’t think there is much of a problem, the King has many wives, two of them are his blood sisters, and my brother has many choices, also, I am the ‘cursed’ child, remember? If they wanted me to marry my brother, they wouldn’t have sold me off to Ricardus.

If you are worried, you should worry about Riona revealing that I have found a way to cultivate my physique. That is something that would even temp Amletus to make a move.”

“What would we do if something like that happens?”

Thyra questioned.

“Heh, don’t worry, Lady Astaria would protect us. Nux has arranged that already.” A mysterious smile appeared on Amaya’s face.

Thyra sighed in relief, since they were already prepared, they didn’t have to worry about anything.

“I still don’t think Lady Riona would betray us,” Skyla spoke.

“Well, let’s see what happens, shall we?” Amaya spoke.

To be honest, even she hoped that her mother won’t betray her again.

Whatever Riona has been doing for these past few days, well, although she may not say it out loud, and although not all of them were liked by Amaya, she still enjoyed spending time with her mother.

Only a little.

She wished that this time would continue, and the mother who was showering her with all her love and care...

She hoped that she was not a fake.

Yes, whatever Riona was doing was working.

Amaya, who had defenses all around her has finally loosened up and placed her heart at risk again.

Of course, what happens in the future all depends on Riona.

...

On the other side, Riona, who has just walked into the Palace, was greeted by a servant,

“Lady Riona.”

Riona nodded, she glanced at the maid in front of her and questioned,

“Where is the King?”

“His Majesty is in his room.”

The Maid replied with a respectful look on her face.

“Is there anyone with him?” Riona questioned.

“Yes, he is with Lady Athela.” The maid replied.

“Alright, you can leave now.” Riona nodded, the maid bowed and walked away.

With an expressionless look on her face, Riona walked toward the King’s room.

In front of the door, 2 guards were standing. These guards were ordered to stop anyone who tries to enter the room. The King was clearly ‘busy’ right now, any matters that are to be discussed with the King would be discussed tomorrow.

However, when Riona walked towards the door, the guards didn’t dare to utter a word and moved aside.

Riona didn’t react, she directly opened the door and walked in.

“Who dares!?”

A frown appeared on Riona’s face the moment she entered the room.

She had expected this to happen, but still, no matter how many times she saw this sight, it was still repulsive.

A fat pig like this bastard, lying on top of that bitch, both of them naked while the room was filled with this strangely disgusting smell of alcohol, aphrodisiac drugs, and body fluids, it really was repulsive.

“I need to talk.”

Riona, however, ignored whatever she was feeling and spoke.

“You cannot barge in like that when the two of us are busy.”

The woman who was lying on the bed with the King spoke with an angry look on her face while covering her body with bedsheets.

Just like Riona, the woman had black hair and black eyes, she was a beautiful woman with an amazing figure, however, when compared to Riona, she seemed... lacking.

The woman's name was Athela, Riona, and the King's blood sister.

"I don't care if you two are busy or not, I need to talk about something important, I urge you do it right now, the faster you finish, the faster you can return to your... activities."

Riona replied.

"Didn't you hear? I am busy. Just because you have a little power, don't forget who the real King is.

Now leave."

The King, Eardwolf Skadi, spoke with an annoyed look on his face. Just like his two sisters, he also had black eyes and hair, with his features, he should have been quite a handsome man, however, with all that flesh surrounding his body, he looked like a pig.

A pig who was in power and was now annoyed at the woman in front of her.

Riona, however, wasn't a least bit bothered by his gaze, rather, she was infuriated. She released the fearsome aura that she has attained after killing countless people and putting her life at risk for countless years.

"Do not make me repeat myself.

I need to talk.

Right now."

Feeling her aura, Eardwolf was intimidated.

"I promise you, it is something good."

Riona spoke with a smile on her face. In the end, Eardwolf was the King, he may be useless and a coward, but, she still had the crown on his head.

She couldn't just use force on him, she had to threaten and offer him something good at the same time, she needed to successfully win his curiosity, she needs to make him listen to what she had to say.

“Alright... I will come, wait outside for a while.”

Eardwolf nodded.

Hearing his words, Riona's smile widened,

“I'll be waiting.”

She then turned around and left the room.

She didn't wish to spend even a single more second here in this room.

Athela, who saw her moving out clenched her fist in frustration. She then turned towards Eardwolf and spoke.

“You are the King! How can you let her boss you around like that?”

“I am not allowing her to ‘boss me around’. This matter seemed important.”  
The King replied.

“Important matter my ass! Just admit it, you were scared.” Athela snorted.

“Athela.”

Suddenly, Eardwolf's aura changed, he glanced at Athela with a threatening look on his face and warned.

“Do not overstep your limits.”

# Chapter 486

“Do not overstep your limits.”

Eardwolf glanced at Athela and spoke with a threatening look on his face.

Athela stepped back.

“Good.”

Eardwolf praised and then after wearing his clothes and fixing his hair, he left the room.

After Eardwolf left, Athela snorted.

“That Pig, he only acts like that in front of me, what happens to you when Riona stands in front of you? Heh, you don’t even have the balls to directly look into her eyes.”

Just thinking about this annoys Athela to her core.

If only she had Riona’s Cultivation Talent, she would have shown her how things are done.

‘That fucking bitch! You always look down on me, don’t you? Don’t worry, there will come a day when I would make you regret everything you did to me.’

Athela snorted again and a cruel smile appeared on her face when she imagined Riona and Eardwolf, kneeling in front of her and begging for their life.

‘I will make this happen one day.’

Athela swore inwardly.

...

On the other side, Eardwolf walked into the room Riona was waiting in, he then sat on the chair next to Riona's and questioned.

“So? What happened? Why did you call me? You already have everything under your control, what more do you want?”

Hearing his question, a beautiful smile appeared on Riona's face and soon, a letter appeared in her hand.

She passed the letter to Eardwolf, the King started reading the letter and soon, a solemn look appeared on his face,

“So he wants our help in order to assassinate the Second Princess of their Kingdom and he would owe us a favor once he becomes the King?”

“Yes.”

Riona nodded.

Eardwolf started thinking,

“This Stamp, is i-”

He wanted to ask, however, before he could complete his question, Riona replied,

“Yes, it is real, I have verified it already.”

“Heh, that Raguel is quite a fool. Does he really think that things would end with just a single favor? With this letter with us, we can ask anything he wants and he would have to do it for us.

Heh, he is practically giving the Strongest Kingdom of the World in our hands, Hahahaha~

Poor Skyfall Kingdom.

That Bastard Ricardus, I knew his son couldn't be good at anything.  
Hahahaha~”

The King started laughing.

Riona, on the other hand, didn't say anything.

Unlike this fool, she actually went ahead and analyzed the situation. Rather than saying that Raguel was a fool, it was better to say that Evane's sudden return was a change that he couldn't react to.

Maybe it was Nux who was involved or something, but as soon as Evane returned, everything went south for Raguel.

His move of contacting other kingdoms was not wrong, the letter can only be used for a while, once he becomes the King and succeeds in spreading his influence, then even if she wants it, Astaria would still not be able to kill him.

Just like what happened with Ricardus.

So even if they have this letter, they can only use it 2 to 3 times at most, after that, it will lose its value.

Of course, this idiot doesn't have to know all this.

“So? Why are you here? Everything is under our control and is going in our favor, why discuss it with me?”

Eardwolf questioned.

“Only King Stage Cultivators can help in this situation,” Riona spoke.

“Yes, I know that.”

“I need you to send Sir Vloyd or Sir Razor to the Skyfall Kingdom,” Riona spoke.

“Why do you want to send one of them specifically? You have so many King Stage Cultivators who are loyal to you, why don’t you send them?”

Eardwolf raised his eyebrow in suspicion.

In the Skadi Kingdom, where Women are seen as inferior when compared to a man, Riona gaining power and influence was a big change. The fact that the current King was useless played a huge part in this.

Riona played the correct moves at the correct time and soon, she gained the support and loyalty of most of the subjects.

However, not everyone was happy with these changes.

The people who took traditions very seriously, people like them didn’t like the fact that Riona, a woman, had so much power in their Kingdom.

Riona wouldn’t care about most of these people, however, Vloyd Skadi and Razor Skadi, these 2 were the people she couldn’t ignore. These two were the only King Stage Cultivators who were not loyal to him, rather, she was sure that if given the chance, they would bare their fangs at her.

They were a time-ticking bomb that she had to dispose of in one way or another.

Unlike Eardwolf, Riona knew the Truth behind this ‘Mission’.

The King Stage Cultivator who will be sent on this Mission was a sacrifice.

He would never return.

Riona couldn’t find any better chance to get rid of one of these thorns in her eyes. Once one of them is gone, only one King Stage who opposes her would be left.

She would think of something else to get rid of that bastard as well.

Yes, once this plan succeeds, Riona’s position would be strengthened to the point where she wouldn’t need to fear anyone or anything.

A smile couldn't help but appear on her face when she thought about all this.

Yes, Riona was using this chance to not only get close to her daughter but also to strengthen her position.

She was greedy, however, she couldn't be blamed, in the end, she was a Queen, and if something benefits her in any way, she would do it.

That is how she got so much power in the first place.

However, not everything was set in stone right now, she still had to manipulate this fool into doing what she wants.

A simple task really.

“I will not send my subordinates anywhere unless I have 100% surety that the Mission would succeed.”

Riona answered.

“Are you saying that there are chances that this Mission would fail?”

Eardwolf raised his eyebrow.

# Chapter 487

“Are you saying that there are chances that this Mission would fail?”

Eardwolf raised his eyebrow and questioned with a doubtful look on his face.

“Hmm? Of course, there are. There is always a chance that your plan might fail, however, things are different here.

The Stakes are just too high, I won't be able to take the responsibility if one of my King Stage Subordinates dies here.” Riona answered.

“Heh, so the Great Riona Skadi is afraid?”

Eardwolf provoked.

Riona, however, replied with a straight look on her face,

“I am not afraid, I am just being careful.”

“How will the plan fail? What bothers you? Discuss it with me, only then will I think about sending someone for this mission. Is it Astaria Skyfall?”

Eardwolf spoke.

Hearing his words, Riona smiled inwardly,

The fish has taken the bait.

“Lady Astaria is not a problem.

Since Raguel sent this letter, he must have a way to do things without involving Lady Astaria. The Problem is the Target herself.

Evane Skyfall.

I investigated that woman, she is not as simple as you think, she has a King Stage Cultivator as her subordinate.

We are sending 1 King Stage Cultivator to deal with that subordinate while Raguel's Grandfather would kill Evane before teaming up with our King Stage Cultivator to Kill that bodyguard.

But what if that bodyguard is not the only King Stage Cultivator supporting her? What if there is one more? Won't things go south?"

Riona replied.

"You are telling me that you suspect that two King Stage Cultivators are protecting that Princess 24 hours a day and seven days a week?"

Eardwolf raised his eyes and questioned.

"Yes."

Riona nodded.

"Do you know how absurd you sound?"

Eardwolf couldn't help but question.

"King Stage Cultivators are National Treasures, one of them is just a mere bodyguard is already absurd, but now you are saying that there are two bodyguards protecting a little girl all the time?"

"I know it is a very unlikely scenario, however, I would still not send my subordinates until I am 100% sure, and in this case, I can't be 100% sure since everything involving that 'little girl' is too mysterious."

Riona spoke in a way that showed that no matter what happens, she won't do otherwise.

"So my subordinates dying is not a problem, but your subordinates dying is something you can't accept?" Eardwolf spoke.

“Of course, I am only responsible for my subordinates’ lives, not yours.”

Riona was direct with her answer.

“What if I don’t agree to send them?”

The King questioned.

“Then we will abandon the Mission, Raguel would be charged for assassinating his brother, and that Evane would become the Ruler of the Skyfall Kingdom.

It was a good opportunity to gain control over the Skyfall Kingdom and a chance to recruit a few of their King Stage Cultivators, but we don’t have to take unnecessary risks.”

Riona shrugged.

“ ... ”

The King fell into deep thought.

Seeing this, a smile appeared on Riona’s face, she then stood up and,

“Well, whatever, I guess it was a waste of time, you can go continue with whatever you are doing, I still have some work to do.”

Saying those words, Riona turned around.

“Wait.”

Just as she was about to leave the room, the King called out.

Riona’s smile widened,

‘Easy peasy.’

She chuckled inwardly. Then, her smile disappeared and she turned around,

“Hmm? What is it?”

“So you are not going to do it?”

“I won’t.”

“Give that letter to me.”

The King spoke.

“Why?”

Riona frowned.

“Heh, unlike you, I am not a cow-”

Before Eardwolf could even complete, Riona’s expression changed,

“I warned you, didn’t I? Don’t do something that you might regret later.”

“This is a great opportunity, abandoning it because of some random ifs is not something wise, it might be a little risky, but I feel like I should take this risk.”

“So you are planning to help Raguel?”

Riona questioned.

“I am.” Eardwolf smiled.

“That would be gre-”

An excited smile appeared on Riona’s face, however, before she could continue, Eardwolf interrupted.

“However, I will be the one taking credit once this succeeds. I am the one who is taking all the risk after all.”

“That won’t be a problem, you can take all the credits you want. I don’t care.”

Hearing her answer, Eardwolf frowned,

Eardwolf felt that something was wrong, Riona was being a little too agreeable today. Why would she give up an opportunity like this to him?

Won’t it increase his influence? That isn’t something she would wish for.

The more he thought about this, the more suspicious it everything seemed.

And as if knowing what was going on in his mind, Riona spoke,

“Look, I know it is suspicious, if it was something else, I wouldn’t help you, however, this is something important for this Kingdom. I might lose some of my influence, however, if it can strengthen us, it is only a small price to pay.”

Eardwolf was not sure, something was definitely wrong.

Riona was not this saintly of a woman.

She was definitely planning something.

Eardwolf started thinking.

This Mission would definitely be beneficial for the Kingdom but the question was, what would Riona gain from this?

No matter what Eardwolf thought, he couldn’t come up with an answer.

‘Other than influence, there is nothing she needs, and influence could only be gained if the credit goes to her.

Wait...’

Eardwolf finally realized.

‘She was planning to steal my credits.’

Thinking about this, a cold look appeared on Eardwolf’s face.

‘Not today, you bitch.’

“Alright, I will help him, let me write a letter.”

“A letter?” Riona frowned.

A wide smile appeared on Eardwolf’s face and he answered,

“A letter to Vloyd and Razor, I will command them to go to the Skyfall Kingdom and talk with Prince Raguel.”

Eardwolf snickered inwardly.

Once everything was written, Riona wouldn’t be able to steal his credit. Thinking about this, a smile appeared on his face.

He then glanced at Riona to see her confused and troubled face, and seeing that face, a great sense of joy washed over his body.

‘Haha! Got you, bitch!’

# Chapter 488

‘Haah! Got you, bitch!’

Overjoyed by his victory, Eardwolf laughed inwardly.

To confirm this victory, he continued.

“Since sending only 1 King Stage Cultivator might be a little risky, I will directly send two, that way, even if they have another King Stage Cultivator protecting that little girl, she wouldn’t be able to survive.”

To keep the act running, Riona questioned with a troubled look on her face,

“What if there is another King Stage Cultivator?”

“Don’t be ridiculous Riona, there is no way that a little girl would be protected by 3 King Stage Cultivators. Two is already stretching it far.”

Eardwolf snapped.

With a frown on her face, Riona continued to think.

To be honest, it was getting difficult for her to continue with this act, she was barely holding back the urge to smile.

She only wanted to get rid of 1 King Stage Cultivator, but now this idiot was offering both his King Stage Cultivators to her. Not only that, but the idiot was even planning on writing a letter to get written proof, once that happens, even if the King tries with everything he has, the blame will still not shift on her. That Idiot wasn’t even considering the possibility of failing the mission.

“What do you think?”

As if trying to gloat on his victory, Eardwolf questioned with a smile on his face.

“ ... ”

Riona didn't answer.

Seeing this, Eardwolf's smile widened and he questioned again,

“Is there some problem with my plan?”

“That is not it...”

Riona replied with an awkward look on his face.

“Then what is it? Explain clearly.”

Again, the expression Eardwolf showed to Athela appeared on his face.

Riona was disgusted by the way Eardwolf was trying to order her around, however, for the sake of her plan, she didn't have a choice but to continue.

“How... How about I help you with this plan? I will make sure everything runs smoothly.”

Riona offered.

Hearing this offered, Eardwolf laughed inwardly.

‘Haha~ Now that I have come up with such an amazing plan, you want the piece of the pie? In your dreams!’

However, suddenly, another idea popped into Eardwolf's mind.

It is not every day that he gets a chance to get one up over Riona, since he has finally gained this chance, why not fully utilize it?

“I don't think there is anything wrong with that, only when the two of us are working together would this plan succeed properly. We should, no, for the

sake of the Kingdom, we must do it together.”

The King spoke.

Hearing his words, a big smile appeared on Riona’s face.

Seeing this look on her face, the King smiled inwardly.

‘Heh, smile all you want, work for me with everything you have, and once I am done using you, I will throw you away.’

Seeing his expression, where he was trying his hardest to hide that smile on his face, Riona shook her head inwardly.

‘That is the reason why you are so useless. Can’t even hide your expression properly. Tsk.’

...

Time passed quickly, the King was quick to take the action and with Riona helping her, the process was faster than ever.

In the Skyfall Kingdom, inside the Fulvanus Duke House, Prince Raguel, who was sitting on a chair was reading a letter, once he was done reading, a big smile appeared on his face.

He then turned towards an Old Man sitting in front of him and spoke,

“It’s them.”

Hearing his words, a small smile appeared on the Old Man’s face, soon, however, his smile disappeared and he replied,

“Took them long enough. Especially for someone who approached us first.”

“Well, they must have different things to work on, right? At least they are here. With the King Stage Cultivator, there is no way that bitch would come out alive.”

Raguel laughed.

However, seeing the look on his face, the Old Man's face turned especially serious.

“Raguel, keep this in mind, although you are getting help from them, do not lower yourself in front of them. You have to know, you will become the next King.

Act like one.”

Hearing his words, a serious look appeared on Raguel's face and he nodded.

“I will keep that in mind.”

“Good, remember, you only owe them one favor, and that too, only if they are smart enough to ask before you stabilize the Kingdom under your rule.”

“Yes, Great Grandfather.”

Raguel nodded.

“Great Grandfather, you should also be careful, although you will be teaming up with the King Stage Cultivator they send, you must keep an eye on them as well. There is a chance that they might backstab you once the Mission is complete.”

“Hahaha~ You do not have to worry about that, my old bones have observed this world for a long time now, I won't fall for something like that.

Don't worry, Evane won't survive this.”

The Old Man laughed.

Raguel smiled.

“What about him? Are the preparations complete?”

Suddenly, Gibson, who was sitting beside the two of them questioned.

“Yes, don’t worry, everything is prepared, now we only have to wait for the Skadi’s Cultivator.” Raguel nodded.

“Good.”

Gibson nodded.

To be honest, everyone in the Duke’s house was worried.

With 2 King Stage Cultivators working together, killing Evane wouldn’t be a problem, however, if Astaria learned about this somehow, no matter how many more King Stage Cultivators they have, their Mission would fail.

Not only that but their entire house will be destroyed as well.

Everything depended on how much Evane loved her brother.

Raguel prayed that she was still that stupid and naïve girl that she was all those years ago because if she was not, then their entire plan would fail.

What the three of them didn’t know was that the woman they were so worried about was not even inside the Kingdom. She is inside another Kingdom and currently, she was dealing with a problem lot worse than all these useless political stuff.

Not that it would change the outcome of this ‘Mission’ in any way.

Astaria wasn’t needed.

At least for now.

# Chapter 489

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

A knock was heard, Evane opened her door and a frown appeared on her face,

“What is it?” She questioned.

“I apologize for disturbing your sleep, Lady Evane, but Sir Benjamin told me to give this letter to you. He told me it is an urgent message that can’t be delayed.”

Evane grabbed the letter and nodded.

“Alright, you have done your job, you can leave.”

“Yes, Lady Evane.”

The guard nodded and hurriedly walked away.

“Hmmm? Why don’t we catch that guard?” Felberta, who was sitting inside Evane’s room questioned with a frown on her face.

“There is no use, that man wouldn’t even know what is written inside the letter, he was just ordered to deliver. He is not involved in this.”

Ember replied.

“That guard looked plenty suspicious to me,” Allura spoke.

“The way he walked away so hurriedly looked suspicious indeed,” Felberta commented. That was the reason why she talked about capturing the guard in the first place.

“He is bothering the woman who would very likely become the next Ruler of this Kingdom in the middle of the night, of course he would act strangely, don’t think too deeply about it.

Things like these are usually done with the help of vast chains, if we try to capture them from the bottom, we would only move around and around while the ones behind them would run away.”

Ember spoke.

“Is there a network really that deep? Isn’t it dangerous? We should get rid of this network once Evane becomes the Queen.”

Felberta spoke.

“We will have all the time in the world to do so, don’t worry.”

Ember chuckled.

Felberta smiled as well.

“It is as we expected.”

Suddenly, Evane muttered.

The women’s attention turned towards her and Evane continued,

“They kidnapped Lucas while he was drinking inside a bar.”

“Sometimes I feel like Amaya can time travel. TO predict something so accurately, is it even possible?”

Suddenly, Ember commented.

“Well, Lucas drinks, while Raguel would need someone who could force Evane out of her room and essentially the Royal Palace, so it was pretty obvious.”

Felberta replied.

“It is only obvious because it has already happened. She predicted this the moment Riona talked about this plan. It’s not the same.

Also, it is not like this is her first time doing something like this, is it?”

Ember questioned.

“I would agree, she is indeed gifted.”

Felberta nodded.

Ember nodded as well, however, Felberta continued,

“She is still a bitch nonetheless.”

“I won’t disagree there.”

Ember nodded.

Seeing how these women had started talking about a completely random topic while her brother is kidnapped, Evane couldn’t help but shake her head and sigh.

These women didn’t care about her brother at all.

Well, she understood what they were thinking as well.

Lucas didn’t exactly have a likable personality and after what happened with Lovis, Evane’s attachment with her brothers decreased a little.

She won’t lie, she was still worried about her brother, however, unlike before, when she would have tried to rush to the location without any plans, she was sitting on a chair without much change in her expression.

Another reason she wasn’t that worried was that she knew that they won’t hurt Lucas until she is not there.

They might rough him up a little, but at the very least, they won’t kill him.

That much was enough.

“Girls, are you ready?”

Suddenly, a figure appeared inside the room where all the women were and spoke.

“We are.”

Ember nodded with a smile on her face.

This time, Lane was the one who took the initiative and quickly walked toward Nux to hug him.

Nux, of course, hugged her back and, after covering his face with a mask, he smiled,

“Shall we go then?”

“Mhm.”

Evane nodded.

The two of them then left the room, the rest of the women activated [Conceal] and left as well.

...

On the other side, Raguel who was standing next to Lucas smiled with a wide smile on his face,

“W-Why are you doing this!?” Lucas questioned with a frightened look on his face.

“Heh! Don’t blame me, blame that bitch Evane.” Raguel smiled as he stomped on Lucas’s head.

“Ugghh! What h-h-have I done?”

“Well, you were quite rude to me that day, weren’t you?”

Hearing his words, Lucas’s face went pale.

“B-Brother, E-E-Eldest Brother, I was only joking that day! No one else but you can become the Next King! You want my Grandfather’s support, do you not? I-I will talk to my Grandfather myself.

You don’t have to get your hands dirty by killing me.”

“Hmm? Who said I am going to kill you?”

Suddenly, Raguel frowned.

“W-What do you mean?” Lucas frowned.

“You are only a bait, you idiot. My real target is our beloved sister. Also, I do not need your Grandfather’s help now, once I deal with that bitch, there would be no option left but you.”

“B-Bait?”

Lucas frowned in confusion and fear.

“Yes, that Bitch Evane is quite affectionate with you, right? Hope that her affection is not just a show. I have already sent her a letter if she cares about you, she would come here for sure, however, if she doesn’t, then... hehehe~”

Raguel laughed creepily.

Lucas’s face paled even more.

“N-N-No! I am sure she will be here! Our relationship might have soured a little since I was a little rude to her, however, I am sure she still sees me as her dear brother, especially after Lovis is dead.

I am sure she will be here.”

Lucas spoke.

Even though he knew he was bait and they were targeting Evane using her, he didn't care about it at all, with all his heart, he hoped that Evane would be here to save him.

He hoped that the two of them would fight and kill each other, that way, he could run away and come out of this situation alive.

“Hahaha~ Just hope what you said is true.”

Raguel laughed.

“Yes Yes! I am sure she will be here. S-So please let me go.”

“Let go? Do you real-”

Raguel wanted to reply, however, suddenly, a figure wearing black colored clothes walked in and spoke,

“I heard footsteps, they are here.”

Hearing this, Raguel's smile widened even more.

His plan would succeed, and he would finally become the Next King.

# Chapter 490

“I heard footsteps, they are here.”

The man wearing black colored clothes spoke with a solemn look on his face.

Hearing his words, a big smile appeared on Raguel’s face.

He then turned towards Lucas and chuckled,

“It seems that your Sister is still as naïve as before.”

Lucas’s face brightened up,

“S-S-See? I-I told you already, she still values me. You have already achieved what you wanted, n-now please let me go.”

Thinking that Raguel’s mood was better than before since his plan succeeded, Lucas begged.

However, Raguel just glanced at Lucas with the same smile on his face,

“No, I have another use for you.”

“W-W-What do you want me to do?”

Lucas questioned.

“I will capture Evane and bring her here, once she is here, I want you to be the one to kill her.”

“W-What?”

Lucas’s eyes widened in surprise.

“What? You don’t want to?”

Raguel narrowed his eyes,

“A-A-Alright, I will do as you command.”

Frightened by his expression, Lucas nodded in agreement.

Raguel chuckled inwardly,

‘To be killed by the one who you were trying to save, now that is a fate befitting for a bitch like you.’

“Goo-”

Raguel wanted to continue, however, suddenly, the man standing beside him snapped.

“We don’t have the entire day, continue with your stupid plans later.”

Raguel turned towards the man and looked at him with a threatening look on his face.

The man looked back into his eyes without a trace of fear in his eyes, rather, a dangerous aura suddenly burst out of the man’s body.

Feeling this aura, Raguel’s expression changed and he stepped back in fear.

“Unlike you, I have things to do, it would be better if we complete the mission sooner.”

“Y-Yes, as you say.”

Raguel nodded.

The man nodded and then turned around.

Seeing his back, Raguel’s expression contorted into anger, however, in the end, he just gritted his teeth and clenched his fist.

He had to hold back his anger.

Raguel then followed the man, the rest of the Soldiers inside the room placed their eyes on Lucas, making sure that he doesn't plan anything unnecessary.

Seeing their expressions, Lucas's body trembled again and he decided to not do anything.

Not that he was planning to do anything from the beginning.

Moving suspiciously meant nothing but a death sentence and Lucas wasn't planning to die here.

...

On the other hand, when Raguel walked out of the room where Lucas was locked, his eyes fell on his Great Grandfather who seemed to be waiting for him.

“We shall start.”

Raguel's Great Grandfather, Cyneheard spoke with a serious look on his face.

The King Stage Cultivator beside him nodded as well.

However, just as they were about to move, another King Stage Cultivator, wearing black colored clothes appeared.

Seeing this man appear in front of them so suddenly, Raguel and Cyneheard panicked, Cyneheard took his fighting stance and questioned,

“Who are you!?”

“Don't act up, he is with me.”

However, just as Cyneheard was about to attack the King Stage Cultivator who had suddenly appeared, the King Stage Cultivator sent by the Kingdom spoke.

“Lord Vloyd? What does this mean?”

Cyneheard questioned.

“Well, our King predicted that something might go wrong, so he sent the two of us here, just to be sure that the girl is dead.”

Then, Vloyd turned towards the man who had just appeared and spoke,

“And since he is here then there must be something wrong.”

Raguel and Cyneheard frowned.

“The information we received was wrong.”

Suddenly, the man who had just appeared spoke.

“What do you mean? Is there another King Stage Cultivator protecting her?” Vloyd questioned with a frown on his face.

“Even worse, that girl is a King Stage Cultivator herself.”

The man revealed.

“WHAT!!?” Hearing what he said, Raguel shouted in shock.

“Are you sure that you did not make a mistake? She just became a King Stage Cultivator a month or two ago.” Cyneheard questioned. Though the disbelief on his face was not as evident as Raguel, he was still shocked.

“Do you think I would make a mistake like this?”

The man narrowed his eyes.

“And do you think someone can become a King Stage Cultivator in just a month?” Cyneheard questioned back.

“ ... ”

The man turned silent.

“...I did not make any mistake, she was definitely the Second Princess and she was a King Stage Cultivator, not only that, she was even followed by another King Stage Cultivator, however, the man had covered his face with a mask.”

“That must be her bodyguard,” Cyneheard spoke.

“Alright, we don’t have much time, I don’t know how she became a King Stage Cultivator so quickly, however, even though she is now a King Stage Cultivator, we still have 3, while they are only 2. We even have more than Soldiers with us, killing them will not be difficult if we surround them properly.” Cyneheard spoke.

“Indeed.”

Vloyd nodded, he then turned towards Raguel and spoke,

“We don’t have the time to continue with that stupid plan of yours.”

This time, Raguel didn’t say anything either, he knew this wasn’t the time to fool around,

Evane has become a King Stage Cultivator, once this fact is revealed, her becoming the next King will be pretty much guaranteed no matter if he is proven guilty or not.

She had to die and she had to die right here.

Raguel nodded and turned back into the rooms where Lucas was locked.

“All the Soldiers are there.”

The King Stage Cultivators followed him.

The 4 of them walked into the room and Raguel walked towards Lucas.

“D-D-Did you get rid of her? Will you let me live now?”

Lucas questioned, however, soon, a frown appeared on his face and he questioned,

“Wait, but you told me to kill her? Why didn’t you capture her and bring her here? Did you change your mind? Well, that is not a problem either, she will be dead either way, heh, with that bitch gone, now you can become the next King easily.

All hail King Raguel!”

Lucas cheered.

Raguel, however, didn’t react much and replied,

“Lucas, there is a change in plans.”

“W-W-What do you mean?”

“I will kill Evane with my own hands.”

“That is completely fine by me. You can let me go, she is already here, isn’t sh-”

Lucas nodded.

“Well, since you are not useful anymore, you will be sending you away first. You still have Royal blood flowing in your veins, don’t you? I can’t take any risks.”

Raguel smiled evilly.

“W-What?”

Lucas’s face paled.

Raguel walked towards him with a smile on his face, a dagger soon appeared in his hand.

“NO! YOU CAN’T KILL ME!”

Lucas shouted in fear.

Raguel's smile widened, he raised his dagger, ready to kill,

However, just as he was about to lower his arm,

“Ahh, that would be a problem, I can't let you kill him,

So you need to stop, First Prince.”

# Chapter 491

Raguel's smile widened, he raised his dagger, ready to kill,

However, just as he was about to lower his arm,

“Ahh, that would be a problem, I can't let you kill him,

So you need to stop, First Prince.”

A calm voice was heard.

However, the reaction to that calm voice was not calm at all.

Everyone present in the room, Raguel, the Three King Stage Cultivators, the Soldiers, and Lucas, all widened their eyes in horror or surprise.

Raguel and the Three King Stage Cultivators quickly turned around and their eyes fell on Nux, who was standing in front of them with a small smile on his face.

“W-Who are you?” Cyneheard questioned.

“Hmm? Don't you know me already? Ahhh, wait a second.”

Suddenly, Nux turned around, and Evane from behind him as well.

“E-Evane...”

Raguel stuttered.

“S-Sister Evane! You are finally here! I was so worri-”

Lucas wanted to quickly jump sides, however, Evane just looked at her with a cold, icy look, and Lucas quickly realized that if he didn't shut his mouth right now, he would face something lot more than death.

Lucas's body trembled in fear.

And at the same time, he wondered in his mind,

Was this really her sister?

Her expression looks... so chilling... so... frightening...

Was her Sister capable of showing such expressions?

“So you really are a King Stage Cultivator...” Cyneheard spoke as he analyzed the two people in front of him with a composed look on his face.

“Hmm? Why are you still confirming that? Didn't this guy tell you that already? I thought that he ran away after observing us for a few seconds for that.”

“Y-You saw me!?”

The man wearing black clothes, Razor Skadi, questioned with a shocked look on his face.

“Did you really think you could run away from me? Wait, were you even trying? I thought you were telling us to follow you here.” Nux replied.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

The three King Stage Cultivators turned silent.

“Wait...”

Suddenly, Nux called out.

He then stepped forward and narrowed his eyes,

“Hmmm? Aren’t you two Razor and Vloyd? So you are the ones who were sent for the sacrifice. Well, you two are quite old, I think the Skadis will lose the least if you two are dead.”

“What are you talking about?” Vloyd questioned.

At the same time, he started pondering how this baster knew their names even though their faces were covered.

“Nux, do you really think those people would tell them that they are sacrifices? They must have been thinking that Mission is going to be an easy one, where they would only have to kill a single Expert Stage Cultivator.

I am sure that they didn’t even know about my real Cultivation until today.”

Evane chuckled.

“Ahh, you are right about that, my bad.”

Nux nodded.

Razor and Vloyd, on the other hand, didn’t know what the two of them were talking about.

“Are you two out of your minds?”

Razor questioned.

Nux just chuckled.

“Heh, he is standing in front of 3 King Stage Cultivators and more than 20 Soldiers, of course, he will lose his sanity, give him some time.”

Cyneheard smiled.

However, suddenly, Nux frowned.

“Hmm? 20 Soldiers? What are you talking about?”

“Heh? Do your eyes have defects as well?”

Raguel laughed, he then spread his arms and his eyes shined brightly,

“Look around you! You are surrounded wit-”

However, before Raguel could even complete his sentence,

**\*Pierce\* \*Pierce\* \*Pierce\* \*Pierce\* \*Pierce\***

Some strange Black-Purple Spikes popped out of the Ground and pierced through all the soldiers’ bodies, directly coming out of their heads.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Yes, all the soldiers were dead.

None of them could even scream before their entire body was piredced through with these Spikes.

They were utterly helpless.

“What soldiers are you talking about? I only see dead bodies here...”

Nux questioned with a confused look on his face.

Let alone Raguel or the King Stage Cultivators, even Evane was surprised.

‘W-What is that technique?’

She couldn’t understand.

She knew about all the abilities Nux had, however, this...

She had no clue that he possessed something so monstrous and fearsome.

To deal with all these soldiers in one attack, mind you, these soldiers were not weak, there were even a few Expert Stage Cultivators there. Even the Armor that they were wearing, it was a 4-Star Armor...

This was not something that could be pierced through so easily, normal swords can't even dent it no matter how much strength is used, however, these Spikes pierced through them like they were nothing.

"T-That attack must have cost a lot of Mana! Don't let him recover his Mana! We still have the numbers advantage, kill them!"

Cyneheard ordered and dashed towards Nux, however, suddenly, Nux disappeared from his position and appeared right in front of Cyneheard.

He then grabbed the Old man's head and slammed it into the Ground.

"Ugghh!"

The Old man groaned in pain.

Nux, however, was not done yet,

"AGGHHHHHGGGHH!!!"

Four Spikes popped out of the ground, Piercing through Cyneheard's limbs and at the same time, razing his body into the air right to the level where he could see Nux's face.

Nux then glanced at Razor and Vloyd.

The two of them flinched.

They had realized it already, there was no point in fighting.

Although the two of them were also King Stage Cultivators, they still couldn't be compared to this Monster.

The two of them were now looking around and were thinking of a plan to run away.

The Mission is impossible, especially if this Monster was protecting the Second Princess.

“Man, I can't believe it, Riona is just amazing, to directly send two King Stage Cultivators to die here... She could have just asked though, I would have let you live.”

Nux shook his head and sighed,

“I guess that can be expected from that woman, she is a perfectionist after all. The skit needed to be real so that even Raguel and Cyneheard would fall for it, and what can be more real than the actors thinking that what they are doing is a real mission?”

“R-Riona? W-W-What are you t-talking about? W-We are here because the K-King ordered us to.”

# Chapter 492

“R-Riona? W-W-What are you t-talking about? W-We are here because the K-King ordered us to.”

Vloyd’s expression changed and he stuttered.

Hearing his question, a frown appeared on Nux’s face and he tilted his head in confusion.

“Hmm? The King? Was King involved as well?”

“That can’t be true, the relationship between the King and Riona is not good.” Evane shook her head and informed.

“Then why...” Nux wanted to question but stopped midway.

However, even though he didn’t complete his sentence, Vloyd and Razor realized what he was talking about.

“She must have manipulated the King.”

Evane answered. She then glanced at Vloyd and Razor and questioned with an amused look on her face,

“Was your relationship with Riona bad? I can’t think of any other reason why she would sacrifice King Stage Cultivators.”

Vloyd’s and Razor’s expressions changed.

Nux finally realized,

“Ahhh, so that’s it, I was wondering why she did this... You were her enemies. Hahaha~ She is truly an incredible woman, to manipulate the King and even get rid of two King Stage Cultivators who have bad blood with her.

She is indeed Amaya's mother.”

“Indeed, she is incredible.” Evane nodded as well.

“W-What are you talking about!?” Vloyd questioned in anger and fear.

“Well, I don't see any reason to explain anything to you and as they say,

The dead don't need to know the reasons.”

“”You bastard! We are not dead yet!””

Vloyd and Razor shouted at the same time, and as if they were planning it for a long time, the two of them created a huge fireball and shot at Nux at the same time.

**\*BOOOM\***

A huge explosion was heard, Raguel was sent flying due to the impact, Lucas was even worse, the man lost his consciousness, however, the one who had it the worst was Cyneheard. The old man's limbs were pierced through and the spikes piercing them were connected to the ground, therefore, even though he wanted to move away, he couldn't and was forced to face the entire impact on his own.

The huge blast burned the skin on his face.

“AgggghhhhHhhhh!”

He shouted in pain.

However, not a single being cared about it. Vloyd, Razor, and Raguel's attention were fixed on the center of the blast, which was still covered with smoke.

Or... at least what Raguel thought.

In truth, Vloyd and Razor had already made a run for it. Whether the attack worked or not didn't matter, staying here was foolish. There was no need to

take any risks, especially after knowing that this Mission was a trap.

Also, they needed to report it to the King, Riona had gone too far this time.

That bitch tried to kill them, she had to pay for it.

Just thinking about it angered the two of them. They increased their speed even more, however, suddenly,

“Ugghh... what took you so long? I have been waiting...”

Vloyd and Razor paused and looked at the man in front of them with shocked looks on their faces.

‘H-How...’

They couldn’t believe it.

Let alone this monster was affected by their attack, he was even waiting for them here...

Just how is this possible?

Seeing their reaction, Nux questioned with a curious expression on his face.

“You know how thorough Riona is, correct? Did you really think you could run away?”

“NOW!!!”

Of course, the two of them weren’t willing to have a chat with him. Their lives were on the line here.

The two of them shouted at the same time, then they ran in the opposite direction.

Yes, they planned to sacrifice one of them.

The others who would survive would report everything to the King.

Nux just sighed, he disappeared and appeared in front of Razor,

“Heh, my luck is the worse...” Razor chuckled dryly.

He had already given up.

However, soon, a sword appeared in his hand and he took his fighting stance,

“I won’t go down without a fight.”

“You are finally willing to talk, I thought you would try to run again.”

“Heh, you are just lucky that you didn’t meet me at my prime.”

Razor chuckled.

He was speaking anything that came into his mind.

He wanted to waste time, after all.

Nux didn’t mind it either.

“Oh? Were you really that strong at your prime?”

Seeing that he was still talking to him, Razor smiled inwardly and continued,

“Heh, dealing with people like you would have been a simple task.”

“Ahh, what about the Emperors? Could you fight against them?”

“Hmm? You even know about the Emperors?”

“Why would I not know about them? Hey, don’t change the topic, answer me, what was his name again? Ahh, right, Amletus. So? Could you defeat Amletus when you were at your prime?”

Nux questioned and Razor’s expression changed,

“How do you know his name?”

“Riona told me of course,” Nux replied.

“What is your relationship with Riona?”

“I won’t tell.” Nux turned away.

“...”

Razor frowned.

“You still haven’t answered my question yet.”

Nux reminded. Razor realized,

“Well, of course, defeating Lord Amletus is impossible, I was strong, but not strong enough.”

Even though he was bragging, he couldn’t brag that much. Defeating Amletus, even in his imagination was impossible.

“Ahh, so you weren’t that strong.” Nux nodded.

Razor, however, completely ignored his words and questioned.

“So? What is your relationship with Riona?”

“Why should I tell you? You are about to die anyway.” Nux shrugged.

“Treat it as my last wish.”

“HMMMMMM,”

Nux started pondering.

“Alright, if you say it that way... I can’t deny.

Riona is my wife’s mother. So she is my mother-in-law.” Nux replied.

“Mother-in-law?” Razor frowned.

Riona only had 1 child, and that child was cursed...

What was her name again...?

Razor started pondering.

“Amaya?”

“Mhm, correct.”

Nux nodded with a smile on his face.

“Wait, she was married to Ricardus, why are you calling her your wife?”  
Razor frowned, then, his expression changed,

“Did that bitch cheat on Ricardus!?”

Hearing his words, Nux’s expression changed,

‘Fuck...’

Razor realized what he has done.

A sword appeared on Nux’s hand and Razor prepared himself to embrace death.

He had already wasted enough time, Vloyd must have run far away now, there is no way this man could possibly catch hi-

However, suddenly, Razor’s expression changed.

# Chapter 493

He had already wasted enough time, Vloyd must have run far away now, there is no way this man could possibly catch hi-

However, suddenly, Razor's expression changed as he saw a black-red-haired woman walking towards him and Nux.

“What is taking you so long?” The woman questioned.

“...”

Nux, however, didn't reply.

Seeing this, Ember frowned, she then turned towards Razor and questioned,

“Did you say something stupid? Perhaps anything to one of his wives?”

“...”

Razor didn't reply, Ember, however, understood his answer from his expression and sighed,

“There were better ways to die, you know...”

Razor didn't know what to say...

He didn't do it on purpose, he was just trying to waste as much time as possible, however, it was all useless now.

The man he was trying to buy time for...

Was lying on the floor, being dragged around by this woman, whether he was dead or alive, Razor didn't know, however, he knew that their plan had failed.

He... he had to think of something-

Suddenly Razor's eyes widened...

He lost his balance, he then glanced below and then, he noticed that his left leg was sliced off from his knee,

His brain finally registered the pain and,

“AAGGGGhhhGGHhhh!!!”

“Well, this might take a while...”

Ember sighed and then, she turned around.

Leaving Nux alone with that Idiot.

She then walked where Evane was and saw an interesting sight.

“Sister Evane! I know that our relationship wasn't the best, but we are still related by blood, please, spare me! Spare me just this once!”

Raguel was kneeling on the ground, his head near Evane's foot and he begged.

“I already spared you once.”

Evane replied with an expressionless look on her face.

“I... I... Just this once! Please, Sister Evane. The last chance! Please spare me! I promise that I won't ever appear in front of you again! I will disappear! I will disappear and the Throne will be yours!”

Feeling that it was interesting, Ember smiled and walked toward the scene,

“Hmm? You might disappear, but what about the Fulvianus Duke House? They would not sit still right?”

Ember questioned with an amused smile on his face.

Raguel's eyes then fell on Ember and seeing her standing with Evane, placing one hand on Evane's shoulder and the other dragging Vloyd's body as if it was trash... Raguel realized that she was not a normal woman.

"D-Don't worry about the Fulvanus house! They won't do anything either! They would even serve Evane with loyalty once she becomes the Ruler!"

He answered.

"We can't take your words now, can we? You are not the Leader of the Fulvanus House, are you?"

Ember spoke.

"T-Then Kill him! Once he is gone, the Fulvanus House wouldn't dare to bare their fangs against you!"

Raguel pointed towards Cyneheard and shouted.

"Hmmm, that is a good idea."

Ember nodded.

"R-Right?" Raguel's expression changed.

"Hmm? How about we kill him and make you the new head of the Fulvanus House? I am sure you will be loyal to us, right?"

Ember questioned.

"Of course! To show you how loyal I am, I will kill him right in front of your eyes."

Raguel quickly stood up, a dagger then appeared in his hand, he walked towards Cyneheard, who still couldn't move and blood continued to pour out of his body.

"I await your orders,"

Raguel bowed.

“...”

Seeing his Great Grandson standing in front of him, ready to kill him, Cyneheard didn't say anything.

He just glanced at Ember and questioned,

“You are General Ember from the Woods Kingdom, correct?”

“You know me?”

Ember questioned back, not denying his claim.

“How can I not know one of the strongest King Stage Cultivators of the World? But what are you doing here? Why are you helping this girl?” Cyneheard questioned.

Evane just smiled.

“It's not about the girl, is it?” Cyneheard questioned.

“It must be that man, you are not helping her, but him.” Cyneheard then glanced at Evane and spoke,

“The same goes for you, he is not your subordinate, it is the reverse... you are going to be his puppet... Heh...”

I would like to see how Lady Astaria would react once she learns about this...”

Cyneheard chuckled.

The old man clearly misunderstood, however, Evane and Ember didn't bother to correct him.

In the end, Cyneheard glanced at Raguel and chuckled.

“I thought of this before, however, you are indeed similar to your grandfather, Thornton. Both of you are fools...”

“What are you talking about?”

Raguel narrowed his eyes.

“You are ready to kill the man who supported you for so long while demonstrating your loyalty... do you really think you are making a strong argument here?”

“...”

Suddenly, Raguel turned silent.

He then slowly turned towards Evane and Ember, Evane didn't have any reaction, however, Ember was looking at him with an amused look on her face.

Raguel finally realized.

“You were being fooled...”

Cyneheard laughed.

Raguel's expression changed.

He looked around, and noticed the Soldier's dead bodies, those scary spikes that pierced their bodies, a King Stage Cultivator who was being dragged around like trash, a King Stage Cultivator who was half dead...

He couldn't do anything...

Raguel fell on his knees again.

Tears rolled out of his eyes as he glanced at Evane and Ember and begged,

“Please... let me live...”

“Ugghh... it is not fun anymore...”

Ember groaned with a bored look on her face.

She then glanced at Cyneheard and spoke,

“You spoiled my fun.”

“...”

Cyneheard didn't know what to say.

Seeing that he was completely ignored, Raguel didn't know what to do.

He then stood up and started walking towards Evane,

“Evane, do you know, I really regret the time when we were children, you, Lucas, and Lovis were especially close, I, however, was different. Due to my stupidity, I completely ignored you three, thinking you were fools, however, now, I really regret it...”

I should have spent more time with you guys, I was secretly jealous...”

Raguel continued to walk towards Evane,

“So jealous that I-”

And once he was close enough, he jumped at her with a dagger in his hand,

‘If I am going down, I will take you down with me!’

# Chapter 494

‘If I am going down, I will take you down with me!’

With that thought in his mind, Raguel launched his final attack, trying to Kill Evane before he died.

Evane took everything from him, he had to take it all back.

A cold smile appeared on his face, however, suddenly, that smile disappeared when Evane simply stepped back and dodged his attack without any change in her expression.

Ember, who was standing beside Evane smiled widely and punched Raguel’s face. The First Prince’s body flew away and crashed on the ground.

“Ugghhh...”

He groaned in pain.

Ember then started walking towards him, but suddenly,

“We can’t kill him.”

Evane spoke.

Hearing those words, Raguel’s face brightened up. Evane still had a soft spot, she was still that naïve little girl who couldn’t bear to kill her family members.

It was a good news for him.

“Ugghhh...”

This time, he didn't thank Evane, he knew this wouldn't work after what he did, however, he just continued to groan in pain, trying to gain more sympathy, only Evane could save him today and he was planning to hold on to that hope.

“Ahh, don't worry, I know that, we need to give him to Riona, alive.”

Ember smiled.

Raguel's face changed, he then glanced at Evane and saw her nodding at Ember. Raguel's eyes widened in surprise.

“W-What are you talking about?”

He questioned.

\*Pierce\*

Suddenly, another black-purple spike popped out of the ground, this time, it pierced Cyneheard's heart. The man was finally put out of his misery. He then glanced at the man who was responsible for killing him and seeing the cold look in Nux's eyes and Razor's body that Nux was dragging, he considered himself lucky.

“Alright, the fun is over,”

Nux walked towards Evane and Ember and spoke.

He then waved his body, all the Spike disappeared, then Razor's, Vloyd's, and Cyneheard's bodies disappeared.

“This would be enough for proof.”

Nux spoke.

“Indeed.”

Ember nodded and then she started walking towards Raguel.

Raguel tried to crawl away, fear evident in his eyes, however, since Ember wasn't playing around anymore, she quickly caught him and with just one punch on his face, Raguel passed out.

"I'll take him to the Skadi Kingdom."

Ember spoke.

Nux nodded, he then turned towards Evane and spoke,

"We will continue with the rest of the plan."

Evane nodded back.

She didn't even look at her brother, who was lying unconscious, and started walking away.

Seeing this, Nux sighed, he walked towards Lucas and picked him up.

Then, Evane, Nux, and Ember left, leaving the dead bodies of the soldiers Raguel and the others brought inside the room.

...

**\*Bam\***

5 Minutes later, Nux and Evane opened the doors of the Royal Hall with Brute Force and walked in. Nux had covered his face with his Mask again while Evane's had an angry look on her face.

"Call the King."

She ordered all the subordinates present inside the Hall.

"R-Right now?"

One of the Guards Blurted out loud.

It was the middle of the night, the King must be sleeping right now. Disturbing him at this time, was it really something so important?

Everyone wondered in their head.

Evane, however, didn't care about what the Guards were thinking and repeated her order,

“Call. The. King.”

“...”

The guards turned silent and looked at each other.

Evane clenched her fists, suddenly, one of the guards pointed at Evane, his finger trembling,

“S-She... her C-Cultivation...”

The other Guards' eyes widened in shock.

Evane was now a King Stage Cultivator!

Just how was this possible!?

Didn't she become an Expert Stage Cultivator just a few months ago?

Are you telling me that she became a King Stage Cultivator in just a few months!?

Ridiculous!

The Guards couldn't believe their eyes.

“CALL. THE. KING.”

Evane shouted, her green eyes, shining in anger while a wild Aura was released from her body.

“The King is currently sleeping, Lady Evane.”

Suddenly, a man wearing Black Clothes appeared and spoke.

“Wake him up.”

Evane turned towards the man and replied.

“Is it really that important? Can it not be postponed till tomorrow?” Keeve questioned.

“It would be too late by then.”

Evane answered.

“...” Keeve didn't say anything and continued to observe Evane for a while.

“Alright.” In the end, he agreed and then turned around.

...

In a matter of minutes, a session was set up where the King, the Ministers, and a few members of the Shadow Unit, who were protecting the King from the Shadows appeared.

The King, who was sitting on his Throne spoke with an annoyed look on his face,

“This better be worthwhile, Second Princess.”

In truth, he was surprised by Evane's cultivation, and just like everyone in the room, he was also wondering how Evane became a King Stage Cultivator in just a few months.

However, in the end, he was the King, and he had to control his emotions and act maturely.

Of course, this didn't mean he wouldn't investigate.

If Evane actually had a way to increase Cultivation speed, then as the Princess of the Kingdom, she had to reveal this way to the Kingdom. Especially to him, the King, the man who ruled this Kingdom and made sure that the Kingdom prospers.

However, right now, he had to listen to what Evane had to say.

Seeing that she has gained everyone's attention, Evane turned towards Nux and nodded.

Nux nodded back and waved his hand and two dead bodies appeared on the ground.

Everyone's eyes widened in surprise, leaving the other body aside, they recognized one of the bodies very well,

It was Cyneheard Fulvianus, the Ancestor of the Fulvianus Duke House and a King Stage Cultivator.

But why was he here?

Who killed him?

“Raguel tried to assassinate me, again.”

Evane spoke and everyone's eyes widened in surprise again.

Unconsciously, everyone's eyes fell on Gibson Fulvianus, whose face was pale in fright as his eyes couldn't stay away from his Father's dead body.

“I don't know how or when, but Raguel managed to contact the Skadi Kingdom and it seems that the Kingdom is helping him.

The other dead body belongs to the King Stage Cultivators sent by the Skadi Kingdom to help him kill me.

While we were fighting with these two, one of their King Stage Cultivators ran away and took Raguel with him.

They shouldn't have gone far away since that King Stage Cultivator was injured, therefore, I urge you to send your men to find him.

Colluding with other kingdoms is a Crime that can only be punished with a death sentence, Raguel cannot be allowed to get away from this.”

# Chapter 495

Chapter 495 J-Just Where Did She Find That Monster?

“Colluding with other Kingdom is a Crime that can only be punished with a death sentence, Raguel cannot be allowed to get away from this.”

Evane commented with a cold look on her face.

“H-H-How dare you! Your Majesty! There is no way the First Prince would do something like this knowing full well how dire the consequences are, especially when Lady Astaria is out!

This Girl is lyin- UgghKkhhhKkhhkkk!”

Gibson wanted to continue, however, suddenly, Nux appeared in front of him and grabbed his neck, and lifted him in the air.

Everyone present inside the hall widened their eyes in shock.

No one could react to Nux’s movements.

Even the King Stage Cultivators like the King, Keeve, and Reeve, they all just stood there, just like all others, and only realized what happened once Nux was already holding Gibson in his arms.

W-What if he had attacked me?

The same question appeared in everyone’s mind.

The Shadow Unit and the King perspired.

Only after an entire minute passed by did Keeve finally manage to regain his composure and stepped up.

“What are you doing?”

He questioned with a cold look on his face.

Nux turned his head towards Keeve, his Golden eyes were now locked onto Keeve, Keeve felt his entire body tremble, he took another 10 seconds to get used to Nux's gaze, and only after that did he finally react.

“T-T-This is the Royal H-Hall... do you think this is the place you c-can run amok?”

Keeve questioned, however, his authoritative tone, which he tried so hard to keep was nowhere to be seen. It looked like rather than confronting Nux, he wanted nothing more than just to run away.

Nobody in the Hall blamed him either.

With just one move, Nux has proved that if he wanted, he could get rid of anyone in this room and no one could do anything to stop him.

‘J-Just where did she find that monster?’

Everyone wondered as they glanced at Evane.

Evane didn't show any change in her expression, she just glanced at Keeve and replied,

“I apologize for his rude actions, he is a little sensitive after what happened.

After being attacked by Raguel and 3 King Stage Cultivators and barely making it out alive, someone tries to say that everything is a lie, even after you showed all the proof, it is only natural that one would be annoyed.”

Evane then turned towards Gibson, who was still trying his best to get out of Nux's hold, however, couldn't do anything to overpower him.

“I only want to ask one thing, if what I am saying is a lie, then how come Cyneheard is lying there, dead? Are you saying that Raguel isn't involved but only Cyneheard is?”

Suddenly, a cold smile appeared on Evane's face,

“Because if that is the case, then not only him, the entire Fulvanus Family would be executed.”

Gibson’s eyes widened in surprise.

Nux then loosened his grip and lightly threw him away.

“\*Cough\* \*Cough\* \*Cough\*”

Gibson grabbed his neck and coughed continuously.

At the same time, his entire body perspired in worry and fear.

He was trapped, with Cyneheard’s body lying there, there is nothing he could do to save the situation.

“Or are you saying that I attacked the Fulvanus Duke House in the Middle of the Night and killed Cyneheard?”

Hearing her words, Gibson’s eyes widened in surprise and then he jumped onto the chance he saw,

“Yes, that is it! You must be desperate to become the next Ruler, therefore, you directly attacked the Duke House, trying to kill the First Prince, father must have tried to protect him and using this chance, Raguel must have run away, that is why you are here, trying to cover your mistake, blame everything on the First Prince and trying to use the King to get rid of him.”

Hearing his words, Evane’s smile turned into a sneer,

“What do you have to say about this King Stage Cultivator? The one from the Skadi Kingdom? Why is he here?”

Raguel couldn’t have possibly run away if 2 King Stage Cultivators attacked him.”

Suddenly, Evane pointed at Nux, and continued,

“Also, let’s be honest here, if he wants, he can get rid of any King Stage Cultivator present here in just one move, there is no way Cyneheard could have fought both me and him and the same time.

Then it must mean this King Stage Cultivator helped him, and if a Skadi Kingdom’s King Stage Cultivator is helping the Fulvianus House,

Then we need to do a serious background check, no matter if I attacked Raguel or Raguel attacked me.”

Evane spoke and Gibson finally realized that he has fallen into a trap set by Evane.

He glanced at Evane, with his eyes burning with anger, Evane just looked at him with an expressionless look on her face.

Another second later, she just turned around, completely ignoring him, and looked at the King,

“Please send a few of your men to catch Raguel.”

She repeated her request.

The King’s expression turned serious.

There were many questions in his mind, however, right now, the blame placed on the Fulvianus Duke House and Raguel was too serious, he couldn’t waste more time on this.

He will investigate this entire incident on his own, however, right now, catching Raguel was the priority.

“Keeve.”

The King called out.

“Yes, your Majesty.”

Keeve bowed respectfully.

“Send a few men to catch the First Prince.”

“As you command, your majesty.”

The King nodded and then turned towards Reeve,

“Investigate this entire incident.”

Reeve nodded.

“As you command, your majesty.”

The King then turned towards the rest and ordered,

“The content of this discussion must remain confidential until further notice.”

“”As you command, your Majesty.””

Everyone bowed.

“Leave.”

The King ordered and everyone walked away.

The only ones left inside the Hall were the King and Reeve,

“Should I inform Lady Astaria?”

Reeve questioned.

“The Skadis are involved, we have to inform her.”

The King replied and at the same time, he gulped in fear when he imagined how pissed Astaria would be.

# Chapter 496

“Ugghh...”

Raguel slowly opened his eyes as he groaned in pain, he felt like his head would explode from the pain he was feeling.

Raguel grabbed his head in agony, as time passed, the pain started subsiding, and only then did Raguel notice that his surroundings were unfamiliar.

A frown appeared on his face as he started looking around.

He was inside a dark room with only one exit.

He finally recalled what happened before he passed out and panicked.

“Is anyone there!?”

He shouted.

“...”

No one answered. Raguel’s heartbeat quickened as he panicked, even more, he then rushed towards the door and started banging it loudly,

**\*Bang\* \*Bang\* \*Bang\***

“I asked if anyone is there!?”

He shouted again.

Since he has just woken up, his body was still weak, therefore, even after all his strength, he still couldn’t break the iron door.

“Hello!! Can anyone hear me!?”

Raguel questioned again.

He felt like the silence in this room was killing him.

He had seen too much today, the death of 3 King Stage Cultivators, how 20 Soldiers were killed without even resistance, it would not be wrong to say that his mental state was at its weakest currently.

However, his shocks were not over yet.

\*Step\* \*Step\* \*Step\*

“Let me Ou-”

While Raguel was shouting like a fool, he suddenly heard footsteps and quickly turned silent.

He wanted to shout and call whoever was outside his room, however, at the same time, he also feared meeting the monsters who kidnapped him. Thinking logically, who else but them could they be? They kidnapped him, rather than shouting and alerting all of them, he should have thought about it carefully and should have tried to find a way to get out of this place.

Raguel finally realized his mistake, however, it was already too late.

\*Step\* \*Step\* \*Step\*

Raguel then noticed that the sounds of footsteps were turning louder and louder.

His face turned pale, he tried to crawl away from the direction the voice was coming from, however, soon, his back touched a wall.

His body trembled.

In the end, he glanced at the door, waiting to peek at the face he would see through the small window.

To be honest, he hoped that was Evane, heck, even that General named Ember was fine as well.

Anyone but that monster.

That fucking bastard...

Raguel trembled as he recalled how scary Nux's expression was, that disdainful and mocking smile on his face while he faced 3 King Stage and more than 20 Soldiers alone.

It sent shivers down Raguel's spine.

\*Step\* \*Step\* \*Step\*

The Sounds of footsteps finally stopped, Raguel realized that the person was now standing in front of the door, he glanced at the window, however, when he saw the face, his eyes widened in surprise.

“A-Amaya...”

Amaya's black eyes fell on him and a small smile appeared on her face.

This smile, which was extremely similar to Nux's smile sent another shiver down Raguel's spine.

Amaya, however, didn't care about what Raguel was going through at all, she directly opened the door and walked in.

“Long time no see, First Prince.” Amaya greeted.

“H-H-H-How are you alive!?”

Raguel stuttered as he questioned with a shocked look on his face.

“Hmm? What could possibly happen to me?” Amaya questioned with a confused look on her face.

“Y-Y-You should have been dead!”

Raguel shouted.

“Why? Because you sent those weak assassins after me? Did you really think those weaklings could have defeated me, a King Stage Cultivator?” Amaya questioned with a playful smile on her face.

“B-B-But your curse-”

Raguel wanted to question, however,

“The fact that I couldn’t move due to my Curse, the fact that I couldn’t use my Cultivation because of my Curse, and even my Curse itself, everything is fabricated.

None of them is true.

So, if you were hoping for something like that, then... well, sorry to disappoint you.”

Amaya spoke with a warm smile on her face.

As if she was trying to prove what she said, Amaya raised her hand and Black Mist came out of her body,

“See? I can control this ‘curse’ of mine without any problems.”

“!!!”

Raguel’s eyes widened in surprise.

Foiled.

He was fooled.

Not only him, but the entire Kingdom was fooled.

“W-Why would you d-”

Raguel wanted to question, however, Amaya interrupted.

“Alright, I am not here to have a chat with you, I am here to ask a few questions and if you want to stay alive for a little more time, you should answer them honestly.”

Suddenly, Amaya’s tone changed.

“...little more time?” Raguel quickly caught on to Amaya’s words.

“Ignore that, just answer my question,

Why did you contact the Skadi Kingdom for help when you were suspected of assassinating the Skadi Kingdom’s Princess?”

Hearing this question, Raguel looks at Amaya with a deadpan expression on his face.

He really wondered how shameless one can be, however, seeing that Amaya was still looking at him with a solemn look on her face, he decided not to talk about it.

“I-If I answer your question... would you let me live?”

Raguel questioned.

“Well, I can guarantee that your death would be less painful.”

Amaya replied.

“...”

Raguel turned silent.

Amaya quickly realized what he was thinking and threatened.

“Trust me, it is not an offer you should miss, we have many ways to ensure that you beg for sweet death, however, if things go that far, I am sure you won’t receive a sweet release.”

\*Gulp\*

Raguel gulped.

Not because of Amaya's threatening words but the sadistic smile that she had on her face when she said what she said.

It was as if she was hoping that he won't answer so that she could inflict as much pain as she wants on him.

'This bitch is crazy!'

Raguel thought inwardly.

It didn't take long for his will to crumble and he opened his mouth.

"I-I didn't contact the Skadi Kingdom... They were the ones who contacted me..."

Hearing these words, no particular change appeared on Amaya's face and she ordered,

"Continue."

# Chapter 497

d

“And you still haven’t found that bastard?”

Ricardus, the King of the Skyfall Kingdom was currently bowing in front of a woman who sitting on his throne with one hand on her chin while the elbow was resting on the armrest of the throne. Her left leg on placed on top of her right, and the pressure she was releasing was... frightening.

Keeve, Reeve, Ricardus, and all these so-called experts were trembling in front of her.

They knew it well, Astaria’s mood was anything but good.

For every word they speak today, they had to be extremely careful, one wrong step and they will definitely lose their lives today.

“W-We are still looking for him. The best men of the Shadow Unit are on it.”

Reeve reported, he knew that Ricardus wouldn’t speak a word, he had to step forward.

Hearing her words, Astaria narrowed her eyes.

Reeve stepped back a little, he clenched his fists, trying to stop his body from trembling, however, the method was not very helpful.

“...”

Astaria continued to observe the three men standing in front of her and after a while, she closed her eyes and sighed.

“The First Prince of our countries contacts the enemy Kingdom, plans the murder of his blood Sister, then with two King Stage Cultivators sent by the Kingdom, he kidnaps his brother, blackmails his sister, calls her in a secluded location, and surrounds her...”

She summarized the entire incident, and with each passing word, her tone got even colder. She then finally opened her eyes and glared at Ricardus.

“Heh, the apple doesn’t fall far from the tree.”

She may have chuckled, however, from her tone, anyone could tell that she was boiling with anger right now.

Ricardus’s body trembled in fear as he recalled a past incident.

“I-I didn’t get in contact with Kingdom...” He felt the need to clarify. Who knew what Astaria might do in her anger?

Hearing his words, Astaria chuckled again,

“Indeed, you didn’t contact any other Kingdom, you didn’t need their help, you directly planned and,

Assassinated all your siblings.”

The room turned silent.

This was something no one was allowed to mention, however, rules like this never applied to Astaria. She only stayed silent because she didn’t want to think about this situation, she didn’t wish to think about how powerless she felt during that moment.

It was around 100 years ago, At that time, Ricardus was just a Prince and with his mind only filled with women, he wasn’t someone who was a favorite to become the next King.

However, Ricardus had one advantage.

His Cultivation Talent.

Even after not focusing on his cultivation compared to others, his growth was shocking.

Using this to his advantage, Ricardus started gaining support from other nobles, slowly, he amassed influence that could be compared to the other Princes who were the Favorites.

Due to this, Ricardus's hunger grew, and his eyes fell on the King's Harem, he noticed how the King held absolute power over all, he noticed how the King could spend time with practically any woman he wanted and this flamed a new feeling in his heart.

He wanted to become the next King.

Ricardus wasn't particularly good at scheming.

His Grandfather, however, was different.

Swordfeck Fulvianus, the King Stage Cultivator of the Fulvianus House, Cyneheard's father, Ricardus's Grandfather, planned everything. Ricardus followed his plans, gained influence, and when the time was ripe,

He killed all the Princes who belonged to Duke Houses, even his own blood brother who belonged to Fulvianus House.

Dekdom Skyfall, Astaria's son also lost his life in this massacre.

At that time, Astaria was still a King Stage Cultivator, to be honest, for her, killing Ricardus was but a simple job.

A man who spent his entire life running after women and an old man who would die within a few years, how hard would it be to kill these two for someone like Astaria who dedicated her entire life to sword and cultivation?

However, even after all that, she still couldn't kill Ricardus.

He was the only Prince left who had a Duke House supporting him, the other Princes and Princess didn't belong to any of the Duke Houses.

The Skyfall Kingdom has a stable foundation that has the Royal Family on the top and 4 Duke Houses right below them, if another Duke House is added into this equation, the entire Kingdom would turn into a mess as the Houses would battle each other in order to gain more influence.

If the King is someone who does not belong to a Duke Family, then there are chances that the situation where another house would rise to power, to avoid this situation, a rule was passed.

The King needs to have the Blood of the Royal Family and the Duke Family running in his vein.

At that moment, only Ricardus was the only prince who satisfied this condition, therefore, killing him was impossible.

Astaria had to calm her anger by just killing Dekdom Skyfall.

After that, she directly entered secluded Cultivation and stopped involving herself with Kingdom Politics.

38 years later, she broke through the King Stage and become an Emperor Stage Cultivator, however, even after gaining absolute power, she didn't kill Ricardus.

Ricardus had already solidified his position, there was no other heir who could replace Ricardus, therefore, Astaria didn't kill the bastard and tried to forget about this incident.

Today, however, she was reminded of this incident again.

A chilling pressure released from her body as she glanced at Ricardus.

“Dekdom had waited long enough.”

She spoke in a voice so cold that it felt like it could freeze even the blazing fire.

Hearing what she said, Ricardus's turned pale and he stepped back, Keeve and Reeve stepped forward.

Astaria glanced at the two of them, her eyes unusually dark without a tinge of mercy in them.

Even though she didn't say it, Keeve and Reeve could feel what she wanted to say,

'If you value your life, get away.'

Astaria was serious.

"L-Lady Astaria, you can't!!"

# **Volume 6**

# Chapter 498

“L-Lady Astaria, you can’t!!”

Both Keeve and Reeve shouted at the same time.

Ricardus, who was standing behind them widened his eyes in surprise. Things were a lot more serious than he imagined.

He could see his death right in front of him.

He wanted to run away, however, his body didn’t move.

He was frozen in fear.

“...”

Astaria glanced at Reeve and Keeve, the two of them could take the invisible but invincible pressure that was leaking out of her, however, protecting the King was their duty, in the end, Reeve’s Dagger and Keeve’s Sword appeared in their hands and they pointed it at Astaria.

“Lady Astaria, we can’t allow you to Kill the King,” Reeve spoke.

Keeve, who was standing behind him nodded as well.

However, both their legs’ were trembling.

Astaria was not an opponent they could face.

“You two are wasting your life.”

Astaria commented.

Her tone, still as chilly as before.

Memories of her son continued to cloud her mind and her anger continued to increase as she glanced at Ricardus wearing that Crown.

However, even after all that, she didn't lose her control, the Kingdom that she swore to protect, she still had its best interest in her mind. That was the responsibility of the Previous Queen and Present Protect, she couldn't just abandon the Skyfall Kingdom.

“You two are valuable assets for the Kingdom, dying here would affect the Kingdom negatively.”

Astaria spoke.

Reeve and Keeve turned silent.

From Astaria's words, it was clear that she valued the two of them and wanted them to live, however, she never said that she would not kill them if they didn't move.

‘It would be Kingdom's loss.’

These words induced another level of fear in their body.

“K-Killing the King would affect the Kingdom even more negatively!”

Reeve collected all his strength and retorted. He tried to use the same thing that has been binding Astaria for such a long time.

“How?”

This time, however, Astaria had a different thought in her mind.

“Huh?”

Reeve frowned in confusion.

“Explain it to me, how would killing the King affect the Kingdom?” Astaria questioned.

Reeve was taken aback.

He couldn't believe that someone like Astaria, who probably was the most experienced amongst them all was saying something like that.

However, Reeve knew that she was emotionally affected right now, therefore, he decided to answer,

“The King is the man who supports the entire Kingdom, every single operation in the Kingdom needs to go through King's verification directly or indirectly, a Kingdom without a King... would never be stable...”

“We just need to make a new King.” Astaria chuckled.

“We do have an heir ye-”

Reeve wanted to reply, however, suddenly, he turned silent.

His eyes then widened as he glanced at Astaria.

A cruel smile appeared on Astaria's face.

“Evane Skyfall, an 83-year-old, King Stage Cultivator, quite a monstrous talent, if you ask me. She is even better than me when it comes to potential, do you really think that someone like her cannot replace this idiot who does nothing but chases after women?”

Astaria questioned.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Keeve and Reeve turned silent.

The strongest argument that always stopped Astaria,

‘You can't kill the King because there is no one who can replace him. There is no competent heir,’

It will not work now.

The Skyfall Kingdom has an heir, and not a normal one, but an heir with potential so immense that it can be called the best of all the Kings the Kingdom has ever seen.

Someone like Evane, someone who survived 2 Assassination attempts, one from Experts and Grandmaster Stage Cultivators, one from King Stage Cultivator, someone who now has two Dukes supporting her, she is definitely better than Ricardus, who is...

Pretty much useless.

“Evane will replace Ricardus, the Skyfall Kingdom will have a Ruler even better than the current one, killing the current ruler would rather be called doing the Kingdom a favor since the Kingdom would come under better management sooner.”

Astaria spoke, an excited smile pasted on her face.

From her expression, one could easily tell that she was barely holding herself back right now.

“B-But the King is still a King Stage Cultivator, the Kingdom will lose a King Stage Cultivator if you kill him!”

Keeve came up with another argument.

This time, Astaria’s face turned cold as she glanced at Keeve,

“Then select.”

She spoke.

“Select between a King Stage Cultivator and an Emperor.

Select who you will side with.”

Reeve’s and Keeve’s eyes widened in surprise.

Astaria's words were clear, either him or me.

The two of them couldn't believe how far she was willing to go.

But it was understandable, this man killed her only son, after all, it was already impossible that she waited for so long.

"I don't have an entire day, choose."

Astaria spoke.

Reeve and Keeve glanced at each other,

The choice was obvious.

Suddenly, Ricardus stepped back and ran away.

He had received plenty of time to think things through and recover the lost control over his body. He wasn't going to wait for his death here.

"Bring him here. The farther he runs, more chaos would ensue." Astaria ordered.

Reeve and Keeve glanced at each other, then, they started running after Ricardus.

"You bastards! Are you going to betray your King!?" Ricardus questioned in fury.

"King, if you truly value the time you spent as the King, you should stop, it is time to return the favor to the Kingdom that has provided you so many things for so many years."

Reeve spoke respectfully.

Ricardus, however, was not planning to listen to his words.

Reeve sighed, then a dry chuckle leaked out of his mouth.

“Why did I expect this response already?”

At the same time, a dagger appeared in his hand and he aimed it at the King’s leg.

Ricardus dodged, however, before he could celebrate, another dagger was shot. The King dodged again and continued to dodge more and more daggers that Reeve threw.

However, suddenly, Ricardus realized that Keeve was missing.

His eyes widened in surprise, he tried to run away again, however, as soon as he turned around, he saw Keeve standing in front of him, and before he could react, Keeve punched his stomach.

“Ugghh!”

Ricardus groaned in pain.

“AAAGgggGGhhhhHh!”

His anguish, however, has just started.

Reeve’s dagger pierced into his left calf as she screamed in agony.

# Chapter 499

“Ugghh...”

The King groaned in pain as he opened his eyes.

His head felt heavy, he tried to grab his hand, however, he soon realized that he couldn't move his hand, he looked and finally noticed that his hands were bound.

His eyes widened, he then looked around and noticed that he was kneeling in front of Astaria, who was standing in front of him with a mocking smile on her face.

Beside her stood Keeve and Reeve, who was looking at him with expressionless looks on their faces.

“You Bastards! How da-Uggh!”

Ricardus shouted in anger, however, Astaria kicked his head.

“How dare you raise your voice in front of me, criminal?”

She questioned.

“C-Criminal?”

Ricardus stuttered.

“Ricardus Skyfall, for the crime of killing your own Brothers and Sisters for the Throne, you will be executed on the full moon night, right after the next Ruler of the Kingdom is Crowned.”

Astaria sentenced.

Hearing these words, Ricardus's eyes widened in surprise,

“W-What are yo-”

“Take him away.”

Astaria ordered.

2 servants walked out and grabbed the King.

“Ugghhh!! Let go of me, you bastards!”

The King tried to break free by using his strength, however, he soon realized that he couldn't activate his Mana.

His eyes then fell on the Chains that bound him and his face paled in fear.

“MineralStar Iron...”

These chains were used to bind Cultivators, even the strongest of Cultivators are helpless against these chains since they break their connection with the Mana in the air, without Mana, even the body strength is reduced to a mere 1% of the original.

Once bound under these chains, even the King Stage Cultivators would be at a Beginner Stage Cultivator's mercy.

“Y-You can't do this!

You can't do this to me!!”

Ricardus shouted in fear, however, no one cared about the previous King and he was dragged away by the very servants who he used to order around.

Once the previous King was dragged away, Astaria sat on the throne and ordered,

“Call Evane, and tell her to bring that subordinate of hers with her.”

A servant bowed her head and walked out.

“It is not like Queen Evane goes anywhere without that man following around her.”

Reeve chuckled.

Yes, they were already referring to Evane as their Queen, to be honest, they were even excited to serve her.

They wanted to feel how good it would feel to actually work under someone competent.

However, at the same time, they were nervous. Not from Evane herself, but this subordinate of hers.

“I wonder if she would trust us as much as she trusts that man.”

Keeve spoke.

“That would be quite difficult.”

Astaria, who actually knew the truth chuckled.

“But isn’t it concerning? We have no information about that man, where he came from, what he did before he met Queen Evane, how is he so strong, or why was he supporting Queen Evane, we practically have zero knowledge about him.

We could let this go before since Lady Evane was just a Princess, however, now that she would become the Queen, having a man from an unknown origin as her right-hand man...”

Although Reeve didn’t complete his sentence, Astaria understood what he wanted to say and even agreed with him to some extent.

However,

“So what do you think Evane should do? Kick her subordinate away now that she will become the Queen?”

“Of course not, I know Lady Evane well, she would never do something like this, however, I would at least like to have some information about that man.

I will not lie, I tried to do a background check on him, however, other than his name, I couldn't find anything.”

“Have you sought Thousand Information Chamber for help?” Astaria questioned.

“Thousand Information Chamber is... currently facing problems...” Reeves answered.

“Ah, that girl was assassinated.” Astaria realized.

“Indeed.” Reeve nodded.

“Anyways, you don't have to worry about it, I am still here. Even if that boy has bad intentions, I will make sure that he won't succeed. For now, don't target him.

Evane is a Prodigy, and that boy is even more of a prodigy than her, there is no point in going against them for something even we are unsure about.”

Astaria spoke and Reeve and Keeve nodded in understanding.

“Lady Astaria.”

While the three of them were talking, 2 more people walked into the Hall and bowed.

A smile appeared on Astaria's face as she glanced at Nux and Evane,

“You are here.”

Evane raised her head and smiled back, soon, however, a frown appeared on her face when her eyes fell on the Crown that was placed on a lavish Red colored velvet cloth.

Seeing her expression, Astaria smiled and didn't hide anything.

“You will be Crowned in 5 days, I hope you are ready for the responsibility.”

“WHAT!?”

Not only Evane, even Nux was shocked by this news.

Astaria then talked about everything that happened and the more they heard about it, the more Nux's and Evane's expressions changed,

“Father like son.”

Nux couldn't help but comment.

“Indeed.”

Astaria nodded.

“So you want me to execute father once I become the Queen?”

Evane questioned.

“Is it still too much for you? Killing your own family member, I mean.”  
Astaria questioned back.

Hearing her question, a dry chuckle escaped Evane's mouth,

“The more I involve myself with all this, the more I feel that killing my family members would actually do good to this world.”

“...”

Hearing this sentence, Keeve, Reeve, Astaria, and Nux turned silent.

Nux already knew how much Evane was going through, however, in this situation, where she refused to share anything with him and wanted to deal

with this strange feeling in her heart on her own, he couldn't do anything and only stay by her side to show his support.

Astaria smiled weakly as well,

“Right, you are the normal one here.”

“Hmm?”

Evane frowned.

“Don't burden yourself too much, the Royal Family has always been a mess, no one is innocent here. A pure heart like you being born into the Royal Family is an exception here, however, when it comes to being a human, you are better than us all.

Don't treat it as your weakness and let it weaken you. Stay strong, stick to your beliefs, observe, learn, adapt and grow.

As for difficult matters, leave them to us.”

Strange but heartfelt words.

Evane smiled a little as she glanced at Nux, Nux smiled back and nodded.

Leave everything to me, I will be there for you.

Even without him saying these words, Evane heard them.

‘I love you.’

She spoke.

‘Love you too.’

Nux replied.

The two of them would have kissed if it weren't for so many people here.

Nux was already making plans for the future session in the Royal Bedroom.

“Evane,”

Suddenly, Astaria called out. Evane glanced at the woman.

“Come to my room after this.

We need to talk.”

As Astaria spoke, her eyes looked at both, Evane and Nux.

Meaning that she wasn't calling her alone.

Evane and Nux nodded.

“As you command, Lady Astaria.”

Evane bowed.

# Chapter 500

“Haah, it’s been a while since I have seen you, I didn’t think you would become a King Stage Cultivator in such a short while.”

Astaria spoke with a smile on her face.

“I just got lucky, Lady Astaria.” Evane smiled back.

“Grandma.”

“Huh?”

“You can call me Grandma when we are alone, I won’t mind.”

“A-Alright.” Evane nodded.

Astaria then turned towards Nux and spoke,

“You too.”

“Huh?” Nux frowned.

“Aren’t you her husband?”

“I am.” Nux nodded.

“Then since you are my Granddaughter’s husband, you are my Grandson-in-law, so you can call me Grandma as well.”

“I... I would rather not...”

Nux was quick to shoot her down.

“I would stick to Lady Astaria.”

There is no way he would call her ‘Grandma’, not after whatever is going on inside that mind of his.

“Hmm?”

A frown appeared on Astaria’s face, she could feel Nux’s aversion from far away.

“Hmm, you are the first person I have seen who is not trying to deepen his relationship with an Emperor Stage Cultivator. What? Is Emperor Stage not impressive enough for you?”

Astaria questioned with an amused look on her face.

Evane also had a smile on her face, she, who knew about Nux’s intentions was enjoying this situation to the full extent.

“That’s not it.”

Nux shook his head, he then glanced at Astaria’s body from head to toe and replied,

“Calling someone like you ‘Grandma’ is simply unacceptable. Someone as beautiful as you cannot be a ‘Grandma’, Lady Astaria suits you the best.”

‘Astaria is even better.’

Of course, he didn’t say that sentence out loud.

“You have a way with words.” Astaria smiled.

No matter how mature one gets, a woman would never hate compliments.

Astaria was the same.

Nux, however, was not done yet, he shook his head again and replied,

“Having a way with words implies that I am good at lying or currying favors, however, currently, I am not doing anything like that.

I am simply telling what I feel.

Lady Astaria, you are an elegant beauty, please don't demean yourself by making others call you 'Grandma', you may not know it but there must be many men who regard you as the woman of their dreams."

"Oh?" Suddenly, Astaria raised one of her eyebrows and an amused look appeared on her face.

"Are you one of those men?" She questioned playfully.

"If I get a chance, I would definitely try to woo you."

Since he got the chance, Nux didn't back down from taking his chance.

"Oh? You think you can say these things in front of your wife?"

"She is an understanding wife, you are a beautiful woman, of course, she would know that as a man I would be attracted to you."

Nux replied.

"But isn't that where your loyalty should kick in? Won't you drag the Queen's reputation to mud if you keep getting attracted to any beautiful woman you meet?" Astaria questioned.

"Do you really consider yourself as a 'any beautiful woman?' You should know that you are different from the rest, do you not?" Nux didn't back away either.

"..."

Astaria was out of words.

"..."

Nux continued to look at her with that playful smile on his face.

"You are quite shameless," Astaria commented.

“I only speak the truth,”

“Whatever, you are still too young for me, boy.” Astaria commented.

“Hmmm? Are you into old men? The ones with a bald head and a bloated belly?” Nux questioned.

Astaria squinted her nose.

“I was referring to maturity level, not bald head and bloated belly.”

“Ahh, got it, I thought you would be more adventurous since you have a fiery temperament but I guess everyone has their boring sides.” Nux nodded in understanding.

Astaria, for some reason, did not like his tone.

“What do you mean ‘boring’? I am just too done with all this tiring stuff, some level of maturity is important for me to keep my sanity.”

“Tiring stuff? What are you talking about?” Nux frowned.

“Haah. See? You are too young. You won’t realize it right now, but once you grow up, you will come to realize that keeping up all these relationships is a tiring job to do.”

“That will never happen.” Nux quickly shook his head. He then suddenly grabbed Evane’s shoulder and pulled her close to him.

“Staying with Evane would never be tiring for me. I am willing to spend the rest of my life, grow old, and die together with her.”

Nux spoke and a beautiful smile, accompanied by a small blush appeared on Evane’s face.

“That’s the immaturity I was talking about,”

“Well, if seeing my loved ones as dead weight is ‘maturity’ for you, then I don’t want to be mature at all.

I very much love all my wives and plan to keep it the same way.”

Nux replied, Evane looked at his face and smiled as well.

Seeing the two of them, a strange feeling welled up in Astaria’s heart.

Nux’s words resounded in her mind.

His definition of ‘Maturity’ was wrong, however, the more she thought about it, the more she realized that that is what Maturity was in real-life scenarios.

Wait...

Suddenly, she caught another thing that Nux said.

“Did you say Wives? As in, more than 1 wife?” she questioned as she narrowed her eyes.

“I did.”

Nux answered honestly.

He wasn’t planning to hide his other wives in the first place, since Astaria would joi- know about them eventually, why not tell her right now?

“Are you telling me Evane, the future Queen of the Skyfall Kingdom, will share her husband with other women?”

“Well... yes...?”

Suddenly, Astaria’s expression changed.

“That cannot be allowed.”

She spoke and closed her eyes, her action made it clear that we will not allow further discussion.

Harems were allowed in this world, however, the Queen of a Kingdom sharing her husband with other women would destroy the Kingdom's reputation and Astaria, a woman who even let the killer of her own son live for so many years just for the sake of the Kingdom would never allow someone to tarnish the Kingdom's reputation.

“Find another Queen then.”

Nux replied.

Astaria opened her eyes and glanced at Nux,

“You do not have the right to take this decision, it depends on Evane.”

Nux glanced at Astaria for a while, he then shrugged his shoulders and turned towards Evane. Astaria glanced at Evane as well, waiting for her answer.

Evane's answer, however, was obvious.

“I will not leave Nux.”

# Chapter 501

“I will not leave Nux.”

Astaria narrowed her eyes.

“I do not want to throne if it means that I would have to give up on Nux.”

“I never said you have to give up on Nux, I only want him to give up on his other wives,”

“I wi-

“Nux would never give up on any of his wives.”

Before Nux could even say something, Evane spoke up.

Suddenly, a mocking expression appeared on Astaria’s face and she questioned.

“Heeh? What happened to staying with you for the rest of your life?

If he loves you as much as he says he does, something like that would be simple, no?”

In Astaria’s mind, Evane’s words directly proved her point. Relationships were nothing but a burden.

Evane, however, thought differently.

“He loves me, however, I am the only person he loves, there are others as well, forcing him to choose one over the other is something that would hurt him.

Love is a two-way road, just like he cares about me, I care about him as well, I would never do something that would hurt him, therefore, I would

never force him to choose me over others.

That is not love, that is selfishness.”

“ ... ”

Astaria turned silent.

“Well, as long as you control his drinking habit, I am sure Lucas would become a fine King.”

Suddenly, Evane spoke and stood up.

“As for me, I will be taking my leave now.”

Saying that, she turned around.

“Did you think I would give in to you just because you are the most suitable heir to the Throne?”

Astaria questioned.

Evane stopped, she then turned towards Astaria and replied,

“I did not think about you giving into me or anything like that. I have already made things clear, I will not become the Queen if it harms my relationship with Nux.”

“What would you do if someday you would have to choose between the Kingdom and Nux.”

“I would choose Nux, of course.”

Evane replied without wasting any time.

“So you will abandon those millions of people you are ruling over for one man?”

“Yes, I will.”

“You are really not suited to be the Queen.”

Astaria commented.

“Maybe that is true.”

Evane smiled.

Astaria smiled as well,

“I am jealous.”

Evane’s smile widened as she tightened her grip around Nux’s hand, “I do consider myself lucky.”

“Well, you are still better than the Ruler who killed his own brother for the Throne, or a ruler who has wasted his entire life on alcohol.”

Suddenly, Astaria commented.

“Hmm?”

Evane frowned.

“Haahh... I guess the Skyfall Kingdom would never receive a decent King...”

Astaria sighed in disappointment, soon, however, a smile appeared on her face as she glanced at Evane,

“Well, whatever, I guess we have to make due with whatever we have, Evane Skyfall, I hope you rule this Kingdom properly.”

“...so you would allow me to marry him and be the Queen of the Kingdom?”

Evane questioned.

“Do I have any other option? Well, it might harm our reputation a little, however, I feel like I can take a little chance and invest in you.”

Astaria spoke. She then turn towards Nux and ordered,

“Though I would like to see these ‘wives’ of yours before the coronation.”

A smile appeared on Nux’s face,

“Well, some of them might surprise you.”

“Oh?”

Astaria raised her eyebrow,

“You seem quite confident.”

“I am.”

“Then I am excited to meet them.”

“How about tomorrow?”

“Sure.”

Another exciting event was arranged.

Astaria then changed her posture and spoke,

“Alright, with that done, I would like to talk about why I actually called you here.”

“What is it?” Evane questioned.

“Where is Raguel?”

Without wasting any time, Astaria questioned.

“Huh?”

Evane frowned.

“Lady Astaria, what are you talking about?” Nux questioned.

“Tsk, still lying I see.”

Astaria snorted.

“I don’t know what you are talking about.” Nux tried his luck.

“You expect me to believe that you fail to catch an Expert Stage Cultivator?”

“Well, I had to fight a King Stage Cultivator.”

“Boy, don’t act so smart, I have already gauged your strength, there is no way a single King Stage Cultivator could stop you, I doubt even 10 King Stage Cultivators could do that, you are a monster of a different dimension.

Now tell me the truth, where is Raguel? Did you kill him?”

“Well, he did try to harm my wife. He had it coming.”

Nux decided to be honest.

“Is he alive?”

Astaria questioned.

“I killed him.”

Nux replied.

Astaria frowned. “I thought you would have tortured him before finishing him off.”

“Why are you asking about all this? He committed a grave sin, me killing him shouldn’t be a problem, should it? Rather, I did the Kingdom a favor.”

“Killing him is not a problem, however, I wanted to know how and why he contacted the Skadis, something doesn’t add up here.”

“What are you talking about?”

Nux questioned.

“Think about it, he assassinated Amaya Skyfall, the Princess of the Skadi Kingdom, if he did something like that, why would he contact the Skadi Kingdom? I know that there are chances that the Skadi Kingdom does not like Amaya are high, however, why would Raguel take unnecessary chances when he could just contact other Kingdoms? It doesn’t make sense.”

Astaria spoke and Nux raised his eyebrow,

‘The same thought process as that of Amaya’s.’

“What are you trying to say?” Nux tried to probe deeper.

“I believe that it was not Raguel, who contacted the Skadi, but on the contrary, the Skadis who contacted Raguel.

The Skadis are planning something, I think they are in cahoots with the Solid Earth Kingdom.”

“Solid Earth Kingdom?” Nux frowned.

“Yes, as you know, I went to Solid Earth Kingdom and it was as you said, that Bastard Herms is making moves.

Herms is a shrewd man, he wouldn’t do something as reckless as breaking a Treaty without any plans. He is definitely planning something.

I tried to find out what it was, however, I couldn’t find anything.

I believe the Skadi Kingdom is somehow connected with all this.”

# Chapter 502

“I believe the Skadi Kingdom is somehow connected with all this,”

Astaria revealed.

“...”

Nux stayed silent.

Amaya had already guessed that Riona was the one who approached Raguel first, however, she didn't know why she did it.

However, if Astaria's guess is correct, then things might turn even more complicated than he thought.

Different expressions appeared on Nux's face and Astaria didn't miss them,

“You seem to know something.”

“Well, I am still not sure.”

Nux replied.

“What do you mean?”

Astaria narrowed her eyes.

“Let me ask first, what did you find out?” Nux questioned.

Astaria looked at Nux and tilted her head, Nux, however, didn't back down and continued to look at her, demanding an answer to his question.

In the end, Astaria gave in,

“I didn't find much, just that Herms is directly involved with the Solid Earth Kingdom, this itself isn't wrong, however, he has threatened 8 Sects

and 17 famous Adventurer Parties and forced them to join the Kingdom's Army which threatens Woods Army. Not only that, but I heard that he is even leading the Army in secret.”

“ ... ”

Nux looked at Astaria with a blank look on his face.

“What?”

Astaria questioned.

“Is that all?”

“Huh?”

“Is that all you found out? You have been gone for so long and that is what you found? Honestly, I could have given all this information to you on my own...”

A vein popped on Astaria's forehead.

Nux's body trembled and he quickly changed his tone,

“Ahh, but your information is indeed more trustworthy, Mhm, I get it, good job, Lady Astaria.”

“ ... ”

Astaria turned silent.

Evane, who was sitting beside Nux couldn't control herself and,

“Pfftt!”

Laughed out loud.

Seeing her laughing like that, Astaria couldn't help but smile as well, she then glanced at Nux and shook her head,

“I didn’t know you were a coward.”

“Tsk, it’s called being smart. I am not stupid enough to go against an Emperor Stage Cultivator, I don’t stand a chance. I won’t make a move until I can defeat you, there are my wives waiting for me back at home, I can’t make them widows, now can I?”

Nux didn’t feel a tinge of shame saying all those words.

Astaria was speechless.

However, she soon noticed some words that Nux said,

“You seem sure that you can defeat me soon enough.”

“I didn’t say anything like that. I am too weak to go against the Emperors.

I am just a weakling, a chicken.”

Nux shrugged again.

Astaria shook her head with a smile on her face and then continued,

“You don’t have to act like that, I am not that cruel. I won’t kill you just because you have the potential to defeat me in the future.

And you don’t have to hide it either, I have never seen anyone with a potential as monstrous as you, I believe that you can definitely defeat me in the future.

So lift your head up, Nux. You can be more open to me, I am your family after all.

I am your gra-”

“No. Nope. Nah ah.

I already said it.

You are not my Grandma.

You are someone I trying to woo, how can I call you Grandma?”

“ ...”

“ ...”

Evane and Astaria blinked as they looked at Nux.

“What?”

Seeing them looking at him like that, Nux questioned.

“You are shameless, boy.”

Astaria spoke and Evane nodded, fully supporting her grandma.

Nux was indeed shameless.

“Also, I already said it, I am not into little boys, I like mature men.”

“You just haven’t experienced it yet.” Nux did not give up.

“ ...”

Astaria turned silent again.

She noticed that she often finds herself out of words whenever she talks with this boy.

‘Tsk, shameless men are hard to handle.’

She snorted inwardly and then she brought back the initial topic,

“So, as I was saying,

Revealing the existence of Emperor Stage and using his power to affect other kingdoms, this definitely goes against the Treaty the Four Countries

signed, I tried to find why Herms was doing something so dangerous, however, I couldn't find it.

Though I still have some conjectures”

“What are they?”

Nux questioned.

“Well, first is simple, they have joined with another Kingdom, they are fighting against the Woods, so it can't be the Woods, we, of course, can't be the one since well, I am not aware of anything, and deal with Emperors involved can't be done behind my back, the only option left is the Skadis.”

“Do you have any other guess?”

“Well, it is highly unlikely, but there are chances that the Solid Earth Kingdom now has 2 Emperor Stage Cultivators.”

“!!!”

Nux and Evane's eyes widened in surprise.

“T-That is highly unlikely indeed.”

Nux admitted.

“Indeed, even if they have 2 Emperors, breaking the treaty doesn't make any sense, I think it is the first case.”

“Wait, what are you talking about? How can you take 2 Emperors so lightly?” Nux frowned.

“Huh?” Astaria frowned.

She then finally realized and couldn't help but chuckle,

“There is finally something that you are shocked by. Fufufu~”

“ ... ”

Nux turned silent.

“Well, a country having 2 Emperor Stage Cultivators is not that surprising, just think about it, it is not like another Emperor would appear as soon as I die, right? It is not like a throne that only one person can have.

In the end, it is a Realm.

Even before I die, another Emperor Stage Cultivator might appear, for example, you. Then the Skyfall Kingdom would have 2 Emperor Stage Cultivators. Just like that, Solid Earth Kingdom might also have 2 Emperor Stage Cultivators. To be honest, Herms doesn't have a lot of time left, 50 more years maybe.

So it is high time that the Solid Earth kingdom produce another Emperor.”

“If they have 2 Emperor Stage Cultivators, then won't that make them the strongest Kingdom, who is stopping them from breaking the Treaty?”

Nux questioned.

“It is not that simple, Nux. You are only thinking about it from a one-on-one perspective, however, there are 4 Countries in this world.

Even if a Country has 2 Emperors, breaking the Treaty means that they would have to go against 3 Emperors, in the end, it would only cause their own destruction.”

“Then what if they have 2 Emperors and 1 Kingdom supporting them? Won't it make it 3v2?”

Nux questioned.

Astaria's expression turned serious.

# Chapter 503

“Then what if they have 2 Emperors and 1 Kingdom supporting them? Won't it make it 3v2?”

Nux questioned.

Astaria's expression turned serious, however, before she could even answer, Nux realized his mistake,

“Ahh, a Kingdom would never support another Kingdom that has 2 Emperors since they wouldn't know when they might get betrayed after they are used.”

“Indeed.”

Astaria nodded.

“Then what about 3 Emperors, no 4? What if a Kingdom has 4 Emperors.”

A wry smile appeared on Astaria's face,

“Although I said more than 1 Emperor is possible, it doesn't mean producing one is that simple. 2 is already stretching it, 3 might be possible if the Kingdom is extremely lucky, 4, however... well...”

“It is not really possible, is it?”

Nux questioned and Astaria nodded.

“Indeed, it is not possible.”

Nux couldn't help but smile,

“If only you were mine,

I would have shown you more than 10 Emperors.”

“Huh?”

“Huh?”

“Huh?”

“Haaah?”

“What?”

“What did you say?”

“I didn’t say anything.”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

A strange conversation indeed.

‘Your ability is quite scary.’

Evane spoke through telepathy.

‘If only your grandma agree-‘

Nux wanted to say it, however, he stopped midway.

This sounded strange as well.

‘Haahh... I feel like I am breaking all the boundaries of degeneracy...’

Nux sighed inwardly.

‘ ... ’

Seeing his expression, Evane didn’t say anything and turned silent.

“Well, even if there is a 1 in a trillion chance that the Solid Earth Kingdom has 4 Emperors with them, breaking the treaty still doesn’t make sense.”

Astaria said something absurd.

“4v3 would definably be simple, actually, if their power is so overwhelming, another Country might even help them with a promise of keeping them alive once they rule over the whole world.”

Nux spoke, however, Astaria shook her head.

“This ‘rule over the whole world’ is not possible, and Herms should know it.”

“What do you mean?”

Nux narrowed his eyes.

“Akibrus Valhein.”

“Is that a chant or something?”

Nux questioned.

Astaria looked at him with a deadpan look on her face.

“It is the name of our Ancestor.”

Evane answered.

“Hmm? So he is the Ancestor of the Skyfall Kingdom?” Nux questioned.

Evane shook her head,

“No, he is the ancestor of all the Kingdoms.”

“Huh?” Nux frowned.

“Well, it is just a legend.

They say that Lord Akibrus was the one who found this Land and settled here, with his children. Then more and more people came in and started living here. When Lord Akibrus died, his children founded the Four Countries that we currently have.”

Evane explained.

An absurd look appeared on Nux’s face,

“So you are telling me that all the Kingdoms have the same ancestor? Doesn’t that mean that they are all brothers and sisters?”

“Well, it is just a legend,” Evane spoke.

Nux, however, glanced at Astaria.

Astaria understood what he wanted to ask and nodded,

“Everything Evane said is true, Lord Akibrus actually existed and this legend is true.

Well, not completely true, there were a few details that were left out.

Lord Akribus’s children indeed founded the 4 Kingdoms, however, they did not do it after he died. They did it before his death.

Actually, it was Akribus’s wish.

The Four brothers had a harmonious relationship with each other, however, Lord Akribus forced them to find 4 different Nations and warned them not to let this land come under a single man’s rule.

If this rule is broken...”

Astaria’s face then turned serious as she revealed,

“Then a catastrophe would fall over this world.”

“...”

“ ... ”

Nux and Evane turned silent however, the reason they turned silent was different.

Evane was thinking about this legend and how all of this was true, at the same time, she was also thinking about the catastrophe that would fall over the world if it is united under a single man's rule.

Nux, on the other hand, was looking at Evane with a strange look on his face.

“So the treaty...”

He spoke after a long time and Astaria nodded.

“Indeed, it was not signed because of Peace, well, it was one of the reasons, however, it was not the main reason.

The main reason was Lord Akibrus's warning.”

“ ... ”

Nux didn't know how to react.

“So... you are telling me that all of you have been following a man's 'warning' so seriously for all these years?”

The more Nux thought about it, the stranger and more absurd it got.

Hearing his question, Astaria chuckled out loud,

“Do you seriously believe that we humans can hold back our greed just because of a mere warning of a man we don't even know existed or not?”

“ ... ”

Nux tilted his head in confusion.

This was indeed his thought, the humans couldn't possibly hold themselves back due to some warning.

“Lord Akibrus was not a fool.”

Astaria spoke.

“His sons might follow his warning, his Grandsons might do the same as well, but what about his Great Grandsons? Or his Great Great Grandsons? Would they follow it? He was not sure.

He never trusted humans to begin with, the one he trusted was his most Loyal Companion.”

“His most Loyal Companion?”

“Indeed, a Mythical Creature, stronger than anyone or anything you can ever imagine.”

Nux's face turned serious.

“Lord Akibrus didn't ensure the longevity of his rule with feelings like ‘Trust’,

He used ‘Fear’.

As Lord Akirbrus expected, the Great Great Great Great Grandson tried to break his rule, however, what happened next was something that was recorded in history with red color.

The Woods Dynasty, who at that time had 3 Emperor Stage Cultivators tried to unify the land, however, soon,

It appeared.”

“Who?”

“Lord Akibrus's Companion.”

Nux narrowed his eyes.

“That Monster killed 3 Emperor Stage Cultivators in a blink of an eye and without saying a single word, it disappeared.

The Battle that should have been written down in history, the battle that should have decided the fate of the entire world, the battle between 6 Emperor Stage Ciltivators,

That impactful battle ended before it could even begin.”

# Chapter 504

“That Monster killed 3 Emperor Stage Cultivators in a blink of an eye and without saying a single word, it disappeared.

The Battle that should have been written down in history, the battle that should have decided the fate of the entire world.

That impactful battle ended before it could even begin.”

Astaria revealed with a solemn expression on her face.

“W-What?”

“E-E-Emperors... lost?”

Nux and Evane couldn't believe what they were hearing.

Weren't Emperors the strongest Cultivators in the world, how could they possibly lose?

“Do not underestimate that Mythical Creature, Emperors may very well be the strongest Cultivators in the world, however, even we Emperors couldn't possibly go against that Monster.”

Astaria spoke with a solemn expression on her face.

“How sure are you?”

Suddenly, Nux questioned.

Astaria looked at him and frowned,

“How sure are you that the story you told us is not just a baseless rumor?”

A perfect doubt.

Any normal person who hears this story would have the same question in his mind. The majority of people in the world don't even know about the presence of Emperor Stage Cultivators, for them, Emperor Stage is just a myth.

Saying that there is a Mythical Creature who killed 3 Emperor Stage Cultivators within a blink of an eye was not something anyone could digest without any problems.

Nux was the same.

He couldn't accept it either.

He hoped that this was just a rumor believed by the 4 Kingdoms, a legend of sorts.

Astaria, however, thrashed his hopes.

"It is written down in the history of the Skyfall Kingdoms and the other 3 Countries as well. History is not written on basis of baseless rumor, Nux."

"Then what if that creature is already dead? I mean, at the end of the day, nothing can defeat time, can it? How do we know that the creature we fear so much isn't dead yet?" Nux questioned.

"Do you think someone who can kill 3 Emperor Stage Cultivators would die that easily?"

Astaria questioned.

"Let's be honest here, even you can kill 3 King Stage Cultivators easily, correct? It doesn't mean you cannot die, does it?"

Nux questioned back.

"Are you comparing King Stage Cultivators with Emperors?" Astaria narrowed her eyes.

"I know I am wrong to do so, however, no matter how we think about it.

At the end of this, that ‘mythical creature’ should be nothing but an 8 Star Beast. It might have a longer lifespan than an Emperor Stage Cultivator, however, I refuse to believe that it is immortal.”

“ ... ”

This time, Astaria turned silent.

Nux’s words might be disrespectful, however, they weren’t wrong either.

“Just think about this, you said that that Mythical Creature was Lord Akibrus’s companion, was he not? So most probably, it must be a beast that Lord Akibrus had tamed.

Even Lord Akibrus couldn’t go against the Trial of time, do you think the beast he made a contract with could do so?”

“ ... ”

Astaria started thinking about it more deeply.

The more she thought about it, the more she felt like Nux’s words were correct.

Different thoughts started appearing in her mind, however, in the end, she shook her head,

“The information we currently have is too inadequate, we can’t make any assumptions based on theories alone.”

“But the Solid Earth Kingdom is already moving, I am sure they didn’t dare to move on the basis of theories alone either, they must have found something. They must have found a way to be sure about that Mythical Creature’s whereabouts.”

Nux commented and started thinking about different ways to confirm that beast’s whereabouts.

“Well... it is not that hard...”

Suddenly, Astaria spoke.

Evane and Nux glanced at the woman and frowned,

“What do you mean?”

“The whereabouts about that Mystical Beasts... it is not that hard to confirm it...” Astaria spoke.

Nux and Evane looked at Astaria with deadpan looks on their faces.

‘Why haven’t you done that yet?’

That was what their expression was screaming.

Astaria understood it as well, feeling a little ashamed, she clarified herself.

“It is not that confirming its whereabouts is difficult or impossible, it is definitely possible to do that, however, the risk behind it is too much.

No Kingdom would ever dare to take such risk.”

“What do you mean?”

Nux questioned with a confused look on his face.

“You remember the Forbidden Zone inside the Bloodhill Wilderness?”

Astaria suddenly questioned.

“Yes I do.” Nux nodded, then suddenly, his expression changed,

“You don’t mean...”

Astaria nodded,

“Yes, that is where that Mythical Creature resides. That Creature doesn’t like crowds, that is the reason why we restricted everyone from entering that Area.

It is that Creature's territory.”

“Wait...”

Suddenly, Evane spoke.

Nux and Astaria turned towards Evane and Evane pointed out.

“Didn't the Solid Earth Kingdom send an army into the Forbidden Region a century ago? If they knew about the Mythical Creature, why did they do something foolish?”

“Well, we had the same questions as well, however, since their actions didn't affect other Kingdoms, we just let them be.” Astaria shrugged.

“Also, not everyone knows about the Mythical Creature, this information is only passed through the Emperors of the Nation. There are chances that the King of the Solid Earth Kingdom didn't know about it and he sent an army inside the Forbidden Region due to his greed.

There are chances that Herms wasn't aware of this action and by the time he was, it was already too late.”

Astaria continued.

Nux, however, had a different thought in his mind,

“So you are telling me that the Solid Earth Kingdom sent an army to where the strongest existence in this world lives, to the region where even the Emperors fear to go in, without telling their protector?”

I find that highly unlikely.

Also, the fact that the Solid Earth Kingdom is moving the way it is moving proves that they definitely know something we don't.

And wasn't there a survivor in this expedition? There is no way the all-strong Mythical Creature, who killed Emperors like it was nothing failed to kill normal cultivators. There has to be something else going on here.

Something we don't know and  
Something that we must know.”

# Chapter 505

d

“And wasn’t there a survivor in this expedition? There is no way the all-strong Mythical Creature, who killed Emperors like it was nothing failed to kill normal cultivators. There has to be something else going on here.

Something we don’t know and

Something that we must know.”

Nux spoke with a solemn look on his face.

Astaria’s face turned solemn as well.

Nux’s words now made sense.

The Solid Earth kingdom moving strangely after coming out of the Forbidden Region...

Something is definitely wrong here.

What about the survivor?

The Kingdom said that the survivor was mentally affected and wasn’t in the condition to talk to anyone, they even refused to share the information about the survivor with the public.

This was definitely suspicious.

Actually, Astaria was now regretting not finding all this strange in the first place.

She needed more information about that survivor.

The more she thought about it, the more she felt that the Solid Earth Kingdom was hiding something.

Astaria clenched her fists in anger.

However, in the end, even she knew that anger wouldn't solve anything here.

She took a deep breath and then glanced at Nux.

“What should we do then?”

Nux, however, shook his head,

“I would like to help, however, I am not exactly the brains in my group.”

“Huh? What do you mean?” Astaria frowned.

“I am saying that I need my wife's help to think or comment more about this situation. Too much is at stake, and honestly, I do not trust myself in making a wise decision when the stakes are high.”

Nux answered honestly.

“So you are saying you will discuss it with your wife?”

“If you allow me to, then yes. I can also keep it a secret since it contains some Kingdom's secrets, however, if my wives are not involved in this, I won't help you either.

I don't hide anything from my lovely wives after all.”

Nux replied and a small smile appeared on Evane's face. Nux glanced at Evane and smiled back, Evane smile widened even more.

‘Hehe~ How loyal.’

Evane commented.

Nux smiled,

‘If only you weren’t trying to woo my grandmother.’

Evane gave a light jab.

‘ ... ’

Nux turned silent.

“ ... ”

Astaria turned silent as she glanced at Nux and Evane, who were now lost in their own little world and couldn’t believe that she was being ignored so easily.

“This matter is too serious. The Kingdom’s secret won’t mean much if the Kingdom itself won’t remain, also, you are the Kingdom’s future Queen’s husband, your wives would be the Queen’s Sisters.

Hiding something from them wouldn’t make sense.

Alright, let’s do this.

You do not have to discuss anything with your wives.

Tomorrow, you will bring them here.

I was already going to meet them anyway, so we might as well discuss everything together.”

Astaria spoke with an amused smile on her face.

A smile appeared on Nux’s face as well,

“Let me ask you then, how do you want me to enter?”

“What do you mean?” Astaria tilted her head in confusion.

“Well, didn’t I say it before, some of them might surprise you, this holds true not only for you, but everyone else as well.

Bringing all of them here would cause a huge ruckus in the Royal Palace, however, I also have a way for them to sneak in and directly meet you without causing any ruckus.

So?

What do you say?

How do you want to meet my wives?

Should I bring them all, causing probably the biggest ruckus inside the Royal Palace,

Or Should I just sneak them in, making it as less impactful as possible?”

Hearing his question, a small smile appeared on Astaria’s face,

“Why do I feel like you dislike the second option?”

“Well, I do not dislike it, however,

I would definitely prefer the first option more.

It is only right that my lovely wives get to make an amazing and flashy entry in the Royal Palace, no?”

“Alright then, boy.

The way you say it makes me look forward to what would happen tomorrow.

So just for tomorrow, I would let you cause as much ruckus in the Royal Palace as you want.”

Astaria gave her permission and a wide smile appeared on Nux’s face.

“I will make sure that you won’t regret it.”

“You better do.”

Astaria nodded.

Nux nodded back, then, he bowed his head a little and smiled,

“Alright then, since I have to prepare a lot of things for tomorrow, I will be taking my leave for now.”

“Mhm, go and prepare well.”

Astaria chuckled.

She definitely liked this boy’s strange behavior and the air of confidence that surrounded him.

Evane stood up as well, Nux grabbed her hand and the two of them walked out of Astaria’s room.

Astaria glanced at the door and shook her head with a smile on her face.

She really was looking forward to tomorrow.

On the other hand, Nux, who had just left Astaria’s room contacted Amaya.

‘Amaya.’

‘Good, I was about to contact you.’

He heard Amaya’s voice and a frown appeared on his face.

‘What happened?’

He questioned in a worried tone.

‘Come here.’

Amaya spoke.

‘Ah, is it about yesterday?’

Nux questioned.

‘Yes, she will be here any moment, I wanted to talk to her in your presence.’ Amaya replied.

‘Alright, I will be there in a moment.’ Nux nodded. Then, he narrowed his eyes and spoke,

‘I also had a few questions that I wanted to ask.’

‘Mhm. I will be waiting.’

Amaya nodded.

Nux then turned towards Evane and spoke,

“I need to go.”

“Is she there?” Evane questioned.

“Well, she will be soon.” Nux nodded.

Evane nodded in understanding and the two of them continued to walk.

Nux couldn’t possibly disappear into thin air when there were so many eyes on them, they had to first enter Evane’s room.

After entering her room, Nux and Evane shared a small kiss, the two of them smiled and then,

Nux disappeared.

# Chapter 506

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

A knock was heard and soon, the door opened.

This time, however, there was no short-haired woman standing with a smile on her face like before. This time, only silence welcomed the cloaked figure who had knocked on the door.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“Well this isn't exactly a warm way to greet a guest, now is it?”

The cloaked figure spoke as she removed her cloak with a smile on her face.

The others inside that room, however, didn't seem to be in an as good mood as her.

“We captured Raguel.”

Suddenly, Amaya spoke with a solemn look on her face.

“Well... that's a good news, is it not? Why do you all look so serious?”

Riona questioned with a confused look on her face.

Amaya narrowed her eyes,

“Are you just trying to be ignorant or do you truly believe that we are the fools who wouldn't realize what you did?”

Amaya questioned.

“W-What are you talking about?”

Riona stuttered, she didn't know why her daughter was acting like that.

Why was she acting so cold toward her?

Everything seemed fine yesterday, just what happened?

Seeing that she pretended to continue to act, Amaya decided to reveal everything directly,

“Raguel told us that it was you who contacted him first, not the other way around.

What do you have to say for yourself?”

“...”

Riona turned silent.

She finally realized what happened.

“What are you planning?”

Thyra questioned as she glared at Riona with a hostile look on her face.

“I am not planning anything.”

Riona answered.

“Oh yeah? Then why didn't you tell us anything about it?”

Thyra questioned again.

“Was it really important?”

Riona questioned back.

“Yes, I may have manipulated him into sending that letter to me, however, I only did that because I thought it would be beneficial to you guys, and in the end, it was, right?”

You achieved what you guys wanted, didn't you?

So does who contacted first matter?”

“It does.”

Amaya glanced at Riona and replied,

“This deal was about trust, to be honest, we didn't even have to go through this farce, Evane would have become the next Queen anyway.

This entire farce did nothing but quicken the process.

The main objective behind all this was to know whether we could trust you or not, and with this little stunt you pulled, we got our answer.”

“Are you really going to base your decision on just this!?”

Riona widened her eyes as she defended herself.

“I only did it for you guys, with how foolish this idiot was, he would have never come up with a plan like that, if you had used the law, it would have taken months before his crimes were proven, therefore, contacting him was important!

I did it all for your sake, I wasn't trying to harm any of you.

Amaya, haven't you realized it already, I am on your side, I will never do anything to harm you or anyone close to you!”

“If you did it purely for our sake, then why didn't you tell us from the start? Why did you feel the need to hide this from us?”

This time, Skyla was the one who questioned.

Riona couldn't believe that Skyla was making an expression like that, however, she didn't have the time to think about all this, the interrogative gazes of everyone in the room were tearing through her body, in the end, she glanced at Amaya and decided to be honest.

“It was not like you were willing to talk to me. I noticed that you only talk with an interested look on your face when the talk is about Nux, or anything that might be useful to Nux. I don't know what magic this man did on you, however, you are completely ensnared by him.

I was annoyed, but at the same time, I also realized that if I did something that might help Nux, then you and I can talk as much as I want.

That was the reason I prearranged all this and look at the result, knowing that this would help Evane, which would in turn help Nux, you were excited about this and after ignoring me for so many years, you finally decided to talk to me, even though it was mostly about how to carry on with the plan...”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Everyone present in the room turned silent.

Skyla, Thyra, and Edda glanced at Amaya and nodded continuously.

They completely agreed with Riona.

Amaya never talked to any of them with a straight face unless it involves Nux, for a mother who is trying to get close to her child, this experience could be heartbreaking.

Skyla even went as far as patting Riona's head and hugging her.

“You guys...”

Amaya, on the other hand, couldn't believe that the three of them turned sides so quickly.

She was completely and utterly speechless.

“I agree with Lady Riona, I have seen her trying so hard to talk to Amaya, but she never talked to her, to be honest, I feel like Lady Riona is a genius for not only manipulating the King of this country, but also manipulating the enemy into thinking that she would help them.”

Skyla started fangirling again.

Thyra and Edda nodded as well.

“...”

Amaya turned silent.

She was left alone, therefore, she directly turned around and hugged Nux.

Nux hugged her back and smiled, then, he glanced at Riona and questioned.

“First, I would never understand why you think talking to Amaya is so hard, she is such an amazing, cute, and friendly girl.”

A small smile appeared on Amaya's face as she enjoyed Nux's pat and closed her eyes.

The current her resembled a little cat.

Riona, Skyla, Thyra, and Edda's mouths twitched when they heard what Nux said,

‘Friendly my ass.’

Thyra snorted inwardly and although Riona didn't want to say this for her own daughter, however, even she agreed that her daughter wasn't the

friendliest of persons she has ever met.

“Second.”

Nux, however, was not done. His main question was pending,

“What does Lord Amletus have to say about all this?”

# Chapter 507

“What does Lord Amletus have to say about all this?”

Nux questioned.

“Hmm?”

Riona tilted her head in confusion.

“Lord Amletus?”

“Well, your Kingdom just lost 2 King Stage Cultivators, didn't you? What does he have to say about all this?”

Nux questioned.

“That was not my fault, it was the King's.”

A small smile appeared on Riona's face as the letter that was sent to the two King Stage Cultivators, telling them to go to the Skyfall Kingdom and kill the Princess, stamped by the King himself, appeared in her hand.

“...”

Nux turned silent.

Was it just him, or the women from Amaya's family were really too dangerous?

Just... just what is with all this shrewd planning.

Nux thanked all the gods he believed in that Amaya was on his side.

He didn't want to know what it would feel like to have her as an enemy.

At the same time, he also pitied the King of this Kingdom, first, he was a fool, second, his opponent was someone like Riona...

That bastard really had the shitiest luck possible.

“Would Amletus believe you? I mean, I am the King would tell him the truth that you were the one who told him about this plan, to be honest, with how you described, I would rather believe the King, than believing you if I was in Amletus position.

There is also that letter Raguel sent, and the fact the King Stage Cultivators who died was sort of like your enemies.”

Nux spoke.

“Well, I never said I would deny the fact that Raguel contacted me or that I was interested in this plan.

However, if I actually wanted to jump onto that plan, I would never talk with the King, I only talked with him since I wasn't sure.

I wasn't 'manipulating', I just felt that it was a good opportunity so I discussed it with him.

I even tried to warn him when he jumped on it too quickly, however, it was the king who jumped on it too quickly.

It is not like I am lying, there is no reason for Lord Amletus to not believe me.”

Riona shrugged with a carefree smile on her face.

“So what you are saying is you are planning to be honest with him.”

“Yes, he will catch on if I try to lie, therefore, I will just omit a few things and tell him the truth. Even that pig wouldn't be able to retort me, let alone Lord Amletus.”

“...”

Nux turned silent.

‘Fuck, she is scary.’

He was in awe, however,

Emperors weren’t the ones you would want to play around with,

“Are you sure you want to play around with someone like Lord Amletus?”

Nux has met Astaria, he has seen just how scary she can be, even in his wildest dream, he wouldn’t try to fool her.

Riona just smiled,

“You have to take little risks if you want to achieve something, the worse that could happen is that I will lose my life.

I have nothing to lose.”

“...”

Nux turned silent.

He was getting nothing out of this situation, therefore, after thinking for a while, he changed his questions.

“What do you think about the Solid Earth Kingdom?”

“Hmm?”

Riona frowned.

Why did he change the topic so suddenly, she wondered inwardly.

However, seeing the serious look on Nux’s face, she decided to answer his question.

She also wanted to talk about this with someone else.

“Strange.”

“Hmm?”

“The Solid Earth Kingdom, its recent movements are too strange. It wasn’t long before it lost a lot of power for doing something foolish, however, now they are attacking the Woods Dynasty and not only that.

They are winning.

They have already defeated 2 of their Generals and the new General that has replaced the previous one after he was killed is barely holding on.

I don’t know how, but there are 3 Generals in their Army.

I was suspicious about this, so I tried to send a few spies inside that Kingdom, however, I soon lost contact with those spies.

Something is definitely wrong with the Solid Earth Kingdom, I just don’t know what.”

“Have you tried talking to Lord Amletus about this?”

“His response was even stranger.”

“What do you mean?”

Nux questioned.

“Normally, Lord Amletus would have been curious, and would have tried to look things on his own, however, when I reported things to him, he told me that since their Emperor isn’t making a move, he couldn’t do anything about it. This behavior was completely different from normal.”

Nux narrowed his eyes.

“That is strange...”

He then glanced at Riona and narrowed his eyes even further.

No matter how he thinks about this, it didn't seem like Riona was involved with whatever was going on with the Solid Earth Kingdom.

Unlike what Astaria believes, Riona only contacted Raguel because she wanted to talk with her daughter.

Of course, with what he has seen today, Nux didn't plan to trust Riona completely either. Riona was smart, for her, fooling and manipulating people around her wasn't a hard job.

“Where is Kelton?”

Suddenly, Amaya questioned.

“Hmm? He is back in the Palace.”

Riona replied.

“Tell him to come here once you return,” Amaya spoke.

She then turned towards Nux and used the connection,

‘Use Slave Seal on him, we need to plant a spy in this Kingdom.’

Maybe Amaya understood what Nux was thinking, trusting Riona was a mistake, she may look earnest but she was still a Queen of the Kingdom.

Therefore, they could only use Kelton.

Normally, Amaya wouldn't have allowed used Slave Seal on Kelton because of everything he has done for her.

However, if it was something that might benefit Nux, she was willing to do it.

Morality or things like that didn't matter, if it was for Nux, Amaya was willing to fall to any lengths.

“What are you planning to do with him?”

Suddenly, Riona questioned.

“What do you mean?”

Amaya questioned back.

“You may not look at him favorably, but don’t forget, he is someone who looked out for you in your worse time.

Do not hurt him.”

# Chapter 508

“Do not hurt him.”

Riona spoke.

“You seem rather worried about him.”

Amaya commented as she glanced at Riona.

“Well, he is one of my most Loyal subordinates, plus, I don’t want you to do something that you might regret,” Riona replied.

Amaya narrowed her eyes.

“I can see that in your expression, Amaya. I see a little reluctance but also a resolve in your eyes. I don’t need much time to guess it,

Whatever you are planning for Kelton is something that might hurt him, you don’t want to do it, however, it seems like you are forcing yourself to do it.

Trust me when I say it, these decisions are usually the ones that you will regret in the future, it is better to stop right now.”

“...”

Amaya didn’t say anything.

Nux and the others, however, were impressed, Amaya wasn’t the one whose thoughts appear on her face, her face mostly remains neutral.

Although Nux was here, making that little poker face a little weaker, however, it still should not be that easy to read Amaya’s expressions, especially to this degree.

“We will not hurt Kelton,” Suddenly, Nux jumped in.

In truth, unlike Amaya, he didn't care about Kelton at all. He was the first one to suggest using Slave Seal on him because of how close he was with Amaya. Amaya, however, denied it before.

Nux also understood that she still wasn't happy that they were planting the Seal on him, however, he wasn't going to reject her idea.

Just like Amaya, he knew the importance of planting a spy in the Skadi Kingdom, the General he had planted inside the Solid Earth Kingdom is helping him a lot. Although Nux does not contact him very often, whenever he does, he learns new things.

Rejecting Amaya's offer would mean that he is underestimating Amaya's resolve, which would, of course, affect Amaya more, Nux, of course, wouldn't let that happen.

He would just make sure that Kelton is taken care of and does not go through much trouble.

Riona glanced at Nux and a smile appeared on his face.

‘If he is as loyal as he claims to be, that is.’

Of course, he didn't say those words out loud.

“What are you planning?”

Riona questioned as she narrowed her eyes.

Nux just smiled.

There was no way he would tell her anything, that would ruin the whole point of this, won't it?

Riona raised her eyebrow,

“I have answered every question you had for me, don’t you think it is unfair that you are still trying to hide things from me?”

“ ... ”

Nux turned silent, but suddenly, Amaya walked forward.

“We are ensuring that he would be loyal to me, just like he was usually meant to be.”

Nux frowned, Amaya, however, continued,

“Not only that, but we are also going make it like Kelton can contact any of us anytime without anyone else noticing,”

Nux’s frown deepened, he couldn’t understand why Amaya was telling her everything.

And as if knowing what he was thinking, Amaya used the connection to explain,

‘We have already placed too much attention on Kelton, even if we hide it from her, she would still be wary of Kelton from now on, using Slave Seal on him would be useless, rather than that, it is better to place her on the spot.’

‘On the spot?’

Nux frowned.

‘If she knows that Kelton is our spy, she would try to avoid him, however, if she still wants to maintain a relationship with us, or if she ‘only cares about her daughter’ as she says she does, then her daughter’s spy around her shouldn’t bother her at all.

Now that she knows Kelton will be my spy, it would now confuse her, she wouldn’t know how to handle and act around Kelton, whether she should avoid him, or keep him around, or whether she should feed him with false information,

She wouldn't know what to do and her real nature would finally be revealed.'

A cruel smile appeared on Amaya's face before it disappeared.

Nux raised his eyebrows in amazement.

He may have been praising Riona for a while now, however, in front of his wife, even someone like Riona was helpless.

"A way he can contact you anytime he wants without anyone noticing? A way to ensure his loyalty?"

Suddenly, a frown appeared on Riona's face.

Nux and Amaya looked at her, observing her expression,

Riona glanced at Amaya and questioned,

"Is it related to those weird magics of his?"

"You can say that, I can only tell you that it will be untraceable, even by Lord Amletus."

Amaya smiled lightly, enjoying this woman's confused expression.

It was high time she would pull the game back into her own hands.

However, contrary to Amaya's expectation, an excited smile appeared on Riona's face as she looked at Nux.

"Why didn't you say you had something like this before!?"

"Huh?" Amaya and Nux frowned.

Suddenly, Riona disappeared and appeared in front of Riona, she grabbed his shoulders and spoke,

"Kelton is not needed, use that magic on me!"

“W-What?”

Nux was taken aback.

“You are still suspicious of me, correct? Then use this magic, this would ensure my loyalty to you, and I would also be able to talk to my lovely daughter anytime I want.

Fufufu~ This is just amazing~”

Riona smiled brightly.

“I-It is not as simple as you think it is. It might get painful, torturous even.”

“Heh, it is not something I can’t take.”

“You can’t, trust me.”

Suddenly, Thyra jumped in as well.

As someone who has experienced everything firsthand, she knew just how horrifying the Slave Seal could be. To be honest, she still has a trauma deep in the corner of her mind.

Seeing Thyra’s expression, Riona suddenly turned silent.

Nux saying it was different, however, she knew Thyra well. If even Thyra was saying it was painful, then...

Riona wouldn’t even want to imagine how painful that would be for Thyra to make that expression.

However, a small smile then appeared on Riona’s face and she spoke,

“If it is for my daughter, I will go through anything you throw at me.”

She then looked at Nux and a determined look appeared on her face,

“Using that magic on me would be a lot better than using it on Kelton, won’t it?”

Do it.”

“...” Nux didn’t know what to do.

He turned towards Amaya and even she had a perplexed expression on her face.

Suddenly, Riona turned towards Amaya and spoke with a determined look on her face.

“Amaya, I only want to stay close to you, without any schemes going in both our minds.

I want a pure, mother-daughter relationship, and I know that somewhere in your heart, you want it as well.

This magic is the only way to achieve what the two of us want, please don’t take this opportunity away from me,”

“...”

Amaya looked at Riona’s face,

“You will become our servant if you allow this to happen.”

Many may think that Amaya’s tone was similar to before, cold and indifferent, however, Nux and Riona knew the truth.

Those little cracks in her voice told them that she was holding herself back.

Amaya was trying to put up a strong front, however, right now, tears would stream out of her eyes from even the lightest of push.

“I don’t care.”

Riona smiled as she glanced at Amaya.

Amaya looked at Nux, her expression was clear.

Nux took in a deep breath.

He doesn't want to do it, however, if he rejects it now, he knew Amaya could start crying, that was something he couldn't see.

He clenched his fist, then he took a deep breath again, and looked at Riona,

“Riona Skadi, are you willing to be my Slave?”

# Chapter 509

“We are being attacked!!”

“What!? Who dares!?”

“Fuck you! Stop shouting! Prepare for war! Send all the Cultivators before Master Stage Cultivators away! They would only get in the way.”

“But how did they appear right in front of the Palace? Why didn’t we hear any reports before? Also, how many of them are there?”

“There are 9 of them. Now go, quick!”

“...”

The soldier suddenly turned silent, he stared at another soldier with a blank look on his face and questioned,

“9? Seriously? Is it a prank or something?”

“You bastard-”

The other soldier wanted to answer him, however suddenly,

“You bastards! You still have the time to talk around like that!? Keep your feet moving, or I’ll make sure you will die before the enemy even reaches you!”

“G-G-General Phorus!”

The soldier’s eyes widened in horror and surprise.

If the General, one of the strongest beings in the Kingdom himself has appeared, this was definitely not a prank.

The Soldier's body trembled in fear.

His friend, however, grabbed him from the side and started running away.

“Don't take those bastards lightly, there might be only 9 of them, however, all of them are King Stage Cultivators.”

“!!!”

The Soldier's eyes widened in surprise.

He felt like his eyes would pop out today by how much surprise he has been receiving.

“N-Nine K-King Stage Cultivators? W-Which Kingdom is attacking us?”

He questioned.

“We do not have any information about that, we are currently unprepared, the Shadow Unit is already talking with Princ- Queen Evane, you only do what you have been told and bring away all the Soldiers who are below Master Stage Cultivators and prepare them.

If 9 King Stage Cultivators have attacked, the rest of the army must be near as well.

It might even be a coup from one of the nobles, be prepared for anything.”

The soldier instructed.

The other soldier nodded, a determined look appeared on his face and he reorganized himself.

...

On the other hand, Keeve and Reeve appeared in front of Evane's room and reported,

“Queen Evane, 9 unknown King Stage Cultivators are attacking us, currently, we only have 7 King Stage Cultivators including you and Lady Iria.”

Lady Iria, or Iria Skyfall was Ricardus’s strongest wife, however, she was not one of those ‘lucky’ women to bear the King’s children in their one-night session, of course, Iria didn’t care about it either, she only pursued cultivation and if it weren’t for her family forcing her to marry the King, she would have stayed unmarried for her entire life.

“We can ask Lady Astaria’s help to deal with all of them, however, I believe many people would have their eyes on this situation, if Lady Astaria appear, things might get worse because of the Treaty.

I suggest calling for help from all the Duke Houses and the Academy, if we add their 4 King Stage Cultivators, we would have 11 Cultivators, that would be more than enough to deal with those bastards and prepare to defend against the main army.”

Reeve reported quickly.

However, unlike him, Evane didn’t look in hurry at all.

She gently placed the tea she was drinking on the table and stood up,

A smile then appeared on her face and she spoke,

“Let’s go and welcome them.”

Reeve didn’t understand what she was trying to say, however, since Evane had already walked out of the room, he and Kevve followed her in.

Soon, the three of them appeared in front of those 9 masked King Stage Cultivators.

They weren’t alone, along with them, more than 20 Expert Stage Cultivators and 50 Grand Master Stage Cultivators were standing in front of those masked cultivators, looking at them with wary looks on their faces.

That was not it, the other 2 King Stage Cultivators of the Shadow Unit, Lady Iria and General Phorus were there as well, prepared to fight against these people who had suddenly appeared in front of them.

To be able to prepare 7 King Stage Cultivators and so many Expert and Grand Master Stage Cultivators in a matter of minutes, it showed how strong, Skyfall, the strongest Kingdom of the World was.

It was not a force a mere 9 King Stage Cultivators could defeat.

However, even though they were standing against so many cultivators who were ready to take out their swords and kill them, the 9 King Stage Cultivators didn't look worried at all.

Their body postures looked rather calm.

This made the Kingdom Soldiers frown.

Do they have some sort of plan?

They all wondered in their mind.

Tension in the air continued to rise.

Then suddenly,

\*Step\* \*Step\*

Evane stepped forward.

The soldiers turned silent and observed the woman, who would soon become the next Queen of this Kingdom.

They waited for the Queen to address these 9 Masked Cultivators, however,

\*Step\* \*Step\* \*Step\*

Contrary to their expectation, Evane continued to walk towards these masked cultivators.

“Queen Evan-”

Reeve wanted to call out, however, Evane suddenly raised her hand, signaling her to stay silent and continued to walk.

‘Is she planning to challenge all of them alone?’

General Phorus thought of something absurd.

He then shook his head and sighed,

‘She is still a child, she might be a gifted cultivator, however, she is not mature enough...’

He then glanced at Lady Iria and noticed that she was looking at him.

She had the same thought in him.

The two of them nodded at each other and prepared to defend Evane once things get worse.

The other King Stage Cultivators, including Reeve and Keeve, prepared for the same as well. Some Expert and Grand Master Stage Cultivators were even prepared to sacrifice their life to protect the future queen.

\*Step\* \*Step\* \*Step\*

The closer Evane walked toward the masked cultivators, the tenser the atmosphere got.

\*Step\*

Then, once she was an arm’s length away from the masked cultivator, Evane stopped.

The Kingdom cultivators prepared their weapons, but suddenly,

“!!!!”

Their eyes widened in surprise.

Evane Skyfall, the Future Queen of the Kingdom, suddenly hugged one of the masked cultivators right in front of all the soldiers.

# Chapter 510

Evane Skyfall, the Future Queen of the Kingdom, suddenly hugged one of the masked cultivators right in front of all the soldiers.

“!!!”

Everyone widened their eyes in shock.

What the hell was happening?

Why was the soon-to-be Queen hugging someone like that in front of everyone?

The people who were ready with their weapons and battle stance stood still with bewildered looks on their faces. The tensed atmosphere that had built up until now completely disappeared.

Everyone's eyes were on the two people who were hugging each other without the care of the world. No, actually, their eyes were not on two people, rather, they were only looking at Evane, they wanted answers.

As if understanding their intentions, Evane turned towards the Kingdom 'Army' that was looking at her and smiled,

“I am sure all of you are confused and are wondering what is happening.

Don't worry, I will explain what is happening.

First of all, don't be so tense, sheathe your weapons, they are not here to attack. They are not even our enemies, rather, they are our allies.”

“Lady Evane, who are they?”

Phorus, the General of the Skyfall Kingdom questioned as he narrowed his eyes.

Evane looked at the General, then she turned towards the man she hugged and nodded.

The man nodded back, then, he removed his mask, revealing his perfectly carved face, well-structured nose, raven hair, thin eyebrows, hypnotic, golden eyes, and all in all, an extremely handsome face.

“This man is Nux Leander,”

Evane introduced.

Nux looked at everyone standing and smiled.

Reeve and Keeve frowned, they knew who this man was, he was Lady Evane’s subordinate, but why did Lady Evane hu-

Suddenly, Evane dropped a bomb.

“My husband.”

“Huh...?”

A deafening silence fell over the place.

Evane allowed others to let it sink in, 3 seconds later,

“WHAT!?!?”

Their emotions exploded.

“H-H-Husband?”

Even Reeve and Keeve, who usually do not show many expressions could help but look at Nux and Evane with stunned looks on their faces.

“Lady Evane, what do you mean he is your husband?”

Iria was the first one to recover from this shock and she questioned.

“Huh? Do you perhaps not know what husband means?” Nux questioned with a confused look on his face.

“I am not talking to you, Boy.” Iria narrowed her eyes.

Nux narrowed his eyes as well, he could sense hostility from Iria’s eyes, however, he couldn’t understand why that was the case.

This was his first time meeting this woman, he hasn’t offended her, yet.

‘Well, whatever.’

Then, Nux shrugged inwardly, a playful smile then appeared on his face as he glanced at Iria and,

‘You started it.’

“Hmm? You asked Evane and since I am her husband, I have the right to answer your questi- ah, wait, you don’t know what a husband is.

So it is like this, when a man and woman marr-”

“I know what husband means!” Iria snapped.

Seeing this, Evane and the other ‘masked cultivators’ shook their heads and sighed.

There he goes again.

Nux was an expert when it came to annoying people.

“Hmm? Then why were yo-” Nux wanted to continue, however, as if Iria understood what he was trying to do, she didn’t give him any chance.

“I am asking how can you be the husband of our queen when barely anyone here knows you.”

“Huh? It is not like I am marrying you all, you are not that lucky, get off your high horses.

The only opinion here that matters is Evane's, how do you guys even fit in this equation?"

Nux questioned back.

"We fit here because we are Lady Evane's future subjects." Phorus was the one to reply.

"Then act like subjects. Don't involve yourself with her personal life. Evane is allowed to choose anyone she wants." Nux shot him down.

"We can't allow any random person to fool our Queen, you can't be her husband until we make sure that you are not here to harm her." Phorus wasn't planning to back down.

With his words, the soldiers supporting him looked at Nux with hostile looks as well.

"Are you saying that your future Queen is a fool?"

Suddenly, Nux narrowed his eyes.

"I did not say anything like that, do not twist my words."

"You can't be her husband until we make sure that you are not here to harm her', don't these words means that Evane is a fool who can't even judge a person's character and can be easily fooled?"

Is this something a subject can say about his Queen?"

Nux then narrowed his eyes even further and tilted his head in a threatening way,

"Are you underestimating her authority?"

A wild pressure was released from Nux's body.

"..." The General turned silent.

“We are not underestimating her authority, however, the Queen is still young, and a little immature, at her age, there are many people who would try to trick her for their own benefit, but this does not mean that the Queen is a fool, she just doesn’t have much experience, that is where our role as her subjects comes in.

We will prevent anyone from hurting our Queen.

We need to suspect everyone, especially an unknown man who appeared out of nowhere and the Queen announces him as her husband.”

Iria stepped in, unlike Phorus, she has spent some time in the Royal Palace, and when it came to a fight with words, she doubted many could defeat her.

And indeed, her words were sharp and she placed all the blame on Nux, saving Phorus from a tight spot.

Nux snorted inwardly but just as he was about to reply,

Evane stepped in,

“As much as I would like to thank you ‘subjects’ for trying to ‘prevent’ me from being tricked, I don’t think you are allowed to meddle in my personal life.

I introduced Nux to you all not because I wanted your opinions, but because I wanted to inform you all.

Nux Leander is my husband, all further discussions will not be entertained.”

Her cold and emotionless tone forced everyone to turn silent.

Everyone, except Phorus,

“Lady Evane, you are still too immature to decide this on your own, also, let me remind you,

You are not a Queen yet, you currently do not have the authority to order us around.”

Evane looked at Phorus with a cold look on her face, Phorus didn't back down either.

The two of them stared at each other, the tension in the air suddenly rose up, then suddenly,

“Though I did allow you to cause some ruckus, I did not expect you to go this far, Boy.”

# Chapter 511

“Though I did allow you to cause some ruckus, I did not expect you to go this far, Boy.”

Suddenly, a voice was heard, the tension in the voice disappeared and everyone turned towards the source of the voice.

There, their eyes fell on a black-haired woman who unconsciously had a strange but suffocating Aura around her.

Seeing the woman, Iria, Phorus, Keeve, and Reeve bowed their heads. A few others who knew who this woman was bowed their heads as well.

The rest were confused, however, seeing how all the higher-ups were bowing their heads with respectful looks on their faces, they did the same and bowed their heads as well.

Nux glanced at the woman and smiled,

“Did you think I was joking when I said you will be surprised?”

Iria, Phorus, Reeve, Keeve, and other King Stage Cultivators widened their eyes in horror when they saw how this man was talking with Lady Astaria.

‘You are dead.’

Phorus already predicted it.

However, unlike how he and everyone else predicted, Astaria didn’t seem angry, rather, she had a smile on her face. It was as if she was enjoying this conversation!

“Tsk, you only said that introducing your wives would cause a ruckus, but you took so much time to just introduce yourself.”

Astaria snorted jokingly.

“The Main Character needs to have a long introduction, that’s the rule. I obviously can’t go against it.” Nux shrugged.

“Shameless indeed.” Astaria shook her head.

“Also, how could I possibly introduce my wives when you are not here?”

“Hmm, that seems like a valid point.”

Astaria nodded.

She was shameless as well.

“...”

Others didn’t know how to react to all this.

This woman, who seemed to be respected by all the higher ups was acting friendly towards this man who the higher-ups were fighting against. Nobody knew how to react in this situation.

The Kingdom’s King Stage Cultivators, however, had different thoughts in their mind.

“His wives?” Iria frowned.

“Are you saying that the Queen’s husband has a Harem?” A man wondered out loud.

There is no way anyone would accept this.

This would destroy the Skyfall Kingdom’s image.

“Lady Astaria, we cannot allow this! A Husband from unknown origins was already big enough, but the husband has his own Harem as well? You can’t possibly allow this!”

Phorus shouted.

This time, even Reeve and Keeve agreed with him.

This was going too far.

Astaria then glanced at Phorus and suddenly, all her playfulness disappeared,

“Did I ask for your suggestion?”

Phorus’s body trembled and he bowed his head,

“N-No, Lady Astaria.”

“Then Stay silent.”

“A-As you command.”

Phorus stepped back, indicating that he won’t be speaking anything anymore.

Iria frowned, she couldn’t understand why Lady Astaria was supporting this man, however, a few seconds later, she frowned.

She couldn’t care less about the Kingdom or its reputation.

She only jumped in because it was her duty, in all honestly, she didn’t care who Evane marries.

She would end up being bored with this man one day or another, just like her father.

Iria stepped back and closed her eyes as well.

Seeing this, other King Stage Cultivators backed away as well.

Nux took this opportunity and smiled,

“Well, now that I have the stage all to myself, let me introduce you to my lovely wives,”

Although he was standing in front of everyone, the only person he was looking at was Astaria, he couldn't care less about the others.

“First, Felberta Leander, my first wife.”

As he said that, Felberta removed her mask and smiled.

“Wait...”

Suddenly, Astaria's expression changed.

She finally realized that she has missed something all this while,

These 8 Women...

All of them were King Stage Cultivators!

8, no 10 including Nux and Evane,

10 King Stage Cultivators!

All 10 of them were together!

How absurd is that!?

Nux didn't notice Astaria's expression and continued to introduce others.

“Skyla Leander, Lane Leander, Edda Leander, Thyra Leander,”

Then, Nux paused.

The real shock would start after Thyra, he knew it full well, therefore, he waited for everyone, or mainly Astaria to settle down, a few seconds later,

He pointed at another masked woman and introduced,

“She is Allura Leander.”

These were simple words, however, the reaction to these words was,

“ ... ”

Silence.

Deafening silence.

Everyone looked at Allura with shocked looks on their faces.

“I-Isn’t that Lady Allura!?”

In the end, one of the soldiers pointed at Allura and shouted out loud.

“Why is she here? Wasn’t she Missing!?”

“No wait! She was a Master Stage Cultivator! How did she become a King Stage Cultivator!?”

“You dumbass, that is what you are worried about,

That man just introduced the Royal Consort as his own wife!”

Another soldier shouted and another wave of silence fell all over the place.

A Royal Consort was introduced as someone else wife.

Everyone’s eyes fell on Astaria, they wanted to see how she would react to this situation.

“ ... ”

However, this time, even Astaria was too shocked to say anything.

Nux realized that introducing his wives like this was a little too much... if he gave them any more shock, some might even pass out, therefore, seeing

that many of them were still too shocked to say anything, he decided to use this opportunity to introduce all his wives.

“This is Amaya Leander, then Ember Leander, then last but not the least, Evane Leander,

Mhm, that’s it, I don’t have more wives.”

“T-That’s Lady Amaya! She is also a Royal Consort!”

“She is also a King Stage Cultivator!?”

“Wait, wasn’t she cursed!? What happened to her curse!?”

“Wait! Wait! Wait! Wasn’t she less than 50 years old!? You are telling me that she became a King Stage Cultivator when she is not even 50 years old!? What kind of monstrous potential is that!?”

Everyone’s emotions burst out and chaos ensued.

No one could believe what they were seeing.

10 King Stage Cultivators!

Absurd!

Simply Absurd!

Just how in the hell is this possible!?

Phorus didn’t know how to react either, nobody reacted when she was introduced, however, to him, the most surprising out of all these women was not Allura or Amaya,

It was the General of the Woods Dynasty.

That fucking monster who killed thousands and led ten thousands,

Just how in the hell did this boy manage to marry someone like her!?

# Chapter 512

The General of the Woods Dynasty.

That fucking monster who killed thousands and led ten thousands,  
Just how in the hell did this boy manage to marry someone like her!?  
Phorus couldn't understand.

“You really weren't lying when you said you would surprise me...”

After a long while, Astaria commented.

Nux glanced at the woman in front of him and smiled.

“I never lie.

Never.”

Seeing that he was focusing on the word ‘never’ a lot, a frown appeared on Astaria's face.

He wanted to say something, she understood that, but what was he trying to say?

Astaria started wondering.

Soon, her cheeks turned a little red and a flustered expression appeared on her face.

Of course, it only appeared for a second before it was replaced by her normal expression, however, that little second was enough for Nux to understand that she understood his message and he smiled playfully.

Astaria understood what was going on inside his mind, therefore, she decided to change the topic and glanced at his woman again.

“I see a lot of familiar faces here...

Some of the dead ones are there as well.”

Astaria commented as she looked at Amaya.

Amaya smiled, however, unlike Nux, she didn't receive Astaria's smile back, Astaria only looked at her with an expressionless look on her face before looking back at Nux, her expression demanded an explanation.

“What? Everything is fair in love and war.”

Nux only had a simple answer.

Hearing his answer, Astaria's mouth twitched.

“First, you have the audacity to go after the King's Wife, the Royal Consort, then, you plan their 'death' and 'kidnapping' so they could stay with you, then you go after the King's daughter, the Princess of this Kingdom, help her become the Queen, appearing as a Queen's husband with a harem of his own, then you introduced the previous King's wives as your own wives,”

Astaria then narrowed her eyes.

“Aren't you taking the Skyfall Kingdom too lightly?”

An expression similar to the one she had the first time Nux met her appeared on Astaria's face and again, she used her Aura to try and suppress Nux.

This time, however, Nux wasn't intimidated,

“He didn't deserve them.”

His answer was simple. He didn't even try to explain himself.

“Also, I am not the one who is taking the Skyfall Kingdom too lightly, it is you guys.”

“Huh?”

A frown appeared on Astaria’s face.

“To make someone like Ricardus the King of this Kingdom, the one who is not only lusting after new women every day, but is even incompetent when it comes managing the Kingdom,

Are the standards of the Skyfall Kingdom so low?

Are you telling me that a competent Queen who is a King Stage Cultivator when she is just 80 years old and is part of a harem where the bests of the best women, all excelling in their respective fields like Strategizing, Assassinations, and War, are gathered, is more harmful to a Kingdom’s dignity than an incompetent and womanizing trash ruling over the bests experts there are?”

“ ... ”

Astaria and the others turned silent.

General Phorus narrowed his eyes and started thinking, although he didn’t like this boy one bit, what he was saying wasn’t incorrect at all. Ricardus didn’t deserve to be the King.

Also, although the Queen was a part of a Harem, the fact that this was possibly the most elite Harem in this world couldn’t be ignored.

He knew about Ember Windstar, a General that even he wanted to avoid.

Amaya Skyfall, a woman who troubled so many nobles, even the Ministers of the Royal Palace, when she didn’t even leave her room,

Although he doesn’t know about other women, the fact that almost all of them are less than 100 years old and are already King Stage Cultivators was not something anyone could scoff at.

Then there is that man...

The man who gathered all these amazing women into one group, the Man of the Harem, the man who single-handedly played with all the ministers, the King, and the so-called elite shadow Unit, the man who could smile playfully and act so carelessly when he is standing in front of Astaria Skyfall, the strongest being in the world...

This man couldn't possibly be normal.

In truth, this entire group was full of freaks never seen before,

The Queen of this Being part of this elite group...

It was...

Not bad...

Maybe the others had the same thought process, many people started looking at Nux in a different light.

Of course, not all of them were convinced, however, Nux didn't have to convince all of them.

As long as the Majority supports him, he could always use force to settle the minority.

Hehe, politics 101.

Cough Cough; Ignore me 😊

Nux then glanced at Astaria and a rare, earnest expression appeared on his face,

“Trust me, Evane will be a lot better Ruler than Ricardus could ever be,”

Astaria narrowed her eyes and questioned,

“Will it be Evane, or you?”

This was the main question.

The other King Stage Cultivators present here narrowed their eyes as well.

Evane was part of Elite Harem, she was amazing and all that was fine, however, who will actually rule the Kingdom?

Will it be Evane?

Or will she just be a puppet used by him to rule the Kingdom?

The probability of the latter was a lot higher, no, in truth, the probability of the latter not happening was close to zero.

“Aren’t you there to keep a check on that?”

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face.

“Let’s say I ‘use’ Evane for my own benefits and start ruling the Kingdom from behind the scenes, doing whatever the hell I want,

Do you think I have the ability to hide all this from your eyes?

Do you think I have what it takes to go against you?”

General Phorus’s and others’ eyes shined in enlightenment, Nux was right, if he tries to take over the Kingdom, he would have to face Lady Astaria, that is simply not possible.

Astaria, however, wasn’t convinced yet,

“You may not have the ability to go against me right now, but the same can’t be said about the future, what about the time you surpass me? Who would keep their eyes on you then?”

Hearing her question, General Phorus, Iria, Reeve, Keeve, and the other King Stage Cultivators widened their eyes in disbelief.

D-Did Lady Astaria just say that this man would surpass her, the strongest being in the world!?

# Chapter 513

“You may not have the ability to go against me right now, but the same can’t be said about the future, what about the time you surpass me? Who would keep their eyes on you then?”

Hearing her question, General Phorus, Iria, Reeve, Keeve, and the other King Stage Cultivators widened their eyes in disbelief.

D-Did Lady Astaria just say that this man would surpass her, the strongest being in the world!?

This man definitely has a freaking talent, even more than Lady Astaria, everyone agreed on that, however, Lady Astaria has already reached the peak,

No matter how high someone’s talent is, they couldn’t possibly surpass the one who has achieved the peak.

Of course, they might take less time to reach the peak than the one who is already there, but in the end, surpassing them was still impossible.

Or...

Or was Lady Astaria indicating that this man would... break the boundaries and...

Surpass the peak?

Was that even possible?

“Heh, you really think I have the ability to surpass you, I am flattered.”

Nux smiled.

“Don’t change the topic.”

Astaria spoke.

Nux looked at her and then sighed,

“Look, there is no way to control the strongest, if I surpass the strongest person in this world, it is only natural that you would fear that I would take over the Skyfall Kingdom, but to be honest, even if I don’t, will that change anything?”

Let’s take you for example,

Ricardus was the King, and Evane will be the Queen, however, once you appear, who would the subordinates listen to? Will it be them or you?

The answer is obvious.

Why is that?

Because you devoted your entire life to the Kingdom?

No, it is because you are strong.

People would always follow the strong.

Whether I want it or not, if I become the strongest being in the world, others will see me as the representative of the Skyfall Kingdom.

I am sure you know it as well.”

“That means you plan on ruling this Kingdom,” Astaria concluded.

“I don’t, I want to be free, without being bound to anything,

However, I will protect my wife’s Kingdom if it faces any troubles.”

“ ... ”

Astaria narrowed her eyes as she looked at Nux.

Nux looked into her eyes with an honest look on his face.

The two of them maintained eye contact for a while and suddenly,

Astaria smiled,

“You passed.”

Nux smiled playfully as well,

“Of course I would, I never doubted myself, even for a second.”

“As shameless as ever,” Astaria commented.

“You have to be shameless to get what you want.”

Nux distributed his endless knowledge, then he glanced at Astaria and smiled playfully again,

“You have to constantly ask for what you want until that person finally gives in.”

Astaria understood what he was trying to say, however, she completely ignored this shameless man.

Nux shook his head and sighed.

Then, he glanced at Astaria and spoke,

“Now that we are done with this, don’t you think there is something you have to do?”

Astaria narrowed her eyes and spoke,

“Don’t order me around, Boy.”

Nux bowed his head,

“Lady Astaria, please do what you must do.”

“ ... ”

Astaria was out of words.

In the end, she shook her head, then, a serious look appeared on her face and she called,

“Keeve.”

“At your command, Lady Astaria.” Keeve bowed.

“The Royal Palace will be in complete lockdown from now on, no one will be allowed to leave or enter the Royal Palace from now on, the guards on leave will stay out of the Palace until they go through a thorough examination, all the letters sent out of the Palace would be thoroughly checked, all the discussions about the Kingdom welfare will be halted, no more Royal Meetings will be held, the Coronation of the New Queen will be done privately, a big celebration will be conducted once the Lockdown is released.”

Astaria instructed.

“As you command, Lady Astaria.”

Although he was confused and couldn't understand where the sudden instructions came from, Keeve still bowed his head and nodded.

His duty was to follow orders, he could always ask questions later.

Just like him, many others were surprised as well.

However, some of the bright ones started to understand Astaria's actions.

10 King Stage Cultivators, almost all of them were less than 100 years old, what does that mean? Almost all of them have a shot at becoming the next Emperor Stage Cultivator,

10 potential Emperor Stage Cultivators, and the Skyfall Kingdom has all of them.

This information couldn't possibly be leaked to other Kingdoms or else it will be a catastrophe.

And once it is leaked, the Emperors of the other Kingdoms might even break the Treaty and combine their powers to go for an all-out attack against the Skyfall Kingdom.

With the number of spies currently residing in the Palace, a news like this couldn't possibly be contained.

Were there spies in the Palace? Of course there were. It was a well-known fact.

Then why hasn't anyone dealt with it?

Well, it is not that simple, identifying all the spies is not possible. Even if they are identified, a strong proof was needed to even start the thorough investigation on the spy, it was a complicated process and too much politics was involved.

Of course, once Lady Astaria, the Emperor was involved, things were different.

In front of her absolute strength, politics was useless.

Anyone can be thoroughly investigated if she was the one who orders it, whether they had tied with normal nobles, the Dukes, or even if they had Royal Blood flowing in their veins.

Decisions like Complete Lockdown, this was definitely only possible if Lady Astaria was the one who ordered it, because only then would all the strongest experts in the Kingdom would take it absolutely seriously.

“Lady Astaria,”

Suddenly, Nux called out.

“What is it?”

Astaria questioned.

“How about we conduct a few investigations as well, there are a few people who I believe do not have the Kingdom’s best interest in their mind.”

Nux glanced at a particular Grand Master Stage Cultivator standing in the crowd and smiled playfully.

# Chapter 514

“How about we conduct a few investigations as well, there are a few people who I believe do not have the Kingdom’s best interest in their mind.”

Nux glanced at a particular Grand Master Stage Cultivator standing in the crowd and smiled playfully.

The Grand Master Stage Cultivator widened his eyes when he noticed Nux’s eyes on him, a weird jolt spread all over his body when he saw Nux’s smile and how his Golden eyes were shining as he was looking at him.

For some reason, the Grand Master Stage Cultivator panicked,

He felt like something bad was going to happen to him.

[Name: Nixon Halt]

[Age: 72 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Grand Master.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Spy from the Solid Earth Kingdom.]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 43]

[HP: 600/600]

[MP: 760/760]

[STR: 51]

[AGL: 56]

[VIT: 60]

[STM: 51]

[INT: 76]

[DEF: 50]

...

And the man was correct.

With just one look, Nux's eyes learned everything about the man, the deepest secret that he has been hiding for so many years, was right before Nux's eyes.

The Grand Master Stage Cultivator, Nixon's instincts were warning him to run away from here, however, with so many powerful people here, running away would do nothing but draw more attention and suspicion.

“What are you talking about?”

Astaria narrowed her eyes and questioned.

Nux's smile widened, then, he started walking towards Nixon.

Nixon looked around, trying to understand why Nux was coming here, he even turned behind, as if trying to confirm whether Nux was looking at him or not, since it wasn't clear from just that, he tried moving to the right and left, however, no matter how hard he tried to deny it, Nux was definitely looking at him.

Feeling his stare, Nixon's heartbeat quickened, however, soon, he took a deep breath,

‘I am overthinking, this is my first time seeing this man, there is no need to panic, be calm, Nixon, be calm. He is not coming here for me, this is all just

a misunderstanding. It is obvious he would look at the man who started moving around like an idiot in the middle of the crowd, yes, that must be it.'

Nixon tried to console himself,

However, false hope can only last for a certain while,

\*Step\*

Under everyone's eyes, Nux stopped right in front of Nixon, everyone else moved away, leaving only Nux and Nixon in the middle, Nixon tried to mix in with the crowd and move away as well, however,

“Are you Nixon Halt?”

Nux questioned.

Hearing this question, Nixon's eyes widened in surprise.

‘How did he know!?’

He wondered inwardly, however, he soon controlled his expressions and chuckled,

“I think you have the wrong person, my name is Riley Zane.”

Nux tilted his head in confusion and questioned again,

“Are you really not Nixon Halt?”

“N-No, I have n-never even heard that name before.”

Nixon stuttered a little, Nixon was his real name, however, currently, he was using the name Riley Zane as his alias.

This man shouldn't possibly know his real name.

Just how is this possible!?

Nixon was panicking inwardly and suddenly, he noticed a demon-like smile appear on Nux's face,

“Lady Astaria, please investigate this man. From his birth till this day, every single thing this man has ever done, investigate every little thing and reconfirm everything twice, also, please thoroughly search the room allotted to this man as well.”

Nixon's heart skipped a beat.

This man knows.

There was no point in trying to deny it anymore.

A cold look appeared on Nixon's face,

“Sir Nux, I know you are our future Queen's husband, but I don't think you hold the power to hold an investigation against me and dishonor my privacy, without any explanation no less.”

The others narrowed their eyes as well.

This man has just appeared in front of them and he is already trying to push them down.

How dare he?

Nux, however, didn't care about what anyone was thinking and shrugged,

“I do not hold any authority to do anything, I am just a husband, not the King, the one who holds all the authority is my wife and my future wi- I mean, Lady Astaria.”

Astaria's mouth twitched when she heard what Nux said and she clenched her fists in annoyance.

This was too shameless, she will deal with him later,

However, currently, this matter was more important,

“You want to use my identity to investigate this man?”

Astaria narrowed her eyes and she glanced at Nux.

“Indeed,”

“You know the consequences of doing this, correct?”

“Of course, my image of the perfect man I have managed to create in your mind will be ruined, I can’t take that risk yet, I have to do my best to impress you after all.

I will not say anything that would reduce my chances.”

Nux answered with a serious look on his face.

Others only thought that he was trying to impress Lady Astaria because he was going to be the part of Skyfall Family soon, and anyone with Astaria’s favor would have an easy time,

Astaria, however, understood his real meaning and clenched her fists even more.

She would definitely deal with this man later today.

“Alright, Keeve, do what he said.”

Astaria ordered.

“As you command, Lady Astaria.”

Keeve bowed his head.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Everyone turned silent for a while.

A Frown then appeared on Nux's face as he glanced at Keeve,

“What the hell are you doing?”

“Huh?” Keeve frowned.

“Get moving already, we don't have all day.”

“Huh?”

“The information, bring it, I don't have all day, I have things to prove here.”

“I-It is not that simple, I need to start the investigation, verify, compile, and only then would the complete information would be reported,” Keeve replied.

Nux scratched his head and questioned,

“How much time will it take?”

“I need a week at the very least.”

“Nux scrunched his nose, he then glanced at Amaya,

Amaya understood what he wanted and sighed,

“Give me half day. I will do it.”

A satisfactory smile appeared on Nux's face,

“As I expected. You are the best.”

A small smile appeared on Amaya's face that subconsciously attracted many men's attention.

Nux's eyes turned cold for a moment, however, he decided to ignore it for now and turned toward Astaria,

“You will have all the proves you need within a few hours, let’s start with the room investigation first, I am sure we will find something interesting.”

“Y-You can’t invade my privacy!

Y-You can’t do it!”

# Chapter 515

“You will have all the proves you need within a few hours, let’s start with the room investigation first, I am sure we will find something interesting.”

“Y-You can’t invade my privacy!”

Y-You can’t do it!”

Nixon shouted out loud.

“Keeve, go and look into his room,”

“As you command, Lady Astaria.”

Keeve nodded, this time, he didn’t repeat his mistake and turned around.

“Wait.”

Suddenly, Nux called out.

“What is it now?” Keeve questioned in a slightly annoyed tone.

Nux looked at Thyra, the woman nodded,

“Let her go with you,” Nux spoke.

Keeve looked at Lane for a while, then he turned back to Nux and nodded.

Lane and Keeve then walked away.

“Doesn’t that man work in Security Division?”

“Mhm, he does, I am sure I have seen him many times, however, I am not that close to him, but Leigh, aren’t you and him friends, I have seen you two talking to each other quite often.”

“Indeed, I know him for many years now, I don’t know what this man wants to do, however, this is definitely unsettling to see someone random being allowed to investigate us all like we are some disposable tools.

Was our years of hard work and dedication to the Kingdom amount to nothing?”

The man named Leigh was not happy.

“It is unsettling indeed, however, that woman seems to favor that boy.”

“Who is that woman anyway?”

“Oi, lower your voice, don’t you see how all King Stage Cultivators and most of the Expert Stage Cultivators are still bowing their heads, none of them are saying anything since she has arrived. They didn’t act like this even in front of the King, but they are doing it in front of that woman.

It is not respect, it is sheer fear at this point.

That woman is not normal.

Even General Phorus is addressing her as Lady Astaria.”

“Yes, and did you see how she just made him turn silent with just a look, I even noticed that he was trembling.”

“To make General Phorus tremble... I can only imagine how fearsome this woman is...”

“Indeed...”

The discussions started.

“Also, I don’t think that man is saying random things...”

Suddenly, someone spoke.

“What do you mean?”

Leigh, Nixon's friend narrowed his eyes.

“Think about it, that man just randomly selected Riley out of so many of us, if it was you and your room was being searched, how would you react?”

“I would be angry of course! How can they invade my Privacy on basis of some random man's words!?” Leigh retorted.

“Indeed, I would think the same, but would you have dared to raise your voice when that woman is here and even the King Stage Cultivators are silent?”

The man questioned and suddenly, Leigh turned silent.

“ ... ”

“See? There is no way you would raise your voice in front of a fearsome woman like her and so many King Stage Cultivators just because of your privacy, or would you?”

“ ... ”

“Riley's reaction is strange, I think that man knows something. I am actually looking forward to what would happen in the next few minutes.”

Leigh didn't know what to say, he understood what that man wanted to say, but Riley was someone he was close to.

Won't he be implicated if Riley turns out to be guilty?

Suddenly, Leigh noticed everyone turning their heads in a certain direction, he followed everyone's gaze and saw Keeve and that woman had returned.

‘Hmm? They are back already?’

He then noticed Lord Keeve had a strange on his face, the woman who had gone with him, on the other hand, had an expressionless look on her face. Suddenly, a small, beautiful smile appeared on her face and she increased her pace.

She then walked towards that man and soon, a few papers appeared in her hands.

The man smiled, Leigh noticed that as soon as those papers appeared, Riley's face changed.

A determined look then appeared on Riley's face, however, before he could do anything, that golden-eyed man suddenly grabbed him by his throat.

Leigh's eyes widened in surprise,

How could he just attack a man working for the Royal Palace like that!?

He wondered inwardly.

Soon, however, he noticed that Riley coughed up a Black Colored Pill.

“Ugghhh!!”

Riley struggled, however, in front of Nux, he was helpless.

Nux smiled, then he increased his strength, and soon, the man passed out.

Nux threw his body away like he was trash, he then picked up the Black Colored Pill that the man had coughed out, and turned towards Astaria,

“I don't need to give you any more proves, do I?”

Astaria raised her hand, Nux understood what she wanted and threw the Pill at her,

Astaria caught the pill and observed it carefully.

“Poison.”

She commented.

“A very serious one at that.”

Nux commented.

“Do you know what that pill is?” Astaria questioned with a slightly surprised look on her face.

“Of course not.

I just thought that if a Spy is using that, then it must be of good quality or something.”

Nux shrugged.

Astaria’s mouth twitched.

“Anyways, so as I was saying, you don’t need any proves, do you?”

Nux questioned again.

“Indeed.” Astaria nodded.

“I will give you all the details once Amaya is done with her expectation, don’t worry, it won’t take long.”

Nux smiled.

Keeve lowered his head, he then glanced at Nux and snorted,

‘That bastard, he is flexing on basis of Lady Amaya’s skills. Tsk.’

Astaria glanced at Nux for a while and then nodded.

“Alright.”

“Right, you would also want some information from this guy’s mouth, don’t you?”

“Of course I do, that man will be an important resource.”

Astaria nodded,

“Yes, you don’t have to worry about that, if anything, I am confident in extracting information.”

Nux glanced at Keeve for a while, then, he turned back towards Astaria and continued,

“So as I was saying, give this guy to me, and I will make sure you will know everything you want.

Trust me, I have the best experts in this field.”

Nux smiled as he looked at Ember and Thyra.

The two women smiled and seeing those smiles, many men felt a chill running through their spines.

# Chapter 516

“So as I was saying, give this guy to me, I will make sure you will know everything you want.

Trust me, I have the best experts in this field.”

Nux smiled as he looked at Ember and Thyra.

The two women smiled and seeing those smiles, many men felt a chill running through their spines.

“...”

Astaria glanced at Nux for a while and didn't say anything.

“Wait.”

Suddenly, Evane spoke.

“What is it?” Astaria questioned with a frown on her face.

“I have a better option.”

“Oh?”

A curious look appeared on Astaria's face. This was the first time he saw Evane taking the lead,

“What is it?”

She questioned, at the same time, she observed Nux's expression, however, he just stood there with a proud smile on his face, he then stepped back, giving Evane the space to walk ahead of him.

“Leave the matter of the spies to us.

Give me the full authority to deal with them, investigate them, and extract information from them, I will not disappoint you.”

Evane requested.

“You, as the Queen of the Kingdom have to request for the authority to deal with spies?” Astaria narrowed her eyes.

Evane, however, wasn’t intimidated, a determined look appeared on her face and she replied,

“This is not about spies.”

“Hmm? What do you mean?” Astaria narrowed her eyes.

“I’ll not only deal with the spies, I will also deal with their connections, the nobles backing them up, from Barons to Dukes, I will leave no one. I am planning to clean the entire Kingdom and for that,

I need permission from the Kingdom’s Protector, the strongest person in the world.”

Astaria glanced at Evane and then questioned,

“Will there be a need for me to interfere?”

“Of course not. You just need to give me the Authority. I will deal with everything else on my own.”

A satisfied smile appeared on Astaria’s face,

“Alright, I will give you the full authority to investigate anyone you want, arrest anyone you want, and use the Kingdom’s forces as you want, I also give you the authority to use force against anyone who tries to resist your orders.

Become a Tyrant.

A Tyrant who will be a nightmare for all those who are even thinking of going against the Kingdom.

I give you the authority to use the name, Astaria Skyfall, anywhere you want,”

Astaria announced.

General Phorus, Keeve, Iria, Keeve, Reeve, and the other 2 King Stage Cultivators of the Shadow Unit widened their eyes in disbelief when they heard what she said.

T-That was practically telling her to do anything she wanted!

Evane now had the power all the power she could ever want.

She had gained power that Ricardus never had in his entire ruling period.

And she wasn't even the Queen yet.

“However,”

Astaria wasn't done yet.

“If the results aren't on par with my expectations...”

“I will accept any punishment you want, even execution,” Evane replied.

“...”

The entire place turned silent.

“Heh.”

A small smile appeared on Astaria's face,

“I am looking forward to seeing the results, Girl.

Don't let my excitement go down in vain.”

“I will not.”

Evane smiled, she then turned towards Nux and the others and nodded,

Once the signal was received, Nux and his women moved, the 9 of them appeared in front of 9 people and before anyone could react, they knocked them unconscious.

“W-What happ-”

Before the people around could even react, Nux and Ember moved again and knocked two more men.

“W-What just happened?”

Only after 11 Bodies were lying unconscious on the ground did the others manage to react.

Nux and his women, however, completely ignored others, Nux grabbed the hair of the man he had attacked and smashed his head into the ground.

Nothing happened so Nux did it again, then again, and only after smashing the poor man’s face 3-4 times did a black-colored pill come out of his mouth.

He then turned around and noticed everyone except Lane, Allura, Felberta, and Amaya, were doing the same thing he did,

Skyla looked like she was enjoying herself, so the others allowed her to smash the heads of people they knocked out as well.

A smile appeared on Nux’s face as he noticed how cute Skyla looked, in the end, he stepped back as well and gave the second man he attacked to her.

Skyla cutely smashed his head into the ground as well.

‘How cute~’

Nux thought inwardly.

His thought, however, wasn't shared by the others.

“T-They are all d-demons!”

Someone in the crowd spoke.

The others agreed.

Nux and his women then stood up, on the ground, those 9 people were lying down, each of them had a disfigured face and a black colored pill in front of their faces,

They were all spies.

Seeing this, a smile appeared on Evane's face, she then turned towards Astaria and,

“I will definitely not disappoint you.”

“...”

Astaria didn't know what to say...

Just how in the world were they finding all these spies?

And to think that there were 12 spies in just this many people, how is that even possible? How were so many spies planted so in the Royal Palace?

Just how badly did that fool rule for the Royal Palace to be in a condition so bad?

However, no matter what, Astaria still couldn't act surprised,

A 'satisfied' smile appeared on her face and she nodded,

“Alright, I will leave everything to you then, Queen Evane.”

She then turned towards Nux and her eyes turned cold.

“We need to talk.”

“Anytime,” Nux nodded with a smile.

“In my room, after you are done with all this,” Then Astaria glanced at his wives and continued,

“Bring them as well.”

“Alright.” Nux nodded.

Astaria then disappeared.

And once she did, as if thousands of chains binding them suddenly disappeared, all the King Stage Cultivators of the Kingdom expect Keeve, and Reeve sighed in relief.

“Keeve.”

Suddenly, Evane called.

“Y-Yes, Lady Evane.”

“Seal off the entire Royal Palace by today, make sure no one leaves.”

“As you command, Lady Evane.”

Evane then looked at others and ordered,

“And you all, whatever happened here should not be disclosed,

Trust me, I have the ability to find out who opened his or her mouth.”

A threat.

“Our mouths are shut, Queen Evane.”

Surprisingly, General Phorus was the one who replied.

Evane nodded, she then turned towards Keeve and ordered,

“Make an announcement in the entire Kingdom.

All the spies living staying in the Skyfall Kingdom have 7 days to leave,

After that, a purge will start.”

A direct challenge.

# Chapter 517

“Make an announcement in the entire Kingdom.

All the spies living staying in the Skyfall Kingdom have 7 days to leave,

After that, a purge will start.”

A direct challenge.

The spies, who pride themselves to be able to hide and get away with anything, were now directly challenged by the Queen.

Her message was clear,

Abandon your pride and run away, if you do not, none of you will be spared.

Those words were arrogant, however, seeing what Evane and... these people captured all the spies amongst them, capturing and killing all the spies in the entire Kingdom wasn't that difficult either.

To be honest, most of the people here felt that this 7 days' time period is Queen Evane being merciful to the spies.

Of course, whether they take this as a mercy and use this opportunity or whether they take this as a challenge and go against her orders, this depends on those spies.

“As you command, Lady Evane.” Keeve nodded.

He won't lie, even he was getting a little excited to see the future of the Skyfall Kingdom.

“Also, summon the entire Shadow Unit here,”

“Huh?”

Evane ordered and suddenly, a frown appeared on Keeve’s face.

“Why?”

Reeve couldn’t hold himself back and question.

“The Shadow Unit is the Kingdom’s pride, the Unit that is filled with Elites of Elites, the Unit that is responsible for the ruler’s protection. Since it will be serving me in the future, I need to know the strength of my subordinates in order to use them properly.”

Evane answered.

“Lady Evane, I apologize if it sounds rude, however, Shadow Unit does not ‘serve’ the ruler, we are only responsible for the protection of the ruler. Of course, we would be happy to assist you if you request anything from us, however, even the ruler does not have the authority to ‘see’ every member of the Shadow Unit.”

Reeve replied as respectfully as possible. He didn’t wish to offend or disrespect Evane, however, what Evane requested couldn’t be done either.

“I think you forgot something.” Evane, however, didn’t back down and a smile appeared on her face,

“Or are you saying that the Shadow Unit’s secrecy is even higher than Lady Astaris’s status?”

“...The Shadow Unit will report you within an hour.”

Reeve couldn’t do anything but step back.

“Good,” Evane spoke.

“Alright, now prepare for the lockdown.”

“As you command, Lady Evane.”

“You all are dismissed.”

Evane ordered and everyone turned away.

Nux, Evane, and the others had left a huge impact on their minds, they needed some time to digest everything.

They can't spit it out in front of others, after all.

...

“Hahaha~ As expected from Queen Evane~

Just look at that elegance, that aura, damn, now wasn't that perfect?”

Nux clapped as he walked towards Evane and hugged her from behind.

As soon as she was hugged, Evane's serious and cold face crumbled in an instant, and an embarrassed look appeared on her face.

“Y-You don't have to tease me like this...”

She stuttered as her face turned red.

There was no trace of the previous, Queen-like authoritative aura around her,

It was as if Queen Evane and Evane now were two completely different people.

“Hmm? Why would I tease you? I am praising you. You were so amazing there.

I fell in love with you all over again~

Fufufu~ Queen Evane, so beautiful, so amazing.”

Nux spoke as he started moving his finger around Evane's belly button.

A small smile appeared on Evane's red face, it was a sight worth painting. It was just that beautiful.

Nux then kissed Evane's cheeks and whispered,

“Keep doing your best like this, Queen Evane.”

“mm.”

Evane nodded.

“Tsk Tsk, how long do you plan to hug her like this?”

Allura snorted in dissatisfaction.

“Heh, how jealous. It just shows your insecurity.” Thyra didn't miss the opportunity and shot.

“Says the one who is clenching her fist, barely holding herself back.” Allura snickered.

Thyra lowered her head and her expression changed, soon, however, she turned towards Allura and retorted,

“At least I am holding myself back!”

“What is so good about that!?” Allura retorted as well.

The war between the two was just about to start, but suddenly, Amaya questioned.

“Are we going to meet Lady Astaria now?”

“Oh? She left you alone?” Nux questioned with a teasing look on his face.

An annoyed expression appeared on Amaya's face,

“I wish... she only let me go because I told her I was about to meet Lady Astaria.”

She answered.

“Hahaha~”

Nux laughed out loud.

“She is annoying.”

Amaya complained.

A genuine smile appeared on Nux’s face as he replied,

“But she loves you with all her heart.”

Although still annoyed, Amaya’s cold expression melted a little,

“She practically sold herself just so she could talk to you, her love is selfless, treasure it.”

“She is still annoying.”

Amaya snorted.

Nux shook his head and sighed,

He couldn’t believe his Amaya was such a tsundere when it came to her mother.

‘Haah...’

Nux sighed inwardly.

‘At least try to hide that small and warm smile on your face before complaining about how annoying your mother is...’

Seeing Amaya acting like that, the other women smiled as well.

“Alright, let’s not make Lady Astaria wait for long.”

Suddenly, Ember spoke.

“Indeed, we should not let her wait, let’s go.”

Nux nodded and quickly turned around, ready to go.

His women stared at him with blank looks on their faces.

“At least try to hide that you are happy...”

Thyra complained.

“I am with my lovely wives, of course, I would be happy.”

Nux turned towards Thyra and replied with a big smile.

“Shameless bastard.”

Skyla snorted.

“S-S-Skyla?” A shocked look appeared on Nux’s face.

“Sister Felberta taught me that.”

Skyla quickly deflected the blame.

“Huh? W-What? When?” The innocent Felberta didn’t even know why she was blamed.

“Fel, don’t teach my cute Skyla all these things.” Nux also played along.

“What did I do!?” Felberta felt that she was wronged.

“Don’t act ignorant, it is always better to realize and understand your mistakes, only once you have that capability would you grow further.” Nux shook his head and acted like a teacher.

“My sizes are perfect already, I don’t think I want to grow any further.” Felberta smiled sensually.

“That, I can’t disagree with.”

A perverted smile appeared on Nux’s face.

# Chapter 518

\*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“Come in.”

Astaria ordered and Nux walked in with his wives following behind him.

“Ah, are finally free.”

Astaria nodded.

Then, she noticed Nux’s women continuing to walk in her room, only then did she once again recall how ridiculously large this boy’s harem was.

Within just a minute, her entire room was filled.

“ ... ”

She didn’t know what to say.

“So? What do you want to talk about?”

Nux questioned with a smile on his face.

“Are you seriously asking that?” Astaria raised her eyebrow.

“Hmm? Is it something I should have known?” Nux tilted his head in confusion.

In the end, Astaria decided to give up, she directly looked at Nux’s women and questioned.

“What are they?”

“That’s rude. What do you mean ‘what are they?’, they are not some sort of items, one of them is your Granddaughter even.”

Nux retorted.

“That’s not what I am saying, I am asking how the hell did you find these women!? How is every single one of them a King Stage Cultivator? Not only that, some of them even look less than 50 years old, just like you. Where did you find these monsters!?”

Astaria shouted.

She believed that Nux’s talent was ridiculously high!

He was an anomaly!

However, now here he was, bringing all these women, some of them even had a talent similar to his!

He brought a bunch of anomalies!

If she goes by potential, every single one of these women has the potential to be an Emperor.

How absurd is that!?

10 Emperor Stage Cultivators? How is that even possible!?

This man already has the strongest harem in the world, however, he is even trying to build a force so strong that it would make anyone fall on their knees, giving up without even a fight.

This man would break the Balance of this World!

No, actually, let’s leave all of this aside for now,

Astaria then looked at Amaya before questioning,

“I won’t ask about her assassination, which was clearly forged, however, I still need to know one thing, what about her curse? I have seen her with my own eyes, this girl was just a mortal when she arrived here, she was cursed, and couldn’t cultivate,

But now suddenly, she comes out as a King Stage Cultivator, a Stage that most people can only dream about, as if it is nothing.

How is that possible?

What happened to her curse!?”

Astaria wasn't done here though, she was only starting,

“Then there is this girl, a woman who was only a Master Stage Cultivator a year ago, and now again, here she is, standing there, becoming a King Stage Cultivator...

Evane was the same, she was only a Grand Master Stage Cultivator, with her talent, she shouldn't have the ability to become a King Stage Cultivator, but here she is.

Just...

Just what is happening!?

Was becoming a King Stage Cultivator always that easy?”

Suddenly, Astaria narrowed her eyes and glanced at Nux,

“Or maybe I am thinking in the wrong direction...

It is not that these women are talented...

Rather, it is you.

An anomaly far deeper and stranger than I thought.”

Saying that, Astaria started walking toward Nux,

“I had my subordinates look into you, they were having difficulties looking for your information, however, I guess with her being with you, finding something about you is close to impossible.

I didn't have any problem before since your character was likable and Evane truly loved you,

However, as the protector of this Kingdom, Nux, I need to know,"

Astaria then brought her face close to Nux and questioned,

"Who are you?

Or rather, what are you?"

Nux won't lie, with Astaria so close to him, rather than being turned on, he was intimidating.

No matter how beautiful this woman was, the fact that she is capable of ending his life with just a flick of her finger was frightening. This woman was frighteningly strong.

And when she was looking at him with such a doubtful and serious expression, Nux couldn't possibly think about all this stuff.

His heartbeat quickened, he was panicking inwardly, however, soon, he controlled his instincts and tried to calm himself down.

A paper then appeared on his hand and he passed it to Astaria.

Astaria grabbed the paper and started reading it.

Soon, a frown appeared on her face and she looked at Nux, however, before she could say anything, Nux continued,

"An orphan who was abandoned by his parents and was left alone in front of an Orphanage, grew up there, then was adopted by a woman named Cadela, 4 years later, Cadela was killed, then he lived alone, barely making up ends meet and continued to live like that for years.

This was the information your subordinates found out, is it not?"

Nux questioned.

“Yes, that is correct.”

“That information is not wrong, that is indeed my past.”

Nux revealed.

Astaria narrowed her eyes as she glanced at Nux, Nux looked back into her eyes, and Astaria frowned.

She couldn't tell if Nux was lying or not,

“Alright, let's say I believe you. What's next? The information after this day is completely blank, it is as if you suddenly disappeared.

How do you explain that?”

“Well, I only that the information wasn't edited, I never said it was never deleted.”

Nux laughed awkwardly.

Astaria looked at Nux with a deadpan look on her face, suddenly, Nux's danger senses kicked in and he continued,

“Of course, although we deleted some history, it doesn't mean there is no way to know it.

Especially for Lady Astaria, you can directly hear it from the source.

A special service.”

“I am not in the mood for jokes, Nux,” Astaria warned.

“Alright, I understand, let me continue then, a lovely and merciful woman then noticed my situation, and soon, she took me in and supported me.

The woman's name was Felberta Alveye, and while I was living with Felberta,

I realized that I...

Was different than others.”

# Chapter 519

“While I was living with Felberta,  
I realized that I was different than others.”

Nux replied.

Astaria narrowed her eyes,

“What do you mean?”

She questioned.

“While I was having sex with Felberta, I noticed that as soon as I came inside her and she orgasmed as well, a sudden surge of energy moved inside my body.

I was a pure innocent soul back then, so I thought that it was my imagination because of how good it felt, however, the next day, I noticed that my body had gotten stronger than before.

I didn't know what to do, therefore, I decided to ignore it.

I and Fel continued to spend time with each other and I noticed that each time I had sex with her, that energy entered my body and I grew stronger.

Then, Skyla walked into my life, and after some fortunate series of events, I ended up having sex with her as well and this time, the energy that entered my body was far greater than the time I spent with Felberta.

I and Skyla did it a few more times, and soon,

I broke through.”

“Huh?” Astaria frowned.

“Yes, I became a Beginner Stage Cultivator.”

“Y-You broke through after having Sex?” Astaria couldn’t believe how absurd it sounded.

“That is correct.”

Nux nodded and then continued with his story.

Everyone in the room listened to his story with curious and excited looks on their faces, each of them wondering when they will be introduced in the story.

Astaria, on the other hand just couldn’t believe how absurd it all sounded.

However, when she tracked the events she knew about and the events Nux was talking about, the story started becoming more and more believable.

It still sounded ridiculous though.

The story continued, of course, Nux edited some details that he wanted to hide from Astaria, however, it still took a long time for the story to finally end.

“...so you are saying that you grow stronger if you have sex with a woman stronger than you?”

“A woman at a higher cultivation stage than me would be a better way to interpret it.” Nux answered and then continued to explain,

“I call this process Dual Cultivation where I can rise my cultivation to the stage of the woman I am having sex with.”

“And this Dual Cultivation of yours also works in an opposite way?”

Astaria questioned again.

“It does indeed.”

“So that’s the reason why all your women are King Stage Cultivators, you only needed one King Stage woman and once you become a King Stage Cultivator with her help, you can help your other wives as well.

So the one you helped you become a King Stage Cultivator was this General, correct?”

Astaria pointed at Ember.

“Mhm, it was a wonderful experience. She barged into my room that night, fufufu~ She was so direct and bold, Ahh~ I am blushing.”

Nux placed his hands on his cheeks.

Seeing him acting like that, his women shook their heads and sighed.

That man still had the balls to joke around in front of the strongest cultivator who was currently shaken.

‘Just look at that woman’s face, you dumbass!’

They wanted to shout that out loud when they glanced at Astaria, who had a combination of different expressions on her face.

Nobody knew what she was thinking, however, one could definitely guess from her expression that whatever she was thinking about wasn’t something to be happy about.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

The room turned silent for a while.

Astaria was still thinking about this absurd thing she has heard while the others were observing the changes in her expressions as she continued to think.

Suddenly, Astaria glanced at Nux and questioned,

“So you are telling me that if you have sex with 1000 women, you could produce 1000 King Stage Cultivators?”

“H-Huh?”

Even Nux couldn't believe what he just heard.

A small laugh leaked out of Astaria's mouth,

“Heh. 1000 King Stage Cultivators, if the Skyfall Kingdom had so many King Stage Cultivators, its position as the Strongest Kingdom wouldn't be affected no matter how worse of a person is throned as the next King.”

“Tsk, that's stupid. Having 11 Emperor Stage Cultivators would be much more efficient and faster.”

Nux was quick to take his shot.

“ ... ”

Astaria frowned, soon, however, she realized what this man was talking about and her face twitched again.

“I can't believe you can say that in front of all your wives.”

“A man should go for it whenever he gets the chance, who knows? He might get lucky and a particular shot works out.” Nux gave out his wisdom.

Astaria shook her head and sighed,

This man really was shameless.

“Why didn't you do it?”

Suddenly, Astaria questioned.

“Do what?”

Nux questioned back.

“Why didn’t you go for 1000 women? If you had their support, you could have ruled over this whole Empire.”

“Heh, do you think I am a fool, you can easily take on 1000 King Stage Cultivators.”

Nux shrugged.

“Maybe I can, maybe I cannot, then what about more? If not 1000, then maybe 10,000? Even if I would eventually run out of Mana, no matter how strong I am, I can’t possibly defeat 10,000 King Stage Cultivators alone.”

Astaria answered.

“I told you already, didn’t I? I don’t want to rule this country, and I don’t treat women like tools to achieve what I want.

Also, do you think it is possible to find 10,000 women as awesome as my wives?

If yes, then think again!

Every one of my wives is one in a million Gem, there is no way any random woman can even compete with them!”

Nux spoke with pride brimming through his eyes.

Hearing his words, a smile appeared on his wives’ faces.

Astaria, who heard his answer couldn’t believe what this man just said.

“You are a fool.”

She commented.

She felt like Nux didn’t use his gift properly, if it was anyone else besides him, he would have definitely done things more efficiently.

There were so many ways for him to rule this world when he had a power like that.

Astaria shook her head,

Soon, however, a small smile appeared on her face,

“You are a fool indeed.”

She muttered inwardly.

# Chapter 520

Soon, however, a small smile appeared on Astaria's face,

“You are a fool indeed.”

She muttered inwardly.

Seeing her acting like that, a teasing smile appeared on Nux's face and he questioned,

“Oh? What's with that beautiful smile? Did I manage to touch your heart? Are you finally ready to marry me?”

“Who is willing to marry you!? Touched my heart, my foot! Also, you are trying to court your wife's grandmother, don't you feel awkward at all?”

Astaria shot back.

Hearing those words, Evane's face turned red.

Seeing Nux flirting with her grandmother was indeed awkward.

Nux glanced at Evane and realized that he may have gone a little too far, he should stop doing this in front of Evane...

‘Fuck, this is a little awkward now...’

Is this what they call Oyakodon?

No, I am going a level even further than that...

Damn, to think I would go for Oyakodon Plus without even trying Oyakodon first, I am a genius indeed.’

Nux nodded to himself.

Then he glanced at Astaria and continued,

“Tsk, next time I will meet you alone,”

“H-Huh?”

Astaria didn't know what to say.

“Also, I think I told you this before, don't call yourself a ‘Grandma’, sheesh, just look at yourself before saying things like that.

To be honest, you are the first woman who likes to scream ‘I am an Old Woman!’ out loud, and here I thought women like to stay and act young.

Guess that is not the case for all, huh...

Hmmm, preferring to be seen as an aged woman by others... a strange quirk indeed...

Of course, I won't judge, I will accept you as you are.”

Nux continued to nod his head and spoke with an earnest look on his face.

“I do not prefer to be seen as an aged woman!”

Astaria shot back.

“Heeh, that doesn't seem to be the case...” Nux spoke.

Astaria glanced at Nux who was looking at him with a doubtful look on his face, she then turned towards his wife and although they weren't looking at her with the same expressions as Nux's, Astaria still felt like they were judging her.

“I do not have a strange quirk like that!”

Astaria shot back.

Amaya, on the other hand, glanced at Nux and started analyzing.

To make an Emperor Stage Cultivator so flustered with just mere words alone...

Was Nux always this good with words?

Or was it a recent development?

No, now that she thinks about it, Amaya realized that although Nux may not be the brightest card when it comes to strategizing and things like that, when it comes to women, his brain starts working like a genius's brain, always coming up with new and ridiculously perfect ideas.

A strange quirk indeed...

‘Or maybe he is just a pervert.’

Amaya thought of another possibility and seeing him looking at Astaria while enjoying her flustered expression, Amaya solidified her thoughts.

‘A pervert indeed.’

“Alright Alright, let's stop this now, I can't watch the strongest existence in the world flirt with my husband.”

Suddenly, Ember stepped up.

“Which part of all this looks like I am the one flirting with him to you!?”

Astaria shot back.

Ember, however, just shrugged her shoulders, and then, a serious look appeared on her face,

“I think we are gathered here to discuss an issue more important than this.”

Hearing the words, the air in the room changed and a serious look appeared on everyone's face.

“The Solid Earth Kingdom...”

Evane spoke in a solemn tone.

Nux turned towards Astaria and spoke,

“I have already informed them about all this.”

“Oh? Then what do they suggest?” Astaria questioned back.

“Cooperation.” This time, Amaya was the one who answered.

Astaria turned towards Amaya and titled her question in confusion.

“Cooperation?”

“Yes, if things involve Emperors and even that Mythical Creature, then the stakes are too high, we can’t deal with this alone. We need to cooperate with other Kingdoms and seek their help. Well, more accurately, their Protectors help.”

Amaya explained.

“Then who should we contact? The Skadis?” Astaria questioned.

Amaya, however, shook her head,

“We cannot contact the Skadis. I suspect that they are involved in all this, and they might not be on our side.”

“What do you mean?”

“It is just suspicion, but from what my mother told me, I think Lord Amletus, the protector of the Skadi Kingdom is in cahoots with the Solid Earth Kingdom.”

Amaya replied and suddenly, Astaria narrowed her eyes,

“Mother? As in...”

“Riona Skadi, yes.” Amaya nodded.

“You met your mother?”

“I was in the Skadi Kingdom for the last few days, I just returned yesterday,” Amaya answered.

“And what does your mother has to say about all this?” Astaria questioned in a suspicious tone.

It was clear that she didn't like the fact that Amaya met her mother.

“You can trust Riona, she is not our enemy, rather, you can even treat her as an ally, however, she can't do much to help her since the protector of her Kingdom is thinking something else,” Nux spoke up.

Astaria turned towards Nux and questioned,

“You seem to have a good impression of Riona, wait... Don't tell me...”

Astaria then widened her eyes as he considered another possibility.

Nux raised his hand and stopped her mid-sentence,

“Whatever you are thinking, throw that thought out in the gutter, I am not going after Riona, even though she is an extraordinary woman.”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

All the women turned silent.

Nux, however, acted as if he didn't notice the strange silence and continued,

“Just trust me on this one, Riona is not our enemy, she can even act as our informant, the moment Amletus makes a move, we will get informed. You can think of her as a spy.”

“A Spy...? You aren't really thinking about what would happen if she gets caught, are you?” Astaria questioned.

“She won’t get caught, I am confident. This is not the first time I have planted a King Stage Cultivator as a spy to keep an eye on an Emperor after all.”

“Huh? What do you mean?” Astaria frowned.

“The General of the Solid Earth Kingdom, do you know him?”

“I have heard about him, yes.”

“He is my spy as well.”

Nux revealed nonchalantly.

# Chapter 521

“The General of the Solid Earth Kingdom, do you know him?”

“I have heard about him, yes.”

“He is my spy as well.”

Nux revealed nonchalantly.

“Huh!?”

Astaria widened her eyes in surprise.

“Well, he is not that useful, to be honest, the best he can do is report how much damage has been done to the Woods Dynasty, that Herms isn’t exactly sharing anything with his Generals, he is just treating them as his tools.

The only useful thing he told me so far is that Herms is trying to force the Emperor Stage Cultivator who is protecting the Solid Earth Kingdom to act and defend his Kingdom, once he does, Herms would say that the Woods Dynasty broke the treaty and all the would ask for other Kingdoms’ help in order to destroy the Solid Earth Kingdom.”

Nux explained further, ignoring Astaria’s surprise.

“Forcing him to act...” Astaria narrowed her eyes, soon, however, she shook her head and questioned,

“No no, wait, why is that General even acting as your spy?”

Astaria then narrowed her eyes,

“Are you sure he is not trying to fool you?”

Nux shook his head,

“I am sure, trust me.

He won't dare to fool me.” A threatening smile appeared on Nux's face.

Astaria narrowed her eyes,

“Are you saying that he fears you more than an Emperor?”

“I am.”

Nux smiled.

“Heh, aren't you getting a little too overconfident?”

“You left dealing with spies to us, didn't you? Just wait till we are done with that, you will know what I am talking about.”

Nux just smiled.

“...”

Astaria turned silent.

This boy is acting too mysterious.

She won't lie, it was getting a little annoying now.

Especially that smile on his face which seems to doing one thing and meaning another.

“Anyway, I am not sure if Riona would be able to help us a lot, it depends on how much Amletus would reveal to her, however, having her as an ally is still better than nothing.”

Nux continued with the topic.

“And about the cooperation, we thinking of cooperating with the Woods Dynasty.”

“The Woods Dynasty? They already have their own troubles, how could they possibly help us?” Astaria questioned.

“It is not like we need their help to do anything, we just need their Protector’s help.”

“Hmm, that is true, Alcimus would be helpful in this situation.” Astaria nodded.

“Yes, the Woods are in a desperate situation, we can take advantage of that and use them.”

Amaya nodded.

Astaria looked at Amaya and Amaya understood what she wanted,

“Due to Herms’s plan, the Woods are stuck in a difficult situation where the only thing they could do is to look at how the Solid Earth Kingdom continues to plunder their villages and cities, the people are losing their trust in the Royal Family and some are even mocking them.

If this continues, They wouldn’t be able to hold it any longer.

Even if we tell them that Herms is involved, they wouldn’t be able to do anything since they won’t have any proof.

In a situation this desperate, we would seek their cooperation, we would offer them to get rid of the enemy armies attacking their cities, not only that, we would even offer to capture 1 or 2 Generals alive, they can use those Generals to prove the involvement of Herms, allowing them to use the Treaty.

I am sure that Lord Alcimus would jump on that offer, he would finally be able to have his revenge, after all.”

Amaya explained her plan.

“And how exactly are we going to defeat the Solid Earth Army? Are you planning to use the Skyfall Army?”

Astaria questioned.

“That would be too inefficient, we know how strong the Solid Earth Army is, if the Shadow Unit is not involved, the Skyfall Army would be destroyed. Even if we involve Shadow Unit, there would be casualties,”

“Then what are you planning.”

“Me, Ember, Thyra, and Skyla would go.”

Nux spoke.

“What?”

Astaria narrowed her eyes.

“Only you four? Do you think you can fight against an entire army on your own?”

“Are you worried about me?”

Nux questioned with a teasing smile on his face.

“I am not joking around, Nux.”

Astaria replied.

“Don’t worry, I alone am enough, however, since I don’t want to take unnecessary risks, I will take them with me, trust me, with 4 of us there, the Solid Earth Army doesn’t stand a chance.”

Nux smiled.

“Are you sure?”

“You think I would joke around with my life?”

“ ... ”

“I am not planning to die before I get you, Astaria.” Nux saw a chance and took his shot again.

“ ... ”

Astaria was out of words.

“Why would you go this far? What do you want the Woods to do in return?”

Astaria then changed the topic.

“We want them to enter the Forbidden Region.”

Amaya revealed.

“HAH!?”

Astaria widened her eyes in surprise.

“The Solid Earth Kingdom started acting strange after they sent an army inside the Solid Earth Kingdom, where the Mythical Beast lives. They must have found something there. We need to know what that is.

Of course, there are chances that the Kingdom has already hidden what they found, however, we still need to know the current condition of the Mythical Beasts.

We need to know if it is alive or not.

We suspect that it is dead, and that is the only reason why the Solid Earth Kingdom is acting like they are acting, however, due to how important this information is, we still need to be sure.

Sending our own people inside the Forbidden Region is useless, therefore, we will use the Woods Dynasty for that.”

Amaya explained.

“And you think the Solid Earth Kingdom will agree to this?”

A smile appeared on Amaya’s face,

“They do not have a choice,

They can either send a few people inside the Forbidden Region to investigate what we want them to investigate, where the chances of their people surviving this situation still exist.

Or they continue their pointless struggle against the Solid Earth Army, either sacrificing their soldiers, or Alcimus joining in and putting the whole Kingdom at risk.

What do you think they would choose?”

Astaria observed Amaya’s expression and blinked a few times.

She then glanced at Nux, even without forming a telepathic connection with her, Nux could still read her expression,

‘Just where in the hell did you find this demon?’

# Chapter 522

“What do you think they would choose?”

Astaria observed Amaya’s expression and blinked a few times.

She then glanced at Nux, even without forming a telepathic connection with her, Nux could still read her expression,

‘Just where did you find this demon?’

Seeing this, a proud smile appeared on Nux’s face, he then walked towards Amaya and patted her head,

“See? I told you, didn’t I? All my wives are amazing women.”

“I believe you, your wives are indeed amazing.”

Astaria nodded.

“So? Do you wish to joi-” Nux was about to shoot his shot again, but this time, Astaria had already read him.

“No.”

“Y-You could have at least let me complete my sentence...”

“...” Astaria stared at Nux with a blank look on his face.

“Do you really wish to fight the Solid Earth Army with just you 4 alone? Don’t forget, it may only look like they have 3 Generals in their ranks, but in truth, Herms has used his influence to recruit more King Stage Cultivators in his army.

In truth, they have 7 King Stage Cultivators in their rank. Even if 1 one of them is somehow your subordinate, it would still be a 5v6 battle, not to

mention more than 20,000 soldiers behind those 6 King Stage Cultivators.”

Astaria spoke.

“Don’t worry, I can deal with them.”

Nux assured again.

“You seem quite confident in your ability.”

Astaria commented.

“Well, I am strong after all,” Nux spoke as if it was a fact.

“Are you sure it is not overconfidence?” Astaria narrowed her eyes.

A smile appeared on Nux’s face and he replied,

“My belief in my ability is strong, people often misjudge it as overconfidence, but I can assure you, it is not.

I do not do anything I am not sure about.”

Nux smiled.

Astaria however, was still not sure, she knew Nux was strong, stronger than all the King Stage Cultivators she has ever seen, however, in the end, he was still too young.

After gaining that much strength at a young age, it is normal for him to get arrogant.

However, a war is not something one can look down upon.

It is not just a matter of defeating the opponent in front of you, you also have to think about others who might try to attack you from behind, there are chances that you will be surrounded by enemies, there will be a time when you will even run out of Mana, not to mention the allies, you have to look after and support your allies as well.

All in all, participating in a war is not an easy task.

Especially for someone like Nux.

Therefore, after careful consideration, a plan formed in Astaria's mind.

“Alright, I will allow you to go to the Woods Dynasty, however, I have a condition.”

“What is it?”

“Pass my test.”

“Huh? A test?”

“Yes. You say you are stronger than a normal King Stage Cultivator, correct?” Astaria questioned.

“I am.” Nux nodded.

“I need to see how strong you are with my own eyes, therefore, you need to give a test. If your performance is satisfactory, I will allow you to go to the Woods Dynasty, however, if I find your performance lacking, you will listen to what I say and will take more people with you.”

Astaria proposed.

“Alright, I will accept your deal.”

A playful smile then appeared on Nux's face as he continued,

“This will also allow me to show off my skills in front of you.

Fufufu~ look forward to being impressed.”

“Heh, we will see about that.”

Astaria laughed as well.

“Alright, 1 month, the test will be held 30 days later, before that, you can help your wife to deal with the spies.”

“Huh? 30 days is too long, we don’t have that much time, hold the test 3 days later,” Nux replied.

“3 days?” Astaria frowned.

“Yeah, the thing with the Spies won’t take much time anyway. 3 days are more than enough.”

“...”

Astaria didn’t know what to say.

Three days he says...

If dealing with all the spies inside the Kingdom was that easy, the Royal Family wouldn’t have been troubled by this for so long.

Even if he has Amaya, the Leader of the Thousand Information Chamber with her, dealing with all the spies in 3 days is...

Simply impossible.

‘Oh well, it is not like the test will take much time. I am sure he can take some time out.’

Astaria thought inwardly and nodded.

“Alright then, 3 days it is.”

A big smile then appeared on Astaria’s face,

“Be prepared, boy.”

“Heh, be prepared to be surprised as well.”

Nux smiled back.

The two of them looked into each other's eyes for well, and then, Evane stepped in.

“Nux, we should go, it has been an hour, Kelton must be waiting with the Shadow Unit.”

Nux turned towards Evane and nodded,

“Heh, to think I would finally meet the famed Shadow Unit.”

“Even I am looking forward to seeing the Skyfall Kingdom's trump cards.” Ember smiled.

Although Amaya didn't say anything, from her bright expression, Nux was sure that even she was looking forward to it.

Thyra was the same, others, however, didn't seem to be too excited.

They were rather neutral.

Nux smiled, he then turned towards Astaria and bowed his head,

“Then we will be taking our leave, Lady Astaria~”

“I wish you luck.” Astaria smiled back.

Nux and his wives then turned around and left the room.

Once the room was empty, Astaria sighed,

“Monster...”

She muttered to herself.

“Ability to increase his cultivation by having sex, huh...

Absurd indeed.”

’11 Emperor Stage Cultivators is much more efficient.’

Suddenly, Nux's words rang inside Astaria's mind and she clenched her fists.

“Shameless bastard. I need to teach him a lesson. He needs to learn how to respect his elders.”

Arvina spoke and suddenly,

‘Preferring to be seen as an aged woman by others...’

Nux's words rang into her mind again.

“Ugghhh! He is annoying.”

Astaria narrowed her eyes.

# Chapter 523

“So Lady Astaria has allowed that little girl to do whatever she wants, huh.”

A man wearing black colored clothes spoke.

“I don’t understand what Lady Astaria is thinking, does she truly believe that the little girl or that husband of hers would be able to find all the spies in the Palace?”

Another person, wearing the same, skintight black colored clothes spoke.

“Well, I have seen how they captured those 12 spies, it seems that those people do have some skills to back up their claims.”

“Don’t fall for obvious traps. I am sure what they did was preplanned. Those so-called spies must be their accomplices.”

“I think so as well. Just think about this, is it really possible to tell apart a spy from a normal person just from one glance? Of course not.

We need to investigate everything properly, even tail the suspect if required, only after days of investigation can one make sure if the suspect is actually a spy or not. It is a complicated process that should not have been left on children’s hands.”

“Haah, Lady Astaria should have given the authority to investigate those pesky nobles to us, if we had that chance, I am sure we could have cleaned the entire Palace within a few months.”

“Indeed.”

“Hmph, now all the authority has been given to that little girl who knows nothing other than fooling others.”

“I think the Skyfall Kingdom is doomed, first, Ricardus, that bastard became the King, and now this little girl who has not even seen the world is going to rule...”

“Alright, I have heard enough.

Stay silent.”

Suddenly, Reeve spoke.

Hearing his words, the other members of the Shadow Unit turned silent.

“I know most of you are not satisfied because Queen Evane summoned you like this, however, you have to know, no matter what, she was someone who was chosen by Lady Astaria and this time, Lady Astaria did not do it out of compulsion.

This time, she actually looks satisfied with the new ruler.

I am sure Lady Astaria saw something before choosing Queen Evane.

I advise you to respect her judgment and give Queen Evane a chance. We do not act on emotions, we only act on proof.

So wait for the proof before coming to any conclusion.”

“We respect Lady Astaria’s decision, that is why we are here in the first place, however, if you are asking me to respect that little girl from the bottom of my heart, then I am sorry, I just ca-”

A King Stage Cultivator was about to reply, however, before he could complete his sentence,

\*Creek\*

The doors of the Royal Hall opened and Nux and his wives walked in, this time, however, the one who was walking in front of Evane.

“Queen Evane.”

Seeing her, Reeve and Keeve bowed their heads and greeted her.

Evane nodded, then she glanced at other members of the Shadow Unit and noticed that many of them had dissatisfied expressions on their faces.

Evane quickly understood what was going through their mind, a cold look appeared on her face as she started walking towards the Throne.

She climbed the 3 stairs and then, she sat on the throne.

Evane placed her right leg over her left, Nux and his other wives stood behind her, after observing the 100 members of the Shadow Unit in front of her, Evane turned towards Keeve and questioned,

“Are these all the members?”

“Yes, that is correct.”

“I will ask again, none of them is missing, right? Anyone on a mission or something, you need to inform me if that is the case.”

“No, Queen Evane, these are all 100 members of the Shadow Unit.”

Keeve replied.

Evane nodded her head, then she glanced at the Shadow Unit again and soon, she heard Nux’s voice,

‘None of them are spies.’

“Six King Stage Cultivators, 24 Expert Stage Cultivators, 30 Grand Masters, and 40 Masters, that is a strong lineup.”

Evane commented. She then turned towards Evane and questioned,

“I presume that the lockdown is already established?”

“Without a hitch, Queen Evane.”

Keeve nodded.

“Alright, then let’s stop wasting any more time, where are those 12 spies?”  
Evane questioned.

“They are locked in the basement, all of them are still unconscious,” Keeve reported.

Evane glanced at Nux.

Nux looked at Keeve and spoke, “Take me there.”

Keeve nodded, he raised his hands and one member of Shadow Unit stepped forward,

“He will take you there,” Keeve replied.

Nux nodded, he then looked at the member who had stepped up and ordered,

“Take the lead.”

The member nodded and started walking.

Nux and Ember followed behind him.

Soon, the three of them left.

“Alright, the two of them will get us new leads.

Now Keeve,”

“Yes, Queen Evane,” Keeve questioned.

“Do you have any suspicions in your mind?”

The question wasn’t clear, however, Keeve understood what Evane wanted to know,

“I am not sure, Queen Evane.”

“That doesn’t matter, even if it is only slightest of the suspicion, just say the name. Also, I am sure you already know this, but their status doesn’t matter either, so you don’t have to hold back.”

Evane then turned towards the other members of Shadow Unit and announced,

“The same goes for you all, if you are suspicious of anyone, just say the name. Leave the investigation to me.”

“Heehh? Does the mighty Queen Evane require our help?”

One of the King Stage Cultivators stepped forward and questioned in a teasing voice.

A frown appeared on Keeve and Reeve’s faces when they heard what the man said, they wanted to step up and stop him, however, Evane was a step ahead.

“If I have to do everything on my own, then what’s the use of feeding you people?”

“What did you say?” The man narrowed his eyes.

“Do you have a hearing problem?”

Do not forget, even if you are King Stage Cultivator, in the end, even if you grew up in the Royal Palace, all the Skills you use, even the Cultivation technique you cultivate, everything was provided by the Kingdom and I am the Queen of this Kingdom.

You are my subordinate who has to do what I order without any other choice.

Keep that in your mind and,

Know your limits.

Don't try to bite more than you can chew."

# Chapter 524

“Don’t try to bite more than you can chew.”

Evane spoke in a cold, emotionless tone.

“Y-Y-You, how dare you!? Don’t bite more than I can chew? Trust me, little girl, I can definitely bite what I am chewing right now.

Everything I have was provided by the Kingdom, not you!

You are not even the Queen yet!

Don’t try to order me arou-”

“That is where you are wrong,

Right now, I am the Kingdom.

Under the name of Astaria Skyfall, I have the authority to do whatever I want and order any subject of the Kingdom I want.

And that includes you.”

Evane didn’t allow the man to speak any further and interrupted him.

The man’s face was currently red in anger, he was about to reply, but, before he could, another man stepped forward and interrupted.

“Queen Evane, I apologize for my friend’s behavior, after completing so many missions for the Kingdom and living in the wild for most of his life, he is a little aggressive.

I hope the Queen will be the bigger person here and forgive him.

Of course, I will make sure that this is not repeated again, I take full responsibility.”

Evane glanced at the man who stepped up and her green eyes shined,

[Name: Wysten Karrey.]

[Age: 237]

[Mana Cultivation: King.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human]

[Occupation: One of the Leaders of the Shadow Unit.]

[Talent: High]

[LVL: 69]

[HP: 840/840]

[MP: 1550/1550]

[STR: 80]

[AGL: 87]

[VIT: 84]

[STM: 79]

[INT: 155]

[DEF: 81]

...

Evane raised her eyebrow when the man's information appeared in front of her.

She had to admit, he was the strongest King Stage Cultivator she has ever seen, after Nux of course.

A level 69, only one step away from the Emperor Stage, however, Evane knew it well, this man will not make it.

He was already 237 years old, he barely had 15-16 years left, with his talent, breaking through the Emperor Stage is nearly impossible.

The frosty look in Evane's eyes warmed a little,

She was not here to fight, since this man has given her the opportunity, she would use it and continue with what she was here for.

“Out of my own respect for you, Senior Wysten, I would let this matter go, since you have already taken the responsibly, I will put my trust in you and continue with what I am here for.”

“!!!”

Hearing her words, Wysten's eyes widened in surprise.

How did she know his name!?

One had to know, even Ricardus didn't know the true strength of the Shadow Unit, and as the strongest member of the Shadow Unit, his identity was confidential, and only Lady Astaris and other King Stage Cultivators of the Shadow Unit knew about him.

Then how...

Wysten's eyes then fell on Amaya who was standing behind Evane.

He observed the woman for a while and a solemn look appeared on his face,

‘Don’t tell me, does her information network extends to even the Shadow Unit?’

This was not a good news.

It could mean many things, there might be a spy in the Shadow Unit.

‘But how is that possible?’

Wysten couldn’t understand.

“Alright, I won’t repeat myself after this, any suspicions, just write them down.”

Evane ordered again, the man who fought with her last time wanted to say something, however, Wysten glared at the man and he lowered his head in fright.

“As you command, Queen Evane.” Wysten bowed and then a paper appeared in his hand.

Seeing him, other King Stage Cultivators followed as well, and seeing them, all the Members of Shadow Unit started writing on the paper.

Evane waited patiently.

‘That man is strong.’

Suddenly, Thyra spoke.

Evane nodded, ‘He is indeed.’

Then, a question appeared in Evane’s mind and she asked,

‘Can you defeat him?’

Thyra turned silent. She narrowed her eyes as she observed Wysten for a while and replied,

‘I can’t.’

‘Hoh? Thyra is admitting her defeat, that’s new.’

Allura jumped into the conversation as well.

‘You were someone who could kill Expert Stage Cultivators when you were only a Grand Master Stage Cultivator, why are you so sure that you would lose to him even though you both are King Stage Cultivators?’

Amaya questioned as well.

‘That man is different.

Just like Keeve, he has been through countless battles and has honed his skills while risking his life, for him, defeating a King Stage Cultivator is an easy task.

Truthfully, even if I was on the same level as him, I am not sure if could defeat him. His experience is far greater than mine, after all.

Of course, it won’t be the same a few years from now on.

In the next few years, I would become an Advance Stage Body Cultivator, by then, defeating him would be a simple task.’

Thyra explained, and the others nodded in understanding.

“Alright guys, let’s get to work, shall we?”

Suddenly, everyone heard a playful voice and turned toward the source.

Their eyes then fell on a handsome man and a beautiful woman, walking while holding each other’s hands with a smile plastered on their faces.

Behind them, there were 12 other people who wore different colored clothes.

The members of Shadow Unit widened their eyes when their eyes fell on those 12 people,

Those were the spies!

This Idiot has freed them!

The members were ready to capture them again, however, soon, the more intelligent ones frowned.

If the spies were freed... then why did they come here, where all of them were present?

Also...

Why are all their faces paler than normal?

It is as if they were...

Scared?

Nux, of course, ignored all the members of Shadow Unit and walked towards Evane.

Evane nodded, she then turned towards the Shadow Unit and ordered.

“Keeve, collect all the papers.”

“As you command, Queen Evane.”

Keeve nodded, then he turned towards the Shadow Unit and raised his arm.

In an orderly manner, the members in the back passed their papers to the members in front, and soon, all the papers were in Keeve's hand.

“Make a list having all the names here, right the number of times the name was repeated in front of the name, I need the list ready by the time we return.”

“As you command, Queen Evane.”

“Alright now,

Form 12 groups,

1 Expert, 2 Grand Masters, and 3 Master Stage Cultivators in each group.

The leaders of each group will be Keeve, Reeve, and us 12.

Be quick,

We have spies to catch.”

# Chapter 525

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

A man wearing black colored clothes knocked on the door,

“Why the hell are you knocking? Just smash the doors.”

He suddenly heard an order and he nodded,

“A-As you command, Queen Evane.”

The man then kicked on the door and,

\*Bam\*

The door was smashed open.

“Go in.”

As soon as Evane passed the order, 6 men wearing black colored clothes barged into the room.

“W-What? What is happening? How dare you barge into my room like this!? Do you think you can get away- Princess Evane!?”

The room owner, who had just taken a bath, came out of his bathroom wearing a bathrobe with an angry look on his face. However, as soon as his eyes fell on Evane, they widened in surprise.

“P-Princess Evane! What brings you to this lowly servant’s place? You could have summoned me if you needed something, why did you bother to come here?”

As confused as he was, the man didn’t let that affect his judgment and questioned politely.

Evane, however, completely ignored his words and her Green Eyes shined,

[Name: Derrick Role ]

[Age: 25 ]

[Mana Cultivation: Advance.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal. ]

[Race: Human ]

[Occupation: Spy]

[Talent: Medium]

[LVL: 26]

[HP: 280/280]

[MP: 390/390]

[STR: 28]

[AGL: 39]

[VIT: 28]

[STM: 31]

[INT: 39]

[DEF: 29]

...

Evane confirmed her thoughts and,

“Capture him. He will most likely have poison Pill in his mouth, take care of that.”

The 6 Men then pounced on the poor Advance Stage Cultivator and soon, he was apprehended.

Evane then activated [Sense],

Soon, she pointed at a particular wall and ordered,

“You, punch there.”

The man she ordered frowned, however, he still walked toward the wall and punched,

The wall broke down and a safe was discovered,

The man took out the safe, seeing that, the room owner’s eyes widened in surprise and he shouted,

“T-That mine! You can’t do this! My Priv-”

“Shut him up.”

Evane ordered.

The Shadow Unit Member forced a cloth inside the man’s mouth and then tied a cloth around his mouth to ensure that he doesn’t throw the cloth out.

“Mmmhhmmmffmppp!!!”

The man still tried to scream, however, this time, it was a lot less annoying than before.

The safe was then opened by force and other than some gold, a few documents appeared.

Evane took the documents, skimmed through them for a bit, and nodded to herself.

“This much is enough, let’s go. There are more.”

By then, the room owner was tied up and was taken out of the room, while they were taking him out, the spy's eyes fell on a man and they brightened in joy.

He knew this man!

He could save him!

Or that's what he thought, however,

“Who's next?”

Evane questioned.

The Spy's ray of hope crumbled when the man answered,

“Brook Leyn, a woman working in the clothing department, she should be on duty right now,”

The Spy couldn't believe what happened right in front of his eyes...

The man who he trusted... was actually working for them!

Not only that, he was even rating out his other allies!

He betrayed them! He betrayed all of them!

“MMhhMMmmkpp!!”

Even though he couldn't speak, the spy didn't back away from showing his anger, his eyes were red, however, nobody cared about him.

“Alright, let's go to the clothing department,” Evane ordered and started walking.

She then noticed that two men were needed to take this spy with them, an inefficient way indeed.

Evane turned around and suddenly, she kicked the spy.

The spy fell on the floor helplessly, Evane tied a rope around his neck, then she passed the rope to a Master Stage Cultivator,

“Here, drag him with this.”

“A-As you c-command, Q-Queen Evane.”

The Master Stage Cultivator nodded with a surprised look on his face.

Evane, however, started walking, the others started walking behind her, and the man was forced to follow the group as well while dragging a spy by a... rope...

“P-Princess Evane.”

Every servant bowed their head when they saw Evane passing by, however, at the same time, they observed how the man was being taken away and couldn't help but discuss.

“W-What in the hell is happening...”

“Why was he taken away like that...?”

“I don't know... but that... that... seems painful...”

“Painful? That man is nearly choking!”

“Just what did he do to deserve something like this?”

“Who knows...?”

All the people who witnessed this were shocked, scared even, they didn't know what was happening.

Actually, Evane and these 7 were not the only people who were doing this, there were 11 more groups, all of them breaking into people's rooms, capturing people without any explanation, and taking them away.

The guards, the people of the security division, the clothing division, the kitchen, the maids, and many other servants, off duty or on duty, were being captured from all over the Palace.

People were panicking, nobody knew what was happening, this ‘random’ capturing scared them. Many felt like they would be the ones next.

Some even tried asking the higher-ups, however, all of the higher-ups were silent.

‘If you are innocent, then you will be fine...’

That was their only answer.

The Higher-ups knew what was happening.

They saw what happened today, Queen Evane promised to catch all the spies in front of everyone. That woman who seemed to be highly respected by all the King Stage Cultivators gave her the permission to do anything she wanted, to capture anyone she wanted without needing to explain herself.

They knew this was going to happen...

However, they never thought it would this quickly...

A complete cleanup was being carried on in the Royal Palace...

All the higher-ups were looking forward to seeing the results of this cleanup.

Of course, they would have preferred if the responsibility of cleaning all this mess didn’t fall on their shoulders...

Explaining everything to the panicked crowd, sealing out the rooms that have been searched through, placing guards everywhere to ensure nobody does anything stupid...

Haahhhh...

All the higher-ups sighed.

# Chapter 526

“...”

“So... you are telling me that they are dragging around the people they captured with the ropes that they have... tied around their necks?”

“Y-Yes, that is correct.”

Wysten nodded with a strange expression on his face.

This was his first time witnessing 2-3 people tied up and being dragged around with Ropes around their necks as if they were some dogs. To be honest, even with their limbs tied, some were trying to crawl in order to avoid choking...

Honestly, it was a frightening scene.

Wysten didn't know how Queen Evane was planning to deal with the innocents who were dragged around like spies because of a misunderstanding...

“Is this... cleanup still going on...?” Astaria questioned.

“It has slowed down, Keeve and Reeve have stopped after capturing 2 Suspects each, to be honest, they are the only ones who dragged around the suspects in a proper manner.”

Wysten answered.

Inwardly, he hoped that if there are innocents amongst the spies, they should be amongst the 4 Suspects Keeve and Reeve captured.

“So... the rest of them are still going...?”

Astaria questioned.

“Yes, that man named Nux has already captured around 5 suspects...”  
Wysten replied.

“And those 5...?”

“Being dragged around in the same way...”

“...”

Astaria didn't know what to say.

In the end, a long sigh escaped her mouth,

“I feel bad for the Head of the Security Department, the leader of the Royal Guards, and the head of the Management Section...”

“Indeed... they have a lot to do...”

Wysten couldn't help but nod.

The three of them would be the ones to deal with all this chaos after all. He was sure that their office was already filled with complaints.

Yes, complaints against the Future Queen of the Kingdom...

Most of the people in the Royal Palace only treat Evane as a Princess, of course, after what has happened to other Princes, the only available option is her, they had a rough idea that Evane would be the next Queen, however, not many knew what had happened to the current King.

Therefore, not many of them knew that ‘Princess Evane would become the Queen in the future,’ actually means that ‘Princess Evane would become the Queen in the next few days.’

Wysten couldn't even imagine how difficult it would be to manage and read the complaints about your future Queen.

“Should I... send some of the Shadow Unit Members to help them?”

“Do you even have the authority to do that?” Astaria questioned.

“Huh?”

Wysten frowned in confusion.

He was the lead-

He suddenly realized.

“Don’t forget, the entire Shadow Unit is under her right now. Some of you might be free, however, she might order you again. Don’t do anything unnecessary.

The Shadow Unit’s first encounter with her is already bad enough.”

“...”

Wysten turned silent.

“I already had a little chat with him.”

“That is good, don’t let it repeat again.”

“I won’t.”

Wysten nodded, then, a frown appeared on his face,

“But I still don’t understand.”

“What?”

“Those spies... they are the people who keep a pill inside their mouth, ready to die at any moment in order to not leak any information.

People like them are extremely loyal.

I get it if 1 or 2 out of those 12 would give in to torture and would be willing to rat out their allies in order to escape it, but...

All of them?

To turn all the people, who are even willing to kill themselves for the sake of their masters, to his side...

Just what did that man do?

Torture, bribe, or is it something else?

Just how in the hell did he do it?"

No matter how hard he thought about it, Wysten couldn't come up with an answer.

"You sent one of your members with him, right? You didn't ask him?"

Astaria questioned back.

To be honest, even she was curious how that boy did it.

Actually, not just these spies, but even that General of Solid Earth Kingdom... just how did that boy manage to turn them into his side?

"I did, however, he was ordered to stop outside the prison. Other than screams, he didn't hear anything.

To be honest, from what he told me,

Those screams were straight-up horrifying.

And this was coming from a man who has tortured countless people before..."

"So it is some sort of torture huh..." Astaria nodded to herself.

"If I am being honest, I think it is something different.

The time that man took was far too less. There is no way he could torture 12 people in that much time and force them to listen to his orders."

Wysten replied.

“ ... ”

Astaria turned silent.

“ ... ”

Wysten didn't say anything either, he was still thinking about all this.

“That boy is a mystery huh...”

Suddenly, Astaria commented.

“It is not just him, everyone around him is the same, they are all monsters with ridiculously high Cultivation Talent, to be honest, Ember, the General of the Woods Dynasty, a prodigy dulls out when she is among those monsters.

She is the least talented in that group.

For a prodigy renowned throughout the world to seem dull when she is in that group...

One can only imagine how ridiculous that group is...”

Wysten spoke.

“Not to mention they have someone like Amaya in their group as well and this time, she is someone who is not being held back by that curse of hers.

I can't even imagine how ridiculously troublesome having the current her as her enemy might be.

The entire Thousand Information Chamber is moving as if they have been possessed.

To be honest, I sometimes fear that even our Queen might be dulled out if she stays in that group.

None of those women seems normal to me.”

Hearing his words, Astaria sighed.

‘If only you knew that all those women’s cultivation came from that boy alone...’

Then, a small smile appeared on her face,

‘I wonder what other secrets are you hiding, boy.’

“Alright, I want you to do something for me.”

“Just give the command, Lady Astaria.”

“3 days later...”

# Chapter 527

“Sir Oswin.” A servant entered the room and called out.

“What? Is it another complaint?”

The head of the Security Division, Oswin Aiere, questioned with a frustrated and annoyed look on his face.

“Didn’t I tell you to collect all the complaints and only give them to me when you collect 100 of them?”

Wait, did you collect 100 of them already!? But you just came in an hour ago.”

Oswin’s face paled.

“No, that’s not it, there are only 43 right now,”

“Then why are you here?”

“It is Princess Evane.”

“Princess Evane? She is here?”

Oswin stood up.

“No, I am here because she has summoned all of you and all your direct subordinates, urgently.”

“Huh?” Oswin frowned.

“Your subordinates are already waiting for you outside.”

“But why have she summoned us?”

“The messenger didn’t clarify, he only told us that all the higher-ups of the Security Division, Management Division, and the Royal Guards are summoned.”

“A-alright, I will be there, wait for me.”

“As you command.” The servant nodded and walked out.

A frown appeared on Oswin’s face, he quickly wore his coat, then walked in front of a Mirror and fixed his appearance, once he was ready, he walked out and saw all his direct subordinates waiting for him.

“Shall we go, Sir Oswin?”

Oswin nodded.

The 8 of them started walking towards the Royal Hall.

“ ... ”

Once they walked into the Royal Hall, Oswin and his subordinates turned silent as their eyes fell on over 100 people, tied up and lying on the floor.

Above them, on the Throne, sat Evane, and behind her stood the Queen’s Husband and her Harem Sisters...

Oswin’s eyes then fell on the people of the Management Division and the Royal Guards, who, just like them, had shocked and dumbfounded looks on their faces.

“You people are here.”

Evane called out.

“Queen Evane.”

Oswin, the Head of the Management Division, and the Leader of the Royal Guards bowed their heads at the same time.

Their subordinates followed their actions as well, however, at the same time, a frown appeared on their faces.

‘Queen Evane?’

Why are they calling her the ‘Queen?’

Also, why was Princess Evane sitting on the Royal Throne?

Where is the King? What about the Royal Ministers?

Where are they all?

They couldn’t understand.

However, seeing that their heads had no problem with what they were seeing, they didn’t raise their voice either.

“These were all the Spies who we captured in the first round of cleanup. The proof of their crimes is tied on their backs.”

Only when Evane pointed it out did they notice some papers that were tied on those people’s backs.

“In total, there are 117 of them, you can read, copy, take, or do whatever you want with these proves, I don’t care.

However, I want you all to imprison all of them, make sure that they don’t kill themselves, calm the people who are panicked, and arrange their execution in two days, by today.”

“B-By today?”

Oswin stuttered.

Evane glanced at him and narrowed her eyes,

“Is that hard?”

“W-We can do all of that, however, currently, the panic amongst people is too high, and our offices are flooded with complaints, questions, and whatnot. Calming them down by today...

It would certainly not be an easy task.”

“...”

Evane placed her finger and thumb on her chin and started thinking about it.

“You already have all the proves you need, why are you worrying so much?”

Suddenly, Amaya questioned.

“I don’t understand.” Oswin tilted his head in confusion.

“Use the proof we gave you to talk with everyone.

‘The people who were captured were the people who were the spies who have been eating out our Kingdom from within. They were the enemies who were planning our fall and were helping enemy nations. Capturing them all like this was a great mission that was only executed today after many years of planning. Now with all the traitors gone, the Kingdom would operate a lot more smoothly than before, with the innocent people receiving many benefits and security will never be sacrificed.’

Using words like ‘more security’, ‘benefits’ or more positive words should calm them down without any problems.”

“Mhm, you people should divide all the work amongst you.

The Management Division should calm the people, the Security Division should prepare the execution and the Royal Guards should imprison these people.

I don’t think all this is anything complicated at all.”

Ember nodded to herself.

“Or maybe they are just incompetent?”

Suddenly, Nux teased with a small smile on his face.

Oswin narrowed his eyes as he glanced at Nux.

“Surely Nux is wrong, right?” Suddenly, Evane questioned.

“Yes, Queen Evane.” Oswin nodded.

“Then prove him wrong,” Evane ordered.

“”As you command, Queen Evane.””

All the heads bowed their heads.

“You are excused.”

Evane then closed her eyes.

“Ummm, Queen Evane...” Suddenly, the Head of the Management Division, Esmond, called out.

“What is it?” Evane glanced at him and questioned.

“You said that this was the result of the First Round... does that mean there are more rounds...?” Esmond.

“There should be more Spies hiding in the Palace, yes, however, these were all the spies that had ties with the higher-ups, the ones who were responsible for the main information leak.

Of course, that doesn't mean that I am planning to leave the spies left, there will be more cleanup rounds in the future.”

Evane answered, then suddenly, her expression changed. She glanced at Amaya and the woman nodded. A small smile appeared on Evane's face as she turned toward the Head of the Management System.

“Aldway.”

She called out.

“At your command, Queen Evane.”

“I have another job for you.

Once you have calmed everyone down, make an announcement.

‘For the next 7 days, everyone is allowed to file a ‘Suspicion’ against anyone they want. If their suspect actually turns out to be a spy, he or she will be awarded greatly. You are to create a separate division to manage that all. The Division will come under your upkeep, you can even appoint someone you trust as a Leader.

Talk with Lady Amaya here to make the system more robust so that it is not misused.

Establish this Division within the next 2 days.

This way, the spies won’t just have to worry about us, but even the people around them as well.

From now on,

Everyone will be hunting the spies.”

# Chapter 528

“From now on, everyone will be hunting the spies.”

The new Law was enacted, a new Division was created, the spies who had barely survived after the first wave of clean-up were all tensed.

The new Law was simply a nightmare for them since everyone was out there trying to hunt spies since the rewards were so tempting.

Of course, it was taken care that the law wasn't misused, every person was only allowed to have 5 failed guesses, and even those guesses should have a valid reason behind them.

10 more spies were caught using this method, and when people saw how the one who filed the suspicion was actually rewarded, they were even more motivated to catch spies and started paying more attention to their surroundings.

At the same time, Princess Evane's reputation took a huge boost, both amongst the innocents and the guilty.

For the innocents, Princess Evane was like an angel of justice, who was sent by the heavens to reform the entirety of the Royal Palace, and for the guilty, Princess Evane was a cruel demon who is hunting them down from the depth of hell.

Was the combined reaction positive or negative?

Well, it was positive for now, however, the more perceptive people could see a small wave that rising silently but at an alarming rate.

In the end, the Royal Palace was not a place filled with saints, quite the opposite actually, the Royal Palace was filled with the most corrupt of the people one could ever find.

Princess Evane was only going after Spies right now, however, who could guarantee that she won't go after others in the future?

The corrupt officials had already started spreading rumors about how Princess Evane was not suitable to become the Queen, how she is getting rid of people she does not like by calling them spies and forging fake proof, how Princess Evane plans to change the entirety of the staff of the Royal Palace to replace them with her own people to take full control over everything, and more and more.

Of course, these officials worked in shadow, and tracing who started the rumors was difficult, however, rumors like these spread fast, and Evane's reputation, which was rising at a significant rate was also being negatively affected by this.

What did Princess Evane do about it?

Well, it was easy.

Tracing those officials may be difficult, however, with someone like Amaya and the absurd abilities of Nux, it wasn't that hard.

Then what? A series of silent assassinations.

A Royal Statement was then declared,

'Loyal and Honest Officials lost their lives, this could only mean that the spies are getting restless from our operations and are acting recklessly, we will not let the sacrifices of these honest Officials be in vain,

We will continue our operation.

The rewards of successfully suspecting a Spy and reporting it to the Spy Division are now increased, we promise to catch these assassins soon.'

With this little trick, everything was solved, with no one fueling the rumors, they soon died down, and Princess Evane's reputation continued to grow.

Just like that, 3 days passed by.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

In the morning, someone knocked on Princess Evane's room, Nux opened the door,

“Sir Nux,”

The Servant greeted, Nux nodded, an envelope then appeared in the Servant's hand and he passed it to Nux,

“I was ordered to deliver this to you.”

Nux accepted the envelope and nodded. The servant walked away, Nux closed the door and opened the envelope.

‘In the afternoon, 3 pm, Main Training Hall.’

Yes, that was it.

That was the letter.

Seeing this, a smile couldn't help but appear on Nux's face as he shook his head,

‘That is so like her.’

“What happened?”

Evane walked towards Nux and questioned.

“Well, it seems that she is done with her preparations, 3 pm.”

“Heh, a wonder how she is going to test you.”

Thyra chuckled.

“Well, since it is about fighting a war, I believe it would be a 1vmany battle,” Ember spoke with a confident look on her face.

Out of all of them, she was the one who knew about war the most, if she wanted to test if someone is suitable for war or not, 1vmany battles would definitely be on her test list.

“I agree, it would be 1vmany.” Amaya nodded.

“It is not like it is going to be hard for Nux.” Skyla smiled brightly.

“Tsk, he would just use this opportunity to try and impress her.”

Felberta snorted.

“Ahh, my love knows me so we-”

Nux wanted to reply, however, before he could complete his sentence,

“Hmph!”

Felberta snorted.

Nux turned towards the other, and as if they had planned it before, they all snorted as well.

Nux sighed,

He would need a lot of time to deal with this...

Well, without waiting any further, he walked towards his women and... continued with his thing.

...

Time passed, it was now 2:50 in the afternoon, Nux and his women walked out of their room with bright smiles on their faces, and within a few minutes, they arrived in the Main Training hall.

“Now isn’t this a party~”

Nux commented with a playful smile on his face.

In front of him stood Astaria, behind her stood General Phorus, Royal Consort Iria, and a few others.

“Are you prepared, boy?”

Astaria questioned with a smile on her face.

“Of course I am.” Nux smiled back.

Hearing his answer, frowns appeared on Iria and Phorus’s faces.

‘How can this man talk to Lady Astaria so disrespectfully? Insolent!’

Astaria, however, didn’t seem to mind, she just smile and pointed in a certain direction,

“You see those Camps there?”

“Mhm.”

“That’s where your enemies are.”

“Got it.”

“You will attack their camp.”

“Ahh, so is this a sort of flag game, where I have to grab a flag or something?”

“Huh? There are no flags or anything like that, you just need to attack their camp and,

Come back alive.”

“Hmm, well that seems simple, so I just need to walk into their camp and defeat them, right?”

“Don’t you want to know who your enemies are?” Astaria questioned.

“I already know about it,

I am quite excited to fight them, actually.”

Nux replied.

Hearing his answer, Astaria’s smile widened and she replied,

“All the best then,

I hope you do not underestimate the Shadow Unit.”

# Chapter 529

With a smile on his face, Nux walked towards the camp in front of him.

“How long do you think he will survive?”

General Phorus questioned.

“15 minutes.” Iria was quick to answer.

“You have quite a high opinion of him, don’t you?” General Phorus spoke.

“Well, he seems quite confident, I gave him additional points for that,” Iria spoke with a small smile on her face.

“Oh ho? Well, I think it would be a great feat if he survives even for 10 minutes.” General Phorus replied, he then turned towards Astaria and questioned,

“What about you, Lady Astaria, what do you think?”

“Hmmm, if the boy gets lucky, then 30 minutes, if not then 20 maybe, it depends really.”

Astaria answered.

“Heeh? 30 Minutes huh... I don’t understand why you two have such a high evaluation of him.” Phorus commented.

“But I still don’t get it.”

Suddenly, Iria frowned as she glanced at Astaria,

“This test of yours, it is simply impossible to pass it, even you know it. Why even bother doing something like this then?”

“Well, what he wants to do is simply impossible as well, I won’t allow him to lose his life by doing something stupid.

Can’t let our future Queen become a widow, now can I?”

Astaria replied.

An amused smile appeared on Phorus’s face as he turned towards Evane,

“What about you, Queen Evane, how long do you think he will survive.”

Evane frowned, she was about to answer with her usual cold look, however, before she could, Amaya jumped in.

“10 Minutes would be enough.”

Hearing this answer, the General laughed out loud.

“Hahaha! As expected of Lady Amaya, your analysis seems as accurate as always, surviving for 10 minutes would indeed be a great achievement. Even I don’t think I can survive for that long.

He is up against the Shadow Unit, after all.

This test is unfavorable for him to begin with.”

“I don’t think you got what she wanted to say, General Phorus.”

Suddenly, Ember spoke as well.

“Huh?” Phorus frowned.

A smile then appeared on Ember’s face and she commented,

“She meant that 10 minutes would be enough to finish this test. However, I would like to say, her analysis seems wrong here, 5 minutes would be more than enough.”

Amaya, however, shook her head,

“Along with 6 King Stage Cultivators, there are 94 small fries as well, defeating them would take some time. Don’t forget, he is cannot kill them, so it makes things a little more complicated.”

“Ahh, he can’t kill, right.

I failed to notice that, my bad.

It would indeed take around 10 minutes to deal with the small fries.”

Ember nodded in agreement as well.

Amaya nodded back.

The others nodded as well.

As for General Phorus, Iria and Astaria... they couldn’t help but stare at these women with dumbfounded looks on their faces.

S-Small fries...?

Did they just call the members of the Shadow Unit, the strongest Kingdom in the whole world, small fries?

A-And why were they acting like no killings was actually a disadvantage for him!? He will die if it was an actual battle you know!? What the hell were these women talking about!?

“D-Do you people even know how strong the Shadow Unit is? Or are you just spouting nonsense with half-baked knowledge?” General Phorus couldn’t control himself and question.

“Trust me, I know what I am talking about.”

“You...”

Before the General could say anything,

“It is starting.”

Evane who was looking at the 'battlefield' spoke.

Everyone turned towards the battlefield and noticed that without any strategy whatsoever, Nux directly walked into one of the larger tents, the tent that should belong to a...

King Stage Cultivator.

General Phorus, Iria, and even Astaria became excited, thinking how intense the fight would be, however, to their shock,

Nux suddenly walked out of the Tent without any changes in his appearance whatsoever.

"W-Was the tent empty?" General Phorus couldn't help but question.

"..."

"..."

Iria and Astaria turned silent.

Nux's women just smiled.

Nux then walked into another tent and around 30 seconds later, he walked out again.

He repeated the same step, this time, however,

\*Weeeeeeeeeuuueeeeeee\*

A loud siren sound was heard, Nux walked out of the tent with a slight frown on his face.

He then noticed all the members of the Shadow Unit had come out of their tents and were running around.

"Where is he!?"

“When did he attack!?”

“Check all the tents, he must be hiding in one of them!”

Chaos ensued, General Phorus, on the other hand, couldn't believe what he was seeing.

“What are they!? Blind!? He is right there! How the hell can they not see him!?”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Iria and even Astaria had frowns on their face.

Nux, however, didn't know what they were thinking, he followed a group that went inside a tent to search for him and knocked all of them down. Then he reactivated his [Conceal] and walked out.

Then, he followed another group going into another tent, and knocked them out as well. He continued the same method and Phorus on the other hand couldn't believe the absurdity,

“H-He just passed through Reeve! How did he not see him!? He was right in front of him! Wait, has he already talked with the Shadow Unit!? Are they taking his orders?”

“You think the Shadow Unit would go against Lady Astaria?”

Allura couldn't help but question.

“ ... ”

Phorus turned silent.

“What is happening there...?”

Iria questioned as she turned towards Nux's women.

The women, however, just smiled and didn't say anything,

“The small fries are taking longer than expected,

8 minutes have passed by already.”

Ember frowned.

“Mhm, well, I guess following them inside the tent is taking some time, plus, they also know that their members are missing and are sticking together now.” Felberta nodded.

“I think he will stop sneaking around now then now, he has already dealt with so many, taking on the last 30 in a direct fight should be simple,” Thyra spoke.

“Do you think he will go after the 3 King Stage Cultivators left before appearing in front of them?” Suddenly, Ember asked an interested question.

A smile appeared on Amaya's face as she answered,

“He will not. I am sure he will take them on directly.”

“Yeah, he still has to ‘impress a certain someone’ after all. Hmph!”

Felberta spoke sarcastically and then snorted.

# Chapter 530

\*Loud Siren Sound\*

“Where is he!?”

“Have you checked that tent!?”

“No, I have not!”

“Hey! There are 12 more unconscious here!”

“Leave them, search other tents!”

“9 unconscious here!”

“7 here!”

“11 here!”

“If every tent is filled with unconscious bodies, then where the hell is that man!?”

“Hey! Don’t keep standing there, look for him!”

Chaos was spread around the area, the whole Shadow Unit’s Camp was a big mess with every member running around, panicked, confused, and clueless about what to do.

“Lord Keeve! He is not here as well, what should we do?”

“...”

Keeve, as one of the leaders of the Shadow Unit, only stood there with a shocked look on his face.

‘W-What is happening?’

He couldn't understand.

He was only sitting around, knowing that his Unit will be attacked soon by that man. He was already informed about this test by Lady Astaria.

He was told to hold back and to let that man take out a few lower-level members before he went into action.

This was meant to be a test for that man, a test he shouldn't be able to pass.

But...

But what in the hell is happening!?

W-What is that monster!?

He has already taken out more than half of their members, and it was not just low-level members, 3 King Stage Cultivators were among them as well!

And it hasn't even been 10 minutes since this test started!

And this all wasn't even the worst part,

The worse part was that they still had no idea where that man was!

He continued to eliminate more and more members of his Shadow Unit, but nobody could see how and where he did it.

The members try to find him in a tent, but the only thing they find is the unconscious bodies of their teammates.

A single man was playing around with his entire Unit.

Keeve couldn't believe it.

“Lord Keeve!”

Another member shouted for help.

‘Don’t blame me for playing dirty as well.’

Keeve thought inwardly then, he took a deep breath and shouted,

“Everyone, Formation O!”

As soon as they heard these words, all the members of the Shadow Unit stopped whatever they were doing and quickly gather around Keeve.

Within 10 seconds, all the members regrouped.

The logic was simple.

There was no point in going against that strange monster, with him sneaking around like that, they would only end up losing their teammates.

Therefore, regrouping was the only option left.

Rather than hunting for Nux in different groups, they would form a big group, waiting for Nux to appear in front of them instead.

It was not a test for them, it was a test for Nux.

They were in no rush to complete it, they could stand there for days, Nux, however, did not have that option. He had to appear in front of them eventually.

A cowardly move, yes.

However, the Shadow Unit losing a battle against a single man was even more shameful.

Keeve cannot allow this to happen.

A solemn look appeared on Keeve’s face, of course, he wasn’t the least bit happy about his plan, even if he won, his heart would never accept this victory, however, in the end, a fight was a fight.

Keeve prepared himself and waited for Nux to appear in front of him.

“ ... ”

An eerie silence fell over the place, everyone waited for Nux to appear, and all the members of the Shadow Unit were on high alert.

\*Step\*

Suddenly, everyone heard a sound.

Their heads turned towards the direction in a millisecond,

\*Step\* \*Step\* \*Step\*

There, they saw Nux walking out of a tent with a small smile on his face.

“You finally regrouped huh... It took you longer than I expected...”

“You are strong,” Keeve spoke.

“Don’t act like you didn’t know it already.”

Nux smiled.

“I di-”

Keeve was about to reply, however suddenly, Nux disappeared.

“!!!”

Keeve’s eyes widened in surprise, his whole body went on full alert,

\*Thud\*

Soon, he heard a sound, he turned and saw one of his unit members pass out, behind him stood Nux, who was already attacking another member.

“Attack him!”

Keeve ordered.

All the members of the Shadow Unit, including Keeve, Reeve, and Wysten rushed toward Nux. Nux of course, wasn't scared, he continued to attack more and more members, the moment he thought that he would be surrounded, he disappeared and appeared in another direction and continued his attacks.

He wasn't using any skills, in particular, he only used his hands to attack behind their necks, knocking them out.

This made it even more shameful for the members of the Shadow Unit and raised their anger and frustration.

Nux, however, was not doing that to annoy them or anything like that.

The answer was simple, if he used his skills here, they would die.

He wanted to impress Astaria, however, he was not planning to kill these people, they would be his wife's subordinates in the future.

“Attack him!”

“Don't let him get away!”

“He disappeared! Be aware! He will appear behind y-Uggghh!”

“Stop shouting you idiot, you have to be alert as well.”

Nux shook his head in disappointment.

“You bastard!”

A Grand Master Stage Cultivator jumped at him with his sword in his hand,

Nux easily dodged his attack and attacked the back of his neck as well.

“Uggghh!!”

The man passed out as well.

Another man rushed towards Nux and tried to punch his face, Nux crouched, punched his stomach, the man fell on his knees and started coughing, Nux then kicked another man who was rushing towards him from behind, the man's body flew away and fell on a tent, destroying the whole thing.

Nux then knocked out the man who was still coughing due to his punch.

Four more members attacked him, and he dodged and knocked them out as well.

By now, the King Stage Cultivator realized what he was trying to do.

Therefore, to respect his wishes, or... may be trying to save the last strand of self-respect they were left with, none of them attacked.

They waited for Nux to defeat all the... 'small fries' and once Nux was done with it.

The three of them would face him together.

Nux, however, had a different plan in his mind.

As he knocked down the last of the small fries, he glanced at the Three King Stage Cultivators.

Their body felt a slight shiver when they felt their gaze, soon, however, they took their battle stance, showing that they were ready for the last battle.

Nux, however, pointed at the 3 King Stage Cultivators who had passed out and smiled,

“Wake them up, you don't stand a chance without them.

I want to fight the bests of Shadow Unit, this time, without any tricks involved.”

# Chapter 531

“I want to fight the bests of Shadow Unit, this time, without any tricks involved,”

Nux spoke with a small smile on his face.

Hearing his words, Keeve narrowed his eyes and commented.

“You are underestimating us.”

“Huh?”

Nux, however, just frowned and looked around him.

“...”

Keeve turned silent.

Nux was right.

He was not underestimating them.

More than 30 bodies lying around him proved that. Not to mention other bodies that were still inside all these tents.

Suddenly, Wysten closed his eyes and sighed.

Then, he walked towards the unconscious King Stage Cultivators, fed them a healing potion, and started tending to them.

“Sir Wysten...”

Keeve called out.

Wysten however, shook his head,

“Don’t bother, we had already abandoned our pride when we use Formation O.”

Wysten replied, he then turned towards Nux and spoke,

“I underestimated you, bo- no, Lord Nux.”

Nux just smiled.

“However, this last fight will not be easy for you.”

“We will see about that.” Nux didn’t back down.

Soon, the 3 King Stage Cultivators woke up.

With fuzzy heads, they looked around, and as soon as they did, their eyes widened in horror.

The members of the Shadow Unit were lying around as if they were all dead.

J-Just what happened?

Who attacked the Royal Palace?

How did they take out so many of them?

Why don’t they remember anything?

They all wondered inwardly. They then tried looking around and their eyes fell on Wysten.

“Sir Wysten...”

Wyot, the man who went against Evane the first time they met, questioned.

“J-Just what happened?”

The other King Stage Cultivators had the same question so they nodded.

Wysten sighed, he didn't reply and directly turned towards Nux, who, just like the good person he was, patiently waiting for them to finish this little touching act.

Of course, he didn't forget to have a villainous smile on his face.

Couldn't continue without it, now could he?

Wytot and the other two King Stage Cultivators turned towards Nux and seeing all those bodies lying around him, their eyes widened in horror.

They quickly recalled how they had passed out, especially Valora, the King Stage Cultivator who was able to activate the siren before she was knocked unconscious.

“Get up, we need to fight.”

Wysten spoke.

Keeve and Reeve walked towards them as well, the Three King Stage Cultivators understood what happened.

A glint shone in their eyes as their expression turned determined, they stood up facing Nux, then, their weapons appeared in their hands.

Wysten, Keeve, and Reeve didn't hold back either, their weapons appeared in their hands as well.

The Shadow Unit was not known as the strongest unit in the world just because they had 6 Cultivators in their rank, the other reason, and probably the major reason for that is because of the synergy between these 6 King Stage Cultivators.

Out of the 6 King Stage Cultivators, Keeve and Reeve used swords, Wysten used a Great Sword, Valora used a bow, Wytot used a huge Shield and his Fist, and the remaining King Stage Cultivator, Trever, used daggers.

Yes, a perfect team, with perfect synergy, a near-perfect defense, and offense, this was the reason why the Shadow Unit was known as the

strongest.

“Are you ready?”

Wysten, keeping his Great Sword on his shoulder, questioned.

Seeing this, Nux’s smile widened.

“You all look like Power Rangers.”

“Huh? Power Rangers?”

Wysten frowned.

“Nothing, forget I said anything.”

Nux shook his head, the ring on his finger shined and a Black Sword with Purple colored patterns appeared in his hand.

“Huh? Is he that serious?”

Ember questioned with a curious look on her face.

“He has his reasons.”

Amaya answered as she momentarily glanced at Astaria.

Ember and others understood and shook their heads.

“Alright, this time, I will take the initiative.”

Nux’s smile faded away and then, he disappeared.

\*Clank\*

This time, however, Wyot reacted quickly and blocked his attacks with his huge shield.

Valora jumped back and aimed her bow at Nux, waiting for an opportunity to attack.

Keeve and Reeve appeared from opposite sides, trying to attack Nux. Nux glanced at Wyot, then, he increased the strength behind his attack and pushed him away.

Suddenly, 2 Black Purple colored Walls popped out of the ground,

\*Clank\*

Successfully blocking Reeve and Keeve's attacks.

Nux then turned towards Wysten who was attacking him with his Great Sword,

\*Clank\*

Nux blocked the attack with his own sword,

\*Whoosh\*

Seeing this opportunity, Valora shot an arrow, aiming at his back.

Nux, whose [Sense] was active throughout the battle knew what she was planning, he waited till the last moment, and just as the arrow was about to touch him, he crouched.

The arrow passed right above his head, without harming him, however, the same couldn't be said for Wysten, who lost his balance due to Nux's sudden movement.

Not having enough time, he was forced to take this attack head-on, in the end, he protected his head and the arrow pierced his right shoulder.

“Ugghh!” He groaned in pain.

Nux used this opportunity to rush towards Trever, who was still hiding.

Trever's eyes widened in surprise.

'How did he find me!?'

This was the question that appeared in his mind before he was knocked out, again.

Suddenly, Keeve and Reeve appeared in front and behind Nux, their swords aiming at his vital points.

However, before they could even attack, their eyes widened in surprise and they quickly jumped away.

As soon as they jumped away, Purple Black Spikes popped out of the spot they were standing at.

If they hadn't moved, these large spikes would have pierced their bodies.

However, before Keeve and Reeve could sigh, they noticed that the spot where they were about to land had turned Purple Black as well, their eyes widened in surprise, they prepared their swords, to clash with the spikes since they couldn't avoid it anymore.

"Ugghh!!"

On the other hand, Valora, who was completely defenseless was attacked by Nux and was knocked out as well.

Nux didn't miss this opportunity, he rushed towards Wysten, the two of them shared a few blows before Wysten was knocked out as well.

The next to be knocked out were Keeve and Reeve, and the only one left was...

Wytot.

"Heh, I wanted to have a little chat with you,"

Suddenly, Nux smiled.

“W-What do you mean?” Wyot questioned.

“I heard that you greeted my wife quite warmly when you two met,

As a responsible husband, I have to return the favor, don't I?”

Nux's smile turned demonic.

# Chapter 532

“I heard that you greeted my wife quite warmly when you two met,  
As a responsible husband, I have to return the favor, don't I?”

Nux's smile turned demonic.

Seeing that smile on his face, Wyot's body trembled.

He was definitely regretting saying whatever he said earlier.

‘Why the hell do you have to open that fucking mouth of yours everywhere,  
you idiotic bastard!?’

He cursed himself inwardly.

“Hmm? So what did you say? That you won't listen to her orders, that she  
is not even the actual Queen? Hmmm? What else? Was there something  
else?” Nux started pondering.

“I-I...”

Wyot didn't know what to say.

No traces of his past arrogance could be seen.

Who was he kidding!?

Just look at the ground.

Valora, Trever, Keeve, Reeve, and even Sir Wysten, all of them were lying  
on the ground, unconscious, just how can he defeat a monster who defeated  
all of them at the same time?

Not to mention, that he did it after defeating all of the other members of the Shadow Unit.

“I... I... d-didn't...”

In the end, Wyot could only stutter.

Suddenly, Nux's demonic smile disappeared and,

“Hahaha~”

He started laughing out loud. Then, he started patting Wyot's shoulder.

“Hahaha~ Don't worry, I am not that petty to bother about things like that. Also, my wife is not someone who needs my protection, she can stand on her own. So don't worry, I was just joking around.”

Nux spoke.

Wyot smiled and nodded his head,

Inwardly, however, he was cursing his luck to get on this bastard's bad side.

‘Joking around? Are you telling me that Killing Intent surrounding your body was all a joke!? Joke my ass! You aren't fooling anyone with that fake smile of yours!’

Wyot swore inwardly as he continued to look at Nux's face.

Suddenly, Nux's face turned serious again.

Wyot's heart skipped a beat.

‘D-Did he hear my thoughts?’

He even started thinking about absurd things now.

“Well, the jokes and all could go on, I still need to finish this test.”

Wyot finally realized that they were still in the middle of the battle.

‘How could I forget that?’

He thought inwardly, then suddenly, his eyes widened in surprise, he prepared his shield, ready for Nux’s attack, however, before he could even take his battle stance,

He felt a slight impact on the back of his neck and he felt his vision blurring away.

It was something very similar to what happened a few minutes ago.

With different thoughts in his mind, Wyot finally lost consciousness and fell on the ground.

\*Thud\*

“Haahh... that was the last one.”

Nux sighed deeply, then he wiped out his clean forehead, acting like he did a big job, his sword disappeared and he turned towards Astaria and the others.

“That was a difficult test indeed.”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Iria and Phorus’s mouths twitched.

Monster, this man was a complete monster.

The two of them then turned towards Nux’s women, however, a frown appeared on their faces when they noticed a disappointed frown rather than a happy smile on Amaya and Ember’s faces.

“It took 17 Minutes, our calculations were wrong...” Amaya commented.

“It’s not our fault, that bastard was talking and chilling around while fighting, if he was a bit more serious, he could have done it within 10 minutes,” Ember spoke.

“But it is Nux... we should have calculated the time he would waste in... being Nux...”

Amaya started thinking and analyzing.

“...” Ember turned silent.

“Oh c’mon, don’t be too hard on yourself. You did good, though I don’t know what you even did.”

Nux then appeared in front of Amaya and started patting her head.

As he continued to pat, Amaya’s frown continued to fade as well, soon, the frown on her face was replaced by a tiny smile and as if trying to hide her expression from others, she buried her face in Nux’s chest and continued to enjoy his pats.

“Tsk, sometimes I feel like you act like this just so you could get his attention.”

Seeing this scene, Ember commented.

Amaya turned her head towards Ember, then, without saying anything, she buried her face into Nux’s chest again.

Ember’s eyes widened,

“Wait... you don’t actually do it to gain his attention, do you?”

“...” Amaya didn’t answer.

Different possibilities appeared in Ember’s mind.

“Tsk, don’t act like you don’t ever try to act spoiled to get his attention.”

Felberta, who was standing beside Ember snorted.

“W-What are you even talking about?”

Ember retorted as quickly as she could.

Felberta just snorted.

Nux sighed and then started hugging all his women.

Seeing this scene, Iria and Phorus didn’t know how to react.

This scene was just too... bizarre.

Especially when it is compared to a scenery of around 40 bodies lying on the ground, just a few meters away from this... flowery scene.

Their eyes then fell on their future Queen, who was currently resting her head on that man’s chest, there was a warm smile on her face as the man hugged her and moved his hand around her waist.

Different thoughts appeared in their mind.

Where was that cold girl who ordered a mass cleanup throughout the Royal Palace, the girl who caught criminals and dragged them around the Palace as if they were dogs, just where is she?

Who is this girl who just had a beautiful smile on her face while she enjoyed her husband’s care?

Just what is with this contrast?

Iria and Phorus couldn’t understand.

“Are you done with your lovey-dovey show?”

Suddenly, the flowery scene was broken away when everyone heard a voice.

Nux glanced at Astaria and smiled.

He then walked towards Astaria and questioned,

“So I passed out the test, didn’t I? How was my performance? Was it satisfactory?”

Nux knew that what he showed today had definitely shocked Astaria, her mind was currently full of questions, and Nux was interested to see how she would react.

What would she ask about first?

Would it be about his sword?

Or maybe the spikes that appeared out of the ground?

Or how no one could see him during the fight?

Or maybe something else?

Nux didn’t know, however, out of countless possibilities in his mind, he definitely didn’t expect this one.

“Fight me.”

“H-Huh?”

# Chapter 533

“Fight me.”

Arvina spoke with a serious look on her face.

“H-Huh?”

Nux didn't know how to react, there were many scenarios that he had played in his mind, however, this was definitely not something he expected.

“Fight me.”

Thinking that he didn't hear her clearly, Astaria repeated.

“F-Fight you?”

Nux frowned.

“Yes.”

“I-I thought the test was only defeating the Shadow Unit...?”

Nux questioned.

If it was the Shadow Unit, defeating them was simple, however, Astaria was in a completely different league of her own.

Heck, if Nux had what it takes to defeat her, he wouldn't even be here, asking for her permission to go to another Kingdom.

Why would the strongest seek any sort of permission?

It wouldn't make sense.

“It has nothing to do with the test, you already passed it.”

Astaria replied to Nux's question.

"If I already passed, then why bother fighting now?" Nux couldn't understand.

"You held back."

Astaria revealed and Phorus and Iria's eyes widened in horror.

They turned towards the battlefield again and seeing so many bodies lying on the ground, their heart skipped a beat.

'T-This was him h-holding back?'

They couldn't believe what Astaria said, and thought of another possibility,

'Could it be that Lady Astaria judged incorrectly?'

"Well, I did hold back a little, but that has nothing to do with this test, does it?"

However, Nux's answer left them even more speechless.

'What the heck!?! That bastard was actually holding back!?!'

Phorus and Iria turned towards Evane and the others, hoping to see their shocked expressions, however, seeing that proud smile on their faces, they didn't know how to react.

"I want to see how strong actually are."

Astaria replied.

"Hmm, well, you can say I am the strongest King Stage Cultivator in the world. Actually, I am a lot stronger than an average King Stage Cultivator, I may sound arrogant, but I doubt there is a King Stage Cultivator or a team of them who can defeat me.

However, I am still not strong enough to go against an Emperor, so if you are asking about my strength...

Then you can say I stand far higher than the King Stage Cultivators and just behind Emperor Stage Cultivators.”

Nux replied with an honest look on his face.

If people here hadn't seen his fight with the Shadow Unit, they would have definitely called him arrogant and would have laughed at him, however, since they had all seen the fight, no one refuted his words.

“You seem to be awfully against the idea of fighting me.”

Hearing his answer, a teasing smile appeared on Astaria's face,

“Are you scared?”

She pushed even further.

“Is that even a question, of course I am.”

Nux replied.

“H-Huh?”

This time, even Astaria couldn't help but make a dumbstruck expression.

“You are scared?”

She questioned again.

“Oh c'mon, you are an Emperor Stage Cultivator, of course I would be scared if I had to fight you directly. You are the strongest person in the entire world!

It is completely impractical to fight you.”

Nux shared his thoughts.

Astaria couldn't believe it.

Well, it was not like she didn't agree with Nux's words, however, to openly admit that he was scared...

Just where is his dignity as a King Stage Cultivator?

Shouldn't he strive to fight stronger opponents in order to improve himself?

Also, why is he acting like he is the right one here?

What's with the look that screams,

'I don't know why everyone fails to understand such a simple thing?'

Astaria didn't know how to react,

She wanted to fight this boy, however, with that attitude of his, there is no way she could do that.

Even if she forces him to fight her, he would simply act weak and run from the situation, he would not fight her seriously.

Astaria needed a way,

A way to make Nux fight without holding back or... being scared.

Suddenly, a small smile appeared on Astaria's face.

She then glanced at Nux and spoke,

"Fight me."

"I told you didn't I? There is no point in testing it, I am weaker th-"

"If you defeat me, I will agree to what you wanted."

"Huh? What I wanted? What are y-"

Nux frowned however, soon, his eyes widened in surprise and a wide smile appeared on his face,

“Are you sure?”

He questioned again.

“Do you think I would lie to you?”

Actually, let me clarify it right now,

If you want to get what you want, the only way you can get it is by defeating me.”

“So I just need to defeat you, right?”

Nux questioned.

“Heeh? I never thought defeating me was so simple.” Astaria teased.

“It doesn’t matter,”

Nux’s smile widened,

“I just have to do it.”

“So? I will ask again, do you want to fight me?”

“You didn’t leave me any other option, did you?”

Nux answered and Astaria’s smile widened,

The two of them took their battle stance, Astaria then turned towards Iria and Phorus, and,

“You two should step back,”

Nux turned towards his wife and nodded,

His wives nodded back and stepped back,

“W-What just happened?”

Suddenly, Iria questioned with a shocked look on her face.

“Same question, that boy seemed so unwilling to fight her.., just what happened?” Phorus questioned.

“Yes, what were they talking about? What does that boy want? He seems quite motivated to get it.” Iria questioned.

Amaya, however, just sighed,

“Just think of it as two of them signing a deal...

A deal Lady Astaria would look back on a lot in the future.”

‘Hehe~ We should call her Sister Astaria now~’

Skyla was already ready.

Hearing Amaya’s answer, Iria frowned,

“Why do I get the feeling that you are insinuating that Lady Astaria would lose? That boy is strong, but do you really think he can defeat her?”

“Who knows? I only know that where he was walking was a dark area without any directions, now he can see a direct path.

A thorny one, but a path is still a path, and if it is him,

He would definitely walk through that path.”

“What do you mean?” Iria narrowed her eyes,

“Forget about it,

Just know that you are about to see a remarkable fight today,

A fight where a King Stage Cultivator would go against an Emperor with everything he has.”

# Chapter 534

“Heeh, I like that confident air surrounding you, boy.”

Astaria smiled teasingly.

Nux smiled back,

His Black Purple Sword appeared in his hand and he replied,

“Let’s start the fight, shall we?”

“Heh.”

Astaria chuckled, then, she raised her hand and pointed at Nux,

“Come.”

Nux didn’t wait either,

He disappeared and then appeared right in front of Astaria, without giving her any chance to react, he aimed at her neck, Astaria, however, simply stepped aside and dodged his attack.

Unlike Keeve, Reeve, and the others, who were having a hard time reacting to his speed, Astaria did it with ease.

This didn’t affect Nux, he continued to attack, aiming at the neck, legs, shoulders, and chest, repeatedly however, Astaria continued to dodge his attacks with a teasing smile on her face.

“You are quite slow, aren’t you?”

Astaria questioned.

Nux, however, completely ignored her teasing and continued to attack.

Astaria shook her head, she then dodged the sword that was aimed at her right shoulder, using that chance, she closed the distance and,

“Let’s end it.”

She punched his abdomen.

Soon, however, a frown appeared on Astaria’s face.

She knew that her punch connected, however, something felt wrong.

She felt that most of the power behind her punch was... dispersed?

It was a strange feeling that Astaria was having a hard time describing, however, in summary, she felt that her punch didn’t have the effect that it should have had.

And that was clear from how Nux was only pushed back rather than passing out and losing consciousness.

“How did you do that?” Astaria questioned.

“...”

Nux, of course, didn’t reply. He would be a fool if he revealed his tactic in the middle of a battle.

However, Astaria’s curious side was already chewing her out, she wanted to find the answer to her question.

A wide smile appeared on her face and a fierce aura was released from her body.

“Don’t want to answer? Alright, you give me no other choice, boy. I just have to punch you again to see and analyze it myself.”

Suddenly, Nux felt his body getting heavier.

He quickly realized that it was Astaria's Aura. The technique she used the first time he met her in the Royal Hall.

The technique that rendered him completely useless and immovable before.

He glanced at Astaria and saw her walking towards him with a sadistic smile on her face.

“Don't blame me, boy. You should have answered when I asked.”

However, to Astaria's smile, in this seemingly dire situation, a smile appeared on Nux's face.

Astaria then noticed a strange Black Mist coming out of Nux's body, the strange Mist quickly surrounded his entire body and Astaria noticed that something was wrong with her Aura.

It was... weakening?

A frown appeared on Astaria's face.

She then increased the pressure to maximum, a move that broke Nux's legs last time, however, this time, let alone breaking his legs, it couldn't even faze him.

Astaria narrowed her eyes when she realized what was happening.

Her Aura wasn't weakened, that, she was sure about, and at the same time, she also knew that Nux's strength hasn't increased compared to that time,

The problem was that Mist.

That Mist was working like a protective layer that was somehow 'eating out' her Aura, making it completely useless against Nux.

“That Mist...”

Seeing that strange Mist, Iria quickly turned towards Amaya, however, she then noticed that even Amaya had a frown on her face.

‘Did he just Devour her Aura using the Devouring Mist?’

Amaya questioned inwardly.

‘Is that even possible? How can he Devour something that doesn’t even have a form?’

Amaya couldn’t understand.

She has been trying hard to understand the Devouring Mist for quite a long time now, however, from her understanding, the Devouring Mist could only devour something that actually has some sort of Form.

Aura, on the hand, was something like... it reflects a being’s presence, it is supposed to be formless.

A better example would be Mana,

Mana inside a Being’s Body has a form, which is the reason why the Devouring Mist could devour it, however, the Mana present in the air is formless, it wasn’t something Devouring Mist could just... devour...

That isn’t how things work!

“Heh, that is quite an interesting thing you got.”

Astaria laughed.

“Anything for you~”

Nux replied with a playful smile as well.

“Was that how you dealt with my punch before?”

“Who knows?”

Nux just shrugged.

Astaria smiled.

Well, she was smiling, however, inwardly, her frustration was at new peaks.

Of course, she knew she could defeat him in one move, she wanted to do that, however, at the same time, she wanted to see how far this boy could go.

“Boy, you are definitely showing me many more interesting things than I thought you would.”

Astaria gave a strange compliment in her own way, then,

She disappeared.

Nux’s face turned serious, his body took his Battle Stance and he activated his [Sense].

Astaria appeared behind him, punching him from behind, but again, Astaria felt that similar feeling. The major portion of power that her punch contained had dispersed.

Astaria frowned, however, at the same time, a smile appeared on her face as she continued to deliver more and more punches while Nux tried to dodge a few and use his strange technique to disperse others.

\*Bam\* \*Bam\* \*Bam\*

The fight continued.

‘Hmm?’

A frown appeared on Ember’s face as she turned into another direction.

‘Was it just me or did you guys feel a movement as well?’

She questioned using the connection.

‘Huh? What are you talking about?’

Thyra frowned, she then quickly used [Sense] but didn’t see anything.

‘I didn’t notice anything.’

Amaya spoke.

Ember’s frown deepened.

‘I definitely noticed some- You felt that?’ Ember spoke.

Thyra narrowed her eyes.

At the same time, Astaria punched Nux again, since he wasn’t in any position to dodge, he had no choice but to take on the punch directly.

Amaya tilted her head in confusion.

‘Is it Nux’s doing?’

# Chapter 535

[Mirror]

[7-Star Ability.]

[Description: Allows the Host to open an invisible Portal of radius 10 cm, which can Transfer a certain amount of damage to an Area the Host desires.]

[Cost: 100 MP per use.]

[Note: The Damage that exceeds the Portal's Threshold is endured directly by the Host.]

[Damage Nullification: 4000 HP]

An absurd ability, an ability that completely nullifies the attack that can cause up to 4000 HP of Damage.

This reduction was more than twice Nux's Health.

What does that mean?

It means he could completely nullify the attack that could kill him more than 2 times.

That was how absurdly powerful this ability was.

Nux wouldn't be wrong to call it Absolute Defense.

Of course, the ability wasn't an ultimate ability, it had its flaws as well.

The Radius of the 'Portal' for example, so if he fails to block the entire attack within that Radius, or makes a wrong calculation and created a portal at the wrong place, the attack would harm him.

In fast-paced battles, using this ability was difficult and required high focus and Battle Senses.

However, Nux had a cheat.

He had [Sense], this ability made executing [Mirror] a lot easier.

To be honest, Nux believed that as long as he successfully creates the [Mirror] at the correct place, harming him would be impossible.

However, just like always, Astaria was breaking all his beliefs.

Her attacks weren't strong enough to break the [Mirror], so technically, the [Mirror] should be able to Transfer her attack completely, however, for some reason, Nux was still taking damage every time Astaria punched him.

Not only that, but the Mana Consumption of this Ability was insanely high, even with his Mana, which was boosted by his Blank Points, Nux couldn't use it more than 20-25 times.

Of course, this amount should be enough in a regular fight, however, fighting against Astaria, who didn't seem to be tired at all even after unleashing so many monstrous punches, this was nowhere near enough.

“Boy, whatever you are doing, it is praiseworthy, a normal King Stage Cultivator would have died if he had taken on any of these punches.”

Suddenly, Astaria chuckled.

“...”

Nux didn't say anything and just showed a confident smile, but inwardly, he was boiling in anger.

‘Of course he would have died! Just what kind of monster are you!?’

At the same time, Nux created a [Mirror] in front of him again, the power behind Astaria's punch disappeared, and the impact pushed Nux away.

Just like before, Astaria didn't give Nux any time to recover and dashed toward him.

Suddenly, a smile appeared on Nux's face, and as soon as Astaria appeared close to him, a Big, Black-Purple spike right below Astaria's foot.

A frown appeared on Astaria's face, the Mana surrounding her Body quickly moved to her feet, she increased the pressure and then jumped away.

The Spike, which should have pierced her body into two parts, was destroyed before it was even formed.

“This is quite an Amusing Trick as well. If only it was a little denser and stronger, it would have been much more useful.”

Hearing her words, Nux's face twitched in annoyance.

These Spikes were the ones that pierced through so many soldiers, wearing 4 Star Armors, the Spikes also parried the attacks of King Stage Cultivators, when it came to density, even the Durability, it could be called one of the Most Durable Materials in the world.

And...

And here she was... breaking it apart like it was nothing.

“Though I wonder, what type of material is that? Is it the Earth Element? I have seen a few Cultivators use Earth like you use this, but... this thing is stronger than what they use.”

“...”

Nux however, didn't answer any of her questions, he was busy thinking about different ways to fight against this monstrous woman in front of him.

Seeing this, a smile appeared on Astaria's face, the Nux who was always smiling as if he had everything under his control, seeing him make an expression like that,

It was oddly satisfying.

“Still, for you to continue this fight for so long, I must say, it is quite impressive.”

Astaria teased even more.

Suddenly, a small smile appeared on Nux’s face,

“Indeed, for a King Stage Cultivator to stand against an Emperor Stage Cultivator for so long, I am sure this has never happened in history before.”

“...”

Astaria turned silent.

“You are quite good at ticking your enemies off, aren’t you?” She questioned.

Then, she disappeared and appeared right in front of Nux.

But again,

Black Purple Spikes popped out of the ground, this time, 4 of them targeted Astaria’s limbs, and one targeted her eyes.

This time, Astaria tried to jump back but she soon realized that there were two Spikes behind her back as well.

In the end, a sigh escaped her mouth and,

\*Bam\*

She punched the Spikes and destroyed all of them.

“...”

Nux didn’t know what to say...

“I let my guard down...”

Astaria commented, then, she glanced at Nux and narrowed her eyes,

“But I can afford to let my guard down, you, on the other hand, cannot.”

“What do you mean?”

Nux frowned.

“Stop holding back, people would laugh at you if you tell them that you were holding back against an Emperor Stage Cultivator.”

“ ... ”

Nux didn't reply.

“What? Do you seriously think you have what it takes to Kill me?”

Astaria questioned with an amused smile on her face.

“ ... ”

Seeing that he was still not reacting, Astaria frowned.

“Nux.”

She called.

Nux glanced at Astaria then Astaria revealed,

“I haven't even used half of my strength yet.”

“Huh?”

Nux's eyes widened in surprise.

“What? Did you really think you could go against an Emperor?”

“ ... ”

“Do not hold back, Nux.

Show me everything you have.”

“Alright then.”

Nux then took a deep breath.

Seeing his reaction, Astaria smiled, a silvery white sword appeared in her hand, she then pointed it at Nux, waiting for him to attack, however, as soon as she blinked,

Nux disappeared.

# Chapter 536

‘Huh?’

Astaria frowned. This time, Nux actually disappeared from her vision, which, shouldn’t have been possible considering that her speed was way higher than his.

Many questions popped up in Astaria’s head, however, she kept all of them aside and in a fraction of a second, she prepared her body to take on Nux’s attack and enhanced her senses.

“ ... ”

More than a few seconds passed but nothing happened.

A frown appeared on Astaria’s face.

Wasn’t he going to attack her?

What happened?

Wait...

A smile appeared on Astaria’s face and she joked,

“After all that build-up, you aren’t telling me that your ultimate technique is hiding from me?”

“ ... ”

There was no answer.

Astaria narrowed her eyes. She turned towards Nux’s wives to see their reaction, however, seeing the frowns on their faces, she realized that they were as confused as she was.

‘Is he... using [Conceal]?’

Felberta questioned with a frown on her face.

‘But we still had our eyes on him, [Conceal] won’t take effect unless he uses it when he is out of the target’s vision.’

Thyra pointed out.

‘Yes, [Conceal] doesn’t work like that, also, I am pretty sure Nux told me that [Conceal] wouldn’t work on Astaria.’

Amaya nodded.

‘Then what is it?’

Ember questioned.

‘I don’t have any idea.’ Amaya shook her head.

‘Heh, it’s not like we know what those Purple Spikes are, also, the way he is dealing with her punches, that doesn’t seem normal either,

Don’t forget, Nux has been visiting the Bloodhill Wilderness pretty often nowadays, he seems much more serious about Cultivation than ever before, I am sure he has developed some new abilities.’

Allura smiled proudly.

‘Heh, to think he would go toe to toe against an Emperor Stage Cultivator.’ Ember commented with an amazed look on her face.

‘Guys...’

Suddenly, Felberta called out.

‘Nux has been focusing and training to get stronger a lot more than before...’

You don't think it is because he predicted what Lady Astaria's demand beforehand, do you...?'

'...'

'...'

'...'

Everyone turned silent.

'That... that... might actually be possible...'

Suddenly, Ember spoke up.

Everyone turned towards her and Ember started explaining.

'It is not like it is his first time being challenged like this...'

'Yes, you challenged him as well.' Thyra nodded.

'Yes, if I think about it now, me and Lady Astaria have a lot in common, she may not show it directly as I do, but, I can still feel that there is a warrior inside her. There are chances that that warrior is now resting since Lady Astaria's cultivation talent is simply absurd and she has already reached the peak,

However, I can perfectly see a warrior challenging a man who confessed to her and giving herself away as a reward.

Not only that, but Lady Astaria is also an Emperor, just like how a strong and capable man would never enter the Harem of a woman weaker than her, she wouldn't just enter Nux's Harem when he is weaker than her. That would be disrespecting her cultivation which she has worked for so many years now.

If he thinks about it, predicting her conditions wouldn't be too difficult for Nux, and since he knows he can't just grow stronger using his previous method...'

‘He is using all these methods to get stronger.’ Evane completed Ember’s sentence.

‘Indeed.’ Ember nodded.

The women came to a new conclusion and turned towards the battlefield.

‘And his method seems to be working...’

Amaya commented.

‘Indeed.’

Felberta and the others nodded.

‘Don’t conclude things too early.’

Ember, however, shook her head.

‘Emperor is called the peak for a reason.’

She commented, her expression turning serious.

On the other hand, since she failed to provoke him, Astaria took a deep breath and closed her eyes to heighten her senses.

However, as if he was waiting for this exact moment, Nux appeared right behind Astaria, in a position where Astaria couldn’t dodge even if she wanted to.

His sword moved, Astaria’s eyes widened in surprise, she tried to defend herself, however, it was already too late.

In a desperate situation, Astaria was forced to move her Mana to her shoulder, where Nux was aiming at, and prepared for the impact.

\*Tap\*

However, in the end, Nux just placed his sword on her shoulder, without any force in it.

Astaria frowned.

‘Is he trying to show me that he won? Does he really think that successfully aiming at my shoulder defea-‘

Suddenly, Astaria’s eyes widened in surprise and,

\*Pukes\*

She puked blood.

However, Astaria didn’t have the time to remain surprised, a horrifying feeling enshrouded her entire body.

Fear, she felt fear.

Her instincts kicked in, the Mana inside her body moved as quickly as it could and quickly dispelled Nux’s attack.

Seeing this, a weak smile appeared on Nux’s face,

“I still couldn’t do it huh...”

Blood trailed out of his mouth and,

He passed out.

“NUX!!”

Seeing that, his women quickly rushed towards him, Ember, being the fastest quickly appeared beside him and placed his head on her lap.

“Nux!”

She shouted, she then wiped the blood that came out of his mouth, however, as soon as she touched his skin, her reaction changed.

She quickly grabbed his arm, then touched his biceps, then her hand went over his chest and her eyes widened in horror.

“What happened?” Amaya questioned as she and the others crouched around Nux’s body.

“E-Every single one of his muscles are shaking... something is wrong!” Ember replied.

“Call a Medic!”

Amaya shouted.

Lane, however, was already on her way to the Royal Palace.

The rest of the women prepared a healing potion and tried to feed it to Nux but it came out of his mouth.

“He isn’t drinking it,” Amaya spoke.

Without a second of hesitation, Ember drank the potion and then kissed Nux.

Soon, however, she broke the kiss and shook her head,

“His body is rejecting it.”

“Huh? What does that mean!? Let me try it!”

Amaya shouted.

Ember, however, stopped her before she could do anything, with a serious look on her face, she spoke,

“His body is rejecting it, there must a reason behind it.

Calm down and think properly.

Let’s wait for the medics.

Don't act recklessly.”

# Chapter 537

“His body is rejecting it, there must a reason behind it.

Calm down and think properly.

Let’s wait for the medics.

Don’t act recklessly.”

Ember spoke with a serious look on her face and Amaya finally calmed down.

“A-Alright.”

She stuttered.

She then waited for the medic, and she didn’t have to wait for long as she suddenly heard screams coming from afar.

“Put me on the ground! On the ground! Aagaaaggghhhh!!”

Everyone turned towards the shout and saw Lane carrying a man in her arms and running towards them.

She then quickly appeared in front of them all and placed the medic right in front of Nux.

“Your broken door will be repaired, now take a look at him. He is unconscious.”

Lane spoke.

“ ... ”

Iria and Phorus didn’t know what to say.

“W-Wasn’t she the calmest out all...?”

Iria questioned.

“I-I thought so as well...” Phorus nodded with a strange expression on his face.

‘Wait...’

Suddenly, He felt like he was forgetting something.

His eyes then widened in surprise, he quickly turned around and saw Astaria sitting on her knees with a shocked look on her face.

“Lady Astaria!” He shouted and quickly rushed towards her.

Iria’s eyes widened in shock as she ran towards Astaria as well.

“Lady Astaria, are you alright?”

Phorus questioned.

Astaria then finally came out of her reverie and stood up.

“Y-Yes, I am fine. Not a problem.”

At the same time, she wiped her mouth which still had some blood.

Seeing that, Iria and Phorus turned silent.

The two of them looked at the ground, where Astaria had puked blood, and then turned towards Nux who was currently surrounded by his women.

‘Lady Astaria bled...’

The two of them had the same line of thought.

That man made Lady Astaria, the strongest being in the world, puke out blood... monster, fucking monster...

How in the hell is he so strong!?

They couldn't understand.

Phorus then noticed that Astaria had started walking toward Nux,

“Is he alright?”

She questioned.

“You dare ask that!?”

Amaya quickly turned towards her and questioned. She was fuming with anger.

Felberta quickly placed her hand on Amaya's shoulder and turned towards Astaria,

“Lady Astaria, I apologize, she is a little concerned, please forgive her rude behavior.”

Astaria glanced at Felberta and nodded.

Then she turned towards the Medic and questioned again,

“How is he?”

The medic quickly recognized her as the woman who even the King Stage Cultivators were afraid of and answered as respectfully as he can.

“L-Lady Astaria, I apologize for n-not being capable enough, but I c-can't seem to figure out what the problem is.

To me, it only looks like he has overworked himself, but if I am being completely honest, the shaking of his muscles is too much to be considered as an effect of just overworking...”

“So you are saying that you can't understand and diagnose the problem?”  
Amaya narrowed her eyes.

Seeing her gaze, the Medic took in a deep breath.

“Amaya.”

Ember called out. She then patted the Medic’s shoulder and questioned again,

“You don’t have to be nervous, you can say what you want to say.”

“N-No, Lady Amaya is n-not wrong, I can’t say anything for certain, I have never seen anything like this before.” The medic replied.

“Do you have any suggestions or any other Medic that you think might know about this situation?” Felberta questioned.

The Medic, however, shook his head,

“I am the best Medic in the entire Kingdom, I can’t think of anyone who can help you. I can only suggest you place him on a bed and since his body is not accepting the Healing Potion, please don’t force it.

It might have bad effects.”

“So we can only wait...?”

Allura questioned.

“For now, that is indeed the only option. You can place him in the Royal Infirmary, there, I can keep my eyes on him all the time and if something happens, I can deal with it accordingly.” The Medic replied.

“Alright, we will do as you say.” Ember nodded.

She then stood up with Nux in her arms and all of them walked towards the Royal Infirmary.

The ‘Test’ ended.

...

2 Days passed by and after lying down, without a single movement for 2 whole days, Nux's pinky finger finally moved.

This little reaction was enough to alert all 10 women who were in his room.

Yes, 10, not 9, Astaria was inside the room as well.

Everyone then turned towards Nux, his muscles had stopped shaking and his breathing had calmed down, according to the Medic, he was completely fine, however, the women still insisted on staying in his room.

Nux's eyes finally moved and under everyone's desperate gaze, he finally opened his eyes.

“””Nux!””””

The women spoke.

“Now isn't that an amazing welcome...”

Nux replied in a weak tone.

“You still have the mood to joke around, you bastard,” Felberta spoke.

“Heeh? What happened? Why are you all acting like that?” Nux questioned.

“...”

His women looked at him with blank looks on their faces.

Nux then looked around and a frown appeared on his face.

His eyes then fell on Astaria, who was standing behind all his women, near a wall and he finally recalled what happened.

“Ahh... the spar...

I passed out huh...

How many hours was I out for?”

He questioned.

“2 Days.”

Edda answered.

“Huh? 2 Days?”

Nux was shocked.

“Yes, 2 whole days, you idiot!”

Felberta complained.

“Awee, were you worried?” Nux didn’t let this chance go by.

Felberta’s mouth twitched,

“If only you hadn’t just woken up...”

She swore.

Nux chuckled.

“You are so cute~ Tsundere~”

“I don’t care! I don’t even know what this darn Tsundere is!” Felberta retorted, her eyes a little moist.

Seeing that, Nux stopped his teasing,

“Don’t worry, I am perfectly fine, there is no way I will ever die, you know that, don’t you?”

The recoil of the move I used was a little more than I thought, that’s it.”

“Right, that move,”

Suddenly, Ember's face turned serious.

“Nux, what was that?”

# Chapter 538

“Nux, what was that move?”

Ember questioned with a serious look on her face.

Hearing this question, Nux’s face turned serious.

“Alright, you all catch up with each other, I will be taking my leave now. Nux, don’t overwork yourself, you look fine right now, but just to be sure, take rest for the next few days.”

Suddenly, Astaria spoke and then turned around.

“Huh? Lady Astaria, where are you going? Do you not care what happens to me?”

Nux dramatically sad expression appeared on Nux’s face.

“That’s not it, you know Nux, Lady Astaria was just as worried for you as we were, she has been staying in this room for the last 2 days waiting for you to wake up, and just like us, she didn’t even eat anything.”

Skyla spoke with a small smile on her face.

Others may not know what she was trying to do, Nux, however, knew about it perfectly well.

A small smile appeared on his face as he thanked her inside her heart,

‘Skyla, how can you get more and more lovelier with each passing day? Just how is this possible?’

Nux then glanced at Astaria and smiled teasingly,

“Oh? Lady Astaria, I didn’t know you cared so much about me.”

“Don’t be ridiculous. I was only here because I had nothing else to do.”  
Astaria replied with an expressionless face.

At the same time, she momentarily glanced at Astaria.

Nobody knew what she was thinking.

Nux, of course, wasn’t planning to leave this golden opportunity this easily.

“You may say that, but I know you care about me deep in your heart, and your actions just proved that.”

“Keep dreaming.” Astaria snorted.

“If this is a dream, I wish to never wake up~”

“W-Whatever. I am going now.”

Astaria turned around.

“If you stayed here for the whole 2 days, then why would you leave now?”  
Nux questioned.

“As I said, I was only here because I didn’t have anything else to do, but now I do, so I need to leave,” Astaria replied.

“Oh? Are you telling me that you are not interested in the technique that a King Stage Cultivator used to make the strongest person in the world, an Emperor Stage Cultivator, puke out blood?” Nux questioned teasingly.

He was sure that Astaria’s inner warrior wouldn’t be able to control herself.

“Nux.”

Suddenly, Astaria called out.

“Hmm?” Nux tilted his head in confusion.

“That move is your trump card, your wives are okay, but you should not share your trump card with others, it can bite you back in the future.”

“ ... ”

Nux turned silently.

He finally realized why Astaria was so adamant about leaving.

‘So that’s what she was worried about.

Heh, she is surprisingly cute~’

Nux smiled inwardly, then, he glanced at Astaria and spoke,

“Do you think I would have used that move in front of you if I didn’t trust you?”

“Huh?”

Astaria frowned.

“Lady Astaria, in my eyes, you are just like my wives.”

“H-HUH!?”

Astaria’s face turned bright red as she glared at Nux in anger. If he wasn’t lying on the bed right now, she would have punched this shameless bastard.

Nux smiled at her reaction then changed his words,

“I mean, I trust you just like I trust them. I know for sure that you won’t betray me. I mean, what would you get from betraying an insignificant King Stage Cultivator like me.”

“ ... ”

Astaria turned silent.

Nux's smile widened and he continued,

“Also, this technique is not my actual trump card.”

“W-What?”

Astaria's expression changed as she narrowed her eyes,

“Were you holding back?”

“Huh? Of course not.

You already know about my trump card, don't you?” Nux smiled teasingly as he glanced at all his women before turning towards Astaria.

Astaria realized what this body was talking about, and seeing him smiling like that, her mouth twitched.

“I am taking my leave, I am not interested in that useless technique of yours!”

Saying that, Astaria walked away.

However, before she actually left, she stopped, and without turning around, she spoke,

“Meet me when you have completely recovered, I need to talk to you about something.”

Then, she walked away.

Nux just smiled.

Seeing him act like that, Evane frowned,

“You are really enjoying this, aren't you?”

“I plead guilty.”

Nux raised his hands and smiled.

“I feel like I have seen this scene before.”

Suddenly, Thyra, who was sitting next to Nux muttered as she glanced at Ember.

Ember’s face turned red.

“I looked as defenseless as she is looking right now huh...” She realized.

“It was quite fun to watch actually, seeing you act so strong even though I knew how you would end up.”

Thyra smiled teasingly.

“...”

Ember didn’t know what to say.

She was embarrassed.

“Hehe~ Don’t act like you were any better.”

Suddenly, Skyla chuckled.

Thyra’s face turned red as well.

Skyla then placed her hands on her waist and stood up with a prideful look on her face,

“Hehe~ As your senior, I have seen how every single one of you was defeated shamefully. Fufufu~”

“Haah? Since when were you the senior most? Did you forget your place?” Felberta snorted.

“Oh c’mon Sister Fel, didn’t we fall at the same time? Where is your comradery? Don’t be so selfish. Me you and Sister Lane are the Senior

Most.” Skyla waved her hand.

“Comradery my ass, I was the First Wife, don’t try to change it.” Felberta didn’t step back.

“Haahh... Sister Fel, you are too selfish~”

Skyla shook her head and sighed.

Felberta’s mouth twitched, she wanted to reply, however,

“Nux, you still haven’t told us about your new ability.”

Ember jumped in and asked about a more serious topic.

Other women’s expressions changed as well.

They wanted to know what Nux was hiding.

Nux has been training himself for a while now, they didn’t ask about his new abilities since they thought he was keeping it a secret.

However, if any of his ability hurts him like before, they had to know all about it.

Nux’s face then turned serious and he started explaining.

“I now have 3 new abilities...”

# Chapter 539

[Mirror.]

[7-Star Ability.]

[Description: Allows the Host to open an invisible Portal of radius 10 cm, which can Transfer a certain amount of damage to an Area the Host desires.]

[Cost: 100 MP per use.]

[Note: The Damage that exceeds the Portal's Threshold is endured directly by the Host.]

[Damage Nullification: 4000 HP]

...

[Dark Amethyst.]

[7-Star Ability.]

[Description: Allows the Host to summon and control the Metal name Dark Amethyst freely. Can be used for Defense, Attack, and Crowd Control.]

[Cost: Depends on the quantity of the Dark Amethyst summoned.]

[Note: Dark Amethyst is one of the strongest Materials in the World.]

[Note: Host can only summon Dark Amethyst through Earth, and not through any other medium like Air and Water.]

[Note: The farther the Host summons the Dark Amethyst, the more MP will it cost.]

...

[Blink Fault]

[7-Star Ability]

[Description: Allows the Host to move into a Subspace when the Target Blink, the host will then appear near the Target, the Host's Weapon will be instilled with Ultrasonic Vibrations which allows the Host to send these Ultrasonic Vibrations into the Target's body, dealing damage to the Target's Inner Organs.]

[MP Cost: None.]

[Note: Dealing with Vibrations will have an adverse effect on the Host's body, the Host needs to have a strong body to tackle the backlash of this ability.]

[Note: This ability deals Absolute Damage.]

[Absolute Damage: All defenses are ignored.]

[Damage Dealt: Depends on the Target's inner Resistance and the Organs affected.]

[Maximum Damage Dealt: 6000 HP.]

These were the 3 new abilities that Nux had bought from his System, he was already thinking about buying new abilities after he realized how he was using his system so inefficiently.

After giving the Body Cultivation techniques to his women, he started searching for better Weapons for everyone and new abilities for himself.

And after searching for so long, he finally found techniques that were the most suitable for him.

His first ability, Mirror, it may be a little hard to use in battles, but with proper practice, it was not that hard. With this ability, he now had a strong

defense that completely ignores the attacks of any King Stage Cultivators, and can even defend against some attacks of an Emperor Stage Cultivator.

After a technique for defense, what he needed was an attacking technique.

The System had many options, each was better than the other, however, what Nux needed was different.

He never bought any technique thinking about fighting against a crowd.

If his opponents were King Stage Cultivators or less, he didn't need any abilities, he could take them on himself.

When buying new abilities, he only thought about fighting against an Emperor Stage Cultivator.

And to fight against those monsters, he needed a sure shot technique, a technique that only focuses on a single target, never misses, and deals high damage.

[Blink Fault] was a perfect technique.

The concept it used was different from normal.

Rather than using elements like Fire, Water, Air, Earth, or something like that, it used Vibrations.

A concept that Nux deeply underestimated.

He only bought this Ability because of the concept of moving into a subspace and then appearing near the enemy and the feature of Absolute Damage. He completely underestimated the concept of instilling Vibrations into his weapon and attacking the enemy.

It was only after he tested this ability on a 5-Star Beast did he understand how scarily absurd the concept of Vibration was.

To be honest, back then, the backlash of this attack wasn't that high.

Although he felt very weak after his attack and had to keep [Conceal] activated for the rest of the while and had to leave the wilderness after that, he didn't pass out as he did 2 days ago.

He still couldn't understand how that happened.

Well, he had a rough idea but he still wasn't sure, he needs to confirm this after talking with Astaria.

Anyways, the third ability he bought was something he could use for Crowd Control, and [Dark Amethyst was a perfect choice, the moment his eyes fell on this ability, he didn't even read any more abilities and bought it directly.

It is also his most used ability now, after [Conceal] and [Sense] of course.

With these three Abilities, he now had perfect attack, defense, and crowd control abilities.

He wanted to buy more abilities to improve his speed, health, and regeneration, however, as soon as he bought his Third Ability, a message popped up.

[The Host has bought a total of 8 Abilities from the System Shop, the host cannot buy any more Abilities.]

[Note: The limit cannot be increased.]

Yes.

He has used the System Shop to the limit.

A limit that he didn't even know existed.

To be honest, when Nux learned about it, he shouted at the top of his lungs.

'System Bastard! Couldn't you tell me about this Limit sooner!?'

He would have been more careful when buying abilities if he knew about this.

To be honest, at the end of things, he thanked himself for not buying anything randomly, most of the abilities he had bought were still something he could use, so he was happy.

But at the same time, he was also a little disappointed.

The highest ranking ability he has is only a 7 Star Ability, he didn't have even a single 8 Star Ability.

Nux thought that may be... maybe he should have waited till his 8 Star Abilities are unlocked before he could buy more abilities.

Well, anyways, there was no point in regretting anything right now.

It was his system's fault for not giving him a prior warning.

Snorting inwardly, Nux sighed and then glanced at his women, who were looking at him as if he was some sort of monster.

"I don't even know where to start..."

Ember sighed.

"He is as absurd as always."

Thyra sighed as well.

"I have no clue why you have access to these ridiculous abilities." Amaya sighed.

Then, she narrowed her eyes and spoke out her thoughts,

"Actually, I have been thinking about all this since you explained your past to Lady Astaria, and now that I finally have a chance,

Let me ask you a few questions, Nux."

# Chapter 540

“Actually, I have been thinking about all this since you explained your past to Lady Astaria, and now that I finally have a chance,

Let me ask you a few questions, Nux.”

Amaya spoke with a serious look on her face.

“Hmm? What is it?”

Nux tilted his head in confusion.

“You were an orphan, correct?”

“Yes.”

“Then you left your orphanage and started living a normal life before you met Felberta.”

“Mhm, that’s right.” Nux nodded.

“However, between the time you ‘started living a normal life’ and ‘meeting Felberta’, something seems to be missing. From what I have learned, the ‘normal life’ you were talking about was not normal at all. Rather, it was a life where you barely managed to earn your meals, sometimes, you even slept without eating anything, which, with your mortal body, must have been very difficult.

I have learned that you were rather meek, didn’t talk to many people, especially females, heck you even rejected Felberta’s offer once.”

Amaya explained and Nux turned silent.

Seeing that, Amaya frowned and made her point,

“However, when you met Felberta, you did a complete 180, let alone not talking to women, you even started approaching them first.

To be honest, I had a hard time believing that you, of all people, stayed away from all the women. I had to verify this information from 7 different sources before believing it.”

Amaya spoke and others nodded.

“Nux not talking to women? That is hard to believe.” Ember nodded.

Others didn’t stay silent either and nodded as well.

Nux didn’t talk with women? Heh, impossible.

“...”

Seeing all of them acting like that, Nux didn’t know what to say.

‘Just what kind of image have they created in their mind about me?’

He couldn’t help but wonder inwardly.

Amaya glanced at Nux and narrowed his eyes,

“So can you tell us what happened to you? How did you change so suddenly? How can someone, who never talked with women turned into the biggest playboy I have ever met? How come do you not have any lover before you met Felberta, even if you didn’t approach them first, I don’t believe that none of the women approached you themselves.”

The other women glanced at Nux’s face, all of them wanted an explanation. None of them would back down when it came to knowing more about Nux.

Seeing their expression, Nux shook his head and sighed, then he glanced at his women and started,

“Alright then, guess I will tell you the truth.”

The women's expression turned even more attentive.

"The real Nux Leander is dead."

Nux dropped the bomb.

"Huh?"

Everyone had the same reaction.

"What are you talking about?"

Amaya questioned.

"I am not the real Nux Leander.

Well, I am Nux Leander, however, I am not the Nux Leander from this world, I came from a different world."

"I don't understand."

Evane frowned.

"Different world? What are you talking about?"

Allura frowned as well.

Nux turned towards her and questioned,

"You remember those stories I used to tell you?"

"Ahh, those oddly entertaining ones?" Allura's eyes brightened.

"Yes, those were popular tales from my previous world."

"Previous world?" Allura frowned.

"So it's like this, when Nux caught Felberta's eyes, she sent a few people to talk to him, however, the people she sent weren't very patient, Nux, who

rejected Felberta's offer was beaten by them,

He was beaten to death.”

“What!?”

Felberta's eyes widened in shock.

“Yes, at the same time, I, who died in my original world, my soul entered this Nux's body, you can say I transmigrated into this world.

That was the reason why my personality completely changed, because, I am literally another person living in Nux Leander's body.”

Nux explained.

“ ... ”

His women turned silent.

Nux gave them time to digest what he said.

“That explains why you are so absurd, you are from a different world huh.”

Edda commented.

“To think a different world exists...”

Lane, who didn't speak much commented in awe as well.

“Ahh, so that's why the original Nux didn't rise in rankings because the Dual Cultivation ability was not his, but yours.” Felberta realized.

“I wonder how strong you were in your original world,” Ember questioned.

“Wait, if you were so strong, then how did you die in your original world? Was it because of old age? What was your cultivation stage there?” Evane questioned.

“Uhh... well, you are misunderstanding something...”

Nux started explaining.

“My original world was much simpler than this world, the concept of cultivation didn’t exist there. Everyone was a mortal, and a few lived for more than 100 years. I died when I was 35 years old because I met an accident.”

“A world where Cultivation doesn’t exist? How were the Kings chosen then?”

Everyone frowned.

Nux then started explaining more and more about his original world, answering every question that came into his women’s minds.

“Alright Alright, I get everything, now answer the main question.”

Suddenly, Amaya’s face turned serious and she questioned.

“How many women did you have in your previous world? Or rather, how many women did you have sex with? And do you still have lingering feelings for those women? If you had the chance to return to that world, would you leave us and go for them?”

An eerie silence fell over the room as every woman turned towards Nux, their eyes burning with curiosity and... fighting spirit?

Seeing their expression, a strange smile appeared on Nux’s face as he replied,

“I was a virgin.”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“...huh?”

The women looked at him with blank looks on their faces.

Yes, none of them believed him.

Even if he wasn't very good-looking, or he didn't have this dual cultivation power or anything else, someone like Nux stayed a virgin for 35 years...

That was simply impossible.

Seeing their reactions, Nux just smiled wryly.

“I don't believe you...”

Felberta narrowed her eyes.

“Well, I don't have any reason to lie to you.

Felberta, you were the one who took my virginity, for both my lives.”

Nux spoke and even though she was still narrowing her eyes, doubting him, a small smile appeared on Felberta's face.

Other women glanced at her with jealous looks on their faces.

“So wait, you are saying that you had no lovers in your previous life?”  
Amaya questioned.

“Well, I had a few girlfriends but my relationships didn't work, so no,

You all are my only lovers.

So even if I had the option to go back to my world, if I couldn't take you all with me,

There is no way I would leave.”

Nux smiled.

“You all are an irreplaceable part of my life.

My lovely wives~”

# Chapter 541

“You are awake.”

General Phorus spoke as he glanced at the man who was lying on a bed.

“I-I did...”

Keeve turned towards Phorus and replied.

“Why are you two here?”

He questioned.

“Well, we just wanted to check on you all.”

Iria answered.

Keeve then turned around and realized all the other 5 King Stage Cultivators of the Shadow Unit were lying on different beds as well.

A wry smile appeared on his face,

“We really lost huh...”

“Don’t be too hard on yourself. That man is simply a monster.” Phorus, who understood what Keeve was thinking about spoke. Iria, who was standing behind him nodded as well.

Keeve chuckled,

“I know that. I had a first-hand experience.”

“I had a few questions that I wanted to ask. I would be grateful if you could answer them, of course, I can come later if you are tired and don’t want to answer them right now.”

Phorus spoke.

“Is it about the fight?” Keeve questioned.

“Yes, that is correct.” Phorus nodded.

“I also wanted to talk to someone about this battle, so please ask.” Keeve smiled.

“Why didn’t you attack him?” Phorus questioned.

A frown appeared on Keeve’s face as he questioned back,

“What are you talking about?”

“The time when he was knocking out all your subordinates, why didn’t you attack him? Were you going easy on him? Why were you acting as if you could not see him?”

Phorus questioned and Keeve’s frown deepened,

“I have no clue what you are talking about. I admit, I was thinking of going easy on him at first, however, when he took down the 3 King Stage Cultivators at the start, I gave up on that idea.”

“...”

General Phorus turned silent and frowned.

He didn’t understand what Keeve was saying.

Suddenly, Iria stepped in and questioned.

“You remember when you all came out of your tents and started looking for him?”

“Yes, I do.”

Keeve nodded.

“That man was attacking all your subordinates, why didn’t you attack him?” Iria questioned.

“Hah? Do you think I didn’t want to? I just couldn’t do it because he was moving around sneakily and we couldn’t find him!”

Keeve retorted.

Iria and Phorus frowned.

Seeing their reaction, Keeve frowned as well.

“Why are you two acting like that?”

“He... he was right in front of you...”

Iria revealed.

“What the hell are you talking about you?”

“It is not just you, he even passed by Reeve and Wysten, but all of you acted like you couldn’t see him. You were not alone, even the other members of the Shadow Unit were acting strangely.

They were running around, trying to find him, when he was walking by right in front of them. He just simply follow the people who entered the tents in order to ‘find him’ and knocked all of them before coming out as if nothing happened.”

“I don’t understand...”

Keeve thought that the two of them were trying to make fun of him, however, seeing their serious expression, he realized that it was not the case.

“So you are telling me that you couldn’t see him?” Iria questioned.

“No, we couldn’t, in the entire battle, we only saw him when we used formation O, before that, we were helpless.”

“Then... how could we see him...?”

Phorus questioned out loud.

“Was it just an illusion?”

Iria, however, shook her head, “No, that was an illusion. I am sure of it. Whenever he came out of the tent, the soldiers inside were knocked out, an illusion can’t do that.”

“...” Keeve didn’t know what to say.

In his mind, the images of him going against that man, and how he effortlessly defeated them continued to run.

The more he thought about it, the angrier he got.

They, the Shadow Unit, the strongest Unit in the world... were played around like they were some bugs and that too, in front of the women they all respected so m-

Wait...

“Where is Lady Astaria?”

Suddenly, Keeve questioned.

“She is with that man.”

Phorus replied.

Keeve clenched her fists and then smiled weakly,

‘She wouldn’t bother to meet the losers, would she?’

“He passed out after the battle, it seemed more serious than your case, so she looked a bit worried,” Phorus explained.

“He... he passed out?” Keeve questioned.

“He did.” Phorus nodded.

Hearing that, for some reason, a smile appeared on Keeve’s face.

‘At least we didn’t lose that badly, even he had to use all his strength and overexert himself to win against us.’

And as if sensing what he was thinking about, Iria spoke,

“Yes, after he seemed to have overexerted himself when he was fighting against Lady Astaria and passed out.”

“Huh? H-He f-fought against Lady Astaria?”

Keeve’s eyes widened in surprise.

“He did...”

Phorus’s expression turned serious.

“W-What was the outcome...?”

Keeve questioned.

“Do you even have to ask that?” Iria questioned back.

“Ha... Haha... hahaha... that’s true, I don’t have to ask... of course Lady Astaria won... didn’t she? It must have been an easy battle for her.

There is no way that man could have fought against her...

So how long did he last against her?

5 Seconds? 10 maybe?”

Keeve questioned.

“...”

Phorus and Iria turned toward each other and didn't answer.

Seeing their reactions, Keeve's eyes widened in surprise as he thought about an absurd possibility.

"H-Hey, you are not telling me that he w-won, right?"

"Huh? Of course not! Lady Astaria is the strongest being in the world, how could she possibly lose against that man? Don't be ridiculous!"

Phorus retorted.

"R-Right, my bad. I... my mind is currently a mess. I apologize."

Keeve nodded with a relieved smile on his face.

"However,"

Suddenly, Phorus's face turned solemn as he revealed,

"That boy still managed to make her puke blood and fall on her knees."

"WHAT!?"

Keeve's eyes widened in surprise.

"Y-Y-You are lying, right?" He questioned with a hopeful look on his face.

Phorus smiled wryly as he replied,

"I wish I was... but..."

I am sorry to tell you Keeve...

The truth is,

That man held back when he fought against you guys."

# Chapter 542

“Lady Astaria, we are here.”

Keeve and Reeve bowed their heads as they walked into Astaria’s room.

Astaria glanced at the two of them and questioned,

“How are you people feeling?”

“We are fine, Lady Astaria.”

Keeve replied, however, he didn’t dare to look into Astaria’s eyes as he answered.

He was embarrassed. Not only he, Reeve, Wysten, and the rest of the members of the Shadow Unit, all of them were embarrassed as well.

It has already been 3 days since they were defeated, however, the memories of it were still fresh in their minds.

And Astaria seemed to know about this.

“I shouldn’t have chosen you people to test that man huh.”

She commented, then, she sighed,

“Haahh... I made a mistake. I didn’t know that boy was so strong. I should have chosen someone else...”

Hearing those words, Keeve felt a strange pain in his heart, he couldn’t hold back anymore and spoke,

“It was not your fault, Lady Astaria, we were just too weak to fight against him. We didn’t train properly and got too conceited thinking we were the strongest Unit in the world when in truth, we were actually nothing.”

Reeve nodded as well,

“Yes, we should have trained harder, maybe then we wouldn’t have lost this shamefully.”

Astaria glanced at the two of them and questioned,

“Are you doing it now? The training I mean. Are you working on getting better, or are those just baseless words you are using to make yourself feel better?”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Keeve and Reeve turned silent.

“You people weren’t just sitting around, depressed that you lost for the last 3 days, were you?” Astaria questioned.

Keeve and Reeve tried to avoid eye contact.

“Look, that man was strong, honestly, even I was surprised by how strong he was, however, losing to him was not something to be ashamed of, nor it is something to be depressed about.

Make that man your goal, try to defeat it the next time to fight him, achieve heights that you never thought were possible, work hard and get stronger, if this still doesn’t work, work even harder,

Just don’t give up, you get that.

You are the strongest Unit in the world after all.”

“As you command, Lady Astaria.”

Keeve and Reeve nodded at the same time, their eyes shining in determination and fighting spirit.

Seeing that look in their eyes, Astaria smiled,

“Goo-”

However, just as she was about to praise them,

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

A knock was heard.

“Enter.”

Astaria commanded.

A man with wrinkles on his face walked into the room and greeted,

“Lady Astaria.”

“Wysten, why are you here?”

Astaria frowned.

Wysten glanced at Keeve and Reeve and reported,

“Queen Evane has summoned the Shadow Unit.”

Astaria’s expression changed and a small smile appeared on her face,

“So she is finally back huh...”

She then glanced at Keeve and Reeve and chuckled,

“Alright then, since the Queen herself has summoned you, I won’t hold back. Go and report to the Queen.

And do it with pride.

Show her that although you were defeated, you still haven’t admitted your defeat.”

Keeve and Reeve smiled as they glanced at Astaria and nodded.

“We will be taking our leave, Lady Astaria.”

Wysten spoke.

Astaria nodded. The three men then turned around, however, just as they were about to leave, Keeve turned towards Astaria and spoke,

“We will not disappoint you, Lady Astaria,

We will definitely defeat Lord Nux.”

Astaria smiled and nodded.

The three men then left and walked towards the Royal Palace.

There, they saw other members of the Shadow Unit and Queen Evane and her Sisters.

Their eyes started searching for a certain man, however, it seemed that the man in question wasn't there.

“Queen Evane.”

The Three Men greeted as they bowed their heads.

Evane glanced at them and nodded.

The three of them walked forward and stood near the other King Stage Cultivators.

“Prepare for the Phase 2 of the Lockdown.”

Evane ordered.

The Week that Queen Evane had given to all the spies living inside the Kingdom will be over tomorrow.

Of course, since nobody knew what was happening inside the Royal Palace, not many people took this warning seriously. Most thought that it was just a publicity stunt performed by Evane to increase her reputation.

Many did wonder why she was called Queen Evane rather than Princess, however, they didn't think too much about it and continued with their work.

If they would get scared about every little warning like this, they would have never worked as spies.

If only they knew what kind of mistake they were making...

If only they knew about the condition of the Royal Palace...

Many people inside the Royal Palace who had seen how Evane worked actually felt pity for all the spies who were thinking of going against the Kingdom.

To be honest, they were excited to see how Evane's actions would shock the entire Kingdom.

Everyone knew,

Once the given 7 days were over,

A hunt would begin.

Actually, Evane and others had already prepared for the Hunt and the initial targets were already locked. Nothing surprising, but there were even some Noble Houses that were on that list.

How will they go after the nobles?

Nothing special, they would just barge into their houses under the Royal Authority, and if anyone dares to go stop them, they would face retaliation.

A tyrant-like behavior.

Suddenly, Keeve stepped forward and reported,

“Queen Evane, preparations are already complete, I have sent my subordinates to all the boundary cities and towns, they all would work with the reigning City and Lords, and from there, they would completely lock all the exits.

As soon as tomorrow’s sun sets, leaving the Skyfall Kingdom would be impossible unless my subordinates, who are Grand Master Stage Cultivators, are defeated.”

Hearing his report, a smile appeared on Evane’s expressionless face.

“As expected from the Shadow Unit. Fast and efficient.

You are indeed the pride of our Kingdom.”

Keeve smiled inwardly...

Being recognized by Queen Evane...

For some reason, it felt rewarding...

Much more rewarding compared to the time they worked under King Ricardus.

# Chapter 543

d

“We will not disappoint you, Lady Astaria,

We will definitely defeat Lord Nux.”

Astaria smiled and nodded.

The three men then walked out of the room.

As they left, Astaria’s smile turned into a wry one and then she sighed,

‘Defeating him huh...

It’s not possible...

At least not until you become an Emperor Stage Cultivator.’

Of course, she would never say that out loud since this would simply break the Shadow Unit’s morale.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Suddenly, Astaria heard another knock.

“Enter.”

She ordered.

A man with black hair, golden eyes, and a handsome face walked in with a playful smile on his face,

“Lady Astaria, I am here.

Did you miss me?”

Astaria glanced at the man with a deadpan look on her face,

“Why would I miss you?”

“Because you fell in love with me and couldn’t get me out of your mind?”

Nux didn’t leave the chance.

“As shameless as usual I see.

And no, I did not fall in love and my mind works perfectly fine, so I don’t even think about you at all.”

Astaria, however, was already used to him and didn’t react at all.

“As cold as usual I see.”

Nux nodded to himself.

“No worries, I just need to defeat you, once that happens, you would naturally give your heart to me.”

He shrugged.

“...”

Astaria turned silent.

Seeing that, Nux frowned, he then glanced at Astaria and smiled playfully,

“You aren’t going back on your words, are you?”

“...”

Astaria didn’t reply.

“No way... are you actually scared that you would lose to me and are going back on your words?”

I don't know if I should be delighted or disappointed.”

“Didn't you...

Win the bet already?”

Suddenly, Astaria questioned in a low voice.

“Huh?”

Nux frowned, he glanced at Astaria and his eyes widened in surprise as he saw an expression he never thought he would see.

Astaria's face was red.

She was trying to avoid eye contact, however, not wanting to appear weak, she would look back at him, only to avoid looking into his eyes again.

Seeing someone like Astaria, the woman who radiated dominance and superiority, acting like that, Nux felt a strange twitch in his lower region.

Unconsciously, a playful smile appeared on his face as he walked toward Astaria and questioned,

“Heeeehh? What are you talking about, Lady Astaria?”

“Y-You won the bet...

You defeated me in our last battle...”

Astaria spoke.

Hearing those words, Nux frowned,

“But I didn't defeat you though?”

“Y-You held back in the end,

If you had attacked properly, the attack would have targeted my heart and I would have died...”

Astaria spoke.

Nux narrowed his eyes as he questioned.

“Are you looking down on me?”

Hearing that question, Astaria’s flustered expression turned into a frown as well,

“W-What are you talking about?”

“I did aim at your heart, although at the center, but I still aimed at the part of it.

If my attack was successful, you would have passed out.

Then I would have placed my sword at your neck and that would have been my victory, you, however, somehow stopped my attack midway before it could reach your heart.

So even if I had attacked at the center of your attack like you said, you would have countered it.”

Nux explained.

“...”

Astaria turned silent.

Nux was correct, even if he had aimed at her heart, she would have survived.

“I did not win that match.”

Nux stated.

However, Astaria disagreed with his statement.

For her, an Emperor Stage Cultivator, to puke blood when fighting a King Stage Cultivator, it was a defeat in her eyes.

And as if knowing what she was thinking, Nux brought his face close to Astaria's, and with a solemn expression on his face, he replied,

“Do not look down on me, Lady Astaria.

I will only accept my victory when I actually defeat you.

I don't want a victory that is given to me because of how pitifully weak I am.

Lady Astaria, I will defeat you.

I will defeat you fair and square, and I,

I will make you mine.”

Hearing those words, Astaria's expression changed.

She had never seen this expression on Nux's face.

An expression brimming with... pride... and confidence...

Nux on the other hand, backed away and stood in front of her.

There were many things going on in his mind.

He had the chance...

He had the chance to make Astaria his... however, for some reason, the inner him didn't allow it...

It was strange, however, when he thought how Astaria was giving him the victory, he couldn't help but feel... angry?

He was not a particularly prideful person and was pretty shameless in his ways...

Even he couldn't understand why he didn't just jump onto Astaria right there... but for some reason, he didn't hate himself for what he did...

Rather, he was rather... proud of what he did...

“Heh, I gave you chance, boy.”

Suddenly, a smile appeared on Astaria's face.

The flustered expression she showed before completely disappeared and was replaced by her usual confident self that radiated an air of dominance and superiority.

“And as I said before, I do not beg for what I want, I will take it myself.”

A similar smile appeared on Nux's face as well.

His Aura started to change...

It... was looking more and more like Astaria's aura...

This time, he didn't look like a man wooing the woman he loved, rather,

He looked like a warrior who was challenging another warrior.

“Alright then boy. I have decided.

I will train you.”

Suddenly, Astaria declared.

“Huh?”

“All the operations of you going to the Woods Dynasty and defeating Solid Earth Kingdom's soldiers will be postponed until I am satisfied with the results of your training and keep in mind, it is not a request.

It is a command.”

Nux didn't know what to say.

A crazy smile appeared on Astaria's face as she declared,

“Be prepared boy,

I will show you what hell looks like.”

Nux, of course, couldn't allow her to get one over him, therefore, his smile widened as well, and he replied,

“Heh, that is a good indirect way of saying,

‘I love you, so I will train you until we are a couple’.

I expected no less from you, Lady Astaria~”

# Chapter 544

“Heh, that is a good indirect way of saying,

‘I love you, so I will train you until we are a couple’.

I expected no less from you, Lady Astaria~”

Nux chuckled.

“Stop with your nonsense.”

Astaria retorted.

“We need to contact Amaya, with the sudden change of plans, I am sure that she would need to change her plans about the Woods Dynasty as well.

Wait a minute, let me call a servant,”

Astaria spoke, Nux, however, shook his head,

“Don’t bother, I already told her.

She says it’s a good thing, she needed some more time to contact the Woods as well.”

“Ah, she didn’t do anything for the last 2 days since she was beside you all the time.” Astaria nodded.

Nux smiled as he thought about it.

Soon, however, a frown appeared on Astaria’s face as she questioned,

“When did you contact her though? You were right in front of me...”

“That’s the power of true love, we can talk to each other no matter the distance.”

Nux smiled.

Then, he glanced at Astaria and continued,

“Don’t worry, you will be able to do it soon enough.”

Astaria didn’t react.

“Alright then.

Let’s not waste any more time,

Let’s go.”

“Huh? Right now?”

“Of course, or do you have something to do?”

Astaria questioned.

“Well, they must be preparing for phase 2 of the lockdown.”

Nux replied.

“Isn’t Evane there already? She can take care of that on her own. She is the Queen after all.

Use that magic of yours to tell her that you won’t be coming.”

Astaria ordered.

Nux didn’t have any other option but to do what he was told.

“You are really planning to take your student’s student huh...”

Nux commented with a playful smile on his face.

“Hmph! Now that you say it, I finally remembered that I still had a student.”

Astaria snorted.

“...did you really forget about your own student...?”

Nux questioned with a deadpan look on his face.

“Hmph! If the student forgot about her teacher already, why should the teacher remember her?” Astaria questioned back.

She looked like she was annoyed by something.

Seeing that, Nux frowned,

“What are you talking about? Teacher Arvina never forgot about you, she even brags how amazing you are at every chance she gets.”

“And yet she is still not here to greet the one she ‘always brags about’.”

Astaria snorted.

“Lady Astaria...”

Suddenly, Nux called out.

“What?” Astaria turned towards Nux and questioned.

“You do remember that the Royal Palace is under strict lockdown, right? Not even Teacher Arvina would be allowed to enter right now.”

“...”

Astaria turned silent.

“...”

Nux didn't say anything and continued to look at Astaria.

“I... I will go meet her after we are done with today's training session.”

Nux looked at Astaria's expression and sighed.

A silent agreement about not talking about this incident anymore was made.

...

In the training grounds, Nux and Astaria stood in front of each other.

“Now before I start your training, I would like to say a few things.”

“I am listening.”

This time, Nux didn't have his usual playful smile, he had a rather serious expression on his face.

An expression that Astaria liked a lot.

“You are strong.”

Astaria commented.

“...”

Nux didn't say anything since he knew Astaria hadn't completed her sentence.

“Honestly, when I learned about that absurd ability to grow while as you spend time with your women, I thought you were gifted.

With this kind of absurd talent, it was natural for you to become a King Stage Cultivator.

However, I thought that although you were granted this ability, this ability was also your biggest enemy.

Since attaining power was something easy for you, the respect you have for this power would be less.

I thought that although your cultivation was strong, your reflexes, your decision-making skills, your reaction to danger, your swordsmanship, every one of these things will be your weakness.

However, you proved me wrong.

When I saw you fighting against the Shadow Unit, I realized that your reflexes were rather good and when I fought against you, I understood that you weren't someone who was conceited after getting that absurd power, rather, you trained from the basics.

It is not something that is easy to do, especially when you have the power to rule over the world without doing anything.

You are a strong cultivator Nux.”

Astaria praised.

A smile appeared on Nux's face, however, in reply, he just nodded and his expression turned normal again.

He was sure that Astaria wasn't just telling this to flatter him or something like that, she must have a goal.

“So from now on, I will not be comparing you to the King Stage Cultivators.

I will be comparing you with your next targets,

The Emperors.”

Astaria spoke and a glint shone in Nux's eyes.

“The current you can go against Emperor Stage Cultivators, especially against someone like Amletus Skadi.

To be honest, after a little bit of training, I am certain that you can even defeat him.”

“Huh?”

Nux’s expression finally changed.

Seeing that, Astaria smiled and explained herself,

“Yes, Amletus Skadi, his talent is absurdly high, he never took cultivation seriously but he still became an Emperor. However, since he lacked a basic foundation, he became the weakest of all the 4 Emperors in the world.

Of course, if he is serious, defeating him is next to impossible, however, the thing is,

He is never serious.

He is arrogant and conceited, especially if he realizes the one he is fighting against is a mere King Stage Cultivator.

You can use this in your favor and defeat him using the technique you used against me.”

Nux absorbed every single word Astaria said.

“That technique really is the greatest trump card you currently hold, for the current you, it is even more important than your ability to Dual Cultivate.

If you used this technique correctly and take your opponents by surprise as you did with me, I am sure you can kill Amletus, and even Alcimus Woods, the third Strongest Emperor.”

Nux’s raised his eyebrow in shock and astonishment.

# Chapter 545

“If you used this technique correctly and take your opponents by surprise as you did with me, I am sure you can kill Amletus, and even Alcimus Woods, the third Strongest Emperor.”

Nux’s raised his eyebrow in shock and astonishment.

His technique was that strong?

He didn’t know...

To be honest, when Astaria deflected his technique, he realized that his technique may not be as strong as he thought it was.

However, he forgot something when he came up with that judgment...

Astaria Skyfall, this woman standing in front of him, was the strongest being in this world.

No one... absolutely no one could defeat this woman...

The fact that he managed to injure this woman...

It was a great feat that many wouldn’t dare to believe.

A small smile appeared on Nux’s face.

Then, a small frown appeared on his face as she questioned,

“What about Herms Lizander?”

Hearing his question, Astaria smiled and then answered honestly,

“That old man is different.”

“Why is that?” Nux questioned.

“He is not like the other two Emperors.

Herms Lizander, before I became an Emperor, he was known as the strongest being in the world.”

“Oh?”

“Indeed. Unlike Amletus and Alcimus, that man didn’t become an Emperor based on his talent alone. He has participated in countless battles, he possesses an unbreakable will, and his mastery over his skills is strong.

He is a formidable opponent that I respect from my heart.”

“That is quite a high praise coming from you.”

Nux commented.

“Well, he deserves it. There was a time when he was the man I looked up to, after all.” Astaria replied with a smile.

“I don’t get it.” Suddenly, Nux frowned.

“What is it?” Astaria questioned.

“If Herms is so strong, then why was the Solid Earth Kingdom called the weakest? Shouldn’t it be called the Second Strongest?”

“Ahh, you must have heard that the rank of a Kingdom is judged by how strong the Protector of that Kingdom is, right?”

Nux nodded.

“The truth is that the rank is the combination of the strength of the protector and the strength of the Kingdom itself.

Skyfall Kingdom has the strongest army, and obviously the strongest protector, which is why its rank is undisputable first.

Solid Earth Kingdom, on the other hand, is different. Its protector is strong, however, its army... its army is incredibly weak...

Well, at least that's what the people thought before... but as you can see, with Herms interference, their army is a lot stronger than before.

So you can say if the Kingdoms are ranked again, then the Solid Earth Kingdom would be ranked at 2nd place."

Astaria explained and Nux nodded in understanding.

"I have another question."

"Ask."

"You placed Amletus Skadi and Alcimus Woods in the same category, however, when you talked about Amletus, you seem oddly... repulsed? Is there a specific reason?

Do you have some sort of enmity with him?"

Nux questioned.

"Well, if I am being honest, I am repulsed by that man," Astaria admitted.

"Why is that?" Nux questioned.

"He is weak."

"Huh?"

"He is weak, and he is conceited.

It is a combination I hate the most."

Astaria spoke with a disgusted look on his face and continued,

"That man continued to make fun of me even before I became an Emperor.

‘A woman becoming an Emperor? Hahaha~ What a joke! Girl, can you even take this huge responsibility on those tiny shoulders of yours? Hahaha! You should rather go cook for your husband and be a good mother.’

He used to say that whenever we met.

Of course, I always ignored him and didn’t react.

He was an Emperor, he was strong and the strong had the right to do anything, therefore, I couldn’t react.

I continued to train and soon, I become an Emperor.

When he heard that, he rushed and challenged me to a duel.

He was trying to take advantage of the fact that I had just recently broken through and was trying to ‘show me my place’.

Of course, I accepted the battle and that’s why I realized...

That man was pathetically weak...

He wasn’t even a worthy match...

After speaking all highly and mightily like that and then showing that much strength...

To be honest, I don’t hate that man, rather, I hate myself that I allowed that man to talk down to me so many times. It hurt my pride.”

Astaria shared the shortened version of the story.

“ ... ”

Nux didn’t know what to say...

This woman...

Just how badly did that Amletus perform for her to act like this?

If anyone heard her say these words, they would feel like even they could defeat that so-called emperor...

“Anyways, we are not here to talk about all this. We are here for your training, so stop thinking about all this useless stuff.”

“R-right.” Nux nodded.

“Your real training will start tomorrow,

Today, I will tell you about Mana.”

“Mana?” Nux frowned.

Suddenly, a small smile appeared on Astaria’s face and she spoke,

“Let me tell you a secret Nux,

When it comes to raw strength,

You are stronger than me.”

“Huh!?”

Nux’s eyes widened in surprise.

What was she talking about?

He has fought with this woman.

She was someone who somehow affected him, passing through the defense of [Mirror] with just her raw strength alone.

Nux knew that although he was strong, there was no way he could possibly do something like that.

“What we emperors use to strengthen ourselves is Mana.”

Astaria revealed.

“Mana?”

Nux frowned.

Suddenly, Astaria walked towards a thick wall, she took a battle stance and punched the wall.

A few cracks appeared on the walls.

Astaria then walked towards another, a similar type of wall,

“Watch carefully.”

She spoke.

Nux narrowed his eyes,

“Trust your senses more than eyes,” Astaria spoke.

Nux frowned, then suddenly, he realized that the Mana in the air was moving strangely,

\*Bam\*

\*BOOM\*

Astaria punched the wall and,

The wall burst into pieces.

“!!!”

Nux’s eyes widened in surprise.

He realized what Astaria was talking about.

# Chapter 546

“!!!”

Nux’s eyes widened in surprise.

He realized what Astaria was talking about.

“Y-You are directly using Mana!”

He spoke.

“Indeed.”

Astaria’s smile widened and she nodded.

“Unlike normal Cultivators, who use Elements present in the Mana to partially use the strength of Mana, we, the Emperors directly manipulate Mana.

The Purest form of power.

We use Mana to strengthen our punches, we use Mana to increase our speed and we use Mana to strengthen our defenses.

We use Mana for everything.

We have the perfect attack, defense, and speed,

That is the reason the Emperors are the strongest.”

“T-Then if you run out of Mana...

Does that mean I can defeat you with raw strength?”

Nux questioned.

Astaria, however, shook her head,

“It is not that simple.

The Mana we emperors use is not the Mana we have stored inside our Mana.

The Mana we use is the Mana in the air.”

“What!?”

Nux’s eyes widened in shock.

“Indeed, the Emperors manipulate the Mana present in their surroundings to fight. They do not use their own Mana.

So... for you to defeat us using your raw strength... it would only be possible if all the Mana in the world is dried up, which is of course...”

“Impossible.” Nux completed.

“Indeed.” Astaria nodded.

“So you are telling me that since Emperors will not use up their own Mana, they can continue to fight for as long as they want?” Nux questioned and again, Astaria shook her head.

“Well, there is also our physical stamina, we can’t fight for a long period of time since even we will eventually get tired.

Also, it is not like we do not use Mana at all.

We need to use some of our own Mana to stimulate the Mana in the air.

So although rare, there are cases when even Emperors run out of Mana.”

Astaria explained.

“ ... ”

Nux turned silent.

“What happened?”

Astaria questioned.

“This is absurd...”

Nux commented.

“Please, I don’t want to hear that from you.”

Astaria shook her head.

“Why are you even telling me all this? It is not like I can Manipulate Mana...” Nux questioned.

Soon, however, his expression changed as he questioned,

“Or are you saying that there is a way for me to use Mana directly just like Emperors?”

Astaria, however, chuckled and shook her head,

“That is not possible, don’t be ridiculous.”

“...”

“The reason I am telling all this to you is that if you know this fact, then you can use this to your advantage in a fight against the emperors.”

Astaria spoke.

Nux narrowed his eyes.

Astaria smiled, “Think about it, Emperors are strong, however, when it comes to raw strength, you overpower them. What would happen if you attack them before they have the chance to gather Mana?”

“ ... ”

Nux turned silent and started thinking about what Astaria said.

“If I attack them before they could put up their defenses...

Then I can defeat them.”

Astaria’s smile widened,

“Indeed.”

“So if I somehow manage to launch a sneak attack, then I can defeat an Emperor.”

“Correct.” Astaria nodded.

“However, things are not that simple.”

“Hmm?”

Nux tilted his head in confusion.

“As Emperors use Mana around them, their sensitivity is higher than normal cultivators, sneaking up to them... is a task that is close to impossible since they would react to even slightest of change around their Mana.

And as you know, every being affects Mana in some way or another, so as soon as you go near them, the Mana will be affected and they will be alerted.”

Astaria explained.

Nux’s frown deepened,

“Then what’s the point of telling me all this? I can’t defeat Emperors this way, now can I?”

He questioned.

To be honest, if Emperors are sensitive to Mana, even if [Conceal] worked on them, he still wouldn't be able to sneak up on them.

[Conceal] affects his presence, it has no effect on the surrounding Mana.

“Nux, if defeating Emperors was that easy, anyone would have done it. Just because you know how Emperors fight doesn't mean that you would be able to defeat them.

What I told you was a way.

I showed you the way to defeat an Emperor.

I told you their weakness.

I told you, my weakness.

How you take advantage of this depends on you.

You have to think outside of the box, you have to come up with a way yourself, because if I knew about it, I would have done the impossible and would have defeated the Emperors when I was a King Stage Cultivator.”

Astaria spoke and Nux turned silent.

Astaria was right.

What she shared was incredibly informative, it was something that barely a handful of people in the entire world knew, now how he would use this to his advantage depended on him.

“Of course, that doesn't mean the training is over. The training hasn't even started.

However, what I will train you for is not ‘how you can defeat an Emperor’, I would train you on ‘how to defend yourself against an Emperor’.

I would train your reflexes, I would train your control over your Skills, I would train your swordsmanship.

I would refine you and turn you into the best warrior there is.”

Astaria announced.

Hearing those words, a smile appeared on Nux’s face as he spoke.

“I am looking forward to the training, Lady Astaria.”

“I hope you still keep this attitude after we are done.”

Astaria tilted her head as she smiled wickedly.

Nux, however, wasn’t intimidated and smiled as well,

“Don’t worry, I will keep up this attitude till I defeat you.

I promise you,

You won’t have to wait for long,

Astaria.”

Astaria wasn’t offended that he called her without using honorifics, rather, her smile just widened as a sword appeared in her hand.

“Alright then, let’s see if you are actually capable or are just full of words.”

A glint shone in her eyes as she looked forward to another spar,

Nux, however, suddenly stepped back as he replied,

“Didn’t you have to meet Teacher Arvina?”

“...”

Arvina finally recalled.

“...I forgot about it.”

Nux smiled wryly.

# Chapter 547

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“Hmm?”

A frown appeared on Riona’s face as she heard a knock.

“Enter.”

She ordered.

A servant then walked into her room and bowed,

“Lady Riona, you have been summoned.”

Hearing those words, Riona’s face turned serious.

Not many people could ‘summon’ her in the Royal Palace.

Actually, no one expect a single man had this power.

Even the King of the Skadi Kingdom can only call for her, going or not was still up to her.

However, if she was ‘summoned’, she couldn’t turn it out.

Especially since the person who summoned her was the strongest man in the Skadi Kingdom.

Riona nodded.

The servant bowed and walked away.

Riona quickly prepared herself and walked out.

Then, she walked into Amletus’s room and knocked.

“Enter.”

She heard a voice and walked in.

There, she saw a man whose features matched her own, black hair, black eyes, he wore golden white clothes and a suffocating aura surrounded him.

The man glanced at Riona and unconsciously, she bowed her head.

“Greetings, Lord Amletus.”

Riona’s eyes then finally fell on the King, who was looking at her with an angry expression on his face.

“Fath-”

He wanted to shout, however, Amletus glared at him and he stopped.

Then after correcting himself, the King continued,

“Lord Amletus, she was the one who told me about the mission, she was the one who told me to send my subordinates to help that Prince.”

Riona glanced at the King and didn’t say anything.

Amletus glanced at Riona and questioned,

“Do you have anything to say?”

Riona then turned towards Amletus and replied,

“If the King is acting on my words, you might as well make me the Queen and give me all power.”

“You-!”

The King was about to shout and Riona however, Amletus raised his hand and continued to glance at Riona.

“We have already been over it,”

“I understand that, Lord Amletus, according to our Kingdom’s rules, a woman cannot lead the Kingdom, I know that. However, our Kingdom rules don’t allow an incompetent King to sit on the throne either.”

Riona replied in a calm tone.

The King glared at her with hatred.

Amletus narrowed his eyes as well.

“We will discuss this another day, I wish to know about a different matter today.

Tell me, were you the one who told him to help that Prince?”

Amletus questioned directly.

“I did not tell him.”

Riona replied.

“Lies! She is lying! She was the one who gave me the letter in the first place!”

The King shouted.

Well, he couldn’t be blamed either.

If it was anything else, he wouldn’t have cared either, however, two King Stage Cultivators died in this mission, taking responsibility for this incident was not something he could do.

King Stage Cultivators were the active power of a Kingdom, after all.

“She was the one who came to me, telling me to send my subordinates to the Skyfall Kingdom. She must have already known that they would die,

that is the only reason she came to me and didn't send her own subordinates.

It is not a secret that the relation between the Cultivators who died and her wasn't good. Their death would definitely benefit her. She must have planned it.

No, I am sure of it.

She planned to borrow the enemy's blade to get rid of her enemies.

It is not like she has done it the first time.

Actually, I even suspect that she has ties with the Skyfall Kingdom, otherwise, just think about it, how would that girl defend against 3 King Stage Cultivators and survive?

That is simply impossible!"

The King placed all the blame on Riona.

Hearing his words, Amletus frowned. He then glanced at Riona and raised his eyebrow,

"Are you sure you didn't have anything to do with the letter? Would it be alright if I do an investigation of my own?"

Riona, however, shook her head,

"I never said that I had nothing to do with the letter.

And he is right, I was the one who gave him that letter.

However, I never 'told' him to send people to the Skyfall Kingdom, I only suggested it.

He even asked me why I am not sending my own subordinates to this mission, if I successfully completed it, my position would have solidified and there would have been a lot to gain, so why didn't I do it?

At that time, I gave him a clear answer.

I told him that I was not 100% sure of completing the mission due to lack of information, that's why I didn't send my subordinates there.

We actually had a decent chat about it and I even warned him to gather more information before making any moves.

It was he who moved hurriedly and stupidly sacrificed two of his most gifted subordinates, to be honest, as much as I am grieved about their deaths, in my heart, I blame them for following a foolish man's orders."

Riona replied and this time, the King turned silent.

Amletus realized that Riona wasn't lying.

He turned towards the King and narrowed his eyes.

The King avoided his gaze.

"Is what she said the truth?"

"..."

The King didn't say anything.

Amletus's eyes turned cold.

Inwardly, however, he sighed,

'Just how is my own blood so dumb? Did that bitch have an affair?

No, that is not possible...'

Amletus then glanced at Riona and sighed,

'Just why can't he be like her sister? I am sure this girl manipulated him, however, this idiot is such a big fool that he can't even prove his own innocence...

Haaahh...

If only you were born as a male...'

Amletus sighed.

"Be prepared for your punishment."

In the end, Amletus declared.

The King's face turned pale.

"Now leave."

Amletus ordered.

"F-FAthe-"

"I said leave."

Amletus repeated, this time, his tone was sterner than before.

The King turned silent and quickly walked out of the room.

Amletus glanced at Riona and,

"I said leave."

"I have something to discuss with you.

It is important."

"..."

Amletus glanced at Riona for a while and then, he questioned,

"What is it?"

# Chapter 548

Amletus glanced at Riona for a while and then, he questioned,

“What is it?”

“It is about the Solid Earth Kingdom.”

Riona replied.

Hearing that, Amletus narrowed his eyes and spoke,

“I told you to ignore that, didn’t I?”

“As someone who manages the entire Kingdom, I can’t simply ignore something that might, no that is affecting my Kingdom.”

Riona replied calmly.

“What are you talking about?” Amletus questioned as he narrowed his eyes.

“The Solid Earth Army is completely overpowering the Woods Dynasty.”

“And?”

“The speed at which they achieved this is not something our army can do. That means, if we do not use our secret force, then their army strength is stronger than ours. Of course, we are not sure that the results won’t be the same if we use all our forces.

After all, no one knows whether they have a secret force for themselves or not.”

Riona reported.

“I don’t understand, it is the fight between two other Kingdoms. How is it affecting us? Rather, since they are destroying each other forces, shouldn’t it profit us instead?”

“It is about the ranking, after seeing their army strength, many believe that the Solid Earth Kingdom deserves the second rank and our Kingdom does not.”

Riona replied.

“Heh, since when were you worried about things like ranking?”

Amletus chuckled.

“Since it is affecting our reputation negatively, I cannot help but worry. Who knows, the Solid Earth Kingdom might target us next and since I am unable to get any information on them, my worries are increasing.”

“You are thinking too much. They won’t attack us right after attacking another Kingdom. You should know that as well.”

Amletus waved his hand and shrugged.

‘Too unbothered...’

It is as if he already knows something...’

Riona noted his attitude inwardly.

“Rather.” Suddenly, Amletus glanced at Riona and his expression turned serious,

“Now that he is gone, let me ask you.

Did you manipulate him?”

“I do not understand what you mean.” Riona’s answer was quick.

“Let me change my question then,

Why did you kill 2 of our King Stage Cultivators?

No matter what kind of enmity was there between you two, killing them was too extreme.”

Amletus spoke as a suffocating aura surrounded Riona.

Riona’s expression changed, she could feel the air around her turning heavy.

She knew she couldn’t make a mistake here, therefore, with a slightly panicked expression, she replied,

“What I said was the truth, Raguel, the First Prince contacted me, I thought it was a good opportunity to get the Solid Earth Kingdom under us, however, I still wasn’t sure so I gave the letter to him.”

Amletus narrowed his eyes,

“I am not a fool like him, Riona.

Why would Raguel contact you, or the Skadi Kingdom in general when there were other options available.”

“No other options were available.”

“What do you mean?”

“The solid Earth Kingdom is completely sealed, entering the Kingdom was impossible, and Woods had their own problem to deal with.

We were the only options.”

“ ... ”

Amletus turned silent.

“You know how incompetent that man is, why did you give the letter to him, why did you not settle it yourself?”

“If I had actual power, I would have taken the risk, however, my position is very critical, I cannot afford to make a mistake.

I gave the letter to him because I wanted to cooperate, but that idiot kicked me out as soon as he received the letter, trying to take all the ‘credit’ for himself.”

Riona replied.

Soon, she felt the pressure around her decrease.

A small smile appeared on her face before disappearing.

She continued to observe Amletus’s reactions and then,

‘Time for phase 2.’

Deciding that, Riona continued,

“Actually, the Skyfall Kingdom is acting strangely as well.”

“Huh? What do you mean?”

Amletus tilted his head in confusion.

“When our cultivators were killed, I also wondered the same thing.

How did that girl survive against 3 King Stage Cultivators? What happened? How did this happen?

I had to know about it.

Therefore, I sent my spies to the Skyfall Kingdom.

There, I found something interesting.”

“What did you find?”

Amletus questioned with a curious look on his face.

“A challenge.”

Riona replied as she continued to read Amletus’s expressions.

Unlike the time she talked about the Solid Earth Kingdom, now his expressions were keen, he looked more alert, more involved, as if he was afraid he would miss some information.

“Challenge?”

“Yes, a challenge.

‘All spies should leave the Kingdom within 7 days.

Else, you will be hunted down.’

This was announced throughout the Kingdom.”

“A challenge to all the spies huh?”

Amletus quickly understood.

“Yes, and that’s not it.

The most interesting part is that the person who ordered this announcement was Queen Evane.”

“Queen Evane?”

Amletus frowned.

“What happened to Ricardus?”

“I had the same question, I ordered my Spies to infiltrate the Palace, however, I learned that the Palace was completely sealed. They couldn’t enter the Palace no matter how hard they tried.”

“Sealed?”

“Yes, just as the Solid Earth Kingdom sealed their entire Kingdom, Skyfall Kingdom Sealed their Royal Palace.”

“This is not something that princess can do on her own...”

Amletus commented.

“Indeed...”

Riona nodded.

“So that woman is out huh...”

“Huh? That woman?”

Riona frowned.

“Astaria Skyfall, the protector of the Skyfall Kingdom.”

Amletus informed.

“Ahh, the one who is called the strongest being in the world?” Riona questioned.

She then noticed a slight change in Amletus’s expression and frowned.

“Strongest my ass, that woman is just lucky.” Amletus snorted.

Riona’s frown deepened.

“So did you not learn anything else about the Skyfall Kingdom?” Amletus questioned.

“There is one thing I have learned, however, this is only a rumor, I do not have any proof yet but if I am being honest, I am positive this is true.”

“What is it?” Amletus questioned.

“The Skyfall Kingdom will help the Woods Dynasty.”

Riona revealed.

“Huh?”

Amletus’s expression changes.

“Yes, they plan to send an army to aid the Woods Army and get rid of the Solid Earth Kingdom’s Army.”

# Chapter 549

“Try to condense more Wind Elements under your feet, some with better control are able to do so with such preciseness that sometimes, they don’t even have to place their foot on the ground for running, it is close to flying, however, achieving it is much harder and require years of prac-”

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“Hmm?”

While Arvina was teaching in her class, someone knocked on the doors, a frown appeared on her face, she turned to the doors and questioned,

“Yes?”

The doors opened and a bald man walked in with a smile,

“Teacher Arvina, someone wants to meet you.”

A strange smile appeared on Arvina’s face as she replied,

“Principal... I am currently teaching, please tell them to wait till I am finished.”

The Principal laughed awkwardly,

“Teacher Arvina...”

I don’t think you should make that person wait...”

“Huh?”

Arvina frowned.

There weren’t many people who could make this baldy act like that.

It must mean that whoever wishes to see her has a very high status.

Even so, Astaria wasn't someone who would bow her head and break her morals. Her expression turned strict and she replied,

“Principal, I am currently teaching. No matter who it is, for me, my students come first. I will meet that person later,

Please tell him to wait.”

Arvina spoke.

“Oh? To think that I need to wait in order to see you, you are busy indeed.”

Suddenly, a woman walked into the room.

Seeing that woman, the students frowned.

Who was she?

How can she enter the classroom like that?

Also, why couldn't they sense her cultivation?

Was she a mortal?

If she was, then what's with that suffocating pressure coming from her?

Just who was she woman?

The woman, however, completely ignored all the students and walked toward Arvina.

Seeing her, Arvina's eyes widened in surprise,

“Teacher!”

She called out as she rushed towards Astaria.

Astaria smiled.

“Teacher, you are here!”

“Since my student didn’t bother to come to meet me, I thought I would do it myself,” Astaria replied.

“That’s not it, I did come, however, they didn’t allow me to enter.” Astaria clarified herself.

Astaria chuckled as she patted Arvina’s head, then, she turned towards students and spoke,

“Alright little brats, the class is over. Leave.”

“H-Huh?”

The students frowned.

You can do that?

They wondered in their head, however, seeing that Teacher Arvina didn’t stop her teacher, the students understood that it did happen.

The class was over.

Before students could say anything, Astaria brought Arvina out of the classroom.

“I will leave them to you.”

She spoke to Baldy and Baldy’s body flinched.

“A-As you command, Lady Astaria.”

As they left, the students turned toward their principal and asked with curious looks on their faces,

“Principal, who was that Lady?”

“Yes, tell us, what is her identity? Why does she sound so rude?”

“Yes, she was even rude to the Principal. How dare she, the principal should teach her a lesson.”

Hearing their words, Baldy felt like his soul would be taken away by the grim reaper, his heart skipped a beat and,

“S-Shut up you brats!”

He shouted.

...

On the other side, Astaria and Arvina, who were now taking a stroll started catching up with each other,

“How have you been?” Astaria questioned.

“I am fine of course. With you here, can anyone say anything to me?”

Arvina smiled.

“Hahaha~ Look at you. You got good at flattering huh.”

Astaria laughed, and Arvina laughed as well.

“How about you, Teacher? How are you? A lot of things happened, right? Even you were forced out of your closed-door cultivation.”

Arvina commented.

“A lot of things indeed happened.”

Astaria nodded.

“Mhm.”

Arvina nodded as well.

“I finally got my revenge on that Ricardus Bastard.”

Astaria revealed.

“WHAT!?”

Arvina’s eyes widened in shock.

Seeing her reaction, a smile appeared on Astaria’s face.

“Mhm, now you are free.”

Arvina was someone who was ‘sold’ by her family to the King. However, unlike others who just accepted their fates, Arvina never did that, she resisted Ricardus at every chance she got.

For some reason, Ricardus liked that even more.

Conquering someone like Arvina became like a game for him.

Arvina knew that as well, she knew that this man was just playing with her, however, she didn’t care.

She continued to resist.

Her family had already abandoned her, so she didn’t care about them, with nothing to lose, she continued to fight.

And one day, when Ricardus was trying to force himself on her, she pushed him away and attacked him with a vase.

Of course, since Ricardus was a King Stage Cultivator, he wasn’t hurt, however, his ego was hurt.

All the games were over.

He walked towards Arvina, ready to use force, unlucky for him, Astaria, who was watching Arvina for a while was impressed by her spirit and since

it was a great opportunity to take what Ricardus wanted from him, she decided to interfere.

At first, she only did it to annoy that man, however, soon, she got attached to Arvina and even though she wasn't particularly talented, she liked her spirit and started training her.

Since then, their relationship grew and Arvina then learned about Astaria's son.

“D-Did you kill him?”

Arvina questioned.

“Of course not, that will be too easy. He will be executed in front of everyone after Evane is crowned as the next Queen in the next few days.”

“Next Queen... ahh... so that's why they called her Queen Evane in the announcement.”

“Indeed, she has already taken over as the Queen.”

Astaria informed.

“How is she doing?”

Arvina questioned.

She was actually worried about Evane.

As far as she knew, Evane was not suitable to become a Queen.

“She? She is doing incredible. No, she is far more than incredible.

She would be a Great Queen.”

Astaria, however, had a completely different image in her mind compared to Arvina.

Arvina frowned,

“She is that good?”

She questioned in surprise.

“Of course, she is not alone, everyone around her are just monsters.

Especially that man.”

Hearing these words, Arvina’s expression changed.

“A-Are you talking about Nux?”

She questioned.

# Chapter 550

“A-Are you talking about Nux?”

She questioned.

“Hmm? Of course, I am. Can you even imagine any other man around Evane?”

That silly girl is practically attached to that man.

I don't even understand how she goes from being a strict, cruel, and upfront ruler, to a girl who does nothing but smile as she stick to that man.

The transition is just too shocking.”

Astaria sighed.

“A-A Cruel, Strict, and Upfront ruler?”

Arvina frowned.

She has seen that side where she just smiles while being spoiled by Nux, that side, she knows well.

But a Cruel Evane?

Was this some sort of joke?

“Hmm? You seem surprised.”

Astaria frowned.

“That girl has been staying in the Academy, right? So you must already have some idea about her, don't you?” Astaria questioned.

“...”

Arvina didn't know what to say.

Seeing this, Astaria frowned,

“Arvina, speak freely, what are you thinking about?”

“W-Well... the Evane I know... s-she is completely different than Evane you are talking about...”

Astaria then started talking about how she views Evane and even gave some examples.

Hearing those words, Astaria frowned.

A person can change, however, it takes time to change their core values.

There is no such thing as instantaneous change.

A person can act differently, however, in the end, a keener person would realize something is missing.

She knew about Nux's Dual Cultivation.

The ability to strengthen women as they mate, it was absurd, however, since she saw the results with her own eyes, she knew it actually exists.

However, for Evane to change to this degree just because she gained power...

That seemed too far-fetched...

Suddenly, Astaria narrowed her eyes as she thought of another possibility,

‘Does that man somehow alter his women's personalities as well?’

His women do seem abnormally attached to him...’

Soon, however, Astaria shook her head.

She has spent a decent amount of time with that man.

His wives may be abnormally attached to him, however, was he any different?

Wasn't he as crazy about his wives as they were about him?

Sometimes, he even looks even crazier than his wives.

Then... then why did Evane change so drastically?

There was only 1 answer.

A person can only change to this degree if he witnesses or goes through something that shakes their entire core.

Evane has been targeted by the assassins twice. Was this an incident capable of shaking her entire core?

Normally, yes it was. However, in Evane's case, where a monster like Nux was always beside her, something like this should not affect her to this degree.

Then it only meant one thing...

Nux and Evane were hiding something...

Astaria's face turned solemn.

'I need to ask that boy directly.'

She made up her mind.

Her eyes then fell on Arvina who was lost in her own thoughts and suddenly, a strange question popped up in Astaria's mind.

"Do you think that man is behind her change?"

“Hmm? Nux? Yes, no, actually, I am sure it has something to do with him. That boy...

He has a strange power of making people think and see things from different angles... and then do something they never thought they would ever do...”

“Huh?” a frown appeared on Astaria’s face as she noticed Arvina’s strange expression.

“What are you talking about?”

She questioned.

“Haa? Huh? O-Oh, I meant, yes, that boy must be behind that change. Well, it is good for us and the Kingdom, and from what you are saying, it seems like Evane is happy as well, so it’s a win-win.”

Arvina answered with an awkward laugh.

Astaria, narrowed her eyes as she continued to glance at Arvina.

“Arvina.”

She called.

“Y-Yes teacher?”

Arvina tilted her head in confusion.

“What do you think about Nux?”

“W-Well, he is an amazing student with exceptional talent. Not only that, he also has the will to learn things. He doesn’t just rely on his talent and works hard.

He is a good student that every teacher would wish to teach, however,”

“However?” Astaria frowned.

“That man is a women magnet.”

Arvina replied.

“Oh?” Astaria raised her eyebrow in curiosity.

“He is handsome, he is skillful and he is good with his words, he is everything a woman would look for in his dream partner, therefore, no matter where he goes, or what he does, he is always surrounded by women and do you know what’s worse?”

That shameless man would not run away from all this attention, he would rather enjoy it.

He would talk to all girls politely, sometimes he would talk to them with such a warm smile on his face that he would unknowingly steal those poor girls’ hearts.

However, even after all that attention, he would still go for women who clearly don’t want any relationship with any other man and would pester them till they fall for them, then, he would disappear.

He can be very annoying.”

Arvina explained.

“ ... ”

Astaria, on the other hand, couldn’t help but look at Arvina with a lost look on her face.

‘This girl...’

Astaria realized.

This student of hers has fallen in love with that man...

And to make things worse,

“Arvina.”

“Yes?”

“Do you like Nux?”

“Huh? Of course not, teacher. W-What are you talking about? Why would I like him? He is my student, I am her teacher. As her teacher and as a married woman, although I was forced to marry against my will and hate my husband to the core and hope he dies a gruesome death, which he would soon, how can I fall in love with my own student?”

That is simply not possible. Please don't even joke like that.

I am not that kind of woman teacher.

And you know it as well.”

“ ... ”

Astaria didn't know what to say.

Just as she expected...

This student of hers...

She loves that man and to make things worse, she doesn't even realize it.

‘Nux... you bastard...’

Astaria cursed in her mind.

“Arvina.”

She called again.

“Hmm?”

“You are coming with me to the Royal Palace.

You will be staying there from now on.

It's not a request but an order, so don't even think about going against it.”

“Huh!?”

# Chapter 551

“My Lord.”

A man walked into the room and kneeled.

In front of him, sat a man wearing a long white colored robe, and a white colored Kaffiyeh on his head (imagine a better-quality, white-colored sheikh clothes.)

“Report.”

The man spoke with a solemn expression on his face.

“The Delegates from the Skyfall Kingdom are here.”

Hearing that, the man’s smile brightened in joy.

“Don’t let them wait, call them in. Quick.”

He ordered.

It was clear that he was quite desperate to meet these delegates.

And why wouldn’t he be?

The Solid Earth Kingdom has been raiding their towns without stopping.

They have already lost 2 King Stage Cultivators and the number of lower-level soldiers who have died couldn’t even be counted.

They were completely helpless against the enemy.

He conversed with his Grandfather, the Protector of the Kingdom, however, due to that annoying treaty, he couldn’t move in either.

The enemy seemed unstoppable and continued to kill their soldiers.

They have already lost a lot, their reputation is taking a hit with every passing moment and things are getting worse and worse,

And in this hopeless-looking condition, one Kingdom actually came forward and showed them a helping hand.

And it was not just a normal Kingdom, it was the strongest Kingdom in the World, the Skyfall Kingdom.

Of course, Ellinger Woods, the Dynast of the Woods Dynasty would be excited.

The man who reported quickly stood up, bowed his head again and,

“I will bring them in a moment.”

He then turned away and left the hall.

2 Minutes later, a Man wearing black colored skin tights clothes and a woman wearing a long Purple Black Gown and a Black facemask walked into the Palace.

Seeing them, the people inside the Royal Palace couldn't help but keep their eyes wide open.

Especially when their eyes fell on the woman.

Although she had covered half of her face using a mask, just from the rest of the face that was visible, those black eyes that seemed to have stored an entire world inside them, those silky black raven hair, thin eyebrows, and white skin, one could tell that this woman was an unparalleled beauty.

Not only that, but besides being an unparalleled beauty, this woman was also a King Stage Cultivator.

Yes, this beautiful and delicate-looking woman was one of the strongest experts in this world.

As soon as she walked in, she completely overshadowed the man who was walking with her. The man also stood behind the women, showing that he was a subordinate. However, even this 'subordinate' was a King Stage Cultivator.

The message was clear.

The Skyfall Kingdom was showing off its strength.

When Ellinger's eyes fell on the woman, he was taken aback, his heart skipped a beat, he wanted to make this woman his, however, as soon as he looked into this woman's eyes, he completely kicked that thought out of his mind.

This woman was clearly someone influential in the Skyfall Kingdom, if it was a normal situation, he would not have held back, however, right now, he didn't have an option.

If he messed up, his grandfather would kill him.

With a serious expression on his face, he greeted,

“People from the Skyfall Kingdom, I, Ellinger Woods, Greet you from the bottom of my heart, please take your seat.”

His words flowed smoothly, no signs of his previous excitement could be seen, and his tone was neutral, neither submissive nor dominating.

A good sign.

The woman observed the Dynast for a moment, then, she greeted,

“My name is Amaya Leander, I hope our discussion today bears a fruitful result.”

For more chapters, please visit [pan\(da-n0vel.c\)om](http://pan(da-n0vel.c)om)

Amaya introduced herself with a slight bow, and the man behind her bowed as well.

Amaya then walked towards the seat and sat down while the man stood behind her.

“I hope the same as well.”

Ellinger nodded at the same time, he started searching for the name Amaya Leander in his head.

This was his first time hearing this name.

A frown appeared on his face since he couldn't recognize this seemingly influential woman, however, he didn't show anything outside.

“Dynast Ellinger.”

Suddenly, Amaya called out.

“Please speak freely, Lady Amaya.”

Ellinger spoke.

“Since we are short on time, I will not beat around the bush and will directly jump to the main topic.”

Amaya spoke, then, her expression turned serious and she requested,

“I want to talk to Lord Alcimius.”

“What!?”

“Impudent!”

“Who do you think you are!?”

“Do you think Lord Alcimius would meet some like y-”

“Silence.”

The ministers sitting in the Hall reacted violently to Amaya's request, Ellinger, however, raised his voice, and as soon as he did, the Hall turned silent.

Ellinger then glanced at Amaya and spoke,

“Lady Amaya, I hope you know how disrespectful it is to bring up our protector in this meeting. It is like saying we are not worthy of meeting you.”

“I do not mean to disrespect you, Dynast Ellinger.

However, the topic I want to discuss is sensitive, it would be better if Lord Alcimus is here.

Actually, it would be better if there are fewer people hearing this conversation.”

Amaya replied calmly as she glanced at other ministers who snorted, but since the Dynast had raised their hands, they didn't say anything.

The meaning behind Amaya's words was clear.

The ministers here shouldn't listen to this conversation.

It was a difficult request considering she was the one who came from outside.

Agreeing to her request would mean that the Dynast is implying that he doesn't trust his own ministers, which in turn, would show how unstable the Dynasty is and would sully its reputation.

“...”

Ellinger turned silent and started thinking.

After 2 minutes, he glanced at Amaya and nodded.

“Alright, then I will be placing my trust in you, Lady Amaya.”

A small smile appeared on Amaya's face as she nodded,

“You will not regret it.”

Ellinger smiled wryly.

The Dynasty's reputation was already being affected with every passing moment, he doesn't have the time to care about things like these right now.

Seeing his expression, Amaya smiled inwardly.

‘Dealing with smart people is always better than dealing with useless fools.’

# Chapter 552

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Hearing the knock, Amaya ordered.

“Enter.”

A servant enters and bows respectfully.

“Lady Amaya, the Dynast has summoned you.”

Hearing that, Amaya smiled and stood up, Keeve, who was sitting beside her stood up as well.

“Let’s go then.”

Amaya nodded.

The servant nodded back,

“Please, follow me.”

Then, he started moving.

Amaya and Keeve were then taken into another room. As soon as Amaya walked into the room, her attention was grabbed by a man who wore clothes similar to Ellinger, the Dynast, however, the Aura he exuded was far more impressive when compared.

The man had slight wrinkles on his face and combined with that amiable smile, he looked like a friendly neighbor who always gave you sweets. Amaya, however, knew that the truth was far from it and this amiable-looking man was someone who could destroy an entire Kingdom with just him alone.

He was Alcimus Woods, an Emperor and the Protector of the Woods Dynasty.

Beside him sat Ellinger, although he still carried the same demeanor as before, his presence in the room was still overpowered by his grandfather.

Amaya glanced at Alcimus and bowed her head,

“Greetings, Lord Alcimus.”

Alcimus raised an eyebrow in surprise and smiled,

“You know my name?”

“I have to be informed enough if I want to request Lord’s presence, after all.”

Amaya replied.

A satisfied smile appeared on Alcimus’s face as he nodded his head.

“Good Good, it doesn’t look like you are here to just waste my time, I am glad you aren’t someone overstepping your boundaries.”

Amaya understood the underlying threat in those words, however, she didn’t react to it and stayed still.

“Have a seat, girl.”

Alcimus ordered.

He didn’t have to be respectful to Amaya, even though she came from another Kingdom to help them or is a King Stage Cultivator.

Amaya didn’t mind and sat down. Keeve stood behind her.

“Are you going to keep that mask on?” Suddenly, Alcimus questioned.

Hearing that, Ellinger's expression changed a little, he wanted to see Lady Amaya's face as well, however,

“This is something I must do, Lord Alcius. Please understand, this relates to our Kingdom's interests. I do not aim to disrespect you in the slightest.”

Amaya spilled cold water on Ellinger's head.

Alcius frowned.

This was clearly disrespectful, however, since Amaya had brought up Kingdom's interest, he couldn't force her either.

In the end, he just shook his head and nodded,

“I understand.”

“Thank you for understanding, Lord Alcius.”

Alcius nodded and then, his amiable expression disappeared and turned into a serious one,

“Alright, then girl. You know my time is limited, let's not wait any longer.”

Amaya nodded and then, she started,

“If things continue to go like they are going, the Woods Army will never win against the Solid Earth Kingdom.”

Hearing that, Alcius frowned.

Amaya ignored that and continued,

“There is no way normal cultivators can win against an Emperor after all.”

Alcius's expression changed,

For more chapters, please visit [pan\(danovel.c\)om](http://pan(danovel.c)om)

“What are you trying to say?” He questioned as he narrowed his eyes.

“I am saying that Lord Herms, the Protector of the Solid Earth Kingdom is directly participating in this war.”

Amaya revealed and Alcius and Ellinger’s eyes widened in surprise.

“Do you the consequences of what you are saying?” Alcius narrowed his eyes.

“I know it, Lord Alcius.”

Amaya nodded.

Her expression then turned even more solemn as she revealed,

“I know about the Peace Treaty and right now,

The Solid Earth Kingdom is breaking that Treaty.”

“...do you have any proof supporting your statement?”

Alcius questioned.

Suddenly, the ring on Amaya’s finger shined and an Emblem appeared in her hand, seeing that Emblem, Alcius widened his eyes in surprise as he glanced at Amaya.

“Lady Astaria was the one who confirmed this news herself.

She found this situation strange, her spies then reported to her that something was a miss.

Therefore, she personally infiltrated the Solid Earth Kingdom and noticed clear signs of Lord Herms’s involvement in the Kingdom’s affairs.

Not only that, the extra Generals in this War who are attacking your Army, they are King Stage Adventurers or Sect Masters that are recruited into the army by Lord Herms.

Here is a letter Lady Astaria wrote, confirming everything I have said is true.”

Amaya passed the letter to Herms.

Herms quickly opened the envelope and started reading the content.

Amaya gave him a minute to go through everything and continued,

“Now it all boils down to whether you trust Lady Astaria’s words or not. Our future cooperation will depend on your answer.”

Herms continued to read the letter and started rereading it again, just to be sure that he didn’t miss anything.

His expression continued to change as he read the content, and once he reread the letter for the second time, he took a deep breath and spoke,

“So you are telling me... that I have been holding myself back, allowing those annoying bugs to continue doing whatever they want to my Kingdom, allowing them to tarnish the reputation of my Kingdom, all of that just to insure that I don’t break the Treaty while that annoying Bastard had already broken the Treaty?”

Alcimus was pissed.

He had been holding back for such a long time... all for nothing...

He allows those bastards to trample on his pride...

Alcimus wanted revenge.

He wanted to give them what they did to him hundr- no, a thousandfold.

Suddenly, a small smile appeared on Amaya’s face as she momentarily glanced at Ellinger.

Ellinger frowned, however, before he could realize what she was thinking, Amaya continued,

“Actually, from what I know, your previous General, General Ember Windstar, reported that she is suspicious that an Emperor is involved, however, the Dynast didn’t take it seriously and berated her instead.

Since she wasn’t confident in going against an Emperor, the General had to quit.”

Ellinger’s face turned pale as his eyes widened in surprise.

“...what?”

Alcimus questioned.

“Actually, that was where Lady Astaria’s spies started the investigation, of course, Lady Astaria didn’t take General Ember’s, who was known to be the most capable General in the World, opinion for granted and acted on it.”

Alcimus narrowed her eyes as he glared at Ellinger.

Ellinger’s face turned even paler.

Amaya just smiled,

“Of course, since it seems like your Kingdom’s internal matter.

I won’t comment on it any further,

Since it would be inappropriate.”

# Chapter 553

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

An eerie silence fell all over the room.

Seeing this, a small smile appeared on Amaya's face.

Just as she thought.

Ellinger hadn't told anything about Ember's letter to Alcimus.

If he had done that, Alcimus would have figured it out on his own.

Of course, Ellinger wasn't an idiot either, after losing this badly, he now had a rough idea that Ember's report was correct.

However, even after knowing that, he couldn't tell anything to Alcimus.

His grandfather would have killed him.

That was also another reason Amaya had to come here as soon as possible. Things would continue to get worse from now on.

If this continues, even Ellinger wouldn't hold himself back and would tell his grandfather everything.

His Grandfather may kill him, however, if War happens, then he will, for sure die.

He would need his Grandfather's help, so he would have to tell him the truth and that would be, of course, not good for Amaya and her plan.

She could leave out this situation and hide this from Lord Alcimus without any problems, yes, however, the thing was...

That man berated Ember.

Of course, she couldn't care less about that bitch. However, she knew Nux's personality.

He would have his revenge sooner or later.

If she reports what she did to Nux, then he would definitely reward her.

Yes.

That was it.

That was all the reason Amaya needed to fuck up this Dynast.

Amaya was actually looking forward to what Alcimus will do to this bastard, however, she knew her hopes would be crushed.

“What does the Skyfall Kingdom wants in return for this information?”

Suddenly, Alcimus, who was glaring at Ellinger turned towards Amaya and questioned with an expressionless look on his face.

He completely ignored the matter regarding Ember.

Of course, Ellinger, whose face was now pale knew this wasn't the case.

His grandfather won't do anything to him in front of Lady Amaya, however, the moment she leaves...

He would be seeing hell.

Ellinger gulped.

“We do not want anything in return.

This information was just our way of showing our goodwill.

I have yet to talk about the actual deal.”

Amaya glanced at Alcimus and replied, completely ignoring Ellinger, who was now trembling.

Alcimus’s expression turned serious and he questioned.

“What’s the actual deal then?”

“Do you want revenge?”

Amaya questioned back.

Alcimus’s expression didn’t change or that would be how normal people would perceive it, Amaya, however, didn’t fail to notice that slight sliver in his eyes.

She smiled inwardly.

“What you are presenting?” Alcimus questioned.

“Even if you go there and reveal Lord Herms’s involvement, he would just deny it. He would say that those people came to the Kingdom themselves. He would place all the blame on those adventurers and sects.

From there, the best thing you can do is threaten those sects and force them to back down.

The extra Generals would then go away and then your army would be able to fight back. Of course, with 2 Generals down whereas the Solid Earth Kingdom hadn’t lost anything. Your army would still be at disadvantage, however, it will not be as bad as the current situation.

The War would continue before eventually, it would die down after some negotiations.

Everything would return to normal eventually.

However, the question is,

Do you wish things to end just like that?”

Amaya questioned with a small smile on her face.

Alcimus’s face turned solemn,

“I asked what are you presenting.”

He started.

“The Skyfall Kingdom will help you get revenge,”

Amaya answered.

“ ... ”

Alcimus narrowed his eyes.

Amaya, however, wasn’t done yet and continued,

“Lady Astaria would join in if required as well.”

“!!!”

This time, Alcimus couldn’t control his expression and widened his eyes in surprise.

The Strongest Human in the world was extending a helping hand to him.

If this was true...

Then he would definitely be able to get his revenge.

A small smile appeared on Alcimus’s face.

Seeing this, Amaya smiled inwardly and continued,

“The Skyfall Kingdom will help you get rid of more than 80% of the enemy soldiers who are currently looting and wreaking havoc inside your territory.

We do not require your army’s assistance, therefore, none of your soldiers will be lost, the Skyfall will deal with everything on its own.

Not only that, but in the future, when you reveal that Herms has broken the Treaty, Lady Astaria would support you.

With 2 Emperors, things would definitely be easier.”

Amaya smiled.

Alcimus narrowed his eyes.

She was right.

With 2 emperors, things would definitely be a lot easier.

Alcimus knows it well, in the bigger field, proofs and things like that mattered not.

What mattered was the Emperor’s Opinion.

If 3 Emperors were against you, you would have to back down even if you were in the right.

If he and Astaria, 2 Emperor targets Herms, he would definitely face consequences.

It was a great deal, however,

“What does the Skyfall Kingdom wants in return?”

Nothing in this world was for free.

Alcimus knew it well.

Hearing his question, Amaya smiled.

“A Search Party.”

“A search party?” Alcimus frowned.

“Yes, a search Party that 2 King Stage Cultivators and 3 Expert Stage Cultivators at the minimum, as for the rest of the cultivators, the Skyfall Kingdom and the Woods Dynasty would provide the similar number of soldiers.

40 Grand Masters and 60 Masters would be enough, I believe.”

Amaya replied.

Alcimus frowned,

This was quite a strong party,

“What are we searching for? And what’s the Party’s destination?”

He questioned.

“Bloodhill Wilderness.

We are searching for the Mythical Creature, the Ancestor’s companion.”

“WHAT!?”

Alcimus’s eyes widened in surprise and he shouted.

Seeing his sudden outrage,

Ellinger frowned.

Why was he acting like that?

What was this Mythical Creature they are talking about?

He didn’t know anything about it.

“That is the deal, will you accept it, Lord Alcius?” Amaya questioned with a calm smile on her face.

She didn't look bothered by Alcius's sudden outrage.

“Do you want me to meaninglessly sacrifice 2 King Stage Cultivators and my other subordinates?”

# Chapter 554

“Do you want me to meaninglessly sacrifice 2 King Stage Cultivator and my other subordinates?”

Alcimus questioned as he narrowed his eyes.

Amaya just smiled,

“We are offering to get rid of 80% of the Soldiers who are attacking your territories, all on our own. There are 4 King Stage Cultivators attacking your territories currently, however, they have 3 more King Stage Cultivators who are still hiding.

We might lose not 2 but even 3 or 4 King Stage Cultivators if we help you.

If you are still hesitating in accepting the deal, then you can always reject it and we will step back and watch everything in silence.

The conditions of the deal will not change.”

Alcimus narrowed his eyes,

“Are you threatening me?”

A suffocating pressure was released and started choking Amaya.

Seeing this, Keeve’s eyes widened in surprise as he jumped in.

“Lord Alcimus, we are the delegates who are carrying Lady Astaria’s Emblem, are you sure you want to attack us?”

Are you sure you want to go after 2 Kingdoms at the same time?

Because the moment Lady Amaya is hurt, our Queen will not hold back, and Lady Astaria will join in as well.”

Alcimus narrowed his eyes as he glanced at Keeve.

“I can kill you right now, worm.”

“T-Try it.”

Amaya, who was having a hard time glanced at Alcimus and her eyes shined.

It was as if she wanted him to attack her.

Suddenly, the suffocating pressure disappeared.

Amaya glanced at Alcimus and he snorted,

“Be grateful that you had Astaria’s emblem.”

A smile appeared on Amaya’s face,

‘The matter is resolved, don’t worry. Everything is fine.’

Inwardly, however, she sent a message through her telepathic connection.

‘Are you sure?’

Amaya heard a question in a worried tone and couldn’t help but smile,

‘Yes, I am. Why would I lie to you?’

‘Alright, be careful... and contact me if anything happens.’

Nux replied as his sword disappeared.

The plan was simple, the moment Alcimus loses his control, he would appear next to him, since it would be teleportation, Alcimus would be caught by surprise, and Nux would use all his strength to attack.

If the attack fails, he would use [Blink Fault] and take Alcimus out.

Amaya and Keeve would then hold out until his other women inform Astaria.

Astaria would then rush towards the Woods and bring back Nux and the others safely.

Yes...

By holding himself back, Alcimus not only saved himself but also his entire Dynasty as well.

“I am happy that we could resolve it peacefully.

As future allies, I don't think we should go at each other.

I apologize if I somehow disrespected you.”

Amaya bowed.

She had to take a step back here.

Alcimus was a useful tool.

Making him an enemy was foolish, especially after wasting so much time.

Seeing that she was willing to step back, Alcimus's anger disappeared and he jumped on it as well,

“I lost my control there. I shouldn't have done what I did.”

Of course, he still didn't apologize, but Amaya didn't need it.

“About the deal...”

She spoke.

“We accept it.”

Alcimus nodded.

Let alone 2, they might even lose all their King Stage Cultivators if they continue like this. He might force those sects and adventurers, however, his army was weakened, even if the Solid Earth Kingdom uses its own strength,

His Kingdom would still lose.

Therefore, it was better to accept this deal.

Also...

If Astaria was the one who sent these 2, then she must be the one who wants to investigate the Mythical Beast as well...

It wasn't hard to guess her line of thoughts...

And if what she was thinking was true...

Then they have to investigate it.

He might be at a little disadvantageous position here, but that was his Grandson's fault.

He would take it out on this Idiot later, for now, he had to agree to this deal.

Hearing his words, Amaya smiled, her ring shined and a contract appeared in her hands.

"These are the details of our deal, please place your seal of approval here after reading the contents."

"..."

Alcimus glanced at the papers in Amaya's hand and couldn't help but smile wryly,

"You came prepared huh..."

You even got Astaria to sign on it..."

“As a delegate, I have to prepare for every single situation.”

Amaya just smiled.

“Why do I feel that you are a lot more than a mere Delegate?”

Alcimus questioned.

“I do have a certain charm, I agree.”

Amaya chuckled.

Alcimus chuckled as well and started reading the contract.

“You will attack the Solid Earth Army 2 weeks later?”

“Indeed.”

“The Search Party will be formed once the Skyfall Kingdom has successfully delivered on their end of the bargain...”

Alcimus continued to read.

This type of contract where one party delivers their promise first was a risky one, however, when it came to the Skyfall Kingdom, it wasn't a problem.

The reason was simple,

The Skyfall Kingdom was just that strong.

Whether it is their army or their Protector, they were the best in both cases.

Betraying them when they have solid proof against you was simply idiotic.

You will lose more than you would ever win.

“Alright.”

Once Alcimus was done reading the contract, he exhaled deeply, a Stamp then appeared in his hand and,

\*Stamp\*

He stamped at the end of the contract before giving it back to Amaya.

Amaya smiled as she received the contract.

Then, she stood up and glanced at the two men in front of them.

“Thank you for your patience.

I hope we have successful cooperation.

I will be taking my leave now.”

“A-Ah, let me escort you out.”

Ellinger suddenly stood up and rushed towards Amaya.

Seeing him, Amaya just smiled and didn't deny it.

Well, he can stall it all he wanted, but he would not be able to escape from his own Grandfather.

Amaya, Keeve and Ellinger then left the room.

Alcimus, who was now left alone, sighed as his face turned solemn.

Nobody knew what he was thinking.

...

On the other side, Astaria who had sneaked inside the Royal Palace with Arvina smiled.

“Well then, let me take you to your room.”

“I-I know where my room is, teacher.”

Arvina replied.

“You dare go against me?” Astaria raised her eyebrow.

“...”

Arvina turned silent.

“Good.”

Astaria smiled.

The two of them then walked towards Arvina’s room.

“I would talk to Evane about your return, she would provide you with a personnel maid.”

Astaria spoke.

“...” Arvina didn’t say anything and just continued walking.

“Arvina.”

Suddenly, Astaria called.

“Y-Yes?”

“Don’t forget to come tomorrow morning.”

Arvina’s expression changed,

“I-Is it really necessary?”

“What? Do you not want to see your Student’s progress? You can also meet all his wives there.”

“I have already met with them.”

Arvina replied.

“So what? You can meet them again. Just come tomorrow. I think it will be helpful to train both of you together.”

“Please don’t... You know I can’t be compared to that monster.”

“Don’t worry,

Just be prepared.”

Astaria smiled mysteriously.

“Haahh...”

Arvina sighed.

# Chapter 555

A group of men walked towards the Hogarth House.

“Stop!”

As the group continued to walk in, the guard guarding the Hogarth Household shouted.

“Who are you people? Identify yourself.”

The guard ordered.

“Huh?”

“P-Please Identify yourself.”

Soon, however, the Guard changed his tone as he noticed the Cultivation of the man leading the Group.

‘W-What w-with this group...’

The guard thought inwardly as his body started trembling.

His face was already pale.

To be honest, he just wanted to run away, however, since he was on duty... that was not something he could do.

He couldn’t sense the Cultivation level of most of the people in this group.

What does that mean?

It meant that only most of them were stronger than Grand Master Stage Cultivators...

J-Just what the hell is wrong with this group!?

The guard swore inwardly at the same time, he also hoped that they weren't here to cause trouble.

“P-P-Please i-identify yourself a-and state your business.”

Since the people weren't answering the guard questioned again.

His body didn't stop trembling, fortunately, these men didn't waste much time on him and did as they were told.

An Emblem appeared on the Leader's hand and seeing the Emblem, the guard's eyes widened in surprise

“We are here under Queen Evane's order.

We demand that you hand over the Pamela Hogarth, or we would need to use force.”

The Guard gulped.

These people were definitely here to cause trouble.

And what's worse?

They were under the Queen's order.

The guard then took a deep breath and,

“Please wait here, I will go and report to Lord Hogarth, this is not the matter a mere guard like me can deal with.”

The Guard decided to back off.

He wasn't paid enough for this shit.

There was no way he was going to go against a Royal Order.

“We do have that much time. Let us go in.”

The leader of the group demanded.

“P-Please go.”

The guard simply bowed.

The Group then walked into the House, the Leader of the group stepped forward and shouted,

“Pamela Hogarth, we are the Royal Soldiers, surrender yourself and come with us.”

The shout reverberated throughout the house.

Soon, a man walked out and questioned.

“W-Who are you people?”

The leader simply showed the Royal Emblem and spoke,

Hand over Pamela Hogarth.”

“L-Lord, Pamela i-is my wife. C-Can you tell me what has she done?”

The man questioned.

“She is suspected to be a Spy. She needs to come with us for further investigation.”

The Leader replied.

“A S-Spy?”

The man’s face turned pale.

“N-No, that can’t be true. Pamela has been my wife for the last 30 years, she cannot be a spy. There must be something wrong with this information.”

“There is nothing we can do. Pamela Hogarth is under the List created by the Palace, we need to bring her in. Of course, if she is innocent, we will release her with adequate compensation.”

“Y-You think compensation is enough for the mental trauma you will cause her!? Proof! Where is your proof!? How can you capture her without adequ-ugghhh!”

\*Bam\*

\*Smash\*

Before the man could even complete his sentence, he was sent flying with just a slap.

The leader’s eyes then shined as he glanced at the man.

“Do not test my limit.

Hand over Pamela when I am being cooperative.

Don’t push me enough to use force.

It won’t be good for your house.”

“H-How can you treat an Earl l-like that?”

The man questioned.

The Leader then sighed.

“You forced me then.”

Then, he glanced at his subordinates and nodded.

Everyone rushed in different directions.

The leader then turned towards the servant who had gathered, soon, a bag full of silver coins appeared in his hands and he started,

“Anyone who reports where Pamela is will receive this reward.

You do not have to worry, we are from the Royal Palace, if you agree to help, no one would hurt you.”

Suddenly, a woman raised her arm.

“I-I know where Lady Pamela is.”

“How dare y-Ugghh!”

Before the man could say anything, the leader of the group, Reeve, kicked his face and turned toward the woman.

“Where is she?”

“I-I’ll take you there.”

The servant nodded and then started walking.

Reeve followed behind her.

The other servants followed as well.

The man, Pamela’s husband stood up and followed as well.

However, as they walked into Pamela’s room, they saw something that shocked everyone to their core.

Pamela...

She was lying on the bed with foam coming out of her body.

Yes, she had killed herself.

It was now clear, Pamela was actually a spy...

And when she noticed that the guards were there for her, she killed herself.

Seeing this scene, Reeve's face turned solemn.

"A spy manage to kill herself before being captured..."

Reeve commented.

"H-How could this be...? H-How can my wife be a spy?"

The husband, the leader of the Hogarth Household couldn't believe what he was seeing.

Reeve then turned towards him with an annoyed expression on his face,

"Nell Hogarth, you disrupted the Royal Investigation, I hope you are prepared to face the consequences."

"..."

Nell didn't know what to say.

Seeing this scene, Reeve smiled inwardly.

The plan was successful.

Was Pamela actually a spy?

Of course she was.

However, did they actually want to capture her?

Nope.

It was all just a show.

They never planned to capture her, they just wanted to waste time by talking with the people who couldn't believe that their family member was suspected of being a spy, then they would force their way in, only to see that the said member had already taken his or her life.

This wasn't the only house where this was happening.

It was happening all over the capital city and none of the group planned to capture the 'spy', rather, they hoped that the spies would kill themselves in order to protect the information they were holding.

That was all they, and Queen Evane needed.

Why?

Well...

They needed gossips.

# Chapter 556

Do you know? Hogarth's household's Lord's Wife was actually a spy.

What!?

Yes, the Soldiers sent by Queen Evane entered Hogarth's Household, the House Head tried to convince them that his wife was innocent, however, the soldiers were adamant and had to force themselves in when the House Head didn't agree to their request.

However, when they walked into the wife's room, she had already consumed poison and was dead.

What!? Doesn't that mean she was actually a spy!?

Of course, she was! The Queen's soldiers must have thought of something if they wanted to capture her. Do you think they would just capture a completely innocent person?

As they say, there is no smoke without a fire.

Indeed indeed.

Actually, my friend works in Baron Fendel house, something similar happened there as well. The House Head's brother took his own life when the guards walked into the house. He must be a spy as well.

This is so unbelievable, right? To think there are so many spies in our Kingdom and in the noble households at that.

Just think how dangerous it is.

I truly support Queen Evane who is hunting all these spies.

Indeed.

If only she could capture these spies alive... won't that be good?

But to do that, they have to use force and barge into a house, but the household heads won't allow it...

Tsk... this must be so annoying for someone like Queen Evane, who is actually trying to do something kind...

I wish I could help... but we are just powerless commoners...

Indeed...

These were the types of gossip Evane and others needed.

Actually, Evane even sent some people to flare these gossips. Of course, normal people did their own thing and added more spice to these gossips.

Soon, these gossips spread all over the Capital city and as they did, Evane's smile widened.

They finally achieved their goal.

The next day, another announcement was made.

“The Queen has declared ‘Emergency State’ all over the Kingdom for the next month.

During this Emergency State, no one is allowed to question the Royal Guards' moves, resistance will be seen as a capital offense.

Innocents captured during the Emergency State will be compensated by Queen Evane herself.”

This was it.

Something like an ‘Emergency State’ cannot be declared without a proper reason, otherwise, it would cause a big issue.

However, now many people could understand why the Emergency Stage was declared and had no reason to go against it.

The commoners did feel a little insecure about this, however, they weren't against it either.

The only ones against it were...

The corrupt officials.

And since it was a Kingdom, there was a large number of them.

Queen Evane lost the support of many nobles.

Many nobles started wishing to see Prince Raguel, the one who actually deserved to be the King.

However, the well-informed nobles stayed silent.

They knew what had happened.

They knew Princess Evane would soon be crowned as the next Queen no matter what happens, therefore, they just decided to give up on the spies and even started capturing them themselves.

Did they know there were spies?

Of course they did.

The number of spies couldn't grow to this extent if they weren't helped by the nobles, the nobles helped them for various reasons, however, no amount of bribes could compensate for one's life.

The informed nobles quickly cleaned themselves.

As for the uninformed nobles who were on about how Queen Evane was a bad ruler and were repeatedly going against her, filing more and more complaints in the Royal Court and wishing to see King Ricardus,

Well...

Somehow, all the bribes they had taken, all the commoners they had harassed, all the Kingdom's Funds that they had eaten up... reports of all these crimes, with their proof were found in front of the Royal Court the next day...

And all those nobles were arrested and stripped of their titles.

A total of 143 Nobles were arrested this way and a total of 7 Noble Households, filled with corrupt nobles were destroyed in the process.

And all of this happened within 4 days...

The Kingdom was being cleaned and in the process of capturing spies, corrupt nobles were also being captured.

There were no nobles who were free from any sort of crime, everyone had their hands dirty, and honestly, capturing all of them was impossible, however, the ones who had committed the gravest of offenses were all captured.

The Capital City was actually being cleaned as each day, more and more nobles and spies were captured.

Royal Guards could be seen moving around every day, even the Army was involved, the 'Emergency State' really looked like an emergency.

However, at the same time, the Royal Treasury was filled up to the brim.

All the corrupt nobles, all of their properties were confiscated. These greedy nobles had filled up their treasury with huge amounts of gold, and once all this gold was sent back to Royal Treasury...

The people from Management Division who were focused on dealing with the Palace's funds had big smiles on their faces all the time.

At the same time, Queen Evane also provided countless benefits to commoners.

Some taxes were called off as well.

Due to all this,

The Popularity of Queen Evane amongst the common people increased at a frightening pace.

As for the nobles...

Well, the Nobles who still had a shred of righteousness in their hearts were happy, the fully corrupt nobles were arrested, and the other nobles were scared.

However, most of them still supported Queen Evane.

They understood the pattern.

Only the completely rotten nobles were arrested.

The nobles who were corrupt to the core, the nobles who had committed countless offenses like murder, \*\*\*\*, or the nobles who were helping the spies and were going against the Kingdom were arrested.

The rest were given a chance.

Most of the nobles were corrupt, however, not all of them committed crimes like these, therefore, they knew they were safe.

Actually, most of the nobles wanted these rotten nobles to disappear.

This would increase the Kingdom's security after all.

And who didn't wish to feel safe?

Queen Evane was capable of providing them with this atmosphere, therefore, they supported her.

As the cleanup process became more and more stable, the forces moved out of the Capital and repeated the process in the surrounding cities.

Everything was going just like Queen Evane had said.

All the spies, who had not taken her warning seriously,

All of them were being hunted down.

# Chapter 557

“You are late.”

Astaria spoke as she glanced at Nux who had arrived.

Nux frowned and quickly shook his head,

“No way, that is not possible, I was so excited to meet you that I came here 10 minutes earlier because I couldn’t control myself.

I think you were just missing me, that’s why you came here even earlier.

I am not late, you are just early.

Of course, I am not complaining, I rather appreciate the gesture.”

He replied with a small smile on his face.

Astaria’s mouth twitched.

“You dare act so brazenly even though both of your teachers are standing in front of you?”

A frown appeared on Nux’s face,

“Both of my teachers?”

He used his [Sense] to scan the surroundings, however, he couldn’t find anyone other than Astaria.

His frown deepened as he started thinking.

Soon, however, Arvina, who was standing behind Astaria walked out.

Nux’s expression changed,

‘Just as I thought.’

His [Sense] doesn’t detect an Expert Stage Cultivator or higher if that particular cultivator ‘intents’ to hide from him.

Well, it was not something new, Nux and his women had tested it already.

Soon, a big smile appeared on Nux’s face as he greeted,

“Teacher Arvina! It’s been so long~

How have you been?”

“Tsk, don’t talk to me.”

Arvina snorted.

“Huh? What happened?”

Nux frowned.

“You dare ask me how have I been?

Why didn’t you visit me for such a long time? Did you forget about me since you found a new teacher?” Arvina questioned.

“Oh c’mon, teacher Arvina, how can I forget about you? I have just been busy.”

“Oh yeah? Did you forget to spend time with your women?”

“Of course not. That is not possible. I will make some time even if I am busy.”

“...”

“...”

Astaria and Arvina didn’t know what to say.

Sometimes... this boy was just too honest...

“Anyway, I apologize, I will make sure to visit you from time to time.”

Nux nodded.

“You better. Now tell me, how have you been?”

Arvina dropped the topic as well,

“Hehe~ Very fine, actually. I will now be learning from the strongest human in this world.”

Nux replied as he glanced at Astaria.

“That is good.” Arvina nodded.

“Though I still don’t understand, Teacher. Why are you here? Not that I mind or anything.

I would never mind someone as beautiful as you being around.

It’s good for eyes.”

Arvina was already used to Nux’s ways so she didn’t react much. She just turned pointed at Astaria and replied,

“Teacher brought me here.”

“She will be helping me train you,” Astaria replied.

“Oh? Was I too much for just you alone?” Nux questioned with a playful smile on his face.

“You wish.

I just want to make sure you learn as fast as possible.” Astaria snorted.

“Ahh, that’s a good excuse.”

Nux nodded his head continuously.

“Excuse my ass. Even 10 of you won’t be ‘too much’ for me.” Astaria snorted.

“Heh, Trust me, in the near future, when I am done, you would be lying down, tired, and won’t even be able to move a muscle.

I say this from prior experience.

I have never lost, you know.”

Nux smiled playfully.

Astaria narrowed her eyes,

“There is a first time for everything.”

She replied.

“Unfortunately, you still won’t be able to beat me.”

“Oh yeah? You seem confident.

I would love to break that confidence of yours.”

“Heh. Challenge accepted.”

Nux’s smile widened.

“Accepted my foot.

To be honest, I don’t think you would even be able to be in a position to challenge me.

You would lose beforehand.”

“Aren’t you training me so that I get into that position as soon as possible?”

“I am not training you for that.”

“That is just what your mouth is saying, I already know what your heart wants. No need to force it.”

Nux smiled and Astaria clenched her fist in frustration.

Talking with this boy...

It really was...

On the other hand, Arvina, who was looking at her Teacher and her Student ‘challenging’ each other couldn’t help but frown.

For some reason, she thought that this ‘challenge’ they were talking about was... not a fight...

At least not the fight she has in her mind.

‘Wait...’

Suddenly, Arvina’s eyes widened in surprise as she thought of another possibility.

Soon, however, she shook her head.

‘No no no no, that is not possible. That boy may be a woman magnet, however, teacher is teacher.

She is not an ordinary woman...

She would never fall for this boy’s plays.’

Arvina explained to herself.

Soon, however, she recalled what kind of monsters were part of this boy’s harem and...

‘No no no no.

It is completely different!

The teacher is the strongest human in the world.

It is just not possible.

I am thinking too much.'

Arvina shook her head and convinced herself.

She then glanced at Nux and her face turned solemn,

'I have been corrupted by this shameless boy.

I need to clear my mind.'

At the same time, Astaria stopped playing around as well and spoke,

"Alright boy, that will be enough.

Time to get serious now."

Nux's playful smile disappeared as well and nodded.

"Alright, we will start with a spar,

You will not use any of that strange magic of yours, I only want you to use your physical abilities and normal Skills.

I want to accurately judge how good your battle sense is.

Ah right, you can use the Magic that consumes less Mana and the one which you can keep using for a long time.

Magic like that is a part of your battle style, you will not get anything by holding them back."

"I understand." Nux nodded and quickly took his battle stance.

Astaria then turned towards Arvina and called,

“Arvina,”

“Y-Yes teacher.”

Arvina came out of her reverie.

“Keep your eyes on him, I want you to note every single mistake he makes, the battle might be a little too fast for you, so it will also be training for your senses.

After the spar, you and I will be exchanging what we noticed and if you have fewer observations than me, you will be punished.

Is that clear?”

“Yes, teacher.”

Arvina nodded with a determined look as well.

Astaria nodded back, then she turned towards Nux and,

“Try not to die, boy.”

Rushed towards him.

# Chapter 558

“Alright, that’s enough for now. You can rest now.”

Astaria spoke.

Hearing those words, Nux, who was barely standing and whose entire body was trembling, exhaled deeply and quickly lost all his strength as he fell on the ground.

“Haaahh... haaahhh... haaahhh...”

He breathed heavily as he lay down on the ground.

His entire body was drenched in sweat, his forearms, which he had used to block most of Astaria’s punches... it felt like they would break apart the moment he lifted them.

That was not it, his legs were trembling, and to be honest, he couldn’t even feel them properly, it was a surprise that he was still able to stand.

2 hours...

He fought for straight 2 hours...

His entire body was aching, his breathing was a mess, and all in all, he was in a bad condition.

As for that monstrous woman?

Besides those droplets of sweat on her forehead, it didn’t even look like she had moved.

“...”

Nux didn’t know what to say when he saw her like that.

‘Fucking monster...’

That was the only thing he could think about.

In the end, he just closed his eyes and stopped thinking about it.

Lying on the ground right now, it felt strange. His heart was beating heavily. He felt like his entire body was being buried into the ground and his head was rolling around.

It was a very strange feeling.

Nux thought he would pass out any moment now.

What was worse?

Astaria forbid him from using a healing potion.

‘You aren’t even injured. What do you need the potion for?’

That was her statement.

If Nux had even a little bit of strength...

He would have...

No... there was nothing the poor boy could do...

‘Fuck, I’ll take my revenge soon.’

He opened his eyes as he glanced at Astaria,

‘You will soon be playing in my field... see how I’ll go extra easy on you...

You can’t use your Mana there, can you?’

Thinking about it, a small smile appeared on Nux’s face.

Astaria, on the other hand, completely ignored the man who was lying on the ground, and turned towards Arvina.

“Did you notice anything?”

“I did.”

Arvina nodded.

“I noticed something very big, actually.”

Arvina’s face turned serious.

Hearing her words, Nux frowned and turned towards her.

“What is it?” Astaria questioned.

Arvina then turned towards Nux and replied,

“There were little to no mistakes when you two started, however, as time passed and he started getting fatigued, the number of mistakes he started making increased drastically. It was abnormal.

It was as if he had never fought while he was fatigued before.”

“Good. I noticed it as well. He started making rookie mistakes once he was tired.

Making unnecessary moves, using more force than required, missing feints and more and more.

These are not the mistakes he would make while fighting normally.”

Astaria nodded.

“Actually, you termed it right,

It was as if he never fought while he was tired.”

Hearing the two of them talking, Nux frowned,

He then turned towards Astaria and questioned,

“Is... is it because... my stamina is low?”

He was still tired, so talking was still a little difficult for him, however, Astaria and Arvina didn't mind.

To answer his question, Arvina shook her head,

“No, its not your stamina that is low. On the other hand, it is incomparably better compared to other King Stage Cultivators, the problems come when you have already used that stamina of yours.”

“Then... then should I increase my... my stamina?”

Nux questioned.

Arvina shook her head.

“Then strength maybe? Or should I increase my Vitality?”

“Huh? Why are you talking as if increasing all these is simple? It will take years you know?”

“...”

Nux glanced at Astaria and didn't say anything.

A screen that had his information then appeared in front of him.

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 19]

[Mana Cultivation: King.]

[Body Cultivation: King.]

[Physique: Devouring Mist Demon Physique – Advanced (+)]

[Talent: Exceptional]

[LVL: 60 → 61]

(A/N: It's been a long time since he has leveled up, I just didn't show it. Remember, Ember was level 61. Currently, all of them are at 61.)

[HP: 1620/1620]

[MP: 2110/2110]

[STR: 162 → 164]

[AGL: 172 → 174]

[VIT: 160 → 162]

[STM: 199 → 201]

[INT: 210 → 211]

[DEF: 159 → 161]

[Blank Points: 189 → 192]

Nux had already used his system to increase his strength as much as he can.

He bought weapons, and abilities and did everything he could.

Expect one thing.

The Black Points.

Since he came to this world, he has been saving his blank points and has been using them as stingily as possible.

Therefore, he had saved a lot of them.

A lot lot lot of them.

He had been saving them when he absolutely needed them.

What's a better time than now?

With his every level up, he gains 11 Stat points, and he has saved up a total of 192 blank points.

What does that mean?

It means that if he uses the normal conventions, then just with Blank Points alone, he could level up 17 more times.

Of course, he knew it wouldn't make him an Emperor since he still wouldn't have the ability to control Raw Mana, but it was still something.

Something absolutely incredible.

“What's with that look?” Seeing him staring at him like that, Astaria narrowed her eyes and questioned.

A small, wry smile appeared on Nux's face.

Astaria's expression changed...

“You don't mean...”

“I can increase them...”

My strength, agility, vitality, stamina, defense, and even my Mana reservoir, I can increase all of them.”

Nux revealed and,

“!!!”

“!!!”

Just as he expected, Astaria and Arvina's eyes widened in surprise.

"...how much?"

Suddenly, Astaria questioned.

"Well... if I use everything I have on only one particular thing, then...

I can double it...

Umm, a little more than just doubling it, but yes, you can take it else doubling it."

"Y-You are saying that... you can d-double your current strength... like, right now?"

"I can."

'Fucking monster.'

# Chapter 559

“Y-You are saying that... you can d-double your current strength... like, right now?”

“I can.”

‘Fucking monster.’

Astaria couldn’t believe what she was hearing.

How can someone just... increase his strength like that?

Was she a fool for cultivating diligently for so many years?

Just what the hell is wrong with this boy?

“Ridiculous. Absolutely Ridiculous.”

Arvina, on the other hand, was one step ahead.

“Teacher.”

She directly called Astaria and,

“I am taking my leave, I feel that if I stay too close to this boy, I will cough up blood and die. This is absolutely ridiculous.”

Saying that, Arvina turned around and walked away.

“...”

Astaria didn’t know how to stop her either.

To be honest, even she wanted to leave.

This boy...

She glanced at Nux, who was smiling wryly as he glanced at Arvina who was walking away.

“You are a monster.”

Astaria commented.

“I am even better in bed.”

Nux replied.

“...”

Astaria’s mouth twitched.

“Anyway, what should I do? Should I increase my Strength? Or Stamina? Or should I increase everything evenly?”

Nux questioned.

“I still do not know how this magic of yours works,” Astaria replied.

Hearing that, Nux dragged his body and sat up.

“Alright then, let me explain you properly then.

I have a magic that allows me to see my overall strength in numbers.”

“Numbers?” Astaria frowned as she sat next to Nux.

Looking at the two of them sitting next to each other on the ground, one would think they were close, not that there would be anything wrong with that assumption.

Suddenly, a paper appeared in Nux’s hand.

He quickly wrote his stats on the paper and explained,

“I can see my stats this way.”

“Strength, Agility, Vitality, Stamina, Mana, Defense... an interesting way to look at things.”

Astaria commented.

“Mhm, it does give you a decent idea of how things work, let me show you the stats of a normal King Stage Cultivator.

Nux then wrote down the stats of a normal King Stage Cultivator and Astaria’s expression changed when she saw it.

“Y-You are twice as strong as a King Stage Cultivator.”

“Mhm, that’s true.”

Nux nodded.

“That’s why fighting against King Stage Cultivators poses no threat to me.”

Nux explained.

“So what you are saying is that you have these 192 Black Points... that you can use to increase any of these... stats...?”

“Yes, that is correct. I didn’t feel like I had to use them, however, with all the Emperors coming into the picture, I believe that using these Blank Points is important.

And currently, only you can help me distribute them.”

“Do your wives know about this magic?” Suddenly, Astaria questioned.

“They know everything.”

Nux replied.

He knew they wouldn’t understand much about this ‘System’ he had.

To be honest, even he didn't know much about this System, however, he still has told them everything about his abilities, the weapons and techniques that he buys, he told them everything when he was talking about his past life.

“Then why didn't you ask that Ember? She was a General, wasn't she? I am sure she could help you.”

“As I said, I didn't feel the need to use these points, now, however, things are different.

And since I already have the best person to help me with this, why would I ask someone else?”

“Heeh? Are you saying I am better than your wife?” Astaria teased.

“When it comes to commanding an army in a battle, she is a lot better than you.”

Nux's answer was simple.

“How can you be so sure about that?”

“Have you ever led an army before?”

“I alone, am better than an army.”

Astaria answered arrogantly.

“ ... ”

Nux didn't know how to answer that.

“Anyways, so tell me, what should I put my blank points on.”

Nux changed the topic.

This time, Astaria had a better understanding of Nux's ability, therefore, she started pondering.

Then, after thinking deeply about it, she replied,

“Use 89 points on Mana. Increase it all the way up to 300.

Mana is the most important attribute for anyone.

Having more Mana would not only help you when you become an Emperor, but it would also even help you now since it would allow you to use more Skills.”

“Alright.”

Nux nodded.

Even he was thinking about using INT, with 3000 MP, he would be able to use his abilities and skills in a better way.

“What about rest?”

He questioned.

“Well, you need stamina, and everything, however, I suggest you stop here.”

“Hmm?”

“Let’s continue with our spars, the more we spar, the more we would realize what you are missing and we would work on that.

As for the problem with your stamina, well, we would increase your stamina, however, we would do it later.

No matter what, you would never have endless stamina, you need to adapt and understand how to fight while preserving your stamina.

If we increase your stamina now, achieving that would be difficult.”

“So you are saying that we would continue to increase my stats while we spar?”

“Yes. That is correct.”

“Mhm, that’s a good idea.”

Nux nodded in understanding.

Astaria nodded as well.

“Heh... I knew it was better to just ask you rather than doing it on my own.”

Suddenly, Nux laughed.

Astaria shook her head in helplessness.

“Nux.”

Suddenly, she called out.

“Hmm? What is it?”

“You know Arvina likes you, don’t you?”

Astaria questioned as she turned towards Nux.

Nux’s expression changed and a wry smile appeared on his face,

“I don’t know about that...” he replied weakly.

Astaria narrowed her eyes, “Don’t act innocent, there is no way you haven’t noticed it already.”

“I proposed to Teacher Arvina before,” Nux revealed.

“And?” Astaria waited for Nux to continue.

“She rejected me.”

“So you gave up?” Astaria questioned.

“Do I have another choice?” Nux questioned back.

“Oh? Why didn’t I have this option? I rejected you countless times already.” Astaria tilted her head and teased.

Nux looked into Astaria’s eyes and smiled,

“If you really want me to stop, just say the word and I will.

Just say, ‘I do not like you Nux. You and I, can’t happen. So stop harassing me.’

Just say these words with the utmost serious expression and I would step back.”

# Chapter 560

“If you really want me to stop, just say the word and I will.

Just say, ‘I do not like you Nux. You and I, can’t happen. So stop harassing me.’

Just say these words with the utmost serious expression and I would step back.”

Nux spoke with a small smile on his face.

This time, however, Astaria realized that he wasn’t joking at all.

Rather, he was the most serious he has ever been.

And she was right.

If Astaria says those words right now, Nux would step back and stop wooing her.

He would act just like he has been acting with Arvina.

‘Hello Teacher Arvina, I hope you have been well.’

Nothing more.

He would treat her just like he would treat any normal teacher, or how one would treat an elder.

Even Nux had his pride after all.

Going after women who had already rejected him wasn’t something he would do.

As for how he would become an Emperor Stage Cultivator?

Well, he would think of something later.

A minimum of Exceptional level Talent was required to even have a shot at becoming an Emperor.

Don't forget, Amaya is someone who has King level Talent.

It is something that has never been seen before.

He would simply rely on his wife and once she grows, he and others would grow as well, living a long, happy life.

And no, he can't do it on his own, he has tried it already, but because of his System, he can't cultivate on his own.

So that was out of the question as well.

Of course, he wasn't really complaining.

Anyway, he was already sure Astaria wouldn't do something like that.

Unlike Arvina, who for some reason still worried about what others would say, Astaria wasn't someone who cared about things like that.

Also, Nux could notice it as well, though she didn't care much about him at first, she is indeed showing some interest in him as well.

The only thing that was stopping her was the warrior inside her.

A situation similar to Ember and for some reason, Nux didn't wish to embrace Astaria without defeating the Warrior Astaria.

Heh, you can say that deep there, somewhere, a Warrior Nux was being born as well.

“So you are saying that you won't go after Arvina no matter what?”

Astaria questioned.

“Mhm.”

Nux nodded.

Astaria nodded to herself.

‘I need to talk to that girl.’

To be honest, even she supported Nux right now, a man has his own pride as well.

If Arvina was forcing Nux to step over his pride because of her stupid thoughts, then maybe...

Maybe Arvina was not worth the effort...

With that thought in her mind,

Astaria stood up and,

“Alright then, enough chit-chat, if you have the power to talk about all this, then I am sure you have the power to spar again.”

“H-Huh? No! Of course not! I am still tired!”

Nux retorted.

There is no way he could fight again, he was barely feeling his legs right now.

“Heh, just take your words back, you won’t ever get into a position to ‘challenge’ me with that spirit.”

Astaria teased.

And of course,

Her teasing worked.

Nux's face turned serious and he stood up, although he still needed his sword to support him.

Seeing this, Astaria smiled and,

“Round 2, let's start.”

Then, Astaria disappeared.

‘Fuck.’

Nux cursed inwardly as he prepared himself to embrace another punch.

...

“Haah... Haahhh... haahhh...”

Nux lay down on the ground and breathed heavily again.

“I didn't say you can rest right now...”

Astaria narrowed her eyes.

“...”

Nux glanced at her and froze.

“Pfft!”

Seeing his expression, Astaria couldn't help but laugh out loud.

Nux's face twitched.

‘Just you wait... just you wait!’

He cursed inwardly.

Astaria continued to laugh as she waved her hand,

“I was just joking, you can rest.

You have been working hard.

Now don't make that face.

Hahaha~”

“ ...”

Nux didn't reply and continued to imagine different scenarios in his mind.

He would definitely create a new game for their first time.

He swore in his heart.

He would have his revenge.

“Oh? You look tired. Now that is something I have never seen before. Training with an Emperor really is different huh...”

Suddenly, Nux heard a voice.

He turned around and saw Ember and his other wives walking towards him.

“Why are you all here?” Astaria narrowed her eyes.

“It has already been 6 hours, do you plan to have him all to yourself for the entire day?”

Evane narrowed her eyes.

“I apologize, Queen Evane, I forgot this man has prior engagements.”  
Astaria laughed.

Then, she glanced at Nux and a playful smile appeared on her face,

“Though I don't think he would be able to ‘perform’ that well today.”

“Tsk.” Nux, who was still lying on the ground, snorted.

Astaria's smile widened.

"That's not a problem, we are here to discuss something else."

Suddenly, Amaya spoke.

"Huh? You are back?" Astaria frowned.

"I just returned," Amaya replied.

"How was it?" Astaria questioned.

Amaya gave her the contract that was signed,

"Wait... 2 weeks?"

Suddenly, Astaria frowned.

She didn't read the contract properly before, but they need to attack in 2 weeks...?

She then glanced at Nux...

She had ordered that Nux won't go anywhere until she is done training him and,

"Even with this man's monstrous talent, 2 weeks won't be nearly enough.

We need to postpone this attack."

Astaria spoke.

"The deal is already signed," Amaya replied.

"That doesn't matter, we just need to sign it again. Make it two months."

Astaria ordered.

Amaya, however, shook her head,

“That would be too late. I don’t think we should postpone it anymore.”

Amaya then glanced at Nux who was lying on the ground and spoke,

“Also, you don’t need to stop training Nux for this. I have a proposal.”

“Oh? What is it?” Astaria questioned with an interested look on her face.

“We will be attacking the soldiers in Nux’s stead.”

Amaya spoke and the other women nodded.

“No way.”

Nux was the first to deny the proposal.

# Chapter 561

“We will be attacking the soldiers in Nux’s stead,”

Amaya spoke and the other women nodded.

“No way.”

Nux was the first to deny the proposal.

“Why?” Amaya narrowed her eyes.

“It’s too dangerous. I don’t want to put you all in danger.”

Nux shook his head continuously.

Amaya and the others walked toward Nux and formed a circle around him,

“Do you think we will lose?” Amaya questioned.

Nux, however, closed his eyes and shook his head again,

“Attacking more than Ten thousand soldiers is a no no. It’s too risky. If you want to go, then take around ten thousand soldiers with you. Then I would have no problem.”

His women narrowed their eyes.

They knew it would be a little difficult to convince Nux, however, he would flat-out deny it, they didn’t expect that.

The woman then turned towards Astaria, the most powerful person here, Astaria however, shook her head.

“Sorry girls, I would have taken your side if it was anything else, however, in this, I would have to take his side.

A few individuals fighting against an entire army is a ridiculous concept, I know all of you are capable, but fighting wars is not a simple process. Ember, you were a general before, you should know how dangerous it is.”

“I know how dangerous it is, that is the reason I want to go.

I have led countless troops before, I know how things were, and dare I say, I know it more than any one of you present here.

And from all my past experience, I can confidently say that we all can take care of it.

In fact, I would even go as far as saying that this is the battle I am most confident about.”

Ember replied with a confident look on her face.

Astaria glanced at Ember for a while, she then turned towards Nux and replied, “I am still on Nux’s side here.”

“You allowed Nux when he said he wanted to go. Why aren’t you allowing us?” Thyra pointed.

Astaria glanced at Thyra and narrowed her eyes, “Are you seriously asking that? This monster defeated the Shadow Unit alone.

He is different, you, of all people, should know it first hand.”

“Then how about this,

Let us fight the Shadow Unit, if we can defeat them, then allow us to go and since we have a number’s advantage, you can add Consort Iria and General Phorus into the group as well.”

Amaya proposed.

Hearing that, a smile appeared on Astaria’s face, and just as she was about to accept Amaya’s deal,

Nux interrupted.

“Don’t. Don’t allow it.”

“Huh?”

Astaria frowned.

“Tsk.” Amaya snorted. She was this close.

“You think they can defeat the Shadow Unit?”

Astaria questioned.

Nux glanced at his women.

Defeat the Shadow Unit?

They can destroy them.

“...”

He didn’t know how to reply.

Seeing his expression, Astaria narrowed her eyes in doubt and confusion,

“You aren’t thinking they could defeat Shadow Unit, right?”

“...”

“They can huh...”

Astaria understood.

She didn’t know whether she should smile or cry.

She was thankful that none of the members of the Shadow Unit were here.

“Nux, let us go.

You know we are capable.”

Ember glanced at Nux and spoke with a serious look on her face.

“The moment any of us gets injured, we would turn around and run away, I promise. Also, it’s not like you can’t come there to help us, right?

We will call you the moment something goes wrong.”

“ ... ”

Nux turned silent.

“Every one of us will allow you to do anything you want with us if you let us go.”

Nux opened his eyes and glanced at his women,

“Anything?”

“Anything.”

“And you will call me the moment you feel something is wrong?”

“Yes.”

“Are you sure?”

“Tsk, just say yes already. Don’t annoy me.” Felberta snorted.

Nux looked at his women helplessly and,

“Whatever, just go.”

His women smiled,

“I knew you the best!”

Skyla didn’t miss the chance and jumped at Nux.

“Uggh! Take it easy, I am hurt~”

Nux groaned in pain.

“O-Oh, I apologize.”

Skyla panicked.

She then quickly took out a healing potion and drank it.

Then, she kissed Nux.

What?

Nux could have drunk it himself?

Huh? Of course he cannot. He was injured.

Mouth-to-mouth was required.

Astaria, on the other hand, didn't know how to react.

Just what kind of monstrous group has she met?

They can defeat 2 Shadow Units on their own.

She wondered if even she was capable of doing that.

But after thinking about it, she realized.

She can.

Very easily at that.

Shadow Unit was nothing in her eyes...

...

Just like that, time passed.

All this while, Nux only did 3 things, Train with Astaria, cultivate alone, and spend time with his wives.

He also met Teacher Arvina a lot of times, however, he just greeted her normally and then ended the conversation.

‘Master Nux.’

4 days later, Nux was contacted by a certain General.

‘Armando, it’s been a while.’

Nux, who was sitting beside Astaria smiled.

‘Master Nux, I just received the news, all the 7 Generals would now be on stand back, ready to battle any time.’

‘Hmm? Why is that? Only 4 of you were attacking perfectly normally, weren’t you?’ Nux questioned.

‘Lord Herms received the news, the Skyfall Kingdom will be helping the Woods Dynasty in this War.’ Armando reported.

Hearing those words, a small smile appeared on Nux’s face.

‘Alright, be sure to inform me if more King Stage Cultivators come.’

‘As you command, Master Nux.’

Nux terminated the connection and smiled,

Seeing him smile like that, Astaria spoke,

“Why not spar again if you have the time to smile like you are crazy?”

“Please let me live...” Nux requested.

Astaria laughed, “Don’t worry, I am joking. So? What happened? Why are you smiling?”

“Our suspicion was correct, Herms and Amletus were indeed working together,” Nux replied.

“Huh? How do you know?”

“Well... Amaya set a trap and they fell for it.”

“Huh? What do you mean?”

“Amaya’s mother, Riona Skadi reported to Amletus that the Skyfall Kingdom will be aiding the Woods Dynasty in this War against the Solid Earth Kingdom.”

Astaria narrowed her eyes.

“Amaya wanted to test the connection between Herms and Amletus, there was no other way the news could have been leaked, the only ones who knew about this were you, me, my wives, the Ellinger, Alcimus, Riona, and... Amletus.

Riona can be trusted completely, Ellinger and Alcimus would obviously not leak this news, the only one left would be Amletus.

The timing coincides as well.”

“So you all deliberately delivered the news to Amletus, an Emperor Stage Cultivator, and pushed him into a trap?”

“Well, if he was innocent, he wouldn’t have fallen for it.” Nux shrugged.

“...” Astaria didn’t know what to say.

Nux understood what she was thinking and sympathized with her.

“The mother-daughter pair can be dangerous, especially now that their relationship has improved.”

# Chapter 562

“The mother-daughter pair can be dangerous, especially now that their relationship has improved,”

Nux spoke with a wry smile on his face.

Astaria turned towards Nux and furrowed her brows,

“Rather than dangerous, people like them are just... annoying.

They are weak, but they go around, planning this and that, trying different ways to harm you, even if they are your allies, you won't know when they will betray you, they could never become a person you could trust with everything you have, you would always need to keep your guard up around them.

I prefer straightforward people more.

If they hate you, they will say it right to your face.

That is how things should be, straight and simple.”

Nux listen to Astaria's words and then a smile appeared on his face,

“Amaya is not like that.

I trust her with my everything and I don't need to keep my guard up around her.

Rather, I am most relaxed whenever I am with my wives.

To be honest, even Riona, she may be calculating many things while she is with others, however, when she is with people she actually cares about, she will be completely different.”

“I have no clue how you trust people like them, you have to know, manipulation is what they are good at.”

Astaria warned.

“Heh. If I can’t even trust my women, then who would I even trust?” Nux replied with a smile.

Astaria frowned, then, she just snorted,

“I just don’t like people like them...”

“I’ll consider Amaya as an exception.”

“Thank you for that.

Though I do understand why you don’t like people who excel in planning and manipulations, you are the type to solve everything with your swords.”

“That is a much better way to solve things.”

“Hahaha~ I agree.

I am the same as well.”

“No you are not, stop lying.” Astaria shook her head.

Nux smiled wryly, “You are right, I am not...”

I am more like a lazy person who doesn’t want to do anything.

I would rather just stay in a Palace, surrounded by my beautiful wives, and enjoy my life.

Things like manipulations, planning, war, all of them are too troublesome for me.”

Nux spoke as he slowly dropped his head on Astaria’s shoulder.

...or what he tried to do.

However, before his head could touch Astaria's shoulder, Astaria disappeared and appeared a few meters away.

"Don't even try," Astaria spoke.

"Tsk, you are ruthless. You could at least support your student who is now tired, can't you?"

Nux, whose head was now on the ground snorted.

"Support yourself on your own."

Astaria snorted.

Nux sighed.

"Anyways, are you sure you don't want to be with Evane right now?"

Suddenly, Astaria questioned.

"I won't be cultivating today, I'll go straight to her after I have recovered a little," Nux replied.

"Tsk, take a bath before you go, you stink." Astaria snorted as she pinched her nose.

Nux's face twitched, he, however, ignored Astaria's statement and smiled,

"I would go straight to her.

We two will bath together."

"Shameless."

Astaria spoke.

"She is my wife, spending time with her is not shameless.

Of course, you are welcome to join if you want.”

“I would rather not.”

Astaria shook her head.

Nux sighed again.

“Alright, I am going now.”

Astaria spoke.

“At least wait till I recovered enough to stand up,” Nux replied.

“Don’t try to fool me, you monster. You usually only need 10 minutes and 15 minutes have already passed. You are just looking for ways to keep me here so you can spend time with me.

What a pervert.”

“You caught me.”

Nux didn’t deny.

“...”

Astaria turned around and walked away.

Seeing her back, Nux couldn’t help but smile.

Then, he stood up, stretched his body, and turned around as well.

His direction, the Royal Highness’s room.

...

“Queen Evane.”

Nux bowed his head as he walked into the room.

Evane, who was sitting on the bed wearing a thin gown, placed her right leg on top of her left and spoke in a dignified voice.

“You are late.”

“I apologize, my Queen.”

Nux replied.

“You think a mere apology would be enough?”

Evane questioned as she narrowed her eyes.

“I... I have made a mistake, My Queen, please punish me accordingly.”

“Come here,” Evane ordered.

Nux stood up and walked towards her.

Of course, since he was in front of the Queen, he didn't dare look at her face and kept his head low.

“Look at me,” Evane ordered.

Nux finally raised his head and glanced at Queen Evane's green eyes.

“What do you think your punishment should be?”

Queen Evane questioned.

“A lowly man like me don't dare to suggest anything to the mighty Queen,”

Nux knew his limits.

“4 nights then.”

Evane spoke.

“No no no, that's too much.” Nux quickly shook his head.

“3 nights?”

“Still too much.”

“T-Two, I am not going lower than that.”

Evane quickly broke the character.

“Tsk Tsk, you greedy Queen.”

Nux snorted as he climbed onto Evane’s bed and placed her on her lap.

“What’s wrong with being greedy? I am the Queen.”

Evane snorted.

“Now look at that~

Showing off already, aren’t you?”

Nux spoke and Evane chuckled.

“Anyways, are you ready for today?” Suddenly, Nux questioned.

Evane pouted,

“I still wanted you to be with me as well.”

Nux, however, shook his head, “You know we can’t do that yet. With all these Emperors acting out, we are not sure what’s going to happen in the future.

Containing news in Palace is simple, it won’t do good if everyone knew about it right now.”

“...I know that already.”

Evane spoke.

“Of course you do, you are the Queen after all.”

“But I am still sad...” Evane pouted.

“Then how about a bath together to make it up to you?” Nux suggested.

“I won’t ever deny that~”

Evane replied seductively.

She obviously wasn’t planning to keep it as simple as a ‘bath.’

Nux, of course, knew what she was planning.

And who was he kidding?

He was planning the same thing as well.

# Chapter 563

“2 packs of Sparklers please~”

A child walked towards a shop and spoke with a cheery look on his face.

“Here is you Sparklers, be careful while playing with them okay? That would be 6 Bronze coins.”

The shopkeeper replied with a smile on his face.

“Okay!”

The child quickly placed 6 coins on the Shopkeeper’s table and rushed away.

The shopkeeper chuckled and then shook his head.

“Hmm? 6 Bronze Coins? Wasn’t that the price of 1 pack? Why did you give him 2 of them?” A man standing next to the shopkeeper questioned.

“It’s a special discount for today.”

The SHOpkeeper replied.

“B-But won’t that be a loss for you? Especially today. You could have made huge profits you know?”

The man couldn’t understand what the shopkeeper was thinking.

“Hahaha~

I have to sell it for cheaper because it is today.”

“Huh? What do you mean?”

“Don’t you know? It is Queen Evane’s Coronation today.” The Shopkeeper replied.

“Of course I know it. That’s why I said it, even if you sold one pack for 10 coins today, people would still have bought it. Everyone wants to celebrate her coronation in their own way. That is just how popular Queen Evane is. You could have easily used her popularity and could have made huge profits.”

“Hahaha~”

The shopkeeper just started laughing.

The man’s frown deepened.

Was his friend perhaps an Idiot?

He couldn’t help but think.

“I don’t need profits.”

Suddenly, the Shopkeeper spoke.

“Especially on the name of our Queen.

There is no way I would try to profit using the name of someone as charming, merciful, and companionate leader as her.

She had already don’t so much for her.

She excused the huge tax that was on my shoulders, she even promised to open better hospitals where they would allow us to use healing potions and could only charge the making charges.

The Royal Court would also be more open to us commoners from now on.

Not only that, but they even say that she would open an Academy, just like the Royal Academy, where the children of commoners could learn

cultivation and no one would force them to join the Royal Army after graduation.”

The shopkeeper spoke with a fanatic look on his face,

“When someone who has done and plans to do so much for us is becoming the Queen, how can I be selfish and try to profit off her name?

I would rather make a loss today and show Queen Evane my full support.”

The shopkeeper completely and at the same time, another woman came to his shop, buying 3 packs of Sparklers.

Time continued to pass, many commoners prepared for Queen Evane’s coronation.

Of course, Nobles did the same as they prepared many gifts and pleasantries, however, in Evane’s eyes, these nobles mattered less.

The reason was simple, nobles would celebrate whenever a new Ruler is crowned, it was the commoners who were the exception.

The commoners only supported the ruler they actually trusted, and currently, the number of commoners who had placed their trust in Queen Evane was... uncountable.

She was definitely the most supported ruler in the history of the Skyfall Kingdom and all of this just happened because of a few tax reliefs and some promises she had made.

She was the first ruler to actually think about the commoners, who were completely powerless, rather than the nobles who held the major power in the Kingdom.

\*Dhumb\*

Suddenly, everyone in the capital city heard a loud sound.

The once bustling capital suddenly turned silent. Only the children, who didn't know anything, and the animals and birds were making a sound.

\*Dhumb\*

The sound was heard again.

This time, the children, who noticed everyone around them had turned silent as well.

\*Dhumb\*

The sound rang the third time.

\*Dhumb\*

Then the fourth time.

\*Dhumb\*

\*Dhumb\*

\*Dhumb\*

\*Dhumb\*

\*Dhumb\*

\*Dhumb\*

By the time it rang the 10th time, the entire Capital turned silent.

This time, even the animals and birds didn't make any type of noise.

Everyone understood what was happening and smiles appeared on most of the commoners' faces, however, they still didn't make any sound.

They all just turned towards the Royal Palace and bowed their heads.

“Evane Skyfall.”

Suddenly, a voice echoed throughout the capital.

This shocked everyone, even the nobles, everyone wondered how this was even possible, the well-informed nobles, however, understood what was happening and couldn't help but be surprised.

“I, Astaria Skyfall, the Dowager, and the Protector of the Great Skyfall Kingdom, declare that you will be crowned as the Queen of the Skyfall Kingdom and henceforth bear the responsibilities of our Great Kingdom and bring it to greater heights.”

Astaria declared as she signaled a maid.

The maid walked forwards, carrying a red velvet base, where a Golden Crown adorned with different jewels rested.

Astaria picked the Crown.

“Now bow.”

Astaria ordered.

Evane tilted her head forward into a light bow.

She didn't completely bow her head, she was the Future Queen after all.

Astaria smiled a little and then, she placed the Crown on Evane's head.

“Long Live Queen Evane!”

“Long Live the Skyfall Kingdom!”

“Long Live Queen Evane!”

“Long Live the Skyfall Kingdom!”

“Long Live Queen Evane!”

“Long Live the Skyfall Kingdom!”

The cheers started.

\*Whoosh\*

\*Bam\*

Soon, huge fireworks were launched into the sky, brightening the dark sky.

This was the signal for the commoners.

All of them lit up their fireworks as well and,

“Long Live Queen Evane!”

“Long Live the Skyfall Kingdom!”

“Long Live Queen Evane!”

“Long Live the Skyfall Kingdom!”

“Long Live Queen Evane!”

“Long Live the Skyfall Kingdom!”

Loud, reverberating cheers, that overshadowed the nobles cheering in the Royal Palace were heard.

Seeing this scene, Evane couldn't help but smile. Astaria raised her brow in astonishment as well. The others seemed to be surprised as well.

“Long Live Queen Evane!”

“Long Live the Skyfall Kingdom!”

The cheers continues, the fireworks were continuously being fired into the sky.

Under the cheers from the nobles and the commoners, Evane walked towards the new Throne that was built for her and sat down.

Drinks were served, the nobles finally came forward with their gifts according to their ranks, the commoners, on the other hand, continued to cheer for the Queen.

Only after 10 minutes had passed by did they calm down.

Seeing all this, Astaria smiled.

Then suddenly, her smile turned dark and,

“It’s finally time.”

She spoke.

# Chapter 564

\*Clank\* \*Clank\* \*Clank\*

A man sat inside a dark room, closed from all sides, nothing was visible, the only thing that told the man that he was still alive was the sounds of chains clanking whenever he moves.

“Long Live Queen Evane!”

“Long Live the Skyfall Kingdom!”

Suddenly, the man heard a cheer.

It was unusual for the room, where rarely any sounds passes through due to high thick the walls were.

The man opened his eyes, this, however, didn't do anything because of how dark the room was.

“Long Live Queen Evane!”

“Long Live the Skyfall Kingdom!”

The man heard the cheers again.

\*Step\* \*Step\* \*Step\*

Then, he heard the sounds of footsteps.

The man frowned.

Why was someone coming here?

He wondered inwardly as he glanced at the direction the sound came from.

\*Creak\*

The doors were opened, the light pierced into the man's eyes, he needed some time to get used to it.

Suddenly, the man heard a condensing, disdainful voice,

“Man... what's with that look on your face? Did Lady Astaria not provide you with any food?”

The man glanced at the man who had just entered his prison room and frowned,

Black hair, Golden eyes, a handsome face, he has never seen this man before. Who was he?

And as if hearing his thoughts, the man introduced himself,

“Let me introduce myself,

My name is Nux Leander, if it was normal time, I would have bowed, or even kneeled in front of you, however, since you are already in this position, I would not be doing that,

Ricardus Skyfall, the previous King.

Or I should say criminal who is about to be executed.”

Nux's smile widened.

Hearing Nux's words, Ricardus, who was bound by Ironstar chained widened his eyes in surprise.

“E-Executed?”

He questioned.

Well, he knew he was going to get executed, but still, he didn't think it would happen this soon.

“What are you acting so surprised for? Didn't you already know about it?”

Nux questioned.

“N-No, you can’t execute me!” Ricardus’s pale face turned even paler.

He quickly rushed towards Nux, he was bounded by the Chains so he still couldn’t reach him, however, he got as close to him as possible and placed his head on the ground.

“Y-You can’t do this! Please! You can’t kill me!

Y-Your name is Nux, right? Listen to me, remove these chains, I know a secret tunnel, I would run away from there, you can just say the chains somehow broke apart or either blame someone else. If I make it out of here, I will always remember your favor, you will have me, a King Stage Cultivator as your ally, I am sure I will be useful to you. You stand to gain nothing from my death anyways! This is absolutely a deal wher-”

“Huh? What are you talking about? I stand to gain a lot from your death.”

Nux suddenly frowned and replied,

“H-Huh? B-But I don’t even know you. W-Why do you want me dead?”

“Well, it is true that we have never met before, but my wife doesn’t like you,” Nux replied.

“Y-Your w-wife? W-W-Who is she? I will personally apologize to her if I had wronged her in any way. I-I will even fall on my knees and rub my nose on the ground in front of her. Just tell me who she is.”

“She is your daughter, Evane Skyfall.”

“H-Huh?”

The previous King didn’t know how to react.

“M-My daughter?”

“Mhm.” Nux nodded with a smile on his face.

“Y-You are my daughter’s husband?”

He questioned and Nux nodded again.

“Mhm, the daughter who is replacing you as the next ruler of this Kingdom. You can say that I will become the next King now.”

“W-Wait, but I am sure that E-Evane doesn’t hate me,” Ricardus muttered. He couldn’t care less about who would become the next King or whatever, he just wanted to be alive.

“That’s true, but my other wife hates you.” Nux nodded and then replied.

“W-Who?”

“Hmm, Amaya for the start, she hates you a lot, then there is Allura, then... hmmm... I don’t think others hate you... they don’t really know you that well, but I am sure they would hate you if they knew.”

“A-Amaya and A-A-Allura?”

Ricardus stuttered.

“Mhm.”

“A-A-Are you talking about the R-Royal Consorts.”

“Previous Royal Consorts.”

Nux corrected.

“Now they are my wives.”

“Y-Y-You...”

Ricardus didn’t know what to say.

If it was normal, he would have executed this bastard right now, not only did he go after his daughter, he even went after his wives!

His wives!

How dare he!?

Ricardus was boiling in anger, however, more than anger, he was... fearful.

Fearful of his own death.

“I-I’ll a-apologize to Amaya and Allura!”

He spoke.

“Hmm? You don’t mind that they are my wives now? They really love me deeply you know? I love them a lot as well.”

“L-Loving your partner is good for a healthy relationship.”

Ricardus smiled.

A disgusted expression appeared on Nux’s face as he stepped back,

“Dude... I am amazed...

And I thought I was a coward...”

Ricardus didn’t mind and requested,

“P-Please let me leave! I will ma-”

“I would have if I could, but the thing is, one of my wives hate you so much that just mentioning your name would anger her.

I heard that you killed her son, as a man, I can’t ignore this, now can I?”

“I-I killed her s-son? W-When did I do that? Who are talking about? What is her name?” Ricardus questioned.

“Astaria Skyfall.”

“!!!”

Ricardus’s eyes widened in shock.

“S-S-She is you-”

“Well, not now, but I am still trying my very best,  
I will make her mine soon enough.”

Nux replied.

“Y-Y-You... w-who a-are you?”

Ricardus questioned.

“Hmmm. That’s a good question.”

Nux spoke and started pondering.

“I am your son-in-law, then I am your ex-wives’ husband and then I will also become your uncle who you can call a father in the future.

It is kind of a strange relationship.

But meh,

It’s a cultivation world,

Things get a little complicated here.

Anyway,

Ricardus Skyfall,

Get ready for your execution.”

# Chapter 565

“Why are we here?”

“I do not know.”

“Look, even all the Dukes seem confused...”

“Duke Vestalis seems to know something.”

“Of course he would know something, he is the Queen’s Grandfather.”

“I don’t see Duke Fulvanus here.”

“Mhm, I have been wondering the same for a while now, let alone him, I don’t see anyone related to the Fulvanus Family.”

“Are they against Queen Evane?”

“Does that even matter now? She has already been crowned as the new Ruler. I don’t think Duke Fulvanus is dumb enough to against the ruling authority.”

“Wait, now that I think about it, where is King Ricardus?”

Shouldn’t he have first abdicated his Throne before giving it to Queen Evane?”

“Actually I haven’t heard anything from King Ricardus for a while now.”

“Well, it is not like he is much active.”

“But still, shouldn’t he be present in his daughter’s coronation?”

The nobles continued to discuss among themselves, they had many doubts in their mind, but the question was why they were taken to the Royal Stage.

The Royal Stage is a building used for big events, a tournament among the top cultivators of the world that was held every once in a while was a good example of such an event.

Did Queen Evane prepare something for them?

They all wondered in their heads.

They tried to glance at the stage to guess what was going to happen, however, other than a peculiar dome made from some Black Purple material, they couldn't see anything.

“Silence.”

Suddenly, a voice echoed throughout the Royal Stage.

All the nobles turned silent.

\*Step\*

A man walked into the stage and bowed. He was carrying an axe in his hand and looked quite muscular.

“I am sure you all are wondering why you have been brought here when you were celebrating the coronation of Queen Evane.

Today, is the day that will be written down in the history of our Great Kingdom, it is the day that marks the start of Queen Evane's era. It is the day that marks the start of all the changes that our Kingdom would go through and develop to unimaginable heights.

This will also be the day after which the rotten elements of our Kingdom will start to live in fear.

This is the day, which will mark the new beginning.”

As these words ended,

The Purple Black Dome that was created started disappearing and,

“!!!”

People present here all widened their eyes in shock as they saw what was inside the Dome.

King Ricardus, the man who held the greatest power in the Kingdom, the man who was capable of making or destroying anyone, currently had his head forced inside a guillotine.

“T-That’s...”

“K-King Ricardus...”

The nobles couldn’t believe their eyes.

Astaria completely ignored their reaction and continued,

“Ricardus Skyfall, the previous King of the Skyfall Kingdom is a vile criminal who killed his own siblings because of his greed for the Throne.

Not only that, he has even forced himself upon countless women and has even unjustly executed the families of the women who had refused him.

For a vile man like him, no punishment other than death would be adequate.

Today, Ricardus Skyfall would be executed for all the crimes that he is guilty of, and this execution will also be the message for everyone.

The guilty will be punished no matter who they are. Even the Queen blood father will not be tolerated.”

Saying those words, Astaria glanced at the man holding the axe and nodded.

The man nodded back and raised his axe.

Then, he glanced at the Queen.

With an emotionless look on her face, the Queen nodded,

\*Whoosh\*

The Axe was dropped, the roped was cut and,

\*Slice\*

\*Thud\*

Ricardus's head fell onto the ground.

He was executed.

“ ... ”

An eerie silence fell all over the place.

Ricardus's blood continued to flow.

As people witnessed this scene, different thoughts filled their minds.

Some were fearful of the new Queen, they couldn't believe that her influence was strong enough to even execute the previous King.

Some were shocked that she ordered the execution of her father without a single change in her expression.

Some were delighted that the Queen seemed just.

Some thought the Queen was cruel.

‘He is finally gone.’

Astaria, on the other hand, couldn't help but look at Ricardus's head with an emotional look on her face.

She had been waiting for this day for a long long time.

An image of her child appeared in her mind and a small smile appeared on her face,

‘I have finally avenged you, Dek.’ She spoke inwardly.

Arvina, who saw her teacher’s smile couldn’t help but glance at her husband’s severed head again.

Different emotions filled her mind.

She was delighted.

That man was finally gone.

She was free now.

On the other hand, Amaya and Allura, who were also once King’s wife glanced at his severed head,

Amaya didn’t really care.

She was busy trying to avoid her annoying mother, who has been talking to her for a while now.

Allura had the same attitude as well.

She didn’t exactly hate the King, however, she didn’t like him either.

She was pretty much neutral, but she was still happy that filth like this was finally removed from this world.

Nux knew what his women were thinking, therefore, he ignored all of them and only contacted the one who worried him the most,

‘Are you okay?’

He questioned.

‘I am fine.’

Evane replied without any change in her expression.

‘You don’t have to act strong in front of me.’ Nux replied.

Evane might not show it, but she still ordered the execution of her own father right now, this was definitely affecting her.

Or at least that’s what Nux’s thought.

Evane, however, shook her head,

‘It was nothing. That man had to die. If I didn’t order his execution, she would have found another way to kill him.

All of this is just a show planned by Amaya to raise my authority even further.

Something like this can’t affect me.

I am not that weak.’

‘Of course you are not.’

Hearing her reply, Nux just smiled.

He would still spend more time with Evane today just to be sure.

Of course, Evane wouldn’t mind it either.

Anyways, that was how the Coronation of Queen Evane and Execution of King Ricardus ended and the next morning’s sun rose up.

# Chapter 566

\*Clang\*

Nux blocked Astaria's sword with his own, he then punched, aiming at her face, Astaria, however, just tilted her head and kicked Nux's abdomen, Nux defended the attack using his forearm, Astaria smiled and used even more force.

“!!!”

Nux's eyes widened in surprise, he wanted to use [Mirror], however, it was too late and he was sent flying back.

“Heh, you got rusty since you didn't train for the last two days.”

Astaria laughed.

Nux stood up from the ground and smiled back,

“I didn't get rusty, you are just jealous that I spent all my time with my wives and you didn't see me for the last 2 days, and now you are punishing me for that.”

“Tsk, stop being delusional.” Astaria snorted.

“Why would I be jealous over something like that? If you don't want to train, it is your loss. Also, if it was you 2 days ago, you would have been able to use that Mirror Magic of yours to defend against my attack.”

“Tsk.” Nux snorted back.

“People don't get rusty just because they didn't train for the 2 days. And the reason I failed to defend against your attack was that you changed your tactics.

Normally, for the first spar of the day, you don't use Mana, it is more like a warm-up spar where you test how much I have improved, today, however, not only did you use Mana, you even used it at the last moment just to make sure that I won't have the time to block your attack."

"Haah? You think people in real life would tell you that they are going to use Mana or not?"

Astaria snorted.

"Haah? You think I would go around sparring with my enemies?"

Nux countered.

"..."

Astaria turned silent.

Nux glanced at her and smiled.

"What are you looking at?"

"Tsundere."

"What the hell does that even means?"

"Nothing."

Nux just continued to smile.

Astaria continued to boil in anger.

She knew, this man wouldn't wipe that smile off his face no matter what she says, she needed to change the topic.

"So? How was your meeting with Ricardus? It was your first time meeting him, right?"

Astaria questioned.

“Hmm? What’s with the sudden question?”

“I am just curious,” Astaria replied.

“To be honest, he was pathetic.”

Nux stated.

“Why do you say that?” Astaria questioned with a serious look on her face.

“I went to him because I wanted to act like a third-rate winner who had just won.

I wanted to smile widely as I continue to humiliate that bastard just like any low-level scrub would do, he, however, was so pathetic that he started to beg for his life even before I could get into the zone.

Tsk, he ruined all the fun.

Pathetic.”

Nux snorted and Astaria,

Well, she just glanced at Nux with a foolish look on her face.

She didn’t know how to react.

Ricardus was pathetic, that she knew.

But what’s with the strange fetish of acting like a third-rate villain?

Why would anyone want to do that?

Unable to contain her curiosity, Astaria questioned.

“Tsk, you won’t know. Acting like a third-rate villain is fun, you just need a better target.

Just wait for it.

I am sure I will find a target soon enough.

Then I will show you how satisfying it is.

Hehehe~”

Nux laughed with a wide smile on his face.

Seeing that smile, Astaria wanted to punch that face of his.

“Anyways, they are going to leave today, correct?”

Suddenly, Nux questioned.

“Mhm, they said that they needed to look into the situation before making a battle plan,” Nux replied.

“Are you sure about this? Will they be fine?”

Astaria questioned.

Nux’s face turned serious as well,

“Well, the only thing I can do right now is trust them. If anything goes wrong, I am sure they will take care of it.

They all are capable women.”

“They are indeed.”

Astaria nodded as well.

“Alright, enough chitchat, get ready now.”

Hearing those words, Nux took his battle stance, Astaria rushed towards him, this time, the Mana around her moved.

Nux’s face turned serious.

This time, Astaria was serious.

He tightened his grip around his sword and at the same time, the Ground in front of him turned a little purple.

...

“D-Dynast!”

A guard rushed into the Royal Hall and spoke loudly.

“What happened?”

Ellinger, who was sitting on his throne spoke with a slight frown on his face.

He couldn't understand why his guard was acting like that.

It was unsightly.

“D-Dynast, the people from the Skyfall Kingdom are here.”

The guard reported.

“Let them in.”

Ellinger spoke.

At the same time, he couldn't understand,

Why was the guard acting like that?

The Skyfall Kingdom was an Ally, though the fact that they would assist in the war was not announced, many knew that they weren't enemies.

There was no reason for the guard to panic like that.

“S-Should I r-really?”

The Guard questioned.

“Huh? What do you mean? They are our esteemed guests, let them in, now.”

Ellinger spoke with a cold look on his face.

“D-Dynast... t-there are 9 of them.”

The guard reported.

“So what?”

“A-All of them are King Stage Cultivators.”

“!!!”

Ellinger’s expression changed.

He now understood why the guard was acting like that.

If 9 Stage cultivators appeared in front of the Royal Palace, anyone would act like that.

For people who didn’t know about the existence of the Protector, this was a catastrophic event.

“Do not worry, let them in.”

Ellinger nodded.

The guard bowed and rushed out.

Soon, 9 women walked into the Royal Hall.

All these women had covered their faces and seeing all of them, Ellinger couldn’t help but gulp.

‘I-Is the Skyfall K-Kingdom really that strong? 9 King Stage Cultivators...? Just how can they have so many?’

He was sure that the Kingdom had more.

Their general isn't here, the King, the man who came with Lady Amaya, he himself could count 3 more Cultivators.

‘Minimum of 12 King Stage Cultivators...’

Ellinger gulped again.

He now realized why the Skyfall Kingdom is known as the Strongest.

“It is nice to meet you again, Lord Ellinger.”

Amaya greeted.

“L-Likewise, Lady Amaya.” Ellinger smiled back.

“We are here to see the situation of the war-”

“About that, Lady Amaya.”

Suddenly, Ellinger interrupted.

“We wanted to change the conditions a little.”

# Chapter 567

“We wanted to change the conditions a little.”

Ellinger spoke with a little awkward look on his face and,

“...”

The entire Royal Hall turned silent as they glanced at Amaya.

Amaya narrowed her eyes and,

“Dynast Ellinger, are you looking down on the Skyfall Kingdom?”

She questioned in a solemn tone.

The atmosphere turned even heavier.

The deal was already signed between the 2 Kingdoms, changing the conditions now was... not possible.

Even suggesting something like this was disrespectful.

It shows that the party doesn't care about the contract and thinks the other party has to oblige to their request because they are better out of the two parties.

Although the Skyfall Kingdom did approach first, it doesn't mean they were the ones who were desperate for help, no matter how one sees it, the party which was on the weaker side is not the Skyfall Kingdom, but the Woods Dynasty.

And requesting to change the conditions in a situation like this...

They were clearly looking down on the Skyfall Kingdom.

“Lady Amaya, please understand, the deal you came up with was too abrupt, we didn’t have much time to think things through.

Why don’t you listen to our request first and decide later?

I assure you that it will not be disadvantageous to the Skyfall Kingdom in any way.”

Ellinger spoke calmly.

Amaya glanced at the Dynast sitting in front of her and after thinking for a while, she nodded.

“State your wishes.”

“We wish to participate in the battle against the Solid Earth Army as well.” Ellinger spoke.

Amaya narrowed her eyes, considering it as a signal, Ellinger continued his explanation.

“According to the deal, the Skyfall Kingdom would take care of the Solid Earth Kingdom’s army on their own and we wouldn’t need to participate in the war at all.

Although it is a great opportunity for us to save our men and deal with our problem at the same time, our reputation is too damaged for us to take this step.

If the Skyfall Kingdom takes care of the Solid Earth Army, it would spread a message that the Woods Dynasty is incapable of taking care of their own Land and has submitted to the Skyfall Kingdom for protection. This would greatly affect our reputation and that is something we cannot allow.

Therefore, I request you to allow our soldiers to participate in the upcoming battle as well.”

Hearing what he said, Amaya and the others narrowed their eyes.

There was nothing wrong with the changes, it was rather beneficial for the Skyfall Kingdom since they would have more options.

At the very least, the Woods were not disrespecting them.

However,

“This affects our Battle plan.”

Amaya stated with an emotionless look on her face.

“This is something we absolutely must do.”

Ellinger couldn't back down either.

A small smile appeared on Amaya's face,

“This will affect our plan, we aren't sure if we would be able to deal with more than 80% of the enemy soldiers if things proceed as you want.”

“...”

Ellinger turned silent.

“Can you kill half of them?”

Suddenly, a voice echoed throughout the Hall.

Amaya's face turned serious.

Alcimus was here.

She and her sisters bowed a little.

An old man walked in and repeated his question,

“Can you kill half of them?”

“We can manage that, yes.”

Amaya nodded.

“Alright then.”

Alcimus nodded.

Then, he turned towards Ellinger and nodded.

\*Clap\* \*Clap\*

Ellinger clapped two times, a servant walked in with some papers in his hand and passed it to Amaya.

“This is the new deal, please sign it. We trust that Lady Astaria will not go back on her words, therefore, we do not require her signatures.”

Alcimus spoke.

Amaya raised her eyebrows.

However, after thinking for a while, she just shrugged inwardly.

From Woods’ perspective, it didn’t really matter.

Alcimus already knew what was up, the matter of the Mythical Creature was serious enough so he knew Astaria would never go back on her words.

Amaya read the new deal and just as she was about to agree, Ember stepped forward,

“I have another condition.”

Hearing her words, Alcimus and Ellinger frowned, the two of them glanced at Amaya, she, however, closed her eyes and shook her head.

The message was clear.

She was not the leader here.

The lady who had stepped up had the same standing as her, she did not have the authority to say anything to her.

“What is it?” Alcius questioned as he looked into Ember’s eyes.

“If the Woods Soldiers want to participate in the Battle, they need to listen to our commands.”

Ember spoke.

Alcius frowned.

“It is not simple.”

Suddenly, a King Stage Cultivator, who was sitting amongst the Ministers of the Dynasty stood up and spoke.

Ember glanced at the man and frowned.

The man started, “Since all we do is fight, we, the soldiers do not possess the tact of the nobles.

If General Phorus were here he would understand since he knows how things work in the army.

But asking that the soldiers follow your orders just because of the deal... it would only create ridges in the army.

You need to earn the Leader’s spot on your own.

We can’t just give that to you even if we wanted to.”

Hearing the man’s words, a smile appeared on Ember’s face,

“I presume you are the new General of the Woods Dynasty?”

She questioned.

“My name is Vidyut Dore, the current General of the Woods Dynasty.” The man introduced himself and lifted his chest in pride.

Ember’s smile widened,

“Vidyut, when I said that the soldiers need to listen to our commands, I never said we wanted the position of the Acting General.

I only wanted to inform you that I will be the Acting General.

It was not a request, it was a condition.

As for how to make the soldiers listen to my orders,

You don’t need to worry about that,

I believe I am more than capable to do so.”

# Chapter 568

“As for how to make the soldiers listen to my orders,

You don't need to worry about that,

I believe I am more than capable to do so.”

Ember replied and unconsciously, a heavy, dominating aura was released from her body.

General Vidyut was taken aback.

Ellinger, on the other hand, couldn't help but feel strange.

This woman...

He felt like he had seen her before.

Her Black Red Hair, those Fiery Crimson eyes, and now this suppressive Aura...

All these characteristics matched a woman he knew.

The two of them were way too similar.

To the point that Ellinger doubted that this woman... might actually be the woman he knew.

“You still haven't introduced yourself, Lady from the Skyfall Kingdom.”

Unable to contain his curiosity, Ellinger questioned.

Ember's smile widened as he introduced herself,

“My name is Ember Leander.”

Hearing her name, Ellinger's eyes widened in surprise.

However, before he acted, another thing bothered him.

Amaya's full name was Amaya Leander as well.

Leander...

Two King Stage Woman had this as their family name, however, Ellinger had never heard of Leander Family.

A family that has 2 King Stage Cultivators should be a well-known family, knowing that he has never heard of this family alerted Ellinger and he decided to hold back and spoke,

"Please excuse my ignorance but I have never heard of Leander Family before..."

"We rose to prominence recently, it is natural that you don't know about us," Ember replied, then, her expression turned a little fierce and she continued,

"Of course, that doesn't mean we can be underestimated."

"O-Of course, of course."

Ellinger started to laugh as well.

'I would be a fool to underestimate a family that is capable of producing 2 King Stage Cultivators.'

He thought inwardly.

At the same time, he decided not to pursue this matter further.

Even if this woman in front of him was Ember he knew, he didn't care.

Or more appropriately, he didn't have any plans to go against the Leander family, not when he is already tied up from all directions.

“Alright, I will agree to your conditions.

As long as you manage to convince Woods Soldiers, you can have the command of the army.”

Alcimus spoke.

“However, since we are tight on time, I don’t think we should waste time in creating another deal, I hope you show your trust in me and sign the current deal.”

Amaya thought about it for a while and nodded,

“Alright, since Lord Alcimus decided to trust the Skyfall Kingdom, we will place our trust in Lord as well.”

The reason was simple.

The new deal only stated that the Woods Army would participate in the war.

It never stated who would lead that.

So even if they lead it right now, the Woods couldn’t claim that they broke the Treaty.

“Alright, since the negotiations are complete, we would like to head to the Battlezone.”

Ember spoke.

It has been a long time since she last walked into a Battle Zone, it wouldn’t be a lie to say that she was excited.

“So soon? You can rest here for a few-”

Ellinger was about to speak, however, Ember interrupted.

“We are already tight on time, we need some time to prepare our new Battleplan as well. I would appreciate if Dynast would let us leave right

now.”

Hearing her words, Ellinger was now sure that this Ember was Ember Windstar he knew.

However, he just decided to smile and nodded,

“Alright then, General Vidyut, I will leave everything to you.”

General Vidyut stepped forward,

“It would be my honor,”

Then, he turned towards the ladies and,

“Please follow me. I will take you to our stronghold.”

The women nodded.

The General walked out of the Hall and the woman followed behind him.

As the women left, Ellinger’s face turned solemn as he spoke,

“Grandfather, do you recognize that Black Red-haired woman?”

“She was that General that you liked.”

Alcimus replied.

“So you did recognize her.” Ellinger nodded.

“Of course, there is no way that stupid mask can hide her aura. Also, it wasn’t like she was particularly trying to hide her identity. Changing the color of your hair and your name isn’t really difficult.” Alcimus spoke.

“But wasn’t she kidnapped? Was it the Skyfall Kingdom who kidnapped her?”

Ellinger questioned.

“With a temperament like hers, she would never decide to side with the people who kidnapped her.”

“Then did the Skyfall Kingdom save her from those Kidnappers?”

Alcimus replied “That is a possibility.

She is not a child, she must have known what you were planning after stripping her of her position, even a fool won't return to the Dynasty when they have another Kingdom offering their support.”

Alcimus spoke as he narrowed his eyes.

Ellinger gulped in fear, however, he quickly controlled himself and questioned,

“Isn't that akin to betraying the Kingdom? What if she leaks our secrets to the Skyfall Kingdom?”

“Don't try to shift the blame, Ellinger.

A King Stage Cultivator left our Dynasty because of your foolish actions.

Man up, and take the responsibility for it.

Also, do you really think the Skyfall Kingdom needs to know your Army Secrets in order to defeat you in a Battle?”

Alcimus questioned.

“...”

Ellinger turned silent as he recalled that the Skyfall Kingdom had a minimum of 12 King Stage Cultivators in their rank.

“If the two countries fight in a battle without the Emperors involved,

The Skyfall Kingdom would absolutely destroy the Woods Dynasty.”

Alcimus spoke.

“ ...”

Ellinger turned silent.

‘Even the Emperors were involved, the result won’t change...’

He wanted to say these words out loud, however, he knew he wouldn’t live to see another day if he did therefore, Ellinger held himself back.

“Anyway, don’t bother thinking about useless things.

She is not Ember Windstar anymore.

She is now Ember Leander.

We have lost her, so forget about her.

Also,”

Suddenly, Alcimus’s face turned even solemn and he spoke,

“Try to investigate this Leander Family.”

“As you say, Grandfather.”

# Chapter 569

“We are here.”

General Vidyut spoke with a smile on his face.

“It would have been much quicker if we had just run,” Ember commented.

“That is true, but I can’t have our guest run while they visit us now can I?”  
General Vidyut laughed lightly.

“To think you were the one people from the Army were rough, you seem very tactful with your words,” Felberta spoke as she glanced at Vidyut.

“Well, I became the General not too long ago, as you might know already, our Dynasty has lost 2 Generals in this War.”

“From what I have heard, it makes sense to say that your Dynasty lost one of the Generals due to their sheer foolishness.”

Evane couldn’t help but comment.

She has always looked up to Ember Windstar.

And knowing what happened to her... well, although she is delighted Ember is now her sister because of this, she was still a little itchy about it.

“I would rather not comment on that.”

General Vidyut just smiled.

“Anyways, let’s not waste time now. Let’s enter.”

Ember spoke as she patted Evane’s head at the same time.

As Evane calmed down, Vidyut nodded in agreement.

“Lady Ember is right. Please follow me, I will take you to our base.”

General Vidyut spoke and they all entered Ravenhill.

Soon, they all walked into the largest building in the city. It looked like the City Lord’s Mansion, however, currently, the city was being abandoned by the citizens, many had already left, and the others were currently leaving under soldier’s orders.

It was clear that the City Lord had already left.

Looking around, Skyla couldn’t help but comment,

“The situation seems more serious than I thought.”

“...”

Vidyut didn’t say anything and walked into a particular room.

The women followed inside, there, they saw him standing behind a huge table that had the map of the city.

“I know you all already have some information, however, let me summarize the current situation just to make sure that we all are on the same page.”

General Vidyut spoke with a serious expression on his face.

The women nodded and the General started,

“The City we are in is called Ravenhill City, the Solid Earth Army has already taken over our 2 Forts, the Villages and Towns near them. We can say that our first-line defense has already been breached.

All the towns and villages that are between the Two Forts have been attacked and plundered by the enemy.

Ravenhill City is the only city that has strong Walls, this means that it is also our second line of defense. If we lose this to the enemy, all the Towns,

villages, and cities behind us will be in danger and we would have to jump back to our last line of defense, the Capital City.

It is clear that we cannot lose this city, however, things are not positive.

The Solid Earth Army is hell-bent on attacking us with more than 30,000 Soldiers, in the end, Ravenhill is a city and not a Fort, therefore, we do not have any traps prepared for this situation.

The worse thing is that the enemy has set up Towers outside the Walls and is looking at all our activities from afar, not even giving us a chance to prepare for a new trap.

We only have 15,000 active soldiers, 20,000 of our soldiers are currently under medical care, and only 10,000 of them would be able to participate within a month, the rest would need more time.

As for the enemies, other than the 10,000 soldiers who attack us every day and the 20,000 who stay behind and rest, we don't know how many soldiers they have.

Currently, the enemies have higher numbers, higher morale, and better conditions.”

General Vidyut explained.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Ember, Amaya, Evane, and the others turned silent.

“So to summarize...

You people are fucked, correct?”

Edda commented.

Everyone in the room turned towards the Tanned woman.

“W-What?”

Edda questioned.

“That is correct... the situation is dire.”

General Vidyut admitted.

“How come do you not have any information about the enemy?”

Allura couldn't help but question.

“We lose contact with all the spies we send there and since the war between the two countries has turned even more serious, we are unable to deploy more spies.”

General Vidyut replied.

Everyone in the room turned towards Ember.

This was the same problem she faced before.

Of course, when Ember was leading the Woods Army, the situation wasn't this bad.

“Alright, we have heard the situation. Now we would like to meet the Deputy Generals and other high-ranking soldiers.”

Ember spoke.

“Of course.” General Vidyut nodded.

A servant then walked into the room and General Vidyut ordered,

“Call all the higher-ups.”

The Servant bowed his head and walked away.

Soon, all the higher-ups, 4 Deputy Generals, and 10 Assistant Generals walked away.

Seeing her previous subordinates, Ember's expression warmed up a little. Of course, she didn't recognize any of the Assistant Generals, however, the 4 Deputy Generals, she was glad that these fools were still alive.

At the same time, Amaya had started analyzing the new faces. They all looked tired, it was clear that they weren't in their best condition. From the sweat that still hadn't dried up, it was clear that they were still in Battle not too long ago, however, since there weren't any injuries, Amaya assumed that it wasn't a hard-fought battle.

“They are reinforcements from the Skyfall Kingdom, treat them as you would treat me.”

General Vidyut spoke in a strict tone, completely different from the tone he used when talking to Nux's wives.

The Deputy and Assistant Generals were already looking at the women who were standing in front of them.

9 King Stage Cultivators...

They had never seen these many strong Cultivators in their entire life.

All of them quickly bowed their head and showed their respect.

‘Any spies?’

Ember questioned Amaya.

‘None.’ Amaya replied.

‘Alright.’ Ember nodded and then stepped forward.

“I have heard enough about the overall conditions, I now need to know about our soldiers, how are they doing?”

Suddenly, Deputy General Laurence stepped forward and spoke,

“It would be better if you see it for yourself, Lady Ember.”

# Chapter 570

“It would be better if you see it for yourself, Lady Ember.”

Deputy General Laurence stepped forward and spoke.

“Huh? Deputy General Laurence, I did not introduce them, how did you know Lady Ember’s name?”

General Vidyut questioned.

Deputy General glanced at Vidyut and froze.

The moment his eyes fell on these 9 Ladies, the first person he noticed was this Black-Red haired.

He didn’t need anything more than a glance to identify General Ember.

Her Aura was simply impossible to follow, a mere mask couldn’t hide her.

The other Deputy Generals were the same, they all recognized General Ember.

However, the problem was that in others’ eyes, ‘General Ember’ was at worse, dead, at best, Kidnapped.

She couldn’t be here.

So he couldn’t possibly tell General Vidyut about her.

“I have met Deputy General Laurence before.”

As Laurence was placed in a difficult situation, Ember stepped up.

“Ah, so that’s it.” Vidyut nodded.

Ember nodded.

Then, she turned towards Laurence and spoke,

“I will follow your suggestion, Deputy General Laurence.

Guide me to other soldiers.”

Laurence bowed his head and agreed,

“As you command, Lady Ember.”

“I will be coming as well.” Skyla jumped in.

Thyra didn't say anything but she stepped forward, signaling that she would be there as well.

The 3 Women then turned towards Vidyut and the General questioned,

“Do I need to come with you?”

He couldn't possibly be against Ember's decision. Checking on the Soldier's conditions was a good thing.

“No need to worry, we will manage it on our own.

It is already night anyways, we will start all the operations from tomorrow, General Vidyut should rest.”

Ember then turned towards the other Assistant Generals and nodded,

“You all look tired as well, rest well, you all need to conserve your energies since our counterattack will start soon.”

“As you command, Lady Ember.”

The Assistant Generals nodded with excited looks on their faces.

Seeing 9 King Stage Cultivators today, they were all excited.

They could feel it, they would counterattack soon.

Soon, they would destroy the Solid Earth Army.

“Lady Ember, we would like to follow you as well.”

The 3 Deputy Generals stepped forward and requested.

Ember nodded.

The 7 of them then walked out of the room.

“We will be taking our leave as well.”

The General spoke.

“Rest well.”

Amaya nodded.

The General and the Assistant Generals left the room.

After they left, Amaya’s face turned serious and she spoke,

“I will contact Armando now.”

Felberta nodded.

‘Armando.’

Amaya contacted.

‘Lady Amaya.’

The General of the Enemy Camp replied respectfully.

...

“It’s been a file since I saw you fools.”

As they walked out of the room and started roaming around the city.

“Lady Ember? What are you talking about?”

Laurence frowned and laughed awkwardly.

“Don’t act like that you fool, you can trust them.” Ember quickly understood what happened and replied.

“What? Did you forget about me already?”

Thyra questioned as her blue eyes shined.

“Y-Y-You are Thyra!”

Laurence’s eyes widened in surprise.

“W-When did you become a King Stage Cultivator!?” Another Deputy General questioned.

Thyra just smiled and didn’t answer the question.

The Deputy Generals were shocked.

“Is... Is that man here as well?”

Suddenly, Laurence questioned.

The man who managed to win the Fiery Killer’s heart...

That man had left a deep impression in the Deputy Generals’ hearts.

“No, he is not here.”

Ember shook her head.

For some reason, the Deputy Generals’ sighed in relief.

“Oi, what’s with that reaction?”

Skyla couldn’t control herself and questioned with a cold look on her face.

Though since her eyes were a little bigger than normal and the rest of her face was covered, she only looked even cuter than normal.

“N-Nothing.” A Deputy General replied.

“General Ember, this Lady...” Laurence questioned.

“Skyla Leander, you can call me General Skyla.” Skyla introduced herself with a prideful look on her face.

If Ellinger or Alcimus had heard her, they would have widened their eyes in surprise.

‘She is a Leander as well! 3 King Stage Cultivators!’

That’s what their reaction would have been.

Of course, no one knew how they would react if they knew that all the 9 women they met were Leanders.

“Anyways, let’s not waste much time, Lawrence, give me a report of the current situation,” Ember ordered.

“The situation is bad.”

Lawrence spoke with a grim look on his face.

“I won’t go into detail about the overall situation, that is bad enough already, but the situation of our soldiers isn’t good either.

Their morale is at an all-time low.

When Finkelstein became the General, to improve the situation, he introduced some new rules, these rules completely ignored the soldiers’ mental fatigue and forced them to work for longer hours.

Not only that, General Finkelstein put a complete stop to the consumption of alcohol, the only thing keeping the soldiers sane.

The men with high cultivation still managed to survive, however, the weaker soldiers got weaker and weaker.

The new General, General Vidyut, he is a good General who cares about his soldiers, however, he is still lacking and is kind of a pushover.

We tried to tell him to change some rules and revert back to your rules, however, the Assistant Generals, who feared that we would try to ‘control’ the Generals resisted.”

“I can understand their position, if the General only listened to Deputy Generals without thinking much himself, then the situation would only get worse.” Ember nodded.

“That is correct, we do not blame them. The problem is General Vidyut, he is still too lacking.”

“I noticed that when I was talking to him as well. He didn’t have the Aura that you possess but I ignored it because even that General Phorus didn’t have your Aura.” Thyra spoke.

“Tsk. You think any random King Stage Cultivator would be like me?” Ember snorted.

“Of course not! General Ember is the best General in the world!” One of the Deputy General spoke with a prideful look on her face.

The other Deputy Generals nodded without any hesitation.

Ember snorted and a small smile appeared on her face.

Looking at her expression, Thyra just smiled wryly and shook her head in defeat.

As they were talking, the group noticed a few soldiers who were keeping guard while their comrades were sleeping and as soon as Ember’s eyes fell on these soldiers, her expression turned serious.

“This won’t do...”

# Chapter 571

Ember looked at the soldiers' conditions and a frown appeared on her face.

“This won't do...”

She commented.

The soldiers she saw had deep dark circles under their eyes, they weren't drunk, however, their back was still hinged and their soldiers were hanging.

What was worse?

Ember recognized these soldiers.

All of them followed her commands when she was the General.

All these soldiers were once filled with valor and life. They walked with a straight back and bright looks on their faces.

Even when the situation of the War was bad, the soldiers still didn't look this down.

To be honest, their current situation was so bad that they looked no different than a malnourished commoner.

To see her soldiers looking so weak...

It was a big shock for Ember.

Of course, she had considered this possibility when she left with Nux, however, things would be this bad...

She didn't expect it.

“Is the situation the same for all the soldiers?” Ember questioned.

“More or Less.”

Deputy General Lawrence replied.

Ember then turned towards Lawrence and narrowed her eyes,

“Looking at your appearance, I didn’t expect that the situation would be so bad.”

Hearing those words, Lawrence lowered his head in shame.

“I couldn’t do anything.”

“ ... ”

Ember didn’t say anything and continued with her walk.

She met more soldiers as she walked around and just like Lawrence said, all the soldiers were in the same condition. Tired and hopeless.

Their morale was indeed at an all-time low.

After walking around for 2 hours, Ember finally decided to return to the Mansion. She ordered Lawrence and the other Deputy General to go rest while she walked into the Mansion.

“How was it?”

Amaya questioned.

“Worse than I expected.”

Ember shook her head.

Amaya glanced at Ember and questioned.

“How much time do you need?”

“Things are too deep, I will improve the situation of the soldiers considerably in a few days, but they still won’t be as good as they were in their prime,” Ember replied.

“That’s alright. We had to do it all on our own anyways, having extra hands is not a problem.” Amaya nodded.

“How was the talk with Armando?” Ember questioned.

“Hmm? You should have heard it though?” Amaya tilted her head in confusion.

When she contacted Armando, she made sure that all her sisters were able to listen and even take part in the conversation.

“My mind was preoccupied so I didn’t listen,” Ember replied.

“Alright, that’s not a problem, I was about to repeat what he said while discussing my plan anyways.

At the very least, the good news is that Alcimus won’t have to take part in the War, so things won’t get messy.”

“So Herms is...”

“Yes, he is not there. I asked where he is, but as usual, Armando didn’t know.” Amaya nodded.

“It is not exactly a good thing though, we need to know what that bastard is planning as well.” Felberta interrupted.

“Let’s just leave those things for later, just focus on the War right now.” Evane stepped in.

“Have you informed Nux?” Ember questioned.

“I have. He is a little relieved hearing that Herms is not here, but he still told us to keep our guards up.” Evane replied and Ember nodded.

“Anyways, Ember, I would like you to take the role of the General of the Army.”

“Leave that to me.” Ember nodded.

“Alright, now let’s discuss our plan.”

...

“Let’s see how long these Woods Bastards can stay behind this Wall! We will break this Wall and take over the City!”

“YEAHHH!!!”

As the sun rose, the 10,000 soldiers of Solid Earth Army rushed towards the City with high morale.

“Woods Soldiers! Let’s show these bastards that we are not weak! Defend Ravenhill with everything you have!”

“Hooooo!!”

On the other hand, the 15,000 soldiers of the Woods Army, were all deployed on the City Walls, trying their best to defend against the soldiers who were trying to break through their gates.

3000 Soldiers stood behind the Gate, ready to stop the army in case the Gate is breached, and defending the Gate, 6000 Soldiers were standing on the Walls, shooting arrows at the soldiers trying to enter the City. 3000 Soldiers were there solely for collecting more arrows while the last 3,000 stood on the wall, killing any enemy soldier who managed to climb up the Wall.

The Soldiers with higher ranks ordered the ones with a lower ranks while just the presence of General Vidyut mentally supported all the soldiers.

It was a proper system of defense where the distribution of the soldiers was good and placed less pressure on each soldier.

The 9 Women of the Skyfall Kingdom, however, didn't participate in today's war.

According to the deal, they would only take part in the battle 8 days later. Currently, they only observed.

The battle continued, since it was just the first phase where the Gates weren't breached, and no soldier lost his life.

On the Solid Earth Kingdom's side, around 500 Soldiers were injured, however, just like Woods, they didn't lose any soldiers either.

The sun set down, and the Solid Earth Kingdom retreated.

The Woods Soldiers sighed in relief.

They could finally take a rest now.

Or that's what they thought, however, 30 minutes after the war ended, the soldiers were summoned to the City Centre.

One by one, the city center started filling with soldiers, since it didn't have enough space to contain all the soldiers, some soldiers have to climb onto the roofs of the nearby houses.

All the soldiers noticed 9 masked women standing on the Stage along with General Vidyut.

The Deputy and Assistant Generals were standing below the stage.

Normal and Head Soldiers wondered who these women were, the Squad Captians, who could sense these women's cultivation, however, were tensed.

Seeing their captain act like this, the soldiers were even more curious but didn't dare to speak anything.

Suddenly, a black red hair woman with red eyes stepped forward,

“My name is Ember Leander, I came here from the Skyfall Kingdom, to help you all turn the tides and win this battle, these women here are my comrades.

All of us are King Stage Cultivators, so we are more than enough to annihilate the Solid Earth Army.”

Hearing those words, the soldiers’ eyes widened in surprise.

9 King Stage Cultivators!

This was already shocking, however,

Ember had yet to drop the main bomb,

“From this day onwards,

I will be the acting General commanding you all.

Let’s destroy the Solid Earth Army within 2 Weeks.”

# Chapter 572

“From this day onwards,

I will be the acting General commanding you all.

Let’s destroy the Solid Earth Army within 2 Weeks.”

Ember dropped the bomb.

“W-What?”

“D-Did she just say 2 w-weeks?”

“Is that even possible?”

“Are you crazy? All of them are King Stage Cultivators! Adding General Vidyut, it is 10 King Stage Cultivators! There is no way those Solid Earth bastards would have the strength to go against us.”

“A war is never fought on individual strength.”

“Yeah! Just because we have 10 King Stage Cultivators doesn’t mean that we can defeat the Solid Earth Army. Don’t forget, they are twice as many soldiers as us and their average cultivation is higher as well.”

“Tsk, you are just ignorant, you don’t know how strong a King Stage Cultivator is. Just imagine, 10 Cultivators at the same level as General Vidyut, we would destroy the Solid Earth Army.”

“B-But why is a woman from the Skyfall Kingdom is allowed to be the General of our army? Don’t we have General Vidyut?”

“Shh, just look at General Vidyut, he doesn’t seem to have any objection, it must be some sort of deal between the 2 countries.”

“But the Skyfall Kingdom isn’t exactly our ally.”

“They are not the enemy either, since they sent 9 King Stage Cultivators, they are definitely our saviors, it only makes sense that one of them becomes the General.”

“But s-”

“Silence.”

While the soldiers continued to discuss with each other, a voice was heard.

The Soldiers turned towards Ember, her domineering Aura forced them to shut their mouths.

‘Hmm?’

Some of the veteran soldiers found this situation familiar, they glanced at the Black-Red haired woman again and the image coincided with another woman who had left a deep impression in their hearts.

“General Ember?”

They couldn’t help but mutter.

All these Vertrains then glanced at each other and by communicating through their expressions, they confirmed their doubts.

The soldiers narrowed their eyes,

“General Ember?”

They all started murmuring amongst themselves as well.

Seeing this scene, the Assistant Generals and General Vidyut frowned, they thought that they would see some resistance when Lady Ember would announce herself as the General but...

What’s this?

Aren't these soldiers accepting everything a little too simply?

“From now on, I will be changing a few things.”

Ember gathered everyone's attention again.

“As I said before, we will be defeating those Solid Earth Bastards within 2 weeks, however, currently, all of you are too weak.

To be honest, you don't even look like soldiers, rather, you look like beggars.”

“Huh?” The Soldiers, Assistant Generals, and even General Vidyut frowned.

Ember, however, didn't stop,

“What's with this defeated look on your faces? How dare you call yourselves soldiers when you stand with your shoulders hanging like that?

Straighten your backs.

Stand like the brave soldiers you are.”

Ember ordered.

For some reason, the soldiers' bodies moved on their own and they corrected their posture.

“Yes! That's it!

If I saw anyone of you standing like that again, I will personally kill you.”

Although Ember was cursing all the soldiers, no one said anything against these words.

This time, let alone veterans, even the normal soldiers realized.

This woman was none other than their General.

General Ember, the one who lead them and achieved what was considered impossible, she was now back!

Only the soldiers who were recruited after Ember disappeared didn't recognize her, however, seeing how their comrades were acting, they couldn't help but feel a strange excitement and energy well up in their hearts.

Seeing this scene, General Vidyut frowned.

'W-Why have I never seen that light in their eyes?'

He wondered inwardly. Then, he glanced at Ember who was standing on the stage, looking at all the soldiers with her domineering gaze and couldn't help but wonder,

'J-Just who is that woman... to be able to change the soldiers' gaze with just her words alone...'

Only one person came into his mind.

'Wait...'

Suddenly, General Vidyut's eyes widened in surprise.

'Black-red hairs... red eyes...'

No way... she can't be...'

"From now on, only 7500 Soldiers would defend the Wall! The rest of the soldiers would rest and cultivate.

For you all to look like undead, it must have been months before you last cultivated.

This won't do, my soldiers need to be strong, I do not accept the Weak."

"Huh?"

Hearing Ember's words, the General and the Assistant General frowned.

“What? How would only 7,500 soldiers defend against 10,000 soldiers?”

An Assistance General named Alam questioned.

Ember glanced at Alam and narrowed her eyes,

“Why can't they? Remember, we are currently defending our own territory, and since our walls are strong, the manpower we need is drastically reduced.

Even 3,000 soldiers would have been enough, however, currently, the soldiers are too weak so I have no choice but to use numbers.”

“No matter what, in the end, the Ravenhill is just a city, it is not a fort, how long do you think the Gate would last?”

“If the Gate falls down, do you think the soldiers would act as temporary Gate? Having more soldiers is useless.”

“And what if the Solid Earth Scouts notice that we have decreased our number and decide to use all 30,000 of their soldiers?” Alam questioned back.

“Huh? What are you talking about? We have the high ground here, if they decided to change anything, we would notice it first.

If they use all their soldiers, we just need to do that as well. It is not like I am sending the other 7,500 soldiers away, I have only ordered them to rest.”

“...” Alam turned silent.

Ember quickly understood how things got so worse, however, she decided not to comment on it.

“From now on, 5,500 soldiers would deal damage to the enemy soldiers, 1000 Soldiers would collect the arrows, 500 soldiers would fight against the

enemy who managed to climb up on the walls and 500 soldiers would defend the Gate and transfer information to the Base.

Is that clear?"

"O-Only 500 to fight against the enemy who manages to climb up?" Alam questioned with a doubtful look on his face.

"Those are the enemies who have climbed up the wall, they are already a little tired, and the space there is narrow as well, using more men is just a waste."

Ember explained.

"Anyways, if any of you have any more questions, ask now."

"General Ember."

A soldier raised his hand.

...

The question-answer round started, but due to Ember's aura, not many soldiers dared to ask questions.

Night fell, and this time, the duty to keep a watch was given to General Vidyut, Assistant Generals, and the Deputy Generals.

The rest of the soldiers were ordered to sleep.

The next day, Ember's orders were implemented, the battle started, however, unlike how many feared, nothing changed.

The task that was done by 15,000 soldiers was now being done with 7,500 soldiers, within just a day, Ember doubled the efficiency of the Woods Army.

The 7,500 soldiers staying behind continued resting while some started cultivating.

The next day, the soldiers were switched.

This continued and with each passing day, everyone noticed a significant change in the army.

By the end of the 4th day, the soldiers were summoned to the city center again.

# Chapter 573 We Are Fucked...

By the end of the 4th day, the soldiers were summoned to the city center again.

New changes were implemented, now the 7,500 soldiers defending the Wall turned to 5000, this time, the soldiers had 2 days to rest and cultivate.

Ember planned to spend another 9 days like this, bringing soldiers to even better conditions.

Honestly, if this was a normal war, this would not have been possible because, in the end, Ravenhill was just a city, not a fort, the Gate shouldn't have been able to hold for this long, it was not the matter of the number of soldiers or anything else.

If the Solid Earth Army did their best, breaking through the doors was just a matter of 2 days.

According to Armando, they weren't ordered to defeat them as soon as possible, they were only ordered to delay it as soon as possible, kill more and more soldiers, plunder as much as they can, and push back the Woods.

Their main goal was never a victory, their main goal was harassment.

There was a limit to how much Alcimus could endure.

And they wanted to break that limit.

That was also the reason why they didn't send more King Stage Cultivators other than Armando.

Even if Alcimus does act, Armando would be the only one to die, the rest of the 6 King Stage Cultivators would still be fine.

Of course, this was what Amaya deduced, from what she knows, Armando still didn't know that he and the 3 more Generals were all sacrifices.

Actually, Amaya believed that not only these 4, but Herms wouldn't mind even if the other 3 Generals were also killed as long as he achieved his goal.

As to what his goal was, they didn't know.

They only knew that the enemy would continue to attack at the same pace, so they could relax and let their soldier regain their energy.

However, 5 days after the new change was implemented, the women received a message.

'Tomorrow, we will be attacking with 20,000 soldiers, this time, 4 King Stage Cultivators will attack together to try and break through the doors.'

Seeing that rather than putting more pressure on the Woods, they were only giving them time to rest,

The Solid Earth Army decided to attack seriously.

"Will it be fine?" Amaya questioned.

"Well, it is a little early but the soldiers have still recovered considerably. We can leave a few enemy soldiers to them." Ember replied.

"Do you have a plan?" Amaya questioned. Although she was the main strategist of the group, when it came to War, Ember was a much better candidate than her.

"Of course. All my soldiers are ready."

A wild smile then appeared on Ember's face as she continued,

"Tomorrow, the Solid Earth Army would break through the Gates and will then perish."

"What's the plan?" Thyra questioned.

Ember glanced at her, then, the map of the city appeared in her hands, she placed it on the Table and started explaining her plan.

...

The next day, as soon as the sun rose, the Solid Earth Army appeared, this time, however, their number was twice the number before.

“Send the message! The enemy forces have doubled!”

An Assistant General shouted.

“As you command!”

The messenger quickly rushed towards the base.

“Everyone! Don’t lose hope! The reinforcement will arrive soon! Continue to shoot arrows! Kill as many enemies as you can! Don’t let them climb up or break the Gate!”

Deputy General Laurence shouted.

“YEAHHHH!!”

The Woods Soldiers roared loudly.

“Hahaha!

You weaklings! You think you would have a chance to hold us back before your reinforcement arrive!? Foolish!

Solid Earth Army! Show these weaklings what we are actually made of!

Destroy them!”

“YEAAAHHHH!!!”

The Solid Earth Army roared in high morale.

\*BAM\*

In just the first wave of attack, a few cracks appeared on the Gate!

“Hahaha! Let’s see how long this Gate holds on for!” The Enemy General, Fredgelord, shouted.

Seeing the cracks, Laurence’s eyes widened in surprise.

“How is that possible!?”

He shouted in disbelief.

“HAHAHA!”

In answer, he only heard the enemy General’s laugh.

“Woods Soldiers!

RETREAT!”

Laurence shouted.

“W-What?”

The soldiers couldn’t believe it.

“WHAT ARE YOU DOING!?”

RETREAT!

RETURN TO THE BASE! WE CAN’T FIGHT THEM!

The Ravenhill City...

Will be breached today.”

Laurence shouted.

“HAHAHA!”

The Enemy General laughed.

The Woods Soldiers quickly stored their weapons and started running away.

With no one attacking them from above, the Solid Earth Army didn't have to worry about the defense and continued to focus on the Gate.

\*BAM\*

A few more cracks appeared on the Gate.

“Don't give these bastards the time to run away! Destroy the doors! Kill these weaklings as quickly as you can!”

Fredgelord ordered.

“YEAHHH!!”

\*BAM\*

\*BAM\*

\*BAM\*

The Solid Earth Army continued to attack the Gate, in the end, the Gate failed to hold on after being attacked like this for so long.

\*BAM\*

\*Burst\*

The doors were burst open.

Seeing this, Fredgelord's smile widened and he ordered,

“Kill all these Bastards! Don't let them regather with their Main Army! Kill them first! Then we will follow the momentum and destroy the Main Army as well!

Today is the day Ravenhill City would fall!

CHARGE!”

Armando commanded.

“YEAHHH!!!”

The 20,000 soldiers quickly rushed into the city, then under their General’s lead, they all started chasing the Woods Soldiers.

The Chase continued for a while, the Gate had given the Woods Army a 10 Minute Head start, the soldiers continued to run away, of course, the higher rank soldiers were faster, however, even the lower-ranking soldiers were still far from the Solid Earth Army.

The Solid Earth Army, however, didn’t give up and continued to chase.

30 hours later, the Solid Earth Soldiers could now see the Woods Army in their vision.

Seeing this, Fredgelord’s smile widened and he commanded,

“Kill all these bastards!!”

“YEAHHH!!!”

“Wait, who are they?” Suddenly, General Marcus narrowed his eyes as he pointed at 7 people wearing Black Purple clothes.

The other 3 Generals frowned,

“Why does it feel like they are waiting for us?” Armando couldn’t help but question.

“L-L-Look at their Cultivation!” General Marcus shouted.

“Huh? How great can it b-”

General Fredgelord was about to laugh, however,

“We are fucked...”

# **Chapter 574 Lt Was Not 4V8, It Was 4V9! No, Lt Was 3V9 Now!'**

“Huh? How great can it b-”

General Fredgelord was about to laugh, however,

“We are fucked...”

Fredgelord couldn't help but comment.

“How do they have 7 King Stage Cultivators!”

Marcus shouted in fear.

“I heard that the Woods would be receiving help from the Skyfall Kingdom, but did the Skyfall Kingdom really send King Stage Cultivators as reinforcement?” Lexus, the fourth General questioned.

“W-We need to retreat!”

Marcus spoke.

He then quickly turned around and noticed that they were too far from the Gate.

Not only that, but the Woods Soldiers suddenly divided into two groups and started circling around them.

“Surround them all!”

Laurence shouted.

\*Steps\* \*Steps\* \*Steps\*

At the same time, Marcus and the other Generals heard some steps.

They turned around and saw 10,000 soldiers standing behind them, not only that, but the man who stood in front of these soldiers was also a King Stage Cultivator!

General Vidyut!

“8 King Stage Cultivators!”

“W-Where did they come from?”

Marcus questioned.

Lexus’s eyes suddenly widened,

“T-Those houses!

We completely ignored them in order to chase the soldiers.

It was a trap!”

Lexus shouted out loud.

The Generals’ faces turned solemn.

Marcus, the oldest of them all quickly calmed himself and started analyzing.

“There are 8 King Stage Cultivators in the enemy team, however, if we think about it, the enemy only has 15,000 soldiers, which is less than us, not to mention that they are weaker than our soldiers.

If we hold our own against these 8 Cultivators for a while, our soldiers would soon defeat their soldiers and we could gang up on these Cultivators.

In the end, the reinforcement from the Skyfall Kingdom would never risk their lives for the Woods and would back away.

So if w-”

\*Whoosh\*

\*Shot\*

\*Bam\*

\*Burst\*

While Marcus was analyzing the situation and trying to find a way out, Armando quickly launched into the air.

The Firecracker burst into red color, however, before it could even fade away, Armando released 2 more firecrackers into the air.

Seeing that, Marcus’s eyes widened in surprise.

“WHAT ARE YOU DOING!?”

He questioned in anger.

“Can’t you see!? I am calling for our reinforcement! Do you think we can fight against 8 King Stage Cultivators all by ourselves!?”

“But-”

“No buts! We will use all our strength, an 8v7 would a lot easier than 8v4 and with 10,000 additional soldiers, the other soldiers would have an easy time as well.”

Armando repeated.

The firecrackers he fired were an emergency signal and not the normal one, but the one that depicts the highest degree of emergency.

It was only used when an army was predicted to see a certain annihilation.

When the 3 King Stage Cultivators left on stand-by see this, they would quickly bring the rest of the men, and this time, they would not travel with the army on their mounts, rather, they would rush here with their maximum speed.

“Can’t you see!? A certain annihilation is not guaranteed yet!” Marcus shouted.

“Don’t be ridiculous!

If you want to die, go ahead, I am not planning to do that.” Armando shouted.

“I agree with Armando.” Lexus nodded as well.

“Yes, rather than depending on these useless soldiers, I would rather go all out against these 8 Bastards!” Fredgelord laughed as well.

“...” Marcus didn’t know what to say.

However, in the end, he just sighed.

The signal was already sent.

There was no point in arguing about it.

‘Anyways, Armando would be the one taking responsibility.’

Marcus thought inwardly and shrugged.

On the other hand, the man he was thinking about was looking at the enemy King Stage Cultivator and,

‘They would be here soon, My Ladies.’

‘You did well, Armando.’ Amaya nodded.

‘I can’t believe these fools have wasted 5 minutes talking to each other. Is that really what war feels like? Why do I feel like it is a debate

competition?' Allura couldn't help but commend.

'They are all fools, if we weren't waiting for those last 3 pieces of trash, we would have attacked them by now.' Ember commented.

'Yes, the more time they waste, the better.' Felberta nodded as well.

However, as if he heard what she said, Marcus shouted.

"Solid Earth Soldiers! No need to fear! The reinforcement will arrive soon! No matter how much they plan, these bastards would never best us!

Use Formation O, trust your back to your fellow soldier and hold on until the reinforcement arrives!

For the Victory!"

"FOR THE VICTORY!!!"

The Soldi Earth Soldiers quickly formed a 4 layer circle, 2 layers carried spears, and the other 2 layers carried Large Shields.

Their intentions were clear, they would act like a turtle till the reinforcement arrives.

"For the victo-!!!"

General Marcus was about to shout to raise the soldiers' morale again, but suddenly,

His eyes widened in surprise as a dagger pierced through his neck.

\*Pierce\*

"Akkcckk!!"

The General tried to say something but, suddenly, his vision turned upside down and he realized.

He was beheaded.

Soon, his head fell on the ground.

“Neeeeiggghhh!!”

The Horse-like-beast that he was riding on neighed as its master was killed just like that.

With whatever power he was left with, Marcus tried to see who killed him, however, with his body detached, the only thing he could still move were his eyes, which couldn't see behind him no matter how hard he tried.

The other Generals widened their eyes in shock as they noticed a masked woman, wearing purple-black clothes, similar to what other King Stage Cultivators were wearing, standing near Marcus's headless corpse with an expressionless look on her face.

Soon, the woman turned towards the other 3 Generals and questioned,

“Are you sure you should be looking at me right now?”

The Generals' eyes widened even more, their weapons quickly appeared in their hands and,

\*Clank\* \*Clank\* \*Clank\*

pAnD a(-)n0ve1.com They defended against the 7 Cultivators who just attacked them.

‘T-They had another King Stage Cultivator!’

The Generals couldn't help but curse inwardly.

‘It was not 4v8, it was 4v9!’

No, It was 3v9 now!’

The Generals trembled in fear as they wished for the backup to arrive as soon as possible.

# Chapter 575 You Are Too Weak For That.

‘It was not 4v8, it was 4v9!

No! It’s 3v9 now!’

The Generals trembled as they continued to defend against women’s attacks.

The peculiar thing to note was that General Vidyut had still not attacked them yet. The same goes for the Woods Army, the Solid Earth Army, which had already positioned themselves according to Formation O and was carefully waiting for the Woods to attack, couldn’t help but be confused at this sight.

Seeing this sight, Fredelord couldn’t help but shout,

“Ignore these Woods Bastards! Attack these King Stage Cultivators, there is no way they would stand a chance against 20,000 soldiers even if they are King Stage Cultivators.

Once we get rid of them, dealing with the rest of the army would be a simple thing.

Attack!”

The Solid Earth Soldiers glanced at each other, then, with a nod, all of them rushed towards the 8 women and shouted,

“KILL THEM!!!”

‘Heh, took them long enough,’ Ember smiled inwardly.

‘Amaya, are you ready?’ Felberta questioned.

Amaya just smiled and as the Solid Earth Soldiers came closer,

\*Whoosh\*

“W-What is this?”

“T-This... this omnious Mist...”

The Devouring Mist didn't give soldiers any time to think and rushed toward them.

“I-It's eating away my M-Mana!”

“Use your Mana to push it out of your body! Don't try to restrict it, just push it out of your body!”

\*Thud\*

Suddenly, an Apprentice Stage Soldier fell down.

“H-He is dead!”

The soldier near him shouted.

\*Thud\*

Soon, however, he heard another thud.

He turned around and noticed another soldier fell down.

“H-He's dead as well!”

\*Thud\* \*Thud\* \*Thud\* \*Thud\*

“Ritin's dead as well!”

“A-Alex!”

“H-Here, he is dead as well!”

“What the hell is happening!?”

“All the Apprentice Stage Soldiers are dying! They can’t resist this any longer!”

Seeing this scene, the Generals panicked.

Lexus glanced at the women he was fighting against and his eyes then fell on Amaya.

“All Apprentice Stage Soldiers! Get out! Don’t stay near this Mist! Other Soldiers who feel they can’t continue to fight do the same as well!

As for the rest of the soldiers, attack her!

She is the one responsible for this Mist!

Get rid of her!”

Lexus ordered.

He then turned towards Armando and Fredgelord and spoke,

“You guys, we need to attack her.”

The other two Generals nodded and the 3 of them rushed toward Amaya.

\*Clank\*

“Heh. Did you guys really just ignore us?”

However, just as they were about to target Amaya, the other women blocked their attacks and,

\*Slash\*

“Agghh!”

“Don’t you dare show your back to me.”

Felberta commented as she slashed Fredgelord.

“You bitch!”

Fredgelord cursed and just as he was about to attack Felberta, she jumped back.

“You think you can run away!?”

Fredgelord shouted, however, before he could follow her, Armando shouted,

“You idiot! Stay close to her.

There are 7 of them, the Assassin is nowhere to be seen, the moment you isolate yourself, you will end up like Marcus!”

Fredgelord controlled herself.

The 3 Generals were helpless, they had to stick together, leaving their backs on the other 2, they couldn't move freely because of how fearsome their opponents were.

A single mistake and they would pay for their life.

On the other hand, Amaya continued to release the Devouring Mist, it didn't affect the Generals or the Deputy Generals of the Solid Earth Army, however, for the rest, especially Advance, Beginner, and Apprentice Stage Soldiers, this Mist was a nightmare.

Before the soldiers could properly form an escape plan, all the Apprentice Stage Soldiers had already lost their lives. Most of the Beginner Stage and around half of the Advanced Stage Cultivators were dead as well.

The Master and Grand Master Stage Cultivators didn't have any easier either. Although they could still resist better than the others, the Mist still affected them and rendered them useless in War.

They couldn't end the Zone where Amaya could attack them at all!

100 meter around Amaya was simply a death zone for all these soldiers.

That was just how scary the Devouring Mist was.

The only ones who were of any help to the Generals were the 20 Expert Stage Cultivators or the Deputy Generals that weren't affected by the Mist at all.

However, these 20 Expert Stage Soldiers had another problem to deal with.

Thyra.

That woman was slaughtering them as if they were nothing more than pigs.

She was fast, these soldiers couldn't react to her speed at all.

What was worse?

Thyra wasn't alone.

There was someone else, they didn't know who, but another person was shooting arrows at them as well.

Her arrows seemed endless and surprisingly, these Arrows were sharp enough to pierce through their Armors.

These 2 people alone had the Expert Stage Soldiers tied up and 7 of them had already died.

The Solid Earth Army was in a critical position.

“Agghhh!!”

“Ugghh!”

“N-No!”

“W-Wher-Ahggghh!”

Suddenly, everyone's attention turned toward the Woods Soldiers who were being slaughtered.

Seeing that, the Solid Earth Generals smiled,

The reinforcements were here.

“Don't waste your time with small fries! Come here!” Armando shouted.

The 3 new Generals ignored the soldiers around them and rushed toward the center of the battlefield.

Surprisingly enough, the other soldiers didn't show any resistance either, rather, they just made a way for these new Generals and let them go.

“Hahahah! Finally! Finally we can fight without holding back!” Fredgelord laughed as he glared at Felberta, who had injured him.

The other Generals smiled as well.

Armando was the same.

However, the Generals didn't know that rather than them, the ones who were actually happy were the women who they were fighting against.

‘They are finally here.’ Ember spoke. Her smile then widened as she ordered.

‘Girls, We don't have to hold back anymore.

Destroy them.’

The order was passed and suddenly,

\*Clank\*

Felberta appeared in front of Fredgelord and attacked,

The man defended the attack,

“You finally decided to attack, heh. Let’s start fighting for real now!”

Fredgelord laughed.

“You are too weak for that.”

Felberta smiled, then she increased her strength and started pushing Fredgelord back.

FRedgelord’s eyes widened in surprise, he didn’t know how this woman’s strenght suddenly increased,

“And foolish too.”

Felberta commented and,

\*Slash\*

Thyra appeared and beheaded Fredgelord.

# Chapter 576 Who Should We Kill?

\*Slash\*

Thyra appeared and beheaded Fredgelord.

“Huh?”

Fredgelord’s world turned upside down.

He didn’t realize what happened, the two women, however, didn’t care and quickly jumped back.

‘He was quite annoying, it was hurting my ears.’ Allura commented.

‘I didn’t like the way he was looking at me.’ Felberta spoke.

‘I can understand, ugly faces combined with shitty personality can be a bit annoying.’ Allura nodded in agreement.

As the women continued to chat, the Enemy Generals widened their eyes in surprise.

‘Alright girl, stop chit chatting, I told you right, no holding back.’

Ember spoke and then, she rushed towards the Generals.

The other women followed her as well.

This time, Thyra didn’t use [Conceal], according to Nux’s condition, she needed to leave at least 15 minutes of [Conceal] for emergency situations.

She couldn’t use everything here.

“T-There attack pattern change!”

Lexus quickly recognized.

“It doesn’t matter! When would the soldiers arrive?” Armando questioned.

“It would still take 15 minutes.

“We need to hold on till the soldiers arrive, our soldiers here cannot come through because of this Mist. We have already lost around 12,000 soldiers.”

“Should we retreat?” Lexus proposed.

Other Generals flinched.

It was a good decision.

An 8v5 was difficult, not to mention General Vidyut and the Archer still hadn’t shown themselves.

Retreat was a good option, it might even be their only option.

“Do you think those soldiers standing there are just for decoration? There are only standing to stop us from retreating. We cannot retreat.”

Armando pointed out.

“Huh? What can these soldiers do if 5 of us charge through, I am sure we would pave out the way.” Another General spoke.

“That’s why that Vidyut Bastard has not attacked us and is just standing there, he would hold all of us back, even if he held for 2-3 seconds, it would be enough for these 8 women to arrive and with are back exposed, we would all die.”

“Then are we supposed to just sit back and wait for our death!?” Another General questioned.

“Of course not you idiot! That’s why said hold on for the reinforcement, once they arrive, they would break through this formations, then all of us will charge forward and retreat.” Armando replied.

“T-Then what about the soldier?” Another General questioned.

He was the Sect Leader of the Eternal Dragon Sect, his Sect Members, his son included were part of the reinforcement army.

Hearing his question, Armando's face turned solemn and he replied,

“Their survival would depend on their luck and wits.”

The other Generals turned silent as well.

“We cannot announce what we are planning, we would act like we are trying to go all out and would then retreat, the soldiers who can use their wits to understand our actual plans and are lucky enough would make out, as for the rest...

They would need to sacrifice themselves...”

“I agree with Armando's plan.”

Lexus spoke with a solemn look on his face.

He continued to defend against the women's attack and explained,

“There are only two ways to react in this situation,

First, you kill the woman responsible for the Mist, however, this is simply impossible, as you can notice, these women aren't going all out. Although they are attacking, they are still doing it passively, I believe that's because they intend to protect that woman.

The archer is the same, he would only attack us sometimes, however, if you aim for that woman, he would shoot for sure.

This is a combined tactic that cannot be beaten, especially when we are so unprepared.

Therefore, the only option we are left with is retreating.”

“ ... ”

The other generals turned silent.

“I agree to follow this plan as well.”

One General spoke.

“I agree as well.”

Another General spoke, the last General then nodded as well.

He could only hope that his son makes it out.

The Generals decided.

On the other hand, the women continued to attack them, however, Edda couldn't help but question,

‘Are all of them fools? Why are they discussing their plans in front of us?’

The other women nodded.

‘It is not their fault.’ Amaya spoke.

‘The one leading the conversation, Armando, is speaking out loud, they are following his influence as well, thinking that we cannot hear them.’ She explained.

‘Indeed, in critical situations, your mind does not work properly and you tend to follow the one who is taking responsibility.’ Ember nodded as well.

‘Not that they know that the one taking ‘responsibility’ on their side was never on their side.’ Allora chuckled.

The other women smiled as well.

‘And here I thought that only Amaya and that mother of hers were monsters.’ Edda spoke as she glanced at Ember.

Ember just smiled,

‘Heh, when it comes to warfare, I am pretty decent as well.’

Edda and the others rolled their eyes.

Even Amaya was impressed and if Amaya was impressed by your planning, then well, you were a monster as well.

‘Anyways, should we kill another one?’ Suddenly, Thyra questioned.

‘Hmmm, the reinforcement will arrive in around 10 minutes, how many did we have to keep alive again?’ Allura questioned.

‘Three, including Armando.’ Ember replied.

‘Alright, so we kill one now, and another one 5 minutes later.’ Felberta spoke.

‘Who should we kill?’ Allura wondered.

‘Hmmm, should we choose the ugliest one?’ Edda proposed.

‘Leave them, their life is sorry enough already.’ Felberta commented.

‘That Brown-haired one! I chose him! Sister Thyra has been taking away all of them, that’s cheating!’

And I will be the one attack now!’ Skyla jumped in as well.

‘Alright.’ Thyra sighed and backed off.

‘I’ll start.’ Edda spoke and rushed towards the ‘Brown Haired one’, the man defended, Skyla, who had already activated [Conceal] rushed in and beheaded the man.

It was just that simple.

To be honest, these women could kill all these Generals in a matter of 10 minutes, the only reason they didn’t do it was because, well,

It wasn't included in the plan.

They had different plans in their mind.

The 'Battle' continued, 5 minutes later, another General was killed.

Things got difficult for the Solid Earth Generals and just as another one of them was about to be killed,

The reinforcement arrived.

The 10,000 soldiers rushed in and started attacking,

The Generals waited for a while and as soon as their soldiers cleared through and rushed in,

“RETREAT!”

Armando shouted.

# Chapter 577 Nux'S Shadow.

The day before Nux and his wives participated in the War,

“Hmm? We are going to let the few of them retreat? I don't understand? Why do we have to do that?”

Evane questioned with a confused look on her face.

Ember then glanced at Amaya and sighed, “Ask her not me, I am only planning to achieve the result she desires.”

Everyone turned towards Amaya.

“It's simple really.”

Amaya started explaining,

“First of all, it is stupid to Kill Armando, who is our informant.”

“That's true.” Felberta agreed.

Amaya nodded and then continued,

“The second reason is more of an insurance move.

If we completely wipe out the enemy, then there is a chance that Herms might use this chance to counter and say Alcimus participated in this battle.

I do not know what he is planning, however, his plan seems to involve Alcimus participating in this War.

There is no reason for us to give him what he wants therefore, to prevent him from forging a story like that, we will keep a few of them alive.”

Amaya explained.

“I don’t get it.” Evane frowned.

“If he wants to claim that Alcimus participated, he could simply force his soldiers to clai- ah, I apologize, we have Armando who can go against this, I forgot about it.” Evane realized and turned silent.

“No wait, Armando’s presence doesn’t insure everything, if he wants, Herms could simply kill all soldiers who returned to the base and claim Alcimus’s participation in the war,” Allura spoke.

Hearing that, Ember’s smile widened, “Well, I have planned that already, even if they leave the city, we would still send Vidyut and some soldiers to follow them and I will also command Armando to enter the Solid Earth Kingdom.

Once he reaches a city, he and his soldiers would rest and start talking about how the Skyfall Kingdom participated with so many King Stage Cultivators and how it was an unfair fight.”

“Ahh, so the soldiers will complain about unfairness while in truth, you want them to spread what happened so that Herms would fail to use this opportunity,” Felberta spoke.

“Indeed.” Ember nodded.

“Heh, that’s a good plan.” Felberta nodded with a slight laugh.

“Of course.” Ember nodded back.

Then, she turned towards Lane and questioned,

“But are you sure you want to stay out of this and not fight them directly? I know your main weapon is not a bow and arrow, I don’t know why you insist on using it.”

“I am fine with bow and arrow,” Lane replied.

Seeing her acting like that, Skyla narrowed her eyes,

“Sister Lane.” She called out.

“What?” Lane tilted her head in confusion.

“You are hiding something from us.”

As someone who stayed with Lane practically her entire life, Skylia could guess it within seconds.

“I am not.” Lane closed her eyes.

“Don’t lie to me, you close your eyes when you lie,” Skylia spoke.

Then, she walked towards Lane and questioned,

“Sister Lane, what are you hiding?”

Lane was forced to open her eyes and seeing that Skylia had already caught her, she sighed,

“Nux told me to keep an eye on you all...”

“Huh?” Amaya frowned.

“Explain,” Ember spoke as well.

“H-He was worried that Herms might appear on the battlefield, and since he is an emperor, there is a chance that we do not get the time to report him.

So he requested me to stay behind and act like his shadow to inform him the moment things go out of his hands.”

“Nux’s Shadow...” Felberta muttered to herself.

“Why didn’t he ask me to be his shadow? I would have been more than happy to do it.” Amaya was a step bolder and spoke her thoughts out loud.

“That’s because...” Lane spoke but then turned silent.

The women turned towards him and narrowed their eyes.

They needed answers.

A small smile then appeared on Lane's face as she replied,

“That's because I am special and he trusts me more than anyone else.”

Lane dropped a bomb.

“Tsk, stop daydreaming.” Amaya was the first one to counter.

“It is clear who is daydreaming here.”

Lane was unusually aggressive.

“...”

The women didn't have any answers so they were forced to turn silent.

“Nux's shadow...

I am more suited to be his shadow...” Thyra spoke to herself.

She then glanced at Lane, who was just smiling to herself, and narrowed her eyes.

Lane may fade out when all of them are together because she doesn't speak too much, however, after she and Skyla...

She was the best assassin in this group.

Yes, even better than Ember.

It was surprising but both these sisters were monsters, to the point that Thyra even wondered how Felberta's father trained these two.

“Alright, let's stop talking about all this.” Suddenly, Ember spoke up.

“Yes, we would talk to Nux later about why he chose her rather than choosing me,” Amaya spoke.

“I told you the reason already.” Lane didn’t back of either.

“Oi, ask him later, be serious for now.” Ember’s tone was stricter this time.

The women turned silent and Ember continued to explain her plan.

...

“RETREAT!”

Armando commanded.

He and the other 2 Generals quickly turned around, seeing this the Expert Stage Cultivators, who were still fighting against Nux’s women frowned, however, the sharper one started following the Generals.

The soldiers were confused as well, however, seeing their Generals and Deputy Generals running away, they all retreated as well.

“Don’t let them run away!

KILL THEM!”

Ember commanded.

The Woods Soldiers, who had surrounded all these soldiers strengthen their defenses and started killing as many soldiers as they could.

However, even with all that, the Soldi Earth Soldiers, under their Generals’ command succeeded in breaking through the already weakened defense line and escaped.

“Vidyut! Chase them!”

“As you command, General Ember!”

Vidyut shouted and,

“Soldiers! Follow me!

Today is the day we wipe all these bastards down!”

“YEAAHHH!!”

The Woods Soldiers were burning with spirit as well.

Just like that the long-lasting War finally ended, and the Solid Earth Soldiers retreated back to the Kingdom.

From the Solid Earth Villages, to towns and then cities, news about how the Skyfall Kingdom helped the Woods Dynasty spread like wildfire.

The Woods were finally free and could focus on recuperating. After raiding the base that the Solid Earth Soldiers, they found quite a lot of gold coins and other things the Solid Earth Soldiers plundered.

Of course, it wasn't all, however, it was still enough to get them started.

# Chapter 578 Flag

“The Reinforcements from the Skyfall Kingdom are coming!”

In the Woods Dynasty’s Hall, a huge shout was heard.

All the Ministers, and even Dynast Ellinger stood up to show their respect.

Nux’s women walked into the Hall,

\*Clap\* \*Clap\* \*Clap\*

Under the claps, these masked women walked on the floor that was decorated with flower petals.

“I cannot describe how thankful I am to you all.” The Dynast, Ellinger Woods spoke with a respectful look on his face.

“It was all part of the deal, Dynast Ellinger, you don’t have to be thankful.”

Amaya spoke with a small smile on her face.

“You Ladies saved my Dynasty, Lady Amaya, there is no way I cannot be thankful, even if it was a part of the deal.” Ellinger smiled.

“We only hope that Dynast Ellinger would keep up their part of the deal.”

“Hahaha~ Of course, Of course, I will, not only that, I have already prepared the Search Team you requested, if the Skyfall Kingdom is prepared, we can even leave today instead of waiting for the weak.”

“Then let’s do that.”

“Hmm?”

“The Skyfall Kingdom is prepared,” Amaya replied.

“Are you sure?” Ellinger tilted his head in confusion.

Amaya had been staying in the Woods Dynasty for the past few days and from what he knew, she didn't have any contact with the Skyfall Kingdom.

So for her to know if the Skyfall Kingdom is prepared or not...

“You do not have to worry, Dynast Ellinger.

We are prepared.” Amaya assured.

“T-Then when do we leave?” Ellinger questioned.

“As written in the deal, the two teams will meet in the Bringer Village in the Woods Dynasty. So if they leave today, they would reach there in two days.”

“But how would the Skyfall Kingdom know when to send their search team?” Ellinger couldn't help but question.

“As I said, Dynast Ellinger, we have our ways.

Please order your search team to move as soon as they can.”

“As you wish, Lady Amaya.” Ellinger smiled.

He then nodded at a servant, the servant nodded back and left.

Ellinger then turned towards Amaya and proposed,

“Lady Amaya, our Dynasty has arranged a big feast to celebrate our victory over those Solid Earth Bastards, I would like to invite you all, the Heroines of the War to celebrate with us. It would be an honor if you join us.”

“We would love to join you, Dynast Ellinger, however, we have already been away from our Kingdom for quite a while now,

Our husband must be waiting.

So we must leave.”

‘H-Husband?’

Hearing that word, Ellinger couldn’t help but frown. The other ministers had the same reactions as him.

‘Did she just say husband? As in single husband?’

They questioned inwardly, then, all of them shook their heads,

‘No no no, I must be overthinking, she must have meant husbands with an ‘s’, there is no way a single man could marry all of them.’

“I-It would have been great if we could celebrate with you, however, since you are in a hurry, we will not stop you.” Ellinger smiled.

“We thank you for your understanding.” Amaya smiled. She and the others then turned around and walked out of the Palace.

“Lady Amaya, shall I prepare your Carriage?” A servant questioned.

“Don’t bother,” Ember spoke up.

“Heh, are we having a race?” Skyla questioned with a playful look on her face.

“Alright, turns will be decided by our ranks.”

Saying that, Edda ran away.

“That bitch!”

Thyra cursed and ran away as well.

Others followed them as well.

The servant who asked the question about the carriage blinked.

‘J-Just what d-did I see?’

He didn’t have a clue himself.

...

2 days later, the Woods Search Party, which was led by Vidyut reached the Bringer Village.

The Bringer Village was a small village on the outskirts of the Woods Dynasty, it was a village that was closest to the Skyfall Kingdom and the Bloodhill Wilderness.

Inside the village, Vidyut and another King Stage Cultivator soon met a man who walked towards them,

“Are you the Woods Dynasty’s Search party?” The man questioned.

“Are you from the Skyfall Kingdom?” Vidyut questioned.

The man nodded, “That is correct, my name is Fras William. The Leader of the Skyfall Search Party.”

“Nice to meet you, my name is Vidyut.” Vidyut shook hands.

“When do we leave?”

The other King Stage Cultivator from the Woods Dynasty questioned.

“They ordered me to leave as soon as you people arrive, of course, if you want to rest, then we can wait.

I was ordered to allow you to be the leader since you two are stronger.”

Fras spoke.

Hearing his words, the King Stage Cultivator of the Woods Dynasty smiled proudly,

“That is good.

Alright then, we do not need any rest as well.

Call your men, we will leave right now.”

“As you command.”

Fras left and soon returned with the rest of the Search Party.

The combined search party then walked into the Bloodhill Wilderness.

With the Party’s strength of 2 King Stage Cultivators 3 Expert Stage Cultivators, 40 Grand Masters, and 60 Masters, the Outer Area of the Bloodhill Wilderness, where the strongest Beast was only a 3 Star Beast, which was equivalent to Master Stage Cultivator, was a breeze.

Within just 1 day, they passed through the Outer Area and the main force didn’t even have to move.

Even the Inner Area was similar as well. The beasts there were only around 3-5 Star Beasts, although their number was unusually high, this monstrous party of 105 Cultivators was even scarier.

This time, however, the Master Stage Cultivators alone weren’t enough and the Grand Master Stage Cultivators had to join in.

It took longer than planned, however, 2 days later, they managed to pass through the inner area and the search party finally entered the Forbidden Area without any losses.

“This might be easier than I thought.”

A man that was in the search party spoke.

Yes, he raised a flag.

# Chapter 579 The Search Team Was Wiped Out.

Inside a lavish room, a figure was sitting on a bed in a lotus position, Black Mist surrounded the figure's body, whether it was Male or Female couldn't be confirmed because barely anything was visible due to the Mist.

Suddenly, Mist started fading away and a man with Black hair and a handsome face was revealed, slowly, the man opened his eyes, his Golden eyes showed calmness.

\*Clap\* \*Clap\*

The man clapped two times.

A servant walked into the room and bowed,

“Lord Nux.”

“Call Lady Astaria.”

Nux ordered.

The servant bowed his head and,

“As you command,”

Saying those words, he walked away.

‘To think someone in the Royal Palace would dare to call Lady Astaria instead of going to her... other than him, I don't think I would ever find someone crazy enough.’

The servant was one of the few people who despite not being powerful enough, knew what kind of existence Astaria was.

As someone who had devoted his entire life to the Skyfall Palace, without any lover or children, he was one of the few who knew about the 'Kingdon's protector' and was one of the servants to tended to Lady Astaria's needs.

And seeing someone like Nux, who had appeared out of nowhere, calling Lady Astaria like this...

The servant couldn't help but be shocked.

'Anyways, it is not something I should bother with.'

Suddenly, the servant shook his head and started walking.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

He knocked on the door of Astaria's room.

"Enter."

Hearing the order, he walked in and bowed,

"Lady Astaria, Lord Nux is calling for you."

Hearing those words, Astaria narrowed her. The servant flinched in fear. Suddenly, a scary smile appeared on Astaria's face,

"Heh, that bastard's guts are growing huh."

Even though she was complaining, Astaria still stood up and,

"You can leave, I will be there soon."

"A-As you command, Lady Astaria."

The servant bowed and quickly walked away.

Astaria's face then turned serious and she walked out of her room and walked towards Nux's room.

Of course, she was not petty enough to punish Nux just because he summoned her instead of coming to her room, however, she was still going to give him an earful, with her status, him calling her like that would leave a wrong message.

Especially when even Evane, the Queen of the Skyfall Kingdom would always come to her instead of summoning her.

She might not care about these useless things, but others did and it had a great impact on the Palace's atmosphere.

With that thought in her mind, Astaria walked into Nux's room without knocking, and then as soon as she entered, she narrowed her eyes,

“Oh? It seems everyone is gathered here.”

“Lady Astaria, please have a seat,” Nux spoke with a small smile on his face.

Astaria frowned, Nux was acting a bit unusual.

“What happened?” She questioned.

“The Search Team was wiped out,” Nux revealed.

“Huh?” Astaria's expression changed.

She then turned towards all the women inside the room and seeing that there was no change in their expressions, she realized that every one of them knew about it already.

“How did you know? Is it that strange telepathy magic of yours?”

Astaria questioned.

Nux nodded in agreement.

The Search Party that the Skyfall Kingdom sent into the Wilderness, all of them were the Spies that Nux and his wives had captured.

All of them had Slave Seal implanted in them therefore, all of them could talk to Nux and give him real-time updates about the situation.

Astaria's face turned solemn, "It happened earlier than I predicted."

She then glanced at Nux and questioned, "Did you find anything?"

"I did." Nux nodded.

"It was as we predicted.

The Mythical Creature is dead."

Nux revealed.

"Then who killed the Search Party?"

"Herms Lizander."

"Did they manage to enter the Forbidden Area?"

"Yes, they did."

"..."

The room turned silent.

"So everything is finally clear now," Astaria commented after a while.

She didn't need to ask much.

Herms killed the Search Party that they sent to the Forbidden Area, this indication was clear enough.

"Indeed." Nux nodded.

"So what are we going to do now?" Felberta questioned.

“Well, Herms killed our Search Party, so he must be thinking that we still think that the Mythical Creature is alive. That is our advantage.”

Astaria spoke and continued.

“We now know why the Solid Earth Kingdom was acting strangely, with the Mythical Creature gone, there is no one to keep an eye on the Kingdoms and the Emperors. Now anyone can kill anyone and now there is even a possibility to unify the continent under one big Empire.

The Peace Treaty, which has been holding up and ensuring the Peace of our Continent,

It is now gone.”

Nux and his wives felt goosebumps all over their bodies as they heard those words.

“Can we safely assume that Herms wishes to unite the continent under his name?” Evane questioned.

“He might be trying that, however, I doubt that the Solid Earth Kingdom has the power to do that. I don’t think he would waste so much time in something so pointless knowing that he would fail.” Astaria replied.

“What if he is positive that he will not fail?” Amaya questioned.

“What do you mean?” Astaria turned towards Amaya and narrowed her eyes.

“We all know why Solid Earth Kingdom waged war against the Woods Dynasty, he wanted Alcimus to lose patience and involve himself in the war.

He would then use the Treaty as an excuse and would try to unite all the Emperors to kill Alcimus.

As we know, Amletus is already on his side, pressuring you wouldn’t be difficult either.

Against 3 Emperors, Alcius would definitely lose, once that happens, only you will be left.

Amletus and Herms would then team up and go against you.

In the end, you are also an Emperor just like them, no matter how strong you are, fighting against 2 Emperors would be simply impossible for you.

Once you are defeated, only those 2 are left, they can simply divide the continent into 2 and rule.”

Amaya spoke.

“That is quite plausible.”

Nux nodded in agreement.

“Let’s say that Herms was planning something like that.”

Astaria agreed and then questioned,

“What step should we take now?”

“I have a plan.” Amaya nodded.

“Amay-.” Nux spoke up but before he could complete, Amaya interrupted.

“You agreed to it already. Don’t go back on your words.”

Nux sighed.

# Chapter 580 He Would Not Fall For This Bitch'S Tricks Again.

“WHAT!?”

Eardwolf shouted as he widened his surprise.

“Are you serious?” He questioned.

“Do you think I would lie about such a serious matter?” Riona questioned back.

Eardwolf narrowed his eyes.

He then glanced at Riona again.

This woman might be beautiful, however, those eyes of hers were... scary.

Whatever was going on inside her mind, he didn't know and after the recent events, he was not even warier of her.

“Why are you telling me about this then?”

He couldn't help but question.

“I want you to report this to Lord Amletus,” Riona replied with a small smile on her face.

Seeing that smile, Eardwolf was now even more alert.

“Why aren't you doing it yourself, it is something that would change the entire Skadi Kingdom as a whole. If you report it to father, he would definitely see you in a new light and might even break the tradition in order to make you the Queen.

Why aren't you doing it then?"

He questioned.

"I felt guilty about what happened last time, therefore, I wanted to pass this opportunity to you.

Look, I only want what's good for the Kingdom,

Whether you lead it, or I do, it doesn't matter."

Riona replied with a saintly smile on her face.

"..."

Eardwolf turned silent and started considering Riona's option.

Soon, however, he shook his head and,

"No! No, I do not want any favor from you. I have grown enough to realize any 'opportunity' you pass to me is always coated with poison, I am not foolish enough to get fooled by a similar trick again.

If you think it is something good, then report it to father yourself, whether he makes you the queen or not, I don't care."

Eardwolf had made up his mind.

He would not fall for this bitch's tricks again.

Seeing him acting like that, Riona just smiled.

"Alright then, I will be taking my leave then. I guess I would deliver the good news to him myself."

Saying those words, Riona turned around.

Then, with a smile on her face, she spoke,

‘I won the bet.’

‘Tsk. Whatever.

It was an unfair bet to begin with.’

‘Just don’t go back on your words.’

‘...’

Riona didn’t hear a reply but with the same smile on her face, she continued walking and then appeared in front of a door.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

She knocked.

“Enter.”

Riona walked in.

“What is it?”

Amletus questioned.

“You look annoyed,” Riona spoke.

“That is why you should say what you want to say and get the hell out.”

Amletus replied with a frustrated look on his face.

The Aura he released overwhelmed Riona, however, she did her best to keep her sanity and replied,

“I-I am sure your mood will change when you hear what I have to say.”

Suddenly, the aura that Amletus was releasing disappeared and he questioned,

“Speak.”

“We found the Cure to the Curse.”

Riona revealed with a smile on her face.

“What are you talking about? What Curse?”

“The Devouring Mist Physique.”

Riona said the words and Amletus’s expression changed.

“...are you serious?”

He questioned.

With how he reacted, it was clear that this was something very important to him.

“I am,” Riona replied and without wasting any time, she started explaining,

“As you know, my daughter, Amaya Skadi was born with Devouring Mist Physique, finding her useless, we sent her to the Skyfall Kingdom.”

“Continue.”

Amletus was clearly interested.

“That girl did not give up, she founded something called Thousand Information Chamber that dealt with information and after so many years, she finally found the technique to cultivate the Physique.”

“Are you serious?” Amletus’s expression changed.

“She is currently a King Stage Cultivator.”

Riona revealed and Amletus’s eyes widened in shock.

“Where is she!?” he questioned.

This time, his tone was more hurried.

He was clearly losing his self-control.

This was very important for the Skadi Family, it was something that would push the Skadi Kingdom to new heights and might even make them the Strongest Kingdom with undisputed power in a few centuries.

And if all of this starts in his era, then his name would be written with golden ink in the Ska- no, the World's history.

Seeing his reaction, Riona smiled.

This was the reaction she wanted to see.

Seeing that everything was coming together, Riona dropped the bomb,

“She is here in the Palace, I knew you would want to meet her when you learn about her so I called her here beforehand.

Should I call her?”

“Call her.” Amletus didn't waste a single second and spoke.

Even though he was trying his best, he still failed to hold back the smile that had appeared on his face.

“As you command, Lord Amletus,” Riona spoke.

\*Clap\* \*Clap\*

She clapped twice, the door of the room opened and a woman walked in.

Seeing the woman, Amletus's expression changed.

A spitting image of Riona was standing in front of him.

“Greetings, Lord Amletus.”

Amaya greeted with a small smile on her face.

“Hahaha~ What do you mean Lord Amletus? You are my Granddaughter, you can call me Grandpa.

You are a spitting image of your mother.

Hahaha~ Thank god you did not inherit your father’s looks.” Amletus laughed out loud.

Amaya just smiled as she glanced at this ‘Grandfather’ of hers.

Riona had a similar expression on her face.

“I shall call you Grandpa then,” Amaya replied.

“Hahaha~ Of course Of course.” Amletus laughed out loud.

Leaving the technique to cultivate the physique aside, Amaya’s cultivation alone was enough for him to nurture her.

A King Stage Cultivator. Amletus knew that this girl was not more than 50 years old, for someone like her to be a King Stage Cultivator.

It was a never seen before talent.

Of course, this didn’t mean that he didn’t care about the technique.

If he could get both, a genius and the technique, he would obviously not deny it.

“Did you really find a way to cultivate your physique?”

He questioned.

Instead of answering, Amaya raised her hand, Dark Mist came out of her hand, and seeing the mist,

Ameltus’s eyes shined.

# Chapter 581 You Two Are In This Together, Aren'T You?

“T-T-This is the Devouring Mist!”

Amletus couldn't control himself and shouted out loud.

Seeing his reaction, Amaya just smiled and continued to observe him.

With a glint in his eyes, Amletus glanced at Amaya and spoke,

“You really did manage to find a way to cultivate your Physique and even became a King Stage Cultivator, that's a big achievement.”

“Thank you, Grandpa.”

“So? Where is the Technique?”

Amletus couldn't control himself and questioned.

“Grandpa.” Amaya called out.

“Yes?”

“Now that we finally attained the way to cultivate our physique, this would definitely increase our Kingdom's strength, right?”

Amaya questioned.

“Hahaha~ Of course! Of course, it will! And it will all be because of you. Hahaha~ I have an amazing Granddaughter.”

Amletus laughed out loud.

“Do you think we would become the Strongest Kingdom in the world?”

Do you think we would have the power to unify the continent under our banner?"

Amaya questioned.

"Huh?"

Amletus frowned.

He glanced at Amaya and seeing her looking at him with an excited smile on her face, he didn't know how to react,

"Becoming the strongest huh..."

He muttered.

"Hmm? Grandpa?" Amaya frowned.

"Hmm?"

"Why does it look like you do not think that we can become the strongest?" Amaya questioned.

"It is not like that."

Amletus shook his head.

"What is it then?" Amaya questioned.

"We cannot unite the other Kingdoms under our banner," Amletus replied.

Hearing his answer, Amaya frowned.

"Why?" She questioned.

"Our ancestor didn't wish for it. He told us not to unite the continent." Amletus replied.

“But if we are stronger than all the Kingdoms, isn’t it natural that we should hold the absolute power?” Amaya questioned.

“We do not hold absolute power, Amaya.”

“What does that mean? Who holds it then? Is it the Skyfall Kingdom?”

“Heh. Those Idiots? They aren’t even close to that level.” Amletus snorted.

“Then who is it?” Amaya questioned.

Amletus glanced at Amaya again and frowned,

“Why are you asking all this?”

“I want us to be the best after all, and if I don’t even know who is currently the best, how will I set a goal for myself?” Amaya replied.

“...”

Amletus turned silent.

After thinking for a while, he spoke,

“You know about the Forbidden Region?”

“Huh?” Amaya frowned.

Amletus then told her about the Mythical Creature and hearing that, Amaya frowned.

‘Is he not involved in Herms’s plot?’ Amaya questioned inwardly.

However, soon, she shook her head,

‘That is not possible. There must be something else.’

“So you are saying that we cannot unite the continent because the Mythical Creature might Kill all the Emperors if we attempt it?” Amaya questioned.

“Yes, that is correct.” Amletus nodded.

“Then why is the Solid Earth Kingdom attacking Woods Dynasty then?” Amaya questioned.

Amletus narrowed his eyes.

Amaya, however, didn't back down and continued to question,

“If the Emperors are not going to be involved, then why even fight? It is not like anything could be done without defeating the strongest person in the Dynasty.”

“I don't know what he is thinking,” Amletus replied.

“And you haven't tried to look into it?” Amaya questioned.

“As I said, I, as an Emperor Stage Cultivator, cannot involve myself with these affairs.”

“It is not like I am telling you to attack them or anything, I am just asking why you haven't investigated it?” Amaya spoke.

“...” Amletus didn't know how to answer that question.

He glanced at Riona and noticed that she had a strange look on her face as well.

It was as if she was confused about something.

He understood what she was thinking.

She has been telling him that Solid Earth Kingdom has been acting weirdly for a while now, however, he always told her not to involve herself with it, however, now that Amaya is asking all these questions, his actions definitely look suspicious.

Riona suddenly glanced at Amletus and seeing her expression, Amletus realized that he was right.

Riona was indeed thinking that his actions were suspicious.

“Amaya,” Amletus called out.

“Yes, Grandfather?” Amaya tilted her head innocently.

“As I said, due to the Mythical Creature, we cannot do anything, therefore, looking out for other Kingdoms is simply a waste of time. That is the reason why I am not doing anything.”

Amletus spoke. This time, his tone was stricter than before.

“The Solid Earth Army has been defeated.”

Suddenly, Amaya spoke up.

Amletus narrowed his eyes and Amaya continued,

“The Skyfall Kingdom helped the Woods Dynasty and the Solid Earth Army suffered huge losses. 4 out of 7 of their Generals have died.”

“Why are you telling me all this?” Amletus questioned.

“I am just confused. Why did the Skyfall Kingdom help the Woods Dynasty? They could simply let them fight and then reap rewards later, then why bother? What do they get in return?” Amaya spoke up.

“Amaya.” Amletus called.

“Hmm?” A frown appeared on Amaya’s face.

The atmosphere inside the room had changed.

Right now, Amletus was not looking at her with that amiable smile on his face, his expression was rather dark.

“You were married to Ricardus, the King of the Skyfall Kingdom, correct?”

“Yes, that is correct.”

“From what I know, the Skyfall Kingdom is under a strict lockdown where no one is allowed to leave or enter the Kingdom,

Then how did you come here?”

“I am a King Stage Cultivator, Grandpa.” Amaya replied.

“That you are, however, at the same time, you are also a Royal Consort, there is no way you can simply sneak out of the Palace.” Amletus narrowed his eyes.

“Not only that, but you are now a King Stage Cultivator, a young King Stage Cultivator coming back to the Kingdom that abandoned her,

Something doesn’t add up.”

Amletus then glanced at Riona to ask for her view, however, suddenly, another possibility entered his mind.

His expression changed.

The more he thought about this possibility, the higher the probability of it being the truth got.

Amletus finally realized.

He was being treated like a fool.

“You two are in this together, aren’t you?”

He questioned and Amaya’s expression changed.

# Chapter 582 Meh, It Was Nothing.

“You two are in this together, aren’t you?”

Amletus questioned and Amaya’s expression changed.

Riona stepped back a little, she was just a moment away from taking out her weapon. Of course, she knew she wouldn’t be able to do anything against Amletus, however, she could at least attack Amletus till the point Amaya has time to escape.

“Heh, did you really think I was someone like Eardwolf?” Amletus questioned with a laugh. However, his expression was anything but funny.

Riona was now even tenser.

“Haahh...”

Amaya, on the other hand, sighed.

It looked as if a big responsibility was removed from her shoulders.

“It was getting more and more troublesome. Your lips are tighter than normal people, I barely got anything after talking for so long, but I guess that can be expected from an Emperor who had been ruling for such a long time.”

Amaya massaged her right shoulder, then, her expression turned serious as she glanced at Amletus.

“Alright then, I will stop playing around and will be direct.

I already know you are involved with Herms, what I don’t understand, however, is that why are you supporting him? His plan of using the treaty to get rid of Alcimus has already failed.

So even if you two come together, you would need to fight against Alcimus and Lady Astaria, there is no way it would be an easy fight.

So why bother helping him?

Is it because of useless friendship or...

Do you have another trump card that you are holding?"

"What are you talking about, girl?

I already told you that the Emperors cannot fig-"

"The Mythical Creature is dead. We know that already." Amaya interrupted.

"..."

Amletus turned silent.

Riona frowned as well.

Amaya continued to look at Amletus.

"Heh." Suddenly, Amletus laughed.

"To think you already know about all this.

Is it safe to assume that you are on Astaria's side?"

Amletus questioned.

"Not exactly, but you can say that. Yes."

Amaya nodded.

"And you?" Amletus questioned as he turned towards Riona.

"I am only on my Daughter's side, anything else does not matter," Riona replied.

“Good good.” Amletus laughed.

“You still haven’t answered any of my questions yet,” Amaya spoke.

“And why do you think I would answer your questions?” Amletus questioned.

“Is it another Emperor Stage Cultivator? Is that why you are so confident?” Amaya questioned back.

“Heh, you really think I will answer your questions huh.” Amletus just smiled.

“Actually, I am even surprised that you are here all by yourself, that is quite gutsy, I will admit.” Amletus’s expression turned fiercer,

“Without that bitch Astaria protecting you, do you think you can survive in front of me? Or did you think I would not kill you because of our relationship or that stupid Technique of yours?”

He questioned.

“ ... ”

Amaya didn’t say anything.

“Heeh? Why are you all silent now? Are you scared?” Amletus’s smile turned demonic.

“ ... ”

Amaya didn’t reply.

“To think you won’t even say anything. That is quite the change. I guess you still hold your life quite dearly, well, you are young, so I won’t blame you.

How about this?

You give me the technique and I will give you and your mother a painless, quick death. Hmm? What do you think? A good deal, right?"

"H-How about you tell me about what you are hiding and I give you the technique?" Amaya questioned back.

She was trying to keep a brave front, however, her stuttering gave her away.

She was panicking, she was scared.

Seeing that, Riona's sword appeared in her hand, however, before she could even attack,

\*Whoosh\*

\*Bam\*

Her body flew back and crashed onto the wall.

"Mother!"

Amaya's expression changed as she quickly rushed towards Riona.

"R-Run." Riona spoke weakly.

"My offer is still valid, girl.

Give me the technique and I will give you two a painless death.

Don't test me, I am quite good when it comes to torture." Amletus smiled.

"I really regret it..."

Amaya muttered.

"Hmm? What do you regret?" Amletus questioned.

"If only I was strong enough..." Amaya replied.

“Hahaha~ Don’t worry, you are plenty strong for your age. With your talent, if you continue, you might even become as strong as me.

But you are correct, you are indeed not strong enough.

Talent doesn’t matter if you are dead after all. Hahaha~”

Amletus laughed.

“Anyways,

Last chance girl.

Give me the technique and I wil-”

Suddenly, Amletus’s expression changed.

‘Huh?’

He frowned.

‘W-What happened?’

He couldn’t understand.

His world was turning upside down and everything was moving upward.

‘H-Huh?’

“If only we were strong enough, capturing you alive would have been much more advantageous.”

He then heard Amaya’s voice and suddenly,

\*Thud\*

His head dropped to the ground.

He was dead.

Without even knowing how he died.

‘An Emperor is only strong because he has the ability to control the Mana around him, if that ability is taken away, he would be nothing more than a slightly stronger King Stage Cultivator.

So if you, who are an absurdly strong King Stage Cultivator, somehow manage to take on an Emperor Stage Cultivator by surprise, you have a chance to kill him.

Of course, taking him by surprise would not be as simple as it sounds.

Defeating Emperors is not that simple.’

“Meh, she was entirely correct.

Emperors aren’t that big of a deal.”

Nux commented.

“It would have been better if we could get something out of his mouth though...” Amaya replied.

“Well, not everything goes as planned, now does it?” Nux smiled.

“At the very least, Herms is now alone.

We used the advantage we had and got rid of 1 Emperor Stage Cultivator.

Now, all we have to do is make Alcimus fight against Herms and watch what happens.”

“Mhm, it would be a lot easier, that is correct.” Amaya nodded.

“W-W-Wait! H-H-H-How W-What, What is happening!?”

Riona, who just witnessed the murder of the strongest person in her Kingdom couldn’t help but widen her eyes in shock.

“H-How did you kill him!?”

“Meh, it was nothing.

Don’t act so surprised, mother-in-law.”

Nux shrugged.

# Chapter 583 Anyways, Shall We Visit Father-In-Law?

“Meh, it was nothing.

Don’t act so surprised, mother-in-law.”

Nux shrugged.

“What the hell are you talking about!? Do you even realize what you have done!? You have killed an Emperor! An Emperor! The strongest existence in the world!

You have disturbed the Balance of the world! Do you realize that!?”

“Oh c’mon, he wouldn’t have died if he was the strongest, you know?”

Nux kept his nonchalant attitude.

He was definitely enjoying his mother-in-law’s reaction.

“You... h-how did you do it? You are still just a King Stage Cultivator, how can you kill an Emperor on your own?” Riona questioned.

She still couldn’t believe what had happened, however, seeing Amletus’s headless body lying on the floor without any movements and his head that had now rolled to the Wall, she had no choice but to believe it.

Amletus, the Emperor, the Protector of the Skadi Kingdom was dead.

“Trust me, I am not lying, he was weak.”

Nux spoke, this time, however, his expression was serious.

“Astaria is much, much stronger than him.”

“ ... ”

Riona didn't know what to say.

She had heard that Lady Astaria had started training Nux about a month ago, she knew it would be very beneficial to Nux, however, she never thought that Nux would become strong enough to Kill an Emperor.

“To be honest, I feel like I could have defeated him without the sneak attack, however, in the end, he is still an Emperor, I couldn't take any chance.”

Nux analyzed.

“Well, Astaria did say you would be victorious if you two fought,” Amaya replied.

She usually referred to Astaria as a ‘Lady’, however, as she witnessed the fight between Nux and Astaria, she soon realized that ‘Lady’ Astaria would be her sister soon.

So using ‘Lady’ to call her was a bit... strange.

Therefore, she had to change the way she addressed her.

She should start preparing early after all.

“Anyways, with now Amletus dead, we have declared War against Herms and the Solid Earth Kingdom.”

Amaya's expression turned serious.

“Now we have to make sure that Herms receives information as late as possible and for that...”

Amaya then turned towards Riona.

“Huh?” Riona frowned.

In the end, she was someone who had ruled over and managed the Skadi Kingdom, her mind was sharper than any normal person's. So even though she was shocked and still couldn't believe the situation, she understood what Amaya and Nux wanted.

"You want to meet Eardwolf."

She spoke.

"As expected of mother." Amaya smiled.

Riona smiled back.

Being acknowledged by her daughter.

This was definitely a good feeling.

She completely forgot about how the strongest human in the Skadi Kingdom was killed and placed Amaya's head on her breasts.

"Of course, you thought I wouldn't even be able to guess that? Is that even possible? Or are you underestimating your mother?"

Don't forget, you were the one who lost the bet.

Although you are smart, you still have a long way to go.

And for that, you would have to stay as close to me as possible."

Riona smiled widely.

"I only lost because I didn't know much about that idiot. I only judged things based on what I had heard about him, you, on the other hand, knew him since you practically grew up with him. There was the difference in data, not intelligence."

Amaya replied with an annoyed look on her face.

Her mother really was annoying.

Hugging her like this, how annoying.

She was a grown-up now, she needed her personal space.

“You shouldn’t have agreed to bet then.” Riona’s reply was simple.

“You forced me to!”

Amaya shouted.

She really couldn’t believe how shameless her mother was.

“I don’t know what you are talking about~”

Riona smiled and tightened her hug around Amaya.

Amaya tried to resist and get out of her hold, however, she failed.

“There There.” Riona then started patting her head.

“...”

Amaya didn’t know what to say.

“Tsk, I can’t believe you two are ignoring me like that.”

Nux, who was witnessing the mother and daughter sticking to each other commented.

To be honest, it was now a common sight for him.

When he placed a Slave Seal on Riona, the first thing Amaya ordered her to do was to tell the truth.

Then, everything was revealed.

The woman called Riona Skadi, the woman who held most of the power in the Skadi Kingdom, the woman who dismissed all the traditions of the Kingdom and managed to gain influence and power using her wits,

In the end, that woman was nothing but a fool who was crazy for her daughter.

The moment Amaya was born, Riona changed.

She realized that ruling the Kingdom meant nothing.

She may not love her 'husband', but her daughter,

Now that was a completely different thing.

She adored her daughter.

All her actions thus far were for the sake of her data.

When this was revealed, Amaya felt guilty.

All this while when she was blaming her mother in her heart, her mother was thinking about different ways of staying together with her.

Amaya, wanting to change things, told Riona to contact her using the telepathic connection whenever she wanted, a decision she deeply regretted because Riona didn't miss a single moment and contacted her to talk about even the simplest matter.

Of course, Amaya may act and say how annoying her mother was or things like that, however, Nux and everyone else knew the truth.

In the end, the relationship between the mother and daughter improved and was now stronger than ever.

“Do you want to join in as well?”

Riona extended her arm towards Nux.

Amaya, however, quickly grabbed that arm and placed it back on her head again.

Anything but Nux.

She was willing to give her mother anything she wanted.

Anything, but Nux.

That, was something she cannot allow.

Not at all.

Seeing her reaction, Riona chuckled.

“Anyways, shall we visit father-in-law?”

Nux questioned with a small smile on his face.

The two women nodded and Nux muttered,

“I am meeting many of my fathers-in-laws right now, it is as if someone is doing all this on purpose.

Hmmmmm.”

The two women just shook their heads.

‘Mother.’

Suddenly, Amaya called out using a connection to which Nux wasn’t connected to.

She wanted to ask something.

# Chapter 584 Eardwolf Skadi, Are You Willing To Be My Slave?

‘Mother.’

Amaya called out.

‘Hmm? What is it?’ Riona questioned.

‘You don’t like him, right?’ Amaya questioned.

‘I told you already, didn’t I? I don’t.’ Riona sighed inwardly and then replied.

‘Good...’

Amaya turned silent.

‘How many times are you going to ask me the same question? You even used Slave Seal.’

‘I only did that the first time when I was asking all the questions.’ Amaya defended herself.

‘Alright, but you still question me about this regularly, don’t you? Do you not trust your lovely mother?’ Riona questioned.

‘It is not like that.’

Amaya replied.

She then glanced at Nux for a while and then narrowed his eyes,

‘That bastard is a magnet. He attracts women wherever he goes. It is like a weird illness of his. So I have to make sure everything is okay regularly.’

You can think of this as a regular health checkup.’

‘You really don’t trust your mother, do you?’

Riona pouted.

‘As I said, it is not about you. I need to keep him in check. I have already told him not to go after you so at the very least, he does not have those types of thoughts in his mind about you, and neither does he try to openly woo you, but he is still ill, so I need to make sure you are fine.’

Amaya replied.

This was a serious issue.

And she really didn’t want her mother to become her sister.

Just thinking about it felt weird...

‘...’ Riona didn’t know how to react.

She then glanced at Nux and after observing him for a while, she started understanding the problem.

That man was handsome.

He was the most handsome man she had ever seen in her long life.

He was strong, way too strong.

He was understanding.

He was supportive.

He was funny.

He has the power to create his personnel army by combining Slave Seal and his ‘Dual Cultivation’, however, he doesn’t do it just because of his love for his wives.

Handsome, strong, loyal, and honest love, even one of these qualities would make any man a desirable partner, and this man had it all.

She could definitely see this 'illness' Amaya was talking about.

Nux definitely was a women magnet.

However, that is only the case for other women.

She was different.

'Don't worry, I won't fall in love with him. You can trust me.

I am happy as long as I have you.'

Riona smiled.

'I belong to Nux.'

Amaya was quick to reply.

Riona understood what she was thinking about and punched her head,

'Talking back to your mother, eh?'

'...'

Amaya turned silent.

"Oi Oi, what are you two doing? I am lost."

Nux suddenly turned around and spoke.

"..."

"..."

Riona and Amaya didn't know what to say.

"If you didn't know the way, then why were you walking so confidently?"

Riona couldn't help but question.

“Well, I can find it using [Sense] but since we already have a mother-in-law with us, I thought, ‘why bother?’ and relied on you.” Nux smiled.

“I don't know what my daughter sees in you, you are a fool.” Riona sighed.

“Thank you for the compliment.”

Riona shook her head and spoke, “I will lead the way.”

“Please do.”

Nux spoke as he grabbed Amaya and placed her head on his chest.

It was as if he was saying, ‘It is my turn now.’

Riona frowned but seeing the smile on her daughter's face, she sighed again and just continued walking.

Nux followed behind her.

...

The doors of the rooms opened and Riona walked in.

Seeing her walking in, Eardwolf's expression changed.

‘Those guards are useless.’

He thought inwardly.

“Wh-”

He wanted to ask, but before he could,

“Why are you here?”

The woman who was standing next to him spoke.

However, before Riona could answer, Amaya and Nux walked in.

Nux's eyes quickly fell on the woman who was standing beside the King and his expression changed.

The woman looked at Nux and her expression turned a little soft as well.

“Why are you here?” She questioned, this time, however, her tone was different.

‘Amaya.’

Nux called Amaya using the connection.

‘What?’ Amaya questioned.

‘How the hell is every woman in your family so beautiful?’ Nux questioned back.

Amaya frowned, but before she could say anything, a frown appeared on Nux's face and he continued,

‘Though I sense a bitchy aura around this one.’

‘Oi, that's my sister, mind your language.’

Riona corrected.

‘She is not a bitch?’

‘She is.’

‘...’

“Who are these two?”

Eardwolf questioned as he glanced at Amaya.

Nux and Riona stepped in front of Amaya and Riona spoke,

“I need to talk. Do your business later.”

“You cann-” Athela, Riona’s sister was about to retort, however, Riona wasn’t having any of it.

Her dagger appeared in her hand and she spoke,

“Leave while I am asking nicely, things might take a bad turn if you don’t.”

“Y-You! You think you can threa-”

Riona threw her dagger and it passed through Athela’s body, just an inch away from her cheeks.

“Do not make me repeat myself.”

Riona spoke with a cold look on her face.

Athela’s face turned pale.

Normally, she would have asked for help, however, this time, she realized Riona was definitely serious.

Something was wrong.

Therefore, without thinking anything, she walked away.

“I will make you pay for today.”

Of course, she didn’t forget to use the typical third-rate villain’s dialogue.

“Why are you here?” After Athela left, Eardwolf questioned.

“She is here to introduce me,” Nux spoke.

“Who are you?” Eardwolf narrowed his eyes.

“I am your son-in-law,”

Nux smiled and,

“Huh?”

Eardwolf didn't know how to react.

“Who?”

He questioned.

“Your son-in-law,” Nux repeated himself.

He then stepped back and pointed at Amaya,

“She is your daughter and my wife, Amaya Leander. You are my father-in-law, I am your son-in-law.

Anyways, all of that doesn't really matter, let's just jump to the main matter,

Eardwolf Skadi, are you willing to be my Slave?”

# Chapter 585 Now This Is Nostalgic

“She is your daughter and my wife, Amaya Leander. You are my father-in-law, I am your son-in-law.

Anyways, all of that doesn't really matter, let's just jump to the main matter, Eardwolf Skadi, are you willing to be my Slave?”

Nux questioned.

“What the hell are you talking about!? Are you out of your mind!?” Eardwolf was unable to control himself and questioned out loud.

Nux however, just shrugged, and seeing this, Eardwolf was even more angered.

“Who do you think you are!? Do you know who I am!? You might be a King Stage Cultivator but if I want, I can get rid of you right here and now and your family members won't even find your body. Do not force me to do anything th-”

Eardwolf continued to shout however, suddenly, Nux threw a bag near his legs.

“...” Eardwolf glanced at Nux and narrowed his eyes.

“Before you utter any more of your nonsense, see what's inside.

It would make this conversation a lot easier.” Nux spoke with an expressionless look on his face.

“...”

Eardwolf turned silent.

In front of the 3 people in front of him, he crouched and picked up the Bag, and as soon as he peeked in,

“Uh-AAahh!”

His eyes widened in horror and he dropped the bag in fear before stepping back.

He then glanced at Nux, fear clear in his eyes.

Nux smiled,

“The support you are relying on to ‘get rid of a mere King Stage Cultivator like me’ is dead, so it would be beneficial for you if mind your actions from now on.”

“W-W-What did you do?” Eardwolf questioned.

“Are you dumb or something? Don’t you see? I killed Amletus, your backer and if you don’t what to die, then submit.” Nux replied.

His tone was clearly more annoyed than normal.

For some reason, he didn’t like this man in front of him.

“A-Are y-you just going to observe t-things? I-I-If the two of us worked together, then w-we can definitely kill him.”

Eardwolf glanced at Riona and spoke.

Riona had a strange expression on her face,

“I knew you were dumb but how are you this dumb? Can’t you see? I came here with him, obviously, I am on his side.

And let’s say I am not on his side and am willing to work with you, do you think we can go against someone who killed Amletus?”

“...” Eardwolf turned silent.

“Eardwolf.”

Riona called.

“W-What?”

“I suggest you to just do as you are told, at the very least, you would be able to continue living your life peacefully.”

“ ... ”

Eardwolf turned silent.

Nux, however, had enough.

His sword appeared in his hand, he appeared in front of Eardwolf and placed his sword on his neck.

The King widened his eyes in surprise.

He couldn't react to Nux's movement at all.

No matter what, he was still a King Stage Cultivator, how can another King Stage Cultivator be so fearsome?

H-How was this possible?

“Eardwolf Skadi, are you willing to be my Slave?”

Nux spoke and at the same time, a trail of blood leaked out of Eardwolf's neck.

Nux's message was clear.

If he didn't receive the answer he wanted to receive, Eardwolf will be beheaded.

“ ... ”

Eardwolf didn't say anything.

In his mind, he was thinking about many possibilities.

Slapping away Nux's sword, then jumping out of the window, with his cultivation, he would definitely survive, then he would gather his soldiers.

The King Stage Cultivators who are under Riona's command would still listen to his order once he says that Riona had betrayed the Kingdom.

Gathering around 4 King Stage Cultivators won't be difficult, including him, it would be 5v3, there was a decent chance to win, however, for some reason, even if they fail, then as long as they hold out, 5 more King Stage Cultivators would gather.

A 9v3 would definitely be a winnable battle and the other soldiers have not even participated in this scenario yet.

The victory was assured.

However...

As Eardwolf glanced at Nux's eyes,

He had the feeling that the moment he tries to 'slap away his sword', he would die.

In the end, Eardwolf lowered his head and,

"Y-Yes."

Gave up on his pride.

"Good."

Nux smiled.

A strange energy entered Eardwolf's body.

It felt as if some chains were binding all his organs.

Eardwolf was horrified.

“W-What did you do?”

He questioned.

“I turned you into my slave, from now on...”

Nux then briefly explained how the Slave Seal works and the more Eardwolf heard, the paler his face turned.

Seeing that, Riona just smiled,

“Don’t worry, it is not that bad, as long as you stay loyal, you can continue living your life as you did before. You now just need to listen to his orders. Just think as if he is the replacement for Amletus.

And if it makes you feel any better, I have a slave seal implanted in me as well.”

“W-What? S-So you were forc-” Eardwolf widened his eyes.

“No, I was the one who told him to do that. I accepted it willingly.” Riona clarified before Eardwolf even asked his question.

“Yes, the two of you are not the same. Keep in mind, the mother-in-law is the leader here. You will do whatever she says, whether it is abducting the throne, or to even killing yourself, don’t you dare go against her orders.” Nux spoke.

“K-K-Kill myself?” Eardwolf stuttered, however, before Nux could say anything,

“AAAGGHHHAGGHHH!!!”

Eardwolf quickly fell on the ground and started shrieking and withering in pain.

“Now this is nostalgic,” Nux commented.

Amaya nodded in agreement.

Riona, on the other hand, was surprised.

“I can still remove your Seal, you know?” Nux commented.

“I still want to talk to my daughter, thank you very much,” Riona replied.

“It is not a means of conversation...”

Nux just sighed and shook his head.

He then glanced at Eardwolf, who was still withering in pain, and sighed again.

That was how the Skadi Kingdom, the Second Strongest Kingdom in the world came under Nux’s command.

# Chapter 586 Uhhh... Fuck.

“Is everything under control?” Nux questioned.

“Of course.” Riona smiled.

“It was faster than I thought,” Nux commented.

“Of course it was. Who do you think you are talking to?”

“Indeed, as Amaya’s mother, you have to be at least half as good as she is.”  
Nux nodded.

“She still has a lot to learn.

She lost the bet, you know?” Riona nodded her head and smiled as she glanced at Amaya.

Obviously, she was expecting a hiss in response to what she said, however, Amaya completely ignored what she said and continued to play with Nux’s hair while he placed his head on her lap.

“Mhm, luck is also part of life, I guess.” Nux nodded.

Completely undermining Riona’s victory and blaming it on luck.

“...” Riona didn’t know what to say.

‘The two of them are similar when it comes to certain things.’

She thought inwardly as she glanced at the couple having a moment together.

“Anyways, after that little dose, Eardwolf is now acting like a good puppy. All the servants who attend to Amletus have already been turned into slaves.

Though I am still not the Queen, I hold all the powers now.

We are expecting to get some information out of the letters that Herms send to Amletus.

Now the only thing we have to do is wait.”

Riona quickly reported everything.

“Are you sure I don’t have anything to do?” Nux questioned.

“Nope, you are free to go.” Riona smiled.

Although she had a smile on her face, even a child could tell what she was thinking,

‘Just leave already, why are you taking so long.’

That was the only thing going on in Riona’s mind.

Today, miraculously, Amaya had decided to stay with her mother while Nux returns to the Skyfall Kingdom.

Riona, of course, was very excited to spend time with her daughter and wanted Nux to leave them alone as soon as possible.

“Do you really have to go?”

Amaya, on the other hand, had completely opposite thoughts.

She wished that Nux stayed with her as well, however,

“You know I have to go right? She will kill me if I don’t.” Nux replied with a wry smile on his face.

“Tsk, she is abusing her authority,” Amaya complained.

“She is the strongest after all.”

“Do you think you can defeat her today?” Amaya questioned with a serious look on her face.

Nux’s expression turned serious as well,

“I am not sure.

I won’t lose easily, that’s for sure.

I was able to force her to use her own Mana and Skills in the last battle, though she overwhelmed me because of that.

After another round of training, I feel like I am prepared now.”

“Training you after throwing out a challenge like that, tsk.” Amaya snorted.

“Heh, she is that desperate.”

Nux’s smile widened.

“...”

Amaya just turned silent.

“W-What are you two talking about?”

Suddenly, Riona stepped into the conversation as well.

“The Wager between Nux and Astaria,” Amaya answered.

“Wager?”

“Yes, as you already know, Astaria is now training Nux.”

Riona nodded.

“Well now, she went ahead and challenged him to a little wager!”

“What? Really!? What are the terms?”

“If Nux manages to defeat her,  
She would marry him.”

“WHAT!?”

Riona shouted in surprise.

“Why would she marry him!?”

“Do you even need to ask it?”

Amaya questioned back.

Riona quickly connected the dots and turned towards Nux.

“Y-Y-You are going after A-Astaria Skyfall!?”

“I am,” Nux replied with a confident smile on his face.

“If everything goes well, she would be your daughter’s sister after today.”

“...”

Riona didn’t know how to react to this news.

Astaria Skyfall...

She was like a sacred existence to her...

Just her training him was a big deal already, but this man even has the balls to court someone like her?

And to even accept an absurd challenge like that...

J-Just... what the hell is wrong with him?

A-And on the off chance that this man actually succeeds, Astaria Skyfall will become her daughter-in-law?

I-Is that even...

Riona felt like she was going to lose her mind.

“Anyways, you two spend some time together, I need to go. I still need to prepare for my battle after all.”

While Riona was thinking all that, Nux spoke.

He then kissed Amaya and walked out of the room.

Activating his [Conceal], he started running towards the Skyfall Kingdom.

...

“You are finally here, boy.”

As soon as Nux walked into his room, he saw Astaria sitting on the chair.

“Already using your wife’s privilege of coming into my room without my permission, I see.”

Nux commented.

“You wish. I was just worried that you were swatted away by Amletus.”  
Astaria snorted.

“You think he has what it takes to kill me?” Nux questioned.

“You are just a mere King Stage Cultivator after all.”

“A King Stage Cultivator who forced the strongest human in the world to use skills to defeat him.”

“I only did that so that you won’t feel too bad after losing.”

“How caring. Just like a lovely wife.”

Astaria clenched her fists.

Fighting against this bastard really was annoying.

She doesn't even know why she starts it.

"Anyways, did you kill him?" Astaria questioned with a serious look on her face.

"The Skadi Kingdom is under our control now," Nux replied.

"Good job."

"It was rather easy."

"Don't get too cocky, as I said, he was the weakest," Astaria warned.

"I will only get cocky after I defeat you," Nux replied.

"That won't happen."

"Admit it, you are waiting for that you happen."

"You are delusional." Astaria was quick to shoot him down.

"Haaahhh... you really are a tsundere."

"Don't use the terms that I don't even know the meaning of."

And again, the two of them started bickering again.

If one sees them from afar, the two of them really would look like a couple.

Of course, Astaria would still deny it with all her might.

"Tsk, whatever, let's just start with the duel."

"There are still a few hours for that," Astaria spoke.

"What? You scared?" Nux questioned and a crazy smile appeared on Astaria's face,

“You asked for this, boy.”

‘Uhhh... fuck.’

# Chapter 587 He Changed His Battle Style.

“What? Are you scared?”

Astaria questioned with a wide smile on her face as she glanced at Nux.

“Petty...”

Nux commented with a wry smile on her face.

“Heh.”

Astaria laughed, then, her sword appeared in her hand, and then,

The Aura around her changed and her face turned serious.

Nux’s face turned serious as well.

Right now, the two of them were in a jungle that was around 50 km away from the Royal Palace.

This was the place where the two of them had started training after...

Well... pretty much destroying the training area with their inhuman strength.

Of course, this jungle wasn’t spared either.

Most of the trees here were broken apart, the ground had countless cracks on it, however, it was still a great battlefield.

Nux’s sword appeared in his hand and he took his battle stance.

No further signals were required.

Astaria disappeared and appeared behind Nux.

She slashed her sword, which was surrounded by Mana at Nux. The sword was destructive enough to cut any King Stage Cultivator as if it was cutting butter. Any armor less than 7 Star rating would hold no better than a piece of cloth. That was how strong the attack was.

Nux knew that, therefore, he had already jumped into the air and after blocking the attack with his sword, he was sent flying and after a flip, he stood up again, expecting another attack.

As he expected, Astaria appeared in front of him and attacked him again, this time, the attack was considerably weakened because it focused more on speed.

Nux parried the attack normally, another, a similar sword appeared on his free hand and he slashed it toward Astaria.

Astaria stepped back and dodged, Nux used this chance to free his other hand and attacked again.

Astaria defended with the sword but before she could relax, Nux's other sword attack was in front of her again.

Astaria stepped back again.

“Heh.” Nux chuckled, trying to rile Astaria up, and at the same time,

*\*Clang\* \*Clang\* \*Clang\**

He started his chain of attacks, forcing Astaria to step back again and again.

Nux's women, who were observing the battle from afar smiled.

However, the same couldn't be said about Iria, Phorus, or Winston.

The three of them just couldn't believe that Astaria, the strongest human in the world was being pushed back.

And this time, she was not holding back like before.

She was actually giving her all, but Nux's attacks were just too fast, even for her.

“He changed his battle style.”

Winston, the most experienced out of all the people here narrowed his eyes.

“He did.”

Ember nodded and then explained.

“Arvina, his previous teacher taught him the sword, as you already know, Arvina herself learned from Lady Asteria, so the style he learned matched Lady Astaria's. However, as the two of them continued to spar, Lady Astaria noticed that this technique was holding Nux back as it failed to utilize his insane speed properly.

Nux's weakness was his attack power.”

“That sort of attack power is a weakness...”

Winston didn't know what to say.

The General and the previous Queen couldn't help but smile wryly as well.

That attack power, each one of those strikes has the power to kill a normal King Stage Cultivator...

That... it was not weak at all...

Even if they use all their skills and their ultimate attack together, they wouldn't be able to deal the damage that Nux's 'weak attack power' was dealing.

And as if knowing what he was thinking, Ember clarified,

“Well, dealing damage to an Emperor with that attack power was not possible,

Of course, he still has his trump card and other skills, but again, we are talking about only raw attack power here.

To overcome this problem, Lady Astaria came up with the idea of utilizing speed.

She told him to use two swords and use his flexible body to attack as fast as he could.

Nux is fast, even faster than the Emperors when it comes to body movements since Mana can only boost their speed when they focus on their legs, for body movements, Emperors would have to focus on their entire body, which would make it a lot harder and difficult to control.

Nux was told to increase his speed even further, to the point where when an enemy only has time to hit him once, he uses the same time to go for 3 to 4 hits.

And after a long, hell-like training...”

Ember then glanced at the battlefield where Astaria was still being pushed back and commented,

“That... is the result.”

“...”

Winston turned silent.

On the Battlefield, as Astaria was being pushed back, she quickly realized that she was getting closer and closer to a tree.

She smiled, it was finally her chance now.

She got closer and closer to the tree, thinking of using this chance to unleash a big blow on Nux and throwing him away.

“!!!”

Soon, however, her smile disappeared when she noticed that the roots of the tree looked purplish.

Without thinking any further, she crouched.

\*Whoosh\*

A big Purple Black Spike popped out of the tree.

If she was still standing, her head would have been pierced open by that thing, her eyes widened in horror.

She was using Mana to block Nux's attack, her head was completely exposed.

This would have been lethal if Nux had succeeded.

Nux was not pulling back his punches today.

Astaria knew it was not safe to stay near this Tree.

She used her 7-Star sword, which was given to her by Nux to block his attacks and gather enough strength to unleash a powerful punch.

\*Whoosh\*

However, just as she punched, she realized that most of the punch's power was diffused.

She quickly realized Nux had used [Mirror].

He had already predicted what she would do.

And when she glanced at him and saw him smiling at her, her mouth twitched.

Nux's barrage of attacks continued and in the end,

Astaria had no choice but to take a few of his attacks head-on, to the point of getting a few bruises on her forearms, her Mana focused on her legs and,

She ran away.

# Chapter 588 You Did Well.

Astaria ran away.

Well, she didn't exactly run away, she just created distance between the two of them, but for an Emperor to do something like this...

It was no different than running away.

And judging from the grim look that had appeared on Astaria's face, anybody could tell that she was thinking the same.

“You have improved, a lot more than I thought.”

She commented.

Nux, however, completely ignored her comment and rushed toward her.

The Mana around Astaria moved and surrounded her sword.

She slashed it toward Nux, and Nux was forced to use both his swords to stop the attack.

The Mana then moved from the sword to Astaria's shoulders.

Astaria lifted her sword that carried the weight of Nux's two swords, a space was created,

This time, Astaria used her own Mana and kicked Nux's abdomen.

Mind you, when an Emperor uses her own Mana instead of the surrounding Mana, the output increases drastically.

The strength behind this kick was enough to break Nux's bones.

If the attack connects, there is no way Nux would stand up without a healing potion and at least 2 hours of rest.

However, Nux just smiled.

The power behind Astaria's kick suddenly dispersed.

She quickly understood what happened and narrowed her eyes.

Nux used Astaria's sword as a base and backflipped in the air, appearing behind her.

Astaria quickly turned around, trying to attack him before he lands, but before she could, she quickly moved aside.

She turned around and noticed a Purple Black Spike that was aiming at her heart.

'Annoying.'

She thought inwardly.

Nux landed and

\*Clang\*

Attacked again.

Astaria defended and Nux used another sword.

\*Clang\* \*Clang\* \*Clang\*

Nux's barrage of attacks started again.

A frown appeared on Astaria's face.

This was a problem.

The monster in front of her had insanely high stamina, especially after his recent 'state distribution', hoping that he would tire out was stupid.

Also, she cannot always dodge those Spikes that aim at her. If she gets hit by them once, the battle would be over.

She had to change her strategy.

She jumped back again.

Nux tried to rush towards her, however, she continued to maintain the distance.

Nux may be faster when it comes to body movement, however, in raw speed, when she uses Mana, she was definitely faster.

There is no way Nux could catch up.

“Are you seriously running away from a 'mere King Stage Cultivator', Lady Astaria?”

Nux laughed as he continued to chase Astaria. He then glanced at Phorus and the others and spoke,

“Your subjects must be disappointed.”

And Nux was right.

Well, rather than disappointment, Phorus and the others were shocked.

They never thought they would see a day like this.

Not only them, but even Nux's wives were shocked.

'Astaria is running away... I can't believe it...'

Felberta commented.

‘I know he was saying he would defeat her today, but this...’ Ember couldn’t believe it either.

‘Are we finally going to welcome Sister Astaria? I am excited.’ Skyla smiled cheerfully.

‘I wish to fight him like this as well. Though a Flogger Whip would be better.’ Edda laughed.

‘What’s that?’ Evane questioned with a frown.

‘Ahh, you weren’t there yesterday-‘

‘Thank god you weren’t. Just leave her be. Ignore most of the things she says.’ Allura jumped in before Edda could corrupt Evane.

Edda pouted.

‘Umm, is that allowed?’

Suddenly, Lane questioned as she pointed at the battlefield.

Astaria, while she was running away from Nux, was consuming both Health Potion and Mana Potion.

‘...’

The women turned silent.

They never expected Astaria would do something so... shameless.

‘Both of them are aiming for vitals and are not holding back at all.

Rather than a spar, it is a Battle.

A real battle.

There are no rules in real battle.

Everything is allowed.’

Thyra commented.

‘That’s correct.’

Ember nodded as well.

‘But... she is Emperor Stage Cultivator...’

Evane complained.

‘Are you saying she should give Nux a handicap because she is better than him?’ Ember questioned and Evane turned silent.

The women then continued to watch the battle.

“You don’t have to run away you know, though I am sweaty, I am sure I don’t smell.”

Nux laughed.

“...”

Astaria didn’t say anything.

Nux sighed and suddenly, he stopped.

“The potions won’t change anything.”

He commented and at the same time, he started consuming Potions as well.

“I simply need to consume Potions as well, it will be another start of the spar, I just need to defeat you again.”

He shrugged.

“Again? Now that’s a strong word.” Astaria smiled.

She then threw the empty vial of the Potion she drank and,

“I commend you, You did well.”

While she said that, Astaria took her battle stance, her face then turned serious and,

“Though I will be ending this fight now.”

Astaria’s aura exploded and she disappeared.

Nux frowned.

He used his [Sense] but Astaria appeared behind him and attacked, he barely fended.

“You trained well, with your speed, I believe you now have the power to defeat any Emperor without using your trump card.”

Nux heard Astaria’s voice.

She was praising him, those were not empty words, it was a genuine praise.

However, Nux’s expression was anything but good.

“Any Emperor,

Anyone but me.”

Astaria appeared behind Nux and attacked again, he dodged, but this time, it wasn’t as flawless, his shoulder was bruised.

“Nux Leander,

Let me show you why I am called the strongest human in the world.”

Astaria spoke and,

\*Bam\*

She punched Nux's back.

“!!!” Nux's eyes widened in surprise.

He couldn't react to this speed at all.

“Khhaakk!”

He was forced to cough out blood while his body was shot away.

However, Astaria wasn't done yet.

Like a demon, she was already standing at the spot where Nux fell.

\*Bam\*

This time, she kicked his head.

Nux his entire world blacken for the second and,

\*Bam\*

\*Bam\*

\*Bam\*

A series of scalp numbing attacks were unleashed.

“NUX!!”

Nux's women shouted in worry.

# Chapter 589 What The Hell Is Happening!?

“NUX!!”

Nux’s wives shouted in worry.

Those blows were frightening.

Nux was being thrown around as if he was some sort of ball. His face was already covered with blood, his nose was broken and his teeth were stuck in his lips, all in all, his face was discovered.

What’s worse?

\*Bam\*

\*Bam\*

Astaria was still going on.

She was planning to continue this until he passed out.

She knew what kind of monster this man was, if she gave him a chance, he might turn everything around.

If any other Emperor Stage Cultivator saw this one-sided beating, his eyes would widen in shock.

Not because Astaria was beating a Nux, but because of how she was doing it.

There are two types of Mana an Emperor can use, one is the Mana in the air, other one is the Mana inside their own body.

The Mana in the air is nearly endless, making Emperors an unstoppable force.

The Mana inside their body, though limited, gave stronger output.

Usually, an Emperor can only use one Mana at a time.

And this is what differentiated Astaria from other Emperors.

She has trained herself to use both Mana at the same time.

A normal Emperor can achieve the speed Astaria is using if they use their own Mana. For them, getting into Nux's blind spot and attacking him from behind is not a difficult task.

But the problem occurs when they are about to hit him, since they are already using Mana to increase their speed, their attack power is not enough for someone like Nux who has a monstrous defense.

Astaria, however, is different.

Since she can use both types of Mana at the same time, she is using her own Mana to increase her speed and the Mana in the air to increase her attack power.

This was why she was known as the strongest human in the world.

No Emperor could ever fight against her.

They tried to copy her method, however, it was not as easy as the theory made it, the process of using Mana to strengthen yourself is complicated in itself, now using two types of Mana to strengthen two different aspects, the difficulty and complexity do not just double, it is squared.

One needed 2 independent brains to achieve something like this.

Astaria achieved after decades of training and even for her, using this technique for an extended period of time was tiring.

It was her trump card.

“Alright, that’s it. I can’t watch it anymore.”

Suddenly, Thyra spoke but just as she was about to rush toward Astaria, Ember held her hand.

“What?”

“Stop it. It’s a spar, don’t interfere.” Ember spoke.

“What the hell are yo-”

“Nux haven’t lost yet.”

Ember replied in a hoarse voice.

Seeing her expression, Thyra narrowed her eyes and freed her hand from her grip aggressively.

“Whatever.”

She turned silent and continued to watch.

Ember glanced at the battlefield as well.

She had an emotionless look on her face, however, if one noticed how she had clenched her fists, they would realize how angry she was.

Of course, there was nothing she could do in this situation, she knew the moment she interfere with the spar, Nux would be angry. And it was not like she could do anything if Astaria decided to do something.

She was just too powerless.

She could only powerlessly watch the fight.

\*Bam\*

Nux was attacked again and his body was shot away.

Astaria was already waiting on the other end, ready to attack him again, just like she was doing all this time, but suddenly,

Nux disappeared.

“Huh?”

Astaria’s cold expression turned into a frown.

She looked around and failed to find Nux anywhere.

“Nux!”

On the other hand, Nux’s wives quickly rushed towards him as he appeared near them and fell on the ground.

Nux, however, raised his hand with a grim look on his face.

His women stopped.

Nux quickly took out a healing potion and drank it.

He then wiped the blood off his face.

On the other hand, Astaria quickly realized where he was and was rushing toward him.

Nux just smiled and started running away.

He was now copying what Astaria did before.

“You think you can run away from me?”

Astaria questioned.

“Do you think you have enough Mana to catch me now?”

Nux questioned back.

He had realized this when he was getting beaten up like a rag doll, the strength behind Astaria's blows and her speed had decreased, the beads of sweat on her forehead were a clear indication as well.

She was tired.

Astaria narrowed her eyes,

“I can always regenerate my Mana.”

“Do it then.”

Nux challenged.

Astaria tilted her head and then she stopped following him.

She took a Mana Potion.

Nux also waited for his health to regenerate.

The [Regeneration] he had received after he became a King Stage Cultivator kicked in as well.

He realized that it was not as useless as he thought.

Rather, it was a great passive skill.

Mana, Stamina, and Health aside, this ability also boosts the effect of Potions he drinks.

Therefore, after a short break, the two of them had, Nux's smile widened and he rushed towards Astaria.

‘Fucking monster.’

Astaria cursed inwardly. For him to recover from her bruises so quickly... not even half of her Mana is regenerated.

She only had one option, she has to run away.

It was embarrassing, but a battle was a battle.

She cannot lose.

She will never lose.

With a determined look on her face, Astaria gather the surrounding Mana and started running away.

“Heh.”

Nux laughed.

Then suddenly, his speed increased to the point Astaria felt he had disappeared.

While she was looking behind her, trying to find him, Nux appeared in front of her and stabbed his sword, aiming at Astaria’s heart.

She quickly parried his attack, the sword grazed her shoulder. Astaria quickly jumped back however, Nux followed behind her and with his increased speed, Astaria couldn’t react at all.

She could only widen her eyes in surprise, wondering a single thing,

‘What the hell is happening!?’

# Chapter 590 L Will Not Lose.

‘What the hell is happening!?’

Astaria’s eyes widened in surprise.

She didn’t know what was happening.

Nux’s speed had suddenly increased to a monstrous degree.

She was sure Nux wasn’t using Mana to do anything.

He doesn’t even know how to do that. Not even he can break the boundary between an Emperor and a King Stage.

He was using a strange technique.

A technique he has never shown before.

Astaria didn’t know how to react, she had already used up her Mana and unlike normal Emperors, who have to compensate their attack powers to increase their speed. Nux’s attack power was still the same as before.

Suddenly, Astaria narrowed her eyes.

She noticed that Nux’s attack speed was similar to what it was before.

It was as if... the recent increase in his speed was just her imagination.

It didn’t even last a second.

*\*Clang\* \*Clang\* \*Clang\**

However, the problem was still not solved.

She was again in the same position of being attacked by Nux’s two swords without any rest.

And this time, her position was disadvantageous because she was out of Mana.

Now she had to wait and continue to defend Nux's attack till the Mana Potion she had drank works and she regains some of her Mana.

Nux understood the problem as well.

Astaria was still defending all his attacks, if this continued, things would go back to the first stage again.

And he was not ready for another round of beating.

A wry smile appeared on Nux's face.

'After all this, I still can't defeat her.'

He glanced at Astaria who continued to defend his attacks and shook his head inwardly, then, a determined look appeared on his face and,

'I won't lose this battle.'

Then, Nux disappeared.

Astaria frowned.

She glanced towards his women again, however, this time, Nux was not there either.

She realized.

He was using his ultimate technique.

A wry smile on her face.

This was not a technique one could defend against.

And this bastard chose the absolutely worse time to use it since she didn't have most of her Mana to defend herself.

However, just as Nux now knew her technique, she knew how Nux's technique worked as well.

She quickly used whatever Mana she had to protect her vital points like heart and brain and then, she blinked.

Nux quickly appeared beside her, she tried to defend, but again, it was absolutely impossible to defend against someone who literally appeared right next to you, ready with his attack.

However, unlike how Astaria had expected, Nux didn't attack her heart or brain, he aimed behind her neck.

The sword touched her neck, the vibration was released.

Astaria's eyes widened and then, her vision blackened.

She could feel her entire body freezing up.

She was about to pass out.

*\*Pierce\**

With her remaining strength, she pierced her sword into the ground.

Seeing this scene, a smile appeared on Nux's pale face.

“Kkhaaawk!”

He coughed out blood.

“Heh... I... did not lose...”

Astaria commented weakly.

She had shifted all her weight on her sword, even if she passes out, she would not fall on the ground.

Seeing this, Nux just smiled wryly and...

He passed out.

A satisfied smile appeared on Astaria's face, knowing that Nux had passed out, she stopped resisting and closed her eyes.

She passed out as well.

The two warriors lost their consciousness, Nux's wives and the others quickly rushed towards them and seeing the scene where Nux had fallen on the ground, while Astaria was holding her sword, but had passed out as well, they didn't know what to say.

They walked towards them and quickly noticed small purple-colored spikes formed around them.

"He must have created these, hoping Astaria would fall and get attacked by these. It's quite vicious."

Ember commented.

Thyra had a smile on her face as well.

"She is on a whole different level though," Felberta commented as she glanced at Astaria.

"To remain standing even after passing out... I don't even know what to say..." Allura commented as well.

The other women nodded.

General Phorus, Iria, and Winston, on the other hand, couldn't help but glance at Nux, who was being carried by Lane, and couldn't help but be shocked.

This man fought against the strongest being in this world and the fight ended with a draw.

What does that mean?

It meant that he was now the strongest being in the world, standing right beside Astaria.

A man who is less than 50 years old is on par with the strongest human in the world and he is still not an Emperor yet.

Just what would happen when he actually grows and become an Emperor?

What type of absolute monster would he be?

The more they thought about it, the more they look forward to it.

“Anyways, let’s take them to their rooms.”

Evane gave an order.

Ember nodded, Lane had already picked Nux, she was the first one to rush forward and tend to him.

Felberta walked forward and after placing Astaria’s sword into her Storage ring, she carried Astaria as well.

“Heh, I can’t believe I am carrying the strongest human in the world in my arms.”

Astaria laughed.

The other women smiled as well.

“I could have never imagined it a few months ago.” Felberta chuckled.

“Hahaha~ That’s right, I couldn’t have imagined it either.” Skyla laughed out loud as well.

“...”

Lane didn’t say anything and just looked at Nux who was lying in her arms.

His face was still a little disfigured, however, it didn't matter to Lane at all. She just continued to look at his face and smiled inwardly.

“Tsk.” Thyra snorted as she glanced at Lane.

Lane, of course, completely ignored her.

Evane just sighed.

She needed to act like a queen since her subjects were still here.

She glanced at Phorus and the others and ordered,

“Alright, you all tend to whatever you have to tend to. We will take them to their room.”

“As you command, Queen Evane.”

The three of them walked away obediently, after her recent achievements, Evane's status has risen up to a degree where nobody dared to defy her orders in the Royal Palace.

Her influence has already far surpassed Ricardus.

She now held absolute power in the Royal Palace.

# Chapter 591 As Expected Of My Daughter.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

“Enter.”

The order was heard, the servant walked in, there, he saw two incredibly beautiful women sitting on the bed, the one who looked younger had placed her head on the older one’s lap. A normal person would think that these two women were sisters, however, the servant knew that these two were mother and daughter.

The servant had heard about this daughter before, according to what he knew, this woman should currently be in the Skyfall Kingdom, but for some odd reason, she is back in the Skadi Kingdom and no one has any sort of problem with it.

What surprised the servant the most was that he couldn’t sense any cultivation from this girl, it was the same before she was sent to the Skyfall Kingdom, however, the servant knew that it was not the same.

Previously, she didn’t have any cultivation, however, now, the reason he couldn’t sense her cultivation was that she was too strong.

A King Stage Cultivator.

She cultivated and became a King Stage Cultivator from a mere mortal in a matter of few years!

A monstrous talent.

No, even the word monstrous was not enough to explain it.

It was just straight-up impossible.

It was unreal.

Especially when this girl was called a 'Cursed Child' who couldn't cultivate.

"Report."

While the servant was observing the two women, Riona spoke in a cold tone.

The servant quickly realized that he was lost in his thought and came out of his reverie.

"I-I apologize, Lady Riona." He apologized.

"Report."

Riona repeated herself.

The servant flinched in fear.

She made Riona repeat herself.

He had made two mistakes on the same day.

He already started sweating, however, in fear of not making another mistake that might very well be his last, the servant quickly recollected himself and his expression turned serious.

"Sir Deldon ordered me to give this to you."

The Servant spoke as he extended his hands that carried an envelope.

Hearing the name Deldon, the girl, who was resting on her mother's lap stood up and grabbed the letter.

"You can leave."

She ordered.

The servant glanced at Riona, seeking her permission, but for some reason, Riona's expression turned even colder,

“She ordered you to leave.”

She spoke.

The servant's body flinched again,

“Y-Yes, as you command, L-Lady A-Amaya.”

The servant quickly walked away.

“Demote him.”

After the servant left, Amaya spoke while she opened the envelope.

“You don't have to tell me that.”

Riona nodded and walked towards Amaya.

Amaya opened the letter.

It was the letter sent by Herms Lizander to Amletus Skadi.

Just like Amaya predicted, these two were communicating with each other, that was the reason why she stayed here in the first place, even though Nux was lying on the bed, unconscious.

Of course, the servants serving Amletus showed some resistance at first and refused to cooperate even after seeing Riona and Eardwolf, however, after seeing Amletus's severed head, their resistance quickly faded away and they accepted the Slave Seal.

Eardwolf, Riona, Amaya, and Amletus's servants, all of them acted as if nothing had happened and after waiting for 2 days,

They finally got this letter.

“Read it.”

Riona spoke.

Amaya nodded.

This letter was different than normal, it wasn't 'addressed' to anyone or 'sent' by anyone, it didn't even look like a letter, this was probably done to avoid leaving any evidence.

Anyways, Amaya just shrugged and ignored all these details, methods like these were pretty common, and to be honest, it was just a formality, the two emperors exchanging these letters didn't fear anyone, they didn't care, that is also the reason why they didn't use any codes either. They were just too lazy.

“Phase one failed, those Skyfall Bastards interfered with the war, killing four of my King Stage Cultivators and around 18,000 soldiers. Well, those 18,000 are replaceable, but the King Stage is the problem.

If this goes on, Alcimus would not take action.

I need your help, sent some of your King Stage Cultivators. 7 will do. I will arrange a few and get up to 7 King Stage Cultivators as well.

A 14v10 will be doable.

I think the Skyfall Kingdom bastards would leave the moment they feel threatened, however, there is another matter I am concerned about.

The Woods sent a search party into the Forbidden Region.

I have already dealt with them.

However, this is not a good news, I believe that Alcimus is already suspicious of our actions.

We can't give him more time, so sent your reply and reinforcements as soon as possible.

Since the Skyfall Kingdom interfered first, you don't need a reason to do it anymore.

We need to start Phase two as soon as possible. We cannot delay it any longer.

I am expecting your reply soon.”

Amaya read out the entire letter.

“What is this ‘Phase Two’ he is talking about?” Riona narrowed her eyes and questioned.

“It might be related to the War where the Emperors take part. He wants Alcimus to act, I think what we suspect is true.

He is planning to get rid of Alcimus using the Treaty and I believe they plan to attack Astaria after that.

Of course, we still can't be sure.

It would have been great if that idiot cooperated a little.”

Amaya snorted as she recalled how tightlipped Amletus was.

Riona sighed as well.

“Anyways, we need to report this to Nux soon. Should we visit the Skyfall Kingdom? From what I know, he should wake up tomorrow.” Riona spoke.

Hearing that, Amaya narrowed her eyes, “You seem eager to meet him.”

“Oh c'moon.”

Riona cried. She knew what this crazy girl was thinking about.

‘She is a gone case.’ Riona thought inwardly.

“Whatever.” Amaya snorted.

“So? Are we going?”

“We have to.” Amaya nodded with a serious look on her face.

“What about Alcimus?” Riona questioned.

“Well, he should be making his move soon.”

A small smile appeared on Amaya’s face.

Seeing that smile, a proud look appeared on Riona’s face.

Her daughter was playing a game of chess with the strongest beings in the world acting as its pieces.

‘Heh, as expected of my daughter.’

# Chapter 592 I'll Defeat You The Next Time We Spar.

“Huh?”

Lane frowned.

“What happened?”

Thyra questioned.

“He moved.”

Lane spoke as she pointed at Nux.

Thyra frowned. She walked towards Nux's bed.

The others walked here as well.

Compared to the last time Nux had passed out, all the women were a lot calmer, however, excluding Amaya, all of them were still present in the room.

Nux's eyelids moved again.

The women frowned and soon, Nux opened his eyes.

“You are awake,” Lane spoke with a smile on her face.

Nux smiled as well.

“What happened? It has only been 2 days, you woke up a day earlier.”  
Ember questioned.

“Hmm?” Nux frowned as well.

“And this time, Astaria needed an entire day to wake up.” Thyra pointed out.

“I did increase my defense stat, is it perhaps related to that?” Nux suggested.

“That might be the case.” Felberta nodded.

The [Blink Fault] description only talked about the backlash one faces after using. It didn't tell anything about how it worked or anything like that. So increased defense stat might have made some changes.

“What if you increase it even further? You might reach a state where you won't pass out at all.”

Thyra suggested.

A wry smile appeared on Nux's face,

“I cannot do that.”

“You already spent all the Blank Points you had.”

Thyra realized. Nux nodded in agreement.

“Anyways, Amaya will arrive here within a few hours.

We also received the Herms letter that he sent to Amletus after killing the search team. It can be used as a proof.” Ember spoke.

“Did we find anything useful in the letter?”

Nux questioned.

Ember shook her head, “We did not. It only confirmed most of our guesses, we didn't find any new information.”

“Rather than something useful, we only got a new deadline,” Felberta commented.

“Huh?” Nux frowned.

“The letter asked for a reply as soon as possible, it was not a problem before, however, we realized that we cannot write a reply because our handwriting is different from Amletus’s,” Felberta explained.

“Huh? Just get anyone to copy the writing.”

“We do not have any documents with Amletus’s writing on it. He destroyed all of them after he became an Emperor.”

“...”

Nux turned silent.

“Well, it’s not like it’s a problem. Alcimus is ready.”

Evane joined the conversation as well.

“Is he now?” Nux smiled.

“Yes, we should get an announcement soon.” Suddenly, Astaria walked into the room and spoke.

“Oh? You are here.” Seeing her, a smile appeared on Nux’s face.

“You did well.” Astaria praised.

“I heard you were unconscious for a whole day.” Nux teased.

“I was.” Astaria didn’t deny.

“It seems like training you was worth it.”

“I still haven’t defeated you yet,” Nux replied.

“You did well enough already, you forced me to use my trump card.”

“Well, I had to use mine as well.”

“ ... ”

Astaria didn't say anything but narrowed her eyes.

Seeing Nux acting like this...

It... angered her.

And this time, it was not in the usual joking manner, she was actually angry. Or rather... she was frustrated.

He was just a little boy whose bones were broken just because she used her Aura to test him a little and now, here he was, fighting her toe to toe and ending the fight with a draw. She even passed out after the fight ended.

This was... frustrating...

She felt weak.

A feeling she has never felt before.

Of course, she was happy that her student was getting stronger, but on the other hand, she felt annoyed as well.

It was a strange mixture of different feelings.

And her annoyance only increased when she sees Nux talking about how he had to use his trump card 'just like her.'

The two of them were not the same.

He was a King Stage Cultivator.

She was an Emperor.

They were different.

Astaria continued to observe Nux, and the man continued to look into her eyes, smiling like he usually does.

Astaria, however, felt something different.

She felt as if Nux already knew what she was thinking but was still smiling at her. It was as if he was mocking her way of thinking.

‘You being an Emperor doesn’t matter, I still drew against you.’

Astaria felt like this was what he was trying to say.

And more she thought about it, the more frustrated she got but at the same time, she also realized something.

Nux was right, the cultivation stage doesn’t matter.

Nux fought her to a draw.

He was now as strong as her.

He was not ‘just a King Stage Cultivator.’ He was her rival. A man standing right next to her. A man she could go all out against without worrying and a man, who might overtake her someday if she is not careful.

Astaria clenched her fists and then, a smile appeared on her face.

“You still failed to defeat me though.”

She commented.

“Heh, I’ll defeat you the next time we spar.”

“You said the same thing before and see the result, you are lying on the bed, while I am standing here.” Astaria chuckled.

“Oh trust me, next time, both of us would be lying on the same bed,

Together.”

Nux replied with a playful smile on his face.

“Y-Y-You!”

Astaria stuttered and her cheeks turned a little red.

‘T-This bastard!’

She cursed in her head.

This bastard ruined the serious atmosphere they had created with that stupid joke of his.

Astaria couldn’t help but curse him more and more.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\* \*Knock\*

Suddenly, the group heard a knock.

“Who is it?” Nux questioned.

“Lord Nux, I have a letter for Queen Evane.”

Everyone knew where to find Queen Evane.

“Enter.”

Evane ordered as she quickly fixed her expression.

The servant walked in, he quickly passed the letter to Evane and stood still.

“You can leave.”

Evane ordered.

The servant bowed and left.

Evane opened the letter and after reading it for a moment,

She turned towards others,

“It is from the Woods Dynasty.

They are calling for the Emperors' Meet.”

# Chapter 593 We Have To Go To The Emperors' Meet

A man with wrinkles on his face was sitting in a cross-legged position inside what looked like a cave, he looked in his 50s, however, even after that, his build was muscular and the energy radiating from this man was fearsome. He had black-white hair, brown eyes, thin eyebrows, and an overall well-structured face. Even though he looked old, he still looked quite handsome.

\*Rustle\* \*Rustle\* \*Rustle\*

“Huh?”

The man opened his eyes and frowned. He glanced outside the cave and his frown deepened,

“It is still afternoon, no beast should come near this area at this time. Humans? Is it another search party?”

The man’s face turned grim.

This was a problem.

He had just eradicated a Search Party sent by the Woods a few days ago, for another party to be here again, it was definitely not a good sign.

‘Did they realize that the one who killed the search party was not the beast but me? Did I not completely eradicate the party?’

The man thought inwardly, soon, however, he shook his head, denying his own reasoning.

‘This is not possible, I did not detect anyone. There is no way they would send someone who can escape from my detection here. But then why is

another search party here?’

The man started thinking again.

\*Rustle\* \*Rustle\* \*Rustle\*

Soon, however, he heard the voice again,

‘Whatever. I just need to kill all of them again.’

A cold glint shone in the man’s eyes, he quickly walked out of his cave and rushed to the direction he heard the sound from.

Rather than a Search Party consisting of around 100 people like he expected, the man only found a single man walking towards his cave. The man wore green clothes that would help him avoid many beasts on his way here, there was a particular insignia embedded on the man’s clothes, an insignia that the old man realized very well.

The old man appeared in front of the man.

The man was surprised at first, however, soon, he recollected himself and knelt.

“Lord Herms.”

The man greeted.

The old man, or Herms Lizander nodded and then questioned,

“Why are you here?”

“We received a letter from the Woods Dynasty 2 days ago. The King wants you to see the letter.” The man did not waste any time and quickly passed the letter to Herms.

Herms started reading the letter and after he was done reading, a solemn look appeared on his face,

“An Emperors’ Meet? Right now?”

A frown appeared on his face. Soon, however, his face turned expressionless again and he turned toward the servant,

“You can leave now.”

The servant nodded and walked away.

After the servant was out of sight, Herms disappeared as well.

He was rushing towards the Royal Palace.

...

A few hours later, inside the Royal Palace of the Solid Earth Kingdom, Herms walked into a particular room where a black-haired man was cultivating.

Sensing his presence, the man opened his eyes.

Just like Herms, this man had Black colored hair, however, his eye color was different from Herms, he had green-colored eyes, a thin nose, and an attractive face.

“Father, I have been expecting you.”

The man spoke with a smile on his face. He was Herms son, Roone Lizander.

Herms nodded and then questioned,

“What’s with this Emperors’ Meet? What happened?”

Roone, however, shook his head, “I do not know, it seems that the Woods are suspicious of us.”

Herms frowned.

Roone's smile then widened as he spoke,

“Phase one has failed father, I believe it is now time to directly start Phase two. We should not waste any more time.”

He looked rather delighted when he said those words.

“Silence.”

Herms raised his voice.

“Do not be impatient, not everything is ruined yet. Everything seed needs time to sprout, give it some time.

For now, ignore this letter, we will delay it for as long as it is possible, I'll personally meet Amletus and discuss our next move.”

Herms spoke.

“We cannot do that, father.”

Roone, however, shook his head.

“What do you mean?”

“Both the Skadi Kingdom and the Skyfall Kingdom have agreed to the meeting, according to the rules, if 3 out of 4 Nations agree to the Emperors' Meet, the 4th Nation has to agree to it as well and have to give out their reply within 2 days.

I was forced to agree to the Meeting as well.”

Saying all that, a letter appeared on Roone's hands and he passed it to Herms,

“The Meet's date has already been decided, it is exactly a week later.”

Herms took the letter and his face turned solemn.

“Not every seed sprouts, father. It is pointless to plan any further.”

“Why did that Amletus bastard agree?” Herms questioned.

“I do not know, maybe he decided to betray us? I expected nothing less from a coward like him though. Since he saw that the First Phase has failed, he thought that it would be a tough fight so decided to act ignorant and stay out of it.”

Roone just shrugged.

“He cannot do that.”

Herms, however, shook his head.

“C’mon father, are you really putting your trust in a coward like him?”  
Roone couldn’t help but question.

“I trust him because he is a coward. No matter what happens, he won’t dare to betray us. He knows what would happen if he does.

Something is wrong here.”

Herms replied.

“Father.”

Suddenly, Roone called.

Herms glanced at his son and Roone continued,

“It doesn’t matter. Whatever that idiot is thinking, I do not care, let’s just go and hear what that Alcimus idiot has to say. If it is something manageable, we will continue with Phase one, if he makes it impossible to do so, then we will shift to Phase two, it is as simple as that.

We do not have to overcomplicate anything.

Remember, we are the stronger ones here.”

Herms narrowed his eyes and after thinking for a while, he ordered,

“Alright.”

Roone smiled.

“However,” Herms suddenly pointed at Roone and ordered,

“You are not going with me.”

“Why?”

“You already know it.

You are my trump card. There is no way I would allow you to reveal yourself so quickly.”

# Chapter 594 Wait! L-Leander?

Inside a room, Alcimus and Ellinger sat with solemn looks on their faces. There were a few servants around them as well, however, all those servants had lowered their heads and didn't dare to say a single word.

“It is about time.”

Ellinger spoke.

“...”

Alcimus didn't say anything and just nodded.

The two of them didn't have to wait for long, the doors of the room opened and a beautiful woman walked in.

The woman had dark brown hair, sword-like eyebrows, a thin nose and a beautiful face, however, even though she was a rare beauty, no one inside the room dared to look at her face for more than an appropriate time. Heck, the weak-willed wouldn't even dare to look at her for even a second, that was just how scary the aura she unconsciously released was.

“Your face is still as scary as always, Astaria.”

Alcimus commented.

Astaria glanced at Alcimus and narrowed her eyes,

“Of course, I am not saying you are ugly or something like that, I am not blind, you are definitely one of the most beautiful women I know, though I will say, that strict expression of yours makes you look quite scary.”

Alcimus laughed.

“Is that so?”

A smile appeared on Astaria's face.

Seeing that smile, Alcimus was taken aback.

Was this normal Astaria?

He wondered in his head.

If it was before, Astaria would have simply ignored him and would have walked towards her chair.

'Is it because we are allies now?'

Alcimus wondered inwardly.

He had received a letter from Astaria before the meeting.

'The Skadi's and Solid Earth Kingdom are allies, if things go out of proportion, then just like I promised, I would deal with Amletus, however, you would have to deal with Herms yourself.'

'Heh, being allies with the strongest human in the world definitely feels different.'

Alcimus thought inwardly.

While he was thinking all this, Astaria walked towards her seat and sat down.

Alcimus's eyes then finally fell on the masked man who was following Astaria and he commented,

"I expected to see Queen Evane today."

"She is a little busy with a few things."

Astaria replied.

"Ah, I understand."

Alcimus nodded, however, inwardly, he couldn't help but frown,

'Busy? What could be more important than a meeting where the strongest beings in the world meet each other?'

Of course, he didn't voice these thoughts and brought his attention back to the man who was following Astaria.

The man had black colored hair and very rare golden eyes that looked as if they had some sort of hypnotic magic inside them. Even though the man's face was not completely visible and half of the part from the nose to the neck was covered with the mask, Alcimus could tell from just his eyes and eyebrows that this man was handsome and young.

What was even more surprising was that this man was a King Stage Cultivator!

A young King Stage Cultivator!

Alcimus couldn't hold back his curiosity and questioned,

"Who could this man be?"

"He is my student, Nux Leander," Astaria replied with a small smile on her face.

"Your student?" Alcimus's expression changed.

The student of the strongest human in the world.

"Wait! L-Leander?"

Ellinger, who stayed silent till now couldn't help but react.

Alcimus frowned at this behavior, however, as he heard the name 'Leander' again, he quickly recalled something as well,

"2 of the nine King Stage Cultivators that the Skyfall Kingdom sent as reinforcement had the last name Leander as well..."

Are they and your student perhaps connected to each other?”

Alcimus questioned.

“Oh?”

An interested smile appeared on Astaria’s face as she turned towards this student of hers.

“It seems your name is quite popular, boy.”

“What can I do, they are just that good. People can’t help but remember the impact they leave around.”

Nux shrugged as well.

Then, he turned towards Alcimus and replied,

“Yes, they are my wives.

All 9 of them.”

“WHAT!?”

Alcimus and Ellinger couldn’t control themselves and stood up with shocked looks on their faces.

Nux just smiled.

“N-N-Nine wives?”

Ellinger couldn’t help but stutter.

Nux frowned, “What happened? I heard Dynast Ellinger has around 20 wives as well, doesn’t he? Why are you acting so surprised?”

“...”

Ellinger didn’t know how to reply.

'20 wives my ass! Even 1000 wives would compare to the 9 you have! All your wives are King Stage Cultivators! How in the hell did you even find them!'

He couldn't help but shout in his head.

If it wasn't for people around them, he would have rushed towards this man and would have placed his head on the ground to beg for 'the way'. The way to woo so many beautiful women.

He has seen those women before, and though they wore masks, he could still tell that all of them were exceptional beauties, especially the woman named Amaya Leander, he had never seen a woman as beautiful as her.

And Beauty was not the only thing.

Ellinger had heard this from the soldiers.

Those 9 women alone took out most of the Solid Earth Soldiers, all the soldiers only helped with the clean-ups.

No normal King Stage Cultivators could do something like that.

Those women were all monsters.

And the man who convinced those monstrous women to be his wives...

Ellinger couldn't help but think how fearsome this man could be.

Let alone Ellinger, even Alcimus was looking at Nux with a surprised expression on his face.

"Hoh? The atmosphere here seems quite lively."

Suddenly, everyone present in the room heard a voice.

They all turned around and saw an old man walking in.

He was Herms Lizander, he was followed by a normal King Stage servant and quickly walked towards his chair.

“Tsk, I purposefully came a few minutes later to act like a main character, but I think Amletus would be taking that role.

I can’t believe he is so late.”

Herms shook his head and sighed, he then turned towards Alcimus and smiled,

“So Alcimus? I heard my Kingdom gave quite a trouble to your dynasty? Don’t worry though, I already gave an earful to that silly child.

Hahaha~ He was just playing around because he was a little bored.

He didn’t think he would cause you so much trouble just by playing around, I apologize on his behalf.”

# Chapter 595 Polite Greetings.

“So Alcius? I heard my Kingdom gave quite a trouble to your dynasty? Don't worry though, I already gave an earful to that silly child.

Hahaha~ He was just playing around because he was a little bored.

He didn't think he would cause you so much trouble just by playing around, I apologize on his behalf.”

Herms spoke with a small smile on his face.

Alcius narrowed his eyes.

Although Herms was apologizing, even a child could tell that he was being sarcastic.

Rather than apologizing, he was making fun of Alcius, saying that his child, the King of the Solid Earth Kingdom made trouble for the Woods Dynasty just by playing around.

He was indirectly calling the Woods Dynasty weak.

“Mhm, I apologize as well, we shouldn't have taken this little prank of yours so seriously, you lost 4 King Stage Cultivators, saddening indeed.”

Alcius replied with a small smile on his face.

“That's true, you guys took it this little prank so seriously that you even begged the Skyfall Kingdom to help you. That was indeed something I did not expect, but I guess the situation did get a little desperate for you.”

Herms replied.

The two old men were smiling at each other, however, the words they spoke were filled with thorns.

Nux couldn't help but scrunch his nose.

The scene was quite disgusting to see.

He then glanced at Astaria, the woman seemed to be enjoying this little war, it looked like she was only missing popcorn and a soda, if she had that, she would simply sit back on her seat, seeing this, Nux sighed and shook his head.

“Hmmm? Why am I getting a feeling that you are salty about the Skyfall Kingdom helping us?” Alcimus frowned.

“I mean, all of us know the Solid Earth Kingdom and the Skadi's are quite close. They didn't help you? Is there some sort of problem between the two of you?”

Alcimus questioned.

“Of course not. They knew we don't need help for something little like that, that's why they didn't make a move.”

Herms just smiled.

“Oh? It didn't look like that. From what I heard, the soldiers you sent ran away quite desperately.”

Alcimus smiled.

And when he saw the frown that had appeared on Herms's face, his smile widened.

He was definitely winning this battle,

“Well, what can I do? Our men just didn't expect your soldiers to be so strong, of course, it was only after a few days passed by did we realize that we were indeed correct.

It was not your soldiers that were strong, they were weak as usual, your kingdom just begged for help.”

Herms replied and Alcius narrowed his eyes.

His expression was now unsightly, however, he quickly controlled his emotions,

“It was no-”

However, before Alcius could complete his sentence, the doors of the room opened again and Riona and Eardwolf walked in.

Seeing them walking into the room, Alcius and Herms, both frowned and turned toward Riona,

“Why is Amletus not here?”

The two of them completely ignored Eardwolf, but it wasn't their fault either. The way Riona carried herself far exceeded Eardwolf, any sane person would think she was the actual reader there.

Of course, the two Emperors knew that it wasn't actually the case and the real King was Eardwolf, but honestly, they couldn't care less about foolish things like this.

Eardwolf knew that, therefore, he didn't react.

Not that he could have reacted anyway.

“Lord Amletus is sick. He cannot come.”

Riona walked into the room, sat on Amletus's seat, and replied calmly.

“You know the consequences of not attending the Emperor's Meet, correct?”

“The Skadi Kingdom will pay the price,” Riona replied.

At the same time, she glanced at Herms.

The old man frowned, Riona suddenly closed her eyes, then she glanced at Alcimus.

Herms understood.

An Emperor not attending the Emperors' Meet, the price a Nation has to pay for rejecting to join the Emperors' meet was very heavy, even the 4 Largest Nations couldn't afford it without seeing a decent fall in their treasury.

In truth, the treasury was the least of their problem.

The matters with Emperors involved are usually hidden behind many layers.

If an Emperor does not join the Emperors' Meet, the other Nations would automatically believe that the Emperor has passed away and now that Nation does not have a protector.

It could be catastrophic for any nation.

Therefore, an Emperor not joining the Emperors' Meet has never happened before.

Herms already realized that Amletus was acting strangely, he hadn't even replied to the letter he sent him before.

He already had some sort of inkling, however, with Riona's confirmation, he was now sure.

Amletus was killed.

And the culprit was this Alcimus bastard.

Of course, it was a grave offense, however, proving it was another task.

With their protector gone, the Skadis have lost their value.

Although Riona, the Skadi's representative was sitting here, this meeting was now between the 3 Nations only.

There is a high chance that the Skyfall Kingdom and the Woods Dynasty are allies.

Without Skadi, the Solid Earth Kingdom is left alone.

There is no way Herms can prove that Alcimus killed Amletus when the judges are not on his side.

Herms's expression turned solemn.

He glanced at both Alcimus and Astaria.

Astaria still looked as unbothered as ever, Alcimus on the other hand, had a frown on his face as well.

'Heh, to think he would continue this little act even now.'

Herms's expression turned cold.

Seeing the change in his expression, Riona smiled inwardly.

'It is done.'

She did what she was here for.

Now all she has to do is protect herself.

Nux smiled, seeing him, Astaria placed her hands on the table and spoke,

"Alright, since everyone is here, let us not waste any more time and start the 104th Emperors' Meet."

The others turned serious as well.

Astaria then turned towards Alcimus and questioned,

“Alcimus Woods, you were the one who is hosting this Meet, I would let you take the initiative.”

Astaria’s signal was clear,

Start with whatever you have prepared.

Alcimus’s expression changed as he nodded and then glanced at Herms.

# Chapter 596 You Dare!?

“Herms Lizander has broken the Peace Treaty.”

Alcimus glanced at Herms and spoke.

Herms’s expression changed. He quickly turned his head towards Astaria to see her reaction and noticed that woman had narrowed her eyes in doubt,

“What do you mean?”

Astaria questioned.

“In the recent war between the Solid Earth Kingdom and the Woods Dynasty, Herms broke the treaty as he actively took part in it.”

“Tha-”

Herms was about to answer, however, before he could, Astaria questioned back,

“What the hell are you talking about? My people themselves took part in the war. Do you think anyone would have survived if an Emperor made a move himself?”

Hearing this question, Herms’s expression changed again.

‘Weren’t those two allies? Why is she going after him?’

He then turned towards Alcimus to see his reaction, however, seeing him not reacting much, he realized that it might be true.

The Woods and the Skyfall are not allies.

A ray of hope rose up in Herms’s eyes.

“I know that of course. If he actually participated himself, the war wouldn't last this long and we would all know about it, however, that's where he played smart.”

“Alcimus.”

Suddenly, Astaria called out.

“Stop fooling around. The Allegations you are talking about are very serious and you know it as well. It is not something you can joke about. Stop going around in circles and say what you want to say.”

Astaria spoke with a serious look on her face.

“Do you remember the 4 Generals that the reinforcements you sent killed?”

“Yes, I did hear that.”

Astaria nodded.

Alcimus then waved his hand and the Heads of those 4 Generals appeared on the ground.

“The 4 of them don't even belong to the Solid Earth Kingdom. I investigated and found out that these 3 are from 3 different clans while this man is a part of an Adventurers Party. We already know, people like them never involve themselves with the Kingdom's affairs.

Herms used his influence to recruit them and was making use of them.”

Alcimus explained and this time, Astaria turned towards Herms.

She wasn't going to keep defending him again and again.

She was not on Herms's side after all.

“Do you have anything to say about this?” Astaria questioned.

“This is bullshit.” Herms's stance was clear.

“Making up things like these is simple, yes, they were part of the Clans and a Party, so what? They came to my child and seeing their strength, he recruited them. The Treaty never stopped the Kingdoms from recruiting people.”

Herms shrugged.

“That is true. You need more solid proof to prove your statement, Alcimus.”

Astaria nodded.

“This is useless, I can also kill a Clan Member and then say he was recruited by you into the Skyfall Kingdom and that you broke the treaty, all I have to do is threaten the clan leader. It is very simple for us, and you know it as well.”

Herms replied.

His point was clear.

“...”

Astaria didn't say anything either.

Herms words made sense.

Seeing her reaction, a smile appeared on Herms's face, he knew it, he had won this battle, now no matter what Alcimus did, converting it into definite proof without papers would be useless, and the best part was,

He never signed any paper when he recruited those idiots, overwhelming all of them with his Aura was enough.

Alcimus would never be able to get proof. Herms glanced at Alcimus to see his expression, however, a frown appeared on his face when he saw him sitting with a smile on his face.

“Heh. I knew you would make all this bullshit up.”

Alcimus commented.

“What are you talking about?”

Herms’s expression turned cold.

“Nothing, I am just saying that I was already prepared for it.”

“What do you mean?”

\*Clap\* \*Clap\*

With a smile on his face, Alcimus clapped two times, then a man walked into the room.

The man who Herms knew very well.

“I am sure you recognize him, right?”

Alcimus questioned.

“What are you doing here?”

Herms ignored the questioned and turned towards the man. Trying to intimidate him with his aura, however, before his aura could affect the man, Astaria’s Aura overwhelmed Herms and his aura was dispersed.

“This is not a place you can play around, Herms.”

Astaria spoke with a cold look on her face.

Herms was taken aback.

This woman was stronger compared to the last time he saw her.

He narrowed his eyes.

“Now let me introduce this man.”

Herms didn't waste this opportunity.

“He is General Armando, the General of the Solid Earth Kingdom. Let's hear what he has to say, shall we?”

Alcimus nodded at Armando, the General nodded back, and then, he started,

“What Lord Alcimus said was true. Lord Herms indeed...”

He started stating everything Herms did, which was clearly breaking the treaty, the more he heard, the more Herms's expression distorted. He glanced at Astaria and her expression was turning colder with every passing moment as well.

The situation was not good, it was actually the worse.

“He als-”

“Stop it!”

Armando wanted to continue, however, Herms ordered.

“He is being threatened. Alcimus must be threatening him.”

He spoke. Then he glanced at Armando and narrowed his eyes,

“Right, Armando?”

There was a little threat hidden here.

Armando's legs turned weak, however, soon, he glanced at Nux, and recalling the pain of the Slave Seal, he quickly controlled himself.

He cannot mess up here.

Even if he has to die.

Anything was better than that hellish pain.

Death was just a release from that hell.

“I am standing in front of 3 Emperors, I am smart enough to know that no one can threaten me here. What I am saying is absolute truth and Lord Herms, you know it as well.”

Armando, though scared, still replied to Herms without holding back.

“You dare!?”

This time, Herms failed to hold himself back, he quickly rushed towards Armando, but before he could do anything, Alcimus appeared in front of Armando and defended him.

“Lady Astaria, do you need any more proves?”

# Chapter 597 Did You Really Think A Weakling Like You Could Defeat Me?

“Lady Astaria, do you need any more proves?”

Alcimus questioned with a smile on his face as he blocked Herms’s attack.

“For him to act so irrationally, things must have gone out of his expectation. It is now as clear as day, he broke the treat-”

Before Alcimus could complete his sentence, Herms shouted,

“Of course, things have gone out of my expectation! I never thought you would plan everything so thoroughly, I never thought Armando, the General I trusted would betray me and my Kingdom like this and lie in front of everyone!”

Herms then turned towards Astaria and,

“Astaria! This bastard is lying! He had forged everything on his, it must be his way of taking revenge against my Kingdom because his Army couldn’t do anything agai-”

Before Herms could complete, He was sent flying.

\*Bam\*

“Khhoocckhh!”

His body clashed with the wall, the wall broke and Herms coughed out blood.

Alcimus punched him out of nowhere, he was unable to use Mana to defend himself.

That's not it, Alcimus also used his own Mana instead of surrounding Mana so as to not alert Herms, therefore, the punch was stronger than normal.

Herms was definitely hurt.

\*Cough\* \*Cough\*

Alcimus coughed again, he removed the debris covering his body and glared at Alcimus with an angry look on his face.

“You dare attack me sneakily!?”

However, instead of replying, Alcimus disappeared and appeared near Herms and kicked his face.

This time, however, Herms was prepared, he quickly used his Mana to defend, however, Alcimus's attack was still much more impactful.

His body was sent flying away.

However, Herms quickly recollected himself and stood up.

He understood what Alcimus wanted.

Alcimus appeared in front of him again and punched, he defended the attack and then aimed at Alcimus's face.

Alcimus dodged and then kicked Herms away.

“Heeh? He is stronger compared to the last time I met him.”

Astaria, who was watching the fight with an interested look on his face commented.

“Alcimus?” Nux, who was standing beside her questioned.

“Mhm.”

Nux couldn't help but frown.

“I don't see much difference.”

[Name: Alcimus Skadi.]

[Age: 458]

[Mana Cultivation: Emperor.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Race: Human]

[Occupation: Protector of the Woods Dynasty.]

[Talent: Exceptional]

[LVL: 70]

...

[Name: Herms Lysander.]

[Age: 489]

[Mana Cultivation: Emperor.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Race: Human]

[Occupation: Protector of the Solid Earth Kingdom.]

[Talent: Exceptional]

[LVL: 70]

...

Nux used [Eye of Discerning] on both men who were currently fighting each other, and just like what happened with Astaria, he failed to see anything useful.

All he could see was that both of them were Level 70, which was quite strange because Astaria, the strongest human was also Level 70.

Why is she the strongest human then?

Nux wondered inwardly.

And as if she heard what he was thinking, Astaria started explaining.

“When one becomes an Emperor, his ability is judged by how great his control over Mana is. When it comes to physical abilities, all of us emperors are pretty much the same, it is the control over Mana that makes us different from each other.

Alcimus’s control over his Mana has gotten better compared to the last time I saw him, therefore, he is a lot stronger than before now.”

“Does that mean Herms will lose?”

Nux questioned.

For some reason, he felt that things wouldn’t be this simple.

And from the looks of it, Astaria had the same thought as well,

“Of course not.”

She replied.

Nux narrowed his eyes, wanting further explanation.

“Herms isn’t called the second strongest human without a reason, keep in mind, before me, he was the one who held the title of the strongest human.

Alcimus may be strong enough to fight him for now, but that is only because he was the one who dealt the first blow sneakily.

Of course, the current situation may look advantageous for Alcimus, but,”

Suddenly, Astaria turned silent.

Nux frowned and Astaria pointed towards the battlefield.

Nux turned around and quickly noticed that Herms had grabbed Alcimus’s hand,

“Did you really think a weakling like you could defeat me?”

“We won’t know until we try.”

Alcimus used force to free his hand and then jumped back.

An evil smile appeared on Herms’s bloody face,

“Don’t fool yourself, Alcimus. We already know who is stronger between the two of us. You wouldn’t have used the sneak attack if you didn’t know.”

“Shut your trap.”

Alcimus didn’t care about anything and rushed towards Herms.

He was called the third strongest human, a glorified title, however, in truth, he was the second weakest among the 4 Emperors.

This was shameful.

And today, Alcimus was planning to wash this shame with Herms’s blood.

His sword appeared in his hand, he quickly appeared in front of Herms, however, soon, a Great Sword appeared in Herms’s hand and he defended the attack.

“Hah~ A coward like you has gained some confidence. Good.”

Herms laughed, then, his smile widened as he spoke with a crazy look on his face.

“Now let me step on that confidence of yours and destroy it.”

He then rushed towards Alcimus and attacked.

Alcimus blocked, however, anyone could see that he was having trouble defending against Herms’s attack.

Herms’s base strength was higher than all the emperors, even Astaria.

When he used Mana to raise this strength to the next level, he became even stronger.

Defending against his attacks was not simple, especially when he attacks continuously like a crazy man.

Herms’s fighting style was rough, which, many wouldn’t believe after seeing his refined attack.

It is as if his personality changes the moment he starts fighting, of course, this side of him was seen very rarely.

\*Clang\* \*Clang\* \*Clang\*

“Hahaha~ how long are you going to keep defending?”

Herms laughed.

Alcimus’s face turned solemn, however, suddenly, a small smile appeared on his face.

\*Whoosh\*

An arrow aimed at Herms’s shoulder, the man only managed to reflect it when it was just about to hit him.

Herms’s expression changed.

He turned towards the direction the arrow came from and soon, his expression changed.

He was surrounded.

# **Volume 7**

# Chapter 598 L, Herms Lysander, Declare War.

Herms looked around him with a cautious look on his face.

The people who surrounded him were not really strong, there were only 3 King Stage Cultivators, 18 Expert Stage Cultivators, and he didn't really care about the others. Of course, he could also sense around 20 or so archers hiding in the corner.

If it was a normal situation, Herms could have simply annihilated all these bastards.

However, right now, Alcimus was standing in front of him.

With him and more than 200 Soldiers that had surrounded him, winning this fight was next to impossible.

Even if he was an Emperor, he was not a god.

The odds were not in his favor at all.

Alcimus was using numbers to make up for the lack of his powers.

Herms's expression turned solemn.

He then glanced at Astaria and seeing that she is still sitting on her seat, he knew that she had no intention of helping.

He could understand her reasoning as well, him and Alcimus fighting against each other is beneficial for her, it makes no sense for her to put her nose into their business.

Riona and Eardwolf were the same, well, it was not like they could actually do anything about this situation, they had already stepped back when he and

Alcimus started fighting.

Herm's glanced back at Alcimus.

“Do you really want to do this?”

“Heh. What? Scared?” Alcimus laughed.

Herm's expression turned solemn,

“You know how this would end up right? I can easily escape from here, then, it will be a war.”

Herm's threatened, then without giving Alcimus any time, he continued,

“And you, Astaria, it may look like you would simply be able to reap the rewards later, do you really think this war wouldn't affect you?

Aren't you forgetting something?”

Herm's questioned.

Astaria narrowed her eyes.

“The Mythical Creature. It won't sit idly if the two of us fight, who will guarantee that it won't kill the last remaining Emperor to avoid the unbalance between the Kingdoms?”

It was clear, Herm's was indirectly threatening Astaria.

He was asking her to stop this.

It seemed that even he didn't want war, at least not now.

“Stop with the bullshit.”

Suddenly, Alcimus spoke.

Then, he threw a paper at Herm's.

Herms picked up the paper and soon, his expression changed.

“It is the letter you sent to Amletus. The search party I sent into the Forbidden Region was annihilated by you, that creature is already dead.

Your lies won't work on me any longer, Herms.”

Alcimus spoke.

Hearing this news, Astaria's eyes widened.

“What did you say?” She questioned.

It was the first time this expression appeared on her face.

She really was taken aback by this shocking news.

Seeing her acting like that, Nux couldn't help but smile inwardly. He didn't expect Astaria to be so natural when it came to acting. She was just a few steps behind him.

“T-The Mythical C-Creature is dead?”

Riona couldn't believe it as well.

Herms's face turned serious.

He noticed Riona's and Eardwolf's reactions, and from their shocked looks, it looked like they didn't know about the letter.

This Alcimus bastard must have gotten it when he killed Amletus.

The only thing Herms couldn't understand was why did the Skadi Kingdom stay silent when their Emperor was killed.

Anyway, right now, none of that mattered.

The cat was out of the bag.

He could go on about how Alcimus forged this letter and all that, however, with Armando standing next to Alcimus, and how he himself reacted, Alcimus knew that this situation was not savable now.

Astaria wasn't a fool.

Someone like her could easily put 2 and 2 together and uncover the truth.

“Herms. What is the meaning of this?”

Suddenly, Astaria questioned with a solemn look on her face.

Herms's expression turned cold.

Just as he expected, Astaria was now completely against it.

‘Heh. He was right. Not everything goes as planned.’

Herms thought inwardly, then, he decided to abandon his idea of resisting it any longer.

Phase one, was now over.

Herms glanced at Astaria, then he turned towards Alcimus and warned,

“I will remember this day, Alcimus.

I will make sure you regret it.

Especially you, traitor.”

Armando's legs turned weak as he kneeled on the ground. His face was as pale as paper.

However, nobody cared about his condition because of Herms's next words,

“I, Herms Lysander, declare war on both Skyfall Kingdom and the Woods Dynasty, Astaria and Alcimus, in these last 2 weeks, give goodbyes to your close ones and prepare your neck to be cut by my sword.

I will be the sole ruler of this continent after all this is done.”

Saying those words, Herms ran away.

Alcimus wanted to chase and kill him right now, Astaria, however, didn't move.

“Shouldn't we kill him right now before he creates more trouble?”

“It is not that simple.”

Nux, however, shook his head.

“What do you mean?” Alcimus frowned.

“He will lead us to his territory, there, we will be the ones who will be surrounded,” Nux replied.

Alcimus turned silent.

“Well, it doesn't really matter.”

Nux stretched his body, then, his face turned serious and his eyes shined,

“If it's the war he wants,

The war, he will get.”

An air of confidence surrounded Nux.

Seeing him acting like that, Alcimus frowned. He had a lot to say, however, he held himself back. Eliyard, however, wasn't the same.

“How dare you talk in between when two Emperors are talking with each other?”

Nux turned towards Eliyard,

“You really are a useless fool, just like Amaya and Ember said.”

“H-Huh? L-Lady Amaya?”

Eliyard’s expression changed.

Ember, he understood, that woman didn’t have a good impression of him in her mind, however, he was pretty sure he hadn’t done anything that would disappoint Lady Amaya.

Eliyard started thinking.

Amaya was a woman he cared about a lot, after all.

“Oh? Does this man have a crush on my lovely daughter?” Suddenly, Riona commented.

“Huh?” Elliyard’s expression changed.

“Your daughter?”

“What? You didn’t know?” Riona smiled and Elliyard’s and Alcimius’s expressions changed.

They finally realized who this ‘Lady Amaya’ was!

“Wait...”

Alcimius suddenly spoke.

He glanced at Riona, then he glanced at Astaria,

And an absurd possibility cooked up in his mind.

# Chapter 599 L ... L Have A Question.

“Wait...”

Suddenly, Alcimus’s expression changed.

“Amaya Leander... is she the daughter you sol- I mean, who married into the Skyfall Kingdom, Amaya Skadi?”

Alcimus questioned.

Riona nodded.

She wanted to say something about what Alcimus said, however, in the end, she knew that he was correct. She couldn’t refute it.

Of course, none of that mattered now.

Everything was fine now.

“B-B-But wasn’t she married to-”

Unlike Riona, Alcimus, however, was now even more confused, he had a lot of questions in his mind and just as he was about to voice out his thoughts,

“Aren’t you a little too interested in matters of my household?”

Nux interrupted.

Alcimus glanced at Nux and narrowed his eyes.

Nux looked into his eyes as well.

Alcimus didn't like that gaze.

No matter what, he was still an Emperor.

He might respect Astaria, however, that didn't mean she was superior to her. For her disciple to act so disrespectfully in front of him,

He couldn't allow that.

However, just as he was about to use his Aura to overwhelm Nux,

“Don't try that.”

Nux warned.

Alcimus frowned.

‘Did he just predict what I was about to do?’

He wondered inwardly.

He wanted to deny this possibility, however, Nux's timing was too accurate...

No matter how much he tried, Alcimus couldn't believe that it was a fluke.

And as if confirming his doubts, Astaria spoke up.

“I won't take a normal man as my student, Alcimus.

Arvina was different, I only took her in because I liked her attitude and was bored.

You can say that he is my real student.”

Alcimus realized it.

Nux was indeed not normal.

No wonder 9 King Stage Women, including that General of his Dynasty, agreed to become his.

However,

“Your disciple lacks manners.”

He still couldn't allow this boy to disrespect him. He wanted an apology.

“You wouldn't like it if I asked too many questions about your personal life, would you?”

However, contrary to his expectation, Astaria stood on Nux's side.

“...”

Alcimus turned silent.

He knew he was wrong, but...

“Alright, let's not waste time on this. We have a War to prepare for.”

Nux spoke up.

In the end, Alcimus had to let go.

He still needed Skyfall Kingdom's help here after all.

He had already lost 2 of his Generals, and then 2 more King Stage Cultivators in the Search Party he sent to the Bloodhill Wilderness.

The losses that the Woods Dynasty had taken were not light.

Even if he could face Herms, the chances of his army fighting against the Solid Earth Army... they were low.

Not to mention that after Amletus was gone and with Amaya being Nux's wife, the Skadi's were now strong allies of the Skyfall Kingdom.

The current Skyfall Kingdom was too strong and was not something he should go against for a stupid reason like this.

“Alright. I will start preparing.” Alcimus spoke.

Nux smiled and then he nodded,

“We will do the same.”

Alcimus nodded,

“Alright, we will be taking out leave now.”

Saying those words, Nux turned around, Astaria followed, Riona and Eardwolf were the same.

Alcimus had different thoughts in his mind when he saw these 4 people leaving, but in the end, he didn't say anything and just continued to watch these people as they left.

“Call all the soldiers,

Prepare the army,

This will now be a deciding war.

I'll personally take the role of the General.”

Alcimus announced.

Eliyard nodded and quickly took the action.

...

On the other hand, Nux, Astaria, Riona, and Eardwolf walked out of the palace, and instead of walking toward their respective Kingdoms, all of them continued to move together.

3 Hours later, they walked into a certain spot, in front of them stood 41 King Stage Cultivators. They were the reinforcement that was ready to act the moment something bad happened.

20 of these King Stage Cultivators came from the Skyfall Kingdom alone.

12 of them were from the Skadi Kingdom.

As for the remaining 9.

Well, all of them walked forward and removed their masks.

“Did you find anything?”

Amaya questioned.

Riona, however, shook her head.

It was a failed trial.

Yes, this whole Emperors’ Meet.

All of it was a Trial.

They already knew the Creature was dead and Herms was planning something. Alcimus was already on their side, Amletus was dead, and they didn’t have to convince anyone.

All of this was just a farce.

A farce that was planned by Riona.

Yes, not Amaya, this time, it was Riona.

After learning everything, Riona noticed something that even Amaya failed to notice.

According to their theory, Herms’s plan was to get rid of Herms using the Treaty, then he and Amletus would team up and go after Astaria.

It was a good and executable plan.

However, something bothered Riona.

What would happen after Astaria was killed?

Would Amletus and Herms divide whatever they won amongst them?

For some reason, Riona believed that it was highly unlikely.

She suspected that Herms was hiding something.

Something that he would use to deal with Amletus and then rule the continent alone.

Of course, it was just a theory, however, the more she thought about it, the more loopholes she found.

Amletus was not an idiot.

Even Amaya failed to get answers out of his mouth and they were forced to kill him.

She didn't think Amletus would be fooled so easily.

Then why did he agree to this plan?

Something was definitely a miss.

Therefore, she planned this entire farce, trying to push Herms to the corner, forcing him to reveal his final card.

However, in the end, it ended up as a failure.

Herms didn't reveal anything.

"I... I have a question."

Suddenly, Eardwolf spoke up.

“Huh?”

Riona frowned.

This fatty was not allowed to speak?

How dare he open his mouth here?

Riona was annoyed, however, noticing that the Slave Seal's pain didn't start, Riona realized that he was not thinking about something bad and allowed him to speak,

“What is it?”

“We had 2 Emperors on our side while Lord Herms was alone.

Why didn't we kill him?

Even if he had some sort of trump card, with 1 Emperor less, wouldn't this war have been a lot easier?”

# Chapter 600 The First Real War.

“We had 2 Emperors on our side while Lord Herms was alone.

Why didn't we kill him?

Even if he had some sort of trump card, with 1 Emperor less, wouldn't this war have been a lot easier?”

Eardwolf questioned with a confused look on his face.

In all honesty, after going through the [Slave Seal]'s pain 3 times, he had given up on all thoughts of resistance and has accepted his fate.

However, this didn't mean that he actually cared about Riona's or Nux's well-being. The only person he cared about was himself.

If Nux and Riona won the war, he would be able to live on as well. He didn't know how good his life would be now that he is a slave, however, as long as he gets to live, he wouldn't complain about anything.

Eardwolf was very scared of death.

Therefore, he deeply wished for Nux's victory's in this war.

Hearing his question, Riona's expression changed.

Then, she just sighed,

“What did I even expect...?”

She lamented.

“What?”

Eardwolf frowned.

He couldn't understand.

His question was genuine. Why was Riona acting like that?

Seeing the doubtful look on his face, Riona frowned and then questioned back,

“If you have 2 King Stage Cultivators on your side, would you be able to stop the enemy King Stage Cultivator from running away?”

Eardwolf's expression changed.

“Lady Astaria is strong, combined with Lord Alcimus, defeating Herms would not be difficult, however, killing him would be a different story. If Herms focuses on running away, even Lady Astaria wouldn't be able to stop him.”

Riona explained and Eardwolf nodded in understanding.

Of course, they could injure him a little, but honestly, it wasn't worth the effort.

Actually, it was not like they couldn't kill Herms.

They had a way.

They had a sure-shot way to get rid of Herms once and for all.

And that was Nux.

His current trump card, [Blink Fault], killing Herms by using it was not simple. Both he and Herms would pass out once the attack connects, then with so many people there, Herms was as good as dead.

However, this method came with a cost.

And that cost was Nux.

Now, Nux was not some weak King Stage Cultivator, he was a man who drew against Astaria.

He was now on par with the strongest human in the world.

Exchanging him with Herms was... not a good trade.

Nux would wake up after 2 days, yes, however, what would happen in these 2 days wasn't sure.

Keeping Nux down in this critical stage was not a good option.

Also,

Alcimus was not exactly their ally.

They might act like one right now, however, a human heart cannot be seen through. There is a chance that he would attack Astaria with his army once Herms is dead.

No one would miss out on the opportunity of ruling the world after all.

Especially Emperors, beings who were filled with ambitions.

Of course, if something like this happened, then just like Herms, Astaria could escape as well, but what about Nux?

He would then become Astaria's weakness.

And that was something Nux would never allow.

Due to all these reasons, the plan to get rid of Herms was dropped, and with them getting practically no information out of this meeting, this Emperors' Meet was... pretty much useless.

“Well, it is not that bad.”

Suddenly, Amaya spoke up.

Apparently, she had a different opinion.

“The Meet was not that useless.

Herms agreed to war even after knowing Amletus is dead.

He wouldn't have this confidence if he was just dependent on Amletus.

Although we still don't know what his trump card is,

We can definitely be sure that he has something up his sleeves.”

“Meh, does it really matter?”

Suddenly, Nux spoke.

Then, he turned towards Astaria and a perverted smile appeared on his face,

“Don't I just need to defeat Lady Astaria? Once that happens, everything would be easy peasy.”

Riona frowned, she couldn't understand.

She knew that this son-in-law of hers drew against Astaria and he might even have a chance to defeat her, but what after that?

What would happen after he defeats her?

Why was he acting as if victory was in his grasp?

“Keep dreaming, boy.

Don't forget, even after a whole week, you still haven't defeated me.”

Astaria wasn't willing to give up either.

“It's not like you could defeat me either.”

Nux just shrugged.

“I just need to perfect my sword, once that happens, defeating you would be as simple as flicking my fingers.”

Astaria shrugged.

As she continued to spar with Nux, even she could feel she was improving.

She didn't know what it was, but she could feel something strange happening with her sword.

It somehow boosted her power.

However, it was still imperfect.

She still needed time to perfect it and she was sure that once she does,

Defeating Nux would be simple.

She would then again be the strongest.

The one and only being reigning on the top.

“Oh yeah? Well, I won't tell you, but I have a hidden card as well. Once I perfect that, defeating all the Emperors alone wouldn't be difficult for me either.”

Nux spoke with a small smile on his face.

Astaria raised her eyebrow,

“Heh.”

Other than letting out a laugh, Astaria didn't say anything else.

“Lady Astaria.”

Suddenly, General Phorus walked towards Astaria.

“Lady Astaria, should I prepare the army?”

Astaria's face turned serious.

“Yes.”

She ordered.

“Prepare all the troops,

I want all the soldiers to gather in front of me in 3 days.

I will personally lead all the soldiers.”

Astaria announced.

“!!!”

Phorus's expression changed.

“D-Does that m-mean...?”

Astaria's eyes shined in determination and she nodded,

“Yes, it is now time the people learn about the Emperors. The real leaders of the Kingdom.”

Phorus gulped, however, soon, he recollected himself and with a determined look on his face, he saluted,

“As you command, Lady Astaria!”

Saying those words, he turned around.

He only had 3 days, after all, he couldn't afford to waste any second.

After he left, Winston walked towards Astaria and bowed,

“I would like to take my leave as well.”

Many Shadow Unit members were out on different missions, he needed to regather them.

Astaria nodded.

Seeing everyone leaving, a strange feeling arose in Nux's heart.

It was indeed a War.

And not a fake war where Nations don't even use all their power,

This... this would be the first real war in the history of this continent.

# Chapter 601 For The Skyfall Kingdom!!!

1 week later, in the Army Camp of the Skyfall Kingdom, Astaria walked onto the Stage, in front of her, stood nearly 150 thousand soldiers. She wore Purple Black Clothes, these clothes were similar to what Nux's women wore when they helped the Woods Dynasty in the war against the Solid Earth Kingdom.

In truth, these were not some random clothes Nux and people close to him wore to show off. It was a 7-Star Armor.

[Fiendish Black Panther Armor]

It may just look like clothes from the outside, however, no armor in this world, even the best ones in the Royal Treasury of the Skyfall Kingdom matched this Armor. Not to mention that, unlike other armors, this armor doesn't hinder their movement speed.

This was what attracted Nux the most.

He could have bought armor with even higher defense, however, it would have affected the movement speed, therefore, this was the best choice.

No armor above 5 Star rating exists in this world, therefore, even an armor with a seemingly lower defense than normal 7 Star Armor was the best armor here.

And 11 people, including Nux, wore this armor.

People around Nux were simply overgeared.

However, Astaria's armor was a little different when compared to others.

She had a cape as well.

It hindered movement so Nux didn't buy it, however, Astaria was different.

She was the General of the Army, so she needed to act like one.

Of course, Nux never complained.

Astaria wearing Purple Black Skin tight clothes that enhanced her curves and a cape over it that showed her authority...

It was a deadly combination.

Astaria looked unbearably beautiful in that dress.

Nux couldn't help but continue to look at her.

“...”

Nux's women, who were standing beside him couldn't help but shake their heads.

“Tsk. Pervert.”

Amaya complained.

“You have no right to complain, bitch.”

Thyra, who was standing beside Amaya spoke as she glanced at Amaya with a jealous look on her face.

Currently, Amaya was sitting on Nux's back.

Yes, when all these 150 thousand top soldiers were gathered, Nux and his women were... well... bonding.

“...”

Amaya completely ignored Thyra's exittance and continued to bury her face in Nux's back.

What Astaria was going to say next, she couldn't care less.

Of course, Nux's other women were the same.

The only thing they seemed to care about was how much this Amaya was enjoying herself.

'We are not involving her in the next bet.' Suddenly, Felberta spoke up.

'Agreed.'

This offer was quickly accepted by others.

"Soldiers."

Suddenly, Astaria called out.

The weight behind her voice was heavy enough for the bustling camp to suddenly turn dead silent.

That was just how intimidating Astaria's aura is.

Noticing that Astaria has started speaking, Amaya snorted and jumped to the ground as well. She may not care about what Astaria was going to say, but she couldn't disrespect her either.

Nux and his women's expressions turned serious.

Seeing that she had managed to gather everyone's attention, Astaria continued,

"Today is the day we all march towards Berling Town.

As you already know, this War would be a lot more different than all the Wars you have been through before, here you will witness the Emperors fighting each other.

Let me remind you, the moment the Emperors start fighting, get as far away as you can.

Create at least a 1000 meters distance from us, otherwise, you all will die from the aftereffect. Of our battle”

Astaria warned.

The Soldiers would have generally laughed it off, however, this time, no one took this as a joke.

This was not the first assembly after all.

In the previous assemblies, where most of the soldiers didn't know about the existence of Emperors, many laughed at Astaria's face the moment she warned them like this.

However,

The moment a horrifying pressure engulfed their body, all of them, irrespective of cultivation fell on their knees, gasping for breath while holding their necks.

Most of them thought that they would die, some of the weaker ones even passed out in face of this pressure,

It was then Astaria stepped forward and commented,

“This is the pressure of a single Emperor, just imagine how scary it would be when 2 or more Emperors fight against each other and all exclude pressure like this.

Would you be able to survive?”

The soldiers still remember the scary smile that Astaria had on her face.

They still feel shivers whenever they recall it.

Of course, what they didn't know was that Astaria cheated a little.

She infused her Mana into the ‘pressure’ she was releasing.

This made it even scarier, of course, a normal Emperor wouldn't do something pointless like this. Doing something like this creates a false impression.

Of course, Astaria didn't care about that.

As long as she guarantees absolute obedience from her soldiers, the method doesn't matter.

If this little trick could save a few thousand lives in the future, it will be worth it.

“We will meet the Woods Dynasty's soldiers in Berling city. Their numbers and overall strength are lesser compared to ours, however, they are an important ally in this battle, so treat them with respect.”

Yes, in this war, the Skyfall Kingdom and the Woods Dynasty were allies, as for the Skadis,

They were Solid Earth Kingdom's allies.

This was another one of the cards Nux and his women would be playing if needed.

A betrayal in the middle of the war.

Heh.

Of course, to prevent the leak of information, only the King Stage Cultivators and Expert Stage Cultivators of the Skadi's army were informed about this.

All of them had a Slave Seal implanted in them, so they were very safe and the communication would be simple as well.

Nux was simply abusing his [Slave Seal] at this point.

Anyways, Grand Master Stage and below were just for numbers, their participation didn't really matter.

Amaya and Riona had already thought about how to continue with all this, so things like these didn't matter much for now.

“I will not waste any more time,

Keep the things I told you in your mind, any single mistake could cost your life, be careful, and now,

Start Marching.”

“FOR THE SKYFALL KINGDOM!!!”

“FOR THE SKYFALL KINGDOM!!!”

# Chapter 602 Mother Found What Herms Was Hiding.

“ ... ”

Alcimus glanced at the soldiers standing in front of him and didn't know what to say.

No matter how many times he saw it, he still couldn't believe how pathetically weak the Woods Army has gotten.

The recent War really did have a worse effect on them.

Especially after Ember left.

Thinking about all this, Alcimus glanced at Ellinger again and his face twitched in annoyance.

That idiotic son of his, not only is he not a King Stage Cultivator yet, he even sent away the best second best King Stage Cultivator their Kingdom had.

If this bastard was not his blood son, Alcimus would have killed him already.

‘How the fuck is my child so incompetent? Is he really my child?’

Alcimus couldn't help but wonder inwardly.

However, in the end, he just shook his head and sighed.

His eyes then fell on a certain brown-haired man who was standing amongst the King Stage Cultivators with a prideful and confident expression on his face.

Actually, this man was the only one amongst all the King Stage Cultivators who had this type of expression. The rest of them were nervous.

All of them were the nobles, after all.

None of them had ever participated in the war and had only been living off their ancestors' glory and family name.

'What a useless bunch.'

Alcimus couldn't help but snort inwardly.

All the competent King Stage Cultivators in his Kingdom were either dead or taken away.

Of course, he still had the best King Stage Cultivator on his side, that was the brown-haired man who was standing with a confident expression on his face.

However, Alcimus didn't wish for this man to participate in this war.

He didn't wish to introduce this man to the world just yet.

Yes, this brown-haired man was Rashim Skadi, a child Alcimus adopted when he was 3 years old.

He was a 150-year-old peak King Stage Cultivator.

A rare talent.

Of course, compared to monsters like Nux and his women, he fell short, however, in the end, Nux and his women were different, Rashim was a real talent.

One who would become an Emperor within the next few decades.

He was Alcimus's hidden card, a card he didn't wish to show for now, however, he didn't have a choice. If he didn't give his best in this war, the consequences would be dire.

Also, he needed to take revenge against the man who was responsible for this condition of his Dynasty.

He has sworn in his heart that he would destroy the Solid Earth Kingdom.

That was just how much he hated that Kingdom and that Herms bastard who was looking down on him.

“Soldiers.”

Thinking all of this, Alcimus stepped onto the stage.

The 90 thousand soldiers standing in front of him turned silent,

“Our destination will be the Berling Town where we will meet our allies, the Skyfall Kingdom,

March!”

“FOR THE WOODS DYNASTY!!”

“FOR THE WOODS DYNASTY!!”

Amongst the cheers, the soldiers started their march.

...

“I can’t believe it.” On the other side, Nux and his women were sitting in a carriage and Astaris, who was sitting with them couldn’t help but comment.

“What happened?”

Nux questioned with a curious look on his face.

“...”

Astaris didn’t know what to say...

Currently, Thyra and Ember had placed their heads on Nux's lap. Lane was sitting behind Nux's back, acting like his shadow, just like how she normally does.

Actually, she was the only one who only gets intimate with him only when she is alone. Although Astaria was sure to become her sister in the future, Lane was still a bit careful around her.

Anyways, Allura and Edda have placed their heads on Nux's shoulders.

The other women were sitting around him as well.

9 beautiful women staying around Nux, it was a dream come true for any man.

No one can say that they were going for a war that could potentially destroy this world and change its history.

“Would you like to join?”

Nux questioned with a playful smile on his face.

“Do you even have any space left?”

Astaria snorted.

“Oh? It means you do want to join but isn't joining because of lack of space?” Nux questioned.

“I can give you my place if you want, Lady Astaria.”

Skyla was ready for it.

“I don't need it, thank you very much.” Astaria was quick to reply.

Honestly, talking to this man was just...

“Don't you think you should be a little more serious?”

Astaria questioned.

“And what would happen if I do that? We have already prepared the best we could, there is no point in worrying about something we can’t do anything about.”

Nux replied.

“...”

Astaria turned silent.

She didn’t have a reply to Nux’s statement.

“Lady Astaria, there is a chance we all might die in this war, we don’t know what trump card Herms is hiding after all.

However, worrying about it now won’t help us in any way, just be chill and join us.”

Saying that, Nux extended his arms toward Astaria.

“...”

Astaria’s face twitched in frustration, everything was going fine, but in the end, he just had to show his shameless side.

Annoying bastard.

Seeing her reaction, Nux smiled.

It really was fun to tease Astaria like this.

Actually, there is another way for them to ensure that they would win this War.

Nux becoming an Emperor.

He already drew against Astaria, there, Nux had a chance to get what he wanted, however, for some reason, he stopped.

It wouldn't be difficult for him to get it right now, however, Nux could feel it.

Astaria respected him now.

He didn't wish to give up the respect that he had gained just because he was paranoid.

He was a greedy man after all.

He wanted to have it all.

He would defeat her on his own and then would conquer Astaria, body, and soul.

A smile appeared on Nux's face when he thought about it.

“Nux.”

Suddenly, Amaya called out.

Nux turned towards Amaya,

“Mother found what Herms was hiding.”

# Chapter 603 The Solid Earth Kingdom Has 2 Emperors.

Just like how the Skyfall Kingdom and Woods Dynasty planned to meet each other in Berlin Town, the Skadis and the Solid Earth Kingdom planned to meet in a town called Fidel.

Normally, after Amletus died, trusting the Skadi Kingdom was something difficult for the Herms and the Solid Earth Kingdom, however, Skyfall Kingdoms and the Woods Dynasty have already allied themselves.

If we add Skadi into that alliance, it would become a 3v1, which would be simply ridiculous.

The Emperors' battle wouldn't even matter because the main army of the Solid Earth Kingdom would lose within a matter of minutes.

This worried Herms, his son, Roone, however, had a different opinion in his mind.

“You are worrying too much, father. The Skadi's won't dare to betray us. Actually, Amletus's death is actually a good thing for us, we gained a loyal dog that would bite anyone we order it to without doing anything.

That Riona is not a fool, just like you said, she already noticed that Amletus had some sort of relationship with you, she also knows that the one who killed Amletus, her father was Alcimus.

There is no way she would ally herself with the people who killed the protector of her Kingdom and have left her Kingdom to face such adversaries.

Currently, we are the only leg that she can grab.” Roone spoke with a smile on his face.

Hearing his words, Herms couldn't help but nod as well, some of his doubts were alleviated, however,

“Do not be so hasty to judge things, Roone.

I won't comment much about that fool, however, that woman named Riona is not simple. She is an ama-”

“Yes, yes, she is an amazing strategist and whatever, I know that already.

But in front of sheer power, all plans fail, she has lost her biggest support, and there is no way she would think straight in a condition like this.

And even if she does, she has no logical reason to join the enemy. ”

Unlike Herms, Roone didn't look particularly worried.

Seeing his child's worry less expression, Herms's expression eased up a little as well.

“Alright.”

He nodded.

Then, a small smile appeared on his face and he stepped back,

“Then I will leave everything on you, King Roone.”

Roone's smile widened.

With a dignified look on his face, he stepped up and glanced at 200 thousand soldiers standing in front of them and,

“Soldiers of the Solid Earth Kingdom.”

Well, in truth, the Solid Earth Kingdom was not capable enough to gather so many troops, especially after the loss they suffered in the Bloodhill Wilderness 100 years ago.

So what happened?

How did they gather so many troops?

Well, just like how they recruited the Generals, they recruited normal soldiers as well.

Yes, they forced the clans, sects, and adventurers.

Of course, none of these soldiers liked this situation, however, no one dared to say a word in front of Roone.

Why?

Because this was the man who singlehandedly overwhelmed their clan, sect, or their party.

Although Herms was the one who recruited all the Generals and the soldiers into the Solid Earth Army, Roone was the one who planned all that.

Not only then, even the locking down of the kingdom and killing all the spies, all of it was planned by Roone.

Of course, for being capable of doing something like that, Roone was definitely different from a normal King the Solid Earth Kingdom has ever seen.

He was an Emperor Stage Cultivator.

Technically speaking, currently, Roone should have abducted his throne and should have chosen the seat of the Protector in his father's stead, however, knowing the real truth, he already knew that being a protector was now useless.

He had a different plan in his mind.

Anyways, as Roone stepped in, all the soldiers turned silent.

All of them knew how terrifying he was, Roone has displayed it before, for these soldiers, Roone was the strongest existence in the world.

“In this war, we only have one goal.”

Roone spoke, then, his expression turned serious and,

“We will destroy the Skyfall Kingdom and the Woods Dynasty.”

“YEAHHH!!!”

The Soldiers cheered in joy and excitement.

“Alright then, without wasting any more time, let’s start our march!”

“YEAHHH!!!”

“FOR THE SOLID EARTH KINGDOM!!”

“FOR THE SOLID EARTH KINGDOM!!”

The soldiers were definitely ready for the battle.

The Solid Earth Soldiers marched towards Fidel Town, the moment they entered the town, they realized that the Skadi Soldiers were already there.

Normally, Herms should have taken the lead, keeping his trump card hidden. However, doing this was practically useless.

Sooner or later, it would be revealed, therefore, Roone didn’t hold back anymore and directly met Riona, the one leading the Skadi Troops.

“I thought King Eardwolf or General Lydian would be leading your army. I must admit, it is quite surprising to see you here.”

Roone spoke with a small smile on his face.

“ ... ”

Riona, however, didn't say anything in reply and continued to glance at Roone with a dazed look on her face.

Seeing her reaction, a satisfied smile appeared on Roone's face,

He waved his hand in front of Riona's face,

The woman finally came out of his reverie and replied,

"I-I wasn't expecting to see you either..."

Roone chuckled.

"You are an Emperor..."

Suddenly, Riona called out.

"Hmmm? Lord Amletus didn't tell that to you? I thought you knew about it."

"Lord Amletus kept his deal with the Solid Earth Kingdom a secret."

Riona replied.

She was giving this man an open invitation.

Place whatever conditions you want, we will follow them.

Roone understood what Riona's words meant and couldn't help but smile.

He glanced at the people standing behind Riona and seeing 12 King Stage Cultivators, his smile widened.

Riona's expression didn't change much, inwardly, however, he contacted her daughter and sent a message,

'The Solid Earth Kingdom has 2 Emperors.'

'...what?'

A grim reply came.

Riona already expected it and nodded,

‘Yes, Herms son, Roone Skadi,

He is an Emperor as well.’

# Chapter 604 Is It A War Or A Beauty Show?

‘Yes, Herms son, Roone Skadi,

He is an Emperor as well.’

Riona informed with a grim look on her face.

Amaya’s expression turned serious as well.

‘Oh C’mon, don’t act like you two hadn’t predicted it already.’

Suddenly, Allura jumped into the conversation as well.

‘We did predict something like this, yes but...’

Riona wanted to say something but didn’t know how to explain her thoughts.

After analyzing Herms’s actions, Riona had already predicted this, Nux and Astaria were the same as well, and now that their prediction has come true...

Riona didn’t know how to feel.

‘Let’s not think too much about it, mother. You are being overly cautious.’

Suddenly, Amaya spoke.

‘...alright.’

Riona nodded.

With an inexplicable expression on her face, Amaya ended the conversation.

“Heh, so that’s why he was acting so boldly.”

Astaria laughed.

“Now it makes more sense.

Hiding his trump card till the end, getting rid of Lord Alcius and then Lady Astaria, the only one left would be Amletus. With Herms and his son working together, Amletus can be dealt with and the Solid Earth Kingdom would become the sole ruler of the continent.

A great plan indeed.”

Evane was impressed.

“Indeed. Now everything lines up.”

Felberta nodded as well.

The other girls nodded as well.

“Anyways, now it is a 2v2 right?” Evane questioned.

“It is.”

Ember nodded.

“What about Alcius then?” Thyra questioned.

For her, 2v2 meant Nux and Astaria, versus Herms and his son.

“For now, he is our ally, we will use him for as long as he is useful,” Amaya replied.

“So Nux is going to hold back?”

“Yes, he will fight together with us and hopefully, it stays the same for the entire battle.”

“So he will only act if the situation gets worse?”

“Yes, we will discuss the complete plan now, so pay attention.”

Astaria spoke.

The others nodded with serious looks on their faces and the preparation for the war started.

...

30 minutes later, the Skyfall Army arrived at Berling Town.

Astaria was the first one to walk out of the carriage.

The moment she walked out, Alcius came forward with a smile on his face and greeted,

“You are finally here.”

“It took us longer than I thought.”

Astaria nodded.

Nux and the others walked out of the carriage. This time, Nux and his wives didn't have any masks on, therefore, the moment they came out, they attracted attention.

Alcius's eyes fell on Nux's wives as well, or more precisely, his eyes fell on a certain black-red haired woman,

“It has been a while, Ember.”

He greeted.

“It has, indeed.”

Ember nodded as well.

Her expression seemed pretty distant.

Many other soldiers also recognized Ember, the Missing General, however, no one dared to talk about her.

They already knew about Ember when she first came in as reinforcements after all.

Ellinger's eyes also fell on Ember, Ember glanced at him and he soon broke the eye contact.

He knew what he did and he wasn't confident enough to face this woman.

If only he hadn't been this childish and had seriously considered what Ember said... none of this would have happened.

Ember, however, completely ignored the dynast and turned around. Astaria walked forward and walked towards Alcimus,

“Are you prepared?”

“Of course I am, I have prepared 90 thousand soldiers for this war, 5 of them are King Stage Cultivators and 15 are Expert Stage Cultivators.”

Alcimus replied.

“...Alright.”

Astaria stayed silent for a while, however, in the end, she just nodded.

Honestly, she expected a bit more from the Woods Dynasty, however, this Dynasty has already lost 4 of their King Stage Cultivators...

So it wasn't that bad.

They weren't the strongest, after all.

Rather, before the Solid Earth Kingdom's raid in the Bloodhill Wilderness's forbidden region, they were the weakest.

Alcimus knew what was going on inside Astaria's mind and couldn't help but smile wryly.

“Anyways, let's organize our troops and discuss the strategies.

There are only 4 days left, after all.”

Astaria spoke and Alcimus agreed.

The two Emperors then started walking towards a certain building, Nux and his wives followed, Ellinger did the same as well.

The new meeting started.

Formations, plans, and tactics were discussed.

The atmosphere was serious and just like that,

2 days passed by.

...

Celistilla City, a prosperous city built in the neutral zone which borders all 4 Nations but was not a part of any of the city, was also known as the city of Merchants.

Here, Merchants sold the best collections they had, it was a peaceful city where the rich came to relax and take a rest from their daily lifestyle.

Now, however, this peaceful city had become barren.

After the Emperors' Meet, the Great War was announced. The location was that war was Celistilla City.

The once lively city was now barren, completely silent.

And today, the city finally heard a sound other than howling winds and birds chirping.

However, this wasn't a good sign.

2 Opposite armies were now standing against each other, ready to destroy the other the moment they get the chance.

It was now time for the war.

The Leaders of the Armies, Astaria Skyfall, Alcimus Woods, Herms Lizander and Roone Lizander walked out and faced each other.

The youngest and the newest member of this group of elites, Roone, stood there with a prideful look on his face.

There was no hint of nervousness on his face.

A commendable trait.

Roone's eyes suddenly fell on Nux and his wives who were standing in front of the rest of the Skyfall Army without their masks on and he couldn't help but comment,

“Heh. Is it a War or a Beauty Show?”

I have never seen warriors like them.”

He was clearly ridiculing the Skyfall Army, the so-called strongest.

Astaria, however, just smiled kindly,

“It is a War of course, participation does not require beauty, so you can rest assured.”

Roone's expression changed, however, he didn't give Astaria the satisfaction of getting one over him and commented,

“Heh, only strength matters.

I have seen many 'beautiful people', kneeling on the ground, begging for their lives while snot and tears covered their faces,

Heh, that sight is not attractive at all.

I wonder if you guys can make it look more attractive.”

# Chapter 605 Alright, Fuck It.

“I have seen many ‘beautiful people’, kneeling on the ground, begging for their lives while snot and tears covered their faces,

Heh, that sight is not attractive at all.

I wonder if you guys can make it look more beautiful.”

Roone spoke with a crazy smile on his face.

“Hehehe, these beautiful women, kneeling, begging me to spare them, Hahaha~ Just imagining it makes my blood boil in excitement.

Or maybe... some of you might try to sell your body to me, now that would be an offer worth considering.”

Hearing those words, Nux’s face turned cold, and just as he was about to lash out, he stopped.

Roone completely ignored the King Stage Cultivator standing in front of him and continued to observe the women in front of him.

“You, you, you, and you, the 4 of you, rejoice, I will accept when you sell your body to me, I do need some concubines after I become the ruler, after all.

As for the rest of you... hmmm, you are not that good-looking, but oh well,

If you act like a good bitch, I might keep you.”

‘Don’t react to what he is saying.

It is a war, he is trying to rile you up, don’t lose your cool.’

Ember sent a message to Nux.

Nux clenched his fists even further.

‘Nux, it is a common tactic enemy use, don’t let him win.’ Ember continued.

Nux then closed his eyes.

After releasing a deep breath, a smile appeared on his face,

“Heh, I see what’s the problem here.”

He commented and then nodded to himself,

“Well, with a face like yours, it does make sense for you to try and find concubines for yourself this way. If I was a girl, I would have a hard time to naturally love a face like that as well.”

Roone’s face turned cold,

“I do it because I am strong. Of course, it is impossible for a mere King Stage Cultivator like you.”

“I don’t really need to do something like this, to be honest, my face is different than yours after all.

I might not be the best-looking guy here, but to be honest, anything works as long as it’s not a nightmarish sight like yours.”

A vein popped out on Roone’s forehead,

“You seem to really like that face of yours, how about I destroy it.”

“Haahhh... jealousy can really make you do things you normally wouldn’t do huh...”

Nux sighed and looked at Roone with a pitiful look on his face.

“God really did an unfair job with that face huh...”

“Alright kid, I have decided, you will be dying first today!”

Roone had enough.

He quickly rushed towards Nux, Nux’s expression changed, however, suddenly, Alcimus appeared in front of him and blocked Roone’s attack.

“Why don’t you fight against someone of your level?”

Alcimus questioned, then, he kicked Roone, Roone, however, blocked the attack and jumped back.

On the other hand, Herms appeared beside Astaria and attacked.

Astaria, however, simply blocked his attack, then using her own Mana, she punched the man’s guts,

“Kkhoovhhfff!”

Herms’s body flew away.

Astaria quickly followed.

“Father!”

Roone rushed behind Astaria in hurry.

“Where do you think you are going!?”

Alcimus rushed behind Roone as well.

“Woods Soldiers!

**ATTACK!!”**

Alcimus gave an order.

“Soldiers! Let’s take our revenge and destroy these Solid Earth Bastards!”

“YEAHHHHH!!!!”

“Show these bastards their place!”

The Deputy General of the Solid Earth Kingdom shouted as well.

“YEAHHHHH!!!!”

The Skyfall and the Skadi Kingdom did not participate yet.

They knew the moment the Emperors starts fighting, things would get messed up. Of course, others knew it as well, however, they were a little too excited since their enmity was far deeper than these two Kingdoms.

On the other hand, Herms quickly rebalanced his body, and Astaria appeared in front of him and punched again. He blocked, however, the punch was stronger than he expected and his body flew away again.

Roone appeared behind Astaria and slashed her sword, Astaria crouched and then lightly kicked Roone. He tilted his head to dodge the attack, however, soon, Alcius appeared behind him and kicked his back.

Astaria rushed towards Herms and punched him again, this time however, Herms was prepared, his Great Sword appeared in his hand and after blocking Astaria’s attack, he slashed his sword at her.

Astaria crouched and as if he had already expected it, Herms changed the trajectory of his sword and attacked again. Astaria was forced to roll back.

Herms didn’t leave this opportunity and ran towards Astaria, forcing him to roll back even further.

“Hmph! Strongest human my ass! Look at you rolling on the ground like a bitch you are!”

Herms cursed as he continued to swing his Great Sword.

“Swinging your weapon like a tactless fool, that’s why you lost your title of the strongest.”

Astaria was quick with her reply and as if to prove her point, she suddenly rolled ahead and kicked Herms's legs.

The man lost his balance, Astaria smiled and stood up.

Her sword then appeared in her hand and she appeared near Herms.

\*Clank\*

Herms's barely defended the attack.

“As slow as ever I see.”

Astaria mocked with a disdainful look on her face.

“...”

Herms didn't say anything.

He didn't have any time after all.

Astaria's attacks were continuous.

She knew his weakness.

A Great Sword really limited his movement speed, defending against continuous attacks was tiring for him.

If this continued, it won't be long before he tires himself out and loses this battle.

However,

Herms was someone who has been using a Great Sword for roughly 500 years. A Great Sword may not be built for a one on one fighting, however, Herms's Great Sword Technique allowed him to do things others cannot.

Herms activated his Wind element under his sword and even though he was continuously defending against Astaria's attack, he slashed his sword.

Astaria was forced to jump back. Herms then appeared in front of her and using the sword's weight, he unleashed a lethal attack, which, if connected, could potentially cut Astaria into two equal parts.

‘Alright, fuck it.’

Astaria's expression changed.

# Chapter 606 Do You Really Think You Can Win?

‘Alright, fuck it.’

Astaria’s expression changed.

The Mana inside her body moved to her legs and she quickly jumped back.

She then glanced at Herms and after a little pause,

She appeared right next to him.

Herms barely defended against her attack. She was so fast that he didn’t even get the time to adjust his Great Sword, in the end, he was forced to use the dagger to block Astaria’s attack.

Herms quickly jumped back, he couldn’t fight in that awkward position after all.

The man then glanced at Astaria and a smile appeared on his face,

“So you are finally going to fight for real, huh?”

He questioned.

“I gave you enough chances already.

The pain is your only option now.”

Astaria smiled.

She wanted to push Herms a little further than this, however, in the end, Herms was the second strongest, and she couldn’t hold back in front of a man like him.

She has already taken this battle a few hundred meters away from the main battlefield where the other soldiers fought. Now everything else depended on the soldiers.

If they managed to successfully use the diversion tactic, they should be far enough for this battle to not affect them.

Yes, even while fighting against the second strongest, she was thinking about things like these.

Of course, she couldn't continue this any longer.

“Heh. You seem to care a lot about those soldiers.”

“Yours are useless, mine are not.”

Astaria's answer was simple.

“Well, I won't deny that.

The soldiers I have are useless. You cannot expect much from a strange mix-up that has barely trained together as a single unit, after all.”

“So now you are openly admitting it, huh.”

Astaria smiled.

“I don't have a reason to hide, now do I?” Herms smiled as well.

“Say.”

Suddenly, Astaria spoke.

“Hmm?”

Herms lowered his Great Sword as he glanced at Astaria.

He knew Astaria wouldn't use tactics like these to defeat him. If she started a conversation, she would not use it to get one over him.

She was too prideful to do something so embarrassing.

“Do you really think you can win?”

Astaria questioned.

“What do you mean?”

Herms questioned with a smile on his face.

“Don’t act ignorant, Herms.

Answer my question,

Do you really think you can win this battle?”

“It’s a 2v2, isn’t it?

I think we have a fair shot at winning it.”

“15 minutes.”

“Hmm?”

“That’s all I need to defeat you.

I can force you to run away within 15 minutes.

Then it would be 2v1.

Your son might not have the chance to run away, Herms.”

Astaria warned.

“You seem pretty confident.” Herms smiled.

“Are you denying it?

Do you really think you can defeat me?”

Astaria questioned with a serious look on her face.

“ ... ”

Herms turned silent.

Astaria narrowed her eyes.

Something was wrong.

Just as she thought.

It was not just Roone.

There was no way Herms would act so boldly just because his son was an Emperor. He was a careful man. He was not someone who would rely on a simple 2v2 battle. Things would never be that simple.

Astaria knew it. However, she didn't have any way of finding out what Herms's real trump card was.

Therefore, she decided to have this little 'heart-to-heart' with Herms.

She wanted to know what he was hiding and since the War has already started and she couldn't do anything to stop it now, Herms didn't have any reason to hide it either.

And just like Astaria expected, a smile appeared on Herms's face.

“Defeating you is definitely not possible.

If I am alone that is.”

Astaria didn't ask anything and prepared herself to face another Emperor.

A 3rd Emperor.

She was expecting something like this, but for this to actually be true...

Astaria didn't know how to react.

“Don't be on edge, Astaria. No one is coming.”

Suddenly, Herms's laughed.

“What do you mean?”

Astaria questioned.

“Let me ask you a question, Astaria.

Can you defeat me and an Emperor who defeated Alcius within 5 minutes at the same time?”

“Huh? What are yo-”

“Why do you think I am chatting here with you?”

Herms asked another question.

Astaria frowned.

“I was simply chatting with you to buy more time.”

Astaria tilted her head in confusion.

Soon, she understood what Herms was talking about and quickly turned around to look at Alcius and Roone.

“Astaria, what if my son kills Alcius? What would you do then? Would you be able to defeat 2 Emperors alone?”

The Emperor who was known as the strongest Emperor a few decades ago,

And an Emperor who can Kill another Emperor in under 5 minutes.

Astaria Skyfall, do you think you can defeat these two Emperors alone?”

“What... What in the hell is happening there?”

Astaria couldn't help but question as she glanced at the battlefield where Alcimus and Roone were fighting.

“The match was never fair to begin with.

This is what you call a rigged battle.”

Herms smiled with a proud look on his face.

“Khookkhhh!!”

Alcimus was kicked and was forced to cough out blood.

\*Step\* \*Step\*

Roone walked in front of him.

He was wearing pure white colored armor and just like his armor, he had a white colored sword in his hand.

“W-W-What is that w-weapon...?”

Alcimus questioned with a fearful look on his face as he glanced at the man in front of him.

His sword, that has been with him for more than 2 centuries was now lying on the floor, broken. His armor that protected his chest was broken as well, the same was the case for his ribs as well.

He was being toyed around in this battle.

The man in front of him was not very strong.

However, no matter how much he tried, he couldn't hurt him at all.

This man's sword and armor...

The Armor he wore was unexpectedly sturdy.

Alcimus's sword was sliced into two pieces the moment it clashed with  
Roone's sword.

It was just ridiculous!

“Aren't you a little too weak for an Emperor Stage Cultivator?”

Roone who walked towards Alcimus with a leisurely look on his face spoke  
with a disdainful expression.

# Chapter 607 Herms, Let Me Introduce You The Trump Card I Was Hiding,

“Aren’t you a little too weak for an Emperor Stage Cultivator?”

Roone who walked towards Alcius with a leisurely look on his face spoke with a disdainful expression.

“You... you bastard...”

Alcius cursed.

“Heehh? Did you say anything?”

Roone questioned with a scary smile on his face, at the same time, he punched Alcius’s guts, forcing him to kneel on the ground.

“Khookkhh!!”

Alcius coughed out blood again.

“I didn’t hear you the first time, mind repeating it again?”

Roone walked closer to Alcius, crouched to bring his face closer to him, and questioned.

“...”

Alcius glared at Roone, his eyes were red in rage, however, in the end, he didn’t say anything. Whatever the reason was, the current Roone is stronger than him.

Actually, Alcius believed that he was even stronger than Astaria.

The Sword and Armor like these shouldn't exist.

“That combat gear is not normal... where did you get it?”

Astaria, who was looking at the fight couldn't help but question.

“And why should I answer you?”

Herms smiled as he questioned back.

Astaria turned around and a beautiful smile appeared on her face.

“Are you really that scared of me?”

“Heh.”

Herms laughed.

For an Emperor with a huge ego, these words were... annoying.

“Alcimus sent a search party to look for the Mythical Beasts, but they didn't find anything.”

“Huh?”

Astaria's expression changed.

“Yes, they didn't find the body either.”

Astaria realized.

That combat gear was made from the Mythical Creature's body.

From the body of the Beast that is capable of killing Emperors in 1 way.

Things were now clear.

That's where Herms's confidence came from.

That combat gear...

It was stronger than the Armor and Sword provided by Nux.

According to Nux, what they currently use is a 7 Star Weapon... however, even if their weapons were good, the difference between their weapons and the normal weapons was not that big...

According to that logic, that combat gear should be... a 10-Star Gear?

Does something like that even exist?

And how did the Solid Earth Kingdom create these weapons in the first place?

One had to know, there were 7 Star Beasts in this world, of course, killing them required all the Emperors to act together, and with the Mythical Creature around, only 1 of them was killed, and even after using that beast's body, they were unable to create a 7 Star Weapon because they didn't have the required equipment and the techniques.

“Hmm? You are unusually silent,

Astaria Skyfall, you aren't scared, are you?”

Herms questioned.

He was definitely enjoying the serious look that has appeared on the ever-confident Astaria's face.

He finally had this bitch under his palms.

However, suddenly,

A smile appeared on Astaria's face.

“That bastard is blessed by lady luck.”

Suddenly, Astaria commented.

“Huh? What are you talking about?”

Herms questioned.

Did she perhaps lose her mind due to pressure or something?

“You see, your son made a little mistake.

He said a few words he shouldn’t have said, and now he is angry.”

Astaria smiled.

“What are you talking about?”

Herms narrowed his eyes.

“I was wondering why he didn’t react much, I guess those girls must have stopped him.

Now, however, he has a reason to act himself.”

Astaria explained. Herms was still confused.

“Let me introduce you to my student,

And possibly my future husband.”

Herms’s expression changed when he heard those words.

‘H-H-Husband!?’

These words jolted him from inside, however, before he could react to them,

Astaria suddenly pointed at the battlefield and smiled,

“There he is.”

Herms quickly turned towards the battlefield and his eyes widened in horror.

A man with black hair and golden eyes, who wore purple-black skin tight clothes stood tall, Roone, the one who was dominating the battle was now lying on the ground.

The man then walked forward and stepped on Roone's head,

“You see, we have 1 thing in common,”

Nux spoke and then, a crazy smile appeared on his face,

“I have seen people kneeling in front of me as well.”

“You bastard!”

Roone shouted in anger, at the same time, he lifted his head. Nux was forced to step back.

Roone quickly stood up and glared at Nux,

“You little insect, you will pay for what you have done.”

“What a coincidence.” Nux smiled politely,

Then, a scary smile appeared on his face and he replied,

“I wanted to say the same thing as well.”

Two Purple Black Swords appeared in his hands,

“You are brave for a mere Ki-”

Roone wanted to say something, however, Nux wasn't having any of it.

He appeared in front of Roone and attacked,

\*Clank\*

Roone barely defended.

And quickly his expression changed.

Nux, however, wasn't done yet.

\*Clank\* \*Clank\* \*Clank\*

His chain of attacks started and just like Astaria, Roone was forced to step back while taking on those attacks as well.

Nux didn't even give him time to adjust properly.

“Aren't you a little too slow for an Emperor? Ah, maybe the Armor you are wearing is too heavy for you to move properly huh?

You really are a scardy cat huh?

An Emperor wearing an armor this heavy...

What did you think? It would save you from getting beaten?

It might protect you from the attacks that aim at your heart but,

What are you going to do about that gap that leaves your neck unprotected?”

Nux threatened.

“Don't worry though, I won't aim for your neck.

Your death won't be this simple, Roone Lizander.”

Nux laughed as he continued to attack.

\*Clank\* \*Clank\* \*Clank\*

Yes, he was teasing an Emperor in the middle of the battle...

It was as if...

He was playing around... with an Emperor...

A King Stage Cultivator was doing something like that...

Alcimus and Herms...

The Emperors who were witnessing this scene couldn't believe what they were seeing.

“Herms, let me introduce you the trump card I was hiding,

The strongest King Stage Cultivator to ever exist,

The King Stage Cultivator who drew against me, the so-called strongest human in the world.”

Astaria revealed with a proud look on her face.

# Chapter 608 Fuck. Did I Go Too Far With My Teasing?

\*Bam\*

“Khakookk!!”

Roone was sent flying as he was punched again. The Helmut he wore fell down, Nux leisurely walked towards the Helmut and picked it up.

“Hmmm. This really is a good material huh.”

“You bastard!”

Roone cursed in anger.

He couldn't understand.

Just what in the hell was happening here?

What's with this ridiculous monster standing in front of him?

He was clearly a King Stage Cultivator, how in the hell is he fighting against him, an Emperor?

Also, why the hell is he so fast!?

He has spared with his father many times before joining this battle.

He knew how fast normal Emperors are, this man, however, is faster than that. Combining his speed with the double swords he was carrying...

His attacks were almost endless.

The weight of Roone's sword was equal to a normal Great Sword, swinging it was not easy, the power it provides him comes with a price,

And that was his speed.

Roone had to sacrifice his speed to get gain this strength and this King Stage Cultivator was exploiting this weakness with his unnatural speed.

"I have to say, I really am a bad matchup for you huh?"

Nux smiled.

"..."

Roone didn't say anything and continued to glare at Nux.

Nux was right.

Nux versus Roone was like an Assassin versus Tank.

No matter how much Roone tried, he failed to keep up. His eyes were able to see where Nux was going to attack, however, moving to defend that area was another challenge, especially with the heavy combat gear he was using.

Even Astaria had a hard time keeping up with Nux's speed and was forced to take the attacking side in order to deal with Nux's speed, for someone like Roone, Nux's was simply a nightmare.

"AAggghhhh!!"

Suddenly, Roone gathered his strength and rushed towards Nux.

His image matched an angry bull.

Nux simply dodged his attack.

Roone, however, was not done yet and attacked again, Nux dodged.

He knew that blocking Roone's attack was not possible, even his 7 Star Swords won't hold on and would be broken into pieces.

Dodging was the only option.

Of course, that didn't mean that dodging like a mouse was the only thing Nux could do.

“Or maybe... it's not about the matchup, but a skill issue?”

Suddenly, Nux thought to himself and started thinking of another possibility,

“Maybe you are just not good enough when it comes to handling weapons?”

Hmmm, if your father had this combat gear, I am sure he would have done a far better job than you.

Why didn't you give it to him?

Was it because you would be too useless after losing this combat gear? Well, I can certainly see that happening.”

Nux nodded to himself.

“You talk a lot for a mere insect who does nothing but keep dodging my attack!”

Roone shouted in anger as he continued to unleash his attacks on Nux.

“Heeh? What kind of logic is that?”

If I am failing to hit an Expert Stage Cultivator, would others think it is because the Expert Stage Cultivator is running around like an insect, or would they think that I am just an incompetent King Stage Cultivator who should just quit everything and give up on his life?”

Nux just continued to dodge.

Emperors have nearly unlimited amounts of Mana as long as they do not use their own Mana, however, this did not mean that they had unlimited stamina.

If Roone continued to move like that, sooner or later, he would tire out.

Once that happens, then without his helmet, Roone would become a walking target.

Therefore, Nux was just riling him up, making him attack him more inefficiently and wasting more and more energy.

Of course, it didn't mean Nux could take this battle easy, if even one of these attacks connect,

It would be lethal to the point Nux wouldn't be able to take part in the future battle, or in the worse case, he might even die.

Therefore, even though he was acting like he was toying around with Roone, he was still giving his all.

“You fucking bastard!!”

Roone shouted again and suddenly, his speed increased.

‘Huh?’

A frown appeared on Nux's face.

This man...

He was using his own Mana to increase his body movement speed...

Even Astaria hadn't done something like this before...

No, more precisely, Astaria wasn't capable of doing something like this.

Body Movement speed was different from overall speed, speed can simply be increased when one focuses on legs, however, when it comes to Body

Movements, one had to spread the Mana all over his body accurately.

It was a risky process that required absolute control over one's Mana.

For Roone to pull something like this...

Nux was in a bad spot.

With this, Roone got rid of his most troubling weakness, not to mention it was a weakness Nux was taking advantage of.

‘Well... fuck.’

Nux cursed inwardly.

He quickly jumped back. Roone, however, followed him and appeared right in front of him, and slashed his sword.

Nux barely used [Mirror] to diffuse the attack.

Roone was surprised and couldn't understand how Nux parried his attack, soon however, he decided not to think about it.

Nux's facial expression has changed.

Even though he somehow parried his attack and it looked effortless, Roone doubted that he could continue doing that for a long period of time, therefore,

“It is time you know your place, insect!”

Roone's eyes shined brightly and,

\*Slash\* \*Slash\* \*Slash\*

He started attacking continuously at a speed where now Nux was having a hard time reacting to them.

And unlike Nux, all his attacks were deadly and Nux was forced to continuously use [Mirror], which was eating up his mana.

‘Fuck. Did I go too far with my teasing?’

Nux questioned inwardly as he continued to parry Roone’s attack while jumping back again and again, trying to create some distance, only to be followed up by Roone.

He glanced at Roone again and seeing the excited but determined look on his face, Nux’s face turned grim.

# Chapter 609 Luck Or Skill?

He glanced at Roone again and seeing the excited but determined look on his face, Nux's face turned grim.

Even though he was clearly winning the battle, Roone didn't show an ounce of overconfidence.

Nux activated his [Sense] and started surveying his surroundings.

A small smile then appeared on his face as he continued to defend Roone's attack using [Mirror] while rushing in a certain direction.

Soon, Roone's expression changed.

'Haah! Caught you little bug!'

That was his eyes were screaming.

Nux's back was now touching a tree, his escape routes were cut off, and now all Roone has to do is attack till Nux is out of Mana and Nux is dead.

Roone's smile widened as he thought about it.

This insect has been bothering him for a while now, not only that but that Alcius bastard has also taken a Healing Potion and is now recovering his health. He would soon join the battle soon.

Roone had to get rid of this boy before Alcius is ready to fight again.

Even he wouldn't be able to take both of them at the same time.

Thinking that, Roone aimed at Nux's neck and slashed his sword, this time, however, unlike when Nux would use [Mirror], he took the risk and crouched.

‘You are done.’

With that thought in his mind, Roone used his speed and changed his sword’s trajectory, aiming at Nux’s head.

This time, Nux couldn’t dodge.

Alcimus’s speed was just too fast for him to react.

However, suddenly, Roone’s expression changed.

*\*Pierce\**

He quickly did a 360 turn, barely dodging the purple-colored spike that suddenly popped out of the tree.

Roone’s eyes widened in horror as he saw the pointy edge of the Spike right in front of his eyes.

It was close,

If he reacted even a mini second later, his head would have been pierced by this thing and he would have died.

Roone’s heart started beating quickly as he gulped in fear.

His eyes quickly turned towards Nux and seeing the solemn expression on his face that seemed to say

‘Fuck, it missed.’

Roone realized that Nux had planned all this for a long time.

“Haahh... Haahh... Haa...”

Roone’s breathing turned heavy as he glared at Nux.

He quickly jumped away from the weird spike, his eyes, however, didn’t leave Nux.

Nux's expression didn't relax either.

He was planning to end this battle using this.

He had already used more than half of his Mana. Creating this Spike took more Mana than Nux normally uses when he uses this ability.

Nux knew he couldn't hold on any longer. Astaria would still need some time before Herms is defeated, the same goes for Alcimur, who needed some time before joining the battle as well. He needed to battle this monster alone.

Nux now understood why Herms was not the one who wielded this combat gear.

Using Mana to increase his body movement speed... it was a monstrous ability...

Nux was having a hard time.

The only two options he now had was to either use [Harem's Gate] and escape momentarily, however, this would put his women in a risky position, this wasn't something he would do.

The last option was to use [Blink Fault], he would pass out, however, he would at the very least, kill this bastard.

Nux prepared himself as he tightened his grip around his sword.

“That's a nice little skill you h-”

Roone suddenly turned silent and his expression changed.

He touched his nostrils and then brought his fingers in front of his eyes.

It was blood.

Blood was coming out of Roone's nose

Seeing this, Nux's expression changed as well. He momentarily canceled the idea of using [Blink Fault], and with a doubtful expression on his face,

He rushed towards Roone, getting ready to attack.

Roone glanced at Nux and prepared to receive his attack, the Mana in his body started moving and,

“Khooookkh!”

He coughed out blood.

A smile appeared on Nux's face when he realized what had happened.

‘Why don't you try increasing your strength and speed at the same time using your own Mana? I know it would burn your Mana very quickly but won't the result be satisfactory? Your opponents wouldn't even be able to react and by the time you run out of Mana, your opponent would be dead.’

Nux remembered asking this question when he realized that using their own Mana gave a greater boost to Emperors compared to using the World's Mana.

Astaria, however, just shook her head,

‘Burning our Mana faster isn't the problem here.’

‘What do you mean?’

Nux frowned.

‘Playing with Mana is risky, Nux.

You need absolute concentration for it.

Using your own Mana to increase both Strength and Speed is not something that can be achieved easily, and even if you do achieve something like that, maintaining it is another problem.

You lose your concentration for even a second and your Mana would run wild all over your body.’

‘What would happen if something like that happens?’

‘You wouldn’t be able to use your Mana for at least a week.’

Astaria replied with a grim look on her face.

As he recalled this conversation, Nux couldn’t help but continue to smile.

He suddenly appeared in front of Roone, and placing his sword inside his storage ring, he glanced at Roone and,

“Why don’t you try taking this punch?”

Saying that, Nux punched.

Roone tried to move the surrounding Mana to defend against the punch, however,

“Khhoockkk!”

He coughed out blood again and at the same time,

Nux’s punch connected.

\*Bam\*

Roone’s body flew back.

On the other hand, Nux’s theory was confirmed.

Nux knew increasing his body movement speed using Mana wouldn’t be that simple. Roone needed absolute concentration as well. However, the spike he prepared for him took him by surprise, and that little shock was enough for the Mana to completely destroy Roone’s body.

As if scared that something strange would happen, Nux quickly rushed towards Roone, pushed him onto the ground, sat on top of him and, continued to punch without giving him a second to rest.

\*Bam\* \*Bam\* \*Bam\*

Roone was already shocked and was still processing the situation. Combined with the barrage of punches that Nux was unleashing on him, his mind was getting more and more numb.

The Transition between the Nux was who just playing around with and the Nux that was not even giving him a chance to breathe was...

Scary.

Roone still couldn't understand what happened.

Nux didn't give up on this chance, once he was sure that Roone wouldn't be able to move for a while,

He quickly removed his pesky armor and,

\*Slash\* \*Slash\*

“AAAGGGGGGGHHHHH!!!!”

He severed both his arms.

# Chapter 610 There Are Quite A Lot Of Things We Have To Talk About.

\*Slash\* \*Slash\*

“AAAGGGGGGGHHHHH!!!!”

Nux severed both his arms.

“Haaahh...”

While Roone howled in agony, Nux sat down right next to him and exhaled deeply.

He was on his edge throughout the entire battle.

All the spars against Astaria, no matter how real they were, in the end, both he and Astaria knew they wouldn't kill each other.

No matter how much they try, it would never become a real battle.

As for the time with Amletus... well, it was not exactly a battle...

Therefore, this was Nux's first time actually fighting against an Emperor.

At first, he tried to sneak up and behead Roone, ending this in a single move, however, as an Emperor who was sensitive to Mana, Roone quickly noticed him and he had to change his attack.

Nux had a psychological advantage in this battle,

A King Stage Cultivator who was fighting against an Emperor.

He was an oddity, so Roone couldn't guess how powerful Nux actually was.

He had that element of mystery around him, which Nux tried to use as much as possible, by trying to act as calmly as he could. To the point that he was even ridiculing his enemy and was acting like everything was under his control.

Nux did have an advantage of speed, however, Roone's combat gear was too powerful. Roone just protected his neck, as for the rest of the body, the Armor did the job and none of Nux's attacks worked.

That was also the reason why Nux was trying to rile Roone up throughout the battle. He wanted him to make a mistake. He was looking for an opportunity to get rid of him as soon as he could. Roone, however, was much more careful than Nux thought.

Even though the man was reacting to Nux's every word, he didn't let his guard down even for a second, Nux had to give it to him, Roone was a lot better than most of the people he had fought before.

'I guess he isn't an Emperor for nothing...'

Nux thought inwardly as he glanced at Roone who was still wailing in agony.

'Heh. I got lucky.'

Suddenly, Nux laughed.

He would admit, he was in a tight spot there.

Even after weeks of practice with Astaria, defeating an Emperor is not something he could do easily as a King Stage Cultivator.

As the Mana Potion Nux drank starting showing effect, he quickly glanced in Astaria's direction.

She was still fighting against Herms and from the looks of it, she would need some time before the fight ends.

Of course, Nux wouldn't dare go and help her, he knew Astaria well, and she would kill him if he did something unnecessary.

That was her pride as a warrior.

'Do you need any help?' Nux used his telepathic connection and questioned.

'We are fine. Everything is under control.' Ember replied.

'It would be surprising if it wasn't under control.' Amaya commented.

'Once Astaria defeats Herms, we would force the Solid Earth Soldiers to surrender.

No more useless bloodshed is required.' Evane spoke with a solemn look as well.

When it came to the War without the Emperors, Nux and his women never doubted themselves.

The Skyfall Kingdom had the strongest army in the world, the Woods Dynasty was already on their side, not only that, but the upper echelons of the Skadi Kingdoms, all of them were their slaves as well.

The Solid Earth Kingdom never stood a chance.

The only thing they were worried about was the trump card that Herms was hiding and from the looks of it,

This so-called trump card was now in Nux's arms.

Thinking about all this, a smile appeared on Nux's face, and then he turned his face towards Boone, who was lying on the floor.

"Well Well Well, now isn't this quite an interesting turn of events?"

Nux commented.

Actually, Nux was aiming to get rid of Boone as soon as he could. Unlike his other enemies, Boone was an Emperor and was not someone he can play around with.

Nux knew that well and wasn't willing to take any unnecessary risks.

There was no better enemy than a dead enemy, that was what Nux believed.

However, there were certain instances when things changes.

Now, for example.

Boone wasn't able to use Mana now.

His Arms were severed.

Even a Mortal would be able to kill him. He was as good as dead.

Nux then crouched near Boone's face and grabbed his hair,

"Hmmm."

Then, Nux started thinking.

He glanced at Boone's legs and,

"Well, just to be safe..."

Saying those words, Nux stood up and walked towards Boone's legs.

Boone's eyes widened in horror, for some reason, he knew what Nux was thinking about. He tried to use his remaining strength to try and run away, however, the moment he stood up, Nux kicked him from behind and then without giving him any chances,

\*Slash\* \*Slash\*

"AAAAGGghGGHHHhHHH!!"

He severed his legs below his knees.

“Hmmm, this would make sure you won’t do something unnecessary, here, drink this, it will stop your bleeding.

I think.”

Nux said and at the same time, he forced a Healing Potion into Roone’s mouth.

It was scary how calm he was while doing all of this.

It was as if he was possessed by an emotionless demon...

Nux was usually an easy-to-go man... but this time...

Roone said some things he shouldn’t have said...

And Nux didn’t forget any of that.

Nux then pulled Roone’s hair and lifted his head, lifting his head in air, Nux spoke with a demonic smile on his face.

“There are quite a lot of things we have to talk about.

I am sure this would be an exciting conversation.”

“AGGGHhGGGHHhHHH!!”

Even though Nux didn’t even do anything yet, Roone shouted in fear.

He wanted to alert his father, but for some reason, seeing him acting like that, Nux just smiled.

“Don’t bother, he wouldn’t be able to listen to your screams. It’s a little magic trick of mine.”

At the same time, he picked one of the Roone’s severed arms and Black Mist came out of Nux’s hand.

The Mist surrounded Roone's arm however, a few seconds later, Nux just snorted and threw the arm away.

'Tsk, it is still not working.' Nux shook his head in disappointment,

"Anyways,"

He then turned towards Roone and questioned,

"So? What did you say again?"

You wanted to see us beg in front of you?

No no, you actually graciously allowed a few of my wives to become your concubines, right, I remember that..."

Nux nodded to himself as he looked into Roone's eyes.

Roone's body trembled.

This...

This was going to get a little painful for the Emperor.

# Chapter 611 Tsk, I Can'T Believe He Killed His Opponent Faster Than Me.

\*Clank\* \*Clank\* \*Clank\*

“Heh. You are weaker than I expected.”

Herms laughed as he continued to block Astaria’s attacks with his Great Sword.

“...”

Astaria didn’t say anything and continued with her attacks.

Unlike Nux, she didn’t have to play with her opponent’s emotions to achieve a victory. Her battle style was different.

A Battle Style that oozed out with confidence.

A bold, relentless, and dominant warrior.

That was what Astaria was.

Herms, on the other hand, held an advantage when it came to strength, however, Astaria didn’t give him any chance to use that strength. From the start to now, she has been relentlessly attacking him, forcing him to defend and only defend.

The victor was this battle was already clear.

Of course, this didn’t mean Astaria let her guard down, she continued to attack Herms.

Aiming at his legs, arms, shoulders, abdomen, back, neck, feet, forcing him to move his sword as much as possible and expend as much stamina as possible.

Herms didn't have a choice.

He knew that he would have a hard time fighting against Astaria, however... the battle would be this one-sided...

He never expected it.

Astaria was full of openings.

However, Herms felt like those openings are only there because Astaria was fighting against him and he used a Great Sword.

None of those weaknesses was something he could affect using a Great Sword.

It was as if Astaria has specially reformed her fighting style to match and perfectly counter his own.

Of course, Herms was giving himself too much credit.

He was not alone.

Astaria, who had sparred with all the Emperors there were, had prepared a battle style to counter all of them.

That was the only thing she could train on after becoming an Emperor after all.

A constant will to improve.

Astaria was burning with that.

Of course, this didn't mean she knew everything about all the Emperors.

Only an idiot would go all out while sparring against an enemy.

All the Emperors saved their trump cards.

Herm's did the same as well.

A poisoned needle suddenly appeared in Herm's hand and he quickly threw it, aiming at Astaria's waist.

Astaria, however, completely ignored the needle and continued to attack.

Herm's smile widened.

Astaria was underestimating his hidden weapon. The poison it was laced with could kill a King Stage Cultivator within 10 seconds. Even an Emperor would slow down once the poison affects them.

Herm was planning to keep on attacking Astaria with these needles, and once the effect of poison stacks up, he would end her.

A smile appeared on Herm's face when he thought about it.

Soon, however, the smile that had just appeared on his face disappeared.

The needle was reflected...

It failed to pierce through the Purple Black 'clothes' Astaria was wearing.

Herm's narrowed his eyes.

He had injected his own Mana into that needle... it should have pierced through any normal 3 Star Armor... a piece of clothes shouldn't be able to block it...

Something was wrong...

Herm started thinking.

“!!!”

Soon, however, his eyes widened in surprise as Astaria attacked his arm. This attack was unusually quick, and since his mind was already preoccupied, he only managed to react at the last second. Astaria's sword managed to cut through the vambrace and graze his forearm.

“Uggghh!”

Herms groaned in pain as he clenched the Sword he was holding.

Astaria, however, wasn't done yet and continued her attack since Herms's defense had weakened.

“Aagghh!”

Herms groaned in pain as Astaria's sword grazed his waist.

‘What kind of sword is that?’

Herms questioned inwardly.

That sword was cutting through his Armor as if it was paper.

His Armor was practically useless.

Herms, however, did not have time to think more about it.

Astaria was now unleashing a series of attacks at him just because he temporarily lost some of his concentration for a fraction of a second.

Herms's looked at Astaria's face and seeing that resolute look in her eyes, which seemed to be dead set on killing him, he couldn't help was shiver.

Astaria was reading him as if he was an open book.

Herms's felt that she was reading his mind, the moment he loses his focus, she would jump on the chance and attack again.

Herms clenched his fist in anger, then, he threw 9 hidden needles, this time, he aimed at Astaria's face, hands, and shoes.

Astaria was forced to stop and block some of those poisoned needles, Herms used this chance and for the first time in the entire battle,

He attacked.

\*Clank\*

Astaria barely defended, however, while doing that, her sword was pushed back, and with her defense crumbled,

\*Bam\*

Herms kicked her abdomen.

Astaria was pushed back, Herms then rushed towards her and with momentum on his side, he used the weight of his sword, trying to slice Astaria into two parts.

\*Clank\*

Astaria barely defended, however, Herms easily overpowered her and she was forced to step back again.

Herms's smile widened.

He had now gained the momentum. Now all he had to do was to continue attacking Astaria.

He moved his own Mana again and slashed his sword.

\*Clank\*

Astaria defended at the last moment, however, the impact was so strong that his body flew away.

“Khookh!”

At the same time, Astaria coughed out blood.

She quickly rolled on the floor and gained her balance, but the moment she did, Herms appeared right in front of her and attack again.

This time, however, Astaria moved her own Mana to jump back.

Herms's sword missed. Stopping it midway was nearly impossible, Astaria used this chance to rush toward Herms,

Herms forcefully broke the momentum of his Great Sword and barely defended against Astaria's attack,

However, suddenly, a smile appeared on Astaria's face and she smiled,

“Oh, I guess their battle ended.

Tsk, I can't believe he killed his opponent faster than me.”

Herms's expression changed.

He moved his Mana again and forced Astaria to move back.

He then quickly turned his head to where Roone and Nux were fighting and seeing that scene, Herms's paused.

# Chapter 612 W-What Is That?

...

Herms's movements paused the moment his eyes laid on the scene in front of him.

That man was lifting his son through his hair, Roone's armor was stripped, his arms and legs were severed, and a pool of blood had formed under him.

'N-No.'

Herms's face turned pale when he observed his son's condition more deeply.

His eyes were gauged out. His tongue was cut off, that bastard was cruel enough to make sure that all the blood came out of Roone's mouth, not even allowing him to drown in his own blood.

There were deep scars around her face and chest area. The same was true for his abs and soon, Herms noticed a blood patch on Roone's pants around his crotch area.

What happened was clear...

His... his son's reproductive organ was chopped off as well...

That bastard... he had thoroughly tortured his son.

Herms's eyes then fell on Nux, the bastard responsible for all this. Herms's eyes were filled with rage. A rage so deep and pure that any normal man would tremble in fear if he saw that gaze.

Nux, however, looked back at Herms's face with a resolute expression on his face.

He didn't care.

Roone dared to lay his eyes on his wives, he had to die.

In the most painful way possible.

The longer Herms saw this scene, the more his body trembled in rage.

No matter what happens.

He would kill this bastard!

He would absolutely annihilate him, then cut his body into 10,000 pieces and feed it to dogs!

\*Slash\* \*Slash\*

Suddenly, Herms's expression changed.

He knew something happened and as if on cue, his brain registered the pain.

“AAAAGggGGGGGGHhhHHHH!!!”

Herms's screamed in agony.

\*Thud\* \*Thud\*

At the same time, both his arms, which were severed by Astaria, fell on the ground.

“To shift your focus somewhere else while you fight me, you sure are gutsy.”

Astaria commented with a cold look on her face.

“AAagAGGAGGgghhGHHH!”

However, instead of answering, Herms continued to scream in pain.

Inwardly, Astaria sighed.

She didn't know it before, but with how Herms completely ignored her presence the moment he saw his son's condition, she realized that Herms's love for his child was stronger than she thought.

An Emperor would never expose his back in front of his enemy no matter what...

If Herms did something like that...

Then Astaria feared that he might even take a nasty step that even she would have trouble against.

Therefore, she had to make sure that Herms never use his sword again.

What was the best way to do it?

It was to get rid of his arms.

And that's what Astaria did.

Now even if something out of the expectation happens, Herms wouldn't be able to do anything.

Confirming her victory, Astaria glanced at Nux, and seeing his face which was still covered in Roone's blood, Astaria didn't know how to react.

That expression...

Somehow it sent goosebumps all over her body. Even she was concerned by that gaze of his.

However, in the end, she forced herself not to think too much about it and nodded.

Nux looked at Astaria and nodded back.

The War had ended.

Nux then pulled Roone up into the air and placed his sword on Roone's neck.

Astaria understood what he wanted to do,

She quickly grabbed Herms's hair and placed her sword around his neck as well.

Herms didn't resist either. He looked nothing more than a lifeless puppet now. He wasn't even screaming in pain now.

Astaria and Nux glanced at each other again and just when they were about to cut off Herms's and Roone's heads,

A frown appeared on Astaria's face.

Herms suddenly lowered his head and spoke,

“Astaria, in this battle between you and me,

You won.”

Astaria's frown deepened, for some reason, she didn't like this situation at all.

She glanced at Nux and noticed that he was the same, he quickly beheaded Roone and rushed towards them.

Herms, who saw his son being beheaded right in front of his eyes didn't react at all.

Rather, he just glanced at Nux and spoke,

“The same goes for you, boy. For defeating Roone when he wore that Armor... even I couldn't do something like that.

The two of you completely defeated us.

However,

I will not congratulate yo-”

Before Herms could complete, Nux placed his sword on his neck and threatened in a cold tone,

“I do not like games like these, old man.

Be quick and make sure whatever you are saying is useful,

Else you will regret it.”

“Heh. You are impatient.”

Herms smiled.

Seeing that bloody smile, Nux and Astaria frowned.

“I hope your end is even more painful than my son’s.”

Herms spoke.

Then suddenly, a strange energy burst inside his body and he disappeared and appeared in front of both Astaria and Nux.

Seeing that energy, Astaria’s expression changed.

This...

This would have been troublesome if Herms had his arms...

But now...

Astaria didn’t know what Herms was planning.

However, she didn’t plan to give him time to do anything.

She quickly rushed towards him, however, the moment she arrived near him, he disappeared, Astaria and Nux quickly took their battle stance, however,

\*Pierce\*

Soon, their eyes fell on Herms, who...

Who had used the spike Nux had created to attack Roone to pierce his neck and... killed himself.

Yes, he committed suicide.

And that too, in one of the most gruesome manner.

“What... in the hell happened?”

Astaria couldn't help but question.

“I... I have no clue.”

Nux shook his head.

The situation was just too bizarre.

He didn't know how to react here.

“He... killed himself?”

In the end, Nux spoke and even now, his tone was unsure.

“A-Anyways, the war has ended.”

Astaria tried to regain her composure.

“Y-Yes.”

Nux nodded as well.

It was better to just forget what happened.

“I will conta-”

Just as Nux was about to contact his wives, his and Astaria's expression changed as a frightening Aura surrounded their bodies.

“W-What is that?”

Nux questioned as his face turned pale.

# Chapter 613 It Seems You Had Quite The Fun When You Were Fighting Him.

“W-What is that?”

Nux questioned as his face turned pale.

He had felt something like this before.

It was the time when Astaria used her Aura to pressure him and broke his knees. However, there was a difference between these two situations.

This Aura...

It was far more frightening than Astaria's.

When Astaria used her Aura against him, Nux's fighting spirit was ignited.

‘I will not give in.’

That was his thought and that was why he decided to fight back to the point that even his knees broke.

Now, however, things were different.

Surrounded by this Aura, rather than the fighting spirit, Nux felt fear.

Yes.

He was afraid.

Afraid to the point where his body was trembling and his face was completely pale.

This pressure...

This suffocating feeling...

It wasn't something he could fight against...

Suddenly, Nux fell on his knees as he breathed heavily.

“Haahh.., Haahh... Haa...”

He gulped again.

His eyes then fell on Astaria and he noticed that she had pierced her sword into the ground.

Her arms were trembling, clearly, it was getting more and more difficult for her to continue standing, however, she still didn't give in.

Her pride was even higher than Nux's.

Her expression was still resolute.

She knew it as well.

This feeling was foreign and wasn't something she had felt before, however, even then, she knew.

Whatever it was,

Defeating it was impossible.

Seeing her, Nux's expression changed.

He clenched his fists and under this immense pressure, he gritted his teeth, pierced his sword into the ground as well, and then, he stood up.

“Khoockk!”

Nux coughed out blood.

However, the fear in his eyes had disappeared.

He would not give in as well.

“Hmmm? They are dead huh.”

Suddenly, Nux and Astaria heard a voice.

They quickly turned around and noticed an extremely handsome man wearing normal, everyday clothes, walking towards them with a smile on his face.

The man had long, white colored hair that was black on the ends, sharp blue colored eyes, fierce white eyebrows, a clean face, a thin nose, light pink lips, and an overall handsome appearance.

One odd thing to note about that man was that he had black stripes all over his body, even his face, and unlike normal, human ears, he had tiger-like ears coming out of his head.

It was a bizarre appearance and the moment Nux’s eyes fell on this man, he realized that this man was not a human.

(Picture in para comments)

Nux’s golden eyes shined and,

[Name: Nawdren Besch.]

[Age: 129-895]

[Mana Cultivation: Pseudo Sage.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Race: Mutated Human-Beast]

[Occupation: Protector of the Sealed Continent.]

[Talent: –]

[LVL: 79.5]

The moment all this information appeared in front of Nux's eyes, he couldn't help but frown.

Just what the hell is this?

Was he really looking at the information using the [Eye of Discerning]?

What the hell was it so different?

The last time Nux checked, the age only consisted of a number, he had never seen a hyphen being used in age.

Also, what was this Pseudo Sage?

Mortal, Apprentice, Beginner, Master, Grand Master, Expert, King, and Emperor.

Where the hell is 'Pseudo Sage' here?

Also, why is the level written in decimals?

Then there is race, a mutated human beast, this, Nux could understand.

But then there's the occupation.

Protector of the Sealed Continent?

What is the Sealed Continent in the first place?

Is there a place sealed somewhere around here?

Did they somehow awaken this... strange thing... or man while fighting here?

Nux thought inwardly, however, soon, he shook his head and denied this conjecture.

The timing of this man's appearance was too accurate for it to be just that.

Herms seems to know about this man's existence. The same goes for this man, he knew about Herms as well.

The two of them are definitely connected.

Thinking about all this, Nux's face turned serious.

“He is not someone we can go easy against.

He is someone who is stronger than an Emperor Stage Cultivator.

He is a stage above Emperor.”

Nux spoke with a solemn look on his face as he glanced at Astaria.

“Stage above the Emperor...?”

Astaria questioned with a surprised look on her face.

Nux nodded.

According to how System normally worked, this man should still be an Emperor Stage Cultivator, however, the System has never shown 79.5 as a level.

The same goes for the ‘Mana Cultivation’ section.

A Pseudo Sage.

It was also a stage Nux has never seen.

Nux hypothesized that ‘Level 80’ the stage above the Emperor was ‘Sage’, this man, who was a Pseudo Sage, should still only be an Emperor, however, the energy he released seemed to tell otherwise.

This energy was definitely out of the ordinary and not something an Emperor could release.

“Are you done with this discussion of yours?”

Suddenly, the man questioned.

“...”

Nux and Astaria didn't say anything.

The man didn't mind either, he just glanced at Herms's and Roone's dead bodies and sighed,

“They really are dead...”

His focus then fell on Roone's body and he raised his eyebrow,

“Oh? It seems you had quite the fun when you were fighting him.”

The man spoke as he glanced at Nux.

Nux felt goosebumps all over his body when he felt this man's gaze. His face turned pale again, his legs weakened, this time, however, he didn't kneel down and stood strong.

“Oh? A mere King Stage Cultivator is able to go stand in front of my Aura, that's interesting,

No wonder you were able to defeat him.”

The man muttered to himself as he glanced at Nux with an interested look on his face.

Astaria, on the other hand, couldn't help but think about something else,

‘How does he know that Nux was the one who killed him?’

She was sure that this man wasn't there when they fought.

She didn't sense anyone.

And this man didn't have a reason to hide his presence.

Astaria was 100% sure that this man came here just now,

So just how...

“And you must be the one who killed Herms.”

# Chapter 614 Do You Have Any Plans?

“And you must be the one who killed Herms.”

Suddenly, the man turned his face towards Astaria and spoke.

Astaria, who was still immersed in her own thoughts was taken by surprise when the man turned towards her. She noticed the pressure surrounding her body became heavier. She, however, used her own Mana to negate the pressure and looked into the man’s eyes without an ounce of fear in her eyes.

“He was weak.”

She replied.

She never needed any justification to kill anyone.

“Heeh?”

Hearing her reply, the man couldn’t help but smile.

“He was weak huh?”

The man muttered.

Suddenly, Nux stepped close to Astaria. Even though he didn’t say anything, his intent was clear.

He was ready for the fight.

If something happens, he would fight together with Astaria.

“Well, you aren’t wrong, he was pretty weak.”

Suddenly, the man laughed. He then glanced at Boone and nodded,

“The same goes for this man, he was weak as well.”

Then, the man frowned,

“But I remember giving this my combat gear, how did he lose when he had that?

And most importantly, where is my combat gear?” The man questioned as he glanced at Nux.

It was as if asking the question was just a formality, he knew Nux had the combat gear with him.

Nux narrowed his eyes, preparing for the battle.

There is no way in hell he was going to give the combat gear to this man. He was already scary enough as he was. If he got the combat gear with that, things would get even messier.

As if he read Nux’s mind, the man smiled and shook his head,

“You know I can kill you without the combat gear, right?”

“...”

Nux didn’t say anything.

‘Would the [Blink Fault] work?’ Suddenly, Nux heard Ember’s voice.

‘Where are you?’

Nux questioned in a panicked tone.

Anything but that.

His women should not come here. No matter what.

He didn't want to say it directly, but with their current strength, they would become a weakness.

'Don't worry, we won't be coming there.

For now at least.'

Ember knew what Nux was thinking and couldn't help but clench her fist in anger.

She was angry at her weak self. The other women were the same.

They have sensed Nawdren's Aura as well.

All of them were helpless in front of an Emperor, compared to someone who can overwhelm Emperors,

They were like ants.

None of the women were stupid enough to rush toward Nux in this situation, they would only make things worse, they knew it.

At the same time, none of them decided to run away either.

Not because they were planning to help when needed, as mentioned before, they wouldn't be able to do anything, they only stayed there because they didn't wish to stand out.

No one knew how strong Nawdren's perception was.

If he noticed that all of them were running away, he might chase after them, which would in turn make things difficult for Nux.

'It's fine then.' Nux sighed in relief.

'Anyways, what about it, would [Blink Fault] work?' Ember questioned again.

Nux glanced at Nawdren who was picking his nose with a careless look on his face and the shook his head,

‘I do not know... but if I had to guess...

Then I don’t think it would...’

‘...’

Ember and other women’s expressions turned serious.

‘Do you... have any plans?’

Ember questioned.

‘...’ Nux didn’t say anything.

The women turned silent.

Thyra turned towards Amaya, however, this time, even she shook her head.

The same was true for Riona as well.

She didn’t have any way out either.

“Haahh! This is getting boring.” Suddenly, Nawdren sighed.

Then, his relaxed body language changed and he glanced at Nux and Astaria,

“You two killed my subordinates, that is unacceptable.

Surrender, replace these two, hand over your Kingdoms to me, and I will let you live.

How is it?”

“Keep dreaming.”

Astaria responded.

Hearing this reply, Nawdren's smile widened.

“As I expected. You guys are a lot more fun than these two weak bastards!  
Hahaha!

This would definate-”

Before the man could even complete, Nux appeared in front of him and attacked.

However, to Nux's shock, the man simply grabbed his sword with his finger and a thumb and glanced at him.

“You are quite gutsy, a complete opposite of how you were trembling a while ago. I commend yo-”

Before Nawdren could complete, stepped away.

A huge spike popped out of the ground he was standing on.

He glanced at the Spike with a curious look on his face and started wondering,

“That's quite an interesting Skill you have, is it an 8-Star Skill? But how do you have something like that? Boy, you sure are full of sur-”

Astaria appeared behind Nawdren and attacked as well. Both she and Nux were in no mood of listening to his bullshit.

Only Nux had the right to bullshit while he is battling, everyone else was just annoying.

Unlike Nux's attack, which Nawdren could simply ignore, Astaria was different,

Even though he was strong, Nawdren still had to be a little cautious around Astaria, he quickly dodged her attack.

Nux, on the other hand, attacked again using his other sword.

Nawdren simply used the Nux's sword that he was holding to block his other sword, Nux, however, had already expected it, he let go of both his swords and used this chance to kick Nawdren's face.

\*Bam\*

However, to Nux's surprise, his kick didn't do any damage to Nawdren even though his attack connected perfectly.

“You shouldn't have done that bo-”

Nawdren was about to warn, however, Astaria used this chance and aim at his neck, trying to behead him for good.

Nawdren narrowly dodged.

Two new swords appeared in Nux's hands as he attacked again.

Both Astaria and Nux showed frightening teamwork, the one that put even someone like Nawdren in a tight spot.

“You fucking pests!!

I was being patient just now.”

Suddenly, the Aura around Nawdren changed.

Now he was actually pissed.

He suddenly disappeared from where he stood and appeared behind Nux.

“Nux!!!”

Astaria shouted in worry.

“!!!”

Nux's eyes widened in surprise.

He quickly activated [Mirror] to block Nawdren's attack. However, Nawdren was faster, his punch connected and,

\*Crack\*

Nux's spine broke.

“AAagggggghhhhh!”

# Chapter 615 That Boy Can'T Live.

“AAagggggghhh!”

Nux screamed in agony as his body flew away.

“NUX!!”

Astaria shouted in worry.

‘NUX!!’

His wives were the same as well.

“We are going there!”

Amaya spoke as she rushed towards Nux.

Ember, however, quickly appeared right next to her and held her hand,

“Are you out of your mind!? What are you even going to do there!?”

“I am sure I can do something much better than just staying here like a spineless bitch like you!”

Amana retorted in anger.

\*Slap\*

Suddenly, Evane, who was near them, slapped Amaya.

“You would nothing but bring even more trouble to him! You think Nux won’t react when you get hurt!? You think that man wouldn’t notice how much Nux cares for you!? What if that man decides to use you to make Nux do something that he would never do even if it cost his life!?”

“Would you be able to see that with your own eyes!?” Evane shouted.

“I-I would kill myself bef-”

“And as if that would make Nux feel a lot better right!?” Evane shouted again.

“You think all of us are happy knowing that we cannot help him!?” Evane questioned as she pointed at Ember.

Ember’s eyes were red.

Lawrence, who was looking at her knew she was angry.

Not angry at Amaya, but at herself.

He had never seen this expression on the always confident Ember’s face.

With how she was clenching her fists... and how her body was trembling... Lawrence knew she was barely holding back.

Amaya finally noticed Ember’s expression as well.

She freed her hand, however, this time, she did not rush toward Nux.

She just stood there, cursing her own weakness and helplessness.

The other women were the same as well.

All of them lowered their heads and clenched their fists.

Even Edda, Allura, and Skyla, the ones who rarely showed this kind of emotion... all of them were the same as well.

Suddenly, a figure rushed towards the battlefield where Nux was fighting.

“Where do you think yo-”

Evane was about to shout at the figure, however, she quickly realized it was not one of her sisters.

“Who is he?”

Felberta questioned.

“That’s Alcimus’s disciple,” Thyra answered.

“What is he trying to achieve?”

“Something all of us want to...”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

All the women turned silent.

...

On the other side, just as Astaria was about to rush towards Nux to check up on him, Nawdren appeared in front of her and attacked.

Astaria used her sword to block the attack.

“He is not dead yet, don’t worry.”

“You will pay for that.” Astaria glared at Nawdren and spoke in a hoarse voice.

“You seem to care a lot about that boy,” Nawdren noted.

Astaria didn’t say anything and slashed her sword at Nawdren.

“Though I must admit, he is absurdly strong for a mere King Stage Cultivator.”

Nawdren commented as he glanced at Nux who was groaning in pain.

At the same time, he deflected Astaria’s every attack using his bare hands.

Actually, it didn't even look like he cared much about this battle, it was as if Astaria was someone he could get rid of any time he wanted and he was just playing around and passing his time.

His eyes were fixed,

The King Stage Cultivator who is able to kill an Emperor was much more interesting to him than the so-called strongest human on this continent.

“I have decided.”

Suddenly, Nawdren spoke.

Astaria, however, completely ignored his blabbering and continued to attack, her attack wasn't doing any damage, and Nawdren was simply parrying her attacks as if they were nothing. However, she didn't care.

In the end, Nawdren was still blocking her attacks, which meant her attacks posed some threats to him.

So as long as she can break through his defense, she can do something about this situation.

“That boy can't live.”

Suddenly, Nawdren decided.

“I was thinking of keeping the two of you alive and turn you into my servants, however, keeping that boy alive is too risky, if he manages to become an Emperor, he might even have a shot at defeating me. He is a threat that I should remove.”

This time, Astaria's expression changed.

“Don't even think about it.” She warned.

Suddenly, the Mana around her moved, not to her arms, but to her sword and her sword shined.

Seeing Astaria's sword shining like that, Nawdren's expression changed.

He quickly jumped back and picked up the sword that fell out of Nux's hand and glanced at Astaria.

Astaria rushed towards him and slashed her sword,

Nawdren tried to defend her attack with the sword he picked, however, the moment Astaria's sword touched Nawdren's sword, it sliced it into two parts as if it was cutting butter and her attack continued to move towards Nawdren.

“Ugghhh!”

Nawdren was forced to move back, however, in the process, Astaria's sword grazed through his chest, leaving a big cut.

Nawdren jumped back again and touched his chest.

“As I thought.”

Seeing the blood in his hand and the broken sword in his other hand, Nawdren's expression turned even solemn as he glanced at Astaria.

Astaria, however, didn't give him any time and rushed toward him again.

Nawdren maintained his distance, not allowing Astaria to come near him.

“Running away after talking so big? I expected better.”

Astaria provoked.

“...”

Nawdren didn't say anything and continued to observe Astaria, or more specifically, her sword.

A few seconds later, Astaria's sword, which was shining started glimmering.

That was Nawdren's cue.

He quickly appeared near Astaria,

"I knew you couldn't maintain it for long.

An Emperor shouldn't even have the ability to manifest it in the first place."

He spoke and at the same time, he punched Astaria's abdomen.

"Khocckk!"

Astaria coughed out blood.

"Tsk, he was not alone.

You are an unusual monster as well.

You need to die as well."

Saying that, Nawdren grabbed Astaria by her throat and lifted her in the air.

Just as he was about to break her neck and end this once and for all,

Alcimus appeared.

"Not on my watch, you bastard!"

# Chapter 616 You Really Are Underestimating Me, Aren'T You?

“Not on my watch, you bastard!”

Alcimus shouted as he attacked Nawdren from behind. Nawdren dodged the attack, while he did that, Astaria kicked his abdomen and escaped from his grip.

“You...”

Nawdren’s expression changed.

Alcimus, however, didn’t care and attacked again.

Nawdren simply blocked his attack with his hand and punched his face.

“PHoocck!”

Alcimus’s body was sent flying.

Seeing this, a smile appeared on Nawdren’s face and he laughed,

“Heh, finally a normal human.

You must feel out of place when you compare yourself with monsters like them, don’t you?”

“...”

Alcimus didn’t say anything and just glanced at Astaria, who was currently beside Nux who was still lying on the floor.

“How about it?”

Suddenly, Nawdren questioned.

Alcimus tilted his head in confusion and Nawdren's smile widened,

“Herms and Roone are already dead. I remember there was another weakling as well, if he is not here, it means he must have died as well.

I will kill these 2 freaks right now, so you will be the only Emperor left on this continent.

How about it?

Would you like to get rid of these 2 freaks and be my subordinate?

I promise that I will treat you well.”

Nawdren offered.

“...”

Hearing those words, Alcimus turned silent.

He turned towards Astaria and Nux again, who were looking at him and Nawdren with grim expressions on their faces, then he turned towards Nawdren.

It was a good offer.

Even if they somehow manage to kill this bastard, the Skyfall Kingdom would have two beings who are as strong as Emperors, while he would be alone.

In the end, the Skyfall Kingdom would consume everything and he would be left with nothing.

No matter what happens, he would end up in the same position in both these cases.

Then... why not just choose the stronger side and stay alive?

Which of the two sides was stronger here?

The two who were currently sitting on the ground, injured, or the one being who was standing above all, looking down and suppressing all of them as if they were bugs?

Obviously, Nawdren was superior.

That boy named Nux may have tremendous potential, but currently, Nawdren had a clear upper hand.

Not only that, he also had people he wanted to protect, going against a man like Nawdren was simply a suicide.

“I am- Kkhooockk!”

Just as Alcius was about to agree, Nawdren appeared in front of him and punched him again.

“Hahaha~ I love playing with weaklings like you. To think you would actually start considering my offer?”

Hahaha~

Why would I want a weakling like you who has wasted all his potential and only has a few years left to live as my subordinate?

Not to mention that cowardly nature of yours is disgusting.

People like you would only become a hindrance.”

Nawdren laughed.

Alcius’s expression changed.

This bastard was playing with him.

Unlike Astaria and Nux, who Nawdren had actually acknowledged and considered them a threat, he was nothing but a plaything for him.

For a prideful Emperor, this treatment was... infuriating.

“You will pay for this.”

Alcimus muttered inwardly.

“What did you say, you insect?” Nawdren questioned.

Alcimus glared at Nawdren and rushed towards him again.

“I said you would pay for hitting me, you bastard!!”

Alcimus shouted as aimed at Nawdren’s neck.

“Oh yeah? Why don’t you make me pay then?”

Nawdren smiled and punched Alcimus’s abdomen.

“Khoocckk!!”

At the same time, Astaria appeared behind Nawdren and aimed at his legs, Nawdren simply lifted his feet and dodged.

“Oh? What is it? You are going to help this weakling who was about to betray you?” Nawdren questioned.

Astaria, however, didn’t say anything and continued to aim at Nawdren’s lower body, forcing him to step back and avoid her attacks.

When she fought Nawdren before, her sword somehow started absorbing her Mana and started glowing.

She didn’t know what was happening, however, she was certain about one thing.

That was something very powerful.

It cut through Nux’s 7-Star Sword as if it was nothing.

Even Nawdren, who was undermining everything was suddenly frightened of that move and started running away, waiting for her to burn off all her Mana. She even managed to put that huge scar on his chest using that Technique.

Astaria drank a Mana Potion however, that move needed absurd amount of Mana. She still didn't have enough Mana to activate that move again, and for some reason, Astaria felt that even if she did have enough Mana, she wouldn't be able to use that move.

She had tried to deactivate that move once Nawdren started running away in order to save her Mana, however, it was as if her sword had a will of its own and it wouldn't stop sucking off her Mana until she had barely any left.

Astaria knew that she cannot control that technique.

Not with how she was like right now.

She needed to get better.

But before that, she needed to defeat this man-beast in front of him, or else, both she and Nux would die here.

And to defeat this bastard, she needed Alcimus's help.

“Ahh, so that's it. You must be thinking of making use of this weakling in order to defeat me. That's why you are helping him, isn't that right?”

Suddenly, Nawdren laughed.

He knew what Astaria was thinking, however, suddenly, he shook his head,

“But I am disappointed.

You really are underestimating me, aren't you?”

Suddenly, a wide smile appeared on Nawdren's face as he questioned.

“Did you really think you, who has spent almost all her Mana and this weaking can work together and defeat me?

Do you really think something like that would work? Do you really believe he can actually be of any help to you? Heck he is not even a good meat shield.

An ant-like existence like him is simply useless.”

And as if trying to prove his point, Nawdren disappeared from his place and appeared in front of Alcimus,

Alcimus failed to react in time and Nawdren,

\*Bam\* \*Bam\* \*Bam\*

Started punching his face countless times.

He then grabbed Alcimus’s arm and started slamming him on the ground multiple times, treating him like nothing but a rag doll.

# Chapter 617 Even A Mere King Stage Cultivator Dares To Shout At Me? Heh.

He then grabbed Alcius's arm and started slamming him on the ground multiple times, treating him like nothing but a rag doll.

“Khhkkkkhkk!!”

Alcius groaned in pain.

He was completely helpless in front of Nawardren.

Astaria tried to help him as well, however, Nawardren was simply using Alcius's body like a weapon and was swinging him around, forcing Astaria to step back.

She couldn't even swing her sword because if she did, the one who would get hurt would be Alcius.

Of course, she didn't really care about this old man, however, the problem was, if she attacked, her sword would pierce Alcius's body, making it unusable for a few seconds, and those few seconds would be enough for Nawardren to end this battle.

“Khhoocckkk!!”

Alcius continued to groan in pain as Nawardren continued to slam him onto the ground.

“Yo- fucking bas-KhhHhkkh!”

Alcius tried to kick Nawardren in order to get away from him, Nawardren, however, simply changed the direction he was throwing him into and

completely blocked his momentum.

The scene was similar to a child 'wrestling' with his stuffed toy. Of course, Alcimus was the stuffed toy here.

'This cannot go on...'

Astaria, who was witnessing this scene thought with a solemn look on her face.

She glanced at Nux, who was still lying on the floor.

Their eyes met and Nux nodded at her.

Astaria nodded back.

The plan was clear.

Nux's [Regeneration] has already kicked in, combined with the Health Potion he had drank, his spine was pretty much healed now...

Just a few more minutes, and he would be able to fight back.

Astaria just needed to hold this man for a few more minutes.

What after Nux gets up?

Well, to be honest, both Astaria nor Nux didn't know.

They would team up with Alcimus and try to defeat Nawdren, however, with how things are currently happening,

Astaria doubted they would be able to win.

Nawdren was just too strong.

And with how he was currently playing around with Alcimus... Astaria doubted he would be able to fight with them...

Astaria glanced at Nux again and her expression changed.

Regret.

That man was a King Stage Cultivator who was capable of fighting against an Emperor... if he was an Emperor... then maybe... maybe he could have defeated Nawdren...

If only she had not initiated this stupid challenge and had given into Nux's advance...

Not only Nux, but even his wives would have also become an Emperor.

Nawdren may be strong, but in front of 11 Emperors... even he would have been helpless...

Astaria's eyes turned moist as she thought about all this.

Nux noticed that expression on Astaria's face and seeing the strongest human breaking down right in front of his eyes, Nux clenched his fist in anger.

Helplessness...

This was his first time feeling so helpless...

It was as if all that training he has been through... all of that was for naught.

'FUCK!!'

Nux cursed inwardly.

He was about to stand up, getting ready to attack Nawdren, ending this, even if it cost him his life, but suddenly,

"Father!!"

Suddenly, a man rushed towards the battlefield, and seeing the state Alcimus was in, the man's expression changed.

“Father...”

He called out again.

Alcimus, who was lying on the ground couldn't reply. His face was bruised, some of his bones were broken, it looked as if he was barely alive.

Seeing this scene, the man clenched his fist in anger.

His eyes then fell on the white-haired man-beast who was standing near Alcimus's body with a casual look on his face and shouted,

“You bastard! How dare you hurt my father!!?”

For some reason, the aura Nawdren unconsciously released had little to no effect on this man.

The man then rushed towards Nawdren, his sword appeared in his hand and he attacked, beheading Nawdren in one move.

...or at least that was what he had planned he would do.

However, before he could even attack, the man felt as if 1 million kilos of weight had been placed on top of his body, unable to take it, the man couldn't do anything and fell down, coughing out blood.

“Khhoocckk!”

The man's eyes widened in horror.

Just... just what in the hell was happening.

\*Step\*

Suddenly, Nawdren walked towards the man who was lying on the floor and placed his leg on the man's head.

“Hoh? Now this is interesting. Even a mere King Stage Cultivator dares to shout at me?”

That bastard has the strength to back it up, but a mere bug like you actually dared to do it?

Commendable indeed.”

Nawdren praised.

Soon, however, his expression changed.

“But do you even realize who you are talking to, little bug?”

“UUugggghhh!!”

The man groaned in pain as Nawdren applied more pressure on his head.

Suddenly, Nawdren’s expression changed.

“N-Nwo!”

Seeing that expression, Alcius widened his eyes in horror, even though he barely had the power to move, he extended his hands towards Nawdren, telling him to stop.

Nawdren glanced at Alcius, a cruel smile then appeared on his face and,

**\*Burst\***

He increased the pressure and...

The man’s head burst apart.

“...”

Alcius froze.

The man who died was none other than the son he adopted.

The son he was so proud of, the son he knew would become the hope of the Woods Dynasty and would follow him and become an Emperor...

A son who he loved more than his actual son...

Kyler Woods.

“You...”

Nawdren frowned when he noticed the change in Alcimus’s Aura.

“...”

Alcimus, however, didn’t say anything and just lowered his head.

It looked as if he had given up.

However,

Nawdren knew something was up.

Not only him, even Astaria knew something was wrong.

She quickly appeared next to Nux, for some reason, she felt this wasn’t going to end well.

“Astaria?”

Nux called out with a confused expression on his face.

“...”

Astaria didn’t reply and just continue to look at Alcimus.

Nux couldn’t understand why she was acting like this.

Suddenly,

Alcimus stood up.

Nux glanced at him and then he realized.

Alcimus was different from before...

The energy around him... Its intensity matched Nawdren's...

# Chapter 618 Ha... Haha... Hahahaha...

Alcimus stood up and glared at Nawdren.

His face was disfigured and was covered with his own blood, however, for some reason, that made him even more intimidating. His eyes shining under that bloodied face... Alcimus looked frightening.

And this was not true for just appearance alone.

The energy around Alcimus... Its intensity matched Nawdren's...

Yes, the energy the two of them released were of the same intensity, no, Alcimus's energy was even overpowering Nawdren's energy.

“Y-You crazy bastard.”

Nawdren cursed.

It was the first time he stuttered this whole time. It showed how serious the situation actually was.

Alcimus, however, didn't say anything and disappeared.

Nawdren took his battle stance and a vigilant expression appeared on his face.

Even he couldn't keep up with Alcimus's speed, therefore, he had to be prepared for everything.

He quickly used his Mana to cover all his vital spots, ready to take on Alcimus's attack.

Alcimus didn't play any tricks, he directly appeared in front of Nawdren and punched him.

Nawdren tried to block the punch, however, Alcimus's punch carried a far greater force than he expected. Nawdren's body was shot back and it collided with a tree.

“Khokkcchkkhh!”

It was the second time Nawdren was hurt in this battle.

Alcimus, however, didn't have any change in his expression. As if he was in some sort of hurry, he quickly appeared in front of Nawdren and aimed at his neck, wanting to end this as soon as possible.

Nawdren, however, focused all his Mana on his neck and chest and defended with anything he had.

\*Bam\* \*Bam\* \*Bam\*

Alcimus didn't give up, knowing that it was useless to attack Nawdren's neck, he started unleashing frighteningly strong punches, disfiguring Nawdren's face and hoping he would use his Mana to defend his face.

Nawdren, however, held on as if he was clenching to his dear life.

He continued getting punched, at the same time, maintaining Mana to defend his vital points.

\*Crack\*

“AAAgggGGghhhHHh!!”

Suddenly, Alcimus changed his tactics and attacked Nawdren's groin with his knee.

A \*Crack\* sound was heard.

Nawdren's eyes widened in horror and an agonizing scream was heard.

Alcimus used this opportunity to rip Nawdren's head, however, he was so focused on killing him that he didn't notice the 2 large wind spears that were aimed at his shoulders.

[Lance of Destruction]

A 7-Star Skill.

Since the activation time of a 7 Star Skill was too high, using it in the battle between Emperors was impractical, therefore, the 7 Star Skills were completely ignored.

The Skills below this level were too weak to actually be able to do anything, therefore, Emperors rarely used any skills when they fight.

However, Nawdren was different.

He had a lot of time to prepare this. He wanted to rip off Alcimus's arms using this Skill.

However, contrary to his expectation, the moment the 2 [Lance of Destruction] touched Alcimus's shoulders, they disappeared, failing to do any damage.

Of course, it didn't mean they were useless.

Alcimus's hair turned white, Nawdren used this chance to get out of there, thus getting a safe distance away from Alcimus.

He cleaned the blood around his face, and at the same time, started thinking of different ways to get rid of this bastard.

He needed to waste more time.

Alcimus, however, wasn't willing to let him go and rushed towards him again.

...

“W-What the hell is happening...?”

On the other hand, Nux, who was looking at this fight couldn't help but widen his eyes in surprise.

How did Alcius become so strong?

Was he holding back this whole time?

He turned towards Astaria for answers and seeing the grim look on her face, Nux realized she knew something.

“Astaria, what is happening?”

Nux questioned.

“Do you remember when I told you to kill or at least slice both their arms off whenever you win a fight against an Emperor?” Astaria questioned back with a solemn look on her face. Nux nodded and Astaria continued,

“This was the reason I said that...

An Emperor's last Trump Card...

Life Force.”

“Huh?” Nux frowned.

“Alcius is currently exchanging his life for that power. Do you see how his hair is turning white? That's a sign that his Life is diminishing.

It may look like Alcius has the upper hand right now, but...

He won't be able to hold on for much longer.”

Astaria explained.

“Life Force? What's that?”

“It is just what it’s named, it’s your Life Force.

An Emperor can ‘burn’ his Life Force and can convert it into the purest form of Mana. A Mana whose output is incomparably stronger than one’s own Mana.

It is like turning your Life Force into Mana itself.”

Yes, it was also what Herms used in his last moment to free himself from Astaria’s grip. If not for his arms, which were sliced off, he would have killed Nux right there, however, since he knew he was helpless, he didn’t give Astaria the joy to kill him and took his own life.

“Turning your Life Force into Mana...”

Nux repeated those words again.

He had a strange expression on his face when he did that.

“Of course, I also know the best move for us is to rush towards them and assist Alcimus, but the problem is, that battle is currently out of our league...”

The speed at which they are moving, the strength behind their attacks...

It is completely different from compared to us.

For now, the only thing we do is hope that Alcimus somehow defeats Nawdren, or even if he can’t defeat him, he should at least injure him to the point the two of us can defeat him.”

Astaria spoke as she continued to watch the battle with a hopeful look on her face.

However, as if to bash away that hope,

“Khkkhckk!”

Alcimus, who was about to rush towards Nawdren again, suddenly coughed out blood again, his skin turned pale, and then, his body started shrinking.

Alcimus then fell on the ground, his hair completely turned white and the shine in his eyes started fading away.

Seeing this scene, Nawdren's expression changed and,

“Ha... Haha... Hahahaha...”

He started laughing.

# Chapter 619 But What If I Torture Him?

“Ha... Haha... Hahahaha...”

As Alcimius fell on the ground, a big smile of relief appeared on Nawdren’s face and he started laughing.

He then slowly walked towards Alcimius, then he grabbed his hair, and lifted his body in the air.

“I really can’t believe it...”

For an old bastard like you, you sure held on for a long time.”

He spoke.

“...”

Alcimius, however, didn’t reply.

Seeing this, Nawdren frowned, he then moved Alcimius’s body a little, however, seeing that he still didn’t respond, Nawdren placed a finger near Alcimius’s nose and soon, a smile appeared on his face.

“To sacrifice all your life just because I killed that useless King Stage Cultivator, what a fool you were.”

Yes, Alcimius was dead.

He had used up all his Life Force.

Nawdren laughed out loud and then threw Alcimius’s body again.

“I would have turned you into my subordinate if I knew you were so attached to this stupid King Stage Cultivator.”

Then, Nawdren turned towards Astaria and a smile appeared on his face,

“Do you have anyone you would sacrifice your life to avenge as well?”

“...”

Astaria narrowed her eyes.

Nawdren’s eyes then fell on Nux, who was still lying on the floor and his expression changed.

“Hmmm? If I kill that boy, would you use your Life Force to try and avenge him as well?”

Nawdren questioned.

“...”

Astaria just took her battle stance and didn’t reply.

Nawdren, however, already got his answer.

A crazy smile appeared on his face as he questioned,

“Hmmm, what if I spare him?”

Astaria frowned and Nawdren continued,

“What would you do if I spare him and all your subordinates, children, and everyone else? Would you sacrifice your pride and swore your loyalty to me?”

Nawdren questioned with an interested smile on his face.

“Nux...”

Suddenly, Astaria called out.

She didn't have to think.

The answer was clear.

“Get ready to fight...

For one last time.”

Astaria spoke as she glared at Nawdren with a vigilant look on his face.

Alcimus may not have inflicted as much damage as she expected, however, he still did an okay job. In the previous battle, Astaria understood to what extent Nawdren's strength extends to.

He was strong, however, for some reason, Astaria felt that his body movements were a little awkward.

Even though he could see his opponent's movements, he fails to react to them.

His moves aren't amateurish, they show his experience in battles, however, his body movements... they felt forced.

Unlike hers, or Nux's, whose bodies move naturally and smoothly, Nawdren's body movements were... awkward.

It was as if he was not used to his own body.

Astaria didn't know what it was, however, she knew that if she and Nux tried, then they can definitely make use of this weakness and win against Nawdren...

Of course, the chances of victory were low, very low in fact, but at the very least, they weren't nil. With that thought in her mind, Astaria prepared herself for the intense battle ahead, waiting for Nux's reply, however, soon, a frown appeared on Astaria's face.

“ ... ”

Nux... didn't reply.

“Nux?”

Astaria turned her head towards Nux and noticed that he hadn't moved at all. Astaria narrowed her eyes.

Seeing this scene, Nawdren just smiled,

“Do you really expect him to fight together with you?

I know he is strong, but I broke his spine you know?

Even if he took a Health Potion, he wouldn't be standing anytime soon.

He would at least need 5 to 6 days, don't be too hard on him.”

“ ... ”

Astaria didn't bother with what Nawdren was saying, she was more concerned about Nux.

Nawdren, however, didn't like that.

He walked towards Astaria and then questioned,

“You still haven't answered me, girl.

Would you surrender?

Or would you keep your useless pride and witness me kill everything you protected for so many decades?”

“Don't even think about hurting anyone.”

Astaria spoke and at the same time, she stepped in front of Nux.

Seeing her acting like that, Nawdren's smile widened,

“I just love crushing the spirit of people like you.

I have decided,

I would make you surrender to me.”

Nawdren thoughts were ever-changing.

Suddenly, he disappeared and appeared right in front of Astaria.

Astaria jumped back.

She tried to infuse Mana into her sword as she did before, however, she failed again.

This didn't stop her, she appeared in front of Nawdren and attacked.

Nawdren simply grabbed her sword, pulled it close to him aggressively, Astaria lost her balance, Nawdren used this chance and slapped Astaria away.

Astaria's body flew away and she fell down.

“Ugghhhhh!”

She groaned in pain and at the same time, she glared at Nawdren with anger searing in her eyes.

Nawdren simply walked towards her, then he disappeared, and appeared behind her, Astaria turned around in panic and,

\*Slap\*

Nawdren slapped her again.

\*Thud\*

Astaria's body flew away again.

She tried to stand up, however, Nawdren quickly appeared right next to her and grabbed her hair,

“Let me ask you again,

Would you surrender?”

“In your dreams.”

Astaria was quick to reply.

The hate in her eyes as she glared at this man was clear.

*\*Spit\**

Suddenly, Astaria spat at Nawdren's face.

It was so sudden that Nawdren failed to react in time and the spit fell on his right cheek.

Nawdren's expression changed.

*\*Bam\**

“Khhoookhhkhkkk!!”

He used his knee to strike Astaria's abdomen.

The blow was so frightening that Astaria coughed out a huge amount of blood from her mouth.

“I will make you regret doing that.”

Nawdren spoke as he pulled her hair, forcing her to look at him.

“You are a strong woman, I know hurting you wouldn't do any good.”

Nawdren spoke, then, his smile turned demonic as he glanced at Nux,

“But what if I torture him?

Right in front of your eyes.”

Astaria’s expression changed.

Seeing that change, Nawdren’s smile widened even further and he continued.

“What would happen then?

Hmmmm? I wonder.

Would you make an interesting face?

I hope you do and I am sure he would hope so as well. His life would depend on it, after all.”

Saying that, Nawdren pulled Astaria’s hair and dragged her with him while he walked toward Nux with a crazy smile on his face.

# Chapter 620 I... I Am... Afraid...?

“Would you make an interesting face?”

I hope you do and I am sure he would hope so as well. His life would depend on it after all.”

Saying that, Nawdren pulled Astaria’s hair and dragged her with him while he walked toward Nux with a crazy smile on his face.

Astaria glared at Nawdren with a hateful look on her face.

Then her eyes fell on Nux, who was still lying on the ground, not moving at all.

Imagining what was going to happen in the future, Astaria’s expression changed.

Her fists started trembling in... fear...

‘Huh?’

Seeing this, even Astaria herself was surprised.

‘I... I am... afraid...?’

She questioned inwardly as she glanced at her hands which were still trembling.

She knew for sure that she wasn’t scared of dying. That was just not possible. She was a warrior, dying on a battlefield was a prideful moment for her.

But for her to actually tremble in the middle of the war...

Astaria couldn’t believe this.

She then glanced at Nux again and suddenly, a wry smile appeared on her face.

‘This is all because of you...

What have you done to me, you bastard?’

Astaria chuckled inwardly.

As Nawdren was nearing Nux, Astaria knew she didn’t have much time,

‘Alright, I will ignore my pride for once, you bastard.’

Suddenly, Astaria closed her eyes.

Using her own life in exchange for power.

For her, it was a cowardly move that she swore she would never use.

If an opponent forced her to the point of using her Life Force, then the opponent deserved the victory.

That was what Astaria thought.

That was also the reason why she hadn’t used Life Force until now.

Yes, ‘until now.’

For the first time in her long life,

Astaria decided to put down her pride.

‘Forcing me to do something like this, you bastard, you better make sure you make it out alive.’

With that thought in mind, suddenly, Astaria spoke,

“You know, I am only 318 years old.”

“Huh?”

Nawdren frowned.

“What the hell are you talking about?”

“I am saying I am 318 years old.”

“And?”

“Alcimus was around 490 years old.”

“Woman, did you lose your mind?”

Nawdren questioned.

“I am 100 years younger than him.”

“And you think I care about it? What do you want? Should I praise you because you became an Emperor when you are only 300 years old?”

Nawdren questioned.

“I am just saying that I have a lot more years to live compared to Alcimus.”  
Astaria smiled.

Nawdren’s expression changed.

Seeing this, Astaria’s smile widened,

“You are finally realizing what I am talking about, huh...”

“Why go so far...?” Nawdren questioned with a genuine look on his face.

“What do you mean?” Astaria just smiled.

“You know you still wouldn’t be able to defeat me even if you use up all your Life Force, right?”

“But I can critically injure you.”

“I highly doubt that,” Nawdren replied.

Astaria was strong, very strong and if she used her Life Force, she would be even stronger, however,

Don't forget, she wasn't the only one who can use Life Force.

Nawdren could use it as well.

Not only that, but he was only 100 years old.

His Life Force would last a lot longer than Astaria's.

Astaria stood no chance.

The only reason Nawdren is not actually ending her was that he didn't wish to use his Life Force, that power came with a scary price.

He was avoiding having to pay that price, however, if things get troublesome, he wouldn't mind ending Astaria once and for all.

“Why not just surrender? You would lose, in anger, I might even kill everyone you treasure as well. It wouldn't end well for both of us.

Why be so stubborn? I promise I would treat you well.

Not only that, I would also tell you the Truth of the World.”

“Truth of the World?” Astaria frowned. Soon, however, she ignored what this man said and just stood up.

Her sword then appeared in her hands again.

Seeing this, Nawdren sighed.

“You are too stubborn.”

“I thank you for the compliment.” Saying that, Astaria jumped back.

Nawdren and Astaria glanced at each other again and,

**\*BOOM\***

A burst of energy was felt by everyone present there.

Even the weakest soldiers who were present a few Kilometers away from the battlefield felt this energy and trembled.

Some of them even passed out.

Mind you, this was something that didn't happen even when Nawdren had appeared and his Aura was overpowering Nux and Astaria.

No matter how strong the Aura Nawdren unconsciously released was, it wasn't something that could affect soldiers who were standing a few kilometers away.

This new aura, however... was different.

A dark, dull, and suffocating Aura...

“W-What the hell is happening there?”

Riona, who was standing together with Nux's wives questioned.

The War here had already ended, the King and Expert Stage Cultivators of the Solid Earth Kingdom were dead, the Skadi Soldiers had turned sides and the Solid Earth Soldiers had surrendered.

However, none of that was important.

All the King Stage Cultivators were currently focusing on the real battlefield.

None of them could see anything, however, all of them were still wary and didn't dare to go near it.

“He is still not answering...” Evane shook her head.

Nux had stopped responding to whatever they speak using their connection.

“He... he is not d-”

“No.”

Before Riona could complete, Arvina, who was also standing with Nux’s wives spoke with a serious look on her face.

Everyone turned towards her,

“T-Teacher is still their...”

She wouldn’t let anything happen to him...”

Arvina replied.

Seeing her acting like that, Riona narrowed her eyes.

However, she knew it was not the time to comment about something like that.

The situation was too serious for that, therefore, she ignored this woman and glanced at Amaya.

She was worried about her daughter, who was barely holding herself back.

Suddenly, Amaya’s expression changed.

Seeing this, Riona frowned, however, just as she was about to ask something, Amaya muttered with a surprised expression on her face.

“Nux...?”

# Chapter 621 A Waste

“Nux...?”

Suddenly, Amaya muttered with a strange expression on her face.

“Huh? Nux?”

Ember frowned.

She then looked around, however, no matter where she looked, she couldn't find him,

“Is he talking to you right now?”

Ember questioned.

“Ask him how he is.”

Felberta spoke with a worried look on her face.

“Yes, ask about the situation there.”

Evane nodded.

“Guys...”

Amaya, however, didn't respond to any of them and called out.

“What is it?” Allura questioned.

Amaya then pointed at the battlefield and muttered,

“Nux...”

“What are you talking about?”

Ember frowned in confusion.

Soon, however, Riona's expression changed.

"T-That Mist..."

"Huh? Mist?"

Felberta frowned.

"Wait..."

Edda's expression changed as well as she pointed at the Sky.

"T-That's the Devouring Mist!"

Skyla pointed at the sky and exclaimed as well.

"Devouring Mist..." Lane muttered.

The light in her eyes suddenly increased.

"He succeeded."

A smile appeared on Amaya's face.

"We are going there." She spoke, however, this time, instead of running away, Amaya glanced at Evane.

"What are we waiting for?" Evane smiled.

Amaya's smile widened, she and the other women then rushed towards the battlefield.

Riona and Arvina, who were left behind glanced at each other and then decided to run and follow them as well.

The King Stage Cultivators of the Shadow Unit, General Phorus, Consort Iria, and some other King and Expert Stage Cultivators of the Skadi

Kingdom and the Woods Dynasty started running towards the battlefield as well.

Amaya and the others appeared near the battlefield, soon, however, their expression changed,

The entire Battlefield was Black.

The Devouring Mist was surrounding everything, even though the sun was shining brightly, nothing inside the Mist was visible, the man-beast, Astaria, Nux, Alcius, and his disciple, none of them were visible.

“The Mist has gotten stronger...”

Even though she was still standing away from it and wasn't really in contact with the Mist, Ember could still feel that its power has certainly increased.

“It has...”

Thyra nodded as well.

While they were talking, other soldiers arrived and stood beside them as well.

\*Whoosh\*

And as if waiting for this moment, the Devouring Mist moved and expanded even further, within a second, it engulfed Nux's wives and all the soldiers who had appeared here.

“W-What is it!?”

“What is this Black Mist!!”

“It's too dark here!”

“AaaAagghh!! I-I-It is eating away my Mana!”

“M-Mine too! It is eating away my Mana as well!!”

“T-This thing! Get away from me!”

“Everyone! Run away! Get away from this Black Mist!”

The Soldiers panicked.

None of them knew what this Devouring Mist was. However, all of them understood how dangerous it was.

Especially this new Devouring Mist.

Mind you, all the soldiers here were either Expert or King Stage Cultivators, they were the beings who could simply ignore the normal Devouring Mist.

For beings like them to actually panic when they are surrounded by the Mist, it just shows how strong the Devouring Mist has gotten.

“Why are they acting like this?”

Suddenly, Edda frowned.

She couldn't see anyone because even her vision was affected by the Devouring Mist, however, from what she heard, she knew that they were all panicking and the Mist was somehow affecting them, however, that was what confused her.

She was surrounded by the Mist as well.

“I don't feel anything at all...”

“I am the same as well... The Mist is not affecting me either...” Allura nodded as well.

“It is Nux's doing. He is purposefully avoiding harming us.” Amaya explained.

The other women smiled as well.

“Even though I can’t see you, I am sure all of you are smiling right now.”  
Suddenly, Riona spoke up.

“ ... ”

The woman didn’t reply.

“Anyways, I am not as lucky as you, the Mist is Devouring my Mana, I need to get out of its range.”

“Is it really that bad?” Suddenly, Ember questioned with a frown on her face.

She had a doubt.

Riona paused and turned towards Ember,

“It is not that bad, it is eating away my Mana yes, however, things are still manageable, and the devouring rate is a little slow. Of course, that is adjusted by the quantity of the Mist. It is this harmful when it is focusing on so many people, I wonder how scary it would be when it focuses on a single being.”

“ ... ”

Ember didn’t reply.

Riona then ran out of the Mist’s area, and Arvina followed behind.

“Ember, what happened?” Suddenly, Thyra questioned.

She could feel Ember’s worry.

“The Mist has gotten stronger.”

Ember spoke.

“It has indeed.” Thyra nodded.

The other women frowned.

Wasn't it a good thing? Why was Ember acting like this?

Thyra, however, had a rough idea about what Ember was thinking about.

Unlike Riona, she knew how the Devouring Mist worked.

The quantity of the Mist was never the matter.

It doesn't have the option of 'focusing' on a single target.

The current Devouring Mist and the Devouring Mist that will 'focus' on a single target... both of them would have a similar effect.

"The Devouring Mist is barely affecting a King Stage Cultivator...

Nawdren is stronger than an Emperor...

Would... would the Mist really do... anything against him?"

Ember questioned with a worried look on her face.

Hearing her question, the other women's expression changed.

They now understood what the problem was.

The Devouring Mist has indeed gotten stronger, however, even now... it was still useless.

"That's not it."

Suddenly, Amaya spoke up.

Out of all the women here, she was the one who knew the most about the Devouring Mist.

"What do you mean?"

Ember questioned.

“This Mist...

It is nothing but waste.”

“Huh?” A frown appeared on Ember’s face.

“What do you mean Waste?”

Evane questioned.

“I mean what I just said.

It is just a waste.

This is not the actual Mist.

It is just the waste the has been released after Nux upgraded his Physique Level.”

Amaya revealed and hearing those words, the women’s eyes widened in horror.

“This... this is just a waste?”

“T-Then... what about the real thing?”

# Chapter 622 You Aren'T Scared Of A 'Mere' King Stage Cultivator, Are You?

“This... this is just a waste?”

“T-Then... what about the real thing?”

The women couldn't believe what they were hearing.

“Did you really think Nux would let us stay here if the Mist was only this strong?”

Amaya questioned with a small smile on her face.

Hearing those words, a smile appeared on Felberta's face as well.

She was the one who knew Nux the most, after all.

“If he has allowed us to stay here then...”

“Then it means he is now confident in defeating Nawdren...”

Evane completely the sentence.

Hearing those words, the other women smiled,

“This would be an interesting show.”

Ember commented.

“Hahaha~ Would we finally have the chance to ‘Battle’ in the middle of the battlefield?”

Edda reverted back to her usual pervert Edda as well.

“I agree! I want to try it as well!”

Skyla shouted out loud as well.

“I... I agree to it as well.”

Lane spoke up as well.

“I can’t believe it...” Ember sighed

“You people know we aren’t using our connection, right?” She couldn’t help but question.

She can’t believe these women would say something like this out in the open.

They were just shameless.

“Also, I agree as well.”

Of course, Ember wasn’t going to miss out either.

“I don’t even need to say it.”

Thyra nodded as well.

“I agree, but I won’t be sharing him with you bitches.” Amaya’s thoughts were clear.

“Of course, I don’t wish to do that either.” Allura nodded.

“I will be going first then.” Felberta jumped in.

“Huuuh? How are you deciding that?” Skyla questioned.

“Because I was the first one, after all. I am the senior-most wife here.”

Felberta asserted her dominance.

“If we are going by that, then I am the one who loves him the most, the first turn should be mine.” Amaya jumped in.

“I performed my duties as the queen properly, so obviously, I deserve the first,” Evane spoke.

“I am the Shadow, I should be closest to the body...” Lane pointed out.

“Girls...”

Suddenly, the women turned silent as Nux spoke up.

“You know I haven’t defeated him yet, right?” Nux questioned with a playful smile on his face.

“Then what are you waiting for? Do it quickly, you won’t keep us waiting, will you?” Felberta smiled.

“Is that even possible?”

Nux questioned back.

The women smiled.

Suddenly, the Dark Mist that surrounded and blocked everyone’s vision disappeared, revealing Nux, Astaria, the dead Alcimus, and his son and...

Nawdren.

Nawdren was looking at Nux with a solemn look on his face.

“I must say, you are full of surprises, boy.

How are you even standing?

I am sure I broke your ribs.

Also, what was the black Mist?”

Nawdren questioned, his eyes then fell on Nux’s wives and a big smile appeared on his face,

“Are they your wives,

Boy, you sure are lucky.

How about you sha-”

“Don’t.

The last man who said some stupid things about them didn’t have a good end.

I am quite sensitive when it comes to my lovely wives, you see.”

Nux smiled.

“Oh? That’s good.

This would make things even more interesting.”

Nawdren’s smile widened.

Nux just shook his head and sighed.

“Whatever.”

He then started walking towards Nawdren.

Nawdren frowned.

Seeing a mere King Stage Cultivator walking towards him with such a confident look on his face...

For some reason, it annoyed him.

Nawdren disappeared and appeared in front of Nux.

Just like how he did to Astaria, he slapped Nux's face...

Or so he tried to, however, suddenly, Black Mist, which was a lot denser than before came out of Nux's body and surrounded Nawdren's arm.

“!!!”

Nawdren's eyes widened in horror.

He shook his hand as aggressively as possible, trying to get rid of this Mist, however, nothing worked.

Nux facepalmed himself, he couldn't believe this man was this dumb. To think he still didn't realize how to deal with the Mist.

Soon, however, Nawdren realized what to do and quickly used his Mana and pushed the Mist out of his body.

He then jumped back and glanced at Nux with a horrified look on his face.

“Hmm? Your face looks quite pale.

You aren't scared of a 'mere' King Stage Cultivator, are you?”

Nux questioned with a small smile on his face.

Nawdren, however, completely ignored him and rushed toward Skyla, who was closest to him.

He had heard their conversation, and from how Nux was acting, he definitely values his wives a lot.

He could use it to his advantage.

“Ah, you made a mistake.” Nux pointed out.

Just as Nawdren appeared near Skyla, Dark Mist appeared out of thin air and moved toward him.

“Aahh!! AAAGGGGaggggGghhhHH!!”

Nawdren screamed in horror.

He used Mana to get rid of the Mist again, however, more and more Mist started appearing around him, surrounding his body.

Nawdren tried his best to move his body as aggressively as possible, doing anything he could to get rid of this Mist, however, the Mist seemed unending.

The scene was similar to countless ants attacking a big beast, devouring it together.

“No! NOO!!! STOP IT!!”

Nawdren shouted in horror.

This Mist...

It wasn't eating away his flesh...

Neither was it eating away his Mana....

It was... it was eating away his Life Force!

“You see, I recently learned that Life Energy can be turned into Mana.

It was a fascinating discovery, but then I thought,

Doesn't my Devouring Mist has the power to Devour Mana?

This got me thinking...

Since Mana and Life Force were connected...

What if...

I try to Devour Life Force instead of Devouring Mana?

What if...

I try to Devour Life itself?"

A big smile appeared on Nux's face.

"And guess what?

I succeeded."

Yes,

The Last Stage of Physique Mastery,

The Mastered Stage.

The Mastered Stage of the Devouring Mist allowed Nux to Devour Life itself.

[Name: Nux Leander]

[Age: 19]

[Mana Cultivation: King.]

[Body Cultivation: King.]

[Physique: Devouring Mist Demon Physique – Mastered (+)]

[Talent: Exceptional]

[LVL: 61]

[HP: 1620/1620]

[MP: 3000/3000]

[STR: 164 → 180]

[AGL: 174 → 200]

[VIT: 162]

[STM: 201 → 250]

[INT: 211 → 300]

[DEF: 161 → 173 ]

[Blank Points: 192 → 0]

“Nawdren.

Be sure to hold out until I am done testing my Mist, Alright?”

# Chapter 623 W-What Have You Done...?

“Nawdren,

Be sure to hold out until I am done testing my Mist, Alright?”

Nux spoke with a small smile on his face.

All this while, he always felt close to breaking through and upgrading his Physique Mastery Level, he knew that he needed to ‘understand’ the Mist to increase his strength, and to be perfectly honest, Nux believed that he perfectly understood everything about the Mist, however, no matter how hard he tried, he still couldn’t raise his mastery.

He was missing something.

A Target.

The Mist needed a Target.

The First Level of the Mist, the Acquired Stage, it could Devour Flesh, Blood, and Bones.

The Second Level, the Advance Stage, it allowed Nux to Devour things.

However, for the Last Level, the Mastered Stage, Nux didn’t know ‘what’ to Devour. He couldn’t find the ‘Target’ no matter how hard he tried.

He knew the Mastered Stage Devouring Mist would work against Experts, Kings and might even work against an Emperor, however, he didn’t know how it would work against them.

Now, however, things became a lot simpler.

Life.

Every Being has Life inside them. If he can Devour Life, even beings stronger than Emperors wouldn't survive.

The power to Devour Life... Nux was now nothing short of a Death bringer.

“S-Stop t-this! Stop this Mist!!”

Nawdren shouted in panic.

His entire body was covered with Mist, so Nux and his wives couldn't see him, however, everyone could imagine the expression he had on his face.

Nux didn't say anything he just glanced at Astaria and his wives.

The 10 of them understood what he wanted and walked towards him.

Standing beside him, Astaria saw how Nux was playing around with someone like Nawdren and couldn't believe it.

“AAGgGGGgghhHHH!! YOU BASTARD!!”

Suddenly, Nawdren shouted in anger.

A surge of energy burst out from Nawdren's body and the Devouring Mist surrounding him suddenly disappeared.

He glared at Nux with eyes full of rage and hatred, Nux's expression turned serious.

Astaria and his wives took their battle stance.

They didn't expect Nawdren would get rid of Devouring Mist like this.

“He is burning his Life Force,” Astaria spoke with a solemn look on her face.

“What should we do?” Ember questioned.

Everyone turned towards Nux and suddenly,

Nux’s golden eyes suddenly turned Pitch Black.

His vision changed and as he glanced at Nawdren, a strange white energy surrounded his body. The White Energy seemed calm, dense, and strong, however, Nux could see how it was dissolving away and a rouge-looking purple-bluish Energy rose inside Nawdren’s Body.

Nux now realized it.

This Calm White Energy was Life Force and the Purple Bluish Energy was Nawdren’s Mana.

Nux could see how Nawdren was exchanging his Life Force with this Mana.

He could see everything.

He could see how much Life Force Nawdren was exchanging.

He could see how strong Mana Nawdren was receiving in return.

He could also see how long Nawdren would be able to keep using this rouge Mana until his Life Force runs out.

What was even absurd?

“This annoying Mist would disappear for good if I get rid of you.”

Suddenly, Nawdren, who was glaring at Nux and spoke.

Nux may have become stronger.

The ability to Devour Life, it was indeed scary, however, in the end, he was still just a King Stage Cultivator.

He wouldn't be able to hold against a Pseudo Sage.

Nawdren's plan was clear, he would use his Life Force to get rid of Nux before he can use his Mist on him again.

He just needed to act faster than Nux could ever react.

A small smile appeared on Nux's face.

Nawdren completely ignored that smile and disappeared.

This time, even Astaria failed to keep up with his increased speed.

“Well, I apologize for this little hassle in advance.”

Nux spoke with a calm smile.

His women frowned, then suddenly, Devouring Mist appeared out of thin air and surrounded Nux and his women.

From outside, it looked like Nux and his women were covered by a Black Cloud.

Nawdren was so fast that Nux couldn't even react to his movements, however, the thing was, he didn't even have to react to his movement. He just needed to protect himself and his wives.

Now what would Nawdren do?

To be honest, his best option was to run away.

Of course, burning his Life Force to run away when your opponent was a mere King Stage Cultivator was shameful. There are also chances that Nux and his women would search the entire continent in order to find him and would hunt him down as if he is a dog,

However, running was still the best option.

A lot, lot, lot better than jumping into the Devouring Mist and trying to kill Nux.

Nawdren, however, chose the second option.

He jumped into the Devouring Mist.

The Mist wouldn't be able to kill him so quickly, he wouldn't be able to see, however, he would kill everyone he encounters inside the Mist without fail, once the Mist disappears, that would be his cue that he had successfully killed that little insect.

That was Nawdren's plan.

However, the moment he jumped into the Mist Cloud,

His body lost all his energy and he fell down.

“!!!”

Nawdren's eyes widened in surprise.

“W-What happened...?”

No matter how much he tried, he failed to use Mana around him. Let alone use it, he couldn't even sense it.

It was as if all the Mana in the World suddenly disappeared, or...

The Mana of the World abandoned him...

“You see, burning your Life Force in exchange for Mana may make you ridiculously stronger than you normally are, however,

It has a fatal weakness.”

Suddenly, Nux walked near Nawdren and smiled.

The Mist around Nawdren's face disappeared, revealing his horrified expression and freeing his vision.

Nawdren quickly glanced at Nux who was standing right in front of him, his wives, stood a few meters behind Nux. Only Astaria stood right beside him.

“W-What have you done...?”

Nawdren completely ignored whatever Nux was saying and questioned with a pale face.

Nux could also see how long Nawdren would be able to keep using this rouge Mana until his Life Force runs out.

But what was even absurd?

Nux could even forcefully stop this whole exchange.

A small smile appeared on Nux's face.

# Chapter 624 Burning Your Life Force Has A Fatal Weakness.

“W-What have you done...?”

Nawdren completely ignored whatever Nux was saying and questioned with a pale face.

A deadpan expression appeared on Nux’s face.

He then shook his head and sighed,

“So as I was saying,

Burning your Life Force has a Fatal Weakness.

It exposes your Life Force which is usually located deep inside your body under many different ‘barriers’.”

Nux revealed and suddenly, Nawdren’s expression changed.

Exposing his Life Force...

Then for Nux, who could Devour Life Force...

“Yep, what you are thinking is correct,

Burning Life Force in front of me, who has the ability to Devour it...

It is nothing but offering your life to me.”

“!!!”

Nawdren’s eyes widened in horror.

“And you know what’s worse?” Nux brought his face close to Nawdren and questioned.

Nawdren glanced at Nux and gulped, fearing the words he would speak next.

“You don’t just expose your Life Force, you also expose the ‘connection’ you use to exchange your Life Force and Mana.

Do you know what that means?”

“You... You can...”

“Yeep, using My Mist, I can seal away your connection to ‘Mana’ as well.”

Yes, Nux had blocked Nawdren’s ‘connection’ to Mana, no matter how much Mana he generates using his Life Force, Nawdren would never be able to use it.

And since he was using his Life Force to General Mana, Nawdren couldn’t even use his own Mana to attack Nux, and using the surrounding Mana was completely out of the question since the ‘connection’ is already sealed.

Nawdren was completely helpless.

Without his Mana, he only had his Physical Strength.

And in front of Nux, who was a King Stage Body Cultivator... Nawdren didn’t stand any chance.

Nawdren was stuck.

Since all his Life Force was already exposed, it would continue to burn away, generating the Mana he would never be able to use and this exchange couldn’t be stopped until Nux wishes for it or... Nawdren’s Life Force runs out.

Yes, Nawdren was now as good as dead.

And he realized it.

“N-No, Y-You cannot kill me...” Nawdren stuttered with a pale face.

“Hmmm? And what’s stopping me from doing that?” Nux questioned with a curious look on his face.

“I-I know things none of you know! Killing me would be a big loss for you!!”

Suddenly, Nawdren shouted.

Nux’s expression changed.

Noticing that change, Nawdren’s expression changed.

He knew this was his chance.

“The Truth of this World, I am sure you don’t know about it, do you!? I can tell you that.”

“Haah, stop bullshitting, will you?” Nux sighed.

Nawdren looked more like a crazy cultist who believes some bullshit rather than an all strong Pseudo Sage.

“Wait” Suddenly, Astaria placed her hand on Nux’s shoulders. Nux frowned and Astaria replied,

“He said something like this before.

We should hear him out.

I am sure you have some questions in your mind as well.”

Astaria knew Nux well enough to know this.

He wouldn’t have started talking to him if he didn’t have something in his mind.

He needed information as well.

“Yes, why don’t you turn him into your slave? Killing someone like him seems like a waste. He would be a useful slave.” Amaya suggested.

Those words wounded Nawdren’s pride, however, with his Life in this man’s eyes, he didn’t dare to say anything.

Even a Pseudo Sage like him loved his Life.

Actually, he loved his life even more than mortals.

As they say, the longer one lived, the more they get attached to life.

Those words seemed true.

“Yes! Yes! I am willing to be your loyal Slave! I would listen to all your orders and answer all your questions truthfully!”

Nawdren quickly jumped on that offer.

Nux, however, had a strange expression on his face.

Seeing this, Amaya narrowed her eyes.

“Nux, what’s the matter?”

She could see something was wrong. Someone like Nux would jump onto the offer of enslaving a being like Nawdren.

A strong Slave was useful after all.

For him to act like this...

“The [Slave Seal] won’t work on him.”

Nux revealed.

“What do you mean?”

Ember questioned.

“I tried to use it on Roone, but it didn’t work on him.”

“That means...”

“Yes, it doesn’t work on Emperors or beings stronger than Emperor.”

Nux nodded.

“Why don’t you try it anyways? He is not exactly a human, what if it works on him?” Amaya suggested. The chances were low, but it didn’t hurt to try.

Nux nodded and turned towards Nawdren,

“Nawdren Besch, are you willing to be my Slave?”

“I am.” Nawdren replied.

Nux, however, shook his head.

“It’s not working.”

His women’s expression turned serious.

Nawdren couldn’t understand what they were talking about, however, he knew one thing,

His odds of getting out of this alive were diminishing here,

He had to do something.

He gritted his teeth and then, he spoke up,

“I have a way that will ensure my Loyalty to you.”

“What way?” Nux questioned back.

“A Contract.”

“Huh? What’s that?”

“A Contract, or a Pact.

The person you all call Ancestor signed a Contract with my Grand Father all those years ago.”

“Your Grand Father?”

Nux raised his eyebrow.

“You know him as the Mythical Creature.”

“Stop lying, according to the record, the Mythical Creature didn’t have any ‘human’ form. He was a Beast.” Astaria spoke up.

“That is correct.

My Grand Father was an 8 Star Beast, Flying Lynx.”

“An 8-Star Beast...” Nux narrowed his eyes and started thinking.

“That explains how it could kill Emperors like they were nothing...”

“When you say our Ancestor signed a Contract with your Grand Father, does that mean he enslaved it?” Suddenly, Evane questioned.

“Well, not really enslaved him. There are different kinds of contracts, however, if you are asking if your Ancestor defeated my Grand Father, then yes, that is true. He defeated my Grand Father and from what I was told, it was a one-sided battle.”

“To defeat a Beast who was comparable to a Stage above Emperor Stage... just how strong...”

Ember started wondering.

“He was a Peak Sage and was about to break through to become a Great Sage, but unfortunately, he died before he could do that.”

Nawdren explained.

“A Great Sage...”

# Chapter 625 Let Her Do It.

“A Great Sage...”

Nux muttered inwardly.

“Is that the stage higher than the Sage?” Amaya questioned.

“That is correct.” Nawdren nodded.

“A Stage higher than the Sage...”

Evane muttered inwardly.

The Sage Stage alone was someone unprecedented for her, but to think there is a Stage that is higher than this and to think that her ancestor was so close to reaching this Stage...

This is just...

It was too much to take in...

However, this wasn't the end,

“Is this Great Sage you speak of the true peak of Cultivation?”

Astaria questioned.

As a being who pursued the Peak all her life, she couldn't hold her curiosity.

Nawdren's answer, however, was surprising.

“I do not know.”

He simply shook his head and denied it.

“I only know that your ancestor and my Grand Father came from Yrniel.”

“Yrniel? What’s that?”

“ ... ”

Nawdren didn’t answer.

Nux frowned when he saw that.

Soon, however, he realized what Nawdren wanted.

His expression changed, he then stepped towards Nawdren and spoke,

“I have one more question before I decide whether to kill you or let you live.

Your Grand Father was a Beast, then how are you a Mutated Human-Beast?”

Nawdren glanced at Nux, and from his expression, he understood that if he didn’t answer this question, he would die.

He had no other choice,

Nux was the one who held his life in his palm.

“This body does not belong to me.”

Nawdren replied honestly.

A frown appeared on Nux’s face, and seeing that frown, Nawdren started explaining.

“Just like my Grand Father, I was a Winged Lynx as well. However, unlike my Father or my Grand Father, I, for some reason, wasn’t able to become an 8-Star Beast.

We Winged Lynx are different from normal beasts, we do not need a Mate in order to reproduce, once we become an 8-Star Beast, we use our Life Energy to give birth to our Offspring, and since I couldn't become one, I couldn't reproduce either.

I had already accepted my fate, however, one day, something changed,

Humans finally walked into my domain after many centuries,

My Father did stop me from coming out and harming humans, however, there was one exception, whenever humans entered my domain, I could do whatever I wanted with th-

“You are wasting too much time, just answer my question.” Nux suddenly interrupted.

“...” Nawdren didn't know how to react.

“You do realize your Life Force is being burned even now, right?”

Nawdren's expression changed and he summarized,

“I possessed a human using a Forbidden Skill, the human couldn't take my power and his body mutated and the current me was the result.”

“That's a lot better.” Nux nodded.

“Alright, what's this contract you were talking about?”

He questioned.

Nawdren knew a lot of things.

He couldn't possibly kill someone like him.

But at the same time, if Nux wasn't a 100% sure that Nawdren would not harm anyone close to him, he couldn't possibly let him go.

No matter what, he was still a Pseudo Sage after all.

This man was dangerous.

“A Contract is of many type-”

“Again, summarize.” Nux interrupted again.

He could always ask these questions once he ensured Nawdren is harmless.

“A Contract is a way for you to ensure my Loyalty.”

“I need absolute obedience, even if I order you to kill yourself, you shouldn't hesitate, can a Contract make this possible?”

Nux questioned.

“...”

Nawdren didn't answer.

“It would be better if you answer a few of our questions, you are about to die anyway.”

Nux shrugged.

It was as if he had already given up on subduing Nawdren.

Nawdren's expression changed,

“A Master-Servant Contract can.”

He replied hurriedly.

“...” Nux narrowed his eyes with a doubtful look on his face.

“It is named Master-Servant Contract for a reason! I would die the moment I go against your order! Even if you order me to kill myself, I would have no option but to follow your order.” Nawdren explained.

“And how does this Contract thing works?”

Nux questioned.

“It is not too complicated, I just need to create my Mana’s Contract Circle and once it starts sucking Mana from the world, you need to drop your blood into it.”

Nawdren explained.

A frown appeared on Nux’s face.

Nawdren, however, completely ignored it and started creating something on the ground.

It was the Contract Circle.

Suddenly, the weird circle he drew started sucking Mana and started shining.

“Now you just need to drop your blood on it.”

Nawdren turned towards Nux and offered.

“...”

Nux, however, didn’t do anything and stayed still.

He still had doubts.

How can he possibly trust this bastard?

What if it was something that would kill him the moment he drops his blood into it?

Or maybe it was something that would turn him into a servant.

“Wait.” Suddenly, Amaya stepped up.

Nux turned towards her and frowned,

“What is it?”

Amaya just pointed in another direction and soon, Riona walked in.

“Let her do it.”

Just as Nux was about to react, he heard Amaya’s voice,

‘Don’t act out. Act like she is not important to you.’

Nux’s expression quickly changed.

He had the same plan as well, however, rather than Riona, he wanted to choose someone else and as if knowing what he was thinking, Amaya explained.

‘He is too strong. If he becomes someone else’s servant, then even with the [Slave Seal], things might get complicated.

Keep in mind, the [Slave Seal] doesn’t kill the moment someone thinks of betraying you, it just inflicts pain.

We need to choose someone we can actually trust.

We cannot choose anyone here since this bastard already knows how much we mean to you.

She was the only one I can think of.’

Nux’s expression changed.

‘What he Nardren pulls something strange?’

He questioned.

He knew how much Amaya loved Riona.

For her to propose something so dangerous...

‘That man loves his life, I don’t think he would dare to do something like this just to kill your servant.’

Amaya was betting it all with a cold expression on her face.

# Chapter 626 The Mastered Devouring Mist Demon Physique

‘That man loves his life, I don’t think he would dare to do something like this just to kill your ‘servant’.’

Amaya was betting it all with a cold expression on her face.

Nux clenched his fists.

He knew Amaya the best, even though she was acting as if it was nothing, he knew she was definitely nervous and was panicking inwardly.

She was betting on her mother’s life after all.

‘Don’t worry, nothing would go wrong.’

Suddenly, Nux heard Roina’s voice.

He glanced at her, the woman looked back at him, her dark black eyes shone strangely,

‘I can see in his eyes, he is not going to pull anything.’

‘You don’t act on assumptions.’ Nux replied.

A small smile appeared on Roina’s face as she replied, ‘I don’t, but it doesn’t mean I am not capable of doing so.’

Trust me, when it comes to reading expressions, you won’t find anyone better than me,

I have been doing it for a century after all.

You can trust this Queen.’

Riona puffed her chest in pride.

However, unlike Skyla, who usually had a childlike innocence in her eyes when she does it, Riona had an aura of a confident woman, a true Queen.

A Queen whose aura was far stronger than Evane's, or even Astaria for that matter.

‘...’

Seeing that expression, Nux instantly knew what he had to do.

He had to trust the Queen.

“Riona, step forward.”

Nux ordered.

Riona stepped forwards with an expressionless face.

“She is Riona, she is my most loyal servant, she will be the one who will sign this contract. You don't mind, do you?”

Nux questioned.

“You want me to serve a mere King Stage Cultivator?” Nawdren questioned back.

“You lost to a King Stage Cultivator.”

Nux replied with a cold look on his face, he then stepped on Nawdren's face and spoke,

“Don't forget, you do not get to choose here.

Now answer me, do you agree or not?”

“I... I agree.”

Nawdren didn't have any other option.

Nux then turned towards Riona and nodded. Riona nodded back and stepped up, with a dignified look on her face, she cut her hand, her blood drops fell on the Magic Circle Nawdren created and the circle shined.

\*Whoosh\* \*Whoosh\* \*Whoosh\*

The Contract Circle started sucking more and more Mana.

Suddenly, golden-colored chains formed in the air and ignored all the Life Force that was trapped outside Nawdren's body, his clothes, and his Flesh, it pierced through his body and then disappeared without leaving a mark.

The other end of the chain moved towards Riona, Riona tried to hold it, however, the moment she touched it, the chains disappeared.

Suddenly, Riona's expression changed as she grabbed her head.

Seeing that, Amaya panicked.

Nux's expression changed as well.

"What did you do?"

He questioned as he increased the force he had applied on his foot that was on Nawdren's head.

"I didn't do anything..." Nawdren replied.

"You bastard!" Nux cursed.

However, just as he was about to increase the force even more, Riona spoke up,

"You can stop it, Nux."

"Hmm?" Nux stopped and turned towards Nux.

“He is not lying, it is a Master-Servant Contract, and I am the Master here.

The pain I felt was because information about the Contract was forced into my brain.”

Riona replied.

Hearing those words, Nux quickly stepped away and walked toward Riona,

“Are you sure you are okay?”

“Yes, I am.”

Riona nodded.

Amaya then walked up and hugged Riona from behind.

Right now, she looked like a little girl who craved her mother’s attention.

Seeing this expression, Riona couldn’t hold herself back and a playful smile appeared on her face,

“Oh? You are finally here after you tried to sacrifice your mother for your husband?”

Amaya’s expression changed.

“T-That’s not it!”

“So you are saying that you love your mother more than you love your husband?”

“No.”

Amaya’s response was... direct...

“...” Riona didn’t know what to say.

“Don’t try to steal my wife. Tsk.”

Nux snorted and he hugged Amaya, unknowingly hugging Riona in the process as well.

Seeing this scene, Astaria narrowed her eyes, however before she could say anything,

“Can you get rid of this annoying Mist now?”

Nawdren spoke with an annoyed look on his face.

He has been repeatedly harassed today.

To be honest, he was so angry that if he could kill Nux, he would do it in the cruelest way possible.

If only this bastard wasn't this powerful and didn't have his life in his palm...

Nawdren gritted his teeth.

Nux completely ignored his words and turned towards Riona.

Riona knew what he wanted to ask and nodded. Nux nodded back then, and the Mist surrounding Nawdren's body finally disappeared.

Nawdren was finally able to feel Mana again.

On the other hand, Nux's eyes turned dark, then he saw the White Energy that surrounded Nawdren's body going back into his Body.

To confirm his thoughts, Nux's eyes returned to normal and he activated [Eye of Discerning.]

[Name: Nawdren Besch.]

[Age: 129-895 -> 129-1011]

[Mana Cultivation: Pseudo Sage.]

[Body Cultivation: Mortal.]

[Race: Mutated Human-Beast]

[Occupation: Protector of the Sealed Continent.]

[Talent: –]

[LVL: 79.5]

‘He lost around 100 years in around 3 minutes...’

It was a lot slower than it should have been, but Nux understood the problem.

The Life Force he was trying to Devour was a Dense, Raw Life Force.

It is completely different from when the Life Force is inside one’s body, in diffused State.

Of course, Nux was still wasn’t an expert in all of this, however, from a rough idea he had in his mind,

He could now Kill an Emperor, who has around 500 years of Life, within 10 seconds.

Yes, he could Devour 50 Years of Life in just a single Second.

A Mortal wouldn’t survive for 2 Seconds, and even a King Stage Cultivator wouldn’t last more than 5 Seconds.

Of course, no one is a King Stage Cultivator, or an Emperor the moment he is born, even Astaria, the most talented person here needed around 200 years to become an Emperor.

That meant, even at her best, she only had 300 years of life, an amount Nux could Devour within 6 Seconds.

The current Astaria, who was around 300 years old, can only survive 4 seconds in front of Nux.

The Mastered Devouring Mist Demon Physique was just that scary.

# Chapter 627 Yrniel.

“Nawdren, cut the fingers of your right hand.”

Suddenly, Riona ordered with an expressionless look on her face.

“What? Why!?” Nawdren questioned back.

Of course, he wasn't willing to do something like this, however, suddenly, a Golden Colored Chain wrapped around Nawdren's neck.

The moment his eyes fell on those chains, Nawdren's eyes widened in horror.

He quickly grabbed a sword and,

“Ugghhhh!!!”

Groaned in pain as he cut off all the fingers of his right hand.

“You...”

He glared at Riona, hatred, and anger clear in his eyes which were red. His right hand was trembling, and his face was red, clearly, he was in immense pain.

If it was a normal situation, he would have killed this bitch standing right in front of him, however...

He could not do that...

He could only swallow his anger back and clench his fist in frustration.

“Why did you order me to do it...?”

However, Nawdren still couldn't hold himself back from asking the reason.

“I just wanted to test if the Contract works or not.”

Riona just shrugged.

Nawdren’s expression changed.

“What... did you say?”

He questioned with a dark expression on his face.

“Do I need to repeat myself?”

Riona glanced back with a single change in her expression.

Nawdren’s aura was intimidating, however, Riona had to make things clear here.

She was not just Nux’s proxy that Nawdren could just ignore or underestimate, her position here was higher than Nawdren’s, and she had to make sure Nawdren knew that.

“You already know everything about the Contract don’t you?”

Nawdren questioned.

“Who knows? The information I received might be something you wanted to feed me. I needed to test it out just to be sure.”

“Oh yeah? Then by that logic, you can even say that I am just acting and only cut my finger to make you all trust me and am not actually under your control or something.”

Nawdren retorted.

He couldn’t believe how ridiculous Riona sounded.

“...”

Riona glanced at Nawdren.

“What?”

Nawdren questioned as he glanced at Riona.

“...” Riona didn’t say anything and continued to look at Nawdren’s face.

“Wait... you are not thinking...”

“...”

Nawdren just couldn’t believe it.

“Should I order him to kill himself to confirm it?”

Riona turned towards Amaya and questioned.

“We still have some questions, we can’t kill him yet.”

Amaya shook her head.

“That’s true.

Do you have any better idea?” Riona questioned.

“We can order him to cut off his legs. I don’t think he would agree to do that since that would make it impossible for him to take his revenge in the future.” Amaya suggested.

Riona started considering this option.

Nawdren, on the other hand, couldn’t believe what kind of merciless demons he was standing in front of. Just... Just how can they discuss something like that with such an emotionless expression on their faces?

However, Nawdren didn’t have time to think about all those things.

“I am not acting! There is no way I would cut my fingers just so I could fool you. The Master-Servant Contract is the real deal!”

“And how do we know that you are not fooling us?” Riona questioned as she narrowed her eyes.

“I am not fooling you! Just what in the hell is wrong with you!?”

“I still can’t trust you.”

“You...!!”

Nawdren was boiling in anger but didn’t have any power to do anything.

While Nawdren and Riona had this exchange, Amaya, who was standing behind Riona glanced at Nux and nodded lightly.

Nux nodded back and then, he stepped forward.

“Alright, I will trust you for now, Nawdren.”

“T-Thank you!”

Nawdren quickly turned towards Nux and thanked him.

These bitches... they nearly forced him to cut off his own legs...

Nawdren sighed inwardly and while he did that, Nux spoke.

“Now I will ask you some questions, answer me as precisely as possible.”

“Ask whatever you want.”

Nawdren’s information appeared in front of Nux again (not showing, it was there in the last chapter) and he questioned,

“What is the Sealed Continent?”

Protector of the Sealed Continent.

That was Nawdren’s Occupation that the System showed. Nux had a rough idea now what this Sealed Continent actually was, however, it was still just

an assumption, he still wasn't sure.

“Is there a Sealed Continent around here? Or is it a completely different land?”

Nux questioned.

Nawdren, however, shook his head and replied,

“The continent we currently are living on is the Sealed Continent.”

“Explain.”

“The World we live in is called Yrniel.”

“Yrniel...”

“I do not know much about Yrniel either, I only know what my father told me, however, what I know for sure is that this Continent is a very small part of Yrniel.”

“So you are saying...”

That after the Forbidden Region, this continent extends further and there's a bigger world?”

“Our continent is just a small place that is surrounded by Bloodhill Wilderness. If you cross the so-called Forbidden Region, you would understand that our continent is surrounded by an ocean from all directions, we will arrive at the mainland of Yrniel once we travel through the ocean.

My father ordered me to stop anyone who wanted to travel the ocean and explore the rest of the Yrniel.”

Nawdren explained.

“Why did he say that?”

“That’s the Contract my Grandfather signed with the Ancestor. I do not know the reason, but your Ancestor never wished for you people to actually leave this continent and explore Yrniel.

He wanted you all to stay in this small place for the rest of eternity.”

“I don’t get it, why would he wish for something like this?”

Nux frowned.

Nawdren, however, just shook his head,

“I do not know anything about that. I only know that my family has been honoring the Contract even after so much time has passed.”

Suddenly, Evane frowned,

“Why are you still honoring it? Does this Contract even applies to family members?”

“Normally, it shouldn’t, however, my Grandfather and the Ancestor signed a Blood Contract, one of the strongest Contracts there are and yes, it applies to everyone that carries the blood of my Grandfather.”

“Wait...”

Suddenly, Astaria glanced at Nawdren and questioned,

“Are you going to stop us from exploring the rest of the world as well?”

# Chapter 628 L Would Appreciate It If You Give Usa Little Personnel Space.

Suddenly, Astaria glanced at Nawdren and questioned,

“Are you going to stop us from exploring the rest of the world as well?”

Yrniel...

To think they were only living on a small continent this whole time...

To think there is a world out there that is much bigger than they ever thought.

To think there are cultivation stages out there that are countless times stronger than Emperor Stage, the Stage they thought was the peak...

Astaria felt like a country bumpkin.

She felt... small...

But at the same time, she also felt her competitive spirit lighting up.

This rest of the World.

The rest of the Yrniel,

She had to explore it and she wasn't going to let anyone stop her.

However, if Nawdren was bound by contract, then she might have to fight him again,

“No.”

Suddenly, Nawdren shook his head,

“I am not going to stop you.”

“But the contract...” Astaria frowned.

“Why are you doing what you are doing?” Suddenly, Nux asked another question.

Nawdren turned towards him and Nux elaborated,

“The contract only told you to keep us away from the rest of the Yrniel, you or your family never interfered with our affairs,

Then why now?

Why are you suddenly acting out?

Why suddenly go after us?

Why suddenly try to rule over us?

And why are you not stopping us from exploring the rest of the world?

Do you not fear the Contract anymore?”

Nux asked a bunch of questions.

He felt that the answers to all his questions were somehow interrelated.

And he was right,

“The Blood Contract is annulled.”

Nawdren replied.

“What do you mean?”

Nux narrowed his eyes.

He felt like there was something a lot deeper here.

“I do not know the specific details of the Contract, however, it was definitely not as simple as ‘we stop you from exploring’, it was much more complicated than that.

However, that contract is now annulled because I do not feel its energy anymore.

A Blood Contract cannot be annulled until the dominant party wants it to be annulled, in our case, the dominant party, that is the Ancestor, is already dead, so why the contract is annulled, I believe it has to do something with what the contract was in the first place.

I have a slight guess what the reason is and that guess is the reason why I am doing all this.”

Nawdren explained.

“And what’s that guess?”

“The Barrier is weakening.”

“Huh? The Barrier?” Nux frowned.

“Yes. The Barrier that protects this continent from the rest of the Yrniel, for some reason, it is weakening.” Nawdren repeated.

“Is... that not a bad thing?”

Nux questioned.

“It is... very bad.

If the people from the main continent come here, it would change the entire structure of this continent and the first to go down would be the 4 Nations.

I highly doubt even that Mist you have would be able to do anything.”

Nawdren spoke and Nux's expression turned serious.

He wasn't alone, his wives, and even Astaria's face turned solemn.

"But all of this is just your hypothesis, correct? Do you have any proof that supports your statement?" Amaya questioned.

"None." Nawdren shook his head.

He didn't have any proof.

All of this was just his assumption.

Yes, he did all of this just because of an assumption.

However, Nawdren was not a fool,

"There is no other reason for the Blood Contract to be released."

"..."

Hearing those words, Amaya turned silent.

She didn't know much about the Blood Contract, neither did she know about the details of the contract signed between the Ancestor and the Beast...

But the Contract being annulled...

This was definitely not a good sign.

Not to mention... this woman...

Amaya suddenly turned towards Astaria.

She could see in this woman's expression.

Her Thirst for power.

Her Thirst for the Peak.

It was clear what Astaria Skyfall wanted.

Even if the beings from the rest of the Yrniel aren't coming here, this woman,

There is no one stopping this woman from going there.

And what's worse?

This woman was not alone.

Ember, Thyra, Skyla, and for some reason, even Edda...

All of them had a similar expression on their faces...

Amaya had already given in.

She knew what was going to happen.

They were going to visit this 'new' and 'bigger' world soon.

"Alright, let's end all this."

Suddenly, Ember spoke up. She was talking about the 'war'. It was time to conclude all of it.

"It is done already," Evane replied.

Ember frowned.

"The Solid Earth Soldiers are all on their knees and their storage rings have been taken away, they are not going to resist now," Evane explained.

"So what are we doing next?" Edda questioned.

"I was thinking of combining all the Nations under one Nation, this would stop the future wars, however, it will make management a lot more compl-"

“Do you really think I care about all that, dear Queen?” Edda questioned with a blank look on her face.

“Huh? But you are the one who ask-” Evane frowned, soon, however, she turned silent as she realized what she meant.

Having perverted thoughts at times like this, shameless indeed. She wondered how Edda can act so shamelessly.

Evane then quickly turned towards Nux, wanting his answer,

She wanted the first turn after all.

The other women had the same thoughts as well.

The 9 of them glanced at Nux with similar expressions on their faces.

Seeing this scenery, Nux smiled.

He then looked around,

A Battlefield where Emperors and beings stronger than Emperors fought... Most of the trees here were destroyed, Nux had unknowingly sucked the Life Force out of the Grass that was on the ground and it had turned completely brown. There were cracks on the ground with some burned marks here and there...

Seeing all this, Nux's smile turned perverted,

“Here?”

He questioned.

Edda was the first one to nod her head.

And as if he was already prepared for this before the war even began,

The ring on his finger shined and a big tent appeared in front of him,

“Alright, you guys,

We are a little busy,

I would appreciate it if you give us a little personnel space.”

Nux smiled politely.

# Chapter 629 Pick.

“Alright, you guys,

We are a little busy,

I would appreciate it if you give us a little personnel space.”

Nux smiled politely.

“ ... ”

Nawdren frowned in confusion.

What could they possibly be busy with at a time and space like this?

He had heard their conversation, however, he couldn't understand what they were talking about at all.

Astaria, Arvina, and Riona, the ones who knew Nux and his wives, they understood what this perverted man was talking about.

Astaria couldn't help but sigh.

She couldn't believe that she considers this perverted man a warrior.

The transition was just too... bizarre.

“What are you looking at?”

Suddenly, Nux turned towards Astaria and questioned.

“Huh?”

“Don't be jealous.

You would be joining us soon~”

Nux spoke with a playful smile on his face.

“In your dr-”

Astaria wanted to retort, however, she stopped herself before she completed her sentence.

Seeing this, Nux’s smile widened.

“Fufufu~”

A perverted laugh leaked out of his mouth.

Astaria blushed.

And seeing the red shade that had appeared on her teacher’s face, Arvina widened her eyes in surprise.

‘W-W-What is happening here!?’

She knew Nux was going for her teacher.

A pervert like him was obviously not going to let a woman like Astaria go. Arvina didn’t find it surprising, however, she knew her teacher wouldn’t give in.

There is no way she can, right?

She was the strongest human in the wor-

‘...’

Arvina’s expression changed.

This perverted bastard...

He defeated someone who even her teacher lost against.

Not only that, he even enslaved that man- or beast-man.

The title of the strongest human...

This perverted man holds that title right now!

Wait...

A Warrior like Astaria... obviously someone like her would be attracted to the strong. Adding Nux's caring and loving personality into the picture...

It wouldn't be surprising if her teacher...

'No no no no no! Arvina, what are you thinking!? Teacher isn't someone like that! There is no way she would give in!

This...

This feels so wrong!'

Arvina aggressively shook her head to get rid of these useless thoughts that were haunting her mind.

Her teacher won't lose!

Especially not against a pervert like Nux!

Arvina solidified her thoughts, however, the moment her eyes fell on Astaria's face again, her confidence wavered.

"Hmph! If you are so busy, I would take my leave then!

I need to take care of the army anyways!"

Astaria turned around and walked away. However, suddenly, she turned around and glanced at Evane,

"How do you wish to handle the future matters, Queen Evane?"

Evane, however, just smiled awkwardly and,

“I would leave all that to you, Protector Astaria.”

She pushed all the responsibility to Astaria and quickly held Nux’s hands with a small blush on her face.

‘Wait...’

Nawdren finally realized what is happening.

‘These perverted bastards...’

He couldn’t help but curse in his head.

“What are you watching, leave.”

Riona glanced at Nawdren and ordered.

“You... you are going to join them?” Nawdren questioned with a strange look on his face.

“What are you talking about!? Why would I even think about something like that!? That’s my daughter’s husband!”

Riona berated Nawdren.

“A-Ah, I didn’t know, I apologize.”

Nawdren apologized.

He was quite the gentleman as well.

“Whatever, come with me. You might have some uses.”

Riona spoke, then she followed Astaria and spoke,

“Lady Astaria, if you need anything, just ask me.”

Astaria nodded and the two of them walked away.

Of course, Nawdren followed them obediently.

Now, the only ones left were Nux, his wives, and... Arvina...

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Nux and his wives glanced at Arvina with polite smiles on their faces.

“ ... ”

Arvina looked back with a lost expression.

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Nux and his wives were patient.

“ ... ”

Arvina didn't know what to say.

“You know we want you to leave, right?”

Edda wasn't having any of it.

“ ... ”

Arvina glanced at Edda, then she glanced at Nux.

“ ... ”

Nux didn't know what to say.

What was he supposed to say here anyway?

He couldn't understand why Arvina was still standing here, but at the same time, he felt like he couldn't ask her to leave as well.

Of course, he didn't have to do anything.

“Woman, do you have a hearing problem?”

Amaya was even harsher.

The way she moved in front of Nux looked as if she was a mother hen who was protecting her chick. The height difference between her and Nux made this scene even more comical.

“A-Ah, I apologize, I was lost in my thoughts.”

Arvina quickly came back to her senses and apologized.

“Mhm, I apologize if I came out as rude.”

Amaya replied with a small smile on her face.

A smile that screamed ‘Shoo Shoo, move away.’

With her mind filled with different thoughts, Arvina walked away.

“You were rude, Amaya.”

Nux spoke up.

“She was acting strangely.” Amaya's answer was simple.

“...”

Ember didn't say anything. Arvina was her friend, so she refrained from commenting.

Thyra's mind was already filled with different thoughts, so she didn't say anything either.

“Anyways, how are we going on with this? A Tensome!?”

Edda questioned with an excited look on her face.

“No fucking way! I am not sharing with any of you! You all can go for a Ninesome! I will have my own time later.”

Amaya’s response was the same.

“I would have agreed, but I can’t allow her to have a one-on-one while we all share, so I am out as well.” Allura jumped in.

“Same.”

Thyra nodded as well.

One by one, all the women started backing away and as they did, Edda’s expression continued to change...

She still couldn’t live her dream.

“How are we going to decide the turns?”

Felberta questioned with a serious look on her face.

Suddenly, all the women turned towards Nux.

“Eh?”

Nux’s expression changed.

“Pick.”

Felberta spoke.

“E-Eh?”

Nux stuttered.

The women continued to look at him.

The looks in their eyes screamed only one thing,

Pick me first.

Even the calm and silent Lane had the similar look on her face.

“Hahaha... Haha... ha...”

Nux knew.

He was fucked.

“!!!”

Soon, however, a genius idea appeared in his mind and,

“I have a perfect solution.” He smiled.

“What is it?”

“I would now start running.

The one who catches me first, gets the first and all other positions would be selected this way.

Of course, team-ups are allowed as well.”

Saying that, Nux just smiled, he used trickster to limit his cultivation to the point his speed would only be a little faster than his wives, and then,

He ran away.

# Chapter 630 It Doesn'T Matter If The Barrier Is Weakening Or Not.

“Nawdren, I have another question.”

While Nawdren, Astaria, and Riona were walking, Riona questioned.

“What is it?” Nawdren asked back.

His response was quite rude, however, Riona let it slide and questioned.

“The Barrier, why do you sound so sure that the Barrier is weakening?”

“...”

Nawdren turned silent.

“You said you assumed this happened just because the Blood Contract has been annulled, but no matter how much I think about it, that reason is too weak for you to act like this.

What is the actual reason you think that way?” Riona questioned.

“...I failed to become an 8 Star beast,” Nawdren answered.

When she heard this answer, even Astaria, who was walking further stopped and turned towards the two of them.

Nawdren continued,

“All of this might just be because I am incompetent, but we the Flying Lynx, none of us has ever ‘failed’ to become an 8-Star Beast.”

“What are you trying to get at?” Astaria walked towards him and questioned with a frown on her face.

Something was wrong.

Nawdren didn't reveal full information before.

“Haven't you wondered why the strongest Stage one can reach in this continent is just the Emperor Stage while there are ridiculously stronger stages outside this continent?”

“Is it because of lack of knowledge or inadequate cultivation techniques?”

Astaria wasn't sure herself.

“Do you really think that's it?”

Nawdren spoke.

“Don't play any riddles, answer properly,” Riona warned.

“The Barrier that protects this Continent also limits the Mana.”

“Limits the Mana?”

“Yes, the Mana we have here is not dense enough. That is the reason none of you humans can go past the Emperor Stage. In this part of the world, Emperor really is the True peak.

However, the same was not true for us, Flying Lynx.

We are biologically different from you.

The Mana we require to become an 8-Star Beast is lesser compared to Mana you humans require to become an Emperor.

For me to not become an 8-Star Beast,

There is a high chance the Mana Density of this world is being affected by something.”

Nawdren spoke with a serious look on his face.

“But if the barrier is weakening, shouldn’t the Mana density increase?”

Astaria questioned.

“The Barrier’s construction is not that simple.

This Barrier shouldn’t have weakened in the first place.

Me failing to become an 8 Star Beast and the Annulment of the Blood Contract, I refuse to believe these two are not interrelated.”

“...”

Astaria turned silent.

Nawdren wasn’t wrong.

“That means that the chances of the barrier weakening are a lot higher than we think,” Riona spoke with a solemn look on her face.

Nawdren didn’t say anything.

Riona then turned towards Astaria and questioned,

“Should we really unite the 4 nations?”

“What do you mean?” Astaria narrowed her eyes.

“If the barrier is weakening, then the people from the main world will for sure come to our continent as well. There is no way they will leave out a free land like ours. It doesn’t make sense for us to unite the 4 Nations, since they will eventually take it away from us.”

Riona or even Astaria, none of them had doubts.

If the people from the mainland come for them, defeating them is impossible, it was not even a discussion.

They barely defeated Nawdren, who is not even a True Sage and there is a high chance that the people from the mainland have cultivators who are at an even stronger stage than Sage.

Fighting against them was simply suicide.

“It’s been 100 years since Nawdren realized that something was wrong with the barrier, however, even now, the barrier hasn’t been destroyed. Don’t forget, Roone still managed to an Emperor.

If the Mana Density was diminishing, he wouldn’t have been able to do so.

Of course, there are chances that he is right but even then,

We still don’t know how long the Barrier will hold on.

It could be a month or even 500 years.

We don’t even know if the people from the mainland are even interested in this place.

Planning based on something so unpredictable seems stupid.”

Suddenly, Arvina walked towards them and spoke.

Riona started thinking.

Arvina’s words made sense.

Before this war, she didn’t even know something like a barrier existed and it was weakening. She should only plan with the best interest in her mind, if something happens later, she should think about it later.

Riona glanced at Arvina and nodded,

“You are thinking too much.”

Suddenly, Astaria spoke up.

“Hmm?” Arvina and Riona frowned.

“It doesn’t matter if the barrier is weakening or not.

The people from the mainland, they may or may not come for us,  
But we for sure are going for them.”

Astaria spoke with a confident smile on her face.

“All we need to do is find a new ruler for the Skyfall Kingdom.”

“Huh?”

Riona and Arvina frowned.

“What? Why are you two looking at me like that?”

“You are not planning to take Nux and his wives with you... are you?”

“Are you serious? Of course not.

I am not taking them anywhere, I will be going with them.”

“They...?”

“Mhm, all of them have already decided to leave this continent.”

“How do you even know something like that?” Arvina questioned. She was there will them when the truth about Yrniel was revealed and she didn’t see Nux and others talking about it.

A small smile appeared on Astaria’s face and she just shook her head,

“I just know.”

She then glanced at Nawdren and her expression changed,

“Now as soon as I defeat this bastard on my own, we all will leave.”

“Sure. Go ahead, you can order me to lose any time you want, I would follow it.

As long as it makes you feel good.”

Nawdren shrugged, indirectly taunting Astaria.

“Heh. Don’t get ahead of yourself.

Don’t forget, you started running away in the middle of our battle like the scardy little bitch you are.”

Astaria retorted with a calm, confident look on her face.

Nawdren suddenly turned silent.

He quickly recalled the time when Astaria’s sword had started shining and it cut through his sword to wound his chest.

He still has that cut on his chest.

Astaria then looked at Nawdren and narrowed her eyes,

“You seem to know what that move was,

Now answer me,

What it was, and how do I master it?”

“...”

Nawdren’s expression changed.

# Chapter 631 Hear Me Out...

9 days passed by quickly, currently, Nux was lying on a large bed inside the tent. Yes, he was still in the middle of the battlefield, however, not all of his wives liked the idea of...

Ahem...

Well, let's just say not all of them were as bold as Edda when it comes down to it.

Evane, Lane, and Amaya just wanted a pleasant time with him, on a comfortable bed.

Of course, Nux never complained about it.

These 9 days, he gave one whole day to each of his women, doing whatever they wanted and it was not just about sex alone, he spent time with them, visited some beautiful cities, ate some delicious food, making all of them feel special.

Nux also understood this, for the last few days, he couldn't give his wives as much time as he wanted to.

This could be due to the absurd number of wives he had. Unlike the Kings and high nobles with many wives, he does not ignore his wives and only uses them for sex, his wives were not trophies.

He loved each and every one of them and wanted to be there for them, physically and emotionally, and being there for 9 women was certainly not very easy.

Then there was also the Devouring Mist Demon Physique, which he needed to comprehend. He also had to put effort into it.

He was thankful that his wives were understanding and were always ready to support him, also, the telepathic connection they had due to the [Harem's Gate] was helpful as well. It allowed him to be there for them whenever they needed and the women could always contact him if something did happen.

However, even with that, Nux knew he didn't have to be there just when they faced a problem, he wanted to be with them without any specific reason as well.

And that's why he used these 9 days to fully enjoy with his wives.

Of course, they did the snu snu as well, a lot of it.

And now,

Nux was lying on his bed, alone, with a small smile on his face.

His [Regeneration] and high stamina made it easy to give his all to all his wives, however, he still needed some mental rest.

However, if Nux thought he would finally get some mental rest, then he was wrong.

Just as he closed his eyes to sleep, a woman barged into his tent.

"I see you are finally free now."

Astaria spoke with a small smile on her face.

"Oh, Astaria."

Nux smiled as he sat up and gestured Astaria to sit on the bed.

Astaria walked in and a frown appeared on her face,

"What's with this funny smell?"

"You are seriously asking that? What are you, a child?"

Nux questioned with a playful smile on his face.

Astaria's expression changed as she realized what this funny smell was.

“Y-You shameless! How are you even lying on the bed with this peaceful expression on your face!? Doesn't this smell bother you?”

Astaria questioned with a slightly red face.

“Heh~ Just wait for a little longer, Astaria, give me a few more weeks, and once I finally defeat you,

I will help you get used to this ‘funny smell’ as well.”

Nux chuckled.

“...”

A frown appeared on Astaria's face.

“Hmm?” A confused expression appeared on Nux's face.

Astaria then glanced at Nux and narrowed her eyes,

“A few more weeks?”

“Hmmm?”

Nux was now even more confused, soon, however, a playful smile appeared on his face, he crawled towards Astaria, then bringing his face very very close to Astaria's he questioned.

“Are a few weeks too hard for you?”

You should have said that sooner, Astaria~

If I knew you were this perverted, I would have worked even harder~

But don't worry, now that I know, I would change my ways, just give me this week and I would definitely find a way to defeat you~

And then,

I will make you mine.”

Astaria's face turned even redder, she backed away a little, Nux's face was a little too close right now.

An unexpectedly cute reaction, especially for a warrior like her.

“A-Are you underestimating me?”

Astaria questioned as she glanced at Nux with an accusing look on her face. Combining this expression with Astaria's face which was blushing nonstop, made her look... adorable.

\*Gulp\*

Nux couldn't help but gulp...

The current Astaria was too much to handle, even for him.

“What are you talking about? How am I underestimating you?”

Nux questioned.

“You defeated Nawdren.”

Astaria spoke.

“Mhm.” Nux nodded in understanding.

“Nawdren defeated me.”

“...” Nux now understood, however, Astaria still continued,

“If you can defeat Nawdren, then defeating me is... something you can do without even putting any real effort.”

“It’s different.” Nux, however, shook his head.

“I only managed to subdue Nawdren because he used his Life Force and I was able to trap it and seal his Mana, if I actually use the Mist, then the only I would be left with is to kill.

The Devouring Mist is not a joke,

I cannot use this against you, if it stays in contact with you, even for a second, it can cause irreversible harm.”

“So you are saying that you won’t use the Mist to defeat me and are looking for another way to defeat me before you challenge me again?”

“Indeed.” Nux nodded.

Astaria finally understood.

However, Astaria’s expression turned solemn.

“So you were underestimating me.”

“Huh?”

Nux frowned. He glanced at Astaria and noticed at the blush on her face had disappeared and she continued to glare at him with a... hateful look on her face?

‘Wait...’

Suddenly, Nux’s expression changed.

‘Fuck.’

He finally realized.

“So you think I am so weak that you would find another way to defeat me within a few weeks huh.”

Astaria commented.

‘As I thought...’

\*Gulp\*

Nux gulped.

He fucked up.

Astaria was a warrior...

From her perspective, him not challenging her would look like he wasn't treating her as an actual challenge.

A wry and nervous smile appeared on Nux's face and he called,

“Astaria...

Hear me out...”

# Chapter 632 You Are A Hurdle In My Way.

“Astaria...

Hear me out...”

Nux called out with a nervous smile on his face.

“...”

Astaria didn't say anything and just glanced at Nux. Nux took this as his cue and started,

“You are a hurdle in my way.”

Astaria narrowed her eyes.

“As a warrior, I wish to overpower you, defeat you, and leave you behind. Just like I have done it before, starting from a mortal to Beginner Stage Cultivators, then Advance, Masters, Grand Masters, Experts, Kings, and then the Emperors, I have defeated them all.

And I do not wish to stop here.

The main continent.

Yrniel.

I wish to do the same there as well.

However, you are different from other ‘hurdles’ I have encountered or will encounter in the future.

You are someone I wish to obtain. I want to carry you with me when I encounter future hurdles.

You are someone precious to me, you are someone I cannot leave behind.

Look, I am not some great warrior like you who has an unextinguishable flame inside her, wishing to reach the peak.

I am just a normal man, who wants to live a long, happy life with my family, and in this world, where the strong rules, I have to keep defeating everyone, I have to keep destroying all the hurdles, the Sage Stage, the Great Sage, and the stages after that, I have to surpass them all.

I need to reach the peak as well, however, the force driving me is different.

I wish to reach the peak together with the people I love,

And that includes you.

And since I plan to take you the peak with me,

I cannot do something that would harm you.”

Nux’s expression turned serious, he looked into Astaria’s eyes and,

“I will not use the Mist to defeat you, Astaria.

I will find another way.

It might take longer than a week, and it might even take years, but that won’t stop me.

I will defeat you, Astaria. I will make you mine.

No matter how long it takes.”

A strange aura emanated from Nux’s body when he said those words.

Astaria, however, wasn’t intimidated by that aura.

She continued to look into Nux's eyes.

This time, Nux didn't back down either.

He spoke out his honest thoughts, he wasn't planning to go back on his words.

'Huh?'

Suddenly, Nux frowned as Astaria placed her hand on his chest.

“What would you do after you defeat me?”

Suddenly, Astaria questioned.

“Huh?”

Nux didn't expect this question.

“What? You don't have an answer ready in your mind?”

Astaria questioned as a playful smile appeared on her face.

“I expected better from you, Nux. I didn't think you were the unprepared type.

Or maybe you just don't think you can defeat me in the first place, so thinking about it is pointle-”

“Didn't I answer you already?” Nux didn't let Astaria finish and a smile appeared on his face as well.

He then moved his face close to Astaria's, their foreheads touching each other, and,

“I will make you mine.”

“And how do you plan to do that?” Astaria questioned and hearing that question, Nux paused.

Soon, however, he decided to continue pushing forward.

Shamelessness was the way.

“Isn’t that obvious?”

“It is not, please, elaborate.”

“You remember our bet, don’t you?”

“I do. I said I will marry you when you defeat me. You aren’t thinking that I will be yours just because you married me, are you? Don’t forget, I had a husband before. As a matter of fact, I even had a son.”

“I still find that hard to believe. You don’t look like a 300-year-old at all. You have maintained yourself well, Astaria.”

There was no way Astaria was winning when it came to a war with words.

Nux was a champion when it comes down to it.

He has reached the true peak.

Astaria, however, wasn’t planning on giving up.

“I thank you for the compliment, but you still didn’t answer me,

You keep saying you will make me yours again and again, but how exactly do you plan to do that?”

“I will marry you after I defeat you.”

“And?”

“And what does a married couple do?”

“Hmm?”

“You have the experience, don’t you? Answer the question, what does a married couple do?” Nux questioned with a playful smile on his face.

“They live together.”

“Oh c’mon, don’t be like that, Astaria.

You know what I want to hear, don’t you?

Wait, don’t tell me,

You aren’t embarrassed of saying that out loud, are you?

What an unexpectedly cute si-”

“Sex.

Married couple mate with each other, in order to procreate.”

Astaria replied.

The red shade on her face combined with the stern and ‘not giving up’ expression on her face...

Even Nux was having a hard time facing that look.

However, right now, he couldn’t back down.

“And that’s your answer.” He smiled.

“Huh?”

Astaria furrowed her brows.

“What do you mean?” She questioned.

“You asked how I was planning to make you mine, didn’t you?

That’s your answer.

I will 'mate' with you."

"Y-You think I would become yours just because you managed to mate with me, t-that's not how it works. But you can't be blamed as well, you are nothing but a young boy." Astaria replied as she tried to look away.

"Nope, you got it all wrong, Astaria."

Nux, however, shook his head.

"I am not saying I made you mine just because I managed to have sex with you."

A perverted smile appeared on his face as he continued,

"You will become mine because you will enjoy the process so much that you wouldn't be able to hold back and would give yourself to me just to experience my love and care again, and again, then again~"

"You sound confident," Astaria commented.

"Trust me, when it comes to this, I am the best.

And it is not arrogance, it's confidence."

Nux smiled confidently.

"Hoh?" Astaria raised her eyebrow.

Nux continued to smile,

Then suddenly, Astaria pushed Nux onto the bed.

# Chapter 633 She Was Better Than He Thought.

Then suddenly, Astaria pushed Nux onto the bed.

“Huh?”

Nux furrowed his brows.

What in the hell was Astaria trying to do?

And what’s with that expression on her face?

Nux had lots of questions in his mind.

Of course, by no means, he was an innocent boy with no knowledge about all this, a woman pushing him onto the bed... this was definitely something Nux has experienced before and he knows exactly what happens after this.

But here, the woman we are talking about was Astaria Skyfall.

A crazy warrior who has nothing but the craving for power inside her mind.

A woman like her was pushing him onto the bed...

Nux didn’t know how to react.

“I admit defeat, Nux.”

Suddenly, Astaria spoke.

“Hmm?”

Nux frowned.

“You don’t have to find any different ways to defeat me, I admit my defeat and I am willing to marry you.”

Astaria spoke. Nux’s expression changed.

Normally, these words would be like honey for Nux’s ears, however, right now, Nux didn’t like these words one bit.

He felt as if Astaria was pitying him.

He still hasn’t defeated her, after all.

Nux wanted to do this, fair and square.

“Astaria, you don’t have to-”

Nux was about to reply, however, before he could even end his sentence, Astaria interrupted.

“I understand that you don’t want to use Mist against me, and I respect it. I am impressed that you are trying to find different ways to defeat me even though you already have one with you, however, you have to see things from my perspective as well.

It will hurt my pride knowing that I am only winning this challenge because you aren’t using your full strength against me.

Even though you don’t intend to do it, it feels like you are looking down on me.

And that is something I cannot allow.

I will admit my defeat here.”

Astaria spoke with a serious look on her face.

Then suddenly, a confident smile appeared on her face as she continued,

“However, this doesn’t mean I am done here.”

Nux narrowed his eyes and Astaria continued,

“You defeated me in the domain where I thought I was the strongest, now I would do the same.”

Astaria then crawled towards Nux, she placed her knees on either side of Nux’s abdomen, her hands on top of Nux’s shoulder, then trying her best to hide the blush on her face, she brings her face close to Nux’s and,

“I will defeat you where you think you are the strongest.”

Right now, Astaria’s face was right on top of Nux’s, it was so close that the two of them could feel each other’s breath over on their faces, Astaria’s sweet body scent assaulted Nux’s nose, he looked into her eyes with a lost expression on his face, soon, however, a big smile appeared on her face and,

“You really think you can defeat me, girl?”

He questioned.

His attitude was strikingly similar to what Astaria had around the time he challenged her.

Of course, Astaria didn’t mind either, she would silence this boy using her skills.

And what’s the best way to shut that annoying mouth of his?

Astaria lowered her head and,

She sealed Nux’s lips.

“!!!”

Nux’s eyes widened in surprise.

Jolts of pleasure assaulted his body.

Astaria was kissing him on her own accord, just the thought of it and Nux felt a slight twitch in his lower region.

Astaria, however, didn't realize it and continued to kiss him.

Her kiss wasn't filled with experience, she was just softly touching her own lips with Nux's. Clearly, she didn't have much experience in this field.

The political marriages weren't exactly based on love, after all.

It can be said Astaria's experience was... well, not very adequate.

She spent her entire life chasing the peak, after all.

Of course, this didn't mean that Nux didn't enjoy this kiss, on the contrary, he was absolutely loving it!

He was fighting the urge to roll over, take control and push his tongue inside Astaria's room, however, his inner sadist stopped him.

Astaria wanted control?

She wanted to be on the top?

She wanted to defeat him?

He would welcome her.

He would let her do whatever she wanted, and once she tries everything in her power, he would make a move.

Just thinking about all this filled Nux's mind with joy. Different scenarios had already started playing in his mind.

On the other hand, Astaria continued to kiss Nux.

She quickly understood that just touching their lips together for a long time would only bore Nux, she needed to be more creative. She needed to provide different sensations.

Astaria broke the kiss, then, she kissed him again.

Then, she broke the kiss again and kissed again.

She continued to do it again, then again and again, teasing Nux as much as she could.

Even Nux was having a hard time holding himself back.

A smile appeared on Astaria's face when she noticed that Nux's body was twitching very lightly.

She might not be much experienced, however, that didn't mean she was clueless about these matters, she had her teenage years as well. There was a time when even she was excited about these matters. She had done some research on her own as well.

The knowledge from that time, she hadn't forgotten it.

“You are much more sensitive than I expected,

This will be easier than I thought.”

Astaria teased.

Nux smiled back.

“Why don't you give your best the-”

He wanted to challenge, however, soon, his expression changed when he realized that something warm had entered his pants and was now touching his little brother.

It was Astaria's hand.

Nux looked at Astaria's face with a surprised look on his face, Astaria smiled playfully, then with her hand, which was a little rough because of the calluses formed due to intense swordplay, she started stoking Nux's rod.

“Ugghh~”

A small moan leaked out of Nux’s mouth.

Astaria...

She was better than he thought.

# Chapter 634 The Sadist Inside Astaria Was Born.\*

Astaria was a lot better than Nux thought.

No, rather than her being better, it was more of a Nux's problem.

Nux realized this a little while ago, he had a thing for strong women.

No, not the huge bodybuilder women, he didn't know if he had a fetish like that, but he definitely had a thing for strong, independent women.

And Astaria stood at the peak of all those women.

The Strongest Woman in their Continent.

When someone like her was stroking Nux's dick, the pleasure he felt automatically shot up.

Unlike Nux's wives, her hands were not soft, her hands were full of calluses, making them rough, however, these rough hands didn't make this any less pleasurable.

Rather, it made Astaria's hand job even better.

It was a new experience for Nux after all.

For some reason, even Ember and Thyra, who had spent their entire lives, dedicated to weapons didn't have so many calluses in their hands.

“Heeh? Moaning already?” Astaria teased again as she cupped Nux's balls.

Nux's thighs stuck together and seeing him react to her moves in such a way, Astaria's smile widened.

She brought her lips close to Nux's ears and whispered,

“Are you sure you are the best in this field?”

Your wives just didn't say this to you just to make you happy, did they?”

Astaria teased again.

For some reason, it felt as if Nux and Astaria had switched their roles, where Nux was now having a hard time as the reigning champion, while Astaria was revealing more and more of her cards, shocking and teasing Nux and continuously putting in a difficult position.

“If it was one of my wives, I would have cummed already, you look too inexperienced.”

Nux replied with a smile on his face.

Astaria's face twitched,

“Are you sure you should lie to me right now?”

She questioned as she tightened her grip around Nux's little brother.

“!!!”

Nux's eyes widened in surprise.

He didn't expect this.

He couldn't believe Astaria was threatening him by taking his little brother hostage.

“Y-You are doing to do something so cowardly, r-right?”

Nux questioned, trying to move his hips in different ways, he didn't know what it would achieve, but currently, he wasn't exactly thinking.

His little brother was at risk here.

“What do you think?” Astaria questioned.

Nux looked into her eyes and he knew,

She definitely would.

“You won’t lie again, would you?”

“O-Of course not.” Nux smiled politely.

“Good.”

Astaria kissed Nux’s lips again and at the same time, she started stroking Nux’s rod again.

By now, Nux’s rod was standing tall, perfectly erect.

He was definitely enjoying this.

Astaria continued to stroke his rod, however, she knew she couldn’t continue this.

Pleasure was directly proportional to change.

If she continued to do the same thing, then this bastard would definitely get used to it and would be able to hold back.

Astaria’s mind was thinking about different ways to bring this ‘change’.

She could vary the speed, however, that was too uncreative.

When she faced someone like Nux, she knew she needed to be creative, suddenly, a small smile appeared on her face.

She slowly brought her hand towards Nux’s chest and commented,

“Your chest is quite hard, it is well built.”

Nux was wearing a white colored robe right now, so Astaria didn't feel any resistance, she just needed to move the robe and Nux's well-built chest was visible.

Astaria started moving her hands on Nux's chest.

It was simple movements, however, since the one doing all that was Astaria, Nux felt a strange jolt of pleasure coursing through his entire body every time she moved.

Of course, something like this was still not enough for him to move.

However, Astaria wasn't relying on it either,

She slowly brought her knees near Nux's abdomen, all this while, she made sure that her thighs kept touching his body, and then,

“You know... I have heard this somewhere...”

She started.

She placed her right knee in a way that her calf and hamstrings touched Nux's erect rod and,

“Boys like you get turned on the moment a woman uses her legs.”

Astaria smiled playfully.

Nux's expressions were telling her that whatever she was doing was working.

She could feel his lower body trembling slightly and the way she was trying to look into her eyes with a determined look on his face, it definitely showed that he was hiding his real expression.

“Now, I will be honest, I don't know how it works, however,

I am sure you will help me by telling me how it feels, right?”

Astaria questioned and at the same time, she brought her ankle near her thighs, tightening her grip around Nux's dick, and then,

She started moving.

“Ugghh~”

Another moan leaked out of Nux's mouth.

“How is it?”

Astaria questioned even though she knew the answer already.

“...”

Nux decided not to say anything.

He was having a hard time not moaning already.

This sensation...

It was just too good.

Astaria was currently wearing skin-tight clothes. The fabric was soft and combined with her alluring movements, Nux was having a hard time holding back.

Right now, he wanted nothing more than to push Astaria aside, roll over on top of her, tear her clothes, and shove his dick inside her pussy,

Even Nux didn't know how he was still holding on.

He just closed his eyes, trying to think of something else to distract his mind.

However, Astaria wasn't going to let that happen.

She brought her mouth near his ears and,

“HmMMM? Are you going to stay silent?”

“Didn’t you say you were the best in this field?”

“Then shouldn’t you help out your wife here?”

“Wait, you are not scared, are you?”

“You can’t possibly be thinking that I would take away your position and rather than you making me yours, I would make you mine?”

“Noooo~ No way that is possible, right? You aren’t that weak, are you?”  
whispered softly with a playful smile on her face.

At the same time, she also pressed her breasts on Nux’s side chest, attacking him from 3 directions at the same time.

“I-It feels good but it could b-be better.”

Nux replied.

“Mhm, sure, leave it to me, I will make sure I will improve.”

Astaria replied with a seductive look on her face.

She was definitely enjoying this as well.

This was the first time she saw this expression on Nux’s face, after all.

She could definitely get addicted to it.

The Sadist inside Astaria was born.

# Chapter 635 How About You Give Me My Turn To Make Things Even? \*

Astaria increased the speed, and the pleasure Nux was feeling rose up, however, Astaria wasn't done, she wanted to defeat him as soon as possible,

Suddenly, she moved her mouth close to Nux's ears, Nux glanced at her, she smiled sensually, then she blew inside Nux's ears, a soft whisper of breath stimulated Nux's entire body

“Phooooohhh~”

Jolts of pleasure assaulted Nux's body,

“Uggghhhhh!!”

He moaned in pleasure, his hips rose up, back arched up, and he... he came, spreading his jizz all over Astaria's right leg.

“Haahh... Hahh... Haahhh...”

Nux started breathing heavily.

This stimulation was indeed too much for him.

It was hard to hold back.

“6 Minutes 39 Seconds. You held on longer than I thought.” Astaria commented as she glanced at Nux's face with a small smile on her face.

“Haahh... haa...” Nux didn't reply and just continued to breathe.

Astaria then glanced at her right leg which was now covered in Nux's jizz and a shade of red appeared on her face. Soon, however, her expression returned to the playful one she had and she pouted,

“Look at the mess you created... my clothes are now ruined... It was my favorite dress as well...”

Astaria glanced at Nux with an accusing look on her face, seeing that look, Nux couldn't help but smile,

“So now you must want me to make it up to you, don't you?”

He questioned.

He knew what Astaria was trying to achieve, and honestly, he was quite surprised.

He didn't expect Astaria to be so bold.

If any of Nux's wives saw Astaria right now, she would simply think of her as a female Nux. Her tone, her playfulness, her sadistic nature... all of it was... just too similar.

“I want you to make it up? Don't you think that is something you should do as a man responsible for ruining my favorite dress?”

Astaria questioned back.

Nux's chuckled.

He thought Astaria didn't have much experience in this field, it was true, however, there was a problem.

Her knowledge of the human body was high. She how to produce different stimulations and using that knowledge, even her innocent and inexperienced moves were... scary.

Nux needed to change his tactics.

“You are a coward, Astaria.”

Astaria’s expression changed, but before she could react, Nux continued,

“You had your way with me for more than 5 minutes, you did whatever you wanted, but you still want me to compensate you?

Do you really think it is your victory when I am barely moving?”

Astaria narrowed her eyes,

“What do you want?”

She questioned.

Hearing that question, Nux’s smile widened.

‘Heh, just a little provocation and you jump on it.

Fufufu~ You are still too easy, Astaria.’

He thought inwardly and then, he demanded,

“How about you give me my turn to make things even?”

“Your turn?”

“Mhm, allow me to have my way with you for 5 minutes, just like I did.”

Nux demanded with a perverted smile on his face.

“6 Minutes 39 Seconds,” Astaria spoke,

“I will give you the exact amount of time I used.”

Astaria wouldn’t back away from a challenge.

Hearing those words, Nux chuckled,

“Very well.”

He extended his hands in the air, a 4-meter-long Purple Black colored rod pierced out of the ground. Nux grabbed the rod and broke it from the bottom.

Seeing that rod, Astaria narrowed her eyes and glanced at Nux.

Nux just smiled as he glanced at Astaria.

“Let’s start this, shall we?”

He questioned as he sat up, then, he pushed Astaria onto the bed, just like she pushed her. He removed the robe he was wearing, revealing his entire body.

This definitely wasn’t Astaria’s first time seeing Nux’s body, she has seen it when he trained with her before, however, today...

She knew it was different...

Astaria’s face turned red again, this time, the redness didn’t fade away, especially since all her attention was on Nux’s little brother that stood tall even after he had just orgasmed.

Nux then crawled toward Astaria, the closer he got, the closer his little brother came toward Astaria, Astaria’s eyes were fixed on it, it was as if she was charmed. Seeing this, Nux just smiled.

He then grabbed Astaria’s hand,

“Huh?”

Astaria finally came out of her reverie.

“Now now, stay there patiently, will you?”

Nux spoke gently, he then moved the rod he had just created inside Astaria’s clothes through her arm and passed it out from the other end, forcing Astaria to be in a T position.

Astaria tried to move her arms, however, with the rod tying her up like this, she couldn't her arms at all.

“I used half of my Mana to create this rod, it won't break that easily. Of course, it will be different if you use Mana, but you won't do that, will you?”

I am sure you will not go back on your words, right?”

Nux questioned.

“...”

Astaria didn't say anything.

Nux's smile widened, his eyes then fell on Astaria's pants and,

“Now, let me do something about these ruined clothes of yours.”

His hands slowly moved towards her pants and then,

*\*Zzzttt\**

He then tore her pants, revealing Astaria's smooth, white legs.

“Much better.” Nux smiled.

Astaria's face turned red, Nux, however, wasn't done yet, he traced his fingers through her smooth thighs, moving towards her crotch area covered by her black-colored panties and pressing it gently.

“Anhh~”

A small moan leaked out of Astaria's mouth.

“A Black one huh, as I expected from a bold woman like you.”

Nux praised.

Astaria's face turned redder and she didn't reply.

Nux then moved his face closer to Astaria's, their eyes looking into each other's, noses touching together, lips dangerously close and in this situation, Astaria couldn't help but gulp because she could feel Nux's hot little brother touching her thighs.

"I finally have you in this position, Astaria.

I have been dreaming about it for a loong loong time~"

Nux smiled, his free hand moving inside her clothes, touching her abdomen.

"Annhh~"

Astaria's body reacted again when Nux's cold hands touched her, however, it wasn't over,

She could feel where his hand was moving.

Astaria closed her eyes and started feeling Nux's hand that was moving towards her breasts, Nux movements were unusually gentle and slow.

It was as if he didn't care about the fact that he just had 6 minutes to do all this.

"Annh~"

Another moan leaked out of Astaria's mouth as Nux's cold hand freed her right breast from her bra.

# Chapter 636 Are You Ready? \*

“Annh~”

Astaria moaned again, Nux had started playing with her right nipple, his other hand was just pressing her crotch, but for some reason, the pleasure she was feeling was already too much.

Her body was on edge, she was forced to use everything she had to not moan, however, even then, she had moaned more than 4 times.

And the arms that she couldn't use didn't make it any better, this helpless feeling of not being able to move her hands made her vulnerable, and for some reason, the thought of being vulnerable in front of this man...

It turned her on...

Suddenly, Nux moved his face away from Astaria and sat up.

He placed both his elbows on either side of her face and continued,

“You seem ready now, shall I move to the next stage?”

“...do whatever you want.”

Astaria turned her face away.

Nux's smile widened, he quickly moved his hands and grabbed Astaria's panties. Astaria's expression changed, however, before she could do anything, Nux quickly pulled down her panties, revealing her pussy that was currently wet.

“Oh ho? What a pervert~”

Nux smiled.

“That’s just a natural body reaction!”

Astaria defended herself.

“Hmmm? Does it get wet when you are tied up? And it’s natural? Are you sure?”

I don’t know much about the female body, but I highly doubt that’s true.

Maybe that’s a natural reaction for a pervert?”

“I-It’s not because I am tied up! It’s because you are moving like that!”  
Astaria retorted.

“But I didn’t do anything though? I didn’t even touch this beautiful thing here.”

Nux spoke as he brushed his fingers through Astaria’s lower lips.

“AAaannhhh~”

Astaria moaned loudly because of Nux’s sudden move.

She had a minor orgasm as well.

“And that’s a natural reaction as well?” Nux questioned with a playful smile on his face.

“...yes, t-that’s natural as well,” Astaria replied. This time, however, her voice was a lot lower than before.

“Uh huh. Sure.

I trust you.”

Nux nodded in understanding.

Then he grabbed Astaria’s skin-tight shirt and pulled it up, he didn’t remove the entire thing, he just lifted it to the point where her bra was now visible.

Nux didn't stop there, with a \*Click\* he quickly removed her bra as well, revealing her beautiful bare breasts.

“How beautiful~”

Nux praised the incredible sight in front of him.

Astaria turned her face away, trying to avoid Nux's gaze.

Nux just smiled, he lowered his face and his lips grazed her breasts.

“Annh~” Another moan leaked out of Astaria's mouth. She was just that sensitive right now.

Nux's hand moved towards her lower lips, he circled his finger around those beautiful lips a few times, and each circle increased Astaria's sensitivity, especially since she was trying her best to control her moans right now.

Nux could feel her legs trembling, however, he knew this wasn't enough.

He needed more.

He needed her body to react even more violently.

With an evil smile on his face, Nux's lips moved towards her nipples and he started licking the tip.

This time, however, Astaria didn't moan. She gritted her teeth and forcefully stopped herself.

Nux didn't mind.

After so many sessions with his wives, he didn't have to hear moans to know if a woman's body was reacting to his touch or not.

The hardened nipples were already enough for him to know Astaria's condition.

He just continued to lick her soft nipples and once then, after a soft kiss, he started sucking on those nipples.

“Uunngghhh~”

Astaria’s back arched up.

Nux smiled, and using this chance, he pushed his middle finger inside her canal.

“Annhhh~”

Astaria moaned loudly.

The attacks from two sides were too much for her.

Nux, however, was merciless, he used his free hand and started kneading her other breast.

Astaria curled up her toes, Nux’s movements were too slow, she wanted to use her hands to pull Nux’s body closer to her body, however, since they were tied up, she could only endure this touch.

Nux’s finger continued to explore her cave, discovering more and more of her weak points, making her body even more sensitive,

Astaria knew.

She couldn’t be able to hold back any longer.

She could sense that huge orgasm that is about to come.

Her body had already started trembling, there was an unbearable itch near her groin area, her walls wanted to be touched, however, Nux seemed to be unaware of all that and was still continuing with her slow and continuous movements.

“Haahh... Hahh... Haa...”

Astaria started breathing heavily.

She moved her legs around Nux's legs, giving him little signs, telling him to move quickly, Nux, however, was still unaware.

Astaria clenched her fists.

The itch was getting unbearable.

All of this felt stale and exciting at the same time, however, the thirst for more overpowering.

Astaria gritted her teeth.

“Unnhh~”

Nux continued with his slow movements.

Sucking and licking her nipple, playing with her breast with one hand, exploring her cave with the other hand, and using his thumb to tease her clit...

All these movements were extremely sensual...

Every single one of these movements sent jolts of pleasure into her body, however, these jolts... they were like weak current signals, that activated her body, making it more and more sensitive, however, it was still not enough to help her reach the end...

Every time she felt that she would finally reach the end, the movement becomes stale, and once she gets used to it and calms down, more and more jolts of pleasure assaults her body.

An extremely frustrating feeling, especially with her hands tied up like that.

“...faster.”

Astaria finally gave in.

Nux paused.

As soon as he paused, the itch Astaria felt became even more unbearable,

“Hmmm? What did you say?”

Nux questioned as he sat up and looked into Astaria’s eyes.

“Faster...” Astaria spoke up.

“What if I say I have an even better solution?”

“...” Astaria turned silent.

Seeing this as a signal, Nux moved his finger out of her cave, her expression changed, however, before she could react, Astaria’s eyes widened as Nux placed his rod right on top of her lower lips.

“Are you ready?”

# Chapter 637 L Love You, Star.\*\*

“Are you ready?”

Nux questioned.

“I... I am...” Astaria replied with a deep blush on her face.

And as soon as she did.

“Aannnhhhh~”

A moan of relief came out of her mouth and Nux slowly pushed his rod inside her vagina.

“Aaahhhh~”

However, this time, she wasn't alone.

Nux moaned together with her as well.

Her walls quickly surrounded Nux's rod, Astaria's insides were unbearably soft. Those wet and gushy walls surrounding Nux's rod as if they would gulp it down...

Nux momentarily lost all his strength and fell on top of Astaria.

Her breasts and his chest touched, his face was right beside Astaria's, he could feel her rough breathing and the heat emanating out of her body.

“It feels amazing~”

Without glancing at Astaria's face, Nux whispered softly.

“...”

Astaria however, didn't reply.

Nux frowned, but just as he was about to turn his head towards her, Astaria used her legs, making sure that he wouldn't be able to move his hips and then,

\*Squirt\*

Nux's dick was showered with the holy juice.

Astaria came.

Nux finally glanced at Astaria's face and seeing the look of absolute relief and pleasure on her face, he couldn't hold himself back and kissed her cheeks.

"You look absolutely lovely, Star~"

Hearing those words, Astaria turned towards Nux.

Her expression looked tired, it was as if she had won a great war, however, the smile on her face was absolutely stunning.

Her walls were still twitching, Nux's rod was still being showered, yes, her orgasm still hadn't ended yet.

Astaria was currently experiencing the longest orgasm she has ever experienced.

"We... we aren't done yet... are we...?"

However, she still craved more.

Hearing her words, Nux's smile widened, he quickly lifted his body and,

"Of course not."

With rejuvenated energy, he moved his dick.

"Annnhhh~" Astaria moaned.

She had just experienced a long orgasm, actually, she was still experiencing a few after orgasms, her body, especially her insides, were extremely sensitive, Nux's any random movement was enough for her to moan, however, Nux, who already knew about most of her weak points wasn't just moving randomly.

“Aaanhhh~”

Astaria moaned again, Nux's rod's head just passed through a specific point that sent jolts of electric pleasure all over her body, her caves tightened, trying to force Nux's dick to stay there, however, Nux didn't listen.

He continued to move his dick, in, then out, then in, then out, and with each thrust, he continue to increase his speed,

Increasing the pleasure Astaria was experiencing to an even greater level.

“Annh~ Annnnh~ AnannannH~”

Astaria continued to moan as Nux drilled his rod into her body.

He used his hands to play with her lovely breasts, due to his touch Astaria felt ticklish all over her body, however, with her hands tied up, there was nothing she could do.

She could only continue to look at Nux's face, who was still moving his hips, sending jolts and jolts of mind-numbing pleasure into her body, and helplessly accept his thrusts.

“Aaannhhh~ AaaaAannnh~ AAaannnhhh~”

Astaria could feel her legs weakening.

She has just orgasmed, but she could already feel another orgasm nearing.

Just that thought frightened her.

Just a single orgasm was so much pleasurable... what would happen if she experienced another orgasm so quickly?

Would her mind even be able to endure something like that?

She wouldn't turn into a fool, will she?

She couldn't help but think about these foolish questions.

This was her first time feeling something like this.

For her, sex was only an activity used to procreate.

She had always wondered why Nux's wives were so crazy about him, she wondered why their relationship was so abnormally strong, she even wondered how can they so attached to each other, how can they possibly live their life, not thinking about their own goals, but thinking about each other?

And now, she finally realized the answer.

She could feel Nux's love with each of his thrusts.

With how he was gently smiling at her while embracing her body.

His playful and teasing smile was all gone...

That strange challenge she fought for, Nux never took it seriously in the first place, and honestly, she only realized now that even she didn't care about that challenge at all.

The 6 minutes were already over...

She didn't have to give into his demands and stay like this any longer, however, the way Nux moved, it was just so pleasurable that Astaria couldn't help but listen and give in to his wishes.

"I love you, Star."

Suddenly, Nux confessed.

Astaria's mind stopped working.

Her face quickly turned red, this time, she didn't even try hiding her expression, this confession was too sudden...

Astaria looked into Nux's eyes, she knew what she wanted to do, however, she was still too embarrassed.

She recalled the first time she met this shameful bastard, how this bastard continuously pestered and teased her, how she started training him, then the final battle, where the two of them fought together against Nawdren...

All these scenes started playing in her mind, then suddenly, her mind blackened out, Astaria came out of her reverie and noticed Nux's face, which was dangerously close to hers.

He was waiting for her reply.

A small smile then appeared on her face, she closed her eyes, and then, she replied,

“I love you too, shameless bastard.”

Nux's smile widened and he sealed Astaria's lips.

However, this time, he wasn't planning for a dry kiss.

His tongue moved, and Astaria's eyes widened, however, she quickly accepted Nux's advance and allowed Nux's tongue to enter her mouth. She even tried to copy his movements and started rolling her own tongue around Nux's, her movements were obviously sloppy, but Nux didn't care.

He was enjoying the kiss.

The two of them embraced the heat coming out of their bodies.

Amidst all this, Nux continued with his thrusts.

Astaria's sensitive walls tightened even more.

Nux's erect dick was assaulted from all directions, finally, he couldn't hold himself back and,

He came.

His milk gushed deep side Astaria's walls, and as if that was the last straw, Astaria's walls tightened even more, and then, they loosened,

\*Squirt\*

Nux's dick was bathed once again.

“Mmmfffmhhmpfff!”

The couple's muffled moan escaped the tent.

The couple quickly lost all the strength inside their body and Nux fell on top of Astaria.

Their lips finally parted,

“Haaahh... haahh... haa...”

“hhhaaa... haahhh... haa...”

They then started breathing heavily and suddenly,

Nux felt a huge amount of energy entering his body.

Of course, he didn't have to check what it was, he already knew it.

A big smile appeared on Nux's face, he completely ignored the energy that had entered his body, he just glanced at Astaria and questioned,

“...you don't... haah... think this is the... end...haah... do you?”

“Heh... I would... have haah... been disappointed... if you were haah... this weak...”

Astaria smiled back.

This was definitely not the last round.

# Chapter 638 L-Lf It Can Help You Reach The Emperor Stage...

“You finally woke up,”

Nux commented with a small smile on his face.

Astaria, who had barely opened her eyes glanced at Nux who was lying right beside her, propped up on one elbow with his head resting on his hand.

Astaria quickly noticed that this man was naked, her face turned red, and suddenly, she felt a slight chill all over her body, she glanced down and realized that just like this perverted man, she was naked as well, the red shade on her face deepened.

“I can’t believe you can make an expression like this, Star.”

Nux spoke with a playful smile on his face.

He was definitely enjoying this view in front of me.

Astaria’s hairs were messy, there were droplets of sweat on her forehead, and the blush on her face combined with her swordlike eyebrows and narrowed eyes gave her a warrior look,

The contrast between the two was just...

Nux had no words.

Of course, that wasn’t all.

Astaria’s breathing was calm, however, the way her bountiful breasts were moving up and down... it was an alluring sight.

Astaria had an alluring body however, the aura she unconsciously released made it harder for one to focus on her body, even Nux had a hard time looking at Astaria's body for more than a few seconds in a perverted way. This was the reason why Astaria didn't receive the due credit for her body.

Now, however, things were different.

All those barriers were finally down.

Now, Nux could ogle how much he wanted.

He could treat his eyes with this feast in front of him without holding back now.

And that was what he was doing for the past hour while Astaria was sleeping.

Yes, for the past hour, he has been staring at Astaria, burning this beautiful sight in his mind like a creepy pervert.

The Strongest female in the world helplessly lying in front of him, naked,

This was definitely a sight Nux was never going to forget.

“W-Who is this Star? My name is Astaria.” Astaria retorted in embarrassment.

“That's for others.” Nux quickly shook his hand.

“You might be the oh so mighty Lady Astaria for others, but for me, you are my lovely Star~

You don't mind that do you?

You did lose to me after all~”

Nux chuckled playfully.

Astaria blushed, then, her expression changed and she retorted,

“I was the one who won. 6 Minutes and 39 Seconds had already passed when I came.”

Her competitive spirit was still not down.

Nux glanced at Astaria and didn't say anything.

“What...?”

Astaria's expression changed.

“...”

Nux however didn't say anything and continued to look at Astaria's face.

“What?”

Astaria questioned again.

“Did you seriously forget how you were the one who asked me to move faster? No, rather than asking, it is more appropriate to say that you begged me to move faster.”

“...”

Astaria's face reddened.

“Then you came the moment I entered.

You didn't forget it, did you, my sweet Star?”

Nux smiled.

“...”

Astaria didn't say anything.

“Hmmmmmm?” Nux brought his face closer to Astaria.

Astaria avoided his gaze and seeing this scene, Nux nodded,

“So who won?”

“...”

“HMMMMMMMMMMMM?”

“Even you needed so many attempts to defeat me... I will defeat you next time...”

Astaria replied, however, she didn't dare to look into Nux's eyes right now and had already turned her face away.

If she could bury a hole into the ground and hide, she would have done in already.

She was just that embarrassed.

“Hehehe~ You can try as many times as you want.”

Nux smiled perversely.

Astaria's face turned even redder.

Seeing this sight, Nux failed to control himself and kissed her cheeks.

“...” Astaria didn't react to the kiss and continued to look the other way.

Nux's smile widened and he kissed her again, then again, then again and again.

Astraria's expression finally melted, she glanced at Nux, and using this chance, Nux sealed her lips.

Astaria expected his kiss and reacted back.

After a long kiss, the two of them look at each other, then suddenly, Astaria frowned,

“Didn’t you say you get stronger when you have sex with women who are at a higher stage than you?”

She questioned.

“Mhm.”

Nux nodded.

“Then why aren’t you at Emperor Stage already?” Astaria couldn’t understand.

Hearing that question, Nux smiled perversely.

“You think becoming an Emperor is that easy?”

“Is there a hidden condition or something? Or is it because you are now stronger than me because of the Mist and your magic is not working anymore?” Astaria questioned.

“Hahaha~

It’s nothing like that.”

Nux laughed, then, he glanced at Astaria and replied,

“Emperor is a big stage, I need a lot of energy to reach it.”

“You mean...” Astaria narrowed her eyes.

“Indeed.” Nux’s smile widened,

“We need to do this many many many more times for me to become an Emperor.

You are ready for it, aren’t you?”

Nux questioned.

Astaria's face turned red again,

“I-If it can help you reach the Emperor Stage...”

Saying those words, she turned away, not looking into this pervert's eyes.

Nux smiled, this shy Astaria was just adorable.

He moved his body closer to her and hugged her from behind, his one hand directly moved to her plenty breast and the other one rested on her soft thighs.

A small smile appeared on Astaria's face when she felt Nux's chest touching her back.

It was warm...

A comfortable feeling...

A foreign feeling...

Astaria closed her eyes, however, just as she did,

Something warm poked her butt.

Astaria quickly opened her eyes, she didn't have to see to know what it was.

This pervert...

“Tsk, look how alluring your body is... he is ready again...”

Nux placed all the blame on Astaria.

He quickly placed his dick on her thigh, it was dangerously close to Astaria's lower lips, Astaria's body trembled and her walls started twitching,

Remembering the pleasurable feeling, a jolt coursed through Astaria's entire body.

“I... would let you take the control for today... so rejoice...

But don't be too happy,

I will defeat you the next to next time.”

# Chapter 639 How About L Not Punish You This Time?

“Oh ho? Look who it is.”

Felberta spoke with a sarcastic look on her face as Nux and Astaria came out of the tent.

“You finally remembered you have other wives after spending 4 days inside that tent huh.”

She commented as she narrowed her eyes.

Yes, believe it or not, Nux and Astaria spent 4 days inside the tent.

Astaria was still able to hold on far longer than Nux’s any other wives.

This wasn’t very hard to predict.

She had the highest stamina compared to every one of them, after all.

Even for Nux, if it wasn’t for his [Regeneration] holding out for him, even he would have lost the competition.

“Going straight at it for 4 days...

Perverts.”

Thyra commented with a slight pout on her face.

Was she jealous?

Of course she was!

“Oi Oi, we didn’t do it for 4 days like you are all imagining. We were both sleeping for the last 12 hours.”

Nux defended himself.

“Of course you would.

Even you would be tired after all that.”

Allura replied.

“...” Nux didn’t know how to reply to her.

“Still, I expected this from you already, but Lady Astaria? I didn’t know you were a pervert as well.”

Ember spoke with a teasing smile on her face.

It wasn’t an everyday occurrence to get the chance to tease the strongest female in their continent.

To tease a being like Astaria...

There was no way she would let it go.

Astaria, however, wasn’t someone she could mess with.

“Don’t act like you all are saints, girls.

Especially you, General Ember.

You left your Dynasty because of your perverseness.”

“...”

Ember turned silent.

Astaria then turned silent and narrowed her eyes,

“And you all, do you really think I wouldn’t know that you were all peeking at us just because you told Nux to stay silent through the [Harem Seal]’s connection?”

“!!!”

The women’s eyes widened in surprise and they all glanced at Nux at the same time,

Nux was about to reply, but Astaria jumped in.

“Don’t look at him, he didn’t say anything.”

The women, however, completely ignored it and continued to look at Nux.

“I warned you guys...”

Nux smiled wryly.

‘I have the access to this connection as well.’

Astaria dropped the bomb.

“!!!”

All the women then looked at Amaya, this time, even Amaya, who was usually calm had a frown on her face,

“But the [Harem Seal] shouldn’t have worked on her...”

Aren’t the [Slave Seal] and the [Harem Seal] of the same tier?

If the [Slave Seal] failed on Roone, then...”

She started analyzing and couldn’t help but frown even more.

“I was surprised as well.” Nux nodded.

“Does that mean the [Harem Seal] is stronger than the [Slave Seal]?”

Amaya questioned.

Nux, however, just shook his head,

“You know about it as much as I do.”

“Isn’t obvious? The [Harem Seal] allows one to share some of the Nux’s weird Magics, it is also connected to his [Harem Gate], it is obviously a higher tier Magic.”

Astaria replied.

“But he got both these magics at the same time...”

“That doesn’t mean they are of the same tier.”

“...”

Amaya turned silent.

Astaria was right.

Predicting anything about the System was foolish.

They knew next to nothing about it.

And honestly, this worried her.

The System seemed too good to be true.

Of course, it is possible that she was just being paranoid, and honestly, she hoped that was the case.

“Anyways, none of you have the right to call me a pervert.

You are much more perverted than I am.”

Astaria spoke in a commanding tone.

“ ... ”

The women turned silent.

The aura Astaria unconsciously released might not affect Nux anymore, but for women... Astaria was still a role model like existence.

Well, for most women...

Some were completely immune to her Aura.

“Hehehe~ As I thought.

There is no way Sister Astaria wouldn't sense us, she is an Emperor Stage Cultivator after all.

The Strongest Woman in the continent!”

Skyla smiled, then, she walked towards Astaria and grabbed her hands, her eyes shined brightly and she questioned,

“So? Sister Astaria? How was your first nigh- err I mean, first nights?”

“E-Eh?”

The curiosity that leaked out of Skyla's eyes affected even Astaria.

“Hehe~ Did you enjoy it? How did it feel when Nux entered you? Which position did you like the most? Ho-”

“Skyla.”

Just as Skyla was about to shoot her barrage of questions, Edda called with a serious look on her face.

Skyla turned towards Edda and frowned,

Why was she being so serious?

“Stop asking these silly questions,” Edda spoke.

Skyla’s frown deepened, then suddenly, Edda smiled perversely,

“Isn’t the answer obvious? It was when she couldn’t use her hand because she was tied up, of course.

That vulnerable feeling is just~

Ahhh~”

Edda grabbed her hands, trying to hold herself back.

She then glanced at Astaria and smiled,

“Aren’t I right?”

“Y-You are not.” Astaria stuttered.

“Fufufu~”

Edda smiled.

“Yo-”

Astaria was just about to retort, however, before she could, Ember stepped in and replied,

“Girls. He is still here,

Isn’t it better to ask these questions when we are alone?”

Edda then turned towards Nux and spoke.

“You haven’t cultivated for a while, right?

Go stabilize your Mist.

Shoo Shoo~”

“Shooing me away now, huh?”

Nux smiled.

“What are you going to do? Punish me?”

Edda questioned as she smiled playfully.

“How about I try something different this time?”

Nux questioned.

Edda narrowed her eyes.

“How about I not punish you this time?”

Nux smiled playfully and Edda’s expression changed.

“How about no ropes for the next few weeks? We would just have a lovey-dovey all the time.”

Edda’s expression changed.

“Alright Alright, stop teasing her.” Ember jumped in.

Skyla then moved behind Nux and started pushing him,

“Now goooo~ We need to talk to Sister Astaria.”

“Why not talk in front of me?” Nux questioned.

“No~”

Skyla pouted.

Nux smiled and then shook his head,

“Alright Alright, I will take my leave now.

Sighs, can’t believe you all are pushing me away.”

After a dramatic sigh, Nux walked away.

Once he left, the women turned towards Astaria and Ember spoke with a solemn look on her face,

“We need to talk.”

# Chapter 640 Turns For What?

“We need to talk.”

Ember spoke with a serious look on her face.

Astaria’s expression changed again. She realized this was not something as simple as talking about her first night or something like that.

She walked inside the tent again, the women understood and followed her in as well.

Astaria quickly realized that none of the women looked bothered by the funny smell that was spread around the room.

Rather, a few of them were now looking at her with teasing smiles on their faces, of course, she completely ignored those expressions and sat on the bed.

“What is it?”

Astaria questioned.

“We need your help,” Ember replied.

“...” Astaria didn’t say anything and Ember continued,

“Train us, we wish to get stronger.”

“All of you will become Emperor Stage Cultivators soon, what’s the problem? You will automatically become stronger.”

Astaria couldn’t understand.

“It’s not the same,” Thyra replied.

Astaria narrowed her eyes.

“Can we defeat you once we become an Emperor?”

“Of course not.” Astaria didn’t have to think.

“A newbie Emperor cannot defeat me.

Of course, that Pervert is different.”

“That’s what we are talking about. Just improving our Cultivation won’t make any difference. We have realized how weak we are.

We will be visiting the main Continent soon enough.

We will encounter beings stronger than Nawdren.

The bottom line is, Nux is far stronger than us, if its an enemy we can take care of, then Nux can defeat him with his eyes closed, however, the moment an enemy who is strong enough to trouble Nux pops us, all of us would become his weakness, just like what happened with Nawdren.

You, however, are different.

Nux might be stronger than you right now, but you still have a chance to fight together with him once you master that Sword Technique of yours.”

Thyra explained.

“So you want me to teach you my Sword Technique? You do realize that it is my Trump Card, right?”

“We will forever be grateful to you.

I know it is unreasonable to ask you this, but I still hope you train us all.

We will give you whatever you ask for in return.”

Ember bowed her head. The other women bowed as well.

Astaria's expression didn't change.

Ember bowing in front of her was definitely surprising, but what they were wishing for was something absurd as well.

If they couldn't even lower their pride for it, then they should have forgotten about learning it.

“How did you learn about the sword technique?”

Astaria questioned.

“Nawdren told us.”

Amaya replied.

“According to him, this was something that Ancestor used, a technique that made him what he was. His trump card.”

“I do not know if this technique is as great as Nawdren makes it out to be, but you have to know.

Even if you learn this technique, there is a high chance that you will not achieve what you wish for.”

Astaria replied and the women's expression changed.

“What you all essentially want is to surpass Nux in terms of strength but you have to know, even if I somehow Master this technique, which I don't know how long it will take, I am not sure if I can defeat him.”

All the women glanced at Astaria with frowns on their faces.

“The Power to Devour Life, it is not something you can take lightly. He can now kill an Emperor in a matter of seconds. To him, the opponent's techniques doesn't matter, he could simply just keep a distance and in a few seconds, he would suck out his opponent's Life Force and he wins.

If he improves his control over Mist even further, then he would simply be invincible as long as the enemy is not strong enough to get rid of him within 10 seconds.

Even if I master my technique, as long as I cannot get near him, it would simply be useless.”

The women’s expressions turned serious and all of them glanced at Amaya, Astaria included. Even she knew where the Mist came from.

Amaya glanced at the women looking at him and shook her head,

“Don’t look at me like that.

I know how strong the Mist is. I know that well.

But you cannot compare My Mist with his, he has the System helping him.

In order to get make our Mist stronger, we need to comprehend our physique, and unlike Nux, who has his System to help him, I have to do everything manually. I even have to artificially create a place that matches the weird place Nux’s soul goes into before I start comprehending.

My progress is countless times slower than his.”

Amaya explained her circumstances.

The women turned silent again.

Comparing themselves with Nux was... frustrating,

And what’s worse?

Astaria wasn’t done yet.

“All of this is just when we are thinking of him as a King Stage Cultivator.”

The women’s expression changed, Astaria continued,

“Don’t forget, he won’t just become an Emperor, he would become an Emperor Stage Mana and Body cultivator.

He would be a lot lot stronger than normal Emperor Stage Cultivators.

I can’t even imagine how absurdly strong he would be once he becomes an Emperor.”

“So...”

“Yes, even if you do learn this technique, which, let me warn you beforehand, is a lot harder than you think and would take an indefinite time for you all, the chances that you can surpass Nux, or even get close to his level are low...

Very low.”

“...”

The women didn’t know what to say.

“It doesn’t matter.” Thyra, however, hadn’t given up.

“Teach us,”

“What will I get in return?”

Astaria questioned with an interested smile on her face.

“Power to exchange turns whenever you want.”

Thyra replied.

The other women widened their eyes in shock, Astaria, however, didn’t seem to understand,

“You may not what or how important it is, so let me explain it to you.”

Thyra started,

“Each time, we all get different turns, I am offering you to exchange our turns whenever you wish,

Say mine is 2nd, and yours is 10th, then you can ask me to exchange it and I will not refuse.”

Astaria, however, was still confused,

“Turns for what?”

She couldn't understand.

“Turns for having sex, of course.”

Indeed, Thyra was betting it all.

# Chapter 641 You Don'T Trust Me, It'S Fine, Trust Him,

“Turns for having sex, of course.”

Thyra replied with a serious look on her face.

She was betting all.

Astaria finally understood why the women were acting this way, however,

“Do you think this is enough?”

Hearing that question, the women widened their eyes again, this time, even Amaya had a slightly surprised expression on her face.

“What happened?” Astaria frowned.

She didn't understand how this serious mood suddenly turned so... strange.

The women started looking at each other and frowned.

“She didn't like it maybe?”

Ember was the first to speak.

The other women glanced at her with deadpan looks on their faces,

“Do you really think that's possible?” Felberta was the first to question.

“I mean... she is an Emperor... she might be someone who just does not feel it...?”

Ember defended her claim.

“Are you sure we peeped at the same thing?” Felberta questioned.

“Indeed, those moans were not of someone who was not enjoying it,” Allura spoke with a big smile on her face as well.

Time for gossip?

Count her in!

“Do you people have any other reason she would deny her offer then?” Ember retorted.

“ ... ”

Felberta and Allura turned silent and started thinking.

The others were the same, they all started thinking as well.

“ ... ”

Astaria, who was seeing this happening right in front of her eyes didn't know what to say...

Just...

Just what was wrong with these women...

Just now, all of them looked so serious and now, they completely forgot about all of that and... were now discussing her first night...

“Maybe she didn't like the fact that she was tied up?” Allura suggested.

“I mean, she is an Emperor... so you would think she would like to have control?”

“No way!”

Edda was the first to deny it.

“I clearly remember her moans.

She was the most sensitive when she was tied up.

Rather than not liking it, I believe that she liked it the most.

I even have a feeling that I have finally found my true sister.”

Edda spoke as she glanced at Astaria with a meaningful smile on her face.

“ ...”

Astaria didn't know how to react.

“Then what seems to be the problem here?”

Amaya frowned.

“What the hell are you guys talking about? Why are you suddenly acting like this? What about becoming strong?”

Astaria questioned.

Was she the only normal person here?

All the women then turned towards Skyla.

Skyla quickly understood what they wanted, her smile brightened up, she then rushed towards Astaria, sat next to her, and questioned with an excited smile on her face,

“Sister Astaria, how was your first experience?”

“Why are you asking me that?” Astaria questioned back.

“Don't be so mean, Sister Astaria. Why don't you share your experience? Don't you need to defeat Nux as well? I am sure you would need our expertise in this matter.”

“ ...”

Astaria placed a hand on her chin and started considering what Skyla said.

It was a tempting offer.

She needed their help if she wanted to defeat Nux.

“Skyla, don’t spread misinformation.”

Suddenly, Edda walked towards them and sat next to Astaria.

Then, she glanced at Astaria and questioned with a smile on her face,

“Sister Astaria, do you really want to defeat Nux?”

“Of course I do.” Astaria didn’t even take a second to think.

“But why?”

“Huh?”

Astaria frowned.

“Why bother?”

Tell me honestly, did you really hate it when you were tied and Nux had all the control?”

Edda whispered softly.

“...”

Astaria didn’t reply.

“You don’t have to be shy, Sister Astaria, all of us are sisters here, you can be honest with us. We are a family, after all.” Edda spoke.

“Edda, what are yo-”

Ember stepped in but before she could, Edda retorted,

“Oh C’mon, don’t be so selfish, and please, don’t act like you actually know how to defeat Nux.”

“What are you talking about?” Ember narrowed her eyes.

“If you knew it, wouldn’t you have defeated him already?”

Edda questioned back.

“...”

Ember and the others turned silent.

“Sister Fel has been trying it for such a long time, hasn’t she? Has she ever achieved anything? Look, you can think anything in your mind and do whatever you want, but honestly, I don’t see any of you defeating him anytime soon.

So please don’t spread misinformation and let me talk with Sister Astaria here.”

Edda seemed especially aggressive today.

“...”

Ember was forced to be silent.

She then glanced at Astaria, she was curious about her answer as well.

“Sister Astaria, tell me honestly, did you really hate when Nux had all the control?

You being vulnerable in his presence, trusting him with all your heart, having unconditional confidence about the fact that he would never hurt you, did you really hate that feeling?”

“I... I did not...”

Astaria finally gave in and replied.

The women had different reactions when they heard her answer, Edda, however, still wasn't done yet.

“You had the control for the first few minutes, did you not? Tell me honestly, what did you enjoy more?

When you were in control?

Or when he was in control?

Of course, Nux's troubled expression is fun to watch, but is it really comparable to that foreign feeling? The thrill that he brings in when he has all the control? The element of surprise that he has, the feeling of not knowing what would happen next, does it really beat all this?”

“ ... ”

Astaria didn't answer.

And that was an answer in itself.

A wide smile appeared on Edda's face.

“Sister Astaria.” She called out.

Astaria glanced at her and when she noticed her expression, she understood that this tanned girl was up to something.

She knew she should ignore this girl, however, something inside her compelled Astaria to continue,

“What is it?”

“How about you listen to what I say, just this once?”

Edda spoke with a mysterious look on her face.

“What would I get if I do?”

Astaria questioned back.

“Pleasure.”

Edda smiled.

“Huh?”

“Just trust me.”

“I do not want to.”

“Do you really think he will ever harm you?”

“...no.”

“You don’t trust me, it’s fine,

Trust him,

I assure you that this would be your best night.”

# Chapter 642 Alright, I-If You Are Being So Sincere

I am still not done writing all the chapters, so if you don't want blue balls, then I suggest you wait. I will update the rest of the chapters as soon as I can.



...

“I assure you that this would be your best night.

You are talking with an Expert here, you can trust my words.”

Edda smiled confidently.

“...”

Astaria didn't say anything but from the red shade that had appeared on her face, every woman in the room knew that she had given in.

‘She finally found her first prey huh...’

Ember commented using the connection, this time, she made sure not Astaria wouldn't be able to hear it.

‘I can't believe it...’

Allura nodded with a slightly surprised expression on her face.

‘Well, didn't Lane give in once?’ Felberta questioned.

The women then turned towards Lane, the silent girl blushed and lowered her head.

‘I heard that she has been going wild with the ropes now.’

The women’s expression turned judgy. Lane, who could feel their gazes burning her body blushed even more and then replied,

‘It feels good okay... Why don’t you try it before commenting anything on it?’

‘No way.’

Ember was the first to deny it.

‘Tsk, aren’t you all afraid that you all will get addicted to it as well?’

Edda snorted.

‘Calling yourselves warriors and not even daring to accept a single challenge. Tsk Tsk.’

‘You know this won’t work, right?’ Ember replied.

It wasn’t the first time Edda tried this card of attacking their pride, she has tried and had been rejected before.

‘Why don’t you try it just once!?’

Edda was frustrated.

‘Because we don’t want to be a pervert like you.’

The women knew it.

If it was Nux doing it to them, they would enjoy it no matter what it is. They had full confidence in him, however, they had all built their own fetishes that they didn’t wish to change. Honestly, they were scared that they all would end up like Edda.

Astaria, however, was different.

She was a like a pure, blank paper where Edda could write whatever she wanted.

...or at least that's what she thought.

“Alright, I will listen to you.”

Astaria spoke.

Edda's smile widened, however before she could celebrate,

“However, I have a condition.”

“A condition?”

“Yes, you are not allowed to be there when Nux and I are... together in the room...”

“Haaah? That doesn't make any sense. How am I supposed to tell you what to do then!?” Edda questioned.

“Didn't you say Nux will be the one doing everything?” Astaria questioned back.

“Y-Yes, bu-”

“Then it's decided.

Before everything, you can instruct me what to do, I will note everything in my mind and follow your words, you can even talk with Nux if you wish, then, you will leave everything on Nux and would not participate.

Is that clear?”

There was no way Astaria was going to give in.

She was excited, yes.

Honestly, she was even looking forward to it, however, she cannot allow anyone else to see her moment of weakness, except Nux.

That, she cannot do, no matter what.

“Alright. I agree.”

Edda agreed.

It was enough.

She couldn't fully convert her yet, but that doesn't mean anything.

She still has her chance.

Yes, she was not giving up.

Rather, she was going to make sure that Astaria experiences a completely new world, a world so pleasurable and pleasant that Astaria herself would come to her for more.

‘Fufufu~’

Thinking about all this, Edda smiled inwardly.

“You would do anything I instruct you to, right?” she confirmed again.

“Yes, I will.”

Astaria agreed.

The woman in front of her was now her sister, she trusted that Edda wouldn't do something that would somehow harm her.

If she was someone like that, Nux wouldn't be together with her.

“Alright then, first let's get the less important issues sorted out.”

Edda spoke as she pointed at Thyra and Ember.

Astaria narrowed her eyes,

“You want me to teach them my technique?”

“Hmm? Of course not. I do not have a say in matters like these. It is up to you what you decide. My instructions will only be related to pleasure~

Fufufufu~

Of course, if you can answer them and send them away, we could start right now, that would be helpful.”

Edda replied.

Astaria smiled a little, then she glanced at Thyra and the others, however, before she could say anything, Edda continued,

“Oh right, don’t forget, if you do agree to their terms, then the next turn is... of Lane, I believe?”

Lane nodded.

“Thyra, when is your tur-”

“I-I am willing to do it as well.” Before Edda could question, Lane interrupted.

“Hmm? What do you mean?”

Edda questioned.

“The exchange, I mean.

If Sister Astaria agrees to teach me, I will let her switch turns whenever she wishes...

I wish to get... stronger as well...” Lane answered as she looked into Astaria’s eyes with a determined look on her face.

“I agree as well.”

Ember nodded.

“I agree to it.”

“Me too...”

One by one, all the women started agreeing.

This sacrifice was a little too much...

But that suffocating feeling of not being able to do anything while Nux's back was broken and he was helpless...

They didn't wish to experience it again.

No way.

Everyone, except Amaya agreed to this.

Of course, it wasn't like Amaya didn't care about the technique, however, she had something even better.

Her own path.

The Devouring Mist Demon Physique.

She would spend her time mastering her physique instead.

“Right, if you agree to our terms, then you can exchange your turns with all of us except her.

That means, now when your turn is at last, you can exchange it with Lane and...

Today's night is yours as well~

How about it?

Would you like to do it today?

Or do you wish to wait for 10 more days?

Hmmmm?”

Edda questioned with a playful smile on her face.

Yes, the women had reduced their frequency to once per day.

That was because they wished to focus on building their strength.

At the same time, Nux would also be able to give them more attention, for a longer period of time.

It was a win-win.

“Alright, i-if you are being so sincere,

Then I guess I would have to be the bigger person here.”

Edda’s smile widened,

“Good choice.”

# Chapter 643 No One But L Has The Right To See You Like This.\*

Darkness.

No matter what she did, where she looked,

Nothing was visible.

It was not just a normal blindfold created from a simple piece of cloth.

It was a blindfold made from a skin of a 6 Star Beast...

No matter what Astaria tried, she couldn't see anything.

And what's worse?

Nux's Devouring Mist was spread all over the room, constantly Devouring all the Mana inside the room, making it impossible for her to use Mana to sense her surroundings.

Of course, Astaria's limbs, which were tied to the 4 poles of the bed, prohibiting any sort of movement didn't help either.

(Bed's Picture here)

The current her could only give in and continue to lie down.

But there was a problem.

She has been lying in this position, completely naked, for an hour now and nothing has happened.

That Edda, first she put a blindfold on her eyes, then brought her to this room.

Astaria quickly realized that this was some secret room because it was too far away from other rooms and was in the basement of Nux's Mansion, she had many questions but that girl didn't answer any of them and just tied her limbs with those poles and left.

Once she left, Devouring Mist filled the room and as soon as it touched her body, it devoured all her clothes, not even leaving the undergarments.

Then, it was absolute silence.

Yes.

She has been left alone.

Many different thoughts entered her mind in this last hour.

It was definitely not her first time being alone.

She spent most of her life inside a single room, after all.

However, left alone in this vulnerable position...

For some reason, she felt a strange sensation all over her body.

\*Creak\*

Suddenly, Astaria heard a sound.

It was the sound of the door opening, but for some reason, today, the door was too loud.

'Did they not oil it properly?'

Astaria questioned inwardly.

\*Step\*

She then heard someone walking in.

“Nux?”

She called out.

Who else could it be?

“...”

However, she didn't receive the confirmation.

Oh ho? Look who it is. Don't you look lovely in this position?

That's what she expected and... wanted to hear.

But this unusual silence...

For some reason... this made her anxious.

“Nux?”

She called again.

But again, she didn't receive any reply.

\*Step\* \*Step\* \*Step\*

Astaria could hear it clearly.

The footsteps were getting closer.

The closer they get, the more nervous Astaria got.

Many weird thoughts entered her mind.

The biggest one that troubled her was,

What if it was not Nux?

There was no way she would show this side to anyone but Nux.

“Nux?” She asked again.

“Is it you, Nux?”

“Who is there?”

She asked many questions, but again,

She didn't get any reply.

Astaria's heartbeat increased and just as she was about to move and break these ropes, a hand touched her abdomen and then she finally heard the voice she had been wanting to listen to.

“It's me.

No one but I has the right to see you like this.

You now belong to me, remember?”

Nux's voice was especially gentle...?

No, that was not correct.

It was calm, heavy... it was odd and different from his usual playful tone, but Astaria was sure it was Nux.

The possessiveness in his voice...

That touch of his hand...

She didn't have to use her eyes to know it.

“Why weren't you answering me, you shameless bastard?”

She questioned.

“Hmmm? Did you forget what Edda told you?”

Nux questioned back.

“...”

Astaria turned silent.

Edda only asked her one thing.

No Questions.

Today, Nux had the authority to do whatever he wanted to Astaria, and Astaria didn't have the right to question anything he does.

Astaria felt a strange itch all over her body when she thought about it.

“Aaanh!”

Suddenly, a moan leaked out of Astaria's mouth.

Something cold and wet touched her belly button.

“Aahh!”

Astaria's body jerked again when it touched her belly button again. This time, she realized what it was.

It was an ice cube.

“W-What are you doi-”

She wanted to question, however, she quickly recalled what Edda asked her to do and turned silent again.

Seeing this, Nux smiled and continued with his game.

Astaria couldn't see anything, therefore, her other senses were much more sensitive than normal. She could feel Nux moving the ice cube around her belly button.

His movements were slow and... weirdly sexual.

Then, Nux started moving.

From her belly button, the ice cube moved up, at the same time, Astaria lifted her hips as well.

With her limbs tied, her movements were limited, however, when this cold ice cube was moving on her body, her body moved on its own, trying its best to keep things... normal?

“Aaahhh~”

Another moan leaked out of her mouth when the ice cube reached her breasts, she didn't know what she was expecting, but just as the ice cube neared her breasts, it changed its direction and circled around.

“Aaannnhh~~”

Astaria moaned again, Nux was continuously circling the ice cube around her breasts, making her move her hips strangely to cope with this foreign feeling.

Just as she was getting used to all this, the ice cube moved towards her shoulders and then it moved to her arms.

Astaria didn't know how to react.

She never expected Ice to be so... sexual...

“AAannNnhh!!”

Suddenly, Astaria moaned loudly as her entire body jolted.

While the ice cube was moving on her left arm, suddenly, another ice cube touched her right nipple which was already weirdly sensitive, and sent a jolt throughout her body.

However, that wasn't it, the other cube that was on her left arm appeared on her left nipple and the 2 cubes started circling around her 2 nipples, making them harder and much more sensitive.

The tingling feeling Astaria felt all over her body increased,

Especially at a certain place.

And as if knowing about it, another ice cube was placed right on top of her crotch.

“Aannnhh~~”

The sudden stimulus was just...

Too... pleasurable...

# Chapter 644 P-Please, C-Continue

\*

“Aannhh~~”

Astaria moaned loudly.

“N-Nux.”

She called out, Nux, however, continued with his plays and didn't reply,

The tingling feeling that Astaria was feeling between her legs heightened due to the sudden stimuli.

It was cold, wherever the ice cube went and touched sent a weird, numbing sensation into Astaria's body, and since Nux was continuously moving it on her crotch area, the expectation of where it would go next made Astaria even more... uncomfortable...

Of course, Nux's other hand, which was working on her nipple didn't stop either. Astaria was being attacked from 3 points at the same time.

Nux, however, wasn't playing a fair game, to begin with.

It had been more than a minute after he moved the ice cube to her crotch area, however, he still hasn't moved it to Astaria's lower lips, making Astaria more and more uncomfortable and desperate.

“M-Move...”

Astaria muttered.

“...”

But again, Nux didn't answer.

This silent treatment...

Astaria didn't know how she felt about this.

She tried to twist her body in strange angles, trying to cope with the tingling feeling she was feeling in between her legs, but no matter what she did, her legs, which were tied to the two poles of the bed made it impossible for her to use her thighs to alleviate that tingling.

Her nipples were hardened to impossible levels because of the ice cubes, her crotch area, which usually emitted a lot of heat was now being cooled out as Nux continued to circle the ice cube there, her lower lips were itching badly, the same was true was her clit, which was currently swollen and was emitting more and more heat, expecting to be calmed down by the ice,

Yes, Astaria's entire body was currently an absolute mess and was so sensitive that a single slick on her clit would make her orgasm.

She was so close yet it still felt far...

Astaria's mind was filled with different emotions.

Suddenly, Astaria's body reacted.

“Annnh~”

Something touched her lower lips.

However, this 'something' was not the cold ice cube she was expecting it to be, on the contrary, it was something hot.

Something long, thick, and hot...

Astaria didn't have to think,

She remembered this feeling well.

She knew what this something was.

“Aannnnhhhh~~”

Suddenly, Nux started sliding his dick on Astaria’s lower lips, her sensitive body couldn’t take it and Astaria’s walls started trembling, craving for more.

Astaria felt a jolt running throughout her body as her walls loosened a little.

Yes, she just experienced a minor orgasm.

And Nux hasn’t even entered her cave yet.

Astaria couldn’t believe it.

Just how can her body be so perverted...?

She questioned inwardly.

“Should I continue?”

Suddenly, Nux questioned and as if trying to compel Astaria to answer, he completely stopped moving.

“...”

As soon as he did, that tingling feeling returned, this time, a lot stronger than before, and as if to make his intention clear, Nux moved his dick away from her opening and started rubbing it on her thigh.

This little act of his teased her body even further, it made his intentions of not doing anything else until she says something clear, and the tingling feeling she was feeling between her legs heightened even further, making it unbearable.

Astaria was completely helpless.

If only she could break through these ropes and force this man to shove his dick inside he-

“Hmmm? Why haven’t I heard the answer yet?”

Nux questioned.

He moved the ice cubes away from her hardened nipples and started moving them on her thighs, near her inner thighs.

Astaria’s body started trembling.

This was just too much...

This cold and hot feeling...

These two opposites... it was messing with her body so masterfully that even she couldn’t believe it.

“Y-Yes, continue...”

In the end, Nux forced the answer out of her mouth. However, he wasn’t satisfied.

“Is that a request?”

He questioned.

Astaria quickly realized what he wanted.

She gritted her teeth, however, the itch was getting more and more unbearable,

She didn’t have an option.

She had to give in...

“P-Please, c-continue.”

Her body trembled as she said those words, strange thoughts filled her mind.

She was practically begging for it...

Her pride as a warrior...

It was currently being shattered...

But...

But...

She didn't hate this...

It was a complex feeling that Astaria wished to sort out, however,

“Aaaaannhhhhh~”

Nux finally entered her body.

That torturous tingling that messed her body...

The moment Nux filled her up, it all just... disappeared. A big jolt of mind-numbing pleasure coursed through her body.

For a moment, Astaria felt like her soul just left her body and she nearly passed out.

A very familiar feeling.

A very... very familiar feeling...

\*Squirt\*

Nux's rod was showered again.

Yes, Astaria came.

Astaria's walls cramped around his dick, trying such it in and keep it in there forever, after the 4 days session they had, Astaria's walls had started

taking Nux's rod's shape, therefore, Nux's entire dick was currently being kissed by Astaria's walls,

The feeling was just...

Heavenly...

Nux's legs were weakening...

He had to use everything he had to stay awake.

This feeling was just too good.

“Haah... Haahh... Haahhh...”

Nux then heard Astaria breathing heavily.

Seeing this scene, an evil smile appeared on his face and,

He moved.

“Annh~”

Astaria moaned.

Nux's smile widened and without any mercy,

\*Pah\*

Nux thrust his hip with all his strength.

“Aaannhh!!”

Astaria moaned out loud.

Nux, however, wasn't done yet.

He grabbed another ice cube and then, he started rubbing it on Astaria's swollen and heated clit, sending jolts of pleasure into her body.

Astaria was so out of breath that she couldn't even moan and Nux didn't give her any chance to recover either.

Along with him rubbing the ice cube on her clit, he continued his merciless thrusts as well, under this lethal attack, Astaria nearly lost her mind.

\*Pah\* \*Pah\* \*Pah\*

“Annh! Annnh! AnAnhh!”

Her eyes rolled over, her back arched up and her tongue popped out.

One would have a mental scar if they saw Astaria's expression, the contrast between the warrior Astaria whose Aura overpowered anyone, and this...

It was just unbelievable.

“AaannnNnNnHhHH~~”

Astaria's sensitive body experienced another orgasm.

# Chapter 645 Now Then, Shall I Start Wiping Your Body As Well?\*

“AAANnNNnNnhhhHH~~”

Astaria moaned in pleasure again.

\*Squirt\*

This was her 4th non-stop orgasm. n

Her walls tightened around Nux’s dick, and the pleasure Nux was feeling spiked again, his little brother, which was already very sensitive because of how lovingly Astaria’s walls sucked it, couldn’t take it anymore and,

“Ugghhhhh!!”

It released its milk inside Astaria’s body.

Their juices mixed together, a funny smell spread all over the room, however, none of the two cared about it.

Nux had already taken a strange liking to this smell.

As for Astaria...

“Haaahh... Haahh... Haa...”

Well...

She didn’t have the strength to react to anything...

Nux has been pounding her for the last 30 minutes without stopping.

In these 30 minutes, she climaxed 4 times...

And she wasn't even counting the minor orgasms yet...

Her body was pushed to the limit, it became so sensitive that even a small movement was enough to send a jolt of pleasure that numbed her brain for a moment.

Countless times, she wanted to close her legs, wishing that Nux would stop and let her rest for a while... but she was entirely helpless...

Her legs were tied in a position where Nux could enter her whenever and how much ever he wanted and couldn't resist him at all.

It was as if she was just an object he could use to relieve himself...

She... once known as the Strongest Human in the world deteriorated to a mere object...

And what's worse?

She couldn't hate it at all!

With her vision block, her body senses were even stronger, especially the sense of touch.

Nux's touch was like a drug to her body...

No matter how much she gets it, she craved it more and more...

And now she gave her entire body to Nux for him to do as he pleases, even the 'lack of' this drug felt... strangely pleasurable...

It was as if her body would accept anything and everything Nux did to it...

Astaria felt like she didn't recognize her body anymore...

She was turning into a pervert at a scary pace...

She didn't like this feeling at all...

Rather, she hated i-

Suddenly, something fell on Astaria's body,

Astaria didn't need to think, the heat emanating from this 'something' was too familiar, it was Nux.

Yes, currently, Nux was lying on top of Astaria.

His chest touching her breasts, Astaria could feel that his elbows were right beside her head, she could feel his breath, meaning his face was right in front of hers. Nux still hadn't moved his dick out of her vagina, and honestly, Astaria didn't hate this feeling.

However, currently, she was more anxious about what Nux was trying to do...

"It was amazing, Star."

Nux spoke in a gentle tone as he kissed Astaria's lips.

The kiss wasn't perverted, however, Astaria could feel Nux's overpowering love behind that kiss.

"How about you? Did you enjoy it? I tried something new today, I prepared it, especially for you. You have been occupying my mind all this while, after all."

Nux spoke in a gentle tone.

"So? How was it?"

He questioned again.

"..."

Astaria turned silent and clenched her fists.

Nux noticed that and frowned, with a worried look on his face, he questioned,

“Do you not like it? You should have said that if that was the case... why were you silent all this while? I would have stopped if you told me to, you know?”

Wait a minute, let me untie yo-”

Just as Nux was about to move,

“You... you don’t have to...”

Astaria replied.

She was now thankful that her vision was taken away because currently, there was no way she could look into Nux’s eyes.

This bastard...

She cursed inside her head.

‘Not even allowing me to lie to myself... you cruel bastard...’

“I-I d-did not hate it...”

She stuttered.

“So you liked it?”

Nux questioned.

“I-I said I did not hate it, you bastard!”

Astaria retorted.

Nux chuckled and kissed Astaria again.

She didn’t resist.

Rather, these small kisses...

They felt calming...

She wasn't doing anything wrong after all...

She... She was Nux's w-wife...

S-She could show her 'new' side to him without holding back...

Astaria's heartbeat calmed down as well...

It was as if she achieved some sort of enlightenment while being showered with Nux's kisses.

Once he was sure Astaria has calmed down, Nux stopped and with an evil smile on his face,

“Do you want me to continue?”

“T-There's more?”

Astaria was surprised.

“Heh. You don't have to answer me, the way your walls twitched already gave me an answer.”

Nux chuckled.

“I-It's not like that.”

Astaria tried to retort, but,

“So you want to end it here?” Nux questioned.

“...”

Astaria didn't reply.

Nux's smile widened, he finally moved his hips, taking his dick out of Astaria's cave, along with his dick, Astaria's and his juices came out as well.

“Tsk Tsk, would you look at this mess.”

Nux commented.

“We need to clean this up, don't we?”

As he said those words, a bucket of water appeared in his hand and,

*\*Splash\**

He splashed the water all over Astaria's body.

Astaria's entire body and the bed were soaked in water.

Of course, Nux wasn't done yet.

*\*Splash\**

He poured another bucket of water on himself.

*\*Splash\**

Then he splashed it on Astaria, then on himself, then on Astaria again, and then himself and he continued...

A few minutes later, the entire room was wet...

“Haahhh... Haahhh... Haahh...”

Astaria breathed heavily.

Lying on a wet bed with a wet body was definitely uncomfortable.

Not to mention some of her hairs that were stuck on her face and since her limbs were tied, she couldn't move them away. Her blindfold was now

stuck on her eyes and it was getting itchy near her ears.

That wasn't it, her body was sensitive after 4 continuous orgasms, so even the chill she felt from due to cold... even it affected her body...

That strange, tingling feeling started again.

Astaria twisted her body at different angles again, and just like before, nothing worked.

“You seem uncomfortable.”

Suddenly, Nux, who was wiping his body leisurely glanced at Astaria and commented.

Then after wiping his entire body, he walked toward Astaria's head and smiled playfully,

“Now then, shall I start wiping your body as well?”

# Chapter 646 A Long, Long, Long Night Followed.

“Now then, shall I start wiping your body as well?”

Nux smiled playfully as he walked towards Astaria.

Astaria couldn't see, however, her ears were still working perfectly.

She knew that this man was standing right beside her, Nux didn't waste any time either, first, he fixed Astaria's hair, he then gently wiped her face with a loving smile on his face, and once he was done with that,

His smile turned perverted.

His hand quickly moved towards her shapely breast, with one hand, he groped it to his heart's content, playing with the erect nipple, enjoying the softness by kneading it continuously, and with the other hand, he started wiping it.

He was definitely enjoying this process.

Astaria's breasts were firm, Nux wished nothing more than to kiss that erect pink nipple... lick it with his tongue, suck on it as gently as he could, bite it... and more and more and more...

However, he had to hold himself back.

Not right now.

He had to wipe her entire body, after all.

Nux took his time in 'wiping' Astaria's breast. Once he was done with the right one, he slowly moved to the left one.

His movements were gentle, it was as if Astaria was a gentle object that would break the moment he used more strength.

Nux quickly started playing with her other nipple.

Astaria's body was cold.

Whether it was due to ice or water, Nux didn't know, however, he was definitely enjoying this.

Soon, Nux was finally done with the left breast as well, however, just as he was about to move, he paused.

Something shocking happened.

On the other side, while Nux was playing with her breasts, Astaria, whose eyes were closed, was trying her best to fight against that tingling feeling which was haunting her...

Nux playing with her breast didn't help either.

Rather, it only added fuel to the fire since her mind started imagining how Nux would wipe her lower lips.

Soon, however, Astaria felt something warm near her face.

Right now, Nux was 'wiping' her right breasts, from his position... this warm thing should be...

Astaria's expression changed...

She quickly realized what this warm thing was...

For it to be so close to her face...

Astaria didn't know how to react.

Her face turned red.

Nux continued to wipe her breasts, from his movements, it was clear that he didn't realize what was happening.

The more time passed, the more curious Astaria got...

The heat emanating from it directly hit her face...

Different thoughts filled her mind...

This... this thing right in front of her...

Astaria wanted to look at it... but unfortunately, she could only feel its heat...

And for some reason, this heat attracted her...

This thing was responsible for everything happening to her body...

Now that it was right in front of her... Astaria was having a hard time holding herself back...

In the end, Astaria finally decided to do something she never thought she would do.

She opened her mouth... her tongue moved out of her mouth... she extended it... and then...

She licked Nux's balls.

“!!!”

Nux's expression changed.

Even in the first 4-day session, he didn't ask Astaria to give him a blowjob, for some reason, he felt that she wouldn't like it.

But now when Astaria was the one who initiated it...

All Nux did was bend his knees a little, moving his balls closer to Astaria's tongue.

He was as shameless as ever.

No way he would ever give up on something like this.

A jolt of pleasure assaulted his body as Astaria started licking his balls continuously.

Nux's little brother trembled in joy.

He stopped playing with Astaria's breasts, all his attention was grabbed by Astaria's tongue.

Soon, he started moving his dick, making Astaria his shaft as well. More and more jolts of pleasure assaulted his body and his legs started getting weak.

In the end, Nux failed to control himself, he stood up and placed his dick right on top of Astaria's face with the head right in front of Astaria's mouth.

Astaria's face turned a shade redder.

She understood what this perverted bastard wanted.

The strong scent of Nux's dick assaulted her nose, her body started moving on its own and her mouth opened up.

Astaria then lifted her head and after kissing the head, she gobbled it up.

“Uggghhhhh~”

Nux groaned in pleasure.

Hearing that groan, Astaria's expression changed as well.

She quickly realized that Nux was abnormally sensitive for some reason, not wanting to lose this chance, she started moving, however, with her

limbs tied up, her movements were limited.

Nux understood it as well, therefore, he quickly grabbed Astaria's head and then, she started moving his hips.

“Ugghhhh~~”

Astaria's mouth was warm and unbearably pleasurable.

Astaria wanted to make sure Nux moans as much as she did and did everything in her power to make it possible,

Using her tongue, curling it around Nux's dick, sucking it more intensely as Nux moved deeper in her mouth, no one could tell that it was her first time doing something like that.

The pleasure Nux was feeling was so good that he was having a hard time standing up.

Within just 4 minutes, Nux's dick started twitching, and then,

“Ugggghhhhhhhh!!!”

He filled Astaria's mouth with his jizz.

“!!!”

Astaria's eyes widened in surprise.

Her first reaction was to spit this thing out of her mouth, however, just when she was about to do it, she paused, and then,

\*Gulp\*

She forced herself to gulp it down...

It... It belonged to Nux, after all...

Nux did not miss that.

A smile appeared on his face, then,

He untied Astaria and removed her blindfold.

“Hmm?”

Astaria frowned.

“Plans changed.”

He muttered.

Astaria tilted her head in confusion.

Nux, however, didn't say anything, he jumped on top of Astaria, forcefully grabbed Astaria's hands, and placed them above her head,

“I don't need ropes now.”

As he said those words, A wave of water formed above the bed, and then,

\*Splash\*

It fell on the two of them...

“I need moarr~”

Saying that, Nux entered Astaria again and,

“AAaAnnnNnnHhhhh~”

She moaned again.

The two wet bodies rolled over the top of each other on the top of the wet bed, creating a scene so steamy that was so alluring that even the impotent would feel an itch.

The two of them were then lost in their own world, a world full of love and pleasure and,

A long, long, long night followed.

# Chapter 647 Your Cultivation...

An incredibly beautiful woman was sitting cross-legged on her bed, her eyes were closed and her entire body except her face was covered by ominous looking Black Mist.

She was Amaya, who was currently trying to decipher the Devouring Mist and increase her Physique's Mastery Level.

\*Bam\*

Suddenly, the peaceful atmosphere was ruined as the door of her room was broken and another black-red-haired woman stepped in with a panicked look on her face.

“Amaya!”

The woman shouted.

Amaya opened her eyes and frowned,

“What happened?”

Even in front of this sudden outburst, Amaya didn't react abnormally and kept her calm,

Ember's next words, however, changed that.

“The Connection!

I can't feel it anymore!”

Ember informed.

Amaya's expression changed.

She tried accessing their connection, however, just like Ember said, she couldn't access it.

Her face turned pale.

\*Thud\* \*Thud\* \*Thud\*

Suddenly, 3 more women walked into the room, they had horrified expressions on their faces as well.

“You too?”

Felberta questioned.

Amaya and Ember nodded.

“He was with Astaria, let's go!”

Amaya was unable to control herself and quickly rushed out of the room.

The others followed, and there, they saw the other four, Thyra, Evane, Skyla, and Edda outside as well.

The two groups looked at each other and even though they couldn't talk using the connection like they normally do, they quickly understood what they had to do and rushed towards Nux's room.

They couldn't access the [Harem Seal]'s connection, and not only that, they couldn't use [Eye Of Discerning], [Conceal], [Sense], or any other skills either.

This had never happened before.

Different thoughts started appearing in the women's minds. Thoughts that they would rather not think about...

However, in the current situation, it was simply impossible to not think about it.

Even when Nux had passed out due to the backlash of [Blink Fault], the women were able to access the connection and use some of Nux's skills.

For something like this to happen...

There was only one logical conclusion...

Something happened to Nux...

With him being able to Devour Life now, there is no way something would happen to him no matter how strong the enemy is. Even if a Sage appears, the women were confident that Nux would at least be able to fight back to the point that they would know something happened...

For things to happen this fast...

There was only 1 possibility.

Nux was attacked by someone he trusted...

'Astaria...'

All the women had the same thought in their minds.

Even Evane was the same. She was a woman who has seen her brother betray her right in front of her eyes, a woman who has seen her brother try to frame her, a woman who has seen her brother trying to use her. She had grown.

She was not that naive little girl now,

She was now the Queen.

She respected Astaria with all her heart, but if it is about Nux, she would treat her like an enemy in a matter of seconds.

Her sword appeared in her hand and,

With a cold expression on her face, she quickly walked into Nux's room. The other women were the same, with their weapons in their hands, they all barged into the room as well.

“Nux!”

Amaya shouted in worry.

However, soon, their panicked expression calmed a little when they saw Nux sitting right in front of them.

Nux's eyes fell on his women and he smiled lightly,

“Were you all worried?”

He questioned.

“We cannot access the connection.”

Thyra replied.

Nux nodded. From his expression, it was clear that he knew the reason this happened.

Then, Nux's eyes fell on his wives and he frowned,

“Why are all carrying weapons?”

The women's expressions changed.

With shy looks on their faces, they quickly hid their weapons back into their storage rings.

Nux's frown deepened, however soon, he realized what they were thinking...

He then glanced at Astaria, who was lying right beside her, sleeping with a peaceful expression and a beautiful smile on her face.

“Do you really think she will harm me?”

He questioned as he fixed Astaria’s hair.

Astaria’s hand moved on its own when it sensed Nux’s touch and she quickly grabbed Nux’s hand, which was playing with her hair.

“...”

Seeing this scene, the women turned silent...

“I can’t believe she is Astaria Skyfall...”

Ember commented, disbelief clear in her eyes.

“She is Astaria Leander now.”

Nux smiled.

Suddenly, Edda narrowed her eyes,

“Why are her hands not tied though...?”

She questioned.

“Did she... not like it?”

She questioned with a confused look on her face.

Was she not going to get a true sister after all that effort...?

Edda pouted.

Nux glanced at her and shook his head.

He knew exactly what was going on inside the mind of his perverted wife.

To be honest, the pouting Edda was looking absolutely adorable.

“Don’t worry-”

Just as Nux was about to answer Edda,

Ember's expression changed.

“Nux...”

She called out with a surprised look on her face.

“Hmm?”

Nux tilted his head in confusion.

“Your Cultivation...”

Thyra muttered.

Hearing that, all the women focused on Nux's cultivation, and soon, their expressions changed as well.

“Emperor Stage...”

Allura muttered.

Nux smiled.

“Well...”

I am an Emperor Stage Cultivator now...”

He laughed awkwardly.

His women smiled as well.

He finally became an Emperor.

They all wondered how strong he had gotten now,

He was not just an Emperor Stage Mana Cultivator.

He was also an Emperor Stage Body Cultivator.

Nux was someone who has the power to absolutely destroy someone who is at his own cultivation level.

He could defeat more than 10 King Stage Cultivators without even trying when he was a King Stage Cultivator.

Honestly, even 100 King Stage Cultivators didn't make much of a difference.

Does that mean Nux, who was now an Emperor could defeat 100 Emperor Stage Cultivators?

All of them were looking forward to it,

However, before that,

They needed to talk about something much more concerning.

“What happened to the connection? Why can we not access it...”

Amaya questioned.

Hearing that question, Nux smiled wryly,

“Well... something did happen...”

It is a little troublesome...

But it is not a bad thing...”

Saying those words, Nux glanced at the message in front of him and couldn't help but feel excited.

# Chapter 648 See? You Are Still Tired, You Should Rest More

[Congratulations to the Host for becoming an Emperor Stage Mana Cultivator from a King Stage Mana Cultivator]

[Blank Points: +50]

[Congratulations to the Host for becoming an Emperor Stage Body Cultivator from a King Stage Mana Cultivator]

[Blank Points: +50]

[The Host has met the required condition.]

[The [Supreme Harem God System] will now undergo an update.]

[Note: During the update, the [Supreme Harem God System] will be in [Down State]. The Host will not be able to use any System Skills.]

[Time Left: 30 days 23 hours 58 minutes 31 seconds]

“It requires a month huh...” Amaya muttered.

“Indeed.”

Nux nodded.

“But it’s a good thing, isn’t it?” Skyla spoke with a big smile on her face. She also used this chance to walk towards Nux and sat on his lap.

“We are going Yrniel soon, I am sure we would need the help of your system.”

“Indeed.”

Nux nodded as he patted Skyla's head.

The other women smiled as well.

Nux, however, had a strange smile on his face.

A smile that all his women missed.

“So you can't use the System Skills for the next 31 days, huh,” Amaya commented.

“That is correct.”

Nux nodded.

“And this involves the [Slave Seal] as well, correct?”

Amaya questioned.

“Yes.”

“What about the people who already have a [Slave Seal] imprinted on them?”

Skyla couldn't help but question.

“...the [Harem Seal] is not working...”

Amaya replied.

“That means...” Thyra muttered and Amaya nodded.

“The ones who had the [Slave Seal] imprinted on them are all free.”

Amaya's expression changed.

“Mother is in danger.”

She muttered.

Nux stood up and walked towards Amaya.

“Don’t worry, Nawdren is with her.”

He patted her head.

“...”

Unlike others, Nawdren was not bound by the [Slave Seal] but the Contract, the System being down wouldn’t affect it.

Amaya glanced at Nux and replied,

“I... still feel...”

“I understand... don’t worry, I will bring her here. Wait for me.”

Saying those words, Nux started walking out of the room.

“You are going right now?”

Ember questioned.

“Mhm, you guys wait here for me, I’ll be back in 5 minutes.”

“5 minutes...?”

Thyra frowned.

The other women furrowed their brows as well.

Mind you... currently, Riona was about 1500 km away...

“Heh. He really did become an Emperor huh...”

Thyra laughed wryly.

“I wonder what her reaction will be once she wakes up.”

Ember commented as she glanced at Astaria.

Nux would now be a lot stronger than before...

For him, defeating the current Astaria will be...

Well, effortless.

And of course, with her attitude, there is no way Astaria would simply accept this fact as it is...

She would try to resist...

However, that's for the latter...

"I really can't believe she is Lady Astaria..."

Ember commented again.

"Just look at that expression..."

She pointed at Astaria's face...

She was sure,

No one.

Absolutely no one in this world has ever seen this expression before.

They were the only ones after Nux.

A defenseless pose with a lovely smile...

She was not Astaria...

Right now, she was Star...

"She looks so adorable~" Skyla laughed as she glanced at Astaria with an excited look on her face.

Skyla was dying to talk to her new sister.

She really wanted to talk about Astaria's first night.

“Oi.” Felberta called out.

“Maintain your distance. You will wake her up.” She spoke.

“It is a little too late to worry about that right now.”

Suddenly, all the women heard a voice and they turned silent.

Collectively, they glanced at Astaria and the woman slowly opened her eyes.

“You are awake.”

Ember smiled wryly.

“It's hard to sleep when there are 9 people inside my room and you 9 are not exactly the silent type.”

Astaria replied.

She had already noticed that she was currently naked.

However, she couldn't react in front of these little girls.

No matter how flustered she was, there was no way she could show it in front of everyone.

With an 'expressionless' face, she stood up and then wore her clothes.

“Anyways, two questions.

Why are you all here?

Where is Nux?”

Honestly speaking, this was not the morning Astaria was expecting.

She wouldn't say it out loud, but she wanted to wake up in Nux's arms...

She wanted to lie on the bed with him for a little longer...

She wanted to cuddle, then kiss, then cuddle again... then kiss even more...

She wanted to do all that...

But opening her eyes and noticing that she was surrounded by 9 women...

Astaria wouldn't say that she wasn't annoyed.

Suddenly, Astaria paused.

She noticed something was a miss.

She wanted to talk to Nux but why couldn't she access the connection?

She glanced at the women again, this time, her expression was fiercer than before,

“Where is Nu-”

She wanted to question, however, before she could, the doors of the room were opened and Nux walked in.

“Oh? You woke up?”

Nux's eyes fell on Astaria, he walked towards Amaya and told her to look after Riona, then, he walked towards Astaria and hugged her like it was the most natural thing to do.

At the same time, he kneaded her soft butt and spoke,

“You should have rested for a little longer.

I am sure you must be tired after all that.”

Under Nux's touch, Astaria's brave and warrior-like front disappeared, and she hugged him back with a cute blush on her face. A complete 180 from the fierce look she showed just a few seconds ago.

Nux continued to knead Astaria's butt, Astaria shifted all her body weight on Nux, giving her body to Nux without any care, and simply focused on enjoying his touch.

“See? You are still tired, you should rest more~

Don't act brave.” Saying this in a gentle tone, Nux carried her in his arms and then placed her on the bed.

After that, he kissed her forehead, patted her head, and then started playing with her hair.

Under his care, Astaria couldn't put a resistance for long, she closed his eyes, and just as she was about to sleep, she suddenly realized something and opened her eyes,

“Your cultivation...”

# Chapter 649 Oi Oi, Stand Up, We Don'T Have All Day.

“Your cultivation...”

Astaria finally noticed,

A playful smile appeared on Nux’s face as he replied.

“Our hard work bore fruit.”

Astaria blushed.

“Pervert...”

She muttered.

Then suddenly, she sat up.

“What happened?”

Nux questioned with a frown on his face.

By this time, Astaria’s blush had already disappeared and her signature, a warrior-like confident smile had appeared on her face.

“We have to test how strong you have gotten, don’t we?”

“Do we really need to do it right now?”

Nux questioned with an awkward smile on his face.

“Huh? Of course, we do.”

“But you should rest, your body is still tired.”

“Tired my ass, you think I don’t know what my body is like?”

Astaria replied with a confident look on her face as she quickly jumped out of the bed and stood up.

The battle intent she was emitting was intense.

All the women present inside the room were intimidated.

Even Ember, who is currently the strongest when it came to one on one battles was the same, however, Ember didn’t care about it.

Her attention was on Nux.

She had noticed how unbothered Nux looked.

Not in a disrespectful way.

Neither was it his pride that forced him to keep a straight face.

He was... genuinely unbothered...

Astaria’s fierce battle intent...

He completely and utterly ignored it...

It was as if he wasn’t even feeling it.

And of course, since Ember noticed something it, Astaria did as well.

A big smile appeared on her face.

A competition,

That was what she was looking for.

Nux’s Mist was strong, however, he wouldn’t use it against her no matter what she did,

Not being able to fight against him when he has gotten so strong...

It was frustrating,

Now, however, things were different, she could now fight against Nux, and she and Nux could now go all out.

With an excited smile on her face, Astaria started walking out of the room.

“C’mon, we don’t have time to waste. Let’s go.”

She spoke.

The other women shook his head.

Astaria was unsalvageable...

She has just had an intense session, her body should be tired, heck, she should even be a little sensitive...

But look at her...

There she was, ready to fight...

What a battle freak.

They all liked sparring as well, the feeling of getting stronger... it was addicting...

However, none of them were crazy enough to spar right after a lovely session.

The women glanced at Nux and seeing the wry smile on his face, they realized that even Nux didn’t wish to spar.

‘Well, she is still new... we can’t expect her to know whatever Nux was thinking...’

The women smiled inwardly.

All of them seemed to have same thoughts in their minds.

“C’mon, what are you waiting for, Nux? You aren’t scare-”

As soon as Astaria opened the door, she paused.

“Nux...”

She called out.

The other women frowned as well.

What happened?

Why was Astaria acting like that?

They all wondered and then, Astaria finally questioned.

“What is he doing here?”

Astaria questioned as she pointed at Nawdren, who was lying on the floor breathing heavily.

“...”

Nux turned silent.

All the women in the room looked at him, waiting for his answer.

“Well...”

I thought you were sleeping...

So... I brought him...

Since I wanted to test a few things...”

Nux replied with an awkward smile on her face.

“So you brought him here in order to spar with him?”

Astaria questioned.

“That is correct.”

Nux replied.

“ ... ”

The other women turned silent...

Nux had changed...

Was it because of Astaria?

They all wondered in their heads.

“Anyways, I am now awake.

So you don't have to worry find any replacement.

Spar with me.”

Astaria spoke.

“ ... ”

Nux however, didn't reply, and seeing that Astaria frowned,

She realized it.

Nux was hesitating.

“What's the problem, Nux?”

She questioned as she narrowed her eyes.

“Nothing, you should just rest for a while, you are tired, don't worry, I will spar with you as soon as you wake up.”

Nux replied with a gentle smile on his face.

Nux.”

Astaria called out.

With a solemn look on her face, she questioned,

“What are you worried about? Answer me. Honestly.”

Nux solemn look appeared on Nux’s face and he replied.

“I still cannot control my strength yet.”

“You are worried about hurting me?” Astaria furrowed her brows.

“...”

Nux glanced at Astaria and didn’t say anything.

Astairia understood.

“You are afraid that you might accidentally kill me...”

Nux just smiled wryly.

No more words were needed, the women inside the room understood.

Astaria was right, Nux was actually scared of accidentally killing her.

All of them couldn’t help but wonder how strong he had gotten...

“Heh.”

Astaria smiled depressingly.

She still couldn’t believe it.

To think there would be a day when someone would not spar her, not because he is afraid of her, but because he was afraid of accidentally killing her...

“I want to see your fight against Nawdren.”

Astaria replied.

Seeing the expression on her face, Nux knew he couldn't say no right now.

“Alright...”

He agreed.

“I want to see it as well.”

Ember stepped forward as well.

“I am coming as well.”

Thyra nodded.

The other women followed as well.

Nux sighed and then, he smiled.

“Alright then. You are all welcome to witness the show.”

He then turned towards Nawdren, who was still lying on the floor,

“Did you have enough rest?”

Nux questioned.

“What happened to him?”

Astaria questioned.

“I don't know, he has been acting like this since the moment I brought him here.”

Nux shrugged.

“...”

Riona, who was currently resting in Amaya's arms glanced at Nux again.

This bastard...

He dragged Nawdren all the way from the Skadi's capital to the Neutral City, all of this at a crazy speed where it was hard to even keep their eyes open.

Nux carried her in his arms, her eyes were closed and even after all that, she still felt nauseous.

Nawdren... on the other hand...

“Haahh...”

For the first time in her life,

She actually felt pity for her enemy...

“Oi Oi, stand up, we don't have all day.”

# Chapter 650 Who Told You That L Was Using Mana?

“Alright, attack me with everything you got.”

Nux spoke with a confident look on his face.

“...”

Nawdren glanced at Nux with an unsure look on his face,

“How did you become an Emperor Stage Cultivator so quickly? I clearly remember that you were only an early King Stage Cultivator before.”

He questioned.

“Huh? You thought I was only an early King Stage Cultivator?”

Nux questioned with a smile on his face.

“...you were incomparably stronger than a normal King Stage Cultivator, I agree. But I trust my senses, you were only an early King Stage Cultivator.”

Nawdren didn't back down.

“Uh huh. An early King Stage Cultivator who fought against a Pseudo Sage.

Your senses sure are trustworthy.”

Nux chuckled.

“...”

Nawdren turned silent...

Nux wasn't wrong...

In front of a strange monster like him, he shouldn't trust his senses.

He must be a peak King Stage Cultivator before.

It doesn't make sense for an Early King Stage Cultivator to be this strong.

Of course, even a peak King Stage Cultivator shouldn't be that strong, but it is definitely much more believable.

It also explains how this bastard became an Emperor so quickly.

However, Nawdren wondered.

This man fought and even defeated an Emperor when he was merely a King Stage Cultivator. He is an anomaly...

And now that this anomaly has become an Emperor Stage Cultivator...  
How strong would he be?

"Are you sure you wish to fight me right now? You must have used a lot of your Mana while you were testing your speed." Nawdren spoke.

"Don't ask useless questions, just attack."

"I can attack without holding back, right?"

Nawdren questioned as he glanced at Riona.

"Oh?"

A big smile appeared on Nux's face as he realized what Nawdren was thinking.

"How about this.

If you manage to somehow kill me, your contract will be released.

Of course, I won't use my Mist for this battle.”

Nux challenged.

Astaria and Nux's other wives, who were watching this play out narrowed their eyes.

They could sense Nux's confidence.

Well, it made sense.

Nux refused to fight against Astaria, there must be a reason for that.

Nawdren, however, didn't care about all that. His expression changed and he questioned with a serious look on his face.

“Are you serious?”

All this while, this spar meant nothing to him.

There was nothing to gain, after all.

But now, things have changed.

“One Hundred Percent” Nux replied.

Nawdren turned towards Riona.

“I will follow whatever he wishes.”

Riona replied.

“Then to make it fair, how about you give me my Combat Gear as well?”  
Nawdren questioned with a smile on his face.

“Don't bite more than you ca-” Riona was about to reply but,

\*Thud\* \*Thud\*

Nux threw Nawdren's white Armor and Sword toward him.

"Here."

Nux replied.

A frown appeared on Riona's face.

She didn't think it was a good idea.

She turned and glanced at Nux's wives and seeing their expressions, she realized that she wasn't alone.

Astaria, Amaya, Ember, Thyra, Evane... every woman had similar expressions on their faces.

Seeing his sword and armor in front of him, Nawdren's smile widened, he quickly grabbed his combat gear and wore it,

"You are brave, I will give you that."

Nawdren spoke as he glanced at Nux.

"..." Nux didn't reply.

"But,"

Suddenly, Nawdren disappeared,

"You are the sharpest tool in the shed."

Saying those words, he appeared right behind Nux and slashed his sword, aiming to behead him in one move,

However,

Nux simply grabbed his sword with his thumb and index finger.

"!!!"

Nawdren's eyes widened in horror.

He wasn't alone.

Nux's women, especially Astaria had a similar expression on her face.

Nux's move...

It was similar to Roone's.

Using one's own Mana to increase his body movement speed.

Something that gave Roone the confidence to fight against the strongest...

Something that shouldn't be achievable without decades, or even centuries of practice.

Of course, Nux's technique wasn't exactly like Roone's. Astaria could sense that something was different.

She couldn't point out what the difference was, but there was definitely something.

A smile appeared on Nux's face as he freed Nawdren's sword,

“You can do better than this, can't you?”

This is your chance to get to the freedom you wanted so desperately.”

Nawdren came out of his reverie, he quickly pulled his sword and jumped back.

With a solemn look on his face, he activated his own Mana and rushed towards Nux again.

Slashing his sword in speed impossible to follow through.

Nawdren's speed plus the strength of that sword, it was a deadly combination.

If even a single attack connects, it will lead to a fatal blow, however,

Nux was dodging these seemingly impossible-to-follow attacks as if he was fighting against a toddler.

Heck, he was even yawning while doing all this.

And Nawdren didn't like that one bit.

“You bastard! How long do you think your Mana will hold on for!?”

He shouted in anger and irritation.

“The moment you run out of Mana will be the moment you die!

I'll make you regret looking down on me!”

The women's expression turned solemn.

Especially Riona, who was about to use the power of contract to stop Nawdren. However, before she could do anything, Amaya grabbed her hand.

Riona glanced at Amaya and she shook her head.

Riona frowned, Amaya then pointed at Nux, Riona glanced at the battlefield, then, her eyes fell on Nux.

In front of Nawdren's outbreak, he was standing calmly, with a small smile on his face, and continued to dodge his attacks.

Then, he grabbed Nawdren's sword with his fingers again, and then, he questioned,

“Who told you that I was using Mana?”

“...huh?”

Nawdren's expression changed.

Nux then pulled Nawdren's sword, forcing Nawdren to get closer, then, he grabbed his hand and,

\*Bam\*

\*Crack\*

“Khhoocckkk!!!”

He punched his abdomen.

A single punch broke that absurdly strong armor, the impact still didn't vanish and broke Nawdren's ribs.

\*Cough\*

Nawdren coughed out blood.

Seeing that big hole in the armor he was so proud of...

His worldview collapsed.

Nux, however, was about to give him another big shock.

“Trust me, be it traveling from the Skadi Kingdom to here, or while fighting this entire battle,

I haven't used any Mana at all.”

# Chapter 651 L Am An Emperor Stage Body Cultivator As Well.

“Trust me, be it traveling from the Skadi Kingdom to here, or while fighting this entire battle,

I haven’t used any Mana at all.”

Nux revealed and Nawdren’s eyes widened in horror.

He was in pain.

His ribs were broken.

However, that didn’t matter.

He...

He was hearing something so absurd...

And he wasn’t alone.

Astaria was the same...

She now understood why Nux refused to fight against her.

**\*Bam\***

Nux then punched Nawdren’s face, his body flew away and clashed against a building, breaking the walls.

“Khoocckkk!!”

Nawdren coughed out more blood.

And with his will crushed, he didn’t even try waking up.

“ ... ”

Nux glanced at the debris in front of him and then...

He sighed.

‘Even he wouldn’t be able to take it...’

Nux needed someone to see how strong he has actually gotten.

However, that didn’t seem possible right now.

Even Nawardren, currently the strongest being in this continent after him, lost.

And Nux wasn’t even serious right now.

With his System down, he couldn’t use the abilities the System provided.

Interestingly enough, he could use the Devouring Mist. However, Nux understood it. Though the Physique was given to him by the System, it now belonged to him.

Just like the weapons he bought from the System Shop, the Physique was his Weapon now.

The same goes for the Skills he learned himself like [Wind Walk], [Fire Lance], and others.

He could use them all.

Only abilities like [Sense], [Conceal], [Blink Fault], and other abilities directly given by System were unusable.

“I can now understand why you didn’t want to spar with me.”

Astaria walked towards Nux and replied.

Nux turned towards her and smiled,

“Did you really not use any Mana in this battle?” She questioned with a serious look on her face.

“I did not.” Nux shook his head.

“What if you do use Mana?”

“I don’t know...”

That was what he wanted to test it in the first place, but...

“I am afraid that I would accidentally kill others if I use Mana to boost my power.”

Nux replied as he glanced at his hand.

“The Mana does give a scary boost to one’s ability.” Astaria nodded.

Nux nodded back.

“You might even pierce through his body, creating a giant hole in it if you use your full power,” Astaria commented as she glanced at Nawdren who was still lying on the floor.

Nux didn’t say anything, however, if he was being completely honest, he believed the result would be a lot more fearsome than this.

“But I still don’t understand, the Mana was definitely moving around you when you were fighting Nawdren. I could feel it, although it was not the same, the pattern was still similar to how we use it to boost our strength.”

Astaria spoke her mind.

The other women weren’t as sensitive as hers when it came to Mana as her, therefore, they couldn’t notice it, she however, was different.

She could definitely feel the movement of Mana.

Whenever an Emperor uses Mana to boost their strength, then whether it is their own Mana or the surrounding Mana, the Mana around them moves in a specific pattern.

This was Astaria's way of judging whether the enemy Emperor is actually going to attack or was it just a bluff to fool her. It was something she used quite often and was something that has helped her countless times before, therefore, she was still having a hard time believing that Nux was not using any Mana in the previous fight even though the Mana around him was moving in a similar pattern.

Suddenly, Nux lifted his hand and clenched his fist.

“Did the Mana move again?”

He questioned and Astaria nodded.

A frown appeared on his face.

Since he wasn't an Emperor before, he wasn't as sensitive to Mana as Astaria, so Astaria didn't bother teaching him this technique.

Astaria did give him a rough idea about this movement of Mana, however, it wasn't much, and therefore, he was still clueless about this.

Now, however, since he was an Emperor with a Mana sensitivity that was probably greater than Astaria's, he could finally understand what Astaria was talking about.

He tried moving his body again, however, he couldn't sense any Mana.

He glanced at Astaria and questioned,

“And now?”

Astaria shook her head as well.

Nux then kicked in the air and soon,

He sensed it.

“The Mana moved, didn’t it?”

He questioned and Astaria nodded her head.

Nux punched in the air, and the Mana moved.

Then, he just stood and the Mana moved again.

Nux finally understood.

The moment he gets ready to attack, the Mana moves automatically.

It is an involuntary action, something he had no control over.

The Mana wasn’t his, that was for sure, and neither was he the one controlling it.

Why was Mana moving like this, he didn’t know.

However, Nux was sure about one thing.

This Mana definitely didn’t wasn’t entering his body and pushing or boosting any of his muscles.

His strength was his alone.

It was not the result of him using Mana to boost it.

And to prove it,

Nux controlled the Mana around him, the Mana moved and surrounded his Fist, and then, he unleashed a punch.

\*Whoosh\*

“!!!”

Everyone felt a big shockwave when Nux released the punch and their eyes widened in surprise.

Nux intentionally punched in a direction furthest from all of them, one can even say it was aimed nearly opposite of where they stood.

For them to still feel the shockwave even after that...

They couldn't even imagine how strong the punch actually was.

“...”

Astaria didn't know what to say...

That punch...

That simple little punch was stronger than Nawdren's strongest move...

That simple little move...

Nux didn't even use his own Mana yet...

“I finally understand.”

Suddenly, Nux spoke.

The women glanced at him and he smiled,

“Body Cultivation.”

“Hmm?” Astaria frowned.

“I am not just an Emperor Stage Mana Cultivator,

I am an Emperor Stage Body Cultivator as well.

Is this not natural?

If the Mana Cultivation sees a huge leap when a cultivator breaks through King Stage and becomes an Emperor.

Shouldn't a King Stage Body Cultivator be the same?

This Mana movement, I am sure it is the result of Body Cultivation.

Unlike normal cultivators, where one's body affects the surrounding Mana, the surrounding Mana is reacting to my body, the body of an Emperor Stage Body Cultivator.”

Nux explained in the best way he could.

Astaria didn't know how to react to this.

The explanation sounded plausible, but honestly, she didn't know anything about Body Cultivation so she was not in a position to comment.

“Wait...”

Suddenly, Amaya frowned.

She thought of something... and honestly, she didn't like that line of thought at all...

# Chapter 652 We Are All Wrong...

“Wait...”

Suddenly, Amaya spoke with a doubtful look on her face.

“Hmm? What is it?” Nux questioned.

Amaya then turned towards Astaria and questioned,

“You said that the pattern in which the Mana around Nux was moving was similar to how it moves around Emperors when they use Mana to increase their strength?”

Amaya questioned.

“It is not exactly similar, but yes, they are alike.”

Astaria nodded.

“And you are saying this is happening because of body cultivation?”

Amaya turned towards Nux and questioned.

“That is the only explanation that comes to my mind.”

Nux replied.

Amaya then narrowed her eyes and started thinking,

“Then are you telling me that the Body Cultivation’s function is the same as Mana Cultivation’s and the only difference is that you don’t have to think about it and can perform it unconsciously?”

Nux frowned.

“Doesn’t this... feel strange...?”

Amaya questioned.

“...”

Seeing the expression on Nux’s face, Amaya simplified her thoughts,

“From the start, the Body Cultivation has given you a stronger body, on the other hand, the Mana Cultivation allowed you to use Skills, correct?”

“Yes, that is correct.” Nux nodded.

“The Mana Cultivation allows you to use skills while also giving a slight boost to your body because of the Mana you absorb while cultivating, on the other hand, Body Cultivation only focused on the Body, giving you a completely different level of strength.

Wasn’t that the reason you were stronger than everyone?

Your body was far stronger than normal cultivators, even the Emperors weren’t able to win against you if they didn’t use Mana, and we can safely say that all of that was because of your Body Cultivation, right?”

“Mhm.”

“From the start, Mana Cultivation and Body Cultivation are perfectly divided, Mana Cultivation focused on Mana, while Body Cultivation focused on the Body.

Then why now?

Why do the two of them have the same functionality now?

Why are both of them focusing on the Body?

Where is... the use of Mana apart from using it to increase the Body Strength?”

Amaya questioned and suddenly, everyone turned silent.

“What are you trying to say, Amaya?”

Astaria questioned as she narrowed her eyes.

“I am saying that we a-”

“We are all wrong...”

Nux completed Amaya’s words.

“That is correct...”

Amaya nodded.

“We are... wrong...?”

Ember frowned.

“We are doing everything wrong,” Nux repeated and then, he started explaining,

“The Mana Cultivation, it was never meant to focus on the body. That’s the job of Body Cultivation,

The Mana Cultivation focuses on Mana...

There is no point in fighting like a Body Stage Cultivator when you are a Mana Cultivator, you would obviously lose. Mana Cultivator needs to have a different fighting style.

The people of this continent were using the wrong way, to begin with.”

Nux spoke and Astaria turned silent.

“Then what is the correct way?” She questioned.

“Only the main continent would have the answer to that question,” Amaya replied.

She didn't know the correct way.

But she was sure the current way definitely leads to a wrong result.

“Heh, then why don't we directly visit the main continent? I am sure Nux would find beings he could 'test his full power against' there. At the same time, we can also find the 'correct way' there.”

Suddenly, Edda proposed with a confident look on her face.

A new continent would definitely have a lot of new things she would like, so she was very excited about going there.

Astaria, however, was the first to shake her head,

“That's not a place you can visit without any preparations. Treat it like a completely different world. We don't know how strong the people living there actually are. There is even a possibility that even beings like Emperors are nothing more than servants there.

Going there without knowing the limits of your strength is nothing different than suicide.

We cannot rush things.”

“Tsk, you just want to master your sword technique, don't you?” Edda snorted.

After having the 'talk' with Astaria, she has become much more open to her.

Honestly, in the entire group, Edda was closest to Astaria, the rest, especially the warriors, Thyra and Ember, they were still a little intimidated by her presence.

The impact Astaria had in their life wasn't small after all.

“I will not disagree. It may be selfish, but I still believe waiting is the best option.”

Astaria replied.

“No, I agree.”

Suddenly, Amaya stepped in.

“Rushing to the main continent is definitely not stop. Especially when we know little to nothing about it.

We should be patient.

First, we need to find a way for Nux to test his strength, or at least control it.

It would be great if Astaria could master her technique and also teach it to others.

I also wish to understand my Physique and increase my Mastery level to Mastered Stage.

Once all of this is done, only then should we move out.”

“I agree as well.”

Felberta nodded as well.

She knows it, the moment they visit the main continent, she and her sisters would become Nux’s weakness and if possible, they would like to avoid that from happening.

Learning Astaria’s technique is a way out of this.

There was also the possibility of discovering the correct way, but honestly, none of them had high hopes.

They have been following the wrong way since... well, the start...

There is no way they can just suddenly change everything, they needed guidance.

Astaria's technique was the only way.

Felberta didn't mind waiting for a few years before visiting the main continent, and she firmly believed that her sisters didn't mind it either.

"Mhm, all of you are right, we are not leaving just yet."

Suddenly, Nux stepped up.

"We will train."

Then, a playful smile appeared on Nux's face as he continued,

"And to do that, all of you need to become Emperors first."

"Hmm? Your System is down, would your ability still work?"

Amaya questioned.

"Hmm? What do you mean?"

"That is my ability now."

Nux replied and Amaya frowned,

"Don't worry, everything is fine.

"And it won't hurt to give it a try, now will it?" Nux questioned.

Amaya smiled as well.

"You are right,

It won't hurt us at all~"

Nux's days were about to become blissful- ahem, stressful.

# Chapter 653 How!?!?!?

With the System Down, the biggest problem Nux and his wives faced was... the [Slave Seal].

Yes, just like the [Harem Seal], the [Slave Seal] had now lost its effect.

What did that mean?

All the people that had a [Slave Seal] implanted on them were now free.

This was a big problem.

There was no way to now contact them from wherever Nux wanted.

Neither could they ensure the Slaves' loyalty.

Communication, which was Nux's biggest advantage, was now taken away. From now on, he needs to use the traditional way to communicate with his subjects.

The same was true for trusting his subordinates as well.

He never trusted his subordinates before, he only placed his trust in the Slaves who couldn't go against his command.

However, now, things were different, he needed to filter out.

He needed to understand who was loyal and who was not on his own.

The first step Nux took when his System was down was contacting his wives. Then he brought back Riona, who lived in the Skadi Kingdom, surrounded by the freed slaves that Nux didn't trust.

Bringing her back was the only way Nux and Amaya could ensure Riona's safety.

Of course, with Nawdren by her side, Riona never needed their help. Heck, even without Nawdren, she has been living in the Skadi Kingdom for her entire life. The Slave Seal's disappearance never changed anything for her.

In the Skadi Kingdom, she was not the prey, there, she stood at the apex, she was the predator.

She had her trusted subordinates with her and honestly, getting backstabbed or harmed by the 'freed Slaves' was simply impossible.

But would Riona ever deny the opportunity to spend some time together with Amaya?

Of course not. Especially when her way to communicate with her daughter was not working. Therefore, she didn't resist Nux's decision and came back with him.

Then, Nux decided to send all the servants serving them in the Neutral city away.

He and his wives were the only ones who now lived in the Neutral City, the Largest City in the world.

It might look like something a coward would do, but Nux didn't care.

The safety of his wives was the most important thing to him.

Suddenly, the Neutral City became Nux's and his wives' new base.

After securing their new base, the next problem was the 4 Nations.

The Skyfall was alright, Arvina was there.

She was only an Expert Stage Cultivator, and honestly, Ember and Astaria wanted to bring her back as well, however, Nux was against it.

There were various reasons for it.

He knew things would get awkward once she is here and honestly, Nux wasn't very excited about pointless drama.

He knew he was wrong for ghosting her, but honestly, after what happened between them, thinking that things would return to normal or move forward from here was... foolish.

They would never be normal teacher student no matter how much they tried.

Similarly, they would never get into a relationship as well.

It was not about Arvina alone now, even Nux was against it now.

If he could, he would rather not stay with her...

He already had too many wives now.

He wasn't willing to have more now.

He wanted to give all his love to his current wives.

Also, Arvina was completely safe in the Skyfall Kingdom.

Keep in mind, the Skyfall Kingdom was the strongest Kingdom in this Kingdom, this was even truer when Emperors weren't involved, they had many King Stage Cultivators, and the strongest King Stage Cultivators of them, the Shadow Unit, they were absolutely loyal to the Throne.

Without any Slave Seals.

With them there, no one would dare to touch Arvina and she could easily manage the Kingdom without any problems.

Just like that, the Skadi wasn't the problem as well.

Riona's loyal subordinates took care of that Nation.

However,

The Solid Earth Kingdom and the Woods Dynasty weren't the same.

Nux had enslaved the Duke that held the strongest power in the Solid Earth Kingdom and had ordered him to rule it.

He didn't know that Duke and that man was definitely not loyal to him.

However, the good thing was that the Duke was scared of Nawdren.

And the sight of Nawdren following Nux and his wives with his head bowed, like a loyal servant, left a deep mark in his heart.

And that mark was enough to ensure his loyalty.

Even with the effects of the Slave Seal gone, the Duke didn't dare to do anything reckless.

Of course, he thought of the possibility of Nux dying, however, in the end, he still knew that he wouldn't hold any real power even if that happened.

If Nux dies, Nawdren would hold all the power.

Therefore, for him to stay alive and have a better position in his life, the best solution was not to do anything and kneel in front of anyone, either Nux, or Nawdren, who appears in front of him at a later time.

The ruler of the Woods Dynasty, however, wasn't that bright.

Ellinger Woods, after seeing the sacrifice of his father, Alcius, Nux allowed him to rule the Woods Dynasty without any problems, however, the death of his father seemed to have a greater effect on Ellinger than expected.

The Ministers of the Woods Dynasty, who didn't know much about how strong Nux actually was only treated Astaria as a real threat had different plans in their mind.

They all had started slowly brainwashing Ellinger, following Nux was useless.

He was just a slightly stronger King Stage Cultivator, he doesn't have the right to rule the world. They didn't have to bow down to him, especially when they won the war because of their protector sacrificed himself.

If anyone deserved to be the Emperor of this world, it was them, the Woods Dynasty.

They should be the ruling Nation, not the Skyfall Kingdom.

With constant feeding of these thoughts in his mind, Ellinger started acting differently. Nux didn't place any restrictions on him, to begin with.

He could do practically whatever he wanted in his Dynast.

Honestly, out of all the current rulers of the 4 Nations, he had the most power, however, his mind was now corrupted.

The Woods Dynasty had started acting differently and this was a problem.

How did Nux and his wives solve this problem?

Simple, Nawdren.

He became the new communicational channel between the 4 Nations and the Neutral City.

He was ordered to run around, exchanging letters, this was the fastest communication channel in the history of this Continent.

A Pseudo Sage Stage Postman.

Even the Main Continent might not have something like that.

Anyways, with Nawdren's appearance, most of the problems were solved, the Solid Earth Kingdom's Duke understood that Nux was very much alive, and stayed loyal, on the other hand, after the firsthand experience of dealing with Nawdren, Ellinger finally understood what he was dealing with.

Let alone him, even the ministers didn't dare to have any useless thoughts anymore.

The communication between the 4 Nations was re-established.

Some of the Slaves had run away, Nux had ordered their hunt down, however, he wasn't very worried.

Most of the problems were solved,

And after a month-long trip to all the Nations, ensuring their loyalty and delivering the letter to them that gave a general future direction, Nawdren, returned to the neutral city.

And as soon as he did.

He paused...

He had seen many things in his life.

Especially after meeting this monster, he has become numb to surprises.

An Emperor who could destroy him as if he was a toy...

It was already surprising enough...

And now this...

11 Emperor Stage Cultivators stood in front of him...

Yes...

11...

11 King Stage Cultivators...

Even when this continent was at its peak, it didn't see 11 Emperor Stage Cultivators.

Heck, the maximum number was 7.

And now...

“W-W-What in the hell happened in a single month...”

He questioned as he glanced at the people standing in front of him.

“Hmmm, he still isn’t completely numb yet, huh,” Felberta commented with a small smile on her face.

“Is it really that shocking?” Allura questioned with a playful smile on her face.

The other women glanced at her and rolled their eyes.

Allura chuckled.

“...”

Nawdren, however, wasn’t finding any of this to be even slightly amusing...

“H-How did you all become Emperors in such a small amount of time?”

That man, I don’t know,

He is a monster!

I accepted it!

You lot, however, are not!

Well, you actually are, considering your age and cultivation, but you were definitely all early King Stage Cultivators,

Just how the hell did you all become Emperors!?”

Nawdren shouted.

“Heeeh? Are you sure we were all early King Stage Cultivators?”

Edda questioned with a smile.

“D-Don’t try to fool me! I am 100% sure you were all normal King Stage Cultivators!”

Nawdren stood firm.

“How did you do it!?”

He questioned.

“Well, you don’t have to know that.”

Suddenly, Nux walked forward and replied.

“Yes, don’t focus on things like these.

It is not important.” Astaria nodded.

Then, she took out her sword and a big smile appeared on her face,

“Get ready now.

We need to spar.”

# #657

\*Thud\*

The Battle ended as Astaria was sent flying.

She was doing well for the first 15 minutes and was able to hold on against Nawdren, this time, the Sword the shine around her sword was dimmer than the first time she used it, however, it was much more stable.

The output wasn't as strong, however, Astaria knew that last time, she was simply wasting Mana.

She still couldn't control this technique very well, therefore, she was limiting the Mana she feeds the sword with. The output was compromised, however, her control was better.

And honestly, even this 'controlled' and 'limited' strength was very much enough to cut through Nawdren's defenses.

In this last month, Astaria hadn't made much progress.

She has only learned how to willingly activate the technique, and that too, only if her Mana reserve was filled to the brim. She tried using the surrounding Mana for it, but it proved to be much more complicated and Astaria had a feeling that she wouldn't be able to learn it anytime soon.

First, she needed to master this technique using her own Mana.

Astaria even had a lead in today's battle at the start, Nawdren knew how dangerous her technique was, one mistake and he might lose a limb.

He needed to be careful.

He fought in a defensive position, just keeping himself safe, and mostly focusing on dodging Astaria's attack.

Previously, the best move for him in this situation was to just run away and return when Astaria ran out of Mana like how he did the first time Astaria used this, now, however, he didn't have that option since Nux was standing right behind.

The moment he ran, Nux would appear and...

Nawdren didn't even want to think about what would happen then.

Anyways, ultimately, he needed to fight Astaria head-on until she masters this technique.

Astaria needed to grow, however, if Nawdren continued to run whenever they spar, she would never learn anything.

Of course, Nux also wouldn't always restrict Nawdren like he is doing now,

Astaria needed to learn how to stop this technique before it stops itself after devouring most of her Mana.

She was still in the learning phase, slowly but surely, she would master this technique, and once she does, Astaria believed that even fighting toe to toe against Nux wouldn't be impossible.

However, for now, her target was Nawdren.

Who, after being defensive for the first 15 minutes, started attacking when her control over this technique started weakening.

Defending against his attacks and at the same time, trying to restabilize the Mana around her sword was difficult, soon, Nawdren's attack connected and Astaria's body flew away.

"I won."

Nawdren spoke as he walked towards Astaria.

"I still haven't lost yet."

Astaria replied.

Nawdren simply glanced at the sword she was holding.

The Sword was not shining anymore,

It was clear, the technique broke off, Astaria didn't run out of Mana yet, however, as mentioned before, she could only activate the technique when her Mana reserves were filled to the brim and without the technique, defeating Nawdren was simply impossible.

Astaria quickly rolled back and stood up.

Glaring at Nawdren, she injected Mana into her sword again, but just as everyone expected, it didn't work, she tried to force it, however, Nawdren didn't just stand there like a puppet.

He quickly rushed towards Astaria and started attacking.

The Spar wasn't over until Nux said so.

And Nux wouldn't say anything until Astaria herself opens her mouth or is put in a difficult situation that might be threatening.

Nawdren continued his attack, Astaria's body was sent flying again.

She tried to roll back again, however, Nawdren appeared in front of her again and kicked her abdomen.

“Khooockk!!”

Astaria coughed out blood.

Nux narrowed his eyes.

Seeing that expression on his face, a smile appeared on Amaya's face,

“He treats her differently.” She commented.

“Indeed.”

Thyra nodded.

“What do you mean?” Evane frowned.

“If it was any of us sparring right now, he wouldn’t have let Nawdren attack us like that,” Thyra replied.

“Well, she wouldn’t like it if he participated in her battle.”

Ember commented.

“Would you like it?” Amaya questioned.

“...I won’t either...” Ember replied.

“And you think he wouldn’t stop the fight if it was you?”

“...he will...”

Ember knew it.

Amaya just smiled as she proved her point.

Ember lowered her head.

“Don’t focus on her nonsense, Ember.”

Thyra spoke as she glanced at Amaya and then turned toward Ember.

“He wouldn’t stop your fight if you were fighting against an opponent he thinks you can defeat. Nawdren, however, is not someone you can do anything against, even though you are now an Emperor.”

“All of us and Astaria are at the same Stage, early Emperor Stage.”

Ember replied.

“Do you truly believe you are comparable to Astaria right now?” Thyra questioned.

“...” Ember turned silent.

“You have your answer.

He treats her differently because she is strong.

We all have his love.

However, that woman is different.

Along with love, she also has his acknowledgment.

He becomes protective when it comes to us, of course, it’s not his fault, he does it because he loves us.

In her case, he holds back his instincts and forces himself to not move.”

“Do you not wish to earn his acknowledgment as well?”

Ember questioned.

“Why do you think I am training with that monster for?”

Thyra replied.

A smile appeared on Ember’s face as well.

“Anyways, this battle is over.”

Felberta commented.

The women glanced at the battlefield and just as Fel said,

“Stop.”

Astaria ordered, stopping Nawdren from attacking.

Nawdren quickly jumped back and raised his hands in the air, clearly showing that he hadn't done a thing the moment Astaria told him to stop.

His eyes quickly rushed towards Nux, wishing to see if he would get beaten up like a ragdoll or not.

“Hmm?”

Nawdren, however, couldn't find Nux.

Nux had already left his position and was currently tending to Astaria, wiping her wounds while helping her drink the Healing and Mana Potion.

“Oi,” Suddenly, Nux called out.

“Y-Yes?”

“Spar with me as well.”

Nawdren's face paled.

# Chapter 654 Along With Love, She Also Has His Acknowledgment.

\*Thud\*

The Battle ended as Astaria was sent flying.

She was doing well for the first 15 minutes and was able to hold on against Nawdren, this time, the Sword the shine around her sword was dimmer than the first time she used it, however, it was much more stable.

The output wasn't as strong, however, Astaria knew that last time, she was simply wasting Mana.

She still couldn't control this technique very well, therefore, she was limiting the Mana she feeds the sword with. The output was compromised, however, her control was better.

And honestly, even this 'controlled' and 'limited' strength was very much enough to cut through Nawdren's defenses.

In this last month, Astaria hadn't made much progress.

She has only learned how to willingly activate the technique, and that too, only if her Mana reserve was filled to the brim. She tried using the surrounding Mana for it, but it proved to be much more complicated and Astaria had a feeling that she wouldn't be able to learn it anytime soon.

First, she needed to master this technique using her own Mana.

Astaria even had a lead in today's battle at the start, Nawdren knew how dangerous her technique was, one mistake and he might lose a limb.

He needed to be careful.

He fought in a defensive position, just keeping himself safe, and mostly focusing on dodging Astaria's attack.

Previously, the best move for him in this situation was to just run away and return when Astaria ran out of Mana like how he did the first time Astaria used this, now, however, he didn't have that option since Nux was standing right behind.

The moment he ran, Nux would appear and...

Nawdren didn't even want to think about what would happen then.

Anyways, ultimately, he needed to fight Astaria head-on until she masters this technique.

Astaria needed to grow, however, if Nawdren continued to run whenever they spar, she would never learn anything.

Of course, Nux also wouldn't always restrict Nawdren like he is doing now,

Astaria needed to learn how to stop this technique before it stops itself after devouring most of her Mana.

She was still in the learning phase, slowly but surely, she would master this technique, and once she does, Astaria believed that even fighting toe to toe against Nux wouldn't be impossible.

However, for now, her target was Nawdren.

Who, after being defensive for the first 15 minutes, started attacking when her control over this technique started weakening.

Defending against his attacks and at the same time, trying to restabilize the Mana around her sword was difficult, soon, Nawdren's attack connected and Astaria's body flew away.

"I won."

Nawdren spoke as he walked towards Astaria.

“I still haven’t lost yet.”

Astaria replied.

Nawdren simply glanced at the sword she was holding.

The Sword was not shining anymore,

It was clear, the technique broke off, Astaria didn’t run out of Mana yet, however, as mentioned before, she could only activate the technique when her Mana reserves were filled to the brim and without the technique, defeating Nawdren was simply impossible.

Astaria quickly rolled back and stood up.

Glaring at Nawdren, she injected Mana into her sword again, but just as everyone expected, it didn’t work, she tried to force it, however, Nawdren didn’t just stand there like a puppet.

He quickly rushed towards Astaria and started attacking.

The Spar wasn’t over until Nux said so.

And Nux wouldn’t say anything until Astaria herself opens her mouth or is put in a difficult situation that might be threatening.

Nawdren continued his attack, Astaria’s body was sent flying again.

She tried to roll back again, however, Nawdren appeared in front of her again and kicked her abdomen.

“Khooockk!!”

Astaria coughed out blood.

Nux narrowed his eyes.

Seeing that expression on his face, a smile appeared on Amaya’s face,

“He treats her differently.” She commented.

“Indeed.”

Thyra nodded.

“What do you mean?” Evane frowned.

“If it was any of us sparring right now, he wouldn’t have let Nawdren attack us like that,” Thyra replied.

“Well, she wouldn’t like it if he participated in her battle.”

Ember commented.

“Would you like it?” Amaya questioned.

“...I won’t either...” Ember replied.

“And you think he wouldn’t stop the fight if it was you?”

“...he will...”

Ember knew it.

Amaya just smiled as she proved her point.

Ember lowered her head.

“Don’t focus on her nonsense, Ember.”

Thyra spoke as she glanced at Amaya and then turned toward Ember.

“He wouldn’t stop your fight if you were fighting against an opponent he thinks you can defeat. Nawdren, however, is not someone you can do anything against, even though you are now an Emperor.”

“All of us and Astaria are at the same Stage, early Emperor Stage.”

Ember replied.

“Do you truly believe you are comparable to Astaria right now?” Thyra questioned.

“...” Ember turned silent.

“You have your answer.

He treats her differently because she is strong.

We all have his love.

However, that woman is different.

Along with love, she also has his acknowledgment.

He becomes protective when it comes to us, of course, it’s not his fault, he does it because he loves us.

In her case, he holds back his instincts and forces himself to not move.”

“Do you not wish to earn his acknowledgment as well?”

Ember questioned.

“Why do you think I am training with that monster for?”

Thyra replied.

A smile appeared on Ember’s face as well.

“Anyways, this battle is over.”

Felberta commented.

The women glanced at the battlefield and just as Fel said,

“Stop.”

Astaria ordered, stopping Nawdren from attacking.

Nawdren quickly jumped back and raised his hands in the air, clearly showing that he hadn't done a thing the moment Astaria told him to stop.

His eyes quickly rushed towards Nux, wishing to see if he would get beaten up like a ragdoll or not.

“Hmm?”

Nawdren, however, couldn't find Nux.

Nux had already left his position and was currently tending to Astaria, wiping her wounds while helping her drink the Healing and Mana Potion.

“Oi,” Suddenly, Nux called out.

“Y-Yes?”

“Spar with me as well.”

Nawdren's face paled.

# #659

“Spar with me as well.”

Nux spoke and Nawdren’s face paled.

“B-But I stopped as soon as she told me-”

“It’s not about that.

I am not that petty.

I progressed a little as well.”

Nux replied.

“Y-You progressed...?”

Nawdren stuttered.

This monster progressed?

Just how far did he wish to go?

Can he get stronger even after this!?

Does the limited Mana in this continent not affect this bastard!?

“Don’t think too much, I am just trying to control my power and I feel like I have gotten used to it.”

Nux replied as he clenched his fist.

Nawdren gulped.

“You don’t have to fight me directly. Just keep running I will try to chase you after using Mana to increase my speed.”

“But won’t you overtake me that way?”

Nawdren questioned with a frown on his face.

“That’s what control means. I need to control the output of my moves.”

Nux replied.

He had been working hard to improve his controls as well and today, he was pretty confident.

“Let’s make this a little more exciting actually.

If I manage to stay an arm’s length distance near you for 5 seconds, I will punch you after boosting my strength with Mana.”

“!!!”

Nawdren’s eyes widened in horror.

“I WILL DIE!!”

Nawdren has personally seen how destructive Nux’s punch actually is.

Truthfully, he was the only one who has seen it.

Even Nux’s wives hadn’t seen his real strength yet.

‘Force me to use it in front of you.’

That was what Nux said when they asked about it.

And this method worked.

The women’s pride didn’t allow them to ask about it anymore.

‘Be ready then.’

They accepted his challenge.

“Oh don’t worry, as I said, I will be controlling the output, you won’t die.

Trust me.”

Nux replied with a confident look on his face.

“Oh yeah? Then why don’t we make this even more exciting?”

Nawdren spoke.

“You have another idea?”

Nux raised his eyebrow.

“Of course.

Why don’t we increase the number of people playing this game?

All your wives are now Emperors, I am sure they would learn a lot if they participate, it would be good training for them and you would find this much more challenging as well.

How about it?

What do you all say?”

Nawdren questioned as he glanced at Nux’s wives.

The women’s eyes brightened up.

Of course they wanted to participate.

Especially Astaria, the fighting spirit in her eyes was engulfing Nux.

The desire to improve...

She just couldn’t hide it even if she wanted to.

“No.”

Nux, however, quickly shook his head.

“Huh?”

The women frowned.

“I won’t put any of you at risk.”

Then he glanced at Astaria who was still in his arms and replied,

“Not even you.”

From his stern tone, it was clear.

This was not happening.

“Hmmm? Why? What’s the risk here, I don’t understand. Please explain.”

Nawdren spoke.

All the women glanced at Nux’s face as well, waiting for his answer.

“...” Nux moved his face away.

“Hmm? Master Nux?”

Nawdren tilted his head, waiting for his answer.

Even Astaria was looking at Nux’s face with a similar expression,

“...I am not sure if I can control my strength well enough...

So you people cannot participate...”

Nux replied.

“So you admit it!!”

Nawdren shouted.

“Just participate in the game okay!? I told you didn’t I!? I won’t kill you!  
...probably.”

“Pro- Probably!?!?”

“Oi, don’t you think you are biting more than you can chew?”

Nux narrowed his eyes as he glanced at Nawdren.

Nawdren quickly stepped back.

“Let’s start the game now.”

Nux spoke as he then disappeared and appeared right in front of Nawdren.

“You have 5 seconds, if you fail to get away from me,  
I will punch.”

“!!!”

Nawdren’s face paled in horror and he dashed away as if his life depended on it.

Nux smiled, then, the Mana near him moved to his legs and, he ran.

\*Whoosh\*

A gust of wind passed through Nawdren.

He quickly realized that it was Nux.

He couldn’t believe how unbelievably fast this monster was.

However, soon, he realized something.

‘This bastard said he learned how to control the output...

That’s his control!?’

“Ahh, there was a slight mistake.”

‘That’s a slight mistake!? I would burst into a blood mesh if you make that slight mistake while punching me!!’

Never in his life did Nawdren imagine that he would fear a 20-something-year-old kid to this extent.

This was just...

Horrible...

However,

Luckily for him, Nux wasn’t lying when he said he learned to control his output.

After the first few failed attempts, he improved drastically and managed to stay an arm’s length distance near Nawdren for 2-3 seconds. Nawdren was forced to modulate his speed in order to get him out of that range.

Once he succeeds, Nux was forced to count from 0 again and this cycle continued with Nux not being able to punch Nawdren.

However, he was improving very, very quickly.

So quickly that Nawdren had already started dreading the time this bastard would stay in the range for 5 seconds and punch him...

He didn’t want to die...

At least not like this...

He wouldn’t mind dying like a warrior, giving his all and fighting against an opponent, injuring him to some extent, taking at least his limb away from him, leaving permanent damage, making his opponent regret fighting against him...

That death, he would accept.

But this...

Running away like a dog and dying while playing a stupid game...

Nawdren trembled in fear.

“1... 2...”

Suddenly, Nawdren heard a voice. Nux was inside the range again.

He quickly slowed down,

“Do you think it would keep on working?”

Nux smiled as he slowed down as well.

“3...”

Nawdren tried to increase his speed but...

“4...”

It didn't work.

Nawdren panicked.

He tried to jump around like a monkey, doing his best to be as less predictable as possible and get out of Nux's range, however, as if he had already read all his moves beforehand, Nux countered them all and,

“5.”

“Be prepared, Nawdren.”

Nux smiled.

Nawdren quickly moved all his Mana to his Back, enforcing the best possible defense he could and soon, he felt the Mana in the surroundings move towards Nux's fist.

‘I am fucked...’

He gulped and then,

Nux finally punched.

**\*WHOOSH\***

**\*BAM\***

# Chapter 655L Am Fucked...

“Spar with me as well.”

Nux spoke and Nawdren’s face paled.

“B-But I stopped as soon as she told me-”

“It’s not about that.

I am not that petty.

I progressed a little as well.”

Nux replied.

“Y-You progressed...?”

Nawdren stuttered.

This monster progressed?

Just how far did he wish to go?

Can he get stronger even after this!?

Does the limited Mana in this continent not affect this bastard!?

“Don’t think too much, I am just trying to control my power and I feel like I have gotten used to it.”

Nux replied as he clenched his fist.

Nawdren gulped.

“You don’t have to fight me directly. Just keep running I will try to chase you after using Mana to increase my speed.”

“But won’t you overtake me that way?”

Nawdren questioned with a frown on his face.

“That’s what control means. I need to control the output of my moves.”

Nux replied.

He had been working hard to improve his controls as well and today, he was pretty confident.

“Let’s make this a little more exciting actually.

If I manage to stay an arm’s length distance near you for 5 seconds, I will punch you after boosting my strength with Mana.”

“!!!”

Nawdren’s eyes widened in horror.

“I WILL DIE!!”

Nawdren has personally seen how destructive Nux’s punch actually is.

Truthfully, he was the only one who has seen it.

Even Nux’s wives hadn’t seen his real strength yet.

‘Force me to use it in front of you.’

That was what Nux said when they asked about it.

And this method worked.

The women’s pride didn’t allow them to ask about it anymore.

‘Be ready then.’

They accepted his challenge.

“Oh don’t worry, as I said, I will be controlling the output, you won’t die.

Trust me.”

Nux replied with a confident look on his face.

“Oh yeah? Then why don’t we make this even more exciting?”

Nawdren spoke.

“You have another idea?”

Nux raised his eyebrow.

“Of course.

Why don’t we increase the number of people playing this game?

All your wives are now Emperors, I am sure they would learn a lot if they participate, it would be good training for them and you would find this much more challenging as well.

How about it?

What do you all say?”

Nawdren questioned as he glanced at Nux’s wives.

The women’s eyes brightened up.

Of course they wanted to participate.

Especially Astaria, the fighting spirit in her eyes was engulfing Nux.

The desire to improve...

She just couldn’t hide it even if she wanted to.

“No.”

Nux, however, quickly shook his head.

“Huh?”

The women frowned.

“I won’t put any of you at risk.”

Then he glanced at Astaria who was still in his arms and replied,

“Not even you.”

From his stern tone, it was clear.

This was not happening.

“Hmmm? Why? What’s the risk here, I don’t understand. Please explain.”

Nawdren spoke.

All the women glanced at Nux’s face as well, waiting for his answer.

“...” Nux moved his face away.

“Hmm? Master Nux?”

Nawdren tilted his head, waiting for his answer.

Even Astaria was looking at Nux’s face with a similar expression,

“...I am not sure if I can control my strength well enough...

So you people cannot participate...”

Nux replied.

“So you admit it!!”

Nawdren shouted.

“Just participate in the game okay!? I told you didn’t I!? I won’t kill you!  
...probably.”

“Pro- Probably!?!?”

“Oi, don’t you think you are biting more than you can chew?”

Nux narrowed his eyes as he glanced at Nawdren.

Nawdren quickly stepped back.

“Let’s start the game now.”

Nux spoke as he then disappeared and appeared right in front of Nawdren.

“You have 5 seconds, if you fail to get away from me,  
I will punch.”

“!!!”

Nawdren’s face paled in horror and he dashed away as if his life depended on it.

Nux smiled, then, the Mana near him moved to his legs and, he ran.

\*Whoosh\*

A gust of wind passed through Nawdren.

He quickly realized that it was Nux.

He couldn’t believe how unbelievably fast this monster was.

However, soon, he realized something.

‘This bastard said he learned how to control the output...

That’s his control!?’

“Ahh, there was a slight mistake.”

‘That’s a slight mistake!? I would burst into a blood mesh if you make that slight mistake while punching me!!’

Never in his life did Nawdren imagine that he would fear a 20-something-year-old kid to this extent.

This was just...

Horrible...

However,

Luckily for him, Nux wasn’t lying when he said he learned to control his output.

After the first few failed attempts, he improved drastically and managed to stay an arm’s length distance near Nawdren for 2-3 seconds. Nawdren was forced to modulate his speed in order to get him out of that range.

Once he succeeds, Nux was forced to count from 0 again and this cycle continued with Nux not being able to punch Nawdren.

However, he was improving very, very quickly.

So quickly that Nawdren had already started dreading the time this bastard would stay in the range for 5 seconds and punch him...

He didn’t want to die...

At least not like this...

He wouldn’t mind dying like a warrior, giving his all and fighting against an opponent, injuring him to some extent, taking at least his limb away from him, leaving permanent damage, making his opponent regret fighting against him...

That death, he would accept.

But this...

Running away like a dog and dying while playing a stupid game...

Nawdren trembled in fear.

“1... 2...”

Suddenly, Nawdren heard a voice. Nux was inside the range again.

He quickly slowed down,

“Do you think it would keep on working?”

Nux smiled as he slowed down as well.

“3...”

Nawdren tried to increase his speed but...

“4...”

It didn't work.

Nawdren panicked.

He tried to jump around like a monkey, doing his best to be as less predictable as possible and get out of Nux's range, however, as if he had already read all his moves beforehand, Nux countered them all and,

“5.”

“Be prepared, Nawdren.”

Nux smiled.

Nawdren quickly moved all his Mana to his Back, enforcing the best possible defense he could and soon, he felt the Mana in the surroundings move towards Nux's fist.

‘I am fucked...’

He gulped and then,

Nux finally punched.

**\*WHOOSH\***

**\*BAM\***

# #661

...

\*BAM\*

Nawdren's body was sent flying.

“Khooooocckkkk!!”

He had used all his Mana to defend against Nux's attack, honestly, it was a useless attempt, Nux's attack was strong enough to break through his defenses even if Nux didn't use Mana.

And if Nux uses Mana...

Then it's not even a question, Nawdren was done for.

That is, if Nux was still unable to control his power.

Luckily for Nawdren, Nux wasn't lying when he said he improved his control over his power.

Nawdren had coughed out blood and around 30 bones in his body were broken, but in the end, he still managed to live.

“Haahh... Haahh... Haahaa...”

And this was something even Nawdren couldn't believe.

When Nux punched, he had sensed the threat behind that punch, he knew what it was.

He felt how that punched absorbed the surrounding Mana, he felt the impact of the punch before it even touched him, that punch...

It was by no means a normal punch...

It was death.

A sure death.

Nawdren's body was in pain and he couldn't move.

However, he didn't care...

He was alive...

He didn't know how it happened and he didn't care either,

He just thanked his luck and the mother nature for being such a grea-

\*Step\*

“1...”

Suddenly,

Nux appeared in front of Nawdren.

“2...”

‘Why is he counting?’

Nawdren frowned.

“3...”

“!!!”

Soon, Nawdren realized and his eyes widened in horror.

With trembling body, he glanced at Nux and just as he thought, he was standing at arms distance near him.

That bastard...

He was still playing this foolish game...

“4...”

The count of death.

Nawdren could hear it...

The sounds of bell ringing... it was his time...

“5.”

Nawdren closed his eyes, preparing himself for the impact.

“...”

However, more and more time passed, and nothing happened.

Nawdren slowly opened his eyes, he noticed Nux had crouched in front of him and was looking at him with a curious look on his face,

“You don’t want to play more?”

Nux questioned.

“...”

Nawdren’s mouth twitched.

Nux chuckled, then, a Health Potion appeared in his hand and he fed it to Nawdren.

“I told you to trust me, didn’t I?” Nux spoke.

Nawdren drank the Potion, his body couldn’t really move right now, so he had to depend on Nux.

He glanced at Nux who was feeding him the Potion and realized,

Nux was not an emotionless bastard. He could trust this man.

“Hahaha~ It was difficult at first, but I managed to do just fine, didn't I?”

Nux spoke and Nawdren smiled a little as well.

He weakly nodded and then, Nux continued,

“Don't worry though, we will continue to play this game everyday until I get perfect my control.

So get well soon, okay?”

“ ... ”

Nawdren stopped drinking the Potion.

“Oi, what are you doing? It is falling on the ground.”

Nux spoke.

Nawdren clenched his fists.

Nux quickly emptied the Potion then gave him another one.

“You can go to your room when you feel you are fine.”

Saying those words, Nux stood up and walked towards his wives.

“He's alive.”

Astaria commented with an impressed look on her face.

“What did you think? That I will kill him?”

“Well, that punch did look scary.”

“I am getting better.”

“Mhm, you are working hard.”

Astaria nodded.

At the same time, she again understood why Nux didn't allow them to play.

Even if it was her...

She would have died if Nux the moment Nux's punch had connected.

She stood no chance at all.

This man...

He really was a monster...

And to stand side by side against this monster...

She needed to train more.

"I am going."

Astaria spoke with a serious look on her face.

The other women quickly understood where she was going and,

"I am going as well."

Ember spoke up as well.

"Same."

"Mhm, me too."

One by one, all the women started leaving.

Even Edda had a rare, solemn expression on her face.

Just like that, Nux was left alone.

He glanced at Nardren again.

He wanted to spar, but seeing him, he knew that was not possible...

“Haahhh...”

After a long sigh, Nux stretched his body and walked towards his training area as well.

He would be training alone today as well.

His training schedule was simple, first, he trained his control using Thyra's techniques. Of course, those techniques focused more on body flexibilities, however, after some experiments and tweaking, he created a training method that worked wonders.

And since the essence of this method were Thyra's techniques, it also improved Nux's battle senses, including some of Thyra's moves in the fighting style that he had created.

It was harder since Thyra's main focus was on daggers and Nux used swords, however, attacking unpredictably, going for lethal points, balancing the body on weird angles to aim at hard to defend points, Nux started including all those moves into his battle style.

His Battle Style was now strange mixture of Astaria's and Thyra's Battle Style. It was a combination so complex that it didn't just look like a mixture, rather, it was a completely different Battle Style, the Battle Style only Nux can fight with.

Nux also had a chat with Riona, knowing that she was the one who trained Thyra, he wanted to learn something from her, however, soon, he realized that Riona only taught Thyra the basics, everything else, Thyra created it on her own, from the scratch.

Riona herself fought with a sword, there was no way she could teach anything to Thyra. She just told her what she desired and somehow, Thyra showed the result.

Thyra was no different than a prodigy either.

Anyways, improving his Battle Style and Control wasn't the only thing Nux focused on.

Actually, it wasn't even his main focus right now.

He had 2 main focus right now.

The First one was the Devouring Mist.

Yes, his Physique.

He has achieved Mastered level Mastery and his Devouring Mist now had the power to Devour Life.

What more could he possibly achieve?

Even killing Emperors wasn't a big deal for the current Nux.

However, Nux realized this a while ago.

# Chapter 656 You Don'T Want To Play More?

...

\*BAM\*

Nawdren's body was sent flying.

“Khooooocckkkk!!”

He had used all his Mana to defend against Nux's attack, honestly, it was a useless attempt, Nux's attack was strong enough to break through his defenses even if Nux didn't use Mana.

And if Nux uses Mana...

Then it's not even a question, Nawdren was done for.

That is, if Nux was still unable to control his power.

Luckily for Nawdren, Nux wasn't lying when he said he improved his control over his power.

Nawdren had coughed out blood and around 30 bones in his body were broken, but in the end, he still managed to live.

“Haahh... Haahh... Haahaa...”

And this was something even Nawdren couldn't believe.

When Nux punched, he had sensed the threat behind that punch, he knew what it was.

He felt how that punched absorbed the surrounding Mana, he felt the impact of the punch before it even touched him, that punch...

It was by no means a normal punch...

It was death.

A sure death.

Nawdren's body was in pain and he couldn't move.

However, he didn't care...

He was alive...

He didn't know how it happened and he didn't care either,

He just thanked his luck and the mother nature for being such a grea-

\*Step\*

“1...”

Suddenly,

Nux appeared in front of Nawdren.

“2...”

‘Why is he counting?’

Nawdren frowned.

“3...”

“!!!”

Soon, Nawdren realized and his eyes widened in horror.

With trembling body, he glanced at Nux and just as he thought, he was standing at arms distance near him.

That bastard...

He was still playing this foolish game...

“4...”

The count of death.

Nawdren could hear it...

The sounds of bell ringing... it was his time...

“5.”

Nawdren closed his eyes, preparing himself for the impact.

“...”

However, more and more time passed, and nothing happened.

Nawdren slowly opened his eyes, he noticed Nux had crouched in front of him and was looking at him with a curious look on his face,

“You don’t want to play more?”

Nux questioned.

“...”

Nawdren’s mouth twitched.

Nux chuckled, then, a Health Potion appeared in his hand and he fed it to Nawdren.

“I told you to trust me, didn’t I?” Nux spoke.

Nawdren drank the Potion, his body couldn't really move right now, so he had to depend on Nux.

He glanced at Nux who was feeding him the Potion and realized,

Nux was not an emotionless bastard. He could trust this man.

“Hahaha~ It was difficult at first, but I managed to do just fine, didn't I?”

Nux spoke and Nawdren smiled a little as well.

He weakly nodded and then, Nux continued,

“Don't worry though, we will continue to play this game everyday until I get perfect my control.

So get well soon, okay?”

“...”

Nawdren stopped drinking the Potion.

“Oi, what are you doing? It is falling on the ground.”

Nux spoke.

Nawdren clenched his fists.

Nux quickly emptied the Potion then gave him another one.

“You can go to your room when you feel you are fine.”

Saying those words, Nux stood up and walked towards his wives.

“He's alive.”

Astaria commented with an impressed look on her face.

“What did you think? That I will kill him?”

“Well, that punch did look scary.”

“I am getting better.”

“Mhm, you are working hard.”

Astaria nodded.

At the same time, she again understood why Nux didn't allow them to play.

Even if it was her...

She would have died if Nux the moment Nux's punch had connected.

She stood no chance at all.

This man...

He really was a monster...

And to stand side by side against this monster...

She needed to train more.

“I am going.”

Astaria spoke with a serious look on her face.

The other women quickly understood where she was going and,

“I am going as well.”

Ember spoke up as well.

“Same.”

“Mhm, me too.”

One by one, all the women started leaving.

Even Edda had a rare, solemn expression on her face.

Just like that, Nux was left alone.

He glanced at Nawdren again.

He wanted to spar, but seeing him, he knew that was not possible...

“Haahhh...”

After a long sigh, Nux stretched his body and walked towards his training area as well.

He would be training alone today as well.

His training schedule was simple, first, he trained his control using Thyra's techniques. Of course, those techniques focused more on body flexibilities, however, after some experiments and tweaking, he created a training method that worked wonders.

And since the essence of this method were Thyra's techniques, it also improved Nux's battle senses, including some of Thyra's moves in the fighting style that he had created.

It was harder since Thyra's main focus was on daggers and Nux used swords, however, attacking unpredictably, going for lethal points, balancing the body on weird angles to aim at hard to defend points, Nux started including all those moves into his battle style.

His Battle Style was now strange mixture of Astaria's and Thyra's Battle Style. It was a combination so complex that it didn't just look like a mixture, rather, it was a completely different Battle Style, the Battle Style only Nux can fight with.

Nux also had a chat with Riona, knowing that she was the one who trained Thyra, he wanted to learn something from her, however, soon, he realized that Riona only taught Thyra the basics, everything else, Thyra created it on her own, from the scratch.

Riona herself fought with a sword, there was no way she could teach anything to Thyra. She just told her what she desired and somehow, Thyra showed the result.

Thyra was no different than a prodigy either.

Anyways, improving his Battle Style and Control wasn't the only thing Nux focused on.

Actually, it wasn't even his main focus right now.

He had 2 main focus right now.

The First one was the Devouring Mist.

Yes, his Physique.

He has achieved Mastered level Mastery and his Devouring Mist now had the power to Devour Life.

What more could he possibly achieve?

Even killing Emperors wasn't a big deal for the current Nux.

However, Nux realized this a while ago.

# #663

He has achieved Mastered level Mastery and his Devouring Mist now had the power to Devour Life.

What more could he possibly achieve?

Even killing Emperors wasn't a big deal for the current Nux.

However, Nux realized this a while ago.

This wasn't the Mist's final form.

The System still showed a (+) sign before his Physique.

What did that mean?

It meant that even though he had 'Mastered' his Physique, he still haven't reached the end.

He dared to click on that (+) button when he was free, he wasn't doing very well on the Blank Points right now, and honestly, even if he was doing well, it wouldn't have done anything.

[Blank Points Needed: 1,000,000]

Yes.

1 million Blank Points.

That was the amount Nux needed to upgrade his Physique.

1 fucking million.

Even if he multiplied the total number of Blank Points he had earned till now by multiple folds, he still wouldn't reach close to that number.

Let alone Blank Points, Nux hadn't even collected this many System Points, which were fairly easier to collect.

That was how absurdly high that number was.

Absolutely ridiculous!

Nux didn't even think about trying to upgrade his physique that way,

He could only work his way through.

But honestly, he wasn't seeing much results.

It was as if he had already reached the dead end.

He felt like he already knows everything there was to know about the Devouring Mist.

How else could he comprehend it?

Actually, he even wondered if that was even possible.

However, in the end, Nux still gave decent amount of time, trying to work on his Mist.

The other thing he focused on were the Skills.

Yes, Skills, it was he had ignored before.

Now, however, things were different.

After the System was down, Nux realized something.

His Battle Style relied too much on the System Ability, and for various reasons...

Nux didn't like that at all.

His overreliance on the System, that was not good.

Nux admits it, whatever he currently was, it was all because of the System.

He was a useless 34 year old man doing nothing in his life before he came to this world and got the System after all.

He can confidently say that the System completely changed his life.

However, the source of this System was still unknown.

Nux didn't think too much about this before this because the strongest person he knew was Astaria.

She was comparable to 7 Star Beings and although not active, he did see an 8 Star Level on his System.

At the very least, he knew that his System was better than the world's strongest.

Therefore, he didn't feel any threat.

His plan was simple,

Become an Emperor, help all his wives to become Emperors, live a long, happy life, then die together with his wives.

It was a perfect life for him.

Now, however, things were different.

He now found out about the Main Continent.

The possibilities of beings far stronger than 7 Star...even 8 Star...

The origins of his System, now Nux started thinking about all that.

Where did this System come from?

He wasn't dumb.

He had read his fair share of novels in his previous life. Of course, it was stupid to think about serious matters like these based on novels written by fantasy authors who have never even seen or been into the world they were writing. Authors who didn't even know what Cultivation was, or how a technique works. Basing his life on the novels these authors wrote...

It couldn't be any stupider.

However, Nux had this strange inkling that has been eating him up for a long time now...

In most of these stories where the protagonist gets the system...

The moment he reaches a certain level, that protagonist realizes that the System...

Wasn't exactly his friend...

And in some works, the System was even related to the actual villain of the story.

Of course, this was stretching it far.

Nux knew it as well.

However, his overreliance on his System still bothered him.

His fighting style was entirely dependent on abilities like [Conceal], [Sense], [Mirror], [Dash] and his other abilities.

He is so dependent on them that he has never used the actual Skills at all.

Everything he wished to do, there was an Ability that helped him do it.

It was... almost too easy...

This was unsettling.

Therefore, Nux decided to change.

Of course, this doesn't mean he wasn't going to use the System abilities anymore.

He needed to get stronger, and it would be harder to do it without the System.

Not using System because of these thoughts was stupid.

In this world, if there is something that he never have to doubt, then it was a fact that Strength overpowered everything.

The Origin of the System doesn't matter.

As long as he is strong enough, he can deal with anything.

Actually, Nux was thankful that he got these 6 months without System.

In these 6 Months, he would change and improve his Battle Style to the point System Abilities wouldn't be the core, the root of his everything, but rather the tools that helps him get even stronger.

System Abilities would be like outside weapons.

Nux quickly collected all the top Skills that were spread throughout the continent.

He wasn't greedy.

He only selected 4 Skills.

7 Star Skills, one Skill for one element.

He would train all these skills and would improve his Mastery Level to the point where these Skills would become a usable, no, not usable, a powerful tool.

This was something that even Astaria couldn't achieve,

‘After reaching the level of Emperor, using Skills was not practical. One must use the purest form of Mana.’

This was what the people believed.

However, Nux was different.

He wasn’t willing to give up.

It didn’t matter how years it took.

Nux would do it.

He would use Skills.

He would Master them to a level where they would absolutely destroy his opponents.

Thinking all that, Nux’s face turned serious, the Fire Elements around him started moving and soon, he was surrounded with Fiery Red Flames.

Then, Nux closed his eyes and started moving.

He was looking forward to seeing the future him.

# Chapter 657 Nux Would Do It.

He has achieved Mastered level Mastery and his Devouring Mist now had the power to Devour Life.

What more could he possibly achieve?

Even killing Emperors wasn't a big deal for the current Nux.

However, Nux realized this a while ago.

This wasn't the Mist's final form.

The System still showed a (+) sign before his Physique.

What did that mean?

It meant that even though he had 'Mastered' his Physique, he still haven't reached the end.

He dared to click on that (+) button when he was free, he wasn't doing very well on the Blank Points right now, and honestly, even if he was doing well, it wouldn't have done anything.

[Blank Points Needed: 1,000,000]

Yes.

1 million Blank Points.

That was the amount Nux needed to upgrade his Physique.

1 fucking million.

Even if he multiplied the total number of Blank Points he had earned till now by multiple folds, he still wouldn't reach close to that number.

Let alone Blank Points, Nux hadn't even collected this many System Points, which were fairly easier to collect.

That was how absurdly high that number was.

Absolutely ridiculous!

Nux didn't even think about trying to upgrade his physique that way,

He could only work his way through.

But honestly, he wasn't seeing much results.

It was as if he had already reached the dead end.

He felt like he already knows everything there was to know about the Devouring Mist.

How else could he comprehend it?

Actually, he even wondered if that was even possible.

However, in the end, Nux still gave decent amount of time, trying to work on his Mist.

The other thing he focused on were the Skills.

Yes, Skills, it was he had ignored before.

Now, however, things were different.

After the System was down, Nux realized something.

His Battle Style relied too much on the System Ability, and for various reasons...

Nux didn't like that at all.

His overreliance on the System, that was not good.

Nux admits it, whatever he currently was, it was all because of the System.

He was a useless 34 year old man doing nothing in his life before he came to this world and got the System after all.

He can confidently say that the System completely changed his life.

However, the source of this System was still unknown.

Nux didn't think too much about this before this because the strongest person he knew was Astaria.

She was comparable to 7 Star Beings and although not active, he did see an 8 Star Level on his System.

At the very least, he knew that his System was better than the world's strongest.

Therefore, he didn't feel any threat.

His plan was simple,

Become an Emperor, help all his wives to become Emperors, live a long, happy life, then die together with his wives.

It was a perfect life for him.

Now, however, things were different.

He now found out about the Main Continent.

The possibilities of beings far stronger than 7 Star...even 8 Star...

The origins of his System, now Nux started thinking about all that.

Where did this System come from?

He wasn't dumb.

He had read his fair share of novels in his previous life. Of course, it was stupid to think about serious matters like these based on novels written by fantasy authors who have never even seen or been into the world they were writing. Authors who didn't even know what Cultivation was, or how a technique works. Basing his life on the novels these authors wrote...

It couldn't be any stupider.

However, Nux had this strange inkling that has been eating him up for a long time now...

In most of these stories where the protagonist gets the system...

The moment he reaches a certain level, that protagonist realizes that the System...

Wasn't exactly his friend...

And in some works, the System was even related to the actual villain of the story.

Of course, this was stretching it far.

Nux knew it as well.

However, his overreliance on his System still bothered him.

His fighting style was entirely dependent on abilities like [Conceal], [Sense], [Mirror], [Dash] and his other abilities.

He is so dependent on them that he has never used the actual Skills at all.

Everything he wished to do, there was an Ability that helped him do it.

It was... almost too easy...

This was unsettling.

Therefore, Nux decided to change.

Of course, this doesn't mean he wasn't going to use the System abilities anymore.

He needed to get stronger, and it would be harder to do it without the System.

Not using System because of these thoughts was stupid.

In this world, if there is something that he never have to doubt, then it was a fact that Strength overpowered everything.

The Origin of the System doesn't matter.

As long as he is strong enough, he can deal with anything.

Actually, Nux was thankful that he got these 6 months without System.

In these 6 Months, he would change and improve his Battle Style to the point System Abilities wouldn't be the core, the root of his everything, but rather the tools that helps him get even stronger.

System Abilities would be like outside weapons.

Nux quickly collected all the top Skills that were spread throughout the continent.

He wasn't greedy.

He only selected 4 Skills.

7 Star Skills, one Skill for one element.

He would train all these skills and would improve his Mastery Level to the point where these Skills would become a usable, no, not usable, a powerful tool.

This was something that even Astaria couldn't achieve,

‘After reaching the level of Emperor, using Skills was not practical. One must use the purest form of Mana.’

This was what the people believed.

However, Nux was different.

He wasn’t willing to give up.

It didn’t matter how years it took.

Nux would do it.

He would use Skills.

He would Master them to a level where they would absolutely destroy his opponents.

Thinking all that, Nux’s face turned serious, the Fire Elements around him started moving and soon, he was surrounded with Fiery Red Flames.

Then, Nux closed his eyes and started moving.

He was looking forward to seeing the future him.

